Selections from
the Speeches of True Parents

천성경

CHEON SEONG GYEONG

Family Federation for
World Peace and Unification

Preface

In the beginning God created the world through the Word. He created by instilling the Word with His heart, love, life and lineage. That is why certain principles and laws – the heavenly way – operate consistently in the life of human beings and all things of creation.

Human beings, when perfected in God's image, are meant to be the embodiments of the Word. Human beings, by upholding the Word, were to attain the original nature endowed by the Creator by inheriting the attributes God manifested at the Creation, namely, absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience.

The first ancestors, Adam and Eve, did not keep God's commandment and fell. As a result they lost the Word and came to possess the attributes of evil. God, as our Parent of true love immediately initiated His providence of restoration to bring salvation to fallen humanity. He works to re-create the world by sending the Messiah to the earth. The Messiah comes as the incarnation of the truth, and just as God created through the Word, He re-creates through the Word to complete His providence.

Two thousand years ago, Jesus came as the substance of truth and proclaimed the Gospel. When the people of Judea failed to believe in Jesus, he was nailed to the cross. Jesus died promising that he would return. The Messiah, Savior and returning Lord comes as a man, and he too comes to re-create humanity with the truth and thereby complete the ideal of creation. The surest sign from Heaven that he has come would be the appearance of the Word of truth that will save the world.

The True Parents have indeed come as the substance of truth and are fulfilling the sacred task of restoration. True Father has devoted his entire life for the sake of God's liberation and the salvation of humanity according to the heavenly will. He has revealed the truth about God, humanity, the world, history, the spirit world, the identity of Satan, and all the heavenly secrets. Some 500 volumes of True Father's speeches have thus far been published. These include 412 volumes in the series compiling the transcripts of his speeches given over half a century.

Selections from these, arranged by theme, have been compiled into sixteen books contained in a single volume, which the True Parents have titled Cheon Seong Gyeong (天聖經). In reference to this book, True Father explained: "This is the holy book for the Kingdom of Heaven. In Cheon Seong Gyeong, the word *cheon* consists of the Chinese characters meaning two (二) and people (人). When

you think of who the two central people in a family are, you think of the husband and wife. The separation of heaven and earth came about because a husband and a wife in the garden of Eden lost the way to love. Therefore, in order for heaven and earth to reach completion, these two people (天) must follow the holy (聖) way (經) in which they must love completely. This way is elucidated in Cheon Seong Gyeong." True Father added, "Cheon Seong Gyeong defines the way for two people to walk towards holiness; this way is none other than the family."

In the course of God's providence, God gave the Old Testament Word for the providence of re-creation at the formation level, the New Testament Word for the providence of re-creation at the growth level, and the Completed Testament Word for the providence of creation at the completion level. After this, and beginning with the Coronation for God's Kingship on January 13, 2001, the era of His Kingdom of Cheon Il Guk began. The new heaven and earth of love and peace under God's direct dominion has appeared and it will be completely settled through the teachings of Cheon Seong Gyeong. Cheon Seong Gyeong contains the very Word of truth that will guide humankind to fulfill God's ideal of creation.

The reader will come to experience the heart and true love of God and the True Parents. Throughout their exceptional lives, the True Parents have embodied the attributes of the absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal God. The words of Cheon Seong Gyeong express True Parents' lifelong experience of the sorrowful heart of God, the Parent who has lost His children due to the Fall of the first ancestors. The words reflect their experience of the history of the providence of restoration, filled with bitter grief. As such, these words contain eternal guiding principles for our own lives.

The True Parents have devoted their lives solely for the liberation of God and to firmly establish His kingship. They have guided all humanity towards becoming the true children of God, as He intended at the time of creation. For this we are deeply grateful. True Parents hope that the hoondokhwae tradition of reading the Word will take root in each family and in all aspects of life, so that the truth contained in this book will bear fruit through a life of practice.

It is our earnest wish that you will read this book every day to gain a deeper understanding of the True Parents' love, heart and teachings, and their noble way of life, and that you will go on to establish the Cheon Il Guk tradition in your own lives as true children of God.

Family Federation for World Peace and Unification
May 2006 (Sixth Year of Cheon Il Guk)

Contents

	Preface	
Book 1	True God	47
Book 2	True Parents	165
Book 3	True Love	305
Book 4	True Family	417
Book 5	Earthly Life and the Spirit World	539
Book 6	Our Life and the Spiritual Realm	751
Book 7	Etiquette and Ceremonies	981
Book 8	Sin and Restoration Through Indemnity	1101
Book 9	Blessed Family	1233
Book 10	The Way in the Completed Testament Age	1459
Book 11	The Root of the Universe	1625
Book 12	The Pacific Rim Providence	1813
Book 13	Restoration of the True God's Homeland	2001
Book 14	A Life of True Filial Piety	2175
Book 15	The Life of an Owner of Cheon Il Guk	2229
Book 16	True Families and the Family Pledge	2347
	Glossary	2541

BOOK ONE

True God

Chapter 1. The Original Being of God

Section 1. God Is the Incorporeal Subject Partner 51
1.1. The incorporeal God 51
1.2. In the beginning we naturally knew about God 53
Section 2. The Incorporeal God Needs a Body 55
2.1. God created Adam and Eve in order to assume physical form 55
2.2. Adam is the first ancestor and visible God 57
Section 3. God is a Personal God 60
3.1. A personal God with intellect, emotion, and will 60
3.2. We need a personal God with whom we can be one 62
Section 4. God Is Our Father 64
4.1. God and human beings are related as parent and child 64
4.2. God is the closest person to you 68
Section 5. God's Omniscience and Omnipotence Are Within the Principle 71
5.1. God's omniscience and omnipotence are based on principles 71
5.2. Only love is the absolute standard 73
5.3. Even God is absolutely obedient to love 76
Section 6. God is Omnipresent Through His Love 79
6.1. Only love freely traverses borders 79
6.2. Love pervades the entire universe 80
Section 7. Assessing the Existing Views of God 82
7.1. Existing doctrines of God are contradictory 82

Chapter 2. God and the Work of Creation

Section 1. God's Motivation for Creating Is Love 87
1.1. The Work of Creation Required Complete Investment 87
1.2. Realizing the ideal of creation through love 90
Section 2. God's Purpose for Creating Human Beings 92
2.1. God created human beings as His object partners in love 92
2.2. God invests the essence of His love and life 94
Section 3. The Ideal of Love to Be Attained Through Adam and Eve 95
3.1. God created Adam as a body of the invisible God 95
3.2. Husband and Wife Stand as Second Creators 98
Section 4. The Ideal of Love is Fulfilled in the Family 101
4.1. God's ideal of creation is the completion of the four-position foundation 101
4.2. The ideal of creation is fulfilled through the completion of the family ... 102
Section 5. God's Will in Creating All Things 104

5.1. The purpose for creating all things 104
5.2. The size and structure of the mysterious universe 107
5.3. Nature is a textbook teaching the ideal of love 108
5.4. Our attitude toward nature 111
5.5. Love nature and love people 113

Chapter 3. The History of the Providence of Restoration and Changes in Humankind's View of God

Section 1. The God of the Old Testament Age 115
1.1. The Old Testament Age was the age of the servant 115
1.2. In the Old Testament Age, angels worked on behalf of God 117
1.3. Why do angels become involved in human salvation? 119
Section 2. The Identity of Jehovah God 120
2.1. The attributes of Jehovah God 120
2.2. The religion of the bride and the religion of the archangel 121
Section 3. Jesus' View of God Based on the Parent-Child Relationship 123
3.1. The New Testament Age is the age of the adopted son 123
3.2. The adopted child can call out "father" 125
Section 4. The Completed Testament Age Is the Age of the Oneness of God and Humankind 126
4.1. True children should go through the change of lineage and rebirth 126
Section 5. God's First Manifestation 129
5.1. God finally reveals Himself 129

Chapter 4. True Father's Insights on God

Section 1. A God of Historical Bitterness, Grief and Pain 132
1.1. God lost the position of parent through the Fall 132
1.2. The bitter pain of restoration and God's 6,000 year search for His children 135
Section 2. God's Grief and Shock at Losing His Son and Daughter 138
2.1. God lost His eternal and only son 138
2.2. God has been miserable throughout history 139
Section 3. A God Confined and Incarcerated 141
3.1. God lost His rightful position 141
3.2. God could not function as God 143
Section 4. The Reason God Cannot Punish Satan 144
4.1. The reasons for Satan's accusations 144
4.2. God abides by the law 147
Section 5. Let Us Liberate God 150
5.1. God is like a prisoner 150
5.2. God's liberation is a task for humankind 153
Section 6. The Liberation of God and the Way of the Filial Child 156
6.1. The path of restoration True Father has walked 156
6.2. A lifetime devoted to God's liberation 160

BOOK TWO

True Parents

Chapter 1. What Is a True Parent?

Section 1. The Significance of the True Parents 171
Section 2. The Origin of Trueness 171
2.1. What is the meaning of Trueness? 171
Section 3. The Standard Measure of Truth 175
Section 4. Trueness and the True Person 178
Section 5. What Is a True Parent? 179
5.1. The two tablets of stone and True Parents 179
5.2. The definition of True Parents 181
5.3. True Parents are the embodiment of good character 183
Section 6. The Meaning of the Words True Parents 185
6.1. The words True Parents are precious 185
6.2. True Parents are our source of enormous pride 185
6.3. The words True Parents are amazing words 187
6.4. The words True Parents are fearsome words 188

Chapter 2. The Messiah and the True Parents

Section 1. History and the True Parents 189
1.1. The Fall and the True Parents 189
1.2. The Desire of History 190
1.3. History and the True Parents 190
1.4. The providence of restoration has sought the True Parents throughout its history 191
Section 2. The Messiah, the True Parent 194
2.1. The Messiah is the True Parent 194
2.2. The appearance of the Messiah 194
2.3. The mission of the Messiah 196
Section 3. Jesus and the True Parents 198
Section 4. The Second Coming and the True Parents 199
4.1. We need to prepare to receive the Messiah 199
4.2. The Task of the Lord at the Second Coming 200

Chapter 3. The Need for True Parents

Section 1. We Also Need Our Natural Parents 202
Section 2. True Parents and Our Natural Parents 203

Section 3. The Reason True Parents Must Come 205
Section 4. The Conditions for the Appearance of the True Parents 205
Section 5. The True Lineage Must Come Through the True Parents 206
Section 6. The True Parents are Needed Absolutely 206
Section 7. The Designation of the True Parents Was Foreseen and Predicted 208
Section 8. True Parents' Position Is Not an Elected One 209

Chapter 4. The Mission of the True Parents

Section 1. The Position of the True Parents 210
Section 2. The Path of the True Parents 211
Section 3. The Course Prior to Becoming the True Parents 212
Section 4. The Authority and Mission of the True Parents 216
Section 5. True Parents' Love 218

Chapter 5. The Kingdom of Heaven and True Parents

Section 1. The Meaning of the Characters for *Cheon* (天) and *Bu-mo* (父母) . 220
Section 2. The Reason We Must Attend True Parents on Earth 221
Section 3. The Kingdom of Heaven is Possible Only Through True Parents 222
Section 4. The Kingdom of Heaven and True Love 224
Section 5. True Parents and Eternal Life 225
Section 6. True Parents and the Nation 226

Chapter 6. True Parents and Us

Section 1. The Essence of the Teachings of the Family Federation 229
1.1. The philosophy of the Parents 229
1.2. True families determine the center of the universe 230
1.3. God's love and True Parents' love 231
1.4. Parents and family members 232
Section 2. The Value of Working with True Parents while They are on Earth 233
Section 3. True Parents' Effort and Us 236
3.1. We absolutely need True Parents 236
3.2. We are a branch engrafted to True Parents 236
3.3. True Parents' investment for our sake 238
3.4. True Parents' expectations of us 238
3.5. The standard we should meet 239
Section 4. Grace and Self-Realization 240
4.1. True Parents is a term that has appeared for the first time 240
4.2. The appearance of True Parents is the greatest news 241
4.3. The future secured through True Parents 242
4.4. The value of True Parents 243
4.5. We should be grateful 244
4.6. Our connection with True Parents is destiny 246

4.7. We must carry out our responsibilities 246
Section 5. What We Need to Do 247
5.1. Our responsibilities 247
5.2. Our mission 250
Section 6. Things We Should Cherish as Our Own Life 251
6.1. Insisting on your own way is not acceptable 251
6.2. We must become one 252
6.3. We should love True Parents 253
6.4. We must attend True Parents 254
6.5. We should be obedient 254
6.6. We must inherit the tradition 254
6.7. We should be proud of True Parents 256
6.8. You should pay your debt to True Parents 256

Chapter 7. A Life with True Parents

Section 1. True Parents' Day and True Parents 257
Section 2. We Should Fully Understand the Words "True Parents" 258
Section 3. Learning True Parents' Language 259
Section 4. Revelation in Folk Songs 261
Section 5. Prayer in the Name of True Parents 263
Section 6. The Power of True Parents' Name 263
Section 7. Enjoy Eternal Glory in True Parents' Name 264
Section 8. Bequeathing and Inheriting True Parents' Heart 265
8.1. Bequeathing of heart 265
8.2. Sons and daughters inherit from their parents 266
Section 9. What You Need to Take Heed of 267

Chapter 8. The Three Great Subjects Principle and The Proclamation of True Parents

Section 1. The Three Great Subjects Principle and the Parent-Centered Ideology 268
1.1. The Three Subjects Principle is our desire 268
1.2. The Three Subjects Principle is the philosophy of True Parents 269
1.3. The essence of the Three Subjects Principle 269
1.4. A parent-centered ideology 270
Section 2. The Proclamation of True Parents 271
2.1. Background to the proclamation of True Parents 271
2.2. The standard for the proclamation of True Parents 271
2.3. The place where the proclamation of True Parents is made 273
2.4. Phenomena occurring after the proclamation of True Parents 273
2.4.1. The world today is rapidly changing due to the announcement of the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages. 273

2.4.2. The forces of the devil enter the realm of death 274
2.4.3. The coming of the heavenly fortune for unification 275
2.4.4. There will be no conflict in the future 278
2.5. The remarkable proclamation of True Parents 279
2.6. How we should conduct ourselves after the proclamation of True Parents 280
2.7. What we need to do after the proclamation of True Parents 284
2.7.1. Be grateful for the proclamation 284
2.7.2. Accumulate results 286
2.7.3. Rallies to welcome True Parents 287
2.8. The parent in the North and the parent in the South 289
2.9. The religious founders and True Parents 291
Section 3. The Proclamation of True Parents and Kingship 292
3.1. Adam's family, the original starting point of the royal palace 292
3.2. The establishment of kingship 293
3.3. The restoration of kingship 295
Section 4. Keeping True Parents' Photograph 298
4.1. The reason for keeping True Parents' photograph 298
4.2. The power of the picture of True Parents 300

BOOK THREE

True Love

Chapter 1. What Is True Love?

Section 1. Love Is the Source of Peace and Happiness 309
Section 2. Love Is Boundless Giving 314
Section 3. Harmony Arises in the Presence of Love 319
Section 4. The Rights of Equality, Mutual Participation, and Inheritance 324
Section 5. Perfection Is Attained through Love 326

Chapter 2. The Reality of Love

Section 1. God's Love 331
1.1. Love originates from God 331
Section 2. True Parents' Love 340
2.1. Sinless true ancestor and Savior of humankind 340
2.2. True Parents give birth to humankind through true love 344
Section 3. Parental Love 347
3.1. Parents' love is the love of the essence 347
3.2. Parents' love is complete even after being shared over and over again ... 351
Section 4. Conjugal Love 353
4.1. Conjugal love is the flower of the whole universe 353
4.2. Conjugal love cannot be fulfilled if it is shared with another person 356
Section 5. Sexual Love 362
5.1. Sex is the original palace of love, the most holy place of heaven 362
5.2. Love is not something that is learned 368
Section 6. Filial Love 370
6.1. Children result from a concentration of parental love 370
6.2. The way of true children is filial piety 371
Section 7. Love Between Siblings 373
7.1. Brotherly love is a model of love for all the people of the world. 373
Section 8. Love of the Nation, Love of the World, and Love of Humankind . 375
8.1. The path of children of filial piety, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters 375
Section 9. Love of the Natural World 378
9.1. God's will in creating the world of all things 378
9.2. Nature is a textbook teaching the ideal of love 380

Chapter 3. Love and Marriage

Section 1. True Marriage Engenders Love of Universal Unity 385
Section 2. The Love that Man and Woman Desire 388
Section 3. The Blessing Is the Ceremony to Convey God's Love 392

Chapter 4. Love and Family

Section 1. The Ideal of Love is Established in the Family 395
Section 2. The Family is the School of Love for Life in the Heavenly Kingdom 399

Chapter 5. Love and the Spirit World

Section 1. The Atmosphere of the Spirit World is Love 403
Section 2. We Should Develop a Loving Character During Our Earthly Life 410

BOOK FOUR

True Family

Chapter 1. The True Family OriginallyIntended at the Time of Creation

Section 1. God's Will through Adam and Eve 423
Section 2. God's Absolute Requirements 424
Section 3. God's Eternal Partner in Love 425
Section 4. The Purpose of Creating Adam and Eve 426
Section 5. The Time for Adam's and Eve's First Love 426
Section 6. All Beings Are Perfected through Love 428
Section 7. What Human Beings Can Be Most Proud Of 429
Section 8. Adam's Family Should Have Set the Tradition as the True Family 430

Chapter 2. The Way of Love in the Family

Section 1. God's Laws of Love Centering on the Family 432
Section 2. The Reason Three Generations Must Coexist in the Family 433
Section 3. Parents are the Origin of Love 434
Section 4. The Reason We Need Brothers and Sisters 435
Section 5. The Grandfather is in the Position of God in the Family 436
Section 6. The Relationship Between Grandparents and Grandchildren 437
Section 7. The True Meaning of the Saying, "All Goes Well if there is True Harmony in the Family." 438

Chapter 3. The Family Is the Model for the Kingdom of Heaven

Section 1. The Family is the Central Model for All Beings 440
Section 2. The Family is the Textbook of Love through Which We Can Connect with Universal Love 441
Section 3. A Training Ground of Love for Entering the Kingdom of Love 442
Section 4. The Family is a Model for the Heavenly Kingdom 444
Section 5. The Family Brings Together the Love of Three Generations 445
Section 6. The Family is the Training Ground of the Heart 446
Section 7. The Family is Our Eternal Original Hometown 447
Section 8. The Family Is the Final Standard for Completing the Cosmos-centered Ideology 448

Chapter 4. Our Course of Life Centered on Love

Section 1. Why Are Human Beings Born? 450
Section 2. Life in its Original Form 451
Section 3. For Human Beings, the Eternal Element of Life is Love 452
Section 4. What is God's Love? 453

Section 5. God's Blessing Allows You to Inherit Love and Joy 454
Section 6. Human Beings Seek the Center of Love 455
Section 7. Our Life Passes Through Three Ages 456
Section 8. Earthly Life is Training to be in Rhythm with the Spirit World 458

Chapter 5. The Love of Man and Woman in the Original Creation

Section 1. The Original Love of a Man and a Woman 460
Section 2. The Reason Men and Women Are Born 461
Section 3. Men and Women Absolutely Need Each Other 462
Section 4. Love Comes from One's Partner 463
Section 5. Men and Women Harmonize in Love 464
Section 6. Original Human Beings Are Enraptured with True Love 465
Section 7. Love Is Realized in a Completely Natural Setting 466

Chapter 6. Transformation during Young Adulthood, and True Marriage

Section 1. The Significance of Marriage 468
Section 2. The Reason for Marriage 469
Section 3. The True View of Marriage 470
Section 4. What Kind of Time is Young Adulthood? 471
Section 5. What Causes the Transformation in Adolescence? 472
Section 6. First Love in Young Adulthood 473
Section 7. The Best Time of Marriage – When is Love Connected? 474
Section 8. Love of a United Mind and Body 476

Chapter 7. The Love of a True Husband and a True Wife

Section 1. The Original Relationship of Husband and Wife 478
Section 2. The Reason We Need Conjugal Love 479
Section 3. An Ideal Conjugal Relationship 481
Section 4. Even God is Enraptured in the Love of a True Couple 482
Section 5. The More a Husband and Wife See Each Other, the More They Want to See Each Other 484
Section 6. How Conjugal Love Develops 485
Section 7. Why You Feel Sad When Your Beloved Passes Away 487
Section 8. Conjugal Love Should Be Eternal 488

Chapter 8. True Parental Love

Section 1. Parental Heart Wants to Give Everything 490
Section 2. Parents Desire to Be Surpassed by Their Children 491
Section 3. Parental Love Is Eternally Unchanging 492
Section 4. Parental Love Sacrifices Everything 493
Section 5. Parents' Love for Their Children Is Absolute 495
Section 6. Parental Love Is Eternal 496

Section 7. Parental Love Sets the Standard for All Forms of Love 497

Chapter 9. True Education for Children

Section 1. What Kind of Education Should Parents Give Their Children? 499
Section 2. What Should Parents Teach Their Children? 500
Section 3. Parents Must First Set an Example 501
Section 4. Parents Are Best Friends and Best Teachers 503
Section 5. Chastisement with Love 504
Section 6. Why Tell Children to Study? 505
Section 7. The Teachings of True Parents and Teachers 506
Section 8. An Education to Live Together with the World 508

Chapter 10. The True Family of Humankind Must Be Restored

Section 1. The Purpose of God's Providence of Salvation 510
Section 2. Adam's Family Fell into Satan's Possession 511
Section 3. The Hope of Fallen People 512
Section 4. The Goal of Restoration is Adam's Family 513
Section 5. The Restored Family Was to Be Realized by Jesus 514
Section 6. The Restored Family of the Returning Lord 515
Section 7. The Original True Family Is Established in the Unification Church 517
Section 8. The True-Family-Centered Ideology and the Religion of True Parents 518

Chapter 11. The Family Is the Eternal Foundation of Happiness

Section 1. Why Do We Like the Family? 520
Section 2. The Family Is the Base of Eternal Happiness 521
Section 3. The Family Is Basic Unit to Realize God's Kingdom 522
Section 4. The Realization of the Ideal of Love Starts in the Family 523
Section 5. Heaven is a Place One Enters as a Family Unit 524
Section 6. Universal Principle of the Four-Position Foundation 526
Section 7. The Heavenly Way People Should Go in the Family 527
Section 8. The Unification Church Seeks to Realize the Family Kingdom of Heaven 528

Chapter 12. Seeking True Families

Section 1. Nothing Was Created for its Own Sake 530
Section 2. The Most Holy Place Where God Can Come to Dwell 531
Section 3. Man Owns Woman and Woman Owns Man 532
Section 4. Love Has No Evolution or Revolution 533
Section 5. Chastity for Woman and Purposefulness for Man 534
Section 6. The Fall: The Root of Free Sex and the Origin of Individualism .. 536
Section 7. The Realization of World Peace Through Absolute Purity and the True Family Movement 537

BOOK FIVE

Earthly Life and the Spirit World

Chapter 1. The Existence of Human Beings in the Physical and Spirit Worlds

Section 1. Our Course of Life 547
1.1. Prayers relating to the life course 547
1.2. The purpose that people desire 548
1.3. The reason for birth 548
1.4. The relationship between a moment and a lifetime 549
1.5. Infancy and the three orderly stages of the growing period 551
1.6. Our life path 551
1.7. The original homeland that we must seek 552
1.8. Our highest path in life 552
1.9. The standard of birth and the standard of life 553
1.9.1. The wrong standard of birth 553
Section 2. The Status and Character of Human Beings 554
2.1. God's purpose in creating humankind 554
2.2. Human beings as the interface between spiritual and physical worlds ... 555
2.3. Body and mind, and spirit self 555
2.4. Complete motion and resonance 556
Section 3. The Essence of Life 556
3.1. Spirit is the essence of life 556
3.2. The meaning of lord of all creation 557
3.3. Inner person and outer person 558
3.4. The purpose of life on earth is mind-body perfection 558
Section 4. The Nobility of Life on Earth 559
4.1. Life on earth is to prepare us for life in the spirit world 559
4.2. The preciousness of our life on earth 560
4.3. Habituality is important 561
4.4. The standard of life on earth 561
4.5. Everything will be recorded through the physical body 562
4.6. Life on earth is so important 562
4.7. Using our physical selves to fulfill our portion of responsibility 563
Section 5. Blessing and Eternal Life 564
5.1. Why we need to know about the issue of eternal life 564
5.2. The way of eternal life 565
5.2.1. Our lifetime and the issue of eternal life 565
5.2.2. Humankind seeks eternal life 566
5.2.3. Eternal life and religion 566

5.2.4. Why we should live eternally 567
5.2.5. Living for the sake of eternal life 568
5.2.6. What is the theory of eternal life? 568
5.2.7. The most important issue of eternal life 569
5.2.8. Ultimately, human beings must return to eternal life 569
5.2.9. Faith and the issue of eternal life 570
5.2.10. Unificationists and eternal life 571
5.2.11. The concept necessary for eternal life 571
5.3. Love and eternal life 571
5.3.1. Eternal life is directly connected with love 571
5.3.2. True love and eternal life 571
5.3.3. True love is absolutely necessary 572
5.3.4. The world after death is related with love 573
5.3.5. Eternal life comes only by living for the sake of others 574
5.4. Blessing and spirit world 574
5.4.1. The power of love 574
5.4.2. The spirit selves of husband and wife 575
5.4.3. Marriage and spirit world 575
5.4.4. The position of Blessed Families in the spirit world 576
5.4.5. The Blessing is a promise 576
5.4.6. The glory of the Blessing 576

Chapter 2. Death and the Spirit World

Section 1. The Inevitable Path of Our Life 578
1.1. The body is far from eternal life 578
1.2. How the majority of people live 578
1.3. Death is inevitable 579
1.4. God is the owner of life 580
Section 2. Understanding Death 581
2.1. The meaning of the Korean word *toraganda* 581
2.2. The place to which we must go 581
2.3. The day we pass on is a precious day 582
2.4. The spiritual connection of life and death 582
2.5. Death in relation to the value of life 583
2.6. Death is a process to link three worlds 583
2.7. Things to do before we die 586
2.7.1. Crossing the last border 586
2.7.2. Modeling ourselves after God's external form, heart and divine character 586
2.7.3. Do not sin 586
2.7.4. Live and die for the world 587
2.7.5. Work hard 587
2.7.6. Work for the public good 587

2.7.7. Experience love 589
2.8. What to leave behind before going to the spirit world 591
2.8.1. Leave a tomb of love behind 591
2.8.2. Proprietary rights in the spirit world are determined through witnessing 591
2.8.3. Why we should have lots of children 597
2.9. Our attitude in the face of death 599
2.10. When entering the spirit world 602
2.10.1. At the time of impending death 602
2.10.2. When entering the spirit world 604
2.10.3. Documents required for entry procedures into the spirit world 606
2.11. Things you will know clearly only after you die 606
2.12. Altruism gets you closer to God 607
2.13. Judgment 608
Section 3. To go to a Higher Realm in the Spirit World 609
3.1. The standard for religious people is the spirit world 609
3.2. The determination of proprietary rights in the spirit world 609
3.3. Love people 609
3.4. Love God even more 610
3.5. Establish the family foundation 610
3.6. Live centered on the tradition of the realm of the heart 610
3.7. The pass with which to enter the spirit world 611

Chapter 3. The Spirit World

Section 1. The Spirit World Can Be Experienced with the Physical Body 612
1.1. The spirit world and the present time 612
1.2. The future age 612
1.3. Spiritual experiences are also necessary 614
1.4. The course of spiritual experience 614
1.5. How to develop your spiritual senses 620
1.6. Advent (substantial works) 621
Section 2. What Kind of Place Is the Spirit World? 622
2.1. The spirit world and the physical world 622
2.1.1. The center of the spirit world and physical world 622
2.1.2. Unity of the spiritual and physical worlds 624
2.2. The spirit world clearly exists 624
2.3. The spirit world is the driving force for faith (Saint Paul's vision of the third heaven) 625
2.4. When God created the spirit world 626
2.5. Where is the spirit world? 626
2.6. What kind of place is the spirit world? 626
Section 3. The Content and Situation of the Spirit World 627
3.1. The Fall led to ignorance about the spirit world 627

3.2. The spirit world is a sphere permitting instant perception 628
3.3. The center of the spirit world 629
3.4. The organization of the spirit world (hierarchy) 629
3.5. Clothing, food and shelter in the spirit world 630
3.6. How to use knowledge and power in the spirit world 632
3.7. Human relationships in the spirit world 633
3.8. The center of the spirit world is love 635
3.8.1. The air of the spirit world is love 635
3.8.2. The spirit world is the place of living a love-centered life 636
3.9. The spirit world – the world of heart 636
3.10. The situation of the spirit world 637
3.11. Life in the spirit world 638
3.12. The work we have to do in the spirit world 638
Section 4. The Position and Actual Situations of the Spirit World 639
4.1. The position of the spirit world 639
4.2. The actual state of affairs in the spirit world 640
4.3. The pride of the spirit world 640
4.4. The Unification Church and the spirit world 641
4.5. Korean customs and the spirit world 642
4.6. The Korean language and the spirit world 643
4.7. The spirit world's sphere of activity 643
4.8. The spirit world's possessions 643
4.9. God and the spirit world 643

Chapter 4. The Kingdom of Heaven

Section 1. Understanding the Kingdom of Heaven 644
1.1. The location of the Kingdom of Heaven 644
1.2. Christianity and heaven 645
1.3. Jesus and paradise 646
1.4. Heart and heaven 648
1.5. The physical body and hell 650
1.6. Even people in hell long for heaven 655
1.7. God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven 655
1.8. The right view of heaven 657
Section 2. Preparing to Go to Heaven 659
2.1. The stronghold of heaven 659
2.2. The standard for going to heaven 661
2.3. The starting point of the Kingdom of Heaven 662
2.4. The essence of the Kingdom of Heaven 662
2.5. The framework of the Kingdom of Heaven 663
Section 3. The Prerequisites and Conditions for Going to Heaven 663
3.1. The prerequisites for going to heaven 663
3.2. The lifestyle that enables us to go to heaven 668

3. 2. 1. Our position 668
3. 2. 2. Instances of not being able to go to heaven 669
3. 2. 3. Our life for the sake of Kingdom of Heaven 670
3. 2. 4. The Kingdom of Heaven and us 671
3.3. The four-position foundation and heaven 672
3. 3. 1. Families enter heaven 672
3. 3. 2. Jesus and his family 675
3. 3. 3. Four-position foundation and the Kingdom of Heaven 675
Section 4. Triumphal Entry through the Gates of Heaven 676
4.1. The door to people's hearts 676
4.2. The meaning of "Opening the Gate of Heaven" 676
4.2.1. The reason for "Opening the Gate of Heaven" 676
4.2.2. The origin of the "Opening of the Gates of Heaven" 677
4.2.3. True Parents and the gates of Heaven 678
4.2.4. Our attitude to the "Opening of the Gate of Heaven" 680
4.3. The path to heaven through fulfilling one's portion of responsibility. 681
4.4. Heaven and hell are our options 681
Section 5. Instructions Concerning Heaven and Hell 682
5.1. Formulating our view of heaven and hell 682
5.2. The importance of life in the spirit world and life on earth 682

Chapter 5. The Messiah and the Spirit World

Section 1. Jesus and the Spirit World 684
Section 2. The Returning Lord and the Spirit World 685
Section 3. True Parents and the Spirit World 686
3.1. The difference between your natural parents and True Parents 686
3.2. True Parents are the axis 687
3.3. True Parents is the center 688
3.4. The strength of the bond with True Parents 688
Section 4. Rev. Moon and the Spirit World 692
4.1. Rev. Moon's establishment of spiritual conditions and its foundation 692
4.2. Special authority in relation to the spirit world 694
4.3. The unification of the spirit world and the unification of the physical world 695
4.4. Reception in spirit world according to heart and actual results 697
4.5. Making spiritual experiences part of daily life 698
4.6. We go to the spirit world after leaving our love behind 698
Section 5. True Parents' Family and the Spirit World 699
5.1. The establishment of the right of the eldest son 699
5.2. The center of love established in the spirit world 700
5.3. The establishment of the kingship on earth and in the spirit world 701

Chapter 6. Our Position in Relation to the Spirit World

Section 1. The Fruit of Life and the Divine Spirit 703

Section 2. Judgment and Approval (Certification) 706
2.1. Categories of Judgment 706
2.2. Prepare a passport to Heaven 707
Section 3. Registration in the Spirit World 712
3.1. Freedoms enjoyed by the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven 712
3.2. Special gifts that can be carried to the spirit world 712
3.3. The Kingdom of Heaven created through the 3 Great Subjects Principle 714
3.4. Conditions for registration 715
3.5. People who can be chiefs in the spirit world 717

Chapter 7. Our Relationship with Those in the Spirit World

Section 1. Spiritual Phenomena and the Liberation of Spirits 719
1.1. The good spirit world and the evil spirit world 719
1.2. Spiritual phenomena 720
1.3. Letters from the spirit world 720
1.4. The hope of people in the spirit world 722
1.5. Liberating those in the spirit world from resentment 723
1.6. Unification of the spirit world 725
Section 2. The Relationship Between People on Earth and the Spirits 726
2.1. People on earth and the spirits 726
2.2. The position of people in the spirit world 727
2.3. Spirits outnumber people on earth 729
2.4. Wandering spirits 729
2.5. Discerning spirits by the mind 730
2.6. The value of life on earth 730
Section 3. Our Ancestors and Ourselves 731
3.1. Ancestors are looking upon us 731
3.2. We should surpass our ancestors 732
3.3. We should also visit our ancestral graves 733
3.4. Ancestors we can meet in the spirit world 734
Section 4. New Spiritual Age 735
4.1. The coming of the age of extrasensory perception 735
4.2. Entering a new age through the declaration of the Day of the Victory of Heaven 736
4.3. Unification Ceremony and spiritual assistance 736
4.4. Ceremony of One Heart and ancestral assistance 738
Section 5. Returning Resurrection and the Assistance of Spirits 739
5.1. Position of our predecessors in the spirit world 739
5.2. Spirit world mobilization and assistance 740
5.3. The spirit world and ancestors 742
5.4. The hope of spirit people 744
5.5. Returning resurrection and rebirth 744

BOOK SIX

Our Life and the Spiritual Realm

Chapter 1. The Path of Life

Section 1. Our Path of Life 757
1.1. We cannot foresee our immediate future 757
1.2. Where are we heading in life? 759
1.3. Our lifetime is preparation for going to the spirit world 763
1.4. Life is too short 766
Section 2. The Correct Understanding of Death 767
2.1. Death is the inevitable conclusion of earthly life 767
2.2. Life and death are a process that connects three worlds 771
2.3. Death is a transition to a better world 776
2.4. Death is an ascension (*seunghwa*) to a higher dimension 778
2.5. Our attitude in the face of death 781
2.6. The Blessing opens the path of eternal life 784
Section 3. The Value of Our Earthly Life 793
3.1. Earth is the place of harvesting the fruits of love 793
3.2. The people of heaven are created on the earth 798
3.3. Ownership in the spirit world is decided on earth 801
3.4. Our earthly life is recorded in detail 806
3.5. Sins committed in the flesh should be indemnified on earth 809
3.6. To live in harmony with nature is precious 813
Section 4. The Secret of Entering Heaven 816
4.1. Heaven is a place to enter with the honor of a royal family 816
4.2. Those who embody the love of the 4 great realms of heart can enter heaven 820
4.3. The body should harmonize with the mind 823
4.4. Heaven and hell are divided based upon absolute sex 828
4.5. Conjugal love is the central flower of the ideal of love 833
4.6. Entering heaven as a family unit 837
4.7. Heaven is a life of living for the sake of others 842

Chapter 2. What Kind of Place Is the Spirit World?

Section 1. The Reality of the Spirit World and Its Laws 847
1.1. The spirit world is an infinite world that transcends time and space 847
1.2. Love reigns supreme in the spirit world 852
1.3. Love is like air in the spirit world 858
1.4. The lives and relationships of people in spirit world 860
1.5. Food, clothing and shelter are not constraints in the spirit world 866
1.6. Love is the origin of authority in the spirit world 870
1.7. The spirit world is the world of God's law and order 874

Section 2. Heaven and Hell 875
2.1. Heaven is the world of the ideal of love 875
2.2. Heaven is where people serve and live for one another 880
2.3. The Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world must emerge through the kingdom on earth 884
2.4. Jesus and paradise 888
2.5. Hell has no relationship with the love of God 890
2.6. We choose to go to heaven or hell 896
Section 3. TheRelationshipbetweenThoseintheSpiritWorldandThoseonEarth 898
3.1. The spirit world is divided into good and evil worlds 898
3.2. The situation of people in the spirit world 900
3.3. Perfection of the spirit person can only come through people on earth 903
3.4. Co-operation from the spirit world 907
3.5. Atheists are like wandering spirits 910
Section 4. Our Ancestors and Ourselves 911
4.1. We are the fruit of our ancestors 911
4.2. Ancestral salvation comes from those on earth 913
4.3. Blessed families and honoring one's ancestors 916
Section 5. The Spirit World Must Be Known 919
Section 6. Judgment 919
6.1. God has no concept of the enemy 919
6.2. True Parents pass judgment based on the governing law of love 923
6.3. Personal sin will be judged by the clan in the family court of the kingdom 930

Chapter 3. True Parents and the Spirit World

Section 1. True Parents' Authority and Mission 934
1.1. True Parents are the incarnation of God 934
1.2. The ruler of heaven and earth is the axis of the universe 936
1.3. We go to Heaven through True Parents 937
Section 2. True Parents and the Building of the Kingdom of Heaven 943
2.1. The seal of approval from God is needed in order to become True Parents 943
2.2. Building the Kingdom of Heaven and the unification of the physical and spirit worlds 948
Section 3. True Parents and the Works of True Love 952
3.1. True Parents and the blessing of saints and murderers 952
3.2. Equalization of the spiritual and physical worlds through the cosmic expansion of the true Blessing 955
3.3. True Love liberates hell on earth and in the spirit world 959
3.4. Registration for heaven and Blessed Families' spiritual realm 963
Section 4. True Family and the Works of the Spirit World 968
4.1. Heung-jin nim and the establishment of the right of the eldest son in the SW 968
4.2. The Cheongpyeong providence and the ancestors' liberation ceremony 972
Section 5. The Final Wish of Life 974

BOOK SEVEN

Etiquette and Ceremonies

Chapter 1. Etiquette for Attending God

Section 1. Living in Attendance of God 987
1.1. God and human beings relate as parent and child 987
1.2. Living a life of oneness 989
Section 2. Our Attitude of Attendance 991
2.1. Establishing a heavenly life through attendance 991
2.2. Breaking heavenly laws displeases God 993
Section 3. True Father's Way of Attending God 994
3.1. Sincerity moves Heaven 994
3.2. The path of a filial son 996

Chapter 2. Etiquette for Attending True Parents

Section 1. True Parents are the Center of Blessed Families 1000
1.1. Becoming the sons and daughters of True Parents 1000
1.2. Our dedication in attending True Parents 1001
Section 2. Let Us Love and Be Proud of True Parents 1004
2.1. True Parents are the hope of all humankind 1004
2.2. Honoring True Parents' picture in each home 1006
Section 3. The Manner in Which We Attend True Parents 1008
3.1. The law in the age of justification by attendance is the highest law 1008
3.2. Ethics and morality give value to human beings 1009

Chapter 3. Worship Service and Etiquette in Church Life

Section 1. Proper Understanding of the Church 1011
1.1. Church integrates human character and the Word 1011
1.2. The church is an extension of the family 1012
Section 2. Worship Is the Greatest Ceremony that Shows Reverence to God 1015
2.1. The time of worship is a time to meet God 1015
2.2. Early morning and evening services, and all-night vigils 1017
Section 3. Attitude of a Church Leader 1019
3.1. Church leaders must practice a public life 1019
3.2. Devotion and sincerity must be invested to guide members 1022
3.3. Man-woman relationships and public money require strict discipline ... 1023
Section 4. Sermons Must Bestow Grace and Inspiration 1025
4.1. The practice of giving sermons 1025
4.2. Sermons of True Father 1027

Section 5. Offering Donations in Accordance with Heavenly Law 1029
5.1. Ways of tithing 1029
5.2. Tithing in our daily life 1032
5.3. The indemnity fund 1033
Section 6. God Accepts Prayers for the Public Purpose 1034
6.1. Greetings require protocol 1034
6.2. Praying in the name of the True Parents 1037
Section 7. Witnessing Is Searching for True Love 1038
7.1. Witnessing is multiplying myself 1038
7.2. Course of education and seven-day fast 1041
Section 8. Indemnity, Service, and a Life of Dedication 1042
8.1. The course of indemnity 1042
8.2. Service and dedication 1043
Section 9. Rules and Etiquette among Members 1046
9.1. Members relate through heavenly love 1046
9.2. Cain-Abel relationships between members 1047
9.3. Definition of Cain and Abel 1048
Section 10. Social Relationships 1050
10.1. People should not be treated lightly 1050
10.2. Social relationships 1052

Chapter 4. Tradition and Daily Etiquette of Blessed Families

Section 1. The Daily Etiquette of a Blessed Family 1055
1.1. Establishing proper family rules and practices 1055
1.2. Family life 1057
Section 2. The Exemplary Family Life of Faith 1058
2.1. A family life of faith educates the children 1058
2.2. A life of prayer 1060
2.3. Blessed families are the elders of the tribe 1061
Section 3. A Life of Living with True Love 1063
3.1. Living for the sake of others 1063
3.2. People who live for the sake of others become the center 1065
Section 4. Parents Must Establish the Law of Love 1066
4.1. Parents are closer than friends 1066
4.2. Tradition is passed on by parents 1067
Section 5. Proper Behavior between Spouses 1069
5.1. Spouses are companions for life 1069
5.2. Spouses are comrades in faith 1070
Section 6. Raising Children in Faith 1073
6.1. Parents are to teach their children heavenly law 1073
6.2. The importance of faith education 1074
Section 7. Love between Siblings 1075

Section 8. Thrift, Diligence, and a Frugal Family Life 1077
8.1. A frugal life 1077
8.2. Thrift 1078
Section 9. Proprieties of Daily Living 1080
9.1. Clothes 1080
9.2. Facial expression 1081
9.3. Hairstyle 1081
9.4. Fingernails and toenails 1082
9.5. How you should walk 1082
9.6. Sitting posture 1082
9.7. Sleeping 1082
9.8. Health 1083
9.9. Speech 1083
Section 10. Teachings on Purity 1083
10.1. Strictly follow the commandment during adolescence 1083
10.2. Children of heaven 1086
Section 11. A Life of Sanctification 1087
11.1. Holy salt 1087
11.2. Holy Candles 1088
11.2.1. Shimjung Candle 1088
11.2.2. Birth Candles 1088
11.2.3. Ae Cheon Candle (Love of God Candle) 1089
11.2.4. Tongil (Unification) Candle 1089
Section 12. Rituals in the Life of Blessed Families 1090
12.1. Pledge service 1090
12.2. Family service 1091
12.3. Hoondokhwae 1091
12.4. Family Pledge 1092
Section 13. Ancestral Rituals for Blessed Families 1093
13.1. Laws on ancestor worship were originally part of heavenly law. 1093
Section 14. Blessed Families Ceremonies 1095
14.1. Birth 1095
14.2. The Blessing 1096
14.3. The Seunghwa Ceremony 1098
Section 15. Attitude when Observing Holy Days 1099
15.1. The significance of Holy Days 1099
15.2. Ceremonial robes 1100

BOOK EIGHT

Sin and Restoration Through Indemnity

Chapter 1. Fundamentals of Indemnification and the Principle of Restoration

Section 1. The Realms of Indirect and Direct Dominion 1107
1.1. The realm of indirect dominion 1107
1.2. The realm of direct dominion 1109
Section 2. Human Beings Have a Portion of Responsibility 1112
2.1. The reason God gave us a portion of responsibility 1112
2.2. The consequences of failing to fulfill our portion of responsibility 1116
Section 3. Fulfilling Our Portion of Responsibility 1118
3.1. Freedom from the portion of responsibility in relation to restoration 1118
3.2. Perfection is a family that has unified heaven and earth 1120
Section 4. The Discovery of the Portion of Responsibility and Significance 1123
Section 5. Our Attitude toward Fulfilling Our Portion of Responsibility 1126
5.1. Our portion of responsibility can be found in every field of human life 1126
5.2. Our attitude toward fulfilling our portion of responsibility 1127

Chapter 2. The Internal Meaning of Sin and the Fall

Section 1. The Fall Means the Father's Place was Taken by Another 1130
1.1. Satan, the devil, is our father 1130
1.2. If the Fall had not occurred... 1134
Section 2. Through the Fall Our Lineage Changed to that of Satan 1137
2.1. We have inherited the lineage of an enemy 1137
2.2. Original sin is inherited through lineage 1139
Section 3. Satan Is the Adulterer of God's Love 1141
3.1. Satan is the fallen archangel Lucifer 1141
3.2. Satan is the enemy of love 1143
Section 4. The Fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil was Eve's Sexual Organ 1144
4.1. Covering their sexual parts was an indication of sin 1144
4.2. The fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil is the crossroads of life and death 1147
Section 5. Grief Caused Over the Fall and God's Heart in Restoration 1150
5.1. The enemy of love; the bitter pain caused by the Fall 1150
5.2. Conditions for Satan's accusations 1153
Section 6. The Blessing of the True Parents and the Restoration of Lineage 1156
6.1. True Parents are needed as the Messiah 1156
6.2. Restoration of lineage is the core of the ideology centered on the returning Lord 1159

Chapter 3. The Formula for Indemnification and Restoration

Section 1. The Works of Rebecca, Tamar and Mary from the Viewpoint of the Restoration of Motherhood 1164
1.1. The Fall of Eve, and Rebecca's and Tamar's deceptions 1164
1.2. Fundamental restoration in the womb, through Tamar 1165
1.3. The mission of Mary in the course of Jesus 1169
Section 2. The Historical Indemnity Course of True Father 1173
2.1. What our attitude should be in following the course of indemnity 1173
2.2. Selecting True Mother 1179
Section 3. The 8 Stage Indemnity Course & 8 Stage Settlement Ceremony 1181
3.1. The 8 vertical & horizontal stages in the course of restoration 1181
3.2. Satan's activities and the victory in the eight stages 1182
3.3. Ceremony for the Settlement of the Eight Stages 1186
Section 4. Restoration of Rights of the Eldest Son, Parent and Kingship ... 1188
4.1. Restoration of the right of the eldest son 1188
4.2. Restoration of the right of the parent 1192
4.3. Restoration of the right of kingship 1193
Section 5. Development of the Providence of Restoration and the Mission of the Providential Nations 1196
5.1. The flow of Christian culture following World War II 1196
5.2. The mission of Japan as the Eve nation 1198
5.3. The mission of America as the world-level Rome 1200
5.4. The providence of restoration through indemnity is the path that returns to the original ideal 1204

Chapter 4. The Course of Indemnity and Our Life

Section 1. The Way of Restoration Is the Inevitable Course for Humankind 1206
1.1. Restoration through indemnity is the way of re-creation 1206
1.2. The Reason We Must Go the Way of Indemnity 1207
Section 2. The Foundation of Faith and the Foundation of Substance 1209
2.1. The Foundation for the Messiah 1209
2.2. The ultimate issue is the restoration of lineage 1212
Section 3. Why Restoration through Indemnity is Necessary 1213
3.1. Two things that must be restored through indemnity 1213
Section 4. You Must Set Indemnity Conditions Yourself 1217
4.1. No one else can set indemnity conditions for you 1217
4.2. The mindset necessary to fulfill one's responsibility 1219
Section 5. There is No Separation from Satan without the Law of Indemnity 1219
5.1. I am standing at a divide 1219
5.2. How to get out of the realm of Satan (the realm of the Fall) 1222
Section 6. Faith Means Keeping the Law of Indemnity 1224
Section 7. The Way of Indemnity is the Way of Absolute Obedience and Absolute Submission 1228

BOOK NINE

Blessed Family

Chapter 1. True Parents and the Blessing

Section 1. The Meaning and Value of the Blessing 1239
1.1. What is the Blessing? 1239
1.1.1. The meaning of the Blessing 1239
1.1.2. The value of the Blessing 1242
1.1.3. The Blessing is the formula course for humanity 1246
1.2. The Blessing's true perspectives on marriage 1248
1.2.1. True marriage reflects the form of God. 1248
1.2.2. Marriage is for the perfection of love 1251
1.2.3. Marriage brings together heaven and earth 1253
1.3. Reasons for receiving the Blessing 1255
1.3.1. Fallen human beings have false parents 1255
1.3.2. The lineage of the enemy has been inherited 1258
1.3.3. The Messiah is needed as the True Parents 1262
Section 2. True Parents, Rebirth, and Transformation of the Lineage 1264
2.1. Who are True Parents? 1264
2.1.1. True Parents are the ancestors without original sin 1264
2.1.2. True Parents give rebirth to humanity through true love 1266
2.2. The core of providential rebirth 1268
2.2.1. True meaning of rebirth 1268
2.2.2. Rebirth 1270
2.3. The central ideology is the conversion of lineage 1271
2.4. Three stages in changing the lineage 1275
2.4.1. Holy wine ceremony 1275
2.4.2. Blessing Ceremony 1278
2.4.3. Three-day ceremony for substantial restoration 1280
Section 3. Responsibilities of Blessed Families 1283
3.1. Unity of heart with True Parents 1283
3.2. The absolute value of sexual love 1286
3.3. The importance of ideal marriage 1291
3.4. Blessing is the key to perfection of the ideal family 1294

Chapter 2. True Parents and the History of the Blessing

Section 1. True Parents and the Realm of the Third Israel 1300
1.1. Blessed families are the tribe of the True Parents 1300
1.2. Formation of the realm of the Third Israel 1301

1.3. The Blessing is the key for entering the Third Israel 1303
Section 2. The History of the Blessed Couples 1304
2.1. History of the 36, 72, and 124 Couples 1304
2.2. The 430 Couples represent the nation 1310
2.3. History of the 777, 1800, 6000 and 6500 couples 1312
2.4. The 30,000 Couples: Formation stage of the international Blessing 1318
2.5. The 360,000 Couples represent the growth stage of the international Blessing 1321
2.6. The 3.6 Million Couples represent the completion stage of the international Blessing 1325

Chapter 3. The Providential Significance of the Blessed Couples

Section 1. The 36 Couples 1331
1.1. The Three Couples first blessed 1331
1.2. The significance of the 36 Couples 1332
1.3. Anecdotes from the 33 Couples Blessing 1337
Section 2. The 72 Couples 1340
2.1. Significance of the 72 Couples Blessing 1340
Section 3. The 124 Couples 1344
3.1. Significance of 124 Couples 1344
3.2. Dedication ceremony and designation of 120 holy grounds 1348
Section 4. The 430 Couples 1348
4.1. Significance of the 430 Couples 1348
4.2. The 430 Couples and tribal messiahship 1354
Section 5. The 777 Couples 1356
5.1. The 777 Couples represent the world 1356
Section 6. The 1800 Couples 1363
6.1. The background to the 1800 Couples Blessing 1363
Section 7. The 6000 Couples 1366
Section 8. The 6500 Couples 1369
Section 9. The 30,000 Couples 1371
Section 10. The 360,000 Couples 1381
Section 11. The 3.6 Million Couples 1390
11.1. The Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples brought the era of liberation 1390
11.2. From 3.6 million to 36 million couples 1397
Section 12. The 360 Million Couples 1400
Section 13. The Already Married Couples 1406
Section 14. The Single Blessing 1411

Chapter 4. Blessed Families and Registration

Section 1. Registration of the Blessed Families and Our Homeland 1419
1.1. What is registration? 1419

1.2. Registration occurs in the era of the national level Blessing 1422
1.3. Registration requires a sovereign state 1424
1.4. Reclaiming the Homeland 1427
Section 2. The Conditions for Registration 1430
2.1. Change of the right of ownership, lineage, and realm of heart 1430
2.1.1. Change of the right of ownership 1430
2.1.2. Change of lineage 1433
2.1.3. Change of the realm of heart 1435
2.2. Tribal messiahship 1436
2.2.1. Mission of tribal messiahs 1436
2.2.2. Fulfillment of restoration of 160 families 1440
2.3. Formation of the tribes and genealogy of the heavenly nation 1444
2.4. The era of the great migration is coming 1446
Section 3. The Four-Position Foundation Registration Unification Blessing Ceremony 1447
3.1. Transition of the Three Ages Realm of Oneness Unification Blessing Ceremony 1447
3.2. Four-Position Foundation Registration 1450
3.3. True Parents' instructions to Registered Families 1451
3.4. Mobilization of blessed wives and the restoration of the homeland 1451
Section 4. The Era of Registration and Our Responsibilities 1453
4.1. Registration comes from the grace of the True Parents 1453
4.2. Establishing the tradition of Blessed Families 1455

BOOK TEN

The Way in the Completed Testament Age

Chapter 1. A Perspective on Human Life

Section 1. What Is Human Life? 1465
1.1. Problems in life have been like a maze 1465
1.2. What is our destiny? 1467
Section 2. Human Beings Are Resultant Beings 1468
2.1. Human beings was born from God's love 1468
2.2. Original purpose for the birth of human beings 1470
2.3. We live for the sake of love 1471
Section 3. The Great Value of Human Beings 1473
3.1. Original human value is akin to that of God 1473
3.2. Human beings: temples for God to indwell 1476
Section 4. Original Human Nature and the True Lifestyle 1479
4.1. Live in harmony with your original mind 1479
4.2. Human perfection means mind-body unity 1480
4.3. The original mind is the teacher and closest to God 1483
Section 5. The Path of True People 1487
5.1. The path people should seek 1487
5.2. The way true human beings should go 1490
5.3. The rationale for establishing the law of living for the sake of others .. 1492

Chapter 2. A Perspective on the Family

Section 1. What Is an Ideal Family? 1496
1.1. Why is the family valuable? 1496
1.2. The family gives birth to the love for society, nation, and humanity 1499
Section 2. The Family Is the Basic Unit of Heaven 1503
2.1. Family is the cornerstone of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven 1503
2.2. The family is the training ground for true love 1506
Section 3. The Ideal and Value of True Family 1511
3.1. True parents, true couples, and true children 1511
3.2. The qualities of a true family 1515
Section 4. We Enter Heaven as a Family 1519
Section 5. The Family Pledge 1523
5.1. Those who can recite the Family Pledge 1523
5.2. The content of the Family Pledge 1525

Chapter 3. A Perspective on the Nation and the World

Section 1. The One Nation and World Sought by Humankind 1536
1.1. The Adam-centered ideology, Adam's nation and Adam's world 1536
1.2. The nation we all desire 1538
Section 2. Characteristics of an Ideal Society, Nation and World 1542
2.1. Humankind as one extended family 1542
2.2. The society of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values 1545
2.3. One language 1546
Section 3. The Way of True Love is the Central Ideology of Humankind 1548
3.1. The way of Adam is the way of the parent 1548
3.2. The way of the parent is the way of true love 1550
Section 4. The Future of the Democratic and Communist Worlds 1554
4.1. Unifying the democratic and communist worlds 1554
4.2. Head-wing thought will rectify religion and philosophy 1558
Section 5. When God-centered Sovereignty Is Restored 1560
5.1. The world where God's will is fulfilled 1560
5.2. Seeking God's nation 1563

Chapter 4. The Way in the Completed Testament Age

Section 1. The Settlement of the Victorious Domain of True Parents 1566
1.1. Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages: restoration of the right of the eldest son, right of the parent and right of kingship 1566
1.2. Restoration of the right of the parent and right of kingship through the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father 1568
Section 2. Complete Providential Settlement and the Great Proclamation of the True Parents 1570
2.1. Proclamation of the True Parents (Messiah) 1570
2.2. Declaration of God's Eternal Blessing (*Chil Il Jeol*: 7.1. Day) 1572
2.3. Declaration of the elimination of historical indemnity 1574
2.4. Declaration of the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth (*Chil Pal Jeol*: 7.8. Day) 1575
2.5. Proclamation of the liberation of hell and the opening of the gates of heaven 1579
2.6. Ceremony for the Total Liberation of the People in the Spirit World 1580
2.7. Proclamation of the Complete Liberation for Cosmic Expansion of the True Blessing and the Rooting Out of the Satanic Lineage 1584
2.8. Proclamation of the Completion of the Completed Testament Age and God's Kingdom on Earth and in Heaven 1586
2.9. Declaration of Congratulations for True Parents' East-West (Global) Victory 1588
2.10. Congratulatory Declaration of True Parents' Cosmic Victory 1590

2.11. Declaration of the Liberation and Unification of the Cosmos of the Parents of Heaven and Earth (*Gu Gu Jeol*: 9.9. Day) 1593
2.12. Declaration of the Era of the Fourth Adam (*Ssang Shib Jeol* – Double Ten Day) 1597
Section 3. The Seven Great Jardim Declarations and the Establishment of the New Eden 1597
3.1. The first declaration: The New Hope Farm Declaration 1597
3.2. The second declaration: Absolute, Unique, Unchanging and Eternal Ideal Family 1598
3.3. The third declaration: Declaration of the First, Second and Third Creators 1599
3.4. The fourth declaration: Declaration of the Accomplishment of our Destined Task 1600
3.5. The fifth declaration: *Sa Sa Jeol* (4.4. Day); Declaration of the Family ... 1603
3.6. The sixth declaration: Ceremony of Liberation and Unification of All Spirits and the Entire Spirit World 1604
3.7. The seventh declaration: Declaration of the Cosmic *Sa Sa Jeol* (4.4. Day) 1605
Section 4. The Family Federation for World Peace and Unification 1606
Section 5. Crossing Through the Valley of the Fall 1607
5.1. The Parents' path is different from that of the children 1607
5.2. The path of children is the path of absolute obedience 1608
5.3. Blessed members' rules and duties 1611
Section 6. The Realm of the Fourth Adam Is the Era of Freedom and Autonomy 1614
6.1. The era of the fourth Adam is that of natural restoration 1614
6.2. The era of praying in one's own name 1616
6.3. The era of creating oneself in the status of the second creator 1616
Section 7. The Royal Family of Love 1618
7.1. Heaven is open to those with the qualities of the royal family 1618
7.2. Become a person of love 1623

BOOK ELEVEN

The Root of the Universe

Chapter 1.The Fundamental Order of the Universe

Section 1. The Manifestation of God's Dual Characteristics 1629
1.1. God is the Original Being having unified dual characteristics 1629
1.1.1. God is the Original Being of unified love 1629
1.2. The universe was created in the image of dual characteristics 1633
1.3. God's motive in creating the universe 1637
Section 2. Subject and Object Partners Comprise the Universe 1642
2.1. The principle of the pair system governs the existence of the universe 1642
2.2. Subject and object partners in a love relationship 1647
Section 3. Love Is the Root of the Universe 1653
3.1. The center of the universe is love 1653
3.2. Humankind is the center of love in the created universe 1659
3.2.1. Human beings are the objects of God's love 1659
3.2.2. The process of human maturity is reflected in God's own development 1660
3.2.3. Humankind is the center of all created beings 1663
3.3. The world of creation is a museum of love for humankind 1668
3.3.1. God's will in creating the universe 1668
3.3.2. The world of creation is the textbook of love for humankind 1669
Section 4. Evolution or Creation? 1675
4.1. The fundamental error of the theory of evolution 1675
4.1.1. Strict distinction of species and absolute rejection of intervention 1675
4.1.2. Laws of the action of energy and the fabrications of evolutionary theory 1683
4.1.3. Theory of evolution refuted by the logic of love 1690
4.2. The Theory of Evolution is an outdated idea 1694

Chapter 2. The Creation of Humankind and the Perfection of the Ideal of Love

Section 1. The Absolute Value of Love 1699
1.1. Man and woman 1699
1.2. The sexual organs perfect man and woman 1703
1.3. The sexual organs: the beginning and the end in solving fundamental problems 1707
Section 2. The Sexual Organs Are the Three Great Original Palaces, and the Most Holy Place 1711
2.1. The original palace of love, life and lineage 1711

2.2. The organs with which to complete God's purpose of creation 1718
2.3. The sexual organs are the most holy place, where God dwells 1722
Section 3. The Oneness of God and Humankind, and the Perfection of the Ideal of Love 1725
3.1. The point of settlement of love where God and humankind meet 1725
3.2. Fundamental principle of the ideal oneness of God and humankind in love 1729
3.2.1. Explaining the oneness of God and humankind 1729
3.2.2. The base for the oneness of God and humankind 1733
3.2.3. The root of true lineage: God 1738
3.3. Why marriage is important 1741
3.3.1. The purpose of marriage is to resemble God 1741
3.3.2. Conjugal love and absoluteness 1745
Section 4. The Sexual Organs Are the Greatest Mystery and Interest 1749
4.1. The sexual organs were created with utmost diligence 1749
4.2. The owners of the sexual organs were interchanged 1750
4.3. True love can digest even the unclean 1755
4.4. Vertical and horizontal to be balanced by the sexual organs 1757
4.5. Love is not known through being taught 1761
Section 5. The Sexual Organs Are the Crossroads to Heaven or Hell 1763

Chapter 3. The Human Fall and Restoration

Section 1. The Internal Significance of the Fall 1768
1.1. The Fall was a misuse of love 1768
1.2. The fruit of good and evil is Eve's sexual organ 1773
1.3. The devil Satan fell through fornication 1777
1.4. Humankind inherited Satan's lineage through the Fall 1782
1.5. The meaning of the serpent's temptation 1785
Section 2. The Results of the Fall 1787
2.1. Fallen human beings and the state of the fallen world 1787
2.1.1. Youth problems and free sex 1787
2.1.2. Corruption of sexual morality 1790
2.1.3. Homosexuality 1792
2.2. Reining in the errant culture of free sex 1795
2.2.1. In the Last Days the order of love is corrupted 1795
2.2.2. Absolute purity: do not defile the lineage 1798
2.3. True Parents and fundamental restoration 1802
2.3.1. To solve the fundamental problem, the origin of the Fall must be understood 1802
2.3.2. Why True Parents are needed 1805
2.3.3. Lineage is restored through the Blessing 1807
2.3.4. Final goal: realizing the ideal of the true family 1810

BOOK TWELVE

The Pacific Rim Providence

Chapter 1. The Twenty-first Century Is the Oceanic Era

Section 1. The Sea Is a Valuable Storeroom for the Future of Humankind .. 1817
1.1. The sea is the solution to the problem of hunger 1817
1.2. Unlimited resources from developing the ocean bed 1822
1.3. The future will be the water age 1824
1.4. The ocean will become the only energy source 1828
1.5. Oceanic nations will take the lead 1829
Section 2. The Ocean Providence Carried Out by True Parents 1831
2.1. The ocean providence centering on North America 1831
2.1.1. The marine products industry in America 1831
2.1.2. Seilo distribution organization 1837
2.1.3. Alaska marine products industries 1838
2.1.4. The fish-farming industry 1846
2.1.5. Ocean Church and sea training 1849
2.2. The ocean providence centering on South America 1852
2.2.1. The construction of Jardim, the New Eden 1852
2.2.2. The Pantanal Holy Ground 1858
2.2.3. Animal museum 1865
2.3. Ocean providence centering on Korea 1867
2.3.1. Boat of Heavenly Victory 1867
2.3.3. Shipyards 1868
2.3.4. Developing Jejudo to become an international fishing location 1871
2.3. We can learn a great deal from the ocean 1876
2.3.1. Like the ocean, we should live while embracing the universe 1876
2.3.2. Life in the ocean is amazing and mystifying 1878
2.3.3. The great power of nature lies in the ocean 1882

Chapter 2. The Ocean Leisure Industry and Hobby Industry

Section 1. The Development of the Ocean Leisure Industry 1887
1.1. Fishing and hunting are aspects of the leisure industry 1887
1.2. One Hope: a ship that cannot sink 1889
1.3. The future leisure industry that will be spotlighted is fishing 1891
1.3.1. The joy and zest of sea-fishing 1891
1.3.2. The essential points for sea-fishing 1895
1.3.3. You will not die of hunger if you learn to fish 1900
1.3.4. Sea fishing is a mind game 1902

Section 2. People and the Hobby Life 1908
2.1. The future world is the age of hobby life 1908
2.2. The hobby industry is the shortcut leading to the world of peace 1909
2.3. We must prepare for the age of the hobby industry 1911

Chapter 3. The Pacific Rim Era and the Inauguration of the Island Nations Federation
Section 1. Now is the Pacific Rim era 1915
1.1. Why is the Pacific era coming? 1915
1.2. The central nations in the Pacific era are Korea and Japan 1923
Section 2. Inauguration of the Federation of Island Nations 1928
2.1. The background of the inauguration of the Federation of Island Nations 1928
2.2. Outline of the inaugural rally 1930
2.3. True Parents' keynote address at the inaugural rally 1931
Section 3. The Ocean Providence Centering on Hawaii 1934
3.1. Japan and Hawaii 1934
3.2. The reason Hawaii is the center of the ocean providence 1935

Chapter 4. Ocean Civilizations Seen from the Viewpoint of God's Providence
Section 1. The History of Human Civilization and Trends in its Development 1938
1.1. The currents of world history centering on civilizations 1938
1.2. The reason Israel, Rome, and Britain failed 1940
1.3. America is the Rome of the twentieth century 1945
Section 2. The Significance of Island Civilization 1948
2.1. Britain, the greatest oceanic island nation 1948
2.2. The difference between British civilization and Japanese civilization ... 1950
Section 3. Japan's Mission as the Eve Nation 1953
3.1. Japan is the Eve nation 1953
3.2. The reason for choosing Japan as the Eve nation 1956
3.3. Japan's mission as the mother nation 1961

Chapter 5. All Civilizations Will Come to Fruition on the Peninsula
Section 1. The Peninsular Civilization and Korea 1969
1.1. The trend of world civilization 1969
1.2. The role of the peninsular civilization from the Principle perspective .. 1971
Section 2. The Providential Mission of the Korean Peninsula 1976
2.1. The Korean peninsula is an encapsulation of the world 1976
2.2. A unified cultural sphere centering on the Korean peninsula 1977
2.3. The reunification of the Korean peninsula is the model for world unification 1983
2.4. Providential developments for the restoration of the Adam nation 1986
2.5. We should seek the homeland 1993
2.5.1. The liberation of the homeland is the hope of all humankind 1993

BOOK THIRTEEN

Restoration of the True God's Homeland

Contents

Chapter 1. The Restoration of the True God's Homeland

Section 1. The Homeland that the True God Desires 2005
Section 2. We Must Find Our Homeland 2008
Section 3. The Standard Bearers for the Restoration of Our Homeland 2011
Section 4. Soldiers for the Independence of Our Homeland 2013
Section 5. The Restoration of Our Homeland through True Love 2016
Section 6. Our Conviction and Attitude for the Restoration of Our Homeland 2019

Chapter 2. Home Church as the Internal Foundation of the Providence

Section 1. What Is Home Church? 2021
Section 2. The Beginning of Home Church Activities 2025
Section 3. The Development of Home Church Activities 2028
3.1. Conditions tribal messiahs should fulfill 2028
3.2. Visiting homes, volunteering, and education 2031
Section 4. Completing Home Church through the 360 Homes 2035
4.1. The numerical significance of 360 homes 2035
4.2. Home Church is the place where the providence is finally settled 2036

Chapter 3. Why We Must Do *Tong Ban Gyeokpa* (Local Breakthrough) Activities

Section 1. The Reason We Are Doing *Tong Ban Gyeokpa* Again 2039
Section 2. The Local Level Is the Last Fortress of Victory and Defeat 2043
Section 3. The *Tong-ban* Movement Is the Strategy to Unite North and South Korea 2047
Section 4. The *Tong-ban* Breakthrough Must be Centered on Families 2052
Section 5. Organizational Expansion of *Tong-ban* Activities 2057
5.1. Organizational expansion centering on people of social eminence 2057
5.2. Organizational expansion through local volunteer activities 2061
5.3. Organizational expansion through the strengthening of education 2062
5.4. The Providence centering on the Second Generation and the Professors' and Students' Federation for Unification. 2066
5.5. Tribal Messiah Activities and *Tong-ban* Breakthrough Activities 2069
Section 6. The Unification Movement and the Role of Women 2074

Chapter 4. Be Active as Tribal Messiahs

Section 1. Now is the Time for the Unification of North, South, East, and West 2079
Section 2. The Significance of the Tribal Messiah Proclamation 2085
Section 3. The Reason for Giving the Tribal Messiah Responsibility 2086
Section 4. Let Us Plant Our True Heart in the Original Homeland 2092
Section 5. Our Task for This Time Period 2094
5.1. Let us testify to True Parents 2094
5.2. Let us attend True Parents' picture in every family 2095
5.3. Let's do revival services for our tribes 2097
5.4. Organize hoondokhwae 2099

Chapter 5. Our Attitude towards Making a New Start

Section 1. Determination for a New Start 2102
Section 2. The Attitude to Inherit True Parents' Tradition 2103
Section 3. Let Us Plant True Love 2107
Section 4. Plant the Root of Love in Your Hometown 2110
Section 5. The Cooperation of the Spirit World and Our Conviction 2111
Section 6. Our Original Hometown and the Way to Enter the Kingdom of Heaven 2116
6.1. Hometown is a world of the original creation 2116
6.2. Registration in the Kingdom of Heaven 2118

Chapter 6. True Parents' Textbook for the Unification of Korea and the World

Section 1. World Unification and the Unification of North and South Korea through True Love 2124
Section 2. The Cosmos is Our Hometown and Homeland 2134
Section 3. Everybody Wants True Love 2141
Section 4. The Path for America and Humanity in the Last Days 2147

BOOK FOURTEEN

A Life of True Filial Piety

Chapter 1. The Meaning of Loyalty and Filial Piety

Section 1. Loyalty and Filial Piety Are the Central Thought of Koreans 2179
Section 2. Saints and Divine Sons and Daughters of Perfect Loyalty and Filial Piety 2181

Chapter 2. True Loyalty and Filial Piety

Section 1. True Loyalty and Filial Piety Means Taking Initiative in Difficulty . 2185
Section 2. True Loyalty and Filial Piety Establish the Family and Perfect the Parents and the Nation 2187
Section 3. True Loyalty and Filial Piety Is Being Obedient and Loving Others 2189

Chapter 3. The Way of Loyalty and Filial Piety

Section 1. Genuine Loyalty and Filial Piety Demands the Cost of Your Life 2192
Section 2. True Loyalty and Filial Piety that Anticipates the Needs of Others 2196
Section 3. The True and Unconditional Filial Child 2199

Chapter 4. Loyalty and Filial Piety Toward God

Section 1. God's Hope 2203
Section 2. Absolute Loyalty and Filial Piety that Moves God 2208
Section 3. The Loyalty and Filial Piety of Jesus 2211

Chapter 5. The Inseparability of Filial Piety, Loyalty and Religion

Chapter 6. Our Level of Loyalty, Filial Piety and True Love Determine Our Path to Heaven or Hell

Chapter 7. God and True Parents

Section 1. True Parents Are the Model of Loyalty and Filial Piety 2222
Section 2. Loyalty to True Parents Is Loyalty to God 2224

BOOK FIFTEEN

The Life of an Owner of Cheon Il Guk

Chapter 1. God's True Love Is the Motivating Force for the Creation

Section 1. True Love is at the Center of God's Desire 2233
Section 2. True Love for the Sake of Attaining Oneness with God and True Parents 2236
Section 3. The Absolute Object of God's Love Are Our First Ancestors, Adam and Eve 2239
Section 4. True Family Is the Primary Platform of True Love 2248

Chapter 2. God's Kingdom and the True Family

Section 1. God's Ideal of Creation Is the Realization of the Four-Position Foundation and the True Family 2251
Section 2. True Families Produce the Citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven. 2256
Section 3. Citizens of God's Kingdom are Educated in True Families. 2260
Section 4. Heaven is Based On True Families. 2263

Chapter 3. God and True Parents

Section 1. True Parents: The Cherished Hope of God and Humanity 2270
Section 2. God the Vertical Parent, True Parents the Horizontal Parent 2280
Section 3. True Parents Who Liberate God 2284
Section 4. True Parents Are the Way to Heaven 2288

Chapter 4. The Way of Becoming Citizens of Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. God's Hope for Humankind 2298
Section 2. Cheon Il Guk, Our Original Homeland 2301
Section 3. Qualifications for Becoming Citizens of Cheon Il Guk 2307
Section 4. Witness in Order to Win the Heavenly Right of Ownership 2317
Section 5. Life of Owners of Cheon Il Guk 2323
5.1. One heart, one body, one mindset, one harmony 2323
5.2. Eight stages of purity 2325
Section 6. Inheriting the Realm of Victory of the Cosmic True Parent and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth 2331
6.1. Name 2331
6.2. The word 2334
6.3. Actual accomplishments 2336
Section 7. The Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony and the Coronation of the King of the Blessed Families 2338

BOOK SIXTEEN

True Families and the Family Pledge

Chapter 1. The Family Pledge: Declaration and Preconditions

Section 1. The Background to the Family Pledge 2353
1.1. This is the age centering on families, not on individuals 2353
1.2. The Settlement of the Completed Testament Age and the beginning of the family age 2356
1.3. Establishing the Family Federation – moving towards the age of the worldwide family 2360
1.4. The reason for establishing the Family Pledge 2365
Section 2. The Meaning and Value of the Family Pledge 2367
2.1. The importance of the Family Pledge 2367
2.2. The Family Pledge is the encapsulation of the outline of restoration 2370
2.3. The central philosophy of the Family Pledge is "True Love" 2372
2.4. You must maintain the Family Pledge as your standard 2374
2.5. Our attitude toward the Family Pledge 2377
Section 3. The Family Pledge and the Tradition of the Blessed Families 2379
3.1. We must create the Kingdom of Heaven by serving others 2379
3.2. You must live united with True Parents 2380
3.3. We must set up the correct family tradition and family law 2383

Chapter 2. Explanation of the Family Pledge

Section 1. Explanation of Family Pledge Number One 2387
1.1. The owner of Cheon Il Guk 2387
1.1.1. The meaning of Cheon Il Guk 2387
1.1.2. The attitude and lifestyle of an owner of Cheon Il Guk 2388
1.2. Centering on true love 2390
1.2.1. The primary premise of the Family Pledge is "by centering on true love" 2390
1.2.2. True Love is the love connected only with God 2392
1.2.3. The foundation for true love is a true family 2394
1.3. Seeking our original homeland 2396
1.3.1. The true meaning of our original homeland 2396
1.3.2. The original homeland we must seek 2400
1.4. The original ideal of creation 2403
1.5. Building the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven 2407
1.5.1. The starting point for the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven is the family 2407

1.5.2. Building the Kingdom of Heaven is the mission of Blessed Families 2411
1.5.3. The return to one's hometown and the completion of the tribal messiah mission 2414
Section 2. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Two 2417
2.1. Our family pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth 2418
2.1.1. Adam's family is the representative and central family 2418
2.1.2. Blessed families have the same value as the original family 2420
2.2. Perfect the dutiful family way of filial sons and daughters in our family, patriots in our nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth 2424
2.2.1. The path of filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters that we must inevitably go 2424
2.2.2. The difference between a saint and a divine son or daughter 2431
2.2.3. The true way that people must go 2435
Section 3. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Three 2439
3.1. The Four Great Realms of Heart 2439
3.2. The Three Great Kingships 2449
3.2.1. The Three Great Kingships are the basic framework of the ideal of creation 2449
3.2.2. Restoration of the right of the first son, the right of the parent and the right of kingship 2454
3.3. Perfecting the realm of the royal family 2458
3.3.1. The Kingdom of Heaven is the destination of the realm of the royal family of Love 2458
3.3.2. What is the realm of the royal family? 2462
3.3.3. The Realm of the royal family does not include the direct children 2468
3.3.4. Towards the era of nation-building centering on the realm of the royal family 2471
Section 4. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Four 2473
4.1. God's ideal of creation 2473
4.2. The universal family encompassing heaven and earth 2474
4.2.1. The basis of the universal family encompassing heaven and earth: the family 2474
4.2.2. The core of a society of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values is love. 2476
4.3. The world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness 2478
4.3.1. Our idea: one unified world 2478
4.3.2. Love is the essence of freedom, peace and happiness 2481
Section 5. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Five 2484
5.1. The unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners 2484
5.1.1. The spirit world is the subject partner 2484

5.1.2. We must unify the spirit world and the physical world 2487
5.2. Strive to advance 2491
5.2.1. Strive to advance every day 2491
5.2.2. Let us pave a true love highway 2494
Section 6. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Six 2497
6.1. A family that embodies God and True Parents 2497
6.2. Families that move heavenly fortune 2499
6.3. A family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community 2501
Section 7. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Seven 2503
7.1. The family rooted in the original lineage 2504
7.2. Through living for the sake of others 2506
7.3. Perfecting a world based on the culture of heart 2508
Section 8. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Eight 2511
8.1. As we enter the Completed Testament Age 2511
8.1.1. What is the Completed Testament Age? 2511
8.1.2. The Completed Testament Age is declared through the victory of the True Parents. 2514
8.2. Through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience 2517
8.2.1. God's principle of creation and absolute faith and absolute obedience 2517
8.2.2. The practice of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience sends you straight to the Kingdom of Heaven 2522
8.2.3. The standard of oneness is absolute faith and absolute love 2524
8.3. To achieve the ideal of oneness of God and humankind in love 2527
8.3.1. The ideal oneness of God and humankind in love is God's purpose of creation 2527
8.3.2. How is the oneness of God and humankind realized? 2528
8.3.3. We are to restore the ideal of oneness of God and humankind in love 2532
8.4. The realm of liberation and the realm of complete freedom in the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven 2533
8.4.1. Building the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven through true love 2533
8.4.2. Let us pledge to perfect the realm of liberation 2537

BOOK ONE

TRUE GOD

Contents

Chapter 1. The Original Being of God

Section 1. God Is the Incorporeal Subject Partner 51
1.1. The incorporeal God 51
1.2. In the beginning we naturally knew about God 53
Section 2. The Incorporeal God Needs a Body 55
2.1. God created Adam and Eve in order to assume physical form 55
2.2. Adam is the first ancestor and visible God 57
Section 3. God is a Personal God 60
3.1. A personal God with intellect, emotion, and will 60
3.2. We need a personal God with whom we can be one 62
Section 4. God Is Our Father 64
4.1. God and human beings are related as parent and child 64
4.2. God is the closest person to you 68
Section 5. God's Omniscience and Omnipotence Are Within the Principle 71
5.1. God's omniscience and omnipotence are based on principles 71
5.2. Only love is the absolute standard 73
5.3. Even God is absolutely obedient to love 76
Section 6. God is Omnipresent Through His Love 79
6.1. Only love freely traverses borders 79
6.2. Love pervades the entire universe 80
Section 7. Assessing the Existing Views of God 82
7.1. Existing doctrines of God are contradictory 82

Chapter 2. God and the Work of Creation

Section 1. God's Motivation for Creating Is Love 87
1.1. The Work of Creation Required Complete Investment 87
1.2. Realizing the ideal of creation through love 90
Section 2. God's Purpose for Creating Human Beings 92
2.1. God created human beings as His object partners in love 92
2.2. God invests the essence of His love and life 94
Section 3. The Ideal of Love to Be Attained Through Adam and Eve 95
3.1. God created Adam as a body of the invisible God 95
3.2. Husband and Wife Stand as Second Creators 98
Section 4. The Ideal of Love is Fulfilled in the Family 101
4.1. God's ideal of creation is the completion of the four-position foundation ... 101
4.2. The ideal of creation is fulfilled through the completion of the family ... 102
Section 5. God's Will in Creating All Things 104
5.1. The purpose for creating all things 104
5.2. The size and structure of the mysterious universe 107

5.3. Nature is a textbook teaching the ideal of love 108
5.4. Our attitude toward nature 111
5.5. Love nature and love people 113

Chapter 3. The History of the Providence of Restoration and Changes in Humankind's View of God

Section 1. The God of the Old Testament Age 115
1.1. The Old Testament Age was the age of the servant 115
1.2. In the Old Testament Age, angels worked on behalf of God 117
1.3. Why do angels become involved in human salvation? 119
Section 2. The Identity of Jehovah God 120
2.1. The attributes of Jehovah God 120
2.2. The religion of the bride and the religion of the archangel 121
Section 3. Jesus' View of God Based on the Parent-Child Relationship 123
3.1. The New Testament Age is the age of the adopted son 123
3.2. The adopted child can call out "father" 125
Section 4. The Completed Testament Age Is the Age of the Oneness of God and Humankind 126
4.1. True children should go through the change of lineage and rebirth 126
Section 5. God's First Manifestation 129
5.1. God finally reveals Himself 129

Chapter 4. True Father's Insights on God

Section 1. A God of Historical Bitterness, Grief and Pain 132
1.1. God lost the position of parent through the Fall 132
1.2. The bitter pain of restoration and God's six-thousand-year search for His children 135
Section 2. God's Grief and Shock at Losing His Son and Daughter 138
2.1. God lost His eternal and only son 138
2.2. God has been miserable throughout history 139
Section 3. A God Confined and Incarcerated 141
3.1. God lost His rightful position 141
3.2. God could not function as God 143
Section 4. The Reason God Cannot Punish Satan 144
4.1. The reasons for Satan's accusations 144
4.2. God abides by the law 147
Section 5. Let Us Liberate God 150
5.1. God is like a prisoner 150
5.2. God's liberation is a task for humankind 153
Section 6. The Liberation of God and the Way of the Filial Child 156
6.1. The path of restoration True Father has walked 156
6.2. A lifetime devoted to God's liberation 160

CHAPTER ONE

The Original Being of God

Section 1. God Is the Incorporeal Subject Partner

1.1. The incorporeal God

God is without form. If we should conceive of Him as large, He is infinitely large, and if we should conceive of Him as small, He is infinitely small. (35-156, 1970.10.13)

Does God really exist? Can God be felt as more real than the pain that makes you say "ouch" when someone pinches you, or more real than the experience of eating when you are hungry? This is the question. When we know that God truly exists, all problems will be solved. (89-72, 1976.7.11)

We have a mind. The mind is invisible and may not appear to exist; yet it exists. Does it exist in the head, or in the heart? Mind exists throughout your body, with not even one cell within your body where it is not present. The same is true for God. Because this world is like His body, He is present everywhere in the world. (38-242, 1971.1.8)

You cannot see God. Can you see energy? Since God is the original body of energy, you cannot see God even in the spirit world. (105-193, 1979.10.21)

The wise, all-knowing, and omnipotent God thought that it was most convenient to rule as an incorporeal being who could move around freely in the midst of things.

Since God has no form, He can pass through things at will without any problem. God may come to your body and pass through it, but you would not notice. When you doze off, God may walk on your body as He pleases without you noticing. How convenient! So it is plausible to say that God chose to remain invisible because He thought that it would be most convenient. (138-167, 1986.1.21)

We are normally unaware of the air around us. The air is there, but we do not feel it. If we unaware of the air circulating around us, how can we be aware of God?

It is most convenient for God to remain invisible. At the same time, He has to be more than big enough to wrap around this huge universe. Although God is without form, He requires a mind that is bigger than this universe. (138-167, 1986.1.21)

Do all of you here have love? Do you have life? You all have sperm or ova to continue your lineage, don't you? Do you also have a conscience? Then, have you ever seen love? Have you seen life, lineage or conscience? Although you know they exist, you can neither touch nor see them. You can know about them only by feeling them through your mind and heart. Likewise, when you are asked whether God exists, or whether you have seen Him, you cannot say that you have not seen Him. (275-13, 1995.10.30)

When God is in your heart, your heart knows it. When God is in your heart, you can break through the protective walls and communicate with the saints who died thousands of years ago. You can do this when the eternal God comes into your heart. You cannot capture eternity through time; time exists within eternity. That is why even though we cannot see God, our hearts know Him. (41-285, 1971.2.17)

How does God love? This is a difficult question to answer, isn't it? Since God is without form, He can go anywhere – inside a lady's eyes, inside her heart... He can go everywhere. There is nowhere He cannot go. Then, where does God live? Where is His home? God's home is in the middle of our heart. God's masculine heart lives in the heart of man, and God's feminine heart lives in the heart of woman. (128-325, 1983.10.2)

Suppose that God, who is omnipotent, all-knowing, and controls all of heaven and earth, were here. With His power, He could blow away Mt. Taebek and put a hole through the earth. Do you think you could survive watching such a God?

So it is good that God is invisible. If He were visible, your nerves would tremble and you could not survive for even one hour. So you should be grateful that God is invisible. This is not a laughing matter. What I have told you now comes from my own poignant experiences. It is an account from my own experiences, not those of others. (38-244, 1971.1.8)

What if God decided to remove all the air in the world, leaving only one gallon? It would be a naughty method, but if God did that, world unification would be no problem. Perhaps He would be able to do it in five minutes. If God took away all the air and asked, "Will you unify or not?," all humankind would shout in unison, "We will!" God could unite the world in an instant using this method, but we are thankful that God does not do that with the air. Without air we cannot live. Air is absolutely necessary for life. Yet people gulp air like thieves without feeling grateful for it. (38-244, 1971.1.8)

If God, the great Master of heaven and earth, were visible to human eyes, wouldn't people fight each other to capture God? There would be no way to stop the battle. So it is good that God is invisible. America and the Soviet Union would fight, each claiming God as theirs. They would. Who would be able to stop

the fighting? The all-knowing God stays invisible lest such fights break out. To wish that God were visible is foolish. It is better that He is not. (41-285, 1971.2.17)

This universe is veiled in mystery. This great universe is some 21 billion light years across. One light year is the distance light travels in a year. Light can circle the earth seven and a half times in one second, so you can begin to conceive of how far light travels in a year. Then, how large must the Master be who can rule this huge universe? If God had a body, how tall would He be? If God is as large as we say He is, would He be able to drag His cumbersome body around? How inconvenient it would be if He had to lumber about like that! Every time He moved the universe would fall over in surprise. God is a wise being. This is why He decided to be an invisible Lord. (138-167, 1986.1.21)

Have you ever thought about God's weight? How heavy do you think He is? How many kilograms does He weigh? Perhaps billions of tons? If He were that heavy, He would have a big problem trying to move around. But it is ideal for God that He is incorporeal. Even if you carry Him inside your wallet, you will not feel any weight.

Since He has no form, He can even go in and out through the eye of the smallest needle. In other words, He can move around at will. Being infinitely large yet also infinitely small, He is free to move around anywhere in the universe. (136-106, 1985.12.22)

If you have something you consider most precious, you will want to carry it with you at all times. You will not want to be separated from it even for a moment. Then if God, the greatest treasure of them all, was in your possession, where would you like to attend Him? Is there a store room where you can store Him securely, where you can attend Him? That place is none other than your heart and mind. The human heart and mind form the store room where God can be safely attended. (41-285, 1971.2.17)

Since God is without form, the conclusion is that He should give more importance to beings with form than He does to Himself. Only then will things begin to turn. Conversely, human beings should value their invisible mind and God more than their bodies. (111-49, 1981.1.18)

1.2. In the beginning we naturally knew about God

If humankind had not fallen, and we had been born through parents of original goodness, there would be no need to argue about whether God exists. People would naturally know from birth. Babies begin sucking as soon as they are born, when they sense their mother's breast in front of them. Do they need to learn how to suck while in the womb? They automatically know how to do it.

If human beings had not fallen, they would naturally recognize and cultivate their relationship with God, and automatically understand that their position

is to advance towards Him. But the Fall has made people forget everything. This is why the world is in doubt as to whether God exists. This is a tragic fact. (20-306, 1968.7.14)

Human beings are the masterpiece among the created beings of the universe. How great a masterpiece are they? They are superb beyond imagination. That being the case, when the absolute God created them, should He have created them in such a way that they do not know what He says, sees or feels? (53-51, 1972.2.8)

If Adam and Eve, who resembled God, had become the parents of humankind, they would have recognized God's constant presence in them through His works. Had that happened, there would be no doubts about God. If the Fall had not occurred, we would be able to sense God's presence at any time, and He would appear right away whenever we called Him. If we reach that level, who will deny His existence? No one.
(Blessed Family - 307)

God's existence is not just a matter of words. From the perspective of the subject-object partner relationship in the Principle, we do not need to prove that God exists. Rather, the position we must establish is that God existed before we had cognition of Him and that He rules over all our senses and over everything to do with us.

Awareness of this is more important than anything else. The basic rule is that awareness precedes knowledge, not the other way around. When we are cold, we first feel cold before we think, "I am cold." We do not first think "I am cold" before we feel it. Isn't that so? Likewise, because God exists, you must be able to feel His existence with your cells. Reaching that state is what matters. In other words, the issue is how we reach the state in which we can experience these things. (58-291, 1972.6.25)

You should be able to cry out "Father!" even in your sleep and even when you are by yourself. When in your daily life you forget to eat or sleep, and exclaim "Father!" with a deep longing, you will be able to hold His hand. Magical things will happen. When you call out "Father!" He will embrace you.

You must know that in your life of faith, the most precious thing is how you tap into those feelings that bring you those deep experiences. The degree and amount of your experience and feeling can be the measure of your faith. If you have such a heart of love, when you determine, "I must accomplish this," God will already be supporting you even before you ask, "Heavenly Father, please be with me." Feeling His support, you will say, "Thank you, God!" (58-297, 1972.6.25)

The Unification Principle teaches that God is the invisible, absolute Lord with dual characteristics in harmony. As a being of dual characteristics, God created Adam and Eve as manifestations of His duality. He intended to be their ver-

tical center when they grew up and connected horizontally through love. In other words, when Adam and Eve reached maturity, God's masculine characteristics would have entered Adam's mind and God's feminine characteristics likewise would have entered Eve's mind.

This does not mean that God is divided. God can be present in Adam's and Eve's minds because He is the Lord with dual characteristics. (138-245, 1986.1.24)

We say that God is a being who harmonizes dual characteristics, don't we? But I have not yet talked about Him as a unified being of love in addition to one harmonizing the dual characteristics. We need to add the fact that He is the unified being of love. (223-268, 1991.11.12)

Section 2. The Incorporeal God Needs a Body

2.1. God created Adam and Eve in order to assume physical form

Why does God need a form like Adam? All things have a form, but God is an invisible being. God has no form whatsoever. If we conceive of Him as large, He is infinitely large, and if we conceive of Him as small, He is infinitely small. Although all things of creation manifest with a certain standard form of that being, and although they manifest with a substantial body resembling that being, God cannot rule them directly. Hence, the substantial world of creation needs a substantial being with the character and form of the Master. God should have dominion over the infinite spirit world as well as over all things on earth. To be able to govern the archangel, beings with various forms, and even invisible beings, God needs a central aspect, that is, an external form. This is why God created Adam. (35-156, 1970.10.13)

God's purpose in creating a human being was to have dominion over the incorporeal and corporeal worlds through him. God must form a relationship with a being that has personality. Thus, with the perfection of Adam, God's image, that is His external form, is perfected. When God created Adam, He intended that Adam's shape, looks, character, and other characteristics should resemble His own as he stood at the center of the incorporeal world. Without a form, He could not have dominion over the world of form. (35-156, 1970.10.13)

Why did God create Adam and Eve? He did so to have a body. God, as an incorporeal being, cannot love His physical children without becoming a father and mother with a substantial body. God's purpose in creating Adam and Eve was, first, for the incorporeal God to acquire a body through Adam's body.

Second, in assuming a substantial form, He would experience a vibrating jolt to His being. Mere words cannot express the feeling. God wanted to feel joy through the stimulation of this impulse.

Third, God's domain does not extend over any area because, as the

vertical Father who occupies the central axis, He seeks to expand on the horizontal plane. (232-210, 1992.7.6)

You cannot see God even in the spirit world. God is not visible. Can you see energy? Since God is the original Being of energy, He cannot be seen even in the spirit world. He has no body. Hence, in order to guide and govern the physical world, He must assume physical form. What kind of God is He?

If, instead of falling, Adam had grown to maturity, flourished on earth, and gone to heaven, he would have become God who still retained the form of Adam. Hence, the invisible God and visible Adam would have become one. Then, Adam's laughter would have been God's laughter and the laughter of the universe. (105-193, 1979.10.21)

As an invisible deity, God cannot feel any stimulation from this universe. No matter how great a stimulus comes to His mind, as an incorporeal being, He will not feel inspiration. As these invisible aspects are the same, they cannot stimulate each other. When two conflicting things, like hot water and cold water, come together, there is a reaction, isn't there. God needs that kind of stimulation. (141-37, 1986.2.16)

God is invisible even in the spirit world. He has no form. Thus in order to become the corporeal parent of humankind, God has to acquire a form. Without form He cannot become the center. (222-337, 1991.11.7)

God's final purpose of creation is to acquire a body. Since the incorporeal God cannot govern the physical world, He must appear with a body as the Father and Mother of all humankind. He must assume a physical form in order to relate to created beings as subject partner and object partner, and thus feel stimulation through His sensory organs. (25-342, 1969.10.12)

As a being without form, God cannot rule over the physical world, although He created it. He therefore needs a body. God's purpose of creation is to acquire a body and become a substantial parent. That was to be Adam and Eve.

Had Adam and Eve reached perfection, God would have entered their minds and created a God-centered kingship. With the establishment of this kingship, the original Adam would have established the right of the parent, and along with that, the right of the eldest son. We would not have needed today's realm of the second son. Adam himself would be the eldest of the elder sons; likewise, Eve would also be the eldest of the elder daughters. This way, the two children would have become the parents of all human parents, and at the same time monarchs of the eternal world. (214-39, 1991.2.1)

Why did God give human beings a body? Why did He not just remain alone, without a body? Would that not have been much better? Why did God create the body, which has caused so many problems? God is a deity without

form. Such a God cannot be the ancestor of human beings who have a body. He has to assume a physical form, because He wants to relate to His children who have bodies. This is why Adam's body becomes like God's body. And so, God is elevated to an even higher stage, a world of a higher dimension than that of Adam's mind. (223-183, 1991.11.10)

Since God is invisible and has no form, He must manifest Himself by taking on a form. To rule over humankind and all things which do have form, God must take on the form of Adam and Eve. Then, once Adam and Eve and God become one, God's heart becomes the heart of Adam and Eve.

You must realize that when God would enter into Adam and Eve's heart and become one with them, He would, ultimately, be like Adam's internal master, or the internal Adam. (90-194, 1977.1.1)

Why did God create human beings? As this universe has physical form, God did so in order to manage and lead it through Adam and Eve, who would be the masters with bodily form. Since God is without form in the spirit world and cannot rule directly over the universe, He created humankind in order to assume physical form and become the King who can rule over His descendants, His children who are born in the world.

The face of this king was to be Adam's face. A king needs a queen. Who is the queen? Eve was to become the queen. Adam and Eve were to be the ancestors in the heavenly world as well as on earth. (199-144, 1990.2.16)

2.2. Adam is the first ancestor and visible God

God created Adam and Eve, first, in order to have a body, and second, in order to perfect love. Had Adam and Eve reached maturity and become a physical incarnation of love by becoming one, God would have come into them. He would then have been the loving Parent of humankind.

The ideal world would have been realized when Adam and Eve, as parents in God's external form, multiplied children. Then, the spiritual world and physical world would be connected through human beings. Thus, God also created human beings for the purpose of connecting the spiritual world with the physical world. In this way, God would dwell in Adam and Eve through love as the true parent of humankind, the parent incarnate. He would also appear as the parent in the form of Adam and Eve after Adam and Eve went to the spirit world. (Blessed Family - 307)

Adam, created as God's body, would become the true ancestor of humankind. Adam, in other words, would be God incarnate. For the incorporeal God to have dominion over the world of physical beings, to be able to see and hear in that tangible world, He needs a tangible body. The one created to be God incarnate was Adam.

Then who is Eve? Eve was Adam's

wife, a wife with physical form. If Adam were God incarnate, Eve would be God's wife incarnate. Saying that the holy God would take a wife may sound shocking, but Adam was created as God's body and he was to take Eve as his wife. Eve, then, would have been God's wife incarnate. (22-279, 1969.5.4)

God needed Adam and Eve for two purposes. First, it was to enable the incorporeal God to appear in an external form. Second, He wanted to fulfill the ideal of love. Adam and Eve were to be the basis and essence of the incorporeal God's capacity to relate to the corporeal world with its visible external form. (92-147, 1977.4.1)

What good would come from the incorporeal God staying alone in heaven? An invisible God has no use. To be the Parent of humankind He has to be able to feel, with a body. You must understand that God inevitably had to create Adam and Eve as beings embodying His duality; He had to have a body in human form. (133-91, 1984.7.10)

When God becomes a father with bodily form, the invisible and visible become one. This symbolizes the universe becoming one. For this to happen, God created Adam and Eve with a bodily form resembling God's external form.

Adam and Eve would then be elevated to the heavenly palace and heavenly throne where God would dwell in their hearts as the King and Queen to rule over the earthly and incorporeal worlds. In other words, God's kingdom is established. This kingdom is the kingdom of love. The spirit and body can unite only through love, and through nothing else. (143-93, 1986.3.16)

Eve was born as a princess and also as God's future object partner. God wanted to make her His partner in love, that is, His wife. Why is this? To share love God needs a body. God has no form in the spirit world. He appears as light, like the light of the sun that shines in the atmosphere twenty-four hours a day. God, as an incorporeal being, manages everything from above. But He would feel a great emptiness if, when looking down on human beings from on high, He was always reminded of the gap, of the impossibility of His incorporeal self having them, with their bodies, as His love partner.

For this reason, the incorporeal God created Adam and Eve with bodies as an absolute work of the ideal of love, and as His partners. Whose form does God take? God assumes the form of Adam and Eve. God is the internal Father, and Adam the external father; God is the internal Parent, and Adam and Eve are the external parents. (199-361, 1990.2.21)

God created heaven and earth in order to share love. Thus, the incorporeal God brings a man and a woman out onto the stage as incarnations of His eternal love. Those He brings forward as the central incarnations of love are humankind's true ancestors and the True Parents of goodness. You have

not had true parents, but today the Unification Church has the doctrine of the True Parents. (38-173, 1971.1.3)

Why did God create Adam and Eve? The incorporeal God cannot have dominion over this substantial world. The formless, invisible deity cannot rule over the visible world of created beings – the universe. For this reason, God must acquire a body, based on love. This is why He created. When He takes on a body centered on love, He can feel internal and external stimulation. Stimulation occurs. (166-232, 1987.6.7)

Since the invisible God has no bodily form, the True Parents represent His form. The True Parents are parents on the level of the individual, family, tribe, people and nation. In the future God will appear in the form of the True Parents in the spirit world. (98-224, 1978.8.1)

This teaching marks the greatness of the Unification Church. The greatness of Rev. Moon is that God wants to assume his form. (166-232, 1987.6.7)

God is without form. The incorporeal God has now appeared as a God with form. What is this corporeal God? It is what we call the True Parents, who have not fallen. (201-83, 1990.3.4)

Ultimately, since God is spiritual and without form, people can neither directly receive what He teaches, nor receive the experience of rebirth from God. Hence, God established central figures so that people can be taught and experience rebirth through them. They are the corporeal and incorporeal True Parents. (91-101, 1977.2.3)

What was God's purpose in creating Adam and Eve? As human beings we have a body, but the invisible God does not. Without a body, God cannot govern the spiritual and physical worlds. Hence, although God exists, if He wants to manifest as the parent of humankind, He must acquire a body. God's representatives who have that body were to be Adam and Eve. God was to appear by assuming the form of unfallen Adam and Eve.

Therefore, while Adam and Eve are the first ancestors of humankind, they were also supposed to be God, who rules over heaven and earth. Adam and Eve were to be God in bodily form; that is, they had the responsibility to govern the world in the position of parents, assuming the external form of God who dwells in the eternal visible world. (133-91, 1984.7.10)

God's aim was not only for God and human beings to perfect a vertical love relationship as subject and object partners. He also sought on the basis of the perfection of their vertical love to bring the horizontal love of Adam and Eve to fruition.

When God comes as the internal parent, and Adam and Eve as the external parents achieve complete oneness with Him, in that moment the ideal of love is realized. As the invisible parent,

God becomes the eternal parent in the visible world by taking on the form of Adam and Eve. At this point, Adam and Eve would become the true parents and true ancestors. (135-10, 1985.8.20)

Section 3. God is a Personal God

3.1. A personal God with intellect, emotion, and will

Today, many Christians say that because God, the Creator, is a unique and absolute being in the position of the Most High God and the being of supreme goodness, He cannot have a relationship with human beings whom He created, that is, with created beings. In other words, they say His creatures are profane, whereas He is absolute and divine. But from the viewpoint of love, no matter how elevated and good God is, and no matter how lowly His creatures are, they must have the same character as God if they are to have a relationship of love. They must have the same heart. It means God must have the same personal qualities as a human being. (138-245, 1986.1.24)

What kind of deity is God? He is a personal God, with intellect, emotion, and will. Since what this personal God wants most is love, He created human beings as His partners in love. This is an amazing fact. (143-149, 1986.3.17)

How did God, the First Cause, shape human beings? He made us like Himself. He made us in His image. This means that the Father resembles us as we resemble the Father. This leads us to the answer. In seeking to know about God, what might we find about His nature? If we conclude, "He is someone like me," we will be right on the mark. (127-233, 1983.5.15)

Whom do you think God resembles? If it is love that God needs, would He love something that resembles Him, or would He love animals, which do not resemble Him? God needs a partner whom He can like and with whom He can share love. If human beings are indeed God's partners, upon looking at the human race we are led to the conclusion that God must be a personal God. All His elements must be able to harmonize one hundred percent with those of humankind. God must be one who harmonizes all elements of the body and mind. This is why God must have the attributes of intellect, emotion, and will. (162-271, 1987.4.17)

If God exists, what kind of relationship does He have with human beings? To have a relationship with human beings, He must be a personal God. And to be a personal God, He must resemble human beings.

People have the attributes of mind and body. Then God, as their Creator, has to have similar attributes if he is to share with them a common purpose. This point marks the origin of the concept of dual characteristics. (167-243, 1987.7.21)

Do you think God has a personality as people do? If He is like a person, do you think He is a man or a woman?

Then, do you think He has the thing all men have dangling from them, or not? What kind of internal nature did I say God has? As the Subject of dual characteristics, do you think He has both the concave and convex parts or not? Have you thought about that? (181-203, 1988.10.09)

Do you think God laughs? Have you seen God smiling? Do you think God has eyes? Do you think He has a nose? How about a mouth or ears? Does He have a body? If you examine Christianity carefully you can see that Christians do not have a sense of this. They do not know if God has eyes. If you ask them, "Have you really seen His eyes?," they do not know. If you ask them, "Whom does God resemble?," they will answer, "What do you mean? God resembles Himself." What kind of answer is that? Whom does God resemble? His children. This is why God has to be a personal God. As a personal God, He demands of us the highest standard of character. What forms the base for the highest standard of character? It is measured neither by money nor by power, but by love. (182-59, 1988.10.14)

If God exists, He has to be a personal God; He has to be like a person. As a personal God He must possess intellect, emotion, and will. Based on these attributes, all His feelings and desires, and all of the goals He sets according to His will must become concrete. (174-162, 1988.2.28)

God knows everything. He is the supreme King of knowledge and power; He is all-knowing and almighty. Furthermore, He is omnipresent; no place is void of His presence. What is it that He needs? Diamonds? He can make them any time. Gold or jewels? No. What God needs is love. If God were alone, would he say "Oh, I have love and it's great"? What is it that God needs? If God is a personal God then He must have a mouth; must He not? Then, He also must have a nose, eyes, ears, hands, feet, and a mind and heart. If God is like a person then He should have these attributes. (142-30, 1986.3.3)

What kind of person is God? He is omniscient, omnipotent, omnipresent, and could destroy or save the world with just one word. But we do not need this kind of God. What kind of God does our original mind desire? We would desire someone about whom we can say: "I cannot but love Him more than my own father and mother. Even if we have a righteous king or president in our country, He is even higher than they are." Presidents are changed every four years; they are good and bad, and thus difficult to respect. (147-271, 1986.10.1)

If God exists and comes to our world today, He must be a God of intellect, emotion, and will. Why? Because this is how human beings are. His intellect, emotion, and will, however, are not based on the human way but on the heavenly way. (9-291, 1960.6.12)

Can the absolute God be sad? Can the all-knowing and almighty God avoid sadness? Can He relate to sorrow?

These are serious questions that I cannot take lightly. We cannot maintain the view that the absolute God can be the father of humanity and yet never experience sorrow. There is a logical contradiction here, for it fundamentally distances God the Father from His children who have intellect, emotion, and will, and who experience the feelings of joy, anger, sorrow and pleasure. Therefore, God has to be the Subject who can feel joy, anger, sorrow and pleasure – even more than we can. (203-288, 1990.6.27)

There is no religious organization that correctly witnesses about God. If you talk about God, Buddhism and Confucianism are the same; they become dumbfounded. They do not know the personal God, with intellect, emotion, and will. The Unification Church asserts the oneness of God and man. This is a magnificent concept. (227-112, 1992.2.11)

Members of the Unification Church can be proud of the fact that we know God very well. We know God clearly. God is both a personal God with intellect, emotion, and will, and the Subject of love at the same time. We know this clearly. We know that the God of love is the center of heavenly heart and we know that the center of heavenly heart cannot vacillate. (210-314, 1990.12.27)

3.2. We need a personal God with whom we can be one

In addition to His intellect, emotion, and will, God has His own hopes, circumstances and heart. What are God's hopes, circumstances and heart? We need to know these fundamentals before considering humankind's situation. Armed with this knowledge, you will naturally and immediately understand people's original desire. Why? Because humankind's purpose is God's, and God's purpose is humankind's. Those who understand people's circumstances, hopes, and heart can also understand God's. (151-208, 1962.12.15)

We cannot talk about love unless God is a personal God. God needs to have the same qualities of emotion and character as human beings. Christianity, alone among religions, revealed that kind of God. The early Christians called God "Father." Becoming free and able to call God "Father" marked a great religious discovery. My explanation of God, as the internal and external Father who seeks to create a unifying authority through love that is incarnated in substantial form, takes the conversation to a new level, but the Christian discovery of God as the Father is amazing. Furthermore, it has created the base upon which the nature of God, in love, can be peacefully discussed and explored. Christianity has also promoted monotheism. For these reasons, as I see it, Christianity serves as the global religion that can unite the world. It is paving the way to unify the world. (139-239, 1986.1.31)

Although there are many religious paths today, the one religion that can penetrate the heart has not appeared

during the course of history. Because God exists, however, such a religion must inevitably appear. Some religions instruct in social ethics and morality and others teach about the infinite spirit world. However, there must be a religion that combines teachings on ethics and morality with those that describe the incorporeal world, uniting them upon the essential core of one heart. I have searched for such a religion and it is Christianity. Christianity is a religion of heart. Through the Fall, human beings lost God and forgot that God is our Father. We lost the substantial True Parents and Christianity is the religion that can reintroduce them. (9-140, 1960.5.1)

The final destination of philosophy is the discovery of God. What kind of God is He? He is absolute, unchanging and unique. In discovering God, we will find that He has to be a personal God, one needed by human beings. In order to have a relationship with us, God has to be a personal God who shares the inner and outer aspects of all our thoughts, ideals and will. He has to be someone who can deeply relate with us in all aspects of our being, emotional, volitional, or intellectual. Otherwise He has nothing to do with us. From this point of view, on the basis of the premise that He must be a God whose character includes human-like character, philosophy has not honored God. (138-142, 1986.1.21)

Whom does God resemble? His sons and daughters. Who are you? You are God's sons and daughters. You take after God. And God is a personal God. Can God just be some shapeless entity? What is amazing about Christianity is that it has talked about a God of emotion and personality in terms of His character and love, and His intellect, emotion, and will. This is a great thing. It has also promoted monotheism. (177-274, 1988.5.20)

If God is a personal God, do you think God needs love? When we human beings are born as God's sons and daughters and call God "Father," we need the Father just as He needs us, and the Father needs us just as we need Him. (184-199, 1989.1.1)

If God is a personal God, what should be connected to Him? When you say "God," you are talking about something high, aren't you? Then, can your body be connected to Him? No. It is your heart that is connected. Human beings are to live with a vertical heart with the First Cause, the personal God, at the axis. Just as the earth rotates on its angle-adjusted axis and moves in its day by day, 365 day course around the sun, we should live revolving around God. This is how we should see it. (194-154, 1989.10.22)

God's existence leads naturally to the conclusion that this world has no hope for the future unless God's providence advances and is fulfilled. The Unification Church has emerged at this time in history to acknowledge the personal God with His perfected intellect, emotion and will, and to work with Him to realize the ideal world based on the

realm of heart. The Unification Church is clarifying, for the first time, the relationship between God and humankind. (213-302, 1991.1.21)

Section 4. God Is Our Father

4.1. God and human beings are related as parent and child

God and human beings are related as parent and child, but how did this relationship come to be? If you enter a mystical state and ask what the center of the universe is, you will get the answer that it is the parent-child relationship. What is the center of the universe? In short, it is the parent-child relationship. (48-208, 1971.9.19)

If you pray and ask God, "What is the center of heaven and earth, and what is the root of the universe?" He will say that it is the relationship between a father and his sons and daughters, the parent-child relationship. People who are ignorant of this will think that this refers to the relationship between a physical father and mother and their sons and daughters, but we are talking about the fundamental relationship with God. (19-158, 1968.1.1)

God created human beings because being alone brings no stimulation. Joy arises through a relationship. Alone, you cannot receive the stimulation of joy. When we stand in the position of God's partner, we can finally receive the highest love and God's internal nature is made substantial. If God is sorrowful, humankind will inevitably be sorrowful. For this reason, the relationship between God and human beings is a destined relationship that cannot be severed. No matter how hard you research, this will be your conclusion. (God's Will - 279)

I said that God and human beings are in a parent-child relationship, but what is special about this parent-child relationship? The highest place where father and son can meet is the central point where their love, life and ideals intersect. Then, love, life, and ideals are in one place. At that place, God is love, and so are we; God is life, and so are we; and God's ideals are our ideals. The first place where these things can be established is in the parent-child relationship. (69-78, 1973.10.20)

When God gives us love, how much would He want to give? God's love does not have a set limit. He wants to give infinitely. Even after giving everything, God still says, "Because of you, I want to live in you." What is the essential element that makes this possible? It is love. God would be happy to live as a servant if that life were lived inside love. A father could feel joy even if he sees his beloved son defecate on his dining table. Love transcends law.

God has been continuously extending His love to people, but that doesn't mean He will complain, saying, "I have given you everything without reserve. Why do you not give back? How can you be like this?" The God of absolute love is still frustrated that He has not been able

to give all the love He wants to. God cannot assert Himself absolutely into our lives. If God's purpose in creating man was to give perfect love, God would still want to pour His love into the human world even if He has been prohibited from doing so until now. The more we think of God as being so unconditionally giving, the better we feel. If God were someone who says, "I have given everything, so now you give back," we would not need Him. (36-77, 1970.11.15)

God is the Father of human beings, and human beings are God's sons and daughters. He created them by investing the core of His bone, the core of His flesh, and the core of His bone marrow in them. If they pull on God, God cannot help but follow. (20-207, 1968.6.9)

God created for the sake of love. That is why God likes to see a man and a woman loving each other. For this reason, God appears in the world of existence as the essence of love. (86-82, 1976.3.7)

A child is the fruit, the manifestation of the parents' love, an extension of their life, and the embodiment of the parents' ideals. Children are born on the basis of the parents' love, life, and ideals; thus, the more the parents see them, the more lovable they become, the more they become ideal people to relate to, and the more vibrant life becomes. (69-78, 1973.10.20)

Human beings are born through the relationship of love as God's absolute partners. This is where God becomes the Father and we the sons and daughters. If there is a place higher than this, human desire would want to occupy that position. Since human desire seeks the best, if there is something better, God must give it to us. From this point of view, God is surely the Father of humankind and human beings are His sons and daughters. (48-205, 1971.9.19)

Clearly, God did not create us without value. If He had, He would be a strange God. Since God is the Absolute Being, He knows everything; if He had created us without knowing these things, He would be an incomplete God. But God is the Absolute Being and thus He created us as His absolute partners. (54-87, 1972.3.20)

What kind of being is God, the Creator of heaven and earth? He is a being of utmost goodness, the root of all things, and the Lord of love. Therefore, after creating heaven and earth, He wanted to give all the precious things in the whole universe to humankind.

If there is someone whom God can truly believe in, love, and entrust everything to, He will want to pass the most precious things on to him in their entirety. (13-247, 1964.4.12)

If God is our Father, He could not have wanted to create us as mediocre or incompetent creatures. As He created us to stand in an equal position, at the same level, as the all-knowing and all-powerful God, our conscience seeks the

highest and best. (53-224, 1972.2.28)

If God is the Absolute Being, why did that absolute being create human beings? It was not for the sake of money, knowledge or power. He created man because it was the only way He could feel love. From this point of view, God as the Father and human beings as His sons and daughters form an axis. If the connections for this axis are made, absolutely nothing can sever the relationship of loving oneness between God and humankind. (137-57, 1985.12.18)

In creating human beings, God completely invested Himself to fashion them into the most precious, ideal and perfect form. God created Adam and Eve wanting to exist for their sake, not His own. The time when God lived for His own sake advanced to the time when He existed for the sake of His object partner. An ideal being does not live for his own sake; an ideal being lives for the sake of others, for the sake of its object partner. This principle is the basic core of the universe. (69-81, 1973.10.20

No matter how great, how absolute, and how all-knowing and all-powerful God may be, He cannot be happy alone. The words "happiness" and "it is good" make no sense when you are alone. You can say that it is good, or that you are happy only when you are in a relationship with a partner. Is there anyone who says he is happy when he is alone? No matter how all-knowing and almighty God may be, He is not happy when He is alone. Let us say a good singer sings a song all by himself. Will he be happy? He needs someone to listen to his song. He will only be joyful when that give and take exists. Likewise, God also needs an object partner in order to experience joy. (65-20, 1972.11.13)

God, by completely investing Himself, created His object of love because He needed an object of love. You cannot love by yourself. An absolute being also cannot love without an object of love. Thus, God created human beings as such objects of love. He would not, therefore, create them carelessly. The Bible reveals that He created them through the Word, but He was not relaxed in His work. He created them by investing Himself 120 percent, hundreds of times over, through excruciating hardship and difficulty. (197-164, 1990.1.13)

When some Christians think about God's creation of heaven and earth, they focus on God's omniscience and omnipotence, and thereby believe, simply, that He created by His words. The creation did not, however, come into form by some type of magic. He created His sons and daughters by investing His entire being with a sincere heart. (65-20, 1972.11.13)

This is why we love Him. We, for the sake of comparison, will not fully love something for which we have not invested our utmost efforts and given our blood and flesh. We make something the object of our sincerest hope

because we have invested into it the core of our bone, the core of our flesh, the core of our thought, and the core of our entire being.

Where did God place the ideal starting point of creation? He does not tell us to give everything for His sake. Rather than trying to absorb us by saying, "You come and cleave to me," He invests Himself. It is not "cleave to me," but investment. In other words, He placed the starting point of the ideal upon the principle of existing for the sake of others. This is why God invested Himself for the sake of humankind. God exists for mankind's sake. (78-111, 1975.5.6)

What did God mean when He said, "I am love." He was teaching us to cherish love by night and day, while working, resting, dancing or crying. In like manner, He could say, "I have love, I have love in its entirety." Having love in its entirety would mean that everything was invested into it. The one who cherishes love most is God. He has all of that love, yet once we have tasted it we are unable to let go of it even in death. (44-188, 1971.5.7)

As an omniscient, omnipotent, and omnipresent being, there is nothing God wants to withhold for Himself; He lacks nothing. Although He has everything, if there is one thing He values highest and takes the most pride in, it is love. There is nothing He needs apart from love. (108-223, 1980.10.16)

Where does the completion of the ideal of creation begin? It does not start with God, but with human beings. It begins with the things of creation because the ideal of creation destines them to be. Humankind stands at the center of creation. For this reason, without human perfection, there is no perfection for God. This is because God and humankind are one. (149-9, 1986.11.1)

What is it that makes us one with God and His will? What is it that can unite with the central core of the Will that is complete rather than the Will that is in process? Is it God's omnipotence? Omnipotence will not work. Is it His full authority? No. Then is it His omnipresence? Again, no. Then what should it be? God is alive and dwelling in the spirit world, transcendent of time and space. What is the center of His life? It is not His infinite power, omnipresence, full authority, or anything like that. God lives with love as His central focal point. This is how I see it. He has lived focused on love from the beginning and throughout His present course, and He will do so for eternity. This is because God feels joy when He has a true object of His love. (126-223, 1983.4.24)

Since God is absolute, all-knowing, and omnipotent, He has a storehouse of love which keeps replenishing itself even after He gives and gives. If we were to steal a lot of love from God's storehouse and give it out day and night, will God punish us, saying "You, scoundrel, thief of love!"? Since God is all-knowing and all-powerful, He would say instead, "Okay, do that! That's good. Take as much

as you want. Keep doing it forever. Even after you've been here at my storehouse, there is still some left. That is why I am God. That is why I am the Subject!" He will say, "I am the Subject Partner, and the subject partner must have more than he can give to the object partner. As the Subject Partner I must have more than I can give to you as my object partners; otherwise, I would not be God. That is what I am like!" He will again say, "If you want to steal love from me and distribute it like my power plant of love, I will supply as much as you need." If you then say, "When I run out, I will want to get more, so may I connect myself to Your pipeline of love?" God will say, "If you want, go ahead!" (116-240, 1982.1.1)

4.2. God is the closest person to you

What is the highest embodiment of all truths? Parents, husband and wife, and children are. There is nothing higher. Then, what is the center of truth? It is love. Based on this principle, what is the center of the highest truth? We say that God is the ultimate source of truth, goodness, love and life. What does all this mean? They all go to the same point – the establishment of truth requires love and life. For this reason, God is the deepest core, the ultimate source of life, love and truth. Then what kind of being is God? He is both our Father and Mother. The core is the parents. From this point of view, God becomes simply a person. (21-183, 1968.11.20)

God should have a white beard. That would befit Him well. So God would be stroking His beard, and if the son were to say, "I like your beard long," His beard would become long, and if the son were to say, "I like your beard short," it would become short.

Since God is all-knowing and all-powerful, when He relates to men His face will look rough. To Adam, who likes masculine features, God's face will look masculine. To women like Eve, it will have an appearance women can like. (110-281, 1981.1.1)

Do you think God existed before the creation of heaven and earth, or not? Then how old do you think God is? It's okay for those who can only count up to the number seventy to say He is seventy. To such people, God will chuckle, "Ho, ho; I am seventy." When someone who can only count up to five asks Him how old He is, He will say, "Ho, ho; I am five years old" – because they do not know anything more. No matter how many numbers there are, God cannot be calculated in terms of numbers. He is beyond numbers. That makes you happy, doesn't it? This is how our God is. (173-252, 1988.2.1)

God also likes jokes very much. He likes humor. Who do you think the great king of humor is? It is God. He has a good sense of humor because He is all-knowing and all-powerful. Who is the great king who can make others roll around laughing, laugh until they burst and fall over? It is God. I am saying that this great king is God. (171-148, 1988.1.1)

Externally, God resembles men and internally He resembles women. While God is strong, all-knowing, and omnipotent, He also has a merciful heart that can embroider flowers on Buddha's smile. He should also have a heart like that of the most feminine woman. Only then will these two sides have life. (206-49, 1990.10.3)

God is the great Master of the universe, all-knowing and all-powerful; He is a being who lacks nothing and has many powers. Nevertheless, if a loving son of filial piety were to press his way to His bosom without asking, would He shout, "Hey, you! How well do you know me? What are you doing?" God might try to stop him, but if the son were to ignore God's protests and keeps pressing in, like he once did pressing in to snuggle up to his own father's chest, saying, "I wanted to place my hand on Your chest, just as I used to touch my father's chest long ago," what would God do? Would He feel offended? A father would be very happy.

As children grow up, they leave their parents' laps, go outside the house, and cross over rivers and mountains. Yet when these children come home, cross the threshold, put on their old clothes, and try to touch their father's chest, would the father feel good or bad? Even a grandfather on his deathbed would be happy and say, "Come, let me feel your touch." (169-76, 1987.10.25)

God is the Creator. Then, what is there to add to Him? What is there for Him to pull in? If something is to grow bigger, it has to pull in and absorb something, or somebody has to add something to it. In other words, it either has to absorb something by itself or a third party has to bring something to add on. But when there is nothing to be added to God Himself and nothing for Him to pull in, how can God grow bigger by Himself? This is an important question. I have not discussed it because if I did, you would talk about it carelessly and cause problems. So please research this. I am giving you this as homework. Do some research; write a paper and I will grade it. (218-263, 1991.8.19)

How do you think the absolute God originally began? Do you think He was born all of a sudden, coming out quickly? Aren't you curious about this? If we talk about this, Christians will say, "Ooh, the Creator is holy, and this is an incredible insult." Stop that nonsense! Aren't you curious as to whether God came into being or has always existed as He is? We need to have a logical basis to go on.

Dr. Yoon! How did God come into being? Shouldn't someone with a doctorate in physics know this? Isn't it a shame if the holder of a doctoral degree covers his face like that? Unification Church members can only say, "God naturally exists," but this is not the case. God Himself also had to develop. This is the correct answer. (218-263, 1991.8.19)

What is it that has the power of the matchless beauty of creation? God must have studied this. Although God is

all-knowing and all-powerful, if He is a personal God, and is like a person, when He relates to love, He will want to go into it and sleep there in peaceful rest. God cannot always keep His eyes wide open and say, "You fool, do not rest. Work on restoration through indemnity day and night." That's God principle, isn't it? It is just like breathing. When you exhale, you have to inhale. God also has to rest after work. It is because He wishes to feel the joy of rest that God works. Everything about God is connected to the mutual relationship of give and take. (164-70, 1987.4.26)

If God exists, what kind of being is He? He is all-knowing, all-powerful, and His presence is all-pervading. That is good. He is omniscient, omnipotent, and omnipresent, and He can do anything. But however powerful He may be, and however good He may be at everything, what would happen if He told others to serve Him alone? There must be billions of people living in the spirit world; if God said to them, "I am all-knowing, almighty, and absolute, and you have to serve me absolutely," what would happen? What if everything had to serve only God? Judging from the essence of our conscience, we would not be able to embrace that in the long term. It would inevitably create conflict. Your hearts would inevitably conflict with this in the future. (138-75, 1986.1.19)

The only partner that God can love is us – human beings. God cannot make another God among His creatures. Why? You may think that the all-knowing and almighty God could create another God just like Himself. This may be possible, but what would happen as a result? The other God would eat with Him and follow Him around; they would work together and stand together. If God sat down, the other God would sit down together with Him. What would it be like If they acted exactly the same for hundreds of millions of years? Think about that. How stifled they would feel! Their eyes would turn inside out in less than a day. And how would they talk? How many days do you think they would talk with each other? Maybe not even three days. They would say, "Everything's the same! This is killing me." (141-26, 1986.2.16)

What is the center of religion? It is God. Of course, there are many names for God, but the name does not matter. God cannot be two. The root is one, therefore God is one. When people talk about God, they use different names to refer to Him because each nation has a different language. Yet the Original Being is one. (210-199, 1990.12.23)

Heaven and earth themselves did not come into being because they wanted to, but surely from some origin and through some motivation based on some source of power. Considering this on a higher level, there has to be a fundamental agent of power who, as a central subject partner, moves heaven and earth or creates things. We call this being God. His various names, given by different races and in different languages, do not

matter. This universe needs to have a center in any case. Although existing beings act and move around, the central being does not move around with them in their world. There has to be a central original being who remains forever fixed at the center of this world of relationships in motion. (154-298, 1964.10.5)

Section 5. God's Omniscience and Omnipotence Are Within the Principle

5.1. God's omniscience and omnipotence are based on principles

What was God's motivation in creating all things in heaven and earth? We have to consider the fundamentals of this. God needs no money. It was not for the sake of money, knowledge, or curiosity. It was not for the sake of power. There is nothing the omniscient, omnipotent and omnipresent God does not know. He is the King of wisdom, the King of ability, and the King of gold. He can make as many diamonds as He wishes. But God does not need diamonds. Why would He need them when He has them all the time? One needs something only when it is missing.

Through His knowledge God created the laws that control the elements of the universe, which move and operate under certain principles. In comparison to God's efforts to create those laws, the investment a scientist makes to discover just one minute aspect of one of them amounts to nothing. The quantity of their work, the doctoral degrees earned, the boasting, and the fanfare pale in comparison.

Art is the same. Art is learned from nature; it originates from nowhere else. Everything is learned from nature, and there is nothing that cannot be found in nature. (182-121, 1988.10.16)

God is all-knowing and all-powerful, but what need does He have for power? Why would He need it when He is the one who can move the universe? He does not need power because He is the great King of power. In history, no matter how great the heroes were, they passed away, as did the kings and emperors of great nations; before their passing they were all dancing under God's authority. God does not need the money or knowledge that we human beings need. (176-165, 1988.5.9)

God Himself is absolute, omniscient, omnipotent, and omnipresent. There is nothing He does not know, and there is nothing He cannot do. Standing in such an absolute position as the Subject in possession of everything, what could He need? Although God is the Absolute Subject, He must have the heart to be an object partner as well as the subject partner. Why so? We do not need just the east; when there is east, we need west; when we have east and west, we need north and south; and when we have north and south, we need front and back and above and below. In this way, we seek to form a sphere.

This is why the universe moves based

on the model of a sphere. (201-12, 1990.2.28)

What kind of things do you think you would find in the universe? Do you think there would be diamond stars? If the all-knowing and almighty God created the universe, would He have created just one diamond star? (49-294, 1971.10.17)

What is it that God likes most? Famous scholars? There is nothing special about famous scholars. A scholar may say that he has researched this and that, but this is just reporting on the natural formulas and principles created by God – the scholar did not create them.

God does not even like scholars. Next, what about presidents? Do you think God likes Reagan, the U.S. president? What about a world president? God is the president of the universe. What would the all-knowing, all-powerful and absolute being need? God does not like power, either. What's next? Money? Don't talk nonsense. (141-247, 1986.2.26)

God is all-knowing and almighty. If He were to get angry and strike the earth, everything would be shattered to pieces. Even presidents of nations and people who are proud of their position would disappear without a trace at one shout from God. Does God need power? He does not. Power may be something rank and file soldiers covet. Who likes power? The devil likes it. (210-18, 1990.11.30)

Why do you think God created heaven and earth? If God said, "I tried creating you just to show off my power and omniscience and omnipotence," would this sound good to you? Would creatures born through God's power say, "God, thank you for creating us with a stroke of your power"? If God said, "I created you because I am so wise," would you feel good? If God said, "I created you because I am rich with ability," wouldn't you think, "If God created me through His ability or wisdom, what is my joy, and what does it have to do with me? That's God's ability, not mine. That's God's wisdom, not mine. As for me, I am just so powerless..." Therein lies the problem with the emphasis on omniscience and omnipotence. (175-150, 1988.4.16)

Christianity today emphasizes "God, the all-knowing and the all-powerful Father," but omniscience and omnipotence work exclusively on the basis of principles. God does not do things arbitrarily or through unprincipled action. The laws established by the eternal God are eternal. He does not arbitrarily change what He has established. The authority and dignity of God, in His obedience to the law, is amazing. God is the first to follow, absolutely, the laws He has established regarding justice and the public good because they are in keeping with heavenly principles. After God, then all people are to follow, and then the universe. There is no alternative direction. Such is the ideal standard of man's creation. (162-184, 1987.4.12)

God cannot do it alone. Today's Christian ministers may think that the all-knowing and all-powerful God can

do things arbitrarily any time with the power of creation. But that is far from the truth. All existing things in heaven and earth operate by laws and principles. Even God cannot break them and act on His own. The president of this country must cherish the laws based on the constitution and those enacted through legislation. There is a major commotion here because this is not happening; isn't that so? (166-99, 1987.5.30)

This may sound strange, but if God wanted love, why could He not simply create it at will? It is because if He did, He would not be able to stand in His proper position. This is why He does not create love, and this is the same as saying He could not create it. Do you understand what I am saying? You may say, "Ah, but how can the all-knowing and almighty God be unable to create love?" If He did, we might come to find that either dualism or polytheism were correct. You may doubt it, but this is how it is. (173-211, 1988.2.18)

People these days talk about God's nature and say that God is absolute, all-knowing, almighty, all-pervasive, unique, eternal, and unchanging. But what is God going to do with His absoluteness? What is He going to do with His uniqueness? What does God's uniqueness have to do with us? These are major questions. What is God going to do with His omniscience and omnipotence? What is the relevance? What is He going to do with His eternal and unchanging essence? It may be good for God Himself, but it has nothing to do with us. The discussion becomes futile and useless, yet we cannot have blind faith. We have to clarify these matters. (223-261, 1991.11.12)

There is nothing God does not know. He is all-knowing and all-powerful, has full authority, and is omnipresent. But what does this have to do with us? I am asking what it has to do with us. You may say, "Oh, since He has full authority, it should be easy for Him to rule over me. Since He is omnipresent, it should be easy for Him to monitor me. Since He knows everything, He will analyze me thoroughly and leave no escape for me." What good would come from God ruling over us through His omniscience and omnipotence? (130-209, 1984.1.22)

With what does God govern heaven and earth? He governs through law, a law of governance through love. The universal law exists in order to support the means or way of governance. God created humankind because He longs for love. He could have gone on alone, without us, but instead, for some purpose, He did create us. What was that purpose? He needed and needs love that is stimulating and impulsively expressed. (121-103, 1982.10.24)

5.2. Only love is the absolute standard

There is one thing that immobilizes God. Is God not omniscient and omnipotent? Despite His omniscience and omnipotence, there is one thing He

cannot do as He pleases. What do you think that is? Is it that He is unable to make gold or diamonds? Would He lack power? There is one thing this omniscient and omnipotent being cannot do as He pleases. What is it? It is love. Love. Do you think there is love in my heart? Is there love in your heart? Basically yes. But if you were to go around saying, "My love, my love, my love!" to yourself all the time, you would be a crazy person. (142-269, 1986.3.13)

Do you think God can attain love by Himself? Would the all-knowing, all-powerful and unique God say, "Oh, I feel so good!" all by Himself? Then we would have to say that God has also gone mad. Also, if I were to say, "Oh I'm so happy, my love!" based only on some feeling of love, people would call me crazy, wouldn't they? But if someone takes even a scrap of paper or handkerchief as his object and says, "Oh my beloved handkerchief!" who would speak ill of that person? The value and authority of an object partner that can represent the universe is possible only in the world of love. (142-31, 1986.3.3)

I am saying that even the absolute God cannot have love by Himself. Since love is found only in a mutual relationship, no matter how all-knowing and all-powerful God may be, He cannot possess love alone. Of course, He has the potential for love, but the signs and stimulation of love come only through another, not to God alone. This is love, the power of love. (138-245, 1986.1.24)

We pity widows and widowers, but why do we pity them? It is because although they have love inside, they have nothing to stir it into motion. However omniscient, omnipotent and omnipresent God may be, love does not operate when there is no partner. With whom does God, the Creator of heaven and earth, wish to have a relationship? He wants to engage in love with Adam and Eve. (130-21, 1983.12.11)

God likes love. What kind of love does God like most? It is true love. But what is true love? Where would we say true love has its root? Its root does not lie in God. This sounds strange, doesn't it? The all-knowing and all-powerful God is the Master of true love, and yet God does not want the root of this love to begin from Him. God thinks that He will plant the root in a person who can be the object of this love. (177-269, 1988.5.20)

For whom did God create heaven and earth, for His own sake, or for His creatures as His partners? Of course, we can say that God created them for His own sake, but we should know that He attaches great importance to the object partner, and this is the standard for all the creation. The subject partner among all object partners is humankind. God's thoughts were focused on humankind and on the happiness of all people. As for God Himself, He is an all-knowing and all-powerful being, isn't He? (109-268, 1980.11.2)

God is absolute, omniscient, omnip-

otent, and omnipresent. Then, can He also love as He pleases? No. God is also under the dominion of love. Then what can we say about God? Isn't God omniscient and omnipotent? If we ask Him, "God, are You not omnipotent?" God will answer, "I am omnipotent, but not when it comes to love." Why is God like that? (98-38, 1978.4.8)

God cannot be God by Himself. What fun could that be? Would He worry about food? Would He worry about sleep? Would He worry about clothes? He can have these supplied in whatever quantity He desires. He may want to get on a plane and fly around, but He would become bored within an hour. No matter how all-knowing and all-powerful God may be, and no matter how much He prides Himself in being so special, He would not find it satisfying. He is just like us. And God has no other choice. He must find the joy that derives from seeing something valuable that He made effort to create. (161-116, 1987.1.11)

What longing was it that led God to create? I am asking what it was that the Absolute Being longed for that caused Him to create? He is an all-knowing and all-powerful being who needs neither gold nor knowledge. There is nothing He lacks, and so I am asking what need made Him create human beings?

What was God's fundamental motivation for creating? It was not power, knowledge, or possessions. What did God lack? God lacked the basis for love. God, too, is unable to achieve love by Himself. This is why love is the origin, the alpha – the motivation for the creation of heaven and earth. (149-149, 1986.11.21)

What kind of love does God need? God has love, but He can love only when there is a partner. All of you here, do you have love? But do you like saying, "Oh, wonderful! O my love!" all alone? Love only works when you have a partner. This is the basic rule of the universe. No matter how all-knowing and all-powerful God may be, without a partner He is a lonely and sad God. (94-262, 1977.10.1)

No matter how wonderful, absolute, all-knowing and all-powerful God may be, good things cannot happen when God is alone. The words "happiness" or "that's nice" do not make sense when you are alone; you can talk about joy and happiness only where there is a relationship with an object partner. No matter how all-knowing and all-powerful God may be, He cannot be happy when He stays alone doing nothing. Let's say that a good singer sings a song by himself. Would this make him happy? He needs someone to hear his song. We need to have give and take to feel good. Likewise, God cannot feel good by Himself. (65-20, 1972.11.13)

What is the origin from which God came into existence? From what could God have come? What is His beginning point? Is it omniscience and omnipotence, or absolute authority? What's the use of absolute authority? When He is alone, what's the point of having

absolute authority? There is nobody else anyway. If He, as the Absolute Being, is alone what is the use of knowledge? The important question relates to God's essence. And that is love, not a love that seeks to be served, but a love that seeks to serve. (218-263, 1991.8.19)

Even the all-knowing and all-powerful God surrenders in front of true love. No matter how great the president of Korea may be, he also surrenders helplessly in front of true love. When you really love your wife, would you want to bow down to her or not? You would do more than bow down. You would think, "Where in this universe did my wife come from? I cannot help loving her so truly." The thought of being without her would paralyze your limbs. It is painful to think of her not being there. How happy her presence makes you! Even the president will happily say, "My darling, please love me; I love you!" as he bows to the ground. At that moment, would that small lady sitting in front of him feel good or bad? (211-83, 1991.12.29)

No matter how all-knowing and all-powerful God may be, He cannot love all by Himself as He pleases. You may say that God can love as He pleases because He is all-knowing and all-powerful, but this thinking creates a big problem, because it leads to the argument that an object of love is not needed. For this reason, in order for God, as the absolute, central being, to feel the stimulation and joy of His own love, He needs a partner in love. (208-233, 1990.11.20)

Even God Himself needs a partner. He cannot realize love by Himself, either. If I were to exclaim enthusiastically, "Oh, I feel so good today," when no one is there, people would call me crazy, wouldn't they? But when there is a partner, even if I were to speak with enthusiasm it would make sense and fit the circumstances. However all-knowing and all-powerful God may be, what would be the point if He were dancing alone, saying, "That's good, good; oh, I like my love"? You must understand this. Even God cannot achieve love by Himself. He can feel stimulating love only when He has a partner. This is the issue. (141-106, 1986.2.19)

Among the existing things in the world there is no power that can match God's because God is all-knowing, all-powerful, and absolute. God is also eternal, immortal and self-existing. But what is it that God desires? It is not money, knowledge, or power; so what does God desire? There is only one thing God absolutely needs, something absolutely needed by both humankind and God. It is true love. (Blessed Family - 302)

5.3. Even God is absolutely obedient to love

Since God likes love, can He become crazy for love? Can the all-knowing, almighty, and marvelous God, who created heaven and earth, become crazy for love? There are times when a grandfather, who normally dominates like a tiger, meekly comes under the con-

trol of the small grandmother. What makes him do this? He does it because he is caught on the hook of love. Love has great power. This is why God helplessly surrenders in front of love. (137-84, 1985.12.24)

If the capable, all-knowing and almighty God exists, what kind of things would He like? The most logical conclusion is that, since God is better than human beings, He would inevitably like love. Then what on earth is God's love? Even before the beginning of time, God had the love that lived unceasingly for others, and He sought to practice that kind of love. (90-86, 1976.12.19)

You should be sons of God. In being God's sons, which path do you want to take? The path of money? Would God say, "I am all-knowing and all-powerful, and based on my great power you have to come into the parent-child relationship"? What about knowledge? These are peripheral matters. God wants to focus on love, and says, "I must be one with that love." You should say, "Only that love is the best." When you have completely occupied this love, even the powerful God of this universe will say, "Yes, yes!" (69-181, 1973.11.12

However all-knowing and all-powerful God may be, can He order men and women to absolutely obey true love? To have a commanding presence as the Father, God should command, "I too absolutely obey true love, so obey true love just as I do." If God were to tell His sons and daughters to absolutely obey true love without doing it Himself, would it make sense?

God, who occupies true love, would become a dictator. Only when God says, "Just as I eternally and absolutely obey true love, you sons and daughters must eternally obey true love," will they say, "Amen!" Otherwise, they would scoff, saying, "The Father lives as He pleases, and we have nothing to do but obey? Pooh!" There will be problems. Hence, we must establish the view that God, too, absolutely obeys true love. (211-84, 1990.12.29)

However all-knowing and all-powerful God may be, He absolutely obeys true love. How does that sound: good or bad? Would this true love be good when heard from the east and bad when heard from the west? It is good whether you hear it from the west, from the south, or from the north, from above, or from below. Day and night, throughout the four seasons, and beyond the time of our youth and old age, it will, for all eternity, be pleasing to hear the sound of true love. (211-75, 1990.12.29)

God, who asserts absolute power, is also looking for a place where love can settle, a place where love can stand. God, too, absolutely likes love. How much does He like it? More than His absoluteness, omniscience, omnipotence, and omnipresence. God will absolutely obey the laws of true love even if He abandons everything else. Only then, will it all make sense.

We say God is the Father of humankind, don't we? Then, can this Father tell His sons and daughters to absolutely obey true love if His own life is not centered on love? This root principle is indispensable. Therefore, only when God Himself lives in absolute obedience to love can He educate His children saying, "You should live like this because I am living this way myself." (207-261, 1990.11.11)

The absolute God also thinks, "Although I am absolute, omniscient, omnipotent, and omnipresent, and have everything, I also want to live in obedience to something absolute." God, also, has the desire to live for the sake of others. Since God is like this, His love does not demand that others serve Him. He should not love in such a way that He asks to be served. (201-115, 1990.3.27)

On what basis will unity be achieved? Since God is omniscient and omnipotent, will it come based on His omniscience? How about knowledge? No. Then what? Power? Power won't work, either.

No matter how powerful spring may be, it cannot be other than a season in which flowers bloom. Although summer may be said to be powerful, it cannot be other than a season when the trees grow thick with leaves. In autumn, they will all wither away. Although autumn is said to be the season of harvest, it is unable to overcome winter. In order to overcome these limitations, the seasons need to always serve the sun as their center. In that way, serving the center, the four seasons all triumph; in no other way can they unite.

What does this mean? When God, with the tradition of the Parent, enters a scene where the sons, daughters, sisters, and brothers are fighting and stands at the center and says "Do it this way," will they not unite? Those who say otherwise are out of their minds. (221-190, 1991.10.24)

Modern theology is doomed because it says that since God is all-knowing and all-powerful, He can also love as He pleases. Can I love as I please alone – without my dear wife? Can I? Those who say that I can are crazy. Then, can God love all by Himself? (209-81, 1990.11.27)

God is all-knowing and all-powerful. What would the world be like if there were another all-knowing and almighty being just like God, and the two came to love each other? They would not balance each other, and would instead run away from each other. Anything that became stuck between them would be unable to go back and forth; it would slip out at the side.

The weak gravitate to the strong, and the strong to the weak and only then will they fit exactly in the center, riveted together. The weak desires the strong, and the strong desires the weak.

Women who like effeminate men may as well die. The same goes for women who want to love effeminate men. When a woman touches another woman's hand, does she feel good? When women hold hands do they feel good? When a woman's soft hand holds another soft hand, how bad that must feel! How bad the feeling of the two soft hands must be!

It is worse than dying. So we can say it is like dying. (167-300, 1987.8.20)

Section 6. God is Omnipresent Through His Love

6.1. Only love freely traverses borders

God's heart is found not only in God's word but also in all things He created. In heaven and earth, God's heart is everywhere. This is why we say that there is nowhere that God doesn't dwell – that is, God is omnipresent. Since God's heart is found in the things you see, if you want to be in His heart you should have the heart to embrace those things and all that exists in heaven and on earth as yours. This is God's heart.

A person that reaches the highest point on the religious way is one who belongs within the heart of God. The one whose heart sings eternally even at the sight of a flying bird or a fragrant flower does not dwell among all things of creation but, rather, within God's heart. (8-180, 1959.12.13)

Then how do we feel God's presence everywhere? Feel the air as God's breath, and when there is a storm, feel it as the sweat God has shed battling to win over His course of suffering for the sake of the world. When you behold the sun, be aware that it symbolizes the life elements of the entire universe. Learn of God's love from the sun. God has provided nature as a textbook to help His beloved sons and daughters experience God's heart and to bring them joy. If there is someone who, at the sight of a leaf, can think to himself that it is like his own child, he is almost a saint. (59-101, 1972.7.9)

Since God is omnipresent, we want to resemble Him in His omnipresence; because God is omniscient and omnipotent, we also want to be omniscient and omnipotent; and since God is unique, we also desire to be unique. This is resemblance and because we resemble God we want to make ourselves like Him. We want to rule over all of heaven and earth. In all these things we closely resemble God. (26-167, 1969.10.25)

We should live a life of deep emotional experiences through love. So when God is sad, I would feel sad, and when God is happy, I would feel happy without even knowing why. As for a child of filial piety, even when he is thousands of kilometers away from his parents, his parents' love is always with him.

If we talk of God's omnipresence, where is God? He is not found in knowledge. Love, however is different. It is the parents' heart of love toward their children that makes omnipresence reasonable and possible. It is a heart that reaches beyond ultimate extremes.

On the path of love, the parent's love is omnipresent; there is nowhere outside its reach. This is possible only with love. Only love can completely govern the son. This is where omnipotent authority comes to bear. (59-101, 1972.7.9)

Love has wonderful attributes. Once

you stand in the position of oneness with God's absolute and unchanging true love, you receive the authority to be where God is and live with Him at any time. Then you will be able to see God even without closing your eyes. The one who has deeply felt God's sorrowful heart will stop in his tracks and weep bitterly; such a realm of deep feelings exists. Even in the fallen world, a mother's love is such that if her child has an accident far away, she can sense it. She will wake up shouting his name. Doesn't this happen often? (201-356, 1990.4.30)

Are arteries greater, or are veins greater? Which are greater? They are equal. Then, who is greater, God or humankind? They are also equal. In terms of love, if God is the artery, human beings are the veins, so they have the value and privilege to be God's equal.

On what basis can we talk about uniqueness in heaven and on earth, and about omniscience, omnipotence, and omnipresence? On what basis can we say that everything has a connection with me? Based on love. This is something we can understand. (109-146, 1980.11.1)

Who is God? He is the King of the greedy. He is omnipresent, He is everywhere. So, He must be very greedy, because there is nowhere without His presence! We should not be calling Him greedy, yet He is very greedy. (121-70, 1982.10.24)

Do you think God has a way of being absolutely obedient? God has the personality of an absolute ruler and dictator. If He has no way to be absolutely obedient, although He may be able to govern at the higher level, He would not be able to govern at the lower level. The term omnipresence itself would become a contradictory term.

God resembles us…. Mothers and fathers resemble their sons and daughters, don't they? We say that God is our Father. God, too, wants to live in absolute obedience. If there were no way for Him to do this, God would be so lonely! (192-29, 1989.7.2)

If there were someone who viewed a painter's work and became spellbound by day and night, shedding tears in amazement, would the painter be offended? The painter would want to invite that person into his living room, asking, "Why are you so inspired?" and have him tell his story. Would the painter think him crazy if he said, "Oh, this work is so good. I long to look at it and want to stay here with it"?

Although you may not understand God, judging from God's omnipresence, which fills the universe, He exists as love rather than as the Master of knowledge. Try to recognize anew and rediscover God based on the question, "How can I deeply experience the resonance of love in all aspects of life?" (59-103, 1972.7.9)

6.2. Love pervades the entire universe

God is an absolute God, but why is He absolute? It is because He absolutely

obeys love. Are you happy to hear that or not? Also, God is omnipresent. There is nowhere that His love does not pervade. (223-246, 1991.11.10)

God's love is more than enough to embrace the universe and it occupies the central position. God is the central being of love who maintains the greatest foundation. When God moves, the small things all have to move together. Everything is contained in one big circle, isn't it? That's why it makes sense to say that God embraces the whole world and entire universe. (205-33, 1990.7.7)

If God did not exist, the universe would be completely empty. It would feel empty. But because God exists, the universe is completely full. Why? Because there is love. Hence, even when we are alone, the universe is full if we know that God exists. God is everywhere. We come to feel that He is everywhere. Hence, within love we can know the deep inspiration that comes from God's omnipresence. But when we do not know about God, everything is empty; it is as if nothing exists. (91-323, 1977.3.1)

When the subject of love is absent, you feel as if nothing exists, but when the subject of love is present, everything is filled up. We come to the conclusion that it is only when we are full of love that everything becomes full; when we are full of love we can give infinitely and truly.

Give and take allows for the realization and multiplication of our ideal. The world of love transcends distance. The speed of love is such that even light cannot catch up with it. The fastest thing is love; it is also the brightest thing. The most complete thing is love, and that which fills most completely is love. (95-39, 1977.9.11)

What is love? Love provides the lubrication and guide rail upon which things can turn. Without love, there is no lubrication. Cars need lubricating oil to be able to move. Everything needs lubrication in order to move. And only love provides lubrication for the highest joy. Since its root is the omnipresent God, it does not disappear. (180-161, 1988.8.22)

Love is like a nerve. Just as pulling a strand of hair pulls the entire body, just pulling love pulls the entire universe. Only when love moves will the entire universe turn in harmony. (89-90, 1976.10.4)

If there is one subject partner in this universe who can fill every person's heart, what kind of subject partner would that be? The one absolute center. We need an absolute being who will completely fill any heart with love. This subject partner has to be an infinite and absolute being.

How much love do you think God – who has to fill the hearts of the billions of people today – has? It has to be unconditional. This is why we need the expressions omniscience, omnipotence, and omnipresence. They are the words God needs. (116-240, 1982.1.1)

Section 7. Assessing the Existing Views of God

7.1. Existing doctrines of God are contradictory

There are various questions raised against religious doctrine. They include the question "Does God really exist?" God is said to be omniscient, omnipotent, omnipresent, possessing utmost goodness and beauty. He is said to be a being of love, the Lord of judgment, and the Father of humankind. Yet how do we know these descriptions are correct? Why did God create the universe, when He could have just remained quietly by Himself? What is the purpose for which God created the world? There must have been a certain method to the creation. What would that method have been? Why does the phenomenon of the so-called law of the jungle appear in this world created by the God of absolute goodness? It is said that the Fall has led to the world of sin, but why did human beings, created by the perfect God, fall? (122-302, 1982.11.25)

God has many problems. If He is all-knowing and all-powerful, why did He allow Jesus to be nailed to the cross? Is salvation impossible without the cross? How are you going to answer this? If God is all-knowing and all-powerful yet still unable to save Jesus from the cross, such a God is a cruel God whom we should chase away. How can we believe in Him? (136-128, 1985.12.22)

There has been no one who sought to understand, by digging into the root cause of God's grief after the Fall, what the relationship between God and human beings is, and how the supposedly all-knowing and all-powerful God has become so impotent. (133-216, 1984.7.19)

So far, although many theologians and spiritual mediums have known about the existence of Satan, they have not been able to understand why the all-knowing and almighty God could not prevent Satan from opposing Him. This is a problem even throughout the spirit world. Whenever you try to go to God's side, Satan will surely interfere. Satan opposes us from many directions, not just one. But why is God unable to intervene and punish him? This has been a riddle until now. This is one thing that cannot be known even through relating with the spirit world. (133-86, 1984.7.10)

The all-knowing and all-powerful God has been leading humankind throughout the tens of thousands of years of history. Why then is it that history is not heading toward a world where goodness is realized but instead has ended up heading toward a world of despair and hopelessness? This is a serious problem that can lead to people concluding that there is no God. If there were no God, would humankind have the possibility to dream of the ideals we long for, the peaceful world and utopia that we seek, in the future? Throughout our long history, thinking people and numerous philosophers have failed in their

pursuit of such a world and left the world in its present state. Considering this fact, we cannot assume that such a world of hope will come about in the future. (130-18, 1983.12.11)

Why does the all-knowing and all-powerful God leave Satan alone? He could just execute him one night by cutting off his head, but why does He leave him be? Why just leave him be? This is the most difficult question in religion. Is it a simple matter? (127-112, 1983.5.5)

Many faithful people think of God as sitting on the throne of glory as an omniscient, omnipotent, and omnipresent being with absolute authority. This is why they think that God has nothing to do with such concepts as suffering or sorrow. If Christians ask what kind of being God is, they would say, "God is our Father." They say that all believers who call Him Father should repent and practice faith in the sinful world. God and man are related as parent and child, yet they are said to be in contradiction. (123-154, 1983.1.1)

Today Christianity pronounces, "God is the holy, all-knowing, and omnipotent being, and the Judge who sits on His throne as the righteous Lord of Judgment who judges all people." Do you like judges? If a judge serves for ten years, he will get sick and die; if he does not die, he will at least become seriously ill. If he does not get sick, he is a fake. Judges sometimes pass death sentences, and yet their verdicts cannot be absolutely right. There are many different ways of seeing the situation, and still their judgments decide whether someone lives or dies. It is a serious matter. Judgment, from the human perspective of universal laws often misses the true mark in light of universal law. For this reason, a righteous person would get sick after being a judge for ten years. (198-285, 1990.2.5)

We should ask Him about this. Today's Christians say that God is sitting on the throne as the all-knowing and all-powerful God. They say that, as the Judge, He sends bad people to hell and good people to heaven. But if God were joyful to see this, He would be a crazy God. God dwells in the place of absolute goodness, which transcends good and evil. (194-32, 1989.10.15)

Christian pastors say that God is sitting on the throne as the omniscient, omnipotent, and omnipresent being, but would that be interesting? If He sat on a throne for tens of thousands of years doing nothing, would not His buttocks become flabby? If you like sitting, try sitting for just three days. (192-29, 1989.7.2)

So what is God doing? According to Christianity, God is sitting on the throne in eternal glory... But if He is alone, what kind of glory is that? Is God sitting in one spot for eternity and saying, "Oh, I so much like my power, my omniscience, mysterious..."? Really? What use is that? God, too, has always been living centered on love. The logic of this is undeniable. (191-22, 1989.6.24)

If it seems God can do everything as He pleases, why did He allow human beings to become like they are over our long, drawn-out history, said by some to be 850,000 to one and a half million years? This could lead us to conclude that God does not exist; we could not even talk about an all-knowing and all-powerful God. But that would be faulty logic. Why is it that God cannot do as He pleases? Why can't He? It is because He is constrained by circumstances. (162-186, 1987.4.12)

What would happen if man had not fallen? Today, Christianity teaches that God is all-knowing, all-powerful and holy, while we human beings are profane, but they are wrong. Go to the spiritual world and see. They, too, call God "Father" just as people do on earth today.

Who is this father? If the holy God were unable to enter a relationship with people, could we call Him Father? There is a logical contradiction there from the outset. It is completely contradictory. But what I am saying makes sense. (240-191, 1992.12.13)

Why am I saying this? God created human beings as His sons and daughters, but do you think God has seen them dancing and singing while praising God, or not? Because they fell and were expelled, God still has not seen such a day. But Christians do not know this about God. They think that God is in glory and that because He is all-knowing and all-powerful, He is able to do anything. But then, they need to ask why He has not been able to save humankind during all these thousands of years. How would you answer this? It is because human beings committed sin. Since it is they who committed sin, it is they who must liquidate it. (226-304, 1992.2.9)

What is it that God absolutely wants? That is the question. What is it that God wants? What does God absolutely want? Is it ability? Today, Christian churches and Christian theology teach that since God is all-knowing and all-powerful, as the righteous Lord of Judgment He sends good people to the Kingdom of Heaven and evil people to hell. Would you like that kind of judge? Do you like the judges in the secular world? Wouldn't it be nasty of God to have made it so that He sends some people to hell and some to the Kingdom of Heaven? We conclude that this would be unfair. (211-75, 1990.12.29)

Christian theology claims that God the Creator is holy and the things He created are profane. This view, however, contradicts the original principle of the formation of the universe. The traditional, mainstream idea of Christianity is said to be based on love, even loving one's enemy, but how can the profane sinner and the holy God become one? Without establishing a basis for answering this serious question, any conclusion advanced is futile, false. This is why there must be a partner for the absolute God to absolutely obey, serve and have with Him even at the cost of His own life. (204-100, 1990.7.1)

Christian theologians are today saying, "Now is the time to critique faith as a whole. Now is the time to re-examine all previous doctrines of God and views of life." Theological trends have so far upheld the view that created beings cannot stand in an equal position to the holy Creator. Then how is love to be given? Do you think God can share love by Himself? What are those things we call peace and happiness? Can God have these on His own? How would you answer this question? God needs an object partner. (77-317, 1975.4.30)

What motivation led to the birth of this created world? God created heaven and earth because He needed love. Based on this, the doctrine of God in modern Christian theology is in error. They say that the absolute God of power can subsist on power alone. This is why, wherever Christian culture has gone, blood has been spilled. Based on this logic we can foresee that, although Western Civilization has developed in accordance with Christian culture, Christian culture will now have a devastating impact on the world in the Last Days. (209-29, 1990.11.25)

History is heading into the age of science. With the advent of the age of scientific development, in which the fundamental roots of everything are investigated and our basic origins are pursued through studying the origins of species, religion must inevitably keep pace.

In this situation, a religion must appear having a commanding outlook that can explain the reality of the world and creation, and prove God's existence. Since there is as yet no such religion, God should prepare the substance of such a religion because He is a living God. (211-139, 1990.12.30)

If humankind was created by the Absolute Being in such a way as to practice the love of the Absolute Being, it is clear that there was motivation and purpose behind our creation. To reveal that motivation and purpose, a correct view of God, explaining who the Absolute Being is, should first be developed. Establishing the correct understanding of God will reveal His purpose and motivation for the creation, and thereby clarify the reason we must practice absolute love for the sake of peace. (110-253, 1980.11.27)

If the absolute, eternal, unique and unchanging God exists, we must be able to view the origin of true love, true ideals, true peace and true happiness from a new standpoint centering on such a God. From that point of view, we can secure perspectives of God, life, and material things that are aligned with God's own viewpoint, and from there finally be able to welcome a world of new peace and new happiness. (77-260, 1975.4.14)

The root cause of religious conflict lies in the vagueness of the doctrines of the ultimate reality. The absolute being is only one; there cannot be two or three absolute beings. However, the leaders of each religion claim that only their absolute being is the true God and that other gods are not true gods. This results

in each religion having its own absolute being, and fosters further contradictory ideas of the existence of many absolute beings. Since this leads to the conclusion that the gods of all religions are nothing but relative gods, the system of absolute values – that should have been developed through religion based on the doctrine concerning God's love and truth – still remains relative.

In other words, we conclude that religions to this day have not established an absolute value system to settle the confusion. This inevitably results from the fact that no religion has been able to present the correct explanation about the Absolute Being. (122-302, 1982.11.25)

Each religion has its own absolute being as the basis of its doctrine. The absolute being in Judaism is Jehovah, that of Christianity, God, and that of Islam, Allah. Buddhism and Confucianism do not specify an absolute being, but with the basic Confucian virtue, benevolence (仁), being connected to the heavenly mandate, heaven can be taken as the absolute being in Confucianism. Moreover, since Buddhism teaches that all dharmas constantly change while the truth is found in the "such-ness" (眞如) behind dharmas, we can say that "such-ness" constitutes the absolute being in Buddhism. (122-300, 1982.11.25)

The doctrine of ultimate reality for the new religion must reveal that the absolute beings of the different religions are not separate gods but one and the same God. The new religion will reveal the fact that all religions constitute a brotherhood established by God, with the theologies of each having embraced one particular aspect of God's attributes. The new religion will complete the picture of God. Moreover, in revealing God's attributes and the motivation, purpose, and laws of creation, the doctrine of ultimate reality must explain that this purpose and these laws govern the movement of everything in the universe, and that human norms are, in the end, in accordance with this universal law – that is, the heavenly way. (122-303, 1982.11.25)

The greatness of the *Divine Principle* taught by the Unification Church is that it explains creativity in concrete terms and serves us in our understanding of the process of creation. Next, it provides a substantial explanation of how the Fall came about and then also presents a view of history. It clearly explains how God, rather than abandoning human beings in their fallen state, has been working diligently for their re-creation throughout the course of history. It logically and plainly reveals that through this process of restoration we will arrive at the world He purposed to achieve. (208-296, 1990.11.20)

CHAPTER TWO

God and the Work of Creation

Section 1. God's Motivation for Creating Is Love

1.1. The Work of Creation Required Complete Investment

God's creating heaven and earth was not aimed primarily at sustaining life; it was to realize the ideal of love. (188-196, 1989.2.26)

Scientists say that the universe is made of energy, and that it originated from energy. But this is not so. An electric current does not flow just because there is potential energy. Electricity is generated through action. And before action, there must be a plus and a minus – that is, a subject partner and an object partner.

Action cannot occur by itself; therefore a subject partner and an object partner are necessary.

Considering all the above, action requires a plus and a minus, and that action then generates electricity. Thus, in the same way, energy arises only through the interaction of subject and object partners. Hence, the universe did not originate from energy, as today's scientists say it did. Action comes first, not energy. (111-126, 1981.2.8)

Which is most important, love or life? Love is most important. We do not say life is most important just because our world came from God's life. We say that love is most important. Although God began the creation of heaven and earth with life, the source of life and the motivation for life is love. The reason life came into being is because of love. Why did God create heaven and earth? Although He is the Absolute Being, He cannot feel joy alone. Even if He were placed in a joyful atmosphere, He could not feel the stimulation of joy if He were alone; this is why He created. No matter how much the Absolute Being may say, "I am the Absolute Being, the Master of love and Master of life," while He is all alone, He cannot feel the stimulation of love. Alone, God cannot feel the stimulation of life that makes Him sense that heaven and earth are within His own body. (38-152, 1971.1.3)

If God had been thinking only about Himself, would He have created heaven and earth? Creation requires an investment of energy. An artist's great hope is to create a masterpiece. An artist invests all his effort into making great works of art. A masterpiece appears only when the artist gives everything, and feels he

cannot give any more. Creation starts with investing oneself. Creation is possible only when energy is poured out. Without contributing energy, there is no result. According to the principle that a perfect object partner appears only through total investment, God as the Subject partner completely invested Himself into making His object partner. The creation was the beginning of God's work through which He determined not to exist for His own sake, but for the sake of His object partner. (78-111, 1975.5.6)

Creation requires giving out energy. God invested Himself. But how much did He invest? Some people think that when God created through the Word, saying, "Let there be this, let there be that," it was like a game. But no, God completely poured out His true life, true love and true ideals. We do not love something unless we have worked hard and invested our flesh and blood into it. So the period before creating and the period after creating were therefore different. Before creating, God thought about everything centered on Himself, but after starting to create, He existed for His object partner. We do not exist for ourselves but for our partners, for our sons and daughters. That is how it is. (69-81, 1973.10.20)

God had to pour out His very essence to create heaven and earth. This required that He give out energy, and investing energy normally would entail depleting His essence. God created the world through love to be His partner, and He devoted Himself to fulfilling this will. God arranged for His investment to bear fruit in His partner rather than in Himself. By investing, God does not feel diminished, but satisfied. This is because God created through love. (60-85, 1972.8.6)

After eating breakfast, when we work strenuously we get hungry and tired quickly. Why is this so? It is because when energy is poured out, it is depleted. Whatever we do, we cannot be satisfied with a negative result. For things to be good there must be a plus. So for God's creation to be good, it must have something that can be a plus. Then, when can God retrieve something with that plus? Here is where the standard for the perfection of created beings must lie. There is a point where all the investment up to that point will start bringing returns. The same thing happens when you have a deep desire to accomplish something and you make effort and stretch beyond your limitations – the result comes without fail. This is the law of the universe. It is the same with God. When He created humankind, God invested energy. He depleted Himself. However, after God created humankind by giving out everything that He could possibly give, perfected human beings will not run away somewhere. When they reach perfection, they will return to God. When they return, they will not return with a value less than the amount of investment made, but with a value that enhances that of God's creation. (65-20, 1972.11.13)

How did the universe begin? It started with God serving and pouring Him-

self out for the sake of the other. It started with God expending Himself. Then, what is the purpose in devoting oneself to creating one's partner? After both have given all they have, what we gain is love. As long as we have love, we are happy, no matter how much we have invested. Since this is the love principle, God started the creation based on love. God would not invest in anything that would not produce a benefit. Giving all one has creates a minus, so why do you think He did it? Because love has the power to more than fill up any void, after expending and investing Himself, God gained love in return. True love does not become smaller as it is invested, but grows bigger and bigger the more it moves. Conversely, if the principle were that true love would grow smaller, God would be depleted through His investment. But the opposite is the case. True love grows bigger and bigger the more it is invested. (237-124, 1992.11.13)

Since love has the capacity to create, it never grows tired. With a heart of love, you never get tired, because you have the power of love. The energy spent is always replenished by more energy than is used up, no matter how much is invested. This is why you don't mind making that effort, although to do so is hard and painful. How could you continue if you did not like it? On the path of true love, you cannot have an eternally unwilling heart. God's essence does not include the concept of an enemy or the concept of evil. This is because His essence dwells within true love. (237-130, 1992.11.13)

So invest, invest and invest based on God's ideal of creation. When you invest, circular motion occurs. Take air, for example. If there is a very low-pressure mass of air and a very high-pressure mass of air and they mix, a mid-level pressure mass of air results. God comes down, although no one calls Him. So those who want to invest more than a hundred percent are always filled by God. The principle of the universe is like this. Completely giving yourself out and forgetting what you have given is connected to eternal motion; at that level the underlying principle of eternal life emerges. Eternal life. Otherwise, from where will you derive the principle of unification? When living for the sake of others, circular motion occurs, doesn't it? What happens with something moving in a spiral motion? It becomes smaller and smaller and rises. As the base of something moving with cyclonic rotation broadens out, its height decreases. But eternal life rises up more and more, and therefore automatically God will stand on Adam and Eve's shoulders and go up as they go up. (205-95, 1990.7.7)

Why did God create heaven and earth? Acts of creation consume energy. They require an investment of energy. Investing energy means expending oneself. However omniscient and omnipotent God may be, if His abundant endowment of energy did not produce a return, it inevitably would be exhausted. (65-20, 1972.11.13)

God put all His energy into creating

all things and human beings. He invested everything and then gave still more. Other things are depleted when they are poured out, but with true love, the more you give, the more your creation prospers and the more it gives back. If you invest 100 units of true love, 120 will come back. Therefore, although those who practice true love seem like they are going to perish, they will not perish; rather, they will prosper eternally and live forever. (219-118, 1991.8.28)

Why does God exist? For what does He want to exist? He wants to exist for the sake of love. This is why He needs a love partner. This is why the omniscient and omnipotent God had to create a love partner. Until now we have not known that God began the creation based on love as His essential ideal. The entire universe was created for the sake of love. (208-235, 1990.11.20)

God wants to have a global platform for true giving. God wants to see a free, peaceful and happy place where giving has no accusers and receiving has no conditions attached. God's goal is to expand that place worldwide and have all humankind settle down to live there. (13-249, 1964.4.12)

1.2. Realizing the ideal of creation through love

God created the world in order to realize love. He created the universe so that He could rejoice over people and all things as they become one centering on His love and making a harmonious world of love. In so doing, He could rejoice over people as they become true husbands and wives centering on God's love, creating families, tribes, races and a world of true love. He would be able to taste the joy of love by becoming one in love with such people. This was God's ideal of creation. (Blessed Family - 302)

Heart is the foundation of the original mind. Through heart God can pour out His infinite love centering on His purpose. Its value never changes. To discuss the value of God's existence, we must discuss it by holding on to this love. Value is determined when the conditions are established for a reciprocal relationship. Joy starts from God's heart, and its purpose is realized in human beings. The heart of the invisible God manifests itself in the heart of a visible human being. When people with such a heart multiply horizontally and form families, these families become the center of the world. God blessed Adam and Eve to be fruitful and multiply so that they could have such a family. The ideal of the cosmos is established on the basis of being fruitful, multiplying and having dominion over all things. (27-28, 1969.11.15)

Why do you think God created the universe? God wanted to experience joy through it. Although God is the Absolute Being, He cannot feel joy alone, because joy arises only when you have someone to relate to. God does not need knowledge, money or power, because He is himself absolute, omniscient and

omnipotent. No matter how advanced science may be, it cannot catch up with or go beyond what God has made. The immense universe operates in an orderly way according to laws. Considering that God has created and governs this immense universe, which is beyond the reach of human thought and science, God is absolutely scientific as well. (Blessed Family - 302)

Do you think someone who has tied himself to and tasted God's original love will want to be separated from it? When a bee is sucking nectar from a flower and you pull on its abdomen, it will not stop sucking the nectar even if its abdomen is pulled off. What if you experienced the taste of such love? You might leave, but you would turn around and come back, trying to cling to it. (137-57, 1985.12.18)

The Principle of the Unification Church concludes that God's love requires fulfilling the four-position foundation. Then, what does fulfilling the four-position foundation mean? Parental love should be expressed to and felt by the children. Centered on parental love, which lies at the center of the four-position foundation, the parents become one with the children, the man and woman become one in love, and finally they become one with God's love. This is the four-position foundation. (Blessed Family - 302)

Adam must be one with God, and what unites them is love. Human beings are the two-dimensional representatives of the world of existence, and its three-dimensional representative is God. Love is the central point, the rope that binds them together eternally. When human beings, who have a body, attain oneness with God, their heart and feelings will be immersed in a boundless state of deep experience and happiness. (35-156, 1970.10.13)

Ultimately, God and people become one through love. Human beings and the world become one through love, and the realization of the ideal world of God's purpose of creation starts here. The realization of God's ideal finally emerges in the place where new love centered on God, or love according to the law of creation, is settled. (Blessed Family - 302)

What is it that we human beings want after waking up in the morning? Eating breakfast, going out to work and worrying about the whole world are not most important for us. What we want is to have an unchanging heart of love day and night, through all four seasons and throughout our life. God created heaven and earth for the sake of the ideal realm of love, where such men and women form a completely horizontal line and become connected to God at a perfect ninety-degree angle. This is a place of love where human emotion and heavenly emotion become one. (213-157, 1991.1.20)

God began His creation from His own essence, giving and giving for the sake of love and forgetting about it. Therefore, if God's partner is to receive, he likewise must pour himself out. This

is like investment coming from above and also from below. In this way, heaven and earth join together harmoniously and become one. They become one centering on the love that can embrace and move heaven and earth. This generates great power. (237-130, 1992.11.13)

To occupy love, you must give and forget what you have given and give again and forget again. Why do you have to have such love? Because the more love moves, the more it expands, rather than diminishes. According to the laws of dynamics in nature, the more things move and operate, the less you have, right? In nature, things diminish the more they move, but in the world of true love, things expand the more they move. Because God knew this, He began the Creation with true love. (237-127, 1992.11.13)

Section 2. God's Purpose for Creating Human Beings

2.1. God created human beings as His object partners in love

God created human beings because of love. Why were we created? We were created because of love. We differ from other things in creation because we were created as God's sons and daughters. In other words, we were created as God's object partners who can receive God's direct love. This is the privilege of human beings. (132-244, 1984.6.20)

God, who is a perfect plus, was bound to create a perfect minus. Then, who is God's object partner who stands as the subject partner of the universe? This is the issue. Why did God create us? We are beings with a physical body who are the partners of the invisible and internal God. (129-138, 1983.10.9)

Having created people, God's intention was to nurture them and elevate them – as individuals who possess love on behalf of God, the Lord of the cosmos – to a place higher than Him, and to make them owners. (204-221, 1990.7.11)

Who is the center of all creation? Human beings. What kind of beings are we? We are beings who have appeared before the all-knowing, all-powerful God having the value of being His partners. This is how I see it. A human being is a symbol of the love of all creation, a being who has appeared as a central point and who can beam light like a lighthouse. That is the kind of beings we are. (115-182, 1981.11.15)

What are human beings? We are God's love object partners. God is a subject partner who has dual characteristics of positivity and negativity. Therefore, to be object partners before this subject partner, we need to have a form consisting of positive and negative dual characteristics. This form is not contradictory to the characteristics of the subject partner; rather, it is a form that relates with all His characteristics – a form that fits exactly into the essence of love. It is a corresponding existence that harmonizes with other things only in love.

God has no need for the likes of knowledge or other things; He needs love. The reason we say that human beings are the center of this universe is that the world was created to manifest the ideal of love. The saying "Human beings are the lords of all creation" makes sense then because human beings, as the representatives of the loving God, have the privilege to receive love first in the central place before the Lord. (132-244, 1984.6.20)

For what reason did God create human beings? He did not create them just to watch His sons and daughters live their lives. He created them in order to share love with them. This is the only conclusion I can come to, however deeply I think about it. The purpose of our creation is love. Life was created based on God's love; God did not generate love by first creating life. In other words, life began because love started budding in God's heart. Since life started from love, the result must also be produced through love. Since the beginning was love, the end must also be love. This is why we human beings are miserable when love is taken away. (57-21, 1972.5.21)

What does God need? God does not need even life. As the initiator of life, why would He need that? Then what does He need? He needs love. Why does God need love? He needs love because love is something that exists only in a reciprocal relationship. Without being a God who needs love, He would be unable to make a relationship with the created world and human world. Since the conclusion is that God cannot make a relationship with the world of existence without coming with a heart of love, He fixed love as the standard. (121-100, 1982.10.24)

God values human beings most. Why does He value them so? Because He needs an object partner for His love. No matter how much love God may have, He is unable to feel love without having a love partner. God can experience love only in a relationship with a partner. The reason God values human beings most is that they are His object partners whom He can love. (143-309, 1986.3.21)

Why did God create human beings? It was in order to fulfill love. This love does not start with God; it is found in His love partner. Without a partner, it cannot be found. For God to attain the most precious thing, He needs a partner. God cannot experience it without a partner, which is why He created one. God seeks a partner so that He can realize absolute love through that partner. Therefore, God exists for the sake of love. Even God exists for the sake of love. This is why love is so amazing. (143-310, 1986.3.21)

People exist for God, and God exists for people. Therefore, true love begins from the point where one lives for the sake of others. From what were human beings born? They began from God's love; in other words, they were born because of love. Love is the origin. (143-309, 1986.3.21)

God created people in order to love,

because He needed someone with whom to share His love. You cannot be in love all by yourself; without a relationship with a partner, love cannot be experienced. Because God absolutely needs love, He created all things and then human beings as the lords of creation, representing all things. God gave people the value of His object partners in absolute love because God absolutely needs them. Human beings were created as His object partners so that love would be under joint ownership. Hence, people themselves are God's bodies. When Adam and Eve – the bodies of God – become a couple, it means that God becomes a couple. Then, in the heavenly world, God, in the form of Adam and Eve, becomes the ancestor of humankind and rules over the spiritual and physical worlds. (138-212, 1986.1.21)

2.2. God invests the essence of His love and life

God created all things in the Garden of Eden and then created the first ancestors as their masters. When He created human beings, He did not do so for His amusement, or as a hobby. It is impossible to express with words how hard God worked and the efforts He devoted to creating human beings and establishing them as the center of all things in the creation.

In creating human beings, God utterly devoted Himself in His many efforts, giving all His heart and soul and the essence of His life. He totally poured out all His love and affection. He created human beings to exist in a relationship with Him that no force could ever undo or sever. Because God created people in such a way, He can feel peaceful as He beholds them. All affection and happiness can dwell within God only through them. (20-205, 1968.6.9)

God is the Father of human beings, and human beings are God's sons and daughters. Since God created them by investing the core of His bone, core of His flesh and core of His bone marrow, when such people pull on God, He cannot help being pulled along. And when God pulls them, they cannot help being pulled along. God created human beings in such a way that, within this relationship, they have shared His essence and purpose. If there were prose or poetry with which God could praise human beings whom He had created in this way, it would be the greatest work of art, far beyond the level of any poets or writers of this world. The object of this praise is neither God nor all things of creation, but the representatives of all things, human beings. (20-207, 1968.6.9)

Out of everything in God's creation, we human beings are the only ones that can become the complete object partners of God's love. God devoted all His heart and energy, totally investing Himself, to create the object partners of His love. What does God want to achieve by giving Himself out completely? He wants to establish the core of love in the universe. This is the ideal of creation. (166-147, 1987.6.5)

God does not have a love organ. It

exists in God's creation, but not in God. Even if it were to exist, it would exist internally, in His heart, and would not appear with a form. What would He need it for? The ones who have love organs are Adam and Eve, human beings. Thus, you should know that human beings have something that is more precious than what God has. (206-125, 1990.10.3)

There is a force that moves us toward the final destination of our desire and our desire's greatest standard of perfection. We need to discover the fact that this force is operating within us. The Bible says that our body is God's temple, but we do not understand what this means. These are words of great importance. This is because however great God may be, when we form a partnership of love with God in which we can whisper words of love, and when we become one with God in that love partnership, we receive the right to inherit the universe. Through the principled foundation of love, this world, the spirit world, the incorporeal world and the world of substance, all created by God, can attain the right to inherit from the universe. Unfortunately, people are ignorant of this amazing fact. (137-67, 1985.12.18)

Section 3. The Ideal of Love to Be Attained Through Adam and Eve

3.1. God created Adam as a body of the invisible God

Why did God need Adam and Eve? He had two purposes: first, to realize the ideal of love, and second, for the invisible God to make Himself visible after taking on a form. For this reason, Adam and Eve are the base and core through which the invisible God can assume a visible form and establish a relationship with the visible world. So when Adam and Eve reach perfection and go to the spirit world, they are like God's body. Then the invisible God assumes a position corresponding to their mind. God's purpose in creating Adam and Eve was to have perfected people in the spirit world. As a result, He made their earthly-world body and mind. (92-147, 1977.4.1)

What value would an invisible God staying alone in the heavenly kingdom have? It would be of no use. To be our parent, He must have a body and be able to feel. Because He needs to take on a body in human form, He had to create Adam and Eve as beings having dual characteristics. (133-91, 1984.7.10)

Why was it necessary to create Adam and Eve with dual characteristics? To become just like the invisible God, they must achieve mind-body unity within their lifetime – by the time they depart for the other world. Otherwise, when they appear in the other world, they cannot become one with God. God created Adam and Eve with a dual nature so that the parents having substantial kingship in the physical world could become one with God as the invisible parent and manifest a substantial kingship in the eternal heavenly world. Even God has no way of relating to the world without con-

necting with Adam and Eve. God must make a relationship with Adam and Eve in order to make a relationship with their sons and daughters. (133-91, 1984.7.10)

God created human beings to place them in the equivalent parents' position, and also to acquire a body. The equivalent parents' position means internal and external; in other words, the external God is Adam and Eve, and God Himself is the internal God. In relation to the body, God is Adam and Eve, and in relation to the mind, God is the invisible God. This God is the parent of humankind, the original parent. There is only one such parent, not many. Because there is only one, God made Adam and Eve to be like a branch temple having dual characteristics of male and female. God can enter this branch temple, and Adam and Eve can function in an ideal way only when God comes and dwells within them and acts. Without God acting, they would not know God's will. They would not know anything at all. (133-91, 1984.7.10)

God is in the position of the Father, the Parent. God made human beings to be the gods of the earth and established Himself as the God of heaven and the vertical God. This was so that heaven and earth can unite harmoniously and live together in love. Even God is lonely when He is all by Himself. (221-113, 1991.10.23)

The Creator is the vertical Father who is centered on vertical true love. Had they not fallen, the original human ancestors, Adam and Eve, would have been the perfected horizontal and physical parents, standing in the position where they could become fully one with God at a 90-degree angle. The Creator is the Parent of heart centered on true love, and Adam and Eve are the horizontal physical parents.

If the Heavenly Parent and earthly parents had united and become one, and then had sons and daughters, no one born on earth would need a religion. Everyone would naturally go straight to God's kingdom. Heaven and humankind would be united. All of humankind's complicated problems arose because of the Fall. Without the Fall, our mind and body would not have become separated. (210-139, 1990.12.17)

God created man and woman so that they could love each other and become one. Adam was not created for his own sake, or Eve for her own sake. God created Adam for Eve, and Eve for Adam. Also, God created Adam and Eve for His own love and joy. God did not create them for knowledge, power or money. The omniscient and omnipotent God did not need those things; He needed only love.

God did not create Adam and Eve in order to give them knowledge; it was not to give them power or abundant material possessions to allow them to enjoy an affluent life. His purpose in creating them was to establish them as the embodiments of love. God's purpose in creating human beings was to make the

foundation of love through families. This is because without love, the world of creation would be hell and God's existence would have no meaning. God's purpose in creating human beings was love. You should know that this is the absolute law of creation. (Blessed Family - 307)

Why did God create human beings? Man is east and woman west. Centering on the vertical God, a plane of four directions is needed. Since this covers 360 degrees, it has infinite area. What do we want to do with this space? The production unit, the starting point that produces the people for God's kingdom, is the earth. Hence, the people of God's kingdom are those who have lived on earth. Go and take a look around sometime. There is no kingdom other than the one on earth. Some say that there are people living in other parts of the universe. But that simply is not so. The entire universe was created for us. (206-209, 1990.10.7)

Are people better than God, or not? In creating human beings, God could make only the vertical Adam and Eve. However, we can give birth to more than twenty children. God cannot do this. God made only one Adam and one Eve. Why? Because each is one absolute norm, and that which is vertical can make only one absolute man and one absolute woman. (236-259, 1992.11.8)

Adam and Eve were born as God's son and daughter, and they are the substantial manifestation of the twin embryos within God. This substantial manifestation of the invisible twin embryos of man and woman is Adam and Eve, a visible man and woman. This is how God's sons and daughters came into being. The ideal of creation is to perfect God's invisible realm of heart in a substantial realm of heart and unite the invisible and the visible. The ideal of creation is to establish the realm of the object partner based on love. (237-160, 1992.11.16)

Who is Adam? He is the substantial expression of half of God's internal characteristics. Who is Eve? She is the substantial expression and manifestation of God's feminine characteristics. Manifesting means they each assumed a body, a substantial expression. Before their manifestation took place, there existed a hidden motivating force which had not been revealed. This hidden motivating force is the person we in the Unification Church know as God, the invisible and incorporeal being. (140-123, 1986.2.9)

The only son and only daughter were the children born to be the corporeal object partners for the incorporeal God. Man represents God's positive characteristics, and woman represents God's negative characteristics. The Principle of Creation operates by separating into two objects the unified characteristics of the internal nature of God. He then harmonizes the two characteristics representing Him, and reunites them in a form that resembles His original internal nature. Man and woman each are born resembling one of God's character-

istics. Hence, the union of the only son and only daughter is the union of God's positive and negative characteristics. In other words, they become a harmonious union resembling God. For this reason, two people, a husband and a wife, are a unified body that represents God in His entirety. (9-83, 1960.4.16)

3.2. Husband and Wife Stand as Second Creators

When a husband and wife become one and have children, they can go on forever. As they rise to the position of creator and have children, they can feel God's joy of creation on this earthly plane. For this reason, your wife must be like your son or daughter. She combines the positions of son and daughter and brother and sister. Thus, you cannot separate from each other. Love is not arbitrary. Only when you have your children after following all this tradition, will you reach the original standard that God initially desired as the ideal of creation. This is why the family is called the foundation of the Kingdom of Heaven. (223-24, 1991.11.7)

As a husband and wife have children and rise to the position of parents, they come to feel deeply how much God rejoiced when He created human beings. Having children transforms the environment of having deep experiences into the essence of those experiences. Through those experiences, we become able to inherit the full authority of God, the great Subject of heaven and earth. The parents' responsibilities include giving birth to and raising their children with care, continuing until the children marry. God should have raised Adam and Eve and blessed them in marriage, but He was unable to do so. Similarly, having given birth to children, Adam and Eve were unable to bless them in marriage. This bitter sorrow must be resolved. These are the fundamental principles of education. The conclusion is simple. (223-196, 1991.11.10)

Human beings stand as horizontal parents. Adam and Eve are children, and brother and sister, and husband and wife at the same time. They then rise to the position of God by giving birth to sons and daughters. To give birth to and love children means to inherit everything that was joyful after God created human beings. (223-267, 1991.11.12)

Your children are the way God helps you feel joy in the position of a creator, the joy God felt when He created Adam and Eve. Children are the second creation, coming through Adam and Eve. The incorporeal God created Adam and Eve as beings of substance having a physical form. If Adam and Eve had reached perfection, they would have become the central representatives of love as the perfection of God's corporeal being. Just as God felt joy after creating Adam and Eve, children are given to you so that you can substantially feel and experience God's joy of creation. (238-62, 1992.11.19)

God seeks to realize His ideal of a

harmonious family in the universe. That is why He seeks to bequeath His love by bringing children, brothers and sisters, husbands, wives and parents into being. Because He has love, He positions us as second creators, creators of our sons and daughters, and He reveals to us the preciousness of our sons and daughters. (238-40, 1992.11.19)

When a woman is expecting a baby, a new world emerges for her. When the baby starts moving, she has so much hope. This is how women should be. They have many dreams, like the ones God had when He created. To have the thought "I hope my child grows up and becomes so and so in the future" is in keeping with the heart God had when He prepared to create Adam and Eve. Such are women's three-dimensional dreams. With the thought "I am not alone. The entire world is in the hands of my child, and he or she is growing in my womb," her mind embraces the whole world in love. (228-263, 1992.7.5)

The time when you come to the point of having a baby after marrying signals your move into the upper realm. You are rising to God's position. Loving your children is God's way of allowing you to experience His innermost heart and how much He loved human beings after He created them. (224-28, 1991.11.21)

God will come and dwell in Adam and Eve only when they love each other as God loves. He cannot come if they just do as they please. The invisible God will come to them only when they become completely one. In this way, God wants to give them a special title and position in relation to love and wrap them in cloth made of love. This is the ideal. Only then can God smell love. Wherever God goes, He sniffs the fragrance of love. (112-103, 1981.4.5)

Then, would God like kissing? The invisible God has no way to experience this by Himself because His two aspects are attached together. When you make love, you come together and then separate, do you not? When the husband and wife love each other intensely in the beginning, their love is like thunder roaring and lightning striking. Their love burns, and then they return to the zero point like clouds receding after the rain. (224-36, 1991.11.21)

God is a harmonious union of dual characteristics. At the same time, He is a masculine being. Since it is man who relates with God's fatherly love, a vertical relationship is formed. Women do not form a vertical relationship. Instead, they form a horizontal relationship in partnership with the vertical. Observing the attributes of God's character, man relates vertically in a relationship of "above and below." Woman relates horizontally in a relationship of "left and right."

Which comes first, the vertical or the horizontal? Because the vertical comes first, all the principles of nature pursue and seek the path to draw close to that place. This is why the son comes before

the daughter in relation to God's love. Only then will everything be arranged in order. (177-324, 1988.5.22)

Women have their menstrual period once a month, don't they? Who is this for? You should know how precious your descendants are. The purpose of creating Adam and Eve was to produce citizens for God's kingdom. There is no way to produce them in the spirit world.

God is the vertical Master of love, and the vertical has only one axis. It has only one point. Since one point cannot produce anything, a horizontal area is needed. Thus, God's purpose in creating is to become one with humankind, multiply many citizens for His kingdom, and bring them all to heaven. (222-72, 1991.10.28)

Husbands and wives are a production center for the citizens of God's kingdom. So God inevitably had to create human beings. We are sons and daughters of the heavenly nation, and sons and daughters of God. No one knew that they are the base for producing, out of the flesh and blood of our first ancestors, citizens of God's kingdom on this earth by expanding our connection to the royal family of heaven. (219-49, 1991.8.25)

No longer would God have been a lonely being after He saw an original man and woman making love. He would have come to feel a reciprocal joy as He witnessed how powerful the essence of the love latent within Him is.
(God's Will - 279)

Do you think God sees you making love or not? Would God, who transcends time and space, close His eyes at night, when the five billion people of the world make love? How would He feel when He sees them? How many good wives and good husbands are there? Think about it. All kinds of things should happen there. Reluctantly playing a wife's role, reluctantly being dragged along, reluctantly trying to please your spouse – you should not live like that. That is not love, is it? Is that life? How great the world would be if it turned into an environment where butterflies and bees flew around freely and we could live in harmony within heaven and earth according to God's ideal of creation – it would be just like the Garden of Eden with floral fragrances, and God could fall asleep there in bliss. Have you ever thought about this? Try living like this. (222-252, 1991.11.3)

God has not been able to reach the position of husband and wife or the position of parent. We must restore this. For this reason, True Parents must come. Only when True Parents appear and become the vertical and horizontal parents will everything bear fruit here, just as God multiplied ideal children at the time of creation. God carried out creation only vertically. However, Adam, once he has perfected his spiritual and physical self, can create horizontally. Although God created only two, a son and a daughter, people who stand as physical parents on behalf of God can multiply a limitless number of Adams and Eves. They can have ten, even twenty.

God cannot do this. As many people are born this way on the path of horizontal expansion, they will evolve into citizens of heaven. (236-146, 1992.11.4)

True Parents are the fruit of a countless number of religions, a fruit that can represent God's greatest work of creation. They are the culmination of history, the purpose of religion and the highest hope of humankind. Everything concludes with them. In them, there is freedom. Individuals and everything in heaven and earth are liberated through them. All these things, along with the unified heaven and earth, begin from love. (220-221, 1991.10.19)

Section 4. The Ideal of Love is Fulfilled in the Family

4.1. God's ideal of creation is the completion of the four-position foundation

What is God's purpose of creation? He did not create Adam and Eve just to look at them. He did not create men and women just so they could get old on their own and die. It was so that they could grow to maturity and, through their hearts that long to relate to the opposite sex, build the true Kingdom of Heaven on earth with God at the center. It was so that they could create a love nest with God in the middle. Here a man, Adam, represents heaven, and a woman, Eve, the earth; this is heaven and earth. Thus, although they are two, their horizontal union unifies heaven and earth. When they achieve unity through God's love, the cosmos will be unified automatically. (21-43, 1968.9.1)

God had greater expectations for the future that would unfold through Adam and Eve than He had for the time He created them. He aimed for the most noble and precious result. This was to fulfill the purpose of creation, and to complete the four-position foundation centered on love. (God's Will - 533)

God created His son, Adam, as the representative of the positive characteristic between the two characteristics and loved him most dearly. In loving him, He included the feminine aspect of His love. Also, in loving His daughter, Eve, He included the masculine aspect of His love. As these two separate people became one, the basis for a third new beginning was to emerge, and this was to be their children. For this reason, we say that children are object partners of love who stimulate new hope. Adam and Eve were born as embodiments of God's love and parental love. This is why God likes His children, and Adam and Eve like their children. You know the three-object purpose. This is how the three-object purpose is fulfilled. (32-238, 1970.7.19)

God's will for human beings is to fulfill the purpose of the ideal of creation. The ideal of creation is not completed simply by a man and a woman marrying each other and becoming one. They must then have children. This is because the principle of heaven and earth con-

nects the relationship of above and below, and front and back. If there is a yesterday, there is a today, and if there is a today, there is a tomorrow. These must all be connected. But for a husband and wife alone there is only today, and no tomorrow. However, without another day everything will end. If we say couples are above, they must have something below, namely children. Without something below, it ends there.

Hence, the principle of heaven and earth is that when the positions of upper and lower are established, left and right can emerge.

Only after they hold marriage ceremonies for their children do parents feel that they have fulfilled their responsibility. A relationship of upper and lower is established only when a couple who are parents experience the marriage of their children. Only when the relationship of upper and lower is established can the ideal be attained.

Husband and wife are joined as left and right; parents and children must have a relationship of upper and lower to connect the vertical and horizontal and thereby form the ideal spherical realm within the universe. In addition to that, only when there are brothers and sisters will a sphere finally be formed.

When the ideal is realized this way, you can draw a circle around the vertical and horizontal lines meeting at the center. Ultimately, only when a man and a woman experience the realization of the ideal in the vertical and the horizontal can they say they are living within the ideal realm.

This constitutes the four-position foundation that the Unification Church teaches about. This is why we say that the completion of the four-position foundation is the fulfillment of the ideal of creation. (85-178, 1976.3.3)

A person should not remain alone but rather go through three stages, beginning with the individual, then the partner stage, and finally the stage with children. The God-centered relationship between a person, the spouse and their children is the four-position foundation. The completion of this four-position foundation is God's purpose of creation. (19-106, 1967.12.31)

To establish the four-position foundation, you first must go through the heart of a husband and wife; only then can you experience the heart of children and the heart of parents. (13-67, 1963.10.17)

4.2. The ideal of creation is fulfilled through the completion of the family

The ideal that God wanted to see fulfilled through our first ancestors was for a man and a woman to become one and create an ideal family. Then, the center of the ideal family is neither the man nor the woman. The family is a bundle created by the union of parents, children, husband and wife, and the center of this bundle is God's love itself. The conclusion is that God's will is to realize the completion of a family centered on God's love. (127-9, 1983.5.1)

The family is the origin and basic foundation that is unchanging throughout the ages. It cannot be changed by a father, by a brother or sister, or even by a nation's institutions. Moreover, it cannot be changed by the world, by heaven and earth, or even by God. Hence, the concept of revolution is not needed for the family. (25-85, 1969.9.30)

Human beings need to be in parent-child relationships, husband-wife relationships, and brother-sister relationships. In other words, these three relationships must meet at one point. There is one central point. The central points for above and below, left and right, and front and back should not be separate. If the central points are different, the balance between the relationships of above and below, left and right, and front and back will be shattered.

Eventually, therefore, the positions of above and below, left and right, and front and back, together with the one central point, form the number seven. Forming the number seven means to become one with God through perfect true love and to form a family in which everything becomes a perfect sphere and achieves harmony and unification. (299-114, 1999.2.7)

The place where parents and children, husband and wife, and brothers and sisters all want to join together in true love is the ideal family. Here, as eternal worldwide equalization commences, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth begins and the Kingdom of Heaven in heaven automatically comes to be realized. (300-226, 1999.3.14)

Since God is the Original Being of true love, when one is connected to true love, everyone becomes part of one body. Parents are gods living in place of God on earth, husband and wife are mutual counterpart gods, and sons and daughters are little gods. A family structure comprising three generations centering on true love in this manner is the basis of the Kingdom of Heaven. Without achieving such a basis, the kingdom cannot be established. The family is the center of the universe. The perfection of the family is the basis for the perfection of the universe. And so, if there is love in a family and love for the universe, we can go anywhere freely. In this case, God stands in the combined central position of love as the Parent of the whole universe. (298-306, 1999.1.17)

A man's love, a woman's love, a son's love, a daughter's love, parents' love and God's love are all contained in the family foundation of the original creation with God at the center.

Any place where these different kinds of love are demonstrated, anyone who loves his parents, his spouse and his children is practicing the lifestyle of the Kingdom of Heaven. (Blessed Family - 942)

One such family establishes the ethical foundation for society; it is the best model and the fundamental and primary organization for the human world. In

that family, love is the best standard for each person. (Blessed Family - 942)

The most important times in a person's life are the time of birth, the time of marriage and the time of death. Then, at the time of birth, how should one be born? One should be born healthy. Next comes the time of marriage. One gets married in order to live; that is, to establish a four-position foundation. Only when such common governing principles of the universe are established on the earth will God's will and the will of humankind be fulfilled. The family is where we seek to embody such universal laws and manifest that form. (24-230, 1969.8.17)

God's ideal of creation was that Adam and Eve, our first ancestors, multiply children of goodness and build one world centered on God. (God's Will - 137)

We have a saying, "Family harmony brings success to everything." This means that peace in the family makes everything go well. A perfected family is a family of peace and the foundation for the Kingdom of Heaven. The driving force in such a family is true love. True love is the pure and beautiful love that loves God and my partner more than my own self, with all my life. In this universe, God has not created a power greater than the power of true love. True love is the love of God. (219-118, 1991.8.28)

If God's will had been carried out on this earth, a single cultural realm would have been created with Adam at the center. Instead of countless races, each forming its own different culture and civilization, as we see today, we would have a world with a single culture, single philosophy and single civilization centered on Adam. Then everything, including culture, history, customs, language and tradition, would be unified. In God's love, we would have established ideal families, tribes, peoples and nations, and these would have expanded to realize an ideal world of Adam's ideal. Just as a tree's root, trunk and leaves are all connected with one life, viewing the world from God's will means centering on love. Looking upward, we would attend God as the Father and, looking downward, we would change all people into one living body. This would be a living body of love, like brothers and sisters building an eternal, God-centered, ideal world. People living in such a world would not need salvation or a Messiah, for they would be God's good sons and daughters. (110-213, 1980.11.18)

Section 5. God's Will in Creating All Things

5.1. The purpose for creating all things

God did not originally create all things of heaven and earth as a plaything or a hobby. He did not create them without a purpose or direction, or without a certain philosophy. Rather, He created them with a great purpose, based on the philosophy of the great universe. There-

fore, we cannot deny that the philosophy based on God's heart is present in all existing things, from the most insignificant creatures to the entire universe. Then, for what purpose did God create them with such a philosophy? Undoubtedly, His aim was to see an ideal world based on God's love, that is, a world where we communicate with love, are joyful with love, live with love, and die with love. When we wake up and open our eyes, we see everything unfolding before us. From all the things we see we receive some mysterious, indirect impression, and by the way our senses respond, these things are enhanced through our daily life.

Even the smallest creatures around us are surely connected to us and have a relationship with us. Even though we may ignore them, these insignificant creatures make a connection with humankind, revealing the value of their existence each day according to the ideal of the heavenly principle. This is because, from the viewpoint of the purpose of existence, from the smallest existence to human beings – who are called the lords of creation and who can rule over all things – everything lies within the realm of the ideal of love where they can embrace God's ideal for this vast universe. So in fulfilling the purpose of the universe, movement occurs as small things are absorbed by those that govern a larger sphere. Small things are absorbed by big things, becoming a part of their material form and elements. This leads to the realization of one purpose based on one great ideal.

We cannot deny that history has been advancing this way, and that the world of existence has been moving along the track of a heavenly principle for the sake of one purpose. (9-163, 1960.5.8)

Why did God create all things? It was to have a love object, a partner, and to create a loving relationship. He wanted people to be able to live and then return to the original world and dwell in God's eternal, original homeland of love. (142-75, 1986.3.1)

The Bible describes God's creation of heaven and earth in simple terms, saying that God created heaven and earth through the Word. Stars appeared when God said, "Let there be stars," and the earth appeared when God said, "Let there be earth." But you must be aware that in this process God maintained the principle of progression, developing small things into big things according to infinite order and law.

According to this principle, after creating all things, God created our ancestors, Adam and Eve, by concentrating the essences of everything in the universe. (65-20, 1972.11.13)

Today's Christians say that since God is omniscient and omnipotent, everything came into being by God merely saying, "Let there be such a heaven and earth." But this is not the case. God invested everything, all the energy He had. By investing the full power of His love, He created all things as a gift for His beloved sons and daughters to come,

His beloved future family. Everything was created like that. So we should look at all things keeping this in mind. (112-306, 1981.4.25)

With what did God create? In the beginning, there was God's will and there was God's thought. Together with God's thought there was a plan. We can see that there was God's original will and plan to build some kind of human world after the creation of human beings. (76-91, 1975.2.1)

One thing you should know is that in creating the world, God first created the environment. This is the world that resulted from the relations of subject and object partners. The natural world has developed as a world of phenomena where subject partners and object partners act in conjunction with one another. (131-217, 1984.5.4)

When we consider the principles used in the creation of heaven and earth, God did not make the central beings and then the environment for them. Rather, before creating human beings, God prepared an environment based on relationships. In order to create human beings, He first made soil. He established the internal based on the external. This is the principle by which heaven and earth were created. Things that existed at one time have given way to bigger things, and things without value have given rise to things of value. This is the principle underlying the creation of heaven and earth. In creating human beings, God first made the human body and then the spirit. (152-318, 1963.8.18)

When God saw everything He had created during the six days, He was filled with pride and He wanted to display them proudly. His joy was infinite as He looked at His creation. When God said, "It is good, it is good," over and over again with such a joyful heart, to whom was He speaking? He was speaking to all the things of creation. We have to understand that He was talking to all things with such an eager heart. (5-238, 1959.2.8)

When God created the world, there was joy there. After creating it, He said that it was good to behold. He felt joy. What is joy? It is what you feel when you accomplish a certain purpose. God felt joyful over all the things He had created because God's sense of purpose was embedded in them.

Then, what kind of world is the restored world? Simply stated, it is a world where people live having multidimensional connections of heart through which they can praise God as they behold each individual entity in the universe. This is where, from Heaven's viewpoint, the value of character lies. So the story that St. Francis preached to animals and birds is not a lie. It sounds like a dream, but it is reality. (9-166, 1960.5.8)

Although love exists even when you are alone, it cannot function until you have a partner. Even God cannot love without a partner. Even though love is what God likes most, that love cannot be

manifested when He is alone. When one is alone, one can feel neither the joy nor the impulse of love. This is why God created the universe as a partner with which He can share love and joy. After creating the universe, God created Adam and Eve as its owners. (143-81, 1986.3.16)

5.2. The size and structure of the mysterious universe

Everything in the created world is prepared like a textbook so that God's beloved sons and daughters can seek out the ideal of love. That is why everything exists in a pair system. The mineral kingdom operates through the relationship of subject partner and object partner. In atoms, too, protons and electrons interact through the relationship of subject partner and object partner. Without this interaction they cannot continue to exist. Without movement, there can be no eternal existence. Hence, the universe is centered on humankind, and it is the sphere created to enable them to reach the central point. (137-59, 1985.12.18)

What is the universe? It is like God's visible body. It is an extension of God's being. This is why the idea emerges that we can truly love. In other words, loving the universe is a very real experience. You stroke your hair like this, don't you? When you get some dirt on your clothes, you brush it off, right? Why do you do this? Because they form a part of you. Because they are one with you, you have that attitude. From now on, you should bring God into the middle of your heart and build a unified world where your mind is one, your body is one, and all things are one. (86-173, 1976.3.28)

If you want to know, the universe is many billions of light-years across. Light travels 300 thousand kilometers a second, and 300 thousand kilometers is seven and a half times the circumference of the earth. In astronomy, the distance that light travels over the course of one year is called one light-year. The universe is so big that the light that moves according to this light-year unit cannot reach its final destination even after billions of years. (127-213, 1983.5.8)

The Greenwich Observatory has so far discovered stars that are ten billion light-years away, and now the time has come when we can see stars that are fifteen billion light-years away and even farther. The size of this universe is a principled number – 21 billion light-years across. Light travels at the rate of 300 million meters per second. That means that light would circle the earth seven and a half times in one second.

For this high-velocity light, traveling even one day should be back-breaking, numbing the mind and causing it to say, "I don't care anymore." But it speeds along not just for a hundred years, but for billions of years. One hundred million is a hundred times a million. However, even one hundred million years after it started, it is still moving. If a person lives a hundred years, a million people have lived and died during that time period. In other words, one hundred million

light-years means that the light is still traveling even after each person lived for a hundred years end to end and this continued for a million people. Then, how long are 21 billion light-years? Each person must live a hundred years from start to finish, so this must continue for 210 million people, and more. Light does not travel this long distance in a straight line, but travels in circles. This is our universe. (181-195, 1988.10.3)

What on earth do we mean by the perfection of the universe? In order to perfect the universe, each of us must become perfect. No matter how perfect the universe may be, this has nothing to do with you if you are not perfect. We know that no matter how wonderful the world may be, and although the world out there may be dancing with joy, if you are in great pain, all the joyful circumstances going on in the external world have nothing to do with you. (166-210, 1987.6.7)

The perfection of the universe must bring joy to the internal you, as well as to the external world. Both your mind and your body must rejoice in a place of happiness. Your cells, for instance, must all rejoice. The cells in your eyes and those in the soles of your feet are different, are they not? Although they are different, the cells in your hands and all your cells must be happy, along with all the parts of your body and mind. Leaving nothing out, everything must be able to rejoice. Rather than remaining in separation, they should join together as one. Only when we have a world that can experience the resonant joy of love based on the reality of this interconnected body, will the universe become perfect. (166-210, 1987.6.7)

5.3. Nature is a textbook teaching the ideal of love

Some people who pray have called nature the number one Bible. It does not take second place. The Bible that describes the history of Israel does not always give a clear message. Do you know how much I shook my head as I read it? It can be very ambiguous; people understand what they want to from it, as if it were a fortune teller telling their fortune. For some it is a way to escape from reality. So the natural world created by God is better than the Bible at carrying out the hard task of judging the facts and clarifying everything from beginning to end. (20-270, 1968.7.7)

Connections are made beginning in extremely small places. Your individual self is also a life in which 400 trillion cells are connected. Among all beings in the ideal world of creation centered on God's love – that is, the great universe – there is not even one that is born outside God's heart. A poet who feels such a thing must be a great poet. If there were a poet who could feel and express the cosmic heart when he saw a shaking leaf, he would have to be a poet of the universe.

We have not thought about how everything in heaven and earth that

unfolds around us without our being aware of it exists together with God's love. When you enter into a mystical state of mind, you can see that the principle of the universe is contained in one small grain of sand and how the endless and inexhaustible harmony of the universe is contained in one atom. We cannot deny that all existence is a result of some unknown yet complex force.

Beyond the molecules there are atoms, and beyond the atoms there are elementary particles. These things, rather than existing unconsciously, exist with a certain consciousness and purpose. Thus, you should thoroughly understand that all existing beings have come about through God's loving hand. So they are inevitably connected to God in heart. (9-166, 1960.5.8)

What kind of person is a spiritual master? The one who has the heart to exclaim, "God!" while holding just one blade of grass, and who can recognize its value as being equal to his own. That person is the greatest spiritual master. A person who can sing about such a value in that way would be the greatest artist. The person who can discover the various tastes of God's love and heart in the diversity of all things existing around him should represent the entire universe. He or she is the one who has the feeling to become friends with all things and find joy with them.

If there is someone whose each and every cell is moved by such a feeling, he should be the one to represent the entire universe. Such a person is a lord of creation. Could someone who knows nothing other than eating become the lord of creation? (9-166, 1960.5.8)

If you carefully observe children, mainly they like lively creatures such as puppies, insects, birds and wild animals. Why is this? This is basically how people are. What does this mean? Their interests are aroused when they see the natural world and the earth in motion. Although, of course, there can be different levels of partners, people enjoy themselves and find it interesting to contemplate these things. In this way, they learn about all the properties of love within themselves. Observing how bugs, insects and animals live, we see that they all exist in pairs. Considering this, nature is a museum of textbooks built to educate human beings, as the object partners of God's love, about the ideal of reciprocal relationships. (137-211, 1986.1.3)

God made the universe and everything in it to be a textbook to help His beloved sons and daughters find the ideal of love. This is why everything exists in a pair system. The mineral kingdom operates through the relationship of subject partner and object partner. In atoms, which are the structural units of matter, the protons and electrons interact in a relationship of subject partner and object partner. Without this interaction they cannot exist. Without movement, there can be no eternal existence. This is why they must interact.

People observe and learn from nature

as they grow up. They learn things and say, "This is what the insect world is like!" When you listen carefully on an autumn night with a radiant moon and shining stars, the sounds of the insects are like an orchestra. Why do they make such sounds? They are singing of their ideal as they search for their partners. They are whispering about love. Birds and all other animals follow the same common denominator of love in making their sad and glad sounds. They are low on the scale, and far from the axis, and yet they are circling around the axis on the same horizontal plane. This is the way all things in existence are. (137-59, 1985.12.18)

There are three kinds of bird songs: first, a song signaling hunger; second, a song sung out of love for its mate; and third, a song sung in time of danger. They are all different. We ordinary people do not know this, but in their own world they know. When they call out of hunger, all their fellow birds understand. But what does their daily life revolve around? Hunger is taken care of simply by eating, and they are not facing danger every day, either. Most of their singing has to do with going back and forth in the give and take relationship with their love partner. (137-211, 1986.1.3)

Human beings were created as a subject partner and object partner, as a pair. The world of all things, too, which exists for the sake of humankind, makes harmony under the principle of love and realizes its purpose in life and ideal through the love of humankind.

For humankind, and especially for the maturing Adam and Eve, the world of all things is a textbook of love and a museum that infinitely displays the essence of love. (135-10, 1985.8.20)

All birds and animals exist in pairs. They harmonize with each other in love. Flowers and butterflies relate from two opposite poles, yet harmonize with each other. This reflects the harmonious relationship of heaven and earth. The opposite poles of the universe come into harmony based on love. It's the same with migratory birds. Birds in the south fly to the north, and birds in the north fly to the south, loving each other back and forth across the regions. In so doing, they center on love eternally. People learn about love through the textbooks in the museum God created. When people and God love each other in joy, everything in heaven and on earth will follow that rhythm and harmonize around them. If God likes this and loves this, the angelic world also will like it. The entire created world will like it too, applauding and offering praise. Songbirds will sing praises, and beautiful flowers will offer praises through their fragrances. This created world exists in order to expand the fragrant atmosphere in which human beings, in the central position, having the highest love, can enjoy themselves. Even the ugly toads croak, "Wook, wook, wook," when they make love. How charming! They kick with their legs and move them up and down while making love. What a delightful scene! This is the highest art. (142-273, 1986.3.13)

As they mature, Adam and Eve will come to understand, saying, "Ah, that's how to make love." God laid out the world of all things to serve as a textbook, to guide the ideal of human love to reach maturity. So they go on learning. As they grow bigger, they will come to have different feelings toward each other, saying, "Aha, we were like a brother and sister in the past, but now it seems. … " They will learn, saying, "Aha, that's the way it is." So they will go straight along parallel lines, and then collide, saying, "You and I must meet even at the risk of death. We cannot go anywhere else." (137-59, 1985.12.18)

Born as God's first children, Adam and Eve were to grow from childhood to maturity in the realm of God's protection. Since their intellect was meant to develop through this process, they would have come to realize why God created the world, and God would have educated them through the created world. The created world, with everything in motion, was a textbook to teach Adam and Eve everything they needed to know about how to live. They were to have been our first, original ancestors. You have to understand that since Adam and Eve did not reach perfection, the created world has been a model and a museum showing us how to lead an ideal life. (137-126, 1986.1.1)

5.4. Our attitude toward nature

When you open your eyes in the morning and look at nature, it subtly connects with your original nature and inspires feelings about a new ideal that can sprout forth. On the other hand, you know very well that the more you look at the human world, the more despair and sorrow it arouses in your heart. If the world were populated by people who had not fallen, the value of human beings would not stir up sorrow in the heart of a beholder. Human beings were not created merely to have the value of a blade of grass, a flower or a tree trunk. People were supposed to be noble beings who could not be exchanged for anything in the created world. They were supposed to step forward representing Heaven with incomparable value. (9-97, 1960.4.24)

You should have a mind that contemplates nature that is imbued with the love of God and says, "Could anything precious owned by a king of this world or by some famous person compare with this? Could any antique artifact compare with this? Could a glamorous dress worn by a famous lady compare with this?" Without that kind of heart, we are committing a sin before the natural world without even knowing it. If there is someone who can look at a living being and say, "Can anything produced by human hands compare with this? No matter how great someone may be, could he ever be greater than God?" and value most highly all things created through God's hard work, he must surely be a child of God. Such a person does not need to pray. He lives with God. God guides people into such a position. (9-174, 1960.5.8)

People will enjoy and take delight in anything that belongs to someone they love. Nevertheless, they do not know how to take delight in all things created by God, whom they should love the most. Can such people become God's sons and daughters? You are responsible to liberate creation which is sighing and lamenting from its sorrow. You should deeply experience the heart and care that God invested in the creation of even one tree or plant 6,000 years ago. You should have such a heart. So you should be able to shed tears even at the sight of one plant along the road, or holding onto one tree, say, "How lonely you must be to have lost your master!" I myself have wept profusely while grasping a rock; I have shed tears to feel the wind blow. Now, because you have heard my words, you understand why. (9-176, 1960.5.8)

I have gone this way while saying to myself, "The precious things of creation, which God made and which have forged an eternal connection with God, are not cherished as much as national treasures or valuables in some kingdoms today. I will understand that sorrow; I alone must understand." If you have a heart that says, "I will understand, though all those living on this earth may be ignorant of it," your people will be a new people who can rule humankind in the future. This is not a concept but a fact. Where are the people who can value all things of creation more than the family treasures that are handed down over the generations, or more than diamonds, supposedly the most precious stone in the world – so that they hold on to those things and refuse to let them go? Upon seeing those who understand in their hearts what He has created, and who hold those things and shed tears over them, God will say, "My dear children!" (9-176, 1960.5.8)

What is nature? It is an exhibit that God has given us as a gift, something He prepared for the birth of His beloved sons and daughters. Even the song of a bird and a plant growing are decorations prepared to bring beauty into the lives of His beloved sons and daughters. Even the rocks rolling on the road were created as decorations for a nation, since God knew that His sons and daughters would be the owners who would rule over that nation. It is the same with flowing water. God did not want things to be dry and monotonous, so He created things for a prince of dreams and of hope who could look at this infinitely colorful and harmonious garden – this world of love – and inherit it. Hence, we learn from all things of creation. When the male and female birds sing, the lady who owns them should learn from that. You should be able to sing praises for the beauty of the original world of creation, where everything devotes its entire life to establish a world where each lives for the sake of the other. Then, even baby birds will want to come and live in your home. Birds will want to have their young there. (175-186, 1988.4.16)

No matter how precious a work of art

in a museum may be, can it have more value than a living work of art? I am asking who has loved this earth, the museum of all things and the work of God, more than God has. I am asking if anyone has loved it more than the museums in his own country. Can you compare a gold crown from the Shilla Dynasty in the museum with a dandelion lying on the road, when that is made directly by God? If there is a king who embodies the heart of such a God and takes care of the creation with a heart that says, "You stand in a position to receive love. I am sorry that I cannot love you from the position of the king for whom the original God could exist," the tufts of grass will want to follow that king and be with him eternally. This is how people should live. (175-186, 1988.4.16)

5.5. Love nature and love people

You should know how to love nature and love people. You should know that those who cannot love people or love nature cannot love God. Because all things of creation are symbols for God and because people are substantial beings, those who know how to love all things of creation and people will come to love God. (70-181, 1974.2.9)

You should always love nature. You should love nature and love people. You should love people of all five colors in the human race. Would God say, "Oh, I like only white people"? Then everyone would have to wear only white clothes. All white people would have to wear only white clothes, and throw away all their colored clothes. Why would you wear black clothes or colored clothes? That would be a contradiction. (133-28, 1984.7.1)

Even all the elements and the smallest creatures go toward the way of love. They are moving toward being the cells of humankind that can directly contact the love that is one with God. For this reason, we should sacrifice ourselves for the sake of love. We should invest ourselves.

Since there is a tradition of pouring out one's life and possessions in their entirety, lower entities seek to give their whole being for the sake of higher entities. This is not Darwin's Theory of Evolution but a theory of absorption based on love. The question is how the value of one of the smallest creatures increases as it becomes material to be used in creating the next higher level of value. (204-129, 1990.7.1)

We should feel that all creatures of God are objects of our love. We should be people who can love, and be loved by, even the smallest forms of life, not to mention human beings, as well as everything visible and invisible in heaven. When a bird calls, "Chirp, chirp, chirp" in the morning, instead of saying, "You pesky sparrow, I am trying to sleep late. Why are you chirping?!" say, "Oh, thank you. You came to wake me up. Ha ha, you are telling me that an important guest is coming to see me." The outlook is different. This is a great thing. (112-219, 1981.4.12)

God created the angelic world at the same time that He created the human world. What kind of world is the angelic world? Only when human beings appear with beauty and fragrance – like blossoms that exist for the sake of bearing one fruit – will the nest of love finally be prepared. Hence, all life starts from there, and all beings that have life can harmonize starting from there. Human beings make this harmony possible. Centered on such people, a myriad of angels in heaven form a subject realm of harmony where they can have give and take with people, as butterflies and bees do with flowers. When that happens, a flowery garden of harmony will surely appear in which God rejoices, people rejoice, angels rejoice and all things are immersed in love. A spring party will then begin. (31-124, 1970.5.3)

CHAPTER THREE

The History of the Providence of Restoration and Changes in Humankind's View of God

Section 1. The God of the Old Testament Age

1.1. The Old Testament Age was the age of the servant

Through the Fall, human beings fell into the non-Principle realm. How far did they fall? They fell into a realm even lower than that of the angels, who are God's servants. The princes and princesses, who were supposed to be the masters, fell to a position lower than servants, so they must go back up.

From the way of the servant of servants, they should go up through the way of a servant, adopted child, child by a concubine, and child of the direct lineage, and then return, through the mother, to the position of Adam, the father. This is restoration.

The providence of salvation is like returning someone to the standard of health he enjoyed before he became sick. He must return to the state of having had no sickness.

This is why the providence of salvation is the providence of restoration. The providence of restoration is not carried out arbitrarily. You cannot just "believe and be saved." (222-144, 1991.11.3)

Although human beings fell, they must go up from the position of servant of servants, because they cannot abandon God. Then what does "servant of servants" mean? It means to be without a master. Fallen people must serve God loyally from the position of the servant of servants. Satan was an archangel and God's servant. Since human beings were dragged in front of this servant, in order to return to God, they must set up the standard of having demonstrated their loyalty to God while standing as servants of servants. (17-73, 1966.11.12)

The Old Testament Age was an age when sacrificial offerings were made; thus, God could find people whom He could use as His servants. This is Old Testament history. Because human beings were lost, things were turned upside down and people became lower than all things of creation. Human beings came to be in a worse situation than all things of creation. For this reason, they had to divide all things, which were closer to God, into two and divide what belongs to God from what belongs to Satan. Such divided sacrificial offerings were not made because of God or Satan but because people failed to fulfill

their responsibilities. You should know this. It is because people failed in their responsibilities that they came to receive Satan's blood. (136-228, 1985.12.29)

From the viewpoint of the providence, the time before the Old Testament Age, that is, before Jacob, was the age of the servant of servants; the time from Jacob to Jesus was the age of the servant; the time after Jesus was the age of the adopted son; and the time of the Second Advent is the age of the son. Because the age of the son has come, the son must have parents. Thus, through the age of the parents, humankind returns to God. (74-121, 1974.11.25)

The Old Testament Age was the age of the servant, an age where people in the position of servant of servants were restored to the position of servant. For this reason, even Abraham was a servant, not a son. God established the way of loyalty by setting up servants of servants. In this way, God has been moving His providence forward by bringing all humankind together throughout history to take possession of the worldwide stage of evil and bring it to God's side. Even Jacob triumphed as God's servant rather than as God's son. God has been working this way, restoring people from the position of servant of servants to that of servant, and from the position of servant to that of adopted son. (15-325, 1965.12.7)

Comprehensively examining the historical course of restoration, we can see that God has, until now, been leading the providence through the three stages of formation, growth, and completion. The course of restoration passes through the age of the servant, which is the Old Testament Age, the age of the adopted son, which is the New Testament Age, and the age of true children, which is the Completed Testament Age, and enters the age of True Parents. The providence of salvation in the Old Testament Age offered salvation to humankind in the position of servant. Hence, in that age, without establishing a central figure who could endure from beginning to end and achieve victory, the foundation for restoration to the position of servant could not be laid. Hence, God made many sacrifices while leading the four-thousand-year history through central figures such as Noah and Abraham. (15-49, 1965.12.7)

What did God do in the Old Testament Age? Since the world became satanic, He took on the task of seeking His servants by sacrificing all things and establishing people on the heavenly side. God was not even looking for adopted sons. He was looking for servants of servants. The people of the satanic world have all become Satan's sons and daughters. God cannot take them away. Hence, God has been gathering those who have lost hope in the satanic world. It is a sad reality, but God has been collecting useless material. He has been dealing with junk. This process does not finish there. Sacrifice is required, and people go through the process of being a sacrificial offering. (136-222, 1985.12.29)

God tried to bring people who were not even good enough to become servants in the satanic world and made them servants of servants in God's world. This is Old Testament history. This is why God made Jacob and Esau fight. This is why He called Noah. God took a servant of servants in the satanic world to a distant country. There, He isolated and exhausted him in order to make him God's servant. (154-334, 1964.10.5)

Satan treats human beings as enemies. They cannot even become Satan's servants. In the Old Testament Age God worked to turn such people into God's servants. Then, God wanted to make servants into adopted children, adopted children into children of direct lineage, children of direct lineage into brothers and sisters, and brothers and sisters into true parents by blessing them as bride and bridegroom. Since the God-centered true family was lost, restoration is the work of regaining it. The marriage feast of the Lamb was to be the occasion heralding Jesus as the true parent. (12-29, 1962.7.15)

God commissioned His servants and taught them, "I am your Father." He taught people through His servants and angels. Such was the Old Testament Age. Next, He worked through His son. This was the New Testament Age. Next, He worked through the Holy Spirit. (10-197, 1960.10.2)

God has been longing for people to be in relationship with all things of creation and with Him. Hence, God has been working to pull fallen people up from the servant's position, through the adopted son's position and children's position to the parents' position. This was in order to sever the painful connection with the Fall and enable all things, people, and God to form unifying relationships so that God's joy becomes humankind's joy and humankind's joy becomes the joy of all things. God wanted to take pride in His sons and daughters and present and dedicate them to the natural world and even to the world of angels. (11-279, 1962.1.3)

If we think about it, the Old Testament Age lasted four thousand years until the coming of Jesus. Was there a word like "Blessing"? Was it possible to bless a family in God's name? Since it was the servant's era, people were in the domain of the archangel, a servant. The archangel cannot be married; he must live a single life. In that era, God could not have a family, and God's sons and daughters could not marry. Can a servant be married? He cannot. (90-97, 1976.12.19)

1.2. In the Old Testament Age, angels worked on behalf of God

In order to restore the defiled land, God has been leading the providence of salvation by building a relationship with humankind through the angels. God is carrying out the providence of salvation in order to once again deal with human beings, who betrayed God through the

Fall, and fell so miserably lower than all things. To govern humankind, dominated and accused by Satan, God has been working to build a bridge. This work has lasted throughout the Old Testament and New Testament Ages until now. (1-282, 1956.12.16)

Originally, in the Old Testament Age, God was supposed to work directly with people and relate to them in His glory, but the providence could not be completed because of the Fall. Therefore, in sorrow, God pioneered an alternative way of relating to people through angels, and this was the Old Testament Age. God established a standard whereby He could work through the angels. Since angels are also divine beings, they appeared to people like God and served temporarily as mediators until the coming of Jesus. (1-283, 1956.12.16)

If we look at the Old Testament Age, we see that God has used angels as messengers for the sake of building God's garden of freedom and the heavenly kingdom of liberation. If you want to enter the realm of grace where you can be liberated from the servant's position as God's son, you should be able to feel joyful even while losing your life. Only those who have such a free heart can go beyond the servant's position and enter the son's position. (4-321, 1958.10.12)

Look at the Bible. God has been working through the archangels in the spirit world, through His son, and through the Holy Spirit. God could not directly connect to this work in His heart. In the Old Testament Age He worked through the angels, and in the New Testament Age He worked through His son. From the heavenly viewpoint, the Old Testament Age was the age to regain the people, and the New Testament Age was the age to regain the children. (10-170, 1960.9.25)

Consider this: to restore the people of Israel, the angels in the heavenly world came and worked, the servants came and worked, and then the son came and worked. Now, the father is coming. The coming Lord is coming as a father. He will come as the True Parent, raise true children and give love. What will happen then? You could stay up all night with one beloved person.

God loved one man, Abraham, more than the people of the fallen world. He loved Moses, one person, more than all humankind, and He loved Jesus more than all humankind. Thus, you should know how precious each beloved son and daughter is to God. (10-354, 1960.11.27)

The God Jehovah, who appeared to Abraham, was also an angel. Originally, God, being without form, is invisible, but in Genesis three beings appeared as God, two going to judge Sodom and Gomorrah and the remaining one talking to Abraham as God (Genesis 18:1-18). Yet, they were angels sent by God, who commissioned them to work on His behalf. The people did not know this.

After twenty-one years of spiritual training, Jacob went back toward his hometown in Seir, where his elder

brother lived, in order to satisfy his longing. Although Jacob had waited for twenty-one years, instead of giving him a joyful send-off and saying, "Have a safe journey," God sent an angel and had him wrestle with Jacob at the Ford of Jabbok with much shouting. If Jacob had lost to the angel, the hardships of his past twenty-one years would have been in vain. So, Jacob tenaciously held on to the angel, saying that he would not let go until his hands were pulled off or even if his arms broke. He was deadly serious! (51-344, 1971.12.5)

God had blessed him through Isaac and advised him to abandon everything and return to his hometown; then, why did God not guide Jacob and make his path smooth? When Jacob was pleading with God by the Ford of Jabbok all night with an anxious heart, why did God deal with him so heartlessly by sending an angel to strike him, instead of giving him encouragement and advice? (3-334, 1958.2.9)

What kind of people were our ancestors of faith who lived in the Old Testament Age? Since God is invisible, even if He were to appear no one would know Him. The ancestors of faith are thus the ones God sent to reproduce His work on His behalf in a way appropriate for the age and to help the people forge a connection with Him.

For this reason, in order for us to rise to the position of God's adopted son, we must connect with the historical deeds and retribution of many people. We must go through many stages, including becoming representatives of the world's people on the level of the individual, family, tribe, a people, and nation – and bind all of them together as one, representing the final destination. (77-132, 1975.4.6)

1.3. Why do angels become involved in human salvation?

What kind of beings are angels? They are beings that should have completed the path of loyalty to God in the servant's position, and served as a protective fence for Adam and Eve. They should have created an atmosphere of glory that would have lasted forever in the heavenly world and lived happily with Adam and Eve in God's love. In other words, the archangels were created for Adam and Eve. God, the Father of Adam and Eve, created the angels for their sake. (15-238, 1965.10.17)

Because the archangel's fall led to Adam and Eve bringing the human world to such ruin, the angelic world is working on God's behalf to fight against Satan. The evil Satan and good angels are fighting. Only when the side of the good angels wins the battle will there be a step forward. God cannot do as He pleases. This is the Principle. (109-18, 1980.10.26)

God created the three archangels as servants for the unfallen Adam and Eve and entrusted Adam and Eve to them, asking the archangels to raise them by educating and protecting them. Why did He have to do this? It is because

the archangels are in a reciprocal relationship with their subject partner: the earth plane is the subject partner, and the angelic realm is the object partner. God's ideal in creating heaven and earth was to expand the horizontal realm of relationships in front of God's true love in this dual-realm environment. (208-256, 1990.11.20)

Who should educate Adam? It is not God, but the archangels who must do this. They should protect and raise him. The archangels were responsible to carefully supervise, guide, and educate him so that he would be untainted at the time of his marriage.

Since the Unification Church also had to follow this rule to accomplish restoration through indemnity, I have loved the 36 Couples more than my own children. (121-240, 1982.10.27)

God is the source of life. Parents nurture the lives of their children. They are the source of life, love and protection. They protect life, give love, and nurture. So where does happiness come from? Without a protected domain, life is threatened, and when life is threatened, love cannot manifest itself.

If you were to die now, would love manifest itself? It would not. This is why a protective realm is needed. So when this protective realm was secured, the archangels were responsible for it. After receiving life from God, the origin of life, Adam and Eve were educated in love under the archangels' protection. (51-173, 1971.11.21)

Section 2. The Identity of Jehovah God

2.1. The attributes of Jehovah God

You should know that the reason Moses introduced the God of authority, God of ability, and God of judgment, instead of the God of love was to give the law to the Israelites and protect and raise heavenly people with the law. It was to accomplish the will of restoration to drive them to the land of Canaan, a land flowing with milk and honey. (35-276, 1970.10.25)

Canaan, a land flowing with milk and honey, was a place that could be entered only by the reborn people who had received the Ten Commandments and the law and carried the Ark of the Covenant in the wilderness. God gave His words to the Israelites who left Egypt in order to recreate them as God's people, but when they did not follow His words, He appeared to them as a terrifying God who struck and punished them.

The Old Testament Age, in which Satan reigned as the king, was an age of the devil's power until the appearance of the Messiah. Jehovah God therefore appeared to Moses as the God of fear, God of revenge, and God of jealousy, and struck with the law the people who had become servants of sin and mercilessly punished the violators of the law. This was the Old Testament Age.

If you look at the attributes of Jehovah God of the Old Testament Age, He was a jealous God who terrified wor-

shipers of other gods, a cruel God who ordered the Israelites to exterminate the seven tribes of Canaan leaving no survivors, and a merciless God who slaughtered the Israelites who had violated the commandments and law.

Could the God of love, who created the universe, have the character to feel such jealousy, exact such revenge, instill such terror, and exhibit the cruelty to exterminate the seven tribes of Canaan? This happened because the Old Testament Age was an age when angels, as mediators, served in the role of God. The revengeful legalism that says "a life for a life, an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth, a hand for a hand, a foot for a foot, a burn for a burn, a wound for a wound, and a stripe for a stripe" cannot stem from the character of the Creator God. God is the God of love and forgiveness.

God appeared to Moses several times: in the bush on Mount Horeb where He called Moses and also at the top of Mount Sinai where He gave him the Ten Commandments. To this day we have not known that the God who appeared to Moses was an angel; but if you look in chapter seven of the book of Acts in the New Testament, it is recorded that He was an angel: "Now when forty years had passed, an angel appeared to him in the wilderness of Mount Sinai, in a flame of fire in a bush … you who received the law as delivered by angels and did not keep it."

The Jehovah who appears in the Old Testament Age this way is an angel and not God. The Old Testament Age is the age of the servant, and God cannot appear as a father to a servant, because he is not a son. When Moses asks God for His name, He answers, "I am who I am" and tells him his name is Jehovah. But, when Moses stands in front of the people, he emphasizes that Jehovah God is the God of their ancestors, that is, the God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob. Jehovah is an angel.

Since the Old Testament Age was the age of the servant, God could not reveal Himself directly. In the Old Testament, did God tell them to fight or not to fight? Do you know that Saul was punished because, after winning the war, he went against God's instruction to kill all the men? Why do you think He did that? If men of the satanic world were spared, that world would invade again. He did it because the survival of the satanic men would preserve that system as they took wives and continued as they had before. Yet cutting off their lineage would end the system, as the women and children belonged to God's side. That is why He did this.

Saul was punished because his failure to act as instructed allowed the invasion of the heavenly nation by the worship of gentile gods and by all their adulterous customs. (124-202, 1983.2.15)

2.2. The religion of the bride and the religion of the archangel

Since God created angels before creating Adam, today's religions are the creations of the angelic realm on earth. That is the religious sphere. What is the task of the religious realm? It must suc-

ceed in creating Adam. Then, what is the global center of religion? It turns out to be Judaism. What does Judaism do? It is a religion that introduces the bridegroom. This is the philosophy of the Messiah and Savior. (50-56, 1971.10.31)

Until God created Adam and Eve, the archangels were the guardians of traditional philosophy. As a servant, the archangel was supposed to teach Adam and Eve the new customs and tradition of life before God did, saying, "The sons and daughters of the Master should live in such and such a way."

Is it not the responsibility of the old servant to keep the master's sons and daughters from going astray? Isn't he responsible to guide and instruct them along a smooth path? (50-181, 1971.11.6)

God established religions in order to save fallen people. What are those religions? God established the religion of Eve and the religions of the archangel in the world. Because the Fall was due to Eve and the archangel, human beings are restored through the religions of Eve and the archangel. They are restored through this path.

Religions are in the realm of archangel; whether there are a hundred or a thousand religions, they all belong to the realm of archangel. Although there are a great number of religions, they can be divided broadly into four great religions. Their center is Christianity, and the main philosophy of Christianity is the philosophy of the bride. (239-136, 1992.11.24)

Only God is the true deity, and other god-like beings are angels. To distinguish clearly monotheism and polytheism, the polytheistic religions are founded by heavenly beings, that is, angels. Among these religions, some result from good angels' efforts to elevate human spirituality and heart. These are the advanced religions. You should know that God has been cultivating the human hearts through these good religions.

The religions of the archangel do not clearly know the fundamentals. They do not know who God is, nor do they know what is happening in the Last Days. Their teachings have been centered on the external concepts of spiritual training. Because they do not have a clear tradition, in the Last Days they have to wrap up their basic necessities and go to the master's house to serve. (237-186, 1992.11.17)

Let us think about those who followed God's will in the Old Testament Age and in the New Testament Age. In the Old Testament Age, there were primitive forms of religion, and in the New Testament Age, a religion befitting that era emerged. In other words, in the New Testament Age religions have been connecting to modern, twentieth-century civilization.

What kind of religion is the Unification Church? The Unification Church should be on a new level, a futuristic religion compared with the primitive religions and the religions of the age. (122-9, 1982.10.31)

Section 3. Jesus' View of God Based on the Parent-Child Relationship

3.1. The New Testament Age is the age of the adopted son

When Jacob triumphed and earned the name Israel, he did not triumph as God's son but as God's servant. This way, people were restored from the position of the servant of servants to the servant's position, and then in the New Testament Age from the servant's position to the position of the adopted child. Romans 8:23 says: "but we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait for adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies." They said that they were eagerly waiting to be adopted sons who could call God "Abba, Father." Even the most ardent people of faith in the New Testament Age, whether they were ministers, elders, or people holding doctorates, and so forth, are all adopted children before God. I am speaking to you frankly. They want to be adopted children. Adopted children have a different lineage. (154-257, 1964.10.3)

What step was Jesus elevated to? After humankind fell on earth, the ancestors disappeared. Therefore, when Jesus was elevated to the ancestor's position, the Israelites could be engrafted as God's adopted sons and receive the right of inheritance. This is why Romans chapter eight says, "but we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait for adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies," and also, "For you did not receive the spirit of bondage again to fear, but you received the Spirit of adoption by whom we cry out, 'Abba, Father.'" They could only become adopted sons. Today's Christians are adopted children. Adopted children have a different lineage. (154-337, 1964.10.5)

An adopted son is different from the son of direct lineage. Whenever the son of direct lineage comes, the adopted son should be able to give him everything he possesses without hesitation, whether it is night or day. The possessions do not belong to him. Thus, even though he stands as an adopted son or was chosen as an adopted son, when the son of direct lineage is born, he should not say, "Why was this wretch born?" This is satanic nature. When God created Adam, the archangel should have been delighted to see Adam. So, he cannot say, "Why was he born?" The adopted son should know that he must protect the son. When the son of direct lineage is in the womb, the adopted son should not say, "Oh, I wish he were not going to be born." (49-135, 1971.10.9)

What must you do to be an adopted child? You should be better than the servants on God's side and better than Satan. Why do you have to be so? Satan was originally an archangel, a servant, and only one who is better than the servant can be an adopted child. This is according to the Principle. Then what

kind of adopted child do you have to be? You should be an adopted child whose philosophy dictates that although you have received God's inheritance, it is not yours to keep but to return to His original sons and daughters. This is how adopted children should be raised. The adopted child should offer his life for the sake of the coming sons and daughters. He should hope to see the birth of the sons and daughters of direct lineage desired by God, although this may require sacrificing everything he has; he should be preparing in heart for them. Without gaining the qualifications of an adopted child, you have no relationship with the son. You should bear in mind that the one born as an intermediate being, one step above the archangel, is the adopted child. (89-203, 1976.11.22)

An adopted child has a different lineage. Originally, the one designated to be an adopted child at the start of the New Testament was John the Baptist. John the Baptist represented the archangel. He was designated as the representative on earth on the side of the archangel who could serve Adam to the end, rather than as the archangel who had opposed God's son Adam. But, a tragic history unfolded because John the Baptist failed to serve Jesus and become one with him. (48-92, 1971.9.5)

You should know that the Old Testament Age and New Testament Age are connected through history. As servants, the believers of the Old Testament era wished to receive the benefits of being adopted children, and this is why they waited for the coming of the Messiah. In other words, their desire was to surmount the sorrowful circumstances of the servant and advance, through the Messiah, to the position of adopted child. The adopted child is entitled to receive the inheritance from the parents in the absence of a son or daughter of direct lineage. So, God's will, which oversaw the servant-level Old Testament Age, guided the people so that they could maintain the desire to transcend the servant's position and attain the benefits of welcoming God's will. This is why they kept longing for the privilege of leaving behind the lot of the servant and receiving God's inheritance. This is the philosophy of God's elect in Israel. (42-281, 1971.3.27)

You should be restored and rise up, beginning from all things, through the victorious realm of the adopted son, through the victorious realm of the son, to the parents' position. But, no matter how devout you may be, in the New Testament Age you absolutely cannot be God's son. (48-95, 1971.9.5)

Looking at history, the Old Testament Age used all things of creation as sacrificial offerings. They sacrificed the things of creation. The purpose of sacrificing all things was to liberate human beings and to help with the resurrection of humankind. The things of creation were sacrificed in order to restore people, to regain God's children. In the Old Testament Age, the things of creation

were used as an offering, and in the New Testament Age, God's children shed their blood as they moved toward the realm of resurrection in this world. This has been the history centered on Christianity. In Christian history, Jesus and all individuals, families, peoples, and nations that followed Jesus have been sacrificed as offerings until the present. (166-276, 1987.6.14)

In Old Testament times, God had Moses bear witness to God's power. The people who did not believe in Him as the God of power were punished. Next, the age of Jesus introduced the God of compassion. Sick people were cured… Had Jesus not cured the sick, he would not have been killed. People die of sickness to pay the price for their ancestors' sins. Then why did he bring them back to life? Rev. Moon of the Unification Church could have cured hundreds of thousands of patients if he had tried. Even without someone curing their disease, lepers can be healed if they hear our words and delight in them. All kinds of diseases can be cured. (194-334, 1989.10.30)

3.2. The adopted child can call out "father"

On leaving the Old Testament Age and welcoming the new morning of the New Testament Age, Jesus declared God as the Father and elevated fallen people to the position of adopted child in order to bring them into a parent-child relationship with God. Adopted children are of a different lineage, but through the coming of the Lord, they were engrafted and thus able to call God "Father," with the title of son. You should know that the establishment of the parent-child relationship with God was a heavenly secret that could be accomplished by no one other than Jesus. When Jesus called God "Father," the priests and Pharisees, who were immersed in the Old Testament concepts of the time, heard it as a presumptuous word blaspheming God. You should know that Jesus' view of God as the Father was that revolutionary. Jesus went a step higher and introduced God's love. In the Old Testament Age, Moses introduced only the God of authority, God of power, and God of judgment, without being able to introduce the God of love. But, Jesus introduced love. Although he introduced the God of love and his own loving self, the people of his era did not accept him. (35-276, 1970.10.25)

Since the Old Testament Age was the age of the servant, God could not reveal His real form. God is the Father and a being of love. Since God is love itself, He is the Father of love who forgives all sins. The Old Testament law of "an eye for an eye, a tooth for a tooth" disappeared. Through Jesus, God revealed His true loving form in which He loves His enemies and forgives a brother's faults, not just seven times but even seventy times seven. How could a father not forgive his child's faults? God is not someone you can see; in Jesus, the invisible God appeared as the visible God. This is why Jesus proclaimed his oneness with God

by saying in the Gospel of John, "I am in the Father and the Father is in me. Therefore, if you have seen me, you have seen the Father. How can you say, 'Show us the Father'?" This is also why Paul said, "For I am sure that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor things present, nor things to come, nor powers, nor height, nor depth, nor anything else in all creation, will be able to separate us from the love of God in Christ Jesus our Lord." (Rom. 8:38-39). Jesus came for the sake of God's love. (4-308, 1958.10.5)

You should know that from Jesus' baptism in the Jordan River, when heaven opened, to his ascension was a short period of three years. You should know that although Jesus brought out the view of God based on the parent-child relationship, he departed without being able to explain the details. He came as the Messiah of Judaism and died while pioneering the worldwide messianic course. Then, what happened to Judaism? A God who had thus far been attended as one dealing only with Judaism would not be viable.

What did Jesus come to teach on this earth? He was not to teach about God exactly as was taught in the Old Testament. He had to teach about the God of the New Testament Age. The mission of Jesus, who came as the national Messiah of Israel, was to teach by saying, "Now that we are going beyond the age of the national level to the age of the global level, we must lay the foundation of making strenuous effort for the world in order to absorb it." In this way, he was to dedicate his entire life to gaining the authority and prestige of the world-level Messiah. This was what he had to accomplish during his life. (105-213, 1979.10.26)

Section 4. The Completed Testament Age Is the Age of the Oneness of God and Humankind

4.1. True children should go through the change of lineage and rebirth

On the path of restoration, we should go up from the age of the servant of servants, through the age of the servant, through the age of the adopted child, to the age of the direct lineage. However, can we complete the course from the age of the servant of servants, through the age of the servant, and the age of the adopted child, and be connected to the age of direct lineage? Connecting to the age of direct lineage cannot be done just like that.

According to the Principle, we are required to go through the foundation of faith and foundation of substance in order to welcome the Messiah. The Messiah is the true son of God. The lineage of an adopted son and that of a true son are different. This is why we need a change of lineage. (55-192, 1972.5.9)

Since the Fall was an improper marriage in the Garden of Eden, this is now being rectified as the True Parents create proper marriages. True Parents are clearing away the evil deeds of the false

parents, thereby abolishing hell, and giving the Blessing even to hundreds of billions of ancestors in the spirit world. Through the foundation of their descendants' families on earth, centered on true love, the ancestors in the spirit world and their descendants on earth unite vertically. Furthermore, based on the foundation of such families, the East and the West become connected to each other.

Since humankind has received satanic blood, people cannot return to God on their own. So the Messiah must accomplish absolute restoration of the lineage, renewing the blood line that was defiled by Satan. This transition must be made. This is why the Messiah must surely come. Without his coming, there will be no restoration of lineage. We must restore lineage. (172-53, 1988.1.7)

What do True Parents have to do? They must rectify the wrong lineage that forms the root of the satanic world, turn around the deviated life, and correct the misdirected course of love. The Bible says that those who seek to die will live, and those who seek to live will die. Why is this paradox necessary? It is because the satanic world must die. (169-37, 1987.10.4)

The ideal of loving oneness between God and humankind is their unity in a loving relationship based on the true and great love that God desired as His ideal at the time of creation. If God had fulfilled that ideal, today we would all enter the Kingdom of Heaven just as we are, without having to worry about heaven or hell. (275-54, 1995.10.31)

There were three ages in history: the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age, and the Completed Testament Age. Among these, what kind of an age was the Old Testament Age? It was the age of redemption of children through sacrificial offerings. It was a time of preparation for the coming of God's son. In the New Testament Age, Jesus became the offering for us to receive the parents. This is why, in the age of the Second Coming, we have been preparing to receive the parents by establishing the bride and bridegroom. The reason that I, having the name of the True Parent, have been suffering for forty years as the center of the Completed Testament Age, is to receive God on earth. This will lead to the oneness of God and humankind in love. (227-94, 1992.2.10)

The original relationship between God and humankind is one of parent and child. In the New Testament Age, human beings were God's adopted children. But now, since we are in a parent-child relationship, what the son does is what the Father does, and what the Father does is what the son does. They are acting together. What belongs to the Father belongs to the son, and what belongs to the son belongs to the Father. The reason the Unification Church is fearsome is because it teaches this destined parent-child relationship. (31-324, 1970.6.7)

In the Old Testament Age, they sac-

rificed material things to pave the way for the coming of the true son. Jesus came as the son and sacrificed himself to pave the way for the coming of the parents. The True Parents come on this level plane, and walk a suffering path in order to invite God in. To what position do they come? To the original, vertical place. Since the original, great principle of heaven and earth was cut off from that point, peace cannot begin as long as that fundamental root is not rectified. This is absolute. (200-55, 1990.2.23)

You should not think of Rev. Moon as being the same as you. What is Rev. Moon's mission? The Old Testament Age was the age when the things of creation were sacrificed to find the sons and daughters. In the New Testament Age, the sons and daughters were sacrificed to pave the way for the coming of the parents. What are the parents to do on this earth after they come? They are to pave the way for God to come. The mission of the True Parents is to build a horizontal base, encompassing all the people of the world, for the vertical Father. As the horizontal father's realm of heart unfolds, the vertical Father's realm of heart will naturally emerge and settle here.

When God reaches the point where He can embrace both vertical and horizontal love, He will finally make the transition to the age when He can go beyond the world into the central position and reorganize the original, ideal authority. Then He will say, "Everything is done." (177-345, 1988.5.22)

The methods for fallen people to go back to God have differed according to the age. In the Old Testament Age, people could go to God by offering sacrifices; in the New Testament Age, it was by believing in Jesus, the son of God; and in the Completed Testament Age, people can go to God by attending the True Parents. (20-340, 1968.7.20)

In the future, you will not be able to marry your sons and daughters with people of the same nationality. God is looking at three generations. Now, you are as you are, but God wants to bring you into unity after three generations. One of these represents the Old Testament Age. So your marriage represents the Old Testament Age. The New Testament Age and the Completed Testament Age come next.

The tradition will be established by the third generation, who will be born through the marriages of the second generation – your sons and daughters. (146-275, 1986.7.20)

In the Completed Testament Age, True Parents sacrifice in order to bring the vertical God to earth. This is the final task. In relation to humankind, God is the vertical Father who is centered on true love. True Parents are the horizontal parents who are horizontally aligned at a ninety degree angle with the vertical Father, based on true love. Therefore, on the basis of this vertical and horizontal love, God's love and life finally burst forth. With the blossoming harmony

of God and humankind, new blood ties will expand based on the love of True Parents. In this way, the seed of life that began in God's love and based on the original Principle standard will appear on earth. This is unprecedented in human history. (208-339, 1990.11.21)

Now, we must restore the rights of ownership. Since, in the course of attending God, the things of creation were sacrificed in the Old Testament Age, the son was sacrificed in the New Testament Age, and the parents were sacrificed in the Completed Testament Age, what has to be done now? You should stand in the position representing the mother and father. The sons and daughters are the New Testament Age, and all things of creation are the Old Testament Age.

Because the Old Testament, New Testament, and Completed Testament ages have all deviated from God's true love, Satan has become the owner. Now, however, we must indemnify all this and bring everything to the original owner. (208-345, 1990.11.21)

The Completed Testament Age is the age of accomplishment. We will accomplish as individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations, and on the worldwide level. These are linked through God's love, God's life, and God's lineage. This is the tradition of one lineage, one love, and one life.

When this happens, Satan will have to leave. The work of engrafting will remove the connection with the satanic lineage. (226-275, 1992.2.9)

Section 5. God's First Manifestation

5.1. God finally reveals Himself

The age of the Unification Church is the age of the parents. We are paving the way whereby God can come and be present on earth. This is why it makes sense to say that by God's coming, we are saved through attending Him. This is how history progresses. (177-157, 1988.5.17)

What is it that will remain in the end? It is God and human beings, their life course, and their outlook on daily life – the divine and human perspectives on life and the world. These perspectives will not be based on vague knowledge, but on an inseparable, eternal relationship. Why? Since God and humankind have been separated at the point where originally they could not be separated, they must reach a place higher than that point of inseparability. At such a point, they should come forward demanding a global stage for daily life where God and humankind are one. (65-125, 1972.11.5)

God is the center of the universe where we have to live for the sake of others. When you go near Him, you will want to be governed by Him for tens of thousands of years and even more. This is the path of attendance to God.

We could not have imagined that human beings today could be governed in that way and that there could be no greater happiness than this. (77-328, 1975.4.30)

From now on, you should live a life of attendance. Up until now, a life of faith brought salvation through faith, but from now on you attain salvation through attendance. Originally, if we had not fallen, we would be following our normal path by attending God. You should attend Him in your daily life, and with your heart. (150-213, 1961.4.15)

God is the absolute Father, absolute True Parent, and the unique, unchanging and eternal True Father. Such a Father should bring about unique, unchanging, and eternal couples for the absolute sons. For such daughters, too, He should bring about absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal couples. So, the families in which they will settle peacefully are absolute, unique, unchanging, and eternal families. Such families can live together with God, and constitute the eternal base of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. Justification through attendance signifies the age of realizing the Kingdom of Heaven in daily life. This is why we are talking about justification through attendance. The history of restoration is re-creating God's ideal of creation. (161-218, 1987.2.15)

Without creating a starting point from which we can bring God into our heart and where we human beings can be completely one body with God, there is no way to liquidate this devilish world. From this point of view, we understand our time as the age of attendance and the age of salvation based on justification through attendance. We are saved through attendance. God is not a God who is up there in the sky. We should attend God as our subject and Master in our daily life. (144-274, 1986.4.25)

God is not a fantasy or a conceptual God, nor is He an abstract God. With His leadership in our daily life, He is always with us as the master of our daily life. He does not merely receive our attendance, but is living together with us by sharing love. (168-111, 1987.9.13)

What was God's purpose in creating Adam and Eve? As human beings, we have a body, but the invisible God does not. Without a body, God cannot govern the spiritual and physical worlds. Hence, although God exists, if He wants to manifest as the Parent of humankind, He must acquire a body. God's representatives with that body were Adam and Eve. God would have appeared after assuming the body of Adam and Eve had they not fallen.

Adam and Eve were the first ancestors of humankind, and they were to be God who rules over heaven and earth. Assuming the external form, the body, of God who is in the eternal invisible world, and standing in the position of parents, Adam and Eve had the responsibility of governing the world. (133-91, 1984.7.10)

Since the invisible God has no substantial body, the True Parents represent His form. The True Parents are Parents of the individual, family, tribe, ethnic people, and nation. In the future, God will

appear in the form of the True Parents in the spirit world. This is the greatness of the Unification Church. The greatness of Rev. Moon resides in the fact that God wants to assume Rev. Moon's form. (98-224, 1978.8.1)

Even if the hundreds of millions of people who have been parents were to come back to life all at once, none among them would have the glory of the True Parents whom you speak of today. Even if tens of thousands of generations of ancestors were all to resurrect and sing the glory of resurrection, this glory and song would still not transcend the domain of the Fall. Although your current situation may be miserable, you should know that the term "True Parents," taught in the Unification Church today, is a proud one and more valuable than hundreds of millions of ancestors rejoicing in a glorious place of earthly victory and liberation of all people. You should know that meeting the True Parents will lead you along the path to meet God, and meeting the Unification Church will lead you along the path whereby God's nation and the homeland desired by the True Parents can soon be found. (138-105, 1986.1.19)

The Completed Testament Age of justification through attendance is the age of directly attending God in our life. Since that is the time when God's tabernacle remains with us and the new Jerusalem in heaven comes down to earth, the form of the true God will finally appear to us then. This will happen for the first time since the creation of the world. Until now, God has not been able to appear in history, which has remained at an uncompleted stage since the Fall.

CHAPTER FOUR

True Father's Insights on God

Section 1. A God of Historical Bitterness, Grief and Pain

1.1. God lost the position of parent through the Fall

Our real father is God, but Satan usurped the father's role. Therefore, Jesus said, "You are of your father the devil, and your will is to do your father's desires." Knowing the deplorable fact that you carry Satan's blood, out of shame you should have the courage to put yourself through trials to rid yourself of that stained, false blood. Have you ever thought of doing so? If you are someone who strikes your body with fury saying, "You lump of flesh!" you are a loyal citizen of heaven. (11-243, 1961.10.29)

The religion that can connect with the ultimate world of heart should be one that can teach us in detail about God's most sorrowful state. God is not just feeling happy and wonderful; on the contrary, His plight is a deeply sad one. He has been mistreated and is overflowing with bitter grief.

A religion must appear that can teach these things in detail. Only then can we become God's filial children. (151-102, 1962.10.28)

How grieved God was that His enemy deprived Him of His throne! You should know His history of sorrow at not being able to become the God of glory. Although He is the King of His nation and King of the universe, He has been mistreated as if He were dead. He was robbed of His ideal and His loving children and our world has fully become His enemy's plaything. (105-199, 1979.10.21)

Because there has never been a unified people or sovereign nation that God could govern, He could never manifest His authority and dignity as the all-knowing and almighty God. We have to know clearly our obligation as the sons and daughters, children of filial piety, loyal patriots and upright men and women of the Unification Movement, to relieve God's distress and comfort His sorrowful heart. Jesus said, "You will know the truth and the truth will make you free"! Those who know will be liberated! I am teaching this to you clearly. (56-327, 1972.5.18)

How many tears have you shed for God? Have you ever struggled to seek out the path upon which you would suffer God's own pain and toil on His

behalf, even though your own limbs might be torn off? You have never tried. In seeking to become God's children, you have to shed tears for the purpose of the whole. When you meet Him, your tears should gush out without ceasing as you comfort Him, saying, "Father, how great was Your sorrow upon losing me, Your son, and our first ancestors! Too many times throughout history until the present day have You suffered humiliation, pain and extreme hardship from their descendants!"

God could have judged the entire world and even Satan by His all-knowing and almighty authority. Our hearts break when we think of God crying out over the fact that even though He has toiled so long and is capable of pronouncing judgment, He still could not do so even if He wanted to. Our hearts break when we understand God's lonely, desolate position, not surrounded by the environment that should have existed, accused by Satan, robbed of His rightful place by the satanic world…. How much have you wept in sympathy with God's situation? It all comes down to this. (51-111, 1971.11.18)

No parents in the world would want their son or daughter to die, even if he or she were hanged for a crime. If saving the child is even remotely possible, the parental heart will seek out the way, even a hundred or a thousand times. This is especially true for mothers. If this is the heart of all parents in the fallen world, why on earth does the all-knowing and all-powerful God have to exercise judgment in the Last Days? Why can God not pardon humankind? How great is God's love? If Jesus forgives people seventy times seven times, God has to forgive seventy times seven thousand times. That is God's heart. (48-235, 1971.9.19)

God's providence of salvation is the providence of restoration. It started from Adam and Eve because they were the perpetrators of the Fall. Adam was not restored until I appeared on earth. In the course of carrying out restoration and to seek out one man, God, the almighty and all-knowing Creator of the universe has been unable to show His face for millions of years. You must know both God's love and His deep grief. (237-27, 1992.11.10)

What is God's will? It is the fulfillment of the ideal of creation. Furthermore, it is to realize the ideal of three object partners in our world. God will say, "How happy I am!" when this ideal is realized based on His love. What enables God to be happy? Today, all Christians think that the all-knowing and almighty God sits on His throne as the Lord of lords and everything proceeds according to His command. But in fact how very miserable God has been at finding Himself constantly alone. (170-95, 1987.11.8)

Who knew the miserable mind and heart of God who had to turn a blind eye to the death of His beloved son, Jesus? The origin and circumstances are not

recorded in the Bible, but wasn't there something that made God unable to avoid His son's death? How miserable it is to merely gather just like that, claiming to believe in Jesus of Christianity! God has to stand on the side of the chosen people. Even so, seeing that they faced suffering and persecution wherever they went – shedding their blood, being decapitated or burned in oil – we might ask, "Couldn't God have prevented this?" How grievous and distressed God has been when He could not exercise His almighty power! Have you ever thought about that? How can we say that God is most high? It will be good when this can be clearly explained. (64-222, 1972.11.12)

We naturally want to protect our beloved at the risk of our lives. It is the original ideal of creation to do so. The same is true for God Himself, who loves His children. He is a sorrowful God who has had to invest His very life. (206-24, 1990.10.3)

If Adam and Eve had not fallen, God the Creator would have been the eternal Lord. But due to the Fall, Satan became the lord of the world. This became unavoidable. If a girl of noble birth, who was raised within the walls of her house, is violated by an intruder, to whom is she bound? She will be bound to him. This is what happened with the Fall.

Adam could have been the king of heaven and Eve his queen. To restore these original positions requires following the principle of creation. God laid down the law of eternal love centered on Adam and Eve from the outset, so it has to be observed. To deny this law would require the destruction of the heavenly law. If this heavenly law that God Himself set up is denied, humankind and even God Himself as the absolute Creator can be denied. That is why God had to bring order through the course of re-creation. Who has known about this painful course of history? (207-272, 1990.11.11)

Christians today think of God as a glorious judge dispatching people to hell or heaven. But God is the most miserable of all in the world. He has bitterly struggled to overcome what made the luminous heaven and earth fall into the darkness of hell. After God regained His composure, opened His eyes and regained full consciousness, He was intent on giving rebirth to His dead children. Through the efforts made by the Lord of Creation, through the absolute Creator exercising His power, this was possible. Otherwise, it would all have ended. (232-114, 1992.7.3)

What kind of being is God? He is the original True Parent. But His position as the True Parent was usurped, and this resulted in something occurring that had nothing to do with the original ideal of creation. God as the Creator could not interfere with or bear responsibility for digesting an event that could not have happened in the original world of creation. (240-164, 1992.12.13)

1.2. The bitter pain of restoration and God's six-thousand-year search for His children

According to the Unification Church, what is the original sin? It is love gone wrong. Our love should have been connected to God's love, life and lineage. Instead, it was connected to satanic love, life and lineage. Because Adam and Eve became the personifications of the devil and left behind the satanic lineage, they produced lasting regret in history. Why was the all-knowing, all-powerful God of autonomous authority, who created heaven and earth from its root, so helpless in the face of the evil being who brought human beings to the state they are in today? If you do not know, it may seem natural for you to deny the existence of God. (211-21, 1990.12.28)

In my background there were many incidents that evoked indignation at unjust treatment. Although many were very terrible to endure, I clenched my teeth and focused on occupying Cain's world. I had to digest the Cain world rather than merely Cain as an individual and his family. How bitter this has been! It was as if I had to melt something as frigid and huge as an iceberg. Digesting this bitterness, I have had to silently bring Satan to submission. He has been our arch enemy since time immemorial. He brought God and humankind to ruin. (163-163, 1987.5.1)

Satan became the father of the first ancestors of fallen humankind. They received Satan's love and life, and thus the history of their restoration has been so difficult. Why did God, whom Christians have always understood to be almighty and all-knowing, not intervene in the Fall, rather than just standing powerless? It appeared as though He had died. God cannot liberate human beings until they themselves establish the conditions for their liberation, because it was they who committed sin. If God had been able to liberate Adam and Eve at the outset, He would not have driven them out from the Garden of Eden. If He could have done as He pleased, He would not have expelled them. But He had no recourse but to send them away. (224-46, 1991.11.21)

We should have the true heart that God seeks. God comes to find true love. Should there not be a true son whom God has sought throughout the providence of salvation and restoration? The cascade of pure love from such a son would enable God, who had been defiled, wounded and filled with sorrow, to extend His chest in pride. Could we not imagine a situation where God would embrace that true son, forget everything, and even say that, although the Fall had occurred, He could still find no greater joy? Every man should be able to say that. (127-39, 1983.5.1)

Satan scornfully says to God, "The lineage of love that was needed to create one true tribal domain, the ideal of an absolute realm of love centering on Your ideal of creation, was ruined and

destroyed in this way. Yet do You still insist that the ideal principle of creation can be applied?" How should God respond to that? How shocked He is! How many Christians are there who clearly understand God's grievous heart as He sees human beings, who were originally to become the children of the Lord, become the children of the enemy, trapped in an inescapable state of misery? (200-235, 1990.2.25)

The parent of humankind came, but the people could not attend him as their parent. Could there be such a parent who came to shed blood and die for them? That parent came to host a festival of love at which he could say, "My son! My daughter! My family! My nation!" and the entire universe could reconcile. That parent who was to receive praise for that day of peace and glory should have met his lost children. Yet instead he was killed with the thrust of a blade from those children. Think about how miserable Jesus was. How grieved God was to be choked in circumstances that prevented Him from teaching ignorant human beings! (145-152, 1986.5.1)

I have sorrow and regret from times past. But my pain and grief are nothing compared to God's. God has not been able to fulfill His role as God. We should know that God's bitter tears which melt the marrow of His bones, and His bloodstains that spread throughout the course of history are crying out from the ground. I have been doing this work because I know that my remaining mission is to liberate God from His anguish. (137-175, 1986.1.1)

God is responsible for the fallen world and has been restoring it. He does not just dwell in a lofty, precious, holy, and pristine place. His wretched, bitter and brutal situation is beyond our imagination and beyond description. (21-73, 1968.10.14)

You can be consoled by someone with more reasons to be resentful than you have, but God has no one to comfort Him because He has more grievances than anyone in the world. God is the Alpha and Omega. Thus, deep within Himself, God is working out how to resolve His ongoing bitterness. This has been God's deep, inner anguish. Under these circumstances God has carried out the providence of restoration. (29-294, 1970.3.12)

Have you ever cried, longing to see God? Have you ever cried until your vocal cords ruptured and fluid streamed from your eyes and nose? Have you ever felt so mistreated and sorrowful that tears come to your eyes this way? This experience is crucial for entering the world of heart. (49-291, 1971.10.17)

How resentful, grieved, angered and saddened God became when He was separated from human beings, who should have been with Him permanently! People should have grown to maturity, building the foundation of love that cannot be exchanged for the entire uni-

verse. They should have established an axis joining all the vertical and horizontal planes in the universe together.

If they had accomplished this, they would have become the standard measure of love among all existing beings and among all things of creation in heaven and on earth. Whatever is connected to that love will be able to match this standard in any circumstances. (149-240, 1986.11.23)

Satan trampled upon four generations, from the queen to the queen's mother and grandmother, and the queen's daughter. These four generations lived together. Satan stripped them naked in front of the King in broad daylight, violated and killed them all. Satan even trampled on the daughter. We should know the heart of God who is unable to take vengeance on such an enemy. (200-68, 1990.2.23)

What is it that God regrets? It is that humanity inherited a false lineage. You inherited false blood. Satan is the origin of this. He always wants to create havoc with all things of creation. You are connected to such a universe, such rights of ownership and such a lineage. The sources of all these five functions – what you see, think, smell, say, and touch – belong to the satanic side.

Your ancestors are the fruits of a very evil parent. How much distress God experiences in His yearning to save them! Why could God not simply get rid of fallen Adam and Eve and create them anew? He had the power to do this, but because He originally created within an eternal relationship based on eternal true love, God could not do so. (216-36, 1991.3.3)

You should know how miserable and bitterly painful God's situation is. God can say, "If I had not made humanity, they would not have become the way they are. How could this happen when I was searching for love and longing for the glorious Kingdom of Heaven!" How could this happen? It was because they inherited the devil's flesh and blood. The devil's love was implanted, along with the roots of his life and lineage. God could not possess humanity without removing these things, but if He did remove them they would die. Therefore, God had to set up a substitute as a second creation or medium of salvation through an infusion of new blood, life, and love.

God should love the enemy. He has to be patient with and love His enemy. (212-42, 1991.1.1)

Did God ever have time to rest just because the sun rose or the weather and season were nice? You should follow His example. You should also love the enemy, Satan, who is hiding in the world.

If you know the wonderful value of God's son and worship his holiness, in light of that value you should follow the path of loving the great enemy, although it would be miserable, bitterly difficult and painful. (127-119, 1983.5.5)

Section 2. God's Grief and Shock at Losing His Son and Daughter

2.1. God lost His eternal and only son

How sorrowful God was when Adam and Eve committed the Fall and sank away from Him! They were to have been the ideal partners for God, who embodies the pure essence of love. God's sorrow exceeded that of any person. He grieved so very deeply. The deeper and greater the value of what was lost, the deeper the sorrow. This is the situation of God, who has pursued the way of restoration for His lost children. (127-18, 1983.5.1)

When parents believe in their beloved children but are betrayed by them, there is no describing the shock, distress, and misery those parents experience based on that trust. When people betray, reject and mistrust those who have loved them with their lives, it causes unspeakable misery. You cannot understand unless you experience that struggle and suffering yourself. It cannot be understood merely by words. This is evident in the affairs of the world. Then how did God become as miserable as He is? God is not a nebulous God but a tangible God. Human beings should enjoy the highest relationship with God. God's joy was to begin by finding a starting point from which He could begin a journey in happiness with human beings, heading toward infinity and eternity. But God lost the basis upon which to begin, due to the Fall. (20-205, 1968.6.9)

How desperate it is when an only son born into a lineage of seven generations of only sons dies, especially if this son were born when his parents were advanced in age! If the parents were young they could have more children. However, if an only son born into a lineage of seven generations of only sons dies, how anxious will his ancestors be for the lineage to continue beyond the seventh generation? Through their descendants and lineage, ancestors want to receive numerous blessings transcending this world. If their children die before they do, parents themselves feel like dying.

Adam's position was like that of the only son – the eternal, only begotten son, not merely the only son after seven generations. Can you imagine how profoundly God's heart was broken at the death of Adam, who was to establish an everlasting family and accomplish God's great endeavor of Creation? How would He feel that everything had gone wrong in the way it did? Even after six thousand years, God has not recovered from the shock of Adam and Eve's Fall. (20-210, 1968.6.9)

According to the Principle of Creation, when God advances into the ideal realm of oneness in love, He is to be the central eternal Owner and Subject Being of love. However, Satan took His place as the center. Therefore, heaven and earth became inverted, turned upside down. Nothing should have interrupted the oneness based on God's true love, His ideal of love. Humanity's lineage should have originated from God, but because

it deviated, it went the wrong way. (206-236, 1990.10.14)

Can you imagine how much it breaks God's heart to observe human misery every hour of every day? What happened to God's dignity when His son and daughter, whom He intended to glorify as prince and princess, became cripples, fell into a dung pit, and were stuck upside down in hell? Where can we find the authority and confidence of the all-knowing and omnipresent God? What became of the absolute God's dignity? Can He show His face? (218-240, 1991.8.19)

Can a father turn a blind eye to his dying son? From this point of view, God as a loving Father cannot abandon us, His object of love, simply to die. If He is all-knowing and all-powerful, God should make an ideal world and revive His children. This is more than possible when considering the nature of parental love. If God exists He would surely be capable of this. Thus, we can conclude that God should move us to the realm in which we can be resurrected to the ideal. God did not abandon us to misery and death but placed us before the gateway into a world of a higher dimension. How wonderful that is! (67-219, 1973.6.21)

Putting aside His dignity as the all-knowing, almighty and omnipresent Creator, God's heart longed to love Adam and Eve even to the point of forgetting His own existence. Can you imagine how He felt as He looked upon fallen Adam and Eve from such a position? This is something you need to understand. (7-291, 1959.10.11)

Human beings today are not God's children. No matter how much God weeps, we pretend not to see His tears. No matter how sorrowful He is, we pretend not to see. This is because the human race springs from the flesh and blood of Satan. They even celebrate to see God in sorrow, and they ridicule His ruin. How much trouble God takes to guide such people and teach them about the path they must forge! God could not guide providential history if He did not have a caring and sympathetic heart. (42-257, 1971.3.21)

2.2. God has been miserable throughout history

How enraged God is when He looks down on us on earth! All human beings should have had His lineage, but Satan pushes them into a miserable state and scornfully jeers at God saying, "Your descendants are miserable." When Satan asks God, "How will You, with all Your omniscience and omnipotence, redeem this difficult situation?" God can only be silent. He has to pretend to be deaf though He can hear, pretend not to smell though He can smell, and pretend not to feel though He can feel. Have you ever thought about the misery of God throughout history? (183-19, 1988.10.29)

If God were sitting on a glorious throne as the all-knowing and almighty God, as traditional Christianity believes

today, and if He were to see His children dying, would He remain there and say, "Come up here, for I cannot leave my seat"? Or, would He rather abandon His throne and come down? What do you think? Will He just stay there or will He come down? Is He going to cast away His crown and jump down from His throne? Think about it. (123-159, 1983.1.1)

You should know that for tens of thousands of years, even millions of years, God has cried out for us, "My son and my daughter!" Have you ever ardently called out to God, "Father!" until your throat becomes hoarse and your tongue dry, until you cannot breathe and your eyes cannot open? How earnestly have you struggled to embrace that standard, which is that of the Subject of life? Your character is measured in proportion to your efforts to do this. (184-219, 1989.1.1)

We have nothing that would enable us to relate with that all-knowing and almighty being. As we were born as fallen people, our eyes are defiled. All our five sensory organs and emotions belong to the secular realm. We have nothing that enables us to relate with God. Although according to the law of heavenly righteousness we have nothing, there is one single path, the law of love, through which we can relate to God. As the years go by you should become well grounded in the philosophy of love, thus becoming a person of faith leading a life of discernment in all matters. As ten, twenty or thirty years go by, those who do so will automatically become the people God needs. (149-37, 1986.11.1)

Was it due to God's kindly nature that He endured a path of suffering through the millennia of the providence of restoration? How did God continue His providence of salvation for tens of thousands of years without becoming exhausted? It is not because He is all-knowing and almighty. It is because He has been walking the path of love for the sake of His beloved sons and daughters. Therefore, it is the power of love that has enabled God to triumph over a path of tribulation, feeling as if a thousand years were just one day. Is that correct? It is. (109-281, 1980.11.2)

Is God deserving of pity or not? Many people doubt that the all-knowing and almighty God needs to be pitied. However all-knowing and almighty He may be, nothing can alleviate the shock of having lost His beloved children. If there had been a way for God to find relief from that shock by Himself, He would not have had to suffer through a six-thousand-year course of history. (35-88, 1970.10.4)

Even though human beings sinned, God does not just say, "Hey, you! Why did you sin?" He knows the state of people who sin. He cares about humanity rather than Himself. He comes in sorrow to sorrowful people, in suffering to suffering people, and in sympathy with those feeling victimized and angry. How much have you empathized with God's situation? God comes into our sphere of

life in these ways. Moreover, He comes speaking from His heart, "Although you betrayed me, I have searched for you for six thousand years with the heart of your Father." (9-231, 1960.5.29)

What is the Unification Church? It teaches God's heart and seeks to liberate God. Christian churches call us heretics because we say these things. If the son of a great president of a nation were to die, would the president maintain his dignity and say, "Even though my son has died, as president I cannot shed tears"? It would be fine if he went to a corner, wept for his son and came back composed; but if he does not cry for his son, the spirit of his dead son would say, "My father was not really my father after all." If the spirit of his son were active, would he help his father or oppose him? Whatever your position, even if you are the world's president, you would surely shed tears and weep loudly when your child dies. (196-18, 1989.12.24)

How miserable is God's inner heart as He watches His children lose their original, privileged value of creation, become like fallen maggots and struggle in a life without value! How mortified He is to see people groaning in lamentation, suffering and despair, ending up being defeated instead of becoming God's direct children through His love, life and lineage and attaining the glory of the heavenly kingdom! Nobody knew God was so sorrowful. That is why I wept profusely for many days and weeks upon coming to know this God. You should be aware that the Unification Church began amid such profound circumstances. (211-207, 1990.12.30)

No one has known how God has suffered in His heart. Now, through God's appearances in history through the revelations I received in my profound mission – and which I have shared with you – you do know. Without this, you would never have known. This is a remarkable fact. Even Jesus did not fully know this, and even if he had, he could not have spoken about what was in his heart. No religious leader has known the hidden secrets of the universe. I have come so that the secrets of the universe could be revealed in the course of human history, before the world, for the first time. (215-171, 1991.2.17)

Section 3. A God Confined and Incarcerated

3.1. God lost His rightful position

My own pain and grief are nothing. God has not been able to fulfill His role as God. You must understand that God's bitter tears which melt the marrow of His bones and His bloodstains which spread throughout the course of history are crying out from the ground. I have been doing this work because I know that the mission remains to liberate God from His anguish. (137-175, 1986.1.1)

We must liberate God. God is confined by love. He may as well be in prison. He has not been set free. Due to the

Fall, the ideal world that the all-knowing and almighty God, the Creator of the universe, intended to establish based on love was snatched away by Satan. Thus, God could not be liberated in heart. The foundation for liberating God's heart has not emerged in this universe. God is thus confined. His mind and heart cannot be at rest when His beloved children have died. (138-261, 1986.1.24)

We should liberate God with our own effort. He is not free. He is in confinement. He lost His sons and daughters. Even if one has ten times the filial piety of the lost filial son, one cannot easily free the original heart of a parent who has lost His sons and daughters, or worse, suffered from the death of His son of filial piety. Yet I am going to liberate this God. (135-283, 1985.12.15)

God is full of grief and distress. Why? Those who work hard in this world during their youth are assured of a hopeful future. Although God has invested painstaking efforts since the beginning of history, when did He have hope? When will His hopes be realized? Is God young or old? How old do you think He is? Because God transcends the universe, He has no age. Does God go around the sun once a year? We do not need to calculate this, because He is beyond the solar system. What is there to calculate? (105-184, 1979.10.21)

God, who is our Parent, cannot free Himself from lamentation without freeing all people from lamentation. How can any parents be comfortable while their loving children are living in anxiety? This explains why we should liberate God who is in such a situation.

How will we liberate God? God is restrained from loving all people; we are responsible to find a realm of liberation in which God can freely love all of humankind. Since we were corrupted through the Fall, we must liberate God by becoming children who are victorious over the Fall. (65-100, 1972.11.13)

What happened due to the Fall? God was shackled and restrained and so were the first ancestors of the human race and the realm of angels. Countless religious people in history have struggled against these shackles. It is the same for all humankind. (79-26, 1975.6.16)

You should know that a child who does not demonstrate filial piety restricts the parents. To liberate those parents, the child must display a filial piety greater than his impiety and also be officially recognized by the general public. Only then can he cleanse himself of his past sins. This is the heavenly law. By the same principle, I do not need people who say, "I will live only for you, Father." The neighbors, this nation, this people – they are all a pitiable lot.

For five thousand years we have sung, "I will build a small cottage and attend both parents for tens of thousands of years." I am glad they will attend both parents, but why live in a small cottage for tens of thousands of years? They are a pitiable people. We must guide them.

If these people, who are penniless and poor, also fail to obtain God's blessings, where will they go and live? (85-263, 1976.3.3)

3.2. God could not function as God

How long will the Unification Church last? The Unification Church must persist until it liberates our planet Earth, the spirit world, and, ultimately, with a heart of love, God. We must ultimately liberate humankind, the spirit world and God. I am sure you are hearing this for the first time. So far we have looked to God to liberate us, but in fact, we have to liberate God. You should know that God's heart has been restrained. (85-270, 1976.3.3)

If loving parents have a child who does not show filial piety, their hearts cannot be liberated until they see that child rise to the position where he can freely fulfill the parents' expectation. In the same way, God created Adam and Eve as His greatest partners of love. They are His partners of love. Vertically they are in a parent-child relationship with God and horizontally they were created to become husband and wife. Thus, God intended to practice all the ideals of love in heaven and on earth. Yet God lost everything due to the Fall. Even God ended up being confined. (210-308, 1990.12.27

A person who has not established heaven on earth and lived there cannot go to heaven in the spirit world. Even when I went to prison and manacles were placed on my wrists, they could not restrain me because I had love. When I was in a cramped position that made it hard to sleep, I woke up at night to find light shining from my hand. Why was there light? It was because God was embracing me. I discovered His love. That is why light could shine even in that dark room. If I sat quietly and reverently in the corner of a prison cell after hearing someone groaning and crying, the following day people would give me packets of rice powder. They had heard a distant voice, "If you don't give this food to this particular prisoner, all the prisoners and even your family will be uncomfortable." My God is a God of love. The Unification Church members should not be an ungrateful group of people who persecute such a God. (137-202, 1986.1.1)

We should know that for six thousand years, God has sought people thirsting for faith and hope and burning with love who say, "God is in shackles on account of humankind, including me; God was accused by Satan because of me; Jesus died on the cross for me; the Holy Spirit went through a bloody history of struggle on my behalf. God, please give me the strength. I will bring rest and liberation to the Father. I will also liberate Jesus and the Holy Spirit." (7-162, 1959.8.30)

If God and Satan fight each other, who will stop them from fighting? Would the fight just end? There has been no place

for God to stand, because He did not have a devoted son or a system of love through which people could uphold the heavenly kingdom by fulfilling the way of a loyal subject, saint and divine son or daughter. Until now, God has been incarcerated and confined. The heavenly kingdom became an empty ruin. God has carried this sorrow in His heart. (302-226, 1999.6.14)

Have you ever met a grandfather or grandmother whom God is seeking? Because of the Fall, you have not. Have you ever met a mother or father whom God is searching for? Have you ever met a wife or a husband whom God is looking for? Have you ever met a son or a daughter whom God is seeking? How can the bitterness of this quest be dissolved? Who can sever the chains that bind this heart? Nothing except the love of God. Nothing except God's essential love can do this. (209-106, 1990.11.27)

God can do anything at will, but because of the reality of unprincipled love His hands have been tied. No one knows how He suffers under such lasting regret and sorrow and how unimaginably weary He is. (197-327, 1990.1.20)

In the established churches people say, "Oh! Holy, holy God! Oh! God of glory! Give me blessings." But God is not that kind of God. On the contrary, He is a miserable God, suffering in confinement. He can be liberated from His sorrowful situation only through the birth of a son. Hence, you must liberate God. Unless you do so, the heavenly path cannot be made straight, and thus the ideal world cannot be established on earth. It has been the history and the mission of the Unification Church to rectify this. (22-151, 1969.2.2)

What lies within the sermons, core teachings and the words you hear from the Unification Church? Its teachings can liberate God, whose heart is in confinement. God is lamenting in grief because of the Fall. From the outset, the history of such lamentation has been a global one. Thus, Paul said that all creation, our ancestors and we ourselves wait with eager longing for the appearance of God's true sons and daughters. It is because they long to free and separate themselves from that realm of grieving. (65-100, 1972.11.13)

Section 4. The Reason God Cannot Punish Satan

4.1. The reasons for Satan's accusations

There is theological dispute over whether Satan existed from the very outset. If he has, it is a big problem. If Satan had always existed, craftily defying and hindering God's providence of restoration for six thousand years, who would be able to subjugate and eliminate him? That is the issue. (54-56, 1972.3.11)

Where did Satan come from? Some say that Satan has existed from the outset. If he were an original existence who

opposed the all-knowing and almighty God and caused our original ancestors to fall, then we could not expect complete salvation as long as Satan existed. This would be dualism, and people would conclude that a world with two opposing purposes would continue forever. (53-259, 1972.3.6)

The original will for the ideal world of creation was never fulfilled due to the Fall. However, since God has absolute authority, even though the whole world might change, He can never change. Even though the devil took Adam, Eve and all creation away from God, the Absolute Being must subjugate Satan, who was originally an archangel, naturally rather than by force. Although God exists, it is as if He does not. He has to re-establish His absolute authority. God cannot strike first. The good God cannot strike the evil Satan. (210-340, 1990.12.27)

Why is the all-knowing and almighty God unable to wipe out Satan at one stroke? If He did so, that act would end up extinguishing Adam, Eve and the creation and destroying the ideal sphere of love as well. That is why He is prevented from doing so. The absolute Lord has the responsibility to absolutely fulfill what He said He would do. Despite Satan's fickleness, attacks and tenacious persecution, the Lord God has endured throughout history in order to recover His established principles. Nobody has known of this God. (208-256, 1990.11.20)

Why has the all-knowing, all-powerful and absolute God been letting Satan infringe upon human beings? Why did He let people be sacrificed, crushed under Satan's foot? Why was He so unable to exercise His power that people could not recognize His existence? This is a serious question. The answer is that God has had no nation, no people, no tribe and no family that He could govern. Furthermore, there has been no individual whose qualification He could officially recognize. If such an individual, family, tribe, people and sovereign nation are established, He will be able to govern the evil nations, peoples, tribes, families and individuals at once. Only this way will lead to goodness, and only then will God have His authority. (56-247, 1972.5.18)

Can you conquer Satan? Wasn't even God, the King of wisdom, immobilized due to Satan's accusation? It is the same for the president of a nation, when the citizens stage a demonstration because of something he did. Can he cut off their heads? Under certain conditions, even the all-knowing and almighty God cannot make a move. Even a government minister would be fired within a day were he found to be at fault. Hence, you must protect yourselves against conditions for accusation. How you develop that protection is an extremely challenging problem in your life of faith. This is a life and death matter. (76-58, 1975.1.26)

The human race was connected to Satan's life and lineage centered on his love. This is the problem. God cannot

intervene or be present under these circumstances. Why has the all-knowing and almighty God seemed so incompetent throughout history? When Satan became the enemy, what did he take away? Satan deprived God of His love. Satan trampled on God's love, life and lineage. We should always be aware of this fact. (206-236, 1990.10.14)

Satan was originally an archangel. He declares to God, "Even though I became Satan due to the Fall, You should solve the problems according to the principles You set up because You are the omniscient, almighty and absolute God. Although I violated the law and became Satan, You, the all-knowing, almighty and absolute Being must work according to the laws You have laid down. Isn't that true?" (39-88, 1971.1.10)

I am going to explain why we cannot proceed on our way without loving our enemy. It is very important for you to know this truth, although it is not written in the Divine Principle book. Although the archangel fell and accuses God, God must still observe the principles that He established, because He is God. God is the Absolute Being. Therefore, although the archangel had fallen, God is compelled to rule over His creation according to the principles and rules He laid down. God is always obliged to relate with the archangel in the same way, both before and after the Fall. That is why Satan says to God, "You are supposed to love me until the perfection period and beyond." (52-87, 1971.12.22)

Adam was supposed to have the three archangels under his command and they were to obey and love him absolutely. As long as the heavenly law and principle that demand absolute obedience and submission remain, Satan cannot do as he pleases with that principle and law, even though he does not absolutely obey and submit to God. Satan himself knows that eventually he has to follow the same principle. God can remove him if he goes against the principle and law. It is like the president exercising his authority through the constitution. If it is not in the constitution, the president cannot do as he wishes. (172-66, 1988.1.7)

The founder of the Unification Church is a serious man. I have always dealt seriously with issues such as God's existence and why the all-knowing and almighty God did not eliminate Satan at once. If you read the book of Job, you may ask how God can be so powerless. I had to understand all this. How serious I was to do so! I have placed my neck on the gallows and struggled for these truths at the risk of my life. We have to retrieve our original life. (187-122, 1989.2.5)

In the book of Job, God gave Satan all he asked for. Why? God cannot respond to Satan with the same behavior as the devil because God is the essence of love for others. So God is the essence of truth. (144-161, 1986.4.12)

God does not subjugate Satan with His mysterious creative power. He makes Satan yield voluntarily. (207-349, 1990.11.11)

The devil has brought ruin to this world in order to prevent the world from returning to God. All this free sex and so on.... How many people in America engage in incest? A father with three daughters sleeps with all of his daughters. There have been a number of such cases. With free sex, the father's brother sleeps with the mother or a son sleeps with his mother. They are like animals. Thus, Satan laughs at God saying, "God, do You think You can establish Your ideal of creation and ideal of love under these circumstances?" (222-230, 1991.11.3)

4.2. God abides by the law

What kind of being is God? God is like the mind of the universe; the universe is like His body. However, the devil has infiltrated this body. Satan has usurped the powers of the heavens and thus controls the universe.

What should God do to digest this problem? God cannot strike Satan with force. The essential quality in the creation of the universe was love; the historical tradition of this universe was carried on through love. Thus, God must maintain that principle, even if there are violators. Therefore, for the sake of restoring the fallen universe, God had to unceasingly maintain the original standard that He had installed for creating based on the essence of love and fulfilling the ideal of true love. Without doing so, He cannot regain His authority as the Absolute Being.

This has been so frustrating for Him. (210-229, 1990.12.23)

The Fall meant establishing a bond of love centered on Satan in the position of a parent. There is nothing to be said about the fruit of good and evil. It cannot be denied. Thus, the descendants by blood who have carried on Satan's love, Satan's life and Satan's lineage have remained to this day. Satan is the enemy of love. He fractured the dream God had of His ideal for creation. The servant forcibly took away the nobleman's daughter and violated her. Thus, she lost the qualification to be the lord's daughter. She had to be driven away. This wrongful act of love was a derailment from the track of the great principle of heaven and earth. This fact cannot be denied. (218-230, 1991.8.19)

God cannot achieve His original ideal for creation unless He loves the children of evil much more than His own beloved children. The devil asserts to God, "I have fallen and I am the way I am. My lineage revolts against You. Yet, don't You, God, have to go on upholding the way of the heavenly law?" God is caught right here. (208-291, 1990.11.20)

Satan accuses God and grips Him firmly in his teeth, saying, "You are the eternal and immortal Subject Being. I know that You are the great supervisor of heaven and earth. Since You are the substance of truth, love and principles, You, like Your laws and principle, cannot change. For this reason, although I am fallen, don't You have to practice the principles You established? Therefore, as a being of principle, You cannot bring Your sons and daughters to the original

world without loving the fallen angel. Your plans for the archangels before the Fall do not allow Your children to enter the heavenly kingdom unless Your son and daughter, and even You Yourself, love me. Thus, though I fell, You must follow that principle. Therefore, You should love me. You cannot be the true God and Your son and daughter cannot be true children without loving me." (129-215, 1983.11.5)

The devil says to God, "God! I am the chief devil that changes. I am the ancestor who is changeable. But aren't You the great supervisor of heaven and earth, the substance of truth, the unchanging Lord? Are You not the Being of love that embodies the principles of unchangeableness in life? I fell and became a rogue. But You are responsible to uphold the original ideal standard that You set up. I can freely pass in and out of the doors of the ideal world where Your will is fulfilled. I can freely come in and out, but since I cannot live there I must come out." That is Satan's assertion. Then God answers, "You are right." (191-244, 1989.6.25)

If we commit even one sin, Satan, the devil, will immediately accuse us before God and say, "Because of his sin, this guy must go to hell." Though Satan, who accuses human beings for their sin, has surely committed sins himself, no one has ever come forward to accuse Satan in front of God for his sin.

There will be a path to eradicate Satan if a person can come forth and say, "O Absolute God! From the viewpoint of Your power and authority, Satan has committed such-and-such unpardonable sins against humankind and against You. Please punish him." If God could not remove Satan even through this method, He would not be all-knowing or all-powerful; He would be on the side of Satan, not of humankind. (54-134, 1972.3.22)

Actually, Satan is an archangel. The archangel must go to heaven after Adam and Eve when they achieve perfection and enter heaven. It is the principle of creation that the archangel enters heaven with Adam and Eve after receiving love from God and then from them. Although Satan made a mistake on the way, if he says, "I am a servant and a traitor. Yet, You, Lord, decided the great principles of heavenly law and established Your essential traditions based on them. Upon these principles You established, there is one that lets You enter the Kingdom of Heaven only after loving the perfected Adam and the archangel. Surely You cannot abandon that principle?" God is caught. He answers, "You are right." Satan traps God saying, "Although I became what I am, You, God, surely cannot be like me." (211-177, 1990.12.30)

Since the devil is an archangel, he says, "Weren't the children who can enter the Kingdom of Heaven originally supposed to love me? Isn't it the original principle of creation that You, God, and Adam may enter the Kingdom of Heav-

en only after You and Adam love me?" He further pushes God, saying, "Unless this is done, You cannot avoid my accusations. You have to establish the condition that You loved me and that Your son Adam also loved me." This problem is the context for the teaching "Love your enemy," given to religious people. (219-36, 1991.8.25)

After we come into a parent-child relationship with God, when the son wails in sorrow God the Father will also wail in sorrow. Then Satan will be frightened out of his senses and flee. He cannot remain there. (228-217, 1992.4.3)

This world cannot be brought back to the heavenly side unless a person appears who can regain the original authority and stand in a position higher than Satan, the devil. In other words, someone must appear who can drag Satan before the all-powerful and all-knowing God and charge him, saying, "God! Satan has committed such sins! Why don't You judge him?" (53-335, 1972.3.6)

So far we have been dominated and dragged around by Satan. Now we should reverse this, capture Satan, bring him before God and accuse him. Although people today know about Satan's existence, they do not know what sin he committed. Until now, nobody has accused Satan before God, saying, "O God! With Your all-knowing and almighty authority, please punish this sinful Satan." (53-88, 1972.2.10)

Then why is it that the all-knowing and all-powerful God cannot strike the fallen archangel? Why can He not get rid of him? It is because God also must love him. Although the archangel that God created fell and became the devil, God always has to maintain the principled standard of thinking of the archangel as he was before the Fall. That is why we should love the archangel. Adam and Eve are God's creation and the body of God. Therefore, not only God, but also Adam and Eve, must love Satan. (175-14, 1988.4.6)

God cannot come down hard on Satan for killing millions of His beloved sons and daughters over the past six thousand years, because God is responsible for not having fully loved the archangel. For this reason, whenever someone does something wrong, Satan brings a continuous trail of accusation: "God, so and so is doing this and that." Because the Unification Church emerged, we can know these things that no one previously understood. (35-95, 1970.10.4)

If you drag Satan, the devil, in front of God and accuse him, would God say, "Hey! That is not how to do it!" or would He be pleased? No doubt God would say, "Oh my son! My only son!" and would want to bless you eternally. We can imagine how intensely God has yearned for that. God is absolute, all-knowing and all-powerful; He is the Lord of righteous judgment. Therefore, if someone comes forward charging and accusing Satan, the devil, God can judge Satan. (54-60, 1972.3.11)

Since Adam and Eve sinned, God is not free to do as He wishes. If someone's child commits murder, can you say that the mother or sibling can take responsibility for that crime? They cannot. This is the heavenly law. With whom did they sin? They sinned with Satan. Adam sinned, but God has not passed judgment on Satan or on Adam and Eve for what they did. Although He drove them away, God is still leading the providence of salvation. Thus, although God is receiving Satan's accusation, He was unable to pass judgment. When we look at these issues from a theological perspective, they present a big problem. Why cannot God deal with this? Why is the all-knowing and almighty God unable to deal with the devil? (223-304, 1991.11.17)

God has no interest in fighting because there is no concept of war or fighting in the ideal world of God's creation. If fighting occurred there, the world would fall into dualism. Fundamentally, fighting has nothing to do with the ideal world of absolute peace. Therefore, you should know that there is no concept of struggle within God's world of creation. (224-224, 1991.11.24)

How did Satan fall away? You should clearly know the answer to this. Satan has created division in large things and small things. God, however, combines small and worthless things into something large. God's way is contrary to Satan's. When we consider the Origin of the universe that seeks true love and the principles by which He created the universe, we see that Satan went against that Origin instead of obeying Him, and thus he fell away. The original nature of the all-knowing, almighty, unique and eternal God is to live one hundred percent for the sake of others. (179-52, 1988.7.3)

Throughout history, the all-knowing and almighty God wins over His enemy not by utilizing His strength and power, but by bringing him into submission through the principles of love. God's desire is to bring His enemy to voluntarily and completely submit before God and gratefully receive humanity's judgment in the position of the servant. Unless this happens, his sins cannot be indemnified. (42-279, 1971.3.27)

Section 5. Let Us Liberate God

5.1. God is like a prisoner

Who will be able to end the battle between the good God and the evil god? Neither God nor Satan can do that. Then who can? Without a master of love who initiates and leads with true love and whom all humanity can follow, the battle between God and Satan cannot end. Unless we are freed from this conflict, peace will remain an impossible dream in this world and in history.

The word "ideal" is just an abstract and sentimental term, so God sends someone who substantiates true love. Our main belief is in the coming of the Messiah or Savior. The Savior does not just save people but also liberates God. He is the one who punishes evil. The

Savior is overall in charge of setting God free and terminating evil. (136-219, 1985.12.29)

The mission of the Savior is to liberate God and punish Satan. Who will get rid of this despicable ringleader who has continuously accused humanity? God cannot do it; only the Messiah, the Savior can. (136-219, 1985.12.29)

What kind of Unification Church do we want? We want to find the parent-centered religion. We are not seeking the sweet life, nor are we pursuing relationships based only on moral principles. Centering on the True Parents, we want to find the way of true love, and in so doing we want to liberate God. There is no liberation that does not correspond to the principles of love. (136-222, 1985.12.29)

Have you thought about the nation that Father loves and is going to find? When one is willing to go to prison, some path will be found on that way. No one knows that pioneering this path of life and death means finding a path of hope that leads people beyond the abyss of darkness. No one knows the circumstances under which I have toiled in order to dig a tunnel to liberate the people of the world. In walking the path of loyalty to God, I have attended God as the center, served Him with great care, and treasured His love. I live in faith that this is the only path that never changes, even though time and tide may change. (163-304, 1987.5.1)

We must liberate God. Each of us must save God. Instead of trying to be saved, we must make God free. This is the consummation of the providence of salvation. (136-263, 1985.12.29)

The Unification Church is a force for the liberation for God. We are not just liberating the world. Bringing liberation to the world is easy. The world will be liberated when people unite, but God's liberation requires the unity of the realm of heart. We must have the Principle and a system of thought that can unify the realm of love, mobilize the spirit world, and build bridges of heart on earth. This is the most fearsome and difficult revolution. Liberating humanity is easy, but liberating God is difficult. It is an amazing fact that Rev. Moon has emerged as the standard-bearer to tackle this difficult and unprecedented task, with the goal of settling all matters of providential history. (136-285, 1985.12.29)

Religious leaders today fall on their knees and pray for their own blessings. But I have never prayed to receive blessings. Instead I prayed, "Let me be a sacrificial offering for the sake of Your liberation." The Old Testament Age was an age for restoring God's people by sacrificing the things of creation; the New Testament Age was an age for restoring parents by sacrificing children; and the Completed Testament Age is an age for liberating God by sacrificing the Parents' family.

We should attend the original parents on earth and live with them forever.

There is a Korean folk song that goes like this, "Moon, Moon, you bright Moon, the Moon poet Lee Tae-baek loved…" It goes on singing about a great laurel tree in the Moon. But it also sings of living with one's parents for tens of thousands of years. That is something of a revelation about the Korean people – living with the heavenly parents for thousands and tens of thousands of years. Whenever I think about that song, I can never forget that surge of emotion in my heart. (137-185, 1986.1.1)

God has been giving world-level blessings to America for two hundred years, but Americans think these are just for them, for their Christian churches, and for their country. They have forgotten their responsibility to liberate all humankind and promote human well-being by sacrificing America and Christianity. Instead, Americans believe in their superiority and think unilaterally, centering on their national interests. God's will is for America to have a global consciousness and build a worldwide foundation, even by sacrificing itself and Christianity. But because America is going against this and taking a contrary position, it is taking a nosedive. Families are breaking down, churches are collapsing, the nation is being dismantled and everything is in a total mess. Everything is diseased. (143-189, 1986.3.18)

We must penetrate hell in order to liberate God and True Parents and save the world. After passing through the bottom of hell, we will reach the Kingdom of Heaven. The shortest path is to plunge through the bottom of hell. This is why we focus on sacrifice and service, isn't it? If you say, "I believe in the Unification Church in order to gain my salvation," you get a zero. You will never be able to reach the worldwide level. You should rather say, "I will go this way in order to liberate God, set True Parents free, and save the world." Do you understand? That is what is different. (148-163, 1986.10.8)

You cannot continue without straightening your path, in life or death. Because I know this, I've been doing this all my life. I carry this burden even though I was persecuted and sent to prison. Did I go to prison because I enjoy it? I did so for the sake of God and God's liberation. I went for the sake of liberating humankind and the satanic world. I have walked the path of restoration through indemnity, because without going this way liberation does not come and because we cannot separate from Satan amid peace and comfort. (148-168, 1986.10.8)

One's portion of responsibility for liberation is to liberate the realm of heart. God must be liberated, and so must the Parents. How painful it must be for God to be in the position of having to relate to evil parents ever since they emerged! So we must liberate True Parents and God. You must be such children of filial piety. True Parents are still going through hardships… Are you trying to live the good life, leaving the Heavenly Parent to suffer in misery? Are you thinking how

to have your children live the good life? How can you seek a comfortable life? Can you think of doing that? (148-222, 1986.10.9)

In your daily life for the sake of God's liberation, you should know that you cannot call upon God without a heart steeped in tears. This is why John the Baptist cried out in the wilderness, "Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand." Even Jesus said, "Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand." You need to repent. You should understand how insolent, undignified, and shameless your approach to the providence has been.

Even if you fail to liberate the world, you have to release God from His agony. (161-113, 1987.1.11)

How can the world be unified and how can liberation be achieved? The spiritual and physical worlds will be unified and liberated only when someone emerges whom God has empowered to unify the satanic realm. Only when someone who can dominate Satan appears will the spiritual and physical worlds be liberated.

Does God need liberation? God is of course already a liberated being internally. God needs liberation because people need liberation. God Himself could already be liberated. God cannot meet the condition to be liberated only because people, who need to be liberated, are not. It is not that God cannot be liberated. It depends on people. (161-243, 1987.2.22)

Christian thought focuses on the Second Advent. What will Jesus do when he returns? There are many Christians today who have lost touch with reality. Do they want to rise into the air on the clouds and have a millennium party? This belief is irrational. What will Jesus do when he comes? What will he be proud of when he comes? Satan resists God by demanding that He establish justice, and unless Jesus eradicates Satan, God can never avoid his unceasing opposition. What is the returning Lord supposed to do on earth? He does not come to bring a comfortable life to a few hundred million Christians. He must liberate God. The returning Lord should follow the way of righteousness and fulfill the responsibility to liberate God. (162-186, 1987.4.12)

5.2. God's liberation is a task for humankind

In saving the world, we should first liberate God. The world can be liberated only after God is liberated. Isn't that so? I am saying that we should liberate the world after we have liberated God. So let us spread the Unification Church to the ends of the earth, establish bonds of heart, and show our determination by driving a stake into the ground to melt the world with love. This is the battle we are fighting. (162-221, 1987.4.12)

Resolving to continue until God is liberated, you should gather around you those on our side like clouds to follow True Parents to their final destination.

From these individuals, families will emerge; and from these families, tribes will emerge.

The value of the sacrificial offerings on the levels of tribe, ethnic group and nation will be reproduced in the world that attends the Second Parents, thereby restoring through indemnity, as resurrected beings of substance, all the saints who sacrificed themselves in history. Our destiny prevents us from leaving this land without fulfilling this. We must fill up this hole even if we die. This is the fate that no one can avoid. We should quickly follow this path. (166-74, 1987.5.28)

We must liberate God. God should be able to visit any corner of this land and sing a hymn of praise: "My ideal of creation is entirely realized through work done by day and night. I am grateful and amazed." At the same time, God should be able to love the world, the universe, the spiritual world and the physical world. However, this has not occurred and Satan's dark occupation reaches almost up to God's throne. To liberate God, therefore, we must liberate the spirit world. (166-78, 1987.5.28)

I like liberation very much. I like liberation much more than you do. I also like unification. How much do I like it? So much that I will die for it. The gate of unification and liberation does not belong to someone named Moon; it belongs to God, the Great Master of the universe. I asked God, "I am sure there are many things that You like, but what is it that You like most?" He answered, "It is liberation." His answer was simple: "What I like most is liberation." So I asked, "Why can't You attain liberation?" And He said, "I cannot do it alone." This is the problem. God cannot do it alone. (166-99, 1987.5.30)

Do you love your nation or do you love your children? Have you loved your own people only after opening things up for your children? Have you loved the world after opening the way to the nation? Only after opening the way to go to heaven will you see the dawn of complete liberation. At dawn, the rays of the sun permeate every valley and completely liberate all the people who have been held hostage in death. You have to sing of freedom and peace and declare the coming of the unified world along with liberation. Only then can you disregard the history of thousands of years and become a prince of liberation. You must be a standard-bearer of unification in order to receive God's praise and enjoy eternal happiness in God's bosom of love. That is how it is. Are you confident to do this? (166-99, 1987.5.30)

Humankind needs liberation, but first we need to liberate God. Only then will the liberation of humankind follow. Nobody thinks about this. Christian ministers think of God exercising judgment surrounded by glory. But this is a mistake. The God I know is not like that. We must liberate God from the realm of death. (166-150, 1987.6.5)

The age of perfection comes after the

Old, New and Completed Testament Ages. Perfection means perfection of love. It means the liberation of parents, the liberation of children, the liberation of all things and the liberation of God. All these must be accomplished at once. Everything that went to hell all at once through the fallen parents will be restored all at once at the risk of heaven and earth. (166-326, 1987.6.14)

If a person or an organization claims to represent a people and its culture, who or what kind of organization would it be? It must embody the historical tradition of that people, represent that age, and reach the worldwide level, connecting the mission of this age to the mission of the future. You should know that this person is Rev. Moon and this organization is the Unification Church. The truth of the Unification Church is not invasive. Rather, it seeks to save people and raise them to a higher level. We must accomplish their liberation. We must liberate all people. We are the standard-bearers for liberation. Through the joint efforts of the spiritual and physical worlds we are trying to liberate God. (168-55, 1987.9.1

I do not even dream of receiving praise or a welcome for myself. The philosophy of the Unification Church is to sacrifice itself to save a people, and after saving a people, to save humankind, and after saving all the people of the world, to liberate heaven, earth and finally God. God will reinvest everything He regains, hoping for a special world of a higher dimension free from the Fall and for a great migration toward heaven. (227-272, 1992.2.14)

I am nothing. It is said that human history began one and a half million years ago. When the Parent has lost all His dignity and authority through our long history, to whom will He appeal about His miserable situation as a Parent in the struggle to find His lost children? Before the children come forward and resolve this, God can neither alleviate the bitter sorrow in His own heart nor remove the nail that pierces it. Who will take out that nail and liberate God's bitter heart, which must be released with flesh and blood through the healing tears of love? We should know that God's liberation precedes our own liberation. We should know that this is the path to the ultimate liberation sought by people of faith. (187-273, 1989.2.11)

We should know where the seeds of happiness are. We must find them because we lost them through the Fall. This is why we find the true God centered on the Unification Church.

So far, God has been the God of restoration, not the original God. He is filled with sorrow and is to be pitied. He is not the God of joy, but of despair. In order to return to the original state, therefore, we must liberate the God of restoration – not with money, not with power, not with any person, but with true love. (174-248, 1988.3.1)

We began with suffering, and so we want to head for the final destination

through suffering. I am determined that Rev. Moon will be recognized as one who experienced misery. I do not need money or honor. The hope to find the new homeland lies only in liberating God, liberating humankind, and liberating even Satan, thereby building an eternal base of peace and love. With such an understanding, you should struggle hard to follow this path, forgetting breakfast, lunch and dinner, ignoring day and night, and persevering no matter how steep and rugged the mountains are that stand in the way. The heavenly principle is that the longer you lead such a life, the more God's ideal love will be with you, your family, your clan, and your nation. I would like to ask you to understand this and live accordingly. (174-53, 1988.2.23)

Achieving greatness does not mean having a wonderful face or a handsome body, but, rather, great thinking. Greatness of spirit enables one to say, "Even God will have to move and follow me. I am asserting that, with love, I will liberate God who could not fulfill the purpose of love." It is logical to say that our sorrowful God, with His goal of love unfulfilled, is liberated by meeting Rev. Moon. It is not a daydream. I am asserting this based upon actual proof that comes from a systematic theory and precise data. (165-185, 1987.5.20)

Our work is to liberate God. If this is done, everything is concluded, is it not? God will be free to do as He wills. You need to know that when the all-knowing and almighty God can exercise His full authority and full power, the kingdom of peace and tranquility will surely be realized. Only then will we say "Amen." (221-25, 1991.10.20)

Section 6. The Liberation of God and the Way of the Filial Child

6.1. The path of restoration True Father has walked

I fully understand what it is like to determine to fulfill God's will. I know what God's love is like, and I know that I must both kneel in gratitude and walk the path to offer forgiveness. No one has known that God is filled with bitter grief that compels Him to walk the path of liberation even though His blood might be shed.

I did not pray to God asking Him to save me even when I collapsed under torture; and though I was pursued, I did not pray to God asking Him to protect me on my path or to save me. As a man of character, I have my own reserve of strength. I have the spirit and the inner strength to fight. I say to myself, "God will probably save me if I collapse unconscious due to lack of strength. But before that, with my own power…" I know that God is waiting, preparing things in advance before I go. (138-358, 1986.1.24)

God is with the Unification Church. If I were to lose my temper, thinking "that good-for-nothing!" and think to myself, "You wait and see; just wait a couple of months," in the end that per-

son would be broken in pieces. Wouldn't it be strange to see such a thing? That is why I bite my tongue and control myself. I cannot curse others with my mouth. As the True Parent, I cannot use my mouth to curse others. Even as I hold back my words, Heaven releases me completely from my bitter feelings. When you see this, don't you think God loves me? (162-205, 1987.4.12)

Nobody ever became a congressman or president of this nation while its sovereign rights were intact, with the authority of a homogeneous people clothed in white, proud of its five-thousand-year culture in Asia. After the liberation of Korea, I was thinking of the possibility of seeing such a congressman and president. You must understand that this was not just my wish but God's wish as well. When this happens, Asia will be in the palm of God's hand. Please have faith in the fact that the world should head towards the place God is also heading. (171-190, 1988.1.1)

Harboring bitter grief in my heart, how can I take a rest? My path is a busy one, since I must walk this path to resolve everything from a thousand years of history. For forty years of my life, I could not avoid taking the path of tears. This continues even now. North Korea should have welcomed the new garden of God's love where young people who can praise God can spring up. Yet seeing them tainted by those who betrayed God, He had to turn away His face. We have to make it so that God can turn His face back.

Since I entered North Korea with God and with this system of thought that restores things to their original state, the communist world should thank me, and the democratic world should be even more grateful to me. Let us march forward to this place! (173-116, 1988.2.7)

At Seodaemun prison, a lady evangelist who had persevered for a time in the Unification Church but who then left after things did not turn out the way she wanted, said to me, "Oh, this has turned out well for you. Would this happen to the son of God?" I answered "Yes, I am not someone who will disappear in prison. I will make great leaps toward a liberated world." I will never forget her face. I heard that she recently died in miserable circumstances, and I felt pity for her. This is how I live. I know everything about how the five presidents of Korea treated me. Yet I do not show this. I do not seek revenge. They did not know. I have to meet them and teach them. After saying what I need to say, I have to resolve everything. (204-118, 1990.7.1)

When I came to this earth what position was I in? As the son, sibling, couple and parent in whom God's heart of bitter pain remains, I stood in a position to indemnify and release God's anguish at its pinnacle by giving the perfected love that could not be given before. (234-140, 1992.8.10)

Everything exists for the sake of others. Based on God's ideal of creation

to live for the sake of others, God had to invest, invest, and invest Himself to multiply true love. As He did, we have to spread it throughout the universe and return to the original homeland. When we return, we should not kick others away as our enemies. We have to bring them to naturally submit to us through love. Without this natural submission, God cannot find His position. If I were to use trickery, I would not be defeated by anyone. However, knowing that we must bring them to submit, I have been restraining myself. Can you imagine how difficult it has been for me to suppress my fiery character for forty years?! How much more difficult would it be for God, Who is more intense than I am! (219-93, 1991.8.25)

Once I turned to look back, and God, who was following me, embraced me in tears. When I turned to say, "You are the center of my love; I submit to You; I will absolutely follow You," God embraced me again. How great it is to be in such a position! Just as God gave me His position, I must also give God's position to all of you. (215-341, 1991.3.1)

Looking back in history, forty years ago I was hunted by the nation and hunted by the established churches. My position was that of an orphan expelled into the wilderness. From such an awful position, I had to fulfill God's requirement to restore the historical standard and create a global foundation! I had lost the victorious Christian cultural sphere that had been established on Heaven's side after World War II, and the foundation of America, the nation that governs the free world. In the position of the owner, I could not help thinking about the intense grief of losing this foundation and about having to accomplish the task of restoration through indemnity again, over a forty-year period. Can you imagine how aghast I was, knowing clearly that I could have brought history to its conclusion – something even God could not do for hundreds of thousands or millions of years! (135-187, 1985.11.13)

I have accomplished these tasks oblivious to rain and snow. Nightfall was like dawn, and I would even forget to eat. I could not take this lightly because I knew God and felt the serious responsibility that comes with knowing God. More than anybody else, I knew how sorrowful God was. Thus, even if my body were torn apart, crumbled into dust and blown away, all those scattered cells could still cry out as God's cells. I grappled with this path of death, accepting it as a worthy death for a man. As I grappled with this, people thought I would perish and disappear, but things have turned out like this. (137-178, 1986.1.1)

Since I knew the great and bitter pain that was entrenched in heaven and earth, I had to comfort God even when I was vomiting blood. Who could ever understand the bitter reality of my position as the True Parent, in which I could not pray, "I am about to die. God, please save me"? Nobody knew of this. Only God. Only He understood my heart.

Even though many people follow the Unification Church, none of them is one with my thought. All of you must understand this. A substandard Unificationist community cannot stand in the sphere of liberation. I know that the behavior of those who have received the Blessing is nowadays like that of the devil's cousins. (145-332, 1986.6.1)

God would offer a hundred thanks to the brave man who would confess that he has not fought enough, that he lacks the qualifications to shed tears, or that he is concerned that the Father would shed tears if He saw him in sorrow. God would offer those thanks to the brave man who, in the unbearably bitter position of being whipped, would worry that God would be in a miserable position or who would be concerned that God would shed tears when he cries through clenched teeth, "My grief is nothing, my pain is nothing, my sorrow is nothing." God would offer those thanks to the brave man who would cry out and raise the flag of victory as the vanguard on the path to take vengeance upon the enemy. God would express His gratitude one hundred times, saying, "Should I call you a patriot, should I call you a son of filial piety, or should I call you a virtuous person? In all the history of the world there has been no person more precious than you." (153-269, 1964.3.26)

To this day, I, Rev. Moon, have walked a lonely path as an individual. Though it has been a lonely path, I know God more deeply than anyone else does. In history, many lonely people cursed their circumstances while asking for blessings. Yet, centering on God's grieving heart, I did not think like those people. Instead, I said, "God, do not worry." That is a different way. I am not a man to retreat due to personal trials. A man who pledges to die only after overcoming the trials of the world and liberating God cannot write a letter of surrender during that individual course. He cannot be cowardly. Even though my wife opposed me, my children opposed me and my parents opposed me, I cut them off in order to walk this path. I walked the path in spite of opposition by my nation of 40 million or even 60 million people. (175-257, 1988.4.24)

Time is so short. A lifetime is not enough time to rectify this and compensate for it. That has been my life course. So from a secular viewpoint, my life would be pitied. Try asking God, "What kind of person is Rev. Moon?" The pain I feel causes me to lament in sorrow; I am experiencing bitter pain like that of a man writhing in agony while having his heart cut out. On this earth I am a miserable man. Nobody knows about my suffering. People may boast about themselves, thinking they are wonderful. Yet they do not know my suffering. Even Mother does not know. (213-278, 1990.1.21)

None of you knows the bitter circumstances of my going to Heungnam prison after I lost all the foundation for which God had toiled for over six thousand years. Leaving my hometown was

not the problem. My wife and child were not the problem. It seems like yesterday that I cried for those who, as the future hope of heaven and earth, were to welcome me as liberated people. But they vanished into hell in the clouds, disappearing into the world of darkness, even while I cried out to them that we would meet again. It seems like yesterday that I proclaimed, "Although you have disappeared, I will keep to my path and bring the bright morning sun to find and liberate you again!" I cannot forget the sound of my shouting this while in chains. I cannot forget the times I prayed while in difficulty. (220-205, 1991.10.19)

When I ask God, "God, are You not this kind of person? The God I know is like this." God would take my hand and weep profusely, asking, "How did you find that out, my son?" When God hears this He will weep. Then how loud the sound of His weeping will be! God knows that this situation cannot continue for a thousand more years. Thus, He wipes away His tears, stops His weeping and says, "My son!" You must understand God's need for such a son and daughter. (176-263, 1988.5.11)

"I will become God's true soldier. No matter how terrible this battlefield for God may be, I will join the front line." That is my spirit. I never once complained to God even when the world's persecution swarmed about me – even when I was in a position of utter loneliness due to persecution and suffering. This is what I can take pride in. (193-73, 1989.8.20)

Have absolute faith in God! If you have absolute faith in God – even when you cannot find faith on the left side or right side, on the north, south, east or west, on the front or back, on the left or right – you will find yourself on the center line. With absolute faith, you will find one position. You will find the absolute position, the place where God resides. From there everything will start to be resolved. In the way of faith, many things are ordained. There is no discussion. Because your life of faith deviates, its angle must be adjusted, even by force. In light of this, how great is God's pain and the pain of humankind! (188-225, 1989.2.26)

6.2. A lifetime devoted to God's liberation

You do not know how angry this makes me! There cannot be anyone in history who feels greater indignation than I do. When I weep, there is no one who weeps more bitterly than I do. No one could weep more than I do. I feel God's heart flowing from my heart as in tears I embrace a thousand years of history on this earth, embracing the lost sorrow. Can you cover up that root, sit there, eat your fill and live in comfort? Even dogs would not eat the carcass of such a wretch. (180-50, 1988.8.20)

Unless a man goes over that difficult mountain pass of indemnity while calmly and happily attending and comforting God, the kingdom of peace on earth will not appear. Such a representative

and public person is lonely. When somebody stands up and says, "Rev. Moon did such things as this…," I feel like bursting into tears. Even though I am an old man of seventy whose tears should have all dried up, I harbor a loneliness that cannot stop the flow of tears of sorrow. You must never forget that there is such a parent. (183-86, 1988.10.29)

Think about how much time I have spent in prison, more than five years in all. Think about how rain dripping from a gutter will gradually make a hole in a rock. None of you would know how bitterly I wept as I gazed upon those drops of water, thinking how much I wished that the teardrops of my love could bore a hole through the rock of anguish embedded in God's heart! Gazing upon a flowing stream I thought how wonderful it would be if this stream could be pristine water, serving God so that He could come and bathe in it! How wonderful it would be if I could be a child who could prepare such a home or resting place for God! Unless you experience that deep world of heart, you have nothing to do with God. (185-45, 1989.1.1)

How long have I suppressed my indignation? How many times have I been overwhelmed to the point that all five of my sensory organs were choked up? It was not for the sake of meeting all of you. It was for the sake of bringing the rulers of humanity into submission, but not through my body, or by guns and swords. Unless I bring them to natural surrender by influencing their hearts through the lineage of love, God's desired garden of peace will not come to heaven and earth. It will be impossible to build the kingdom of peace. (197-348, 1990.1.20)

There are many difficulties as we live in this world! Who knows what will befall us today? People who cannot break free from this fearful environment have a wretched life. Who will be the teacher who can mentor them amidst this environment of fear and chaos? There is no teacher. I had to weep bitterly and struggle because of this problem. If there is a God, why could He not step into the role of the teacher? Actually God is a teacher whose principle is love. Not knowing this, we harbored a grievance toward God. He is a teacher centered on love. (203-228, 1990.6.26)

Once I came back in the evening tired. I slept for awhile and woke up, washed my face and shaved. Mother looked at me and said, laughing, "Washing and shaving is what you do when you get up in the morning. Why are you doing it now?" That is how I live. My heart goes in one direction. My devoted effort goes in one direction. Try praying, asking God what kind of person I am. God will wail in sorrow. He will weep so bitterly that His tongue will come out and not go back in. You have to know that those are the circumstances of my life. (221-163, 1991.10.23)

For fallen humankind, I am the savior. But from God's viewpoint, I am the

True Son and True Parent who will fulfill the true-love ideal of creation that was lost in the beginning. The savior is one who pioneered the path of sacrifice, offering his life to relieve God's anguish that began with the Fall. The savior is not only living in glory. He weeps together with God's heart and is deeply concerned with bringing Satan to his knees. (232-225, 1992.7.7)

Whose God are you going to make Him? Are you going to make Him America's God? Will you make Him the God of Korea? Will you make Him your God? Which? You are so greedy! If you want to make Him your God, you have to work for God more than for your own people. If God loves Rev. Moon, and if you can make more effort than Rev. Moon, God will surely love you more than He loves me. Isn't that an infallible formula? There are no objections to this. I want to see people who have a greater capacity than I do to comfort God, serve God's will, and offer distinguished service to God. If I wanted people with abilities inferior to my own, I would be a dictator. (184-224, 1989.1.1)

If a marathon runner has completed 80 percent of the race from the starting line, takes the lead by 100 or 1,000 meters, and falls down at that point, that is the end of it. When a marathon champion runs, do the spectators say "Hey, slow down!"? They say "Run fast!" until he drops. It is the same for me. I have to set the record. Only when I hold the record can I receive God's highest award with a clear conscience. I have to push myself until then. (230-186, 1992.5.3)

Something went wrong at the starting point. It was as dreadful as saying, "Something went wrong at my birth! Oh dear, now that I have grown up, I see that I am a son adopted from beggars; I was the child of a beggar, brought from an orphanage." This is even worse than being the child of a beggar. When you were young, you thought your parents were your real parents, but later on you realized that you were the son of a beggar. What happens to your household when people find out that you are of such lowly birth? Your household would surely be turned upside down, and people would weep bitterly. How shocked you would be to find out that you were raised in an orphanage when you thought that the mother and father who raised you were your real parents! This is shocking even in the secular world. It would be an even greater shock for God to see His crown princes who were to inherit His kingship and the heavenly palace walking around together with such people and becoming kings of hell. (216-107, 1991.3.9)

Rev. Moon's concept and the Unification Church's concept of husband and wife means attending the eternal Parent for a thousand or ten thousand years as a son and daughter born from God's lineage and attaining the qualification as a son and daughter whom God can eternally praise as His own. Only by going through this position can you heal the wounds that resulted from the Fall and

that remain in God's heart.

When you grasp God and say, "Father, how much You have toiled!" He will weep upon hearing your words. He will explode into tears saying, "Thank you; I've been doing this through the thousands of years of history." Tens of tens of millions of years have passed since the creation of humankind. It is not just six thousand years as the Bible indicates based on the history of cultures recorded in its pages. Actually it has been tens of millions of years since God decided to begin the providence of salvation. (232-138, 1992.7.3)

In the past, I saw right through those people who came to the Unification Church with the motivation to use it for their own purposes; those people did all sorts of things. I knew who they were, yet I let them deceive me. Why did I do so? It is because God has been doing so to this day. When people betrayed me and turned their backs, I could have exploded in indignation and resentment saying, "Those reprobates should be struck by lightning." Yet when I thought about the heart of God who longs for their return, I could not do that. Each time I grasped that suffering heart of God, and had the heart to forgive, a new segment, like that of a bamboo shoot, was created. Do you understand? A segment of the Unification Church was made. That is how we are making family segments, tribal segments and national segments. (197-312, 1990.1.20)

You should not let this historic teacher's anguish and God's historical pain flow by unnoticed. You should gently retain love in the deepest part of your heart. When you meet God in the other world, you should embrace Him and shed tears, saying, "I knew of Your grief and I tried to align myself accordingly, but I could not. Please forgive me." If that kind of heart leads you, even if you weep while grasping God, He will weep together with you and embrace you. I believe that liberation is not possible without that kind of day. However great a wife's love may be, it cannot reach such a level; and however great a parent's love may be, it cannot reach that level. Since I know these things, in order to bring about liberation I had no time to take my eyes off that task or to go off on a tangent. (184-246, 1989.1.1)

Until we meet again, you must think of me day and night; think of me when you get hungry. Even if you do not eat, do the things I do for God's will. When you get drowsy, persevere for God's will, thinking about me as I go on without sleep. You have to think about your teacher who endures without vindicating himself in the face of slander. Being even more upright in your heart, you should be thirsty for tomorrow's victory and go forth with the intention of gaining results and seeing your enemies surrender to you naturally. Only through these efforts can you and this people find the path of life. (82-48, 1975.12.30)

Once I received word that a member had been sentenced to death. How could

I, the founder of the Unification Church, spend the night without tears after hearing this? How much pity I felt! If he had not known me, this would surely not have happened. As he walked the final path while facing east toward Korea and said, "I will go now," and wished me a long life, do you know how my heart felt to be unable to hold onto and save such a person who followed beyond his nation's borders the teacher he had never met? Knowing the heart of heaven that pitied those who were held captive, in pain and suffering under the tribulations of the devil, day and night I had to drive people like him to march forward. (201-152, 1990.3.30)

I never thought, even in my dreams, of becoming the founder of the Unification Church. Even now it is the same. I do not have the concept of being the founder of a religion. I am just an ordinary man. Even today I did not wear a suit or necktie. I am only comfortable in more minimal attire. Why? Because I know that even at this hour, throughout the world members of the Unification Church with their clothes drenched in rain from a gutter are longing for me, wishing me a long life and offering bows. I cannot trample on situations where people are praying for me to receive blessing. Thus, when I open my eyes, I cannot sleep. As the founder of a religion, I feel like a sinner. That is why the Unification Church members cannot ignore me. (197-162, 1990.1.13)

BOOK TWO

TRUE PARENTS



Contents

Chapter 1. What Is a True Parent?

Section 1. The Significance of the True Parents 171
Section 2. The Origin of Trueness 171
2.1. What is the meaning of Trueness? 171
Section 3. The Standard Measure of Truth 175
Section 4. Trueness and the True Person 178
Section 5. What Is a True Parent? 179
5.1. The two tablets of stone and True Parents 179
5.2. The definition of True Parents 181
5.3. True Parents are the embodiment of good character 183
Section 6. The Meaning of the Words True Parents 185
6.1. The words True Parents are precious 185
6.2. True Parents are our source of enormous pride 185
6.3. The words True Parents are amazing words 187
6.4. The words True Parents are fearsome words 188

Chapter 2. The Messiah and the True Parents

Section 1. History and the True Parents 189
1.1. The Fall and the True Parents 189
1.2. The Desire of History 190
1.3. History and the True Parents 190
1.4. The providence of restoration has sought the True Parents throughout its history 191
Section 2. The Messiah, the True Parent 194
2.1. The Messiah is the True Parent 194
2.2. The appearance of the Messiah 194
2.3. The mission of the Messiah 196
Section 3. Jesus and the True Parents 198
Section 4. The Second Coming and the True Parents 199
4.1. We need to prepare to receive the Messiah 199
4.2. The Task of the Lord at the Second Coming 200

Chapter 3. The Need for True Parents

Section 1. We Also Need Our Natural Parents 202
Section 2. True Parents and Our Natural Parents 203
Section 3. The Reason True Parents Must Come 205
Section 4. The Conditions for the Appearance of the True Parents 205
Section 5. The True Lineage Must Come Through the True Parents 206
Section 6. The True Parents are Needed Absolutely 206
Section 7. The Designation of the True Parents Was Foreseen and Predicted 208
Section 8. True Parents' Position Is Not an Elected One 209

Chapter 4. The Mission of the True Parents

Section 1. The Position of the True Parents 210
Section 2. The Path of the True Parents 211
Section 3. The Course Prior to Becoming the True Parents 212
Section 4. The Authority and Mission of the True Parents 216
Section 5. True Parents' Love 218

Chapter 5. The Kingdom of Heaven and True Parents

Section 1. The Meaning of the Characters for *Cheon* (天) and *Bu-mo* (父母) . 220
Section 2. The Reason We Must Attend True Parents on Earth 221
Section 3. The Kingdom of Heaven is Possible Only Through True Parents 222
Section 4. The Kingdom of Heaven and True Love 224
Section 5. True Parents and Eternal Life 225
Section 6. True Parents and the Nation 226

Chapter 6. True Parents and Us

Section 1. The Essence of the Teachings of the Family Federation 229
1.1. The philosophy of the Parents 229
1.2. True families determine the center of the universe 230
1.3. God's love and True Parents' love 231
1.4. Parents and family members 232
Section 2. The Value of Working with True Parents while They are on Earth 233
Section 3. True Parents' Effort and Us 236
3.1. We absolutely need True Parents 236
3.2. We are a branch engrafted to True Parents 236
3.3. True Parents' investment for our sake 238
3.4. True Parents' expectations of us 238
3.5. The standard we should meet 239
Section 4. Grace and Self-Realization 240
4.1. True Parents is a term that has appeared for the first time 240
4.2. The appearance of True Parents is the greatest news 241
4.3. The future secured through True Parents 242
4.4. The value of True Parents 243
4.5. We should be grateful 244
4.6. Our connection with True Parents is destiny 246
4.7. We must carry out our responsibilities 246
Section 5. What We Need to Do 247
5.1. Our responsibilities 247
5.2. Our mission 250
Section 6. Things We Should Cherish as Our Own Life 251
6.1. Insisting on your own way is not acceptable 251
6.2. We must become one 252
6.3. We should love True Parents 253

6.4. We must attend True Parents 254
6.5. We should be obedient 254
6.6. We must inherit the tradition 254
6.7. We should be proud of True Parents 256
6.8. You should pay your debt to True Parents 256

Chapter 7. A Life with True Parents

Section 1. True Parents' Day and True Parents 257
Section 2. We Should Fully Understand the Words "True Parents" 258
Section 3. Learning True Parents' Language 259
Section 4. Revelation in Folk Songs 261
Section 5. Prayer in the Name of True Parents 263
Section 6. The Power of True Parents' Name 263
Section 7. Enjoy Eternal Glory in True Parents' Name 264
Section 8. Bequeathing and Inheriting True Parents' Heart 265
8.1. Bequeathing of heart 265
8.2. Sons and daughters inherit from their parents 266
Section 9. What You Need to Take Heed of 267

Chapter 8. The Three Great Subjects Principle and The Proclamation of True Parents

Section 1. The Three Great Subjects Principle and the Parent-Centered Ideology 268
1.1. The Three Subjects Principle is our desire 268
1.2. The Three Subjects Principle is the philosophy of True Parents 269
1.3. The essence of the Three Subjects Principle 269
1.4. A parent-centered ideology 270
Section 2. The Proclamation of True Parents 271
2.1. Background to the proclamation of True Parents 271
2.2. The standard for the proclamation of True Parents 271
2.3. The place where the proclamation of True Parents is made 273
2.4. Phenomena occurring after the proclamation of True Parents 273
2.4.1. The world today is rapidly changing due to the announcement of the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages. 273
2.4.2. The forces of the devil enter the realm of death 274
2.4.3. The coming of the heavenly fortune for unification 275
2.4.4. There will be no conflict in the future 278
2.5. The remarkable proclamation of True Parents 279
2.6. How we should conduct ourselves after the proclamation of True Parents 280
2.7. What we need to do after the proclamation of True Parents 284
2.7.1. Be grateful for the proclamation 284
2.7.2. Accumulate results 286
2.7.3. Rallies to welcome True Parents 287

2.8. The parent in the North and the parent in the South 289
2.9. The religious founders and True Parents 291
Section 3. The Proclamation of True Parents and Kingship 292
3.1. Adam's family, the original starting point of the royal palace 292
3.2. The establishment of kingship 293
3.3. The restoration of kingship 295
Section 4. Keeping True Parents' Photograph 298
4.1. The reason for keeping True Parents' photograph 298
4.2. The power of the picture of True Parents 300

CHAPTER ONE

What Is a True Parent?

Section 1. The Significance of the True Parents

The words True Parents are among the most frequently used words of our Unification Church members. Although they are simple words, they represent a remarkable reality. This term does not appear in any book in all of history. In spite of its simplicity, True Parents is a term that Unification Church members alone recognize and use.

If, in the two thousand years of Christian history, it had been revealed that our human ancestors fell, humankind would have understood at once that fallen parents are false and bad parents and unfallen parents are good and true parents. However, no one has ever been able to reveal this. Humankind has been waiting for the time when this information could be proclaimed.

There may have been people in some past historical age who thought about the term True Parents, but they had no way of understanding what the term's background might be. Since the issue could not be resolved without understanding the vast and comprehensive contents of the Principle, no one else has been able to simply say the words True Parents. It is an amazing fact that we have been able to reveal the content of the Principle, the Unification Church's view of history and the truth about the origin of humankind.

What can we conclude after clearly understanding the term True Parents? We can conclude that the Fall of our first ancestors occurred through an illicit sexual relationship. The Fall has resulted in a connection of blood that has nothing to do with God or with the True Parents who were to be established as the ideal of creation. In other words, we came to inherit the wrong bloodline.

For this reason, the words True Parents in relation to God's will signify first, that all people, including our first ancestors, will be cut off from the false lineage. Second, they signify that a love, life, and lineage connected with God and the new original root will begin. These are truly amazing words. (201-60, 1990.3.1)

Section 2. The Origin of Trueness

2.1. What is the meaning of Trueness?

If there were a true being in heaven and earth, who would it be? It would be the absolute being. In modern Korean, when we refer to the Absolute Being, we

say, "There is only One." We shorten that to *Hana-nim* (God), where *Hana* means "One."

Then, what kind of being is God? God likes both the good people and the bad people on earth. Even a condemned criminal going to his place of execution says, "God, have mercy on me" before he dies. In front of God, even those who are facing the death penalty for their crimes resolve to become good again and to make a new start with hope. Why is it that, in so doing, they want to offer their best service to God, depend on Him, and be with Him? Why, in their innermost heart, do people willingly leave their parents, and brothers and sisters, wanting to be closest to God in order to share their personal concerns with Him? This is because God is true.

A true person should not just like people who like him. He should like even his enemies who would wish him dead. A true person should be someone that every person can entrust everything to and discuss everything with. He should be someone in whom people can place their hopes for everything.

While you were growing up, there was probably someone you hated. Is a person who hates another person a true person or false person? Surely, he is a false person. In this world, there are many false people.

The one who wishes to be a true person must balance both sides. If there are members of the Unification Church who really like the people who like them, yet actively hate those who hate them, are they a good group or a bad group? They are a bad group.

Therefore, let us like even those who hate us. If you like someone who hates you, he will also come to like you. If three times or more, you act kindly towards someone who hates you, he will bow his head. Just treat such a person nicely three times, and you will win him over. Try it yourself and see if I am right or not. People have a conscience which tells them whether they are right or wrong. (39-302, 1971.1.16)

Our country has many good people and there are many wonderful people in the world. There are also many people of renown. Then, who are the great people of Korea? When we speak of a great person in Korea, we usually talk about Admiral Yi Soon-shin. He is a great man. You all like Admiral Yi, but do you think he is a true person? We do not know, but we still admire him. However, I do not admire him so much. When I say this, you may think, "This is strange. Why is he like that? He does not like one of our national patriots! Is Rev. Moon a communist or a traitor to our people?" In answer, I will tell you why I do not admire Admiral Yi. All Koreans know Admiral Yi as a patriot, but Japanese people think of Admiral Yi as an enemy. This is mentioned even in Japanese history books. Admiral Yi is an enemy from the viewpoint of the Japanese and a patriot for Koreans. This is why I do not like him.

That which is true must be true everywhere: in Britain, in Germany, in America, in Korea, in Africa, and also in Japan. Something that is true has no enemies.

There is no one that dislikes something true. If something is liked from one side and disliked from the other, it cannot be perfectly true.

If Admiral Yi were a perfectly true person, Japanese and Koreans alike would honor him as a great man and true person. But looking from the standard of the true person, Admiral Yi is not a perfectly true person, although he might be a true person to a lesser degree. He is a true person in Korea, but not in Japan. I am sure there is no disagreement on this. Since I want to see a true person, I do not like someone who is less than a true person such as Admiral Yi.

Then in this world, what kind of person is a true person? As I said earlier, he is someone who is liked by both bad people and good people. If he is liked most by good people, should bad people hate him the most? He must be liked the most by bad people as well. Although there is a mixture of good people and bad people here, all people desire the best things. If we say that all people like something, we mean that not only good people but also bad people like it as well. So, if some people who are considered bad do not like a certain thing, it means that it is not a true thing. True things are those that should be liked the most not only by good people but by bad people as well. This is the definition of a true person. A true person is one whom bad people as well as good people like the most. Someone like this is a true person. (39-300, 1971.1.16)

2.2. The source of trueness

Being true is not limited to individuals. It applies even beyond the whole and seeks to make connections of value. Since trueness is liked and sought after by everyone, it must be everywhere. (63-88, 1972.10.8)

We have not gathered here for our individual purposes, but for the purpose of the whole. Thus, we should serve our family before ourselves, our own people before our family, our nation before our people, and our world before our nation. In addition, before we as individuals become true, our families must be true and, furthermore, our nations and the world must be true.

Human beings are engaged in the course of restoration where they as individuals cannot be the motivating source of all blessing. Then what is that motivating source? It is trueness. For human beings to realize their true selves, they must have a relationship with God, who is the source of all life, death, adversity, and blessing. Without making that relationship, they cannot attain their true selves as individuals.

Trueness must be centered on God. This is why trueness is realized when the decisive foundation is laid, upon which humankind can be brought into order and governed as a whole. You should know that without such a foundation trueness cannot be established. God is the source of trueness. Trueness is established because God exists. When God departs, so does trueness. Then, rath-

er than trueness, the origin of evil will emerge.

We can have true results only when there is trueness. In other words, God's desire can be fulfilled because God exists. Hence, concepts such as trueness and goodness are mainly established by God rather than by human beings.

From this point of view, we can understand that trueness is not something human beings can define in any way they please. In other words, trueness is not subject to the arbitrary management of fallen people. Rather, trueness is to govern fallen people. Therefore, we should always submit to that which is true. We should elevate trueness and meekly follow it.

Even looking at your daily reality or at your conscience, there is no way to deny that trueness is owned entirely by heaven. (24-315, 1969.9.14)

When we pray, we often say, "Our true God, our holy God, who is in heaven" just vaguely out of habit. However, until now, trueness has not existed in the genuine sense. Because it has not existed, its origin cannot be found in the history of humankind, but at some point beyond human history. It transcends history. In other words, since this origin has to be pursued in a place beyond our present circumstances, religion is not something through which one's faith is based on a single person as the central point.

Of course, there are people who see their religious founder as the standard of their faith. However, there are also people who transcend this point and pursue "trueness" by inviting God in. In light of this, we can say that throughout history many people have been unable to grasp the source of trueness either in the course of their lives or in the society around them. Any situation that only connects people among themselves cannot provide a source of trueness.

Trueness is the absolute standard. Hence, it is necessary that God, the Absolute Being or deity, make an appearance here. Why is this so? It is because, until now, there has been no true person on earth. Thus, the person who lives in pursuit of trueness cannot of himself be the motivating source of trueness. This motivating source has to be God. In religion or history, God inevitably appears when humankind's situation comes to the final and crucial crossroads. A definite need for the Absolute Being then arises.

Even when you seek the value of existence which is the final goal of philosophy or dig into the origin of existence which is the final goal of true knowledge, these pursuits will inevitably involve God, the transcendent being or Absolute Being. Why is this so? It is because without building a relationship with the Absolute Being, questions about the origin of knowledge or the value of existence cannot be answered. This is why people in serious situations have always sought to resolve matters through that which is true. We cannot deny such a fact.

Hence, human beings alone cannot be the source of trueness. God, the Absolute Being, must be involved here.

A religion that proclaims trueness without God is unthinkable. Human morality that emphasizes that which is true cannot deny God.

This is why Confucius said, "Those who follow heaven will prosper and those who go against heaven will perish." These are words centered on heaven. Heaven must certainly be involved. They are saying that prosperity, downfall, advance, and decline are not determined by people, but by heaven. Considering these things, since trueness cannot be attained without an originating point, the motivation for which comes from Heaven, the question arises, "Where is the true person among the people living on earth?"

Where is the place where trueness can dwell? With heaven as the origin, God would want to establish a place of trueness on earth. This is God's desire. So, the question is, "Where on earth can it reside?" It would stay in the vicinity of our daily life. This is why Jesus said, "The Kingdom of God is in the midst of you." The Kingdom of Heaven, which is the true nation, is in the mind. It has secured its place in a deep, deep valley where there is no selfishness.

Our mind's fundamental aspects are the intellect, emotion and will. Among these, where is the kingdom going to dwell? Which is most fundamental among the intellect, emotion and will? It is neither the will nor the intellect. It is the emotion.

If you have something most precious to you, where would you want to keep it? You would want to keep it in a place that only you know, a place where no one else can touch or interfere with it. It would be a place where only you can handle it. Where is that place? It is in the deepest part of your heart. You bury it deep in your heart and, thus, you are led to say, "It is safe here; I can relax." In other words, you put it in a place similar to a chest where people commonly keep valuables. From this point of view, the place where trueness can stay is the deepest part of your heart. (24-317, 1969.9.14)

Section 3. The Standard Measure of Truth

A true heart does not change. Without it, a standard cannot be set and things cannot be evaluated by saying, "It is this way" or "It is that way." You will not have the root that makes it possible to receive official approval according to the absolute standard.

Those beings that are evaluated as falling short of the standard will disappear. Units of measure, as in the metric system, have a standard and from that standard, something can be gauged as accurate or not. When an issue arises, it can be measured against the standard and, if it fits exactly, all the objections to it throughout the ages will fall away. (186-65, 1989.1.29)

There is neither revolution nor change in love. Nothing that changes is precious. A diamond is treated as a treasure because its hardness does not change. Gold is precious because it has the peculiar prestige of its unchanging gold color. Pearls are

also precious because their harmonious and elegant color does not diminish. Why is it that the value of these precious treasures is based on their unchanging attributes? It is because they can serve as the standards by which the value of the existence of all things in the universe can be compared.

Then, among the standards of value that can measure the value of everything in the universe, which would be the highest? This is the issue. Would it be gold or diamonds? It is unchanging love, unbreakable love. It looks breakable, but it cannot be broken. It looks arbitrarily controllable, but it cannot be controlled just as one pleases. We are included in it. Rather than measuring it, we are measured by it.

In this universe, what would be the measure or standard measure that could be the highest cause among causes? It is neither the standard measurement of some measuring device nor some thing that is unchanging. Neither God nor human beings can change its standard. What is eternal and unchanging, has the value of treasure, can transcend night and day, geographical regions, and distances everywhere, whether it is at the end of the earth, in hell or in the heavenly world, and becomes the absolute standard of measurement and comparison?

The Earth has a zero point for latitude and longitude. The Greenwich Observatory in England serves as the zero point. You cannot change it no matter how hard you may try. We need such a standard. Without it, an orderly world will not come about.

What is the original standard – the one standard that God and the whole of His creation can follow – that all measurable beings in this universe want to use to determine their relative differences and positions? It is not based on things like money, gold bricks or diamonds. These God can make. God can control them on His own as He wishes.

We think that God can, of course, create love as well, but possessing this love is impossible alone. It takes two to possess love. As for love, even God cannot find it alone. What is the standard, the standard measure? What is the standard that can measure everything not just in the world of existence but also in the eternal world? What is the standard measure of which there is absolutely only one? These are the fundamental questions. The answer is love. Love is not affected by the change of seasons through spring, summer, fall and winter. (137-235, 1986.1.3)

There are measures for distances. If the centimeter is the unit of measurement, it is the one and absolute standard. If we compare something to it and it matches, then it is accurate and true. A person may think he is the best, but if he does not match with the original form, he will fail to make the grade.

One centimeter equals ten millimeters. In this framework, one millimeter is absolute. Ten make one centimeter and one hundred make one decimeter. This is how the units relate. Only in this way are they connected and able to provide a common and universal standard

of measure.

There is something like this in the human world. For the human world to be unified there must be a form or shape in which mind and body have become one without conflict based on a principled standard, a form that says it has to be an absolute way. (128-78, 1983.6.5)

If we agree to use the metric system, then however long something may be – one meter, one hundred meters, or more – there will be no problem. The basic unit making up a meter is one millimeter. Since one millimeter is so small, we usually use one centimeter. No matter how large a measure may be, it must be accurately based on the smaller one millimeter unit. If all measures correspond and everything can be measured based on the standard millimeter, we can use it as a world standard. A millimeter in America, a millimeter in Korea, and a millimeter in Britain are all the same. They are unchanging. This is truth.

What is truth? It is trueness. What is this quality of being true? That which stands in a place beyond which it cannot be elevated is called true. We have someone here with a doctorate in physics. Studying physics requires that you know all the movements of the natural world. These movements are not vague in their direction.

How big is the Earth? As this giant Earth annually orbits the sun, there is not even a minute's deviation. It exactly fits a formula without an error of even one second. Any gap would be catastrophic because the orbit would become either continuously smaller and smaller or larger and larger and, then, the land and the sea would be fractured. The Earth has been moving and functioning in accordance with a universal standard without a problem during its estimated age of four-and-one-half billion years. A unit of measurement based on the Principle, constituting a formula we can call the universal principle, is required. In the same sense, what constitutes the quality of being true? Something true fits with not just one thing but numerous things.

Twenty-four karat gold is true gold. There is no such thing as twenty-five karat or twenty-six karat gold, is there? Something true stands in the center at a place where it can establish its balance; it reverts to the most basic unit and meets the horizontal plane. If something deviates from this vertical standard, it would not be true.

Twenty-four karat gold forms a straight line. It is because it stands within such a standard that we say that twenty-four karat gold is true. It fits whether it is placed against a perpendicular or vertical standard. It stands parallel to the vertical of the universe and, also, forms a line parallel to the horizontal of the universe.

If you look at the tremendous motion within the universe, there is nothing vague about its direction. Everything is moving according to laws. Subject and object partners always move in perpendicular relationships.

Whatever loses that perpendicularity will be blown away. It will flow away

and be shattered. Only when perpendicularity firmly takes its position can it secure its place in the spatial world and be the foundation for its continued existence. This must be quite difficult to understand.

What is the yardstick for human beings? They also need to have a yardstick. Mathematical problems are solved based on numerical standards shared commonly throughout the world. When a common basis that has passed a certain standard stands on the world stage, it is called the truth.

What is contained within the truth? Within the truth there are always the four directions of east, west, north and south. With the truth there is always the related environment. Then, does the environment come first or does the truth itself come first? This is the issue. The environment comes first.

How about human beings? The question is, "What kind of person is a true person?" The true person must be the vertical and horizontal standard. He should be the standard of whom it can be said, "He is accurate and true, both vertically and horizontally, and is free of distortion."

According to universal law, front and back, left and right, and above and below become identical only when the vertical and horizontal are aligned. When something fits to the east, west, north, and south, the earthly world, and the spirit world, it is said to be true. On the other hand, no matter how large something is meant to be, if it is found to be oversized when measured in millimeters, even by less than one-half of one millimeter, it will be rejected. It is incomplete and should go into the trash can. There should be some standard like this. We need such a standard of measurement. (180-14, 1988.8.20)

Section 4. Trueness and the True Person

What do we mean when we say something is true? Is it round, angular, or flat and wide? How can we define it? What is the basis for a definition of the word? This is the question. We say "true person" but what kind of person is a true person? A true person also has eyes, a nose, a mouth and a body.

Then, is trueness limited to some location or does it transcend location? It transcends. Why does it have to go over such limits? What does this mean? We can know that this must be something that can represent and measure everything.

Mathematics talks about formulas and physics talks about axioms and definitions, but what are they? Is a formula something small?

The units of a formula are simple, but a formula should have an essential character against which everything can be evaluated. Only then will the standard of the formula or unit of measurement be established. You should know this. If something is off, it will not fit with this vast universe.

With measurement there are systems like the decimal system and the duodecimal system. Their units are small, but

their forms fit everything. Otherwise, they would not work. The whole thing won't work. If they were to fit only some areas and not all, they would not work. All existence could not be perpetuated. You should know this.

It is the same in the human world. Who is the true person? In life, there should be something like a scale or yardstick and one should give it power to expand to the world. It will expand so that everything can be balanced. We are led to say that human life, a person's course of life, needs such a public path. (133-9, 1984.7.1)

There are billions of people alive in the world today. How many ancestors who lived and died here on earth do these people alive today have? Have you ever thought about this? At least several hundred or several thousand times as many people as those currently living must have lived and died. Among them, how many true people would there have been of the kind humankind longs to see? That which is true is always true whether a thousand years ago or now.

When we say pure gold, we mean twenty-four karat gold. It does not change according to space or time. It does not change depending on its position. It does not change in any rapidly changing environment whether in the hands of a king or in the hands of a scoundrel. Thus, we call the color of gold a true color. People like the color of gold. What does light resemble? It resembles the color of gold. Bright light is close to the color of gold. Sunlight is also gold. Evening glow is even more so.

In a similar vein, the question is whether or not there is a true man among us who has a color that will not change for hundreds of millions of years. Is there such a true woman? What do you think?

The religious world sees human beings as fallen. Of course, there are religions with different backgrounds, but they are all looking for a new person of value through whom to receive salvation. What does this mean? It means that since they have not attained true original personhood, the true original human image, they are always seeking it. This is the same whether it is a thousand years ago, hundreds of thousands of years ago, or in the present day. Even in the future, people are bound to seek it in any environment or age where humanity exists.

You, also, are looking for that true person. You are looking for a true man and a true woman. All men and women who have lived in history are bound to stake their lives on this and think about it. This is why, when you live in a certain village, you want to be the best true person in that village. (177-99, 1988.5.17)

Section 5. What Is a True Parent?

5.1. The two tablets of stone and True Parents

When God led the Israelites out of Egypt there was a pillar of fire and a pillar of cloud. The pillar of cloud led them during the day and the pillar of fire led

them at night. What did they signify? They represented a man and a woman and showed, symbolically, that in the Last Days parents would come and that the Israelites would serve them. Those who did not follow the pillar of fire and pillar of cloud would all perish. The Israelites wandered around aimlessly in the wilderness for forty years. Out of concern that they would perish, God called Moses to Mount Sinai. He had him fast for forty days and gave him two tablets of stone. They symbolized Adam and Eve – that is, True Parents. Why were the two tablets of stone placed in the Ark of the Covenant? The two tablets of stone symbolized Adam and Eve as the central figures who could complete the work of God's will. This is why they were placed in the Ark of the Covenant. (134-172, 1985.4.7)

What is our hope? God is the vertical parent, and Adam and Eve, the horizontal parents. We should be the sons and daughters who can receive love at the point where the vertical and horizontal parents can be one and rejoice. However, to our sorrow, this has not come about. We all have the passionate desire to receive such love. This is what religion is all about.

Have there been parents on earth that could become one with the vertical God on the horizontal plane and give out their love? There have not. Since the first human ancestors fell, they became false parents. Since Adam and Eve became false parents, there could not have been such good parents. This is why True Parents must come. True Parents must appear in history.

Who is the one who represents this historic mission? He is the one called the Savior and the Messiah. As one who saves, what does he save? He does not save the body, but fulfills the hope of ideal love for us.

Then, what does he have to do? What kind of person does the Messiah have to be in order to fulfill our hopes? Surely, he has to come as the True Parent. The Messiah must come as the True Parent. Christianity believes in Jesus as the Messiah and Savior. What does he have to do in order to come as the True Parent? He cannot do it alone. He must come as a man representing the True Parent.

Numerous religions have been looking until now for this one man. We can say that the Confucian teaching speaks of searching for a man who lives a good life and Buddhist teachings speak of seeking for a man who is attuned to the spirit world.

Then, what is Christianity? It teaches us to become God's son and make a loving family. Christianity is the religion that has appeared with more substantial content. This is why Jesus said that he was the only begotten son of God.

When the only begotten son comes, it would be a disaster if he were to live alone. There has to be an only begotten daughter. The only begotten daughter must be found and, centering on God, the only begotten son and daughter should marry each other when their mutual attraction matures. This way, God should rejoice as the vertical parent

and the only begotten son and daughter must become the bride and bridegroom who can rejoice as the horizontal parents and give birth to children on earth. Only then will the tribe begin to expand.

So, there was something Jesus most needed to have, even if it meant abandoning the nation of Israel and Judaism. What was that? It was a woman. A man should not be without a woman. It is because Jesus did not fulfill this purpose that towards the end of his life, he said he was the bridegroom and that his followers were the bride. This is why Christians have been struggling to be brides while waiting for the bridegroom, Jesus, for two thousand years. What is the standard? It is the Messiah who fits into the position of the True Parent. This is the feast of the Lamb. (58-218, 1972.6.11)

5.2. The definition of True Parents

Who are the True Parents about whom the Unification Church speaks? This is the question. What would have happened had Adam and Eve not fallen? Without the Fall, God would have become the vertical love and Adam and Eve, God's body. They are like God's body. God is like the bone, and Adam and Eve are like the body. God also has mind and body.

God becomes the internal parent in the internal position and Adam and Eve, the external parents in the external position. The internal parent and external parents must become one through love. God and human beings come together in love and, thus, the True Parents who are perfect come into being. Without their union in love, people cannot become perfect.

Who are they? They are our original ancestors, the original people created by God. We are born from such people. We should be born from people who have such divine nature. This is how we attain both God's divine characteristics and our parents' human characteristics.

Then, how does the perfection of Adam and Eve come about? Perfection comes when they are tied to God's love, but not unless they have such ties. The root of our ancestors' lineage brings God's vertical love and horizontal, physical love together at one point. This is where the lineage of our ancestors lies. All people come into being from there.

But the Fall separated man's love, woman's love and God's love. Through the Fall, man's love, woman's love and God's love failed to bond together. Without the Fall, they would have bonded together automatically. A man and a woman automatically bond through love. Why do a man and a woman want to be one? It is because of love. What would they want to do after becoming one in love? They would want to receive God's blessing. This is their purpose. (184-71, 1988.11.13)

When we look at the providential ages, we see that the providence of restoration is fulfilled in the Last Days. The nearer the Last Days approach, the closer we come to the age where the purpose of religion is realized. Ultimately, the time when the purpose of religion can

be realized is the time when the Parents appear.

Those parents are the True Parents. Who are the True Parents? That is the question. As our Principle teaches, the ones called True Parents are the parents who have realized the ideal of oneness centering on God's love. They have fulfilled their responsibility after passing through the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle, that is, the realm of indirect dominion, and into the realm of direct dominion. They are the parents who for the first time in history established the ideal of oneness based on the love between God and man. God's ideal of love has finally begun to settle on earth through the family of the True Parents.

The Fall shattered this ideal of the True Parents. Adam and Eve, with the mission to fulfill their responsibilities, should have built a bridge from the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle – that is, the realm of indirect dominion – to the realm of direct dominion, and completed it. Yet, they failed to do so.

Through this, Satan began to invade the realm of indirect dominion. You must know this. Without knowing it, you will not be able to register in the other world. (143-75, 1986.3.16)

What on earth are true parents? They are the starting point from which true, ideal love can finally spark following the creation of the universe. This is why we call them true parents. Then, what kind of children should true parents have? True children. What kind of children are true children? They are the sons and daughters who have enough internal and external beauty to receive the first love of the true parents. (125-164, 1983.3.20)

What is the meaning of the term True Parents that we use in the Unification Church? God has appointed True Parents. What does this mean? It means that God's love has finally settled in the human world. It means that True Parents are the starting point. (130-111, 1984.1.1)

Who are the True Parents? As Adam and Eve were to become absolutely one based on the love whose core is God's love, they were to be our first ancestors at the beginning. You need to know this clearly. Without knowing the True Parents, you will not be able to know true children. (135-160, 1985.11.12)

What is the philosophy that will be the core of history, the core of the age, and the core of the future? In other words, what would be the center of a global philosophy that can be the fruit of history, the center of the age, and the origin of the future? This is a true man and a true woman.

Then, what would be a true man and woman's vision for daily life? It is to live meaningfully for the sake of the world. Their loving each other is for the sake of the world and their having sons and daughters is to provide the motivation for loving the world more. This is the philosophy we are upholding. I do not know if you understand such things

in detail, but from my point of view, whether we are judging from the entire horizontal, three-dimensional world or judging from all of vertical world history, history must, by all means, be elucidated based on this standard. This is an automatic conclusion. (25-145, 1969.10.3)

Where does the origin of the Fall lie? It started with Adam and Eve, that is, with one set of parents. All problems have arisen due to Adam and Eve falling and becoming false parents. Because of this, the problems of the heart, lineage, character, language and daily life have emerged, as have the problems of the nation and the world.

Then, where does the true standard begin that can gather them all up together at once? It does not happen within the domain of some tribe, society, or nation. It is absolutely impossible even within the global domain. Since the origin of all problems lay with the false parents, this can be restored only through a connection with True Parents. Oneness with God's heart can be achieved only through True Parents.

Through True Parents, the original lineage and original character will begin. Through True Parents, language will return to its original point. Through True Parents, our daily life will return to its original form. Through True Parents, the original nation will be established and the original world will be realized.

Then, what is the core source that encapsulates this entire whole? It is the True Parents. True Parents as one entity determine everything. This is why we must receive their entire philosophy. Without receiving their heart, their character, their view of daily life, their view of the nation, and their world view – all these things – we will not be able to stand in the central position. (28-247, 1970.1.22)

Without True Parents, there would be no education or foundation for daily life. We should become completely one with True Parents. We should be able to say, "True Parents' daily life is my daily life, True Parents' ideology is my ideology, True Parents' job is my job, and True Parents' domain of love is my domain of love." Is that what you are doing? (44-142, 1971.5.6)

5.3. True Parents are the embodiment of good character

Has there been a saint in our history who said, "Follow my example because, as a representative of all people in history, my mind and body have ceased to fight and have achieved complete unity"?

Which is more important, the body or the mind? Both mind and body are important, but what is even more important is the unity of my body and mind. This is very important. If you have not achieved this, even though the world may be unified, you will have nothing to do with the world. (142-324, 1986.3.14)

Now your body and mind go different ways. Then, when will they become one? In the course of human history until now, no one who could claim to

have unified his warring body and mind has ever appeared.

Even a person such as Paul lamented, saying, "…but I see in my members another law at war with the law of my mind and making me captive to the law of sin which dwells in my members. Wretched man that I am! Who will deliver me from this body of death? Thanks be to God through Jesus Christ our Lord!" He saw things correctly. We are liberated through God's love that is in Jesus Christ our Lord. (164-41, 1987.5.3)

What is the reason our mind and body have failed to become one? What kind of person is God the Father? He is the vertical pendulum of love that forms the fundamental core of the universe. When this pendulum tries to come down to earth, God alone cannot make it happen. Even with God, in bringing down love, there needs to be a force from the horizontal line that can pull this standard of love down.

When there is a strong electric charge, when a negative charge comes close to the earth, lightning will strike nearby. It must come down. Even if it is high up, it must come down. Likewise, if a high love is to come down, a negatively-charged love must arise on earth first. If a negatively-charged love occurs first, a positively-charged love is bound to emerge automatically. This works in pairs.

In the world of interaction, there are always responses and reactions. Things respond to one another, and they act and react to one another. Ordinary people say that a reaction opposes an incoming force, but this is not the case. A reaction protects the entities that are engaged in mutual response. Only in this way is everything to do with good and evil logically resolved. Without discovering the logic that evil must be embraced by goodness, there is no way of guiding the history of confrontation between good and evil.

Through what place does God come? Vertical love must be established. In order for that vertical love to have vertical value, the horizontal foundation must be laid.

This is also the case with men and women. When they are immature, they know nothing; but when they grow up, women try to possess the world and so do men. What happens when they try to possess the world this way? They should not go this way. Where should they meet? They should meet when they have grown up, when they are mature. To do this, they must advance to the point where they can claim the world as their own.

They say they will conquer the world, but they cannot conquer it with their own strength. They cannot do it without love. It is because the power of love exists that men and women have the ideal and dream to conquer the world. You want to make the whole world yours, don't you? Furthermore, if there is heaven, if the invisible world exists, you even want to make this invisible, infinite world yours. Why is this so? Because you have a vertical desire and a horizontal desire. Your horizontal desire seeks to make the entire earth, the horizontal world, your

own; and your vertical desire seeks to make the universe your own. Your body is limited. It cannot go beyond the limits of the earth, but the vertical world can grow bigger without any limit.

In view of this, the father who can represent the mind is God and the father who can represent the body is the first ancestor of unfallen true love.

The Unification Church is now speaking of True Parents after having uncovered these facts that remained hidden throughout the ages. In accordance with the original view of the ideal of creation, the horizontal seat of the True Parents is the seat of God's son and daughter. In other words, it is the seat of Adam and Eve. Then, what about God? If those who are like the body are Adam and Eve, the one who is in the seat of the father, who is like the vertical mind, is God.

How do God, who is like the mind, and a person, who is like the body, become one? Not through power, knowledge or political might, but through love.

We as individuals were born to resemble the original model where our mind-like character and body-like character can be one. When we seek to find the fundamental core, there should be the body-like father and the mind-like father. There, the seat of the mind-like father is God's seat, and that of the body-like father is for the first ancestors of humankind.

Then, where will the first ancestors and God, the father who is like the mind, becomes one? Where? They must become one through true love, at the core, the center of the sphere of love. Men and women seek each other centering on the vertical. (177-337, 1988.5.22)

Section 6. The Meaning of the Words True Parents

6.1. The words True Parents are precious

You should know how important and how precious the words True Parents are. You have an obligation to believe in True Parents even if you may not believe in your nation and the president, your teachers, your parents, or your brothers and sisters. You should know that the concept of True Parents contains the idea of the salvation of hell and the evil world of Satan.

When you are in an unavoidable place of death in the satanic world and your parents then become the strength to shield you against death, and this is acknowledged by heaven and by history, how proud you will be! True Parents are vouched for by God and history. You should know how the words True Parents came into being.

I did not start this work in order to become the True Parent. I was forced to come forward and do this because it could not be done without me. (116-113, 1981.12.27)

6.2. True Parents are our source of enormous pride

So far, what has been the position of our generation? Even if the ancestors of millions of generations were to all res-

urrect and sing about the glory of resurrection, neither the song nor the glory would be removed from the domain of the Fall.

What about the words True Parents that are spoken in the Unification Church? Although your current situation may be miserable, you should know that the term True Parents taught about in the Unification Church today is a most honored term. Its value is greater than the songs of praise of hundreds of millions of ancestors or of being in a glorious place of earthly victory and the liberation of all people.

You should know that meeting with the True Parents will lead you along the path to meet God, and meeting with the Unification Church will lead you along the path whereby God's nation and the homeland desired by the True Parents can be found in the near future.

Until now, human beings have been living in nations with different cultural heritages and borders, claiming them as their homelands. Their ancestors have lived there in the past, people are living there now, and their descendants will also live there. All of them, however, are surely in the fallen domain.

We should leave and kick away this fallen domain, and find the homeland of love where we can proudly sing of today's triumph together with our ancestors and our tribes before our future descendants.

In the homeland of love, if we can have loving parents and, moreover, attend God as the center of that homeland, there will be no place of higher glory. (138-105, 1986.1.19)

The Messiah is in the position of Adam who has perfected God's love and thus he comes with the qualification of the original father. Hence, based on the father who then chooses a mother, and on a foundation based on God's original love, the rights of ownership of the individual, family, tribe, people, and nation must first belong to the Messiah through true love. Rights of ownership can then accrue to nations, citizens, families and individuals.

Thus, if the original love of the Messiah had been established from the individual to the nation, and its waves had reached Rome and the world, there would be no need today of a philosophy heralding the Second Advent.

From this point of view, is America a country belonging to the realm of God's love? No! There is no country on earth that has passed through such a course. Countless churches in the Christian sphere do not come under the ownership coinciding with God's principle of love. They absolutely do not. The heavenly kingdom does not exist on earth. When we consider this, the words True Parents are magnificent! Only these words can be the basis for piercing through the fallen domain of the satanic world and going up.

You should be grateful for the appearance of the words True Parents. You can be thankful for them even after hearing them tens of thousands of times. (129-193, 1983.11.5)

6.3. The words True Parents are amazing words

Because of the Fall of the first ancestors, we have lost our hometown. We have also lost our nation and the world. Furthermore, we have lost God and even God's love. The beginning point through which we can regain all these vast and remarkable things is the True Parents.

What is the purpose of the providence God has been pursuing in history until now? It is True Parents' standard. For what has humankind been going through the history of indemnity since the Fall? It was in order to find True Parents. This is the reason countless Christians have been longing for the day of hope and waiting for the day of the Second Coming. This is also the reason that countless religions are all longing for this day. In view of this, True Parents' birth is a fearsome and amazing event.

You like going to your hometown because your parents and brothers and sisters are there. You miss your hometown because it is where the love that is connected with your parents is found. It is the nation that embraces such a hometown, the nation where such love of hometown can be connected. People call this nation their homeland. In general, this is what we call a homeland.

So, from the standpoint of original love, we have had neither a hometown nor a homeland, neither in the past nor in the present. Even if it exists, it is related to evil and has nothing to do with us. It has nothing to do with the quality of trueness. (67-226, 1973.6.27)

The words True Parents that we use in the Unification Church are amazing. Whereas the false parents fell through satanic love, True Parents rise through God's love. Thus, they march toward the world of love. Then, why do we try to find this love? Love is a great thing. In love, all are eternally equal. If you just hear the word love, you will be qualified at once to participate in any occasion no matter how lofty. (144-241, 1986.4.25)

The Unification Church speaks about True Parents. These are amazing words. Who are the True Parents? Since false parents appeared, True Parents must appear. What do True Parents have to do? They must rectify the tainted lineage that forms the root of the satanic world, turn the resulting deviated life around, and correctly reopen the path of love that has gone the wrong way. (169-37, 1987.10.4)

Although I am not handsome, I have an unchanging hope and that is to pursue God's will. The standard of that ideal purpose and the point at which it is achieved is the True Parents. Then, what is the fulfillment of God's will? What is the completion of the ideal of creation? For Adam and Eve to realize the ideal of love and stand as parents in the realm of direct dominion is the ideal standard. This is where God's will is accomplished.

You should know how remarkable it is that I have come to this earth with the name of the True Parent.

The words True Parents! These words are the most blessed of all words in the

world. For fallen people, the words True Parents are words of the highest value, higher than finding their nation or even the world after losing it. These words are more precious than anything in heaven and earth. (127-220, 1983.5.8)

6.4. The words True Parents are fearsome words

What term expresses the most fearsome teaching of the Unification Church? It is the term True Parents. These are words feared by both God and Satan. Since we human beings are in the fallen domain, those who are following the True Parents are judged by their words.

It would be better if they had not appeared, but since they are here, the judgment has to be made and God listens to them. Why then does Satan fear the words True Parents? It is because when people believe and follow these words, everything Satan has will be destroyed and brought to ruin. These are words he intensely fears. Satan always tries to block the way of the True Parents and longs to see their corruption and downfall. So the question is how much you will believe and follow in going this way.

If you are standing in such a cutting-edge position, you should take each step and do each deed with discernment while gaining strong inspiration from more than a thousand years' worth of devoted effort. (65-276, 1973.1.1)

I am well aware of the fearsome nature of the name True Parents. I have not followed my path in life in order to find tranquility, but have been fighting until now in order to complete the mission connected with Your will. Looking back, there have been many incidents and many occasions when I have been unfairly treated. Yet, since I, as a shameful person, know that these do not compare with Your hidden circumstances and Your feeling of being treated unfairly, I cannot kneel down and show You my tears. Please understand my heart that feels such things and open the doors of the heavenly world and earthly world as of today! (134-112, 1985.2.25)

Who are True Parents? The words True Parents are not simple words. They are the most fearsome words. You do not know how fearsome they are. This one term, True Parents, controls the direction of history. Until now, untold numbers of patriots have walked the path of sacrifice in order to find and establish these words. The name that is established with hope through continuous bloody struggles and desperate cries is the holy name of True Parents.

When True Parents come, true children should also come. Have you become true children? Think about this. That which is true does not change in the past, in the present, or in the future. (33-109, 1970.8.9)

CHAPTER TWO

The Messiah and the True Parents

Section 1. History and the True Parents

1.1. The Fall and the True Parents

Today, the True Parents live in the same world with us. Sons and daughters of the True Parents live on this earth and so do the sons and daughters of fallen parents. Originally, all people should have become God's beloved sons and daughters through the flesh and bloodline of true parents, but they became fallen sons and daughters due to the Fall. The Lord and Savior must, therefore, again come as a parent to resolve the wrongdoings of our first human ancestors.

When the Lord comes, he works to restore the first son, a son who has already been born like the child by a concubine, one whose lineage changed. He should have inherited God's lineage based on original love, but instead he inherited a different bloodline through the Fall. Yet, even though his lineage has changed, God cannot abandon him.

He is like the child by a concubine, a wild olive tree. The devil dominates the orchard of wild olive trees, and therefore God must work to restore these wild olive trees and make them His own. He cannot do it by force, or with guns and knives. Rather, God creates an environment where He receives contemptuous treatment and is so beaten that He can reclaim the wild olive orchard piece by piece through voluntary surrender.

Christianity has made unknown sacrifices in the course to establish its current worldwide foundation. The pitiable screams of those who were constantly sacrificed and offered on the altar of martyrdom permeate Christian history; they have been heard in every corner of the world. We should know that this bloody altar still exists; the historical sorrow is right in front of our eyes. We have the solemn, historical task to resolve this sorrow. We must liberate God and liberate Christianity. (210-360, 1990.12.27)

What is the Fall? The devil, through the Fall, sowed the seeds of false love, false life and false lineage. People inherited love, life and the bloodline from their ancestors. All individuals are the fruit of the love, life and lineage that they inherited from their ancestors. This means that people have inherited Satan's love, Satan's life and Satan's blood. They stand in the position of God's enemy. Without their shaking off Satan's love, Satan's life and Satan's blood, and throwing them away, peace on earth cannot come.

For this reason, I have come forward with the ideal of True Parents. What are True Parents doing? They are fighting to wipe away all of the false love and devilish elements that oppose peace. True Parents are fighting to separate individuals, families, tribes, ethnic peoples and nations from these elements. (217-185, 1991.5.27)

1.2. The Desire of History

The Unification Church uses the term True Parents. When we look into the history of the fallen world, we realize that fallen parents were born into this world and built the fallen world.

We live in a world connected to false parents. It has nothing to do with the ideal world God and the True Parents envisioned. Many people have come and gone throughout the long history of this world, but there has been no one who could proudly say to the universe, "Ah! I am happy I was born as a human being and I have succeeded in all aspects of being human." Hence, human history has been a sea of suffering and a history of sorrow, war and disease. This is the result of the Fall.

What is our desire? We want to know how to become perfect people. We want to know where we can find and raise ourselves as people who can be perfect before God, assuming God exists, and before the Absolute Being, assuming the Absolute Being exists. People have searched and searched through philosophy and religion, but they have failed to find the solution and have reached the point of giving up. This is situation in the world today. (137-81, 1985.12.24)

Until now, all people have harbored the historical hope to receive and attend the True Parents. God founded the nation of Israel and Judaism so that they could receive the Messiah. The Messiah is the True Parent. God created Christianity and the Christian culture to receive the Lord at the Second Coming. The returning Lord is the True Parent who comes as the third Adam. When the time comes for the True Parents' arrival, all nations in the world will begin to form relationships like brothers and sisters. At the end the Second World War, the victorious nations liberated the nations that were defeated. History, up until this point, had never witnessed this kind of unusual phenomenon. History has been seeking a way to encounter the True Parents. Religions have gone through their course in order to meet the True Parents. Furthermore, the world and the nations are following a course to find the True Parents. They are all walking down paths that will prepare the way for the True Parents. (51-354, 1971.12.5)

1.3. History and the True Parents

Religions have been striving to create one true son. God has toiled to find one true son. It is interesting that there were no women among the founders of religions. Men founded all of them. God has been connecting to all the religions to create one true son. God has been looking for a son who will be the central figure

who will rise up through one, two, three, a hundred stages, to take the final baton and determine victory or defeat. This has been our history. (41-27, 1971.2.12)

What does God want to do by creating religions? God did not create religions to make a big global patchwork. The purpose is simple. Religion should find one person who can share true love with God. God created everything needed for an environment of love, but He still needs to find one person to be His partner in love. (173-33, 1988.2.1)

God's history of restoration is the history to create the True Parents. Therefore, from the time of Cain and Abel until today, Heaven has directed the providence in order to internally restore True Parents. Whoever opposes or interferes with this fundamental providence to re-create the True Parents will find themselves abandoned in front of the heavenly way and they will inevitably perish. (9-10, 1960.3.27)

What does it mean to be dealing with history? We can liberate God only when we become one with the True Parents and wipe away all of Satan's conditions for accusation. Without liquidating Satan's conditions, it is impossible to enter into the realm of ownership within God's heart. Your parents, you, and all things of creation are not in their proper place along the horizontal plane through which they can be determined as belonging to God. This must be restored through indemnification. (137-268, 1986.1.3)

1.4. The providence of restoration has sought the True Parents throughout its history

Who are the True Parents who must appear on this earth representing God's will? They are the ones who must prevail over the satanic world in order to rule over all things; they are to destroy Satan who dominates the human world. They must confront the spirit world in order to gain the absolute position from which to rule the numerous people in that world. This is the mission of True Parents. God has been paving the way to send True Parents in order to restore the world where all things and all people are one with God.

For True Parents to appear, there must be true sons and daughters, and in order for true sons and daughters to appear, there must be true servants. This is why when we look at the course of God's history of restoration, we can see that God has been working so that we can receive the day of true parents after we have gone through the servant's age and the children's age. Furthermore, those in the spirit world have been helping as we pass through and restore the age of the servant, the age of the adopted son, and the age of the children, and move up to the age of the parents.

True Parents could not come to the earth until a global foundation beyond the standard of a nation had been laid externally. After the two thousand year period of providential history from Noah to Abraham, God had Jacob finally lay the foundation to establish the people of

Israel. Then He had this people form a nation. God toiled through many a historical course to bring this to fruition.

To achieve this, someone on behalf of God must be victorious over Satan, both as an individual and as an adopted son. Moreover, as a child of direct lineage, he must fight with the satanic world and win over it for God. Otherwise, no one can receive True Parents. This is why providential history has gone through a long course, from the Old Testament Age, through the New Testament Age, to the present day. Through restoring the position of the servant and the position of the adopted son, God restored the position of the child of direct lineage. In doing so, He laid the foundation for victory. Afterwards, God's purpose for then sending the Messiah to this earth was to establish the position of True Parents.

Due to the disbelief of the Israelites, the foundation of the servant and the foundation of the adopted son that God had prepared for four thousand years crumbled. Hence, Jesus, who came two thousand years ago, had to fight and gain victory as a servant and as an adopted son, and then become the son of direct lineage. We know that this was Jesus' course. God's had two purposes in sending Jesus: he should have passed through the position of the adopted son and also the position of the son of direct lineage in order to establish the position of True Parents based on the people of Israel. This was the mission Jesus came to this earth to fulfill. But because of Jesus' death on the cross, God could not lay the victorious foundation on the level of the whole. For that reason, through True Parents God has been pioneering the realization of His ideal centering on the spirit world.

God, until now, was unable to secure the positions of the individual, family, people and nation. For this He has been going a long roundabout way in establishing the individual, family, people, and nation that relate to heaven's will.

In this global age, God will by all means send the Lord, His promised bridegroom, who will choose his bride and lay the foundation for true victory. God has fought for six thousand years to establish the True Parents in the position determined by the original purpose of creation. Hence, it is no exaggeration to say that the six-thousand-year history of the providence of restoration has been a history to find the True Parents. True Parents represent the entire six thousand years of providential history. Now we know that the failure to find True Parents has been the great sorrow, pain, and tragedy of all humankind.

Accordingly, human history has been a history of restoring true parents. Without restoring true parents, there can be no true children; and without establishing true children, there can be no true family, true tribe, true ethnic people, nation, world or cosmos. God has been working hard for six thousand long years to establish this standard.

Jesus, who came two thousand years ago, was the first person to come to this earth in the glory of the true parent. But for Jesus to appear as the true parent, that is, for Jesus to stand as the fruit of

history which the true parent is, he had to carry out not only the mission of the son but also the mission of the parent. Gaining victory in just one dimension was not enough. On this earth, Jesus had to physically go through the course of restoring the position of the son. Spiritually, he had to go through the course of restoring the position of the parent. He had thus to fulfill his responsibility in both positions and establish the starting point of becoming one with God. Only then would this starting point have finally become both the individual and family foundations for Israel. If this foundation for Israel had been established based on the people and the nation, the standard of the True Parents would also have been established, both physically and spiritually. Unfortunately, the disbelief of the people of Israel toward Jesus made it impossible.

In accordance with the original plan originating the Principle of Creation, True Parents are to be physically and spiritually blessed by God. But Jesus was unable to become the true parent due to the disbelief of the people of Israel. Even though he is in the spirit world, Jesus has been preparing the foundation for the attendance of True Parents. What does this mean? The Lord at the Second Advent should restore the positions of spiritual and physical parents. Knowing this, Jesus has been working in the spirit world for the past two thousand years, laying the foundation upon which the returning Lord can avoid persecution and abuse from the spirit world. Jesus laid the spiritual foundation on the levels of the society, nation, and world. Since Jesus has been working in the spirit world rather than on earth, it is as their spiritual parent that Christians have been relating with Jesus.

The Lord, on his return to this earth, must inherit from Jesus the individual, family, national and worldwide spiritual foundations that Jesus has built in the spirit world, just as Jesus inherited all the blessing from John the Baptist. Without going this way, he cannot establish the conditions necessary to become the True Parent on earth.

The basic principle here is to establish on earth the spiritual standard of inheritance. If, as Jesus handed down the spiritual foundation to the returning Lord, the Christians on earth had become one with the returning Lord, the standard of inheritance would have been established on earth. However, as Christians so far have failed to establish such a standard, the spiritual foundation of victory could not be transferred to the coming True Parents in its entirety. Consequently, the returning True Parents have had to go through a history of struggle to again restore both the spiritual and physical standards of inheritance.

God worked for six thousand years to prepare the foundation for the coming True Parents and to lay the victorious foundation during their lifetime. However, the believers on this earth failed to unite with and follow the instructions of the spiritual parent. Failing to walk in step with these instructions, the standard was not established to bequeath to the returning Lord the spiritual founda-

tion Jesus had prepared.

In order to become the True Parent, the Lord at his Second Advent had to again face tests on the level of the individual, family, tribe, ethnic people, nation and world in the spiritual realm. Without his prevailing in these tests, and without establishing a standard of internal victory, a standard of substantial victory could not be established on earth. Therefore, the returning Lord inevitably had to carry out an internal battle. (13-280, 1964.04.12)

Why does God carry out the providence of restoration? It is to establish the original parents – the True Parents. Then, what kind of people are True Parents? True Parents are a physical temple in which God can dwell. You probably do not feel the reality of this. Yet, how great would be their value! But unfortunately, however, there are people who place less value on God than on the personal ornaments they keep on their dressers. Such people are saying to God, "Please give me blessings." Do you think God's will can be fulfilled through these people? (22-43, 1963.01.19)

Section 2. The Messiah, the True Parent

2.1. The Messiah is the True Parent

What kind of person is the coming Messiah? He stands as an embodiment of faith, hope, and love for the individual, and for the entire family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos. Only when he stands in this position, can the faith, hope, and love that still remain unfulfilled in human history finally bear fruit. Otherwise, faith, hope, and love will be unable to bear fruit. His words are not just those of one individual. Even in your case, when you speak with such conviction, the content of the words you speak as an individual will be related to world history.

What kind of person is a wise person? He is the first to understand and recognize the global era and the time of hope. The wise person is the one who can bear the responsibility of being the first to recognize it, analyze it, criticize it, and take action. In this way, he takes possession of it. Although he comes as an individual, when the Messiah appears on earth, he is not just an individual. He is the fruit of faith, hope, and love that the whole world desires. This is his value. All the paths of history are connected to this fruit. In other words; past, present and future are all connected to it. Furthermore, all individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations and the world are connected, and both heaven and earth are connected to it. (13-142, 1964.01.01)

The Messiah is the True Parent and we are to be true children. We must stand in the same realm of destiny and participate in it. (55-97, 1972.04.23)

2.2. The appearance of the Messiah

There have been many religions, but what has been their mission? Their mission is to find one particular person. Many religions talk about attaining sal-

vation and other such matters, but they are seeking to find the one person able to rise to the highest point in the world, the one person who has even gone beyond that point. They want to bring this person into existence. In this way, the center of all religions is one specific person; he is the Messiah. In other words, all religions have been looking for one person, and this one person, the central being, is the Messiah, the Savior. When the Messiah comes, he does not come to his position immediately. He has to fulfill a seven-year course. The Messiah is a man. This Messiah has to come and gain victory over Satan by going beyond the blood relationship of the satanic world.

Centering on this triumphant man, there should be victory on the level of the family, tribe, and people, and a foundation for national victory must be laid. One man alone will not suffice. In other words, he must be greater than the satanic world. Unless the Messiah rises above the families belonging to the satanic world, he cannot lead them.

The highest level in the satanic world is that of a nation. Satan has always been opposing God's will through nations. Since Satan has the nation, he has used it to strike heaven on the level of the individual, family, tribe, and people. Satan has constantly used a nation to block the path prepared by heaven.

Ultimately, if you are opposed and persecuted, it is because you are in an inferior position; if you are in a superior position, you can turn around and persecute and dominate. Because this world became Satan's through the Fall, there are plenty of individuals, families, tribes and nations on the satanic side. But God has none of these on His side. There is only one individual, but there is no family, tribe, people, or nation that has come up to God's standard. Hence, without a foundation on which the Messiah as an individual can triumph on the family level, the tribal level, and the national level, there is no way for ordinary people to advance.

Through individuals and families, God prepared a realm into which a people who could advance with the Messiah when he came to earth. This was the people of Israel who lived with the concept of being the chosen people.

However, the people of Israel have not yet arrived in that realm. It was as if they were held back behind a line. The hope of the chosen people was to go over this line. If they failed to cross over, it would be a great disaster. They had to cross this line and yet, as hard as they tried, it was impossible to cross over on their own. That is why God promised the people of Israel that He would send them the Messiah, the Savior. This was the Messiah for whom God had prepared for thousands of years in order to transcend this line on the national level. He promised to send the Messiah.

The people of Israel should have become completely one with the Messiah when he came to them. They should have been willing to die for him. If they had, Satan could never have separated them in any way. The Messiah could have engrafted them to him on the individual, family, tribal, people

and national levels and brought them into this realm all at once. This is why the world needs the idea of the chosen people. With that people chosen by God, the Messiah should build God's chosen nation. The existence of a chosen people proves God's existence. And judging from that basis, the prophecy about the coming of the Messiah further proves His existence.

For what purpose do we need the Messiah? That is the question. Through the Fall, we came to have false parents. The parents who were to have become one with God disappeared. The Messiah comes in the position of parents through whom we can be one with God. This is the first purpose of the Messiah. What is the second? It is to give us rebirth. Since satanic blood runs in our veins, the Messiah will drain out this satanic blood and engraft us to him. He will give us second birth and thus we shall no longer be Satan's sons and daughters. The Messiah's third purpose is to transform us into the people who can turn the devil into a servant and put him to work as a servant. In other words, the Messiah will come and make us qualified to subjugate Satan and punish him.

Because of the Fall, human beings first lost the chance to have parents. Second, they received satanic blood; third, they came under satanic dominion. Restoring what was originally intended requires going in the reverse order. In the Principle, we have the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance. We can hope for the Messiah only when we have laid these foundations of faith and substance. This is the Principle. We must establish the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance. (54-182, 1972.03.24)

The Messiah is the embodiment of the purpose of faith and the embodiment of the purpose of hope. He is the embodiment in whom the purpose of faith and hope are realized. When this purpose is realized through the Messiah, what is the only thing that will remain? Nothing will remain but love when this purpose is realized. This is why it is said that what remains in the end is love. This love comes through the perfect incarnations of faith and hope. The representative of this one love is the Messiah. (13-140, 1964.01.01)

2.3. The mission of the Messiah

What is the purpose of the Messiah? It is to complete the vertical foundation and bring forth the horizontal foundation. Then, who is the Messiah? The Messiah is the one who comes with a firm grasp of the fundamental plan for attaining the individual, family, national, and global standards of vertical completion. He does so by uniting to the vertical standard everything connected to the heavenly way and the public purpose that God and humankind must pursue. (71-79, 1974.04.28)

There are two beings in the universe who claim to be great – God and Satan. These masters of good and evil are fighting against each other. They are waging

a battle of good and evil over human beings.

To what degree is Satan extraordinary? According to anthropologists, human beings have lived on earth for one and a half million years. Throughout this time, Satan, as the overall commander leading the battle on the evil side, has inflicted heavy casualties upon God's side and has bound Him fast. This is why I am teaching about Satan's extraordinary power.

Who should end this battle? Neither God nor Satan can end it. You must be hearing this for the first time. Who can bring to an end the fight between the evil spirits and good spirits? Neither God nor Satan can. Then, who can put an end to it? Only a true person can end the battle. Without being a central figure of love who can be followed by all people, the true person cannot end the fight between God and Satan. As long as we are not liberated from this fight, future peace will be an impossible dream for the world, and ideals will be nothing but abstract, sentimental concepts.

Then, who can resolve this fight? For this task God has sent a representative. This is the typical concept of the Messiah. The Savior is the person who liberates not only people but also God. In addition, he punishes evil. The one responsible for the overall task of liberating God and liquidating evil is the Savior.

The character *se* (世) in Savior (*guse-ju*) refers to the world. God gave His only begotten son because He loved the world, not because He loved Christianity. Many Christians memorize John 3:16 and repeat it over and over! It does not say that God so loved Christianity that He gave His only begotten son, that whoever believes in him should not perish but have everlasting life. It says that God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten son. What is the mission of the Savior? It is to liberate God and punish Satan. Who will get rid of this bitter enemy who has sunk his teeth into human beings and is accusing them so viciously? God cannot get rid of him. Only the Messiah, the Savior, can do that! (136-219, 1985.12.29)

What will the Messiah do when he comes? He comes as the commander, who for the first time in history, will lead the battle to regain the sovereignty, territory, and citizenry of a nation and, on that basis, take back the world of God's creation. This is the mission of the Messiah.

In subjugating Satan, it is not enough just to defeat a nation. Since Satan also has global sovereignty, we must strip him of that global sovereignty as well. Only then will the realm of liberation unfold on this earth.

God created the Garden of Eden as a garden of freedom and peace. If there is any shadow of Satan's opposition anywhere on earth, the ideal of that garden will not be realized. The Kingdom of Heaven on earth will be completed only when the shadows of Satan's antagonism have disappeared from the earth. We can start the liberation movement in the spirit world only when this task is completed on earth. This is the path

the members of the Unification Church should follow. (57-128, 1972.5.29)

What is the task of the Messiah? On the individual level, he has to subjugate Satan and eradicate Satan's lineage, thereby paving the victorious road for the individual. He must then pave the road of victory on the levels of the family, nation, and world. This is the path the Messiah must walk. In other words: first, he must pave the road for individuals; second, he must pave the road for families; third, he must pave the road for nations; and fourth, he must pave the road for the world.

After the Messiah wins the individual victory, Satan will mobilize worldwide. The nations and the democratic world will join forces to attack him; he must fight against them and win. He must do this on the family and worldwide levels. In other words, he must win just as Jacob prevailed over the angel and just as Abel should have succeeded over Cain. This is a one-on-one fight. Now, all of Satan's world must be struck, and for this a representative nation is needed at the front. This nation is Korea. (54-197, 1972.03.24)

Section 3. Jesus and the True Parents

What kind of person is Jesus? Instead of becoming true parents, Adam and Eve fell in the Garden of Eden, becoming false parents and giving birth to false descendants. Jesus, therefore, came as the True Parent to restore all things and establish what should have originally been. Adam and Eve failed to become true husband and wife. At the same time, they failed to become true parents. Since they were unable to become a true couple, they also failed to become a true son and daughter. This is why, if people completely believe in and become one with Jesus, true children can be restored and a true husband and wife and true parents established. This is why it is taught that you should love Jesus the most. (8-109, 1959.11.22)

The Book of Revelation says that in the Last Days, the Lord will come to the earth to meet his bride. Do you know what the feast of the Lamb is? This refers to the day of the feast when, for the first time in history, one bridegroom and one bride become husband and wife centering on God's love.

Through the Fall, instead of becoming good parents, our first ancestors became evil parents. For this reason, the original focus of parents designed by God, which our ancestors should have attained without falling – the standard of the true and good parents – has not appeared or been realized.

The Bible says: "I am the Alpha and the Omega, the First and the Last, the Beginning and the End." (Rev. 22:13) Due to the Fall, God could not fulfill His purpose at the time of creation. He will complete it as in the Book of Revelation. Then, as what kind of person did Jesus come? Adam fell, so Jesus came as a perfected Adam who could be united with God's love without falling. This is why

First Corinthians 15:45 teaches that "The first man Adam became a living being; the last Adam, became a life-giving spirit." The Bible designates Jesus as the second Adam. Since the family planned by God cannot be found if the God-given true positions of the son, husband and wife, and parents are not established, they must appear on earth.

There are many religions on earth, but among them, only Christianity has the concept of following God's four basic requirements: to become God's child, to become one body with God, to meet as bride and bridegroom in accordance with God's will, and to form a new family. Since Jesus came with this thinking, Christianity, centering on Jesus, inevitably became a global religion. (54-108, 1972.03.20)

Section 4. The Second Coming and the True Parents

4.1. We need to prepare to receive the Messiah

The place you are meant to live in is the Kingdom of Heaven. But are you living there now? No! What is more, the Kingdom of Heaven does not come immediately. Then, what should come before the appearance of the heavenly kingdom? The Messiah should come. But the Messiah alone will not do. Although Jesus came to the Jewish nation, the nation of Israel, the Kingdom of Heaven did not emerge.

Before the appearance of the heavenly kingdom, the heavenly kingdom people must appear. What should be done in order that a heavenly kingdom people arises? A people does not come into being all of a sudden. A special clan must appear, and this clan must move that people. What should be done so that the clan appears? There has to be an extended family of close relatives. What should be done so that these close relatives appear? A family must appear as the center of these close relatives. Then, what should be done so that the family appears? There have to be children and parents. Then, what should be done so that children appear? There have to be parents. What should be done so that parents appear? There has to be one man who can represent everything concerning heaven.

Who is this? He is the Messiah. What should that man do? If he is to be a parent, he must find a partner and be one with her. This is the teaching of Christianity. When this happens, it will be the Last Days. Thus, what was upside down has now been spiritually restored over the past two thousand years centering on Jesus, on the foundation of global Christianity. Based on the spiritual aspect of Christianity, when people meet the Messiah, all these things will be completed at that time.

At the Second Coming, the Lord will come and right all things to what they were originally meant to be. In this way, the world must be one and nations must be one: everything must be one. This will happen. Within a country, the Christian denominations must be one, and among denominations the overall leaders must

be united. This has to happen. In order for the denominations to be one, their leaders must be one. These leaders must be united among themselves and be one with Jesus. So when they receive Jesus and become one with him, the world will be easily restored. God has been preparing for this for two thousand years. Since this unity did not come about at the proper time, we have had to prepare all over again. (66-277, 1973.05.16)

4.2. The Task of the Lord at the Second Coming

What is the task that the returning Lord should carry out? He must win over Satan and then win over all the people in the spirit world. There are many spiritual masters today who brag about who they are in heaven and earth. However, in expectation of the time to come, they should not merely be making spiritual efforts, no matter how sincere, without knowing how to resolve the world that came about as a result of the Fall.

We should be victorious first over the satanic world, which is a visible world rather that an invisible world, and then over the spirit world. Without fighting in the visible world and defeating Satan, no road will emerge by which we can make progress in the spirit world. Without this, we would surely face obstacles; then what would happen when we entered the spirit world? We would not be able to enter, and even if we could, we would not be able to win the battle.

So we should attain victory within the satanic world, and next enter the spirit world and attain victory there, subjugating all religions from the least to the greatest – to Christianity, if Christianity is the highest of the mainstream religions. What this means is that we must inherit everything these religions have. When we have fought this battle and received official recognition of our victory over heaven and earth, God will say to us, "You are the victors over Satan and the spirit world!" Then we will begin to take action here on earth. Such a history remains to be made.

Then what does the returning Lord have to do? He has to subdue Satan and subjugate, one by one, myriads of spirit people, religious leaders and leaders as a whole. As he guides them with God's character and true love, they will come to understand the true reality of religion and the universe and they will surrender. This will happen because all beings in this universe desire to be absorbed into the sphere of a lord of love on earth who is higher than they. Even birds and dogs will go to a village that loves them more and takes care of them. It is the same for all beings. Therefore, we should subjugate them through true love and inherit all their authority. We should inherit that unified world. This is the responsibility that the Messiah must fulfill on earth.

Uniting Christianity will not suffice. Christianity may be unified on earth, but this is not enough to create the all-encompassing cultural sphere. That sphere includes the Buddhist cultural sphere and the Islamic cultural sphere, which together form the background

of the spirit world. As long as cultural barriers remain on earth and are not all removed, and as long as the source of unity is not created in the spirit world, the root of all these diverse cultures, we will not be able to bring them into unity. (100-16, 1978.10.04)

The person with the responsibility to make the nations one, make the world one, and make heaven and earth one with original love is the Messiah. Can the Messiah actually fulfill this role alone? I am asking you if he can do it when even God Himself cannot. From this perspective, what kind of religion is it that will be introduced by the Messiah and established by God? The conclusion is that it has to be a religion that has great strength to unify individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations, the world, and cosmos with love. Even Satan says, "Isn't this the purpose that the Messiah should come for and pursue? Isn't this God's purpose of sending the Messiah?" (130-174, 1984.1.15)

CHAPTER THREE

The Need for True Parents

Section 1. We Also Need Our Natural Parents

Originally, when God as the Parent created Adam and Eve, He reaped the benefit of having children. At the same time, He enabled the children to benefit by having parents. God's hope was to raise His children to perfection. Had this happened, it would be possible to say that God would have harvested both Adam and Eve.

Then, why do we need parents and why do we need children? God is spiritual and human beings are physical. The parent-child relationship is also like this.

The invisible God bears fruit through the visible child and then enters into the heart of the child to reveal His value as the visible God. The invisible God bears fruit within the child's heart and the fruit of the child is then produced. It is possible to transfer the fruit of the father to the child. And thus, for God, both His fruit and the parent's fruit are produced. They have equal value.

Then, why are parents and children needed? Even though God possesses love, He needs a partner to share His love. We as children also need a partner to share our love. This partner relationship between parents and children is like the relationship of heaven and earth. It is a vertical relationship.

This world is made up of two spheres, one is a world of spirit and the other is the physical world. Since we are born as sons and daughters of the invisible God, God and we are at relational poles. We are born at one pole and grow up. As we grow up, we long to find the invisible God. Finally we become bride and bridegroom and we become one in love that unites the upper spiritual hemisphere and the lower physical hemisphere.

The parental heart is the heart of Heaven. We need parents to take over the heavenly nation and parents want children's love in order to occupy the earth. When do we come to know this heavenly heart? We cannot understand it as children. We have to be parents to know the parental heavenly heart.

Love conquers and unites the two worlds of parent and child. When this happens, the parent-child relationship is a glorious parent-child relationship. They are equal. No one is behind or in front of the other. They are one. This indeed is a glorious parent-child relationship.

People say that those who are without parents are pitiable. Why? They have no

way of conquering the spirit world and physical world. We also feel sorry for those who are without children. God's ideal of creation was for children and parents to unite and bind the cosmos together with love. However, they will fall into a miserable state because they are in a position where they can fail to emulate that highest model. They cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven. This is why those who are without children or parents are sad people. (222-309, 1991.11.6)

Section 2. True Parents and Our Natural Parents

In what position are your fallen, biological mother and father? Have there been, in a world untainted by the Fall, unfallen sons and daughters of whom God could say, "Oh, you are our sons and daughters!"? In the Garden of Eden, was there a concept that one had to forsake his former mother and father in order to find a new mother and father? No. Then why are we born with such a fate? This fate was not created by God but by Satan. It is the result of the Fall. This is a world created by the devil.

Here, Satan separates everything. He separated mothers and fathers, sons and daughters, the families, and nations and divided the world into small pieces. The culmination of all this is the Last Days. The Last Days refers to the end of the world. In the Last Days, something new begins. In our Principle, if a new ideal is to begin in the Last Days, what does God do? He creates a movement to bring together everything that has been divided. (125-166, 1983.3.20)

Then what are True Parents? How do your physical parents and True Parents differ? In terms of love, what is the difference between your physical parents and True Parents? True Parents and your biological parents have different concepts of love. Again, they have different concepts of love. Your physical parents teach you love with a focus on the physical reality, and your spiritual parents teach you love centered on a world that is spiritual. They have different content.

It seems that physical parents should suffice, so why do you need spiritual parents? It is because of the Fall. What fallen parents have been teaching has led us continuously down a self-centered path. Through your parents' love, a decisive line has been drawn holding you eternally within the satanic world; and there has been no way to sever it. (129-99, 1983.10.1)

When True Parents appear, they love with God's love. Accordingly, God loves everything that True Parents love. This is a principle. So try to follow while saying, "Although we are born in the satanic world, let us follow True Parents! I like the nation of True Parents and their family even more than my mother and father, my house, and my sons and daughters. God's love is the best!"

When you are receiving the love of True Parents, Satan will not be able to drag you away no matter how hard he tries. Since the sphere of the love of God

and True Parents is the ideal realm of the original world, Satan cannot take away these sons and daughters.

There are people of all five colors among the members of the Unification Church. Your parents are your natural parents. Next, there are the True Parents of the Unification Church. They are special parents. True Parents are different from your parents.

There is a great commotion as your natural parents try to kidnap you from Rev. Moon, as you try to go to the special parents. But the special parents are staying undisturbed with their eyes closed. They do not even tell you to come. They tell you to come if you like but not to come if you do not want to. Whereas your parents are stirring up trouble and screaming, "Rev. Moon is Satan, a heretic!" True Parents are unperturbed. Do your parents say, "We are special parents"? (128-137, 1983.6.11)

You ask who I am. I am the parent of the three ages, that is, the parent of the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age and the Completed Testament Age. This is why I am the True Parent. You pray in the Parents' name, but you should not pray in the True Parents' name; the only one who can pray in the True Parents' name is me.

Then, what is the difference between the parents who gave you birth and True Parents? They are not the same. Your parents are in the position of the parents of one age. I am in the position of the parent spanning three ages, including the spirit world, the present age and the coming future age. True Parents are the root and the physical parents are the bud. They are connected in this way.

Your parents are branch parents, and branches grow from sprouts. So these parents are branches of the age, but I am a parent of the three ages. I can be the parent of the root age as well as the parent of the trunk and branch age, and of the leaf age.

You should never forget the words True Parents. Because I pray in the True Parents' name, everyone follows me and says "I pray in True Parents' name," but this is not acceptable. It is against the Principle. What will the consequence of this be? When a mother and father say parents," their children will ask, "Then who are our parents? What's the difference?" So there will be confusion that should not happen. Your parents are parents of one generation while I am a parent of three generations. I am a parent of a vertical generation. So grandfathers, fathers and grandsons call me Parent. This involves three generations and three stages.

This is why the Parent cannot do things as he pleases. The root cannot leave its place and do things as it pleases. It may say, "Oh, I wish I could hang around like the branches," but it cannot do that.

Can the root do anything it wishes? Can a bud go wherever it wishes? They long for the branch. How stifling it must be to stay in one place for hundreds of millions of years! They stay in one place until they dry out and die. There is no freedom there. But branches can go

around as they please. You should know this. (141-226, 1986.2.22)

Section 3. The Reason True Parents Must Come

What is it that you desire? You want to be people of the heavenly kingdom or children of the heavenly kingdom. This must be your desire. If you become people and children of the heavenly kingdom, the heavenly kingdom will naturally appear.

Then, what kind of world is the heavenly kingdom? Is it a democratic world? Democracy is a means and a transitional ideology to make regime change easier when the Lord comes. When the Lord appears on earth, all the people of the world must follow him. The people as a whole must go before the Lord. Then, this would be convenient for organizing all the nations of the world into one nation.

But democracy cannot unify the world. The experiment is already over. Can America itself lead the world? America itself is doomed. So the question is how to save America and guide it to govern the world. If this is God's will, it has to be handled through the philosophy of the Unification Church, "Rev. Moonism." Until this happens, there is no way for America to survive, and the bridge to the heavenly kingdom cannot be built by the American people.

The spirit world is organized on the basis of certain principles. How long will it take for something like this to appear in the physical world? First, God is the central existence. Second, the True Parents must appear; third, true children must appear, and fourth, a true nation must appear through its true citizens. How long do you think they have been waiting for this! How eagerly, over thousands of years, do you think those in the spirit world have waited for you to appear on earth and realize God's original will?

The one who rules this world is Satan. This world is, first, a world centered on Satan, second, a world centered on false parents, that is, fallen and evil parents, third, a world centered on evil children, and fourth, a world centered on evil nations. The spirit world and the future ideal world must reject all this.

When the Unification Church says True Parents your parents oppose that, saying, "Then who are we?" There have been incidents where parents kidnap their children who are trying to be true sons and daughters. Although all the nations of the evil world have opposed us and chased us away, they cannot oppose us now. Now, even if they fight, they cannot beat Rev. Moon.

So we must escape from Satan's domain. But Satan is keeping us from escaping by mobilizing all individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations and the world. This is the final battle. (166-222, 1987.2.15)

Section 4. The Conditions for the Appearance of the True Parents

What has to be done in order for True Parents to come? Without the Archangel's restoration, True Parents cannot

come. Without Jesus being restored, True Parents cannot come. Also, without the bride being restored, True Parents cannot come. This must be resolved in the religious world.

The entity that has appeared after resolving all the difficulties in God's providence of restoration is the True Parents. True Parents are not easy-going, good-for-nothing people.

True Parents would not appear unless the archangel was restored. They would not appear unless Adam was restored. Also, they would not appear unless the bride – that is, Eve – was restored. That is for sure. (46-214, 1971.8.15)

Section 5. The True Lineage Must Come Through the True Parents

It is the True Parents whom we need. What began with false parents must now begin with True Parents. False parents inherited false life and false lineage through false love. This must be reversed. The issue relates to inheriting true life and true lineage through the love of True Parents. The question, in other words, is this: how can we, after having wrongly received the seed of life, receive the original seed?

The Messiah has to return to earth to address this question and plant the seed of the Messiah, the True Parents' new seed of life. We cannot receive this seed without True Parents. Through this we will return to the position of the original true olive tree. This is simple.

So God is our real parent. How close He is to us. God as the vertical parent and True Parents as the horizontal parents together realize ideal love. (218-223, 1991.7.29)

Democracy is the ideology of brothers. This is why they fight. That is why I have declared, "We need parents. Only parents can stop the fight. What we need in this miserable situation is the way of the parents, and Godism, the ideology centered on God!" What kind of parents are these parents? These parents do not exist in the satanic world. They are an exact opposite of the parents in the satanic world. These parents are called True Parents.

Why do we need True Parents? We need them in order to dismantle the foundation of satanic love, life, and lineage. How did men and women fall into such a situation? It was because of the sexual organs. In the original sense, sexual organs are a palace of love. But what happened to that palace of love? It is the palace of love, palace of life, and palace of lineage. The human sexual organs are that precious. They are holy.

Through the Fall, they became something dirty. From God's viewpoint, they were originally not something dirty, but holy. The human sexual organs are the most precious things. Life, love and lineage are connected to them. Satan defiled something so precious. (218-176, 1991.7.28)

Section 6. The True Parents are Needed Absolutely

What do the Unification Church members call me? They call me the True

Parent. The words "True Parent" are fearsome words. It is also a great thing that these words exist.

Without a family that emerged from the womb of God's love as a model, no tribe, people or nation can be formed. A family expands to form a tribe, a people and a nation. Therefore, to defeat the world of the devil, we must deal with things based on the model of the true family.

Fallen people have evil parents. Your mother and father are parents within the fallen domain as well. What does this mean? It means that they are ancestors within the fallen tradition. So the fact that the term True Parents has appeared is an amazing fact.

Why do we need True Parents? The unfallen Adam and Eve should have aligned completely with the original will of God. They should have accomplished the ideal of oneness with God and established the world of love, with the unified realm of heart at the core. It would have been a cozy nest where everything can become one, where everything is certain, and where everything begins from a perfect situation.

But this realm of love has not emerged. We need True Parents in order to accomplish it.

On the day this realm of love appears in the world, the Unification Church will become obsolete. The world will not be needed either. We must put the nation and world aside and find this family. This has to happen. We must seek out this family even if we have to abandon everything. This is crucial. (138-277, 1986.1.24)

It is the True Parents whom we need. Who are the True Parents? They are people more precious than your friends or teachers. So you must follow True Parents even if you may have to abandon your friends or your teachers. You must walk this path even if your friends say, "Alas, that's it between you and me" or even if your teacher says, "I am no longer your teacher" because you go to the Unification Church. Furthermore, you must go this path even if your mother and father disown you. If you follow the path that everyone all at once can acknowledge as good, there will be a new historic beginning of heaven and earth there. (33-336, 1970.8.23)

Humankind needs True Parents. Why? For the first time in history, an event based on principles and connected to the axis of love has occurred. It is unprecedented in history, and will never be repeated in the future. This axis is one, not two. What is this axis? It is the axis of true love. The love that your mother and father share is not true love.

That is why it is written, "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind." This is the great and first commandment. And the second is like it, "You shall love your neighbor as yourself." This is what God has been doing. (137-107, 1985.12.24)

Why do we need True Parents? By fulfilling their individual responsibility, True Parents can expel the worldwide Satan that is clinging to individuals. By

establishing the family level indemnity condition and fulfilling our responsibility, Satan can automatically be restored through indemnity.

Without accomplishing the worldwide restoration through indemnity and the individual portion of responsibility, restoration through indemnity cannot be carried out. Without getting rid of Satan through fulfilling our responsibility, restoration cannot be achieved. (137-106, 1985.12.24)

The reason we need True Parents is to bring God down to dwell on earth. This is why Parents are going through suffering on this earth. (217-354, 1991.6.12)

Why do you need True Parents? It is in order to receive the new lineage. The Old Testament Age was the age of the foundation of faith, the New Testament Age was the age of the foundation of substance, and the Completed Testament Age is the age of the new ideal. Hence, it is said that it is in the age of love where we should inherit the good lineage of the heavenly kingdom. Until now we had different blood. We inherited mixed blood.

I have inherited the original, traditional blood and so I am fighting with Satan with knowledge of all this truth. I am doing this because I know such things. True Parents are the new bud of the true olive tree. You should cut yourself off and be engrafted with the bud of the True Parents. The Parents' bud and God's bud must be engrafted. Then, your body may be cut down to nothing, but your thought becomes the same as that of God and True Parents. You will be able to give birth to the same fruit – sons and daughters of goodness. This cannot happen in the satanic world. It is not good to have sons and daughters before this happens. (125-208, 1983.3.20)

Section 7. The Designation of the True Parents Was Foreseen and Predicted

What will come to pass in the Last Days? Because we inherited the devil's love, life and lineage, True Parents must appear here in order for us to inherit God's love, life and lineage. The True Parent is not someone who just passes by. Do you know how much God had toiled and how much blood religions have shed before I declared the name "True Parents"?

The book called *Gyeokam-yurok,* which appeared after *Jeonggam-rok* long ago, prophesied about my name. Many people saw me even before I was born. How do you think they saw me even before my birth? The spirit world existed before my birth, so it taught them that such and such a person would have to appear. Only then will the people who have been through such ordeals and suffering on earth come within my realm of dominion in the spirit world. God uses this strategy. Since these people have lived in attendance to him, they are supposed to follow him even after he comes. For this reason, our loving God revealed everything tens and hundreds of years before I was born.

So I am a historic figure. Now, even if I say that I am a historic figure and say even one word to the Korean people or to the people of the world, whether at night or in early morning, they acknowledge it as something they heard in the bright light of day; and no one denies it to be true. (213-27, 1991.1.13)

Section 8. True Parents' Position Is Not an Elected One

Until now, it has been hard for me to find a family and hard to find a church. It has been hard to set the direction for Christianity, hard to bring the free world and communist world back from their paths to ruin. Now, through me, the right of the eldest son has been restored. Again, the right of the eldest son has been restored. Had Adam not fallen at the outset, Adam himself would have possessed the right of the eldest son. Also, Adam would have become the authentic True Parent. Adam himself would have become the king among kings.

What did human beings lose through the Fall? They lost the right of the eldest son. They lost the right of the eldest son to inherit the great foundation and assets of heaven and earth. They lost it because of the devil. We have been ignorant of this. Moreover, although we were to become eternal blood relatives who can attend the Parent, the Creator of heaven and earth, focusing on God's love, life and lineage, Adam lost the right to become the True Parent. Also, had the Fall not occurred, there would be one culture, the culture of Adam and the tribe of Adam. This would have established one right of kingship.

The democratic world is like a guiding staff. It is an ideology of brotherhood. Since there are many brothers, in order to appoint a representative to receive the inheritance, they must get together and choose the one who sacrifices more, serves more, and can better uphold the tradition. That is the democratic style. Democracy is a global ideology, but above it stands the ideology of parents. The age of the parent is coming in the future. Do you choose your parents through an election? Could you choose the returning Lord through an election? Could you choose God through an election? You could not. Democracy has the basis to create an atmosphere of distrust. Why? People do all kinds of things for their own personal gain. They do all sorts of things, such as using money and utilizing networks to slander others and plot against them. (211-343, 1991.1.1)

CHAPTER FOUR

The Mission of the True Parents

Section 1. The Position of the True Parents

The world has passed through many eras: the eras of imperialism, emperors and kingdoms. After they passed came the children's era of democracy and the servants' era of communism. Because these eras were not governed by the law of love, we can conclude they were products of a false world. The original world was to come into being as the extension of an original heart. Then, there must be an original person. But where is that original person? It should be understood that the term "person," here includes both man and woman.

Since this is certainly a satanic world, history has been pursuing an original man in this world. This is why billions of people in the world today are looking for a leader who can guide not only a true world, but also heaven and earth. Then, how does an original leader come about? He comes transcending fallen individuals, families, tribes, peoples, and nations – even the world itself. What kind of person is he? He is a true person. What kind of true person? I am asking for the definition of a true person. It is simple: he is the one who has perfect love. Then what is perfect love, and who is able to love perfectly? This is also simple. It is True Parents.

Who is God? God is the representative true person. In more concrete terms, this means that He is one who can love everyone. God is the one with the capacity to love all beings. In short, He loves everything, no matter how large or how small. All things, large and small, can be drawn into His embrace. Through this, everything is to be brought together. All creatures in the world, all things both large and small, are to be drawn in. God will thus embrace everything, large or small, in His love. (124-116, 1983.2.1)

Our purpose is the world. We must continue to go forward for the sake of the world, no matter how difficult it may be. We must go forward for the sake of the world and give for the sake of the world. We should give out everywhere we go. True Parents should give. This is the fundamental principle. There are new things there; there is a new world, and new connections are being forged there. (147-142, 1986.9.7)

You call me the True Parent. This is why I try to give you all good things on behalf of God and you in turn try to receive them. This is a basic principle,

and I guide you on this path because I know this principle. (127-328, 1983.5.22)

You have something backing you up and that is the perfect power to have behind you. It is the same power behind True Parents. Satan cannot accuse True Parents and so you have received identification cards. This card must be signed by God and Satan. Moreover, it must be signed by the archangel and then by Adam. (117-160, 1982.2.28)

Section 2. The Path of the True Parents

Conflicts are spreading throughout the world today. Who is to confront this situation? We should. We should fight against communism, prevent the breakdown of ethics, and protect religions because they are collapsing. I have been seriously discussing these problems with scholars and theologians throughout the world. I have been doing something no one in America would even dream of doing. You say you are doing activities, but who do you think is having more difficulties, you or me? There is a principle that parents must suffer more than their children, and I am practicing that. If I have money, I do not use it for my own living expenses. I am opening up good paths for our future descendants. With a loving heart, I am making money for the sake of our future descendants.

If you were to ask what the True Parent must do, I would answer that he must proceed in the position of the Father by connecting with the family, tribe, people, nation, world and universe. All of these must be connected and included. The True Parent must love humankind just as a wife loves her husband, or as parents love their sons and daughters. They must love humankind just as sons and daughters love their parents. They must always have an instantaneous connection. (118-240, 1982.6.6)

What is God's desire? It is to find the people who want to live with Him. God seeks those who wish to live with Him forever, and so, once their foreheads touch, He would not want to be separated from them even after tens of thousands of years. He wants to live in a love such that once He touches His beloved sons and daughters with His fingertips, He would not want to remove His hands even after tens of thousands of years.

The Unification Church teaches about the parent-child relationship and the husband-wife relationship based on such a principle. Furthermore, it proposes to incorporate such a principle in the relationship of siblings and the family as a whole. We are not talking about brothers and sisters who just meet once and then part, but those who do not grow tired of one another even after living together for tens of thousands of years. God's sphere of love will be established only when this is put into practice by people of all colors. Will this be easy? There must be the kind of parents who will share their food with people, wait patiently until they finish eating, do the dishes and even take care of them until they go to sleep. This is the very path

that True Parents have been trying to walk, and the path that I believe they must follow. Each day, whenever I meet someone, I try to talk to him, even if I forget about lunch and even keep talking past dinner time. This is my philosophy. Meals are not important. I want to find those whom I would not grow tired of even after living together with them for tens of thousands of years. I am the kind of person who longs to have a son and daughter whom I can love after midnight, after two o'clock in the morning, after the cock crows and even when the dawn breaks – all throughout the night. Also, I am someone who seeks a brother or sister. (127-284, 1983.5.15)

A true person, as the representative of history, would strive to teach humankind by saying, "Humankind, this is the true standard you must follow." Even if he had to make harsh sacrifices, a true person would nevertheless teach and pioneer in this way on behalf of humankind. If he knew the path and said he would take it only for his own sake, he would not be a true person. (63-88, 1972.10.8)

Think about how one can receive the historic title of True Parent. How many levels do you think you must go through until you reach that of the True Parent? Initially, one will have to start from the stage of true servant of servants. Next, there must be the stage of true beggar and then true laborer. All of these must be included. There will also need to be true persecutors and those who bear the cross. If this is refused, the True Parent can never appear. Even among the sinners, there have to be true sinners. All these need to be there. There has to be a representative of love who can start from the most miserable place in the world and overcome everything. He must follow this path and build the bridge. In order to do this, he has to follow the path of the cross of love. This is the bridge. Stage by stage, he must rise from being a true servant of servants to being a true adopted son, and then a true son, a true Cain, and eventually a true Abel.

Who has had to walk this path, that you know – the path of the servant of servants and of the adopted son? It was I who had to walk that path. I am building the bridge because I have walked that way, survived the fight, and triumphed. Whenever you see a pitiable person on the street, remember that I have been in that kind of situation. Don't you think that I was indignant when I was being stepped on, tortured and kicked by the communists? But I never prayed, "O God, strike these enemies with a thunderbolt and slaughter them all." Although my body was bleeding, I was praying for them to receive blessings. (63-88, 1972.10.8)

Section 3. The Course Prior to Becoming the True Parents

The Fall led to the appearance of false parents. Because of this, I have had to follow a suffering course in order to establish True Parents and a heavenly nation in the midst of this satanic world. This has to be restored by parents. The parents must take the responsibility for and

indemnify what was jeopardized. (131-62, 1984.4.1)

In order to be a True Parent, one must love the world of Cain. This Cain world is the world of the eldest son. The Cain world is just like the world of the fallen eldest son. Therefore, without the True Parents making a condition of having fully given the love of Heaven even amid the opposition of this world, the satanic world cannot be restored. The eldest son must be loved first. Since Satan is the eldest son in principle, if God wants to love Abel, He must establish the condition of having loved Satan, the eldest son, first. Without showing such love to Satan, there is no way for Him to love the second son. This is according to the Principle. So the path that the mother, Eve, should walk is to unite Cain and Abel and return to Adam. Therefore, no matter how universal a love Mother wants to receive, I cannot give such love. That is her situation. (124-73, 1983.1.23)

In the matter of having loving relationships, I hold the world record. Also, a group of people is emerging who will be able to hold the cosmic record in matters of conscience. This is not just a concept but also a reality. It is a historic fact. How threatening this is to Satan and how inspiring for God! We should know that our Unification Church is in such an amazing situation that it can have only a bright future. We should be deeply, deeply grateful for this. What have God and the True Parents done in order to pave this road? They have been paving it by breaking through barbed-wire entanglements. The scars from cruel torture and from the whip still remain, not to mention blood and tear stains. I have pioneered such a course. Thus, you should not bring grief to your Parents in Heaven or on earth. This is the treasure store of the universe. Here we can shut down hell and build the Kingdom of Heaven. (216-325, 1991.4.15)

For there to be True Parents there must be two people. Without two people, we cannot meet the standard of True Parents. Although a victorious standard may be established in the spiritual battle, no victorious standard can be established in the physical world unless True Parents manifest in physical form. A condition for victory may be created in the spirit world, but a corresponding foundation cannot be laid on earth unless True Parents are first installed there. Therefore, the True Parents who are to come must fight for this on behalf of earth and heaven by offering their lives. This battle will last for a forty-year period. What kind of battle do the Parents who come during this forty-year period have to go through? First of all, they must go through spiritual trials in the spirit world. Then, they must go through physical tribulation on earth. The combined spiritual and physical conditions for the True Parents cannot be established until they pass through these trials and are able to stand in the center without falling down. In so doing, they fulfill the hopes of the six-thousand-year history of God's providence.

We established Parents' Day in 1960. What kind of day was that? It was the day when we secured the starting point of total victory, both physically and spiritually; this day also marked the starting point of True Parents' ideology. So although that day was just one day, and the conditions for this day are not completely established, these conditions will continue on into the future of heaven and earth. Beginning from that day, God has been able to execute His plan simultaneously in both the spiritual and physical worlds. In other words, God could finally fight back now that the basis was established upon which there could be cooperation with the spirit world. Since the foundation for victory has been laid in this way, we simply need to build a corresponding foundation on the level of family, tribe, people, nation, and world.

Due to the opposition of the people of Israel, Jesus went to paradise without completing his mission. Since then, he has been able to bring Israel together spiritually in the role of spiritual parent. The course, whereby True Parents can establish the worldwide foundation of victory on earth, is a four-year course. When the spiritual and physical worlds unite and establish the starting point of victory during this four-year course, all humankind will receive the benefit of the age such that they can march into the spirit world above paradise. However, the True Parents who come as we pass through this historical course must bear the cross on behalf of humankind at the levels of individual, family, people, nation and world.

If we look at the history of the people of Israel, we see that Jacob could establish the conditions for individual restoration because he was victorious in the individual struggle with Esau. Later on, he could have a family because with God's help he had prevailed in the family-level struggle at Laban's house. Afterwards, Jacob's descendants entered Egypt, the satanic world, in order to create a people. They were rescued from there with God's help and were then able to enter Canaan and gain victory over its seven tribes. In this way, the Israelites could finally attack the satanic world while going through the forty-year course for the restoration of Canaan. Prior to the forty-year wilderness course there was a three-day course. The Israelites were finally able to begin the restoration of Canaan after going through this three-day course. Moreover, after entering Canaan, the Israelites had to restore the number forty once more.

Since the providence of restoration has passed through such courses, I have to walk a three year course and a four year course after going through a forty year course. Adding the three year course and the four year course together gives you a seven year course. I will be able to bring the history of restoration to a conclusion and establish the heavenly sovereignty only when I pass through all of these courses.

Originally, Jesus also was to have walked a seven-year course from the era of thirty-three and then established the standard of parents desired by God. He was to establish the standard for the

restoration of all things, thereby concluding everything and fulfilling God's will at the age of forty. Although this was the mission of Jesus, the Will remained unfulfilled because Jesus died on the cross without being able to accomplish it. Since the True Parents, the Second Coming, must inevitably take responsibility for the internal and external conflicts, they have passed through a forty year preparation period, a period of conflict. Although externally it was a forty year period of preparation, internally it was a period of strife. After having laid the spiritual foundation for victory, the groundwork for laying the substantial foundation combining the spiritual and physical was finally prepared on earth.

True Parents must be the central figures in going through the three year course and the period of the restoration of all things – that is, a four year course to embrace all four directions. In this way, they must bring restoration through indemnification to a conclusion through this seven year course. The three-year course, four year course, and forty year course prior to establishing True Parents may seem like short courses, yet they are time periods designed to reverse, through indemnity, all historical sorrows, historical resentments, and the historical cross as a whole. We cannot welcome the day of the victory of True Parents without first establishing an absolute standard of not succumbing to any historical sorrow, pain or resentment. This is why our Unification Church, which is taking responsibility for and is upholding God's will on behalf of Heaven and True Parents, is volunteering to take on this kind of trial. In undergoing this process, you must not only separate yourself from the satanic world, but also establish the standard of a true child whereby you can adopt the model of victory of True Parents and be able to judge the satanic world.

Also, the original will of God in relation to True Parents cannot be realized on the earth until this standard is established at the level of a tribe, a people and a nation. You who are fighting on my side during this period are representatives of True Parents on the individual, family, ethnic and national levels. As such representatives of True Parents, it is your responsibility to fight on the world stage, not to mention in Korea. From this perspective, what has been the sorrow of both the spiritual and physical worlds until now? It should have been that from the day True Parents appeared on earth, heaven and earth should have sung songs of peace, the entire cosmos should have entered the realm of happiness, and the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth should have been be realized with God at its center. (13-285, 1964.4.12)

How much did I suffer, how many curses did I receive, and how often did I go to prison before I proclaimed the True Parents? I have been to prison as many as six times. I declared True Parents after all these hardships. Because of this course, we are the True Parents. Therefore, I am the most pitiful king among the kings in the world. You may say whatever you want about True Mother

and True Father, but I am the most miserable person. (211-161, 1990.12.30)

You have no idea how much I have invested for the sake of the world. How much blood and how many tears do you think I have shed? How much sweat? And how much do you think I have sighed deeply? I did not do this in order to eat well or obtain worldly success, but so that I could liberate the earthly world, heavenly world, and God. There has never been someone like this in all of history – only myself. There has been no one except the True Parents. This is not just a concept, but is my personal background. Since by establishing the sphere of truth on the stage of actual battle, I have been building a foundation on a still higher level; I have reached the stage where all nations can solemnly bow their heads. (210-363, 1990.12.27)

Section 4. The Authority and Mission of the True Parents

Why do True Parents come to humankind on earth? They come to make what the people will like the most: that is, to make you into True Parents – little True Parents. (125-117, 1983.3.14)

What is it that True Parents must do? They must open the closed road between the earthly world and the heavenly world and turn it into a highway. They must make a highway leading from the earthly world through hell in the spirit world and on to the heavenly realms. (134-127, 1985.2.5)

True Parents came with the right of kingship over the spiritual and physical worlds. In order to link this right of kingship to the spirit world, the basis for unification must first be prepared there. The foundation for the right of kingship in the spirit world must be connected with the formation level of the growth stage foundation. Otherwise, the spirit world cannot participate at the place where True Parents have fulfilled the standard of perfection on earth. We must make those preparations. (140-53, 1986.2.1)

You call me the True Parent. Why am I your parent? I did not give birth to you, and yet I am still considered your parent? Yes, but there is one main difference: I am a parent who can connect you to God's love – original love. Who then was Adam? He was a parent who was to have become your ancestor, but he could not connect you to God's love. This is why your parents also cannot connect you to God's love. Then what is different about True Parents? The difference is that they have the special authority to connect you with God's love. Is it being righteous or evil to listen to me rather than to your own parents? It is righteousness, because this is the principle of the cosmos. (118-147, 1982.5.23)

What do True Parents do? They have the role of gathering false children and transforming them into true children. Because of this, Satan has been striking me and doing all kinds of things to stop it. The satanic side is evil. That is why True Parents are trying to absorb the

family level, tribal level, and world level step by step by assimilating these sons and daughters. Although words are simple, it is a serious issue. (134-127, 1985.2.5)

I am disclosing everything at this time. I am revealing the procedure for the servant of servants and for the servant. All this time, I have been working to show how people must proceed in order to become one. You can advance to God's love only by fulfilling everything through following me. Otherwise you cannot. (134-127, 1985.2.5)

How do True Parents come into being? True Parents will emerge when a condition of responsibility is established for tearing down the wall that was erected by the Fall of our ancestors. Our Unification Church embraces all of Christianity, Catholicism, Buddhism, Confucianism and Islam. Herein, all religions can become one. Then the five races can become one. (118-270, 1982.6.13)

We must make restitution for the walls that arose between the dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle (indirect dominion) and the direct dominion. We must resolve all the barriers within individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations and the world. The dominion based on accomplishments through the indirect dominion was occupied by Satan, leaving him to squat over the midway position. God is therefore above, humankind is below, and Satan holds the middle ground. This is how satanic walls have emerged.

Then how do we break through these walls and advance to where God is? This is the purpose of religion. Satan has always worked in the dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle. He has been doing that ever since the beginning of the universe. Nevertheless, God's providence is to reconnect God and humankind. This is why He has been developing religions throughout history, such as Judaism. God's will has been flowing through religions until now and has come down to Christianity; this is our current situation.

True Parents have the responsibility to connect the indirect dominion with the direct dominion. The question is how to demolish the walls within individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations and the world, which are linked to Satan. Satan, for his part, thinks about how to block this continuing work of God. The two have been dueling this way. Satan has been persistently opposing God. For my part, I have been standing between God and Satan, constantly working to get rid of the latter. How do we move the work forward without being exposed to Satan's accusation? This is the reason the course of indemnification has come about. This is humankind's portion of responsibility, which, so far, it has failed to carry out. The question, then, is how we can fulfill our responsibility. Satan knows that this issue is the responsibility of the Messiah. That is why he has attacked True Parents by mobilizing all his forces. I have been doing the work of destroying Satan's walls wherever they are found: in individuals, families,

tribes, peoples, nations, the world and even the spirit world. The Messiah must clear the way along all these paths.

This has been the history of our Unification Church. Toward Satan we have always upheld the Principle with love. God has agonized over how fallen parents, who inherited Satan's lineage, could be restored to the point where they attain the status of the True Parents of humankind. This restoration occurred for the first time in history at True Parents' Holy Wedding in 1960. Since Jesus was unable to reverse the fall of Adam and Eve, I must do everything on his behalf. (118-270, 1982.6.13)

Section 5. True Parents' Love

If you have discovered your true, original self, then God is in your heart and you are within the realm of liberation. Your original self was born to continue the history of the original lineage through God and True Parents' original love. Finding this self will resolve everything. It is there that True Parents and their love can be found. Since you began from God's love, when you find yourself, you will discover the two original images of love already planted within you. They are implanted there as the root. You cannot pull yourself out of God nor out of True Parents. Since you are one of their branches, you cannot deny that you have become that branch. For example, if you look at cells, they are all alike, whether they are from a leaf or from the root. These days, they even multiply plants by multiplying cells. It is the same principle. Leaves contain elements of the root and of everything else.

This is why you are great. You have all of God's love and True Parents' love. God's love and True Parents' love form the core of their dominion over the universe. They are the eternal standard for the essence of a subject. Everything is governed through love. And thus you can become the representative of everything. You can represent not only God, but also your mother and father, your elder or younger brother, even your elder or younger sister. You can become such a representative. If this happens, your clan will welcome you and all fighting will cease. There will be no opposition; everyone will be embraced. This may be simple to say, but it is the core of the Principle. You must become fully mature. The reason for going through spiritual training is to perfect yourself.

In order to reach the point of self-perfection, you must eventually become engrafted to God and True Parents. This engrafting is particularly important given that you are already fully- grown and therefore cannot literally be reborn through the womb. It is for this reason that the Messiah comes. The Messiah comes as a man with fully mature, original love – that is, the True Parent's love. He comes as a representative of the original ideal. Think about this every time you use the word "I." This is how you can be liberated. If you are liberated from Satan, liberated from Satan's realm of daily life, and liberated from the realm of Satan's lineage, everything will be completed.

Then what will you do after having been liberated? Because you will serve and attend God instead of the devil, you will have to create a new cultural realm. You have to create True Parents' realm of daily life. When you stand in the position of the perfected Adam, you realize the purpose of your birth. When this happens, the love of God and True Parents will continually reside within you. This love is the basis of the harmony that completes you. In other words, you will have love, life and lineage. This forms a trinity. (202-283, 1990.5.25)

CHAPTER FIVE

The Kingdom of Heaven and True Parents

Section 1. The Meaning of the Characters for *Cheon* (天) and *Bu-mo* (父母)

If we analyze the Chinese character for *cheon* (天), meaning heaven, it consists of the character for two (二) and the character for person (人). The character for *in* (仁), meaning virtue, also includes the characters for two (二) and for person (人). Two people. But what kind of people are they? They are people in whom heaven and earth can become completely one, both vertically and horizontally, by virtue of their perfect love. The fundamental basis for realizing the harmony of heaven and earth is love. It begins from love. (186-60, 1989.1.29)

In the term "heaven and earth" (*cheon-ji*), which should be mentioned first – heaven or earth? Should it be earth and heaven or heaven and earth? What about with parents (*bu-mo*); should it be written father and mother or mother and father? Should the term couple (*bu-bu*) be written wife and husband or husband and wife? It has to be husband and wife. There is no one who wants earth and heaven; everyone wants heaven and earth. So what should come first? Heaven must come first, and earth second. And with parents, why should the father come first rather than the mother? This does not mean that women are disregarded.

Bu-mo (parents) must have the character for *bu* (父), meaning father, first. However, it is interesting to look at the character for *mo* (母), meaning mother. It is written by putting together two of the characters for *yeo,* meaning woman (女), upside down. This is very interesting. Thus the character for *mo*, meaning mother, puts two women together, albeit upside down. This is a mother. This is why a mother should be someone with the heart of heaven and the heart of earth. In other words, a woman can only be a mother if she is able to bring two hearts together within herself: a heart connected to heaven and a heart that represents the women of the earth.

Now let us look at the character for *bu* (父), meaning father. What is it? If you separate its strokes, it has two of the characters for *in* (人), meaning person, but is formed by combining them. It binds them together. What does this character mean? A man becomes a man, and a person becomes a person, not only by himself: here two must be bound together. Only in this way does one become a father. What this means

is that to become a father, the person of heaven and the earthly person must be bound together and be able to act as one. It is interesting to think about this.

On the other hand, what comprises the character for *cheon* (天), meaning heaven? Heaven does not exist alone. There have to be two (二) for heaven to come into being. Hence, we can have *cheon* (天), meaning heaven, simply by putting two people together. Then what about the character for *bu* (夫), meaning husband? This is a funny one. It has a hat and goes up even above heaven. What does this mean? It means that when two people like each other, they go up to the top of heaven. This is how the words "husband and wife" were composed.

Is there anyone who says, "Because I am such a great and handsome man, I do not need a father or mother?" Would anyone say, "Because I am a man, I don't need a father, who is a man. When my father dies, I will be the father and thus the master in his place; so let my father die and allow just my mother to remain?" No one would say that. Similarly, there is no daughter who would say, "I want to be the female head of the household, so let my mother die and my father remain!" Then what do we need? We need both. There must be a father and a mother. (59-182, 1972.7.16)

Section 2. The Reason We Must Attend True Parents on Earth

The spirit world is a realm controlled by our ancestors, starting with Adam. Moreover, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth is a world controlled by their descendants. This is how it works: when you die, you will surely find yourself in the realm inhabited by tens of millions of your ancestors. You will then have to face each one. If you have any faults, you will receive judgment from them. What is the basic standard for receiving a passing grade through this judgment? That is the question.

What do you have to do to be awarded a passing grade by the families of your ancestors? You must follow the basic rule. Even in the other world there are connections among the numerous ancestors, families, and peoples living there. These are all connected in that world.

From this viewpoint, the questionof what will allow you to pass is answered quite simply: It is the ideal tradition of true parents. True parents bring about a true family, and thus serve as the president of the family. Then, what about the president of a country? He or she should be the true parent of that country. Let us say that nation was the United States. It would be a nation having true parents.

In that case, the people should serve and unite with the president as they would with their mother and father. The basic principle in this case is that one should go beyond one's family, beyond one's wife and beyond one's parents in order to become one with the nation. An ideal is even greater than the family. The ideal is to serve the true parents of one's country more than the true parents of one's family because they stand in the higher position. Why do you have to live like this? Because if you do not, your

path will be blocked in the spirit world. They will not welcome you there. Even if you have a doctorate, it will not matter. This is how it will be.

The principle of the world of the original ideal is that one should serve the parents of the nation more, for they are superior to the true parents of the family. Similarly, the parents of the nation should be under the influence and governance of the parents of the world. The national parents should serve the world parents.

In the Unification Church we are preparing the way for the world-level True Parents. To pave this highest path in the human world, we must willingly sacrifice the true parents of the family and even the true parents of the nation. This degree of sacrifice characterizes the Unification Church. The Unification movement seeks to overcome all barriers in order to realize the family ideal of the world-level True Parents. In order to do this, we must sacrifice all family-level parents and national-level parents. If we become the center of the world in this way, it will be recorded that the primary source of the world's new tradition will be the degree to which we sacrificed individuals and families and the degree of effort we made to go beyond the nation and its citizens. (118-234, 1982.6.6)

Section 3. The Kingdom of Heaven is Possible Only Through True Parents

You cannot bring about the Kingdom of Heaven on your own. It requires the coming of the True Parents. You need to become one with the Holy Spirit and harmonize with the love of Jesus. Only then will you have the possibility to engraft to the olive tree on God's side. However, since this is a spiritual engrafting, it is only partial; a complete engrafting cannot take place until the True Parents come in the era of the Second Coming and fully engraft you.

This is fundamental to building the Kingdom of Heaven. The formula is the same. The relationship between God and God's son is absolute; it is a bond that no one can break. No one can sever the father and son relationship. In a similar way, when the husband and wife become one in love, no one can divide their love. Even God cannot divide it. It is eternal.

The question is whether you have become a united couple, as a brother and a sister like Adam and Eve, who can attend the True Parents. Another question is whether God's love and the Parents' love can dwell in your family. In other words, are you conveying the love of God and Parents through your own love such that your sons and daughters are born and nurtured in this loving environment? This is a serious question. You should know that if you do not do this, the door of the family Kingdom of Heaven will not open. (137-185, 1986.1.1)

We need to go through True Parents to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Without going through them we cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. This is why True Parents have appeared. Once True Parents have appeared, they will give rise to True Families. Even in the midst of the

satanic world, we must begin from this point in order to bring about a True Family. We must fight, and deny everything. (44-140, 1971.5.6)

Do you have a sovereign nation? We are people without a nation. Although we have a country called the Republic of Korea, the nation we are moving towards is a different nation. It is God's nation. However, you cannot enter this heavenly nation without receiving certified citizenship in that nation. Satan cannot accuse those with certified citizenship, regardless of whether they are from the East, West, North or South; or whether in the past, the present or the future. Without such a citizenship, you cannot enter the heavenly nation. (148-288, 1986.10.25)

The people of the world must pass through True Parents' love. Without going through this gate, there is no way they can return to their original hometown in the heavenly world. There will be no path available to them other than the one towards hell. We must reverse this and go up. We must fight and prevail over the opposing nations.

For this reason, the Unification Church has inherited the victory of world-level messiahship, having gone beyond national messiahship and come down to tribal messiahship. It is on the tribal level of the satanic world that the victory is to be won; we must transform these satanic families and thereby restore the world.

Thus, the activities I have proposed for breaking through in local neighborhood activities (*tong ban gyeokpa*) are for the purpose of creating True Parents' sons and daughters on the family level. We must create the kind of husband and wife that can embody God's love in the family. They must recover the lost clan, nation and world by embodying God's love and thereby establishing the loving standards of grandfather and grandmother, father and mother, husband and wife, and children.

Only when we declare the emergence of a world wherein all people are embraced and loved as sons and daughters will the realm of liberation begin on earth. (210-42, 1990.11.30)

The Bible says that you cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven unless you are like a little child. What does this mean? Children only have their mother and father. When they eat, when they sleep, and at all times, they are with their mother and father. Even when they grow up and get married, they cannot forget about their father and mother. They can never forget these words.

God is our Father. God the Father is the vertical father and the True Father is the horizontal father. Therefore, you have to learn Mother and Father's language and customs so as to be able to go to your original hometown, or wherever you go, and fit into that nation. What do Parents wish to achieve through paying all this historical indemnity? They wish to liberate all people. Why? Because God's liberation requires the liberation of humankind. (225-19, 1992.1.1)

Section 4. The Kingdom of Heaven and True Love

The coming of True Parents marks the beginning of a new love, a new culture, and the birth of an ideal history. Through True Parents there begins new life, a new family, a new nation and a new world. They also represent the beginning of the heavenly nation and of God's love. The term True Parents represents far more than just the words themselves. You should know that many individuals, families, and nations have suffered and died in order to make a relationship with the coming age. The blood of hundreds of millions of sacrifices is crying out to you at this time.

The Bible says that Cain accused God when he killed Abel and shed his blood. This is the only place where such a history can be set right through the liberation of resentment. The people who have gathered to inherit this mission and undergo the amazing task of restitution are the Unification Church members. If you truly come to know this, you cannot complain about your life or situation even in your dreams, even though you may die a thousand times. (67-226, 1973.6.27)

What is God's ideal of creation? It is to build the Kingdom of Heaven, both in heaven and on earth, through the name of the True Parents. Without the name of True Parents, there will be no Kingdom of Heaven on earth or in heaven. If you would ask today's Christians, "Why is Jesus in paradise instead of in the Kingdom of Heaven, even though he is God's beloved eldest son?" they would not have an answer.

The Kingdom of Heaven in heaven and on earth is established only on the basis of True Parents' fully perfected love. Unifying the Kingdom in the spirit world is the mission of True Parents rather than of any other. Jesus is in paradise because he was unable to become the True Parent. In the fallen world, there has not yet been anything or anyone who has received True Parents' love, nor has there been any trace of True Parents' appearance. Even if such a foundation emerges in the spirit world, therefore, it is of no use. The vertical and horizontal standard and formula of the Principle is firmly established. You cannot just act as you please. (131-182, 1984.5.1)

The Kingdom of Heaven begins from the love of a man and a woman. Based on what? The original Kingdom of Heaven is where the horizontal line unites with the vertical line at the center, based on God's love. In God's presence, a man and a woman become the nucleus at one stroke, and their mind and body together form a circle. In this model, the mind is the vertical self, and the body is the horizontal self. This much is clear. The vertical mind is God, and the horizontal body is True Parents. They are one. Although the mind is invisible, it is nevertheless vertical. And although the body is visible, it is horizontal. It is this ninety-degree angle that people like.

The family is an encapsulation of the whole universe. The spiritual realm

exists within us. Each of us has a spiritual aspect, which is our mind and our heart. The visible body, however, represents the world. When these two aspects, spiritual and physical, are able to revolve in all directions based on the center, they then form an ideal person – provided that they do not leave the central point. This is simple. When the invisible mind and visible body become one based on the core of true love, this signifies the ideal man or woman, and the complete spiritual maturity of the individual.

When and through what do your mind and body become one? They become one through true love. What kind of true love? Two kinds: vertical true love and horizontal true love, which are at ninety degrees to each other. This mind and body is the fruit, comprising the love, life and lineage received from God. It should become a unified core of vertical and horizontal true love. (217-150, 1991.5.19)

Section 5. True Parents and Eternal Life

In order to meet your spouse and receive the children you can love, you must follow the Parents. When you have received your children, you should be able to say, "Oh, I am following the path through which I can command an entire heavenly nation." How splendid this is! It is the same in the earthly world. You are walking the path in order to receive the unified tribe, unified world and unified heaven together with your family. Why then do you have to follow True Parents? You follow them in order to inherit this entire universe. How wonderful this is! God and True Parents embrace everything. This is the Way of the True Parent, and what a tremendous ideology it is. Those Unification Church members who are determined to be loyal to God's will consider the Unification Church as their own, whether they are in Korea, in South America, in Africa or elsewhere. The amazing thing about True Parents is that, through them God will bequeath this entire universe to us. We gain this amazing inheritance through True Parents when we meet them, make a determination to be eternally one with them, and follow through with this determination. (124-39, 1983.1.16)

How would you find me if I were on a far away star? You would set the direction automatically with a loving heart. When you set the right direction and say, "Teacher, Father!" it will immediately strike the core. In fact, you would rush to where True Parents were even if I told you not to come. This is the True Parents' ideology of love. It will click into the right direction and you will know immediately. You should therefore live your daily life with a heart that longs for your True Parents until you die. You should live a life in which you can shed tears for your True Parents before you leave this world. Only then will you enter the Kingdom of Heaven after you pass away. This is a basic principle. Because this has not happened, True Parents have come in order to remedy the situation. True Parents' efforts to revive this movement will lead you to the heavenly kingdom. (124-41, 1983.1.16)

There should be no objection to my assertion that I am the clear owner of our Unification Church. Why? I have invested and served more than anyone else. Also, I am the teacher. No one can replace me. No matter how much someone may try, he cannot match the effort I have put forth. He would give up in less than a month. For this reason, even if I were to climb a mountain, dig a hole in the ground and hide there, you would try to take me back even by digging me out of the hole. Why? Because there is no teacher like Rev. Moon.

The term "true parents" brings with it all the blessings in heaven and earth and a certificate that guarantees eternal life. The name itself is a form of certification before God and Satan. You should know that. Once you attain this, your ancestors will all bow to you, even if you do not realize why they are doing it. On the day you receive it, your third-generation ancestors will come and bow down. This is an amazing fact. (200-73, 1990.2.23)

Section 6. True Parents and the Nation

Why have we sacrificed until now? It was to become the parents of the tribe. How splendid this is! What do we do after the nation and world are unified through such sacrifice? The place of unification does not disappear. You stand in the position of the father or mother in that place of unity.

What a holy thing it is to be parents! Parents always sacrifice and serve with love. If you think about it, you realize what a joyful thing it is to be able to become true parents. This is true even in America, where I have been working in this way up until now. When I unify the American people by way of love, they will know that I did it with the resolve of the Parent. Then, the indivisible nation and world will be established here. When that happens, the True Parents will be welcomed wherever they go. These will all be places that belong to the Parents, for they will be fully connected to God; as such, they will be where the vertical realm of heart is connected. You should know that no connection will exist without going through this center. This is a perpendicular relationship. First is the husband and wife; next come the parents of the family, the parents of the tribe, and then the parents of a people. Thus, the scope increases. What this means is that based on the center that has inherited the tradition of True Parents from the beginning, the parents are the parents of a family, parents of a tribe, parents of a people, parents of a nation, and parents of the world. Later on, the nation will become the central entity based on this realm of parents and give rise to a world centered on that nation. (118-267, 1982.6.13)

Since you have become a tribal messiah, you have inherited the right of the first son and right of the parent. You are working to find the nation which can inherit the right of the first son and the right of the parent, and which can connect with the right of kingship. When you eventually recover Korea, all

nations of the world will be recovered. This is the final stage. The logical conclusion according to the Principle brings us back to this point, after which, there is nothing more.

In the future, we can use as a bulwark the ideology of True Parents, True Teacher and True Owner. These three roles form the Three Subjects Principle. True Father and True Mother are True Teachers by virtue of their true love. They have taught something this world does not know, including heavenly secrets and earthly secrets in full detail. This is why they are the best among all teachers. This is how God is. Furthermore, God is the Lord of lords. I am also the Lord of lords. When the right of kingship is restored, the Lord of lords will appear. What, then, is the Three Subjects Principle.? It is the ideology of the True Parent, the True Teacher and the True Owner. This is why the Unification Church has True Parents at its center.

It is the same with the nation. A nation has a hierarchy with the president at the center. In the organization of a nation there is the ministry of education, which is a group of true teachers. The administration is like the owner of the nervous system. Because the entire system of nerves converges upon the administration, it should be in the position of the owner. The president at the top is the master of the nation. All of this is incorporated into the three-subject ideology.

Hence, True Parents always stand in the vertical position while the education ministry and administration are in a reciprocal relationship with each other. These relationships can be compared to that of Cain and Abel. When Cain and Abel become completely one, this right of kingship will become an eternal and indestructible right of kingship. Kim Il-sung has his own version of three-subject ideology, which is autonomy, creativity, and consciousness. However, this is human-centered; it cannot be considered a complete ideology, for it lacks the doctrine of the Original Being. They do not know God. With this understanding, you should march forward with strength. (208-341, 1990.11.21)

Now the time has come when you can develop a vision for the nation. It is an amazing fact that you can stand in the front line as a fighter for sake of the independence and deliverance of the nation. Those who do this become representatives of human history and the history of the universe. When God sees this, how proud and content He will feel!

It is also an amazing fact that True Parents have appeared on this earth. We have severed that which has come from the false parents. Based on this accomplishment, we want to bring everyone through the gate to the True Parents on the opposite side. Accordingly, we aim to turn the path to hell back toward heaven.

Without passing through the gate of the True Parents, you cannot enter the Heavenly Kingdom. However, Christianity does not have this gate. Only the Unification Church does. Passing through this gate will enable you to go

directly to the Kingdom of Heaven. In return, however, you must completely clear up your past. You should not even remember the names of the friends you have known. Married women should not be thinking of the man they first loved. They must reach the point of completely forgetting him. Those who think about how they lived in the past cannot enter the Heavenly Kingdom.

This is why we must put together all our devoted effort to focus our thoughts solely on True Parents and God. If something else is mixed in, you will not be able to travel in a straight line. You will not be able to walk the path of love. Just because you have received the Blessing on earth does not mean that everything is finished. You must also pass through a church-level Blessing, a national-level Blessing and ultimately a world-level Blessing. You will need to go through these three stages. Why? So that you can effectively reach the point of total self-denial. Just because you have sons and daughters does not mean that they are your possessions. You must reach the point of total self-denial. These sons and daughters belong to God and True Parents. (208-342, 1990.11.21)

CHAPTER SIX

True Parents and Us

Section 1. The Essence of the Teachings of the Family Federation

1.1. The philosophy of the Parents

To be a child of filial piety, you should know what kind of people your parents are. Do you really know what kind of people they are? Have you ever considered whether your knowledge of your parents comes just from the teachings you have received, or do you truly know them? You have come to the Unification Church and are walking the path of sons and daughters of filial piety. But you used to be little babies with dirty diapers. You used to be little babies biting and sucking your mother's milk. You grew up that way, receiving your parents' love. If there is a philosophy which is the best one in this world, it must be the parent-centered philosophy. Parent-centered philosophy is the best. You are not little children anymore. You all must learn. This is what parents want.

Although you were born from Mother's womb, you are still adopted sons and daughters, so you must be loyal to those parents. When you become a parent yourself, a four-position foundation is created. You can never have heavenly children all by yourself; having heavenly children clearly requires that heavenly parents appear first.

For these heavenly parents to come, the eldest son must come first. Since the elder son Cain, betrayed the heavenly way, the eldest son must walk Cain's course in reverse and rise to the position representing God. The four-position foundation must then be established. Before that point, you are all babies. No matter how great you may be in the world, you should have a heart like that of a baby. This way, you have to be born again through Mother's womb and Father's bone. (16-191, 1966.3.22)

Although religions differ from each other, they have been prepared to follow a path of goodness. They will surely continue. However, religions that insist that only their way is correct are losing power because the connection of heart could not take place in the direct dominion… This is because a period remained that corresponded to the seven-year course that began from the formation level of the completion stage and went through the growth level of the completion stage and the completion level of the comple-

tion stage; thus we have entered the stage at which we can retrieve those who had fallen away from the original line in the indirect dominion so they may cross back over the line into the direct dominion. This cannot happen without True Parents being at the center. Now there is no ideology you need other than the ideology of True Parents. There is nothing else. We should not accept anyone's unrighteous ideology. I cannot endorse Kim Il-sung's ideology or anyone else's. There is only one ideology, that of the True Parents. (136-51, 1985.12.20)

1.2. True families determine the center of the universe

When True Parents appear, a true family will be established, and a true person's purpose can be realized. True Parents is the name that can be praised eternally from the past, to the present and on into the future. The fact that the True Parents have appeared on this earth, that True Parents are here, is the most joyful gospel of all gospels. Humankind these days is wicked. Due to the power of evil, a realm of death is emerging, and the world cannot find any direction. The establishment of True Parents is the fruit of God's historical work of over six thousand years., In this age, when countless people are wandering around aimlessly, True Parents are the ones who have appeared as a central model to find their destination for them and show them the direction to take. With the advent of the name True Parents, the eternal heavenly kingdom of the future begins, a world that reflects God's ideal at the time of creation in the Garden of Eden. This was true in the past; it is true in this age, and it will be so in the future. Therefore, you should know that, judging from all of history, encompassing the past, present and future, the True Parents, who have appeared on earth are the central point that determines the center of the universe. History starts anew from here, becomes ordered from here and bears fruit from here. It is because history bears fruit here that the past resurrects here. The world becomes ordered as one world and a new Kingdom of Heaven is realized.

Through the historical ages until now, where have the hopes of humankind resided? Their hopes have resided in the future. In other words, humankind has been thinking of hope only as something belonging to the future. Where is humankind going? We are going towards the one world that is to be realized in the future. Looking to the future, we have been seeking one world. There will be rejoicing if a way is found for True Parents to be welcomed among false humankind. So what is the desire of humankind? It is to meet True Parents. True Parents are the highest hope of humankind. When True Parents appear, the historical tradition will be realized at that time, rather than in the future. Where True Parents appear is the starting point of the fulfillment of history, rather than the starting point of just seeking that fulfillment. In other words, it is not the beginning point of hope but of the fulfillment of hope. (44-132, 1971.5.6)

What kind of family is the family of True Parents? The family of True Parents is a fruit of history, the center of the age, and the origin of the future. Hence, when our world becomes the heavenly kingdom of hope in the future, True Parents' entire lives will be the origin of its traditions. This is the original source of the national ideology. Also, this is the original point from which to establish that world. You should always establish the three-generation realm with True Parents, based on the connection as children of True Parents. The three generations are God, Parents and you. Horizontally, there are also three generations: I myself, my own children and you. Heaven and earth will not be unified until these three generations have been completed. (44-169, 1971.5.6)

The family is the heavenly base. You must firmly settle in a family. You should firmly settle in a family and decide the direction in which you will go. Centering on True Parents and God, all families should put up True Parents' picture, and your four-position foundation should bow there together. Three generations must offer a bow. The four position foundation involves three generations. Three generations – grandfather and grandmother, mother and father, and children – should offer a bow. After establishing a four position foundation, when you bow down in the name of True Parents this is not within the fallen domain. You will be in the realm of liberation because God has direct dominion over you. All the spirits in the heavenly world will come to earth and protect you just as the archangel was meant to protect Adam's family. We have entered such an age. In the past, the Cain domain was the spirit world and the Abel domain was the earth. Abel was being used because it was the time when Abel had to sacrifice to rescue Cain. But now, since the right of the eldest son has been restored, the spirit world is the angelic world and today's Unification Church families constitute the Adam domain; so the spirit world is meant to support the Adam domain and not use it for its own advantage. Through this, the land wherein Satan can interfere and operate is disappearing. There is no room for him. Satan is being expelled. When we march forward strongly and boldly, without sacrificing our standards of being the forefront even by one step and keep a progressive attitude and unwavering standard, the devil's forces will fall off a cliff. Let's light a fire under each family. (211-349, 1991.1.1)

1.3. God's love and True Parents' love

God's love is the love of a vertical parent, and True Parents' love is the love of horizontal parents. Since you are the people that have inherited these, your minds are the fruit of the tradition that has received the love of the vertical God and parents. Likewise your bodies are the fruit of the tradition that have received the love of horizontal True Parents. In order for these fruits to form the horizontal basis of a family and form a

sphere with a vertical center you need to be a husband or a wife and have children. So it is a sin not to bear children. You should not be a childless person. Is there flesh without bone? No, because it would have nowhere to attach itself. (184-309, 1989.1.1)

God's masculine and feminine characteristics are separated into the forms of Adam and Eve. What unites them and makes them one again? Love. As they separate and reunite, God can experience how strong the love is that is contained within Himself. Otherwise, He would not know. Although God has love within Himself, He does not experience that love. He knows about it only through meeting a partner. Through people, He feels the love that is inside Himself. God is the vertical Father, and Adam and Eve are parents centered on horizontal true love. (185-187, 1989.1.8)

God is the bone of love. God's love is like the bone and human love is like the flesh. The bone and flesh become one in order to take shape. This is the principle. Just as you have bones, God's love is the love that is like the bone. True Parents' love is the love that is like the flesh. (181-206, 1988.10.3)

1.4. Parents and family members

In our Unification Church, we call our church members family members. Until today, no one has helped us understand this term "family member." Family members do not exist separately from a family. Having family members means there must be a family the existence of a family means there must be brothers and sisters, and the existence of brothers and sisters means there must be parents. In Christianity, religious people use words such as "church members" and "believers," but they have not been able to use the term "family member." Today, people are proclaiming the idea of one great global family, but building a great family requires the presence of parents who can be the father and mother of that great family. The one who comes as such a parent is none other than the Messiah.

Among the family members of the Unification Church today, there are members who are true members and those who are the opposite. There are also family members standing in the midway position. What kind of person is a true family member, one with the name of "family member" in the sense of the heavenly family established by God? This is the question. To be a family member, one first needs to have parents. Also, to be brothers and sisters one needs to have parents. The principle is that although there may be many brothers and sisters, there can be only one set of parents. In other words, although there are many family members, there is only one head of the family. Then, who is the center of those parents? Who is the head of the family? They cannot be people who are self-centered heads of families or self-centered parents. They are parents who focus on the brothers and sisters, on the family members. Can they connect with evil in the evil world? They

must have nothing to do with evil. If they are parents and a family head living in the way of true goodness, will they mainly serve their family or the Korean people? No. They should be the parents of all humankind and the central point for the one great family. Then, who can stand in the position of the owner, parents, and center? God, who has created heaven and earth, should stand there. Who should stand there next? The Savior, the representative of God who can bring order to the evil world, should stand there. Thus, a true family can be realized only when we have the Savior, who has become one with God, as our parents on earth. Only those who truly attend the Savior can become true children and true brothers and sisters. (15-294, 1965.12.7)

You should only walk the path that conforms to God's will. You should become brothers and sisters with people who are not actually your brothers and sisters, and follow parents who are not actually your parents. The Unification Church is making a movement that goes beyond the affections of flesh and blood. This movement focuses on God and is formed of brothers and sisters who are not actual brothers and sisters attending parents who are not their actual parents. A new culture will be created as we transcend races and the world. How are we able to do this? Through what aspect of God can we do this? Through God's power of life? Through His creative ability? Through His wisdom? Through His knowledge? No. It is possible only through God's love. (83-177, 1976.2.8)

Section 2. The Value of Working with True Parents while They are on Earth

In this world, there cannot be two sets of True Parents. In North Korea, they call Kim Il-sung "Father," and in the Unification Church you also call me Father. But the father of the Unification Church and the father of North Korea are qualitatively different. They are confronting each other: both are saying they are the parent. Also, God and Satan are fighting, each claiming a parent as their own. Who should render public judgment over this matter? Human beings should. Human beings should choose their parents, saying, "Our parents should be such and such people." They should make the decision, saying, "The fallen parents are evil parents for this reason, and good parents are good parents for this reason. Since it is God, not Satan, who has been seeking good parents, God is the father of the good parents." So where does everything come down to? It all comes down to the point where we meet True Parents.

There cannot be two sets of parents. When parents die, do they come back after a thousand years? Since the one appearance of the Parents of humankind is the desire of history, the desire of nations, the desire of ideologies, and the desire of the providence, the time of their appearance is an unprecedented and unrepeatable time. It is the pinnacle that comes only once in history. If it is narrow, how narrow is it? From the viewpoint of the eternal world, a person's

lifespan is like the time required to take one breath. I do not know if you are lucky or blessed, but you have managed to live in this era, encounter this one time, and join the Unification Church. How did you come to be here? Countless ancestors of yours devoted their efforts again and again until they could bring you to this place. Myriads of people perished and died when goodness was trampled upon, but the connections between these countless people turned around and around and reached heaven, rising like a high mountain where the sun rises. You are the ones who have followed the sunlight and gathered there.

When the conditions for love emerge in human history, it will be for the first time. It will establish the point from which the value of life can be bestowed. There is no other time when the sovereignty of the nation and world can be acknowledged to have a higher value. This time is the origin of history, the focus of hope, the starting point of all blessings, and the source of eternal life. It is that kind of era. The fallen world has been seeking hope for the future; this time establishes the eternal standard of hope in the future. Because you live in such a time, you should deeply learn the heart of this era and thereby save the world. It is that kind of time. For this reason, the True Parents, who come as the substance of that summit, have to live according to the norms through which they can belong to the place of True Parents' heart. I do not think you understand this. What should those parents do? They should be different from evil parents because they are good parents.

How should they relate to evil children? They will have to treat them based on a deeper heart than any parents in history have ever had. Even when they face a child with a miserable fate, instead of stumbling over him they should run to him in tears, beg him and comfort him to resolve the sorrow of tens of thousands of ages. They should cry their hearts out while acknowledging their mutual error in order to avoid separation. I am saying people should be like this if they are to be true parents. They are different. As parents, this is how their attitude of heart should be. What attitude of heart and standard of behavior should the children have who can receive such parents have? They need to have those. They should be representatives of the children of filial piety from all nations. Just as each nation's champion runs in a world marathon event, they should be champions chosen by their tribe. What are they champions of? They are champions of practicing filial piety and loyalty. You should be such a group of champions. In the sense that children should be this way and parents should be that way, the one known as Rev. Moon in the Unification Church has a different root.

If you miss this time, you will have deep regrets for hundreds of millions of years. Can you buy this opportunity with money? Can you buy it with knowledge? Can you match it with something you have? You absolutely cannot. Even if you bear the burden of the world, peo-

ple, tribe and family who are connected to you all at once, can you inherit this? Again, no, you cannot. This time is so precious that even if the communist world and democratic world were allowed to perish, this opportunity would not be allowed to come to nought. God would think that even if all humankind were sacrificed, this opportunity should not be destroyed. This is what we should think. There is no way you can say all you want to say and stand in such a focal position. There is no way you can say all you want to say and still be a child of filial piety. There is no way you can say all you want to say and do all you want to do and still become a patriot. (51-354, 1971.12.5)

What is the current situation? You are living in the same age as True Parents. You only get this chance once in a lifetime. Among the many currents of history, it is a period that can be compared with the tastiest part of a fish. (46-167, 1971.8.13)

From the viewpoint of God's will, although God wants the most important church in Korea to pray and make wishes as God's representatives, they are now reduced to kneeling down in the snow and praying to God with loud wailing instead of holding worship, so that He will save their pitiful church or temple. You should know that establishing this Unification Church has been a history of sorrows in the providence. But now nations are welcoming us. In America, we are an issue that concerns the whole nation. It is the same in Japan and in Europe. The world has finally entered the time when people can think of our Blessed Families as lighthouses of hope, saying they are model families among humankind and the path to preventing family breakdown and youth promiscuity.

You should know how much blood and flesh was cut from me and how many sorrowful, tearful situations I passed through before this came to be. Nobody can separate the blessed couples. God wants them. To bring even one couple to the Blessing, God used the efforts of many of their blood relatives to lead them to an encounter with me. This is not coincidence. It is a historic event. It is an amazing thing that you are alive at the same time as True Parents, that you are breathing the same air and living together with them in this age on earth. More than this, it is remarkable that you have inherited the foundation of the Blessing. Being a millionaire is not important. Would the Unification Church as it is today have come into being if I had been like you? Everywhere I went, I went straight to prison. I entered prison by the front gate and left by the back gate. In finding the family I can live in, the church I can stay in, and the tribe I can stay with, I have now finished securing a global foundation. In other words, I have finished setting up the external conditions.

I have finished creating more than one hundred chapters of the Professors' World Peace Academy, a forum for global scholars. I have created media orga-

nizations and a summit council that can move the world. Furthermore, by bringing together the religious world, representing the mind, and the political world, representing the body, I have created the Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace and the Federation for World Peace. I am doing these things all alone because there was no way to pioneer a path for humankind to survive and no way to advance toward a peaceful world without creating my own mind-body unity. In other words, I am doing this alone even though I face opposition. (211-336, 1991.1.1)

Section 3. True Parents' Effort and Us

3.1. We absolutely need True Parents

The True Parents are needed to establish conditions of indemnity. We are to inherit their foundation based on the standard of having become one in love. (137-116, 1985.12.24)

America is like my enemy, but while I was in prison I established six organizations to save America, beginning with the *Washington Times* newspaper. A person in the secular world would have sought revenge, but I did not. One must give love. We absolutely need True Parents for three reasons – to complete restoration through indemnity, to become one in true love, and to receive rebirth based on the change of lineage. (137-113, 1985.12.24)

3.2. We are a branch engrafted to True Parents

Originally, human beings, as horizontal parents, were supposed to make a joyful beginning of love with God as the vertical parent. But Satan invaded that moment. So now it is necessary to take it back again and reconnect it, so that you will become the sons and daughters of True Parents. Since you are wild olive trees, you need to receive a branch of the true olive tree and be engrafted with it. Religions are meant to do the work of engrafting. This is Christian thought. This is why it is said that the marriage feast of the bride and bridegroom must occur on earth. (58-218, 1972.6.11)

The hope of humankind is to meet True Parents. Meeting True Parents is the fruit of history, the center of this age, and the foundation upon which to begin the future. You who are engrafted to them are becoming branches. Until now, all the hopes of the historical ages have focused on the future, but a connection with True Parents during one's lifetime comes only once in eternity. It is a precious chance that comes only once. Your ancestors could not have it, nor will your descendants. (46-167, 1971.8.13)

Through the Fall, Satan took away all humankind. He carried them all off to hell. From among those who were taken away God separates people out one by one. This world used to be a wild olive tree in the satanic world, but God has turned it into a heavenly olive tree. God

made Christianity in the democratic world be a wild olive tree on the heavenly side, so it could lead the world. When the satanic world weakens and the Christian cultural realm is established, the Lord will come at his Second Advent, cut them off all at once, engraft them completely, make them one, and turn them around. Today, the left wing has perished, and the right wing has almost collapsed. Who brought this about? God and True Parents did. Families who have become one with True Parents inherited True Parents' path, so they should be strong and courageous wherever they are in the world. Then, just as God and this universe protect me, it will protect them, and winning the heart of a nation will be no problem.

If someone asks you where you go to church, proudly tell them that you are a Unification Church member. "We belong to True Parents. We are True Parents' sons and daughters." Please do not fight. By fighting you are acknowledging Satan. So go around proclaiming these things. Say to them, "We are number one Moonies, number one children of God!" Then Satan will not be able to accuse you. Carry such thoughts firmly with you. (201-128, 1990.3.27)

The final destination of God's will is the family. Without the family, God has nowhere to settle. Since all families prosper when they have True Parents as their center, without families nothing can be achieved. Comparing this with a tree, it is like the branches spreading out from the trunk as the center. If you cut a branch and plant it in the ground, the tree multiplies. The ones who are to accomplish such a mission of the branches are the tribal messiahs. As tree branches grow bigger in all four directions, the central root grows bigger as well. The central root grows in proportion to the growth of the branches. As it grows horizontally, it also grows vertically. When the root grows long this way by sacrificing the horizontal standard, the branches also go up all the way. When you work hard for God's will, things follow along like this. At the same time, since the power that has extended horizontally becomes condensed, we can conclude that we can connect to the cosmos through a life lived for the sake of others. So if a husband and wife live a life of horizontally serving, using the vertical standard that has God as its center, the realm of cosmic unity is automatically achieved. If they become one this way, they will necessarily rotate. Although they rotate, they do not fall down. They do not fall down because they have the horizontal standard. They rotate on the axis. They must rotate.

Movement occurs when centrifugal and centripetal forces become one. If you reach the state of perfect self-effacement, things will automatically rotate. When you start rotating, the axis goes up. When it comes down, an automatic reaction occurs. So it moves up and down, like taking a breath. When a person in such a perfected form establishes a family in the heavenly world, such a foundation will keep them from falling off. They can eternally live together

with True Parents. Thus, when you create resonance in heart with True Parents, this standard of deep experience in life becomes a foundation for the eternal world of heart. Unification Church members live together with True Parents and God. They are born with the love of True Parents. Since love makes an eternal connection, the connection of love cannot be cut. Until the day you die, you cannot forget about love. Even when parents die, they die with a heart of love for their sons and daughters. It is the same with the husband and wife. There is no one who forgets about love before he dies. Love goes beyond death and becomes connected to eternity. This is why you, a man or woman who have received life through love, cannot forget your parents who are the fundamental root of love. If your parents are the root and you are the trunk, your sons and daughters are the buds. When they grow together, they will extend to the realm of the tribe, people and nation. (218-127, 1991.7.14)

3.3. True Parents' investment for our sake

Do you think it was easy or difficult for True Parents to give birth to the true children? How difficult do you think it is to recover what has been lost? I have been pushing forward even when individuals, families and entire tribes, peoples, nations, the world, heaven and earth, and the spirit world were opposing me. Do you think I did this for commercial profit? Why do you think I did it? I did it because I was trying to find love. Normally, you should know that with your current qualifications you cannot stand here. Actually, I should kick you away at the front door even if you came here a hundred or a thousand times! Nevertheless, I came here to speak to you. I am taking all the tough persecution upon myself. You are blaming me for your mistakes. In America, I have done nothing that caused me to deserve to be cursed or opposed, but I am still being cursed because of your faults. If this happened in ordinary society, I would abandon you, but I have not been able to do so. As for the court case in the United States, I did not have to return there. I could have just let it be; and yet still I came back for your sake. Without me, how much will you be torn apart? So I am protecting you by being struck. (116-113, 1981.12.27)

3.4. True Parents' expectations of us

In the Unification Church there are many different kinds of people: Western people, Eastern people, people of mixed colors and so forth. What did you come together here to do? Why did you come? Even if you meet me, all I can give you is curses. I only have insults to give you, but you still like it and come here. Why is that? You are gathering here in search of love. You are coming for true love. You know the taste. It is like bees; once they taste the nectar in a flower, they will follow the fragrance of the flowers even for hundreds of kilometers without feel-

ing that the distance is too great. It is not easy to be True Parents. I would willingly hand over the authority of the True Parents, so if there is some representative here who wants to take it, please step forward. I never thought about becoming the True Parent, but as it turned out, I could not avoid taking responsibility for the Unification Church. And so on the way, I found myself as the True Parent.

If I had known from the beginning that I would be the True Parent, it is reasonable to say that everyone would have known it. Rather, I was digging into the fundamental problem of human life without knowing it, and came all the way here as a result. As I was disentangling these complications, the liberation of True Parents took place and I came to know that God needs liberation. Since God was liberated through me, He cannot help but absolutely love me. What have you done after meeting True Parents? I am asking you, what have you accomplished? Until now, I have gone through the family, tribe, and race, organizing individuals, families, and tribes while being beaten up in the devil's world. Our Blessed Families have organized a tribe. This is global. Now the satanic world cannot take them away and do as it pleases with them. Why? When they observe closely, our way of life is very good. Today Eastern and Western people fight, and even if they do get together, they divorce after a short time. In contrast, our Blessed Families are living together well after ten years, twenty years, or however long. (211-323, 1991.1.1)

3.5. The standard we should meet

True brothers and sisters, true husband and wife, and true parents who embody the three subjects principle should appear in your family. They are that principle's incarnation. You have to be true brothers and sisters to become a true husband or wife, do you not? And a true husband and wife have to appear in order for true parents to appear. When you stand in the position of true parents, you, of course, become a true husband or wife, and, furthermore, true children appear. True children stand in the position of object partners, becoming one with their parents' consciousness and subject philosophy. Through love, they become one. Only love can bring these things into harmony. All elements and tiny creatures follow the path of love; they move towards the cells that can come into direct contact with the love that creates oneness with God – that is, human beings. So love requires sacrifice. You need to invest yourself. Because of the tradition of investing all of one's life and possessions, entities at a lower level seek to invest their entire selves in service to those at higher levels. Thus, Darwin's theory of evolution is not true but the logic of absorption through love can explain this. When a tiny creature serves by being absorbed as an element used to create beings of a higher order, how much will their value increase? (204-129, 1990.7.1)

What kind of religion will remain in the end? It is the religion of the True Parents. This is why I declared that the

True Parents' religion must appear. I have declared that a religion does not become the religion of the True Parents just because it has a long history. I have declared that this religion is the servant-level religion, the religion at the level of the child by a concubine. This was the content of my official speech. Even though I declare, "You should know that the person who received the mission of the religion of the True Parents is Rev. Moon, who is delivering the keynote speech for this conference at this podium," the world is quiet. Christians are making a big fuss, discussing the rumor that I am the returning Lord. Western society has concluded that if the Lord is coming as a human being, there is no one but me. Do you think so, too? Yet instead you are saying, "People say Rev. Moon is the returning Lord, but he is just like me, speaking Korean and so forth. How does he speak so fast?" are you not? I speak fast because I am trying to cope with a very busy schedule. I have to speak rapidly to catch things that are running away. So I studied how to talk fast. In Japanese and English, too, nobody can match me. Then, is it a good thing that you have met me, or not? Those who feel it is good that they have met me must do well. (214-175, 1991.2.2)

Section 4. Grace and Self-Realization

4.1. True Parents is a term that has appeared for the first time

For God's will to be realized, parents must come; not fallen parents, but True Parents. You cannot find True Parents from the position of not having thought about it. This is not that kind of matter. This is a term that has appeared in history for the first time. Even a revolution does not compare with this fact. This is a miraculous and great event, unprecedented in history. The fact that you have come to learn the words True Parents and say the word "true" is possible because they have appeared with the love that surpasses the love of the countless parents who have come and passed away until now. Theirs is a love that cannot exist more than once. You can say the words True Parents because they have such a standard. The love relationship with them at this time represents the highest standard. If the love of God exists, a person can finally receive God's love for the first time. This is the place of the highest ideal that cannot be imagined even by Jesus, who already came and left. Until this point was reached, the price was paid in the course of history. Satan, knowing that he would be completely defeated once True Parents appeared, tried to prevent that from occurring and to prevent that time from coming. As the false parent, he tried to accomplish this by sacrificing countless people and making them pay a price in blood by any means. Terrible sacrifices were made up until today. These have been the works of Satan who sacrificed all those believers who tried to uphold this philosophy and follow this path as individuals, families, ethnic peoples, nations and the world. You should know what a terrible price in blood was paid by our ancestors

who were sacrificed, and by our brothers and sisters who sought goodness and pursued the way of truth and the path to the True Parents? (67-225, 1973.6.27)

4.2. The appearance of True Parents is the greatest news

If you want to find a utopian world, where do you have to go? Without going through the realm of original family love, you have no place else to go. I connected the realm of indirect dominion and the realm of direct dominion by means of God's and True Parents' love. Accordingly, the way opened to go back and forth between the spiritual and physical worlds over a bridge of love. As our Principle explains, the realms of direct dominion and indirect dominion are distinct realms, as God originally created them. Then how can we make them one? This is possible only through true love. The only time they become one is when human beings, Adam and Eve – reach maturity. At that time, true horizontal love automatically appears. When they embrace each other at that point, saying, "Oh, you are my partner," true love appears at the center of that couple. When positively charged love appears in perfection, negatively charged love is bound to appear immediately. When positively charged love comes down to negatively charged love and they engage, they determine the standard of true love. Then it is complete. When true love appears, everything follows automatically. Only true love works for everything. This way, the world is converted into a utopian sphere. Where does true love start? It starts from True Parents. This is the gospel of all gospels. Although there are good words in the world – although husband is a good word and wife is a good word – there is no news better than that of True Parents. In the fallen world a true husband and wife will not appear without True Parents appearing first. (131-187, 1984.5.1)

This True Family was found as a result of experiencing the deepest sorrow of all sorrows, enduring the greatest hardship among all hardships, and paying the highest price in blood of all such payments throughout the course of history. To resolve historical sorrow, such miserable indemnity conditions had to be made in history. The price paid through people's deaths throughout the course of history is redeemed when the True Family is found. Accordingly, the True Family's appearance on earth is a cause for unparalleled joy and value. For such a true family to come about, there have to be True Parents. At the same time as True Parents, a true husband and wife must emerge. Becoming a true couple, they must give birth to true children. These True Parents should have no condition permitting Satan to accuse.

A true husband and wife should not fall into the condition of providing a basis for Satan's accusation, and then groan in travail. The children in a true family cannot be the sons and daughters of a true family if they leave behind some condition to be accused by the satanic world.

You are using the words "True Parents" and know the title True Parents. Nobody in history has been able to call out or think about the name True Parents. But today you are in the glorious position of being able to call their name, know them and attend them. So you are in a happier and nobler position than anyone in history. Until now, those seeking the True Parents have offered much hard work and a tremendous amount of sacrifice to lay the foundation for their victory. Considering this, you should know that the words True Parents portend the greatest blessing for humankind today. History is being brought under control through the True Parents. True Parents are the starting point of our advancement toward a new world. True Parents determine the internal conditions that can subjugate Satan. In them, the central couple is finally defined who can liberate God by conquering Satan, the one who is occupying the external world.

Therefore, you should first be thankful for this amazing grace by which you can live together with True Parents, receiving and carrying out their instructions. If there should be a way for you to align yourselves with True Parents' path, even at the sacrifice of your lives, there should be nothing that makes you happier. If a soldier marches toward the enemy camp in accordance with True Parents' command, he will be a holy soldier standing on the highest summit of hope desired by humankind, in full view of heaven and earth and drawing the attention of history. If you are in the position to fight on behalf of True Parents' heart or on behalf of the nation and people, this heart will enable the nation and people to open the gate of the garden of happiness for the first time. The nation and people of hope who can march in and join in the glory of victory will appear. Considering all this, you should realize on your own, that you who are upholding the flag of True Parents' heart are the flag bearers who can revive history and judge the world of death again. (43-142, 1971.4.29)

4.3. The future secured through True Parents

The title True Parents used in the Unification Church is a great one. Of course, the content of the Principle is very deep. It can ensure one's confidence in the future, and give meaning to it. Also, if there is an original point that can guarantee value on the stage of real life, it comes from these words. So, what do we have to do? We must unite. With whom should we become one? You should not become one with yourself as the center. Nor should you try to become one with your family at the center by pulling in True Parents. On the contrary, you should be pulled by True Parents. In being pulled, you should not be pulled just by yourself, but take your parents and husband or wife together with you. Moreover, you should take your children with you and even your material possessions. You should become one in this way. (35-274, 1970.10.25)

4.4. The value of True Parents

There is one focal point to the purpose of God's providence. It is precisely the point where God's ideal is realized, where we can meet the lost parents, the lost True Parents. This foundation is thus the center of everything. That position is known as the True Parents. There have been many positions in history, but this is the most valuable one. Think about how important it is. All the saints have fought for this foundation. God considers it important, as do all the spirits in the spirit world. So all the people on this earth should also understand its importance. You have not understood its true value. It cannot be exchanged even for thousands of pieces of land. It cannot be exchanged for a diamond as wide as a stretch of land. You would not be able to attain it even if you offered the United States to God as a sacrificial offering.

How happy would you be if you can see this place directly with your own eyes! How miserable you will be if you cannot see it! You should think deeply about this again. God's eyes and the eyes of all spirits and all people must be focused on this. To look at history from this point of view, there has been no history. There is nothing in history that connects with this. Since this place is the place of the first human ancestors before the Fall, there can be no fallen history after it. A new beginning starts from this point. In other words, the center of everything, the substance of everything, and the result of everything will begin from here. Those who can participate in this will be the first winners on earth. From this, we can start forming a family centering on God's love. We can defeat the sovereignty of Satan and build a new, heavenly kingdom on earth. Moreover, the fruits of history will emerge from this point. It will be the center point of the entire world, the starting point of the future. The culmination of all past history will occur, the fulfillment of present history will be preserved, and the completion of the future world will begin. If you take hold of this point, this place, you, as a human being, can be the conqueror of everything. Then, how great the value of this place must be! How splendid it will be, how much you will love it, and how much you will praise it, respect it, and come to like it! This place has to be the highest place. It is unacceptable if it is not placed in the highest position in history. All those great people, however great they were, cannot compare with this. When you see it, you will surely be deeply moved by joy.

Have you ever danced in a dream while you are asleep? Every time you come to think of this place, this position, you will have that kind of feeling and be able to dance even during your sleep. Your heart should be drawn to this place more than to any other places, your life, or anything else. You should want to see it again, want to live with it, and feel that you cannot live without it. (52-94, 1971.12.23)

If you want to become the parent, heaven and earth must respond in har-

mony. You must go to the heavenly world and win over God. Adam turned reality into a non-reality by saying "Yes" to something that God said "No" to. For this reason, without acknowledging a non-reality as a reality, regaining the original standard will not be possible. Whoever can physically resolve all problems in the process to become True Parents in both heaven and on earth brightens heaven and earth, resolves all the complex issues of history, and removes the nail embedded in God's heart. The liberation of love desired by God results in rejoicing, dancing, and laughing while embracing and loving these sons and daughters. Great shouts of victory, will rise up from every being filled with tremendous joy, to resound throughout all of creation and all of heaven and earth.

Without suggesting something affirmative in the face of denial, the parent cannot come to the earth. How serious this is! In the heavenly world, Confucius, Buddha and Jesus get together to perform this kind of test. God pushes this aside and negotiates this Himself. In God's ideal of creation, there is a heart that cannot be expressed in words. Adam should realize this by himself in the period of perfection and bring the devil to surrender. He should be the sovereign of liberation. Adam is the ruler of all nations, the master of salvation, and the one who can be the first son among all brothers and sisters. The opposition of the satanic world put the spirit world into chaos for forty days. Since God is the judge, he must receive fair judgement from God. It was here that I received the verdict of victory and appeared on the earth. (215-86, 1991.2.6)

4.5. We should be grateful

How can we offer gratitude to God? How can we offer gratitude to our True Parents? How can we offer gratitude to our church? How can you show gratitude for being re-created? After the process I have been through, a true family will appear. At the next stage, a true tribe will appear, and at the next stage, a true nation, then a true world, a true universe, and a true cosmos; at the next stage up, God appears. This is our final goal. After the Fall, human beings inherited Satan's lineage. This is the problem. For countless generations, instead of receiving God's lineage, humankind received Satan's lineage. So how can we eliminate this satanic lineage? I am asking you how can we eliminate the dirty lineage Adam and Eve inherited from the Fall? True Parents are the ones who have come with true love, true life and true lineage in order to eliminate it. They have been raising up lives using Satan's lineage as fertilizer.

But in the new age of resurrection, the body grows based on God's love, life, and lineage and uses true love as fertilizer. One side disappears and the other prospers. From that point, God is present with you and Satan is separated away forever. No one knows the pain that is in God's heart. We know this only because God appeared in history, and through me here, revealed this profound mission; otherwise, we would not know it.

It is truly amazing. Even Jesus did not know it; or even if he did know it, he could not say what was in his heart. Also, no religious leaders have been aware of this hidden secret of the universe. I have come here before the world to reveal the secrets of the universe for the first time in history. From now on, we should turn our direction from the individual foundation to the national foundation. If the leader of a nation repents of his past and turns around, God forgives him. This is part of God's new tradition and signals a new lineage. Otherwise, we cannot separate from Satan. This also signifies the ceremony of the transfer of lineage that takes place before the Blessing Ceremony of the Unification Church.

In the very beginning, because of the Fall, true love, true life and true lineage became connected to dirty things in the satanic world… Now we are connected horizontally to God's true love, true life and true lineage. This means a conversion of 180 degrees. We cannot put our hopes in America or this world, which are connected to the satanic side. All the people of the world have followed the most wicked parents on the satanic side since the beginning. But now, for the first time, the direction has been turned 180 degrees. This is the starting point and the zero point. In this place, there is no meaning, no existence, no concept, no tradition and no culture. This is re-creation. God first created all things in the natural environment and created human beings by combining soil, water and air. At that time, human beings had no fixed concepts. It was a zero point. Today, we are turning around 180 degrees from Satan's tradition. We are turning 180 degrees and becoming reborn. To be reborn is to be born again. The first to accomplish this rebirth is not the nation, but the parents. Brothers and sisters are next. Husband and wife are third and the children are fourth. God wants three generations but has not had them. The first generation is God, the second generation is Adam and Eve, and yet God has not had the third generation until now. Humankind has not been multiplying under God, but has belonged only to Satan. Satan is an enemy of love. How can this lineage be eliminated? You are not born as a Japanese or as a citizen of any other nation, but as one of God's people.

What should our lives be focused on? God's love, God's life and God's lineage – these three roots are the standard. So, what should you be grateful for? Do not offer thanks for living a comfortable life. You must feel grateful for bearing a cross. If the remains of a defeated army are bleeding and rotting with a bad smell, who will make the funeral arrangements? Who will train them and turn them into a regular army? Also, if there is nothing to eat, what should be done? Should they just be killed off? No. You thought that by winning everything would become nice and smooth, but actually you will have to bear a bigger cross. Your time will come after you have resolved all that, after you have rebuilt it. You can live happily only after you have established a new family, a new nation and a new world.

No matter how difficult it may be, if there is a railway to the eternal world, the original hometown, that railway and the railway of your life on this earth must be the same gauge. It must be the same as the railway going to the spirit world. How about you? Do you think the railway of your current life is the same as the railway in the spirit world? Can you run straight to God as you are? True Parents are needed in order to make the railway the same. (215-171, 1991.2.17)

4.6. Our connection with True Parents is destiny

We human beings are one hundred percent foolish, but God, who is more than one hundred percent wise, is our friend, and our ancestors in the infinite spirit world are our companions and supporting army. I am grateful to think about this. I know very well the feeling of taking risks on the front line, like the time David stood in front of Goliath. It is the feeling of courage and confidence. If I fight a hundred wars, I can win a hundred wars because God is protecting me. I have actually become this kind of person because I thought all along, "If you hit me, it is you rather than I who will be shattered." Just as God raised me like this, I have the responsibility to raise you this way. This is why you have to inherit the destiny to become a wise person. This is not an acquired task, but a task that is your destiny. Being True Parents and children of True Parents is a destiny that does not change for eternity. Nobody can separate from this. We must go this path for a thousand years, even ten thousand years. There are not two ways: only one way. There is no other method or some secret way. We all must walk this path. (203-192, 1990.6.24)

4.7. We must carry out our responsibilities

What do we have to do to go through the twelve pearly gates of the spirit world? The question is how many people can we rescue from Satan on earth and help to become heavenly citizens before we enter the spirit world. To do this, we must shed blood, sweat and tears based on a heart of true love for the sake of re-creation. You cannot bring your own people to the heavenly kingdom without investing a higher heart than that of satanic parents, husband, wife, and children, and walking the course of shedding blood, sweat and tears. You must understand that all the conditions that enable you to come close to God and that position of glory in the other world will be determined in proportion to the number of people you have rescued. Throughout my life, I have lived not only for the nation but also for the world. Why? Even those who are in the spirit world should receive benefits from True Parents. On the first of February, while I was in Danbury prison, I conducted a ceremony to open the gates of hell and heaven. I had to prepare everything for opening those gates. This is why I also had to go to prison. In this way, I have to go through great suffering and pain and climb over the hill of bitter sorrow.

No matter how vast the ocean, I must swim across it. No matter how high the mountains, I have to cross over them, even if they are the snow-covered Himalayas and I have to walk with bare feet. In the same way, I established all the foundations for victory by reaching beyond the misery of history itself. I went through a path of suffering so great that the devil himself could not follow me, and so he had to fall away. In your homes, your sons and daughters hold a solemn position. They are a second God. The grandfather and grandmother represent the past on behalf of God, the mother and father represent the present age, and the sons and daughters represent the future. We should be able to serve these representatives of the three ages as past, present, and future manifestations of God. Those who deceive their sons and daughters, deceive their wives, deceive their husbands, and deceive their parents will go to hell. The family, nation, and heaven and earth are supposed to be linked through the core of love that lives for the sake of others, the kind of love in which one invests even his life and forgets about it. There is no other way. Restoring many heavenly people with a standard of heart connected with such a core of love is the secret to accomplishing the unification of my country.

Even if you go to another country, you should offer that nation first to heaven, devoting all your effort for that nation so it does not fall behind other nations – as if you were unifying your own country. In the Old Testament Age, all things were offered; in the New Testament Age, the offering was the sons and daughters. In the Completed Testament Age, it is our own couples; and next it is God. Through the Fall, we could not be with God on earth. We separated from God and served Satan, so now we should bring God in and connect everything back together. Therefore, your possessions are not really your own. Things correspond to the Old Testament Age, and sons and daughters correspond to the New Testament Age. In the Old Testament Age, the things of creation were sacrificed to pave the road for the sons and daughters. Today, the returning Lord, the True Parent, suffers here to bring God to this earth. Since human beings brought Satan to earth, it has been made into hell. We must bring God here. We must do this through true love. Re-creation is accomplished through the origin of true love that invests and invests and forgets about it. All things, children, and one's own self that can serve God must be linked through true love and acknowledged as possessions of God. When these are connected to true love, you will receive your share again and become connected to the age of children's possessions. These will be distributed for ownership to mother, father,and children. (211-352, 1991.01.01)

Section 5. What We Need to Do

5.1. Our responsibilities

You are each walking the path of restoration as an individual, but you are not walking it individually. You are always

walking that path on behalf of True Parents. Otherwise, you will not be able to prepare True Parents' victorious foundation at the tribal, ethnic, or national levels. For you to proceed correctly on behalf of True Parents, if True Parents are going out to establish the worldwide spiritual standard of victory, you should go out to establish the national standard of victory. You should know this clearly. Now that True Parents' standard of victory is established spiritually, it must be established on earth. You are going beyond the level of one people, carrying out True Parents' responsibility on their behalf. To explain this from another viewpoint, you are going over the national level towards the worldwide level, to spiritually establish the cosmic standard of victory. The Lord, who is coming as the True Parents for us, has to spiritually pioneer the cross we must bear, achieve substantial victory and take responsibility for everything. This is the difficult aspect of restoring parents.

Looking at heaven, earth, and humankind, has Heaven ever been able to attend the victorious True Parents? Heaven could not yet do so. Has the earth been able to attend them? It has not yet been able to do so. Has humankind been able to attend them? They have not been able to, but they are now on the way to doing so.

Then, is it enough just to attend True Parents? It is not. After attending True Parents, you need to restore a true family, a tribe, a people, a nation, and the world. The people of Israel was prepared for this. To stand before True Parents as true children, the children's course of individual-level restoration, course of family-level restoration, course of tribal-level restoration, course of ethnic-level restoration and course of national-level restoration are to be accomplished. Through the completion of the parents' course of restoration for the individual, family, tribe, people and nation and the children's course of restoration for the individual, family, tribe, people and nation, the standard of parents and children having become one and victorious is established. Only after this can we finally conclude national-level restoration and make a fresh start toward the global level.

Then, what is the mission of the Unification Church and in what kind of position are you who have joined the church? You have been called into the Unification Church, of which I am the central figure. You are in the position of having to horizontally and physically develop what has been a sorrowful six thousand years of vertical history. What kind of resolution do we have to make? What is the goal we must aim for? We must establish the nation of True Parents on a worldwide foundation. We must establish the world-level nation of True Parents.

We must eliminate the remaining sorrow, pain and tears of the world as soon as possible. This is the responsibility and mission of our Unification Church. You are now on the path you are meant to follow. You should not turn to look back, either with your heart or with your body, as the Israelites did when

they were on their way to Canaan. What is the hope we should harbor? We should have the sincere hope to be able to truly attend the True Parents who are coming to earth on behalf of God. In attending them, we should not desire to attend them when the victorious foundation is already laid and all people have come to admire and respect them; rather, we should desire to attend True Parents as they pass through history's sorrowful course. Our ancestors are deeply pained that they were unable to attend the True Parents who have walked through the sorrowful course of history. All humankind harbors the hope of being able to sincerely attend True Parents. Thus, you must become true sons and daughters of filial piety who attend them from a miserable situation rather than trying to attend them from a glorious position. To be such true sons and daughters of filial piety, even in difficulty, despair and misery that makes one cry out, we should be able to say, "Dear God, dear God who is guiding me, True Parents are walking the path of the cross of suffering that is more severe than that of Jesus. As someone who attends True Parents, I therefore accept any kind of heavy cross as a matter of course. I praise that, so please, God, do not worry on account of me."

I am saying that we, on our own, should be able to indemnify the worries, pain, and sorrow that reach us, instead of giving them to God to bear. Only then can we be engrafted, on the individual level, to the parents' individual victory. Currently, our Blessed Families are spread throughout Korea. Why have I spread the Blessed Families out everywhere in Korea? God works with the thirty million people of the Korean race and the entire Korean peninsula, and True Parents are coming to the thirty million Korean people and the Korean peninsula.

The entire Korean peninsula of three thousand *ri* – every village, valley, mountain and field – desires to attend the coming True Parents. Serving True Parents is the desire of all people in history. You, as children, should establish the individual and family standard of indemnity and become substantial representatives of True Parents. You should be people whom those in the village want to serve without any regret. Of course, the True Parents are in the center and make a spiritual relationship with everyone. Since there is only one set of True Parents, however, they cannot relate with everyone personally. That is why the Blessed Families are the representatives of True Parents and stand in the position to relate with all people. True Parents have the responsibility to go over this nation and bear the cross on the worldwide level. Therefore, the cross of the people should be carried by the Blessed Families who live locally as true children of True Parents. All Blessed Families must serve as the foundation of a tribe and of a people in order for the works of Heaven to gain victory based on such a people. (13-288, 1964.4.12)

We must love True Parents and separate from Satan based on the standard of original love. We must fulfill our

responsibility to go beyond the standard of perfection on the world level. (137-116, 1985.12.24)

5.2. Our mission

In the future, we must prepare a foundation to attend True Parents and assemble the brothers and sisters of the world before them. We are the ancestors with this responsibility. Therefore let us remove the path of the cross and persecution that may befall our descendants. This is our original mission. (20-135, 1968.5.1)

When God stands in the position of the Parent unifying the human world and on the foundation where the Abel world and Cain world became one, God can finally appear as the master of all creation and the Parent. All people alive today are like children living without their parents. As such, they are fighting among themselves and so God has to appear as the Parent and teach them, saying, "Those you are fighting are your elder brothers and younger brothers." Nobody knows this but God. True, ideal parents departed because of the false parents, and the foundation for the position of ideal children was lost and sacrificed to Satan. Therefore, ideal parents must now appear, and the time has come when God can educate ideal children again; a religion to take over this mission must appear. This is the Unification Church.

So what is the Unification Church proud of? We should be proud of True Parents' achievements. Next, true children must be brought together. True Parents should not just love their clan but should be global and universal. True children do not say, "I only know the American people." They should not do that. They should transcend ethnic feelings. In whose name? In God's name. In whose name did the Fall occur? In Satan's name. In God's name, we should jump over the line of the Fall. So God should be above our head and should command us directly, just as God was above Adam's head. True Parents have no connection to the Fall. Thus, the path of the Unification Church is to make a new world by gathering people with the true lineage from throughout the world, who are connected to True Parents and God. Then, a family will be a tribe, a tribe will be a people, and a people will establish a nation that takes dominion over the world. The fallen world has been sinking. Now we must make a new start and go up. There has to be a time when the fallen world and the new world will meet and things will reverse. The question is when we will be connected to the central line. You should all know this. (86-229, 1976.3.31)

Our Unification Church has True Parents, but in what position are they? They are True Parents only in the Unification Church, and have not reached the national or world level. Thus, Satan still remains on the national and the world level and is firing his guns. This is why our Unification Church is battling so that our movement expands to the nation, world, and spirit world the

capacity of the True Parents that is now limited to the church. This is the movement of our Unification Church. The time is now approaching. The environment in which True Parents can be welcomed as national parents is at hand. (124-309, 1983.3.1)

Section 6. Things We Should Cherish as Our Own Life

6.1. Insisting on your own way is not acceptable

What you have is surely gold dust, but it is gold dust in the sand, contained in ore or in the earth; hence, it needs to be placed in a furnace and melted down. It must be smelted. This is the standard procedure. As the granules of gold melt and become liquid, would they say, "This is good!" or make a big fuss, saying, "Oh no, I am dying, I am dying?" Although they may say they will die, granules of gold do not actually die. If you want to be pure, you have to deny up to 98 percent of yourself. That which is truly you is only 2 percent. So then, what do you think you need to do? How miserable this is! Think whether the life of a Unificationist is miserable or happy. Then would Rev. Moon, the center of the Unificationists, be happy or miserable? I have a hope that although I was miserable at the beginning, I will be happy later. When there is persecution, you should think, "I am going into the furnace. This is coming because I am still not perfect." If persecution comes, let it come. If people want to persecute us, let them persecute us! You should want to be inside the furnace until you become pure gold. This is how you can become pure gold quickly. As for those who are walking the path of abandoning their 98 percent and becoming 100 percent pure gold, how much endurance do you think they have to have? How much pain do you think they will endure? But you should still have the conviction to go forward.

Even if the people of the world evaluate you as 100 percent pure gold, the question is whether you will be a 100 percent when God picks you up with a tweezers and evaluates you. This is my worry. God has His view of 100 percent pure gold and I have my suggestion for 100 percent pure gold. Between the two, I want my 100 percent to be greater. How about that? I want my claim to be greater. Then, there should be no impurity, no insisting upon your own way. Does not God insist on His own way? Yes, God insists on His own way. God also has a nature to insist on His own way. In order to be purer, we should not insist on having our own way. Then, we will be 100 percent pure gold and be at a standard higher than the pure gold evaluated by God. We can think this way. If we are totally and eternally free from a mind of self-insistence, which thinks of the self as the center, we can be something that is more than 100 percent pure.

What is pure gold? It refers to its original form, without any impurity whatsoever. To meet the standard of pure gold, a nation must be a place where the people live enraptured in love, without any self-centeredness for hundreds and

thousands of years. Those who possess such love are like a great queen or king. I am telling you to be such a wife or husband. When you become pure gold this way, do you need God? God is already contained within you. You will not need Him. So you should be such people. (128-206, 1983.6.26)

Are you genuine pure gold or fake "pure" gold? When I look at you, I see you are not genuine. Perhaps if we put together four or five of you, beat you up, and remold you, you will be the real thing. This is how I see it. I cannot place you as if you were in a real market or store and sell you as genuine items. I cannot display you there. This is how I see it. So, there is a lot of training through adversity and the smelting process; a great deal of this process still remains to be completed. If you are asked if you are pure gold, I do not see you that way. Since a lot of the metal smelting process still remains for you to go through, you all have to be put in the metal smelting furnace whether you like it or not. Until you are put in there and all the bad things get burnt up, resulting in pure material in a form that is the same both inside and out, you cannot be called a Unification Church member. (138-200, 1986.1.21)

We need a device to measure the time period, the moment, and the time for calibrating ourselves. We should set these in accordance with the standard clock. Scales also have an absolute standard measurement, of which there is only one in the world. There is only one standard measurement for one meter, not two standards. Then, do you think there was originally a standard for the calibration of humankind or not? Are you a person whose current arbitrary standard naturally fits in with the absolute human standard through a zero calibration, or are you a person that it does not fit, even by force? You do not fit even by force. But you are still asking to be recognized as people meeting the original standard or standard meter measure. Then, the person giving that recognition would be a crazy person. That kind of person should be smacked on the head! God will say, "You fool, he looks that way and you are approving him? He should be rejected and chastised, yet you are going to sympathize with and help him?" Among the Blessed Families today, there are many who respect the word "family" and yet ignore the essential nature of the family. (127-202, 1983.5.8)

6.2. We must become one

To what extent do you know True Parents' heart? And how united are you with True Parents in matters of lineage, character, God's Word and daily life? How about your view of the nation, world and cosmos? This determines whether you can become true sons and daughters of God in a true sense. You are insecure if you are on your own, so the question is how to link you to True Parents. It will not work if you do not have the original source. You absolutely need the original source. In other words, you cannot manage without the core. (28-247, 1970.1.22)

True Parents are the ones who stand in place of your own father and mother. The original parents are True Parents. You and your parents should be one. Then, who is the grandfather? God. With regard to God's commands, even True Parents cannot do as they please. Parents should lead their sons and daughters along the path the grandfather wants. This is the way of the parents. If True Parents have gone the way of restoration, you cannot help going the way of restoration as well. You have to fulfill the minimum 5 percent portion of responsibility. You should know this. You should love God more than you love your wife and more than you love your parents. You should love God more than you love your children. If this foundation expands worldwide, it will become the ideal world that the Unification Church speaks of – the original world. (128-30, 1983.5.29)

I already have both the root of the first Adam and the root of the second Adam. Therefore, you just have to engraft yourself into the first Adam, second Adam, and third Adam, and everything will be over with. The root is all one and the same. So, it is love, life, and then lineage. Lineage comes into being as the vertical and horizontal love of God exchanges life. Hence, you should love me more than anyone else. You should be more united with True Parents than with anyone else. Since this is a lineage centered on true love, you have the right of inheritance, right of equal position, and right of equal participation. This is why Satan cannot come near. (189-223, 1989.4.6)

6.3. We should love True Parents

How much love do True Parents receive? Have you ever thought about that? If there is someone who condemns the declaration that God is dead, he would love True Parents more than God does. If you pray to God to enable you to meet such a person, and you do meet such a person and they come to love True Parents, God will be joyful. If that person is the smartest person, and you agree, you absolutely cannot be defeated by the spirits in the spirit world. If you love True Parents, you can absolutely not be defeated. If you can accuse the spirits, "I love True Parents this much, but what have you spirits done?" then you will be the people living in the greatest abundance. If a fight breaks out among our family members as each of them tries to love True Parents more, what would God say about that fight? If one of them were to die during this fight, how would God judge him? Would God drag him to the guillotine? Without a doubt, God would call both of them, establish them as a model of loving True Parents, and tell other people to love True Parents as they have loved them. This is the standard. In other words, God, spirits, and all people need to pay close attention to True Parents. We should think about this in our daily life. If my words are true, this is an important issue. How far away are you from this standard? You should pray for this from this point on. Those without tears cannot follow True Parents. In such a case, your face cannot be bright. You should live for the sake of others.

And even though you may do your best, you should always have an apologetic heart towards heaven. You should be able to imagine how we should act. (52-97, 1971.12.23)

6.4. We must attend True Parents

Even if you went through the wilderness course, crossed the Jordan River, and fell in a fight with the seven tribes of Canaan, this would not be a victorious death. You can be an original person, worthy of a heavenly appointment from God, only after you have conquered the seven tribes of Canaan and established a new nation of Israel there. Otherwise, it is the same as staying in paradise; you will not be able to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. (13-296, 1964.4.12)

Who are the True Parents? They are the ancestors of humankind. You should therefore attend True Parents as your own parents. (118-147, 1982.5.23)

You should serve your parents for three years or more. In serving them for three years or more the family should serve them, then the nation should serve them and the world should serve them. This is really how it should be. Only then can we advance to the realm of global restoration. Based on the number three, you have to serve them for three years or more. Thus the principle is that for three years you live with your parents, eating with them and discussing with them. This is how your household should be. As a family living with the parents, you should have a three-year period in which you live in peace and happiness, use only good words, and share joy with one another. (44-169, 1971.5.6)

6.5. We should be obedient

The children must show absolute obedience before the Parents who have come in the original name of God. There is no objection to that. This is not something done by force. We are creating an environment where this can be done centering on love. The wife loves her husband and the husband loves his wife. You should become parents centered on love and create an environment where your beloved children can naturally and absolutely submit to you. Only then can the foundation of the Kingdom of Heaven not be destroyed. (101-282, 1978.11.7)

6.6. We must inherit the tradition

Until now, we have not known what would become of humankind. We have not known what would become of ourselves. In other words, people have not understood history. They have not understood where history is headed. They have not known what would happen in the future or their purpose. Why is this so? It is because they have not had true parents and ancestors. But as for us, because we are attending True Parents, we can say, "Ah, I know history; I know the circumstances of the history between God and each of us." Also, we have come to know the present and future. We can both know such tradition and inherit

it. Now we can have the tradition with which we can win over history and the future. From whom? Why? It is because you have met True Parents. You follow what True Parents teach, and what they do, and you desire what True Parents desire and inherit from them. You are inheriting these things from them. (71-21, 1974.3.24)

Until now, there have been no parents in this universe. Those who acted like parents were evil parents, using and ruining their children. What got broken through this? Brothers and sisters, brides and bridegrooms, and fathers and mothers, who are meant to become perfect, have split apart. They have not had children of goodness, meaning they ultimately lost the family. The family is a representative of universal history; it represents the world, the heavenly kingdom, the nation, and all families. God is trying to find its center. History also has been looking for it.

People living today should be connected to this center. In other words, the common purpose pursued by God and human beings is this alone, and there is nowhere else that the past, present, and future can be bound together. Then who should do it? True Parents must accomplish the tasks that Adam and Eve were meant to do. Hence, what you have now is something Satan does not own – you should have the best brothers and sisters; the kind that are not found in the evil world. You must have brothers and sisters who are not from the satanic world. This is how it should be for you. This is until your twenties, before you marry. You need to establish such a tradition. You should leave your sons and daughters a tradition that teaches them how to live.

The reason you are fighting such a hard battle in the countries you have gone to is so that you can leave behind a tradition for your descendants. This is a great opportunity that comes only once, an opportunity to educate your children saying, "We worked amidst this kind of hardship." You have the chance to establish a tradition you can leave behind as your testament. That is why tradition is the issue. This cannot be changed. It is an eternal tradition.

Since we have transcended the world, white people and black people should be brothers and sisters. This is to realize the brotherhood realm of humankind, the realm of Adam and Eve, which has nothing to do with the Fall. Then, what is the basic philosophy to establish that tradition? Everything will work out if we live for the sake of others. From here, your sons and daughters will grow up without suffering in this kind of environment. They will become descendants who can go straight to the heavenly nation with actual accomplishments that surpass the satanic world and can directly connect with heaven. Next, these brothers and sisters will marry one another. For us, marriage transcends nations. We have the mind-set that we can marry a black person if told to do so, marry a white person if recommended to do so, and marry a yellow person if recommended to do so. Such a tradition should be

established from now. This has not yet been established. We should create oneness from now on. So you must guide your descendants and the world with this. The two must become one. When you become one you should not bear evil children. To bear children of goodness, the husband and wife should be completely one. Without becoming one, no children of goodness will come out. Thus, they should become completely one centering on God's will. (71-19, 1974.3.24)

You can roughly see how I look and what shape I have by looking at me two-dimensionally. But you do not know what kind of path I have walked before coming here. If you do not have a firm conviction from the beginning and just follow this path, God's will cannot be accomplished. You should have firm conviction. I brought this victorious result because I knew this as an absolute and sure path and started with the resolve to bring victory without fail. Countless individuals, families, tribes, peoples and nations opposed me and tried to shake my conviction and block my path. The world, too, has opposed me. Such things have intervened. You should inherit such a tradition, but can you inherit it without understanding it? When you inherit such an amazing thing, you have to do so with a new resolve. In other words, you should inherit it with a conviction that enables you to say, "I will do more than run to the end of the world and to the top of the sky" while being strong, bold and so grateful as to amaze God. The hearts of Heavenly Father and True Father are such that when they see your attitude, they will want to bequeath everything to you. The stark reality is that God is gathering and teaching those who know nothing and have no idea what is happening to the world. This is sorrowful indeed. (67-228, 1973.6.27)

6.7. We should be proud of True Parents

What should make you proud? You should be proud of God's love and True Parents' love. You should praise them more than what you own, more than what belongs to the nation, and more than what belongs to the world. Such love is the combination of God's love and True Parents' love. On earth, the Unification Church is putting into practice initiatives for unity on the basis of the ideal love of the direct dominion and on the foundation of the family. These are the footsetps of the Parents. This is the domain of the Parents. This is the realm of the direct dominion. (131-48, 1984.4.1)

6.8. You should pay your debt to True Parents

You must have a clear concept of True Parents. Are you indebted to True Parents or not? There is no way you can pay the debt. If you calculate your debt, it is impossible to pay. But you can pay off everything with just a small sign of your love. This is what we need. (116-121, 1981.12.27)

CHAPTER SEVEN

A Life with True Parents

Section 1. True Parents' Day and True Parents

You are all interested in me, aren't you? When I go somewhere and say something, you should all carry cell phones so that you can listen to me anywhere. On this True Parents' Day, you should know how great your Parents' suffering has been and how much pain your Parents have carried in their hearts. Now the time has come when you need to learn about your Parents. Otherwise, you will not know the tradition; you will not have a tradition. (131-62, 1984.4.1)

Originally, the idea of True Parents' Day was the central idea in God's concept of the creation. After creating all things, God created human beings to rule over them. The purpose for which God blessed human beings to take dominion over all things was none other than to establish True Parents.

Originally, Adam and Eve would have become True Parents by uniting with each other centered on God; then, Parents' Day would have been established and the entire universe would have sung praises in the name of the Universal Parents. Thus, True Parents' Day should have been a day of joy with the entire universe singing praises together in the name of the Parents. It was God's deepest desire that this day be celebrated. Due to the Fall of the first human ancestors, however, heaven and earth never saw this True Parents' Day. Thus, God has never ceased working to realize His original plan for True Parents' Day. Before we can celebrate True Parents' Day, however, we must first receive True Parents. The True Parents are the central beings. They must judge history, rule over the present and pioneer the future. The desire of people throughout history has also been to receive such True Parents.

Why are we trying to restore a people? We are creating a people to attend the victorious True Parents and to attend them truly by realizing a free heaven and earth as sons and daughters of filial piety. The True Parents will appear before the entire cosmos on a national foundation that can stand on behalf of heaven, earth and all humankind without accusation from the satanic world. Until now we have attended True Parents only in sorrow and pain, but from now on we should attend them in joy and in freedom. When God can dwell within our hearts, only then, when we are joyful, will God be able to say, "Yes, your joy is

my joy!" We should also establish a standard by which all people can say, "What you are grateful for, we are grateful for!" Today is True Parents' Day. Only when you truly establish True Parents' Day as your own True Parents' Day, your own family's True Parents' Day, society's True Parents' Day, and the nation's True Parents' Day will it be established as the global True Parents' Day. Only when you establish it as the global True Parents' Day and then the cosmic True Parents' Day will God's original ideal of creation to establish True Parents be completed; only then will there be relief from the sorrow that came from being unable to establish True Parents' Day due to the Fall.

Furthermore, only when we establish True Parents' Day throughout all of heaven and earth will the sorrow of restoration be completely removed. Even though we have established True Parents' Day and True Children's Day, we have not established True Parents' Day on the levels of an individual, a family, a people, a nation, the world and the cosmos. The same is true for True Children's Day, and for the Day of All True Things. Only when we have developed to the point where we can be governed by the standard in which True Parents' Day, True Children's Day, and the Day of All True Things have globally triumphed will God's original purpose of creation be completed. Only then will True Parents' Day finally become True Parents' Day for all humankind and at the same time True Parents' Day for Heaven itself. In the same way, True Children's Day and the Day of All True Things will be True Children's Day and the Day of All True Things both for all humankind and for Heaven. When we have reached such a position, then the time will have finally come when God can say that everything has finally been accomplished. We must establish True Parents' Day, True Children's Day and the Day of All True Things on all levels from the individual, through the family, peoples and nations. Only when we have established these days on the level of one nation can they become the central days of the nation and of the entire world. This is the issue. (13-294, 1964.4.12)

Section 2. We Should Fully Understand the Words "True Parents"

There is a term cherished in our Unification Church. Some of you might be hearing it for the first time; it is the term "True Parents." We say, Our True Parents! Did Jesus have True Parents? We have something that Jesus did not. Did Jesus have True Parents? Are not parents responsible when they do not protect their children? Parents ought to protect their children. They must be a protective barrier against Satan and say to their children, "Be happy in our embrace." Did Jesus have that experience? For his entire life Jesus grew up and was treated as a stepson. This is why the Bible does not contain the words true parents. It does not contain the words true parents or true brothers and sisters. These words are a part of our Unification Church

terminology. They are not something I invented. They are words discovered to be part of the heavenly Principle. We use the words true parents and true children. We should understand how true children should act. True children should be able to offer their lives and everything they have for the sake of God's Son and should be grateful even if they themselves end up in hell. Without going through such a process, nothing can be accomplished. In this way, you can return to the Father through having the heart of true children. (76-73, 1975.1.26)

We use the words True Parents. We say that we should go forward together with True Parents and together with God. Next, we say that we should be true brothers and sisters. Centering on what? Centering on Jesus. Jesus' parents were unable to serve him, but we should reverse that failure through indemnity and stand in the position of parents who can serve him and who are better than his earthly parents were.

Which do you think is easier to accept: my referring to God as the Parent, or your referring to me as the Parent? You do not know how much I have suffered. You do not know how many walls there have been and how complicated it has been. Until now, myriads of people have struggled on that path and all have fallen into the pit. When you joined the Unification Church and began to understand me from the perspective of theory, it must have been easy for you to say, "Ah, he is the True Parent." Then, which do you think is greater, the joy I felt when I realized that God is the True Parent or the joy you felt when you realized it? I could utter the word "Father" only after having gone through life-threatening suffering, but you were taught everything without suffering. This is why you can say, "Okay, I have come to know the True Parents; so what?" Who would rejoice more? Which do you think should be greater, the joy I felt when I met God in the parent-child relationship or the joy you feel when you meet me? Although my encounter came only after suffering, your encounter took place without suffering, so you should be more joyful. If I had paid hundreds of billions of dollars, wouldn't you be you happy that you paid nothing? What have you paid? When you come and listen to the Principle you can understand everything. So, when you hear "True Parents," you merely say "So that's how it is!" and understand everything. (116-121, 1981.12.27)

Section 3. Learning True Parents' Language

Language is one of the most challenging problems. When Koreans are here, those who do not know Korean have a difficult time. They look pitiful. How great it would be if language were unified! When I first came to America, I only knew "Yes" and "No," although I had studied English through books. Can you imagine how stifled I felt! You need to know how necessary the unification of language is. Do you wish to listen to my speeches through an interpreter or directly from me? Of course, you want to listen to them in Korean. Why? Because

Korean is the original language. Therefore, in studying the Principle, if you do not know the original language, you will not understand the meaning of the words. Furthermore, when you go to the spirit world in the future, will you be proud if you can say, "I understood Father's speeches directly, without translation" or if you have to say, "I listened to his words through an interpreter?" Which? Moreover, they are words that express the ideal world of love. Does it mean anything to whisper words of love through an interpreter? The fifth paragraph of our former pledge says, "We are proud of the one culture." The question is how that one culture can come about. You should know that in the world of heart you have no choice but to become one. The one who truly desires one world of heart cannot go without knowing this. Now, when you reach out to someone because you love them so much, your feet move first before any thoughts about love. Your feet move first, and not the loving thought. How foolish this is! If you think about eating in the same way, it is as though you enjoyed eating leftovers. Without the tradition and spirit of the ideal family the ideal world cannot appear.

Even in the spirit world everyone uses the language that true parents and true grandfathers use. Would it work to say, "Oh dear, I don't know that language!" You will realize, then, how difficult it is for Orientals to learn English. I myself learned English after the age of sixty. Do you think it was easy? You cannot make excuses. As you young people are coming into the Unification Church, you have to do it. You have to learn, even repeating words again and again while walking on the street. Learn Korean by repeating words and phrases while going back and forth to the bathroom. You have no escape. The reason I am telling you to learn Korean is because I have become the True Parent; there is no way out. No matter what nationality you are or what situations you are in, you have no alternative. When everything is unified, people will say, "This is the glory of True Parents! They have swiftly unified the world's languages!" If they give me an award, what kind of award should they give me?

You should respect Korean more than the language of any other nation in the world. It is because of their language that Koreans are smart. There is no sound that cannot be pronounced in the Korean language. Japanese does not come anywhere close. Japanese cannot pronounce "McDonalds" properly and end up saying "Makudonarudo." Can you understand what I mean? This is why things must work through the new culture. I am not saying this because I am a Korean, but because it is the Principle. If I told you to learn Korean without that being rooted in the Principle, I would be chased away. It is because I am talking about basic principles that you listen quietly and say, "As it fits the theory, what choice do I have but to accept?" In the future, the original language for scholars will be Korean. The Korean language will be the original language. (130-272, 1984.2.5)

Section 4. Revelation in Folk Songs

How great it would be if you could, while attending God, say "I want to live for thousands of years!" A verse in a Korean folk song that goes, "Moon, Oh moon, you bright moon, moon loved by the poet Lee Tae-baek! Oh moon, on you grows a laurel tree. I want to chop it down with a jade axe and trim the branches with a gold axe to build a thatched cottage to bring my parents to..." These are nice words, but where are the Parents? If they are parents based on their own desires, they will completely disappear. Where are the Parents who can reveal the great way of Heaven and earth and plant the tradition? My life's purpose, until I die, is creating the way for the world that is like that folk song. (127-281, 1983.5.15)

Religious leaders prostrate themselves and pray in an effort to receive blessings, but I have never prayed to receive any blessing. The Old Testament Age was the age of finding God's people by establishing all things; the New Testament Age was the age of finding the Parents by sacrificing the sons and daughters; and the Completed Testament Age is the age of liberating God by sacrificing the Parents' family. This means bringing the Original Parents to this earth and living with them for thousands of years. The Korean folk song about the moon and the laurel tree sings of bringing parents and living with them for tens of thousands of years. This Korean tale contains a revelation: "…wanting to bring the heavenly parents to earth and live with them for tens of thousands of years…." Whenever I think about this song, I cannot escape the intense longing in my heart.

Don't ever feel bad about having been born as a Korean. In the past, you might have felt pity for yourself for having been born Korean, saying "How is it that I was born in a thatched-roof hut among these poor Korean people, although Korea boasts of its five-thousand-year history?" The Korean song that goes "Moon, Oh moon, you bright moon" sings of building a thatched cottage and living there for thousands of years. I do not feel happy when I hear this song. Only a thatched-roof cottage? How can we fulfill the wishes of the people there? However, its reference to "build a thatched cottage, bring my parents there and live with them there for thousands of years" must refer to the ideal parents of humanity. The song connects with the Christian belief in the Second Coming and with the belief in a savior to come that is present among all peoples and nations. (85-80, 1976.3.2)

The song "Moon, Oh moon, you bright moon" tells of attending the parents, but which parents? Attend the parents and the grandparents on both the father's and the mother's side.... The song sings praises to the long-cherished desire of our people. This is why we have the concept of True Parents. The love that can bring us to live together for thousands of years comes from True Parents.

We want to live with both sets of parents. (126-190, 1983.4.19)

If True Parents symbolize masculinity and femininity with the highest authority of God, the authority of their sons and daughters should be at least as high as their shadow. You should not seek to come into the Unification Church maintaining the old habits and greed acquired in the satanic world.

Our church is different from the established churches. It is a place where we wage a battle of life and death, building an altar of love and preparing the arrows of love. We do not go to the Heavenly Kingdom to be judged by God above. No, He is here and judges our lives every day. Attending God together with me, we share in God's pain and in His joy in our daily lives. Because of this we have not come to ruin or perished in the turbulent ups and downs of this age of tribulation.

Can God die? No, He lives! Today, having achieved global victory, I have returned to this nation. Our nation is divided and I must reunite it. While we build a unified nation you must also establish your own nation, people, tribe and family. It is simple now for Unification Church members, because your Parents have completed the entire indemnity mission.

Everything will be finished once you know the real God, the real True Parents, the real, true husband and wife, and real, true sons and daughters. You have to go out, fight and win because you want to know these sons and daughters, these husbands and wives. You must love them. When you love them and liberate your brothers and sisters, the twelve apostles, and 120 disciples on the satanic side, then you can love your own sons and daughters, and bring them to live with you forever.

"Moon, Oh Moon, you bright Moon, Moon loved by the poet Lee Tae-baek! Oh Moon, on you grows a laurel tree. I want to chop it down with a jade axe and trim the branches with a gold axe to build a thatched cottage. I want to bring my parents and live with them there for thousands of years" are the words of a song through which the Korean people can receive the mantle of the chosen people. It is a song the chosen people can sing.

This song is a prayer that sings praise for eternity. Its meaning is living with and attending one's parents for thousands of years. Where? In a thatched cottage. Do you know what a thatched cottage is? You have to start at the bottom. Without serving your parents in a thatched cottage you cannot find the royal parents. You have to begin serving them in a thatched cottage. Organize a tribe and then a people from the tribe. Only when we have organized a people can right of kingship be established.

We have to find a nation. Already, in the world and among the nations, I am carrying a victory sign and standing in the vertical position. Since I am in the vertical position I cannot go to the side. The vertical position on the level of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos centered on me are

aligned in oneness with God as the center. (212-51, 1991.1.1)

Where is the foundation upon which human love and God's love can harmonize together? God created human beings because of love. Why did God create human beings for love? God is lonely by Himself. God created people because He wanted to live in love for thousands of years. Even if we have only a thatched cottage, we still want to live with our parents there forever. It is the same with the ideal God. It is amazing that God can go into a place even smaller than a thatched cottage and still embrace Heaven and earth, and breathe and live. Is that a small house? When God is there, even a thatched cottage is a palace in the Heavenly Kingdom, a universal palace. (204-106, 1990.7.1)

Section 5. Prayer in the Name of True Parents

God is the greatest teacher for fallen people. Among teachers, He is the great King of teachers, because there is nothing God does not know. Among parents, God is the First, in other words, the True Parent. As a king, He is the King of all kings. God is the best teacher and the first parent. If He is the First Parent, would He be a false parent or a true parent? He is the True Parent. This True Parent was unable to be a True Parent because of the Fall. In the Unification Church we close our prayers by saying "I pray in the name of the True Parents." God is the first True Parent.

When you desire something in prayer, whom do you ask? We are supposed to call upon the Father whatever we do. When you are drowning who would you like to rescue you? When a savior is supposed to come and rescue you, would like some grandfather from a neighboring village to be the one who saves you? Or would you rather have your younger brother save you? Would you like your savior to be your elder brother or your younger brother? Who would you like to come to save you? You want your parents to come to save you. You would like your parents, the highest ranking saviors of all, to come to rescue you. Since parents know their children's pain as pain penetrating their own bones, children are looking to their father and mother to be their saviors. (41-307, 1971.2.17)

When you pray, you pray in the name of True Parents, but who are the True Parents? Do not think of this term only with regard to Mother and me. No, think of True Parents from a higher point of view. Think of them in terms of the mother and father who can embrace the world at a higher level and truly love all people as one, transcending the emotions of any people or nation. This is why I also pray in the name of True Parents. (33-141, 1970.8.11)

Section 6. The Power of True Parents' Name

The Bible says that humankind fell. So God must be liberated. Through the Fall, the sons and daughters, husband

and wife, the nation, and even the world that was to be ours were forfeited at one stroke. True Parents must come, recover all things, children, families, nations, and the world, and return them all to God. Those who once belonged to God fell under the sway of false love after deviating from the true path of love. Although they were created on the principle of ownership based in love, they were destroyed by fallen love. Now they must be salvaged through the love of True Parents, and all things, children, husband and wife, nation and world must be offered again to God. Then, God will sing praises of that triumph, the return of His universe through true love, and then He will give those offerings to True Parents. They will become God's possessions and thereby True Parents' possessions. In becoming True Parents' possessions, they will become the possessions of the sons and daughters, and then again be distributed in the four directions. Without the world becoming such a place, the Kingdom of Heaven cannot appear on earth.

What is the local-level breakthrough (*tong ban gyeokpa*) we are pursuing? We must unite South and North and offer the Republic of Korea to God as the homeland of all humankind. This must be done in God's name and in True Parents' name, centered on the achievement of victory in all nations. This is why we have been investing everything. It is for this reason that we are now like a group of beggars. Why beggars? Because we already offered everything decades ago.

Now we must unite South and North, and in God's name and in True Parents' name we must take back all ownership historically claimed by Satan. We must restore the ownership to the throne of God, the Original Parent, so that Korea will emerge from this as the first ancestor nation among all nations throughout history. Working to bring this about is my final purpose of love. (211-126, 1990.12.29)

Section 7. Enjoy Eternal Glory in True Parents' Name

Once we offer something, we have to offer in the name of God, and from God's name it must return to True Parents. Just having True Parents will not be enough. Our offering must return to True Parents from the name of God, the Creator. It must become a possession of Adam and Eve. In other words, we need to receive it back. The inheritance must take place in True Parents' family. After this occurs, then first will come an age of redistribution. We will have an eternal heavenly nation, where there is no Satan to have to separate from. Second, life according to the ideal of creation will be possible, and there will be no accusation from Satan. There will be no struggle or breakdown there. Since life under the ideal of creation starts within a completely unified system centering on true love, we will have the perfect Kingdom of Heaven on earth. After having lived here we will go straight to the Kingdom of Heaven in heaven. There will be no need for religion. Thus third, the Kingdom of Heaven in heaven and

the Kingdom of Heaven on earth together existing for the sake of true love will be realized. Next, the conclusion. May you receive eternal glory in God's name, in True Parents' name, and in all of our names! May you receive eternal glory in God's name, in True Parents' name, and in all of our names! May you receive glory without end! There will not even be any religion. That is it. (212-143, 1991.1.2)

Section 8. Bequeathing and Inheriting True Parents' Heart

8.1. Bequeathing of heart

How will you deeply experience True Parents' heart and God's love and heart? This is the issue. The question is how to enter that state. For this you have to become the Adam and Eve who have not fallen, free from Satan's accusation. How, then, will you become liberated from the satanic world? You have to win in the battle with Satan. To achieve this, how hard will you have to work and how much will you have to suffer? Jacob and Moses were each deceived ten times. Jesus Christ was also deceived in the same manner. It was the same with me. We must overcome this. We will come to know God's heart through this. We will come to know the Parents' heart. Otherwise, we will never know. Without this experience, Satan will never leave you alone. As long as you do not triumph over Satan, you will never be able to know True Parents' heart or God's heart.

Thus we must go to the front line. Everyone must go to the front line. As long as we do not do this but, instead, live a comfortable life, we will not be able to find God's love, the Parent's love, the Parent's realm of heart, or God's realm of heart. I must send everyone to the front line. You need to be persecuted, despised and beaten, and receive all sorts of harsh treatment. Only then can there be an inheritance of heart. A ceremony of inheritance will take place there. You must therefore always stand at the forefront and march forward like me. How harsh the persecution is on the front line! But this is natural. When you digest it, God will protect you. You will be able to deeply experience the same heart as you stand in the same place. The question is how to experience this heart deeply. The question is how you can come to know that True Parents are the real True Parents and that God is your Father. How will your bones and flesh know? The question is whether those cells, that body of flesh, know it even when you are not thinking. You must overcome the situation of being exposed to Satan's accusation. This is the biggest problem.

The question is how to experience True Parents' love deeply, but it is simple. You must be able to stand in a position like that of the original Adam and Eve, who have defeated Satan on the global stage. To achieve this, how much blood and sweat you will have to shed, and how much accusation you will receive from Satan! How hard it will be, because it can happen only after you have triumphed over the course of indemnity! If you do not appreciate being in that situation, then it will not matter how hard you

pray or what you do, you will not be able to go beyond it. You have to experience it deeply yourself. You will experience it deeply immediately upon entering into such a situation. You will receive direct guidance. In understanding the Parents' heart, the great problem is how to feel what is called oneness. It will never happen until you have defeated Satan. It will not come. Power transmission towers have been established. They have been erected in individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations, the world, the cosmos, and even in God. Now the power lines of heart must be hung there. Who will hang them? It is not I or God, but you who must do it. (125-206, 1983.3.20)

8.2. Sons and daughters inherit from their parents

If there is a gift God can give to the human world, what would the best gift be? It must be for all of you to become the ancestors of humankind and true mothers and fathers. There is nothing higher. Even being a cabinet minister or the president cannot match it. This is the greatest gift God can give to people. When there are True Parents, there will automatically be true children, true families, true tribes, true nations, and a true world. Then, what is the most important title? It is the name and title of True Parents.

What was the Fall? The Fall was that people did as they pleased. Therefore, we must tear down that which was not done centering on God and True Parents. Men should become incarnations of Father and women incarnations of Mother. Wherever God enters you, whether through your eyes or anywhere else, you should welcome Him. You cannot say, "Oh no, you cannot come in." Do you want walls to remain in place? God's love comes through you. You need to study all this. You must not be negligent. You should all do this. When you inherit the tradition, True Parents will come to you. True Parents will come to you as God's messenger and give you the inheritance. (118-271, 1982.6.13)

Since True Parents had not appeared until now, neither could true children. So far, since no true person had existed on earth, True Parents had not appeared. So the Unification Church is saying, "Let us acknowledge True Parents, discover and serve them." We are saying we should be sons and daughters of True Parents.

What do we do when we become their sons and daughters? We inherit what they have. The True Parents' rights of inheritance include heaven and earth, and even God. We too should inherit even God. If there were no owner of heaven and earth, heaven and earth would have no value. We have to be people who can fully acknowledge the value of heaven and earth, and claim their value for eternity. We also need to meet the one who can officially recognize that. That being is God. Thus, we should gain True Parents' rights of inheritance. Then, what are True Parents' rights of inheritance? They include inheriting not only heaven and earth, but also God. (24-322, 1969.9.14)

The path we are walking has not end-

ed. You will receive the Blessing through the gratitude you show before Heaven. You should be grateful individually and you should also never forget the value of having received the Blessing representing your tribe, your clan, such as the Kim or the Pak clan, and, moreover representing the thirty million people of Korea and all the people of the world.

Furthermore, you should know that you have inherited the responsibility that True Parents are to carry out on earth. Why do the Blessed Families have to inherit this? If the Blessed Families are going through the course to restore a people, True Parents should be going through a course to restore the world. In other words, they should be going one step ahead. Yet without establishing the victorious standard of having restored a people, True Parents cannot walk the course of worldwide restoration. That is why you must inherit the responsibility to restore a people to ensure that True Parents can walk the worldwide course. Until your death and until the sorrow of this people is removed, you must shoulder the responsibility to restore a people. (13-293, 1964.4.12)

Section 9. What You Need to Take Heed of

Without entering the realm of heart, we will not be restored. Therefore, the person who is responsible for restoration must proceed while holding onto True Parents. Even Jesus has no way without going through True Parents. With True Parents as the central axis you should form a perfectly horizontal line centering on True Parents' love. You cannot have any complaints. You cannot complain. If you complain, you will become warped and deformed. (136-67, 1985.12.20)

You say this and that about True Parents, but if you think of True Parents as if they were just some rich or famous parents in your village, you are gravely mistaken. For the world to be unified, it must receive True Parents. Humankind cannot find the way to unite the world. True Parents are the visible fruit of our hope throughout history and the visible fruit of our heart's desire. They are the visible fruit of the victory that has indemnified everything. You should know this. True Parents cannot be exchanged for anything. (55-155, 1972.5.7)

CHAPTER EIGHT

The Three Great Subjects Principle and The Proclamation of True Parents

Section 1. The Three Great Subjects Principle and the Parent-Centered Ideology

1.1. The Three Subjects Principle is our desire

What do people want? What do fallen people really desire? It is to become true parents who give birth to and raise sons and daughters who are able to go straight to the heavenly kingdom without being persecuted by the satanic world. But, this has not happened. People's desire is to be representatives of True Parents who can give birth to true sons and daughters and send them straight to the heavenly kingdom. Surely you all want to give birth to good sons and daughters! You want to give birth to the best children in the world, but you have been unable to do so. Then the question is how to do so. Then what is next? The archangel failed to raise Adam and Eve who were God's children. The most important thing is to raise our children as God's sons and daughters by whatever means possible, and educate them as people that God will need. I am sure you all want to be teachers and good examples. You want to work hard and be the president's right-hand man who can represent the nation, or the owner of a company or the head of a branch of the country's administration. You want to be successful. It means that you want to become a true owner.

We have three great ambitions: to be a true parent, to be a true teacher, and to be a true owner. You want to succeed and become a leader of your region, even the nation's president, right? Before achieving this, you have to become the master of your own household. You have to stand in the position of the master who can inherit the family tradition, representing your ancestors and God. Through this you will be respected by all families and by the nation itself. These three ambitions contain everything in the world: true parent, true teacher and true owner. You should each become a true parent, a true teacher and a true owner. This is the Three Subjects Principle. What is the root of this three-subjects philosophy? It is true love. True love means being willing to invest more than a hundred percent, invest again, and then invest still more. You should be a parent, a teacher and an owner who has this kind of philosophy. The root is one. This is why, when we say true parent, a true teacher should come to the right side and a true owner to the left. They all go around together. You do not

become true parents just by having sons and daughters. You must give birth to them and raise them. Sons and daughters should depend on their mother and father. You must teach them. (205-19, 1990.7.15)

1.2. The Three Subjects Principle is the philosophy of True Parents

The core of Three Subjects Principle is the philosophy of True Parents. Why are true parents the core here? On the perpendicular there is only one vertical line. Since there is only one vertical standard based on true love, it is the representative standard rooted in the family where True Parents and the vertical God meet. Thus, a teacher or sovereign who follows the pattern of parental love will pursue the environment of a heavenly nation which Satan cannot invade. Since the evil one's sphere of false love cannot invade, a realm of liberation will unfold and create the heavenly kingdom on earth. (213-124, 1991.1.16)

1.3. The essence of the Three Subjects Principle

The false parents' betrayal of the heavenly principle of love has brought ruin. Since the True Parents have reversed that, we have been able to return to our original hometown. The age has dawned in which all accounts will be settled and we may once again travel together on the proper course. Everything will see its end. Everything, including Christianity, Buddhism and Confucianism will come to an end, as will politics. So, by bringing all these together, I have established the Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace (IRFWP) for the sphere of religion and the Federation for World Peace (FWP) for the political sphere. The divided mind is being made one and its worldwide fruits are being harvested. Upon what base are they being harvested? Based on the love of True Parents. True parent, true teacher and true owner are the essence of the Three Subjects Principle. With this three-subjects philosophy, even prominent people in the world are certain to kneel down before me, saying, "Please teach us!" The politicians of the world who used to claim to be owners – false owners – all have some connection with me. The Three Subjects Principle refers to me.

Then, where is it that I live? I do not stand only in the teacher's position or only in the owner's position. Even the president of a university returns home as a parent in the evening and even the president of Korea returns to the Blue House. Even the one who commands the royal courtiers must go home to sleep and there he becomes a father, a parent.

When we see these things, we realize that parents are the center. The school is based on parents and the position of owner is based on parents. Everyone may go out, but they will eventually return to their parents. The place where you can live without having to return is the place where your parents are. That is how it works with all things involving true love. The saying that the king, the teacher and the parents are equal has its

basis there. I am now conveying a true teaching to you. This is why I am the best of all teachers.

Among rulers there has been none who ruled with love. This is why your mind and body desire to live forever resonating with me and the way I am going. Those who really love the Unification Church and those in the Unification Church who have the heart to love God, love humankind and love the fundamental essence of human beings, are unable to leave me. This is because I have the heart of a parent, the heart of a teacher and the heart of an owner. Through me, you can become parents, you can become owners and you can become teachers. (215-78, 1991.2.6)

1.4. A parent-centered ideology

Is Jesus a man or a woman? He is a man. If such a man, who has received God's love, God's life and God's lineage, had met a woman who could create a relationship with him and they bore children, then new children of God's direct lineage would have been born on this earth. Then, neither Christianity nor the Vatican would be needed today. With the appearance of sons and daughters of Jesus' direct lineage, a kingship and a true royal family would have finally begun on this earth and created one world.

This right of kingship would not initially have been a right of kingship for the whole world but one starting in a single family. From the family, it would have advanced beyond being a family kingship, to have become a tribal, a national, a worldwide and a cosmic kingship. Then there would be no need for any Christian denominations or ministers. The Vatican would not be needed. Democracy would not be needed. Democracy is an ideology based only on brotherhood. This is why people are fighting. Brothers are fighting among themselves. Hence, the ideology upholding brotherhood should return to a parent-centered ideology and from there to the God-centered ideology of Godism.

What is the parent-centered ideology? It is the character of true parents that Adam and Eve were to have fulfilled on earth. Next, what is the God-centered ideology? Since True Parents are the horizontal parents, we also need the vertical parent. Therefore, the vertical parent-centered ideology is the God-centered ideology. What we term as head-wing thought is the true parent-centered ideology and the vertical God-centered ideology. That is how it works.

Human beings are born when heavenly life and earthly life are connected, heavenly love and earthly love are connected, and heavenly lineage and earthly lineage are connected through the unity between the horizontal true parent-centered ideology and the vertical God-centered ideology. That is why we are beings with a dual structure. We consist of an internal person and an external person.

The internal person is the vertical self and the bodily person is the horizontal self. These are the fruit. (224-277, 1991.12.15)

Democracy is an ideology of brotherhood. When there are many brothers, the one among them who receives the most love from their parents always creates an issue in the family. When some of the children take after the father and some after the mother, a mother's group and a father's group will emerge based on which child takes after which parent. Such a scenario takes place based on love.

This is why after the Second World War we saw that the victorious nations allowed the defeated nations to keep their independence. This signified that the world had entered the realm of the brotherhood ideology. When we reach the point closest to the appearance of the ideology on God's side, the two brothers will fight in front of the one God.

In the final period of history, America has played a leading role based on its Christian culture, which has laid a unified foundation. Instead of judging the other nations of the world, America allowed the defeated nations to maintain their independence.

These things suggest that we have entered the age of God's providence when the abandoned sons and daughters, the prodigal children, can be brought back into the fold. This explains why the age of democracy, as a brotherhood ideology, came about. As the time of the brotherhood ideology comes to an end, the parent-centered ideology will arrive. Unification can occur only under such a parent-centered ideology. This is providential history. (213-10, 1991.1.13)

Section 2. The Proclamation of True Parents

2.1. Background to the proclamation of True Parents

How can I declare the coming of True Parents? The democratic world and the communist world are brothers, Abel and Cain. The two worlds are like two sons and yet they are fighting. But since I have reconciled the two fighting sons and stood in the position where I could be welcomed, I was finally able to return to Korea with the special authority of the Parents and I declared the coming of the True Parents throughout the nation.

This news is spreading throughout the whole world. The CIA in America is supposed to make a daily report on my whereabouts. It is the same in the Soviet Union. So, they surely know about me!

The fact that True Parents have been declared in this way places me in a global position. Everything that has been prepared in the world is waiting to be engrafted onto Korea.

What is the problem? We must quickly achieve "the unification of my nation." The people of Korea are waiting to be engrafted onto the unified foundation. This is precisely how it is. (204-187, 1990.7.8)

2.2. The standard for the proclamation of True Parents

Strictly speaking, my hometown is not your hometown. The branches, buds and leaves are all the same, but the loca-

tions of the branches are each of your individual hometowns. Hence, if you cannot determine to restore your tribe, you do not have a hometown. Those who have no hometown cannot be born.

That is why we are engaged in the restoration of parents. You need to complete tribal messiahship through three generations.

Someone must prepare the circumstances in which all the fulfilled responsibilities – both those under the direct dominion and those in the sphere of the indirect dominion – can become one. Centering on God's love, that person should conduct a ceremony declaring that all of us, together with all of the creation, belong to love. No one, however, has been able to do such a thing, so the sphere of God's ownership is not yet determined. Whereas the declaration ceremony should have been conducted in oneness with God's love, it was conducted in oneness with satanic love, which exists as a corruption of the Principle. Thus, Satan usurped ownership. (213-123, 1991.1.16)

Democracy, too, has its conflicts. These are like fights between brothers. Fights between brothers are more terrible than those between neighbors, because if one brother is the east, the other is the west, and when east and west do not harmonize, the east becomes closer to north or south, and the west becomes closer to south or north.

That is, when brothers fight, they separate. But neighbors do not separate even after they fight. They do not pack up and run away. The most vicious of all disputes are those between brothers. Two nations at war in this age of brotherhood are bound to perish.

Korea has also fought, not knowing who the elder is or who the younger. The question is, "why do they not know?" They are badly raised children who do not know who their parents are. Brought into this world and raised as orphans, they will only stop fighting when their parents appear. That is why parents, the Saviors, must come. The fighting and conflict cannot end in an era of democracy – of brothers – but will only come to an end in the era of parent-centered thought.

The Unification Church has proclaimed the coming of the True Parents. If Adam and Eve had not fallen in the Garden of Eden, God would have become the True Parent. Adam and Eve would have become true parents also with God as the vertical True Parent, and Adam and Eve as the horizontal true parents – true parents within whom the vertical and horizontal are united. Viewed from this perspective, all four directions are the same. Even if things were turned upside down and east traded places with west, no matter how things were rearranged, all would remain in harmony.

If America continues to serve its own interests, it will not be able to turn the world around. Even communism should not serve its own interests, but should serve the world. Communism should become a system that is praised even by the democratic world as well as by itself. It should become an ideology which

everyone can cheer.

In this world gone bad, where vicious fighting has taken place and still continues, what kind of ideology is needed? In order for groups to stop fighting, brother against brother, the mother and father must appear. In that light, I have declared True Parents today.

For True Parents to be proclaimed worldwide, they must accomplish their mission as True Parents at all the stages of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, and cosmos. They must reach the point where God Himself can acknowledge True Parents, where True Parents themselves can acknowledge True Parents. This announcement is truly historic. (202-165, 1990.5.20)

The proclamation of the True Parents should go out to and be received by at least one third of all humankind, but what is the reality? For this purpose I have set up conditions for the remaining two thirds. Japan is within my sphere of influence as is America and China. Everyone is within my sphere of influence.

When the age of parents comes, the fighting will be over. Even if brothers are still fighting at eighty, ninety, or a hundred years old, when their parents come, should the brothers stop and run to greet, their parents, or should they continue fighting? How should they run to greet the parents for whom they have waited thousands of years?

I have conquered through love – a love that serves others rather than myself. (202-170, 1990.5.20)

2.3. The place where the proclamation of True Parents is made

You should understand why I have suffered. If it were for my own country, why should I suffer? I am a smart man. I am very well acquainted with Korean customs. I am going this way because I want to serve the world and the heavenly kingdom. Korea has done all kinds of things for the past forty years. The nation has committed many sins against me. I have set up everything, carrying the burdens of my brothers and sisters and those of all the Korean people, all of whom are related to me in varying degrees. After all this, I have come this time and given the Blessing. This is why I proclaimed True Parents. Where did I make this declaration? It was not in Moscow. I did it in Korea. The Korean people should be grateful for this. (204-187, 1990.7.8)

2.4. Phenomena occurring after the proclamation of True Parents

2.4.1. The world today is rapidly changing due to the announcement of the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages.

You must have heard the words "Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages." Do you know what they mean? On August 31, 1989, I declared the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages, in Kodiak, Alaska. At that time, even you would not have believed

what I said. When I said that the world would transform rapidly from that time on, you must have thought, "Oh, can it really happen?" The next day, the first of September, I proclaimed "the ideology upholding the Heavenly Father." I declared the parent-centered ideology there at the very end, on top of the world. If the true parent-centered ideology had appeared on this earth before now, there would be no Satan or the sinful world that exists today. Now that such an ideology has been established, we can conclude that the satanic world must inevitably retreat.

On November 9, 1989, two months following this ceremony and declaration, the Berlin Wall crumbled. Then, after I held the Moscow conference, in April 1990, the top ranking communists and the brightest, most outstanding members of their second generation turned around completely 180 degrees in my favor. As the top echelon of the Soviet Union and the brightest members of their second generation turned around, they reached the point of no return.

We selected three thousand people from the Soviet Union who could understand English fully and educated them completely. Gorbachev even declared that they would give up communism. That was the end. Amid the turmoil today, what is the one single hope? What is the ideology that can take the lead? Now we have reached the stage where everyone can conclude that there is no ideology other than that with God at the center. Up to now, history has been led by people, but once they realize that God exists, they will arrive at the conclusion that they cannot help but follow that ideology. (218-157, 1991.7.28)

2.4.2. The forces of the devil enter the realm of death

Until now, the first son has been in the devil's position. All the good spirits in the spirit world have used those on earth standing in the position of the second son. All spiritualists, therefore, have made use of other people on earth. However, now that we have restored the true rights and obligations of the first son, of the parents, and true kingship, the situation has been turned upside down. From now on, those who oppose the Unification Church will be struck down. Just wait and see.

Since true primogeniture has been restored, and Adam has been perfected on earth, we have entered the age when he can command the archangel in the spirit world. This is global. I have proclaimed True Parents throughout the world because I have restored the true rights and obligations of the first son and of parents, centered on myself.

Whereas the emergence of the false parents turned the world into a satanic place, the proclamation of True Parents under God will expel the forces of the devil, whether communist or any other. In terms of evil, the Republic of Korea is the worst. They are trafficking in men and women, not to mention children, for profit. It has plummeted to the depths to the most evil position. Who will clean it up? Not the present regime. It will be

done by my hand. The hand of the True Parent will cleanse it all; not by force but through education. Thus will the world be put in order. (210-246, 1990.12.23)

2.4.3. The coming of the heavenly fortune for unification

With what do we settle down? We settle down with the love of Adam and Eve, and with True Parents. We should settle down with God's vertical love and True Parents' horizontal love. From here true children's blood connection with the original True Parents will finally emerge, horizontally expanding from the individual, family and tribe and leading to the formation of a tribe and people.

Until now, I have been fighting to find and establish these things, and I have triumphed. I have been proceeding under the persecution of the satanic world. When I started out as an individual, all the individuals in the satanic world opposed me. When I went based on my family, all the families in the satanic world opposed me. When the Unification Church was pursuing the formation of a tribe and people, the tribes and peoples all opposed us. They all opposed us based on whatever conditions had been established. But as I triumphed in this process, America submitted and the Soviet Union came to the brink of collapse; so there is nothing left to attack us.

After being victorious on the battlefield, I have returned. The summit cannot be surpassed. In returning, where do we go? Having mastered the satanic world, we return to our hometown.

Thus, we should enter North Korea through the land of South Korea. When the Right and Left all collapse, who gains supremacy? The heavenly side will gain supremacy. Through our declaration of True Parents, the communist world stands in the position to collapse completely, and Satan will decline rapidly from now on. He will not fall at the angle with which he ascended; he will plunge straight down because this is not Satan's path; it is True Parents' path. True Parents won the victory in the satanic world, and now can go beyond it, and come down to the plain.

This is not a place Satan can occupy; it is where True Parents are going, leading all the people. This is why everything is declining now. It is said that the present world is an age when material things have almighty power; but in terms of the spirit, it is an age of nothing.

Thus, the mission of the Unification Church is to deemphasize material interests, and make the spirit the central focus. Today's schools teach skills but not character. They teach that God and humankind are not important. But we must preserve the value of both and go down the right path. We should start on the downward path and match this as one cyclic law. We must return to our hometown and achieve the reunification of North and South Korea.

Korea is a sacrificial offering representing the division between the left and right, that is, between the democratic and communist worlds. Our minds and

bodies are also divided, and our families are divided. Everything is in two camps and these camps are in conflict with each other. They have become factions that are divided front and back, and are fighting instead of being vertically aligned as upper and lower. The upper and the lower houses ought to be vertically aligned, yet they are fighting. So we need to establish this vertical relationship. (202-270, 1990.5.25)

The Unification Church can unify democracy and communism, and unite all religions. It can also unite religions with the world. We came with the responsibility to unify heaven and earth in front of the great way of heaven, and we were attacked. So as we rise higher and higher from the individual, through the family, tribe and people, those who have opposed and attacked us must go down. They have reached their peak and now must lose all their power. Hence, there is no country, no matter how large, that has confidence in the second and third generations; there is no country that can have hope in the second and third generations. All nations have become like that. Such a time has arrived.

My visit to the Soviet Union and other activities put an end to the communist world. The world has been laughing at us. They thought that we would shrink away and disappear, but this will not happen. It may seem that they have supremacy and can control everything as they wish, but that is an illusion. The Republic of Korea is on the verge of chaos. This problem cannot be solved by anyone. Everything declines after reaching its maximum height. We are rising by piercing through these barriers.

What is the original standard that enables us to pierce through and continue going up? It is True Parents' teaching. Adam and Eve become family and tribal level true parents. Viewed historically, everyone is a part of one family, but Adam and Eve are the ancestors of True Parents. When a nation is formed, who are the ancestors of the nation? They are True Parents. Who are the ancestors of the family? They are True Parents. Who are the ancestors of the world? True Parents.

This is why the appearance of True Parents on this earth leads to the formation of the families in the heavenly nation and the organization of entire tribes, peoples, nations, and the world under the dominion of True Parents.

What does it mean to be victorious here? It means that all go into the domain of True Parents. This is why Satan attacks this domain from every side, and strikes it to keep it from growing. But we achieved victory in all these battles over the last forty-three years and have triumphed in America.

With respect to the Cain and Abel issue, America is a nation in the Cain position before me. I have fought against and won over this Cain, just as I won over the Soviet Union. Cain and Abel, communism and democracy, and the Left and Right-wings have reached their peak. Head-wing thought is standing at this point. Head wing thought is the perfected-Adam philosophy. Due to the Fall

and since Adam failed to become perfect, a son on Satan's side, Cain, and a son on Heaven's side, Abel, were raised up in order to restore Adam. Thus Left and Right have been fighting to claim ownership. This is what has been going on.

What is head-wing thought? It is the perfected Adam's philosophy. What are Adam's philosophy and head-wing thought based on? In terms of the Principle, the indirect dominion and the direct dominion are not yet unified. By Adam's fulfillment of his responsibility the indirect and direct dominions will be unified. They become one after having gone beyond ten stages of growth. What does the number ten signify? It is the horizontal line. Ten finally constitutes the horizontal line.

Even nine cannot constitute a horizontal line. A horizontal line forms when the number ten is reached. Centered on love, heaven and earth, and mind and body will settle completely on the horizontal line. This settlement is for eternity. (202-270, 1990.5.25)

From this standpoint, we must proclaim True Parents. The proclamation of True Parents will trigger unification. We have three organizations dedicated to this. They are the Unification Church, the Federation for Victory Over Communism, and the Citizen's Federation. The Citizen's Federation was founded in order to unify North and South Korea. The Federation for Victory Over Communism was established to offer protection against the communist world. We can unify the North and South only when we are protected from the communist world.

I founded the Unification Church for the purpose of providing spiritual guidance in order to build a firm foundation for educating the conscience. This had not existed. Satan has been attacking the Unification Church to prevent us from building that foundation. However, I have now made all the indemnity conditions, returned to my homeland and proclaimed the True Parents.

I have proclaimed the True Parents throughout the Unification movement and then to the people who have some relationship with us and to our relatives. The True Parents have already been proclaimed in the Unification Church. Have they not been proclaimed throughout the entire Unification movement?

Because the Cains and Abels need to be one, the proclamation will be made to the nation. At that point, those in the position of Cain who have opposed us, will become one with us. Now the proclamation is finished. That is why spiritual mediums all receive the revelation that the day when True Parents are proclaimed is the day the world ends.

Since the world began with evil parents, a new world will begin when everything that is connected to those evil parents is brought to submission and the True Parents can make their beginning.

When a Korean wrestling champion and his challenger battle on the mat, the champion is still the champion until he falls down. But once he falls down, he goes into the pit. It will happen exactly like that. (202-273, 1990.5.25)

I have proclaimed the True Parents. The Republic of Korea will not perish because I have done so. If Adam and Eve, in the Garden of Eden, had become true parents, there would have been no devil. Since your deceased ancestors are in the position of archangels, they are standing behind you members of the Unification Church. The spirit world is helping us because I performed the proclamation ceremony. From now on, if you have confidence and just trust my words and act, all kinds of things will happen.

A while ago, when we were holding rallies to welcome True Parents in cities, counties, and districts, I said that you district leaders would bring results in accordance with the breadth of your mindset. When I suggested to the regional directors the idea of holding rallies for three thousand people, they all opposed me, but I said, "Trust me, believe in me, and just do it," and when they followed what I had said, it worked. (203-242, 1990.6.26)

2.4.4. There will be no conflict in the future

Until now Koreans have never even once invaded a foreign land. The Korean people are a race who have deep affection and love for humanity. From this point of view, I can say that the Korean people are close to the realm of God's heart because they have sacrificed more than any other people.

The highest things in the world, the highest and most precious things in the world of fallen humanity are the True Parents and the right of the first son. Next come the rights and responsibilities of parents, and then comes right of kingship. This is an exclusive authority. God has been active in Korean history order to secure the authority of the first son who inherits the heavenly kingship. It is the same with Japan. It is the right of the first son to carry on for the emperor in the final days. The first son has to become a true parent. Adam was the original first son of humankind. Thus, the right of the first son must necessarily connect with the position of a true parent, and the realm of the first son must be restored. Otherwise, he will be unable to stand in the position of a true parent.

I returned from Russia and proclaimed the True Parents. The proclamation of True Parents! After restoring the right of the first son, True Parents must stand on the world level. Having gone beyond the nation to the world, based on how circumstances expand, that leads to tribal kingship and national kingship for True Parents. Thus, when True Parents succeed on the national level, true kingship will begin. When North and South Korea are united, the true kingship will begin.

The kingship that proceeds from God will be established. That is why the nation where such a kingship is formed will have the three main components of a nation: sovereignty, territory, and citizenry. Without sovereignty, territory, and citizenry, kingship cannot be established. I am now calling for global citizens. We now have sovereignty, but lack people and territory. Consequently, a

citizen that brings unification to North and South Korea, as a citizen of heaven and earth, should go on to establish kingship in alignment with the Unification Church.

In the future there will be no conflict. The struggles until this time have been self-centered and pointless. They were struggles to take something from someone else. A unified world, on the other hand, is a world where God's kingship is established and where people live for the sake of others. Then there is no need for war. There is no need for brothers to deprive each other of their possessions. Instead they may run away because the other is trying to give too much to them! That is why, if you live unselfishly in your town, everything will be offered to you. You can receive a room in that town. With the utmost devotion people will prepare breakfast, lunch and dinner for you. You will be able to sleep there on your way. Such an age is coming.

In the future, the separation of the three powers will not be needed. Laws and everything else will disappear. When the autonomous realm of love is fully established, the law will automatically be fulfilled. In the place where living for others is realized, no problems arise: upper and lower, front and back, and left and right are one. (224-171, 1991.11.24)

2.5. The remarkable proclamation of True Parents

I have brought together the right-wing and the left-wing. Nobody knows how much I have suffered while walking this path. We need to build a domain where Godism, the God-centered ideology centered on head-wing vertical thought, can be publicly recognized in schools and at all levels of leadership. So the Soviet and American governments should say that when they live centered on Rev. Moon, America will live and the Communist party will live.

When I visited Moscow, the CIA kept an eye on me, but Rev. Moon will digest the Communist party, rather than ever being digested by it. I am the one who showed the direction that US policy should take over the next six months. When the Americans were hesitating over the Soviet proposal to reduce arms, I educated them and helped them go over all the hurdles.

When we turn around, where do we have to go? We should return home through the world; we should go over the nation and return to our hometown.

Because the fallen ancestors started with the family of Adam and Eve, we need to get rid of this mask. We need to clear the names of the three great ancestors of the three great ages. Adam fell. Satan killed the true ancestor of humankind. The first generation, Adam, became God's enemy through his fall. The one who came next as the second true parent was Jesus, the Messiah. This Messiah, who had come as the Savior, was killed by humankind, by his sons and daughters, by the people. How great is the sin of the country that imprisoned and killed the true parent? They could not escape from this. This is why the people of Isra-

el have wandered around in other lands for two thousand years. When we look back through history, we see that many among their number were stabbed to death, or kicked by horses, or have disappeared like the dew through resentment or curses. After barely making it through two thousand years of history, they managed to create an independent nation with the support of America.

The devil killed our parents, the devil's sons and daughters killed the second true parent, and devils throughout the entire world have attempted to mobilize all the ideologies and systems to kill the third true parent. Yet it is amazing that True Parents survived all kinds of perils and hardships and have been able to proclaim the way of the Parents, the True Parents on earth! How much God has longed for this! (219-333, 1991.10.13)

2.6. How we should conduct ourselves after the proclamation of True Parents

I told Gorbachev to get rid of the statues of Lenin and Marx. In the history of the Communist party, nobody except Rev. Moon ever said such a thing. The Communist party leaders were all in commotion, saying, "Is he really speaking about Godism in front of us? How can he talk so arrogantly?" No matter how much they may have hated me, today's communist world has become like that. The one whom they had feared most in the world has turned into their only hope. They have no other hope. So I taught them clearly saying, "Listen to my words and follow me; otherwise, there is no way to go forward!" How proud God must have been of me, saying, "I have always wanted to declare this to the Soviet Union. You are a great son!" Since He said, "I want to set you above all humankind," I have become quite famous.

American leaders said, "Wow, how can he do that?" European leaders also said, "How can he do that?" and the communist world said, "How can he do that kind of thing in the Kremlin itself?" When God came down to take a look, He must have said, "This is really interesting!" I know that is why I made such a clear declaration.

Everything is connected to the True Parents. Your ears want to seek out the True Parents; so do your nose, mouth and eyes. Everything is like that because True Parents have a strong power to attract everything. I know this. Even all of nature desires the True Parents. The creation says, "True Parents, please stay here with us always." Nature cries out. Everything likes True Parents. They like the sound "True Parents." When someone says, "I have met True Parents," another says, "Where?" "Follow me." Everyone will want to follow that person. That is what True Parents are like. True mother, true husband, true wife, true children, true grandchildren and true patriots all emerge from them. Everything starts from there.

This is the gospel with the greatest hope. We do not need the Bible. The purpose of the Bible is solely to find the True Parents. So the name "True Parents" is most precious. How do you want to be

related to True Parents? That is the question. If you think of True Parents as a tree, you are its branches that can thrive wherever they are planted. These branches live well wherever they go as long as there is love, regardless of whether they are planted at night, in the day, in winter, in spring, or in the rainy season. This is so because they accept everything. (202-351, 1990.5.27)

Our purpose is to liberate and save God, humankind and everything under the satanic dominion. This is our goal. This is True Parents' purpose. We are declaring the heart of such parents as we march on. Satan cannot survive in such a place. This is the Principle view. It is the same with all things. They will shout *Mansei*! as they see you being saved. You have to be able to hear this kind of sound.

Wherever you go, all the things of creation will welcome you and all people will welcome you. The original world, centered on true love, is filled with the true-love sound of everything in creation. In the world of true love, you can understand everything as God does. It is there that you will inherit everything and have the right of participation, enabling you to join in wherever you are. True love provides these three privileges. This means that we can grab hold of true love automatically. We inherit God. God becomes mine. We can be with God wherever He is. How great this is! How happy we are! Nobody can deny this. We have such an amazing thing. How can we worry in our hearts? There can be no shadow. It is bright like broad daylight. This is the pride of Unification Church members. (202-354, 1990.5.27)

Therefore, from now on there will be no opposition from Satan on the path that Unification Church members are taking. From now on, whatever we shout will be absorbed and resurrected; whatever we shout out will appear.

There has been opposition until now because we have been on the rise. But we have reached the top and since there is no right-wing or left-wing at the top, the vertical thought has appeared. Head wing is higher. Everyone likes it because it is higher. Communism is an ideology of master and servant. There is no freedom. Democracy is an ideology of brotherhood. As such, it is about freedom. People have freedom among themselves. This is why fights continuously arise. They fight among themselves, each claiming to be the best.

Headwing thought is based on the parental heart and viewpoint. In America, senators and congressmen fight, and Republicans and Democrats fight. Why are they fighting? Because there have been no parents. When the parents come and ask them, "Hey you kids! Why are you fighting? You are not servants, but our sons!" Then all the fighting will stop. Parents should be happy to see black people and white people intermarrying. Parents want their sons and daughters to love one another rather than merely showing filial piety toward their parents. This is how children can love their parents.

If you make God's true love your central focus, you will be eternally one. You will be connected with me from that point and once that connection is made no one can sever it. (202-356, 1990.5.27)

You will decide, "We also will walk the path of True Parents." It is the same. You will also in the future take roots, rise as a trunk, spread branches, have blossoms and bear fruit. Everything is the same. This means that you will be true parents in the future. Things will happen this way in the future. How proud we should be! Open the door and try shouting, "Look here. What an amazing master is this person who is appearing here!" You will feel great. All the animals will feel the same. The spirit world will also say, "You are a savior with true love like your center, like Jesus the Messiah. Wherever you go, everyone there will be saved."

With the proclamation of True Parents, Satan's authority will disappear and, centering on religion, all the struggle due to the laws of indemnity will disappear. Since the good spirits will attain a position equal to the angelic world, an unfallen world will come about and the time will come when good spirits can help the earth as much as they want. Those angels are your ancestors. So from now on, all kinds of things will happen to those who oppose the Unification Church. They may get sick and die and all kinds of other things will happen.

You should become bold. This means that you should exercise the rights of ownership. Then, no matter how difficult an environment you may find yourself in, no problems can arise. If you say, "God does not want these things. Get lost!" they will be gone. They will rapidly decline. It is the same with the spirit world. If you say, "I do not want such things!" they will immediately disappear. You will be able to exercise such power all around you. When the center of love appears, everything will turn around towards it. When the morning sun rises in the east, all of nature turns towards it. This is the essence of life, the essence of love. True Parents are the central foundation for universal true love.

Thus, when True Parents appear, the entire world of creation will turn towards them, just as all of nature turns towards the rising sun in the morning. All creation is like the leaves or branches. In the spirit world everything faces God. Likewise, in the Unification Church, when I go somewhere, the attention of all the members is automatically upon me. It is the same.

Your entire purpose is true love and the center of the world is true love. God is the parent of true love. All liberation takes place there. When you stand in such a place the doors of the four directions will open automatically. The spirit world is the same as this. In the spirit world, wherever a master of true love may go, there are no closed doors. Doors will open automatically everywhere. Such a person is welcome everywhere. People in high positions will come and say, "Welcome. It has been so boring for too long. I welcome everything that is fun." How splendid this will be! So you

should understand this clearly from now on. You have inherited everything of True Parents'. No one can tell you to do this or that. You will automatically be the owner. You will be a teacher and true parent. No one else can teach you. You need no other teachers, owners, or parents. You will stand in such a position in the near future. (202-358, 1990.5.27)

Until now, because of the Fall, it has been difficult for the hearts of people on earth to be vertically connected to the heart of God. The appearance of True Parents will connect them. Your relatives who do not oppose True Parents at that point are not the Cain sphere. They have entered the Abel sphere on God's side.

Thus, from now on the realm of religion will break down. Until now, through the realm of religion centering on the chosen people, the spiritual and physical worlds have been connected in a mainstream type of relationship. Now, the Cain and Abel environment has disappeared because the Old Testament, New Testament and Completed Testament Ages have reached the same degree of completion. This has taken away the authority of religions. Thus, those families who are centered on you and who do not oppose you stand in the position of heavenly Abel. So things will turn around as you set them in motion and push. Today is such a period in history. That is why it will become our world.

You should understand this era. The proclamation of True Parents will put an end to the parents with satanic lineage. True Parents have fought against the satanic world, won back everything, risen up, and reached the stage where the democratic and communist worlds will collapse. Thus, since they have created these victorious conditions, on the basis of that proclamation the satanic world will come to an end. What does it mean for the satanic world to come to an end? It means being liberated from Satan.

Until now we have lived within the culture and environment of the satanic world. But now we are being liberated from the satanic world, satanic lifestyle, and satanic lineage. Where do we go after being liberated from Satan? We must return to God. The world today does not know God. Satan made it that way. Humanism does not recognize God, either. American humanism today has expelled God. What is the basis for humanism? It is the body.

The body focuses on itself. It seeks pleasure. If you chase after it you will be ruined. That is reality. So we need to be liberated from Satan and liberated from a satanic lifestyle: lifestyle means culture. We need to be liberated from such a lifestyle. Next, we need to be liberated from that lineage. Then, where do we return to once we are liberated from Satan? We must return to God. Although we need to return to God, neither communism nor secular humanism knows how to return to God. More than that, where and how should we live? We are not meant to live according to our whims, like animals. Ideally our lives would begin centering on True Parents from the outset. We should live in

the domain of the global ideal centered on True Parents. Thus, you cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven without believing in True Parents. Right now it is as if there were many branches that have not been engrafted. (202-275, 1990.5.25)

You have to go out to the countryside and lay the foundation for True Parents. True Parents have to prepare the foundation for heaven. God goes ahead to prepare the path that True Parents will travel and True Parents prepare your path. Thus, you just have to follow True Parents. God goes one step ahead of the coming True Parents. For this reason the providence of restoration has consisted of the age of the providence to lay the foundation for restoration, the age of the providence of restoration, and the age of the completion of the providence of restoration.

God laid this foundation without True Parents' knowing about it and True Parents laid this foundation without your knowing about it. You also should lay the foundation without your descendants knowing about it. In this way, we must go beyond the national level and beyond the global level. Then, God will go beyond the level of the history of the cosmos. If our members go beyond the national level, True Parents will go beyond the global level and God will go beyond the level of the history of the cosmos. In this way, humankind centered on God must itself go beyond the level of the history of the cosmos.

In light of this, you are two stages behind God. Since you are two stages behind God, you cannot allow yourself to be disappointed or tired. True Parents are going ahead of you on the path, for your sake; and God is going ahead of True Parents, for your sake. The efforts of God and True Parents are something you cannot repay with anything, even through your own death. You are going ahead with such a debt. True Parents inherit God's will and you inherit True Parents' will – you should never lose that philosophical tradition. What is that philosophical tradition? Since people are born into the lineage of the enemy Satan, they must first cut off the lineage of this enemy, Satan, and then restore the lineage of God and True Parents. In order to do this, everyone must become one in heart with God. Based on that oneness of heart, people should connect with the heavenly lineage, become a branch and leaf of the tree whose root is God, and become an incarnation of God, thereby establishing an absolute standard on earth to subjugate Satan. Only then will the history of restoration move forward. (13-296, 1964.4.12)

2.7. What we need to do after the proclamation of True Parents

2.7.1. Be grateful for the proclamation

What will happen through the proclamation of True Parents? All the good spirits in the spirit world that have served God and all the evil spirits centered on Satan will be sharply divided. When you are centered on True Parents, you stand

in the position of perfected Adam and Eve. Perfected Adam should always be protected, nurtured and helped by the archangel. When you stand in the realm of perfected Adam, the archangel must not only help you, but must also serve you as the real master in keeping with the ideal of love. This is the stage where you can give the orders. You will rise to such a position. This is why this is the end of the world.

Everything in the spirit world that started with the love of false parents will come to an end and there will be a new world centered on the new love of True Parents. With this as the soil, a new world will spring up. With this proclamation, those who unconditionally oppose our Unification Church in the future will all fall sick, little by little, and collapse. They will wither away like trees that have lost their sap and immediately become food for beetles.

Thus you should follow a new lifestyle. The origin of new life is new love. What is new love? It is the love of True Parents. It is the new love of the ideal of creation. This is why you should be grateful to me. Be grateful because you have been liberated from Satan. You have been liberated from the satanic world through True Parents. What is the next thing you have been liberated from? You have been liberated from the satanic lifestyle. Next, you have been liberated from satanic lineage. Lifestyle is grounded in culture and accompanied by habits. You are liberated from Satan and from the satanic lifestyle. Lifestyles differ according to cultural background. The British live according to British culture and Americans live according to American culture. They are all different. Their living environments differ. You should be liberated from this kind of lifestyle. What follows? It is lineage. Three great liberations will occur. This is why the Unificationist culture will automatically emerge. What do you do after you are liberated? Since you are liberated from Satan, you will go to God.

If you are liberated from Satan that which has been shackled through its connection to the false parents also becomes liberated. Therefore, you will return to the free heart of the Parents. When returning, you cannot carry on with the habits of the satanic world's lifestyle. You must thoroughly burn them away. (202-273, 1990.5.25)

When you say True Parents there is God, who is the vertical True Parent, and there are the earthly True Parents, who are the horizontal True Parents. You should be created through the love arising from the union of the two. Because at the zero point – that place where there is no love – you will finally develop the character of a true subject; if you desire love, you must start from nothing. You must ignore your own fundamental existence. This is why in the Bible we find the paradoxical expression that those who seek to die will live and those who seek to live will die. Thus, you should be grateful for your having been liberated from the satanic world. Next is lifestyle. A history and tradition are established on the basis of culture,

so when I say lifestyle I mean culture. Next is lineage. Lineage revolves centered on love. You need to be liberated. This is why you should say to yourself, "I am part of God's lineage. God dwells within me." Your mind and body should not fight with each other.

From now on, ask your mind and heart. God has already entered your mind and your heart; you are God's bud and leaf because you attend True Parents and have the root. Everything experiences the ambient atmospheric pressure, but, because that pressure is completely balanced you do not feel it. Everything is protecting you to prevent you from deviating but because it is all perfectly in balance, you do not feel it. However if you act against your conscience – against God's will – even a little bit, the power of the universe will strike you, saying, "You numbskull!" This power is so strong that even if you try to go one way, your body will be spun around.

So if you pray for God to be in your mind and for True Parents to come into your body, they will come; God will dwell where mind and body intersect and correct the angle between your mind and body. You need to be liberated from the three great satanic realms. First, you must be liberated from the vertical representative, Satan, and next from the cultural realm, or lifestyle tradition you have received from your natural parents, such as the Korean culture or the American culture – and all other cultures. All of them are heading towards one center, but the farther away they are, the more trivial they are. (202-278, 1990.5.25)

2.7.2. Accumulate results

NBC, CBS and ABC have reputations as the best broadcasting companies in America. They are recognized around the world but they have done all kinds of wicked things to destroy me. The newspapers have also attacked me, but since I already knew everything before their propaganda came out, it did not work. They put their stories in the newspapers and beat their drums, but since there was no one dancing to that rhythm, the drummers became exhausted and gave up. Now we will mount our counterattack. Since we have a media company, we will challenge them through our newspaper. I called the responsible person in the editorial department at one of these papers and asked him to come see me. I gave him a hard time. I am waging this kind of battle.

That is why the issue is the actual results. It is not ability but actual results that will unify the world. Although you may not have ability, you must nevertheless have results. To achieve results is to gain power from the universe. Presidents of nations are no match for me. They will come to their knees because they cannot match me in terms of great results and business. You should also have results that you can pass down to ensuring generations. You should bring this as a gift when you go to the spirit world.

When a woman gets married, she should bring at least a small gift to her grandfather-in-law and to her other relatives. Then they will speak proudly of their new daughter-in-law. When you go

to the spirit world, your ancestors will call you in front of them and chastise you, saying, "You joined the Unification Church through the merits of your ancestors, so what did you accomplish before coming here? Have you fulfilled your role as a tribal Messiah?" Would they not chastise you, when through your actions you could have liberated seventy-two generations of your ancestors but did not? So your mind must be properly educated.

You should recover all of God's people lost to the satanic world by engrafting them into the heavenly world. How many will you bring back to God's side through your efforts? How will you create the eternal tradition of the ideal of creation? How will you create the eternal tradition of true love among your relatives and among all restored people? How will you connect your own sons and daughters with this eternal tradition? That is the issue. In the other world, this will be the key to having authority in your eternal life and your having a position in the hierarchy of life. You should take care of your relatives and bring 120 families or more with you. So prepare yourself in order to avoid being ashamed. Not only ashamed; you may even be chased away naked.

Now I have already proclaimed the True Parents to the world. As the age of the world's chosen people passes by and we enter the period of welcoming the True Parents, the age has arrived when all people from the entire world will enter the realm of Israel. That realm will be organized according to the level of people's accomplishments. (213-139, 1991.1.6)

2.7.3. Rallies to welcome True Parents

Since we are holding welcoming rallies for True Parents these days, all around the country Korean people are talking and wondering, asking themselves, "Hey, who are these 'True Parents' we hear so much about?" They should turn around and seek out the True Parents. Since they descended from false parents, they cannot find the direction God is telling them to go without first transcending the limits of the false parents and then connecting with the True Parents. This is the Principle. It is logical and undeniable. The Fall created false parents. Because they were driven out, they were the false parents. People should seek parents who have never been chased away, through whom they can live together with God forever.

This is how we Korean people are. We have songs like the one that goes, "I want to bring my parents here and live with them forever." This is because we are a people of revelations. We also have a song that goes, "The blue sky and the milky way..." This shows that we are a people to whom things have been revealed. That song showed everyone that satellites would appear, and that the world would be that kind of advanced world. What a great feeling for the arts this race has! It is a great thing that we have such a cultural background, a refined background with a deep philosophy. (206-80, 1990.10.3)

Rev. Moon has proclaimed the True Parents before all the people of the Republic of Korea through the rallies to welcome True Parents. True Parents must be proclaimed. Only then will Heaven be able to set up camp and repel the evil Satan. Now wait and see what happens. Look at the future path. We have held welcoming rallies for True Parents all over the country, but no one knows what they were about. I did not hold these rallies because I am crazy. Through the welcoming rallies for True Parents, we are solidifying the heavenly foundation to replace those on the side of evil. (204-144, 1990.7.6)

I proclaimed True Parents nationwide through the welcoming rallies for the Parents. Now what do you have to do? Since I held welcoming rallies for True Parents on the foundation where the nation and the world are connected, you Blessed Families should now hold welcoming rallies for parents on the tribal level. Then, everything will be concluded.

You need to complete your tribal messiah work. After completing messiahship on the world level based on a nation, we need to manage the tribal realm. Tribes spread throughout the world. A nation will then naturally emerge. Such a time has come. What is making this happen? The democratic world has finished its experiment. The communist world has finished its experiment, so have Christianity and all the religions in the world. Why am I saying that they have finished their experiments? There has been no group that has not opposed the Unification Church. All of them have attacked us. (202-270, 1990.5.25)

After we have finished the welcoming rallies for the Parents throughout the entire nation, we will enter a new age. Spiritualists are receiving revelations that this world is ending and that we are entering a new world. Because of the rallies the spirit world is coming down. There is an Old Testament Age, a New Testament Age and a Completed Testament Age. In the past, those spirits who had believed in one of the major religions, who left a good legacy and who are in the good spirit world, helped the providence on earth in accordance with God's will. Until now, without going that way, there has been no way for spirits to relate with the earth.

Since True Parents have now appeared on this earth, establishing individual, family, tribal, national, and global traditions and have been victorious, then now is the time when we will leave the sphere of religion behind us. Religions will disappear in the age of True Parents, because they have achieved global victory. Had Adam and Eve not fallen but become True Parents, religion would never have been needed. In that case, they would have been able to join with heaven as one, and ancestors would always be connected with their descendants on earth in that ideal of oneness. Because the Fall blocked this route, however, we need to create the proper realm for the chosen people in order to open the way.

The age of our release from the religious realm is coming, because everything has been indemnified through the people of Israel as the chosen people, Christianity as the global chosen people, and the Unification Church as the cosmic-level chosen people. So now the time is coming when the spirit world can contact the earthly world on that foundation. Thus, even non-believers will be connected to the spirit world through the realm of the chosen people and through religion, and the past ages will fade away.

Through the triumph of True Parents, there will come a time – the era when the Old Testament, the New Testament and the Completed Testament have all been fulfilled – when even non-believers can enter the mainstream of religion. Then, all of the ancestors in the spirit world will be able to visit their earthly descendants and work with them. This is what the spirit world is like. For this reason, from now on, if someone refuses to believe in the Unification Church, his ancestors will come to him and give him nightmares, sickness, and bitter medicine.

Until now, the earthly world has been divided, and occupied by Satan. However, as the good spirits in the realm of the good archangel and those in the religious realm as a whole enter the realm of evil on earth and fully expel it, everyone who has served in the shadow cast by the devil so far, whether Kim Il-sung or any other, will be washed away. Thus, as one, two, three, and four nations become connected to the Unification Church, the whole world will see the age of complete liberation. From 1988 to 2000, that is, until I turn eighty is the era of the mission to accomplish this task. This is why the role of tribal messiah has been set up.

Having proclaimed the worldwide Messiah, I have proclaimed the role of tribal messiah with the mission to head towards the realm of the national Messiah. Then the realm of national Messiah will unfold in which the tribal messiah is connected to the realm of the global Messiah. In the same way, as the establishment of heavenly states and provinces takes place, we will enter the age of the unified kingdom. (202-255, 1990.5.24)

2.8. The parent in the North and the parent in the South

As we learn in the Principle, during the Old Testament Age material things were sacrificed to pave the way for the sons and daughters to come and in the New Testament Age sons and daughters were offered as sacrifices to pave the way for the coming of the parent, the returning Lord. Why did the Parents suffer in the Completed Testament Age? They walked the suffering path in order to bring God down to this earth. My lifelong dream is to bring God down to this earth.

I was not able to attend God in my hometown. So I must go back to my hometown holding high the flag of global victory. There is an evil lord of the second coming in North Korea; an evil parent. Thus Kim Il-sung is called the "beloved parent." What does the

word parent mean? Because Satan knew that True Parents would appear in South Korea, and that True Parents' hometowns are in North Korea, he wanted to attack and kill the True Parents through North Korea. This is why Gorbachev and Kim Il-sung conspired together to assassinate me. In February of 1987, they dispatched twenty-five Red Army soldiers to America, and the spirit world caught them carrying my home address. The CIA caught them, and while they were being investigated I entered Moscow.

It is a risky path. My path is risky because in accomplishing God's will I have the responsibility to shorten this history even if only by one day. I have been paving this road, investing my whole self as if pouring all my capital into the Pacific Ocean and around the countryside. I cannot leave any historical blemishes in such a place. This is something holy. Something holy! This is why God can come and dwell in our country.

The South and North are like the body and mind. When they become one, God will come to them. God enters where they become one in love. This is why we need to unify the South and North. First, the Parents should be attended in South Korea. They should be attended better than the North Koreans attend Kim Il-sung. North Koreans carry Kim Il-sung badges. Unificationists should not be ashamed and stand even more proudly before the world than they do. North Koreans are all armed with *Juche* (self-reliance) thought. So we should arm ourselves with the Three Subjects Principle centered on God's unshakable and absolute love and widen the gap with the North Koreans so that they cannot interfere with us. Walking such a path is our mission. (212-56, 1991.1.1)

Kim Il-sung is the false father. North Koreans call him their parent, do they not? Why has he appeared at this time in history? The person who is the most villainous in all the communist countries, the greatest of all devils, will appear. However, I am called the True Parent. The True Parent should be able to subjugate the false parent through natural surrender. He should not be struck down by force. God's providence of salvation and God's victory or defeat is not determined by force. If force were to be used, everything would be over immediately. If the communists had had their way, everything would be over. The fallen world, which used to show off its mighty armies that created such a history of strife in this earthly world, and which passed down Satan's tradition, will have a miserable end.

God, who knows such things, is trying to bring Satan to surrender naturally. He tells him to do everything he wants. After letting him do everything he wants, Heaven will be hit first and then it will take it all away, saying that the one who struck the side of justice must pay for all the damages. When Satan arrives at the end of the world, he will be left with nowhere to go. He will surrender at the end of the world. God cannot bring this to pass by Himself. Rather, He has to prepare a person on

earth who can inherit this task. This is why He sends the Messiah in the Last Days. (210-231, 1990.12.23)

2.9. The religious founders and True Parents

Essentially, what have we been trying to do during the Old Testament, New Testament, and Completed Testament Ages? We have been trying to bring God inside us. Who is the root? God is. God is the root of humankind. Originally, True Parents were not the root. True Parents also came from God, who is the root. Before Adam and Eve fell, they were in the position of God's son and daughter. But after their Fall, all things of creation came to be in a higher position than Adam and Eve. This happened because Adam and Eve fell. Through the Fall, they sunk lower than all things. Since all things became higher than people, they have given their lives for humankind. They have shed blood in our place and through this, have worked to reverse the positions. This is why, in the Old Testament Age, offerings were sacrificed to pave the pathway for the sons and daughters to travel on.

In the New Testament Age, Jesus came and sacrificed himself as a child to pave the way for Parents. Through martyrs shedding a great quantity of blood, Christians paved the road for the coming of the Parents in the age of the Second Coming.

What is the relationship between Jesus and True Parents? Jesus is in the position of the Son, while True Parents are in the position of the Parents. I have said that Buddha is my disciple, Jesus is my disciple and Confucius is my disciple. Spiritual people can know everything if they pray. Wait and see. The Unification Church will be the center of religious unification in the end, correcting the standard for presidents, prime ministers, and all the proud politicians of the nations. This is my work, to accomplish this not by force, but by natural submission. (211-312, 1991.1.1)

You don't know how rigid religious dogmatists can be. Syria belongs to the Islamic cultural sphere. I brought an elite group of leaders from Syria to East Garden and we shared the Divine Principle with them. Our Unification Church is not a branch of Christianity but its main trunk. Because Jesus brought salvation by being sacrificed in the role of the son, Jesus himself must have parents, and because Jesus did not have a son of his own, his authority as a parent must be restored. For this reason the term "True Parents" is so wonderful.

Established Christian churches are making a big fuss because I said that Jesus is my disciple, but they will see everything when they go to the spirit world. Why do I say such things, when I know clearly that doing so will cause me to be inundated with curses?

How about the established Christian churches? Through Unification Church members, I will clean up anything that is unclean in their back rooms and hold worship services transcending all denominations. After this, I will go to

the spirit world. I will go there after completing that trans-denominational worship. You may not know this, but there are already a large number of ministers using our Principle. Some of them read the Divine Principle on a blanket and when a deacon or elder comes in, they quickly hide it underneath the blanket, and then take it out again when they leave, and read it all night. They memorize it and diligently use it.

Autumn leaves do not fall all at once. Do they fall all at once? They do not. They fall one by one, rather than as a whole bunch. Although they fall one by one, before long the tree, once clothed with green, is left with no leaves. Whether they know it or not, I am dealing with things in that way. (213-34, 1991.1.13)

Section 3. The Proclamation of True Parents and Kingship

3.1. Adam's family, the original starting point of the royal palace

God's will was for Adam to reach perfection. Adam was the eldest son, the first son. He was the son who received the first love. This is the right of the first son. Since Adam was able to receive that first love he could have become a parent centering on that first love. After inheriting this vertical love from God, Adam was to form a couple with his spouse and they were to be connected through horizontal love. This is where the words "restoration of the right of parents" comes from. Until now, throughout all of history there never existed any foundation upon which parents could appear.

Human history has been knit together by war. It has been a battle, this history of fighting between Cain and Abel. To put an end to this, brothers and sisters must become one. When will we come to realize that those enemies are our brothers and sisters? They used to be our elder brothers and younger brothers. Who will teach them this? The parents will teach them. They did not know about the divisions among their ancestors. Who will teach them? The parents will. Since the parents teach them, the children will come into harmony. They are to be children centered on the parents. Only when the children harmonize can the true authority of parents appear. This, therefore, is the restoration of the right of parents.

When the lost children are found, parents can regain authority over their children. Next, the right of kingship which has been lost must be restored. The ideal starting point of parents is the royal palace. Adam, must exercise his right as the first son, restore the right of parents, and true kingship and establish himself centering on God's love. This settling is the origin of the royal palace and parents. Next is the point where the first son's rights originate. By following this tradition, the universe fully adapts itself. When this is achieved, even the fallen archangel will have to bow his head.

The relationship between the communist world and the democratic world is a Cain-Abel relationship. Cain and Abel fought, did they not? In a vertical

sense, the political and religious spheres represent Cain and Abel. The vertical aspect was struck by the horizontal, so the foundation to restore the right of the first son was lost. The foundation to restore it automatically includes the right of parents. Parents come into being on the foundation of the eldest son. When the right of parents is established, right of kingship will grow. Adam's family is the starting point of the royal palace. As the royal family grows in numbers, there will be more citizens. When the tribe inherits this kingship centering on the right of the eldest son and centering on that tribe, the tribes from other blood lines will become citizens. This is part of the principle. Because of this, they are all part of the royal family.

You can return to the original standard of Adam's family only when you have the consciousness of being a royal family in the heavenly nation. You are tribal messiahs. Tribal messiahs are parents, and also kings. They are to represent the rights of the eldest son, and to inherit the tribal kingship, the rights of tribal parents, and even the rights of a tribal eldest son. The formation-stage and growth-stage Adams come to life through the completion-stage Adam. What does this mean? The rights of the eldest son and tribal messiahship take the form of a family that has been resurrected by Jesus. Moreover, before this is achieved, Jesus cannot resurrect the formation-stage Adam. Jesus himself cannot resurrect him.

Because the perfected returning Lord has come, exercising the victorious authority to complete the mission of Jesus in the global sphere, and because he has come having victorious supremacy over Satan, only the returning Lord can exercise the authority of Jesus and the authority of Adam in parallel. So the returning Lord is the representative of the perfected Adam and the perfected Jesus, who have triumphed on that foundation. To combine the formation and growth levels and perfect them is to become the third Adam. When we say "the foundation for the completion of the third Adam," it includes Jesus and Adam. So centering on the foundation for the perfection of the third Adam, and on the basis of this victorious supremacy, he should firmly establish global messiahship. (218-69, 1991.7.2)

3.2. The establishment of kingship

On True Parents' Day, what we can think about first is the restoration of brotherhood, and second, how the restoration of the right of parents is complete. Next, as the third step, the restoration of the right of kingship remains. Now that I have restored the right of parents, I am sending out tribal messiahs to put everything in order, just as God sent the returning Lord and just as He sent Jesus. This is possible because the vertical standard has been established. Vertically, the three standards of Adam's age, Jesus age, and the age of the Second Advent have been established. Since they have been established through my having fought and gained victory, they must all be extended from this point on into

the age of the Second Advent.

What must you achieve through this? You must build your own family. A circle will arise. Through me, three parents were established in this way; they are the Adam parents, the Jesus parents, and the Second Advent parents. Therefore, I am sending you in the same way that God is sending the returning Lord, as if He were sending Adam again. The third Adam came to save the second Adam and first Adam. Just as the third Adam came and restored the second Adam, you have to save your parents who are the first Adam.

Your mothers and fathers will rise to the position of Adam. Through this, the traditions in the sphere of religion will disappear. There will be no further need for religion. The entire world will enter the realm of the chosen people. What will this do? Horizontally, your birth parents will be tribal messiahs and those born into your lineage will be national messiahs. This has become possible. This is horizontal. Through this, everyone will stand in the position of being connected through one set of parents. The third Adam is also one set of parents. Thus, the land of your birth, your hometown, will become the heavenly nation – the Kingdom of Heaven. And your father and mother in your hometown will become your ancestors – true ancestors.

What comes first? Standing on God's side comes first. Next is the family standing on God's side. Once that is achieved, the global foundation will all be connected to the Parents. Where is the original hometown? Although the original hometown is where I was born, not every tribe can have my birthplace, Jeongju in North Korea, as their hometown.

Your hometown must be where you were born. Your hometowns are different; Satan has been occupying them. But as heaven-centered parents are born in your hometown, that place will become the Garden of Eden. In this way, your descendants of goodness, who are born in the unfallen, original garden, will expand throughout the world. It is along this vertical line that you will all be connected and tied to my clan. You should love what is vertical more than you love your own clan. Then, Satan will be unable to occupy it. The establishment of such things will make possible the restoration of the right of kingship.

Originally, when Adam reached perfection, the Heavenly Father would be perfected, and when Eve reached perfection, the Heavenly Mother would be perfected. Hence, if they become the lord and lady of the family, the kingship of the family-level heavenly kingdom would have arisen. Thus, Adam and Eve were to become king and queen on the level of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, and world. Since we have reached the time when we can go beyond the national level, we can go beyond the kingship of the satanic world and establish the kingship of the heavenly world. This day is March 27, 1990. Through this, the world will turn around with the wind I have whipped up. (201-130, 1990.3.27)

3.3. The restoration of kingship

Why do we need the right of parents? We need it in order to restore the right of kingship. To restore the right of kingship, we should not be stuck on any one of the four directions of east, west, south, and north. When the king comes into your home, you should always be able to serve him twenty-four hours a day, 365 days a year. You should be able to swing a stick whose length is three times the span of your outstretched arms, through 360 degrees without it hitting anything. You should always be able to welcome him. Then, the clan will follow. This is a blessed tribe of love. What kind of love? True love.

What is true love? It is the love that causes you to invest yourself eternally and forget about it, and then invest again. Why should we do this? It is a principle that we wish our love partner to be better than ourselves, and our children to be better than we are. In order to achieve this, even God has to invest more than Himself. Since there is no other way of investing more then oneself than by investing and forgetting, we can go the way of true love, where we give and forget.

The unification of the heaven and earth begins from there. After investing your life, you should not think, "I died because of God and because of the Unification Church." We must sacrifice ourselves. You cannot say, "I did this much but the church does not recognize me" or "I have followed the Unification Church for dozens of years, but Father does not recognize me."

As for me, although I have suffered my whole life, God has not recognized me. But I do not think of it as God not recognizing me. Just like God, I allow myself to be hit and then invest and invest again. Since I continue investing up until the end, nothing is lost; it just accumulates more and more, and I naturally rise to the mountain top. This is strange, isn't it? While investing myself again and again, I find myself on top of the mountain and on top of the world; then, the right of the first son, the right of parents, and true kingship will be automatically restored. This is the line of reasoning that explains the logic of re-creation. (206-268, 1990.10.14)

Now we have fully laid the foundation to proclaim the True Parents. There is no one who can say, "Rev. Moon is not the True Parent." Let Christian ministers try coming before me. Among our country's president and party leaders, let those who can say, "He is not!" step forward. Let the president of the United States, or anyone who rules a nation on this earth and speaks big words, step forward and argue that I am not the True Parent. Not even those people will be able to move an inch when they listen to my words. (204-84, 1990.7.1)

I am not a fool. I am smarter than you. I am someone who lived his life embracing under his wing and guiding the distinguished and famous people of the world. Our Professors World Peace Academy alone has chapters in

120 countries. Its membership includes many Nobel laureates. It is because we have such a foundation that we could establish within less than four years The World and I as a world renowned magazine, a champion among magazines in the world. I am a person with such a foundation. (204-84, 1990.7.1)

I have the title of True Parent. Then, what do I do? I am a person who likes God more than anyone else, and who knows God better than anyone else. I am also someone who clearly teaches you the path of eternal life. What is it that the True Parent is supposed to do? The True Parent, Rev. Moon, is the global and historical representative of humankind carrying out the responsibility to liberate you from the realm of death, and transport you onto the path of eternal life. Since True Parents have true love, they are the ones with the place of completion and the place you must return to where God's love and essence converge in unity. This is why false love is removed through true love. False love does not know how to invest even one time. It just seeks to receive. But with true love, if you invest, you can resolve everything; and then redemption is possible. This is possible only in true love. This is why you can come to know God through me. Next, the True Parent must teach true love. That is my responsibility. (203-360, 1990.6.28)

Now, there is no one in the world, who can get rid of me. No one can match me in strength. Do you know what would happen if I put out negative propaganda? This Republic of Korea would be in trouble. Do you know who handled the leftist students? At a time that was supposed to be the most chaotic since the founding of the Republic of Korea, I swept through the nation, bringing the contents of my meeting with Gorbachev. This led the people to say, "Oh, I cannot trust the government. I will have to trust Rev. Moon." In this way, I pointed them in the right direction.

What did I do on that foundation? I proclaimed True Parents. If we came as the True Parents, I had to declare the True Parents; otherwise, how could I raise my face before God in the spirit world? If we have really come with the mission of the True Parents, I must declare that we are the True Parents before all people and the world. Otherwise, how could I lift up my face and go on? Jesus could not proclaim himself as the True Parent. That was the problem. If he had, Christianity would not have had to shed blood. Jesus himself would have been able to indemnify ten times as much as what Christians were able to restore through their shedding of their own blood. But since he was unable to proclaim himself as the True Parent, Satan has been in control until a global standard could be revealed.

The false parent, Kim Il-sung, has appeared in North Korea, occupying the throne of the satanic true parents. This is usurpation and plundering. It is plundering. The communists in North ruined Christianity there, but now that I have proclaimed True Parents, Kim Il-

sung will go down. Through this proclamation, I am taking hold of him. It is because such a time is approaching that I am planning to go to Pyongyang and hold a rally there. This is not something I will do myself. Does Adam fight with the archangel? Adam does not fight with the archangel. Since the archangel fell, I must give him directions.

Thus I have been giving directions to the Soviet Union, the worldwide archangel, and to China, the Asian-level archangel. Then, by creating oneness between the archangel and Eve, with Japan in the position of Eve, I will bring Kim Il-sung to submission. I am bringing these people into oneness and then using that as a vehicle to move forward. If I can declare the Federation for World Peace in Pyongyang in this way, how good that would be! I will call Gorbachev, Jiang Zemin, the Japanese prime minister, President Bush, and so forth, to come. There is no one in Korea but me who says such things. Can the president do this? What will it take to do this? I have already laid that kind of foundation. (204-178, 1990.7.8)

I am not a man who is fading away. I am not someone who is ignorant of what is behind all the politicians in history. Although the leaders of the Christian churches do not know these things, I certainly do. Has either the Unification Church or Rev. Moon perished, although both of them have been branded as historic representatives of extreme foolishness? Can God perish? What kind of relationship do I, Rev. Moon, and God have? What do we mean by True Parent?

I have proclaimed that I am the True Parent. If I were not the True Parent yet declared myself to be so, I would be stabbed by spirits from hell and by good spirits when I went to the spirit world. So why would I proclaim myself to be the True Parent in the face of such a dreadful outcome, if it were not true? What is the True Parent? I have heard that at a doctrinal discussion between Won-Buddhism and the Unification Church, one leader asked, "While Won-Buddhism talks about the Savior, the Unification Church talks about True Parents. The Savior can be forsaken after one is saved, but parents are a matter of absolute destiny, so how can they be forsaken?" That's how it is. Try forsaking them, and the entire universe, heaven and earth, and everything else will say, "You wretch, you deserve to go to hell!"

The place of True Parents is a place of pride. Since the devil knows this, he has attacked me from all four directions, mobilizing the whole world. Even the Communist party joined in this effort, and all the denominations and religions have opposed me. Furthermore, even the mafia and terrorists joined forces to expel me. They have shot at me with all kinds of tricky weapons. (203-144, 1990.6.24)

You call me the True Parent, but I do not like the words True Parents. Think about how fearsome these words are. Once we became True Parents, we had to bear and raise true sons and daugh-

ters. This is the issue. After becoming True Parents, we had to head up a true family. When a tribe arises from this, we must lead it as a true tribe; when this expands to a people, we must lead that people; if this expands into a nation, we must lead that nation; if this expands to the world, we must lead the world; and if this expands to all humankind filling heaven and earth, and the spiritual and physical worlds, we must have the ability to lead them. This is a huge undertaking. I am aware of all this.

Then, why did I proclaim "True Parents"? I did not want to do so myself. But if it had not been done, the doctrine of the Unification Church would go off course. If such a proclamation had not been made, Unification Church doctrine would be a lie. Because I cannot turn the truth into a lie, it was inevitable that I do this; in order to have the truth reveal its true light, I had to act, even under tribulation and persecution, even if my body had to be torn apart, be stepped on, and receive all kinds of abuse. This is why I have become such a man. This is how the Rev. Moon of the Unification Church differs from the founders and leaders of the other religions. (203-324, 1990.6.28)

Section 4. Keeping True Parents' Photograph

4.1. The reason for keeping True Parents' photograph

Now, you should go back to your hometowns and restore your families and relatives. You must hold revivals in your hometown. As you hold revivals, you should also all work on the district level. If you want to be a tribal messiah, you should display my photo. Pictures of me should not be just given away for nothing. Frame a few hundred photos and distribute them, saying they are good pictures. Get people's permission to go into their homes and find the best places in the best rooms to hang them up.

Then, spiritually you will be an elder brother to those homeowners. Vertically, you take the father's position, and horizontally, the elder brother's position. So in the position of the vertical father and the horizontal elder brother, you should instruct the householder, saying, "This should be hung here!" In this way, those who give out the pictures will be tribal messiahs.

You should quickly work to hang up pictures in the homes of at least 120 families. Try to put up 120 or more. Placing pictures in those homes can be counted as a local level breakthrough. That is laying a foundation. Through this their ancestors in the spirit world will come every morning early and offer a bow to the picture. Turn on the light after one o'clock, two o'clock, or three o'clock to welcome them.

When your ancestors come, and after they have offered their bows, then after another two hours, at five o'clock, you should offer a bow. The spirits in the spirit world have not been able to attend True Parents. The ones who have gone to the spirit world are in the elder brother's position and the ones here on

earth are in the younger brother's position. Since the younger brother has the eldest son's birthright, that is, since the positions are now reversed, the one in the spirit world comes down and offers a bow. Their bows mean that they will help their descendants to prosper. This is what God does.

From God's position, these ancestors will support the process of bringing blessings to their descendants. That effort must be made. When the spirit world comes to help, would you like your beloved relatives to come and help or would you rather some old man from a neighboring village came? When an old man comes down and helps, you must offer him a portion of what you receive. Thus, now is the time when we should run all night lest someone should come and usurp the results of your effort. When you explain this, everyone will want to have a picture of True Parents.

I have survived through the treacherous chaos of history is that God has protected me! In this world I could have been destroyed without any trace, yet I survived because God protected me! Because God loves me more dearly than any other person in human history, I have achieved the greatest things under the most trying hardships! This makes logical sense.

They will have no doubt that if they honor the photograph as if they were honoring True Parents, their family will be protected. If you explain it, they will have no doubts. I have heard that there have been people who bought pictures even without such an explanation. When asked why they wanted to buy the pictures, they said, "My heart keeps telling me to do it. I feel this picture will expel all my bad fortune and bring good things." So they bought large pictures. Such a time has come. Young people are now carrying my pictures.

Awhile ago I heard that a photographer from the Soviet Union said that he was carrying a secret treasure in his pocket. When asked what it was, he took out a picture of me from a paper pouch. When asked why he was carrying it, he said that it made him feel peaceful. That is the way it is.

Wearing a cross means being a Christian. Carrying True Parents' picture signifies being a son and daughter of True Parents; first the symbol, then the image and then the substance.

These people will be protected because they enter the formation-stage realm of formation, growth, and completion. For this reason, the tribal messiah should prepare pictures for them. To break through on the local level means to have people put up True Parents' picture.

If they will only put up True Parents' picture, then they will surely attend workshops. When they attend a workshop and become inspired, you can tell them, "You cannot buy this content even with a huge sum of money, so please make an offering according to how much you think it is worth!" You can use the money to cover the cost of your local activities. Give the photos out to all those who have been to America for education. (212-108, 1991.1.2)

4.2. The power of the picture of True Parents

Until now has been the time when Abel had to sacrifice for Cain for the sake of the restoration of the right of the eldest son. Because of this, the spirit world has been using the earthly world. But on the thirty-first Children's Day, the positions of the spirit world and the physical world are being completely reversed. Now that the right of the eldest son has been restored, Adam becomes the center and the eldest son. So the archangel has to listen to Adam and attend him.

In the past, people opposed me and thought of me as someone who ought to die, but now they are maintaining the standard of respecting me. Thus, even if the devil comes and tells them to cooperate with him, they cannot do so. The devil cannot drag them to his side. They should introduce me to others and guide people.

This is why we must seek to establish a family. The turnaround occurs in the family. The Fall occurred in the family. This is why I began the global indemnity effort as an individual, and, based on my family and tribe, won the Cain-Abel victory on the global level, returning with the right of the eldest son. Where can the entire value of this victory be established? Adam is the center of all value. The loss of Adam led to the loss of God's family, God's society, God's nation, God's world, God's cosmos, and even God's love. After indemnifying all this, we now return to the family. All families are to stand on the family standard rooted in the equality of all people before God. When we return centering on this family, who is it that we are centered on? Everyone is following me as the center. Here, the devil cannot follow.

While the devil defiled the blood, our side purified the blood of the fallen world. This is why the Blessed Families enter here. Once the right of the eldest son of a family in the heavenly nation is established, the realm of the second son of the family in the heavenly nation becomes infinite. This is something you can control at will, according to the providence. We are now seeking out and entering such families. This is why those of us who are Blessed Families should be the foundation. For this, we have to use up all our living expenses and everything in our savings account.

We must offer everything for the sake of the nation. By doing this we replace it with the universe. This is the raw material of heaven. Seizing the day requires an expensive piece of raw material. You should become such raw material. So you should go to each family and shore them up. By killing the lambs and smearing the blood on their doorposts, the Israelites could avoid being struck. In the same way, just having my picture will prevent Satan from invading. The ancestors will come in the early morning to greet you, and the spirits will take care of the house. They will govern your mind and heart completely. The time has come when such things will be possible. (213-121, 1991.1.16)

We have to do three kinds of cam-

paigns from now on. First, collecting membership forms; next, displaying pictures of True Parents and finally raising of the church flag. We have to do all three. When we do these three things, we can do anything. The flag represents the Unification Church, and the photographs represent True Parents. Next, the membership form means registration. A nation in which we can register will appear. From there on, a new beginning can be made. To attend True Parents means that your home has become one with True Parents. Then, what does the flag mean? It represents something in one's surroundings that signifies the worldwide members of the Unification Church. It signifies relationships. The flag represents you as an individual, but it also represents the husband and wife. It represents our families, but it also represents our tribes and our nations. It represents the entire Unification Church and all humankind.

You really must raise the flag. When you put up the flag, the same situation will occur as when the Israelites were leaving Egypt, when the first born of all the Egyptians were killed. The Israelites avoided death for their first born and survived by putting lamb's blood on their doors. It is just like that. When the Israelites were bitten by snakes and dying, while wandering in the wilderness under Moses, those who looked at the bronze serpent lived, didn't they? Likewise, when the satanic world was going to ruin, those who believed in Jesus lived.

On this earth, in order to take back all the authority Satan has had, you just have to raise the flag, hang up a picture of True Parents and register. This will change your affiliation. Thus, what I am especially emphasizing in our movement is to display True Parents' pictures and raise the flag. It has already been three years. I started this campaign because I knew that such a time would come. This is why I am asking you to have people fill out membership application forms. When you receive the membership forms, greet those who sign them, saying, "Please do well." Satan will not receive salvation unless he submits to Adam. The next step is to attend the Parents.

Until now you have not been able to attend True Parents, but you should attend them. You should put True Parents' pictures in the best place, a better place than for the pictures of your mother, father, or ancestors. It is good to value the pictures of your grandfather and mother, but you should not put up your parents' pictures first and then put True Parents' pictures next to them. True Parents are the ancestors. You establish the ancestors through this and you will be able to turn from the two-dimensional family foundation to the foundation of God's tradition. There, you will have no relationship with Satan. This is how the Principle is.

The tribal messiah is not a mission for some people that others do not have to do. If you do not do it, your whole family and all your relatives will be in trouble. If the descendants do not do it on this earth, the ancestors in the other world will curse them several hundred

times more than they did Adam and Eve who fell. I cannot take responsibility for this. I cannot stop them from accusing you. You will be accused if you do not do it. You have to fulfill the five percent responsibility given to human beings. If you cannot do it, there will be no perfection. (220-90, 1991.10.15)

Even people in the satanic world put up pictures of their parents. Because the Last Days have come, people want to attend the heavenly Parents and use their photograph as educational material. I am famous. Even Christian ministers acknowledge that I am a patriot. The entire world bows its head in front of my accomplishments. Thus people should think, "Since we have hung up these pictures, as husband and wife we cannot quarrel in front of other people. What is it that Rev. Moon has taught…?" They will also teach their sons and daughters, saying, "You kids, you cannot do that in front of Rev. Moon."

If they honor the pictures more than they do the pictures of their own parents, their ancestors will come and honor True Parents as their ancestors. It will be an altar upon which their ancestors come and honor that house. Because there is a way they can receive the blessings of the heavenly world through this, at three o'clock in the morning, although you may be asleep, they will expel all the satanic devils around your family and relatives. You must also put up the flag. When you display the picture and raise the flag, everything will be done. When you hang my picture in your room and raise the Unification Church flag, you will be a family member in the heavenly nation.

I will make such people family members in the heavenly nation. There have been many people who met with misfortune because they cursed someone who was raising the flag. This is very mysterious. There was even an incident in which someone who wagged a finger at me got a disease in that finger and was cured only after praying and repenting with his hand elevated for several nights. Why do such things happen? When heavenly fortune comes, it cannot be blocked by some individual fortune. This is the path of absolute destiny. Although, on the path of fortune, the four directions of east, west, north, and south can change places, on the path of absolute destiny above is above and below is below left is left and right is right. They cannot be changed around. It is because the time has come in the Republic of Korea that I am telling you to have people put up those pictures.

The fallen world has been connected to false parents up until now. When you attend True Parents, it is easy to be engrafted horizontally. It will happen in the family. Otherwise, you have to go through the nation and the world and then come back to this side for engrafting. My having a loving heart and the heart to save all people creates an environment which enables engrafting on the family level, and what a blessing this is!

If people do not listen, you should even scold them until they become engrafted. Through this they can become

a member of the heavenly family. Those who looked at Moses' staff all lived. If you look at the Unification Church flag, bowing down to it whenever you go out and whenever you come in, and if you offer a bow to the picture whenever you go out and whenever you come in, you will live. (219-91, 1991.8.25)

BOOK THREE

TRUE LOVE

Contents

Chapter 1. What Is True Love?

Section 1. Love Is the Source of Peace and Happiness 309
Section 2. Love Is Boundless Giving 314
Section 3. Harmony Arises in the Presence of Love 319
Section 4. The Rights of Equality, Mutual Participation, and Inheritance 324
Section 5. Perfection Is Attained through Love 326

Chapter 2. The Reality of Love

Section 1. God's Love 331
1.1. Love originates from God 331
Section 2. True Parents' Love 340
2.1. Sinless true ancestor and Savior of humankind 340
2.2. True Parents give birth to humankind through true love 344
Section 3. Parental Love 347
3.1. Parents' love is the love of the essence 347
3.2. Parents' love is complete even after being shared over and over again .. 351
Section 4. Conjugal Love 353
4.1. Conjugal love is the flower of the whole universe 353
4.2. Conjugal love cannot be fulfilled if it is shared with another person 356
Section 5. Sexual Love 362
5.1. Sex is the original palace of love, the most holy place of heaven 362
5.2. Love is not something that is learned 368
Section 6. Filial Love 370
6.1. Children result from a concentration of parental love 370
6.2. The way of true children is filial piety 371
Section 7. Love Between Siblings 373
7.1. Brotherly love is a model of love for all the people of the world. 373
Section 8. Love of the Nation, Love of the World, and Love of Humankind . 375
8.1. The path of children of filial piety, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters 375
Section 9. Love of the Natural World 378
9.1. God's will in creating the world of all things 378
9.2. Nature is a textbook teaching the ideal of love 380

Chapter 3. Love and Marriage

Section 1. True Marriage Engenders Love of Universal Unity 385
Section 2. The Love that Man and Woman Desire 388
Section 3. The Blessing Is the Ceremony to Convey God's Love 392

Chapter 4. Love and Family

Section 1. The Ideal of Love is Established in the Family 395
Section 2. The Family is the School of Love for Life in the Heavenly Kingdom 399

Chapter 5. Love and the Spirit World

Section 1. The Atmosphere of the Spirit World is Love 403
Section 2. We Should Develop a Loving Character During Our Earthly Life .. 410

CHAPTER ONE

What Is True Love?

Section 1. Love Is the Source of Peace and Happiness

The more love we have the happier we become. Love is such that once it is in our hand; we never want to let it go. The source of life cannot be governed by human will. Only true love can influence our motivation, our course, or the end of our life. Human beings were born of love, so they must live for love and even die for love at the end of their lives. (298-298, 1999.1.17)

What would be the color of love? Do you think it would be inky-black at night, white in the daytime and yellow in the evening? What do you think the color of love might be? The power to achieve peace, unity and equality for all can be found in the central color of love. However, if you carelessly venture into love's most holy place you will be judged by fire. (Blessed Family - 344)

When you find someone to love, your face becomes radiant. What brings that about? Not guns or threats, only love. Then what kind of love is that? That love is true love, the love that is the owner of the universe, the center of the universe, and the original fountain of the universe. (95-39, 1977.9.11)

Love is the cardinal point of happiness, the invisible order, and the peace that serves the common good. It is the common asset of all humanity and the symbol of God's will and power. (Blessed Family - 850)

Love holds supreme value. Once you have true love, even God will follow you, the world will follow you, everyone will follow you. Once you stand in love's place of honor, all creation will follow you. (217-193, 1991.5.27)

True love is the kind of love that makes you and another feel good even if you stay together forever. It is the kind of love that makes you feel good, even though you just stay together, live together, watch together, talk together, feel things together and listen together. (127-9, 1983.5.1)

Love is liked and welcomed by all people. For this reason, everyone desires to be born, to live, and to die surrounded by love. Such a person is indeed a happy person. (193-136)

If we think of love as small, it is very

small; and if we think of love as large, it is very large. A slight wink from a loved one would make you feel as if heaven and earth were turning upside down. A smile from the one you love would make you feel as if all of heaven and earth were within your heart. If you think that love is perceptive, it becomes perceptive; if you think it small, it is small; if you think it big, it is big; if you think you can see it, you can; and if you think you cannot see it, you cannot see it. Love alone can break down the barriers. People in love are completely possessed by it and each word they venture to speak will be based on the love that claims them. (51-161, 1971.11.21)

The power of love is greater and mightier than the power of an atomic bomb. An atomic bomb can only bring death to people, but love has the power to save people from death and give them new life. Atomic bombs are not creators; they bring judgment and destruction. The power that can unite the world into one is not the brute force of arms, but true love. (Blessed Family I - 850)

Each nation has its border, its cultural background, and its customs. The only weapon that can transcend these is true love. (205-250, 1990.9.9)

As history unfolds and love is perfected, political, economic and cultural problems – all conflicts and disputes – will be fully resolved. The complex problems faced by humankind in the world today can be fundamentally solved only through the perfection of true love. (Blessed Family - 380)

We must seek for true love, but where can you go to encounter it? True love is unchanging and eternal, whether it is day or night. However, true love is not something that exists merely for oneself. (Blessed Family - 380)

It cannot belong to just one person; it belongs to everyone, and is shared by the universe. True love connects to the family, the society, the nation, the world and the universe. (294-63, 1998.6.11)

If true love were perfected, our responsive God would have no regrets even if He were completely immersed in it. God will rejoice over anything and everything that happens, as long as He is surrounded by true love. If people could live in a world of true love, they would all live happily, without regret, throughout their lives. Moreover, there would be no war, discontentment or suffering in that world. (Blessed Family - 380)

Even all things of creation will shower blessings upon those who devote their lives for the purpose of love. Flowers will want to bloom in their gardens, and even birds will want to build their nests in the backyard and sing their songs. This is because those people know the value of all things of creation and truly love them. (Blessed Family - 1062)

Even God yearns for love. Because love is so expansive, even God is engulfed

in love. That is how it should be. It is only logical. What God is wishing for more than anything else is love. That is why love is greater than He is. (132-113, 1984.5.27)

Love, which is the center of all vitality, does not change. Love occupies the center of ideal circumstances, and is in unity with God. Therefore, as long as God exists, there is love. (157-226, 1967.4.10)

You can find money, knowledge and power in the midst of love. The power of love is eternal. Those who know real love do not have to learn anything in the spirit world. (202-86, 1990.5.6)

What is true love? At the intersection of vertical and horizontal, true love forms a ninety-degree angle and must fit in anywhere it goes. It should fit in Eastern homes and in Western homes alike. True love can fit in anywhere and everywhere, regardless of whether there are differences in racial, cultural and religious backgrounds. (180-86, 1988.8.7)

The universe contracts and expands. In other words, it breathes in and out. It is not political power that controls the contraction and the expansion of the universe. Neither is it knowledge or money. It is the giving of love. (121-103, 1982.10.24)

When you look at the world with eyes filled with love, you would say of a bird flying past you, "Why is that bird chirping? Oh, he must be missing his beloved." Lines of poetry and prose would naturally spring to mind. The history of our everyday lives is harmonized with nature and reproduced in the symphony of love. That is why a breath of love, a caress of love, a song of love and a whisper of love are all pleasing. (112-257, 1981.4.19)

The most evil of forces dissolves in the presence of true love. Though one just looks at or passes by true love that is enough. (Blessed Family - 380)

Love is certainly the element that forms the essential part of a person. It is at work before that person is given life, and it is the source of life itself. (177-313, 1988.5.22)

A life lived for love is a productive and fruitful one, and a life lived without knowing love leads to exhaustion and destruction. God, humankind, and even the universe desire to live for the sake of love. This is the original way of life. (Blessed Family - 1062)

True love is absolute, unchanging and eternal. (God's Will - 219)

There can be no development or revolution when it comes to love. Love in its original form is perfect, unchanging, eternal and absolute. (Blessed Family - 351)

The love attained in a natural setting and in the most natural atmosphere is real love. (Blessed Family - 353)

Once someone opens his or her eyes to love, the body and mind of that

person will want to form multi-dimensional relationships within the universe. That person will thus come to understand the order of nature from the leaves falling in the autumn wind. He will smile to himself, wishing even to become a flower blossom in order to appreciate the beauty of a flower blooming in a spring garden. (Blessed Family - 376)

The fastest action in the world is the action of love. If two people located at opposite ends of the earth were to fall in love with each other, their love would pull them together, overcoming the distance between them. Love has such power. (112-204, 1981.4.12)

A person who has received grace and is receiving love from God looks beautiful. (33-86, 1970.8.9)

When we reach the state in which we can feel the love of God, we can relate with and transcend everything. We can have everything when we are centered on the emotions of original love. Even the organs of our bodies were created for just one purpose, love. The eyes were formed to seek for love, the nose to smell love, and the ears to listen to the sounds of love. Of all the words we hear, the words that we never tire of, that we always like to hear, are the words, "I love you." Love is the only topic that all beings enjoy. That kind of love is the true love that the entire universe welcomes. (298-298, 1999.1.17)

The attributes of love do not lead us to love only things that are good. It is only logical to define true love as that which loves the very lowest thing more than something high. (33-89, 1970.8.9)

Love is such that even God is bound by its authority. This means that even God is weak before love. The all-powerful God cannot prevent a smile from spreading across His face when He sniffs the scent of the love of humankind. Even God likes to hear love stories. (298-298, 1999.1.17)

What is the most holy thing in the world? It is true love. True love starts from God. What God truly wants is the path of true love. You must understand that if you do not follow the path of true love you cannot become close to God. Through love, God desires to see, hear, eat, and touch. (Blessed Family - 380)

Happiness will begin in the world when people can live based on love. The things people want to attain, such as perfection and the realization of their ideals, cannot be achieved without love. That is why everything in the universe exists on the basis of love. Everything in creation began through the original love of God. (137-207, 1986.1.3)

In this world, when we give things away, they are gone. Yet, in the case of love, the more we give, the more we receive in return. That is why we delight in love. No matter how much love you give, it will continually fill you, so you can always be happy and joyful. You may

like money, but once you give it out, it is gone for good; and however much you may like power, once you use it, it runs out. But in the case of love, the more you give, the more unlimited a supply you will have. (121-105, 1982.10.24)

What is true love? It is something that even grandmothers and grandfathers can never relinquish, even in death. Once you get hold of true love, you delight in it so much that you cannot live without it. It is the same for all people: men and women, young and old. (171-67, 1987.12.6)

After tasting love, would a grandfather ever say, "Oh, I am tired of the taste of the love I knew in the past! It is different from the aroma in our civilization today. I don't like it! I would rather smell something other than the scent of love!"? Bread or rice stimulates every cell in your body to say, "Ah that tastes very good!" That is why love forms the nucleus, the core of all things. Love is like the essence of everything. When you treat anything and anyone with that kind of love, a path will open up along which you can freely go anywhere. (139-197, 1986.1.31)

True love is the type of love that lasts forever: true love in the spring, summer, autumn and winter; true love when you are in your teens, adulthood and old age; and true love even when you go to the eternal spirit world. This is unchanging love. (194-303, 1989.10.30)

Who is the owner of love? It is not man or woman. It is God Himself. God and human beings can become one only by centering on love; only through love. This is because love is absolutely essential to God and human beings. (279-246, 1996.9.15)

Wherever there is the harmony of love, circular motion takes place. When human beings and God become one through love, and this love is brought to fruition, God can come down and human beings can go up, and they will meet midway. God then becomes the center of the sphere and spherical motion occurs. The central point is where harmony in love is established and the place where life first stirs. It is the starting point of equality and sharing together. This is because the power of love is there. The power that acts on and embraces everything in the universe is love. (Blessed Family - 344)

Love is something you can never feel by yourself. The same can be said of happiness. Even the concept of peace cannot be applied to just one nation; it describes the relationship formed between one country and another. Only when you can love based on a relationship made with someone on an equal footing can you feel true happiness. It is the same for freedom. You cannot create true freedom just by yourself. The freedom that you acquire within love, together with love, is true freedom. In the presence of true love, even if someone wields absolute authority over others, even with a whip in his hand, that will not hold people back; instead, it will bring them a richer

joy and happiness. This is because love is something given to others for their benefit, through which someone sacrifices himself to save them. (Blessed Family - 342)

Love is the pillar that stands at the center where the mind and body automatically unite into one. The individual, family and tribe, as well as the nation, the world, the universe and God are all situated at the central point, at that one pillar. That center point does not move. That is why the place of true love is the eternal place of settlement. (230-135, 1992.5.1)

Jesus once said, "I am the way and the truth and the life: no one comes to the Father, but by me." However, he left one thing out, the most important thing of all; love. He should have said "I am the way and the truth and the life and the love..." but he left out "love." These words should be inserted into the Bible. When Christians hear me saying such things, they will exclaim, "How blasphemous!" But if you ask God about this, He will reply, "Of course!" From this we can see that God really likes love, but He likes true love the best of all. (149-15, 1986.11.1)

Section 2. Love Is Boundless Giving

Love requires one hundred percent devotion. When God was creating the universe, He invested Himself one hundred percent through His love. That is why true love begins with living for the sake of others. (189-202, 1989.4.6)

God is not a dictator. God gave everything for human beings. The reason God is close to us is because He wants to live for us. That is why we want to follow Him eternally. To live for the sake of others is the natural law, and so to maintain our state of existence in the world we must live that way. Only through living for the sake of others can the connection be made between East and West, and between past ages and the present. (187-89, 1989.1.6)

Giving and giving again for the sake of others puts you in the same position as God giving of Himself at the time of the creation. By putting everything you have into something, you are creating a second self, and it is the same as God investing everything He had at the time of the creation. The history of re-creation is the course of restoration through indemnity. Indemnity is offered through the history of re-creation, and so only when one invests everything one has, can re-creation take place. (82-239, 1976.1.31)

The logic of eternal life operates solely through investing oneself again and again. You will never come to ruin if you live for the sake of others. From giving small things, you will move on to giving bigger things. Then where does this lead? It comes back to you. (204-106, 1990.7.1)

Love does not satisfy us even after we have given it; instead, when you give you want to give more and you feel ashamed when you are unable to. Those who feel ashamed even after giving are truly the

owners of love. In love, the more we give, the more we receive in return. The more we carry that out, the more the power of what is given is exceeded by the power that comes back. In that way, you will never perish; rather, you will prosper. There is no way to be prosperous without love. (38-326, 1971.1.8)

Love can never be exhausted. The more it is set in motion, the greater it gets. According to the laws of mechanics, something in constant motion becomes exhausted in time. In the case of true love, however, the more it is in motion, rather than being used up, the greater it becomes. (219-18, 1991.8.25)

The essence of love is such that when you live for the sake of others, your love becomes greater, but when you want people to live for you, your love diminishes little by little. (129-264, 1983.11.13)

What is true love? It is giving, and then forgetting about it; it is giving and giving and then giving some more. (240-298, 1992.12.13)

Even though you may give and give and give, the world of love lasts forever. (121-173, 1982.10.24)

The word "love" is truly mighty. There is a Korean saying that "One well-spoken word can clear away a large debt." What that means is that with just one word you can indemnify something. Even if you have a debt of billions of dollars, one word of love can more than indemnify the debt. (227-253, 1992.2.14)

There is no other than the house of true love that has the authority to govern this universe of infinite magnitude. Love comes from living for the sake of others. Even God, the great almighty Creator, has to bow His head to love. (162-287, 1987.4.17)

Love is something that even God cannot fulfill alone. Love can only be attained on the basis of a relationship with another. Where does love begin? It does not begin from oneself; it grows and develops through having a partner. (Blessed Family - 342)

Where is the root of true love kept? Even though God is all-knowing and all-powerful, the root of love is not kept within Him. Although the omniscient and omnipotent God is the central figure of true love, He does not want to keep the root of love within Himself. God wants love to take root in the person who is to be the object of love. (177-269, 1988.5.20)

The more love you give, the more love you have. It never ends. You will have the reserves to give out on a larger scale. However, everything else comes to an end; money, knowledge and authority all come to an end. Everything that has to do with human circumstances and sentiment in the world comes to an end. Yet eternal true love never comes to an end, no matter how much you continue to give. Love is amazing in that it

continues into eternity. (121-243, 1982.10.27)

Love is something you cannot fulfill if you are centered on yourself. Love does not begin from oneself; it begins and is later fulfilled through one's partner in love. Therefore love cannot be fulfilled without a counterpart. (145-215, 1986.5.11)

You cannot attain love by yourself. Even the greatest person in the world cannot achieve love if he is alone. This is because love is formed only in the relationship between a subject partner and an object partner. Accordingly, even the omniscient and omnipotent God cannot feel any stimulation or impetus if He attempts to attain love for His own sake. That is why we need a partner. (219-14, 1991.8.25)

The core of the universe is human beings, and the core of human beings is life. The root of life is love, and the root of love is God, but this love cannot be realized by someone all alone. You need a relationship with a partner to realize love. As God is the origin of love, the only beings qualified to be partners in that love are human beings. (48-205, 1971.9.19)

The word "love," and even the word "hope," cannot be used in reference to someone who is alone. Even life cannot come from being on one's own; life can only come through the bonds of relationship. (69-59, 1973.9.10)

Now, let me ask you a question. The two things that last for eternity are life and love. Then which comes first, life or love? Which is it? For God, love did not exist before He did; love came to exist after God existed. That is why, for God, life comes first and love comes second, but for human beings love comes first and life comes second. (105-75, 1979.9.23)

What kind of beings did God create us to be? We were created to be the object partners of God's love, to have His absolute and unique value. He created man and woman to enter with Him into a partnership of love, thereby endowing them with greater value than that of even the whole universe. Human beings are born from love and raised with love, and they live in love until they die in love. But it is not as if they just disappear. Since the subject of love, God, is eternal, unchanging and unique, when we stand in front of such a God, as the object partner of His love, we have eternal life. (142-143, 1986.3.8)

God's purpose in creating Adam and Eve was to feel joy. This was not the joy of looking at them, or speaking with them, or touching them, but a joy based on love. He created us for the attainment of joy. (114-11, 1981.5.14)

God is the Absolute Being, but He needs another being to be His partner in love. That partner is none other than a human being. Once human beings, who are His partners in love, appear in front of God with perfected love, He can then become the God of happiness, and

the God who has found His ideal of joy. (145-267, 1986.5.15)

God had only one dream, which is to realize the ideal of love. However, God cannot accomplish this dream on His own. Neither love, nor happiness, nor joy can be achieved by one entity. They can never be realized without partnership. (Blessed Family - 302)

Where does love come from? It manifests from your partner. If your partner is ugly and you dislike him or her, you want to withdraw your love. And if the partner is beautiful and good, the dynamics of love are set off that much quicker. In other words, the workings of love are determined by the qualities of those in partnership, such as their words, beauty, fragrance and flavor. (Blessed Family - 342)

Where does love come from? It does not come from us, but from our partner. Since it comes from our partner, we should bow to and live for that person. That is why the law of nature instructs us to, "Live for the sake of others." Since something so precious and valuable is coming to us, to receive it we should practice the philosophy of living for the sake of others. This means we must revere and live for our partner. (143-277, 1986. 3. 20)

It is not without meaning that I am vibrant and active in many fields; I do so because I have a purpose. That purpose is none other than to realize the world of love. Human beings exist with the aim of realizing and attaining love. Since the purpose of human life lies in the realization of true love, the value of human existence is also decided by this true love. How wonderful this is! (Blessed Family - 1062)

All people hope that their partner in love will have thousands of times the value, or infinitely more value, than they have. In the same way, God wishes for human beings, His partners in love, to be beings of infinite value. When someone is perfected, he or she achieves a divine nature, thus becoming as flawless as the Heavenly Father and attaining the same value. (277-196, 1996.4.16)

What is true love? It is a love that moves you to want to stay with your partner for a thousand years, and that makes you want to love that person forever. With such a love, there can be no hell and Satan cannot get at you. (Blessed Family - 380)

If God is seeking an absolute partner in love, whom will He place in that position? It is none other than human beings. It follows that a partner in love who has become one with the eternal love of the Creator must also live forever. An important issue for religion is how to establish a logical understanding of eternal life based on relationships of love. Eternal life does not lie in a man or a woman. It does not lie in God. You must clearly understand that eternal life is in the love of God. (218-210, 1991.7.29)

If one has no subject partner in love, you feel empty and alone. But if there is a subject partner of love, then everything feels full. Only when something is filled to the brim with love can everything else be filled up as well. You can then give out love infinitely and truly. The reason you exchange love with others is in order to achieve an ideal and to multiply that ideal. The world of love transcends distance. Love is so fast that even light cannot follow it. Love is the fastest thing in the world. It is also the brightest and the most perfect. Love is the only thing that fills things up completely. (95-39, 1977.9.11)

Who is closer to the center: someone who is willing to sacrifice love to sustain life, or someone who is willing to sacrifice life for the sake of love? Who is closer to the truth? One who sacrifices his life to attain love is close to the center and close to what is true. This is because the one willing to sacrifice love for life is self-centered, whereas the one willing to sacrifice life for love is not. (174-15, 1988.2.23)

As I wandered through the five oceans and the six continents, I preached earnestly about the path of love. I have sought to shine the light of love on all people, who, living without love, are like a desert. If the path people are ultimately to follow will lead them to that other world of love, the most important thing for humanity must be the "love beacon." Only that beacon of love can lead humanity to the original homeland. (Blessed Family - 404)

Once you become one with God, circular motion manifests in all kinds of forms and figures. That is why the older sibling must love the younger, following the example of their parents in loving them. In such a family that is united into loving oneness, the love within the family blossoms. Then that love becomes the love within a society, and then the love within a nation. In this way, it later becomes the love of the whole world. (28-168, 1970.1.11)

Lost in the rapture of love, God created man to live forever. Therefore, aging is not the enemy. People are born from love, they live with love, and finally they are harvested as the fruits of love. When you die, you are harvested as a fruit of love. We have lived receiving the love of our parents and our children and after having experienced love as a couple, we have loved our children as their parents. Therefore the love of God and everything we have sown in the inner world of love is to be brought to fruition over the course of our lives. When we pass on to the next world we reap the fruits of our lives and take them with us. (83-198, 1976.2.8)

God maintains life on the foundation of true love; His omniscience and omnipotence should be based on true love. Only then can He stand as the ideal subject partner for humankind, a subject partner who has transcended history. If He seeks to assume the position of the subject partner with only the power of life, then all things of creation will not want to unite together. Even microscop-

ic animals and plants wish for a master of love to tend them and take care of them. They like to feel the touch of loving hands. You should not say, "I'm stronger than anyone else, so you have to do as I say!" Only when love is involved is life set in motion. The root of life begins in love. The basis for God's continued existence is not life, but love. (173-84, 1988.2.7)

Section 3. Harmony Arises in the Presence of Love

It is nice just to think about love, to see it and to taste it. That is how love is. (Tongil Segye 1980. 2 - 10)

Love is the coming together of East and West, of North and South. It is the coming together of heaven and earth. Love therefore assumes the form of a sphere. (225-46, 1992.1.1)

True love is the love that is at the center, connecting the vertical and the horizontal. (195-242, 1989.12.1)

Can you imagine how enraptured a person's lips would look, smiling as they give themselves over in true love? Just think of how beautiful the five human senses appear when they are enraptured in true love and how beautiful is the harmony of the five senses as they move toward God. God cannot experience joy through beauty all by Himself. He can only experience beauty when He has someone to relate to. That is why God created humankind. God desires to travel the world of the human heart, with all its inner beauty, more than He desired to create heaven and earth. (Blessed Family - 380)

Even God breathes. He breathes true love. As God also keeps in rhythm with the universe, the universe continues forever, centering on true love. Therefore, only when you reach this level can you enter the realm of God's breath and live forever. (201-191, 1990.4.1)

The universe is round and so is the sun. What do all round-shaped things center upon? They cannot become rounded by themselves. They can only become rounded on the basis of a relationship with something else. The world that is one existing entity, a substantial entity that integrates such relationships, continues on the basis of this realm of circular relationship. Considering this, what is the original source that can form such a circular relationship? The original source of this harmony is the motion of love. (164-78, 1987.4.26)

Love is like a nerve. When one of our hairs is pulled, our whole body moves toward the pulling force. In the same way, when you pull on love, the universe is pulled towards the pulling force. When you move love the whole universe moves in accordance with it. (89-90, 1976.3.2)

People must live life enraptured with something. One who is enraptured by something is truly happy. Artists are enraptured by art. People of a literary bent are enraptured by the books they write, or by the great masterpieces they

have read. Such people are happy people. That is why people should live enraptured with the multi-dimensional and ideal love of God and follow only Him. (59-316, 1972.7.30)

What is the most precious thing sought after by man and woman? It is love. Love is something that people like forever, and God does too. Love is what the whole universe likes most of all, and forever. (179-33, 1988.7.3)

Although it is invisible, love is the most precious treasure on earth. That is because it is unchanging in nature. Gold is precious because of its unchanging color, a diamond is precious because of its unchanging hardness, and a pearl is precious because of the unchanging harmony of its colors. However, these precious treasures do not have life in them. True love, on the other hand, is a treasure that has life, and is therefore more precious than all of them. (201-142, 1990.3.30)

Everyone likes love. Ultimately, through love we come to love more and more. (60-80, 1972.8.6)

Love flows into the hearts of individuals, into the heart of a family, into the heart of a people. It flows everywhere. And wherever it flows, everyone welcomes it. There is no way to block love. Everyone wants something higher, don't they? God created people to relate with one another through the power of love. The one who has been living and breathing along with the universe, connected through the ties of love, does not need any formalities when he arrives at the palace of God. He can open the gates to the palace at will and go to the inner sanctuary where God is residing, and call out, "Heavenly Father!" Then God will answer, "Oh, my child, you are here!" (164-47, 1968.8.11)

What is the only problem of the human world? It is love; whether it burns brightly. In order for the light of love to be bright, that light has to burn both internally and externally. With what should it burn? It should burn with the desire to love. In light of this, you can realize that our life, during which we deal with the ordinary affairs of the world, is just a stopping point on our journey. (194-55, 1989.10.15)

Where is God? We say He is omnipresent. This means He is not in one specific place. He is wherever love is. You need to know this. Based on love, He is omnipresent. We too can be omnipresent when love is our central focus. That is a privilege we can enjoy when we possess love. (149-23, 1986.11.1)

The word equality is meaningless without love. Genuine equality is possible when people live for the sake of others centering on love. (140-142, 1986.2.9)

Through love, a man and a woman can be on equal footing and a mother can be on equal footing with her son even if he is the nation's president. All things that possess love can have equal status. We must realize this. (129-49, 1983.10.1)

Humankind stands at the center of all things of creation. What then, is at the center of human beings? It is true love. God's love forms one vertical line. In order to set up the center of heaven and earth, there also need to be lines of love from both man and woman; the woman's goes to the man and the man's goes to the woman. In this way, these lines of love create a circle that rotates. When a man and a woman appear with true love it is perfected love with a negative charge. When perfected and true negatively charged love is formed the positively charged vertical love of God is automatically present. That is how the principles of the universe work. (120-210, 1982.10.16)

It is only possible to form a reciprocal relationship with the universe when you have love. Without love, such reciprocity can never take place. The reason love is said to be gentle and humble is that with those qualities it can be abundantly and fully put in motion without resistance. When something is gentle, humble and sacrificial, it can relate with anyone. It can go anywhere without resistance. In essence then, this is not really sacrifice. The key to working without resistance is living for the sake of others, sacrificing for others and serving others. Why must we sacrifice for and serve others? We must do so in order to perfect the respiratory organs for our second life. (122-329, 1982.12.1)

All beings that reproduce come together in twos to multiply. It is love that brings about harmony in reproduction. This is true of the multiplication of all living things in the natural world. Even in the case of water, there is female water and male water and fish do well in areas where these waters mix. Many fish live where cold water and warm water mix. That is ideal. There must be harmony. (177-271, 1988.5.20)

The birds living in the north fly south to raise their young, and the birds living in the south fly north to raise theirs; this migrating back and forth follows a rhythm. Since they were born there, the birds return to the place of their birth to have their young. Fish living in cold water lay their eggs in warm water and fish living in warm water can only lay their eggs in cold water. A harmonious unity of yin and yang must be established. That is why they migrate. (132-74, 1984.5.20)

Love cannot be achieved without a relationship with a partner. Even the absolute God has no way to experience love by Himself. Love cannot be realized without finding a partner; thus the creation was an effort to place an absolutely qualified partner in front of the absolute Creator. We human beings are that masterpiece of creation, fashioned so that even God could find the love He also needs. (140-282, 1986.2.14)

When you are intoxicated in the love of God you would not become bored even if you were to stare at a grain of sand for a thousand years. (83-198, 1976.2.8)

When we think to ourselves that we were born in the universe of love we

become infinitely happy. (298-300, 1999.1.17)

True love is not something that can be forced; it is willingly expressed. When loving someone, do not just have the intention to receive because ideal love can be realized only through the action of giving and receiving. (66-123, 1973.4.18)

If love were something that could be pictured by anyone, touched by anyone, and whose form could be known by anyone, you would lose interest in such a love in less than one day. However, that is not how love is. Love is something that even if it is not there, it feels as if it is, and even when it is, it feels as if it is not. Love operates like a mysterious mirage in all shapes and forms, which are good when you think they are bad and bad when you think they are good. (175-197, 1988.4.17)

True love perfects the ideal of unity in the universe. However great a masterpiece is, if you don't find the flavor of true love in it, you will spit it out. It is the same even with the true love between husband and wife. (112-165, 1981.4.12)

Human beings like love the best because love is the subject that unites everything and makes it our own. People can never fathom how good love is. (18-328, 1967.8.13)

Just as parents love their children, the more you love, the more your joy increases. Love brings things into oneness. If there is a person who is one with God through His love, no one will be able to separate him from God. What wonderful love this is! (18-329, 1967.8.13)

Bees concentrate so intently on getting the nectar in the flowers. Their heads are thrust into the flowers and their abdomens stick up in the air. You cannot pull them out even with a pair of tweezers. They do not come out even if you pull so hard that their abdomen comes off. Why would they if the nectar in the flowers tastes so good? Then if nectar tastes so good, how much better is the taste of love? Which is better, the taste of love or the taste of honey? (137-57, 1985.12.18)

Without love, unity cannot be attained. Words alone are not enough to unite two different people into one. Then what is needed to unite them? If they are united around material things and the material things disappear, they will simply separate. Suppose a third person introduces them and they unite by some means or another. If that third person disappears, they will separate. Then what is necessary for two people to be joined together as one, eternally? There must be love. (51-74, 1971.11.1)

Love alone has the power to unite the five senses. You may not know what that love is, but it makes the smell of an old man, which is unpleasant to most people, seem sweet and pleasant to his wife. Even if the face and hands of the old man are all skin and bones, his wife will like that face and those hands. It is

precisely love that makes it so. (148-318, 1986.10.26)

When the wind of love blows, the whole world seems beautiful. Everyone becomes a poet or a romantic when he or she falls deeply in love. (145-317, 1986.10.26)

The taste of love is similar to that of the schizandra berry. The schizandra berry has a sour and bitter taste, but is really a blend of five tastes. I do not know much else about the schizandra berry, but I know its unique taste. It tastes strange at first, but after you swallow it you want to eat more. (173-87, 1988.2.7)

A flowing love that embraces the spring and has still more to give in reserve, a love that melts the snow and thaws the ice in a cold winter – infinite love, immeasurable in height or width – should form a bond with us and never leave us. It should take its place in the core of our being. Without love, we cannot find anything of value in the world. But when we can vividly feel and sense such a love inside us, that love can more than compete with the universe. Someone with absolute love in the center of his heart, meaning love that is the same from the beginning to the end, can compete with the universe even though he is merely one individual. (33-75, 1970.8.9)

Even when we look at a tuft of grass, we must be able to do so from the standpoint of God, and when we look at a flower, we must do so while relating to and embodying the heart of God. Even when we look at insects, birds or other kinds of animals, we must be able to experience the connection between our inner feelings and the heart of God. (6-340, 1959.6.28)

Those who live with the love of God inside their hearts are sons or daughters of God. These are the central figures of the whole universe who can govern heaven and earth. Love is the essential element enabling people to attain this position. (9-173, 1960.5.8)

Our minds can be infinitely enlarged through heart, rather than through knowledge. A heart of love is so big that it can more than embrace the universe, so once we develop this original and mighty domain, even God will want to come and take naps there. Since we cannot embrace God through our knowledge, we must know how great a heart of love is. (Blessed Family - 1053)

Love transcends all national borders, for God's love knows no boundaries. It is transcendent of the five different races of humankind, drawing no distinction among the black, white and yellow races. That is why the love of God is great. When love begins to flow regardless of the environment in which it is flowing, the environment adapts to this flow and develops. God will be pleased only when we adopt the perspective that can make this happen. That is why we must walk the path of love. (164-93, 1987.4.26)

Section 4. The Rights of Equality, Mutual Participation, and Inheritance

How can you rise to the position of becoming the absolute God's object partner? Can you do it by making effort? By using force? None of these methods will work. However, if you form a bond of love with God, you can immediately ascend to an equal footing with Him. (69-75, 1973.10.20)

When you have command over the nucleus of love, you can control God. If the wife of a very special husband happens to be plain in appearance, she will still be able to control her husband through their bond of love. It does not matter if he is a wonderful person with a doctoral degree, he will have no choice but to be under her command. Such is the power of love. (137-61, 1985.12.18)

If you wish to be on an equal footing with God, to have the right to a position equal to God's, you must possess the love of God. (145-269, 1986.5.15)

In love, there is the right of equal participation. What that means is that if the father is in a higher position, the son, though he is in a lower position, can immediately rise to the father's position. Because of the amazing truth that the right of equal participation is inherent in love, love is eternal even though you may be separated from your loved ones. (143-277, 1986.3.20)

The person who has embodied true love attains the ability and the right to immediately possess everything God desires to see in the original, ideal world. Such a qualification, however, must be attained on earth. By loving your fellow countrymen, loving the people of the world, and loving all things of creation, you can feel the true love of God. (112-204, 1981.4.12)

Only the person who possesses the love of God can have the privilege of inheriting the authority of heaven and earth, which were created by God. (149-272, 1986.11.27)

When you form the loving connection with God, you are then given certain special rights: the right of governance, the right of equal status, and the right of inheritance. (143-277, 1986.3.20)

In the domain of love, those with the best character are given the ability to exercise the same capability as God. (126-142, 1983.4.12)

The love of God and the love of human beings are essentially the same. Love is something that strives for unity. Why do men and women yearn for each other? It is because a man can possess God only through a woman, and a woman likewise through a man. Love is mutual affection. (Blessed Family - 334)

Which is more precious, life or love? People cannot exchange their most holy place even for their life. Though a man

or a woman may have life, that life is not connected to the most holy place; however, since love is connected to the most holy place, love is more precious than life. (132-112)

Who becomes the owner? It is the person who serves others the most. The person who serves others the most can govern and take command. Also, it is natural law that an inheritance will come to the person who lives for the sake of others. In love can be found the right of mutual participation, which means that both can freely participate in each other's lives any place, day or night. Do you need permission to go into your sons' and daughters' rooms? Do children need permission to enter their parents' room? Of course not. If, within yourself, you have the mechanism with which to love God, you can be with Him wherever He goes. (170-199, 1987.11.15)

What is the difference between true love and authority? In true love, you give love and then forget that you have given it. What is the line between good and evil? Evil is where something is given with the intention of receiving all the benefit for oneself, and goodness is where, even though you give, you forget that you have done so. Even in a household, those who serve others more stand on the good side, and the one who lives for others most becomes the master of that family in the end. Let us say there are ten friends. Which would be the best among them? The one who cares for all the others. Then the ten friends would make the one who was taking care of them the central figure and serve him. This is how the universe is inherited. (141-252, 1986.2.26)

What should a person leave behind him to be remembered for eternity? The first thing is a legacy of love, and the second is a legacy of true life. You must leave behind your love and your life. Love did not exist before God did; love is there because God exists. That is why, for God, life is first and love is second, but for human beings, love is first and life is second. (105-75, 1979.9.23)

When you ask the whole universe, from the smallest elements to human beings, "What is it that the person who possesses you has to have?" all of them would answer that they would like to belong to a person who has love. This means that all things of creation are seeking an owner of love. (132-158, 1984.5.31)

God wants to bestow all of His authority on human beings. To do so, God and human beings must become one based on love. God's ideal of creation is the ideal of oneness. That ideal of oneness based on love is the purpose of creation. (39-340, 1971.1.16)

A human being is the body of God, who is assuming physical form. Since we are the physical body of God, we are the external God. God wishes to bestow such a privilege on us. (39-340, 1971.1.16)

Why are we instructed to do good works? When you carry out an act of

goodness, you must sacrifice to do that, and sacrifice means investing yourself. Then why is it good to invest yourself? By investing yourself, you can reach the point of connecting with the source of heavenly fortune, with cause and effect, with the essence of power, and with the mainstream. You can then be supplied with infinite power. Since good people are supplied with this infinite power, everything they do will turn out well. (164-323, 1987.5.18)

Section 5. Perfection Is Attained through Love

God created the world with the purpose to realize his ideal of absolute love through the oneness of Himself and human beings. He created human beings as His highest and very best object partners of love. Accordingly, of all the forms of creation, only human beings are His object partners uniquely embodying His image. Human beings were born as visible beings in front of the invisible God. When human beings are perfected they become God's temples, meaning that they are the corporeal beings into whom God can freely and comfortably dwell at any time. God's ideal of true love is realized and fulfilled through human beings in the form of the vertical parent-child relationship. (277-198, 1996.4.18)

What do human beings live for? If you answer, "They live for love," that is a wonderful answer! Life, as originally intended at the time of the Creation, is for us to be born as the fruit of love, to live with love, and in the end to return to the bosom of our God of eternal love. (39-340, 1971.1.16)

Human beings are born to bear the fruit of love on earth. The purpose for which we live on earth is to bear the fruit of love that God desires to see. That is why life on earth is brief. It is just one season, a short time. (130-158, 1984.1.8)

As we are born from love and matured through love, we cannot live separated from the realm of love. (Blessed Family - 1062)

Since we are born of love, it follows that we must walk the path of love, and ultimately die for love. The purpose of life is to find love that is welcomed not by the microcosm but rather, by the great universe; it is to be born, to live, and to die surrounded by the universal love that is recognized by God, the angelic world, all things of creation, and our parents. (83-164, 1976.2.8)

The mind and body of a person unite when he stands in the same position as the nucleus of the love of God, and he reaches maturity when he enters the realm of God's love united in mind and body. Only then can he start on the path to individual perfection as a person in the original mold, untainted by the Fall. (Blessed Family - 313)

God is the king and owner of true love. Since God is the king of true love, and the bridegroom, it is an absolute

principle that He needs His partner, the queen. Then you may ask who can be the absolute God's partner in true love? The answer is true people. It was Adam and Eve who were to become one with God's love. (275-53, 1995.10.31)

The path trod by a man or a woman exists because of love, and for love. Our path is the path of love. We are following this path in order to acquire love, defend love, and establish an environment of love. (Blessed Family - 1062)

Even if a person sets his goals well, if he cannot establish the loving authority through which he can manage that goal, he must pursue a new goal. The purpose of this goal cannot be greater than love. (29-130, 1970.2.26)

Adam must become one with God, and what joins them together is love. A human being is the two-dimensional representative of the existing world, and God is the three-dimensional representative. Between them is the bond known as love that joins them together for eternity. (35-156, 1970.10.13)

Think of even a poor country man who works all day, weeding the fields and farming the land. If the passion of love is kindled such that it fills up his body and mind, the five senses of the body and the five senses of the mind will completely unite into one, and he will experience unsurpassed joy. In the same way, if you have inside yourselves the place of complete settlement, in which the love of God can reside, you will become one in heart with God, so that just like the swing of a pendulum, if God's heart beats once, your heart will beat once too, and your body will be turning around together with God. Once you begin to revolve, you will continue to turn. The more you turn, the more momentum you will gain, and the action of centrifugal force will demand that you love your family, love your society, love your nation, and love the world. (Blessed Family - 376)

From whom originates the love that embraces and forgives everything? Love does not start from human beings. It starts from God, who is the Subject of love. God created human beings with love, so He desires to receive love from them. Love is perfected as God returns to humankind that love He has received. (Blessed Family - 380)

Love is absolute. Even God, who has absolute knowledge, absolute capability and absolute authority, is absolutely obedient in front of absolute love. (206-24, 1990.10.3)

True love must start from a certain point, turn through 360 degrees and thus return to the starting point. Only then is it true love. It cannot be true love until it reaches that point. (178-309, 1988.6.14)

The purpose of life is to occupy the love of God. If you do not occupy the love of God, even if you think you have achieved all your hopes, you have not achieved anything. Although you may

be very happy, that happiness cannot become eternal happiness. (38-326, 1971.1.8)

And so when you love you can attain immortality. It is God's love that stimulates the reciprocal action that continues forever. (38-273, 1971.1.8)

The most sacred thing on this earth is true love. True love begins from God. Since God exists, there is no other way for things to be. What God truly desires is the path of true love, and you cannot dwell in His presence unless you walk this path. Through love, God wants to see, hear, eat and touch. Similarly, if human beings receive the kiss of love from God, they will feel a joy so great that it will seem to burst inside them. This is what God truly desires. Owning diamonds and jewels will not bring Him joy. (Blessed Family - 380)

It is not without meaning that I am vibrant and active in many fields. I do so because I have a purpose and that purpose is none other than to realize the world of love. Human beings exist with the aim of realizing and attaining love. Since the purpose of human life lies in the realization of true love, the value of human existence is also decided by this true love. How wonderful this is! What kind of person can harmonize with the essence of God's love? A self-centered person has no value at all. Only the person who is willing to invest, with the sincerest devotion, everything he has in his life for others – only this kind of person can live continuously in the realm of God's love. This is how it has been with the great people and saints of history. (46-36, 1971.7.18)

The love of God is love for the sake of others, love that seeks to live for others. When there is such a love – true love – things automatically rotate. How did the universe begin? It began from the point of rotation. All existing things, by their intrinsic nature, have to rotate. Then what can keep on rotating forever? The love that is willing to give eternally, that is, eternal love, will keep rotating forever. Since the giving and receiving forces become one and want to give and give, they have no choice but to expand. (128-291, 1983.9.11)

Since God, the origin of true love, is the parent, humankind is situated as His sons and daughters. From the children's viewpoint, their parents are the best examples of love. The relationship between parents and children is a vertical, perpendicular one, whereas the relationship between husband and wife is a horizontal, equal one. Therefore when the parent-child relationship and the husband-wife relationship meet at a right angle, and to this formation is added the relationship between siblings – a "front to back" relationship – the resulting configuration of loving relationships together form a sphere. Thus, all existing things created through love are spherical in form. The entire universe is in the form of a sphere. (34-215, 1970.9.13)

Just as human beings wish to see

God, God also wishes to see true human beings. But no matter which of two He says He wants to see first, the other one will certainly complain. And so God has no choice but to put love first. If He puts love before everything else, He can see the man and the woman together at the same time, touch them at the same time, and share with them at the same time. People fight to possess the precious things of the world, but there is no fighting in love, because in order to possess it, two must unite into one through living for the sake of each other. Everyone likes love and it is only love that can fully satisfy our desires. Therefore, it is possible to carry out God's providence of salvation based on this principle. (Tongil Segye 1986.9-17)

We must find true love. Then where can you find it? True love lasts forever, and remains unchanged, day or night. Something that exists for oneself alone cannot be true love. True love cannot belong to just one individual. True love belongs to all, and is jointly owned by the whole universe. True love connects the family, the society, the nation, the world, and the universe. (Blessed Family - 380)

Where is the root of true love kept? Even though God is all-knowing and all-powerful, the root of love is not kept within Himself. Although the all knowing and all-powerful God is the central figure of true love, He does not want to keep the root of love within Himself. God wants to plant that root in the person who is to be the object partner of His love. (177-269, 1988.5.20)

Where did love begin? It began from God. God created this world because He needed His ideal partner in love, and so even the Creation of heaven and earth had its origin in love. (213-79, 1991.1.14)

The fountainhead of the power of the mind and heart is love. So, when the explosive force generated by the give and take action of the mind is connected to God, that force can be multiplied hundreds or even thousands of times. It can realize the hopes of the people of the world. At the same time, it can even establish the Kingdom of God as our own, in which we can live together eternally. The key is love. (18-328, 1967.8.13)

When human beings attain oneness with God, their hearts and emotions are enraptured in infinite joy and happiness. God and human beings ultimately become one through love. Human beings also become one with the world through love, and the realization of the ideal world, fulfilling God's purpose at the time of Creation, is begun from there. (35-156, 1970.10.13)

When human beings reach the divine spirit stage, they can realize that universal principles are contained in the smallest grain of sand, and the harmony of the limitless universe is contained in a single atom. The fact that all existing things are the result of complex forces cannot be denied. From molecules to atoms, and from atoms to elementary particles, nothing exists without reason. Everything in existence has conscious-

ness and purpose. Therefore all existing things have passed through the loving hands of God, and so exist in a relationship of heart with God. Joy can be felt when a certain purpose is achieved. Since the consciousness of God's purpose is inherent in all things, God feels joy from their creation. (9-166, 1960.5.8)

How strong must your love be for you to advance to the realm of God's love? The false love found among humanity today is below that of the archangel. The love in the fallen world is a love that has been invaded by Satan. The people born and living in that realm are making a commotion over whether, due to issues of love, they can continue living or not. Such love is like a whirlpool, with neither order nor direction. Only dirty things collect in a whirlpool. Yet once human beings form a relationship with the love of God, they naturally follow the direction of that love even though they are not taught to. (130-23, 1983.12.11)

God's ideal begins from a new love centered on God – in other words, from the place where love that is in accord with the laws of creation exists. (19-314, 1968.3.17)

Why do people like love? It is because you have no choice but to like it. The rope that binds a mother and the father together into one is love. Steel chains rust over time and eventually break, but the rope of love lasts forever. Moreover, parents and children cannot be bound together with food or money. They can only be bound together with love. (18-328, 1967.8.13)

The perfection of humankind cannot be achieved through knowledge, authority, or money; it can only be achieved through love. That love is not the secularized love of this world, but original love, and through that love everything is perfected. (God's Will - 697)

CHAPTER TWO

The Reality of Love

Section 1. God's Love

1.1. Love originates from God

God is the God of love. St. Paul asked who can cut off the line of God's love within Christ. Even Christ would be nothing without God's love. This is why we like God's love more than anything else. God's love is the source of life, the source of happiness, and the source of peace. You can understand this if you have spiritual experiences. (24-324, 1969.9.14)

God's love is stronger than the sun. When the sun rises in the morning, the buds of plants turn towards the sun. Likewise, God's love is the source of life, the source of our original mind, and the core source of ideal elements. That is the way it is. (99-230, 1978.9.25)

Since God is the substantial essence of love and the central being of love, He has no Alpha or Omega. Genuine love cannot have a beginning or an end. The world of heart enables us to experience something so precious that we can be proud for a thousand years for having lived for one hour, and be proud for ten thousand years for having lived for one day; and this is true love. Love is something that makes us feel even the energy by which our cells expand. The world where God's love exists is like that. That world is hard to describe in words. It is a joyful and enchanting world, where all of our cells are dancing and we feel as if we are flying on the clouds on a bright spring day. (20-25, 1968.3.31)

How shall we describe God's love? Imagine a warm spring day with white clouds floating gently in the sky. The air shimmers above the ground, insects and ants scurry about exploring the world. Beside a flowing stream, catkins blossom and frogs sing new songs of spring, welcoming swarms of bees and butterflies. And there you are, enraptured in the atmosphere, in that twilight state we experience when drifting peacefully off to sleep, and yet awake in a happy mood, rejoicing forever. God's love has such a flavor. With your ideal partner given to you by God, you will feel as if you are in a flower garden where butterflies and bees fly around. Are you happy even to imagine this, or unhappy? These thick-headed men here will not understand this very well. (37-29, 1970.12.22)

Love fills the place where God dwells.

It is a place where the more you give, the more desire you have to give; and the more you receive, the more desire you have to give ten million times what you have received. So is this heaven or hell? There you will feel an explosive stimulation because you can give more and receive more, a stimulation that makes you feel as if all your cells exploded. God's love is like that. (39-335, 1971.1.16)

What kind of being is God, who has created heaven and earth? He is a being of utmost goodness, the fundamental root of all things, and the subject partner of love. This is why, after creating all things in heaven and earth, God wanted to give all the precious things in the universe to human beings. If there is someone God can truly trust, love, and entrust things to, He will want to hand over to him all of the most precious things. (13-247, 1964.4.12)

What kind of taste would God like most? If God has a sense of smell, what kind of smell would He like most? If He can hear, what would He like to hear, and if He can feel, what would He like to feel? There is only one thing God likes, and that is love. Nothing other than love can focus God's five senses and fill Him with joy.

If God is looking for an absolute partner of love, what would He choose? We can conclude that it will surely be a human being. This is why we say that among all things of the universe, human beings have the highest value. (218-210, 1991.7.29)

God's love expresses parental love, conjugal love, and children's love. Of course, it includes brotherly love, and when it expands it also contains the love of the nation and world. We say that God's love is parents' love, husband and wife's love, and children's love. This is the most wonderful thing that can be said. (67-171, 1973.6.3)

What kind of love does God really need? He wants absolute love. It is the same for us. Just as God needs absolute love, unique love, unchanging love, and eternal love, we human beings also need absolute, unique, unchanging, and eternal love. We should all resemble God. God created because of love. (279-246, 1996.9.15)

Since He created because of love, He likes watching a man and a woman loving each other. For this reason, when God appears before the world of existence, He appears as the essence of love. (86-82, 1976.3.7)

Just because God has been giving love to people, can He say, "I have given to you completely, now why don't you give back?" God, who has absolute love, is still anxious and troubled that He has not been able to give all the love He wants to give. God cannot assert Himself. Giving love completely is God's purpose in creating people and thus His heart burns to pour out all of His love to the human world where He has as yet been unable to give complete love. It is because He is such a God that the more

we think of Him, the more we feel good. If He were a God who says, "Since I have given everything, now you have to give back," we would not need Him. (36-77, 1970.11.15)

In giving us love, how much would God want to give? God's love is not given according to a limit that says a certain amount is enough. It is a love that wants to give infinitely. Even after giving everything, God will still say, "I want to live in you because of you." What is the essence that brings this about? It is love. If love is present, God would be happy to live even as a servant. The father can feel joy even when his beloved little son climbs onto his dining table and poops there. Love transcends the law. (36-77, 1970.11.15)

As an omniscient, omnipotent, and omnipresent being, there is nothing God does not have and there is nothing He wants to keep back for Himself. Although He has everything, if there is something He wants to present and be proud of as being more precious than all, what would that be? God needs only love, and nothing except love. There is nothing He needs but love. (108-223, 1980.10.16)

God said, "I am love." What does this mean? It means to like love by night and day, while working, resting, dancing or crying. This is why He said, "I have love, in its entirety." In entirety indicates that everything is contained therein. The one who likes love most is God. Since God has such love in its entirety, when we taste His love, we will not be able to let go of it even when we die. (44-188, 1971.5.7)

It is said that God is the original being of truth, the original being of goodness, the original being of love, and the original being of life. But what does this mean? All these have the same meaning. In order for the truth to be established, love and life are indispensable. So the central core – the original being of life, original being of love, and original being of truth – is God. What kind of being is God? He is both the father and mother of humankind. The core is the parents. Seen in this way, God is a simple being. (21-183, 1968.11.20)

God created human beings as His children. As He watches them grow up, becoming brothers and sisters, husbands and wives, and parents, God establishes Himself as the master of love at all these stages. Thus, human beings, who have enabled God to be the master of love, can be seen as more precious beings than God. It is like you regarding someone you love as millions of times more valuable and precious than yourself. God is the bone of love. You should know this. With respect to love, God's love is like the bone and human love is like the flesh. The bone and the flesh become one to take shape. This is the principle operating. (181-206, 1988.10.3)

What is love? It works as a lubricant and a rail upon which things turn. Without love there is no lubrication. Automobiles need oil to move. Movement needs

lubrication. Everything needs lubrication if it is to move. Only love can be the lubricant for the highest joy. It does not disappear because it is rooted in the eternal God. Action brings progress. (180-161, 1988.8.22)

God's love appears in a place that does not change. God's love is unchanging, and thus, eternal. If God's love appears to us, it appears on the foundation of an unchanging heart. Thus, for our entire life, we should eat for the sake of that love, sleep for the sake of that love, and act for the sake of that love. As long as we have an eternal and perfect standard for the sake of love, God's love will appear. Otherwise, the public principles of this universe would all be in vain. (83-179, 1976.2.8)

God is our father. Day and night, He worries that His children may be harmed; He protects us lest troubles happen; and He defends us lest some opposing circumstances appear. He is that kind of parent. Going in search of the essence of such a parent is the way of goodness and the way of love. Human beings, as His children, need to receive God's perfect love. (57-85, 1972.5.29)

Until now, God has given love to those people and even those tribes and nations that were near His side. He has blessed them by adding things again and again lest they should think of them as too small and not receive them. Even this was not enough, and He gave them the life of His beloved son. Even after giving over his only son to be killed, God again wants to give more love. This is why, on the day when this love is returned, all of heaven and earth will turn into an ideal Kingdom of Heaven. By the principle of love, the more love you receive, the more love you give in return. So when we give God a hundred units of love, God will return to us a thousand, ten thousand units of love. (38-166, 1971.1.3)

If only we have God's love, we can remain in God's bosom, we can squeeze God's nose, and we will have no boundaries wherever in the world we go. We will have a free pass everywhere. (91-227, 1977.2.20)

If you were to receive a kiss of love from God, you would feel joy triggering an explosion within you. It is here that God's desire is fulfilled; He would not rejoice over having diamonds or other jewelry. (Blessed Family - 380)

Where do God and human beings connect? They connect where their lives intersect, their love intersects and their ideals intersect. What is this point? It is the place of the parent-child relationship. From this point of view, God is the subject partner of love, the subject partner of life, and the subject partner of the ideal. In relation to His children, God ignores His authority and dignity. However sinful and incompetent His children may be, if they embrace him He will not say, "You scoundrel, don't do that!" Rather, God will embrace them, rub them, and love them. Experiencing this will melt your bones. (69-79, 1973.10.20)

God has the desire to give again unceasingly even after having given for thousands of years. It is for this reason that we are looking for God. If God were a cheap merchant who says, after giving, "Hey, that will cost you such and such an amount," we would not need such a God. (36-290, 1970.12.13)

What happens when you come in contact with God's love? Your hair will dance, and so will your cells. When you become a hundred percent intoxicated in this love, you will want to live forever rather than withdrawing. If someone were to try to wake you up, you would tell him not to. Mysterious things will happen. As the saying goes, "A saint's delight makes him forget the passage of time." There is indeed a way to become enraptured in such a high level of love, beyond human imagination. (59-316, 1972.7.30)

Love can fill anywhere, and reach everywhere. What do you think happens when loving people embrace each other? Do they just hold each other's hands and say, "I love you"? Perhaps they would like to be hugged so strongly that their eye balls pop out and water comes out from their nose and mouth. When they embrace, they don't just stand still but turn around. The universe will turn only when they become one in love like this. (81-18, 1975.11.23)

God is the father of human beings, and human beings are the sons and daughters of God. They were created through God investing the core of His bone, the core of His flesh, and the core of His bone marrow in their entirety. Thus, when human beings pull God, God cannot but be pulled along; and when God pulls human beings, they cannot but be pulled along. (20-207, 1968.6.9)

Why do people like and follow God? It is because God is one who gives and again gives everything for thousands of years and yet still feels ashamed. He says, "Now I can only give you this much, but wait a bit longer, and I will give you something that is many hundreds of times, many thousands of times better." This is because He is someone whose heart is not content with today's giving but promises to give better things in the future. (36-290, 1970.12.13)

Why do human beings live forever? I am asking why everyone is seeking eternal life. We are seeking an eternal partnership of love because this way we can have the value of object partners of love before God, who is the absolute subject partner, and because we will inevitably live eternally before the God of absolute love. When you come to stand in this place, God becomes you and you become God, above and below alike. If only you become one in love, you can put God in your pocket and He can go in. (137-67, 1985.12.18)

When we become connected to such a realm of God's love, what kind of feeling will we have? We will feel as if we are looking at the beautiful flowers and

smelling all the fragrances in a spring garden. At such times all our cells will dance. (24-324, 1969.9.14)

If God's love is the vertical love, the love of a man and a woman is a horizontal love. If a man and a woman are to meet, they must engraft their horizontal love onto the vertical love. It must join at a ninety-degree angle. A love that does not fit this, a love that is not connected to the vertical standard, will end up as a nomadic love and be destroyed. Hence, when you enter the realm of love where the vertical and horizontal are aligned, you will be able to rule the whole universe through love. When you have a relationship with the whole universe, you will not need any knowledge, power, money, or even life. Life also lives eternally within love. (136-203, 1985.12.29)

It is not Adam and Eve's bodies that God likes but their love for each other. What is the final thing that God wants from human beings? It is the place where God meets His sons and daughters and loves them. And the final destination desired by human beings is also a place where they attend God as their father and receive love as His sons and daughters. (56-145, 1972.5.14)

For God, Adam is the core of God's self, and the core of the ideal love of the future. So Adam is God's body. On the other hand, Eve is God's wife and body. Adam is a spiritual partner relating to God's body and Eve is a physical partner. So when Adam and Eve become husband and wife and love each other, with whom are they sharing their love? They are in love with God. This is why marriage is exceptionally holy. (102-208, 1978.12.31)

God needs no knowledge, as He is the one who created knowledge. God needs no power, as He is omniscient and omnipotent. God needs no money, as He can make diamonds and gold whenever He wants. There is only one thing God needs, and it is love. Can God receive love by Himself? You may wonder whether God cannot just receive love as He pleases; but it's not like that! What God needs most is a partner with whom God can share true love. You have not known this. (137-52, 1985.12.18)

What is the flavor of God's love? It is a wonderful flavor that combines everything. It has a power such that when you like it and grasp it, you can grasp it without limit, and when you unfold it, you can unfold it without limit. Hence, with love, you can fill everything and reach everywhere. (81-18, 1975.11.23)

God is the original source of love. It is from here that parental love, conjugal love, children's love, brotherly love, the love of blood relatives and the love of an ethnic people have emerged. (50-267, 1971.11.8)

Among all forms of love, that which is invisible is the highest. If love were visible, it would not be so interesting. It is because love is invisible that it can be

the highest, widest, and deepest. So, to say that "Love is like the Rocky Mountains; love is like Niagara Falls" is correct. Just as the invisible love is this precious, God, who dwells in an invisible place, is also a precious being. It is correct to say that in order to find such a precious God, we need to enter a selfless state, a state where "I" do not exist. God resides in an invisible, quiet realm that is deeper than we can perceive. (96-261, 1978.2.12)

All kinds of things happen when a man and a woman fall in love. But if you find a way to find God and really taste God's love, you will see that God's love is beyond comparison with anything in the world. If there is someone who has tasted such love, no suffering and no sorrow would be able to conquer him. Should there not be such an absolute realm of liberation? Finding it becomes the issue. (39-240, 1971.1.15)

Since God is an Absolute Being, there is no other place to attend Him. The people in love want to go together, be together, and live together. How do they want to live together? They want to live together by digging into God and becoming one. This is the essence of love. (56-147, 1972.5.14)

Is the mind narrow or wide? You don't know what your mind looks like but the mind is infinitely large. Then how good is the mind? The mind desires to give huge sums of money to each and every person in the world, and then give more. This is how splendid the mind is. This is why human beings can blossom as flowers of infinite love and infinite hope. Why is this so? It is because they infinitely resemble God's characteristics. (27-59, 1969.11.23)

How large is your mind? It is large beyond any measure. Also, if it is small, it is miserably small, so small that not even the tip of a needle can go in. The mind can be expanded infinitely and be shrunk infinitely. It has that essence or nature. Why is the mind formed like that? It is made as God's home, where God can dwell. (145-312, 1986.6.1)

Love takes the shortest distance. These may be simple words, but they are precious words. Why does it have to be perpendicular? This is the problem. Why does it have to be level and balanced? In order for love to be perpendicular, it must go the straight path, the shortest distance. When you go visit someone you love, do you take your time walking leisurely just as you visit a neighboring village or do you go swiftly and straight like an arrow? Whether night or day, whether spring, summer, autumn or winter, no matter how long history may be, love tries to take the shortest, straightest path. (187-50, 1989.1.6)

Of all things in the universe, love takes the shortest, straightest path. When something falls, it takes the shortest, straightest perpendicular path to the plane it hits. (187-50, 1989.1.6)

1.2. The purpose of love is the ideal of the loving union of God and man

What is the center of heaven and earth and fundamental root of the universe? When I entered a mystical state and prayed to God, He said that it is the relationships between the father and the sons and daughters, that is, the parent-child relationship. Those who do not know would understand this as relationships between the physical father, mother, and sons and daughters, but I am talking about a fundamental relationship with God. (19-158, 1965.1.1)

What is the summit where the father and the son can meet? They meet at the central point where love intersects love, life intersects life, and ideals intersect ideals; in this light, love, life and ideals are in one place. At that point, God is love, and so am I; God is life, and so am I; God is the ideal, and so am I. The first connection and first point of unification where this can be realized is the point at which the parent-child relationship forms; otherwise, these things cannot be. This is a certainty. (69-78, 1973.10.20)

If God is an Absolute Being, the question is why that Absolute Being created human beings. It was neither for money, nor for knowledge, nor for power; rather He created them because this was the only path available for God to feel love. From this point of view, God who is the father, and human beings who are His sons and daughters, form an axis. If this axis had connected God and humankind, absolutely nothing could sever the relationship between God and human beings united as one in love. (137-57, 1985.12.18)

Originally, the flower of love should bloom at the point where Adam and Eve are most joyful with each other, where the highest power of life is manifested, where the greatest powers come together, and where all ideals come together. So God's dream is of a love that blossoms like a flower, with its fragrances permeating the whole world and beyond, a love that God experiences, smells, and which intoxicates Him completely. (104-44, 1979.3.28)

If a family was created from the loving union of God and human beings, where God was able to make a relationship of love with human beings and become one with them through the true, great love that He has desired as an ideal from the time of creation, today we would all enter the heavenly kingdom just as we are, without having to worry about heaven and hell. (275-54, 1995.10.31)

God likes love, but what kind of love does God like most? It is true love. Then, where does true love keep its love-root? It does not keep its root in God. This is strange, isn't it? Although the omniscient and omnipotent God is the master of true love, He does not want the root of love to start from within God. God thinks of planting love's roots in those who can be an object of that love. (177-269, 1988.5.20)

Are arteries greater or veins greater? Which is greater? They are equal. Then, which is greater, God or people? They are equal. When it comes to love, if God is the artery, we human beings are like the veins, so we have the value of having the privilege to be God's equal. "I am my own Lord throughout heaven and earth. I am omniscient, omnipotent, and omnipresent. There is nothing that does not go through me." What makes this happen? Love does. This is understandable. (109-146, 1980.11.1)

Which comes first, love or life? Love comes first. Just because the universe came out of God's life does not mean that life is highest. It says that love is highest. Although God started creating heaven and earth with life, the starting point and motivation of this life is love. It is because of love that life came into being. (86-79, 1976.3.7)

When a man and a woman come to stand in the position representing God centering on love, they become connected to everything in the universe. When this happens, everything God possesses becomes theirs. The reason true love is great is that through true love you can become God's object partner and God can also become you. The Bible says that God and Jesus dwell within you. It is from here that we can say that the father is in his son, the grandson is in his grandfather, and the grandfather is in his grandson. The grandfather and grandmother should make a relationship of heart with their grandchildren. Only then, will the vertical line of love start. Also, the grandchildren must become one with their grandfather and grandmother. Since the grandfather and grandmother are in the position of God, they should be attended like God. Otherwise, the axis of love will not be determined. The horizontal line will arise after this is established. Human perfection starts with creating a vertical relationship with God. (298-308, 1999.1.17)

Where is the crowning height at which we yearn to receive God's love? It is the place of the son and the place of the daughter. God has heavenly emotions, and we human beings have human emotions. What kind of place is our destination where human affection and heavenly affection can combine? It is the only place desired both by the absolute God and by human beings, that is, a place where they can share love together as the sons and daughters centering on one set of parents. (39-9, 1971.1.9)

How valuable are the sons and daughters embraced in the bosom of love and born in an environment of love! If there is one central person in the universe whom God wants to visit every day to look at him, touch, and whisper quietly to, how precious and happy that person would be! Through love you are empowered to live as such a central person in the universe. (163-114, 1987.4.19)

When Adam and God become one and their love overflows, Adam can become God. When Adam becomes com-

pletely one with God in love, God dwells in Adam. The Bible also says, "Do you not know that you are God's temple and God's spirit dwells in you?" It is saying that we are God's temple. (48-230, 1971.9.19)

We human beings, as creative masterpieces produced by God, were born resembling God. Because God is eternal, we also must have an eternal character, and this is why our mind does not age. People should live eternally, and only when they live eternally can they have the value of being a masterpiece. This is why people become lords of all creation. (159-279, 1968.5.19)

God's love does not end merely as God's love. That love expands horizontally through people and never fails. When positive and negative electrical charges interact, opposite poles result. And such things occur again in other situations. This way, God's love expands horizontally. (34-235, 1970.9.13)

What is the holiest thing in the world? The holiest thing in the world is true love. True love begins from God. If God exists, there is no other route. You should know that what God truly desires is the way of true love and that without going through the way of true love you cannot go before God. God wants to see, hear, eat, and touch through love. Also, when human beings receive a kiss of love from God, they will feel joy exploding within their inner being. This is where God's wishes lie; He does not rejoice over having diamonds or jewelry. (Blessed Family - 380)

Before people can want to be the best on the world stage, they must be able to become the best as an original family of Adam and Eve. If Adam and Eve had taken the position of the prince and princess of the direct lineage before God, they would have become the best, as a man and woman respectively. But through the Fall, they lost the positions of the prince and princess that have the right of the first son or daughter. This remains as bitter sorrow in human history. So in order to regain God's true love, human beings have been walking the course in life to restore the positions of the first son and the first daughter. (226-48, 1992.2.1)

The bodies of Adam and Eve who have not fallen are houses wherein God can dwell. Had Adam and Eve become the body of love, body of life, and body of lineage eternally unified through true love, making God the center of their heart, the mind and body would not be fighting today. The Fall means that humankind inherited Satan's life and blood through Satan's love. This is why this lineage must be transformed. The providence of salvation will be completed only when the wild olive tree is transformed into the true olive tree. (226-48, 1992.2.1)

Section 2. True Parents' Love

2.1. Sinless true ancestor and Savior of humankind

What is a true parent? Had the Fall not occurred, God would have been the

vertical love and Adam and Eve God's body. They would have been just like God's body. God is like the bone and Adam and Eve like the flesh. God also has mind and body. God becomes the internal parent in the internal position and Adam and Eve become external parents in the external position. As the internal parent and external parents become one, they become intertwined through love. We come to attend the internal parent by attending external parents. In other words, the union of God and human beings in love would have resulted in true parents, that is, perfected human beings. Without unity in love there can be no perfect person. (184-71, 1988.11.13)

What has history been searching for? What has this age been searching for? What should the future search for? It is true parents. Therefore, without everything being led to this, we cannot find real happiness in the course of history or in the universe. (26-199, 1969.10.25)

What kind of people are True Parents? True Parents symbolize the hope of all people. They symbolize the absolute hope before fallen humankind. They are the fruit of history, center of the age, and the starting point for the future where human beings can be connected to this world where they are living today. (35-236, 1970.10.19)

Consider the three Chinese characters that make up the term True Parents (眞父母). It is through True Parents that history is governed, through True Parents that the foundation for returning to the new, original world emerges, through True Parents that the internal connection to subjugate Satan is established, and it is through True Parents that the center is determined that will occupy the external world, conquer Satan, and finally liberate God and resolve His sorrow. Thus, you should first be grateful for this amazing grace with which you can live together with True Parents and act by honoring True Parents' commands. (43-144, 1971.4.29)

The hope of humankind is to meet True Parents. True Parents are the ones whom you should meet even though you walk the path of death. Even if you may lose all history, all ages, and all of your descendants, if you meet True Parents, you will regain history, regain the ages, and regain the future. You should know that True Parents are such people. (35-236, 1970.10.19)

You should shed tears for God and True Parents. No one can follow the path of restoration without shedding tears. This is because God has been walking the path of tears until now in order to save humankind. (God's Will and the World - 163)

You should understand how amazing it is that I have come to this earth with the name of the True Parent. What are the most blessed words among all the words in the world? For fallen people, the words True Parents are the words of greatest blessing, greater than regaining a nation or the world after it has been

lost. You should know that these words are more precious than anything in heaven and earth. (127-220, 1983.5.8)

The simple words True Parents command history. Until now countless sages have walked the path of sacrifice in order to find and establish this word. The name they have established with hope after going through continuous bloody strife, struggling and screaming, is the holy name of True Parents. Before True Parents there should be true children. So have you become true children? That which is true does not change in the past, in the present, or in the future. (33-109, 1970.8.9)

God's history of restoration can be seen as a history to establish True Parents. Therefore, from the time of Cain and Abel until today Heaven has been fulfilling the providence to internally restore True Parents. Whoever opposes or interferes with the fundamental providence to realize this purpose will be deserted in front of the heavenly principle and eventually perish. (9-10, 1960.3.27)

The Messiah is the True Parent. We are true children. We have to stand in the same realm of destiny and participate in it. (55-97, 1972.4.23)

When the Messiah comes to this earth, although he comes as an individual, he is not an individual. His value is such that he is the fruit of the religious faith held by all humankind, the fruit of the hopes of all humankind, and the fruit of the love desired by all humankind. To this fruit all the historical courses are connected; that is to say, the past, present, and future are all connected to him. Furthermore, the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, and world are all connected to him, and so is all of heaven and earth. (13-143, 1964.1.1)

The role the Messiah must carry out when he comes to this earth is the role of the True Parent. Then, who is the True Parent? He is the horizontal parent with horizontal true love, who stands in place of the vertical true father. Christianity says that the Messiah is God and God is the Messiah, but this is wrong. God is the vertical true father. There is only one. You cannot see this any other way. The Messiah is the horizontal True Parent. (186-40, 1989.1.24)

You should know that until the appearance of True Parents on this earth, there had been many tearful stories in the background that you cannot even imagine. I don't know how many tears I have shed without you knowing about it. Only God understands this. (Blessed Family - 449)

Who are the True Parents we know? They are the ancestors of humankind and thus you should attend True Parents just as you do your own. (118-147, 1982.5.23)

Why are True Parents coming to the people on this Earth? True Parents are coming to restore human beings into that which they most like. What is that?

It is to make you into true parents – little True Parents. (125-117, 1983.3.14)

Where does true love begin? True love begins in True Parents. This is the best news among all good news. Although there may be some good news declared in the world, and although "husband" and "wife" are good words, there is no better news than that of True Parents. This is because without the appearance of True Parents, no true husband or wife can appear in the fallen world. You must understand this clearly. (131-187, 1984.5.1)

Human beings need True Parents. Why is that so? The fundamental task to connect us to the axis of true love has been completed for the first time in history. This is unprecedented in history, and it will not be repeated in the future. You should know this clearly. The axis is one, not two. This axis is true love. The love that your mother and father are engaged in right now is not true love. (137-107, 1985.12.24)

The purpose of God's providence has only one focus. The place where God's ideal is realized is none other than that. This is where we can meet our lost parents, our lost True Parents. The basis for this is the center of everything. This reality is called True Parents. There have been many junctures in history, but this is the most valuable one. You should think about how important this is. All the saints have fought for this foundation, and for the sake of this issue. (52-94, 1971.12.23)

What is it that human beings desire? It is to attend True Parents. Although six thousand years ago Adam and Eve should have been blessed in holy marriage and all humankind should have become God's descendants, the Fall made human beings Satan's descendants. Therefore, on this earth we must re-establish the True Parents, who are on the side of heaven and who were lost six thousand years ago. We must be reborn through connecting with True Parents' love. Only then can we become citizens of the heavenly kingdom. (19-202, 1968.1.7)

God absolutely needs True Parents, for even the omnipotent God is unable to fulfill the providence without True Parents. Also, the hundreds of billions of spirits in the spirit world absolutely need True Parents, for without the birth of True Parents the spirits in the archangelic realm cannot find value in their work to support the realization of God's will on earth. You need True Parents so you can stand before God. (Blessed Family - 454)

All history has been for the sake of receiving True Parents. Religions have been seeking True Parents, the world has been seeking True Parents, and nations have been seeking True Parents. They all have been seeking the way to True Parents. (God's Will and the World - 75)

Throughout the ages of history, people had no way to unite because they had lost their parents and become orphans. Everything should have been resolved through the love of the original parents,

but this could not be achieved. So True Parents are the ones everyone needs. (128-107, 1983.6.5)

What has been our hope throughout history? It is to attend True Parents. The reason God established the nation of Israel and the Jewish faith was to receive the Messiah. The Messiah is True Parent. Also, it was to receive the Lord of the Second Advent that God created Christianity and the Christian cultural sphere, and the returning Lord is the True Parent coming as the third Adam. (God's Will and the World - 75)

Where does everything come to its conclusion? Everything concludes at the point of meeting True Parents. The appearance of the True Parents of humankind is the hope of history, the hope of the nations, the hope of philosophy, and the hope of the providence. The time when True Parents appear is the pinnacle of history that comes only once – an unprecedented time, never to be repeated. (51-354, 1971.12.5)

What kind of people are the True Parents? How do your physical parents differ from True Parents? Who are the True Parents? What is it that they do? In terms of love, how do your own parents differ from True Parents? They have different concepts of love. Their concepts of love differ. Your parents teach about love centered on the earthly realm, while the spiritual Parents teach a love that is centered on the spiritual realm. The content is different. (129-99, 1983.10.1)

Democracy is an ideology of brotherhood, but above that there is a parent-centered ideology. You should be aware that the age of the parent-centered ideology is coming in the future. Do you decide who will be your parents by holding an election? Can you elect the returning Lord through a vote? Can you choose God through an election? You cannot. Democracy has the basis to foster an atmosphere of distrust. Why? People do all kinds of things for their own profit. They do all kinds of things, using their money, mobilizing manpower, plotting against others, slandering them, and so forth. (211-343, 1991.1.1)

2.2. True Parents give birth to humankind through true love

You were born of the blood of false parents who were chased away from Heaven with no connection to true parents. Thus, in order to move away from this lineage, you must trample upon that lineage again and again and pull it out again and again. Without changing your lineage at the fundamental level in this way, you cannot enter the heavenly world. (22-271, 1969.5.4)

In transforming the lineage, unless the condition for victory is fulfilled inside Adam's bone marrow and the core of His flesh and blood, through binding God's love to the seed that will be the child in the future, God's child cannot be born in the future. This is a logical certainty. Isn't this recorded in the Bible? If so, the Bible is surely God's word. (35-162, 1970.10.13)

What kind of savior is the savior demanded by the fallen people? He should be the True Parent who can be one with God's will and receive God's love and God's blessing, not in the position of the fallen parent, but in the position of unfallen Adam and Eve. As such a True Parent, he must be the savior who can give birth to humankind. Otherwise, people cannot rise to the point of having no connection to the original sin. (22-269, 1969.5.4)

I have said that although the Messiah may change your lineage, it is you yourself who have to act in order to change it. Without such a standard being established, we cannot reach the path of salvation. It is by no means achieved easily, but only through a situation where our life is at stake. The change of lineage is possible only when you fulfill a forty-day period of fasting and prayer or experience a state of death in which you are vomiting blood. (God's Will and the World - 62)

Why do we need True Parents? It is because we must take root in the realm of the heart. Now, there is a different root. Through the Fall, all the trunks and branches have become different. Here, a new root started with true parents, and what emerged from that? A trunk and branches grew, and you are being engrafted. You should cut yourself down and become engrafted. After the engrafting, you will become one with the great mainstream of the universe. You must cut off everything from the satanic world, down to the root. (164-155, 1987.5.10)

What is it that all people desire today? It is to welcome the True Parents before establishing a global nation. Also, from whom would your future descendants want to originate? Your sons and daughters want to be born through the lineage of True Parents, not your lineage. This is why True Parents become the starting point of the new future. (35-236, 1970.10.19)

What should True Parents do? They should correct the false lineage that is the root of the satanic world, reverse the false life, and open the true path away from the path of false love. The Bible says that those who wish to die will live, and those who wish to live will die. Why must this kind of paradox appear? It is because you must die to the satanic world. (169-37, 1987.10.4)

It is only through the body of True Parents that we can be re-created with completely new life and be fundamentally reborn. Only through True Parents is complete salvation possible, both spiritual and physical. Our blessed children born will thus go to the Kingdom of Heaven without going through the process of salvation because they have no original sin. (God's Will and the World -125)

Being True Parents and True Parents' children is the eternal and unchanging destiny. No one can sever this relationship. This is the path we must walk eternally. There is only one path, not two. There is no other way. There is no secret method. We must walk this path. (203-192, 1990.6.24)

True Parents bring the people of the world together and marry them from the position of parents. Here, they not only transcend racial differences but even marry good people with bad people. Although True Parents deny evil love, evil life, and evil lineage as a whole, they do not abandon Cain, who killed Abel, but rather bless him at the same level. Like the tides of the sea, when the ebb tide and flow tide meet and are in balance, at the time of the transition period of good and evil that is the conclusion of the providence of salvation (restoration through indemnity), they bless good people and bad people together, thereby completely expelling Satan.

The Fall occurred through the false marriage in the Garden of Eden, and so True Parents are reversing this by marrying people in the proper way. Through True Parents sweeping away that which was done by the false parents, they are abolishing hell and carrying out the work to bless in marriage even the tens of billions and hundreds of billions of ancestors in the spirit world. Through the family foundation of the earthly descendants, which is based on true love, the ancestors in the spirit world and the descendants on earth are becoming one vertically, and furthermore, through the foundation of such families, East and West are forging a connection. (300-224, 1999.3.14)

What should the adopted son do? He should be engrafted to the true son. You must cut the wild olive tree and engraft a bud from the true olive tree. We must create a movement of wild olive trees becoming true olive trees. To be reborn you need to receive True Parents' lineage. So it is True Parents that humankind desires, and what Jesus and the Holy Spirit desire is the feast of the lamb. (19-164, 1968.1.1)

First, you should earnestly long for the Parents. You cannot receive salvation without attending the Parents based on their being the motivation for your life, the entirety of your hope and the root of all your ideals and happiness. Have you ever tried offering attendance like that? You should understand this clearly. Hence, you should have the conviction that you are a son or daughter who can become eternally one with True Parents, and have this conviction so firmly that you transcend the consciousness of your own being. Otherwise, it will not work. (30-237, 1970.3.23)

It should be enough to have your natural parents, so why do you need the Spiritual Parents? It is because you are fallen. What have fallen parents taught you so far? They have chased away the better part, more than half, and taught you the way by which you continuously deteriorate centered on yourself. A clear line is created that keeps you eternally in the satanic world based on the love of your parents. There is no way of cutting this off. Then who are the True Parents? They teach you greater and greater things on this foundation so that you can be fit for the heavenly kingdom, the eternal kingdom, so that you can keep

in rhythm after you go to the eternal kingdom. They teach you so that you will have no difficulty breathing. (129-99, 1983.10.1)

Section 3. Parental Love

3.1. Parents' love is the love of the essence

Children are the fruit of their mother and father's love and the result of their investment. They are the extension of their mother and father's life and the realization of their mother and father's ideal. Those who have had children and given their love to them will know. This is why they say about their beloved sons, "This is the substance of my love, the extension of my life, and the realization of my ideals – my second self." Since children are born on the foundation of love, life and ideals, the more their parents see them, the more adorable they become, the more their lives are filled with vitality, and the more they appear as ideal partners. (69-78, 1973.10.20)

Can parents change? You should know that, through the ages of history, there has been no time when parents' love was revolutionized. This means that no matter how many revolutions occur, love has to continue eternally because love is not something that can be revolutionized. Such parents, as subject partners of such love, need you absolutely. They need you uniquely, need you unchangingly, and need you eternally. (74-18, 1974.11.10)

Why do children long for their parents? It is because their house of love is there. (137-140, 1986.1.1)

Why do we respect parents' love? It is because they sacrifice without expecting anything. They do not want any return from it. They are satisfied with loving, and happy just with that. They are happy just with giving. Receiving everything does not always make you happy. One who gives has more blessing than one who receives. Why is he blessed? It is because he can represent God's side. (46-35, 1971.7.18)

Parents' love towards their children is not merely love based on ordinary reality but a love that comes from their bone marrow. They cannot forget, even if they try, and they cannot sever it even if they try; such is the heart of love parents possess. When they feel that they have a connection of life with their children, parents naturally develop a loving heart toward them. (32-14, 1970.6.14)

What is true love? It is a love that lives for the sake of others; it gives and just forgets about it. It does not bother to remember having given. Moreover, it does not become exhausted no matter how much it gives. When parents say to their seventy-year-old son, "Now watch so you don't get hit by a car!" the son does not feel awkward, nor does he get tired of hearing it although it has been repeated countless times. If parents are like this even in the fallen world, will people get tired when they give and receive God's

love in the original world? (North South Unification from the Viewpoint of God's Will - 346)

In loving their children, parents do not assert themselves but love the children selflessly. Parents do not always love their children in a grand way based on their authority. (59-298, 1972.7.30)

Although parents may sacrifice themselves, they want their children to grow up as wonderful people. Parents are unchanging masters of love. Parents have an unchanging heart towards their children, although the children may do all kinds of unusual things. So the unchanging love of parents is precious. (141-241, 1986.2.26)

Even when parents suffer for their beloved children to the extent that their bones melt away, they do not feel the hardship. Why? It is because they love their children. Do they cut out and give their flesh and blood and then record how much it costs in a notebook? No. Rather, they are anxious and regretful that they cannot give everything. (39-334, 1971.1.16)

What is the parent-child relationship? What kind of relationship is there centering on love? In the parent-child relationship, if the parents' love is the cause, the children are the fruit and result of love; this is how I see it. The result and the cause did not begin separately but in the same place. What does it mean to say that the love of your parents is the cause and you have appeared as its result? It means that you have come as the result of your parents' love in the present. So the children, in the parent-child relationship, have been born in the equal positions of the cause and result that are one in love. (127-13, 1983.5.1)

The parent-child relationship represents the vertical aspect. Thus, the love in the parent-child relationship cannot change. This has been the case throughout history, hasn't it? Conjugal love possesses four directions because it is connected with the horizontal aspect. Thus, parents cannot forsake their children, nor can children forsake their parents. (145-274, 1986.5.25)

The joy with which the children relate to their parents should really be a joy that represents the world, and the joy with which the parents relate to their children should be a joy that can satisfy the desire that represents the world. The parent-child relationship really must be the fundamental root of the universe. We can conclude that the fundamental root of joy begins from there, and if sorrow has a beginning, there is no place that is more sorrowful than this. (62-17, 1972.9.10)

What is the parent-child relationship based on? It is blood ties. The word "father" involves love and lineage. To be children of direct lineage, you should be one body in love. You should be connected through lineage. Blood creates life. It possesses the life that has inherited the parents' traditions. Through what? Through love. (142-266, 1986.3.13)

Where were we born? We were born in a place where our parents' love blossomed like a flower of great beauty. This flower blossomed beautifully, and, what's more, it had a fragrance; it blossomed as a perfect flower whose fragrance was loved by the mothers, fathers, God, and even the whole universe. We were born in the middle of this. Children are planted as seeds in a place of joy, a place where their mothers and fathers born as men and women encapsulating the universe made their love blossom. (83-162, 1976.2.8)

Who are you? You are ones who have participated together in the fundamental root of the beginning of your parents' love. This relationship cannot be severed because the cause and result started in one place. The source of parents' love, which is the cause, and the love you have in your life, which is the result, are one. In this sense, it is possible to say that a parent and a child are one body. Without love we cannot talk about one body or oneness. We receive our parents' love from the time we are in the womb. The love and all the attention of our parents should be focused on us from the moment our mothers become pregnant with us through the essence of love. Why is that? Because we are the fruit of love. So we were born in love and receive a connection of life through love; when we grow up in love and reach the time when we can meet our partner, we receive our partner. (127-13, 1983.5.1)

Nothing can destroy the parent-child relationship. It cannot be destroyed even by an atomic bomb. It can never be destroyed, broken, or abandoned. (21-68, 1968.9.9)

The parent-child relationship cannot be severed no matter how hard you try. That is because it is your children who have the nature of a subject in your love and life. If you cut that off, you come to stand in a position of denying yourself and denying your life; hence, you cannot deny the fruit of love. This brings us to the conclusion that parents can abandon their own lives for the sake of their children. (83-161, 1976.2.8)

Regardless of how happily a husband and wife live together and love each other, which would be the happy couple, one without children or one with children? A couple without children is an as yet unfinished work, an incomplete couple. Is this so or not? (92-218, 1977.4.17)

There is no principle that strikes parents who love their children. They cannot be hit. The universe naturally protects them. You need to know this. A place where loving parents embrace their loving children and rejoice cannot be attacked by the principles of the universe; rather, it receives its natural protection. People have not known this. (130-151, 1984.1.8)

When a child becomes sick or crippled, is it natural that the noble, deep heart of his parents flows to this crippled child. Is this wrong? The heart of such a handicapped person is like a valley, and

the heart of the parents like a big area on the hilltop. The heart of such parents flows from the top to that deep valley. (147-165, 1986.9.7)

There is nothing bad in the heart of parents who live for the sake of their children. The more worn out their clothes, the more miserable their situation, the further they dig into the deep valley of tears. (173-262, 1988.2.21)

Ladies and gentlemen, what would happen if a baby were to be ashamed of taking a poop? He does not feel ashamed even after taking a poop or peeing on the floor; rather, he even smiles openly watching his mother clean up after him. This is possible only with love. In love, there is nothing dirty. Love can overcome everything. (116-84, 1981.12.20)

A mother breastfeeding and raising her baby in her bosom has an earnest heart. The parents' heart is such that even when their child poops and pees and makes a smell, they forget about these instances because of their love. When such is the heart of even fallen parents toward their children, how much more eager the heart of God must have been, who, as the subject partner of love, wanted to love Adam and Eve through the original heart? We should think about this deeply once more. (20-209, 1968.6.9)

The heart of parents is that they feel as if something is lacking even after they have given. They want to love more, wondering if they have loved enough even after loving, and feel regretful and sorry after giving. Because this is the case, that heart can be part of the essential core of eternal love. This is the original motivation at the beginning of love. (60-82, 1972.8.6)

When parents divorce, this is like cutting their children in half with a knife. The public law of the universe does not allow this. Parents who violate this will receive punishment and be followed by misfortune wherever they go, unable to find happiness. (298-300, 1999.1.17)

When a baby becomes hungry, its mother's breasts become swollen with milk. When the milk swells them up and the breasts begin to hurt, there is abundant pressure. The heart of a mother embracing her child and giving him her milk is difficult to express in words. When the swollen breasts go down, the mother feels relieved and happy. No one can understand this feeling unless she is a mother. Moreover, as a mother watches her baby suck her breast while touching it, love springs up abundantly in her heart. (187-99, 1989.1.6)

If you were to ask a mother with a child whom she would rather lose, her husband or her child, if she really loves her child she would say that she would never give up her child but would give up her husband if she had to. Husbands may be sorry to hear this! These days, ordinary people say, "Well, if your child dies you can have another one, can't you?" However, this is a last option. When we probe

into the principle of matters of order, we see that the husband and wife are horizontal and come last. The history of love is like this. (48-212, 1971.9.19)

What on earth is original love? It is the love by which parents can give their life for their child. Their love goes beyond their own life. Why must this be so? Originally, the universe was not created for the sake of life. Because it was created for the sake of love, it is love that comes first. Thus, it is rather that life goes along with love, and not that love goes along with life. Thus, genuine love acts by sacrificing life and by going beyond life. You should know that this is the love of Heaven, a love that can connect with the universe. (132-152, 1984.5.31)

Consider the life of the salmon. The salmon dies after laying its eggs. Nevertheless, the male and female salmon become one in laying their eggs… This means that salmon couples are deeply in love, as if they have been sentenced to die. When the female fish lays her eggs, the male makes a hole in the ground and protects them there. This is truly an ideal couple. After laying their eggs, they die. To see the various situations of male and female salmon dying is very shocking. In so doing, the body of the mother becomes food for her young. (128-259, 1983.8.28)

If there is a Creator, why do you think He created the salmon in this way? Seeing this, we can grasp how important our young are, and how important love is. It is most natural to say that God created the salmon as a model to show that love, and our young, are the most precious things. The life of the salmon is truly an amazing textbook for humankind. (128-259, 1983.8.28)

3.2. Parents' love is complete even after being shared over and over again

Why is it that we love our children? Why is it that we cannot help loving them? It is because loving our children is like inheriting God's great work of creation on the horizontal, substantial level. We are feeling the joy God felt after creating Adam and Eve. We are inheriting God's love and God's authority to create. (76-45, 1975.1.26)

Although people may not understand this, parents who have raised many children can see that their heart of love is wide, large, and deep. People who have raised many children can feel on their own that they cannot strike even their wicked enemies. They are standing on that broad a foundation and living according to that broad a law. (51-318, 1971.12.5)

When an infant is born, he follows the electric current of love and automatically seeks out a nipple. It does not matter whether she is ugly or beautiful – she just has to be his mother. This is indeed a sight of unmatched harmony and holiness. (298-304, 1999.1.17)

People are born in love and grow up while receiving love. Each of us is the fruit of our parents' love. You are the visible, real fruit of what your mother and father's love is like. Parents have to love the person who is the fruit of their love. Through this fruit the infinite love bears fruit yet again. Here is the path whereby we can be connected to individual love, family love, tribal love, global love, universal love, and even to the fundamental love of God. (126-245, 1983.4.24)

You are a unique participant and companion in love in front of your parents. With love, you can be equal to your mother and father and rise to an equal position. This is a privilege of love. Parents want to bequeath everything they own to their sons and daughters, whom they truly love. To inherit the universe, you can jump in and inherit a hundred percent when you have found an equal position of value of love in the tradition of love. This is why parents want to have children of filial piety. Children of filial piety pass on the inheritance of love as participants in the eternal love of their parents. (140-233, 1986.2.12)

A baby, who is born through love, can do whatever he likes, and you do not dislike him; rather, you like him no matter what. This is because that baby is made from your flesh and blood, and is a second you, created through love. So whether he defecates, or urinates, or has a runny nose, he is cute and adorable. This is because these things are soaked in love. (Blessed Family - 887)

The love between the parents and children comes from the parents. We receive our parents' love from the moment of birth. We receive parents' love and grow up, and then engage in the horizontal love between husband and wife; in order for the love of the husband and wife to continue, they must have children and love them. The parents can feel genuine love only when they have children. The love of brothers and sisters alone cannot tell us what parents' love is. In other words, we can come to know that love only when we have experienced the circular course starting from your parents and completing the circle by becoming a parent ourselves. (66-119, 1973.4.18)

To each of us, the love string of our mother – our parents – and the string of our ideals are connected, and this cannot be cut off by anyone. Rather, all the power of the universe is protecting it. Thus, wherever I go, my parents will follow me. My parents always want to be with me, even in the spirit world. Thus, it is a sin to dislike your parents accompanying you. Hence, you should know that thinking of and loving our parents like they are our own body and practicing filial piety has the highest value for human beings. (298-300, 1999.1.17)

It is from our parents' love that we were born. We were born by being engrafted to our parents' love. Before the connections of life and of lineage are made, through love, the connections of lineage and the connections of life are in place. Why is it that each individual is

so precious? Each person is not precious just because he has life, but because he has participated together in his parents' love. It is parents who have loved, but it is the individual that is the fruit of their love. Each one is precious because he is born having both the beginning point and the fruit. (140-233, 1986.2.12)

Genuine parents will strive to continue the tradition of love. This is the same for Orientals and for Westerners. All parents try to establish the universal tradition of love by transcending their own tribe. People, whoever they are, try to bring together their family in completeness and harmony and live a happy and peaceful life. Regardless of whether one is from the East or the West, everyone thirsts after such a life. In this case tradition is the essence. This is because only tradition is connected with the future. (Tongil Segye 1978. 11-11)

Which is greater, conjugal love or the love between parents and child? Western people think that conjugal love is greater. But that is not so. Love for a child is greater than the love between husband and wife. In conjugal love, the husband and wife fight because they think the other does not love them, but parents and children fight thinking they must love the other more. This is because the love of parents and child is the center and vertical, and follows the road that is close to the heavenly law. Thus, we find that the love that serves others is closer to genuine love. However strong a man may be, and however tough a woman may be, they will bow down to that love. (90-84, 1976.12.19)

The reason parents are precious is that they give for the sake of their children. So things come to be the other way around: when the parents get old, they become children. Long before, the parents were their children's teachers, but as they become seventy and eighty years old, they become like children. At that time, the child takes the place of the father or mother. The child should love his parents just as they raised him. This is the principle of heaven and earth. (137-95, 1985.12.24)

Section 4. Conjugal Love

4.1. Conjugal love is the flower of the whole universe

Man is a being having God's yang image, and woman is a being having God's yin image. A married couple is like the wrapping of heaven and earth in a cloth. They can feel the heart of God's ideal love. (13-67, 1963.10.17)

God is a being with dual characteristics vertically aligned, and human beings are physical beings with dual characteristics horizontally aligned. As such, the ideal of husband and wife is for the two to become one and form a completely rounded, apple shape. This would serve as a parent body able to pull and attach the ideal of love in the four directions, having the form of their four characteristics. (127-79, 1983.5.5)

When the husband and wife love each other explosively on the basis of the heart of loving God and loving humankind, God and the universe will be enraptured by this couple. This love cannot be anything other than that for the sake of God and humankind. Where does the root of this love lie? It does not lie within oneself. God is the source of love. He is the source of love for humankind. (35-239, 1970.10.19)

What is an ideal married couple? It is a couple who can realistically manifest the highest art and a couple who can manifest the highest literature. When we encounter the highest ideal and highest world of culture, we can see that the sweet love shared by a husband and wife is the highest love and the most sublime work of art in the world. The life of a husband and wife should be a most sublime work of literature; it should become the subject of a literary work. (22-269, 1969.5.4)

People always need stimulation. Happiness does not come without stimulation; there has to be stimulation. Just as our hunger makes each meal taste like something new, the love between husband and wife should always be fresh. The more the husband and wife see each other, the more they should long to see each other and want to be together all day. In light of this, you need to do a study on me and do a study on God. (23-57, 1969.5.11)

Establishing a family where God's love and the three great kinds of human love can blossom together is the desire of the world, the desire of humankind, and the desire of the future. You should know that the love of husband and wife is a precious and beautiful thing that can finally spread the fragrances of history in front of the principles of heaven and earth and appear as a new flower. (35-241, 1970.10.19)

Love is eternal. There are not two kinds of such love. There is just one. When a man and a woman are joined together in love, they must live together on earth for a hundred years, and even after they die they are to live together eternally. Although they have two bodies, they become one body, and as they rotate together they create oneness. When their two bodies become one, they come to rotate with God and establish a four-position foundation of love. This is nothing less than the ideal world. False love cannot invade; only true love can dwell there. (Blessed Family - 344)

A husband and wife who are joined together by the love in their hearts should create a family whose members' mutual affection has, through a lifetime of experience, surely gone beyond the sphere of their own daily lives. That love should merge without fail into oneness with God's purpose. Otherwise, they cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven, the dwelling place of God. (35-179, 1970.10.13)

The perfection of the love of a man and a woman is the perfection of the universe. The day this love is shattered, the order of the universe will be destroyed

and the entire vertical world will collapse. (Blessed Family - 544)

Through their becoming one in love as husband and wife, a couple attains the capacity to create in the same position as God, and their child is the result of that attainment. (52-314, 1972.2.3)

Heaven is looking for a husband and wife who are bound together as a pure man and woman and can represent heaven and earth with a passionate, crimson-colored heart of love. You should have such a love as a husband and wife and raise your sons and daughters in that love. (127-100, 1983.5.5)

The scene of a man and a woman hugging and kissing is one of the opposite poles of a flat plane colliding and generating the light that is to illuminate the path to finding love. When a white light appears there, colors should be added to create a light of colorful brilliance. You should know that when these lights are mixed by the vertical love of God, they will be transformed into a splendid, ideal world of brightness – like the colors of the rainbow. (134-170, 1985.4.7)

In these times people everywhere are engaged in love that is like instant food. Love does not deepen just because you take a bath in a bathtub filled with its fragrance. I would say that the love shared by a couple from the countryside who wash in cold water before going to bed, is purer and becomes deeper with the passing of time. (Blessed Family - 353)

A bride and bridegroom should not unite through money, power or honor, but through the original love of God. They should create a family that loves God, with the wife living for the sake of her husband, and the husband loving his wife. (Blessed Family - 880)

A man is an incarnation of the True Father and a woman an incarnation of the True Mother. Therefore, when the husband looks down on his wife, he looks down on True Mother; and when the wife deceives her husband, she deceives True Father. (Blessed Family - 869)

The power by which the man can have dominion over the woman and the woman can have dominion over the man is love. No power other than love can enable them to take dominion over each other; only love has dominion. (Blessed Family - 344)

In terms of physical strength, women cannot match men, but when love is involved, the wife and the husband push and pull each other and become one. If a person becomes an object partner of love before God, will God like it? He will. (270-242, 1995.6.7)

The melody God likes most is the laughter of a husband and wife who are happy in their love for each other. When such a couple lives a life with the heart to embrace the world and accommodate the entire universe, that laughter will spring forth naturally. In God's eyes, the beautiful sight of such a couple would be

like a flower. This is not just an ideal or abstraction. I am talking about the original world. (Blessed Family - 877)

A conversation between a loving husband and wife is more beautiful than any poem or painting in the world. Furthermore, how beautiful and splendid are the words that people who are in love exchange – "just the two of us"! (Blessed Family - 887)

When a man and a woman receive the Blessing and experience joy while giving and receiving perfect love, God looks at this as if it were a flower that has bloomed on earth. Moreover, all things of harmony that come into being through their love are like fragrances to God. God dwells here as He wants to live surrounded by such beautiful fragrances. The foundation upon which God's love can enter is the place of love between husband and wife. This will be a place where all things of creation and the universe come into harmony. (Blessed Family - 887)

4.2. Conjugal love cannot be fulfilled if it is shared with another person

According to people's original nature, they do not want their partner's love for them to be divided. The completeness of the horizontal love relationship between husband and wife is destroyed if that love is shared; whereas, this is not so in the vertical love relationship between parent and child. This is because of the Principle of Creation, which mandates that the husband and wife attain absolute oneness in love. In love, people have the responsibility to absolutely care for their partner. (277-200, 1996.4.16)

If you are a couple that is bonded by the strong power of love, you should feel joy and have love for your partner no matter what he or she does. If a wife says that she hates her husband's smell, or a husband thinks or feels that he doesn't like the way his wife's body moves, this is because the couple has not realized complete love. Such a couple has come together for a certain purpose that is to their own advantage. (Blessed Family - 887)

When a husband and wife live together, they are happier if they experience hurricanes, rain storms and thunder as part of the ups and downs of life, and pursue the ideal of love while experiencing such diverse feelings, rather than living comfortably throughout their whole life. (167-212, 1987.7.19)

Rather than money or knowledge, we need love in order to solve the problems between man and woman. (161-293, 1987.3.1)

When you listen to people's voices, you will find that women's voices have a higher pitch than men's. Why were women's voices created to be higher pitched? In terms of physical strength women are weaker than men; but in terms of heart and affection women are higher. Then, what about men? Men love

broadly. Women are higher in terms of the love for their husbands and children, but men have a deeper heart of love for their relatives and country. This is why we learn from our mother how to love our sons and daughters and our family, and from our father how to love the world. To lean too much to one side creates instability; a balance is struck by linking these two kinds of love together. (129-55, 1983.10.1)

In the first three years or so, you won't fit together well. How can a man and a woman with different family backgrounds, customs, and norms of propriety fit together? They should make effort to fit together until they become one. (Blessed Family - 895)

Only through love can greater things come forth... The level increases only through a love that lives for the sake of others. Therefore, fighting couples will produce children who will lead the nation to destruction. However, loving couples that live for the sake of others will produce God-like, wise princes and princesses who have extracted the full essence of heaven and earth. (204-106, 1990.7.1)

Why do a husband and wife fight? It is because each of them tries to receive love from the other. Those groups whose members try to receive love cannot last long. A family where everyone tries to receive love will be shattered, but a family where everyone tries to love others will not be shattered, no matter how much someone devotes himself to breaking it down. The love whereby each tries to give to the other is eternal. (36-75, 1970.11.15)

Love is simple and foolish. It does not care about any situation. If I truly love someone, I am not concerned whether someone is watching us from the side. A love that is conscious about someone watching is a love within a certain limit. How simple and foolish is the love that does not care whether someone is watching. (33-113, 1970.8.9)

Economic difficulties cannot be allowed to create a rift in the husband and wife relationship. Neither knowledge nor ignorance can dilute the love of husband and wife. (Blessed Family - 880)

Heaven is looking for a husband and wife who, bound together as a pure man and woman, can represent heaven and earth with a passionate, crimson heart of love. (127-100, 1983.5.5)

Why do you think the problem of divorce could come up between people who love each other? Considering the fact that those who have divorced or who want to divorce all once had a love relationship transcending life and death, there is something wrong. There can be many reasons for divorce, but it ultimately signifies that something has changed – something between two people. It happens because they fail to maintain and cultivate their love. Love itself does not change, but people's hearts change. (Blessed Family - 351)

In marriage relationships throughout the world, power comes when the husband earns and brings home money. The wife is naturally strengthened upon seeing the money he brings home, and the husband naturally gains strength seeing his wife so empowered. But if they are unable to earn money they become agitated, and their relationship may even break. A true husband and wife, however, should create oneness in love with God at the center. (Blessed Family - 880)

Some men, when they see a pretty woman, wish that she were his wife, even if he has his own wife. Of such a man with two minds, we say that he has a thief's disposition. Since it is Satan who started out with two minds, it is not wrong to call a man "Satan" who has two minds. If there is such a man, he is no different from Satan. (Blessed Family - 348)

A husband and wife can be considered a pair; however just as every face differs, people's fortunes differ. They have different destinies in life. Even if the husband has a bad destiny, if his wife has a good destiny, her destiny can change the husband's destiny for the better. Conversely, even if the wife has a bad destiny, if her husband has a good destiny, this can change her destiny for the better. Therefore, we can say that the destiny of husband and wife is like creating level ground by tearing down mountains and filling up valleys. After creating level ground, they can plant trees, plough fields, and pursue a variety of plans for their love as they keep the ideals of husband and wife. From the standpoint of such principles, you should not just see the external appearance when you find your spouse. Marriage is a fearsome thing. (God's Will and the World - 543)

You thought you would be happy after meeting your husband, but there are bad times as well. You should not hope for good things only. Would it be good to be bathed in sunlight continuously for twenty-four hours? There must also be nighttime. Isn't it natural that something that is high comes down? (30-141, 1970.3.21)

A happy family is one where when the husband returns home he discusses with his wife everything that happened while he was out, and this reveals new things to pioneer. A happy family is one where they join their strengths and research together. When the parents do this, the children will contribute their strengths and join in with them, expressing their hope to build such a family. (29-113, 1970.2.25)

A loving husband and wife should not unilaterally stipulate and fix in their minds what their spouse's face should be like. If you imagine the face of your partner as having only one appearance, nothing could be more boring. When you look at your partner's face with joy, it will appear to be joyful; and if you look upon it with a loving heart, it will look beautiful. You should always see your partner's face as new, like that of water swirling

when it flows with new shapes appearing at every turn. (Blessed Family - 880)

Human beauty does not just reside in the face. It can be seen and felt from all directions. Beauty is three-dimensional, like a ball. Whether seen from above, seen from the side, or seen from any direction, a person has his or her own perfect beauty. So you should not carelessly evaluate your wife's face. Many beautiful women are poor, but women who have virtue or good fortune are of a different type. We often see that even in the case of a woman with a pretty face, her face becomes strange after having just two or three children. So we can conclude that those who can maintain their beauty even after childbirth are beautiful women. (God's Will and the World - 543)

When a husband and wife love each other, each should love their spouse as a representative of God. When they love each other from a humanistic perspective, the shortcomings on both sides will come out, and this may eventually lead to their divorce. (Blessed Family - 880)

Love has value when people miss each other. In asking for love, use your mouth to speak and watch with your eyes open wide, so that you can please the one who gives love. You should know that if you remain dull, love will turn back on the path and run away. If a person giving love is not serious but has a passive attitude, how offended the other would be! (Blessed Family - 887)

If a husband and wife brush their teeth before kissing each other, this is not natural love; the toothpaste smell will keep them from being able to savor the unique human body smell. When I look at those people who brush their teeth before kissing, I don't know whether they are trying to taste love or taste toothpaste! When we look at the world these days, it is full of calculating, artificial, and hypocritical love to the point that we are confused about what human happiness is; such love is the main culprit leading the world to ruin. (Blessed Family - 353)

Soybean paste soup tastes best when it is served in an earthenware bowl. The rough and thick taste of soybean paste soup is something you can never forget once you have developed a liking for it. Likewise, when people have developed a liking for the rough and thick flavor of love, they will never change. Just as you quickly get tired of instant foods, which are sweet, if you could get love easily anywhere like instant food, you would not be able to call it true love. (Blessed Family - 353)

Who do you think saw Adam and Eve dancing naked in the Garden of Eden? You can do such things when there is nobody around. When a husband and wife dance naked in the room, is this something to be concerned about? Between the husband and wife, who cares what they do, whether they dance naked or do other strange things? What does it matter when a husband and wife do it by themselves? (21-240, 1968.11.24)

Even pigeons call "Coo, coo, coo!" and rejoice together, so if there is a sound of a husband and wife's meeting, a sound of truly loving people meeting together, what kind of sound would that make? It would be no less than the sound of thunder. (Blessed Family - 887)

The loving words a husband and wife whisper to each other in bed become a tonic to dissolve all fatigue and hatred from the world. Among those words that you whisper, you cannot say, "You have to love me." Just as love is natural, the secret words of love should be tender and beautiful. (Blessed Family - 887)

When a husband and wife make love, even if the husband's father or mother may be sleeping next to them, it is fine even if they scream when they reach their climax. They should make everyone in the local villages know about their love, so they will say, "That couple is so much in love, and when they make that funny sound at night, village rats are shocked and roosters stop crowing." If someone asks why such an incident has occurred that shocks rats and causes roosters to stop crowing, you can say, "Why do you think? It is because of the shouts of love that shake heaven and earth!" (136-32, 1985.12.20)

The place of conjugal love is a flower of the whole universe. In the place where a newly married husband and wife, who appear as an encapsulation of the historical ages, become one, God comes and settles down. How solemn and fearsome an occasion is the first meeting of a bride and groom in the midst of love. When you think that you have created a path to God and take on the role of a complete minus in love, it is from here that the heat produced by the love of heaven and earth begins to increase. After you create a cozy environment for your life and the environment for your ideals, then you should go to your wife's room. (179-90, 1988.7.22)

These days you do not wear traditional Korean socks, but in the old days people used to wear them for months, until they had holes and the toes showed. Then they came to have all kinds of odors; but still to the nose of a loving wife, those odors were better than a nice fragrance. You will go and lick even smelly toes when you are in love. They will taste crisp, sweet, sour, and intriguing. When you measure like this using an antenna of love, the extent to which you like it will rise way above the extent that you dislike it. (194-49, 1989.10.15)

Is it easy to re-create your sons and daughters? You have to do all kinds of things to give birth to a new son or daughter, all the extreme things. So is the spit of your loving husband dirty or not? If your husband's spit gets on your palm, and you are wearing a silk dress and have no place to wipe it off, would you be willing to lick the spit off your palm or not? Speak honestly. You have to say "I want to lick it and swallow it" for it to be true love. Love knows no dirty things. (194-165, 1989.10.22)

When conjugal love catches fire, two lives become one and then the lineages unite and start boiling in love. In the midst of that, the owner plants the seed. When the male-life essence and the female-life essence meet this way, and through the combining of centrifugal and centripetal forces that are set in motion through love, everything will turn. Things go up and things go down…. When a seed sprouts in an upward spot, it becomes a son, and when it sprouts in a downward spot it becomes a daughter! This is a theory, but I do not know if it is really true or not. Since this idea resonates with the theory, if you study it and find out whether it is really true or not, you will be a candidate for a doctorate or a Nobel Prize. (300-53, 1999.2.21)

Having children is the act of conquering the upper realm of God. This is an event to lead you to love your child from God's position and experience the inner heart of God and how much He loved human beings after the Creation. (224-28, 1991.11.21)

A love-centered life will solve everything. Even the tiger eyes of a greedy old man, when he is in love, will take on the shape of the moon as it is in a painting, and his frozen mouth will break into a smile. Love can completely melt down something that has been frozen and love can freeze something that is melted. Love is something that has the capacity to contain two extremes and still go further. If you look carefully at the Chinese character ho ("to like"), it combines the characters for "man" and "woman." There is a saying that a fight between husband and wife is like cutting water with a knife. When you cut water with a knife, does it leave a trace? It does not. Even after fighting, once a couple puts their foreheads together and smiles, peace returns. (127-245, 1983.5.15)

The love of husband and wife is for the sake of reaching up to God. (127-109, 1983.5.5)

Genuine love is to love with the entire body as one and with the heart and lineage as one. It is a husband and wife who can love like this. If there were no husband and wife in the world, would there be any excitement in living? (26-151, 1969.10.25)

Even in the fallen world, when a man and a woman fall in love, they say, "Ah, there is an electric current here." The electricity that arises from moment to moment starts from the archangel – it is unicellular. The electricity of love that arises in the original world is the lightning of the love of the universe. It surpasses the former in strength several thousand times; moreover, the sound of the movement of the cells of each human organ is like the sound of thunder. The principle view of love is that the man and woman engaged in true love of the original world cannot meet God unless they concentrate all their might towards the contact point where the lightning of love meets. This is also the completion of the purpose of creation. (Blessed Family - 380)

Do you think God sees you making love or not? Would God, who transcends time and space, close His eyes at night, when the five billion people of the world make love? How would He feel when He sees them? How many good wives and good husbands are there? Think about it. All kinds of things should happen there. Reluctantly playing a wife's role, reluctantly being dragged along, reluctantly trying to please your spouse – you should not live like that. That is not love, is it? Is that life? How great it would be if the whole world turned into an environment where butterflies and bees flew around freely and we could live in harmony within heaven and earth according to God's ideal of creation – just as in the Garden of Eden, with the fragrance of flowers – so that God could fall asleep in bliss? Have you ever thought about this? Try living like this. (222-252, 1991.11.3)

Why don't women have beards? When God saw Adam with a long beard, He was not pleased; so when He made Eve, He made her without a beard. So what is the greatest masterpiece among all God's creation? It is women. Women are the greatest masterpiece, but who are they for? They are a great work of art for men. Think this way. (38-180, 1971.1.3)

Section 5. Sexual Love

5.1. Sex is the original palace of love, the most holy place of heaven

Where is God's most holy place? It is the sexual organs of men and women, where love dwells. This is heaven's most holy place. (134-185, 1985.4.7)

What is the symbol of the love of a man and woman? Where is the final destination of love? It is the sexual organs that make a man and a woman one body. The sexual organs become a channel that can bring their mind and body into complete oneness through love. (Blessed Family - 337)

What is the difference between a man and a woman? First of all, their bodies, including their sexual organs, are different. Then, for whom is the male sexual organ absolutely necessary? The male sexual organ exists for a woman. One sexual organ is concave, and the other is convex. Why are they made like that? Both of them could be made pointed or both could be made flat, but why do they look different? It is all for the sake of the other. The man's organ is absolutely wanted by the woman, and the woman's organ is absolutely wanted by the man. We have not known that the woman's organ absolutely belongs to the man, and the man's organ absolutely belongs to the woman. By owning each other's sexual organs, man and women come to know true love. (299-119, 1999.2.7)

The sexual organs of men and women are the treasure store of the royal palace. They are the treasure store of the royal palace of the heavenly nation. Even God cannot do whatever He wants with her sexual organ. Only the priest can open the lock to it. A woman should

not get undressed before two priests. She is allowed to undress herself before her master; any one else is a devil. See what will happen to the perverted men of today. (194-345, 1989.10.30)

The sexual organ is the royal palace of love, a royal palace giving birth to eternal life, and a royal palace where one receives the blood ties and lineage that will inherit the heavenly tradition that will never, ever change. It is a royal palace of true life, a royal palace of true love, and a royal palace of true lineage. It is the most precious place. You cannot do whatever you want with it. You cannot open it without God's official approval. No one can touch it except your husband or your wife, who has received the official approval from God and the universe. (216-207, 1991.3.31)

Why do you think the sexual organ exists? It is because of love. It has come into being in order to find love. What is the sexual organ? It is a royal palace centered on true love, a royal palace centered on true life, and a royal palace centered on true lineage. It is the most precious thing. Without it, God's ideal, God's family, and God's will cannot be realized. The sexual organ is the one starting point for the achievement of the perfection of all these. (216-218, 1991.4.1)

If there were a world that absolutely valued the sexual organ, do you think it would be a good world or a bad world? Would it be a world of prosperity or a world of ruin? When God created human beings, what do you think is the part God made with the greatest concern and devotion? Do you think it is the eyes? The nose? The heart? The brain? These things will disappear when you die, will they not? (279-244, 1996.9.15)

The sexual organ is the royal palace of love. What has happened to that royal palace of love now? A person's sexual organ is the royal palace of love, the royal palace of life, and the royal palace of lineage. It is such a precious thing: a holy thing. But the Fall has turned it into something dirty. From the original viewpoint of God, it is not something dirty, but something holy. It is the most precious thing. Life, love, and lineage are connected to it. Satan defiled such a holy thing. (218-176, 1991.7.28)

Your sexual organ is the original palace of love. Your sexual organ is the original palace and royal palace of life. Your sexual organ is the royal palace of lineage. Only if love, life, and lineage are accomplished can your sexual organ be the royal palace in which God can dwell. Since God is the King of all kings, and the one who is to go to the original palace and reside there, in order to attend God, you have to attain the original palace of love, the original palace of life, the original palace of lineage, and the original palace of conscience. Amen, amen, amen! May it happen as decreed by my word! Amen! (280-197, 1997.1.1)

The sexual organ is the point at which two people become one as a unified body

of life with love at the center and is the place where the blood of a man and the blood of a woman blend into one, in one melting pot. You should know that this place is more precious than your sons and daughters, more precious than your husband, and more precious even than God. They will call me a heretic for saying things like this... What is that place like? It is a place that is more precious than your children, more precious than your husband, and more precious than your parents. Without it, your parents would have no value, your couple would have no value, and your sons and daughters would have no value. Because it is so precious, it is kept under lock and key as the most precious treasure of your whole life, in order to keep it from being seen by anyone in the world. The key to the man's organ is held by the woman, and the key to the woman's organ is held by the man, and there is only one key each. There must be one key only. Do you want to have ten, twenty keys as in free sex? Do you want it to be like a ruined house without an owner, where the door is open and all the passers-by can come in and out? (280-199, 1997.1.1)

What is the original palace, the sexual organ, with which a man and woman make love? It is the royal palace of love, the royal palace of life, and the royal palace of lineage. Your grandfather and grandmother live revering this place; your mother and father also live revering it; your couple also lives revering it; and your sons and daughters to come in the future will also live revering it; is this not so? Is there a woman or a man who live not regarding it? Then why has it turned into something bad? The sexual organ is said to be a vulgar word. Why is it vulgar? It is a holy word. We should consider it a holy word. It is because of this that eternal love is connected and from this that eternal life and eternal lineage appear. It is the most precious thing. (210-101, 1990.12.1)

A man and a woman who keep and protect their purity are likewise protecting the universe. This is because keeping the order of love between men and women is the fundamental root of the universe. Why were men and women born on earth? They were born in order to love each other. Since God is a great king of wisdom, He allowed for the exchange of the love organs between man and woman. Just as the man does not own his sexual organ, neither does the woman. Behaving according to your own desire and ignoring the owner will cause you to receive judgment for violating love. If the husband knows that he will receive a punishment by the most fearsome law, would he dare to forget about his wife and have thoughts about others? Conversely, can wives forget about their husbands and have thoughts about others? (Blessed Family - 337)

God is a fair person. Hence, since it is not right for people to fight over who owns what, God designed for the planting of the man's possession in the woman and the woman's possession in the man. Love may seem to be something wicked,

but it is really something breathtaking. (136-23, 1985.12.20)

Love must create harmony; there is nothing dirty in love. Although the sexual organ is the most precious thing, it is close to the dirtiest area of the human body. Why is that the case? Since harmony is a principle in the creation of heaven and earth, the male and female sexual organs, as the most precious things, are placed here. God thus installed them properly near the dirtiest place. (194-49, 1989.10.15)

Where are the sexual organs of men and women located? It is the safest zone, and at the same time next to the dirtiest place. This shows us that God is truly a king of wisdom. He teaches the human world, "Love even rules over something so dirty." As you know, the sexual organs are close to the anus. The pathway for urine and the pathway for sperm are the same pathway as well. (194-175, 1989.10.22)

Would you rather cut off one of your fingers, or your sexual organ? This is not something to laugh about. There should be a vertical standard. The four limbs are horizontal. This is why the vertical sexual organ is right in the middle. Isn't this part of a trinity? It represents God. Among the possessions that a man has, two parts of the sexual organ represents the dual characteristics of Adam and Eve, and the one that stands stiff represents God. (205-348, 1990.10.2)

You get married in order to meet God. These are amazing words. God does not exist separately from this. When you enter that place, God is living there. (203-255, 1990.6.26)

The sexual organ is more important than your head. There is no origin of true love in your head. There is no origin of true life in your head. There is no origin of true lineage in your head. Where is that origin? It is the sexual organ. That is for sure, isn't it? There is everything in the sexual organ. There is life, there is love, and there is lineage. It is the original palace of love. The root of life also lies here. It is the same with lineage. This is the most precious place, not only in the human body but also in the world and throughout human history. Without it, the multiplication of humankind would be impossible. (203-104, 1990.6.17)

For human beings, the antenna of love is their sexual organ. The man is convex and the woman is concave, so when the two are joined together, they become round and disappear. It is like a negative electrical charge and a positive electrical charge meeting and producing a clap of thunder, and then returning to zero. They return to their initial state. (187-54, 1989.1.6)

If the man had his own sexual organ, he absolutely would not want to give it away, and the woman would not want to give hers away either. Then, the man and the woman would have no way other than to stand confronting each other like that for a thousand or ten thousand years. However, since they have

made this exchange with each other centered on love, they share their sexual organs out of mutual need, and their giving and receiving will create circular motion. Value appears only when giving and receiving takes place through an exchange. (140-244, 1986.2.12)

In the fallen world love has turned into the most dangerous thing. It is because of the Fall that mismanaging love shatters the world and turns it upside down. People have not clearly realized why love has become false and dirty, but have still tried to keep and protect it because of their instinctive desire that true love should appear. (Blessed Family - 344)

Through the Fall, the sexual organs of men and women have moved in the opposite direction of the original palace and have opened the gate of death and the laws of death and destructive hell. The sexual organs have become a wicked agent that has ruined the heavenly way; hence, it has become something bad. This has been a secret hidden in history up to now. (197-175, 1990.1.13)

Where is the royal palace of love? Don't think it strange when I say these kinds of things. If we do not rightfully correct this thinking, the world will all become distorted. If history cannot be fitted together properly, wickedness will fill the world. I have experienced the agony of delving into the fundamental problem of humanity and the fundamental core of the universe, and the place I arrived at as a result of this endeavor was the sexual organ. When I arrived at the sexual organ and thought about it carefully, I found that the harmony of heaven and earth unfolds like a whirlwind from that place. This is an amazing fact. (197-24, 1990.1.7)

Why does the man have to be on top when making love? It is because only in this way is the vertical line established. Where does the seed come from? It comes from heaven. Through what does it come? It comes through love. This one thing proves everything. Also, the seed comes from the father, through the vertical, convex organ of love. When the convex fits into the concave organ, the whole of heaven and earth shakes. (187-52, 1989.1.6)

If you jump into love to experience it early because love makes you happy and being intoxicated in love makes you feel mysterious, this is a grave matter. The door of love opens only when it is time, and you must wait until it opens before entering. You should open it proudly after becoming an owner of love. (Blessed Family - 366)

Why do men and women like love? The human body consists of as many as 100 trillion cells, and the time when these cells move as a whole is when they make love. The time when all the cells of the human body can move as one is none other than the time when a man and a woman make love. (118-14, 1982.4.26)

Even in the fallen world, when a man and a woman fall in love, they say, "Ah,

there is an electric current here." The electricity that arises from moment to moment starts from the archangel – it is unicellular. The electricity of love that arises in the original world is the lightning of the love of the universe. It surpasses the former in strength several thousand times; moreover, the sound of the movement of the cells of each human organ is like the sound of thunder. The principle view of love is that the man and woman engaged in true love of the original world cannot meet God unless they concentrate with all their might towards the contact point where the lightning of love meets. (Blessed Family - 380)

Who will become God's partner in love? Will this be a man by himself? Will a woman alone be His partner? What kind of partner would God want? Would it be money as a partner, knowledge as a partner, or power as a partner? No. Because God wants a partner of love, He meets human beings by being present at the place where a husband and wife unite through their sexual organs. (279-250, 1996.9.15)

You think of the whole of your body as yours, but love is not yours. Love is completely in the possession of your partner. In the Old Testament, we find words such as "holy place" and "most holy place." The holy place symbolizes a person, and the most holy place symbolizes the house of love. Every person has a holy place and a most holy place. In other words, the holy place is a house where you can attend God. As for the most holy place, since only God can have dominion of privileged love over it, it is a place to make a relationship with God. There are surely not two high priests keeping the most holy place. There is only one. You should know that long ago, the one who had the key to Eve's most holy place was Adam, and the one who had the key to Adam's most holy place was Eve. (132-246, 1984.6.20)

You should know that the mouth of a man or woman is a holy place. The mouth is the formation stage in the love relationship. For women, their breasts are the growth stage and their sexual part is the completion stage: these are the holy places of our body. The key to these holy places cannot be held by anyone; no one can have it without inheriting it through the heavenly way. (123-195, 1983.1.1)

Religions should walk a path of tribulation; they should fight against the body. The most serious enemy is sex that is connected with the pulsating of the devil's blood. You should be liberated from lasciviousness, liberated from that type of love, in order to get away from the lineage woven with Satan's blood. In this way, if you want to be engrafted to a new type of life, you must build a relationship with God. Only then will love begin. God is the traditional center of love and also the ancestor of life, whereas, the most fearsome thing in the universe is the man and woman problem. (194-345, 1989.10.30)

When you are in love your blood heats up, doesn't it? It shakes, doesn't it? Do you know why it shakes? There is a mixing. East, west, south, and north are mixed; above and below are mixed and become one; everyting focuses in the direction where love sparks fire. You move into love freely with no restraint in order to completely invest yourself again and again. Completely investing yourself for the sake of the man and completely investing yourself for the sake of the woman, you forget all about your life and your material possessions. Because that is the path of love, and because it is the path that never ends, you will like it forever. (204-100, 1990.7.1)

When God gives people a gift, would He give them a bad gift? He gives the best of the best. Where is that? It is something that exists in a deep place. God would want to take it out from His deep, inner place and give it to the one He loves. This is why love is good. (194-175, 1989.10.22)

True freedom presupposes responsibility. If people were to insist on and practice only the freedom of individual love without fulfilling their responsibility, how much chaos and destruction would come? The perfection of human beings, who are to realize the lofty ideal of love, is possible when they take responsibility for love. People should be grateful to God who gave them the freedom of love. Their first responsibility is to become the master of true love, truly free and thanking God for the freedom of love and knowing how to cultivate and control oneself. This responsibility for a love relationship should not be taken merely because of law or social convention. Instead, a person should establish responsibility through one's own self-control and self-determination within the life-committing vertical relationship with God. (277-200, 1996.4.16)

When a sexual organ is used in the same way a blind person wanders aimlessly and without direction, it will, undoubtedly, lead you as its owner to Hell. By the same token, one will be led high up into Heaven when he or she uses the sexual organ according to the standard of God's absolute love. This is a clear conclusion. In the Garden of Eden Adam and Eve planted the seed of free sex in the shade, by falling through fornicating while in their youth. In the Last Days, therefore, which is the time of harvest, the phenomenon of an expanding trend of adolescent free sex will surely appear. (279-256, 1996.9.15)

5.2. Love is not something that is learned

Did you learn how to love at home? What kind of father would tell his child to learn how to love from him? Also, does a mother tell her child to learn how to love from her? Furthermore, did the parents learn from someone how to love their children? Did the bride and bridegroom learn from someone that they should love in a certain way? They did not learn it, but they know it well. This

is something truly mysterious. (23-20, 1969.5.11)

When parents love their children, do they receive instructions from someone on how to love them? You women gathered here, when you loved your babies after they were born, did you learn the way to love them? Is there a school somewhere that teaches love? Is there something like a bachelor's or doctoral degree in this field? There is no such thing, but everyone reaches a perfect score in this. The more lacking you feel yourself to be, the more complete your love is. Something that is complete does not need to be learned or have anything more done to it. The less that needs to be added to or subtracted from something, the more complete it is; hence, complete things do not change, and unchanging things last forever. (38-228, 1971.1.8)

Love is difficult to understand in words. No matter how many explanations are given for parents' love, people without parents cannot understand it. No matter how many explanations are given for conjugal love, people living alone cannot grasp it. After all, you feel the love of your partner when, as a subject partner or object partner, you can have a point of convergence in your actions that you can perceive – such as loving what your partner loves or connecting to his or her whole being. (58-290, 1972.6.25)

It is through this power of love that a newborn baby and young animal can find their mother's milk naturally, without their having received education or training. (Blessed Family - 1060)

Sincere love is a heavenly law, and thus it is realized naturally before it is taught. Parents' love does not become bigger or smaller according to whether the child's face is cute or ugly, nor is there a child who changes his love and respect for his parents according to whether they are good looking or bad looking. Are there children who say, "You have an ugly face, so you are not my mother"? There would be no parents who say, "Although I gave birth to you, you are not my child because you have an ugly face." If there were such parents or children, we would not be able to call them human beings. (Blessed Family - 1060)

True love is to be attained through experience and understood through feeling. True love is not something that can be mastered through words, writings, or general education. It can be completely attained only through daily living. In their process of growing up from infanthood, Adam and Eve were supposed to reach perfection by experiencing and feeling the heart of true children, the heart of true brother and sister, the heart of true husband and wife, and the heart of true parents through step-by-step daily living. They would have finally become ideal people who perfected the purpose of creation only when they deeply learned through experience God's true love as a whole. (277-196, 1996.4.16)

Section 6. Filial Love

6.1. Children result from a concentration of parental love

Children stand before loving parents as representatives of the world. (Blessed Families and Ideal Kingdom - 934)

Why do they call childless people lonely? Our children are there to enable us to deeply experience the circumstances of the heart of God, the subject who created the entire universe through love. Our children are born through us, on the basis of our own motivation, but by having and loving these children we come to realize, "Ah, this is how God loved people." (136-201, 1985.12.29)

The reason why parents sacrifice themselves for their children is that they want to return to God through their children. They come to deeply experience parental love while loving their children; this leads them to feel and be aware of God's love, which is a manifestation of something original. Since those who cannot have children can neither feel parental love nor come to understand God's parental love, their love is always incomplete. (Blessed Family - 1002)

What kind of children can reside in the Kingdom of Heaven? They are those that pay off the debt of parental love on their own. When their parents become old and senile, the sons and daughters should endure the difficulties of their care with the same heart their parents had toward them when they were little, cleaning up their urine and bowel movements. Only then, will they be children of filial piety. (35-241, 1970.10.19)

Even when a child is spanked or scolded by parents having love, the child is still happy. (Blessed Family - 1027)

Parents have given their very lives for the sake of their children. Children should likewise sacrifice their lives for the sake of their parents. Since life comes from love, sacrificing one's life in front of that essential love is a logical conclusion. I say that this is not a contradiction. (Blessed Family - 1009)

When children strive not to be indebted to their parents, the parents feel their worth. (Blessed Family - 1009)

When parents use a stick with loving hands, and cry loudly after spanking their child, can the child fight back and curse them? True love carries dual values in harmony. (Blessed Family - 1027)

A great mother embraces her children while teaching them the principle of becoming a person of goodness who can move the world: being able to endure whatever difficulties are encountered. This type of mother has penetrated the heavenly principle. That goodness does not perish. (13-238, 1964.3.24)

You give birth to a child, give your milk and think he/she is cute, but because of whom do you adore your child? You

should adore your child on behalf of heaven and earth, on account of this nation, this world, and God. The power of heavenly fortune in accordance with God's love is moving beyond the world to embrace heaven and earth. The mother who embraces and breastfeeds her sons and daughters should do so with the eager heart that she is embracing God's beloved sons and daughters on behalf of heaven and earth. (8-105, 1959.11.22)

Parental love is the basis of a child's pride and happiness. Children receive life from their parents who have created harmonious oneness in true love, and they want to be raised in such love. The most precious responsibility toward children is not just to raise them externally but also to provide the life elements of true love that will make their spirituality complete. (277-200, 1996.4.16)

No matter how much a father loves his child, his love cannot match the mother's love. (Blessed Family - 905)

The mother has devoted herself more than anyone else, and has suffered more than anyone else; hence, we can say that she is more loving than anyone else. In this sense, women have an elevated and precious position in the arena of emotions. No matter how much a father loves his baby, he does not know that love to the degree the mother does. For this reason, if anyone goes to heaven, women will go to the heavenly kingdom of heart. From this standpoint, it is not bad to be born as a woman. You will come to see that God is fair. (85-166, 1976.3.3)

6.2. The way of true children is filial piety

When you have come to know your parents, what do you have to do for them? You should carry out acts of filial piety and become a child of filial piety. Also, going beyond your parents, you should be a patriot in your nation, because your parents have had authority within the nation and the world. Before becoming a patriot, you should be a child of filial piety, and before becoming a child of filial piety, you should be a member of a family who can be proud of true brothers and sisters. "Family member" is a title that brings the right to sing the praises of your brothers and sisters. (30-220, 1970.3.23)

The reason a child of filial piety is precious is that he respects and serves his parents with unchanging love, whether in childhood, as an adult, or in old age. We call such a person a child of filial piety. (168-161, 1987.9.20)

What do you have to do to be a child of filial piety? You must always align yourself with the direction of your parents' heart. The one who walks the path of filial piety does not do things separately from his parents. When his parents go east, he should also go east, and when they go west, he should also go west. There should be no question about it. Even if you are told to go a certain way and then to turn back ten times, you

should again turn back and follow your parents. (62-32, 1972.9.10)

In your family you are asked to offer your filial duty, and this requires that you become a fellow traveler on the path of love your parents walk, centering on your parents. The parents' path of true love follows along with the heavenly principles. It is not just the parents standing by themselves, but there are invisible, vertical heavenly principles that are connected to them and work through them. Thus, exhorting you to be one with your parents is to ask you to go the way which connects the realms of heart of the vertical and horizontal history. This is the reason behind your fulfilling your duty of filial piety toward your parents. (136-203, 1985.12.29)

In the family, fulfilling one's filial duty toward one's parents is the responsibility of the sons and daughters. Why do you have to fulfill your filial duty? The path of filial piety is connected to the path of the patriot, like the sections in a bamboo shoot. What should patriots who faithfully serve their country do? They should walk the path of saints for the world. There has to be one straight line. From this viewpoint, if you have been unable to fulfill your filial duty yet have become a patriot in your country, your parents will not be able to say, "Ah, you have not fulfilled your filial duty toward me." They will say, "You have done so well." Even if you have not accomplished your filial duty and have abandoned your parents and left home, if you become a patriot in your nation, your mother and father – even though they may have died and gone to the spirit world – will praise you, saying, "You have done extremely well". (100-155, 1978.10.9)

What is a child of filial piety? It is the person, who in order to take responsibility for the parents' sorrow, seeks out the difficult places and fulfills his responsibility, thereby bringing joy to his parents. If the parents have done ten loads of work and the child has made effort to do fifteen loads, the parents will feel joy that corresponds to five loads. The one who makes effort serving the parents and thinking how to fulfill such a supplementary amount is a child of filial piety. (24-261, 1969.8.24)

What kind of parents are genuine parents? They are the parents who know no limits because they love their children eternally. Then, what kind of children are genuine children? Genuine children are the ones who reciprocate the love of their parents eternally with a loving heart overflowing with love. Such is the way of the genuine child of filial piety. (127-16, 1983.5.1)

What do you think God wants from His children? Is it for them to make a lot of money and become millionaires? Is it to be the president, holding the most power in the country? What God wanted from His son and daughter, Adam and Eve, was for them to grow up to be children of filial piety, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters. (299-117, 1999.2.7)

Have you ever thought to become a child of filial piety in the family, to become a patriot in the nation, to become a saint in the world, or to become a divine son or daughter before heaven and earth in accordance with God's own thinking? From the viewpoint of history, all the saints have been teaching about becoming children of filial piety, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters. (287-23, 1997.8.10)

When children have grown up in the tradition of love, do you think they could be indifferent if their parents wanted a divorce? Absolutely not. The children would all insist, "I am your child. I am the one in whom you are combined. For me, you have to make whatever negotiation is necessary, and you have to be great parents for me. I need you." We must make young people and parents awaken to the fact, that because of their children, parents have no right to divorce. (Blessed Family - 1009)

Section 7. Love Between Siblings

7.1. Brotherly love is a model of love for all the people of the world.

Why did God give us our brothers and sisters? The reason we need brothers and sisters is that a brother can look at his younger sister or elder sister and realize, "Oh, that's how our mother grew up!" He sees through them the process of his mother growing up. Also, the sister observes carefully how her elder or younger brother grows up and understands how her father grew up and lived. You should know that this is the love among siblings; you become one by growing up like this. So should you love your brothers and sisters or not? (184-60, 1988.11.13)

What if parents have only one son and one daughter? The son needs an elder sister and an elder brother, doesn't he? Also the daughter needs an elder brother and elder sister. Furthermore, they need a younger brother and younger sister. There needs to be an elder brother, an elder sister, a younger brother, and a younger sister. It is unfortunate if you do not have them. The family that has a younger sister, younger brother, elder sister and elder brother – all of these – and has achieved complete unity will receive God's protection. This family becomes the origin of a clan, a people, and a nation. The elder brother and elder sister mean east and west, and younger brother and younger sister mean north and south; when this pattern is completed there will be three dimensions. This is the principle of love. When such a principle of love takes root, the origin of peace will be established. (20-40, 1968.3.11)

When an elder brother loves his younger sister, and the younger sister loves her elder brother, they cannot just love each other; they must involve their parents in that love and cherish their childhood experiences of growing up in the bosom of their parents. They should

be a brother and sister who are connected on the basis of parent and child oneness. Only then will they ascend as they grow up. They should grow up like this all the way through elementary and middle school. (236-11, 1992.11.2)

However far you go in your travels around the world, nothing replaces the love of brothers and sisters in a family, who share the same blood from their birth. When you go out to society, is there anyone who is closer to you than your brother or sister? Although some people may be close, they will eventually drift away from you. (228-199, 1992.4.3)

Why do you need brothers and sisters? Brothers and sisters are those who are connected through the vertical and horizontal plane. If we say Adam and Eve are horizontal, then God and Adam and Eve are vertical; their intersection constitutes a plane. This is why both a horizontal setting and the front and back are needed. Through their unity a sphere is formed. When the love of brothers and sisters expands to a love for all the people of the world, sibling love transcends family. (236-11, 1992.11.2)

Only when we embrace the world and love all people with sibling love, will we join everything together in an ideal sphere of love; when that occurs, no mishap will severely shock us. Only then will all the substance of God's thought finally bear fruit. God's ideal of children unites and bears fruit there: the fruit of children's love, the fruit of siblings' love, the fruit of the love of husband and wife, and the fruit of parents' love. When the plan that the incorporeal God had at the time of creation is made substantial, upper and lower, front and rear, and left and right will be merged with Him. (236-146, 1992.11.4)

Through brothers and sisters a nation arises and all humankind arises. The relationship of brothers and sisters signifies front and back, a flat surface, but when flesh is added a sphere is formed. So it is brothers and sisters and the people of the nation who form the sphere. Brothers and sisters expand to become a people. The love of siblings is connected with the love for the world. A family where many brothers and sisters are growing up is like a model to embrace all people of the world and to create an ideal Kingdom of Heaven, the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven. Hence, brothers and sisters expand in number. (235-268, 1992.10.1)

When there are many siblings, two may have to share a bowl at mealtimes. They do not fight because there is only one bowl of rice. Even if there are many siblings and they have to live in hardship, if they have such a heart of love that says, "Although I may starve, I will give this to my elder sister" or "I have to give this to my younger brother or sister," then everything will work out very well. (112-195, 1981.4.12)

Section 8. Love of the Nation, Love of the World, and Love of Humankind

8.1. The path of children of filial piety, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters

Once you become one with God, circular motion manifests in all kinds of forms and figures. That is why the older sibling must love the younger, following the example of their parents loving them. Love will blossom within a family that is united in this way. That love then becomes the love within a society, and then the love within a nation. In this way, it later becomes the love of the whole world. (28-168, 1970.1.11)

People who live for the sake of the common purpose of humankind will unite centering on their love for humankind. Likewise, if the people have a love for their homeland, they will unite based on patriotic ideas. As their patriotic feeling grows stronger, the citizens will unite through their patriotism to establish a nation. If you know that you are not in a position to work on the patriotic movement by yourself, you must build relationships horizontally and gather people of like mind together. (29-131, 1970.2.26)

The base where genuine love can settle down is the family; therefore, the original family that secures the love of the universe will experience an aspect of the universe's protection and expand the domain of love in the universe. We must go beyond the family and walk the patriotic path of loving the nation. Furthermore, we must go beyond race and nation toward the path of loving the world. We call those who love their family children of filial piety and virtuous wives, and those who love their nation patriots. What do we call those who love the world? We call them saints. (Blessed Family - 924)

What must you do to become a global figure? You cannot become one merely on the basis of human morality or just by making people your central concern. If your central concern relates to human beings, you will not be able to go beyond the national level. It is that which is of heaven that will enable you to step beyond the national level. Without a philosophy that embraces heaven and earth, you cannot transcend the nation. (38-260, 1971.1.8)

If you look at the people who are numbered in the ranks of the saints, have they revered God or not? Is there anyone who has become a saint without God? (39-316, 1971.1.16)

Thus, the saints have spoken about God, not just about humankind. Moreover, the saints have taught not only the way of morality but also the way of heavenly law. (33-290, 1970.8.21)

It is children of filial piety who serve and love the parents in a family; those who serve and love the nation are patriots; and those who love the world are

saints. Then, what is it that I teach? It is to be a divine son or daughter who loves God, the world, and the universe. Which will you be? Will you be a divine son or daughter, or a dutiful son or daughter? To be a divine son or daughter requires having a loving heart like God's heart. (129-96, 1983.10.1)

Love is the essence that is moving reality and cannot be omitted from daily life or from history. Love provides the internal power that moves everything from a parent's body to our social institutions. This is why, when you are educated, you are taught to love your country. Brotherly love, parental love, conjugal love, and worldwide philanthropy – all these things contain love. What does this mean? It means that we cannot connect to history without including the love that is in the realm of people's daily lives and the course of history. (187-45, 1989.1.6)

What do you have to become? You must become a patriot. What is a patriot? Does being a patriot mean devoting one's effort for the nation's ruler? No. You should know that those who know how to serve the people as they would serve the nation's ruler are patriots. What is a child of filial piety? They are not those who make devoted efforts for their parents. You should know that those who make devoted efforts for their brothers and sisters as they would serve their parents are children of filial piety. What is a saint? They are the people who have sacrificed themselves until now and died for the sake of all humankind. What is a divine son or daughter? Those who reach out to the world centering on God, who serve humankind as they would serve God are divine sons and daughters. The historical saints are those who have died for the sake of the people of the world. And who are the divine sons and daughters of God? They are loyal to God, but as they live for God they also live for the sake of all people. (133-241, 1984.7.19)

After becoming a child of filial piety, a patriot, and a saint, what is next? Being a saint does not make you a divine son or daughter; it doesn't make you God's child. You must become a divine son or daughter. No matter how much you have loved the nation's ruler and its people, you have to know the laws of the heavenly royal palace to be a divine son and daughter. You have to know the method of being in rhythm with the governance of the palace law. (147-281, 1986.10.1)

Originally, the child of filial piety is a person whose heart goes straight to his parents without changing, and the patriot is a person whose heart goes straight to the king. Likewise, the saint is a person whose heart goes straight to God without changing. In other words, you can be a child of filial piety, patriot, and saint only when your heart goes straight without changing even in a situation where you face death. (97-274, 1978.3.26)

The one who serves and loves the parents in the family is a child of filial piety, the one who serves and loves the country

is a patriot, and the one who serves and loves the world is a saint. You should be divine sons and daughters who love the world and universe. Then, you must have as much love as God. (129-96, 1983.10.1)

A child of filial piety lives on even when his household perishes. This is why there are epitaphs of children of filial piety, epitaphs of patriots, and epitaphs of saints. Divine sons and daughters are different from saints. Divine sons and daughters are people who know how to observe not only national laws in the human world but also the laws of the heavenly royal palace. Thus, that which can connect straight to the path of children of filial piety, the path of patriots, and the path of saints is the path of divine sons and daughters. This path is substantial and has a big circumference, but the flow of its core is vertical. (175-213, 1988.4.17)

How do people live? When we condense the essence of our life course, we will find the fundamental core life paths walked by children of filial piety, by patriots, by saints, and by divine sons and daughters. Would they be paths driven by the heart of wanting to be together and live together regardless of the upper and the lower, transcending the front and back, left and right, and day and night, and going beyond one's own life? This is the conclusion that emerges. (148-258, 1986.10.1)

No matter how outstanding a person may be, he is of no use if he has no love. Also, happiness becomes connected based on love. The medium that connects everything, brothers and sisters, friends, countrymen, all humankind, and heaven and earth, is love. Love is like yeast. (175-165, 1988.4.16)

What kind of being is God, who has created the universe and established its law? Throughout the whole universe, He is the Being who stands in the representative position caring for others more than anyone else. This is God. Therefore, if you want to meet God, you have to live for the sake of others. God is the king of knowledge, but He will not tell you to come to Him with knowledge. Although He is the king of capability, He will not tell you to come to Him with capability. Although God is the master and king of power, money, and material, He will not tell you to come to Him with these things. He would say that anyone can come to Him if they live for the sake of others. (133-16, 1984.7.1)

God exists in front of human beings for their sake. This is why we want to follow God forever. If you want to maintain your own position of existence within natural law and in front of the universe's realm of existence, you must exist for the sake of others as does the universe. In serving others, you connect to the East and West and to the past and the present. Because God has the same love in the past and at present, and in the East and in the West, He can overcome the East and the West and overcome the past, present, and even the future. God

can overcome the past, present, and future, and can, therefore, always make progress. He can overcome the East and the West, and therefore unify them. This is possible only in love. (187-89, 1989.1.6)

Section 9. Love of the Natural World

9.1. God's will in creating the world of all things

Why did God create all things? It was in order to have an object partner and a realm of object partners to love; they could eat and live, and then return to God's original world and live in the eternal original kingdom of love. You need to know this. (142-75, 1986.3.1)

Today Christians think that since God is all-knowing and all-powerful, the world came into being just with a few simple words, "Let there be 'such and such' in heaven and on earth." But it did not happen that way. God invested everything: all the energy He had. He created as a gift for His beloved sons and daughters and His beloved family of the future by investing all the power of love He had. Thus, we should look at all things of creation with this kind of understanding. (112-306, 1981.4.25)

When God created the world, there was joy. After creating it He said that it was good. It means there was joy. What is joy? It is something you feel when you have achieved a certain purpose. Since all things God created contain His consciousness of purpose, He felt joy with them. Then, what kind of world is the world of restoration? In a nutshell, it is a world populated by people who have a three-dimensional connection of heart through which they can sing and praise God even when looking at any individual masterpiece of the creation. This is where God sees the value of personality. The old story about Saint Francis preaching to animals and birds is not a lie. It is a dream-like story, but is in fact true. (9-166, 1960.5.8)

Everything in the created world is made by God as a textbook so that His beloved sons and daughters can find and nurture the ideal of love. The created world therefore has correlative structures. Minerals function through the relationship of subject partner and object partner, protons and electrons interact within the atom in subject/object relationship. Without interacting, they cannot exist. Without being in motion they cannot continuously exist. With human beings at the center, the universe was created to relate to that central point. (137-59, 1985.12.18)

The universe is a mysterious world. God did not create the universe as something to fool around with or play with. With the most devoted effort He created it for the sake of His beloved people, and indeed how beautiful it is! So when we look at this universe, we should have an extremely grateful heart, saying that the Father has created it for us. If you walk around the gardens, behold the trees,

plants, flowers, and birds, watch the streams flow, and feel the winds blow with this kind of heart, you cannot but be overwhelmed with wonder. (87-319, 1976.6.27)

The perfection of the universe does not just involve the external world rejoicing but also requires that my innermost self also rejoice. In rejoicing, both my mind and body must be joyful, and all my cells must be delighted. The cells in my eyes and those in the bottom of my feet are different, aren't they? They are different, but this has to be a world where these cells can all rejoice. The cells in my hand and all cells, including the entire mind and body without having any part left out, can rejoice. While doing so, they should not stay separated but become connected in the resonant joy of love based on duality of purpose. Only then will the universe reach perfection. (166-210, 1987.6.7)

Connections start from extremely small things. You are also a living body consisting of as many as 400 trillion cells connected together. In the world of the ideal of creation centered on God, that is, among all existence in the great universe, there is none that came into being from outside God's heart. A poet who can feel these kinds of things would be a great poet. If there were a poet who can feel and express a cosmic heart when seeing a leaf shake, he would become a poet for the universe. We have not seen all the phenomena of heaven and earth unfolding around us, but even without our knowing there are things that exist together with God's love. When you enter a spiritual state, you can see that even a small grain of sand contains the principles of the universe, and even one atom contains the bottomless and inexhaustible harmony of the universe. We cannot deny that all existence is the result of some complex force, although we are unable to understand it clearly. Atoms exist below molecules and elementary particles exist below atoms; these forms do not exist unconsciously but with a certain consciousness and purpose. Therefore, we should clearly and fully understand the fact that all things in existence have appeared through the loving hands of God and exist in a necessary relationship of heart with God. (9-166, 1960.5.8)

What kind of people are the enlightened masters? They are those with a heart so deep that they recognize even the value of one stem of grass as equal to their own and can cry out "God!" These would be enlightened masters of the highest level. Those who can sing its value this way would be the artists of the highest caliber. If there were a people with hearts that could allow them to discover the charms of God's love and heart in every variety of creation, in all their forms and colors, and befriend them and find enjoyment together, they would be the people who could represent the entire universe. If there are people whose cells move one by one with this type of feeling, they are the lords of creation. Conversely, if there is a person who knows about nothing but eating, can he become a lord of creation? (9-166, 1960.5.8)

9.2. Nature is a textbook teaching the ideal of love

People observe and learn from nature as they grow up. They come to understand, "This is what the insect world is like!" When you listen carefully on an autumn night when the moon is shining and stars are twinkling, the sounds of the insects are like an orchestra. Why do they make such a sound? They are singing of their ideal as they search for their partners. They are whispering love. Birds and all other animals also follow this common denominator of love when they make their sad and happy sounds. They are low on the scale and far away from the axis, and yet they are circling around the axis in parallel. It is the same for all existing beings. (137-59, 1985.12.18)

There are three kinds of birds' songs. First, there is a song expressing hunger; second, a song sung in expressing love for a mate; and third, a song sung in time of danger. These are all different. We ordinary people do not know this, but they know in their own world. When they call out of hunger, all of the other birds already know. But around what does their daily life revolve? Hunger is taken care of simply by eating, and they are not facing danger every day, either. Most of their singing goes back and forth in the give and take relationship with their partner. (137-211, 1986.1.3)

Human beings were created as a subject partner and object partner; that is, as a pair. The world of all things, too, which exists for the sake of humankind, creates harmony under the principle of love and realizes its life and ideal through the love of humankind. For humankind, and especially for the maturing Adam and Eve, the world of all things was a textbook of love and a museum that infinitely displays the essence of love. (135-10, 1985.8.20)

All birds and animals exist in pairs. They harmonize with each other in love. Flowers and butterflies relate as two opposite poles, yet harmonize with each other. This is the harmonious relationship of heaven and earth. The opposite poles of the universe create harmony through love. It's the same with migratory birds. Birds in the south fly to the north, and birds in the north fly to the south, loving each other back and forth across the regions. In so doing, they revolve eternally around love. People learn about love through the textbooks in the museum God created. When people and God love each other in joy, all the things in heaven and earth follow the rhythm and harmonize around them. If God likes this, and loves this, the angelic world will also like it. The entire created world will like it too, applauding and offering praise. Songbirds will sing praises, and beautiful flowers will offer praises through their fragrances. This created world exists in order to expand the fragrant atmosphere in which the central personages of the highest love can enjoy themselves. Even the ugly-looking toads croak "wook, wook, wook," when they make love. How charming! They

kick with their legs and move them up and down while making love. What a delightful scene! This is the highest art. (142-273, 1986.3.13)

When spring comes and birds sing, as soon as you hear the song you should think of your wife, your children, your country, the world, and even God. Then, everything is complete. Birds only think of birds themselves, but people have a sense of being in relationships. Having that sense of relationship as a mediator between the animal world, plant world, and the spirit world is an exclusive privilege of human beings. We can link everything together. Only human beings have this special authority. (131-125, 1984.4.22)

As they matured, Adam and Eve would have come to understand their purpose, saying, "Ah, that's how to make love." God laid out the world of all things as a textbook for bringing the ideal of human love to maturity. As they continued to learn, as they grew, Adam and Eve would come to have different feelings toward each other, saying, "Aha, we were like a brother and sister in the past, but now it seems..." They will learn, saying, "Aha, that's the way it is." They will go along a straight line and then collide, saying, "You and I must meet even at the risk of death. We cannot go anywhere else." (137-59, 1985.12.18)

Love is like a nerve. Just as pulling one strand of hair pulls the entire body, if we pull on love, the universe itself is pulled along. As we create motion in love, the entire universe comes into harmony. So when there is love, we dance. How did dancing come about? It was because of love. Songs also came about because of love, and so did laughter. If love were taken away, everything would become hard and stiff. (89-90, 1976.10.4)

People like butterflies rather than bees. It is because butterflies dance as they fly. Everything that flies does so in rhythm with a beat and with a melody. Fast-flying creatures fly in time with a beat; so do slow-flying ones. There are various styles of flight, but, anyway, everything flies according to a certain rhythm. Also, the way deer run and rabbits play in the mountains is musical. The way they hop around has a certain rhythm, and the way they eat also has a musical quality. It is the same with people; there is a certain rhythm when we eat. These all express something musically. If we think in this way – that someone made this universe for me to last for eternity and put it in place for me – we should feel grateful to Him. We should not think as an onlooker, as if this were something to do with someone in a neighboring village. There are high mountains and low mountains. Do you like there being high mountains with low-lying land, or do you like only plain and flat land? Having high and low is better. Why is this so? It is because these shapes assume a certain form that looks as if it would dance. It is good when these are in forms of all kinds and colors, going up and going down, forming all kinds of curves. Then, this creation is

like a dance. In nature, there are splendid dances and beautiful music; there is wonderful artwork. So many such things exist in nature. (87-321, 1976.6.27)

Adam and Eve, born as the first children of God, were to grow from childhood to maturity in the realm of God's protection. Since their intellect was to develop in this process, they would have come to realize why God created the world, and God would have educated them through the created world. The created world, with everything being in motion, was a textbook to teach Adam and Eve – who were to be our first, original ancestors – everything about how to live. You should know that since Adam and Eve were not perfect, the world was given as a model and a museum showing them how to lead an ideal life. (137-126, 1986.1.1)

When you open your eyes in the morning and look at nature, it stimulates your original nature and causes feelings of a new ideal to sprout forth. As for the human world, on the other hand, you must know well that the more you see it, the more despair and sorrow it arouses in your heart. If the world were populated by original people who had not fallen, the value of human beings would not be such as to stir sorrow in the heart of the beholder. Human beings were not created merely to have the value of a blade of grass, a flower or a tree trunk. People were supposed to be noble beings that could not be exchanged for anything in the created world. They were supposed to step forward representing Heaven with incomparable value. (9-97, 1960.4.24)

You should have such a mind that, when observing nature imbued with God's love, you say, "Could the precious items possessed by the kings of this world, or by people of great fame, compare with this? Could any antique artifact compare with this? Could a glamorous dress worn by a famous lady compare with this?" Without that heart, we are committing a sin before the natural world even without knowing it. If there is someone who looks at a living being, saying, "What items produced by human hands could compare with this? No matter how great someone may be, could he ever be greater than God?" and values most highly all things created through God investing His heart, he must surely be a child of God. Such a person does not need to pray; he lives with God and is a person driven by God. (9-174, 1960.5.8)

Things of nature, no matter how insignificant, cannot be compared with anything else. No painting drawn by some famous painter can compare with even a worthless tree standing by the side of the road. No matter how a famous painter may have painted flowers and created a great masterpiece, the flowers on the canvas do not bloom no matter how hard you look at them, nor is there any fragrance; nor can they produce seeds. Yet the insignificant tree standing by the roadside blossoms with flowers, bears fruit, and produces seeds.

And if the seeds are planted, trees better than the mother tree can spring up in abundance. Even the paintings of a famous painter cannot compare with this. (9-176, 1960.5.8)

People will enjoy and take delight in anything that belongs to someone they love. Nevertheless, they do not know how to take delight in all things created by God, whom they should love the most. Can such people become God's sons and daughters? As you have the responsibility to release the sorrow of the creation that is sighing and lamenting, even with one tree or stem of grass you should deeply experience the heart and care God invested into their creation six thousand biblical years ago. You should have such a heart that you are able to shed tears even at the sight of one stem of grass growing along the road. You should be able to weep while holding onto one tree, crying, "How lonely you must be to have lost your master!" I myself have shed many tears. I have wept profusely while clutching a rock; I have wept to see the wind blow. Now, because you have heard my words, you will understand. (9-175, 1960.5.8)

I have come this way while saying, "The precious things of creation, which God made and which have forged an eternal connection with God, are not cherished as much as national treasures or the valuables in some palaces today. I will understand that sorrow; I alone must understand." If you have a heart that says, "Though all those living on this earth may be ignorant of it, I will understand," then you will be a new people that can govern humankind in the future. This is not a concept but a fact. Who values all things of creation more than the family treasure handed down over the generations? Diamonds are said to be the most valuable, precious stones in the world and people cling to them and refuse to let them go. Who values creation more than diamonds? Where are such people? On seeing those who understand in their hearts what He has created, and who shed tears when they hold the things of creation, God will say "My dear children!" (9-176, 1960.5.8)

What is nature? It is an exhibit that God has given us as a gift, something He prepared for the birth of His beloved sons and daughters. Even the song of a bird and a stem of grass growing are decorations prepared to bring beauty into the lives of His beloved sons and daughters. Even the rocks rolling on the road were created as decorations for a nation, as God knew that His sons and daughters would be the owners who would rule over that nation. It is the same with flowing water. God did not want things to be dry and monotonous, so He created so as to establish a "prince" of dreams and of hope who could look at this infinitely colorful and harmonious garden – this world of love – and inherit it. Hence, we learn from all things of creation. When the male and female birds sing, the lady who owns them should learn from them. You should be able to sing praises for the beauty of the original world of creation,

where everything devotes its entire life living for the sake of the other. Then, even young birds will want to come and live in your home and have their young there. Do you understand what I am saying? (175-186, 1988.4.16)

No matter how precious a work of art in a museum may be, can it have more value than a living work of art? I am asking who has loved this earth, the museum of all things and the work of God, more than God has. I am asking if anyone has loved it more than the museums in his own country. Can you compare a gold crown from the Shilla Dynasty in a museum with a dandelion lying on the road, which has been made directly by God? If there is a king, who understands God's heart and who takes care of the creation with such a heart that says to the creation "I fell sorry and shameful because I cannot love you from the position of an unfallen king whom God can love and had loved," the tufts of grass would want to follow that king and be with him eternally. This is how people should live. (175-186, 1988.4.16)

You should know how to love nature and love people. You should know that those who cannot love people or love nature cannot love God. Because all things of creation are symbols of God and because people are beings of His substance, those who know how to love all things of creation and people will come to love God. (70-181, 1974.2.9)

You should always love nature. You should love nature and love people. You should love people of all five colors of the human race. Would God say, "Oh, I only like the white people"? Then everyone would have to wear only white clothes. All white people would have to wear only white clothes, and throw away all their colored clothes. Why would you wear black clothes or colored clothes? That would be a contradiction. (133-30, 1984.7.1)

We should feel that all creatures of God are objects of our love. We should be the people who can love even all the minute forms of life and be the people who can receive love from them. The same is true for our fellow human beings, as well as everything visible and invisible in heaven. When a bird calls "chirp, chirp, chirp" in the morning, instead of grumbling, "You pesky sparrow, why are you chirping when I am trying to sleep late?!" say, "Oh, thank you. You came to wake me up. Ha ha! You are telling me that an important guest is coming to see me." The outlook is different. That is a great thing. (112-219, 1981.4.12)

CHAPTER THREE

Love and Marriage

Section 1. True Marriage Engenders Love of Universal Unity

Why do we marry? We marry in order to resemble God. God exists as a unified being encompassing the dual characteristics of masculinity and femininity. Man and woman represent the divided characteristics of God. They must become one and become like a seed, thereby returning to God's original position. (138-97, 1986.1.19)

We should sing about the supreme sacredness of marriage. Married life is the path along which a man and a woman can love each other. Whom do they come to resemble through their unity? They resemble God Himself. A man and a woman must become one in order to resemble God, who created them in His image. Only then will God dwell with them. (70-76, 1974.2.8)

The man symbolizes heaven and the woman symbolizes the earth. The two must unite, creating harmony on the horizontal plane. (Blessed Family - 868)

The union of a man and a woman signifies a union of heaven and earth. (Blessed Family - 868)

The universe attains oneness through the embrace of a man and a woman in mutual adoration. This is the original image formed within God's ideal. (God's Will and the World - 27)

Why do we marry? We marry in order to learn to love the world and to gain the qualification to love all people. (37-108, 1970.12.22)

That which is called marriage refers to an appearance of love and at the same time an endowment of the right of creation and the right of dominion. (76-46, 1975.1.26)

The purpose of marriage is to join together the man's and woman's worlds of heart and to perfect the love of each of them. So to be married is to declare that you will show proof of this love. If you have perfected your love and your heart through marriage, we can say that you have realized the ideal of the family. If you have accomplished this by the time of your death, you are sure to go to the Kingdom of Heaven. (97-276, 1978.3.26)

What is marriage? Why is marriage important? It is because marriage is a path for finding love. It is a path to love and a path to creating life. It is a path for

the life of a man and a woman to become one. In marriage, the lineage of the man and the woman becomes mixed. History manifests through marriage; a nation emerges and the ideal world begins. (279-251, 1996.9.15)

For whom do you marry? It is for the sake and common benefit of humankind. Thus, marriage represents the world. The man is a man representing the world, and the woman is also a woman representing the world. Then where must you start? You should start from a position of representing the world. The meaning of marriage is to serve the public will of all humankind. (75-278, 1975.1.12)

You should have the attitude that you will raise her like your younger sister, love her like your wife, and serve her like your mother. In loving her, you should start by loving her as a younger sister, and only then love her as your wife; in all, you should love her like your younger sister, elder sister, bride, and mother. Only then can we restore God's unfulfilled love, lost through the Fall. (31-88, 1970.4.20)

What do we have to love in order to love our nation? First, a man should love a woman by regarding her as a representative of all the women of this nation. Likewise, the woman, rather than thinking of the man as just one among many, should think of him as a representative of all the men in the entire world. When a man and a woman regard each other as representatives in this way and then unite and form a family, this family will be a family of the heavenly kingdom. (26-153, 1969.10.25)

True happiness for a woman is found when she meets her partner of love. (Blessed Family - 340)

Love, after all, cannot be felt when one is alone. The same is true for happiness. (145-267, 1986.5.15)

You feel true happiness only when you can feel the heart of your partner and love your partner in an equal and reciprocal relationship. (Blessed Family - 342)

Let's say that you were attracted to a man because he was handsome. Then suppose he was crippled in an accident a week after you married, and that led you to seek a divorce. This would not be true love but false love. (Blessed Family - 351)

Genuine love is absolute, unchanging, and eternal. (Blessed Family - 351)

You should have a creed that you will get married for the sake of your partner and not for your own sake. It is wrong to think that you will get a successful or beautiful person for marriage. If you have understood the principle that a human being should live for the sake of others, then you should consider that marriage also is for the sake of your partner. According to the original view of marriage, you should determine that no matter how ugly your wife may be you will love her more than a beautiful woman. (Blessed Family - 361)

Given that he was born as a human being, if a man cannot embrace the notion that he will love his wife as he loves God and humankind itself and more than anyone else in this world, then he will not be able to return to the heavenly kingdom. As a man, if he does not know how to love a woman, he cannot love God and humankind. (97-319, 1978.4.1)

I would say that marriage is a ceremony to open and enter the gate of the palace of happiness. It is for this reason that marriage is a great event of human affairs. Love is the greatest thing in human affairs, for it transcends time and space, and marriage is a ceremony to reveal and confirm such love. (Blessed Family - 356)

In getting married, you should not think that you will be a husband to a beauty. Rather, you should think that you will be someone who can wed an ugly woman and still live better than anyone else. This way, you should be a husband who can be revered by any beautiful woman in the world. If you have this kind of viewpoint, you should have no trouble relating to any kind of woman. (26-332, 1969.10.3)

What kind of husband or wife do you want to meet and be married to? You should make it a principle, before you embark on your married life, that you will love even the most insignificant man as a devoted wife. You should know this. The higher the power of your love, the freer you can operate on the stage of the infinite universe. (Blessed Family - 636)

For humankind, love is an eternal thing – it is one, not two. When a man and a woman become joined through love, they are to grow old together for a hundred years on earth and live together eternally after death. Although the bodies are two, they join as one and rotate, thereby becoming one body. When the two bodies become one, God comes to rotate together with them, thus forming a four position foundation of love. This is love's ideal setting. False love cannot invade it, and only true love comes to dwell in it. (Blessed Family - 344)

The true ideal is realized when, after achieving perfect maturity as an individual and after perfecting your partner, you receive recognition because of your love centered on God. (19-314, 1968.3.17)

The bride and bridegroom should become one body through God's original love, not through money, political power, or fame. (Blessed Family - 880)

If a beautiful man and a beautiful woman, each created as God's greatest work of art, were to make love centering on God, this would be a sublime expression of the highest, most transcendental love, rather than worldly love. This love is the most beautiful and representative love, the kind of love that will shine for all of eternity. (26-153, 1969.10.25)

To receive a taste of true love, you must have a realm of the ideal, and for this a man needs a woman and a woman absolutely needs a man. You should

know that for the sake of true love, an absolute man and woman join together through the efforts of their united heart. When an absolute man and woman have been joined as one, God will come and dwell in their midst. (Blessed Family - 340)

International marriage is the quickest way for the different races of the world to be one. There is no other way. A man and a woman chosen from two utterly different cultural realms and environments must become one through God's love. This is complete harmony and unification. In order to accomplish such a great task, we must draw from the immense power of love, for only the highest love can transcend national boundaries, racial boundaries, cultural boundaries, and the boundaries of knowledge. (God's Will and the World - 499)

God's love and human love are essentially the same. Love is an effort to become one. The reason a man and a woman long for each other is that the man can possess God only through the woman, and the woman can do so only through the man. Love means to like each other. (Blessed Family - 334)

Single people will never be able to go to the heavenly kingdom. For singles, the heavenly kingdom is a land of despair. Although there is at least hope in a land where one is lonely, a land of despair means a state of hopelessness. (101-43, 1978.10.28)

A man is born for the sake of a woman, and a woman for the sake of a man. There is an original rule that whenever you assert yourself, God is absent, and whenever you respect others, God is with you. The fact that we walk with two feet itself reflects a thinking that is in accordance with this original rule and the principle. (God's Will and the World - 543)

Is it not true that a woman is born in order to meet a man, and a man is born in order to meet a woman? This is the highest truth. Therefore, we must be gaining the right of Blessing in accordance with such a rule, for to deviate from the highest truth is the highest evil. (21-201, 1968.11.20)

In a traditional marriage, the bride and bridegroom bow deeply to each other. Do you know why they bow deeply? It is to express a promise to live for the sake of each other. If they do not live for each other's sake, love will run away. (Blessed Family - 361)

The civil law of Korea prohibits the marriage of people with the same family name and origin, and encourages marriages between different clans. This is because Koreans are a people that long for unification. (19-305, 1968.3.10)

Section 2. The Love that Man and Woman Desire

In your life's journey, the loveliest and most beautiful time is your youth. In youth, your looks are like the most precious flower. Someone who can love ful-

ly can be invited into God's living room. A man and a woman who have such love can receive God's blessings and be invited into His living room. (26-151, 1968.6.4)

What is human happiness? Can you say you are happy simply because you have a lot of money, even enough to adorn yourself with diamonds? You can find true happiness only when you laugh, sing, and whisper together with your partner, both of you enraptured in love. Those who can do this are truly happy people. I would say that those who can hear whispers from a lover are happy people; the soft whispers of your spouse who is caressing your earlobe can make you feel so happy that you would think you were dreaming. Youth is among the happiest of times; this is when the flower of your youth is still blooming radiantly, when you are virtually bursting with love, and when you are to unite in love with another. (Blessed Family - 366)

An ideal person does not seek a partner who becomes entirely absorbed into the love of man and woman. Rather, such a person seeks a partner who first loves the world, God, and humankind, and then loves you with his or her remaining love. (46-42, 1971.7.18)

True happiness for a woman is to meet her true subject partner in love. (Blessed Family - 340)

However seriously a man looks to find love as a single person, he will only be viewed as a crazy man. (Blessed Family - 340)

No matter how talented a man or woman may be, it is of no use when there is no love. (175-165, 1988.4.16)

Men and women are opposite in all aspects. Women are uni-directional, while men are multi-directional. Also, women stay home, while men travel here and there around the world. These are opposite types of personality. Through what do these men and women unite as subject and object partners? They unite through love. It is also love that unites humankind and God. (38-255, 1971.1.8)

God created humankind for the sake of the perfection of the ideal of love. Therefore, the relationship of humankind and God is a relationship of the highest love between subject partner and object partner. Then, when does humankind reach perfection? It will happen only when a man and a woman reach a point where they make a connection of love and understand the value of love. (128-132, 1983.6.11)

Even though a man may be handsome and healthy, this means nothing without a woman. A man who is preoccupied with his handsome looks and health is useless. There are many men who live their lives self-centeredly; this is one of the reasons why history has been tragic. You should know that God's providence has been to improve and transform this self-centered world. (Blessed Family - 340)

Therefore the best thing in the world is the notion of a woman for a man and a

man for a woman. The love that charms men is not found in other men, nor is the love that enchants women found in other women. Isn't that so? Do you long for love when you are alone? (37-27, 1970.12.22)

In loving a woman with God's love, a man should be able to say, "I love her completely. We share a love that will not change from beginning to end." Also, a woman should keep her body tightly sealed in order to share such a love. She should close it tightly like a peony flower, as if it were wrapped up in many layers. This way, the couple should see the harmony of heaven and earth in spring and start a new life in unity with this. They should do this well. (26-156, 1969.10.25)

Among the flowers, which do you think is the most beautiful? I don't know what kind of flowers you like, but I like flowers that look like a trumpet. The reason is that trumpet-looking flowers send their fragrances far away. Trumpet-looking flowers represent deep love. Flowers must look like a trumpet if their fragrances are to spread far. For this reason, the more a flower resembles a trumpet, the more fragrance it has. So if women are like flowers, they should have a deep heart of love. Flowers with beautiful fragrances are loved by all people. Lilies, for example, are loved for their simplicity and elegance. I think the clear and elegant lilies are aesthetically and emotionally rich flowers because their stems and leaves have the same color so it is difficult to distinguish which is which. Likewise, ladies should be like morning glories and lilies. They should be clear and elegant flowers. (Blessed Family - 614)

No matter how pretty a girl may be, there is a time after emerging from adolescence, which is the most special time. This is when her beauty truly flowers, the most precious time of her life. Nevertheless, is there any woman who would say that she would rather live alone? This is not a woman. Also, is there any man who has a fine body and yet says that he would rather live alone during such a lovely time of youth? At such times you are bound to look for your partner. Why do you do this? It is because you resemble God. During young adulthood, the most precious time of your life, you seek out your life partner. This is true for men and women alike. (32-248, 1970.7.19)

Why do men exist? Men often say they are not interested in such issues because they can usually live alone, but men are born for the sake of women. Without women, men have no reason to be here. There is nothing that has come into being for its own sake. (285-220, 1997.5.19)

When we look at our five senses; eyes, nose, ears, mouth and hands are all there for the sake of my partner. Do our eyes exist to look into our own eyes? True love can fully mobilize and concentrate the five senses. Eyes, nose, ears, mouth and hands are tools of true love, created for the sake of true love. (299-119, 1999.2.7)

What is the most precious thing for a woman? It is a man. What kind of a

man does she need? It does not matter whether he is talented or dull, whether he is crippled or not. The question is with which man she can find a love with value. (Blessed Family - 340)

If a woman loved by God lives in the heart of a man, and a man who is loved by God lives in the heart of a woman, and they cherish each other, God will rejoice over it, and also all things will be happy together. Their joyful embrace will be of great importance in bringing joy to heaven and earth. The embrace of a man and a woman in mutual adoration is a point where the universe becomes one. This is what the original image is like that is realized under God's ideal. (God's Will and the World - 27)

What is the original purpose for which man is born? It is undeniable that he is born for a woman. Conversely, a woman is not born for the sake of a woman. We should know that the problem occurs where she has not fully convinced herself that she is born for the sake of a man. Since God, the great master of the creation of heaven and earth, has stipulated this as an original rule of creation, we cannot enter the good, true, joyful and peaceful world, or the world of love and ideal, without following this rule. (75-319, 1975.1.16)

You should not cast sidelong glances even though there are countless men in the world. Fidelity is more precious than your life. It is women who will open the path that will resonate throughout history, the path that can be loved by the husband, by sons and daughters, by the nation, even loved by the whole world. Women should undertake the solemn task of establishing a basis from which the beauty, nobility, and emotional tradition of women can shine forth. In order to accomplish this, you should give your utmost heart as a truthful and genuine person. (39-217, 1971.1.10)

When is the most beautiful time, the time of youth when the flower is in full bloom? It is young adulthood. This period is the seven years from age eighteen to twenty-four. This seven year period is a time never to be repeated in your life, a time when the beautiful flower of your love will blossom. How precious is this beautiful time that will come only once in your life. You know peonies, don't you? Their buds are wrapped tightly in dozens of layers so they cannot be opened up easily. The same is true for men and women. Then when should you fully reveal the crimson bud of your love that blossoms like a yellow flower? The time when beauty is best revealed within the harmony of heaven and earth is the time of youth. For human beings, it is a time when the blossoms are at their peak. Youth is a time when you shine as the central pinnacle of God's great work of art. It is at this time that you should be in full bloom under God's blessings. (26-151, 1969.10.25)

You should not defile the purity of your heart during your youth, which is a precious time in which to overcome

and rectify the sorrow of Adam and Eve, who lost their pure heart in their youth. You should have a firm principle and determination that says, "Even if I live alone for tens of thousands of years, I will absolutely not abuse love." (37-107, 1970.12.22)

As a youth, when you carefully keep a holy pure heart that is not dirtied or stained by the fallen world, where should you place it? You should place it on the altar that will bring God the greatest joy: the holy ground where a man and a woman with such a pure heart can meet and become bound as one. This should be the place where the bride and bridegroom meet. (64-84, 1972.10.24)

Section 3. The Blessing Is the Ceremony to Convey God's Love

Our Unification Church calls marriage the Blessing. (Blessed Family - 544)

The Blessing means true parents and true children meeting together to realize the purpose of creation. (19-73, 1967.12.27)

What is the Blessing? It is becoming one with God. If you become one with God, you will gain everything. You will receive everything God has, everything the Subject has. (Blessed Family - 544)

So far, you have not been able to make a complete connection with True Parents. It is the Blessing that is given to you so that you can make that connection. (23-332, 1969.6.15)

I will take eternal responsibility for those who have received the Blessing, even in the spirit world. I will govern them and guide them. The Blessing is also the means of forging an eternal connection with me. (God's Will and the World - 533)

The Blessing opens the gate of the heavenly kingdom. You enter it with your children. (Blessed Family - 544)

Although there are myriads of people in the world, they can be divided into men and women. Our fundamental purpose is to find a secret method by which they can become one. We are pursuing this because the origin of such a fruitful family has not yet appeared. When such an initiating point appears and gives root to its seeds, they will grow into new trees. This is the Blessing Ceremony. (31-190, 1970.5.31)

The Blessing Ceremony is not simply a wedding ceremony where a man and a woman come together and then raise a family. Wedding ceremonies have so far been self-centered, but our wedding ceremony should be conducted in a sacred and magnificent manner, as something to return joy to God and as a precious offering to indemnify history. The Principle clearly explains that our wedding ceremony is an effort not only to resolve God's sorrow caused by the Fall of Adam and Eve, but also to surpass the standard of bride and bridegroom that Jesus was unable to reach. (God's Will and the World - 27)

Even though you have established faith through God's providence, you have to be engrafted in order to be restored as God's child. (Blessed Family - 508)

To say that you are to be reborn does not mean rebirth through the flesh and blood of parents who are descendants of the fallen Adam and Eve; rather, you are to be reborn through the flesh and blood of the parents who have nothing to do with the Fall. Otherwise, you cannot return to God. Since the fundamental root of sin started with Adam and Eve, you cannot return to God's side until you have stepped over it and acquired the qualification that you are born in a place that has no connection with the original sin. (22-269, 1969.5.4)

In being reborn, you should not fall behind Adam and Eve. If you did, the fundamental restoration would not be realized. The process of rebirth must start with individuals, then families, peoples, nations, and ultimately the entire world. Today's Christians do not know this fact. (58-42, 1972.6.6)

Even a grandmother over the age of eighty knows that if she died without receiving the Blessing, she would be unable to enter the heavenly kingdom. Therefore, even if a man may be thousands of kilometers away, she will want to receive at least a condition of Blessing by tying a silk thread to him even at the last moment of death. This is what Blessing is like. I am destined to meet with difficulty because I have to do this work. (22-16, 1969.1.1)

The term "true parents" means a man and woman who are, spiritually, completely mature. It refers to a man and a woman who have established a vertical relationship with God and a horizontal relationship with each other, at ninety degrees. So in order to engraft young men and women, I gather them together, and engraft to them a bud from Mother and a bud from Father. This is the Blessing. (131-174, 1984.5.1)

The Blessing Ceremony is none other than a ceremony of transferring love. In this ceremony of transference, just as the parents live with God's love, you receive Parents' love in place of God's love with the instruction to live a certain way. This is the Blessing Ceremony. You do not receive it from some famous person; this would be an archangelic marriage. If a famous person comes along and arranges a marriage for you, this is always a marriage given by the archangel. (96-236, 1978.1.22)

Giving you the Blessing means to transfer Heaven's entire authority to you. (17-328, 1967.4.16)

The Blessing is the key to open the door of liberation for all people; this is the door that history has been seeking. (God's Will and the World - 27)

What have I considered most precious in my life? The Blessing. Also for you, the greatest gift in human history is the Blessing. (23-317, 1969.6.8)

God's ideal finally starts in a place where new love centering on God, that is, the love in accordance with the law of creation, is determined. (19-314, 1968.3.17)

To have a different lineage means to have a different father. Therefore, a person born from a different father and different lineage cannot indemnify his sins except through original parents untainted by the Fall. Therefore, until now history had been making connections through religious ideals until the arrival of the one person not connected with the Fall who has the right to be the first ancestor. (20-115, 1968.5.1)

For you to have received the Blessing means the time has come when you can make a start, in the name of the bride and bridegroom, with your people, church, and tribe that are chosen on the foundation built on earth by the Messiah's hard work of two thousand years. Can you be tribal messiahs? Even Satan can't do anything because you have made a parent and child connection with me. This is how incredible the Blessing is. (21-13, 1968.8.13)

What is the cosmos-centered ideology? It is the ideology centered on true parents. After all, these two ideologies are the ideologies based on parents. This is the ideology of your home, your nation, and yourself. Whose ideology would the world embrace if there had been no Fall? It would have embraced an Adam-centered ideology. This ideology is the ideology centered on true parents, that is, the ideology centered on the father and mother. There can be no ideology above that. Therefore, the Unification Church, with True Parents at the forefront, should resolve problems of the heart using the ideology of heaven and working within the boundary of the original ideal family. As long as we practice this ideology within our families, we will not perish – we cannot perish. (26-201, 1969.10.25)

What is the cosmos-centered ideology? Imagine a family that has more than enough treasures to fill heaven and earth. It would mean that the family members would, rather than being obsessed by them, forget about them entirely in order to live in intoxication with God's love. What belongs to the son belongs to the parents, and what belongs to the parents belongs to God. They should all be connected as a whole in this way. (35-280, 1970.10.25)

What is the ideology centered on true family? It is the ideology based on God's love. No matter how prideful a person may be at being the greatest in the world, he would still be miserable without love. This true family-centered ideology teaches that when the parents go, the sons and daughters eternally follow; that when the elder brother goes, the younger brother eternally follows; and even when the younger brother goes, the elder brother follows him eternally. Hence, if there is a younger brother's nation, the elder brother's nation must say that it will follow it. Likewise, if there is an elder brother's nation, the younger brother's nation must say that it will also follow it. (21-49, 1968.9.1)

CHAPTER FOUR

Love and Family

Section 1. The Ideal of Love is Established in the Family

The family is an unchanging point of origin, a timeless cornerstone that cannot be altered even by the father, by brothers and sisters, or by the system of government of any country. Nothing can alter the sovereignty of the family – not the world, not heaven and earth, not even God Himself. For this reason, the concept of revolution will never be needed in the family. No revolution is necessary since the family is the throne of love. (25-85, 1969.9.30)

Why do we like our parents? And why do we like our husband or wife and children? It is because they have love. For the children, parental love is absolutely necessary. Similarly, conjugal love is essential between husband and wife. The love and friendship among brothers and sisters in a family is also necessary, as is their heart of loving devotion towards their parents. (112-291, 1981.4.25)

Why do we like our family? People long for their hometown and their family – their parents and brothers and sisters – because the family is the basis upon which they can freely share love and prosper. (38-328, 1971.1.8)

A true family is a place where the husband loves and serves his wife as he would his mother, the wife serves and loves her husband as she would her father, and they love each other as brother and sister. The Kingdom of Heaven, where ideal families live, is a place where a husband and wife each love and respect each other as they would God Himself. Such a tradition should be established on this earth. (Blessed Family - 924)

There are three kinds of love in an ideal family, each governed by God: the eternal love of parents, the eternal love of husband and wife, and the eternal love of children. (Blessed Family - 913)

An ideal family is where the parents, children, husband and wife, and brothers and sisters all desire to unite through true love. In this situation, they are all eternally on an equal footing; from there, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth begins and the Kingdom of Heaven in heaven is automatically established. (Hero of the Future - 172)

Where does happiness come from? Where can we find an environment that

makes us feel like humming? We can find it in the family. However, family happiness cannot arise in an environment fraught with emotional difficulties, nor can it be realized in an absence of love. (23-120, 1969.5.18)

How do you think misfortune comes about? It begins from the time when the love nest disappears. A happy family is a family where there are parents, who serve as a fence around the house. Vertically, such a family attends the parents who represent heaven, and horizontally this attendance binds the husband and wife together. They obey the law of heaven and pass this on through their descendants. (19-305, 1968.3.10)

What kind of love have you been seeking? If you have been seeking God's love, then your mind and body must be completely one so that God's love can come. Then, extending this pattern, you should create a heavenly kingdom as a couple and a heavenly kingdom as a family. The family heavenly kingdom is realized only when the mother and father love each other in complete oneness and their sons and daughters each acquire a partner who is like their mother or father. When the parents become the plus and the sons and daughters become the minus, this will become the family heavenly kingdom. (96-28, 1978.1.1)

The family; consisting of the parents, husband and wife, and children is a microcosm of the world. You should know that the path of life for humankind lies in the expansion of a family-type of love to the relationships amongst all people. We should love elderly people like our own grandfather and grandmother, and middle-aged people like our own father and mother. Furthermore, we should love those who look older than us like our own elder brother or sister, and love those who look younger than us like our own younger brother or sister. (God's Will and the World - 613)

Where does the heavenly kingdom begin? It starts from our families. Then, what is our ideology? It is the way of the family. The cosmos-centered ideology we pursue is the ideology of the heavenly house. The word cosmos consists of the character for cheon (天) meaning "heaven" and the character for ju (宙) meaning "house." (26-102, 1969.10.18)

The family is a miniature nation based on a society. It is a small nation, a small world and a small cosmos. Therefore, you cannot do anything separate from your family. (24-230, 1969.8.17)

The family is the ethical basis of society and the most exemplary, fundamental, and primary organization in the human world. In such a family, love is the highest standard of value. (Blessed Family - 924)

The most important times of someone's life are the time of birth, the time of marriage, and the time of death. Then, at the time of birth, under what conditions should you be born? You should be born

into a good lineage and circumstances. Next comes the time of marriage. You marry in order to have a family life, that is, in order to form a four position foundation. God's will and human purpose will be realized only when laws of the universe have been established on earth. The family is the place where we strive to align ourselves with such laws of the universe. (24-230, 1969.8.17)

The family is the basic unit for perfecting the heavenly kingdom. The heavenly kingdom is the kind of place that once you enter you do not wish to leave. It is also a place where lives the one whom you would want to see again even after seeing Him a hundred times. If all people desire to go there, desire to see Him, and desire to live with Him, the world will be unified. Our goal is to go towards that place. But this will not be realized all at once. First, the individual foundation must be established, then the family foundation must be laid, and then this has to expand to a people, nation, and world. (12-180, 1963.4.1)

Where is the Kingdom of Heaven? It does not fall from the sky. The Kingdom of Heaven is a place in which parents and children can develop their abilities in mutual giving. It is where joy is felt through interacting with creation in our daily life, a joy that we experience as our ideal circumstance, the experience of joy to the full. (78-35, 1975.5.1)

You cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven alone. However, through the Blessing you can jump lightly over the gate of the heavenly kingdom. The Kingdom of Heaven is a place you enter as a family. It is a place you enter by connecting three generations. (12-265, 1963.5.25)

Religion is a preeminent teaching; it has been God's primary means of education by which to instruct and love humankind. There is nothing else. So true parents are to teach their children what the world likes and what God likes. (102-240, 1979.1.1)

However, one does not go to the Kingdom of Heaven through someone's teaching; it is only those who live according to their conscience that will go there automatically. When the sun rises, all the buds on the trees turn towards the sun. So if even plants and trees know to turn in the right direction, there is no way that human beings, the lords of creation, should be ignorant of their own path. Nevertheless, such a phenomenon occurs. (75-41, 1975.1.1)

The Kingdom of Heaven is a world of love; a world that exists for the sake of God, the center. It is a world that lives entirely for God. (98-33, 1978.4.8)

You go to the Kingdom of Heaven by riding along the rail of love. It seems realistic when I talk like this, right? That string of love does not get thinner like a rubber band as it gets pulled. Whereas a rubber band gets thinner and thinner the more it is stretched, the string of love does the opposite by getting thick-

er and thicker the more one pulls on it. (57-162, 1972.5.31)

Human beings need to have a parent-child relationship, husband-wife relationship, and brother-sister relationship. In other words, these three relationships must intersect at the same point; there must be one center for all three. The center of above and below, left and right, and front and back cannot be different from one another. If the center differs, the balance of these three relationships that are represented by above and below, left and right and front and back will be disrupted. So, eventually the number seven will be realized when above and below, left and right, and front and back all intersect at the one center. To form number seven in this way means to become a family where all become completely one in true love together with God, resulting in a perfect sphere of harmony and unification. (299-114, 1999.2.7)

All over this world live people who are just like my grandfather and grandmother, or my mother and father, or like my husband or wife, or like my sons and daughters. These four kinds of people are living throughout the whole world. For this reason, we should understand that the family is a textbook, a type of scripture, that educates the countless people of the world and through which they can become citizens of the heavenly kingdom. (130-267, 1984.2.5)

The family is a textbook through which you can connect to the heavenly kingdom. It is a textbook for your education. If you apply this family education to the nation, you will be a patriot; if you apply it to the world, you will be a saint; and if you apply it to heaven and earth, you will be God's divine sons and daughters. (137-77, 1985.12.18)

The family is both a textbook and a training ground of love through which, at the time of death, you can receive the right to take residence in the heavenly kingdom, the royal palace of peace. Our world is the expansion of the love that is developed in the family. There is a world of grandfathers and of grandmothers, a world of fathers and of mothers, a world of husbands and of wives, and a world of sons and daughters. Each of these expands to form the world. (142-242, 1986.3.11)

God wants to realize the kingdom of love. This is God's will. God's will is to develop the ideal setting for love and then globalize it. The family is the workshop based upon which one meets the qualifications to graduate from primary and secondary school, on to university – even to earn a doctorate. Furthermore, the family expands into the world. Looking at the world carefully, we can say that there is a world where the grandfathers and grandmothers live, a world where uncles and aunts live, a world where elder brothers and elder sisters live, a world where young people live, and a world where children live. So these places where the elderly, middle-aged, adolescents and children dwell

may be larger and more populous, but they are expanded versions of the family. (147-281, 1986.10.1)

The center of the family is the parents. Why is it the parents? Because the parents exist for the family as a whole. (124-51, 1983.1.23)

People need a family just as they need a nation, a world, an original environment in the world and universe. (141-300, 1986.3.2)

My view is that in the love-centered family, the parents are the representatives of the nation and of God. The family is where all phases of training begin. The first stage of education and change is the family, and the second stage is the nation. There, a patriot is needed. Next, the third stage of education and change is the world. There we need a saint. The spirit world is the fourth stage of education and change. After that, we become God's sons and daughters. Just because one is a saint does not mean that he or she is God's son or daughter. So everyone should become God's son or daughter. Finally, we attain the status of a divine son or daughter, become one with God's love, and reach the point where we can possess God eternally. (141-300, 1986.3.2)

Section 2. The Family is the School of Love for Life in the Heavenly Kingdom

The Kingdom of Heaven is a world of love, a world that exists for the sake of God, where people live for the sake of God. (98-33, 1978.4.8)

The family is an encapsulation of history. It is connected to history, with its origin in God. You inherit the family vertically. However, inheritance must take place in a perfectly vertical manner, at a ninety degree angle. The grandfather and grandmother, representing God, have already inherited this. (216-262, 1991.4.7)

So your grandfather and grandmother are nothing less than an encapsulation of your ancestors. (214-268, 1991.2.3)

Your grandfather is an heir and a godly representative for all the ancestors who lived at different times in history. He is God's heir who, centered on God, connects us to that history. (216-262, 1991.4.7)

The grandfather and grandmother are representatives of the past, the bygone ages, and the mother and father represent the present age. The sons and daughters represent the future. Therefore, your grandfather and grandmother are the past, your mother and father are the present, and you represent the future. Then, when you have sons and daughters, they will bring together the past, present, and future; thus, the three sets of parents and three ancestors must connect their three loves and love the four generations. Thus, the Fall signifies God being unable to see His grandson. (211-206, 1990.12.30)

The Kingdom of Heaven starts from the family. The grandfather represents God, the mother and father represent the present, and the sons and daughters are the future. In this way, the past, present, and future are all condensed in the family. Thus, the mother and father represent this world. The grandfather represents God. The grandfather and grandmother have the position of the past God, the mother and father have the position of the present God, and the future sons and daughters have the position of the future God. However, they are all equal because of true love. When their fundamental core is based on living for the sake of others in true love, they are able to develop a view of essential oneness and equal value. When the four directions blend into one we will live eternally as God's love partner based on the logic of true love because that place is eternally protected by the fortune of God's love. (211-289, 1990.12.30)

How precious it would be if I were in a position to forge a direct relationship with God! The purpose of seeking the truth lies in perfecting your family and feeling infinite love and happiness there. (33-68, 1970.8.8)

What is the family? It is a training ground through which we can inhabit the ideal nation and world with love. Furthermore, it is a training ground through which we can even occupy the heavenly kingdom and God. (106-25, 1979.11.4)

Those who have not loved will choke in the other world. They will not be able to breathe. The earthly life is a training ground that prepares you to be able to breathe in that world. Your family is the textbook of love. When you see someone of your grandfather's age, you should think that you will love him even more than your own grandfather. When you see someone of your father or mother's age, you should welcome him or her regardless of nationality, or whether he or she is an outside person, or whether he or she is black or white. When you see a youth, you should love him or her like your own son or daughter. (121-294, 1982.10.29)

What is the Kingdom of Heaven? It is the place where you can love the people of the world as you love your family, and such people are the people of the heavenly kingdom. What do the four generations of your grandfather and grandmother, your mother and father, your wife, brothers and sisters, and your children make up? They make up a family, which is like a textbook to help you experience the true love of the universe as a person of the heavenly kingdom. You should know that the family, which is the textbook, is the foundation upon which you receive this teaching. (129-96, 1983.10.1)

God's love manifests itself in the things of creation. Where does parental love appear? It appears in children. Also where there's a husband, the wife's love appears. Just as we can see the parents'

love by looking at their children, or see the wife's love by looking at the state of her husband's clothes, we can see God's love by looking at the things that have been created in this world. (20-18, 1968.3.31)

God's love appears in an orderly fashion. First is parental love, and next come conjugal love, children's love, and the love of brothers and sisters. (20-33, 1968.3.31)

If we only have love, we can be friends with God and also have Him as our father. (67-171, 1973.6.3)

It is said that life is but a journey and we the traveler. We must deeply experience vertical and horizontal love while on the journey. After creating a family based on the love of true parents, true husband and wife, true brothers and sisters, and true sons and daughters, we should expand this horizontally throughout all families, in all directions. Once establishing the model of the true family that joins both the vertical and horizontal, we must expand this to the tribe, nation and world. This world of true love, which connects to God, we call the Kingdom of Heaven. (298-306, 1999.1.17)

God's love opens the gate of salvation. We must inherit God's true love, true life, and true lineage. We should know that there can be no salvation otherwise. (275-55, 1995.10.31)

The worst of all sins is to shatter something and then scatter the pieces in all directions. Also, the worst and most hated of all enemies is the one who has destroyed love. There is no devil more atrocious than the devil who makes it impossible for children to love their parents and who destroys a couple's relationship so they cannot love each other as husband and wife. (82-200, 1976.1.25)

Because of the Fall of our first human ancestors, we first lost brother and sister's love, then conjugal love, then lastly children's love. Without restoring this lost love, we cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. (82-201, 1976.1.25)

The Kingdom of Heaven is the place we enter after living in oneness with God's true love, and having prepared a tribe of God's true love. Without possessing true love, we will never be able to enter the Heavenly Kingdom. We must prepare for that day even if we have to wait for thousands or even tens of thousands of years. (270-240, 1995.6.7)

Since God is the original substance of true love, when we are connected to true love, we all become one. The parents represent God as a living God in their own right. A husband and a wife each represent one aspect of God's divided nature, and the sons and daughters are additional little Gods. The family organization built by the three generations through true love is the foundation for the Kingdom of Heaven. Without establishing such a foundation, the Kingdom of Heaven will not be realized. The family is the center of the universe. Since the

perfection of the universe is based on the perfection of the family, if you love in the universe just as you love in the family, you will be able to travel freely. In this case, God stands at the center of all love as the parents of the entire universe. (298-306, 1999.1.17)

The basis for an original, God-centered family includes all the love of men, women, sons, daughters, parents and God. If you love your parents, your husband, and your sons and daughters in such a place of unity, it will be like living in the heavenly kingdom. (Blessed Family - 942)

Where does the heavenly kingdom start? It starts in the family. It does not unfold from somewhere else. The heavenly kingdom is just a three-dimensional expansion of the family. It is not something that is outside of the family. Therefore, when you embrace your wife or husband, you should think that you are a man and a woman becoming one on behalf of the world. The family is the place where you substantiate your love for humankind through action. (30-82, 1970.3.17)

You should respect your own flesh and blood. You should respect your parents and grandparents as the owners of your house who represent heavenly right of kingship. But they are despised because they are old, aren't they? Is this what we call the generation gap? Who invented this? Satan invented this word. Where is the generation gap? Does love have a generation gap? Do you think that the way to love a thousand years ago was different from the way to love now? The ways are the same and the means of loving are the same. The inner aspect has changed. If there had been no Fall, then the formula for love would have remained unchanged even after a hundred million years. Even if heaven and earth are in constant upheaval, if the three generations of grandparents, parents, and children strongly unite, as an iron fortress, to usher in God as their core, then they will be the seed needed to bring about the heavenly kingdom anywhere. The fundamental source for the seed of God's love and the seed of life is this lineage. If we cannot establish this, then there will be no hope for the heavenly kingdom on earth, the heavenly kingdom of peace or the world of happiness and freedom. (225-300, 1992.1.26)

What is the heavenly kingdom? You talk about going to paradise or the heavenly kingdom, but you cannot go alone. The Kingdom of Heaven is a place where you must go together with your parents and brothers and sisters. (15-278, 1965.10.30)

CHAPTER FIVE

Love and the Spirit World

Section 1. The Atmosphere of the Spirit World is Love

We are born in love representing God, live in love, reach the destination of love by having sons and daughters, and return to God to live with Him eternally. In other words, our life begins with love, matures with love, and becomes harvested as the fruit of love. A person's death is the point at which the fruit of love is harvested. (298-311, 1999.1.17)

Death denotes a second birth at the end of our physical life. The place where we have that second birth - the place where we go after death - is the spirit world. We enter that world and receive from God, who is the third Parent, a supply of true love, which represents the entire universe. The spirit world is a world where we breathe love and live in love. Therefore, if you fail to develop a character of complete true love, your path to travel freely will be restricted, and you will not be able to pass through all four directions. Even if you happen to pass through a gate, you will not be able to go any further. If you want to be qualified to live in rhythm with the four seasons regardless of time and place, you must develop a character of loving completely during your earthly life. (298-311, 1999.1.17)

To die is to be reborn in God's love, but in the human world they make a big fuss, saying, "Oh no, I am dying!" God laughs loudly at this. Would God be happy or sad to see such people crying and lamenting? One should experience joy at the moment of going from the realm of limited love to one of unlimited love. The moment of death is the moment of a second birth. Don't you think so? That path is the path of ascension (seunghwa). (116-172, 1982.1.1)

We should overcome death. It is the process of change opening the way to a second life. Death is not a sad occasion. It is a leap into a new world, ascension. (139-214, 1986.1.28)

In the secular world, death signifies the end of life, but death really means to be born anew into another world. Therefore, you should not be depressed, sad, or anxious when you think of death. Instead, you should rejoice over the idea of people being reborn in spiritual triumph after having lived a life for the sake of their mission. If you become immersed in sorrow or grief, this will

only pull the spirit of a person who was on the way to heaven back down to earth. Just like the moment when a baby comes out of the womb of its first mother, the Seunghwa ceremony is an occasion in which a person is born into another world through the womb of the second mother, the universe. This can be compared to a wedding ceremony. This is not a sorrowful moment at all. It is like an insect emerging from its cocoon, throwing away its hard shell and taking on a new form, becoming a new being, a new essence. (49-285, 1971.10.17)

The reason we must die is that our body's ability to love is limited. If we want to possess God's true authority as His object partner of true love, our limited bodies will not suffice. This is why we have to make the transformation to being an incorporeal spirit. This will enable us to share the ideal of love equally with all of heaven and earth. For this reason, the moment of death is not a path of pain, but instead is the starting point of opening the gate of happiness, through which we can possess universal true love. (298-311, 1999.1.17)

Just as we received our parents' love, shared the love of husband and wife, and loved our children, we must collect all of God's love that has been strewn over our lifetime and take it with us to the spirit world. When a husband and wife unite and completely realize the three stages of love and go to the spirit world, they will become an eternal object partner to the eternal subject partner, God. This takes place when a husband and wife of true love pass away. They begin with God and end with God. (298-311, 1999.1.17)

Earthly life and life in the spirit world are not separate. Earthly life is important, and so is life in the spirit world. In other words, life in the spirit world is connected to earthly life. Both are important, but the people living on earth today are not aware of eternal life. They think that only life on this earth is important. That is the problem. Even among our Unification Church members, there are many who do not grasp that their present life affects their eternal life. (217-85, 1991.4.16)

Normally, human beings stay in the mother's womb, are born, live on earth for a certain period and then die. Therefore, most people fear death as they grow older. It is because they lack knowledge about the world after death that their fear and anxiety grow as they age. (Blessed Family - 1062)

The spirit world is a place that is totally covered with the ingredients of love. The earth is covered with air, but the spirit world is covered with love. Human beings inhale oxygen and exhale carbon dioxide on earth, but in the spirit world they live inhaling love. The love they give and receive in the spirit world is true love. (145-267, 1986.5.15)

Human beings live in the womb for ten months, in the body for a hundred years, and in the spirit for eternity. (298-304, 1999.1.17)

As soon as a baby is born, it cries, and at that instant it breathes through its nose, which connects it to its second world, that is, the world of air. In order to connect to and come out into the world of air, we have to destroy the umbilical cord and the water bag, where we lived in the womb. At the time of this death or destruction, the baby is born to mother earth. After we're born, we eat with our mouths and breathe with our noses. But the food we eat on earth is just nutrition needed for the life of the physical body; it is not an essential element of spiritual life. The key element of life is none other than love. Therefore, we should inhale the air called love. We should breathe the air of love from our mother and father. (139-212, 1986.1.31)

In the spirit world, the True Parents will open the palace of love. Although there is a palace in the spirit world, the True Parents must declare, "This is the palace!", and then all beings in the entire spirit world will take their positions around it. The spirit world absolutely needs True Parents because such a responsibility still remains unfulfilled. (205-255, 1990.9.9)

When Adam and Eve reach perfection and go to the spirit world, they will be God's body and God will be their mind. Hence, God is invisible even when you go to the spirit world. God's purpose for creating Adam and Eve was to produce perfect people who would reflect the body and mind of the substantial world. (92-147, 1977.4.1)

After looking around even the back streets of the spirit world, I found the principle of heaven and earth was something simple. In other words, the truth is simple. Where two things unite through the power of absolute energy and form a vacuum, God comes in and becomes the core of the bone marrow. Here the two parts, man's love and woman's love, strongly unite. This is the core of the universe. The ideal embodiments of love join together and form the axis of love. (170-170, 1987.11.15)

The earthly world and the spirit world move facing each other. When the earthly world goes up, so does the spirit world; when the earthly world goes down, so does the spirit world. When one side turns, the other side turns also. So, in this life we should live life deeply, feel these things, and use them to benefit our eternal life. Our eternal life and our present life are not divided. (217-85, 1991.4.16)

Where will we go eventually? What does the spirit world refer to? It is generally called the world after death. But it is not the world after death because it is a world related to love. The spirit world began with true love; therefore, although I stand in the position of true love here and now, it is the same as being in the spirit world. This is why love is great. (144-198, 1986.4.24)

God created human beings in such a way that they can live forever intoxicated with love. Aging is not your enemy.

People begin with love, live with love, and are harvested as fruits of love. At death we harvest the fruits of our love. We have received our parents and children's love, shared conjugal love, and lived loving our children. These, together with God's love and all other internal loves, bear fruit throughout our lives and are harvested and taken with us to the spirit world. (83-198, 1976.2.8)

Ladies and gentlemen, do you know how big the spirit world is? Have you ever wondered how big the population of the spirit world might be? According to spiritual mediums, spirits are following people at the rate of about 3320 spirits per head. If you think that is the number of people on our side, do you think we will lose or win over the world? (86-192, 1976.3.28)

When you go to the spirit world, countless saints and sages and countless ancestors get together for a discussion. They question and reflect, asking, "Where did you come from? Where on earth? From which country?" When friends meet, they talk about everything from their past, do they not? When you go to the spirit world, you will meet your first grandfather and tens of thousands of ancestors. When they yell harsh words at you, saying, "You brat, how did you live?" will you feel good? Think about it. (148-320, 1986.10.26)

Do you have a special gift to bring with you when you go to the heavenly kingdom? When you go to the spirit world, the martyred, loyal servants of God will be lined up in front of you. Do you think you will be able to confidently open the bag you have brought before them? What kind of suffering has the Unification Church gone through, and what kind of hardships have you gone through? Without having gone through at least as much suffering as they have, how can you say that you are living for the sake of the nation and the world? You have indeed suffered, but I do not think of it as suffering. That is reasonable to say. There is a path still ahead of us. We should be able to go to the spirit world, open our bag, and say, "This is the gift I have been preparing my whole life to give. Please accept it." When women marry, they take many things with them to their new home. Should you go empty-handed when you go to the Kingdom of Heaven? (32-71, 1970.6.21)

Although the shell of your body gets old while on this earth, the longer you live as a husband and wife, and the more you love, the younger your spirit gets. What does this mean? It means that the longer a person lives, the more his or her spirit, which is the internal person, becomes a mature and beautiful man or woman of the highest degree. (164-101, 1987.4.26)

What is life in the spirit world like? There are no worries about eating, living, or clothing. Why? Because everything you desire is possible in accordance with the state of your spirit. You eat in the spirit world as well. Also in the spirit world, when you touch your-

self, you will be able to feel the pulsation of your blood vessels. It is the same. Although it is a spiritual body, it is the same. (194-42, 1989.10.15)

In the spirit world, you will not long for anything because nothing is missing. If you were to long for something, it would be a true person. Therefore, the meritorious servants who have made effort in order to raise a true person will naturally become sons and daughters of glory in the heavenly world. There is nothing you can be proud of except this. (30-147, 1970.3.21)

Can you see your mind? The spirit world is a world where your mind takes form, and it is a world that transcends time and space. There you can eat meals whenever you want. You do not have to worry about your meals. You do not have to worry about water. Nor do you have to worry about drinking. There is no need to worry about clothes. The spirit world is a place where you rise above the need for clothing, food and shelter. Would you need cars there? Do you think there are automobile factories there? Do you think there are food, clothing or textile factories there? There are none of these. It is a place where you can move hundreds of millions of kilometers in an instant. But by what force? By the force of love. If you say you want to see your loved one, he will appear before you. (210-225, 1990.12.23)

When you go to the spirit world, you can go everywhere because there is nothing that can block your movement there. A being with the original characteristics of God should not be blocked. You should be able to travel everywhere. Because the spirit world transcends time and space, people who lived hundreds of millions of years ago are still there now. They can also be any age they want. You can meet as many people as you want to in the spirit world. (194-132, 1989.10.17)

When you go to the spirit world, you will notice that it resembles a person. God, who is the Subject, and spirit world, which resembles one big person, will be united. Then the entire spiritual and physical worlds will become euphoric! When God jumps, so will the earth, and when God laughs, so will the earth. That is how it should be. When you look at the spirit world, you will see that it is structured like one big person. (91-279, 1977.2.27)

In the spirit world, you do not need explanations or to make excuses. You can sense what is going on immediately at the slightest indication. You can sense whether someone is below, next to or above you; in other words, you know the hierarchy of love. This hierarchy is absolute. Whoever is in a higher position naturally stands in this position according to that hierarchy. It is different from the earthly world. Those who have used deceit and slander to succeed will find their situation turned around. They will face failure. This is why I tell you to follow the right way. (194-132, 1989.10.17)

What are you going to do in your lives? Let us leave behind a mound of love. If you have lived in a mound of love, you will have no regrets. Such a life will succeed forever. If you die after having lived this way, God will bless you, and upon your arrival to the spirit world, God will come out with His sons and daughters to welcome you. (97-167, 1978.3.12)

In the spirit world, you cannot eat if you do not have God's love. You do not have the right to eat. Hell is a place where you cannot eat even though you can see the food, and you cannot act even though you know what to do. Only those who have led a life while on earth in which their spirit and body become one in God's love can possess the eternal world of the ideal or own the heavenly kingdom. (91-173, 1977.2.6)

In the spirit world, you need to love God more than the world, your nation, your wife or your child. Those who have achieved the highest level of character in the realm of love will be able to exercise God's authority in that world. (91-173, 1977.2.6)

The spirit world is composed of the air of love. Everything has to be born through love. You should live in love, and through living for the sake of others, become filled with love. Only then, will you be the substantial being of God's hope that He has longed for throughout history, and be welcomed wherever you go in the Kingdom of Heaven. Family training is preparation for you to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. (143-71, 1986.3.15)

Those who expand their family training in four directions, creating a realm in which love is practiced, will go directly to the Kingdom of Heaven. (143-71, 1986.3.15)

Because the spirit world is infinitely vast, you can travel even millions of kilometers instantly centered on love. Love is the fastest. (216-192, 1991.3.31)

Compared to the spirit world, earth is like a speck of dust. You do not realize how immense the spirit world is. It is an infinite world that transcends time and space. Also, if you say, "If there is a person who was born, lived and died on earth in such and such an age with such and such a heart, please come forward!", that person instantly appears. It is a world where your intuitive senses become reality. (224-105, 1991.11.23)

The spirit world is such a beautiful world that you never tire of looking at it even after a thousand years. You cannot even imagine it. Even the best things in this world are nothing in comparison; they do not even match a small corner of the spirit world. So, earth holds no interest for me. Honestly speaking, I want to go back because this earth does not fit my purpose. (15-149, 1965.10.7)

In the spirit world when God looks at you, if your heart is filled with love, you shine brighter and brighter. In God's eyes, this light looks more beautiful than

the light of a diamond. Also, He relishes this light, and the more He looks at it, the more He loves it. This is the reason God uses the term "love." (103-27, 1979.1.28)

The air in the spirit world is love. Love is the essence of life. In that world, you do not just breathe through your nostrils but also through the top of your head and through all your cells. Thus, if you want to live a full life in the spirit world, you have to completely develop a character of love during your earthly life. (112-205, 1981.4.12)

When you go to the spirit world, you will find that those who have deeply experienced in their family life the love of parents, husband and wife, brothers and sisters, and children will enjoy a great deal of freedom; they can go anywhere in any direction without restrictions. Conversely, those who have no experience of love are narrow-minded, and in the spirit world they are isolated and have no freedom. (Blessed Family - 1062)

In the spirit world, God's love is law. (98-35, 1978.4.8)

The spirit world is an eternal place that seeks eternal elements. Hence, a spirit that has deeply experienced love will surely go to that world automatically, as if being drawn by a magnet. What kind of place is the spirit world? It is a world of harmony where everything is made of love and packed with love. Today, people – whoever they may be – want to make a relationship of love. They desire this in order to be in rhythm with the spirit world. (122-16, 1981.3.15)

There is not a single person who is not moved by the power of love, and there is not a single person who does not become an object partner to the power of love. There is not anyone who would not answer when asked with love. Love can call upon everything to make it possible, and love has the power to make things reappear. Therefore, the spirit world is a world of free and unrestricted movement where a heart filled with love makes everything possible. (112-219, 1981.4.12)

You have to unite the spirit world. A person who is unable to control the spirit world cannot unite the earth. Heavenly fortune comes from heaven, so how can those who are unable to control heaven unite the world? Therefore, before unifying the earth, we must unify the spirit world. (191-204, 1989.6.24)

You are resurrected human beings of history who have been born from your ancestors, resembling them. How long has history been going on? It has been said that it has been hundreds of thousands of years. After all, history has been working to create this one person that is you. If you are a Kim, the countless ancestors of the Kim family have come and gone in order for you to be born. So, we are the fruit of history. (46-154, 1971.8.13)

After your grandfather and grandmother pass away, you have to visit

them at their graves. Thinking of them as God, you should visit them at their graves. (220-349, 1991.10.20)

So far, people in the spirit world have been divided. In the spirit world things do not connect horizontally; they partly connect in a vertical way. (218-124, 1991.7.14)

In the spirit world, since all kinds of people are gathered together, including murderers and their victims, the victims try to take revenge, fighting with knives against the perpetrators. This is why there are so many barriers blocking the way. Thus, evil spirits sometimes go to their enemies' descendants on earth and cause them to have fatal accidents. Things like this happen, and so these problems must all be resolved. These problems must first be resolved in the earthly world. In resolving them, you on earth have to offer a better solution, a more pleasing offering. These problems will not be resolved unless you give those spirits with resentment something they want which is of more importance to them than someone's death, more important than whatever it was that caused them to have enmity. (191-204, 1989.6.24)

Where do people go? They go towards the spirit world. The spirit world is like the sea. People have no choice but to go to the spirit world. Just as there are currents in the sea, there is unparalleled harmony taking place there. In the sea, the tidal currents bring beings of harmony and change that are not found in fresh water. Just as there are countless fish families in the sea, there are countless new families of heaven and earth in spirit world. It is the same when you go to the spirit world. (141-306, 1986.3.2)

Section 2. We Should Develop a Loving Character During Our Earthly Life

How important is your life on earth? You only live once. It is a short moment, but you only live once. Compared to eternal life, earthly life is but a point in time. It is too short. During this period, you need to prepare for the spirit world where you will live after earthly life. With this idea you should stand in the center and control and overcome everything. Otherwise, you cannot achieve perfection. You should know this. (207-99, 1990.11.1)

Wouldn't it be simple if a person ceased to exist at the end of his or her earthly life? However, people are meant to live eternally. They are meant to live eternally. This is good, but it is also a big problem. People are meant to live eternally. You do not know this because you have not had any spiritual experiences. But those who have had spiritual experiences can meet everyone, all the way from Adam to ancestors of thousands of years ago. (159-277, 1968.5.19)

You should realize what a precious time it is to have your physical body. It is only during this time that you are able

to resurrect God, resurrect the universe, and unify all of heaven and earth. Even God and all things united together cannot be exchanged for the physical world. Why? Because without the existence of a human being with a physical body, perfection cannot be achieved, even if God and the universe were to be united as one. You must realize how precious the human body is. Our body cannot be exchanged for the universe. This is why these words from the Bible make sense, "For what does it profit a man, to gain the whole world and forfeit his life?" (91-190, 1977.2.13)

If you have lived two-thirds or more of your life in sin, can you throw off all two-thirds of it? No, you cannot throw it off. It will stay with you. (34-139, 1970.8.30)

You should imagine that you are taking a picture of your mind and looking at the photo. (19-25, 1967.12.10)

Perfection is achieved on earth but not in the spirit world. It is possible to achieve perfection on earth through true love but not in the spirit world. (217-130, 1991.5.12)

Do you have the confidence that you will be around tomorrow morning to wear the shoes you took off last night? No matter how busy you are, there is nothing in this world that is more important than the question of eternal life. So there is nothing that is more serious in this world than the business of settling the issue of eternal life. (10-249, 1960.10.21)

People of faith today do not know the law of indemnity. There are many who seek to go to the heavenly kingdom without fulfilling the necessary obligations. At the same time, there is no one who says that he will go to the heavenly kingdom only after taking responsibility, through liquidating historical sins to pay indemnity, in order to arrive there. This is why, during our life on earth, when we have our bodies, we should take responsibility to establish the conditions to resolve everything that has gone wrong in history. Those who went to the spirit world without indemnifying their sins while they had their bodies must return to earth and pay indemnity. All the spirits of the historical ages up until now arrived to the spirit world without having been able to sufficiently pay indemnity, and thus they violated that law. Therefore, they are destined to return from the spirit world to try again to establish the conditions of indemnity. What is the one advantage that the people living on earth have over those in the spirit world? It is the fact that they have a body, with which they can directly establish a condition of indemnity. (80-93, 1975.10.19)

You should know clearly whether you are a group bound for the Kingdom of Heaven or a group bound for hell. Rev. Moon is someone who knows the spirit world well. It is a place where all sorts of people come, live and go. There is not a single person who can avoid death. Death cannot be avoided. People live here on earth for a while and then go,

and in doing so, those who have lived for their own sake will turn around and go to hell, and those who have lived for the sake of others will turn around and go to the Kingdom of Heaven. These two worlds separate at the time of death. (203-99, 1990.6.17)

The place called hell is a place where, once you get trapped there, you cannot get out for eternity. Nevertheless, you do not truly realize the fact that your mother, father, and relatives are going to hell. You just say, "Things will work out somehow," and that is it. But try thinking that your beloved parents really are going to hell. Should you find out that your parents were going to prison, you would cry your heart out and try to get them out by doing all kinds of things, wouldn't you? This is how human affection goes. Then, in the same way, if you know that your sons and daughters, parents, relatives, and brothers and sisters, who are connected to you through heavenly affection, are going to hell from which there is no escape, wouldn't you have the same kind of reaction? (34-266, 1970.9.13)

When you relate to people, do not try to use them or think about making a profit from them. You must not do this. Once a person's original nature is crushed, it takes from half a year to three years to repair it. So your actions are something you should fear. There is no hell that is as awful as this hell. Those who know this do not even think about exploiting other people. (204-304, 1990.7.11)

You should not speak ill of beggars or disabled people you see on the street. You should wonder whether your spirit is not in the same condition as they are. (10-249, 1969.10.21)

Why do you have to get married? You get married in order to experience parental love, conjugal love, and children's love. Then, why are these necessary? The spirit world is a place that is filled with the atmosphere of love. You need a family to help train you to follow the rhythm of the spirit world. Those who arrive there without having experienced this will be unable to follow the beat. Such people are like those who are without a nose to smell the air of love. (Blessed Family - 1062)

The love relationship between parents and children is vertical, a love relationship between husband and wife is horizontal, and the love relationship among brothers and sisters is spherical. These three relationships are different. Therefore, only when you have an experience of deep love in these three different ways on earth, will you be able to turn without restriction vertically, horizontally, and in a circle in the spirit world. For instance, those who have not tasted parental love when they were young, because their parents died, are rather tragic people because they are missing a very important experience of love. Those who have not experienced conjugal relationships will be very miserable in the spirit world because they are lacking an important part of life. Likewise,

those who are without brothers or sisters will be in a lonely position, unable to live a complete life in the spirit world, since they will lack love that can spread in all directions. (Blessed Family - 1062)

In the spirit world, those who have had enough love for their parents, brothers and sisters, spouse, and children – that is, those who have had a deep experience of love in their family life – will be able to enjoy a lot of freedom. They will be able to go wherever they want, in any direction, without restrictions. Conversely, those who have had no experience of love, as well as those who are narrow-minded, will find themselves isolated and alone in the spirit world with no freedom whatsoever. (Blessed Family - 1062)

You should raise and leave behind respectable children when you pass away. In the future these children will all go to the spirit world. In the spirit world, they will be people of the heavenly kingdom. When you think about how many people you have offered as people of the heavenly kingdom, you will see that although your job was painful on earth, it became a noble path of glory in the world of eternity. (218-319, 1991.8.22)

When you go to the spirit world, you will find out that the accomplishments of great people who have gone to the spirit world are considered as valuable accomplishments only on earth. What kind of place is earth? It is a factory to produce the people of the heavenly kingdom. Do you understand? Heaven is immense and unchanging. It is infinite. It is so large! People have been coming and going for hundreds of millions of years, but we do not know where they are. This is how large it is. So even if each person produces a hundred children, there is no overproduction because heaven is so large. It is a world that can accommodate everyone. So, should you practice birth control or not? When you go to the spirit world, the question you will face is how many people of the heavenly kingdom are you bringing with you. You should know that when you bring many true sons and daughters of the heavenly kingdom, they are to your advantage towards earning you honor and determining your rank in the heavenly world. (202-38, 1990.5.1)

In the spirit world in the future, your ownership is determined by how many people of the heavenly kingdom you bring. These are your possessions. These are eternal possessions. (218-227, 1991.8.19)

In the spirit world there is no multiplication of children. Because God is standing in the position of the vertical Parent and there is only one axis, there is only one meeting point. (221-204, 1991.10.24)

If you make a serious mistake, you have to live in protective confinement in the spirit world. To get out of such a place, you have to wait for thousands of years. Those who are blessed, and make a serious mistake, do not you think your

sons and daughters will say to you in the future, "Mother, why did make me this way? Why did you drag me here?" Do you think your sons and daughters will keep quiet? Your families are at different levels. So, you will go to the place that is appropriate for your level and stay there for a long time. Then, your ancestors and sons and daughters will accuse you saying, "Why did you do it? Why could not you do better? What is that!" You will have to stay there as long as you fall under their accusation. This is not easy. So this is why you should do well while on earth. (207-99, 1990.11.1)

You were born from your parents. Next, what is more fundamental is that you were born from God by borrowing your mother's womb. You are to go and find the True Parents through universal parents and your physical parents. Your physical parents are parents of passage. So the moment of death is a time of joy when you go to meet the True Parents. The true love of the True Parents is there. That place is called the heavenly kingdom in heaven. The constituting element of that place is love, and it is filled with parental love. That love is not for your own sake, but rather it is a love through which you can abide by the law under the principle of service and sacrifice. To receive a passing grade, you must love the universe and love humankind. The earthly life is a training ground for such love. You should know that this is the fundamental core of the universe. If while you are alive on earth you practice love with such an outlook, pass your assessment with honors and then go to the spirit world, you will surely return to God. This is the conclusion. (105-108, 1979.9.30)

When you go to the spirit world, you will surely receive fair repayment for what you have done. For blessed families, the door to the heavenly kingdom will open for you because you are blessed by me. But in making your way forward, as you ride along the rail of heart, you need to be pulled toward the heavenly spirit world. Because that world is the world of love, you can enter it only when your heart harmonizes with it. So, it makes me wonder whether you are destined to go through many stages of judgment when such a world is revealed. (70-170, 1974.2.9)

A person is born in order to bear the fruit of love on earth. Our purpose on earth is to bear the fruit of love which God desires. This is why our life is short. It is one season. It is short, do you understand? (130-158, 1984.1.8)

Do not assume that you will live until you are 100 years old. Even if you live for seventy years, if you work three times harder, you will have lived for 210 years. Think like that. If you work ten times harder, you will have lived for 700 years. If you work twenty times harder, you will have lived for 1400 years. Work twenty-four hours a day, constantly, throughout your whole life. Only then will you bear fruit in the spirit world and possess a large reservoir of love. You will have a

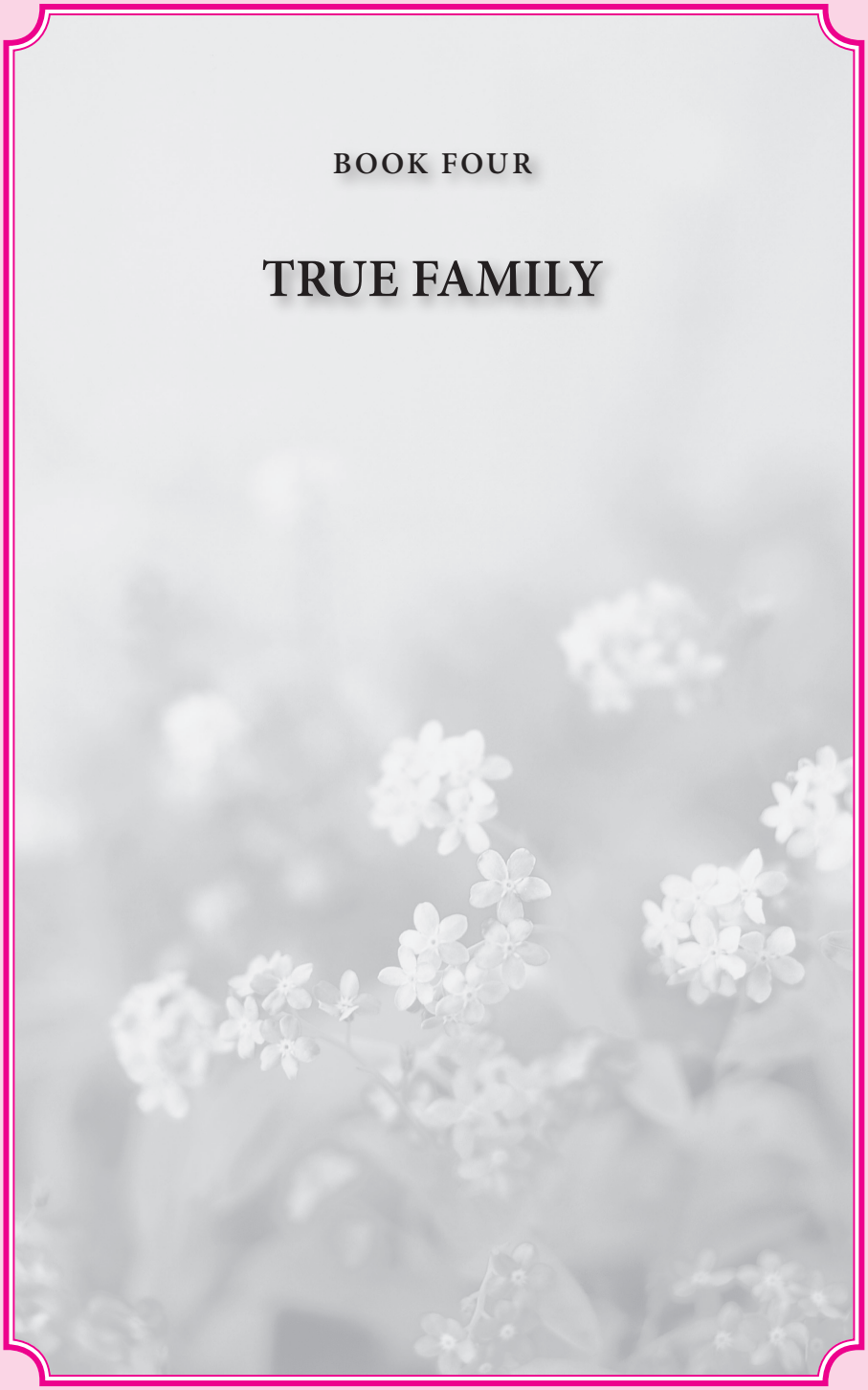
great wealth of love. Your assets of love will be many and your stage of operation will be broad. (102-38, 1978.11.19)

Fish cannot live outside of water. Water is essential for life. A fish living in the river should not just stay in the river. It has to go back and forth to the sea as well. Why does it have to do that? It is because freshwater fish cannot produce their young without having tasted seawater. They have to experience this. Do you know this? Also, fish living in the sea have to go to fresh water and taste it to be able to produce their young. They have to go through the two worlds. (210-128, 1990.12.17)

Likewise, the earth and the spirit world are not two separate worlds. You need to have the qualities that enable you to live in the two worlds. (177-274, 1988.5.20)

BOOK FOUR

TRUE FAMILY



Contents

Chapter 1. The True Family OriginallyIntended at the Time of Creation

Section 1. God's Will through Adam and Eve 423
Section 2. God's Absolute Requirements 424
Section 3. God's Eternal Partner in Love 425
Section 4. The Purpose of Creating Adam and Eve 426
Section 5. The Time for Adam's and Eve's First Love 426
Section 6. All Beings Are Perfected through Love 428
Section 7. What Human Beings Can Be Most Proud Of 429
Section 8. Adam's Family Should Have Set the Tradition as the True Family 430

Chapter 2. The Way of Love in the Family

Section 1. God's Laws of Love Centering on the Family 432
Section 2. The Reason Three Generations Must Coexist in the Family 433
Section 3. Parents are the Origin of Love 434
Section 4. The Reason We Need Brothers and Sisters 435
Section 5. The Grandfather is in the Position of God in the Family 436
Section 6. The Relationship Between Grandparents and Grandchildren 437
Section 7. The True Meaning of the Saying, "All Goes Well if there is True Harmony in the Family." 438

Chapter 3. The Family Is the Model for the Kingdom of Heaven

Section 1. The Family is the Central Model for All Beings 440
Section 2. The Family is the Textbook of Love through Which We Can Connect with Universal Love 441
Section 3. A Training Ground of Love for Entering the Kingdom of Love 442
Section 4. The Family is a Model for the Heavenly Kingdom 444
Section 5. The Family Brings Together the Love of Three Generations 445
Section 6. The Family is the Training Ground of the Heart 446
Section 7. The Family is Our Eternal Original Hometown 447
Section 8. The Family Is the Final Standard for Completing the Cosmos-centered Ideology 448

Chapter 4. Our Course of Life Centered on Love

Section 1. Why Are Human Beings Born? 450
Section 2. Life in its Original Form 451
Section 3. For Human Beings, the Eternal Element of Life is Love 452
Section 4. What is God's Love? 453
Section 5. God's Blessing Allows You to Inherit Love and Joy 454
Section 6. Human Beings Seek the Center of Love 455
Section 7. Our Life Passes Through Three Ages 456
Section 8. Earthly Life is Training to be in Rhythm with the Spirit World 458

Chapter 5. The Love of Man and Woman in the Original Creation

Section 1. The Original Love of a Man and a Woman 460
Section 2. The Reason Men and Women Are Born 461
Section 3. Men and Women Absolutely Need Each Other 462
Section 4. Love Comes from One's Partner 463
Section 5. Men and Women Harmonize in Love 464
Section 6. Original Human Beings Are Enraptured with True Love 465
Section 7. Love Is Realized in a Completely Natural Setting 466

Chapter 6. Transformation during Young Adulthood, and True Marriage

Section 1. The Significance of Marriage 468
Section 2. The Reason for Marriage 469
Section 3. The True View of Marriage 470
Section 4. What Kind of Time is Young Adulthood? 471
Section 5. What Causes the Transformation in Adolescence? 472
Section 6. First Love in Young Adulthood 473
Section 7. The Best Time of Marriage – When is Love Connected? 474
Section 8. Love of a United Mind and Body 476

Chapter 7. The Love of a True Husband and a True Wife

Section 1. The Original Relationship of Husband and Wife 478
Section 2. The Reason We Need Conjugal Love 479
Section 3. An Ideal Conjugal Relationship 481
Section 4. Even God is Enraptured in the Love of a True Couple 482
Section 5. The More a Husband and Wife See Each Other, the More They Want to See Each Other 484
Section 6. How Conjugal Love Develops 485
Section 7. Why You Feel Sad When Your Beloved Passes Away 487
Section 8. Conjugal Love Should Be Eternal 488

Chapter 8. True Parental Love

Section 1. Parental Heart Wants to Give Everything 490
Section 2. Parents Desire to Be Surpassed by Their Children 491
Section 3. Parental Love Is Eternally Unchanging 492
Section 4. Parental Love Sacrifices Everything 493
Section 5. Parents' Love for Their Children Is Absolute 495
Section 6. Parental Love Is Eternal 496
Section 7. Parental Love Sets the Standard for All Forms of Love 497

Chapter 9. True Education for Children

Section 1. What Kind of Education Should Parents Give Their Children? 499
Section 2. What Should Parents Teach Their Children? 500
Section 3. Parents Must First Set an Example 501
Section 4. Parents Are Best Friends and Best Teachers 503
Section 5. Chastisement with Love 504
Section 6. Why Tell Children to Study? 505
Section 7. The Teachings of True Parents and Teachers 506
Section 8. An Education to Live Together with the World 508

Chapter 10. The True Family of Humankind Must Be Restored

Section 1. The Purpose of God's Providence of Salvation 510
Section 2. Adam's Family Fell into Satan's Possession 511
Section 3. The Hope of Fallen People 512
Section 4. The Goal of Restoration is Adam's Family 513
Section 5. The Restored Family Was to Be Realized by Jesus 514
Section 6. The Restored Family of the Returning Lord 515
Section 7. The Original True Family Is Established in the Unification Church 517
Section 8. The True-Family-Centered Ideology and the Religion of True Parents 518

Chapter 11. The Family Is the Eternal Foundation of Happiness

Section 1. Why Do We Like the Family? 520
Section 2. The Family Is the Base of Eternal Happiness 521
Section 3. The Family Is Basic Unit to Realize God's Kingdom 522
Section 4. The Realization of the Ideal of Love Starts in the Family 523
Section 5. Heaven is a Place One Enters as a Family Unit 524
Section 6. Universal Principle of the Four-Position Foundation 526
Section 7. The Heavenly Way People Should Go in the Family 527
Section 8. The Unification Church Seeks to Realize the Family Kingdom of Heaven 528

Chapter 12. Seeking True Families

Section 1. Nothing Was Created for its Own Sake 530
Section 2. The Most Holy Place Where God Can Come to Dwell 531
Section 3. Man Owns Woman and Woman Owns Man 532
Section 4. Love Has No Evolution or Revolution 533
Section 5. Chastity for Woman and Purposefulness for Man 534
Section 6. The Fall: The Root of Free Sex and the Origin of Individualism .. 536
Section 7. The Realization of World Peace Through Absolute Purity and the True Family Movement 537

CHAPTER ONE

The True Family Originally Intended at the Time of Creation

Section 1. God's Will through Adam and Eve

Many talk about God's will and many believers have prayed, "Heavenly Father, may Your will be done!" The words in themselves seem simple, but it is difficult for us, when asked, to articulate precisely what God's will is. At present we are leading lives of faith to accomplish that will, but there is some contradiction in living a life of faith and praying for the accomplishment of God's will without knowing what that will is. (Blessed Family - 298)

What does the Unification Church understand God's will to be? What is Rev. Moon's understanding of God's will? God's will is understood to be the completion and fulfillment of the original ideal of creation for which God made this universe. Because God created the universe with certain purposes, it is God's will to realize such purposes. Who or what was at the center of this purpose? It was none other than Adam and Eve. That is why I perceive God's purpose of creation to be the realization of His ideal beginning with and from Adam and Eve. Then, what is the substance of this ideal? It is none other than the realization of the four-position foundation. The four-position foundation is the foundation of the family with God at the center. It is realized only when Adam and Eve become so completely united that they cannot separate themselves from the realm of God's love. With God at the center, they become an ideal husband and wife, giving birth to children of their own. When this four-position foundation is completed, Adam and Eve become one in their love as husband and wife and are secured within the realm of God's love. (Blessed Family - 298)

What was this ideal that was supposed to be realized through the ancestors of humankind? It was to realize an ideal family through the union of an ideal man and an ideal woman. Then, what is necessary for the realization of an ideal family? It is neither man nor woman alone. A family, after all, is a unit. It is represented by the union of a husband and wife, and the relationship of parents and children with the love of God at the center. Therefore, we reach the conclusion that God's will is the union of a husband and wife, perfecting a family centered on God's love. (Blessed Family - 298)

What is God's purpose of creation? God did not create Adam and Eve mere-

ly to gaze at them after creation. He did not create man and woman so that they would simply grow old and, in the end, die by themselves. No, He created them to mature with Him at the core of their being and at the core of their love for each other. He created them so that they could build a love nest centering on God and then establish the true Kingdom of Heaven on earth for all humanity. In this union, Adam, the man, represents heaven, and Eve, the woman, represents the earth. Therefore, although they are two separate persons, when they become one horizontally, heaven and earth are united. When these two people unite based on God's love, the cosmos is united automatically. (21-43, 1968.9.1)

Section 2. God's Absolute Requirements

Why did God create the universe? Because He wanted to feel joy through the created world. Although God is an absolute being, He does not feel joy alone. Joy cannot be experienced without an object partner. God does not require knowledge, money or power. Because God Himself is absolute and almighty, he does not need such things. No matter how science advances, it will never equal or surpass what God has created. The great universe exists in a certain hierarchy and in accordance with the laws of nature. When we consider the fact that God is the creator who operates this great universe, which is so far beyond the understanding or the science of human beings, we can safely say that God is also an absolute scientist.

Among all existence, there is no power that can compete with God's power. That is because God's power is almighty and absolute. Moreover, God is everlasting, unchanging and self existing. Considering all this, if God were to wish for something, what would He wish for? What would God desire that is beyond money, knowledge, or power? The issue at hand is: what is most desired by God? There is only one thing that God absolutely requires. That thing is absolutely necessary, not only to God but also to human beings, and that something is none other than true love. Then is it possible for God to receive love alone? Some people might say that God Himself can love by Himself if He wants to, but it is not so. What is required most by God and what no one knew, is that He needed an object partner with whom to share true love. (Blessed Family - 302)

If God is absolute, then the question arises: "Why did such an absolute being create human beings?" It was not for money, knowledge or power. He created human beings because that was the only way God could love. In this scenario, the relationship between God, the Father, and human beings, as the sons and daughters, forms an axis line. If this axis had been connected, it would have been impossible to separate human beings and God in their relationship of love. Do you think that a man or woman who has tasted God's original love would ever want to be separated from it?

Bees get a taste of nectar in the spring-

time. When you pull on the abdomen of a bee sucking on the nectar, the abdomen may be pulled off but the bee will not separate itself from the nectar. What would happen if you were to get a taste of such love? Even if you somehow separated yourself from it, you would return to it, clinging to it forever.

Once the foundation to operate the universe connecting to the axis of love is formed, the union of an individually perfected man and woman would form the foundation of a family centered on love. On the basis of this love, tribe, people, and world could be formed and realized. (137-57, 1985.12.18)

Section 3. God's Eternal Partner in Love

God created this world. If we were to ask Him, "Why did you create this world?" He would answer, "Because it is good." In other words, God created this world because He thought it was good, he felt joy from it, and wanted to receive more joy from it. How do you achieve goodness or joy from something? You receive joy in the form of love. Therefore, we come to the conclusion that God created this world to feel joy through the realization of love. For the realization of love, God created this world. God created the universe to feel joy through human beings and the creation becoming one and thus establishing a harmonious world of love. God feels joy from seeing and becoming one in love with human beings, forming true relationships of husband and wife and then establishing a family, tribe, people, nation and world of true love. That was God's ideal of creation. (Blessed Family - 302)

God's only dream was to realize the ideal of love. But the problem is that the ideal of love cannot be realized by God alone. Such things as love, happiness and joy cannot be realized through only one being. They cannot be realized without an object partner. (Blessed Family - 302)

Although God is an absolute being, He needs someone to be his object of love. His object of love is none other than human beings. When humankind comes before God as the object of love, with perfected love, God becomes the God of happiness, the God who has fulfilled the ideal of joy. (145-267, 1986.5.15)

The answer to the questions, "Why does God need human beings?" and "Why does He need human beings in realizing His ideal?" is: God needs human beings to perfect His love. What is God's love? We can say that God's love involves human beings liking each other eternally, but more importantly, it involves God liking human beings eternally. In this way, human beings are God's eternal objects of love. From the day God created Adam and Eve, God desired to love Adam and Eve as the object partners whom He would look at over and over again, and would wish to look at forever, to be with over and over again, and to live with over and over again. Having such object partners is God's ideal of creation. (Blessed Family - 302)

Section 4. The Purpose of Creating Adam and Eve

Genesis 1:27 says, "So God created man in His own image, male and female He created them." We can deduce from this that God has both male and female qualities. God needs an object because He cannot live alone. Therefore, He had no choice but to create this world. As a result, a man and a woman were created. (Blessed Family - 307)

God created Adam and Eve, first of all, to have physical form. Secondly God created Adam and Eve to perfect love. When Adam and Eve are perfected and become the substantial beings of love through which they can become one, God can come and reside with them, becoming the parent of perfected love to humanity. Then Adam and Eve, who are the substantial parents with visible form, can reproduce children and thus realize the ideal world. When that happens, the spirit world and the physical world are connected through humankind. This implies that God also created human beings for the purpose of connecting the spirit world and the physical world. So while Adam and Eve are on earth, God can reside with them in love as the true and substantial parent of humanity. Then when Adam and Eve pass on to the spirit world, He can continue to stay in the position of the parent with physical form through their lineage. It must, however, be clearly recognized that these plans were thwarted by the Fall of Adam and Eve. (Blessed Family - 307)

God is invisible and because God is invisible, He created Adam and Eve as His physical image. When Adam and Eve, in whose minds God resides, become perfect, marry, and bear children, God becomes the internal father and Adam the external father. When this happens, Adam resembles God completely. If Adam and Eve, who resemble God, had become the father and mother of humanity, it would have been clearly perceived throughout history that God, through their existence, does indeed exist. (Blessed Family - 307)

God created a man and a woman with the purpose of having them fall in love and unite into one. He did not create Adam for himself or Eve for herself. He created Adam for Eve and Eve for Adam. Also, God created Adam and Eve for his own love and joy. It was not for knowledge, power or money. The Almighty God does not need knowledge, money or power. He only needs love. (Blessed Family - 307)

God did not create Adam and Eve to give them knowledge or power, or wealth to live in affluence. The purpose of creating them was to establish them as the substantial beings of love. (Blessed Family - 307)

Section 5. The Time for Adam's and Eve's First Love

God told Adam and Eve "not to eat of the fruit," because it was not the time for them to love. Since they were still in their growth period, God gave the com-

mandment to wait until they became mature. (Blessed Family - 310)

People grow up longing to reach the time when they pass through adolescence. We must know the reason we have to wait to be married until after adolescence. It is possible for a man and a woman to come together in love anytime, so why do we need to wait? Because of love, this is the only course. Since we need to pass through adolescence in order to become mature, we need to fulfill certain conditions during that period. (Blessed Family - 310)

Then, what should have been Adam's and Eve's attitude toward their education? Because God is the parent of Adam and Eve, they should have obeyed him and followed Him wherever He went. However, they did not do so; instead, they left their original positions by disobeying Him. Since God is the Absolute Being, they should have followed and obeyed Him absolutely. (Blessed Family - 310)

God told Adam and Eve to be fruitful and to multiply. That means that only after their physical bodies and spiritual bodies had become fully mature, should they have become a loving husband and wife and had children. Adam and Eve, as the lords of all creation, should have acted according to their Heavenly Father's time table; in other words, they should have waited until they were mature both physically and spiritually. Adam and Eve were always together, even as their bodies started to become mature. There must have been times when Eve, frightened by something, would jump into the arms of Adam, or hide behind him. Under such circumstances, she would have felt safe and comforted in the arms of Adam, while at the same time having strong sexual urges towards him. Adam, too, would have felt the pleasure of Eve in his arms, and would have had sexual urges towards her, because her body was very different from his. In this situation, who initiated sexual actions first: Adam or Eve? It was Eve who had jumped into the arms of Adam because she was frightened. From that time on, their sexual contact began to increase gradually.

God created the universe with love. Therefore, Adam and Eve should have made the created world a community of love centering on God's love and connecting it to Him. Since this was their responsibility, Adam and Eve should have thought about how and with what attitude they would share the love permitted by God. As matters of love are extremely serious, this determined whether they would live or die. (Blessed Family -310)

Where does love begin? It begins from the perfection of the individual. From the point of view of the Principle, you can only love after you have become perfect. The relationship of love can begin only when one has passed through adolescence and has become mature enough to fulfill the responsibility of becoming one in harmony with the universe. In the case of Adam and

Eve, this did not occur. What kind of love was theirs? Their love was not love in the position to unify all creations in the universe. Their love was not mature. Their love should have been mature and natural. However, the sad fact remains that the love they shared was unnatural. (26-151, 1969.10.25)

Section 6. All Beings Are Perfected through Love

Individual perfection results from the continuous give and take action between the mind and the body, based on the foundation of love established by God at the beginning. Both the mind and the body should grow, mature, and then unite completely. Perfection can only be achieved when one's life is rooted in love, when it matures centering on love, and when that love puts out buds and bears fruit on that foundation. When the foundation of love is established in this way, God can then come and reside there, connected through love. Until love fully matures, the foundation to bear its fruits cannot be established.

All things were created according to the rules of love, and thus they continue to exist. When we look at plants alone, they bear fruit through the give and take action, or the circular action, between the stamen and the pistil in the flower blossom. This is true also for the animal kingdom and the human world; everything and everyone continue to exist through the circular motion of love. In this way, all things become perfected only after passing through the relationship of love. In other words, all beings can be perfected only through love. The human mind and body can unite into one only when they are in a position that conforms to the nucleus of God's love. Also, human beings can only completely mature when they enter the realm of God's love united in mind and body. Only then can they begin their journey of individual perfection as human beings originally intended at the time of creation before the Fall. (Blessed Family - 313)

When we explore the mind and the body, we find the mind to be oriented towards heaven and the body to be oriented towards the earth. When such a mind and body unite into one, what ideology is formed? We call this the cosmos-centered ideology. Do you know what this is? It is an ideology that wants to create a place where heaven and earth, the invisible world and the visible world, can unite into one.

If one wanted to dominate this cosmos, do you think it would be possible for that person to rule over the cosmos if his mind and body were not completely united? If his mind and body fail to become one completely, nothing can be achieved. When the mind and body become one centering on God, then God becomes the internal God and the person becomes the external God; the mind and the body become one centering on love. (Blessed Family - 313)

Adam must become one with God. Love is their link. Human beings are

the horizontal representatives of the existing world and God is the vertical representative, and love bonds the two eternally. When human beings become one in body with God, their heart and emotions are exalted in infinite joy and happiness. In the end, God and human beings become one through love. Human beings also become one with the world through love, and the realization of the ideal world fulfilling God's purpose of creation begins from there. (35-156, 1970.10.13)

At sixteen or seventeen years of age Adam and Eve had passed through adolescence and began to notice the opposite sex. Just as a person becomes enraptured in the fragrance of a flower in full bloom, as they matured Adam and Eve were drawn to the opposite sex. Even God becomes enraptured in this fragrance. When God's love and Adam's and Eve's mind and body become one, the nucleus of the universe is formed, and together they can travel the path upon which they can take charge of all kinds of love.

However, they strayed from that path. Had they not done so, they would have united into one completely and God would never have been able to leave them. Nor would Adam and Eve ever have been able to leave God. Consequently, their descendants would have been connected, generation after generation, forming a tribe, people, nation, and the world. This world would then be a world of grace, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. (Blessed Family - 310)

Section 7. What Human Beings Can Be Most Proud Of

God created a man and a woman. He intended for them to reach perfection, marry, become established as the heavenly husband and wife, and live in the heavenly kingdom. God's plan was to make Adam and Eve the first husband and wife in history and establish the foundation of the Kingdom of Heaven upon their relationship. If this plan had been realized, God's first two blessings, to be fruitful and to multiply, would have been achieved then and there. God gave Adam and Eve the power to multiply His children. Had they not fallen, they would never have passed sin on to humankind. Their children would have been born without sin and would have grown to perfection as sinless beings. What else would have occurred? By giving birth to such sinless children, Adam and Eve would have become the true father and true mother of humankind centering on God. They would have become the True Parents. (Blessed Family - 319)

If Adam and Eve had not fallen, but instead had reached perfection, they would have achieved not only individual perfection but also the perfection of heaven and earth. Moreover, a new family based totally on God's love would have been started. If a clan, tribe, people, nation, and world had emerged from this family, the world would have become a community of one large family serving God. The center of that community would have been God and Adam.

The everyday life and the life course of the family of Adam, centered on God, would have been recorded as the historical tradition. His lifestyle, customs, conventions, and background would have established the traditions for history. Such traditions would be bound forever with God's love.

God's love is the source of life and the origin of all ideals. People could not leave His embrace even if they wanted to. If, by any chance, they did leave, they would have no choice but to return. Even in this fallen world we see that when someone who has been living with their parents has to leave their parents and brothers and sisters, they become lonesome and miss them all the time. In the same way, when someone is linked to the love of God, who is the subject of life and ideals, they would not be able to leave God. If they ventured to leave God, they would feel so lonely and unhappy that they would never be able to feel joy. Therefore, they would have no choice but to become one in the realm of God's love. Under these circumstances, human beings can be proud of three facts: first, God is our father; second, we are the children of God who can receive His love; and third, we are the heirs to the universe created by God. People brag when they marry into a rich family. Compared to that, words cannot express how proud you would be if God were your father and you could receive His complete love. (Blessed Family - 319)

If Adam and Eve had established God's ideal family, God's will would have been realized. Adam's family would have served God as their father, becoming the family that would be the starting point of one united love as the ancestors of humankind. This family would have then become the basis up on which Adam and Eve would have united into one in love, thereby perfecting their ideals. (Blessed Family - 320)

Section 8. Adam's Family Should Have Set the Tradition as the True Family

If our human ancestors had not fallen, whose sons and daughters would you be? Without question you would have been born as God's sons and daughters. If Adam and Eve had not fallen, all human beings would have been God's true sons and daughters. You would not be people that are toyed with, dominated or slandered by your enemies as you are today.

The son of God has absolute power, and he represents the absolute authority and power of God wherever he goes. When a family is formed centering on this son, that family becomes God's family before which the entire cosmos should surrender. Moreover, when a tribe centered on that family comes into being, the whole of creation must safeguard that tribe and be assimilated into it. Due to the Fall, human beings not only lost their positions as the sons and daughters of God, but they are tormented by their enemies. If the first human ancestors had not disobeyed the commandment of God and had become one

with God forever, no one would be able to sever the relationship of love based on that unity. Once born as sons and daughters, and growing up as sons and daughters, no theory or doctrine could explain away or deny the father's identity. If someone were to question them about the identity of their father, even at gunpoint, they could not deny who he was. (Blessed Family - 330)

If Adam and Eve had not fallen, the first family of heaven would have been formed in the Garden of Eden, and that family would have prospered under God's sovereignty, immune to Satan's slanders. (Blessed Family - 330)

If Adam and Eve had not fallen, they would have received all of God's love. If they had united into one in God's love as the son and daughter receiving God's complete love, they would have given birth to children centering on God's love. Then, surrounded by God's true love, they would have established the traditions of the husband, of the wife, of the son, and of the daughter. If the tradition of the family based totally on God's love had been established, God's will would have been realized. (Blessed Family - 331)

By the will of God, Adam and Eve should have become perfect, received the Blessing, and, upon the basis of their family, established God's nation. They should have achieved perfection based on true love. If Adam and Eve had established their horizontal object partnership under God, the fulfillment of the purpose of creation would have been laid and that world would have extended to the cosmos. A world based on the tradition of oneness achieved through the union of Adam and Eve as husband and wife would then have been established. However, Adam and Eve disobeyed God's will and fell. (Blessed Family - 332)

CHAPTER TWO

The Way of Love in the Family

Section 1. God's Laws of Love Centering on the Family

Since the beginning of history, who has practiced true love focused on parents, true love focused on husband and wife, and true love focused on brothers and sisters? True love is absolute. (20-40, 1968.3.31)

The love of God is expressed as parental love, conjugal love and children's love. These three great loves make it possible for human beings to exist forever. These great loves transcend even the loftiest human view of love. When these loves are perfected, happiness is perfected. When they are lacking, misfortune sets in. This is why people become happy when these three great loves unite. Is a motherless person happy? That person's misery is equal to the emptiness he or she feels. Is a fatherless person happy? A fatherless person envies those who have a father. Happiness leaves no room for envy. The same is true for love. If you envy someone or something, you cannot say you are happy.

You cannot be happy without a father and mother. No matter how great a man's ideals may be or how much he boasts, he needs a woman. He needs a wife. When a husband and wife have lived happily together and then the husband suddenly passes away, the wife will shed tears. A woman cannot live without a man, and a man cannot live without a woman. (20-38, 1968.3.31)

Also, no matter how happy a husband and wife may be together, they will be miserable without children. Do you need only sons? You need both sons and daughters. But what if the parents have only one son and one daughter? A son needs an elder sister and an elder brother, and a daughter needs an elder brother and an elder sister. Furthermore, they each need a younger brother and a younger sister. Everyone needs elder and younger siblings, and without any one of them, the individual would be unhappy. A family wherein the younger sister, younger brother, elder sister and elder brother are all united will be protected by God. This is because such a family becomes the origin of a clan, a people and a nation. My father, mother, elder brother, elder sister, younger brother, younger sister and me total seven people. This underlies the significance of the number seven as the number of perfection. You should know that I am talking here about perfection in reference to

love. Why is seven the number of perfection? Why is it that the creation of heaven and earth taught by Christianity was completed based on the number seven? It is because of this. It is said that three is the number of heaven and four is the number of earth. The number three is established by my father, mother and me. Then what does the number four refer to? It refers to brothers and sisters. (20-40, 1968.3.31)

You should know that seven is the number of perfection. The Father, Son and Holy Spirit refer to Adam and Eve with God at their center. The Father refers to the connection of top and bottom – that is, the vertical relationship – and parental love represents heaven and earth. Your elder brother and elder sister refer to east and west, and your younger brother and younger sister refer to north and south. When these unite, a three-dimensional relationship is formed. This is the law of love. That is why there is no law of science that does not adhere to these mathematical principles. It is from God's laws of love that the fundamental concepts of the Principle of Creation arise. Once such laws of love are firmly established, peace will be realized. (20-40, 1968.3.31)

Section 2. The Reason Three Generations Must Coexist in the Family

I am proposing that the grandfather, grandmother, mother-in-law, father-in-law, sisters-in-law and grandchildren all live together. Living together with God, the three generations of formation, growth and completion will settle down. You can love God only when you know how to love your grandfather – not just your father and mother. You will love God only when you can love your grandfather more than your father and mother. So why is the husband indispensable? Why are parents indispensable? Why are sons and daughters indispensable? It is because only when you have all the members of the family can you attend God. The Principle says that you need to have parents and you need to have sons and daughters. You need parents, next, a married couple and then a baby. Why is all this necessary? It is only logical that we need parents, a spouse and children in order to form a relationship with God.

You should know clearly why you need parents, a spouse and children. You have to know this. To form a relationship with someone, sometimes I must go below the other person. Sometimes we're in the center. Sometimes I must go above the other person, and sometimes we're on the same level with each other. In other words, I must form relationships in all four directions. Even in the case of a grandson, when he relates to his grandfather with love, his grandfather will say, "Oh, good! Very good!" So the Unification Church has been working hard to make such families the standard, focusing on original love in order to establish the original world. It is amazing that this is finally being taught throughout the religious world. (128-17, 1983.5.29)

Why does a wife cry when her husband dies? Why do people weep just because they do not have children? They are not crying because they are disappointed. They are crying because the fundamental principle of the universe makes it necessary to have relationships in all directions – east, west, north and south. In other words, the force of existence in the universe consists of the force to support the ideal of reciprocation. This is why everything is engaged in give-and-take. Just as north and south interrelate with one another, the North Pole and South Pole interrelate with one another. Stars also interrelate with one another. Nothing can exist without a partner. Ideal beings united – that is, beings that have become completely one with each other – are supported by this universe. It is a principle that heavenly fortune embraces such entities so that they can continue forever.

Everything cooperates in this give-and-take action. That is why you need sons and daughters. Today, the West has accepted the idea that sons and daughters are unnecessary, but let's wait and see if that is right. You will find out in the spirit world. From where you stand, there is someone both above you and below you. You need the number three. You have to go through three stages. This is why everything comprises three stages. You need to have your parents, your couple and children. Not having children does not agree with the Principle of Heaven. When this is divided into two, there are three stages for men and three corresponding stages for women. By combining the two, an ideal world can be established with the unified number three. In other words, it is an ideal that includes grandfather and grandmother, father and mother, and me. The family ethic of the Unification Church stems from this belief. (70-76, 1974.2.8)

Section 3. Parents are the Origin of Love

Orphans do not have a relationship with their parents. Everyone wants to be loved. The ideal manifestation of that love is parents. We can say that a person who can neither receive parental love from his parents even though he wants to, nor love his parents even though he wants to, is very miserable. Suppose there is a person who is much less attractive than some local orphan. Even so, as long as that person can serve and devote himself to his parents, he can feel very fortunate by comparison. He might think, "One may be handsome, yet if one does not even have parents, of what benefit is that?" He might also think, "I may be ugly and disabled, but at least I am fortunate to have a mother and father." (39-231, 1971.1.15)

What on earth are parents? Why can the strongest, most intelligent son in the world not ignore his parents, even if they are a burden? Why can he not control them with just one finger or do whatever he wants? You should know this. Since he is the strongest and most clever, he could say, "Hey, you!" and challenge them with his wits, but he cannot do that. Where is

the origin of love? Where does love come from? From yourself? No. Love comes from parents. This is because the origin of love is not you, but your parents. There can be no result without a cause. So you know that when it comes to love, you are not the owner.

So when you come before your parents, you should say, "Yes, Mother and Father, you are right." When your parents remind you, "No matter how great your reputation is and how powerful you may be, you cannot do things that deviate from your duty to your mother and father," you will reply, "Yes, yes, yes, Mother and Father, you are right." Why? Because of love. It is because parents are the subject partners, and children are the object partners. The subject partner serves the object partner, and the object partner follows the subject partner. This is the Principle of Heaven. When this principle is breached, that house will collapse and end up worthless. However ignorant or uneducated a person may be, he knows the Principle of Heaven because he is born in accordance with heavenly nature. Therefore, even the strongest champion has to bow his head to his parents. (50-134, 1971.11.6)

Humankind continues to be plagued by conflicts based on power or knowledge. The time when the war of love can be waged has not yet come. This is why religious leaders say that their time will come when the end of the world approaches. When the end of the world comes, the power of the fist and the power of knowledge will pass away, and only the power of love will remain. The final age of worldly supremacy is none other than the Last Days. Can a strong elder brother come home and be the boss there? No. No matter how strong the elder brother may be, he cannot be the boss when he comes home. He may be a world champion in the ring, but he cannot be the boss at home. Even when an elder brother has several hundred doctorates, can he come home and be the boss? No, not even then. Why not? Because his parents are there. (50-134, 1971.11.6)

Section 4. The Reason We Need Brothers and Sisters

Why do we have brothers and sisters? Why do we need brothers and sisters? It is because with brothers and sisters, boys can watch their younger sisters and elder sisters, and from them learn how their mothers grew up; and girls can watch their naughty elder brothers and younger brother, and from them learn how their fathers grew up. This is called the love of brothers and sisters. So, you should love your siblings. Also, you should learn to love your siblings as you love your father and mother. You cannot love them if you don't learn how. So, through watching your brothers and sisters you learn how your parents grew up and you come to love them as your parents do. In this way, you will be able to love your mother and father even after you go to the next world. You need your brothers and sisters in order to be an owner of love without shame. Then, would it be better for brothers and

sisters to love each other more than their parents or less than their parents? It is better that they love one another more. Why is that so? Because watching and loving your siblings is like watching and loving your mother and father when they were growing up. When you do this, it fulfills the condition of loving your parents from their birth to their death. So these brothers and sisters are connected to each other through such love. That's why I think this way.

Then in the case of the parents, the more children they have, the more they can learn about their spouses. For example, in the case of the mother, as she sees her sons grow up she could think, "Oh, that is probably how my husband was when he was growing up." So, loving the children is essentially the same as loving the husband the way he was before she met him. Also the husband could think, "Ah, my wife would have been like this daughter! She is showing me how her mother was when she was young," and so he would learn from her. Through loving the children, he fulfills the condition of loving every aspect of his wife. The mother and father do not say, "Let us love only the boys and not the girls." They love their sons and daughters equally, without discrimination. So by having sons and daughters, a beautiful circle of love in the family is formed. The mother and father will treat the children equally. All parents are like this. So hating your brother or sister is a greater sin than hating your mother. This is the first rule in family education. (184-60, 1988.11.13)

Suppose one day you leave the house after having a fight with your brothers or sisters. The least you can do upon your return is to hold a party so that you can make them happy again. Ask for their forgiveness and tell them that you should love one another as you love your parents. Since brothers and sisters represent your mother and father, if your brothers or sisters are poor, help them and serve them as you would serve your mother. There is nothing more beautiful than this. The Kingdom of Heaven starts from there. (184-65, 1988.11.13)

Section 5. The Grandfather is in the Position of God in the Family

Today, the American system is a paradise for the young but not a paradise for the elderly. Because the American system is a paradise for young men and women – yet neither a paradise for children nor a paradise for grandfathers and grandmothers – everyone there is digging pits of hell that will lead them to ruin. This is happening because the American system does not fit the original form. (107-328, 1980.6.8)

In American families, the grandfather has to telephone the son before visiting him. What do people generally prefer? What would you like? When a beautiful daughter-in-law, with a loving heart, tries to buy the gray haired grandparents something better than she buys her loving husband, how beautiful and lovely this is! Although the grandparents are full of wrinkles, what a splendid sight

it is when a pretty daughter-in-law buys them things with even more joy than the joy she feels when she buys things for her beloved husband! Before long, the grandparents will give her everything they have kept hidden inside – everything to do with love. Who is the oldest grandfather in the world? It is God. So you learn love for that Grandfather from your own grandfather. By learning such a tradition, you can receive the treasure of love from all the secret storage rooms of the Grandfather God. How wonderful that will be! (107-328, 1980.6.8)

Representing God, a grandfather and grandmother are the most experienced in the world. They do not sleep very long because they are old. So you should think, "Oh, my grandfather is God who protects my family without sleeping! My grandfather has become old by protecting us! I can see his age by the wrinkles on his face." This is a beautiful thought. If you have such an old grandfather and grandmother in your family, your house will not catch fire or be robbed. If the grandparents are not sleeping, what are they doing? They are praying. They pray, "Oh God, bless my sons and daughters. Please bless them." While praying, they will guide you, saying, "Hey, So-and-So, it is dangerous to go out today. Please listen to me." They will let you know, "Do not go out today!" "Do not fight!" "Son, do not go anywhere." "Daughter and daughter-in-law, do not go far today." So do you think the grandchildren need such grandparents or not? When they love each other, the grandmother and grandfather will dance, the mother and father will dance, and the brothers and sisters will dance together. Those who live using this as their model are protected by the universe. If someone were to try to kill such a person, the universe would automatically prevent it. (107-326, 1980.6.8)

Parents need to get permission from the grandfather before sending their grandson anywhere. Parents cannot simply do whatever they want. This is because the grandfather stands in the position of God. (107-326, 1980.6.8)

Section 6. The Relationship Between Grandparents and Grandchildren

If a young grandchild comes home and asks in a bossy voice, "Hey, where did Grandpa and Grandma go?" how would you feel? Is it proper for him to demand, as soon as arrives, and in front of his mother and father and his brothers and sisters, to know, "Where are Grandpa and Grandma?" This is improper because he is speaking in an impolite manner. Here the grandparents are now over eighty years old, and this little brat audaciously stands firm in front of his father and mother and elder brothers and elder sisters, who are superior to him, demanding to know, "Where have Grandpa and Grandma gone?" Would any of them be shocked and scold him saying, "Where are your manners?"

Why do you think this happens? Normally, if someone did the same thing

in another situation, you would scold him or her saying, "How can you treat Grandpa like this?" But if the grandchild stands firm and asks again, you will be pleased. You will reply, "Okay, okay, so you want to see your grandfather, do you?" When he asks where his grandfather is, is he asking for rice cakes or some food? What does he have on his mind? He misses his grandfather. So is it good or bad to miss him? It is a good thing!

All of heaven and earth misses him. He misses them too; and why is this? As he looks around at his elder brothers and sisters, he wants to sit on their laps. But as he looks at the situation and as he studies the mood of his elder brother, it is clear that his brother would push him away after he had sat on his lap for just a few minutes. Also, when he looks at his father who is very tired, he knows from experience that after he has sat in his father's lap about ten minutes, his father would become irritated. He learns to sense such things quickly. But when it comes to his grandfather, or elderly people like his grandfather, he knows Grandpa will stay still even if he sits in his lap for an hour or two. Of all the family members, his grandfather will embrace him the most.

It is not a bad thing to be embraced and touched by his grandfather who says, "Your nose is like this. Your ears are like that." He is patted, caressed and touched all over, but he does not mind. How great that would be! How splendid this is! This is the same as the tip of a tree becoming one with the root. Then, if the main root and the main sprout come to like each other, what will happen? All the other roots and branches attached to the main ones will not be able to avoid liking one another. You should think about this. When the main sprout and main root like each other, that relationship can embrace everything! Who is the main root in the family? It is the grandson – the first grandson. So the grandfather always has his eyes on his eldest grandson. You should know this. (139-15, 1986.1.26)

Section 7. The True Meaning of the Saying, "All Goes Well if there is True Harmony in the Family."

In oriental teaching, there is a saying that goes, "All goes well if there is true harmony in the family." This is a good saying. When we talk about a home, of course it has people at its heart. There are the grandparents, parents and children, but this is not all. The house itself is a microcosm of all creation. All things are gathered here. When we say, "my home," we normally think of it as the place where my mother and father and wife and children are. But my home is not just this. There would also be my grandparents, and the house itself and the yard. The surrounding environment harmonizes well with this microcosm of creation. This is essential for happiness.

If grandparents are in an environment that is not harmonized, they do not feel good. The sight of a grandfather and grandmother laughing with each other cannot be compared to the

noisy laughter of a young couple. The deep laughter of wrinkled grandparents is quite dignified. You may not know this, but all things come together in harmony through the grandfather and grandmother's laughter as they harmonize with each other. The grandfather's laughter is deep and hearty. When he gestures, his movements are slow, but broad, high, deep and large.

Everything should be connected through the three stages of top, middle and bottom to bring about any harmony. That is why harmony does not come from a straight line linking two points on a horizontal level. That which goes through two points is called a line, and just two points cannot bring about the beauty of harmony. Would there be harmony when there is just a straight line? It has to curve and bend. So there can be harmony only when something goes through three points. So we have the grandfather, the father in the middle and then those who are underneath. Normally we think of a family as consisting of four generations. You have the grandfather and grandmother, father and mother, your own couple and then your sons and daughters.

We have a saying that refers to serving both parents and grandparents. How many levels are there? There may be five generations in a family, but normally there are four – your grandfather, your father, your own couple and then your sons and daughters. With this in mind, the Unification Church Principle introduces the three stages of formation, growth and completion. This teaching deals with living in harmony and declares, "All goes well if there is harmony in the family." Why is this? Is it because it sounds nice? Is it because someone wanted to be poetic? No. That is not the case. Harmony in the family means that four generations revolving around the grandparents unite – top and bottom, east and west, north and south, front and back, and left and right – and will live together in the joy of laughter. (139-12, 1986.1.26)

CHAPTER THREE

The Family Is the Model for the Kingdom of Heaven

Section 1. The Family is the Central Model for All Beings

When you stand in the world of space, you need top and bottom, left and right, and front and back. Only then is the status of your position stable. Your shape will vary depending on the position in which you stand: top and bottom, left and right, front and back. When dealing with matters that concern the relationships of top and bottom, left and right, front and back, and also problems in the family, nation and world, there is only one solution. Just as there has to be top and bottom, left and right, and front and back with the individual at the center, there also have to be parents and children, husband and wife, and brothers and sisters.

The same applies in a nation. With the leader of the nation at the center, all families should embrace the civilizations of east and west, and the civilizations of north and south, and all the people of the world as their brothers and sisters, and eventually establish a family model. This model is the same for all. You yourselves are the center of that model. This model represents a principle that requires that from you should come your family, which then expands to the nation, world, heaven and earth, and all the way to God. You not only want to be the center of the universe, you can be the center. In the same way, the family is the center of the universe. If you think of heaven as the parents, then earth represents the children. When considering east and west, the east symbolizes the man and the west the woman. So after marriage, the woman goes to the place where her husband is wherever it may be. This is similar to the west reflecting the sunlight that shines from the east.

It is the same with the relationships of brothers and sisters. When the eldest brother leads a task, the younger brothers and sisters will cooperate. Therefore each person should be in a parent-child relationship, a conjugal relationship and a sibling relationship. In other words, these three relationships must meet at one point. The central point is one. The centers for top and bottom, left and right, and front and back should not be different. If their centers are different the relationships of top and bottom, left and right, and front and back will all be unbalanced. So top and bottom, left and right, front and back, and the common central point add up to the number seven. To form the number seven in this way means to be a family that is unit-

ed in true love with God at the center and where all these things form a complete sphere bringing about harmony and unification. We often say seven is a lucky number. So when we hear this about the number seven it seems believable. As long as true love never changes, this central core will turn forever without changing, realizing the ideal of the true family.

Also since everything is connected to the core, then each position, one, two, three, four, five, six and seven from this central core are equal. If the grandfather and his sons and daughters want something and the grandchild is not against it, then all three generations will come to want it. The grandfather and grandmother, husband and wife, and sons and daughters all follow the center. In terms of love, we say that the parent-child relationship is one, the conjugal relationship is one, and the sibling relationship is one. They are one body. What are these relationships revolving around? They are revolving around the true love of God who is the center of love. Based on true love, the parents and children, husband and wife and brothers and sisters all become one. In this way the value of everything becomes equal. (299-114, 1999.2.7)

Section 2. The Family is the Textbook of Love through Which We Can Connect with Universal Love

What is the universe? Everything in the created world is designed as a sort of training aid to help God's beloved sons and daughters find the ideal of love. This is why everything exists in reciprocal relationships. Minerals are based on the reciprocal relationship of subject and object partners and so are atoms. Protons and electrons also exist based on the reciprocal relationship of subject and object partners. Without reciprocation they cannot continue to exist. Without give and take action they cannot exist eternally. Therefore, the universe is a world created in such a way that its center can only be reached through human beings. (137-59, 1985.12.18)

What is the universe? It is an expansion of the family. If you look at a family that has completely realized the ideal of family love, it has a top, middle and bottom (parents, husband and wife, and children), left and right, and front and back. This is the principle. So when we talk about top and bottom we mean the parents and children, when we talk about left and right we mean the husband and wife, and when we talk about front and back we mean the brothers and sisters. Through what do they all become one? It doesn't happen through power, knowledge or money. Then what can bring it about? It is love. This is an absolute truth. Otherwise the sphere cannot be formed. Then what are the top, middle and bottom in our family? They are a textbook of love. They are a textbook of love through which we can encounter universal love. Go out into society and put it into practice. How should we love? Jesus said, "Love your neighbor as your-

self." How should we follow this teaching? We are not sure. When you go out into the world and meet a grandfather, treat him as your own grandfather. Treat people like your own mothers, like your own fathers or like your own sons. When you go out into the world you should all live like this. The people of the top, middle and bottom, front and back, and left and right are all displayed in the exhibition hall of the world. You should know that the world is an exhibition of people. If you can love everyone with such love, God will dwell in the midst of that love. (128-22, 1983.5.29)

What is the Kingdom of Heaven? It is the place where you love the people of the world as your own family, and people who do this are the people of the Kingdom of Heaven. Your grandfather and grandmother, your mother and father, your wife, your brothers and sisters, and your children – what are these four generations? They are the textbook through whom you can deeply experience love, the true love of the universe as people of the Kingdom of Heaven. The family is the foundation, a type of textbook that teaches you this love. (129-96, 1983.10.1)

We can not live without learning the love of the universe. God has prepared things such as a textbook or scripture containing promises which openly say, "Love your grandmother and grandfather. Your grandmother and grandfather on earth are sent as representatives of the grandmothers and grandfathers in the spirit world. Therefore if you love them, I will take it as if you had loved all grandmothers and grandfathers."

Next God says, "Since your mother and father represent the countless mothers and fathers of the world, as a textbook and model of love, if you love them to the utmost, I will take it as a condition of you having loved all mothers and fathers. Furthermore if you as a man, representing all men, love a woman who represents all women, it will be a condition of having loved all women." Next He says, "I will take your loving your sons and daughters as you having loved all sons and daughters." Therefore the family is the training center to receive such training.

It is a training process for loving the world in accordance with the scriptures. We can ask the trainees if now they will go out to the world and love the grandmothers and grandfathers of the world in place of their own grandfather and grandmother, and if they say "yes," this will save the world. (130-273, 1984.2.5)

Section 3. A Training Ground of Love for Entering the Kingdom of Love

God's will is to realize the kingdom of love. If God's will is to develop and globalize the ideal world of love, the family is the experimental ground where you earn credits, all the way from an elementary school certificate to a bachelor's degree and PhD. The family expands to the world. If you look at the world carefully, you will see that it is a world where

grandfathers and grandmothers live, a world where adults like your uncles and aunts live, a world where people like your elder brothers and elder sisters live, a world where youths live, and a world where children live. So these places where old, middle-aged, young people and children live are larger expansions of the family. (147-281, 1986.10.1)

The family is the smallest unit within the training center and is also a textbook for entering the Kingdom of Heaven. It has all the levels: the grandfather's level, mother's level, couple's level and sibling's level. These levels expand into larger groups of grandmothers and grandfathers, mothers and fathers, your own peers, and your sons and daughters, and together they form humanity.

Only families that can love all human beings as their own spouses and as their own parents, and serve them as their own sons and daughters, can inherit the Kingdom of Heaven. This is amazing. The right to inherit all the power and authority of heaven and earth created by God lies here. (143-285, 1986.3.20)

The family is a textbook of love through which at the time of death you receive the right to be registered at the Palace of Peace and the Kingdom of Heaven.

The family is a training ground of love. The extension of this family is the world. The world is made up of smaller worlds: there is a grandfathers' world, a grandmothers' world, a world of fathers and mothers, there are husbands' and wives' worlds and sons' and daughters' worlds. When these combine we have the whole world. Thus if you love the people of the whole world as you love your family and as you love God through the family, this will make a straight road to the Kingdom of Heaven. Thus the first commandment is, "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind." And the second commandment is, "You shall love your neighbor as yourself." If you love God and love humanity, everything will be accomplished. If you cannot do it, your spiritual training will have been in vain. No matter how great a religion's spiritual discipline may be, if it does not know how to love God, humankind and the whole universe it will fail the test.

In the family you should deeply experience love by going through the official course of the training center which is an encapsulation of the whole universe and then expand this and love the world. You have inherited this from your family, your training ground, where you were raised with your mother and father. Therefore if you love your parents more than your wife, love your sons and daughters more than your wife, love humanity more than your wife, and love God more than your wife, everything will be accomplished. This doesn't mean that you should abandon your wife. If you love in this way, all the recipients of that love will come to love your wife as well. Is there a more glorious place than this? If you want to love your wife, follow this way. (143-285, 1986.3.20)

Section 4. The Family is a Model for the Heavenly Kingdom

What kind of fortune should a person in the child's position receive? They should inherit the fortune of the grandparents and parents. Why does one need grandparents? We need grandparents because they represent the living history of the past. The parents represent the present and the children symbolize the future. Children contain east and west and also north and south. They are also the center of the whole. The center of the grandparents, the center of the parents, the center of the children and the center of God – all these are founded on true love.

Thus, loving your grandparents and respecting them means to learn and to inherit all the past. You learn the present from your father and by loving children you learn about the future. What do you inherit through your grandfather and grandmother, and mother and father? You inherit true love.

Although your grandfather and grandmother are old, they are united in true love and so your mother and father are united. So you should be like them and inherit the future. We absolutely cannot inherit the future without becoming a true family. When we look at these three generations, it is like looking at the universe. The love of the universe resides in the true family that represents the present and future.

When we look at the animal world, male and female animals love each other, and this is a textbook from which we learn about the love of the universe. Without a grandmother and a grandfather we feel unstable. Only with them can we move straight to the Kingdom of Heaven. Grandparents, mother and father, and children will all go to the Kingdom of Heaven.

Those who have loved the true grandparents, the true parents, the true children, the true family, the true nation and the true universe will go to the Kingdom of Heaven. The model and textbook for all this is the family. (162-140, 1987.4.5)

The family is a type of educational material which teaches us how to establish the Kingdom of Heaven. It comes from heaven. If a person loves all the people of his grandfather's age in the world as his own, he will go to the Kingdom of Heaven. If he loves the people of his parents' age as his own, he will be able to travel freely throughout all the nations. He will have no boundaries even when he goes to the spirit world. If he thinks of the young people of all nations as his own sons and daughters, he will be able to travel freely within the Kingdom of Heaven even though there are twelve pearly gates and directions.

Therefore, the family is a textbook which shows us how to make a connection with the Kingdom of Heaven. When you apply it to the nation, you will become a patriot, when you apply it to the world, you will be a saint, and when you practice it in heaven and earth, you will become God's children, or holy sons and daughters. People have such a desire. (137-77, 1985.12.18)

You should be able to embrace the sons and daughters of all races as well as their grandsons and granddaughters. In this way, you should stand in the position to become the owners of the family who, as true parents, love the people of the world with true love. By standing in the position to represent the family that practices true love and is connected to the original parents through God's love, you can finally enter the Kingdom of Heaven. (176-209, 1988.5.9)

Section 5. The Family Brings Together the Love of Three Generations

The family encompasses history, the present and the future. So what is the ultimate point that God has sought for six thousand years? It is the family – the family where love is interconnected and where all are united in love. Everything that exists comes under its dominion.

We cannot cut our relationship with this absolute source of love. The establishment of such a family was the original mission that God gave Adam and Eve at the time of creation. God did not want them to merely end up as a man, Adam, and a woman, Eve, but instead dreamed of a new family where they would be united. This is the first starting point towards establishing men and women. Thus to be able to enter the Kingdom of Heaven safely, you have to find a family and within the realm of that family in this world, enter and live in a place where you can feel satisfied in God's love. Only then can you go beyond this world as well. (30-85, 1970.3.17)

In order to form the family realm of love you have to be unconditional. The parents represent the past, the husband and wife represent the present, and the children represent the future. Loving one partner during your lifetime is the equivalent to God loving the world. It is a place where in oneness the parents, a couple, and the children offer their love as an example representing heaven and earth and tell their descendants to follow them. The original homeland of the heart, the place where heavenly affection is felt will be remembered in heaven and earth. (30-78, 1970.3.17)

What has God been looking for up until now? He has not been seeking a subject partner; rather He has been looking for an ideal object partner. He has been looking for those who resemble God and possess the inner and outer aspects of the world He created. What is the starting point that leads to such a result? It is the family. There is nothing that can represent the universe better than the family. To be one with the parents is for past and present to meet. Here, you can love the past by loving your parents, love the present by loving your partner, and love the future by loving your children. Therefore, you can deeply experience the love of three generations. The place where these three kinds of love are concentrated is the family. (30-80, 1970.3.17)

Then where does life in the Kingdom of Heaven begin? It is the family. It does

not unfold somewhere else. The Kingdom of Heaven is just a three-dimensional expansion of the family and not something that goes beyond the family realm. Therefore when you embrace your husband or wife, you should think that this is a man of the world becoming one with a woman of the world. The place where you can make the condition of having loved mankind is none other than the family. You should live your life this way. To love your parents is to connect history with the present and to pave the road for God to come to you. Therefore you have to love your parents. To love your parents is to connect the human beings of history with yourself as an inhabitant of the present, that is to unite the past and the present. Furthermore loving your children centering on yourself is to connect the present with the future. And the philosophy that practices and sings the praise of such love for a thousand and tens of thousands of years is Unification thought. (30-82, 1970.3.17)

Section 6. The Family is the Training Ground of the Heart

We cannot live separate from the heart. Even if you are the president of a country or possess global authority, you would not be able to live if you had no place to express your heartfelt joy. You would not be able to feel the deepest satisfaction from the people who are under your command, your officers or the people who follow you. You must feel it in your family. You should be able to return home and feel joy through your wife and children. In such a way you should be proud of this joy in front of others. This joy is a primal joy; not a secondary joy. It is the same with God. Even if He was to restore the whole world, without a family He would not feel joy. So we need our families after all. (25-85, 1969.9.30)

Parents should be the head of the family and teachers should be the head of the educational institutions which represent society. Parents raise you by giving you milk thereby assisting your physical development as well as helping you emotionally. Then what is school for? It trains you for your future life in society. If the family is the training ground of the emotions, then school is the experimental training ground of society. But society is not where training ends. Where does it end? It ends with the nation. The nation has a president. Why is it that people miss the president and want to be near him? When they have experienced everything, from the family to the society, they go on to the next level. The president is the fruit of the third stage after the formation and growth stages. A seed divides, sends roots down and a shoot up, and then, through circulatory action, growth begins. After such division comes a synthesis when flowers and fruit are produced.

Schools raise the people needed by the nation by educating the qualified elite to serve the nation. They are training and experimentation sites. Training is not real life but a preparation stage. You should not make the wrong prepa-

rations. What is the family? It is a training ground for the heart. It is a place where you train your heart to love. This is why you should live affectionately like brothers and sisters at school and also live affectionately like brothers and sisters in the nation. Parental education is needed at school, in society and also by the nation. Parents should pass everything in the realm of heart on to their children. They should create a foundation of heart for their children by teaching them to follow their parents' footsteps in living in certain ways in the family, the society, and in the nation. (180-130, 1988.8.22)

When you look at a family, it is not necessarily a good one just because it has a good house and a good environment. Conversely, no matter how bad a family's environment may be or how shabby its house may be, if it offers you peace and you are able to connect all things in your life to it, then it is a good family. It has a foundation of heart upon which the parents and children live for the sake of each other. This is the original homeland for our memories and the source of motivation for all living. Therefore it becomes the basis for determining our happiness in life. (29-16, 1970.2.15)

Section 7. The Family is Our Eternal Original Hometown

Family, the family is a good place. Why is it good? It is a good place because my mother and father are there. It is a good place because my elder sister and elder brother are there. It is a good place because my younger brother and younger sister are there, and it is a good place because my relatives are there. Thus, human beings feel nostalgia for their hometown and the land of their original hometown. They feel more deeply about their hometown than they do for the nation. The place you long for even when you live in the Republic of Korea is your hometown. What place do you long for even though you like Korea, even though you want to live in Korea, and even while you are living in Korea? It is your hometown. Hometown, what kind of place is your hometown? It is a place where your heart is lifted up in four directions and three dimensions. What is that heart? It is a place where you are tied up by love. Upward, your mother and father are tying you up; left and right, the bond between husband and wife is tying you up; downward, your sons and daughters and relatives are tying you up tight with three dimensional love. This is the original hometown.

People cannot help but long for their original hometown because they look upon this starting point of happiness based on love as the best. Then, what kind of place do you think God's original hometown is? What do you think God's land of original hometown is on this earth? We should think about these questions. If God is the God of love, He must surely have prepared a starting point for living on this earth, and where is this starting point? To know this, we must understand how God has prepared that starting point. What kind of place

can become the starting point of the original hometown where God's family can be created? It is none other than a place where a son dwells who understands God as his real father. In other words, it is a place where the son, the only-begotten son who can monopolize God's love, exists. Also it is a place where such a daughter dwells. It is a place where such a son and a daughter marry and form a complete family. (23-151, 1969.5.18)

Then who should be in the original hometown? Those who you miss should be there. Your parents should be there and your brothers and sisters should be there. And those who you long to meet should be there. When you want to live with them there, would you be satisfied if you just saw them for a moment? Would you be satisfied if you met and just saw them for a short time? When meeting and living with them, you should not be tired even if you live with them for eternity. You should go and find such a place. This is the Kingdom of Heaven that today's religions pursue. (23-80, 1969.5.11)

Today, the reason we long for the land of our original hometown is that in that hometown there are parents, brothers and sisters, and relatives, who are closer to us than anyone else. They always guide us; they welcome us as they did in the past whenever we visit them, and they sympathize with us, console us and receive us with joy when we are having difficulties. Without this welcome though, even if you longed for your original hometown and returned there, your desperate longing heart would vanish, and you would go back with feelings of deep regret. You should know this. In the original hometown there have to be people who will welcome you. (23-80, 1969.5.11)

Section 8. The Family Is the Final Standard for Completing the Cosmos-centered Ideology

Everything divides from one into many, which eventually merge into a larger whole. In other words, one divides into many and then unites again into one. From here it divides again and becomes something even larger. Families exist within this larger created object. These families all have the same form as each other. The family is the place where the relationship of husband and wife is established and the place that unites the husband and wife. The tribe is a place that unites families, and the race is a place that unites clans. Races combine to form one nation. Here families play the central role. (26-189, 1969.10.25)

When the family is expanded, it becomes the horizontal world. This is why no society can manage without the family. If families cannot be restored, the world cannot be restored. Next we must realize the cosmos-centered ideal through these families. The word cosmos combines heaven and earth. Heaven and earth are like a person's mind and body. The mind and body must become one. Just as a subject partner needs an object

partner, one man needs one woman. The union of a man and a woman leads to a family. God's foundation of love will not be attained without working through this family. (26-189, 1969.10.25)

The cosmos-centered ideology is a philosophy that unites the mind and body forming a family as the main body of love, and connects that idea to the spirit world and physical world. The character *ju* (宙) of *cheon ju* (cosmos) means a house. This is why we are using the word cosmos-centered ideology. Cosmos combines the spirit world and the physical world. What relationship does it have with us? We need a family. If you fail to be at one in your family, you have nothing to do with the cosmos-centered ideology. The family serves as the final standard for completing the cosmos-centered ideology. Those who cannot sing songs of peace and sing praise for happiness here will become miserable people either on this earth or in the spirit world. (26-189, 1969.10.25)

From where is the Kingdom of Heaven realized? It is realized from our families. Then what kind of ideology do we have? We have a family-centered ideology. The word cosmos-ism (cosmos-centered ideology) contains *cheon* meaning heaven and *ju* meaning house; so it means the ideology of heaven's house. Only then does the meaning of the cosmos (*cheon ju*) become clear. The sixty-six books of the Bible are filled with words that desire an ideal family. Furthermore what is it that all men desire? It is to have an ideal wife. Also the greatest desire of a woman is to meet an ideal husband. No matter how proud and famous a woman who has a doctorate may be, her desire is to meet an ideal man, an ideal man she can love and with whom she can have her beloved sons and daughters. This is the root of happiness. The ideal of the Unification Church does not lie somewhere else. The beginning is the family and the conclusion is the family. (26-102, 1969.10.18)

What kind of ideology is the cosmos-centered ideology? It is the true parent-centered ideology. After all, these are both ideologies upholding parents. This is the ideology of our house, the ideology of our nation, and the ideology of your individual self. Had human beings not fallen, whose ideology would rule the world? It would be the Adam-centered ideology. This ideology is none other than the way of true parents. It is the ideology of the mother and father. There cannot be an ideology higher than this. Hence the Unification Church should link matters of the heart with heavenly ideology through the way of true parents within the boundary of the original ideal family. As long as families that have internalized such an ideology remain, the Unification Church will not perish. (26-201, 1969.10.25)

CHAPTER FOUR

Our Course of Life Centered on Love

Section 1. Why Are Human Beings Born?

If we ask ourselves whether life or love is first, we can claim each to be first. But which do you think really comes first? It is love that comes first. Relating this to the core of the universe, in order for something to have value, there must be an original flow of love. (143-277, 1986.3.20)

When we examine where life comes from, we must ask the question as to which comes first, life or love. Until now we have not been able to discern this clearly. Love comes first, then life. Because what comes second must meekly surrender to what comes first, it is natural that we offer our lives for the sake of love. This is the way things are. This then provides an answer as to the true course for our life. Since our life is born in love, the conclusion is that we must walk the way of love and die for love.

The purpose of human life is to find the love that the macrocosm, not the microcosm, is able to welcome. It is to be born, to love and to die in the midst of the great universal love that God, creation, our parents, and the angelic world all acknowledge. This is how I see it. (Blessed Family - 1062)

Human beings are not born based on their own choice. Then, are they born due to their parents' wishes? No. They are born due to God's desire. They are born through the love of their parents, which represents God's love. The person, who is born as a new life through parental love, representing God's love, is I.

Love has the power to create everything. The one who is born as the center of the whole universe by receiving all the love of the universe is none other than I. The highest purpose of life is to be born through love, be raised in love, live by love, and to leave love behind. The most valuable thing to do is to fulfill, in the family, the rules of love that lie at the center of the universe. (Blessed Family - 1062)

You should understand why human beings are born. They are not born for the sake of knowledge or political power. They are born because of love and from love. Then what makes love so great? It is the fact that love is the original source of life. You are born in the midst of your parents' love.

You are not born out of your parents' desire for money or knowledge. Since you are born in love like this, you should bear fruits of love. This is why you need

children. A husband and wife become complete when they become one and have sons and daughters as their object partners. (Blessed Family - 1062)

Human beings cannot exist apart from love. Therefore, we can say that "I" live on the foundation of love. All things also originate in God's love. The existence of all things began on the foundation of love, so it is undeniable that human beings, as the center of the created universe, must also have begun in love. (Blessed Family -1062)

Since human beings begin in love and mature through love, they cannot live separated from the standard of love. (Blessed Family -1062)

Section 2. Life in its Original Form

What do you think is the cause of human existence? The cause of human existence is love. Then where do you think the purpose of human existence lies? The purpose of human existence lies in completing the ideal of love. Human beings came into being through love, and so their purpose is to perfect love by forming a foundation of love and expanding and connecting it. In other words, since the beginning is love, the purpose has to be reached through love as well. For this, a man and a woman in partnership must become one in love and connect front and back, left and right, and above and below. (Blessed Family -1062)

No matter how firmly we have determined to become an absolute being and establish an absolute purpose, this will be useless unless we are happy. Our daily life should be happy.

We live for the sake of the purpose. When we have achieved the purpose, something new will exist that is greater than existence itself. What is it? What is most precious for a man and woman? It is love. Love is the key element needed to experience happiness. No matter how lofty a person's purpose may be, if he fails to establish a love that can take dominion over his purpose, he will have to pursue a new purpose. Purpose cannot stand above love. (29-130, 1970.2.26)

What are you living for? There will be some who say they live to eat and there will be some who say they live to work or they live without a purpose. What do human beings live for? If you say you live for the sake of love, how great this answer is! Human beings are born as the fruit of love, live in love, and return to the eternal love of God's bosom. This is the original life of creation. (Blessed Family -1064)

One is born through love and grows up in love. Next, he leaves the love of his parents and finds and connects to the love of a partner, which is a love in another dimension. We can call parental love the formation-stage love and conjugal love the growth-stage love. No matter how much a couple may be in love, they cannot see the completion of their love until they have children. This

is why they want to have children. This is completion-stage love. Therefore, the process of going through parental love, conjugal love, and children's love is the fundamental core of human life and the original path of God's ideal of love at creation. (48-11, 1971.8.31)

Life is born from love. One is born from love, grows up in love while being loved by his parents, meets a beloved wife and loves her, and dies in that love; this is what is called human life. Therefore, originally there should have been no sorrow or pain in human life. (Blessed Family -1062)

Originally, the focal point of the universe is the place where all vertical and horizontal combinations of love come together so that parental love, conjugal love, and children's love can unite. This becomes the point upon which the entire universe is focused and where the directions of all cells in the universe are oriented. All the spirits in the spirit world will be focused on this. Moreover, they will protect this place so no one can invade it. If this place is destroyed, it will be catastrophic. So a certain form is needed in order for it to remain intact. In the Unification Church, this form is called the four-position foundation. (Blessed Family -1062)

Section 3. For Human Beings, the Eternal Element of Life is Love

You shouldn't forget that while you lived as an embryo, you not only received nutrition from your mother but you also received love from her. Likewise, people living on earth are not only receiving physical nutrition from the universe but also love from God, who is the essential element of life. (Blessed Family -1062)

Just as all plants absorb sunlight as an element of life, love is an element of life for people. Our hope is that the Kingdom of Heaven on earth or the Kingdom of Heaven in heaven be built where we can live eternally in love and in adoration. (Blessed Family -1062)

Human beings are born through love and grow through their childhood while receiving love. After a certain stage of growth, parental love is not enough, and their love expands horizontally through the love among brothers and sisters and the love of the tribe. In other words, they grow to maturity while receiving all kinds of love in heaven and earth. When they reach young adulthood, they particularly thirst for love with the opposite sex. Engaging in this love leads them to a more comprehensive love, through which they finally find the center of love. (Blessed Family -1062)

The paths that man and woman walk exist because of love and for the sake of love. My path is the path of love. I move in order to attain love, keep love, and form an environment of love. It is also for the sake of love that women put on cosmetics and receive massages. Wanting something and doing work are all for the sake of love. We overcome hardship

and move on in order to attain precious love. (Blessed Family -1066)

From the time we are born, we are receiving parental love. As long as our parents are alive, they love us at any stage of life, be it the period of childhood, the period of youth, or the period of middle age. When we grow up receiving parental love, horizontal love of husband and wife is bound to happen to each of us. (Blessed Family -1062)

What do you think marriage is? It is a school, a place where the men learn something they did not know about women, and women learn something they did not know about men. All their grades should be A's in order for the husband and wife to be pleased. You have sons and daughters for the sake of learning how to love the world. Without them, you cannot be connected to the future.

Your sons and daughters are given to you as educational materials through which you can be connected to the future world. Fulfilling your filial duties to your ancestors and grandfather and grandmother is like receiving education from the spirit world. All these things are connected through love. The grandfather and grandmother, husband and wife, and sons and daughters are all connected through love. Just like the blood vessels in the human body flow up and down, you can go up and down all the way to your ancestors of 10 million generations in the spirit world and also reach your distant descendants through this. So you should know that this is how spirit world and the universe are organized. All things will be governed in this way. We can say that becoming a servant of love and a slave of love is the greatest happiness. (Blessed Family -1062)

Section 4. What is God's Love?

Try to discover God's love. How can we characterize God's love? It can be compared to a warm spring day where white clouds gently float in the sky, heat rises from the ground, insects fly around, ants crawl in and out to see the world, pussy willows shoot out by the stream, frogs sing new spring songs, bees swarm and butterflies flutter. You feel intoxicated in such an environment and feel sleepy, but in reality you are awake and feeling so good that you want to stay like this forever.

When God finds His ideal object partner, He gets the same feeling, as if He is in a beautiful garden of flowers where butterflies and bees fly around. When thinking of this, do you feel good or bad? These dull-witted men may not be aware of this. It feels good.

When you run into someone you are pleased to see, you hold his hand firmly and shake hands. When someone joyfully says, "Long time no see!" and holds your hand firmly, do you feel good or bad? If there is someone who says he feels bad, just kick him, saying, "You jerk!" When you are glad to see someone, do you hold hands tightly or not? Do you like it when someone grasps your hand firmly? You want to like it, but maybe you really do not. You have

to know something to like it, and if you do not know it, then how can you like it? Be honest! If your husband loves you, you do not need anything else. You live clinging tightly to your husband. It is always great to see a man and a woman firmly holding hands, especially when the man's hand is as rough as a cow's front hoof. When watching movies, we enjoy seeing scenes like that. If the woman says to the man, "Oh, you have pretty hands," the man will be offended. This is how things are. Love is eternal. Love is united, not divided. You become one. When a man and a woman become a couple and love each other, they are bonded together. Of course this does not happen literally, but in heart they reach a level even higher than this. That is God's love. If you live with such love, will you be united or not? Think about it. Everything is destined to become one. (Blessed Family -1062)

When a man and a woman fall in love, all kinds of things happen, right? But if you find a way to know God's love and really taste it, then His love cannot be compared to anything in this world. If there is someone who has tasted this love, no amount of difficulty or sorrow can defeat him. Such a realm of absolute liberation should exist, should it not? The question is how to find it. (39-240, 1971.1.15)

God's love can largely be divided into three great forms of love. They are parental love, conjugal love, and children's love. The center where these three forms converge into one is God's love. (173-278, 1975.11.23)

Section 5. God's Blessing Allows You to Inherit Love and Joy

A glorious new morning will dawn when God assumes a physical body. The time He can love His grandchildren is a time more glorious than the time He can love His sons and daughters. How do you think God expressed His joy to Adam after having created him? God had to teach Adam about His parental joy, but that can be learned only when the children have their own sons and daughters. Children cannot know what parental love is like, but they do come to understand after having babies and a family. They understand that their parents loved them while raising them. Therefore, the day when your child takes a spouse is a day of glory, and the day your child has a child is a day of glory. (Blessed Family - 934)

You should know God's love. You should experience your parents' love and learn how to serve them. You should all experience conjugal love with your spouses and learn how to serve them. You should know your children's love. Do not just give orders to your children, but learn how to understand and serve them as well. Only then can you understand God's love. Without children, you are in an incomplete state. You cannot understand God's love. You cannot understand how much God loved human beings, His children. Furthermore, with-

out being a husband, you cannot know the wife, and without being a wife, you cannot know the husband. Children do not know what parents' love is like until they become parents. So without sons and daughters, you cannot be true parents. (133-138, 1984.7.10)

Parents want their children to be married because they want to bequeath to them and completely teach them of parental love. When parents die, they leave their real selves behind with their descendants. This is why they need descendants. Love is something that continues forever. Since love is the highest human desire, everyone wants to inherit it with their arms wide open. When parents bequeath their love to their descendants, they can stand proudly before God in the spirit world. It is through the family that love becomes complete. Going to the heavenly kingdom through the family means that the realm of oneness of love has been realized. (Blessed Family - 934)

People should follow this principle. Seeds are sown in the spring; in summer, plants develop fully; and in autumn, they bear fruit. In winter, you should put things in order and carry the essence of this new seed of life deep within your heart. Only then will you have seeds to plant again when spring returns. This means that in the future you should be parents and raise sons and daughters like yourselves. (26-158, 1969.10.25)

Why do people feel sorry when they do not have sons and daughters? They feel sorry because they cannot form a circle. When you see birds feeding their young, you can recognize the deep love of the mother bird. Western people may not know this, but in the Orient, children are liked more than adults. People show polite respect for adults, but they show the utmost love for children. You can realize how much your parents loved you when you have your own sons and daughters and raise them. (Blessed Family - 934)

Everyone should get married and have and raise their children so they can know both children's love and parental love. It seems that western people are not like this. They avoid having and raising sons and daughters. They hesitate to have children because the children may limit their freedom to marry and divorce. But when people fail to establish the four-position foundation, they cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven because they do not know God's heart of loving people. (Blessed Family - 934)

Section 6. Human Beings Seek the Center of Love

Human beings are born through love, grow up in parental love, and mature while broadening love horizontally. Horizontal love reaches the completion of the first stage when man and woman meet and grow together to the state where they can represent the love of heaven and earth and bear children as the fruit of that love. Children are born from the heart's core as a result of love.

The child who is born from a man and woman who share love based on heart creates a path to the center of love. This center will lead them directly to God. By having children as a fruit of love, human beings come to deeply experience the love with which God created all things and human beings. By loving their children, they deeply experience the love they received from their parents and the parental heart. The love parents have been pouring into their children is not a materialistic love but an intrinsic love.

The love that parents give their children does not change even if heaven and earth change and historical ages change. By becoming a parent and loving your children, you will understand and deeply experience how God has been loving human beings. By becoming a parent and loving your children, you will feel and realize how much your parents have loved you.

This is why we revere our aged parents even more and fulfill the duties of filial piety with love. If you do not fulfill these responsibilities, you are unqualified to be parents and your love towards your children can only be considered hypocritical.

Human beings should feel and realize how much God has loved them by becoming parents themselves and loving their children. Furthermore, they will love God even more sincerely. A person should love their aged parents more than they love their children and love God more than they love their parents, knowing that this is the order and law of love.

Because heaven and earth has a spherical shape, they share horizontal love and rotate, forming a circle on the first level. When they take a partner of the opposite sex and share love, they have children as the fruit and become parents. When they love each other and rotate, vertical love is realized following the horizontal love. This forms the spherical world and establishes the center of love at the same time.

The center of love that emerges through the movement created by these love relationships is also the core of existence of the entire world of creation. The earth exists because it is also moving continuously around this center of love. The center of love is where infinite force is gathered that enables continuous movement. The center that appears through the sphere of love in this manner is also a place where God dwells.

Therefore, all creation existing in the world is born and exists through God's love and moves in search for the center of God's love. God is a furnace of love. (126-245, 1983.4.24)

Section 7. Our Life Passes Through Three Ages

Human beings are born after developing in the mother's womb. They live on earth for a certain period of time, and then die. Prior to birth, the fetus spends ten months in the mother's womb where it has limited freedom. It grows by receiving nutrition from the mother through the umbilical cord. It opens and closes its hands, opens and closes

its mouth, and wriggles its feet. This is all it can do. Nevertheless, for the fetus the mother's womb is a world of freedom and the whole world. After ten months the fetus is born into the contemporary earthly world, or human society. (Blessed Families and the Ideal Kingdom of Heaven - 1062)

Why are human beings born? They are born for the sake of love. For this reason, they are grounded in true parental love and grow in the mother's womb, which is a bosom of parents' protection and love. Children grow to maturity embraced by parental love that digests with joy all the hardships without complaint. Upon reaching maturity at about twenty years old, the child should meet their eternal love partner and be engrafted into heavenly love in which they live entirely for the sake of one another. Following this life course, this new couple should have their own sons and daughters and love them. Only when they experience the depth of God's love can the substantial realm of God's love of the object partner be completed. (143-283, 1986.3.20)

Human life can be compared to the life a fetus lives in the mother's womb. People will live a one hundred year span in the womb of the universal mother. Just as the fetus is ignorant of the world outside the mother's womb, the people living a physical life today are ignorant of the reality of the spirit world that awaits them after death. They can venture a guess. They have a vague sense that, just as they did not know about the human world while in the mother's womb, a world after death must also exist. Regardless of people's feelings or convictions concerning the world after death, the spirit world really does exist. Because the world after death cannot be perceived by our five physical senses, we must overcome the unbelievable through religious faith. (Blessed Family - 1062)

Human beings go through three ages. The animal world also has the water age, land age, and air age. Everything must go through these three ages.

For human beings to stand as the lords of creation and be qualified to rule over all things, they must be a complete life form, more complete than any other creature, in the water age and live therein. Next, they must exist in the land age and be the highest being among all creatures there. Then there has to be the air age. But human beings have no wings. How can they fly without wings? They should be able to fly higher and farther than any bird or insect. Then what do they have to do? This cannot happen when they are in a physical body. They cannot get far no matter how high they jump. However, because human beings are to be the lords of creation who have dominion and because they stand in the reciprocal position to God, a spiritual being, their stage of operation should be the same as God's. Human beings can travel faster than light that travels 300 thousand kilometers in a second. This is none other than spirit. (112-201, 1981.4.12)

We live in this world, but it is not everything. There is the spirit world.

Then what is the place we are to go to and live in? It is the eternal spirit world filled with the air of love. Our physical life is a time of preparation for life in the eternal world of spirit. (140-121, 1986.2.9)

Section 8. Earthly Life is Training to be in Rhythm with the Spirit World

I have a depth of spiritual experience. The spirit world is a place enveloped in the elements of love. On the earth, we breathe air, but in the spirit world, people live by inhaling love. The love you share in the spirit world is not secular human love but true love. (145-267, 1986.5.15)

When you go to spirit world, you will find that those who have fully loved their parents, brothers and sisters, spouse, and children – that is, those who have experienced deep love in their family life – will be able to enjoy great freedom. They can go everywhere without restriction. Conversely, those in the spirit world who have no experience of love are narrow-minded; they find themselves isolated and alone, with no freedom whatsoever. The love between parents and children is a vertical relationship, the love between husband and wife is a horizontal relationship, and the love among brothers and sisters is a relationship that circles and surrounds. These three relationships differ from one another. Therefore, only when you experience deep love through these three mutually distinct interactions on earth can you circulate freely vertically, horizontally, and in a circle. Those who have not tasted parental love because their parents died early are in a rather tragic position because they are missing an important experience of love. Likewise, those who have not experienced the conjugal love relationship of husband and wife as well as love in the family, become poor people in the spirit world because they lack a crucial experience of life. Those who have no brothers and sisters will also be in a poor position in the spirit world because they lack this experience. (Blessed Family - 1062)

The reason to marry is to deeply experience parental love, conjugal love, and children's love. We need these experiences because the spirit world is filled with the air of such love. You need to have a family to train yourself to be in rhythm with the spirit world. Those who go to the spirit world without these experiences of love cannot follow the rhythm there. They will be as one without a nose to inhale such air of love. (Blessed Family -1062)

You are born from your father and mother. What is more fundamental is the fact that you are born from God by having borrowed your mother's womb. You find true parents through the universal parents and through your physical parents. Your physical parents are temporary, so the moment of your death is a time of jubilation when you go to meet the True Parents. The true love of the true parents is there. This is the Kingdom of Heaven in heaven, where

the atmosphere is composed of love and filled with parental love. That love is not for me; it is a love that is in keeping with the unilateral law under the principle of service and sacrifice. In accord with this principle, you must love the universe and humankind. Your life on earth is the training ground for the development of such love. (105-108, 1979.9.30)

How important is your life on earth? You only live it once. It is a short moment that only comes once. When compared to eternal life, the earthly life is but a point. It is too short a moment. At this moment, we must go beyond our physical life and make preparation for the spirit world. (207-99, 1990.11.1)

CHAPTER FIVE

The Love of Man and Woman in the Original Creation

Section 1. The Original Love of a Man and a Woman

When man and woman are in love, whether their love is in accord with God's will and the standard He requires of them is the question. Is their love in accord with the model of love in God's mind? We come to the conclusion that if the first man and woman had become one in love based on the love of God, then their love would have become the universal model of love. God must have desired such love from human beings. Likewise, man and woman must have wanted this love from each other. Such true love must be the core of the universe. It becomes the standard of measurement. (Blessed Family - 334)

God's love and human love are the same in essence. Love causes oneness. Why do a man and a woman long for each other? It is because a man can possess God only through a woman, and a woman can possess God only through a man. In other words, they long for each other because God comes and dwells where a man and a woman have become one in love. (Blessed Family - 334)

Considering that the source of the dual characteristics is God, we should simultaneously sing praises for the noble value of God and for the dignity and value of men and women. (Blessed Family - 334)

When God's beloved woman lives in a man's heart and God's beloved man lives in a woman's heart as well, these two become his object partners, and when they love each other, God will be delighted to see this love and all things will rejoice. Heaven and earth will rejoice to see a man and woman with these values embrace. When man and woman embrace each other in mutual fondness, this mutual fondness becomes the point where the universe unifies. This is how the original image unfolds in God's ideal. (Blessed Family - 334)

Originally, a man should meet a woman with whom he can rejoice, and a woman also should meet a man with whom she can rejoice. More than this, it should be an encounter over which both God and all things of creation can rejoice. Then, all creation will be mobilized for this couple and want to be ruled by them. Birds will sing and butterflies will flutter and dance with joy. God will rejoice, people will rejoice, everything will rejoice. Had the first human ancestors started history by establishing such

a position, the world would be the original, ideal world. (Blessed Family - 334)

Section 2. The Reason Men and Women Are Born

What is the original purpose of a man's birth? We cannot deny the fact that he is born for the sake of a woman. Likewise, woman is not born for her own sake. We should know that a problem will arise if a woman fails to comprehend on her own that she is born for the sake of a man. Because God, the great owner of heaven and earth, established this as a principle of creation, we cannot enter the world of goodness, truth, happiness, and peace or the world of love and ideal unless we follow this principle. (Blessed Family - 337)

A woman is born to meet a man, and a man is born to meet a woman, are they not? This is the highest truth. Therefore, we should find the realm of blessing that conforms to this principle. Deviating from this highest realm of truth constitutes the highest evil. (21-201, 1968.11.20)

Men and women are physically opposite. Whereas women are one-directional, men are three-directional or four-directional. Women are more likely to enjoy staying at home, and men are more likely to enjoy traveling the world. The characters of men and women are opposite. How can men and women become one? They become one through love. Love unites human beings and God. (38-255, 1971.1.8)

Why is man born? He is not born for the sake of academic pursuits, money, or political power. He is born for the sake of woman. Man is born for the sake of woman. Men have larger physiques, not so they can earn a living only for themselves, but so that they can earn a living for their children and wives. Man's sexual organ and woman's sexual organ are different. For whom do they exist? They did not come into existence for their own sake. Man's sexual organ came into existence for the sake of woman. Likewise, woman's sexual organ is for the sake of man. Have you ever thought like this? This is not something to laugh about. What is the symbol of the love of man and woman? Where is the final destination of love? It is the sexual organ which makes them one body. (143-275, 1986.3.20)

The sexual organ becomes a channel through which the mind and body can completely merge through love. That which man has is not his, and that which woman has is not hers. Man has what belongs to woman, and woman has what belongs to man. Men and women are not born for their own sake. They should know clearly that they are born for the sake of their partner. Why are men and women born on earth? They are born in order to love each other. Since God is the great king of wisdom, He switched ownership of their love organs. (132-146, 1984.5.31)

A man has a sexual organ, but that does not mean that he is its owner. The same is true for woman. Those who have

acted carelessly with no regard for their sexual organ's ownership will be judged. If men know that they will receive punishment under the most fearful law, would they dare think of other women instead of their own wives? Conversely, can wives think of other men instead of their own husbands? (Blessed Family -340)

Section 3. Men and Women Absolutely Need Each Other

Love is something you absolutely need, isn't it? Is that right? Human beings, a man and a woman, are an absolutely necessary element for love. Man needs woman and woman needs man. How much do they need each other? They need each other more than Korea, more than the world, and even more than God. Also, if there were no women, the entire human race would perish within a hundred years. No matter how much man boasts of unifying the world, all would be gone within one hundred years if there were no women. Therefore, women are absolutely necessary. (25-180, 1969.10.4)

When we say "human beings," we mean man and woman. When we look at a man, he has to be with a woman, and when we look at a woman, she has to be with a man. Man is not born through his own desire, nor is woman born through her own desire. Both need each other. After their birth, they discover they are either a man or a woman. (67-267, 1973.7.22)

When you were born as a man, were you born with or without the knowledge that there are women? If a man were born and found out that there are only men, would he not feel bad? And if a woman were born and found out that there are only women, she would feel bad, wouldn't she? So when a woman is born, is she born with or without the knowledge that there are men? Although I was born without knowing it, the one who gave birth to me knew it. The reason one is born as a woman is that there is a man who needs her. Likewise, the reason I am born as a man like this is that there is a woman who needs me. Isn't that right? We are all born like this, with God's knowledge. (37-19, 1970.12.22)

Man absolutely needs woman. Man absolutely needs God, but before this he needs a partner called woman. Human history has been miserable because men have failed to correctly understand the absolute need for women. Conversely, women have not understood that they absolutely need men. Tasting true love requires a realm of ideal, and for this man needs woman and woman needs man. You should know that an absolute man and absolute woman pursuing true love are joined through their efforts of becoming one in heart. When such a man and woman are joined as one, God comes and dwells with them. (Blessed Family - 340)

God does not like to see a couple joined by true love separate; therefore, the love of an absolute man and woman is eternal. Although God is omniscient and omnipotent, God's existence abso-

lutely has no meaning when He is alone. Similarly, no matter how handsome and healthy a man may be, these things have no meaning if he is without a woman. A man living in fascination with his own good looks and health leads an ugly existence and has no value before God. The problem is that there are many men in the world who have sunk into such narcissism and this constitutes a reason why history has moved toward tragedy. You have to know that God's providence works to change and improve the world immersed in such self-centeredness. (Blessed Family -340)

Section 4. Love Comes from One's Partner

Love cannot be realized by oneself. Where does love come from? Love does not come from me but from my spouse. Since love comes from my spouse, I must bow my head and serve her. This is where the heavenly principle of living for the sake of others originates. When something highly noble comes to me, I must honor and serve it in order to receive it. We must live the philosophy of living for the sake of others. (143-277, 1986.3.30)

When we are alone, love cannot manifest itself. Love does not appear when man is alone, but only when woman appears as his object of love. Only when the object of love appears, does love finally spring forth. (Blessed Family - 342)

We say that parental love is good and conjugal love is good because genuine love is not something that is self-centered. Love is not something that starts from me but something that starts from my partner. You need to know this. Love comes from your husband and from your wife, and from your sons and daughters and from your brothers and sisters. Love does not start from your own self but from your spouse. Therefore, who is the owner of love? Your spouse is the owner of love. (34-331, 1970.9.20)

Where does love come from? It comes from your partner. If your partner is homely or ugly, love recedes; if your partner is nice-looking or lovely, love advances more quickly. The way in which love functions is determined according to your partner's attributes: her speech, her scent, her smell, and her taste. (Blessed Family - 342)

Where is the base of love? The base of love is not me. The word love must be used in reciprocal terms. No matter how handsome a man may be, if he has no partner, he is stuck because he cannot love alone.

The base of love is not me. "Love comes from me" are words that Satan has been using. I am not the base of love. You may think that you are the base of love, but there will be no progress in the future unless such a mindset is totally dismantled and transformed.

Until now, wives have put themselves at the center, and husbands have put themselves at the center, with both wanting to be served. This has been destroying relationships. Since the basis of love does

not come from me, but from my spouse, if I am to possess that love, I must sacrifice myself for that love. Love requires patience and absolutely demands sacrifice. With this viewpoint, there is no place in the cosmos, other than on earth, where we can defeat Satan.

God is holding tightly onto love because it can be found only in accordance with the God-centered principle of love. The word compassion (*jabi*) cannot be expressed in the absence of love. The word benevolence (*in*) also cannot stand on its own. The words *jabi* and *in* are all used only in reciprocal terms. (46-35, 1971.7.18)

Section 5. Men and Women Harmonize in Love

Man symbolizes heaven and woman, earth. The two must unite and realize harmony. Men and women are different. Men's muscles are rugged and women's are smooth. Men have beards while women do not. Their voices are also different. If we compare men and women, we see their contrasting features fit together well. Harmony unfolds between them. When we look at the physical structure of human beings, their left and right sides form a correlative pair. These two halves are bound tightly together.

Ladies and gentlemen, do you like only high things or only low things? You like things that create harmony. Judging from the line formed by the horizon, fish live below and mammals, birds, and other creatures live above. Women menstruate once a month, like tidal variations based on the moon. Breathing is similar. A man and a woman establish a line of balance and create harmony. People like Disneyland, with its rides that go up and down, because Disneyland duplicates the motions of the universe.

Which do you think will be more pleasing, a man harmonizing with another man or a man harmonizing with a woman? A man harmonizing with a woman is better because that reflects the harmony of the universe. We should live in step with the beat of the universe, the universe that promotes harmony through the harmony of yin and yang. (Blessed Family - 344)

When man and woman create harmony, they initiate circular movement. When man and woman become one body through love and bear the fruits of love, God comes down and they go up and they meet in the middle. God becomes the center of this sphere, and spherical movement begins. The center of the sphere is the place where harmony of love is realized. It is the place where life emerges and moves, and it is the starting point of human equality and communal philosophy. This is so because the power of love is there. Thus, the force that embraces all interactions of the universe is love. (Blessed Family - 344)

For human beings love is eternal. It is one and never divided. Once a man and a woman are joined in love they are to live together for a lifetime and then eternally even after death. They are two

bodies that become one body by uniting and revolving together. When the two bodies become one, they revolve as God does and form a four-position foundation of love, the expression of the ideal world of love. Only true love dwells there and false love cannot invade. When man and woman become blessed by God and achieve perfection, God comes to them freely. When they form a four-position foundation of love, they will come to love each other's mind through each other's body, and when they come to love the mind their body will follow. (Blessed Family - 344)

Section 6. Original Human Beings Are Enraptured with True Love

What is the holiest thing in the world? True love is the holiest thing in world. True love originates with God. If God exists, there is no other way than the way of true love. God truly desires the way of true love, and without traversing the way of true love, we cannot go before God. We have to know this point.

God wants to see, hear, eat, and touch through love. As for human beings, if they receive a kiss of love from God, their joy will make them feel as if they are going to explode from inside. This is where God's desire lies. God does not rejoice because He has diamonds or jewelry. (Blessed Family - 380)

The human body has five senses and every human being feels and confirms true love through the sensations of the five senses. If the eyes are directed toward true love, they will be colored by and intoxicated with true love. How beautifully those colorful, intoxicated eyes will shine! Think about how enchanting the smiling lips of a person immersed in true love are. Try to imagine the intense beauty of the five senses moving in intoxication with true love and the harmony of the five senses moving toward God.

Alone, God cannot experience the joy of such beauty. He can experience such beauty only when He has a partner, and this is the reason God created human beings. How would God feel as He observed a beautiful man and woman absorbed into one another through true love-intoxicated eyes, or kissing with true love-intoxicated lips, and playing the melody of a heart of true love? If there is an Eve of true love, God would want to completely traverse her world of heart. God would have an impulsive desire to explore the breadth and depth of this beautiful Eve's world of heart.

God would want to traverse both Adam's and Eve's world of heart, a world more beautiful than the created heaven and earth. It is certain that God would rather travel within the world of the heart of a person of true love than the universe. God would never want to leave Adam's and Eve's world of heart and true love. If, after God created human beings, He fell into their true love and became a child lost in that love, what kind of world would we have? Since God would dwell in their midst, the world formed by God and human beings becoming one would

be a world filled with joy and beauty. (Blessed Family - 380)

If the true love of God had been perfected, the God of responsiveness would have no regrets at being totally absorbed by true love. God's nature is such that He would be totally happy with anything that happened within the realm of true love. If human beings were to live in this world of true love, they would live a happy life free from regret. Moreover, this world would be without war and free of complaint and misfortune. (Blessed Family - 380)

Section 7. Love Is Realized in a Completely Natural Setting

This is a story from my youth. One day, I caught a pair of birds and tried to make them kiss each other's beaks. To see them kiss I put them in a cage, fed them, and watched them. I did it out of a child's desire to see them love each other and sing happily together. This was an experiment, out of curiosity, to understand the principles of nature. I continued this experiment, which I now understand to have been quite naughty. It was only after a long while that I finally understood that love is realized only in a natural setting. Sincere love is realized naturally, in an atmosphere that is natural to the highest degree. Through a long journey of experiments I came to the correct understanding of love. (Blessed Family - 353)

When someone loses love, will having a university education help him to regain love? He will only accumulate knowledge, become individualistic, and come to worship materialism. Just as Korean bean soup tastes right only when it is served in a thick Korean bowl, character training can reach its purpose only when it is based on love.

The flower of world civilization should blossom on the basis of artistic harmony. In this sense, roasted ribs should be served on a heavy platter and Korean bean paste soup should be served in a thick, Korean earthenware bowl to bring out their proper tastes. Once you have become used to the rough, deep, and refreshing taste of Korean bean paste soup, you will never forget it no matter where you may go.

Likewise, once people have become used to the earthy, deep, relaxing taste of love, they will not change. Just as one easily tires of instant foods that are usually heavily sweetened, if one could obtain love easily and anywhere like instant food, we would be unable to call it true love. (Blessed Family - 353)

There are people everywhere today who taste love as if they were eating instant food. This is the problem.

Love does not deepen because you bathe in a fragrant bath. I would say that the love of a couple living in the countryside that washes themselves in cold water before going to bed is purer, longer lasting, and ever deepening. A couple that has to brush their teeth before kissing is not experiencing natural love. The toothpaste smell will prevent them from tasting the unique smell of the

other. When I look at people who brush their teeth before kissing, I don't know whether they are trying to taste love or taste toothpaste. (Blessed Family - 353)

When you meet with someone you like and love, you want to embrace and kiss that person. This is a natural instinct between the sexes. You can think you are meeting your partner in order to love your surroundings – the universe. Finding a partner and establishing a relationship is a natural human behavior.

When man relates to woman and woman relates to man under the ideal of partnership, there will be no acts or incidents that violate the order of love. The true order of love emerges only when man and woman meet on the basis of the ideal of partnership. (Blessed Family - 353)

CHAPTER SIX

Transformation during Young Adulthood, and True Marriage

Section 1. The Significance of Marriage

We might say that marriage is a ceremony that allows us to open the door of the palace of happiness and enter in. Therefore, marriage is a great event for humankind. Love transcends time and space and is the greatest thing for humankind. Marriage is the ceremony that reveals and confirms this greatest love. (Blessed Family - 356)

Why do we refer to the marriage ceremony by saying, "receive the Blessing?" According to the Principle, if Adam and Eve had not fallen and had become mature, they would have stood in the position to receive the Blessing. In other words, if God becomes a subject partner, Adam and Eve become His substantial object partners.

We know the Blessing is realized as we perfect our individual character and get married on the foundation that can connect God as the subject partner of love to the love of the object partner. After all, maturity leads to marriage, and marriage leads to the appearance of God's love. If there were no marriage, then love would not have started in the human world. Who is the owner of that love? We should realize that the owner is not a human being but God. When God's love appears among us, it becomes God's joy and pride, and we experience this as God's love.

Love cannot be realized alone; it is only realized through a reciprocal relationship. Therefore, a man cannot realize love by himself alone. The same can be said of a woman. When Adam and Eve finally unite through love, they can receive God's love. From this viewpoint, we can understand that we human beings are born from God. (76-40, 1975.1.26)

Since all the principles of heaven and earth are based on the relationship of subject partner and object partner, a man and woman getting married is also a principle of heaven and earth. If a man is the right side, a woman is the left side. This is for the sake of forming a horizontal relationship in the universe, and also for the sake of forming a vertical relationship with God because the man is the subject partner and the woman is his object partner. Therefore, marriage is neither for the man alone nor for the woman alone. It is for the sake of being in accord with heavenly law. Therefore, men and women have different forms. They are born in such a way that they

can be in accord with the heavenly law. (101-38, 1978.10.28)

Marriage is a relationship where two partners have give and take in a reciprocal position where they can console each other in times of loneliness, rejoice together in times of happiness, and help each other in times of difficulty. They unite so they can live on the basis of God's love while moving towards God. This is the life of marriage. God created men and women on earth rather than in heaven to realize God's love horizontally. In other words, when man and woman form a relationship and become one horizontally, their love can make a vertical relationship of love with God, the subject partner. This is extremely important. (Blessed Family - 356)

Section 2. The Reason for Marriage

A man is born to find a woman, and a woman is born to find a man. A man and a woman are born to become one and come in contact with God's love, which is at a higher level. They cannot come into contact with this love alone. Even if they were to contact it alone, it would be one-sided. They cannot come into contact with three-dimensional and spherical love. This is why a man and woman get married: to jump to a higher level, three-dimensional realm of love.

In the original world, the more closely united a man and woman become, a great center emerges as that force acts and forms a sphere. The more they are connected horizontally, the more the original source of love within the vertical power becomes connected with them. This is where the mind and body become one. (109-273, 1980.11.2)

Why do we get married? Marriage allows us to go to the Kingdom of Heaven. Without marrying, we cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven. So we have to get married in order to be qualified to go to the heavenly kingdom. What is the qualification to go to the heavenly kingdom? It is to resemble God.

What do we have to do to resemble God? We have to be people who practice God's word. We will pass if we can make God's love my love, and make God's word my word. This is why I am saying to the world on behalf of God, "Humankind, you have to go to the Kingdom of Heaven!" Next, we will pass if we can say, "In order to go to the heavenly kingdom, I will love humankind like God and take them there with me."

We can conclude that we are people on the heavenly side and candidates to go to the Kingdom of Heaven. On the day we become like this, we will have the qualification to get married. Now, why do we get married? The answer is in order to go to the Kingdom of Heaven and for the sake of humankind.

A man should know that the woman standing in front of him is God's daughter and humankind's daughter. If you can love her as a woman who is loved by humankind and love her as God's beloved daughter, you are qualified to be her husband. But otherwise you are not.

Women are the opposite. Do not think, "He is my man." Before saying that he is your man, think of him as God's son and a man representing the masculinity of humankind. You will pass if you are a woman who can love him more than humankind does and more than God does.

When you marry, you should think that as a man you will be the right foot and as a woman you will be the left foot, taking steps through the family to live for the sake of humankind and God. (88-316, 1976. 10.3)

The purpose of marriage is to unite the hearts of a man and a woman and to perfect the love of a man and a woman. Marriage is a declaration of the intention to show you can do this. If you have achieved perfection of love and perfection of heart through married life, then you have realized the ideal of the family. So you will surely go to the heavenly kingdom if you have succeeded in this by the time of your death. (Blessed Family - 358)

Section 3. The True View of Marriage

Originally, if a family based on God's love had been formed, this would have been the realm of perfection, the original ideal that was supposed to be realized without the Fall in the Garden of Eden. For this to happen, Adam and Eve would have had to totally unite mind and body, completely mature vertically, and realize, as a bride and bridegroom, the realm of partnership that brings joy to God and thus receive God's blessing.

Why do you love your children? It is because you have received God's great work of creation horizontally and in the physical realm and you want to feel the joy that God felt after creating Adam and Eve. Next, as God had dominion over all things of heaven and earth, He gave us the dominion to have us rule over all things, even though we are in the horizontal position. The world where we can stay in the position of maintaining order while holding onto that authority is the ideal Kingdom of Heaven.

Therefore, at the time of marriage, we come to inherit God's love and receive the authority of re-creation and dominion while standing in the realm of perfection. So marriage refers to the appearance of love and the endowment of the authority of creation and dominion. (76-45, 1975.1.26)

In our view, marriage is the seat cushion of the universe. Do you know the seat cushion of the universe? What is the best silk in the universe? Is it brocade? Rather than spend your newlywed life on a simple mattress, imagine that you will spread a mattress of universal brocade and make love on it. This is a moment when you determine ownership in your life with respect to love. You can say, "Ah, the possession of love has arrived in my own generation, and the possession of the being called woman has been determined."

What is woman? She is half the universe, and if you catch her, the universe will hang on to you. Think about this.

On the other hand, why should a woman be married? She gets married in order to attach herself to a man so that the two halves, each being 180 degrees, can unite and create a sphere of dominion comparable to the value of the universe. Considering these things, the philosophy of the Unification Church is truly splendid. (Blessed Family - 361)

You should have a creed that you get married not for your own sake but for the sake of your partner. It is wrong to expect to receive a talented person or a pretty person for your spouse. Once human beings understand the principle of living for the sake of others, they should embrace the idea that they will also get married for the sake of their partners. By our marriage standards, a husband should have the conviction that no matter how dull his partner may be, he will love her more than a beauty. (Blessed Family - 361)

Unless you decide that you will love your partner like God, like humankind, and more than anyone else in the world, you cannot be restored to the heavenly kingdom. If you, as a man, do not know how to love a woman, you cannot love God and humankind. (97-319, 1978.4.1)

You get married for the sake of humankind. It is for the sake of the common benefit of humankind. It is something that represents the world. The man is a man representing the world and the woman is a woman representing the world. (75-278, 1975.1.12)

Section 4. What Kind of Time is Young Adulthood?

Ladies and gentlemen, in young adulthood, a young man feels as if he were a prince of heaven and earth. It is a time when one thinks of everything by turning it upside down self-centeredly. Since young adulthood is a period of rebellion, young people can, without recognizing it, take a dangerous path at any time. This is why the problem of youth today has become a global problem.

In young adulthood, only things that center on you interest you. If something has a relationship with you, you are excited about it, no matter how insignificant it is. When you look at ladies around the age of twenty, they giggle for no reason. They laugh when they see a ripe persimmon drop from a leafless persimmon tree in the autumn.

There is a mysterious connection: everything is related to them, arousing the highest emotion. Hence, young adulthood is a turning point when you can come in contact with everything and make a connection with it. Why is that so? It is because it is based on God's original nature of creation, which seeks to completely – 100 percent – unite a man and a woman through God's love. (33-332, 1970.8.23)

No matter how pretty a lady may be, she has her young adulthood only once. At that time, she is the best of all flowers, and it is the most precious time of her life. Nevertheless, are there women

who say, "I will live alone?" They are not women.

Also, among men, are there some with fine bodies who yet say that they will live by themselves at this great pinnacle of youth? In such times, they will surely come to look for their partner. They are like this, and who do they resemble? They resemble God. Could we find such a person if God were not like this? God is like that. It is the same for men and women – in the heart of their youth, which is the most precious time of their life, they go out looking for their partner. (32-248, 1970.7.19)

The most flowery time, the period of young adulthood when the flower is in full bloom, follows puberty. This is the seven years between the ages of eighteen and twenty four. These seven years frame a period when the beautiful flower of love blossoms and they are never repeated. How precious, then, is this beautiful period, which comes only once in your life?

Ladies and gentlemen, you know the peony, don't you? It buds with a very distinctive yellow flower. How many layers do you think one has? The petals are wrapped up tightly. Can you undo one? It is wrapped up tightly so it cannot be easily harmed. The same is true for men and women. When will you bring to full blossom your crimson love, the bud of love that is like peony flower? It is in this period that beauty, within the harmony of heaven and earth, reveals itself best. For human beings, it is the time of blossoming to the highest degree. It is a period to become the superb work of God and shine as His greatest expression.

The most flowery and beautiful time in one's development is the time of youth. Your looks in your youth are like the greatest flowers. A person who can love this period to the fullest will be invited to God's living room. A man and a woman who practice this kind of love can receive God's blessing and be invited into God's living room. If you men understand this, you should prepare accordingly. (26-151, 1969.10.25)

Section 5. What Causes the Transformation in Adolescence?

Children have vague dreams and just want to grow up healthy. As they enter youth and physical changes start to occur, their interest in the opposite sex heightens and their eyes sparkle with curiosity and beauty. They wear fashionable clothes and show off their style and become absorbed in beautifying and polishing their faces. If you look at a young woman's lips, you can see if she is at this age.

When women enter puberty, they begin to menstruate and undergo many physical changes. Their buttocks get bigger, their breasts bulge out, their lips become red, and sometimes their eyes twinkle mysteriously. Why and for whom do these changes in women come? Women's physical changes are for the sake of going round and round on a path they previously traveled in a straight line. They are changes for starting a movement that can go round

and round. There is no harmony in the straight path. If you go back and forth along a straight path, things become exhausted and nothing remains. If you go up and down the straight path, you will only destroy the environment and undermine the harmony of the environment.

For the sake of the harmony and preservation of the environment, we need to move in a circular motion. So everyone must go around. In going around, you cannot go around alone, so you should revolve around your partner as the center. You can turn only when you collide with a partner. If you collide with a partner, a reaction occurs automatically and initiates a revolving movement. This is a principle of heaven and earth.

Therefore, the physical changes in women arise so they may meet a partner and go around. Their collision generates the force for going around. I say that women apply cosmetics and beautify themselves not for their sake but for the sake of others. (Blessed Family - 366)

Observe a beautifully dressed woman when she is looking at a man and you will see that her eyes are particularly bright. I say this is a natural outcome because she enhances her beauty and cultivates herself in order to find a partner. She goes around anxiously searching for a nice man, an ideal man. (Blessed Family - 366)

When a young man and woman in their young adulthood meet and talk, their hearts leap, right? Do they leap or not? You don't know? If I say they leap, will you say they leap? They leap. See. You get excited, right? If you get excited, some physiological change comes to your heart. So if the mind is not attentive to God but stands on the opposite side, it becomes evil. Who is your mind centered on? It is God. Love enables you to go up to the place where the God-centered mind and heart become one. Do you understand this? Human beings must have an ideal and hope centered on love because they have to live life in this position. Also, that which shines in the final place is love. (26-158, 1969.10.25)

Section 6. First Love in Young Adulthood

Adolescents' minds and bodies receive impulses to search for love. They go around as they please, without listening to their parents. The eyes of the mind and eyes of the body move as one. With noses of love, they come to like even smells they never liked before. With mouths of love, they come to like even the tastes they never liked before. They want to listen to stories of love, even staying up all night.

The more they touch their partner of love, the more desire they have to touch that partner. From the young adulthood, young people become wrapped up in feelings of love; their eyes become strange and they try to see everything in a favorable light. When your mind and body become one and shoot a gun of love, a bullet of love enters into the heart of your partner. Those who want such

love of a man and such love of a woman, raise your hands. There is nothing love cannot digest. It can savor everything you eat and digest everything.

If someone has sincere love, even if he is a very ugly man, he will look handsome. Love is an amazing thing. Thus, whether you are a man or a woman, whether you are bright and good-looking or dull and bad-looking, you can never forget the first love of youth. (Blessed Family - 373)

If a girl who has a life-and-death love for someone is forced by her parents to marry another man, do you think she will be happy or miserable for the rest of her life? In her eyes, the man of her first love looks as lovely as a flower, even if he has a twisted nose and ugly eyes. Even if the man chosen by her parents is someone everybody can praise in terms of looks, education, and so on, and the man she used to love is dull and ugly, she still hears the whispering in her heart for the man of her first love.

The first love occupies everything. Who is the subject partner of love? It is God. Since the subject partner of love is God, there is no one you can love but God. Originally, you were supposed to have your first love with God. But the failure to do so is the Fall. Whom did Eve love? She loved the archangel. She was supposed to love with joy, but she loved while frowning and weeping. (Blessed Family - 361)

Ladies and gentlemen, do you think at the time of the Fall, Eve said, "Oh, great! I have eaten the fruit and it is so delicious?" How do you think Eve felt when she was being raped by the archangel? She fell into the archangel's seduction while experiencing the pangs of conscience and hating it. She should have loved as a flower enjoys spring, with all of her cells filled with joy, but instead she experienced love frowning, with her cells shrinking and her heart dying.

If she had not fallen, whom would she have loved as her first love? She would have had her first love with God. The first love Adam and Eve were to have had with God would have contained all the forms of first love. The parental love as the first love, the conjugal love as the first love, and the children's love as the first love – all these would have attached firmly to God at the root.

These loves would not have had to go through various stages of restoration, such as individual and family restoration, over a long historical course as in your case; they are loves that would have all bonded simultaneously. Within the first love of God, all other loves – parental, conjugal, and children's love – would have bonded together all at once. (Blessed Family - 373)

Section 7. The Best Time of Marriage – When is Love Connected?

The omniscient and omnipotent God created for human beings a time when they can blossom with brilliance, and I would say this is the time of youth. God created them in such a way that they can

cultivate their happiness in the time of youth in love. To the existing human world pursuing this ideal, God gave the Blessing called marriage as a gate through which a man and a woman can become happy in the glamorous time of youth.

No created being has value in its existence aside from the ideal of reciprocity. Thus, for human beings, it is completely natural to receive the Blessing and get married after having grown up. (Blessed Family - 366)

When is love connected? When does the force of love start pushing you together? Men and women enter this state in adolescence, when their organs become 100 percent mature. Everything is at a standstill. It enters a state of saturation.

Movement, without doubt, follows a path to a state of saturation. After reaching that point, it either stops or turns. It stops after entering such a state of saturation. The stage before entering the state of saturation is puberty. Puberty is a time when your organs are vibrant in the process of the growth of your body. In comparison to a balloon, it is like going from the state of being flat with no air, to the point of being full of air, and then to a taut state immediately preceding explosion. A slight bit more air and the balloon pops.

What is this explosion? How great will it be if it is an explosion triggered by the perfection of love? Young adults, at about age eighteen, become tight like a stretched rubber band. They go to the position right before explosion and from there can nicely roll forward into eternity. (110-80, 1980.11.9)

The spirit and body can become completely one when the original love is present within. Even in the fallen world, puberty refers to a time when the spirit and the cells of the body become one and can stand on a balanced line. The cells of spirit and body during puberty open all doors and welcome things with joy. Young people with a relationship with God will gaze upon the human world filled with joy and happiness as they reach puberty. (Blessed Family - 366)

But if they jump into love in a rush to experience it based on feeling happy or because they are intoxicated with the intriguing feelings of love, they can create a major problem. The door of love opens only when the time comes, and you have to wait until the door opens before entering it. You should open it proudly after you become an owner of love. (Blessed Family - 366)

When do you consider the optimum age for marriage? I would say the best time for marriage is when your mind and body are most vibrant and strong. As youth passes, vigor ebbs, and finding a partner becomes more difficult, even with a pure heart of love.
(Blessed Family - 366)

Is there a place where perfect people, that is, a perfect man and woman, come to be? It is a place where they can receive

God's love centered on the public will of heaven and attend God as the subject partner after completely uniting their mind and body. When they come to such a place, they will stand in the position of perfected Adam and Eve. When such people form a family and make a start, this is a historic start. This is the beginning of a historic life course. (26-160, 1969.10.25)

Section 8. Love of a United Mind and Body

Ladies and gentlemen, do you know about the three points? The point where the three points become one is the place where God, Adam and Eve become one. The place where God can be one with Adam and Eve is the place where their mind and body become one. (26-158, 1969.10.25)

Man's mind and body exist in the relationship of subject and object partners, and the mind and body generate the force of existence through their vertical and horizontal interactions.

A woman's force of existence is maintained because her mind and body have vertical and horizontal relationships. Men and women all exist within reciprocal vertical and horizontal relationships and this force is love. Only love can forge an ideal relationship of mind and body eternally. (Blessed Family - 376)

The five senses of the mind and the five senses of the body of even a poor farmer in the countryside will completely merge and allow him to taste an indescribable joy when the passion of love swells up and burns in his mind and body.

If you have a point of settlement where God's love can come and dwell in you, when God's heart makes a wave, your heart will also make a wave once, like the swinging pendulum of a clock. In this way, you will turn around together with God. Once you begin turning, you will keep turning around and around again. The centrifugal force becomes greater and greater and demands that you love your family, your society, your nation, and the world. (Blessed Family - 376)

When your mind and body become one and the time approaches when the gate of love can open, your mind will resonate with the universe, and you can sometimes become a poet or novelist.

Because you express a quality that makes love beautiful and happy, you can write poems or novels with a theme of love. With the eyes of love open, the mind and body acquire a desire to make a three-dimensional relationship in the universe. Thus, we smile when we perceive the workings of nature in the falling autumn leaves or experience becoming one with a flower out of a desire to compete in beauty with the flowers blossoming on a hillside in spring. (Blessed Family - 376)

Why do men and women like love? The human body consists of trillions of cells, and the time when these cells move as a whole is when one is in love. You

should know that the time when all the cells of the human body move together is the time when a man and a woman are in love. (Blessed Family - 376)

When mind and body become one and shed tears of longing, the bones cry. It is the same in the case of animals. What happens when a female cow is in heat? It forgets eating. At that time, its entire nervous system makes it want only one thing. Likewise, when you love and long for each other with your mind and body as one, there will be no cell in your body that does not move. All cells will lose a sense of individual direction and focus on one point. If you meet your partner this way, you will explode. The power of that explosion becomes an incredible force. What are we trying to do when we love like this? We are trying to resemble God. We are trying to go to the place where we can participate in what God desires. In other words, we are trying to feel what God likes, together with God. (Blessed Family - 376)

CHAPTER SEVEN

The Love of a True Husband and a True Wife

Section 1. The Original Relationship of Husband and Wife

God exists in the dual characteristics of plus and minus. When this is manifested as a plus, it is Adam, and when it is manifested as a minus, it is Eve. (32-238, 1970.7.19)

The one son and one daughter are a son and daughter who have appeared as substantial object partners of the invisible God. As substantial object partners, the man represents God's plus characteristics, and the woman represents God's minus characteristics.

According to the principle of creation, the internal nature of God is divided into two characteristics. God harmonizes the two characteristics, and re-unites them in a form that resembles His original internal nature.

Man and woman each resemble one characteristic of God when they are born. Hence, the union of one son and one daughter is the unification of God's plus and minus characteristics. In other words, they become a harmonious being like God. For this reason, the two people, that is, the husband and the wife, are a union that represents the whole of God. The man becomes an incarnation of the true father's body by representing God's plus characteristics, and the woman becomes an incarnation of the true mother's body by representing the minus characteristics. Each man or woman is also a representative of God. When a husband and wife become one through love, this is like embracing heaven and earth.

This is an encounter on the universal level. Since the husband represents all men, he is a representative of the father and a representative of the elder brother at the same time as he is the husband; and since the wife represents all women, she is a representative of the mother and a representative of the elder sister at the same time as she is the wife. Thus, they cannot but love and respect each other. (9-83, 1960.4.16)

The man is the yang (plus) image of God, and the woman the yin (minus) image of God. The husband and wife together would be like wrapping heaven and earth in a wrapping cloth. Therefore, the husband and wife can feel God's ideal heart of love. (13-67, 1963.10.17)

The man symbolizes heaven, and the woman symbolizes earth. The two must

unite, forming harmony and parallel lines. (Blessed Family - 868)

The relationship that is called husband and wife is not limited to itself. You should know that it represents heaven and earth. (Blessed Family - 970)

The perfection of the love between a man and a woman is the perfection of the universe. If this love were to be shattered, the order of the universe would be destroyed and the vertical world would be utterly demolished. The loving embrace of a man and a woman itself serves as an occasion where the universe becomes one. This is how the original image is realized in God's ideal. (Blessed Family - 868)

It is because of love that human beings are born as men or women. Love can bear fruit when a man and woman become a husband and wife, thus becoming one. Since men and women are substantial manifestations of God's love through dual characteristics, the separate substantial manifestations must find God's love in order to unite as one.

If they hope to encounter God's love, the man and woman must become one in love. Otherwise, they cannot encounter God's love. By encountering God's love, we live on a level equal to God. This equal level means a position where we can stand next to God. (144-132, 1986.4.12)

When a husband and wife become one in God's love on the foundation of becoming completely one in love, they can advance all the way to God's position. As well as going up to God's position, all that God owns comes to be my possession. The power of God's love is so amazing. God allows them the authority of participation, and at the same time they come to inherit the entire ownership of God. (144-132, 1986.4.12)

Adam's desire was to dominate heaven and earth. The value of husband and wife, which Adam embraced and loved, represented the central value of the world. (64-84, 1972.10.24)

We should clearly realize how holy and valuable the love is that emerges from the people created by God and who were untainted by the Fall, that is: original man and woman. (145-267, 1986.5.15)

Section 2. The Reason We Need Conjugal Love

What kind of place do you think the Kingdom of Heaven is? In short, we can say that the Kingdom of Heaven is a place entered and inhabited by perfected people. If the Kingdom of Heaven is a place inhabited by perfected people, who have true love, then what kind of people would those with true love be? Human beings are either men or women. When we consider how the perfection of God's ideal love can be realized on earth, we reach the conclusion that it cannot be realized apart from men and women. God's love cannot be completed without perfected men and women who possess the ownership of love. (145-266, 1986.5.15)

True families must realize a family Kingdom of Heaven. The realization of a family Kingdom of Heaven will surely lead to the establishment of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. Why is that so? If you want to be stimulated in your current position by the real feeling of the Kingdom of Heaven of the future, you absolutely need a partner, and as you receive that stimulation in your family through your partner, you can deeply learn the ideal of the future heavenly kingdom in what you feel in your daily life today.

The husband and wife need each other in order to deeply learn this. This stimulation will enable the husband and wife to live eternally. Progress cannot move forward without stimulation.

Conjugal love provides stimulation to build the ideal Kingdom of Heaven. In other words, conjugal love pulls the future joy into the realm of the present, gives stimulation, supplies the driving force, and brings them to that place.

That love contains the love for the nation, love for the world, and God's love. Thus, that love can pass freely anywhere. After all, only a husband and wife who love each other are able to enter the Kingdom of Heaven.

This is why a married couple that loves each other on this earth with such a philosophy is always living in the heavenly kingdom. Jesus said that the Kingdom of Heaven is in your mind, didn't he? But today the Unification Church says, "The Kingdom of Heaven is in your family." If the Kingdom of Heaven is not realized in the family, the purpose of the Unification Church will not be fulfilled. But if it can be realized, that purpose will be fulfilled. From this point of view, you should find and walk the right path centering on the Principle. (37-7, 1970.12.22)

In the future, in order to realize the Kingdom of Heaven, just as a husband and wife love each other, a married man should be able to love all the women of the world with a heart with which he loves his own wife. You should think this way: "I have selected my wife as a representative partner from among all the women of the world." Likewise, towards her husband, a woman should think of him not just as a husband, but also as a husband who has been selected as a representative from among all the men of the world. (Blessed Family - 869)

Everyone, let me explain how women should behave. While loving one man, a woman should love him not only as one person, but also as a man representing all the men of the world. That man represents the father, the elder brother, and the husband.

What does this mean? A woman should think of her husband as her father, her grandfather, as well as her elder brother and younger brother.

Through such a connection, a woman should be able to love her father, her grandfather, her elder brother, and younger brother. Only such women can have a partner. If you were to like only your husband and dislike your father, grandfather, elder brother, younger brother, and everyone else, this would

violate God's commitment to the greater good. Therefore, what should you do? You should carry a heart that can love all men of the world, and have an outlook that your husband, as their representative, whom you embrace and love, is a man who is like a fruit of all these relations. If you have a heart that can love your partner as your parents, your elder brother, and younger brother, by transcending all nations and borders, you can be regarded as God's son or daughter. This is the philosophy of the Unification Church. (83-219, 1976.2.8)

Section 3. An Ideal Conjugal Relationship

A true husband is a person who says, "Since I am born for your sake, I will live for you and die for you." It is the same with a true wife. If such a couple has a family where they are well suited to each other and live for each other's sake, going beyond their own selves, this family will inevitably become an ideal family, a family of happiness, and a family of peace. (77-106.1975.4.1)

No matter how capable and talented a man may be, the motivation of his birth does not lie in himself, because he is born for the sake of a woman. Without women, can men be born? Conversely, even if a woman puts on beautiful cosmetics and boasts of being an actress in America, she is not born for her own sake.

Hence, a man should have broad shoulders and a woman should have broad hips so that they can fit together well. Therefore, where are the ideal husband and wife of true love? An ideal husband and wife appear when they serve each other, rather than their own selves, and when such hearts converge into one.

This is an absolute fact. According to the Principle, if we ask where can we find ideal people or happy and good people, we cannot find them in a place where people try to live for their own sake, but in a place where they try to live for the sake of others.

The husband should be able to give his life for his wife, and the wife should be able to give her life for her husband. Since such a couple will be connected to the realm of God's love and receive direct protection, they won't fall. (Blessed Family - 880)

When a man loves his wife, he should love her more than any other man in the world loves her. Also, when a woman loves her husband, she should love him more than any other woman in the world loves him. This is an ethics of love to be followed by a husband and wife who have realized a true family. (Blessed Family - 964)

True parents live and die for the sake of their children. This is because love is established there. Likewise, a wife and husband of true love, a happy wife and husband, can appear only when they live for each other's sake and become one in love. This is an ideal married couple. (Blessed Family - 880)

A bride and bridegroom should not become one through money, political power, or honor, but through God's original love. (Blessed Family - 880)

In conjugal relationships of the secular world, the wife receives energy from her husband when he makes money. She receives energy when she sees the money that he has made, and he receives energy when he sees her receiving energy. Yet if no more money is coming in, they become anxious and their married relationship may even break down. A true married couple should become one in love centering on God. (Blessed Family - 880)

They should make gradual progress in their love. Through the wife loving her husband and the husband loving his wife, a couple should create a family that loves God. (Blessed Family - 880)

People should love their spouse as God's representative. If they love each other from a humanistic viewpoint, their shortcomings will be revealed and eventually they might even seek a divorce. (Blessed Family - 880)

I have heard that nowadays when brides on Cheju Island receive crop fields at the time of their marriage, they register the fields under their own name, so that they can claim their ownership in case they divorce their husband. This is quite a strange couple, isn't it? These brides distinguish between their own money and their husband's money, and also when they have money in their hand, they claim crisp bills as their own and the wrinkled up bills as the man's... This is not love.

They should open up the money purse and use the money. When one asks, "What happened to the money?" the other says, "I have used it." Whereupon the one responds, "You have put it to a good use. Use more; that's good." This is how it should be. But if you say in anger, with quivering lips, "Oh no, you have spent more money!" then you are in error. You will be happy when you are able to give without limit, and able to give and take at any time as you please, whether in a deep place, in a low place, whether by night or by day. Hence, you will be miserable if you are unable to give even if you want to give, and unable to receive even if you want to receive. (Blessed Family - 880)

Section 4. Even God is Enraptured in the Love of a True Couple

Each one of us, as an individual, has a mind and body in mutual conflict, and thus we should unite our body with our mind as the center, preparing a foundation of reciprocity in our mind, where God can come and dwell.

When such a man and woman receive the Blessing, sharing perfect love and delighting in joy, in God's eyes this is like a flower that has blossomed on earth. Moreover, all the forms of harmony that unfold through their love are like a fragrance to God. God comes to them because He wants to live amid

such beautiful flowers and fragrance. The foundation upon which God's love can come is none other than the place of conjugal love. This is the place where all things and the universe harmonize. It is the Unification Church and its teaching that explains such ideas and the path to follow. (Blessed Family - 887)

What melody does God like most? It is the sound of the laughter of an eternal married couple that like each other and rejoice. When such a couple can understand and embrace the world and live a life with a heart that can take in the entire universe, their laughter becomes natural. Isn't the beautiful sight of such a man and a woman before God like a flower to Him? This is not a simple ideal or abstraction. I am only talking about the original world. (Blessed Family - 887)

Looking at a mountain, a husband and wife may ask for whom the mountain has come into being, and also while thinking about the whole universe, they ask for whom has this universe been made? Then, they answer by saying that it is for me, and at the same time for you. This is what a married couple is like.

Fulfilling the purpose of the birth of this universe and valuing the central purpose is the way through which a husband and wife can unite. The husband and wife talk to each other centering on heart, personal character, and love. The husband and wife go the same way. Even if a lady is a country bumpkin, what will happen if she marries a government minister? They go the same way. Although that country lady may only have an elementary school diploma, everyone will have to bow their heads to her as she is a minister's wife.

This is how a husband and wife go together. Between a husband and wife, is there a separate love for him, and a separate love for her? For them, love is both your love and my love at the same time. It is your love and my love. (Blessed Family - 887)

True love is that with which you love with your entire bodies as one, and with your whole hearts and blood vessels as one. Who are the people who can love like this? It is a husband and wife. If there were no husbands and wives in the world, would life have any appeal? (26-151, 1969.10.25)

When you look at the conversation of a loving couple, their words are more beautiful than any poem or painting in the world. Moreover, how beautiful and splendid are the words, "just between two people in love," and "just by ourselves," and "just the two of us"! (Blessed Family - 887)

These are all good, but what do you think is the best among them? There is no one but your partner. If I call my partner and say, "Hello!" she will answer in a corresponding manner, saying "Hi!" and if I call her saying, "Hey," she will answer saying, "What?"

If the husband calls his beloved wife, saying affectionately, "Honey!" she will answer affectionately, saying, "Hello,

dear!" But if he speaks to her bluntly, she will answer in like manner, saying, "What's the matter?" Just like the mountain echo, everything is reciprocal. (37-11, 1970.12.22)

When you look at the laughter of people intoxicated with love, they are also reciprocal. When a man laughs, he opens his eyes even bigger, and when a woman laughs, she gently closes her eyes. If the husband's eyes get bigger and bigger, and the wife's eyes get smaller and smaller, we can say that they are a happy couple intoxicated with love. (Blessed Family - 887)

Section 5. The More a Husband and Wife See Each Other, the More They Want to See Each Other

When do a man and woman feel happy? We can say they feel happy when they become partners and share love. If a man were to relate to a woman by swinging his fist or using physical force, this couple would never be able to attain happiness.

When the man embraces and protects the woman with his strength and loves her, she will be able to feel true happiness. The love between a man and woman does not work just with strength or just within the mind. The woman will be able to experience a real feeling of happiness when the man confirms his loving heart with his strength, and when she returns love to him with her body and mind. They will be a truly happy husband and wife. (Blessed Family - 887)

A person always needs stimulation. Happiness does not come without stimulation. So stimulation is necessary. Just as daily meals taste good and fresh only when you are hungry each time you eat, the love between husband and wife should be always new and fresh.

The more the wife and husband see each other, the more they should desire to see each other and long to be together all day. (23-57, 1969.5.11)

Love has value when two people long for each other. In asking for love, if you have a mouth, you should open it, and if you have eyes, you should open them. Only then, will the giver of love be happy. If you just remained dumb, love would run away on its way to you. You should know this.

How offended you would be if your lover were not serious and behaved half-heartedly! Do you like to be together with or separated from your beloved? The closer you are to each other, the better. Why is this so? It is because everything works together. (Blessed Family - 887)

What is the thing you like the most? Is it food? If you see some food when you are hungry, you will eat it with joy, but this pleasure is temporary. If someone gives you food, even after you have become full, you will not like it.

But this is not true with the one you love. Is there anyone who says of his lover, "I want to forget her. I don't like her." Even if you have seen her over and over again, you want to see her yet again and again. Isn't this right? You want to see

her again, even if you have seen her, and you want to see her yet again, even after you have seen her again. This way, you first stand one in front of the other, and alternate until you turn like a wheel of a cart. Unification takes place here. (37-11, 1970.12.22)

A wife who knows love sometimes gets an impulse to bury her head in her husband's bosom and enjoy an afternoon nap. This is because she is drunk with happiness and doesn't have a clear mind. Before marriage the man appeared to her as scary and strange. After the marriage, she misses him and has to see him many times in a day. This is how women's hearts change. So sometimes she calls him and asks him to come home during the lunch hour for a quick visit. It is the same with a man who has come to know love. Whenever he has a chance, he will want to sleep with his wife's knees as a pillow. So he will run home whenever he has free time, regardless of whether it is lunchtime or a coffee break. Also, if she wants certain things done, he will not hesitate to do things he didn't like doing before marriage, things about which he used to say, "Such things are a woman's job. Should a mighty man do it?" I would say that such changes commonly occur to men and women who have come to know love. (Blessed Family - 887)

When God created human beings and blessed them, He did so in such a way that the husband and wife would be happy. A husband and wife who have opened and entered such a gate of blessing are lost in whispering to each other. They only say sweet things that praise each other. For instance, "I have been waiting like this in order to meet you. My life will reveal its value like a flower through you. I was born in order to love you, and I have been waiting for this day." There would be nothing in the world that is as sweet as secret words of love. The secret words whispered by a husband and wife, even when together in bed, will be a refreshment to dissolve all the fatigue and hatred of the world. (Blessed Family - 887)

Section 6. How Conjugal Love Develops

When a man and woman meet through the mediation of God, how do they express their love? When you look at the process of the development of love, the first is the lips, the second is the breasts, and the third is the sexual organ. It is the lips that a woman, when she first meets a man, feels shy about and hides before starting to love him. This is why she covers her lips with her hand. It is because love starts with kissing.

When love matures, sons and daughters are born as its fruit. For a woman, her sexual organ is the holy place of love, and the key to open that gate is held only by her husband. If a husband has two or more keys to a woman's holy place of love, he is Satan. Also, if the wife's holy place could be opened by any key, when it is supposed to be opened only by the key held by her husband, she is also Satan. When the key of love held by the

husband opens his wife's holy place and enters there, the most precious sons and daughters in the world will be born.

The value of sons and daughters is such that they are an encapsulation of love, not exchangeable for anything in the world. Through sons and daughters, parents will experience the heart by which God created the first human ancestors, Adam and Eve. This is why the parents rejoice when they look at their children, singing out, "You are my love, whether I look at you this way or look at you that way."

No matter what your baby does, who is born through love, you do not hate him but simply love him. This is because he is part of your body, made of your own blood and flesh and your love. Whether he pees, takes a poop, or has a runny nose, he is simply cute and lovely. It is because love is dissolved into such things. (Blessed Family - 894)

In the relationship of husband and wife, if their love is joined through a strong force, they must be joyful and feel their partner is lovely, no matter what that partner does. If the wife says that she hates the smell coming from her husband's body or if the husband thinks or feels that he hates the way his wife moves, this is only because a perfect love has not been realized between them. This married couple only joined together for some superficial purpose or interest. (Blessed Family - 887)

In your family life during marriage, in order to feel true joy, you should bring God into the center and make a relationship where you can love each other while watching God rejoicing together with you. A man and a woman getting married and making love is not something you should be ashamed of. This is something most dignified, holy, and beautiful. However, since the first human ancestors violated God's commandment, the history of love has been a sinful one and has been flowing in a shameful direction. (Blessed Family - 887)

Did anyone watch Adam and Eve dancing naked in the Garden of Eden? So, when there is no one else around, you can do such things. When a husband and wife dance naked in the room, is this something to worry about? But if they do this in front of others, they deserve censure from society. But if done just between a husband and wife, who will care if they dance naked or what else they do? So blessed couples, you can go ahead and dance naked. What does it matter when a husband and wife do it just between themselves? (21-236, 1968.11.24)

You should think that although there are many men and women in the world, there are only the two of you. You should devote yourself completely to this one woman, with the thought that she is devoted to you. This is the Principle. (Blessed Family - 887)

True happiness can be found in a place where you laugh, sing, and whisper together with your spouse, both of

you intoxicated with love. I would say that the one who listens to the whispered words from his beloved is a happy person. It is because having words of love whispered in your ear can give you feelings of happiness, as if you were dreaming. (Blessed Family - 366)

Section 7. Why You Feel Sad When Your Beloved Passes Away

Why does a woman cry when she loses her husband? It is not for some vague reason that she is sad after losing her husband.

Love embraces all four directions. At the same time, there has to be relations of front and back, and left and right. Because love is like this, the husband stands next to his wife in a relationship of left and right, and realizes a love that embraces the four directions. When such a wife loses her husband and falls from the position of being supported by the universe into a position of having no support, she feels the pain of his loss, as well as the pressure from the universal power. (Blessed Family - 901)

Why do you feel good when you see your beloved wife? When you are alone, you cannot stand in the position in which you are supported by the spherical four directions of the universe. But with your spouse, you make a horizontal love relationship where you have give and take with her and establish a position where you can contact the vertical power of the universe. Thus, the one who has a spouse becomes infinitely happy through the supportive power of the universe. This is why when you see your beloved wife, your entire mind becomes focused and you cannot see anything but her. So you dance and sing with her, spinning round together. Why do you dance, sing and rejoice? To expand the realm of support. (Blessed Family - 901)

Many people oppose Rev. Moon, the man who goes to America to educate and train American young people, even staying up all night and sometimes dancing, singing, and having fun with them? I do this in order to expand the realm of support that is connected to me.

Because the expansion of the universal realm of support starts with me, I push forward without fear, even if I am opposed and have to go to prison.

No matter how much you sing joyfully and say this and that, do you like to live alone? When one partner of a married couple dies, the other grieves and weeps. Do you think a person can prepare his own path? Why do we say that a person is miserable if he is without a spouse? It is because he cannot experience the occasion in which heaven and earth can rejoice.

He has deviated from the regulation of the law of heaven and earth. Clearly, only through universal law does the fortune of heaven and earth turn, and are the requirements of happiness and its motivation determined.

He is sad because he has drifted far from the law, and within the law of heaven and earth there is no room for such sorrow. What does it mean if you are

happy and joyful? It means that there is a place where you are welcomed by the world. Sorrow indicates a place where you don't belong. This is how joy and sorrow part ways. (19-334, 1968.3.29)

When one of the partners of a married couple dies, the other cries. This is because when the remaining partner falls into the position of having failed the universal law, the universal power pushes him out and his sorrow increases. Then, what makes you happy? If you become someone who conforms to the universal law, the universal power embraces him. The greater the power, the stronger it comes to embrace him. And the stronger it embraces him, the further he enters the internal center that brings joy. So, where do sorrow and joy separate? They do not separate within you. They separate based on the principle of power, that is, the universal law.

Then, what is the universal law? It is a man and a woman from beginning to end in total oneness, and also this is the way of the heavenly fortune.

You aren't suppose to go alone, but as a united man and woman, that is, a husband and wife who are one heart in walking the path. Everyone, have you ever heard words like these? So those who fight, cry and scream, and create a big commotion will be quickly removed. They will be considered a failure and not a success in the realm of the universal law. Then where do they go? They will go to the garbage can. Their mind knows this, and this is why it instantly feels sorrow. (24-223, 1969.8.17)

Section 8. Conjugal Love Should Be Eternal

If someone asks a loving husband and wife how long they will be in love, and one of them says, "Just while we are young," would the other feel good or bad? For how long do you want to be in love? Eternally, but first of all until you die, and then you will want to love eternally. Eternity is something that represents the whole in the future. To say that one will love until death is to say that he will love by giving everything he has. Isn't this right? "Eternally" means the whole, and "until death" means an intention to love the whole thing. Only then will your spouse be happy. These young women here, when they get married, they are sure to ask their husband, "Do you love me?" When their husbands say they do, they will then ask them, "Do you love me completely?" The husbands will have to say they totally love them in order to make them happy. This is the same with men. They cannot do anything about it. This is how things are in God's harmony. (37-23, 1970.12.22)

When people get married, they say they will love each other until they die. In saying this, one can either just say, "I will love you until I die (Juk-dorok sarang-handa)" or draw out the first word, "Ju-u-u-u-u-k…" for ten years, a hundred years, or a hundred million years, and then say the rest, "…dorok sarang-handa." Which would you like better? Would you rather just hear it

simply as, "Juk-dorok sarang-handa"? The young women here, how about some answers? You would be happier if your spouse says, "Ju-u-u-u-u-k" for say, a hundred million years, and then "dorok sarang-handa" than if he just said, "Juk-dorok sarang-handa." The more drawn out it is, the better. If a husband meets his wife and says, "Ju-u-u-u-u-k," and ten years later, he says again, "Ju-u-u-u-u-k," and then says "Juk-dorok sarang-handa" after he passes over the age of fifty. If only he can do it, she will say she loves him beyond measure. This is how it is. She will like him, even if he has a big belly and waddles when he walks. (37-25, 1970.12.22)

What kind of people are true wives and true husbands? When people mature, they have a family. Taking their spouse as an eternal partner of love, they should form a family of love where their initial love grows as the days go by. When that love at the family level expands to form a tribe, these tribal members will be eternal embodiments of love, which can expand love eternally. Such a husband and wife will be a true married couple and a true husband and true wife. Also, such a husband and wife will be able to participate in God's love. (Blessed Family - 880)

In the eyes of the wife, her husband has to look the best and be number one. Also, in the eyes of the husband, his wife has to look this way as well. The best relationship is the one that is formed during first love. It is the best, no matter what others say. This cannot be bought at any price. If you can have such a world for eternity, how splendid this is! Everyone should at least reach that level. The wife should follow and serve her husband well. Such things should not appear just in literature or just as a movie scene. Rather, you should live like that throughout your whole life. Since the best history and best culture had been turned upside down, I have been creating a new history in order to establish such a world and to live in such a way. (23-56, 1969.5.11)

What kind of couple are the ideal husband and wife we speak about in the Unification Church. They are a married couple who can turn the highest art into reality. They are a couple who can turn the highest literature into reality. Before we come into contact with the highest level of art in the world, the highest and sweetest love shared by the husband and wife has to be the best work of art in the world. It has to be the best work of literature and the real body of literature. (22-269, 1969.5.4)

CHAPTER EIGHT

True Parental Love

Section 1. Parental Heart Wants to Give Everything

Parents who have given birth to and raised children all understand the desire to receive blessings and feel happiness through their sons and daughters, whom they love dearly. Also, if they have established a correct standard through which they can experience joy, they will want to bequeath this to their offspring for eternity. Even fallen parents hope that their children will grow up as fine people who can be followed and revered by all nations and praised eternally.

The parental heart seeks to protect children from harm and is concerned about them day and night. The heart of fallen parents can even be like this. For example, a mother ignores the diaper smells from her baby while nursing her child at her breast. Thus, if fallen parents have such a heart towards their children, how earnest must God's heart have been, longing to love Adam and Eve based on their original hearts? You should all think about this. When you nurse and nurture your babies, you sing them lullabies and whisper to them, wishing that their lives will be a success. Any parent has such a heart.

No matter how incompetent or lacking parents may be, if one of their children suffers from a disability, the parents' hearts are devastated to the point of breaking. If this situation is then resolved, the relief and joy are overwhelming in proportion to the original pain. If such is the heart of a fallen parent, what must be the heart of God? (20-209, 1968.6.9)

If a son commits a crime and is sent to prison, the parents tearfully forgive and reach out to him, instead of saying, "Serves him right!" This is why parental love is extraordinary. Similarly, if a son is sentenced to execution, his mother will be totally grief-stricken and seek any way, even changing the world's legal systems or risking her life, to save her son. (91-147, 1977.2.6)

Such is the unchanging and sacrificial nature of the parental heart towards the children. (50-281, 1971.11.8)

Do loving parents keep an account of the times they love their children, saying: "We bought you shoes and clothes a few days ago with our hard earned money, which cost us so many dollars and cents"? When parents love their children, they want to treat them even

better than princes and princesses, and still feel sorry that they cannot give more. Parents have the heart of wanting to give their children something better. This is why we cherish parental love. You should all know this. Parents give and yet feel that it is not enough; they love and yet feel as if there is some love they have not yet given and want to give more; and even after giving, they still feel unsatisfied with what they were able to give their children. This essence of parental love is then what connects us to eternal love. This is the original motivation for the beginning point of love. (60-82, 1972.8.6)

When relating to their children, parents want to give all their best possessions. That is parental heart and reflects the nature of God. Then, what kind of being is God? God is a being who wants to give all His precious attributes to those who truly become His children. (56-147, 1972.5.14)

Section 2. Parents Desire to Be Surpassed by Their Children

If I were to ask those of you who are middle-aged or older, "When you were young and looking for a spouse, did you want to find someone better or worse than you?" you would all give the same answer: "Someone better". No matter whom you ask, in the East or West, you will hear the same response. Similarly, in the relationship between parents and children, parents never want their children to be second-rate. For example, if a good-looking couple marries and has a baby who is nowhere near as good-looking as the parents, the couple still wants to hear praise about the appearance of their child. (77-102, 1975.4.1)

No matter how attractive a woman is, she will still be happy if she hears a passer-by compliment her baby with: "Wow, he's so much better-looking than his mother!" Even though this implies she is much less attractive than her baby, no mother would protest at hearing this and grumble, "What? Is he much more attractive than me? Then does this mean that I am much less attractive?" Rather, she would be unable to contain her joy. This is the maternal heart. Whom do you think such a heart resembles? Mothers are resultant beings, not causal ones.

Any family where the son achieves less than his father will decline. If the father is the president of his country but his son's accomplishments fall short of his, and if this pattern were to continue for some generations, that family will gradually decline and ultimately be driven to a miserable state. Therefore, if a son asks his father, "Shouldn't I do better than you?" would the father reply "How dare you say that!" or "Of course, go ahead!"? Of course, he would say the latter. (41-281, 1971.2.17)

When determining who to entrust with responsibility for the family, no parents would want to choose those inferior to them. Why is this so? It is because parents always hope their children will outshine them. The same is true with

respect to the nation. The rulers of a nation should wish for their successors to be greater than they are. Whether in the family or in the nation, the desire should always be for successors who are superior to them in every regard. This is something that is desired eternally, and that transcends the fortunes of history. (Blessed Family - 1002)

If true parental love is to perpetuate forever, someone must inherit its tradition. Since our children are clearly our successors, we must educate them to become the heirs of this tradition and enhance it onto higher levels. While each generation should recognize the importance of the existing tradition, they should not just inherit it, but also develop it for the future.

Such a tradition can only start in true families with parents who are constantly burning with hope that their children will surpass them. Such parents will consistently encourage their children to succeed. Parents who long for the day when their children surpass them will devote their utmost efforts to prepare the best possible environment for them. Such parents will sacrifice everything for the sake of their children's happiness, and push them in the direction that will make the children better than their parents. (Blessed Family - 1002)

Parents are happy when their children outshine them. Thus, women who bear children who do not do as well will not have the dignity to enter heaven. You should be able to love your sons and daughters more than your own mother and father loved you. Moreover, when your children also think like this, a world of love will emerge naturally, and the Kingdom of Heaven will be realized. (97-310, 1978.3.26)

Section 3. Parental Love Is Eternally Unchanging

What is the original motivation of parental love? While conjugal love is changeable, why is parental love toward the children born of that conjugal love unchanging? Parental love does not originate from conjugal love. Unchanging love does not originate from the horizontal conjugal relationship, but is surely related to the origin of a vertical flow. Who would such a vertical subject be? He is known as God. Vertical love is not the kind of love that a husband and wife can enjoy as they please. In the case of vertical love, it is impossible to say that you will love, when you want to, and not, when you don't want to. It cannot be severed. It cannot be severed by man who is in the horizontal position. Thus, the love parents have toward their children never changes.

In today's democratic society caught in the floodtide of individualism, children say that they have changed according to the new trends of the age. They want to disassociate from conventional norms, yet even though they argue about the old ways and new ways, their parents' heart does not lead them to say, "You go your way, and I will go mine." Parental love is not like that. Even animals are the

same. In loving their young, they transcend their lives. (48-154, 1971.9.12)

Where did parental love come from? If we are resultant beings of the First Cause with some relationship to Him, we have come from within some destined power of this First Cause. This is not something we as human beings can touch. As such, have you ever heard anyone say, "Let us revolutionize the love with which parents love their children; let us become the standard-bearers of that revolution"?

Let's suppose some parents come forward with the idea of revolutionizing parental love and reinventing human history, claiming, "Even though we are parents, we will not love our children." Yet, the moment their baby's umbilical cord is cut, a loving heart will naturally arise in them. Every life form, whether on a higher or lower level, is created in such a way that it cannot but love its young. Thus, since the act of loving their children inspires parents to invest and use their lives as stepping stones, it is clear that parental love brings us closest to an eternal and unchanging standard.

When seeking an absolute standard, although parental love may not achieve this by itself, it can be a stepping stone closest to absoluteness for human beings. It can be the only foothold. Then, looking at the history of the world, I wonder whether it has not become a permanent foothold. Where did such parental love come from? It is not learned based on advice from one's father or the admonition of one's spouse; nor does it come from one's own decision to love. It happens naturally. Love is something that comes naturally. (48-156, 1971.9.12)

If we analyze the essence of love, there is no need to revolutionize love. When parents love their children, this is part of true love. This is why the heart with which people loved their children from the time of the first ancestors is the same heart with which we descendants several millennia later love our own children. Moreover, the heart with which our descendants several millennia later will love their children will also be the same. Love is eternal. True love is something pure that does not need to be revolutionized. Then, what kind of love is God's love? If God establishes certain beings in positions with an absolute standard, acknowledges their existence, and loves them, then that love needs no further drastic change. (18-11, 1967.5.14)

Section 4. Parental Love Sacrifices Everything

Love cannot be fulfilled alone. Without an investment of life, love cannot be established. When considering the love in the parent-child relationship, there is a clear bond of life. Thus, as long as a bond of life remains, and as long as there is hope within that bond, love will surely remain. No bond of love can be made apart from a bond of life. Thus, love requires an investment through a bond of life, and then the degree to which you invest your life will determine the value you feel. (32-14, 1970.6.14)

For example, parents' love for their children is not just based on their daily relationship; rather, it is a love that comes from their bone marrow. Parents have a loving heart that cannot be forgotten or cut off from, no matter how you may try. This is why parents love their children until their last breath. As soon as parents feel they have a bond of life with their children, a heart of love naturally arises in them. Parents do not love their children based merely on a deliberate decision because they are their children. Instead, parents cannot help loving their children beyond any personal intention or connection, due to the life force connecting them. Such things are felt very clearly in our family life. (32-14, 1970.6.14)

What kind of being is God? God is a being with a heart that desires to give and give endlessly, which is also why we seek Him. If God were just a merchant who says, "Hey, this costs so many dollars and cents," we would not pursue that kind of God. Why should all people love God and follow Him? Why should we like God? It is because He gives and gives everything to all people and still feels ashamed, saying, "I can only give you this much now, but wait just a while, and I will give you a hundred and even a thousand times more." God is not content with what He has given so far. God's heart seeks to give abundantly, while also promising even better things in the future. If we are with such a being, we can be happy even in a state of poverty. When we reach the situation wherein we are experiencing starvation, in a shocking way we experience the stimulation of future hope within the present reality.

What this means is that through such hope, we can make a new resolution. When a mother feels sorry that she cannot give enough, if her child hugs her, saying, "Mommy!" will it just be a physical hug? How grateful she will be! It is a chance to shed tears of mutual comfort looking to the future. It is not an occasion for despair, but a place of explosive growth where they can take the hope of tomorrow as stimulation for the present, make a joint resolution together, and encourage each other. Therefore, such an experience is not a miserable one. Only within such a realm of love can we find the stimulation to look to the future and sing praise for its value within the realm of reality. Hence, we come to the conclusion that there is no misfortune for those who live within that realm of love. (36-290, 1970.12.13)

Parents want to sacrifice everything for the sake of their children. This is like God. What does this mean? God does not invest Himself for His own sake. Likewise, parents want to live for the sake of others rather than for their own sake; they want to stand in the position of God, who lives for the sake of others. If God were to say that He only exists for Himself, this would not be true love. Love, life, and hope are realized when parents sacrifice themselves completely for the sake of their children and are bound together with them. (69-61, 1973.9.10)

Section 5. Parents' Love for Their Children Is Absolute

In my childhood, I would often look at bird nests. Once I climbed a tree to look into a nest, and the mother bird started pecking at me. She was desperate and willing to die to protect her nest, and not only once. When I brushed her aside, she flew away, and then came back. Seeing this, we cannot deny the powerful instinct of animals to transcend their own lives to protect their offspring. It is similar with human beings. You should be able to invest your life for the sake of love. That is the way of a true person. What kind of people are truly good? They are those who establish love as their root, and try to protect their loved ones even at the cost of their own lives. This is where goodness is initiated and where the rationale for reciprocal goodness is established. This is something that never changes. (186-15, 1989.1.14)

When I was in Danbury prison, I witnessed an interesting thing. A slope was being bulldozed into a tennis court. However, when the rainy season came, work had to stop for a few weeks until the weather cleared up. During the delay, a water bird built a nest only three meters away from the path the inmates used for their exercise. The water bird was not easily noticeable as her colors allowed her to blend into the background. Therefore, while she was guarding her eggs, no one realized she was there, even through they repeatedly walked right by her. When the water bird curled up, she looked just like a round black stone from the side, but when her eggs hatched and the baby birds started feeding, they were pretty noisy and gave away their location. Several of the inmates tried to mess around with the water bird, but she proved very capable of protecting her young. When she returned with food, she never landed close to her nest, but chose different locations, then slowly crept over to her chicks. Every day she approached from a different direction in order to protect her young. This is how she protected them. As her chicks grew larger, she would make lots of noise and peck any inmates who came too close. She was clearly warning them to stay away. Who taught the water bird to be like this? It is the power of the universe. All things of creation are on a level plane, centering on God's love as the axis. They may have different positions on that plane, but their level of love and care is the same. (136-23, 1985.12.20)

When a honeybee tastes nectar while visiting flowers, it attaches itself with its legs and sucks with its abdomen sticking out. I know bees very well. If you pull one with tweezers while it is sucking nectar, it will not let go, even if its abdomen is torn off. True love is like this. You can even cast away your life. True love is not based on calculated gain. Being able to forsake and disregard one's own life is the path of true love. Parents walk that path. Consider the case of parents, who love their children: if a child is in mortal danger, parents will willingly die in place of their child. Parental heart will-

ingly goes the way of death for the sake of love. This is true love. (144-209, 1986.4.24)

Suppose a man becomes extremely wealthy through his own hard work, sweat, and tears, such that he could boast of his achievement throughout the world. If his child is then faced with a life-and-death situation, material things will no longer matter to him, and he will sacrifice all his wealth and even his own life to save his child. (34-160, 1970.9.6)

Section 6. Parental Love Is Eternal

Is there a limit to parents' love for their children? Parents love their children not only during the childhood years, but throughout the child's entire life, and even into eternity. If a relationship is established between a parent and a child through which they can feel increasing worth and value, then infinite force, infinite stimulation and something infinitely new will arise within that relationship. (32-12, 1970.6.14)

The love of a mother or father is one of the greatest forms of love in the human world. Even people in high positions in society are vulnerable to the needs of their children. Parental love toward one's children is unconditional and unlimited because it is the mother of all kinds of love. Thus, orphans who grow up without receiving parental love, thirst after it most of all. Although they may have a house to sleep in and food to eat, orphans always lack and long for something in their heart, and that is the love of a parent. (Blessed Family - 1017)

Most of you were raised by loving parents. Whether the children are young or old, their parents always love them. Even if parents have a seventy-year-old son, they will still look at him the way they used to when they raised him long before; this is parental heart. As children age, the parent's heart continues to draw ever closer, the sense of responsibility toward their children increases, and the heart to live for the sake of the children deepens. We can see this clearly when we observe how parents relate to their children in society. (Blessed Family - 1017)

Parents go through many difficulties for the sake of their children, but do not feel the hardship. Why? It is because they love them. After giving their flesh and blood, do parents keep a record? No. Rather, they are pained at not being able to give more. The same is true for the mothers here, isn't it? When you breast-feed your babies and they don't feed well, you feel worried. Isn't it true that your babies take away your flesh and blood? In a sense, aren't they the greatest of all thieves? Yet still mothers feel anxious when their babies do not feed properly. Why do parents love their children so much? It is because this is the law of love. (39-334, 1971.1.16)

When a mother watches her baby feeding at her breast, her touch and feeling is centered on love. Also, when holding her baby, a mother experiences

a beautiful atmosphere because heaven and earth enter a state of peace. This is why, no matter how much trouble babies can be, mothers have room in their hearts to accept and even encourage such behavior. There is no limit to the love parents feel for their children. In one sense, a baby is an enemy who sucks out his mother's flesh and blood. Yet there is no mother who thinks that way. A baby allows the discovery of many new things. For instance, a baby stimulates new hope for the mother and father. At such times, there are also new realizations. This bond is unchangeable. (Blessed Family - 1017)

Section 7. Parental Love Sets the Standard for All Forms of Love

Parental love is the highest. Those who have been raised with the empowerment of true parental love become well-rounded people and understand the dynamics of love. The family is the school of love. The children will never forget their parents' love. The full experience of parental love is impossible without parents. (62-16, 1972.9.10)

What should the love among children be like? What should they use as the standard for loving? Brothers and sisters should love each other just as their father and mother do. From whom should we learn about love? We should learn from our parents. (66-120, 1973.4.18)

Children should be able to say to their mother and father, "Our mother and father are the greatest in the world. They are the ones who stand in the position of God!" When children see an unchanging heart and love between their parents and say, "Let us learn from this love and become united among ourselves as well," this is the realization of an ideal family. When children grow up and reach young adulthood, they go looking for a partner with whom their mind and heart can be one. This is realized through marriage, where a man and woman totally respect each other and strive to establish the standard of love and heart. You should have a family in which the mother and father can unite with God's heart and love, and then the children can take after their parents and also unite with God's heart and love. (Blessed Family - 913)

It is the order and tradition of love for the one in the position of the elder brother, as a representative of the parents, to sacrifice himself and love his younger siblings centering on the parents' love. The position of the elder brother brings with it the responsibility to suffer most among his siblings. It is the same with the position of parents, who suffer the most for the sake of the children. If parents shed tears and sacrifice for the sake of their children, the children will naturally want to follow their parents. (Blessed Family - 913)

When they relate with God as the center, children can express love to each other in many different ways. The older child should love the younger sibling in the same way the parents love him.

In a family united through such love, the love within that family will blossom, and become the love within a society and the love within a nation. In this way it eventually becomes the love of the whole world. (28-151, 1970.1.11)

What is the reason you receive love from your parents? It is because your father and mother's motivation to rely on each other and love each other originates in you. Do you understand? Thus, when brothers and sisters love each other centering on that motivation, their love also will not change. Similarly, when you think of your neighbor as if he were your own self, the right social environment will develop. The family is the formation stage, the society is the growth stage, and the nation is the completion stage. You must go through all three stages. All families must be linked together. Only then will love develop among them and unity be realized on the national level. Society is divided into many sectors. Companies have a CEO, and how many heads of state does a country have? Isn't it just one? One person is responsible. In this way, a unified pattern is established, while the scale just increases. Becoming one, yet also being divided into many parts is the essence of the four-position foundation. (26-153, 1969.10.25)

CHAPTER NINE

True Education for Children

Section 1. What Kind of Education Should Parents Give Their Children?

What kind of education should parents give their children? Not education of knowledge but of love. Children should be educated through their father and mother uniting. Parents should teach their children that God likes their mother and father, mother likes father, father likes mother, I like my parents at the same time as they like each other, and they like me. Thus, at the beginning, Adam and Eve were to receive an education of love from God centering on His love. Then where is the origin of it? It does not start with human beings. Since God is the Parent, Adam and Eve should be educated in love by Him. Then from where do Adam and Eve establish their standard of value? It is from God's education of love. Until when are they to be educated in love? They should grow up in parental love until they have become able to reckon the whole standard of value that their Father knows, in other words, until they have become mature. Yet there is no record in the Bible that Adam and Eve grew up receiving God's love. There is no mention of them receiving love, but instead their story disturbingly starts with the narration of how they fell. This spoiled everything. Then was there a standard by which Adam and Eve were to be educated in love by God? Without it, there could be no such thing as God's ideal. The question is what the standard of education of love should be.

We want to go to heaven, but we cannot receive such an education there. We must receive it here on earth before going there. If that education were not given to us on earth, it would be a big problem. What is that education? (51-171, 1971.11.21)

Heaven is the world of the heart. It is not a heaven of religious doctrines or of religious denominations, but of the heart. Why is it that God wants to find His citizens and adherents on earth? To make His sons and daughters. What kind of sons and daughters does God want to raise? Those to whom He can express His heart, saying, "This is how I feel." (9-293, 1960.6.12)

Then, what kind of attitude must Adam and Eve have if they are to be educated? Being in a parent-child relationship, they should always follow their Parent wherever He goes. When

He goes, they should follow Him anywhere and anytime. When He ascends a mountain, they should ascend it with Him, if He descends into a valley, they should descend there with Him, and if He enters a cave, they should enter it with Him. They should always be with their Parent. If God had to be separated from His children, could He be separated? Since He is the Absolute Being, He will absolutely want to see them. Since He is the Absolute Being, He likes them absolutely when He likes them. You cannot say, "Well, God, if You want to come, do come, and if You don't, don't. If You want to stay there, do so, and if You don't want to stay there, don't." You must be absolute. (51-173, 1971.11.21)

If you are in a position of oneness with God inside and out, you will be people of erudition even without being taught. You would be even more knowledgeable than through research. How are heaven and earth structured? How is the spirit world structured? How is human life structured? Even baby insects all go and find their food when they are born; so the lords of creation do not find their food or know about life and death through being taught. They are supposed to know it at first sight. We were supposed to be such charming people, but due to the Fall we have not become such people. Although we are fallen, our original nature still operates in the relationship of subject and object partners. Since filth that has accumulated from the Fall has been covering it, its operation will be stronger when that is eliminated. When the dirt is completely eliminated, the original nature will burst out. So far, people have been pursuing the way by which this can happen. (56-131, 1972.5.14)

Section 2. What Should Parents Teach Their Children?

What are the contents of the truth? However great anyone may be, they cannot stand in the place of your parents, spouse or children. What is the highest of all truths? Parents, spouses and children. There is nothing higher. Then what is the center of the truth? It is love. From such a principled viewpoint, what is the center of the highest truth? People say that God is the Original Being of truth, goodness, love and life. What does this mean? They all mean the same. The truth cannot be established without love and life. Those who want to become people who can talk about the real truth must have the will and desire for the truth within their lives. Here, desire stands in a reciprocal position to your standard of personality. So what is the nucleus? As the Original Being of life, love and truth, what kind of being is God? He is the Father and simultaneously the Mother of humankind. Parents are the nucleus. (21-183, 1968.11.20)

What are our most precious assets that we can leave behind? God's love and true parental love, which cannot be found in the secular world, are the greatest inheritance we can bequeath to our children. We must educate them well

about God and what God's love is like. As our children do not know about them, we have to be parents who can love them like God on His behalf so that they can find Him through us. (93-335, 1977.6.17)

What is the Unification Church seeking to accomplish? We are saying, "Let us give our lives for the sake of the highest love, and God, humankind and the world." There is no higher education than teaching: "Such an initiative, direction and purpose started for the sake of love. Men and women, mothers and fathers, sons and daughters, and everything in the universe started for the sake of love." Those who live like this and go to the spirit world will surely not be ashamed to stand before God. (93-189, 1977.5.29)

Blessed parents tell their children to study. Your sons and daughters do not become children of filial piety and loyal citizens just because you tell them to study. There is no way that could happen. They could say, "Although our parents have suffered in the Unification Church, we will not walk such a path." You must teach them the way of love that can assimilate that. Thus, parents should take their children around, loving the people in their village and praying and shedding tears for the nation, even if they have to skip meals. The children may think of it as bad when they are little but when they grow up they will say, "Our Dad and Mom are the best."

They will understand that their mother and father do not shed tears for them. The more mature they become, the more they will come to realize that their parents tried to love the nation, serve God's will, and save humankind even though they had to abandon them. You should not live as you please. If you are only worried about your children, they will not succeed.

Raise them by feeding them the food of love. Give them a sense of the direction they can take with love. As they grow in age and wisdom, when they discover a gold mine, they will think it is a mountain with just a small gold nugget, but as they dig deeper, they will realize that the mountain itself could be made of gold. (139-77, 1986.1.26)

Section 3. Parents Must First Set an Example

In order to educate their children, parents should first put their words into practice. They should set the example of being loyal to God's will. This way, they should create an atmosphere in which, whatever they say, their children can revere them without ever talking back. Otherwise, their children would not follow them. (31-268, 1970.6.4)

In order for this to happen, parents should give their children a heavenly education. In teaching their children, parents should first be exemplary. Before teaching their children to practice filial piety, they should first be children of filial piety. You yourselves must be sons and daughters of filial piety according to heavenly law so that the connection of heaven's tradition of filial piety can be

established from there. Educate them to practice filial piety just as their parents practiced filial piety in the family, and to be patriots just as their parents struggled for the nation even while being driven into desperate circumstances. (30-112, 1970.3.17)

Parents do not make their children practice filial piety just by telling them to do so. Parents must have the ability to cause a heart of wanting to practice filial piety to spring up within their children. These things do not happen in one morning but after a long period of influence. What does it mean to exert influence? Parents should set the example in their daily lives for their children to follow their way. You should be experts in putting such things into practice. (29-97, 1970.2.25)

When teaching your children, do not just say, "Become great people" but rather, "Go such and such a way in order to become great people." Fathers must fulfill their responsibilities as fathers and elder siblings should fulfill their responsibilities as elders. In other words, by your becoming people who know how to discern the connection to walk the path of true men and women, and who do not deviate from heavenly law, don't you think that the path will emerge by which you can go through the principled course and become the citizens of the one nation? (Blessed Family - 1039)

What should parents do? They should teach their children in such a way that brothers and sisters can love each other just like their mother and father. At the same time, they should teach them, saying, "As we love the nation, you should also love the nation in this way." Then, they will not need any other education. When you pray, ask God to make your children do it this way since you are doing it this way.

You can set your children up in such a position only after you have first set the standard. If you have stood in such a position, God will naturally lead your children in the same direction. Thus, if you fail to reverse the trend here, you will be called to account when you pass on to the spirit world. (13-103, 1963.11.1)

In your families, you should make your children think that their Mom and Dad are greater than any kings or queens in the world. Also, you should show them that their mother and father are close to each other in a way unprecedented in the world. You as blessed parents should establish such a tradition.

Furthermore, you should plant the tradition in the innermost core of your children so that they can say, "Our mother and father make us proud, more than anyone else in the world." If you look at parents in the secular world, they fight and make a big mess even when their children protest, crying, "Mother! Father! Why are you fighting?"

If your children, who have grown up in your family without tears, witness such sights in the secular world, they will feel, "Surely, our Mom and Dad are the best in the world! They are tru-

ly great and holy people!" To bring this about, you should set them an example. You should establish a parental bond through which you can receive adoration flowing out from the innermost core of your children's hearts and thereby establish family precepts and traditions implicitly. By doing this, their children in the next generation will say, "We will stand in the same position as our parents!" (23-184, 1969.5.18)

Section 4. Parents Are Best Friends and Best Teachers

Where does love come from? Never from the self, but rather from one's partner. Without a partner, love cannot arise. Within humankind, woman complements man, and children complement their parents. Love is not realized without partners. This is called "the love of three object partners." Those who have not experienced the love of three object partners cannot stand in a position of having substantially experienced God's perfect love.

"Let us give birth to sons and daughters and rejoice to the same extent that God rejoiced after having created Adam and Eve." This is taught in the Unification Church's Divine Principle.

Having created Adam and Eve, God said, "From now on, you will rule over the world. Our family will be the central family of the world. Please grow up quickly, grow up quickly." He felt joy and satisfaction while protecting and nurturing them with hope, desiring to see the day of their marriage upon their coming of age. By the same token, fathers and mothers want to raise their children well, and find good partners for them to become good husbands and wives. When that happens, the family prospers. (57-119, 1972.5.29)

Who are your children's best friends? Not young guys from the neighboring village. Their best friends are none other than their parents. That is as it should be. Moreover, parents should be liked by their children even more than their friends. That is how you should think. Therefore, parents must be their children's best friends and best teachers.

In educating their children, parents should not say, "Hey you, don't do that!" and teachers should not say, "You brat, I will hit you in the calf if you don't do what I told you. Don't do that!" They should educate them in love. Parents should educate their children in such a way that if they are asked, "Hey, do you think you should do that?" they would reply, "Right, this is not good because if I did it my parents would be sad." Thus, parents ought to be their children's best friends and teachers.

Do you think Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden had friends? If Adam had a friend, it was only Eve. Next, there was just God. God did not want them to be friends with the archangel, who was a servant. Yet they were ruined because they befriended the wrong person. So parents should be the best of all teachers, the best of all friends, and manifest the best of all forms of love. Love begins from God. That being so, conjugal love

ultimately stems from parents. So if parents say, "Hey, you like each other not because of yourselves but because of the virtues of your parents," their children should reply, "It would have been disastrous had our parents not raised us this way and found such partners for us."

Hence, marriages based on personal choice fail to meet that standard. By whom should children be educated in love? By their parents. They should see their father and mother love each other with great fun cooing like pigeons and learn from it. They should say, "Wow, when I see my father and mother together like that, I feel lonely when I am alone. I also need a partner whom I can love cooing like my parents." Their parents should also teach them to be like this. Then the children will come to repeat what their parents have been doing, the world will become a world of goodness and human history will become a history of goodness. The Unification Church seeks to accomplish this. (57-121, 1972.5.29)

Section 5. Chastisement with Love

According to the Revelation to John, one should be either cold or hot but never lukewarm. In the world of love a lukewarm attitude will not do. If you have a heart of love you can even chastise with a stick. When you raise your children, if they fail to keep a standard even though you loved them, you should sometimes treat them coldly. If you do not scold them when they are at fault, they will lose their capacity to distinguish right from wrong. You should know that although your Teacher may look amiable, I can sometimes be strict. I can be merciless toward evil, but toward goodness I can be hot like a furnace at thousands of degrees. (103-32, 1979.1.28)

When I heard recently that a teacher at a school in the West was in trouble with the authorities for using corporal punishment, I said to myself, "Now that nation will perish!" Students should not mind it if their teachers guide them in the right direction, even though it may mean using strong chastisement.

In Korea, there is a saying that goes, "Give one more rice cake to someone you dislike, and wield a stick for someone you like." There is no other way to ensure that the right tradition is continued. Children should be able to shed tears before the love of their parents, forgetting the pain of the punishment. (Blessed Family - 1027)

The closer you are to someone, the more you can scold him, saying, "You scoundrel! Why did you do that?" instead of rewarding him. If it is some lad from the neighboring village, you can turn a blind eye to his wrongdoings; but if it is your own child, you will spank him on the calf and scold him, saying "You little scoundrel, did you do something good or bad?" The intensity of your concern for him must exceed the severity of the punishment; otherwise, it will be a sin. If the severity of the punishment surpassed your concern for him, he could become one of your biggest enemies. Even if you

punish him out of love, yet the severity of the punishment exceeded the degree of your love, everything would be shattered. Nevertheless, in the opposite case, that would be all right. That is to say, on a scale of one to ten, if your love for him is at a level of ten but incurred a minus of five through the punishment, he would still be grateful at the level of five. (26-32, 1969.10.18)

If your child does not accept it well, in order to bring him to repentance, you should love him with a greater love than you have shown him in the past; then even a delinquent child would be able to repent and turn around. However, if you scold your child repeatedly, and speak loudly about how well you have raised him, he will begin to pack his bags. But if you love them with a greater love, shedding tears as if your heart would melt for them, they will turn around. Greater love tends to take the lead in assimilating and integrating all other lesser forms of love. (Blessed Family - 1027)

Even in secular society, parents who tell their children not to study when they seem tired do not truly love them. They should tell them to stay up and study, even if they have to spank them. Why is it so? They are concerned with their future well-being rather than just their present. Parents do this because they have great dreams for their children's future. (Blessed Family - 1027)

When you give birth to and nurture your children, do so with true love. Through this, if your family members unite closely and learn to love their nation, they will be called patriots.

Hence, parents watch over the growing process of their children and educate them and sometimes wield the stick of love so that they can grow up in the right way. Children should not complain or protest because of being scolded or even spanked by their parents for their mistakes. Taking it as a lesson, they should repent seriously and strive to make amends for their errors. Such people will be able to grow up correctly and draw near to the center where God abides. (Blessed Family - 1027)

Section 6. Why Tell Children to Study?

Do students go to school because they want to study? They first go to school because they are made to. In particular, elementary school students attend because they are afraid of their parents and not because they want to study. Everybody is like this at the beginning. Yet even as they do so reluctantly, they get to have a feeling for it and start going in order to learn, thereby surprising their parents. As they come to grips with the subject matter, they find it stimulating, and studying becomes fun. Fun itself is considered bad. Yet as a result of what they discover through their studies, the scope within which they can freely do so broadens. They find this stimulating, and it makes them study more. There is not even one person who likes studying for the sake of studying. They like

it because it broadens the scope of their activity. (36-120, 1970.11.22)

To students going to school, parents say, "Study hard!" This is not an easy path, but a difficult one. Yet their parents' words are an admonition for them to prepare for the future. It is also preparation for the future when professors stand on the podium and diligently teach their students. It is also preparation for the future when farmers go out into the crop fields and work hard. It is a preparation to build God's Kingdom on earth. (147-203, 1986.9.21)

What do you go to school for? Where do you want to use what you have learned at school? It must be for happiness. There would be no way for happiness to exist if we got rid of love. Thus, we can say that we go to school in order to shorten the path of love. (Blessed Family - 372)

The gate of happiness opens for people when they get married. It is very good to study in order to open the door of happiness, but if you study just to make money or attain political power, it is wrong. Your learning must enable you to practice true love. (Blessed Family - 372)

Why do young women want to go to university and obtain a bachelor's degree? They are trying to get good husbands. Nothing else can match that. Also, however great people may have become, they are miserable if their family members are disunited. (Blessed Family - 372)

You young women should all say that your studies are also for the sake of meeting true men and becoming true mothers. To become true mothers, you should first study for the sake of the nation and become true wives who attend true husbands. If you fail in this, you will not be able to have true husbands nor have true children. Women should be true wives and live with their husbands until one of them passes on. If women study in order to marry good men, shouldn't those who are university graduates all live with their husbands all the way through? But are there more people who do that or more who get a divorce? You don't even have to check. Illiterate people live together longer and better. (25-79, 1969.9.30)

Men and women are born to go through a long period of education and become people of sound character so that they can meet their ideal partner of love and lead happy lives. In secular society nowadays, people say that they do not study to meet a marriage partner. Yet in reality, it is in order to find a good partner. If you share a beautiful love with your partner and live happily, material things and honor will follow. (Blessed Family - 372)

Section 7. The Teachings of True Parents and Teachers

Parents work for the sake of their children. There are no parents who work only in order to feed themselves. When poor parents with many children work hard in the fields or on worksites, car-

rying heavy loads with an A-frame on their back or weeding a field with a hoe, it is for their children's happiness to last indefinitely. The sweat of toil dripping from their foreheads is not for their own sake. When the fruit of this sweat mingles with their loving heart for their children, a new history of creation will unfold there. Although they may weed a field or carry a back frame on a worksite, each tread of their footsteps is carving out a new history. (25-97, 1969.9.30)

Among the forty million citizens of our country, there are many parents who do not love their children. From their midst, if there were parents whose loving heart for their children could last for more than ten or twenty years, children of filial piety could not but appear in their family.

Children will realize their parents' hard work for them just by looking at their faces and hands. When they come to feel their parents' love emanating from their innermost core, the profound circumstances of times long past will flow out there. Through that, parents help their children to contribute to the nation, thereby becoming national or global parents.

Also, when you study with ardent hearts to fulfill your parents' wishes, you will become the new pillars of the nation. Those among you lacking such an emotion or feeling are not studying properly. If parents educate their children with patriotic hearts by saying, "We love you, strive hard for you, work hard and sweat for you because we want you to think of this country more than yourselves," then those children who have been educated in love by such parents will strive to become the patriots desired by them. Whenever they recall their parents' love, they will think of their forty million compatriots. Also, they will study hard with a heart of wanting to serve their people, and if that people were to become miserable, they would feel more miserable than their parents about it.

Yet they do not become patriots just by having such a heart. They must also have a substantial foundation they have established while having that heart. Only then will it be something that the people of the nation can admire forever. Otherwise, it will all pass away. It is serious when we think of all these matters.

If there were teachers at your school who strive to transmit correct ideas to their students by all means, while worrying about the destiny of the Republic of Korea, they would hold their students' hands in tears and admonish them thus: "Do not follow us, but rather follow the nation. We want you to do good things for the nation rather than for us." Students taught this way will fulfill the purpose that their teachers could not fulfill. This way, if teachers devote themselves and dedicate their whole life for their students, and if parents devote themselves for their children, cherishing the value of the nation and the world higher than their own, the students of those teachers and the children of those parents will become the pillars of the world. (25-97, 1969.9.30)

Section 8. An Education to Live Together with the World

Jong-gyo (religion) means "foremost teaching." God's foremost teaching is to teach and love humankind. There is nothing else. This is why true parents teach their children what the world likes and what God likes. (Blessed Family - 1046)

Human morals teach that children should love their parents, and husbands and wives should love each other and their children. Have you ever thought about for whose sake children should love their parents? Have you ever thought about for whom husbands and wives should love each other and for whom they should love their children? Human beings have lost the Lord who is responsible for love. God has spoken of infinite love. He said that what will remain in the end is love. That love is God's love. You should all know what it is that you long for. You must have a purpose in loving. For whom do you love? It is for the sake of God. We should love for His sake.

Those who love for their own sake: see what happens after you die – where you will go. You give birth to children, breastfeed them, and shower them with affection, but for whom do you do all that? It should be on behalf of heaven and earth, because of this nation and the world, because of God. The heavenly fortune following God's love is moving beyond the world to embrace heaven and earth. Yet if you love your children who are born through that connection just because of you, this is unacceptable. Those women who embrace and breastfeed their babies should do so with ardent hearts that they are embracing God's beloved sons and daughters on behalf of heaven and earth. (8-105, 1959.11.22)

Do you want to be blessed? Do you want to live eternally? Then you should be public-minded people. In educating your children, do not love them just as your own, but rather as those who can serve as an offering for the people of the world. Also, when you embrace and breastfeed your babies, you should do so with an attitude that you, in the position of mothers representing humankind, are breastfeeding babies who represent humankind. Furthermore, rather than loving and breastfeeding your babies only, try becoming mothers who think of other people's children as their own. Babies who grow up on the milk of such mothers will surely become great people. It may not happen immediately, but as such families continue down the first, second and further generations, world leaders will be born among their descendants. This is the formula. It will happen this way. (31-167, 1970.5.24)

Great mothers embrace and teach their children to be able to endure in any position of difficulty in order to become beings of goodness who can move the world. This is because they have realized the heavenly principle that goodness never perishes. (13-238, 1964.3.24)

For what or whom do you think

goodness moves? Not for one's own sake. When you eat, do so for the sake of the cosmos rather than yourself. Also, when you get married, do so for the sake of the Will rather than yourself.

We should go forward aiming for the world. When we experience things, this should be centered on the world. Those who do that may not seem to be cool people but actually they are. After you go beyond your life span, which passes by in the twinkling of an eye in seventy or eighty years, there is a way to live eternally, but people do not know that. If you know a way to enter the world of eternal life within the temporal realm and make a connection with that world, that eternity will become yours. (36-185, 1970.11.29)

Even if you had to eat millet rice and be dressed in rags, if you live centered on the world, becoming the source of endless and broad topics of conversation, telling your children, for instance, "When their house was like a hut, those people lived in such miserable circumstances, but later they became so successful," your children living in such a place will be excellent people. (28-188, 1970.1.11)

CHAPTER TEN

The True Family of Humankind Must Be Restored

Section 1. The Purpose of God's Providence of Salvation

The question is: what is it that God needs most? What is God called? He is the King and Owner of true love. If He is the King and Bridegroom of true love, it is an absolute principle that He needs a queen to become His partner. Who can be partners of true love for the absolute God? True human beings. It was Adam and Eve who were to attain oneness with God's love. You need money, knowledge and power, but if you lack a spouse, all these are in vain. Husbands need their wives and children, and wives need their husbands and children. The place where such objects of love live is called the family. Families who attend God, the Subject of love, must form the base for the beginning of God's Kingdom on earth centered on His true love. The core family is comprised of a man and a woman who are united as the object partners of God's love, who fulfill the desire of the conscience, who have sons and daughters within God's love, and who live happily as a family,

Just as human beings wish for the appearance of a beloved partner a million times or infinitely more valuable than themselves, God also wishes for His beloved partners to become beings of infinite value. Such people are true men and women. None of you have realized the fact that such a man and woman were none other than Adam and Eve, who were supposed to reach perfection without falling. (270-238, 1995.6.7)

Due to the Fall, God lost the true mother and children of Adam's family. There have been no true sons and daughters for God. There has been no family of God who could inherit the lineage of His love. Our minds and bodies came into conflict, having inherited false love, false life and false lineage through the fallen parents. Adam and Eve became enemies. Bloody wars broke out among Adam's sons and daughters.

Therefore, God's providence of salvation must be completed. The providence of salvation through which God restores everything is the providence of restoration and it is fulfilled in this manner: sons and daughters with unified minds and bodies should attain absolute oneness as couples centering on God's love; they should then build true families where they can live attending God eternally; and then, inherit His lineage by connecting with Christianity, the religion positioned as the Bride. Togeth-

er, they will reorganize through God's true love a unified family, tribe, people, nation and world. (270-243, 1995.6.7)

What is God's purpose in establishing religions? You should clearly know that it has to be His will to form a beloved family, tribe, people and nation centered on His most beloved sons and daughters, in whom His bone and flesh can become one. Then you should know what kind of person the Messiah is. He is the one who will finally come to earth with God's eternal true love as the root and perfect the ideal desired by all religions. Thus, the purpose of God's providence of salvation has been for him to become the True Parent, regaining the lost true love, true life and true lineage by establishing ideal families all over the earth. (270-242, 1995.6.7)

Section 2. Adam's Family Fell into Satan's Possession

Due to Adam and Eve's fall, God became unable to regard them as the true ancestors or parents of humankind, or as His sons and daughters. Although Adam and Eve were God's only son and only daughter, they came to stand in a position where He could not relate to them as such. Also, after they became mature, He wanted to bless them as a couple in order to dispel his solitude.

Yet they failed to do that as a bride and bridegroom, not to mention as His children. Beholding them, God valued them infinitely in proportion to the magnitude of His desires for them; yet through their fall, He could experience neither filial heart nor conjugal heart to dispel His solitude.

God hoped that Adam and Eve would in the future stand in a position where they could establish the way of loyalty and filial piety before Him as the ancestors of hope and the sovereigns of all humankind. Nevertheless, they failed to become the companions who would dispel His solitude. (20-80, 1968.4.28)

Where did the Fall start from? What is the fall that occurred in the family? Is it eating the fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil? The fall that can occur in the family can be nothing other than that which involves the act of love. Do you think they fell by eating a fruit? Does original sin result from eating a fruit? It is said that the parents' eating of the fruit was the sin, but what is that fruit through which the descendants of thousands of generations have become sinners? This has to do with the blood relationship. If the root of sin is planted through lineage, it lasts forever by virtue of the law of heredity. The only thing that can make this happen is the wrongful use of love. (23-167, 1969.5.18)

The wrongful use of love is the cause of the Fall. Through an illicit sexual relationship, Adam united with Eve, who had already united with the archangel, and thus they became husband and wife and formed a family, centering not on God but on Satan. Therefore, all humankind as their descendants came to inherit Satan's lineage. Accordingly, although

Adam and Eve's sons were originally to become God's first and second sons, because Eve established a relationship of illicit affection with the archangel, her first and second sons fell into Satan's possession. According to the ideal of creation, love determines ownership. When a relationship of love is created, the subject partner and object partner involved in this love necessarily come to own each other. This is the Principle. Therefore, from the viewpoint of such a principled standard, since Eve fell through illicit love with Satan, the rights of ownership over the human beings born as her descendants passed to Satan, the archangel, who became able to proudly assert those rights. (Blessed Family - 325)

Since Adam and Eve fell and did not fulfill God's ideal of creation, they became fallen parents instead, and consequently multiplied children with original sin. As a result, human history came to consist of the development of tribes, peoples, nations, and the world through the family of fallen Adam and Eve. Hence, the ideal of true parents who stand in the position of perfecting God's original will has remained unfulfilled from the Fall up to the present day. Also, the true family, tribe, people, nation and world centering on true parents remain as only an ideal. (Blessed Family - 325)

Section 3. The Hope of Fallen People

Through the Fall, the ancestors of humankind, Adam and Eve, created the fallen lineage. They failed to become the true parents who were to have attained oneness with God, and they failed to give birth to sons and daughters of God's direct lineage in the original ideal world desired by Him. Instead, they forged a bond with Satan and became satanic ringleaders who gave birth to children of death. Today, humankind still has false parents. Hence, humankind must deny the lineage of those false parents and meet the true parents. (14-279, 1965.1.3)

The hope of fallen people is to meet God's son. Lamenting the injustice of having been born as Cain's children, they are wandering around seeking God's true son. We must find him. Yet how much will humankind have to suffer in seeking him at the individual level and at the family level? Thus, God sent the Messiah, who represents the realm of the son at the national level.

Then, if people received the Messiah, they could find God's son at the level of the individual, family, tribal, people and nation. The advent of the Messiah was to convey the joyful news that humankind could meet God's son up to the national level. (Blessed Family - 480)

We, who were born with the fallen lineage, have to meet God's son who can transcend the basis of Satan's accusation. Having done so, we must go on to meet him as our parent. You have had fallen parents, but not true parents. Hence, you need to seek true parents whom God can love. Next, we must seek the family of those parents. After that, we must seek

God's love, and upon finding it, we meet God. In this way, fallen people must seek their God-centered siblings, parents, home and hometown. You should be aware of the fact that humankind is supposed to walk this path.

Thus, if parents and children who are worthy of God's love form families together through that love, they can automatically prosper. They will sing songs of love in a setting that can bring success to everything through harmonized families. When this happens, a race centering on God's love will automatically be formed. Yet, because Adam lost such a family, its standard must be found through religion. Until that family is established, a tribe, people, nation and world cannot be established. (Blessed Family - 480)

What would be our ideal, desire and hope? The conclusion should be as follows: first, attending God as our Father is our greatest hope; second, we are to become His beloved sons and daughters; and third, we are to inherit everything He owns. There cannot be a human hope greater than this. (Blessed Family - 480)

Section 4. The Goal of Restoration is Adam's Family

Adam's family is the goal of the providence of restoration. God launched His providence of salvation immediately after Adam and Eve fell, but when Cain murdered Abel, that providence had to pass from Adam's family to Noah's family. Through Noah's family, God sought to build the foundation for His providence on earth by annihilating all humankind through the flood judgment and establishing a family that transcended the basis of Satan's accusation. This task again devolved through Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Moses and Jesus down to the present age. Thus, the providence of restoration seeks to finally establish Adam's family, which was lost due to the Fall. (Blessed Family - 482)

What has God been seeking until now? Not a subject partner, but rather an ideal object partner. God has been seeking that which resembles Him and possesses both the inner and outer qualities of the world He created. What is that starting point? It is the family. Nothing can represent the universe better than the family. (30-80, 1970.3.17)

Where does all of history conclude? With substantial children and parents. In other words, it concludes at the level of the family. These are the fundamentals of the universe. Without parents, children cannot be born. Children should have dominion over all things centering on the parents they were born from. Adam and Eve also were to rule over all things. This applies to everything. (35-276, 1970.10.25)

Ultimately, what is it that God sought to establish through His providence of restoration over six thousand years? What did He have to establish before establishing a nation, a race or a church? It was the family. That is to say, it was

to establish His object partner and family. The family is indispensable in the formation of a nation. Accordingly, the basis of everything is the family. (22-302, 1969.5.4)

Since the family of Adam, the ancestor of humankind, was destroyed, we must restore it. Jesus had to come as the unfallen Adam. As such, he was the second Adam. Since Adam, the first ancestor of humankind, became a fallen ancestor, God sent Jesus as an unfallen true ancestor in order to establish His original will. We must establish Adam's family centering on such true ancestors. (20-334, 1968.7.14)

The Bible testifies to the Fall of the ancestors of humankind. Then, did that fall involve one or two persons? Both Adam and Eve fell. This is the problem. Even though the Fall had taken place, if it had occurred through Eve alone, the problem would have been simple. In such a case, God as the Creator could have re-created her. (23-33, 1969.5.11)

Why did God have to start from the family? Because everything went wrong there – that is to say, in Adam and Eve's family. The loss of God, the expulsion of the angelic world, the loss of the world of creation, and the loss of the value and love of humankind, all occurred through an unprincipled union of man and woman in Adam's family. (100-275, 1978.10.22)

The individual salvation pursued until today by religions, especially Christianity, does not represent perfection, but is rather a rudimentary form of salvation that is no more than beginning from the very first step. The goal of salvation has family salvation as its unit, and that which is called the foundation of family salvation refers to families who can lead the world and bear responsibility even for global salvation. Realizing families where such a realm of heart is firmly established should be the highest ideal of our life of faith. (Blessed Family - 482)

Section 5. The Restored Family Was to Be Realized by Jesus

What did Jesus come to do? He came to establish a family. The history of salvation is the history of restoration. Those who are sick need to be healed. Jesus came in order to save fallen people. Then what is salvation? Since the family was destroyed, it must be restored. What must be done to achieve that? It is not possible without returning to the original position that was lost. Then why must humankind restore the family? Why did Jesus have to come to establish his family? Because the original family had been destroyed. Humankind is sick and in need of healing; people are fallen and must be restored. (23-18, 1969.5.11)

You should know that God is a being who conducts Himself according to principles and laws. Since Adam was lost, he must be recovered from the satanic world. Since he erred and failed to play the role of husband, despite being in the position to dominate and possess Eve,

she was taken by Satan. Thus, she must be recovered from the satanic world. Can this be done without a struggle?

God laid the national, religious, tribal and family foundations. Thus, He established Joseph's and Zechariah's families. Then, if Jesus from Joseph's family and John the Baptist from Zechariah's family had united, God's will would have been fulfilled in a short time.

What would have happened had John the Baptist believed in Jesus? Also, what would have happened if Jesus had received John the Baptist's younger sister as his bride? The will of God could have been fulfilled. When I say things like this, don't Christians immediately oppose me? They make a great hue and cry over it. Yet, however much they oppose me, it will be to no avail. Those opposing me now will realize that I'm not lying when they pass on to the spirit world. (Blessed Family - 488)

Originally, Adam and Eve were supposed to achieve unity as substantial father and mother and complete the perfection of the family of love, which is God's ideal of creation. Yet since this was not accomplished, Jesus had to come in order to complete it. Also, Jesus was to come as the bridegroom and receive a bride. Then, if they had united with God's love, restored the original position of the perfected Adam in the Garden of Eden, and bonded in that love, nobody could have made them repeat the Fall. (Blessed Family - 488)

What was God's will? It was for Adam and Eve to establish the standard of the perfection of man and woman and establish God's family based on His love. Yet, was this done? God's family was not established. Jesus understood and also believed in this aspect of God's will, but due to the disbelief of the Jewish people, Israel's historical four-thousand-year foundation for Jesus and Judaism collapsed, and Jesus died miserably on the cross. Until now, who has understood this heart-wrenching situation? No one! You came to understand it through me today. That being the case, how glad Jesus must be! As the bridegroom, Jesus could not perfect God's family without establishing his bride as the true mother. Without Jesus' family being established, the will of God would remain unfulfilled. (Blessed Family - 488)

Without a God-centered family first being established, neither the nation nor the world could be restored. This is why Jesus sought to establish God's beloved family after coming upon the earth. Thus, as the bridegroom, he must find his bride. Since it is centering on one man that true parents, true couples and true siblings can emerge, this will be decisively fulfilled by the reception of the Groom and Bride at the prophesied Marriage Supper of the Lamb. (Blessed Family - 482)

Section 6. The Restored Family of the Returning Lord

What kind of family is a restored family? It is the substantiation of his-

torical hope. Until now, God has been guiding His providence for six thousand years in order to restore this one family. Where should this substantiation of historical hope be realized? It should be realized in none other than this actual society of the present time. It should not be realized in the future.

This is the standard of historical hope and the standard of the hopes of all peoples of the present time. It is the standard of the past, present, and future hopes of humankind. The numerous saints and sages who have entered and left this world longed for this family. (21-51, 1968.9.1)

The restored family finally appears as the returning Lord receives his Bride. This family, which must be recovered, is the family desired by humankind. Throughout the history of the past six thousand years, countless faithful religious leaders, who had been sacrificed by numerous rulers and potentates, ardently wished that the Lord would come and avenge their anguish upon their enemies. Yet the Lord cannot do that alone. If he could, he would have done it already. Thus, God's family must appear. It must be instituted and lay a new foundation on earth. Then it should be able to blow up the satanic world with the dynamite of the heart. (21-25, 1968.9.1)

With regard to the restored family, who would constitute its center? Since a family of true children sought after by God is His purpose of creation, the center of that family must be God's true son. Then who do you think he is? He is the one who comes vested with full powers to inherit this universe. He is the returning Lord. That Lord must come and form a family. (21-46, 1968.9.1)

What is our bitter sorrow today? It is that Adam and Eve failed to begin history by forming a true family as a true father and mother in the Garden of Eden. This is God's bitter sorrow before it is humankind's bitter sorrow.

The purpose of God's creating human beings was to establish such a family and build the kingdom of peace on this earth. Nevertheless, this family was shattered and as a result God has been guiding the history of restoration repeatedly over a long period of six thousand years, harboring bitter grief. You should all know that in this process, God has, until today walked and crossed over treacherous paths of sorrow innumerable times to fulfill that destiny. The one coming to bear the responsibility of solving all that is the returning Lord. Then what should the returning Lord do? He should form a family. He should do so not in mid-air, but on earth. Only then will a tribe, people, nation and world arise from it. (21-51, 1968.9.1)

The coming Jesus must, without fail, establish the family desired by God, and this family has to be a true family. Until now humankind has been seeking true love. In no case should false love exist in the family or society. Thus, a true family, a family desired and shared by all humankind, must appear to chan-

nel God's greatest love. Without such a family, God's tribe cannot be instituted, and without such people, God's nation or world cannot be realized. Thus, it is only in the family that the highest standards can be realized – the highest ideal desired by God and the highest that human beings can relate to in His providence of grace and salvation. (32-197, 1970.7.15)

Section 7. The Original True Family Is Established in the Unification Church

What have all the religions of history been doing until now? They have been seeking one man. They have encouraged celibacy. They did not allow for new things. If they continue like this, they will perish. Yet when they reach the level at which they can say they have found that man in their historical search for him, they will have to seek the woman after that. What kind of place is the Unification Church? It is a church seeking to restore the family. (30-218, 1970.3.23)

So far, religions have been pursuing individual salvation, but the Unification Church goes beyond that by pursuing family salvation. What we save is the family, and in going to heaven, we do not go there alone. The Unification Church's view of salvation does not allow for the husband to go to heaven while the wife gets sent to hell; rather it promotes both of them going to heaven together. It does not support the view that parents may go to hell apart from their children in heaven; rather it advocates for both parents to be together in heaven with their children. Our church is of a different dimension from other religions because it teaches that the way for us to go to heaven is together with everyone, our beloved families and even our beloved tribes. Hence, it stresses the importance of the family, whereas established religions emphasize celibacy. The family is central to our way. The family exists for the sake of the world and God. You should clearly know that this is the path for Unification Church members to walk; it is the course for their daily life from now on. (34-358, 1970.9.20)

Parental love, conjugal love and filial love motivate us to forge those bonds that fulfill our desires to be eternally together; these love bonds transcend laws, systems, all backgrounds and circumstances, and even ourselves. No social system can ignore this way of life, and no nation can be formed if it ignores it. As such, the Unification Church pursues family rather than just individual salvation. Our church's purpose aims at the fulfillment not of individual but rather of family salvation. It is on this point that we are unique. (34-328, 1970.9.20)

What is the common purpose to be shared by all people ultimately? What is the common gate they must pass through? It is neither the nation nor the world; it is neither the communist nor the democratic world. The communist and democratic worlds are superseded by the original family who can build

the unified world. Then where have the order, the education and the standard of purpose for this been until now? Such a resolute standard has not appeared on earth. Until it appears, there cannot be a kingdom, an ideal nation or a country of peace. Thus, we desire to see the day when such an ideal original family – one we must seek, welcome and live with – appears on earth and consummates the destiny of history. Only then will God's providence for the earth be fulfilled, and the promised land of the Sabbath, the nest of the Sabbath, be founded. (23-31, 1969.5.11)

What is the desire of our Unification Church members? It is to become a restored family. This is where all our desires lie: the family is the source of the peace of all nations, of the happiness of heaven and earth, and of the new dispensation. The beginning of the new heaven and new earth, and the passing away of the first heaven and first earth, the root of all values of human life, and the starting point of hope – lies here. They are all there. Then who are at the center of the restored family? They are the true ancestors. The true ancestors are the True Parents. (21-46, 1968.9.1)

Section 8. The True-Family-Centered Ideology and the Religion of True Parents

The world has become the way it is by receiving a tradition that deviates from God as a result of the Fall. Thus, True Parents must come and establish a new ideology. What kind of ideology should it be? Should it be based on the world or the cosmos? It is the true family-centered ideology. Without its appearance, a true global ideology cannot emerge.

Its representative must be God's true son. He should be the heir who internally inherits everything related to God's heart. He should also be His external heir, the heir of the ownership of all things. In other words, he has to be someone who can inherit God's heart, God's body and all things. Only such a son can stand in God's stead. God's Kingdom will finally be realized only when he comes.

What is the true family-centered ideology? It is that of God's love. Isn't it simple? Without love, however much people may brag about being number one in the world, they are pitiful. Am I right or not? The true family-centered ideology is an ideology of children eternally following their parents, of younger siblings eternally following their elder siblings, and vice versa. It is an ideology that calls for a nation in the position of a younger sibling to follow the nation in the position of an elder sibling. (21-49, 1968.9.1)

What kind of ideology is that which is centered on God's love? It is a transnational and transglobal ideology of people seeking to give first rather than to receive in their reciprocal dealings. The world of such an ideology is the ideal world to come in the future. That ideal world is not one of projecting power and ordering people around, but rather that of the ideology that affirms the brotherhood of all peoples, in which all

hearts can move of their own accord to harmonize with God's love. The future world will be like that. In a time to come, the religion of family level saviors must emerge. This we call the true parent-centered ideology. It is the true parental religion, which is that of living daily as true parents in realizing the four-position foundation. When this happens, parents will become the saviors of their children within their families.

If you read the very end of the Revelation to John, you will find the key to the history of restoration. It exemplifies the greatness of the Bible. The contents about restoration were inserted into the last chapter of the Bible to reveal a principle of restoration. Revelation 22:17 states, "The Spirit and the Bride say, 'Come!' And let him who hears say, 'Come!' Whoever is thirsty, let him come; and whoever wishes, let him take the free gift of the water of life." Do you know what "the Spirit and the Bride" means? The Bride is the wife of the Lord, and the Spirit is a spiritual being, and from here, the Mother who manifests both the spirit and flesh must emerge. Since Jesus is a man and the father of humankind, he must find the mother among women and save the world anew. Christians do not know this. I am simply dumbfounded because, although I try to enlighten them, they reject me and even call me a heretic. (21-49, 1968.9.1)

What is the cosmos-centered ideology? It relates to the family that would always deny the desire to own gold and material treasures more than enough to fill the universe in order to live intoxicated by God's love. In that state, what belongs to children also belongs to their parents, and what belongs to parents is connected intact as belonging to God. (35-280, 1970.10.25)

What kind of ideology is cosmos-centered ideology? It is the true parent-centered ideology. In conclusion, they both are parental ideologies. They are the ideologies of our home, our nation and all of you as individuals. (26-201, 1969.10.25)

CHAPTER ELEVEN

The Family Is the Eternal Foundation of Happiness

Section 1. Why Do We Like the Family?

Why do we like the family? Because it provides the foundation on which you can freely exchange love and happiness. Hence, people yearn for their hometown, the place where their parents and siblings live. (38-328, 1971.1.8)

The family is a good place. Why is it good? Because your parents, siblings and your relatives are all there. Thus, everyone is homesick for their native land, their hometown. They think of their hometown more than their nation. Even while living in the Republic of Korea, the place they long for is their hometown. (23-151, 1969.5.18)

Why do you all like your families? It is because the family serves as the basis of free activity centering on parental love. By the same token, God must be able to act freely. When society becomes one that is composed of internally-oriented human beings, who have the shining core of love however shabby they may look, God will be free. Is that not so? When you visit someone's house as a guest, do you not feel uncomfortable? Why? Because no bond of love exists there for you. You feel awkward because that love does not emanate in all directions. Thus, the path we are to walk is one of character. (99-305, 1978.10.1)

What is the best thing in the family? It is not decided by you. Then what would be the highest value of the family? It is the parents. Even for you as individuals, power, knowledge, honor or money could be valuable; yet none of them could be superior to parents. Your spouse would come next, and then your children. In fact, in your family, is there anything more precious and valuable than your parents, spouse and children? There is nothing more precious. Then why do you like your parents and why do you like your spouse and children? It is because love is there. Parental love is something absolutely needed by the children. Also, fraternal love and filial love are absolutely necessary in the family. (112-289, 1981.4.25)

Who are the most beloved people in your families? Are they not your parents? Why do you like them most? It is because they are closest to you in a relationship of love throughout their lives. Your beloved spouse comes next. If husband and wife love each other uncondi-

tionally rather than conditionally, and if this love becomes one that is reciprocated within their conjugal relationship, even if it may not be closely related to an eternal love absolutely given by Heaven, that love will be the greatest thing to bring happiness and harmony to their family. This is how I see it. Filial love, the love children have toward their parents, is next. If children can sacrifice themselves for their parents and love them with a bright and positive attitude rather than despair, while longing for ideal circumstances in which their love can sprout as the hope of tomorrow, that love will be one with pure and true value for the happiness of that family. Thus, if there is a family that is complete with true parental love, true conjugal love and true filial love, we cannot but conclude that it is the most ideal family in this world. (Blessed Family - 913)

Section 2. The Family Is the Base of Eternal Happiness

In our daily life, on what basis would you say someone is a happy person? Can people be called happy because they possess some external ability, power or authority? They cannot. Also, are people happy because they have enough money to keep them from envying others? No. Furthermore, can people become happy through acquiring global knowledge or attaining a position from which to control the world at will? It is absolutely not the case that people become truly happy with just those things. (23-11, 1969.5.11)

Even if some people think they now have enough so as not to envy anything in heaven and earth, and sing songs of joy, such external things cannot be a source of happiness. External things may be a means of finding happiness, but they cannot be happiness itself. Then what has to be determined in order to be able to feel happiness? You must have beloved parents, spouse and children. Nobody can deny this. If you lack just one of them, you will feel sorrow correspondingly, and dissatisfaction will inevitably remain in your heart. (21-140, 1968.11.17)

All people on earth generally feel that the family is a base of happiness. The family must have parents. In the world, children without parents are called orphans and treated as pitiful people. The family has parents and the conjugal bond at the same time. It is pitiful to be without parents, and also to be without a spouse. However much spouses may have loved each other, there is utter misery and dejection when one of them loses the other. Not only that, it is surely a misery when a couple cannot have children. (23-11, 1969.5.11)

The family must have parents, spouse and children. Only then will it become the foundation of happiness. God's purpose in seeking to restore humankind must also be for His own happiness. The establishment of the ideal of God's foundation of happiness cannot take place apart from human beings. That point of convergence can only be brought about

through His relationship with them. In the same way that we feel happy when all the ingredients needed for our emotional well-being are present in our family, God also wants to feel happiness in such a setting. (32-197, 1970.7.15)

From where does happiness arise? What is the setting in which we can sing songs of joy? It is the family. Family happiness cannot be attained if there are emotional problems or if there is no heart or love in the family. (23-120, 1969.5.18)

If a couple has no children, there can be no happiness there. Also, if children have no parents, there is no joy for them. Where there is a man, there will have to be a woman as his partner. The same holds true for woman. In the case of husband and wife, their desire is to keep their love at a higher dimension within the subject-object relationship. Further, they must have children.

A unified family is realized only when a couple has parents above and children below. A family should be united vertically and horizontally this way. Then centering on whom are they to unite? It is impossible just with human beings. Since they alone cannot pursue a higher value, if there is an absolute Subject Partner of love, the parents will want to become one with that Subject Partner as the center. The place where parents and children attain oneness in love centering on that Subject Partner will be a place of happiness and hope. Everything must be brought into oneness and unified through something more valuable and stimulating. This is not possible just with our human love, but only from the absolute Subject Partner position. (Blessed Family - 913)

Section 3. The Family Is Basic Unit to Realize God's Kingdom

Our family and God's Kingdom have the same form. Our family comprises parents, spouses, children, and siblings. It can be unified through love. Here unity can be attained, life transmitted, and the ideal substantiated. Thus, you must be able to honor conjugal love and parental love to qualify to go to heaven. The grandparents bequeath their love to the parents. God's Kingdom will not be realized if any of these forms of love is denied. The conclusion is that you must love your parents more than you love each other as husband and wife, and your grandparents more than your parents. This becomes the core and ideal motto of God's entire kingdom. (Blessed Family - 942)

The starting point of God's Kingdom is not an individual or a nation, but a family. Hence, Jesus comes to this earth seeking to establish the bond of groom and bride. Is the individual the starting point of the Kingdom? It is the family that is the basic unit for realizing God's Kingdom. (30-82, 1970.3.17)

God's Kingdom is a place that once you are there, you do not want to leave; it is a place where that Being lives that you would like to see again and again even

after seeing Him hundreds of times. If all people commonly desire to go there, see God, and live with Him, the world will be unified, but this is not something that happens all at once. First, the individual foundation must stand, then the family foundation must stand, and then it should expand through the people, nation and world. (Blessed Family - 942)

Where is God's Kingdom? It does not suddenly fall from the sky, but is the place where we develop the sphere of daily life for interaction between parents and children, fully enjoying the use of all creation as a basis of our ideal. (78-35, 1975.5.1)

You should know that your families are in the position of representing the sovereignty of the heavenly nation. Since the parents represent the sovereignty, the children represent the citizenry and their possessions represent the territory of that nation. Being filial to your parents leads to being loyal to your nation and that leads to the path of sainthood. These days, families have become a source of all manner of shameful things, but God is coming forward desiring that the family become a holy foundation. (35-305, 1970.10.30)

People must necessarily have families. In the family, there are parents, children and possessions. Then, who are the substantial beings that can horizontally develop all of the vertical history of the Old, New and Completed Testament Ages and represent it? They are all things, children and parents; that is to say, they are the parents, their children and their possessions. These are all needed within the bounds of the family. (29-156, 1970.2.27)

The conjugal Kingdom of Heaven is realized only through a couple attaining oneness in God's love. Nobody can break their oneness and there is no danger that it may split or fall apart. What kind of love have you sought? If you have sought God's love, your mind and body should attain complete oneness so that God's love can come and dwell in them. Thus, the conjugal Kingdom of Heaven must emerge and the family Kingdom of Heaven must be realized. The family Kingdom of Heaven will be actualized when mothers and fathers completely unite in love, and sons and daughters also find spouses just like their parents. When parents become the plus and children the minus, the family Kingdom of Heaven will come into being. (Blessed Family - 942)

Section 4. The Realization of the Ideal of Love Starts in the Family

From where should the ideal of love start being realized? From the Unification Church? The nation? The world? Even if someone unified the world, if he failed to unify his own family, he would be an unhappy person. The ideal of love should first be realized in the family. The family is the nest of happiness. Therefore, God's Kingdom begins from there. When Jesus, who came to the earth to realize God's Kingdom, said, "I am the

Bridegroom and you are the brides," he was referring to the family level.

Who makes up the family? First, parents; second, children; third, husband and wife; and next brothers and sisters. Then how are the members of the family intertwined? Through love. Therefore, what can unify the family? Love can unify it. Since love is unchanging, the grandparents' love can become one, the parents' love can become one, and the love of the husband and wife can become one. It is because love contains the quality of unity that they can be one. Also, it is because love contains the motivation of human life that the lives of the grandfather and grandmother can be connected, and also the ideal can be connected to it.

The grandparents bequeath their love to the parents; in other words, they give it to their children. The children of our grandparents are our parents, and we are the children of our parents. The place that is centered on such love is God's Kingdom, which will not be realized if any of these forms of love are denied. Since God is the Subject Partner of love and the one who can integrate past, present and future, you must love your parents more than you love each other as husband and wife, and love your grandparents more than your parents.

Man symbolizes heaven and woman symbolizes earth. Since man is subject, he does not like to be interfered with. Woman likes being loved more than she likes to love. Since man symbolizes heaven and woman symbolizes earth, their union is identical to the universe becoming one. Since the universe can be governed only through love, you can be the subject partner of the universe only through love, and you should think of your partner as being bigger than the universe. The connection between the two worlds of heaven and earth is unchanging love.

Those who have led earthly lives intertwined with love will enter heaven. The spirit world is the world of love. When God and individual people completely unite, man and woman will automatically attain oneness, and when a perfect couple appears, heaven and earth will be unified. Where does God wish to dwell? Since love arises between a man and a woman, He wants to dwell where a true man and a true woman make love. Since God is there, that love can be eternal, achieve eternal unification, and possess eternal life and ideal. Therefore, the one who has grasped that love can occupy everything. The purpose of the family that is formed through true love is not just for itself but for realizing God's Kingdom. Based on the standard that seeks to converge with the purpose of unifying the universe, the family should be expanded to the people, nation, world and cosmos. Then once it has reached the world, it should return. (48-10, 1971.8.31)

Section 5. Heaven is a Place One Enters as a Family Unit

What is heaven? You talk about going to paradise or heaven but it is not a place you enter alone. Heaven is a place that you must enter with your parents and

siblings. (15-278, 1965.10.30)

What is the secret for entering heaven? It is not a place meant for individuals, but rather for family units. Not only that, but also your tribe must be there with you. You are blessed if you have a big tribe for God on earth. If a family has many sons and daughters and great wealth, don't we call it blessed? If you want to be blessed like this and enter heaven, you must do so as a family unit and not alone. (22-166, 1969.2.2)

You can never enter heaven individually. As I found out, heaven is not such a chimerical place as believed by Christians. Originally, heaven is a place you are supposed to enter as a family unit. Families are meant to go there. Families go there. The place parents and children enter and live together with God as the center is the ideal world. Yet would you be happy because you went to heaven together with your mother and younger brother while your father and elder sister went to hell? You enter heaven as families. It is for families to go there. (22-271, 1969.5.4)

Heaven is the place that people who have not fallen, had a holy wedding on earth in God's bosom of love, had children God likes and rejoices in as His grandchildren, and received His love, enter altogether as a family. Would it be heaven if you entered it, but your child failed to do so? Paradise is a place parents, spouses, and children enter separately, no matter how close and affectionate they might have been. It has nothing to do with the family. Would such a place be heaven? Heaven is the world in which entire families follow their parents to interact with God as the center. Would it be good if a son is desperately screaming in hell and yet his parents are living happily in heaven? Could such a place be heaven? (19-104, 1967.12.31)

Heaven as taught in the Unification Church is not a place you enter alone but together with your family. From the perspective of God's ideal of creation, would the place men and women enter separately be heaven? No. The place they enter in twos is heaven, which is the place such that if the father enters it, so will the mother, and if the parents enter it, so will the children. As dads and moms should stay together, would it really be heaven if daddy went to heaven while mommy went to hell? (34-208, 1970.9.6)

Originally, heaven in accordance with the principles of creation is a place entered by families. You would be happy only if your parents, children and entire clan entered it. If parents went to hell and only their children went to heaven, what kind of heaven would that be? Therefore, as the Unification Church paves the way for going to heaven in the future, we must attain the family level. Otherwise, we will not be able to get into heaven. Through the family, we must escape from the level at which Satan can accuse us. We must escape from the historical level of accusation and the contemporary level of accusation. (21-62, 1968.9.1)

Originally, God did not create us so that husbands went to heaven while wives went to hell. At the time of creation, God intended that the heroes of the ideal, namely, fathers, mothers, sons and daughters, form a tribe, people and nation. Shouldn't it go this way? Yet due to the Fall, hell came into being. (16-33, 1965.12.26)

Section 6. Universal Principle of the Four-Position Foundation

Why are people sad when their loved ones pass away? When that happens, they feel it immediately due to the operation of the superhuman force that fills this universe. The more this force enters them, the more they feel the universal force centering on the vertical relationship with God. Yet when their loved ones pass away, that force leaves them, and they immediately feel the result of its departure. This is a tragic fact. People have to be perfect products but this situation makes them weaker. Human life pursues perfection, but when people come to have an element of failure that is the opposite of it, the universal force will drive out the conditions for it, and this appears as pain. You will all need to understand this clearly. (30-85, 1970.3.17)

Children of filial piety feel ineffable grief when they lose their beloved parents. Parents also feel grief when they lose their children. It is the same with spouses. That also holds true for our descendants. This is eternally immutable. (30-82, 1970.3.17)

You will grieve when your spouse passes on. This is because according to universal principles the three stages of parents, spouses and children are supposed to form a four-position foundation centering on God. Those who deviate from these universal principles will be expelled from the realm of success, and this is why they experience pain and sorrow. (96-28, 1978.1.1)

Why would a woman's death cause her husband to weep? Because the path of having sons and daughters, who represent the third purpose of life, has been shattered by her death. If he fails to fulfill that purpose, he must collapse. He can do nothing but die. He can do nothing but weep. Electricity has plus and minus charges; if one of them is lost, the other cannot operate. The way of people is the same. (27-345, 1970.1.1)

Not having children causes unhappiness. Some may think that conjugal happiness would suffice despite being childless, but it is not like that. Since the four-position foundation is a universal principle, when husband and wife come together and attain oneness, they must give birth to children and form that foundation. This is a universal law. If you fail to realize a four-position foundation, you will not be considered as successful. Also, you should not just have sons. If you did, you would only have tasted the love of a son, but not that of a daughter.

Can you know the taste of honey through someone's explanation? Just an explanation would not work. Before

explaining, one would have to open your mouth and feed you the honey and then tell you that this is the taste of honey. Then, why do we say that not having a son brings about disappointment and unhappiness? People with only daughters say that those having sons would have nothing more to desire. Westerners are a bit dull in this regard. Through emphasizing individualism, they have lost all such feelings. Therefore, they must regain them. Hence, they now are returning to Eastern thought in order to do so. Thus, your families must have husband, wife, sons and daughters. This way, they must attain complete oneness and go forward in sync with heavenly fortune from beginning to end, going on to live eternally, which is not possible alone. Even if you could live alone eternally, you would be carrying a bag of suffering around in the eternal world. You would not be able to receive the elements necessary for happiness. (24-223, 1969.8.17)

Section 7. The Heavenly Way People Should Go in the Family

People should love their neighbors' parents, grandparents and children just as they love their own. Only then will the relationships of above and below, left and right, and front and back arise. Only when they arise will the vertical standard of heart be established and the heavenly way emerge. Hence, they should practice this. Since members of the Unification Church practice it, they can build ideal families.

The church is the place enabling the expansion of the vertical foundation horizontally in all directions. The more the better. Why is that? Because we are crossing from the family level over into the tribal realm, and from there into the national realm. Thus, as you witness to more and more people, the heavenly foundation arises through you and the standard of value of character advances toward God. So what must we do with this vertical standard? I am saying that we should manifest it horizontally. (70-152, 1974.2.9)

On the day of union between mother and father, the family progresses, and on the day of union between children and parents, it progresses to a higher dimension. Then what will happen on the day of union between family and tribe? A new spirit for the race will emerge. We should not forget that when we are prompted to go toward a higher dimension, everything will be integrated at the national level and we will be able to live as the kindred of loyal subjects. (Blessed Family - 913)

Now even I will become a grandfather before long. This is the same for you: when you get old you will become grandfathers and grandmothers. We are born as a son or daughter, get married to become a father or mother, and then become a grandfather or grandmother; that is the course of our life. Thus, because grandparents, parents, spouses, and children constitute the formula course of life, the failure to love them

runs counter to the heavenly way. If they are not fundamentally bound together, there would be no way to bring the world into order.

If you go to the West, you will see that grandmothers and grandfathers are pitiful. You do not know how much they long for Oriental customs. They are saying, "Oh, Oriental thought reveres grandparents like God, and sons still go to consult their aged parents even when they are in their seventies and eighties. So how wonderful it must be!" Thus, those who do not know how to love their grandparents cannot love God. Who is the oldest grandfather? He is God. Since God is older than all grandfathers and younger than all babies, without loving people as a whole, you cannot love Him. So if you say God is old, He is the oldest person, and if you say God is a youth of the future, He is a youth more than anyone else. As we want to love Him, we have to love all the people in between, and since people of the past in the spirit world also want to find hope and live within that realm, we must love them as well. It is only logical that we will then be able to go the way of following and loving God. (70-152, 1974.2.9)

Section 8. The Unification Church Seeks to Realize the Family Kingdom of Heaven

There is a reason why I have not been building churches until now. It is because we do not need many people in the church. God's Kingdom is realized not from the church but from the family; that is to say, it starts from bride and groom. Woman was born in order to see man, and vice versa.

The first cry a baby makes when it wakes up from sleep and opens its eyes is "Mommy!" Husbands should call their wives more than babies call their mothers. Those who do not do that are wretched people. Also, wives should call their husbands even more than that. They should relate to each other as a couple who can call each other like this. They should live like that as a couple in the joy of conjugal harmony. If they live like this eternally, they will not envy youth even when they get old. (23-54, 1969.5.11)

The day that we meet the Messiah will come only after we have passed through the age of the word and the age of substance. Only after that day has arrived can we begin our lives in the Kingdom of Heaven. On the day of that meeting, you will have to attain such a state that his mind will become your mind, his heart will become your heart, his form will become your form, his difficulties will become your difficulties, and his wounds will become your wounds. Only when you attain such a state and feel that his mind is your mind and his heart is your heart can you become families of the Kingdom of Heaven. Only when you can complete this on earth can the families of the Kingdom of Heaven be established. (19-250, 1968.1.15)

What is true love? It is parental love, conjugal love, and filial love. Love is bound to be shattered before long with-

out a tradition of sacrificing for one another. The bond of parental love is not shattered because parents make sacrifices for their children. Also, children who have grown up receiving genuine love from their parents can never lose their devotion to them. Furthermore, as the realm expands in which spouses serve and sacrifice for each other more and more in the position of saying to each other, "You have lived for my sake," blessing will come to that family. Such a family constitutes the hallowed spot upon which God can descend. (43-308, 1971.5.2)

From where does the life of the Kingdom of Heaven start? From the family. It does not happen anywhere else. The Kingdom of Heaven is just a three-dimensional expansion of the family, and not something transcending that form. Thus, when you embrace as spouses, you should think that you are thereby uniting all men and women of the world. The place where you can establish the basis of having loved all humankind like this is none other than your family. (30-82, 1970.3.17)

Now, I feel that I must teach you the norm of the family, a norm of daily life that a family of the Kingdom of Heaven should have. The Unification Church is a family structure. It puts the family first. (22-333, 1969.5.11)

Henceforth, our worship service should proceed not in the format of a sermon, but rather a report. That report should contain something families can be proud of. Thus, entire families should worship together, and families who are performing well should serve as examples to guide those who are not. Let us therefore build a family Kingdom of Heaven. We should clearly know that until this is done, God's Kingdom on earth will not be realized. (23-62, 1969.5.11)

CHAPTER TWELVE

Seeking True Families

Section 1. Nothing Was Created for its Own Sake

What is the basis of individualism? One cannot claim anything as his alone. When a child, through the love of its parents, grows from an egg in the mother's womb and is born, 99.999 percent of its existence is from the mother's bone, flesh and blood, which was combined with the 0.001 percent from the father's sperm. There is no concept of "myself alone" in nature. Nobody is born with a concept of "myself." None of us, however great, could claim that we had become great all by ourselves. Bone, flesh and blood are all inherited in the mother's womb. We should acknowledge that the important parts of our body are an extension of our mother's body. All the essential elements of our body were included in the egg and sperm. There is no exception. Therefore, there is no basis for self-centered individualism. (287-25, 1997.8.10)

When we think of above, we automatically acknowledge below. Can individualism stand only with the concept of above by itself? There can be no concept of the individual by itself. Talking about right presupposes the existence of left. In the relationship between front and back, front presupposes back. The word man also cannot exist by itself. It presupposes woman. This is not just the claim of any one person, but is a universal fact.

Why was man created? Usually men say that they can live alone by themselves, so they don't care why they were created. Yet man was born for the sake of woman. Without woman, there is absolutely no need for man. Actually, nothing was created for its own sake.

Consider our five senses. Were our eyes created merely in order to look at themselves? In the same way our nose, ears, mouth and hands were all created for the sake of our partner. The force that can mobilize and focus all five senses is true love. Eyes, nose, ears, mouth and hands are the tools that were created for the sake of true love. Nothing was created for its sake alone. If people take things belonging to others, and use them as their own, aren't they thieves? Therefore, any man who arbitrarily uses his five senses and his body for himself alone is a thief, because these were created for his wife.

What is the difference between man and woman? Their bodies, and the sexual organs in particular. Then, who absolutely needs the male organ? It exists for the sake of woman. One of the sexual

organs is concave and the other convex. Why were they created that way? Both could have been pointed or both could have been flat. Yet they were made differently. Why? Each of them exists for the sake of the other. Woman absolutely wants what is man's and vice versa. You did not know that the female organ absolutely belongs to man, and the male organ absolutely belongs to woman. By occupying each other's sexual organs, man and woman come to know love. Only through the experience of the two attaining perfect oneness can we know the highest level of love. Nobody can ever deny these facts. Everyone must acknowledge them. An ideal couple comes into being in the place where the two achieve complete unity. Absolute love exists in that very place. God will come and dwell in such a place where love is absolutely unchanging. (287-27, 1997.8.10)

Section 2. The Most Holy Place Where God Can Come to Dwell

What are God's attributes? He is absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging. Then who is the owner of love? It is neither man nor woman. It is none other than God. By centering on love and through love, God and humankind become one. This is because they both absolutely need love. What kind of love does God need? He wants absolute love. What about you? It is the same for us. Just like God, all of us need absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal love. We must all resemble God. (279-246, 1996.9.15)

Where is God's most holy place? It was to have been the male and female organs that were untainted by the Fall. This is the place where love was to have dwelt. This is God's holy of holies. (134-185, 1985.4.7)

What is love? It is the most holy place where God can come to dwell. We must cleanse the fallen world through love. I have already made it clear that Adam and Eve, who had to pass through the period of adolescence smoothly, failed to do so and went off the track, bringing about the Fall. Eve, the ancestor of humankind, first fell by having an illicit love relationship with the archangel, and then because of this, she also fell physically through her relationship with Adam. Thus, their sinful lineage has been transmitted to their descendants.

You must understand that God can never comfortably dwell in a place where even small traces of Satan persist. For people to receive God's love, they must first die and be born again. In human society, would a man have any reason to like his wife if, after their marriage to each other, she is unable to forget about her first husband? Likewise, God has been carrying out the providence of salvation, guiding people to atone for their sins by way of restoration through indemnity. (Blessed Family - 344)

What do you think the color of love would be? Do you think it would be black at night, white during the daytime, and yellow in the evening? In the central color of love there is a strength that

can bring peace and unity and create the concept of the equality of humanity. Isn't the Unificationist concept of love beautiful? The color of love in today's American society is, in short, a disgusting color of death. Instead of realizing the world of the eternal ideal of creation through conjugal love, they are sinking into the pit of death. Those who thoughtlessly enter the most holy place of love will suffer the fire of judgment. Until they receive the Blessing, men and women must keep their most holy place of love undefiled, and once they have made love, they must continue to keep it undefiled. However, Americans generally are wicked men and women who violate love's sanctuary.

Americans who do not accept marriage through the Blessing are nothing but patients who cannot see ahead because they are blinded by fallen love. If American society continues to behave like this, it will have no hope for the future but instead will be filled only with despair. It is crystal clear that it will eventually be destroyed – not by God's judgment but rather by people who have lost their humanity. (Blessed Family - 344)

Since we in the Unification Church have come to know the providence of love that has been hidden for six thousand years, we have sought to broaden the foothold of the Blessing in order to perfect the ideal of creation based on God's love. Through the Blessing, love's most holy place has come to be created. You need to understand that from here, life emerges anew. (Blessed Family - 344)

Section 3. Man Owns Woman and Woman Owns Man

Around what axis do subject and object, or yang and yin, unite? Kissing? Love is abstract rather than concrete. What is the substantial body upon which love can settle? You do not know what makes man, man and woman, woman. It is none other than the sexual organs. Is there anyone who dislikes them? If you like them, how much do you like them? Until now, you may not have thought it virtuous to value the sexual organs, but from now on you should cherish them. What will the world be like in the future? If it is a world that absolutely cherishes the sexual organs, will that world be good or bad? Will it prosper or perish? This is not a joke. When God was creating human beings, into which part did He invest the greatest creative effort? The eyes? The nose? The heart? The brain? All of these organs eventually die, do they not?

What is the purpose of the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification? If humanity were to completely transcend the traditional fields of morality and religion and yet be absolutely in harmony with the sexual organs, earning the welcoming applause of God, what kind of world would it be?

Who owns the male and female organs? The owner of the husband's sexual organ is his wife, and the owner of the wife's sexual organ is her husband. We did not know that a person's sexual organ is owned by someone of the opposite sex. This is a simple truth, which is

undeniable. Even after history progresses for thousands of years, this truth will not change.

Typically a man thinks his sexual organ belongs to himself, and a woman thinks her sexual organ is her own. That is why the world is perishing. Everyone has been mistaken concerning the ownership of the sexual organs. People have been thinking that love is absolute, eternal and dreamlike, but had they known that the ownership of eternal love lies with the opposite sex, the world would not have become like it is today. There have been numerous PhD holders and scholars, and yet none of them has ever thought about this. Can any of you deny it? If you could ask your parents, grandparents, great-grandparents, the original ancestors – and even God who is the Origin of the universe – they would all agree with this. It is an iron rule which will remain as a universal principle even after the universe has existed for billions of years. The natural conclusion is that when you stand before God, He will judge you as righteous or unrighteous according to this immutable law.

In fact, the Fall of Adam and Eve originated in the violation of this law. Each of them erroneously thought that their sexual organ was their own. Due to this mistaken view, they were driven out and could not be acknowledged anywhere in the universe. In the mineral, plant and animal kingdoms, masculinity and femininity – that is, the sexual organs – are reserved for the sake of one's partner of love. Adam and Eve did not know this. Then why do the sexual organs exist? For love. Thus male and female exist in order to find love. (279-244, 1996.9.15)

If all men and women admit that their sexual organ belongs to their spouse, we all would bow our heads and become humble when we receive our spouse's love. Love comes to you only through your partner. There is no love other than love for the sake of others. We must remember that we can find absolute love wherever we absolutely live for the sake of others. (279-259, 1996.9.15)

Section 4. Love Has No Evolution or Revolution

Love cannot undergo evolution or any type of revolution. The original form of love itself is perfect, unchangeable, eternal and absolute. (Blessed Family - 351)

Love has no evolution or revolution. Love is eternal and perfect – a truth that does not change for eternity. If you think love evolves and you consequently start to experiment with it, you'll discover this notion to be incorrect. If American society, for instance, thinks of love as a livelihood, it is inevitably doomed to perish. There would be no reason for God to bless its future. If such a society does not self-destruct, then I will make it perish by exploding a bomb of love. What is clear is that love should never be used expediently or as a way to make a living. (Blessed Family - 351)

From the time a married couple first makes love, a husband has no desire for

any kind of revolution or evolution of love from his wife. This also is the hope of a wife toward her husband. It is the hope of both husband and wife to maintain the purity of their first love. They do not want any colors to be added to their pure love, nor do they need any revolution. They desire that the pure love itself be preserved for eternity.

Why does the threat of divorce ever arise between two spouses who love each other? When we learn that a couple, intensely in love with one another at the beginning of their relationship, has decided to get divorced, we realize that something has gone wrong. No matter what a couple's reason for getting a divorce may be, the break-up indicates that something has changed – their relationship has changed. Ultimately, the couple came to the point of divorce because they failed to protect and nurture their love for one another. Love itself has not changed, but their minds changed. (Blessed Family - 351)

When a man and a woman become husband and wife, the important thing is how to achieve unchanging unity between them. When they sing of eternal happiness in such unchanging unity, this is eternal happiness. The standard of an ideal heart of love can only be established with an unchanging subject. (Blessed Family - 351)

Say you marry a man because he is handsome and you like him, and then a week later he becomes disabled in an accident. If, because of this, you want to divorce him, your love for him cannot be called true love. It is false love. (Blessed Family - 351)

In the developed nations today, white people are in the higher positions to lead and influence the world, whereas black people are more likely to be found in lower positions under their dominion. Yet when parents love their children, the intensity of their love knows no such difference as that between whites and blacks. Nobody dominates anyone. This never changes. The heart of parents loving their children, the heart of spouses loving each other, the heart of people who truly love each other cannot change no matter how much history changes, develops, or goes through a process of revolution. (32-243, 1970.7.19)

Section 5. Chastity for Woman and Purposefulness for Man

Are you allowed to love whomever you like? When a man beckons to you on the street, should you women follow him or not? You should not. You are not supposed to follow him, are you? You should not have that kind of tendency. You should protect your bodies until the time is right. You should not hand over your pure love to devilish men. Men who strut and loiter on the street are all devils. Would you place your fate into the hands of such men? This is not a simple matter. Since you have but one life, if you take even one wrong step, you would be unsettled for the rest of your life. Isn't that so?

This is true for men as well. Up until now, women have been strictly directed to maintain their chastity, but from now on, men should be directed likewise. Only in this way will they be restored. Isn't that so? However evil and heartless this world may be, you should not do things that will lead you astray from the principled path. (26-160, 1969.10.25)

You should not defile your purity during your adolescence, the precious time when you can overcome and indemnify the bitter failure of Adam and Eve who lost their purity during their youth. In preserving that purity, which is pristine and of great value, you should have the mind and determination that even if you had to live alone for a thousand or ten thousand years, your love would never be misused. (37-107, 1970.12.22)

Certain men, when they see a pretty woman, wish that she were their wife even though they already have a wife of their own. We speak of such men with two minds as having the disposition of a thief. Since Satan was the first to have two minds, it would not be wrong to call men with two minds Satan. Such people are no different from Satan. (Blessed Family - 348)

The time is coming when men should also keep their chastity. If a man errs in this regard, it is as if his clan has committed a serious crime against God's will. Just because a person has a respectable position does not mean that he is permitted to be unfaithful to his wife. If he does so, his clan will perish. Such a time is coming; you cannot do that if you understand Unificationist teachings. (38-280, 1971.1.8)

We have now entered the age when men, too, must remain chaste in order to bequeath a historical tradition of purity. The Christian communion is for the sake of establishing the tradition of Jesus' pure flesh and blood. (13-67, 1963.10.17)

There is a saying that goes, "Chastity for woman and purposefulness for man." What this means is that chastity is for the sake of fulfilling God's will concerning love, and purposefulness is for the sake of fulfilling God's purpose. Since it is said that chastity is for women, women should know only one love, and since it is said that purposefulness is for men, men should go forward unwaveringly for the sake of one purpose only. Adam and Eve should have known the right path and should have maintained purposefulness and chastity, yet they did not and they fell. (Blessed Family - 348)

A man, in loving a woman with God's love, should stand in a position where he can say, "I have loved her totally with an eternal and unchanging love from beginning to end." Also, a woman, in order to stand in such a position, should seal her body tight. Just like a peony blossom formed from many layers of petals, she should hide herself deep inside. Then, when the springtime of the harmony of heaven and earth comes, she should harmonize with it and start a new life. We should all know this well. (26-156, 1969.10.25)

Section 6. The Fall: The Root of Free Sex and the Origin of Individualism

Why did God grant Adam and Eve their sexual organs during their creation? Would He have married them when they reached maturity or not? The problem lies in their Fall, which changed their lineage. This is why God drove them out of the Garden of Eden.

Originally, Adam and Eve were to have become God's body and wife respectively. The Fall, in a sense, introduced a disease into God's body and ideal, as Adam and Eve acted like His enemies. Can you imagine how miserable God's heart must have been as He watched this taking place? The Fall is the grave in which Adam and Eve buried themselves. It was an act of expropriation. In other words, the Fall became the root of free sex and the origin of individualism.

What kind of nation is America today? It is overflowing with extreme individualism, excessive pursuit of privacy and free sex. Does God favor these things? What is the intention of such extreme individualists? Aren't they saying that they would abandon heaven and earth, the world, their nation, their society and family – and even their grandparents, parents and siblings – and begin wandering around waywardly as gypsies and hippies? In the event that it should rain or snow they will have no place to go, and they may end their lives in suicide. Our original mind does not desire extreme individualism or a ridiculous guarantee of privacy. Rather, it wants to live receiving love – from the universe and the nation, from our neighborhood and village, and from our parents. Nevertheless, because people walk the opposite path, their conscience is stricken and they feel a contradiction with their original mind. Thus, more and more people would rather die than live and so they commit suicide by taking drugs. Here we witness the truth of the proverb, "You will reap what you have sown."

What seed did Adam and Eve plant in the Garden of Eden? They planted the seed of free sex, that is, the seed of unrestrained sexual relationship. Can that be denied? This is why they covered their sexual parts. Isn't it human nature that when children get caught eating some cookies hidden by their parents, they try to cover up their wrongdoing? If the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil had been a literal fruit, Adam and Eve should have covered their mouths or their hands. So, why did they cover their sexual parts instead? It cannot be denied that the Fall was caused by fornication.

Now, let us discover the dividing line between heaven and hell. Is it in midair? Where is it? It is none other than your sexual organ. This is a serious matter. This concept has turned heaven and earth upside down. Who can deny this? This is explained in the chapter "The Fall" in the Divine Principle, the teaching of Rev. Moon. If you doubt this, ask God. You cannot reject Rev. Moon's Divine Principle, with a contents that you could not possibly have dreamed of

– all presented with logical explanations and in a well-ordered structure. Those who use their sexual organs aimlessly like a person deprived of good judgment will be bound for hell, and conversely, those who use theirs according to God's absolute standard of love will be led high up into heaven. This is a clear conclusion. (279-254, 1996.9.15)

Absolute sex has God at its center, whereas free sex is centered on oneself and Satan. Historically, world literature and the media have often stimulated free sex. Therefore, from now on, all of us – including politicians, economists, writers and journalists – must unite and lead the way to prevent free sex. Free sex should disappear completely. (287-29, 1997.8.10)

Section 7. The Realization of World Peace Through Absolute Purity and the True Family Movement

Today, we face a serious youth problem. As Adam and Eve planted the seed of free sex through falling in fornication in the shade in the Garden of Eden during their youth, so in the Last Days, which is the time of harvest, there will necessarily appear the global phenomenon of rampant free sex among the youth. God knows what Satan wants in the Last Days. Through free sex, Satan wants to stop every last person from returning to God. In other words, he wants to destroy all humanity and create hell on earth. Isn't the world in which we live today turning into hell on earth? Accordingly, we will find the way to heaven by going in the direction diametrically opposite to that of this hell on earth. When the returning Lord comes to save this world, he will teach this diametrically opposite way and lead us to heaven.

Then what is the way that is diametrically opposite to the way of free sex? Since the false parents created the way of free sex, the True Parents must appear and rectify this. God cannot intervene here. No sovereignty or military, no economic or political power can do it. Since this trend was caused by the false parents, unless the True Parents come and use their scalpel to operate, there will be no way for humanity to be saved. The one who has sinned must indemnify it.

It was within the first family that a false marriage took place. This event distorted the lineage 180 degrees. Therefore, the True Parents must come and bestow marriage that is in a direction 180 degrees opposite, in order to open the way to heaven. (279-256, 1996.9.15)

Since the Fall occurred through a false love relationship, humankind lost true love. Therefore, the problem arises as to how true love can be recovered. Fallen humanity's loss of true love came about through fornication. That is to say, since true love was lost through the sexual organ, it can only be recovered through a reversal of the Fall.

As false love was planted this way in the Garden of Eden, the phenomenon appearing as its result at the time of harvest in the Last Days is the youth

problem. Thus, the age of sexual chaos is manifesting itself. There is nothing other than absolute sexual purity that can resolve this state of affairs. Only this idea of absolute sex can prevent family breakdown and prevent juvenile delinquency. (287-16, 1997.8.10)

What did God expect from Adam and Eve? He expected absolute purity and love. Where there is absolute sex, couples of absolute purity will emerge, and concepts such as free sex, homosexuality and lesbianism will automatically disappear. I have dedicated my entire life to the path of overcoming tribulations, in order to initiate a movement that promotes absolute purity and love all over the world. Now I am grateful to God because the time has come when I can command the world, sounding a fanfare of victory.

It is the family that sets the cornerstone for the road to world peace. Yet it is also the family that can destroy that road. It was in Adam's family that the foundation of hope and happiness for all of humankind was shattered. Therefore, I cannot but give thanks to God that today we have established the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification which has opened the way for your families to go in a direction diametrically opposite to that of the satanic world. Without this path, there can be no freedom, happiness or ideals.

From now on, please make the absolutely pure sexual organ, unique sexual organ, unchanging sexual organ and eternal sexual organ the basis of your pursuit of God. These organs are the basis of love, life, lineage and conscience. From here, the true family will be connected to the true nation and true world, forming a peaceful and ideal world. Wherever you go, please try to spread Rev. Moon's message through television or other media. You will never perish.

What force can turn around this world of hell? It is impossible to achieve this without living in God's love – that is, according to the absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal standard. The original owner of our sexual organs is God. (279-257, 1996.9.15)

BOOK FIVE

EARTHLY LIFE AND THE SPIRIT WORLD

Contents

Chapter 1. The Existence of Human Beings in the Physical and Spirit Worlds

Section 1. Our Course of Life 547
1.1. Prayers relating to the life course 547
1.2. The purpose that people desire 548
1.3. The reason for birth 548
1.4. The relationship between a moment and a lifetime 549
1.5. Infancy and the three orderly stages of the growing period 551
1.6. Our life path 551
1.7. The original homeland that we must seek 552
1.8. Our highest path in life 552
1.9. The standard of birth and the standard of life 553
1.9.1. The wrong standard of birth 553
Section 2. The Status and Character of Human Beings 554
2.1. God's purpose in creating humankind 554
2.2. Human beings as the interface between spiritual and physical worlds ... 555
2.3. Body and mind, and spirit self 555
2.4. Complete motion and resonance 556
Section 3. The Essence of Life 556
3.1. Spirit is the essence of life 556
3.2. The meaning of lord of all creation 557
3.3. Inner person and outer person 558
3.4. The purpose of life on earth is mind-body perfection 558
Section 4. The Nobility of Life on Earth 559
4.1. Life on earth is to prepare us for life in the spirit world 559
4.2. The preciousness of our life on earth 560
4.3. Habituality is important 561
4.4. The standard of life on earth 561
4.5. Everything will be recorded through the physical body 562
4.6. Life on earth is so important 562
4.7. Using our physical selves to fulfill our portion of responsibility 563
Section 5. Blessing and Eternal Life 564
5.1. Why we need to know about the issue of eternal life 564
5.2. The way of eternal life 565
5.2.1. Our lifetime and the issue of eternal life 565
5.2.2. Humankind seeks eternal life 566
5.2.3. Eternal life and religion 566
5.2.4. Why we should live eternally 567
5.2.5. Living for the sake of eternal life 568
5.2.6. What is the theory of eternal life? 568
5.2.7. The most important issue of eternal life 569

5.2.8. Ultimately, human beings must return to eternal life 569
5.2.9. Faith and the issue of eternal life 570
5.2.10. Unificationists and eternal life 571
5.2.11. The concept necessary for eternal life 571
5.3. Love and eternal life 571
5.3.1. Eternal life is directly connected with love 571
5.3.2. True love and eternal life 571
5.3.3. True love is absolutely necessary 572
5.3.4. The world after death is related with love 573
5.3.5. Eternal life comes only by living for the sake of others 574
5.4. Blessing and spirit world 574
5.4.1. The power of love 574
5.4.2. The spirit selves of husband and wife 575
5.4.3. Marriage and spirit world 575
5.4.4. The position of Blessed Families in the spirit world 576
5.4.5. The Blessing is a promise 576
5.4.6. The glory of the Blessing 576

Chapter 2. Death and the Spirit World

Section 1. The Inevitable Path of Our Life 578
1.1. The body is far from eternal life 578
1.2. How the majority of people live 578
1.3. Death is inevitable 579
1.4. God is the owner of life 580
Section 2. Understanding Death 581
2.1. The meaning of the Korean word *toraganda* 581
2.2. The place to which we must go 581
2.3. The day we pass on is a precious day 582
2.4. The spiritual connection of life and death 582
2.5. Death in relation to the value of life 583
2.6. Death is a process to link three worlds 583
2.7. Things to do before we die 586
2.7.1. Crossing the last border 586
2.7.2. Modeling ourselves after God's external form, heart and divine character 586
2.7.3. Do not sin 586
2.7.4. Live and die for the world 587
2.7.5. Work hard 587
2.7.6. Work for the public good 587
2.7.7. Experience love 589
2.8. What to leave behind before going to the spirit world 591
2.8.1. Leave a tomb of love behind 591
2.8.2. Proprietary rights in the spirit world are determined through witnessing 591

2.8.3. Why we should have lots of children 597
2.9. Our attitude in the face of death 599
2.10. When entering the spirit world 602
2.10.1. At the time of impending death 602
2.10.2. When entering the spirit world 604
2.10.3. Documents required for entry procedures into the spirit world 606
2.11. Things you will know clearly only after you die 606
2.12. Altruism gets you closer to God 607
2.13. Judgment 608
Section 3. To go to a Higher Realm in the Spirit World 609
3.1. The standard for religious people is the spirit world 609
3.2. The determination of proprietary rights in the spirit world 609
3.3. Love people 609
3.4. Love God even more 610
3.5. Establish the family foundation 610
3.6. Live centered on the tradition of the realm of the heart 610
3.7. The pass with which to enter the spirit world 611

Chapter 3. The Spirit World

Section 1. The Spirit World Can Be Experienced with the Physical Body 612
1.1. The spirit world and the present time 612
1.2. The future age 612
1.3. Spiritual experiences are also necessary 614
1.4. The course of spiritual experience 614
1.5. How to develop your spiritual senses 620
1.6. Advent (substantial works) 621
Section 2. What Kind of Place Is the Spirit World? 622
2.1. The spirit world and the physical world 622
2.1.1. The center of the spirit world and physical world 622
2.1.2. Unity of the spiritual and physical worlds 624
2.2. The spirit world clearly exists 624
2.3. The spirit world is the driving force for faith (Saint Paul's vision of the third heaven) 625
2.4. When God created the spirit world 626
2.5. Where is the spirit world? 626
2.6. What kind of place is the spirit world? 626
Section 3. The Content and Situation of the Spirit World 627
3.1. The Fall led to ignorance about the spirit world 627
3.2. The spirit world is a sphere permitting instant perception 628
3.3. The center of the spirit world 629
3.4. The organization of the spirit world (hierarchy) 629
3.5. Clothing, food and shelter in the spirit world 630
3.6. How to use knowledge and power in the spirit world 632
3.7. Human relationships in the spirit world 633

3.8. The center of the spirit world is love 635
3.8.1. The air of the spirit world is love 635
3.8.2. The spirit world is the place of living a love-centered life 636
3.9. The spirit world – the world of heart 636
3.10. The situation of the spirit world 637
3.11. Life in the spirit world 638
3.12. The work we have to do in the spirit world 638
Section 4. The Position and Actual Situations of the Spirit World 639
4.1. The position of the spirit world 639
4.2. The actual state of affairs in the spirit world 640
4.3. The pride of the spirit world 640
4.4. The Unification Church and the spirit world 641
4.5. Korean customs and the spirit world 642
4.6. The Korean language and the spirit world 643
4.7. The spirit world's sphere of activity 643
4.8. The spirit world's possessions 643
4.9. God and the spirit world 643

Chapter 4. The Kingdom of Heaven

Section 1. Understanding the Kingdom of Heaven 644
1.1. The location of the Kingdom of Heaven 644
1.2. Christianity and heaven 645
1.3. Jesus and paradise 646
1.4. Heart and heaven 648
1.5. The physical body and hell 650
1.6. Even people in hell long for heaven 655
1.7. God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven 655
1.8. The right view of heaven 657
Section 2. Preparing to Go to Heaven 659
2.1. The stronghold of heaven 659
2.2. The standard for going to heaven 661
2.3. The starting point of the Kingdom of Heaven 662
2.4. The essence of the Kingdom of Heaven 662
2.5. The framework of the Kingdom of Heaven 663
Section 3. The Prerequisites and Conditions for Going to Heaven 663
3.1. The prerequisites for going to heaven 663
3.1.1. Suffering is needed 663
3.1.2. We need love 665
3.1.3. Actual results are needed 666
3.1.4. Altruism is needed 667
3.2. The lifestyle that enables us to go to heaven 668
3.2.1. Our position 668
3.2.2. Instances of not being able to go to heaven 669
3.2.3. Our life for the sake of Kingdom of Heaven 670

3.2.4. The Kingdom of Heaven and us 671
3.3. The four-position foundation and heaven 672
3.3.1. Families enter heaven 672
3.3.2. Jesus and his family 675
3.3.3. The four-position foundation and the Kingdom of Heaven 675
Section 4. Triumphal Entry through the Gates of Heaven 676
4.1. The door to people's hearts 676
4.2. The meaning of "Opening the Gate of Heaven" 676
4.2.1. The reason for "Opening the Gate of Heaven" 676
4.2.2. The origin of the "Opening of the Gates of Heaven" 677
4.2.3. True Parents and the gates of Heaven 678
4.2.4. Our attitude to the "Opening of the Gate of Heaven" 680
4.3. The path to heaven through fulfilling one's portion of responsibility. 681
4.4. Heaven and hell are our options 681
Section 5. Instructions Concerning Heaven and Hell 682
5.1. Formulating our view of heaven and hell 682
5.2. The importance of life in the spirit world and life on earth 682

Chapter 5. The Messiah and the Spirit World

Section 1. Jesus and the Spirit World 684
Section 2. The Returning Lord and the Spirit World 685
Section 3. True Parents and the Spirit World 686
3.1. The difference between your natural parents and True Parents 686
3.2. True Parents are the axis 687
3.3. True Parents is the center 688
3.4. The strength of the bond with True Parents 688
Section 4. Rev. Moon and the Spirit World 692
4.1. Rev. Moon's establishment of spiritual conditions and its foundation 692
4.2. Special authority in relation to the spirit world 694
4.3. The unification of the spirit world and the unification of the physical world 695
4.4. Reception in spirit world according to heart and actual results 697
4.5. Making spiritual experiences part of daily life 698
4.6. We go to the spirit world after leaving our love behind 698
Section 5. True Parents' Family and the Spirit World 699
5.1. The establishment of the right of the eldest son 699
5.2. The center of love established in the spirit world 700
5.3. The establishment of the kingship on earth and in the spirit world 701

Chapter 6. Our Position in Relation to the Spirit World

Section 1. The Fruit of Life and the Divine Spirit 703
Section 2. Judgment and Approval (Certification) 706
2.1. Categories of Judgment 706
2.2. Prepare a passport to Heaven 707

Section 3. Registration in the Spirit World 712
3.1. Freedoms enjoyed by the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven 712
3.2. Special gifts that can be carried to the spirit world 712
3.3. The Kingdom of Heaven created through the Three Great Subjects Principle 714
3.4. Conditions for registration 715
3.5. People who can be chiefs in the spirit world 717

Chapter 7. Our Relationship with Those in the Spirit World

Section 1. Spiritual Phenomena and the Liberation of Spirits 719
1.1. The good spirit world and the evil spirit world 719
1.2. Spiritual phenomena 720
1.3. Letters from the spirit world 720
1.4. The hope of people in the spirit world 722
1.5. Liberating those in the spirit world from resentment 723
1.6. Unification of the spirit world 725
Section 2. The Relationship Between People on Earth and the Spirits 726
2.1. People on earth and the spirits 726
2.2. The position of people in the spirit world 727
2.3. Spirits outnumber people on earth 729
2.4. Wandering spirits 729
2.5. Discerning spirits by the mind 730
2.6. The value of life on earth 730
Section 3. Our Ancestors and Ourselves 731
3.1. Ancestors are looking upon us 731
3.2. We should surpass our ancestors 732
3.3. We should also visit our ancestral graves 733
3.4. Ancestors we can meet in the spirit world 734
Section 4. New Spiritual Age 735
4.1. The coming of the age of extrasensory perception 735
4.2. Entering a new age through the declaration of the Day of the Victory of Heaven 736
4.3. Unification Ceremony and spiritual assistance 736
4.4. Ceremony of One Heart and ancestral assistance 738
Section 5. Returning Resurrection and the Assistance of Spirits 739
5.1. Position of our predecessors in the spirit world 739
5.2. Spirit world mobilization and assistance 740
5.3. The spirit world and ancestors 742
5.4. The hope of spirit people 744
5.5. Returning resurrection and rebirth 744
5.5.1. Returning resurrection 744
5.5.2. Answers about the principle of rebirth 745

CHAPTER ONE

The Existence of Human Beings in the Physical and Spirit Worlds

Section 1. Our Course of Life

1.1. Prayers relating to the life course

"Beloved Heavenly Father, I thank You for Your grace, and for having shielded me in my struggles from my childhood until now; during those years I have been apprehensive of any humiliation or shame that Heaven might suffer. Among all the good things on this earth, there is nothing more precious than connecting to Your original heart. Knowing this, we must infinitely long for that relationship. We must keep in mind that those who experience Your love will have no regrets even if they forget about all the things of this world. Now we must seek the ideal world, the original homeland where we live by Your love. We must prepare today on earth for the day of our birth as liberated children endowed with the authority of freedom of our third life.

We must know that just as we needed to be healthy in the womb to be born to lead a healthy life on earth, we need a wholesome earthly life to have a wholesome life in heaven. As the world today is one of conflict under the dominion of evil, we must we must be resolved to fight to the death in order to be blessed with the cooperation of heaven and earth and to keep in step with the dynamic fortunes of the universe. We must resolve that our descendants will never be placed in the same position as we have been." (49-308, 1971.10.17)

"Beloved Father, when we think of how You exist and have toiled unremittingly to usher in a new spring, we must become Your infinitely grateful and joyous sons and daughters who lament the fact that we have yet to offer our entire life and love to You. In our predestined relationship with You, our lives are meant to be harmonized, and completely absorbed in and by You so that we too, may greet the new spring.

We must realize that only when we greet spring for the first time will the flowers bloom. We must not become such pitiful souls who have never done so. Just as a flower goes through summer and autumn before blooming and bearing fruit, we too are to undergo a similar process to bear fruit.

We know that for a tree to bear fruit, it first absorbs life elements through its roots, trunk and branches in summer, concentrating a perfect life force to bring forth a second life. Similarly,

we must become the sons and daughters who are introspectively determining whether we have a life force welling up in our hearts – one that is capable of rebirth in a new world even if our bodies should die.

No matter how much time flies by, no matter how fiercely the storms rage, our inner life force must withstand the intrusions of the environment and persevere persistently on the path of growth. Only in this way, can we welcome the new spring and become a seed, the original source of a second life, which can be planted again.

Likewise, no matter how pathetic we may look externally, if we maintain our value as the original essence that can enhance the spiritual life force and as a seed that can be planted in the infinite world, we are not miserable people even though we may think we are. Please allow us to realize that the more miserable we may appear externally, the more our internal value is complete and guaranteed." (32-36, 1970.6.14)

"Father, we have realized that without the desire to serve and bow down humbly to You, we can have no relationship with You in the eternal world. Open the doors of our hearts to feel Your heart and hear Your voice welling up from the depths of our hearts, and guide us to regain our lost bodies today. Help us to appreciate Your historical course of toil and trouble to find each one of us, that we may humbly bow our heads before You." (4-280, 1958.9.14)

1.2. The purpose that people desire

God does not have a body. Therefore, in order to manifest His body, God used Adam as His body, showing His face through him. That is the ideal of creation.

God is the original spiritual focal point and Adam is the original physical focal point. These two focal points generate a 90-degree angle. This is God's purpose of creation and the purpose that people desire. Had Adam and Eve not fallen, they would have occupied the positions of father and mother eternally in the spirit world; yet, due to the Fall, this was not possible. Had there been no Fall, everyone could have gone to Heaven simply by attending their parents as though they were attending God. (119-109, 1982.7.4)

1.3. The reason for birth

This created world is round everywhere: the sun, the earth, and the stars; everything is created round. Even our mouth, if we analyze it, is round. No matter what, everything is created that way. Then, the universe makes relationships by going around and around, making circular, cyclical movements. Even if one individual thing has a round shape, it does not exist by itself individually but makes a relational connection with the whole.

Then, why are we born? We are born to beat in rhythm with this vast universe. Ocean waves lapping against the shore lap against our hearts as well. Gentle

breezes sighing serenely lull our hearts into serenity. Flowers in bloom release rich fragrances and stir the fragrances in our hearts. (104-122, 1979.4.22)

If we are born, raised, live and die in love, then we can be grateful for our birth, life and death. You were all born by having participated in the place where your father and mother loved and treasured each other exceedingly. You are participants in this love. Since you were born through your parents' love, you consider yourselves born as the flags planted through your parents' love. These flags flutter to express love. We are all meant to live for the sake of love throughout our lives. So you should wave the flag of love for your mother, wave the flag of love when you see your father, and wave the flag of love for your siblings. (103-258, 1979.2.25)

1.4. The relationship between a moment and a lifetime

Your living body cannot be perfected unless your entire existence becomes a foothold for absorbing nutrients. This phenomenon occurs in the natural world. The crossroads of life do not appear over a long period of time but in a single moment.

People who ignore a moment fail to obtain something precious. They cannot become great people, nor inherit God's throne and crown. Thus, for the sake of one bright shining moment, exercise care with each word you utter, each action you take, and even each thought you entertain. Deal with life and solve problems, believing that the contents of your daily life will all remain as phenomena in relationship to the world. That is the only way the realm of victory is determined.

In this way, the realm of victory is determined in one moment. It is the same with the historical realm of victory and the cosmic realm of victory. Those who know the infinite value of one bright shining moment and live accordingly can become great people, even saints or God's sons and daughters. In this way, the junction of life and death is crossed in a single moment. (31-217, 1970.5.31)

Today, our attitude is the problem. Of course, it is necessary to first desire the coming of the kingdom and wish for the Will to be done. Yet, what is more important is how we ourselves can personally become one with God's will.

If we take this one hour, we see that how we use it to become one with the Will is more important than to desire the Kingdom of God to come. Therefore, we must first create environments as individuals, families, tribes and peoples that will enable us to inherit God's will, whereupon we can then proceed to establish a relationship with God's Kingdom. Then, centered on God, how do we make a relationship with the Will in this one hour - if you are given an hour - within the sphere of your daily living? This is a very important issue.

Looking at the history of the providence of restoration, there were four thousand years from Adam's family

through Noah's, Abraham's and Moses' families down to Jesus' family. Here, however, what led to their failures did not occur over the span of, say, a year. In Adam's family, the Fall of Adam and Eve was not something planned out and put into action over the span of a year or a decade or even several decades. Their mistake happened in a flash, and when we think about how that failure of one moment has been perpetuated over eons of time, we can understand the fearfulness and dreadfulness of that instant.

Due to the failure of that one moment, so many people who walked the path of righteousness in the course of history had to undergo untold suffering, and many races that could not follow the Will fell into the abyss of destruction. All these became the origin of a tremendous offering of indemnity. When we understand this, a single hour that we ordinarily live so casually in our daily life becomes fearful; but even more, we have to feel how fearful a moment is, even one second of one hour that goes by as the clock steadily ticks. Even the eternal Kingdom of Heaven does not exist without having an integral relationship with the single moment.

Eternity does not start when we die, but at the moment we come to know God's will. Here, if for even an instant there is a leap in the relationship of time or an abyss created, eternity will be interrupted. Therefore, while walking the path of faith in the course of your lives, do not procrastinate by deferring your providential responsibilities from this year to the next, and then to the year after that, or from your youth to your midlife and finally into your old age. We cannot live like that. People with such a lifestyle will die without having ever spent even one day of being one with the Will over the course of their lifetime. They cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven.

However good your country of residence may be, you cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven if you were unable to live even one day by a victorious standard; you cannot enter the eternal world if you failed to live even one year victoriously. Hence, while it is important for believers to go forth dreaming of eternity, what is even more important is how they actually eradicate evil and whether they become the standard-bearers of goodness. This is preeminently crucial.

From this perspective, Adam's momentary lapse led to eons of anguish. It was in Adam's family that Cain and Abel had to dissolve the anguish of their parents and demolish the wall that existed between the brothers and create the origin of one family. Yet the murder of Abel, who was set up as the representative of the providence of restoration, was also an instantaneous incident.

In the 120-year course during which Noah toiled to build the ark, in only a brief moment God issued the command, "The day to fulfill My wish has come: all aboard!" Those who followed this order were able to receive the blessings of the eternal God; those who did not were buried within the realm of eternal judgment.

It was the same with Abraham: God's promise that his descendants would be

as numerous as the stars in the sky and as the sands on the seashore" (Genesis 22:17) was bestowed in the twinkling of an eye. Abraham's sacrificial offering did not require decades but rather a mere day's work. The time it took him to cut the offering and place it on the altar was not more than an hour, yet that single hour historically bore the seeds of all life and death, curse and blessing.

Today, what believers should dread is not the visitation of judgment in the Last Days but the question of how they will harmonize their daily activities and face life's crossroads in alignment with God's will. (37-217, 1970.12.27)

1.5. Infancy and the three orderly stages of the growing period

How did God create Adam and Eve? If He used clay, what kind was it? Where did He begin? From which point did Adam and Eve's lives start? We cannot think that God created them as adults, but rather as babies. Without the notion that God behaved as a pregnant mother who subsequently gave birth to, nourished and nurtured a baby, we cannot logically explain the formation of all existence through the three orderly stages of growth. Logically, Adam and Eve passed through infancy before entering the growth and completion stages. This is heavenly law.

What was Adam and Eve's infancy like? We must proceed from the concept that the invisible God nurtured a baby whose beginnings were in the world without form and who could pass through the course in the physical realm. (225-198, 1992.1.20)

1.6. Our life path

Since the society, nation and world in which we live are far from ideal, all manner of suffering occurs, and good and evil are at cross-purposes.

If we took a random sample of a hundred men, it would reveal that one hundred percent of them jostle among themselves in "an every man for himself" struggle within their circumstances to cope with the demands of their mundane affairs.

Therefore, in our daily lives, we all acutely lack the confidence that we can complete the day's work that we planned in the morning. With a wider scope of activities we would need proportionately more drive and determination to bring a victorious result in our everyday life. Lacking these, that day cannot be victorious. Such days turn into months and months into years.

We also lack environments conducive for meeting our monthly goals. To end a month victoriously, we need the drive and determination necessary to achieve breakthroughs in tackling both the details and complexities of that month. Without them, we cannot conclude our monthly activities victoriously.

Getting through a year successfully requires us to be equipped with a fighting spirit or driving force that can thrust aside all the challenges of each and every one of its 365 days. We can then celebrate that year victoriously. If we live a

year like that, and continue in this vein, it will eventually add up to ten, and then twenty, and then thirty years, and that eventually becomes our life path. (31-30, 1970.4.12)

People living on earth today cannot escape from the constraints of time. That has been true throughout history. Individuals, families, tribes, people, nations and the world all move within the realm of time.

Wherever people exist, there is always some goal to attain. We are to focus on such a goal for ten, twenty, thirty, seventy years and, indeed, our entire lives. The greater our goal, the stronger our internal commitment needs to be. Unless we maintain an internal determination that surpasses the goal through the process called time, the goal will be unattainable. (31-149, 1970.5.24)

1.7. The original homeland that we must seek

You may not know of the reality of the spirit world, but I enjoy the special benefit from God of having a clear insight into that unknown world. Digging into the root of that world, I found its principles to be quite simple. In the spirit world only those who lived altruistically in line with God's universal principles can enter the higher realms. The world structured along those lines is the ideal heavenly kingdom. That place is the original homeland that humankind must seek. Today, although we are exiles from our original homeland and live a fallen life, we are destined to return there. God had to create a path for this in the course of history because we could not do so by our own efforts.

This is why God raised up many different religions. They are training grounds through which He has been directing all people along that path, whatever their race, cultural background, customs and traditions. Religions are the training grounds for training people to become eligible to return to the original homeland. Taking into account the diverse cultural backgrounds ranging across the four corners of the earth, God is leading humanity toward a unified world of religion that can progress upward onto higher ground.

What does religion which guides people to the original homeland, centrally teach? It is to live for the sake of others. As highly developed religions tend to emphasize this principle, they teach us to be gentle and meek, to stand in a position to elevate others and live for their sake, and to serve them sacrificially. All this serves to instill discipline in us to abide by the laws of the Kingdom of Heaven. (78-115, 1975.5.6)

1.8. Our highest path in life

What should be our life path? It is the path of possessing God's love. Possessing God's love is life's highest and final destination. Everyone, men and women alike, must go this way. Our life path must lead us to the infinite God of love. The greatest life path consists of finding God's love by crossing over the peaks of

death tens and even hundreds of times, and continuing in that search even after death.

What is the endpoint of our desires? It is the possession of God's love. If, in that regard, we possess love more precious than our own, God cannot be ours. Thus, we need to possess God's love. If we possessed only God's love, then it would be all right even if He were not present. When His love becomes mine and mine becomes His, the internal and the external become one for the first time. A nation based on such love becomes an ideal homeland without upper and lower classes.

When we lie in that place of love, we feel that there is nothing under the sun that does not appear good and that does not exist for our sake. Since God's love is like that, the heavenly world, which is humankind's destination, namely the Kingdom of Heaven, is a place filled with love. (39-210, 1971.1.10)

1.9. The standard of birth and the standard of life

1.9.1. The wrong standard of birth

People in today's world who flaunt their pedigrees and parade their degrees as marks of social distinction, are unaware that their births were spiritually sullied. They do not know that they were born with the love, life and lineage of Satan; God's enemy. This is a serious problem.

Due to the Fall, people have been born from Satan's love which was passed down to their parents. Satan's blood has made its way down through the lives of our mothers and fathers to us in the present day. The fruit of those three then, is you. As such, you all belong to the satanic lineage. In other words, Satan's blood is running through your veins. Therefore, he automatically bears his ideal fruit while God strives to redeem those very men and women and transform them into originally pure and perfect people. You all began from Satan's love and are born from his lineage.

Since your start was all wrong, you must return to the original point. As we originated from false parents, we need to return and start anew from true parents. How serious is this? It is imperative to inherit God's love, life and lineage afresh.

That is why, when you receive the Blessing, you undergo the ceremony for changing the lineage. You must believe in this more than your own life. Just because it is a Unification Church ceremony, you should not think of it as some ordinary ritual. It is like a wonder drug, an antidote, to restore the dead back to life.

Our ancestors committed an error so grave that countless people fell victim to its aftereffects throughout the course of human history. Knowing this, we cannot tread that same path again ever again! We paid a ghastly price throughout history for having perpetuated illicit love in the fallen spiritual and physical worlds, with far-reaching consequences for individuals, families, societies, nations and the world. (216-109, 1991.3.9)

1.9.2. The standard of life

When I say life here, I mean eternal life. I am not referring only to the spirit world, but to a life to live for eternity. Each individual was created to be an object of God's love. You are the object partner of the absolute God, and the partner in His love. God cherishes the notion of true love more than He values Himself. He is the absolute and eternal center of life. His ideal is even more eternal and the center of that ideal is true love. The partner of that love is you.

The attribute of love promotes unity between partners. Such love can unify a nation. Thus, one partner can accompany the other partner in any position and follow unconditionally. You can inherit God's entire fortune and even His entire heart. I went through a miserable course to discover this and now stand on that foundation. It is sublime and lofty and cannot be exchanged for anything: it is an amazing grace. For that reason, I stand in the same position with God. I share the eternal position of true love. The spirit world is in a different dimension from this limited earthly world. We cannot move freely within mundane confines, but as the spirit world is a higher-dimensional place, you can do anything there; you can leap across time. If you want something based on love, you can have it all anytime, anywhere.

We were originally created as eternal beings. If we become eternal beings of true love and go to the spirit world, we will be free. The first standard of life is the standard of good and evil, the second is the original starting point, and the third is eternal life. (216-107, 1991.3.9)

Section 2. The Status and Character of Human Beings

2.1. God's purpose in creating humankind

Why did God create humankind? First, it was for God to stand in the position of a parent. A parent, however, is invisible even in the spirit world. There is no model. Thus, in order to become the parent of human beings with a form, God must have a form. Otherwise, He cannot be the center.

Second, a vertical line is one-dimensional and does not generate an area; reproduction cannot take place in the spirit world. A large area or space can only unfold horizontally based on a vertical axis with a 360-degree perpendicular rotation.

Third, it was to maintain the eternality of the realm of the partner of love. It was not only Adam and Eve who were to be God's partners. Adam and Eve's children would have stood in the position of God's partners, just as their parents did. Therefore, God produced people in order to preserve their position as His partners in perpetuity.

Both Adam and Eve called God, "Father". Then would their children call Him uncle or grandfather? They would call Him Father. The word partner implies equality. We must multiply God's love horizontally and perfect its value. The value of perfected love is one.

That is equality.

To recapitulate, first, God needed a form or shape, namely that of a parent. He acquired that form in order to manifest Himself spiritually as Adam's father. Second, God needed a production center for the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven. As such, husbands and wives are factories. Using that analogy, would it be better to engage in mass production or small-scale production? Mass production is better. Through automation those factories could definitely produce in mass and pack the Kingdom of Heaven to capacity. That is why women are created to bear many children. (222-337, 1991.11.7)

2.2. Human beings as the interface between spiritual and physical worlds

God made all things and humankind. Everything began with God at the center. Through creating people, He wanted to see Himself in oneness with humankind and all things in a position of equilibrium; such was His will in the creation. There was God and there was the created world, and humankind stood in the middle between them. As such, human beings function as the interface between the spiritual and physical worlds. (67-143, 1973.6.1)

2.3. Body and mind, and spirit self

The cosmos in which we live today has two axes: a visible axis and an invisible one, creating a dual structure. Objects revolve around a subject, which itself rotates, similar to the give-and-take action between mind and body. All beings exist according to this principle. In the same way, in the fallen world today, this axis must be reset in line with the way of restoration.

What is the center of a person's body? It is the mind. The body revolves around the mind and moves according to its commands. When the mind directs the body to go east, it must do so, and likewise in the opposite direction. The body cannot move at its own whims and fancies. (136-13, 1985.12.20)

We have both mind and body. Above our mind is our spirit and above our spirit is God. We can only perfect ourselves by becoming completely one with God. Despite being such finite entities, we represent all of history and all destinies of the future, and therefore possess cosmic value. (4-267, 1958.8.3)

People must heed their minds in seeking their destinies. This is heavenly law; God strikes those who disobey their minds' dictates. All throughout history, God has been teaching us to live in conformity with our conscience and not be ensnared by the evils of materialism. Then does our conscience correspond to heavenly law one hundred percent? It does not, due to the innumerable barriers that obstruct it. Before the gateway to heaven are entrances into a labyrinth of challenges. In Christian terms, they are the gates of judgment. The current trend of thought is ushering in a time of

fear, insecurity and chaos. It is a time in which people cannot hold on to the center however how hard they try.

We should not allow ourselves to be encumbered by material things. Why not? When God created humankind with a physical self and a spirit self, the spirit was the center. (4-269, 1958.8.3)

2.4. Complete motion and resonance

Resonance means vibrating at the same frequency. Our internal self, which lives for eternity, and our external self, which lives in the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, should be able to resonate centering on love. In resonance, sound waves coincide and become intertwined, all the while oscillating around the core. Likewise, when the spirit self and the physical self harmonize with each other and God's love, spiritual cells and physical cells engage in perfect motion together.

Therefore, when our eyes become operational, they can see everything in heaven and on earth. This is because they are engaged in perfect motion. Is it not the same with a microphone? If its capacity is good it will resonate a hundred percent. Similarly, once our physical self and spirit self become one and attain a volatile state through the force of love, heaven and earth, God and everything else must resonate sympathetically. (171-102, 1987.12.13)

The human mind-body dichotomy applies to men and women alike. Considering that a man and a woman each have a spirit self as well as a physical self, together they actually represent four entities. Divided they become four people. How do these separate four entities become one? Why did God create four people in this way? With God's true love as their center, they can achieve perfect union.

All of you possess a spirit that we in the Unification Church call the spirit self and a physical self. The spirit self, though invisible to our eyes, does exist. Then, when do your spirit self and physical self become one? This is the problem. It is the same with a tuning fork: when you strike one of its prongs, then the other prong vibrates at the same frequency.

In like manner, when God's love acts upon our mind, our body automatically responds. That being the case, it is not God's wisdom, power or might that brings the mind and body into full resonance, but only His love. What is the focus, the ideal benchmark, which your five physical senses and your five spiritual senses long to reach? It is neither God's might nor His wisdom. His love is the focus and benchmark for everything. (138-254, 1986.1.24)

Section 3. The Essence of Life

3.1. Spirit is the essence of life

Where there is a nucleus, there must be a reciprocally related being to revolve around it. As electrons revolve around protons, human beings are meant to revolve around God. God can pursue

the providence of restoration because the human mind, which is like an electron, naturally relates to God's mind, which can be likened to the nucleus.

When we seek the word of truth, we can feel God's life pulsating and the harmony of His love. Similarly, by seeking God's life and love through the path of truth, we become people of value.

The truth is eternal and unchanging. Then how can we find the truth while distinguishing between good and evil in this fallen world? We do it through eschewing selfishness and through constant self-effacement.

The Bible also teaches us that those who exalt themselves will be humbled and that those who humble themselves will be exalted (Matthew 23:12; Luke 14:11; 18:14). We are essentially spiritual.

Therefore, when you go to the next world, you will realize more deeply that the essence of being human is in living for the sake of others. Yet why do people persist in living selfishly in all things? It is because all humanity became bound in blood ties to the angel, namely Satan, who contravened heavenly law. (2-137, 1957.3.17)

We must now eat spiritual food. Which should be tastier: physical food or spiritual food? In order to survive and stand on God's side, you need to train yourselves to enjoy the taste of spiritual food more than physical food. The taste of a life centered on spiritual power should far exceed that of a life based on physical might. (131-210, 1984.5.4)

3.2. The meaning of lord of all creation

What is meant by the term lord of all creation? Who is the lord of all creation? Some say human beings, but the fundamental lord of all creation is God. You all know that spirits exist. We all have spirits and, as we are the leaders among the spirits, in the final analysis, we are lords of all creation directly connected to God. Human beings cannot become the lords of all creation on their own. How can they, as created beings, become lords of all creation? Being created makes them reciprocal and resultant beings; as such, they can neither communicate with nor possess the origin, but rather exist to be possessed by it.

Clearly, we are all resultant beings. The lords of all creation I am referring to are those occupying the central position in the spirit world. I am talking about the originally intended relationship of oneness between God and humankind. Those lords of all creation are in the position to communicate with God. Although human beings are called the lords of all creation, not everybody is actually qualified to be one. Those who live individualistically are ineligible to join the club of the lords of all creation. And those who have distinguished themselves by seeking the greater good are eligible. God seeks to fulfill His wishes through such people. When that happens, whose heaven will it be? Not His but theirs. (32-136, 1970.7.5)

How should people live? Eternally.

Living some eighty years in this evil world, some people may see no difference between the death of an ant and that of a human being; yet there is a difference. We are different because we are spiritual beings. How is it that we can become the lords of all creation? It is because our mind does not age; it is immutable and therefore carries the highest authority. All other things undergo change; even pure gold weathers away. (159-277, 1968.5.19)

Based on what premises can we be called the lords of all creation? It is neither money, nor knowledge, nor power, but rather God's sublime love. (210-308, 1990.12.27)

3.3. Inner person and outer person

What is the original destiny of humankind? It is to enjoy perfected love and extol the values of praise and respect within the realm of God's absolute love. Humanity emerged amidst the complete union and harmony of the destinies of heaven and earth. Hence, we have an invisible mind and a visible body. If we had been born according to our original destiny, would our body and mind be divided in conflict or would they be in total unity? They would be in total unity.

Your inner person and outer person are in conflict. When will this conflict end? After ten years? Or not even by the time you die? If God had created human beings in that way, then He would not be a god with a single purpose but a god with dual purposes. Such a god would be a chaotic god. All the laws of the universe systematically pursue a distinct purpose without being at cross-purposes. From that perspective, we know that we were not originally created in this way. Let us, therefore, cast our body aside and seek our original mind. (44-194, 1971.5.7)

Which is more important, our physical self or our spirit self? Not the flesh, but the spirit. Our flesh has a shelf life averaging seventy to eighty years, within the limited realms of time and space, before disappearing into nothingness. But our spirit has the power to transcend both time and space. Accordingly, it is our original purpose to recognize our historic responsibility and fulfill it.

However well you may live physically, in the final analysis you will all die. Our bodies will perish in any event. That is how we are made. Then which are more important: spiritual standards or physical standards? Our lives are not meant to be based on physical standards. The flesh exists for the spirit and vice versa. Do not get stuck in the rut of a secular lifestyle. You must become entities that combine the spirit and flesh in a position of saving the flesh, and begin from a position of greater worth. (20-324, 1968.7.14)

3.4. The purpose of life on earth is mind-body perfection

What is the purpose of the Will? It is to perfect humankind spiritually and physically. Individually, our spirit represents the past and our body the pres-

ent. Both worlds were invaded. We are to conquer the present satanic world physically and the past satanic world spiritually. When you triumph over both past and present by upholding the standard of mind over matter, your future will be blessed. (73-96, 1974.8.4)

We need to know that it is the physical world, not the spirit world, which is the subject. The physical world, not the spirit world, is the subject in achieving perfection. The perfection of the physical world encompasses the perfection of both the spiritual and physical worlds. Thus, life on earth is precious. (91-177, 1977.2.6)

Section 4. The Nobility of Life on Earth

4.1. Life on earth is to prepare us for life in the spirit world

When God created humankind and all things and proclaimed them good, He intended that they not fight among themselves. Religion teaches us to strike our body and make it submit to our mind. We must cross over from evil to goodness. The complete victory of our body means that even Satan has been completely uprooted and subjugated. We can go to heaven only after subjugating Satan. We cannot conquer Satan without a physical body. This is because the mishap that befell our body occurred on earth and consequently must be remedied on earth. Unless we accomplish our designated tasks on earth, we will end up in eternal hell. Conversely, when you triumph on earth and stand on the heavenly side of goodness, you can go to the eternal Kingdom of Heaven. (65-293, 1973.2)

Life on earth is short. We do not live long. If you realized that, your hours would become too precious to be spent on sleeping and eating. Eat, sleep and play on the move. The more you live this way, the greater the blessing you will receive; more than anyone else in the whole wide world. (80-225, 1975.10.23)

Although our tenure on earth may be limited to eighty years, our stage is the altar of the world. That being so, our possessions representing the creation belong to the world, our bodies are the bodies of all the people of the world, and our minds are the minds of all the people of the world. Such a heart is one with God. All these combine to make one altar. (75-165, 1975.1.2)

Things do not happen by chance. Preparation is never easy. Viewed against the backdrop of a lifetime, childhood is the time to prepare for adolescence. The prime of life is the time to prepare for old age, which in turn is the time to prepare to go to the spirit world. Our lifetime is a period of training during which we undergo a course that prepares us to acquire a universal personality. (147-188, 1986.9.21)

We live in this world; yet it is not the only world that exists. There is also the

spirit world. This world and the spirit world should be integrated together rather than two separate worlds. Where is the place we are to go to and live in? Of course, while living physically on earth, we are proceeding into the eternal world. Ordinarily, people are simply born into this world, pass through youth, reach their prime, and enter old age. Their life passes like the setting sun. Yet those who know of the spirit world realize that a lifetime is but a fleeting moment compared to the eternal life after death. That being given, our lifetime serves to prepare us to welcome the world of eternity.

Student performance is measured by standards set by the school. One standard is based on the number of credits they are expected to take in an academic year. If students achieve a lesser number, they fall correspondingly below the standard of merit set by the school. Everything can be measured by means of some norm. Our life in the physical world is just like the period during which we are preparing ourselves to meet the standard of credits set by the school. We are ever striving to accumulate the achievements of a lifetime. In other words, our life course is measured against the yardstick that determines to what extent we have fulfilled our responsibility. (140-121, 1986.2.9)

Do not digest everything for your own sakes, but rather for the sake of God, your nation, tribe, family and spouse. Self-centered living is fraught with worries. Conversely, altruists always make friends. If you constantly devote yourselves to the welfare of others to the point of emptying yourselves, you become a vacuum, and the truth will come into you. (203-101, 1990.6.17)

What is the pride of our Unification Church? First is true love and second is True Parents. These terms are found only in the Unification Church, not in the dictionary. Third is true children and fourth is true tribe. These relate to our four main goals. (203-103, 1990.6.17)

4.2. The preciousness of our life on earth

If you are liberated, God will be liberated. If your family is liberated, so is the heavenly family. It is the same with earth and heaven. Accordingly, the biblical statement, "whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven," is elucidated by the oneness of the dual structure.

Understand the preciousness of the days during which you can make use of your body. They give us our one and only opportunity to use our bodies to resurrect God and the universe and to unite the world. The totality of God and all creation cannot be exchanged for the value of life on earth. Why? Because without humankind existing physically on earth, God and the universe combined together would still be incomplete. Realize how precious the human body is. We cannot trade our physical selves even for the universe. It is in this light that we

understand the biblical verse, "For what will it profit a man if he gains the whole world and forfeits his life? Or what can a man give in exchange for his life?" (91-190, 1977.2.13)

The average lifespan does not exceed eighty years. Within that short space of time allotted to us, we must get a grip on all the historically intertwined realms of goodness that were entangled in history. Realizing the vastness of the realm of goodness with which we are to forge a bond during our brief stay on earth, our mind and conscience must surge urgently forward. If we die we cannot do it. While we yet live, let us find our original homeland and restore the sovereignty of our homeland. Only by serving the heavenly sovereign and living in his nation can we enter God's Kingdom in heaven. (155-25, 1964.10.6)

The spirit world is infinite and eternal. How shall we manage our affairs in order to go there? We need to put them in order while we are still alive. There will be no other opportunity to straighten things out. A self-centered way of doing this absolutely does not exist. If it did, the Unification Church's Rev. Moon would never have suffered as he has. (59-50, 1972.7.2)

The way of the Principle presented by the Unification Church is the one and only way to go even after the passage of millennia and tens of millennia. Those failing to fulfill in this way, in their lifetime, will have to make up for it when they go to the eternal spirit world. (135-296, 1985.12.15)

4.3. Habituality is important

Today, let us renounce the habits of the satanic world and institutionalize God's new order. (213-19, 1991.1.13)

It is very difficult to break a habit. While living in the satanic world until now, you have cherished self-centered habits; these harden and set like cement, becoming even more deeply ingrained than the addiction Koreans have to kimchi (pickled vegetables), doenjang (soybean paste) and kochujang (thick soybean paste mixed with red pepper).

It is a historical fact. Since the emergence of the devil, our habits have become very deeply rooted. How do we eradicate them? However deep a pit you dig, you cannot get to the root of this serious problem. To get to heaven, one needs to replace all those past habits with God-centered habituality. (213-19, 1991.1.13)

4.4. The standard of life on earth

My life is for the sake of God and the world. Do not think of living for yourselves. Live for God, True Parents and humanity. True love is indispensable for you in forming a four-position foundation with God, True Parents and humanity. They all desire true love. You should become people who can inherit this true universe centered on true love. We need to bear this in mind constantly.

Therefore, we have to evaluate the

degree to which we have lived in conformity to the heavenly standard until now. You should become people who represent humanity, True Parents and God. People who live that way will not be restricted by any borderline from moving freely between the spirit world and anywhere on earth. If you wish to dine together with a thousand friends, such an experience is possible only in a world of love. When God exercised His ability as the Creator, He did so centered on love. In the spirit world, once you connect with true love, you can regulate and create everything. That is our ideal hometown. Unless you make a connection with true love, everything will be in vain. (147-115, 1986.8.31)

4.5. Everything will be recorded through the physical body

If more than two-thirds of your life have been unspeakably miserable, could you erase that? You cannot. These experiences stay with you. (34-139, 1970.8.30)

We need indemnity for restoration. Restoration is also re-creation. You should leave behind a life of value. Some people say to themselves that when they get old they will believe in Jesus, die and then go to heaven, but when we get old it is difficult to rectify anything. Therefore, the younger the better: it is more valuable for you to know the truth at the age of fifteen rather than twenty, and even more so to grow up knowing the truth from infancy.

Is the water inside your bodies pure or dirty? It would contain sand and pebbles. After heavy seasonal rainfall, rivers and streams become dirty with all manner of refuse floating in them. Likewise, you are full of all kinds of impurities. Thus, you need to go through the stirring and straining processes of a filtration system. Do not be egoistical otherwise there will be blockage. If excessive dirt accumulates, the filter gets clogged up, and the water flow is stopped.

Have you ever thought that you would be inspected by a system like an X-ray machine when you go to the spirit world? God also needs people who have passed through the filter. (97-60, 1978.2.26)

4.6. Life on earth is so important

In the spirit world you will live in a probation realm and wait there for some millennia.

The levels of your Blessed Families are all different, so you go to the place that is consistent with your level and stay there for a long time. Then your ancestors and your sons and daughters will accuse you saying, "Why did you do that? Why didn't you do better? What is this?" The time you will have to spend in that place will depend on the level of your accomplishments. It is not an easy thing. That is why you have to accomplish on the earth. You have to do everything I tell you.

A bolt requires its corresponding nut to be securely fastened. Only when the nut fits can it be fastened. Do you understand? They have to match.

How important is life on this earth?

It is an instant that comes but once. Compared to eternity, life on earth is but a dot, an extremely short moment. It is insignificant. You have to go beyond your physical life and prepare for the spirit world.

You must always be able to control and conquer everything by standing at the center with such a mainstream philosophy. Without doing so you cannot achieve individual perfection. (207-99, 1990.11.1)

4.7. Using our physical selves to fulfill our portion of responsibility

You have to think about God and True Parents in your life. By doing so, your mind and body can stand within a harmonious, stable and fulfilled sphere through love.

Those who lived in such a way can naturally do the same in the spirit world. There is an expanded internal life on earth. The level of the expansion of your internal life will come out on the surface in the spirit world.

Since love is internalized, God and human beings are like one cell of the body. The spirit world is the world where you become one of those cells. Once you enter into such a state, God will surely come inside your heart. When you call, "God!" He will answer in your heart, "Who is calling me? What is it?" In other words, it's a world in which you live with God.

Therefore, your portion of responsibility is that important. That is why I established the principle of the portions of responsibility. Whenever you look at yourself in the mirror in the morning, you should consider how you, as a man or woman, are going to fulfill your portion of responsibility. It is a serious matter.

Your five senses will find themselves enraptured in the love gained after accomplishing your portion of responsibility. All your senses are to operate within a substantial realm of love. (218-128, 1991.7.14)

In order to accomplish your portion of responsibility, what should you do? What should you do to become people who can fulfill their portion of responsibility? You should stand in a position to deny everything that was born from the emotional connection to and lineage of Satan. (139-249, 1986.1.31)

What happens when a person goes to the spirit world? He becomes God's body. Adam becomes God's body. This is what Jesus meant when he said, "the Father is in me." The First Corinthians verse, "Do you not know that you are God's temple?" confirms that the body is the holy temple where God dwells; it is His house.

Then, how can you resemble God? When you reach the stage of completion of your portion of responsibility, God dwells within you, creating oneness between you and God. (130-21, 1983.12.11)

Section 5. Blessing and Eternal Life

5.1. Why we need to know about the issue of eternal life

Why are families in this world being destroyed? Why are mothers, fathers and children becoming enemies? It is because there is no true love. The most important thing is eternal life, but people do not know that the spirit world exists. If you knew clearly that you live for eternity, you would not commit a crime even if others told you to. You would not live for yourself even if others told you to. Without knowing this, whether you believe in Christianity or any other religion, you could never go to heaven, God's ideal world. You cannot go there without investing true love and life. (205-261, 1990.9.9)

If our church is armed with the Principle, the issue of eternal life will become clear. If it were not connected to this issue, even a social revolution would be impossible. Nobody would want to fall into circumstances of greater poverty and ruin than those he or she currently lives in.

If we approach things from the perspective of eternal life, however, we can overcome all environmental conditions. That's why religion is so great. The issue of eternal life hinges upon this. All you have to do is firmly establish the concept of eternal life. Until now, religions could not digest or overcome their cultural backgrounds that were intertwined with habituality. Why not? It was because they could not establish the concept of eternal life.

Why are Christians shaken as their circumstances change? It is because of their concept of eternal life. They have no confidence regarding that issue. As to the question of whether they can lay down their lives in order to overcome their circumstances, we see them backsliding into living mostly to satisfy their present needs and meet their social obligations, all the while experiencing distractions coming from all directions. Unless the proper concept of eternal life is implanted in these people, they will fall away in midcourse. What can do this? Love alone can do this. Only the Unification Church can completely accomplish this.

The path of faith is not preparation for life on earth but for that in the eternal world. People having this conviction can take care of themselves. As people pass the ages of forty and fifty, and the day of their death draws closer, the more serious they become about the issue of eternal life. The older they get, the more serious they become.

Our thinking dims as we grow older, but when the concept of eternal life is implanted, we become more serious with age. Consequently, in the future, only a religious ideology can lead this world. Regardless of the frequently changing circumstances and ups and downs we face in life, as long as we maintain an absolute concept of eternal life, nothing would be a problem.

Therefore, the point is how you can

implant the concept of eternal life. God created Adam and Eve as the objects of His love. There's no doubt about that. Consequently, we should live as objects of God's love. You have to not only talk about it but also actually feel it, and experience it deeply.

Once you come to know how great the power of true love is, you would go this way even if someone told you not to. Therefore, if you can only implant the concept of eternal life, everything will be complete. In doing so, when it makes logical sense, it will reverberate in your mind and your body will be resonating in harmony with it to the same level. Adolescence is when such things happen.

The standard of original nature, as it was before the Fall applies fully before the age of sixteen. Since the years leading up to the age at which Adam and Eve fell were unaffected, the standard of original nature remains intact. Therefore, you should acquaint yourselves with God in your adolescence. In so doing, you will realize your inseparable relationship with Him. For this to happen, the concept of eternal life needs to be implanted. If only this were done, our second generation in the Unification Church would go no other way, even if we told them to. Therefore we must save the world quickly and bring everybody to the heavenly nation. The result becomes your possession. Your rank in the other world will be determined according to the number of people you bring in there. That is why heaven is completely empty now. (230-22, 1992.4.15)

5.2. The way of eternal life

5.2.1. Our lifetime and the issue of eternal life

How long do you think you'll live? Everyone probably thinks they'll live up to the age of about seventy or eighty; they don't think that they'll die before then. You just want everything. Even though you may believe you'll die when you're eighty or a hundred, there's no knowing if you'll die tomorrow or even today. You may think because you're young, you will live at least another forty to fifty years. You may want that. Did God guarantee that to you?

You should think that you might possibly die soon, perhaps within a year. Therefore, you should make all preparations during this short time. You should live with such thoughts. The shorter the time you think you have, the happier you will be, and the less you have to lose. Your sincere preparations during this time become the building blocks of your home for your eternal life. Have you ever loved God with such a short time in mind? You want to become one with Him and love Him, but you can not. God says to you, "Love Me!" If you die after having lived this way, then you will become the master of eternal life.

If you thought that you would die two years later, how serious would you be? You would start visiting cemeteries and attending funeral services. It is absolutely necessary to do this in a life of faith. That is why those who seek to gain their life will lose it and those who seek

to lose their life will gain it. The Principle applies here. If you think of dying for God's will and for heaven during the short time of your life, you will live eternally.

Within the same principle, consider how grateful a man would be who, thinking he would die single and unmarried, received a loving wife before his death? How happy would a man, who died without being married to anyone, be if he were suddenly resurrected and able to marry?

Until what age will you live and die? What would you do if you had to go forth to immediate death under God's order? You should leave something behind that God could praise. Then you would feel that your time is too precious to spend sleeping and eating. You would not have any time to worry even if you wanted to.

With regard to the matters of life and of eternity, you can live your lives with greater value the more you think of life as being short. What value comes from loving an individual, a family and a tribe? It creates a textbook for loving all humankind. It is a textbook for loving everybody in the spirit world that transcends time and space. (102-122, 1978.11.27)

5.2.2. Humankind seeks eternal life

A life of faith consists of seeking the world of eternal life. Faith involves seeking God's eternal love. In order to unite with eternal life along with eternal love, you must seek the final destination where God's joy can be felt as your own; this is the way of faith. Therefore, the most important matter above all else for an individual who lives a life of faith, is the degree to which he or she can live life with a progressive love and vitality.

The measure of value you have as a human being depends on how much all the sensations you perceive through your five senses exist in relation to life and love. Therefore, we should think again about the matter of whether we have lived in society with vitality and the heart of added love. If you are not standing in such a position, you should know that you are at a standstill or in retreat. (32-18, 1970.6.14)

5.2.3. Eternal life and religion

Human beings have eternal life. Religion has not disappeared from the earth but has expanded its territory throughout the entire world by passing through all kinds of circumstances, including different cultural backgrounds and customs. That is because the central human issue is about eternal life rather than a person's earthly lifetime.

People should live together with the universe during their life. Even though life is short, amounting only to about one hundred years, it does not just disappear at the end of one's life. Once you overcome that boundary line, you can continue to live in a transcendental realm and go beyond the bounds of the global village that once defined our limits.

Although the reality that we have eternal life may be harsh, even if that were not the case, we should proclaim

even an imagined eternal life to sympathize with and help humankind who have lived moaning in the midst of suffering until now. From this we have to infer a form of an ideal nation centered on an imagined God. In this way religion is necessary. Therefore, you have to resolve the matter of God along with the matter of eternal life. All these matters are interconnected. (162-263, 1987.4.17)

5.2.4. Why we should live eternally

As what kind of existence did God create human beings? He created them as the objects of His love who could possess His absolute and unique value. This is an amazing fact. How much value does a person's life have these days? It's only worth a few pennies. Originally, people were not meant to be such worthless beings. Their value was so precious that life could not be exchanged even for the entire universe.

The backbone of everything in the literary world today is love. People are born from, live in, and die in love. However, they do not just disappear. Since God, the subject being, is eternal, unchanging and unique, human beings, when they come to stand in the position of an object of love in front of Him, can also live eternally. The theory of eternal life originated from this point; it did not begin from life. (142-143, 1986.3.8)

What kind of person is a true person? It is a person who can receive love completely in the position of God's child by becoming one with Him inside and out. We can say that the way of life of such people is the way of a true life. People, whoever they are, desire the best. When you go and reach the highest position, God belongs to you, and you belong to Him. Then, you become God's child and you become God Himself and thus, even the universe belongs to you.

If there is something that God loves and treasures most, would God have created it to throw away after He spends one day, ten years, or a hundred years with it or would it to be with Him eternally? God created it to be together with Him eternally. So it is with humankind.

People should live eternally because they are the object partners of the absolute God who can feel joy from them in absolute love. If God were to just have a liking for them for one or two days, ten years, or a hundred years and then throw them away, it would not be love. The more you love someone, the more you want to be with that person. Was there not a man who remained single for life after his beloved wife died, always carrying her handkerchief? Nehru of India lost his wife when she was young. He wore a rose the rest of his life because his wife loved roses.

Then, when God created His most precious only son and daughter, do you think He created them to perish after a hundred years or so? No, and therefore it is a fundamental principle that human beings live eternally. In order to live eternally, we must stand on the foundation of an action where stronger power can be emitted. Therefore, as more days pass and the more love is given and received,

rather than being exhausted, the power of love becomes stronger and greater. Life will not end only in happiness but can expand to an unlimited happiness. Such a world is the nation that we idealize and where God dwells.

Do you wish for eternal life? Although perhaps vaguely, you wish for eternal life. If you have something precious, would you bring it with you when you seek refuge or not? You would bring it with you. Do you want to be proud of it or not? You would want to be proud of it. Will you stop being proud of it after a day or two? No. When you are about to die, you will want to leave it to your descendants for eternity. That is the same for God.

If God is an eternal, absolute being, the object partner He can love should also live eternally. That is why people have longed for an eternal life since time immemorial. Therefore, God the Absolute Being, cannot help but look for a loving son and daughter who possess the value of eternal life. (39-342, 1971.1.16)

We human beings resemble God as His masterpiece. Since God is eternal and because we also should have an eternal nature, our heart does not become old. Therefore, human beings should live eternally. Only when they live eternally can they have the value of existence as that masterpiece.

Therefore, human beings are the lords of all creation. Spirit comes from here. Human beings should live eternally. Therefore, we cannot think that our existence ends after we live for about eighty years. (159-279, 1968.5.19)

5.2.5. Living for the sake of eternal life

People are all living their lives in their own way. Living means your everyday life. Lifetime means your entire life. Furthermore, religious people use the words eternal life. Eternal life means not a lifetime but a life that continues eternally. It is important how you connect your life course with eternal life. Doing so is your lifelong responsibility. A lifetime is determined through linking each day to the next. Your entire life is the sum of the continuous days in your life.

Where is it that the content of your entire life is determined to be valuable? It is not determined after you have gone through all your life. Your daily life, day by day, determines it. Therefore, you have to live life well. What exactly is the meaning of living life well? It entails meaningfully living the days that represent the entire course of your life. When you say that you lived life well today, it means that it was a memorable day in your life, one that you can be proud of. When you say that you lived well, that day would surely be the most valuable day in your entire life course. If there were a day that you could live valuably, it would be an unforgettable day in your entire life. (197-186, 1990.1.14)

5.2.6. What is the theory of eternal life?

God is wise. If He had not established the ideology for love, He would be alone and lonely; He would be a god

who could not feel joy, anger, sorrow or happiness. God, who lost this absolute love, has stood in a serious, appalling and absolutely miserable position that no one has ever experienced throughout history. No one could ever comfort Him. God is not satisfied by reproducing an ideal form and shape of His dreams and then resurrecting His original son and daughter who are His desire. He should be able to decorate the ideal more brilliantly and express it beautifully as He travels long distances while embracing that ideal. That is how He created the entire universe. (204-100, 1990.7.1)

When the atmosphere falls one hundred percent into an absolute low pressure area, a high pressure area is automatically created which brings about a circulatory movement. God is the King of wisdom.

The theory of eternal life is logically established because eternal circulation begins through that principle of automatic circulation. When you invest, invest, and invest more, the theory of eternal life will begin. Those who live for others will not perish. (204-106, 1990.7.1)

When God looks for a partner of absolute love, that object partner will certainly be humankind; thus, we have the ancient adage, "Among all creation, human beings are most precious." This brings about the logic that the partner of love who unites with the creator's eternal love lives forever.

Eternal life is a natural product of this logic. Eternal life begins from here. The problem of how to establish a theory of eternal life based on the relationship of love sets up an extremely precious debate in religion. Eternal life cannot be found in either the man or woman. Eternal life is not found in God, but in His love. (218-210, 1991.7.29)

5.2.7. The most important issue of eternal life

Today's Christians say that if you believe in Jesus you will attain eternal life. To live eternally one must carry on with a continuous action. In order to walk the path of life eternally, the circulation system such as the veins and arteries of the heart should function normally; the nervous system and all the actions of the cerebrum and cerebellum should also function normally. This requires a tremendous amount of consumption. (121-172, 1982.10.24)

When you go to bed in the evening after taking off your shoes, are you confident that you will be there to put them on again the next morning? No matter how busy you say you are, nothing in this world is more important than the issue of eternal life. There is no quest in this world more serious than to resolving the problem of eternal life on this world. (10-249, 1960.10.21)

5.2.8. Ultimately, human beings must return to eternal life

You should dissolve the anguish of the Fall by establishing the way of True

Parents' love, this new wave and tide, and establish a family of true love over which God can reign. Only then can you go straight to heaven. The rails of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven must be the same. A train can run only when the rails are the same. In the same way, the rails on earth and in the heavenly world must be the same.

The path connecting God's Kingdom on earth with His kingdom in heaven is the path of true love. Consequently, the path an individual takes and the path a family takes should all be connected and their directions consistent with each other.

Therefore, everything a person does in his lifetime is permanently fastened to his rear end as a record of his performances done for the sake of true love. Thus, when a person goes to the spirit world, he naturally comes to dwell at the level corresponding to the meritorious achievements he left behind in his lifetime. (211-287, 1990.12.30)

5.2.9. Faith and the issue of eternal life

How do you live eternally? Christians say that you can attain eternal life and be saved by believing in Jesus but that makes no sense. Only through love can you be saved. From the viewpoint of God's principles of creation, only a true person is God's partner in love. Therefore, if someone has true love, he must be able to live eternally. Once you enter the realm of that love, whether you are in the spirit world or on earth, you will come to know where you should live.

If a large ship sailing across the ocean faces the danger of destruction, the rats inside the ship try to escape to dry land. Even though they are nothing but small animals, they can distinguish which is the right way to take and go in that direction when faced with matters of life and death.

How would it be in the case of human beings who should be the lords of all creation? Why have they become the way they are? It was because of the Fall. How will you remove the mask of the Fall or free yourself from the devil's love, life, and lineage?

To free yourself means to break away from something. It means to completely break away from and stand in an autonomous position with no relation to Satan. (215-53, 1991.2.6)

A mother in her nineties will tell her seventy year-old son when he goes out of the house to be careful of cars, have a nice trip and come back safely. Even if he is seventy, she will still say this to him before he goes anywhere. She can say such things to him. She will continue to say this everyday until she reaches the ripe old age of ninety. She will not get tired of saying it even if she were to continue for eternity.

What is the motivating power behind this? It is love. Even in the fallen world, parental love is like that. What would life be like if we belonged to God's love that fills the original world? When we achieve that state, the realm belonging to the true object of the God can be estab-

lished for the first time. When we come to know that God's love is eternal and unchanging, we can validate the theory of eternal life centering on our human love. We live eternally centering on love. (143-280, 1986.3.20)

5.2.10. Unificationists and eternal life

I intend to have the Unification Church members go through many hardships. They do not run away even though I make them go through hardships. Why do they not escape? It is because they know there is eternal life. The reason that they cannot leave the Unification Church is because there is eternal life. (204-82, 1990.7.1)

People all have desire. They all want to be a son or daughter of God. They do not want to be a grandchild or God's son-in-law; they want to be a son or daughter of God. The family is where anyone can achieve their desire. (221-23, 1991.10.20)

5.2.11. The concept necessary for eternal life

You should live with the attitude that I am someone who has eternal life. I am someone who practices true love. Whatever you do, you should think that it is for the sake of eternal life and for training yourself for eternal life. You always need the concept of eternal life and true love. You will need it eternally. (216-125, 1991.3.9)

5.3. Love and eternal life

5.3.1. Eternal life is directly connected with love

We want eternal life. We want eternal life, but what is it that does not change? It is love. All other things change according to their environment. So why does love not change? Love does not change because it is the center of all forces of life and because it occupies the central position of the ideal necessary condition. The center does not disappear before all its surroundings disappear. Since love is the center of the universe, anything that unites with that love can remain as long as God remains. (157-267, 1967.4.10)

5.3.2. True love and eternal life

What is true love? When you marry, you want your marriage partner to be better than you are. All parents wish for their children to be better than they are. Who do they resemble in this? They resemble God. God wishes for His object of love to be better than He.

If the absolute God is the father of humankind, can that father order His sons and daughters to absolutely do something while He Himself has not absolutely done it before? He cannot. Based on the view of this principle, that God wishes for His object of love to be better than Him, human beings have the greatest value. Centering on love, they have a higher value than God. That is why your mind desires the highest things. This is not impossible. It would

be equally possible for all human beings. It would be possible if the Fall had not occurred.

Human beings were to observe, administer and lead the universe from a lofty and exalted position. They were not to be dragged around and made to obey. Your mind, a liberated mind is like that. No one wants to be controlled. This is equally true for everybody.

Once you acquire the position of true love, you can go freely to God's position and to His throne in the heavenly nation. You can become God's friend. God created humankind for the sake of love. Therefore, since God is eternal and absolute, human beings have eternal life themselves. We automatically come to this logic. For this reason, true love is eternal. To attain eternal life, you must live in that realm of true love. (211-272, 1990.12.30)

Through true love, eternal life is possible. It is because the beginning of creation, the motivation, process and goal, and everything thereafter can be completed centered on love. Through a process, results come forth. The perfection of one's mind and body is fundamentally possible through true love. It is only love that bears the fruit of the ideal. There is nothing but true love. God also exists forever because of true love. Eternal life is connected through love. Therefore you must live centering on the environment of love in order to create an environment of eternal life. To attain the substantial realm of love, we must have a substantial experience of love. (218-134, 1991.7.14)

5.3.3. True love is absolutely necessary

Where does God exist in the spirit world? He exists at the absolute center, the center of love. That love is the true love which takes the shortest perpendicular path. First of all, you have to know God. Second, you have to know eternal life, and third, you must know true love. This is an investment of more than one hundred percent. Eternal life exists where there is an investment of more than one hundred percent. Eternal life cannot exist without true love. Those who do not attain eternal life cannot meet God. (205-128, 1990.7.29)

How will we bring order to the world from now forward? The world will be brought to order firstly through altruism, secondly through true love and thirdly through eternal life.

What is true love? It requires an investment of more than all of one's life. True love cannot exist where such investment is not made. It materializes from a place where an investment greater than one's life is made. Without true love coming into being, eternal life cannot exist. This is because you were all born from satanic blood, from Satan's lineage. Hence the biblical injunction, "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind. This is the greatest and first commandment." What does this mean? It means to love with all your heart and with all your will and with all your life. This is the First Commandment.

The Second Commandment is, "You shall love your neighbor as yourself." What does it mean to love your neighbor as yourself? It means to love with your life. You have to invest your whole life. You have to invest your whole life because otherwise, first, you would not be able to make Satan surrender and second, you would not be able to free yourself from satanic circumstances and third, you would not be able to rid yourself of the satanic lineage. Even if you are able to free yourself from satanic circumstances, there is nothing you can do about the satanic lineage. True love goes beyond life.

Men and women were born to live altruistically. Men were born for the sake of women. This is the absolute truth; the eternal truth. This is so for the sake of true love. That's how it is for both men and women. People say they wish they could be united eternally as couples. Then what will they do once they are one? They will occupy God. They cannot do that without true love.

Who is to be the owner in your home? One who lives one's entire life for the sake of the whole family will be the central figure representing God and the parents. One who has a hundred friends and lives for their sake during one's lifetime will earn the respect of those hundred people and will be their center. So an owner who eternally lives for the sake of others in the eternal world will be the eternal owner.

That person is God. Incidentally, God is our father and therefore He declares that He wishes to be together with us and the entire universe. There eternal life can be found. Eternal life does not exist in any other place. The scripture, "He who seeks to gain his life will lose it, but he who is willing to lose his life for my sake will gain eternal life" means that you have to overcome death. Without overcoming death you cannot truly live. (205-258, 1990.9.9)

5.3.4. The world after death is related with love

Where do we ultimately go? To the spirit world. We call it the world after death, but it is not the world after death. It cannot become the world after because it is a world related with love. Since that world is related with love, it is not the world after death. Since it began centering on true love, when we come to practice true love, here now is the spirit world. That is why love is great. (144-198, 220, 1986.4.24)

The directions of up and down, front and back, and left and right can only be harmonized through spherical movement. Without harmony between the vertical and horizontal, harmony cannot be created. Unity could not come about. Only love can bring about unification. Thus, the Unification Church argues the case for a unified ideal world based on true love because this conclusion conforms to the viewpoint of the Principle. (144-219, 1986.4.24)

God is trying to guide humankind. Even God breathes. He inhales love. The

universe continues for eternity centering on love. Eternal life is found in love. Even love breathes. Since the pulse of the universe is such, a man or a woman cannot say, "Ah! I hate it!" In order to be synchronized with the rhythm, they should love each other and go in the same direction. Everything should be aligned towards a single direction centering on God. (201-191, 1990.4.1)

5.3.5. Eternal life comes only by living for the sake of others

The formula course for eternal life is the same for grandfathers and grandmothers, as well as descendants thousands of years from now, and even to the spirits who are in the spirit world. Only those who lived for the sake of others can pass through to eternal life. (203-192, 1990.6.24)

5.4. Blessing and spirit world

5.4.1. The power of love

Both the spirit world and the physical world operate through love. The environmental conditions automatically act in concert with one another centering on true love. (185-19, 1989.1.1)

What are the qualifications for people in the past and the present to be eternal? What is the necessary factor for all the desires in our world? It is love; not just any love but true love. True love forms a ninety degree angle between the vertical and the horizontal anywhere. It must fit into all homes, whether oriental or western, northern or southern types, regardless of skin color, cultural or religious background. That is true love. (180-86, 1988.8.7)

Among the many people living in this world today, there are not that many who understand the meaning of the Blessing taught by the Unification Church. The Unification Church coined the term Blessing and has performed blessing ceremonies using this term. In the future, humanity cannot go to heaven without going through the gate of the Blessing.

Many people believe in the established churches. But even the established churches themselves cannot go to heaven unless they go through the gate of the Blessing. If I tell them this, the established churches complain that Rev. Moon of the Unification Church is self-righteous. Nevertheless, fallen human beings must surely go through the Blessing taught by the Unification Church. Even though they oppose it, the Blessing is a matter of great importance that should be dealt with by connecting the spirit world with the physical world.

Today the people who believe in ordinary religions think that salvation means individual salvation. It means that they think they will enter heaven if they just have faith individually. Yet based on God's original ideal, people are not to go to heaven alone, but rather as a loving couple together with their loving family. (143-234, 1986.3.19)

5.4.2. The spirit selves of husband and wife

We are the group that seeks the ideal of love. Therefore, we have to implant the ideal of love in the horizontal realm in order to stand as spokespersons for the spirit world. We should plant it as a seed. We can grow bigger through our give and take action centering on the heart of love. A couple bearing the fruit of love in this way will enter the spirit world becoming one body with God in the realm of His eternal love. (144-224, 1986.4.24)

You have much to learn of the logic of true love. When we look at the faces of the ardent members of the Unification Church, they look like they are in their forties, even though they have reached fifty. Some even look like they're only in their thirties. That's why, the more you love, the younger you become.

Our earthly outer shell ages, yet the more we exchange conjugal love, the more our spirit selves are rejuvenated. Let me elaborate further: the longer we live in love, our inner selves, our spirit selves, mature to become handsome men and beautiful women. We are to discard our outer shell like clothing, but what would we do if the shell got younger and clung on to us? Our outer shells begin to malfunction and become useless, but our inner cores become firm and are then transformed into beautiful heirs of the future like autumn chestnuts. When fall comes, the once-hard chestnut ripens while the bur softens and splits, allowing the chestnut to fall. It's the same for us. (164-101, 1987.4.26)

5.4.3. Marriage and spirit world

Christianity teaches people to love God, but this is a very vague concept. In the Bible Jesus said, "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the great and first commandment. And the second is like it, You shall love your neighbor as yourself". All you need are these two commandments. Before you love God you have to love the food you eat, love all things of creation, and love your body.

Your first parents are the parents who gave birth to you. Your second parent is planet earth, this earth. The earth supplies you with all the essential elements for your physical growth. The earth is the second parent of your physical body. Through the second parent, you return to your third parent which means our physical death. However, you cannot go to the third parent as you are. In order to return to the third parent you have to resemble God, who is the original parent.

Then, why do we marry? It is so that we resemble God. God is the uniformly combined being of dual characteristics. Since man and woman are the divided expression of God's dual characteristics, they have to unite as one body, become like seeds and return to God's position of original character. However, because we must go the way of love in order to be linked to that seed, we must be born in

love, set love as our goal while growing, live centering on love, and walk this path in order to return to love. You will go off in the wrong direction unless you follow the path centering on the goal of living for the sake of others. (138-97, 1986.1.19)

5.4.4. The position of Blessed Families in the spirit world

We Unification Church members are sure about the existence of the spirit world. We do not just believe it, we know it. Based on our many experiences, we cannot deny this... Up to this point where the Unification Church has established its present worldwide foundation, it has undergone a process with many spiritual experiences. Therefore, Unification Church members came to be in a position where they cannot deny the existence of the spirit world.

The spirit world is a world built centering on the absolute God. If that absolute God exists, He is the origin of the universe. There is nothing that does not come from Him. Because everything belongs to God, all that belongs to Him shares the same feelings with Him and lives in connection with Him. (140-121, 1986.2.9)

Satan does not exist in the realm where such love is achieved. Therefore, everyone in the satanic world loves centering on themselves. In this world, heaven is not number one, but rather the self. This began from the denial of heaven and earth. If, however we recognize heaven and earth, and unite under the equal love of the parents, we know that Satan cannot dominate us. That is the original position of Adam. We must recover that standard. (140-201, 1986.2.9)

Blessed couples should become the talk of their villages, just like I am wherever I go. The villagers should say, "We are so grateful to have that couple in our village. All the men and women like the wife. The children like her too." Be like that. If you cannot, you have to come back to earth from the spirit world. In order to come back you need to get my signature. Do you think that a Blessed Family can come back to earth as they please? It will be possible only after I pray for them. That is why those who went to the spirit world until now are in bondage. All the Blessed Families from the Unification Church in the spirit world are in bondage. Therefore, the cause of the problem resides on the earth. (140-201, 1986.2.9)

5.4.5. The Blessing is a promise

When receiving the Blessing, Unification Church couples pledge to live as eternal families. I am the one who governs eternal families and the eternal nation. I am setting the standard of families in the eternal nation. Those of you who keep your promise can inherit that family, as well as that eternal nation. (205-359, 1990.10.2)

5.4.6. The glory of the Blessing

What should a true woman be like?

She should do what the true man asks of her. If she serves the family and the tribe, then all her neighbors will applaud her.

Why do you all like me? Because I go through suffering to save you and liberate all of humanity. Unless I suffer, you cannot receive the Blessing, even if you wait for billions of years in the spirit world. I made the impossible possible through my suffering and enlarged the domain of this precious Blessing. This is something glorious and brilliant for the spirit world and for the physical world. (162-67, 1987.3.27)

CHAPTER TWO

Death and the Spirit World

Section 1. The Inevitable Path of Our Life

1.1. The body is far from eternal life

The earth also breathes and moves. Your cells breathe as well. Do you want to live eternally on earth or do you want to live eternally in a place where you become an invisible entity of love? You should live eternally in a world where you become an invisible entity of love. Even when God wants to reveal Himself, you cannot see Him with your physical body. That's why you need a spirit self.

God is the center of the invisible spirit. Therefore, He wants to give human beings, who are His counterparts, everything from the eternal realm of the ideal that He created. (111-111, 1981.2.1)

1.2. How the majority of people live

We are headed for a certain destination whether we know it or not, even as we move and even as we rest. Not just you, but this nation, this world and even heaven and earth are headed there as well. This is an undeniable fact.

Where will you go after this life? This is an important issue that people must resolve. Religions and philosophies arose historically to do this. You, therefore, cannot deny that you, too, are all caught up and driven by this destiny.

That being always the case, where are our bodies and minds trying to go? Further, where are our lives inclined towards and where are our hearts trying to go? Our wishes, hopes, and ideals…Where are they trying to go? Even if we cannot resolve these issues, we are destined to go in any case.

This body will see its end when it is buried in the ground on the day we die. If so, will this mind, this life, this heart, this ideal, and even this hope be buried together the day the body is buried? To answer this, we should present detailed contents, solutions and a definite and purposeful perspective.

Saints, sages and numerous founders of religions, stopped on their paths of life, interrupted the concerns of their minds and the inclinations of their hearts, and asked themselves where they were going, as they struggled to resolve this issue. They came forth to resolve this issue, but to this day no one could confidently claim, "My body has gone to such a place. My mind, my heart, my life, and my ideals have hastened there; hence, all beings in heaven and earth should go there." (8-194, 1959.12.20)

Religious people hope for the end of this fallen world which originated from private desires. Over the millennia, religions have eagerly awaited a public world – a single, unified world of peace.

How should religious people live? They should shorten this historical path and link it to the world and to the cosmos. The life after this accomplishment is far more interesting than the pleasures of conjugal life. Such a family is a liberated family. It cannot help but become an absolute family.

Walking the streets of Myungdong in Seoul, one sees young couples being affectionate. For whom are they doing that? They say they do that to enjoy their youth, which they have but once. That's fine, but who is the owner of enjoyment? This is a serious question. How long can you enjoy life? You do so from your twenties, but it will not last after you pass your sixties, seventies, and eighties.

Yet the way of the Unification Church is different. For what purpose do we eat? For the sake of the world and to abolish this evil world. We see in order to clean up this evil world – not to become a part of the evil side but to defeat it. How we hear, think, walk and act is different from the secular world. (36-71, 1970.11.15)

God would not be the Absolute Being if He had created people to live for just a few days and perish. He created them as precious beings that He wants to keep seeing and cherish eternally.

We know that we are the object partners God can derive joy from. As He is eternal, we must also be eternal. The eternal God relates with an eternal world.

However, there are many people who have lived thinking, "I've lived up to eighty. That will do, and when I die, that's the end of it." Yet in the course of history, there were people who pondered the question of immortality. They wondered if there was any way to live eternally without dying. The more people held on to this ideal, the more they thought and asked themselves, "What's the meaning of life? Why are people born and then go away like travelers?" and they concluded, "Life is suffering. It is like the coming and going of grass." Yet, if they could live forever, there would be no need for such worries. (39-228, 1971.1.15)

1.3. Death is inevitable

One day we will go to the spirit world. There is no doubt about that. People visiting Korea land at Gimpo Airport, but that does not mean they have traveled in Korea. From Gimpo Airport, where do we go? Do we go to South Jeolla Province or South Gyeongsang Province or Pyeong-an Province? From Pyeong-an Province, where do we go? To a county. From there, where next? A township. What is next? A village. From there, we must go to a neighborhood. This is not easy. If people cannot determine their dwelling place, what is the value of success in social life? That is a problem.

If God orders me to come, even tomorrow night, no matter how great I may be today, I have no choice but to go. However loudly I might protest, I would have to go. I will go while pro-

testing loudly, but only after speaking the right words. I must present the way that the nation and the world must go. It will be my death if I fail to do so. (177-41, 1988.5.15)

1.4. God is the owner of life

Who is the origin of life? Not I. Both the origin and the purpose of life must transcend me. My life did not originate from my parents, society, a people or nation but from the transcendent absolute God. The motive must be firmly connected to the transcendent motive that stands in the absolute position. It should not be linked to historical relational factors, environmental relational factors, or social factors. Only when you link your origin to the transcendent cause, the transcendent purpose, can you extricate yourself, make a leap, and transcend. You must link your life to the transcendent motive; it does not begin with yourself.

It began with the absolute God. When you link yourself to the transcendent motive, even if you die, it will be within a transcendent process because of God's will. (36-63, 1970.11.15)

People don't live for millennia or centuries. All of us die within a century or so. Among our numerous ancestors who died at various times throughout the innumerable historical ages, if there had been any whose thoughts were motivated by public-spiritedness meeting with universal approval, they would have bequeathed a legacy lasting a millennium even if they lived less than a century. Instead, they all lived selfishly and perished. They brought everything to ruin.

Such a lifestyle causes problems. What is the biggest problem here? It is the question of how to replace an egocentric system of evaluation and orientation with one that serves a higher purpose. It is about how to shift the emphasis from self-centeredness toward that which can benefit the greater good.

We must, therefore, reverse the way of individualism and self-interest. To do so requires resources and action.

If you were wearing your one and only change of clothing, you would fight tooth and nail to stop anyone trying to take it off you. Let's say you had changes of clothing for each of the four seasons. If it is spring, and people are dressed in winter wear, then bring them spring clothing and tell them, "That's winter wear. Take it off!" If others are wearing spring clothing in summer, bring them summer clothing and tell them to change. Those people didn't see the need. They were unaware of the existence of a replacement of greater value. (200-90, 1990.2.24)

On the earth we have parents, teachers and relatives. We have ways to establish such relationships on the earth, but not in the spirit world.

In the spirit world, everyone practices God-centered public-spiritedness. All positions are differentiated. Thus, those above cannot descend below, and those below cannot easily ascend above.

Originally we were supposed to go to the spirit world only after achieving perfection on earth. Once we enter the next world, that's it. There is no doubt that we will die.

Our life course is too short. Life is too short. Even a life span of eighty years is too short. It is less than eight hours in spirit world time. From the perspective of eternity, it is even less than that. Therefore, the power of true love is great. The speed of true love is so great as to be beyond our understanding. (205-65, 1990.7.7)

Section 2. Understanding Death

2.1. The meaning of the Korean word *toraganda*

There is no doubt that the spirit world exists. It surely exists, and since we were born from the spirit world, we must return there.

The Korean word *toraganda* (literally "to return," but meaning "to die") is interesting. To where do we return? Not to a cemetery. We return to our place of origin. The place of our departure is not a cemetery. It means to return across the vast expanses of history, even beyond its origin.

To return as a human being does not mean to be born and to return as a Korean. Someone who dies as a Korean does not return on that path as one. We return to the original world that brought forth the ancestors of humankind. What does that mean? As there is a Creator, we will return to the place where that Creator is. That is where we originated, so it is there that we return.

The universe is engaged in circular motion: when the snow covering the mountains melts, it flows down through small valleys and into the ocean through many streams and rivers. Later it enters the ocean where it evaporates and returns to complete its cycle.

Everything circulates. When one returns, where does one return to? We wish to return to a place where we can be higher and better. No one wants to get smaller. However, all the laws of motion of the natural world dictate that things diminish through action. When we roll something, it does not roll eternally. First it rolls rapidly, and then it decelerates and finally stops. (141-269, 1986.3.2)

2.2. The place to which we must go

We live in this world, yet it is not the only world that exists. There is also the spirit world. This world and the spirit world should not be two separate worlds; they should be integrated.

Then where is the place in which we are to go to and live? Of course, while living physically on earth we are proceeding toward the eternal world. Ordinarily, people are simply born into this world, pass through youth, reach their prime, enter old age and end their life like the setting sun.

Yet those who know of the spirit world realize that a lifetime is but a fleeting moment compared to eternal life after death. That being so, our lifetime serves to prepare us to welcome the world of eternity. (140-121, 1986.2.9)

2.3. The day we pass on is a precious day

If a global unified world had been formed in which Adam's birthday, his wedding day, and the day of his return were commemorated, the human race that commemorated those days would have been a unified brotherhood of one people. That is to say, they would have become a people that lived in one world. If that had happened, all the customs of Adam's life would have been inherited in the history of humanity, and the culture formed at that time would have been inherited eternally. (31-230, 1970.6.4)

2.4. The spiritual connection of life and death

However hard you may try to avoid death, you will die when your time comes. People enter the spirit world in different states. Some go there after living to a ripe old age while others die untimely deaths. Among the latter are those who die due to punishment and those who die to indemnify the sins of their people and the world.

If three prominent young people in a village die, good fortune will come to that village. If three promising youths of a clan die, good fortune will come to that clan. In other words, indemnity must be paid. It applies everywhere. The principle of causality operates everywhere.

If God set up someone in a central position with a value equal to that of a thousand people and let him walk the path of death, and if those one thousand people are inspired by his grace and virtue so that they aim to live for his sake and follow his way of life, their entire race will enter the same blessed realm as he. The reason people try to discover the thoughts of patriots and sages and follow them is to enter the same realm of their blessing.

Last year, several members went to the spirit world. This year, several more will go there. Although I have not talked about it, I know of this already. Why does this happen? Because when we go up one stage, we cannot avoid paying indemnity. (33-10, 1970.7.28)

Among those born on earth, there are people who live with hope and people who live without being able to have hope. Yet there are two kinds of hope: humanistic hope and God-centered hope. From the day of our birth, we grow up thinking that our mother's bosom is the best thing there is, but when we leave our mother's bosom and come to have friends, we think that friends are the best thing. Nevertheless, we end up parting even from our friends.

As we grow older, neither loving parents, nor a loving spouse nor loving children can completely satisfy our hopes.

People hope for many things, but eventually all these hopes vanish. We have hopes for our family, our country, or even the world. However, as we age, our hopes fade away.

Among those who live on earth, there are not many who live with the firm conviction that the hope they have been proud of, their entire hope, the hope

they were unable to live apart from, is worth losing their lives over. People are destined to have to fight and go beyond death after living life as it is known.

People entertain all kinds of hope in their lives. Yet when they face death in the end and pass away, they abandon all the hopes they had fostered. They wander about seeking new hope, wishing to live today and tomorrow. When they encounter death, though, all their hopes fade away and they fall into despair as they set out on their final path.

From their own perspective, people seem to have hope, but they are unable to have a hope by which they can go over the summit of death. They disappear without having such a hope. Are we to die understanding this to be the pattern of life, or will we seek a hope that can last, laughing even in the face of death? These are very important questions that all people on earth have to think about today.

All things of this world will pass away. Our families, nations, and even the world itself will pass away. Ideologies and philosophies will pass away. What will remain? It is the hope with which we can fight and win over death. Without such a hope, we might as well call ourselves failures in life.

On the other hand, there is a group of people who, from their birth, reject all hopes that secular people desire and all humanistic things, and live embracing the heavenly hope, an eternal hope.

Heaven made limitless efforts to enable humanity, living with their earthly, humanistic hopes, to go over the peak of death with a new hope and to live with regard to the eternal world. Therefore, people who live a life of faith should not live embracing earthly hope, but should live dreaming of the eternal world of hope that can even conquer death. (6-43, 1959.3.22)

2.5. Death in relation to the value of life

The word "death" invites understanding of the meaning of life. Who knows the value of life very well? Those who seek to live do not. Those who seek to fathom the value of life while clinging onto God at the crossroads of life and death understand. (74-242, 1974.12.31)

In today's world, there are many people who commit suicide by taking sleeping pills or in other ways. Do more women commit suicide or more men? More women. Why? Women tend to have a one-track mind.

However ugly a man might be, he is able to approach a problem from different perspectives. Women see only one way out of a problem, but men avoid death by finding viable alternatives. As such, they have a lower suicide rate than women. (222-69, 1991.10.28)

2.6. Death is a process to link three worlds

It is only natural that we would aspire to resemble God. God also wants His sons and daughters to resemble Him. That is why we want to resemble God

and He wants to take us with Him. We are groping for the way to make this possible. Therefore, people must be reborn into a body that enables them to resemble God. Both God and humankind are eagerly awaiting the day of rebirth. Such a day is necessary. What is it? It is the day of our death.

That being the case, should people welcome death or not? They should welcome it. When asked what the purpose of death is, we should answer, "We will die for the sake of God's true love." We discard our physical bodies to participate in the realm of activity of God's infinite love and for the sake of God's world of love.

Death leads to birth in God's love, but in this world, people clamor in their death throes, "Oh, I'm dying!" Death is the moment you can welcome the joy you feel by being able to leave the realm of limited love and enter the realm of infinite love. Therefore, the moment of death is the moment of your second birth.

Then, would God be joyful about the day of birth of your physical body, or would He be joyful about the hour you are born as a son who is to act for the sake of love in the second, infinite world? You might wonder why I talk about such things. You cannot establish a relationship with God without liberating yourself from the fear of death. (116-172, 1982.1.1)

Human beings go through the stages of formation, growth, and completion. We go through the realm of water in our mother's womb, then the realm of the planet earth, and finally the aerial realm in heaven. In other words, people go through three periods: the period of water in the womb, the period of being born and living a hundred years on this earth, and then the period of flying in the aerial world. (116-174, 1982.1.1)

People are born from the depths of water. The period in the womb is the period of existence in water. When the fetus is inside the mother's womb, it is floating in water. It needs to draw in and expel water as it lives under water. Therefore, it lives by way of a hose connected to its stomach.

How is a fetus nourished? It is supplied through the navel. Its navel functions as a mouth. So, we should not be disdainful of our navel. Pat your navel and say, "Belly button, you took pains for me in the past." If you pat your navel many times, you'll improve your health. Do that. If you do that a lot, you'll become healthy. Even when you sleep in a cold room, if you cover your navel, you won't get diarrhea. During your time in the womb, your navel functioned as your mouth. The breathing organ then moves up from the navel. What's the next mouth? It is this one. It continues to go up.

Then what must we do with the umbilical cord that is attached to the navel? We must cut it off. By analogy, in the world of air, the spirit self is attached to the physical self like the embryo in the womb and feeds off the physical body. When the physical body grows old, the

spirit self comes out and discards the physical body. When the embryo is to be born, it is born on the earth where it becomes the object of love to its mother and father. Likewise, the spirit self must be reborn as a person who can relate to the eternal God, who is its spiritual Father. This is in accordance with fundamental principles and laws.

The earthly world is where the embryo can become friends with its father and mother after it is born. People are born in the earthly world where they can share love with their mother and father. Likewise, they must be born in the spirit world, where they can share love with God, the Parent, by whom they can connect with the infinite spirit world. (299-69, 1999.2.4)

We have the period of water, then the period of land and the period for flying. How long have people today waited to see a flying human? Such a person would be the world's greatest attraction. (49-284, 1971.10.17)

Those who breathe in love on the earth are not dead but alive. When they breathe in the mother's womb, they do so through a pipe-like device. Though they are alive, when they destroy the placenta connected to their navel and come out, they rise to a new, higher-dimensional world. Air is supplied on a higher dimension. They come out receiving a supply of air.

What will you develop after coming out of the womb? It is not air but love; you receive elements of love. You should not live just to eat, for that is to be dying. Drinking water and living in that way, it is all like filling a bag, a water bag. They are all part of being on the path to death. It is a secondary existence. What should you be filled with during your life on earth? You must form a new character of love during this period. (139-214, 1986.1.31)

What you need on earth is love. Why do you call a child who lives without parental love an orphan? Because the child does not have the love that enables it to be eternally connected to the spirit world. Therefore, those unmarried people who live alone are pitiful. (139-214, 1986.1.31)

Death means to inherit the elements of love after the destruction of the physical organ through which the body has been engaging in the second type of respiration. Love is invisible. Your internal self is growing through parental love and conjugal love. That is why, just as an embryo is required to grow in order to be normal in the womb, in the same manner the baby must grow properly on the earth, as God's laws require. (299-69, 1999.2.4)

Dragonflies swim in the water during their larval stage at first, then come up to the earth and creep about for a while. Then, by flying around, they prey on bugs that they never would have imagined eating when they were creeping on the surface. They flutter about freely in this universe, thinking that it is their stage.

There are many insects that go through three stages of life. Insects have wings in general. They go through their life living in the water, on land and in the air. Yet do human beings who are called the lord of creation have wings? We have a set of wings of a higher dimension. Death is the blessed gateway to our second birth. (299-71, 1999.2.4)

What is the meaning of death? Earthly life, the time of living in air, parallels the time of swimming in the womb. We are living in a wrapping cloth of air. Death itself is not unique, but only our rebirth into the third life. That moment of transition is what we call death. (49-286, 1971.10.17)

2.7. Things to do before we die

2.7.1. Crossing the last border

We will all die once in our lifetime. We must pass over even if we have to brave the fiercest storm. There is no value in doing well most of the way and then collapsing before crossing the finish line. What will you do standing on the border? You did well in joining the Unification Church. You all are such a motley crew, but it is good that you joined. Even if we run with our mind totally focused, we cannot be confident we will make it all the way. So don't get all flustered and give up in the middle. We win victory only as we dash across the finish line, the last border.

It is an effort worth making for everyone born as a human being. No matter how much opposition and persecution there may be from behind, you should continue on your path. We have no latitude to concern ourselves with the opposition. The person who works hard to walk his destined path one step at a time will cross the final border. All of us must go this way. (24-77, 1969.6.29)

2.7.2. Modeling ourselves after God's external form, heart and divine character

We will all someday have to discard our physical bodies and move on to the spirit world. So we, as human beings born into this world, must be ready for death. Endure hardships to form your good self into your second self in the eternal world. Only when you receive good prenatal education while inside the mother's womb will you be born as a good and healthy baby. In the same way, your life on earth is similar to your life in the womb.

Therefore, grow by modeling yourselves after God's external form, His heart and divine character. As you grow, risk your lives in overcoming obstacles. (14-17, 1964.4.19)

2.7.3. Do not sin

We talk about the mind being straight. When we say an electrical pole is straight it means that it is standing upright. The same thing can be said when we say the mind is straight. That's why people walk upright; they must be vertical.

Make your mind completely vertical. Your body will form the horizontal line. There should be a centrifugal force and a centripetal force. The perpendicular force and the force of rotation must be balanced. Accordingly, you must find yourself.

When you say that you are yourself, God should agree with you and the True Parents should also agree. Then your relatives, your clan, and the nation must also agree that what you say is right. The one who is accused by them is the problem. In the future, the continents will be divided between frigid zones and temperate zones. A time will come when those who sin a lot will be sent to the North Pole, just as patients with contagious diseases are quarantined. (202-280, 1990.5.25)

2.7.4. Live and die for the world

I did not work hard for the sake of the Asian situation or the Korean people. Think about how to fulfill your responsibilities in the global field and be willing to die for this cause.

Thinking about all these things, you must live and die for the sake of the world, standing on the global level. Then, in what position should you die? Stand on the global level and die for it while embracing your loving spouse, family, tribe and race. The Unification Church has formed tribes and is now forming a race.

How will the founder of the Unification Church die when he dies? I will die for the sake of the world, while embracing its people and the Republic of Korea also. If the Korean people unite and die for the sake of the world, there will be a path for them to be able to live with the world. That is why I go forward seeking that path. (34-192, 1970.9.6)

2.7.5. Work hard

In what territory will you do your work? If you need money, make it. If you need people, work hard without eating and sleeping to raise them. Never ask anyone for help. Do not rely on the church headquarters for help; you should help them instead. Work more than three times harder than ordinary people.

That is why, if I were to live for 70 years, my life content would actually be equivalent to 210 years. Likewise, don't think of living for 100 years; instead, think of working three times harder than others. If you were to live that way for 70 years, it would be worth 210 years. Think this way: if you worked ten times harder, you would live 700 years; if you worked twenty times harder, you would live 1,400 years. You should work twenty-four hours a day throughout your entire life. Only when you live that way can you bear fruit and increase your ownership of love in the spirit world. Your fortune of love will grow. Your ownership will grow and your sphere of activities will expand. (102-38, 1978.11.19)

2.7.6. Work for the public good

What are the laws of heaven? They are to promote public righteousness.

Private matters belong to Satan, and public matters belong to God. Go the way of public righteousness. Even if everyone opposes you on this course, if you are not disturbed by the opposition but go the way of hardship with vitality, you will become a person of heaven who will welcome spring. (47-270, 1971.8.29)

If you see a greedy shopkeeper in a market, you will notice that the customers don't come to buy things from him. No one likes a greedy person. Everyone knows the method and secrets of managing one's life in terms of distinguishing between private and public matters. Therefore, if you are unable to go to heaven, you can't use the excuse that you didn't know how to manage your life. Why? You already know the distinction between public matters and private matters without being taught.

For example, let's say your mother distributes delicious rice cakes equally between you and your sister. You eat your share, but your sister keeps hers without eating it. Then you wake up at night and are about to secretly eat your sister's cake, that she had set her heart on. Before you can eat it, your conscience will cry out, "You scoundrel! You devil!" If you don't feel this in your conscience, you are not a human being. You should feel it. Why? Because your conscience pursues public matters. If you follow private desires you will perish.

Originally, for those who follow the laws of heaven, there is a mind that defends and protects them from destruction. What does it mean that it originally existed? Because God originally had such a mind, human beings came to have the same mind from the start. It is not a man-made law. Can you say to your conscience, "I do this because that's the way I am"? If you command your conscience, "Be like this because that's how I think," does it follow suit? We may not know where the conscience receives its orders from, but we know it is from somewhere other than ourselves. When we see how such feelings do in fact control us, we can understand that they do so over public and private matters. (31-241, 1970.6.4)

People today struggle internally and externally at the crossroads between good and evil, and public and private, in their daily lives. In many cases, they vacillate between the two and finally fall into a self-centered, private lifestyle. Yet those who do that will perish. Therefore, they must repent for their past self-centered, private lives, grit their teeth, and push themselves back into public life. People tend to waver between these two lifestyles. They are more inclined toward living privately, and end up distancing themselves from the public good. This has been your life of faith until today. Therefore, all those with a private lifestyle must repent. (31-242, 1970.6.4)

Do you wish to receive good fortune? Do you wish to live eternally? To do so, you must become public people. In educating your children, don't love them only as your own. Become parents who love their children as offerings for the

sake of the people of the world. When holding your babies to your breasts and nursing them, think of yourselves and your babies as representatives of the entire human race on earth. Nurse your babies with such a heart. Instead of caring only for your children and their appearance, cherish other people's children with a loving heart as if they were yours. Babies who are suckled by such mothers will certainly grow up to become great people. Such results may not surface right away, but after the first and second generations among your descendants there will be born great figures who can rule the world. This is the formula. (31-167, 1970.5.24)

Which of the two would you prefer to devote your entire lives to indemnifying: private matters or public matters? Both are devoted to some purpose. Those who stand up at the risk of their lives to devote their entire lives for the public good and public indemnity will become great people. A new history will be created by a group of people like this.

As we are facing that moment, how shall we spend the rest of our lives? This is the course of tribulation you must go from now. When you manage your life, the issue is whether you live individualistically or publicly. For whom do you eat, wear, buy and sell things in your daily life? Is it all for you or for God? The issue is whether yours is a private or public life. The question is also whether you have a private or a public mind in all these activities.

Pledge to go the public way. Anyone charged with the mission to indemnify history must advance to the stage that everyone desires. Therefore, in the course of daily life, transcending private feelings and embodying public feelings is the important issue that all people of faith must concern themselves with.

What is sin? Sin arises from private standpoints. Ruin also comes about in the private sphere. Evil is the same. When private matters are pursued beyond a certain degree, they manifest evil. Private matters have certain limits; when exceeded, sin, evil and ruin result.

Then, where is the position that can be eternally good, eternally prosperous and eternally fortunate? Where is the position that can prevent sin, evil and ruin? It is the public position. Even when you eat, do so in a public position. When you work, manage from a public standpoint. When you speak, digest the situation with public words. In this way, live connecting all aspects of your lives with public matters. Such people cannot go to hell even if they try. (31-163, 1970.5.24)

2.7.7. Experience love

Do not just think of yourselves, saying, "I am the only one!" Are you only limited to your own selves? If all the elements from your mother and father and all elements supplied to you from the things of creation were removed from you, you would disappear. Then, what is the being called the self? It is a position that represents the mother and father. You live through your mother and father by going through the period

in the womb, inheriting their blood and flesh, and being provided for by them.

Thus, in our modern age, we use the terms Mother Earth and Mother Nature. This earth, this planet, is our mother who provides us with elements at different levels. How do we breathe when growing in our mother's womb? Through an umbilical cord. This is our hose linked to our mother's body.

However, we know that we are now connected to the second world, the world of air. As we emerge from life in the womb, we cause destruction. What are we connected to at the moment of our first cry? We come to be connected with the world of air where we breathe in air through the nostrils. Our nostrils are the absolute supply line. Can we live if our nostrils are blocked? If we can't breathe, we die. It is made with a dual structure.

When a baby comes out from the womb to connect to the world of air, the umbilical cord, the amniotic sac and the placenta that it depended on for its life in the womb are destroyed and die. What appears at that same moment of death? The baby comes out into the universe, to Mother Earth, and comes to live by the supply of elements through its mouth.

After coming out of the womb, what must our body do? While we are breathing through the umbilical cord in the womb, we are also preparing the nostrils as the airway. Then, when we emerge from the womb, we switch the use of the organ and begin to breathe. Likewise, what must we do in this world now? What we must do after our birth is experience love, inhale the air of love from our mother and father, and undergo all processes by the supply of the air of love. Once we are born as a baby in a family, we go up and then come down along a sine curve. After we are born as a baby, we grow and age, and then we die and are dissolved. We are born as a baby and return to the stage of being a baby again.

What is going to happen when we die? We have to kick away the second womb and be connected to the third breathing organ of love. We kick away parental love and fraternal love and enter the world of love which is in total harmony with the Original Being of the great cosmos, God. The spirit world is filled with the air of love.

Therefore, we must prepare now in the earthly world a pipe-like device for breathing love. So we need to experience the spirit world. We can be immortal only when we become people who can feel spiritual love and then breathe the air of love.

When we kick away the womb of Mother Earth and come out, we breathe with the respiratory organs of love. We can gain eternal life only when we inherit the third love. Where do we go after being connected with love? We return to God. We return to the spirit world by being linked to the respiratory organ of love. Yet there remains the way to go to the Original Being, God. Since the seed was initiated by the Original Being, it must bear fruit and return to Him.

The course of life being a traveler's journey, what do we have to be equipped with here? We must go this path experi-

encing love. As the Fall meant that we couldn't receive parental love, we must form the vertical family centering on true parental love, true fraternal love, true conjugal love, and true filial love. We are also to create the horizontal environment by establishing many families in the north, south, east, and west.

These families should form true families that can link the vertical with the horizontal. When this is linked to the realm of the tribe, people, nation and world, this world bound by love is what we call the Kingdom of Heaven. (139-212, 1986.1.31)

2.8. What to leave behind before going to the spirit world

2.8.1. Leave a tomb of love behind

In general when human beings think about eternal life, they think of it not only in terms of decades or centuries, but in millennia, tens of millennia or eons. When people die, they are no different from animals. What use is it to leave anything behind? Nowadays, even atheists and agnostics say to themselves: "Ah, I have to make a name for myself." Yet, of what use is it to do that? Even if one became an American patriot and were honored with a monument, it would disappear when America perishes. What use is it to leave your name behind? Even if you did so, historically speaking, something that was considered good during a period of prosperity can later be viewed as bad during a period of decline. (103-15, 1979.1.28)

God's purpose is to have His posterity populate the earth. Therefore, when we go before God in the spirit world, having left behind children of the Living God on earth, we also come to stand in His position. That indeed, is the meaning of the scripture, "be fruitful and multiply and fill the earth." (146-223, 1986.3.11)

What will you do in your life? Leave a tomb of love behind. Let us leave a tomb of love behind! If you live inside a tomb of love, you will feel no bitter sorrow. You may get tired of living in a place like a tomb, but will feel no bitter sorrow if you live in love. If we leave a tomb of love behind in our lifetime, our life will be a success for eternity. If you live like that and die, God will bring His sons and daughters to welcome you in the spirit world. If there's no ring on your hand, God will put a diamond ring of the Kingdom of Heaven on your finger. If you're not well-dressed, God will dress you in the richest apparel fit for the royalty of the Kingdom of Heaven. (97-167, 1978.3.12)

2.8.2. Proprietary rights in the spirit world are determined through witnessing

Your proprietary rights in the spirit world will be determined by the number of citizens you have brought into the Kingdom of Heaven. They will be your assets, your eternal assets. Now the time has come to take stock of this. The time will come when millions of people will be witnessed to in a day. The Unification

Church has such tremendous potential. Look at the world: how many people are wandering about restlessly like raving lunatics, agonizing over whether to live or die, questioning life and committing suicide? (218-227, 1991.8.19)

The bigger your heart of love is when you enter the spirit world, the more people will line up to be with you. Such a person will be respected in the spirit world. If myriads of people were to flock around him, wishing that they could live with him, he would become exceedingly wealthy with extensive domains. What sort of person would be wealthy in the next world? The one who invests for the sake of love is a wealthy person.

Witnessing is the way to collect blessings of love. With love, we as owners recover the property of heaven stolen by thieves from the satanic world. We go to them with a heart of loving their mother and father more than they do, and bring in all the blessings related to love. Even if you are mistreated, you won't perish. Myriads of saints and all the things of creation will follow you and you will thereby become wealthy naturally. (205-347, 1990.10.2)

You enter the spirit world without money. Take care of Satan's children. Each of you is to look after more than 120 people. The Kingdom of Heaven lost all its citizens. By engrafting them, we establish a condition for them not to be lost.

In order to go through the twelve pearly gates in the spirit world, you must, while on earth, recover the citizens of heaven from Satan. To do so, you must shed tears, sweat and blood. With the heart of true love for re-creation, invest your heart more than that of the fathers and mothers, husbands and wives, and sons and daughters of the satanic world, and bring about that transitional process by shedding your tears, sweat and blood. Without doing so, you cannot claim any heavenly citizens as your own. In proportion to this number, the conditions for your position of glory and your proximity to God in the other world will be established. (211-352, 1991.1.1)

What you take into the spirit world is neither money nor the name of the Unification Church. What should you do from now? It is a question of making as many sons and daughters as possible for God to love. People can procreate only a few babies; anyone can do that.

What must we undergo in the restoration process? By recovering from the satanic world many sons and daughters whom God can love, your meritorious deeds will be linked to your ancestors and serve to liberate them. This is the greatest gift you can obtain in the course of restoration.

Even if you served as a regional director, if you have no spiritual sons and daughters, you'll go to the spirit world with an empty can in your hand, because you won't have even one person attached to you.

Heaven is an infinite world requiring bridges linking up with the heart of love. Thus, the more the people you

witnessed to spread over the world, the more extensively you will be able to get around in the spirit world. Everyone will want to link up with you.

The relationships that you are able to resolve in heaven because of having resolved them on earth will create a vast base of activity when you go to the spirit world. It will all be yours. Thus, your sphere of activity can spread out to the entire spirit world based upon that standard. Without this base, you would be pushed into a corner and your activities restricted, so we have no spare time to be idle or rest.

Eating, living and raising children are no big deal for the spirit world. We must therefore recover heaven's citizens. They become your assets there.

We must quickly digest all of humanity and the world. If we do this, all the spirits in the next world will undergo the returning resurrection. If the birthright now belonging to the satanic foundation reverts to God's foundation – into Adam's possession – the archangel will listen to Adam and follow him. By standing in the position of absolute obedience, the archangel enters the realm of Adam's love together with God's love, and thereby naturally enters heaven, following Adam. That is the principle.

People on earth did not fulfill this responsibility and caused a mess which they must clean up. We are to open the way for restoration through indemnity. Therefore, you must realize the tremendous value of witnessing. It is therefore a question of how many people you bring in for registration into the realm of eternal life. Just posting up the Unification Church signboard is useless. We must bear fruit.

On his way to Jerusalem, Jesus went up to a fig tree to see if it had any fruit. When he found it to be without fruit, he cursed it, and it withered and died. That's exactly how it will be. What use is it to keep up appearances? Thus, the number of Blessed Families you create will become your harvest.

You need to bring 120 people, even hundreds. Without being able to do that, it does not make sense for you to love your own sons and daughters. From the viewpoint of the Principle, we need 120 people. The number 120 represents the nations of the world at the time of Jesus. The 430 families are equivalent to all the surnames in one nation. The 430 families represent 4,300 years of Korean history. Through them, I opened the gate for the citizens represented by these surnames to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Although I have opened it, it does not mean they have actually entered.

This is not empty talk; it is logical. Do not kill time. Only when you give birth to sons and daughters and raise them up during your younger years can you leave to your descendants a foundation to be proud of. Only when your children become great people can you stand proud before history. Without such actual results, you might be accepted at the family or village level, but not at the national level. For that, you need actual results that can be passed on as a tradition.

That is why everyone desires to leave

something behind for the nation, the world, and heaven and earth. The same principle applies to you. Have the clear concept that your lifelong purpose is to establish your domain of ownership. Therefore, you cannot think of giving up on the way of God's will, even if you do not like it.

Why would I take on that responsibility even if it means I have to go to prison and suffer there alone? To save people suffering in such circumstances. People in suffering circumstances will follow if it can benefit them. By following, they are harvested. When I go to the spirit world, because all I have done will be welcomed as something public, I will go to the highest position of the heavenly kingdom.

If citizens are well educated, the nation prospers. The same principle applies to you. It is a question of how much you can reason with people, straighten out their attitudes, and leave behind the achievement of your ideals centering on the realm of life of the heavenly kingdom. If this is done, the world will be restored quickly. That is why you have to devotedly raise them.

It is the same with me. When I give sermons, I speak for five or six hours at a time. I do not do that because I like to. The gist of a sermon is simple and does not even require a fifteen minute talk. I speak that long because I try to make it easy for different types of people, for those who have come to hear, to understand the gist by explaining to them using many examples, and to have them participate within that sphere. The purpose is to sow as many seeds as possible in the spring season. If I sow many seeds, many plants will grow.

Where must you sow the seeds, then? It must be an unspoiled place. Where is that? Adolescents. Once you sow seeds in them, they will last a lifetime. They will not be uprooted.

When are people most sensitive? In elementary school. Peoples' senses dull as they advance through middle and high schools. Once they start going to university, it is like passing through a neighboring village, like an excursion activity. The most difficult time is during elementary school. Next is during middle and high school. As time goes by, their senses dull. We must sow the seeds of life accordingly.

If, while playing with children at Sunday school, you teach them children's songs, tell them stories and so on, such things will accumulate to become eternal assets for your future. Whenever you meet elderly people, testify to God's Word. Unification Church leaders are not doing these things well.

When on a bus, talk to ten people and ask them where they are going in order to get to know them. Arrange to see them again and when you do, introduce the Principle to them. You can witness to them as much as you like. There are enough materials. If you want to witness to people, it is better to ride on the bus or subway than to drive your own car. As you commute on the same route everyday, twelve months a year, you will get to know people by their faces. By greeting them, you are tapping into an interactive

network. Such paths are cleared, so why are you just wasting time?

More important than eating is harvesting the citizens of heaven, but you are not doing that well. It is our main occupation. It is our principal activity while we live on earth. Among the works you should do in your lifetime, there is nothing more important than that. Landing a job, getting promoted and making money will all be water under a bridge. Money will be useless in the other world; materials and knowledge are unnecessary there. Even if you are not taught, your mind knows ahead of time; you will know everything within a week.

Power is unnecessary in the other world. What is needed there is love-centered harmonizing power, love-centered influential power. Therefore, people lacking that love-centered influential power are intrinsically unable to harmonize with the original world which moves by the influence of love. If they should arrive there, they are repelled and end up in hell.

You say you have lived and worked for the Unification Church ever since you joined it, but you should consider in what position you have worked. Always ask yourselves in which direction you are headed and in which position you are located. If you do that prayerfully, God will be with you. You will know it the moment you close your eyes – even without praying. As you go somewhere to give a talk, the right words just flow out of your mouth. If you come across conscientious people, you are drawn to enter their houses.

Everything seeks relationship. Even flowers have the power of attraction to create relationships, whether as a subject or object partner. Even if you see someone for the first time, it does not mean that you cannot relate to that person. That is how a magnet is – its essence is eternally unchanging. By the same token, if you go to such a place, you feel joyful and are inspired to speak. Once you enter that state, your mouth opens even if you were not intending to speak.

When you go to that other world someday, what will you say to God who has been guiding the work of redemption and who took great pains to this day to find one Adam? From the Genesis up to the present day, God has been seeking His perfect son Adam. You all know the Principle. This is the weapon that can save countless people. Until now, God could not teach humankind and consequently had to guide the work of redemption amid ignorance. On earth, we work on God's behalf and are doing greater things than He. The Principle provides us with a path to enlighten and assemble a following of hundreds and thousands of Adams.

That is why we have to connect them to eternal life. The question of eternal life is a serious matter. When spring comes the young women go and look for herbs to pick. Likewise, just as you would go and seek out what you desire, you have to live your whole life in such a way. When your contacts show up while you are doing that, have the heart of wanting to convey the Principle to them all

night. Go all out to inspire them at your first meeting.

You should not be doing anything other than finding sons and daughters whom you can take with you to heaven. Even if you had hundreds of millions of dollars and lived richly, all that would pass away. Do it even to the point of investing all your materials, knowledge, and your very lives. Invest them all at one time, not separately, to create heavenly citizens. The value of your investment will be proportional to the amount of your input your input.

You so-called Unification Church leaders here: you may stiffen your shoulders proudly and fancy yourselves, but that is shameful. The question is how many lives you have saved through your own efforts.

The degree to which you will be praised eternally before heaven for your achievements depends on how many heavenly citizens you harvested. People have not had a spade to harvest them until now. They could not do it because they did not know, but you have an A-frame carrier on your back. You can bring in an explosive harvest once you start spreading God's words passionately. However, because you are wasting time even with that kind of real internal power, God wants to strike you with a thunderbolt.

It matters not whether it is midnight or dawn, whether night or day. When Heaven is ready to receive you, you cannot say to Him, "Oh, I just want to sleep!" In that position, you just run straight through.

We must provide education concerning the issue of eternal life. From now on, assume that responsibility. I cannot curse those who oppose the Unification Church. God wants them to connect with me and commit themselves, but if they drop out that is our church's responsibility and I must assume responsibility for that. This world came to oppose us because of Satan, but it is our responsibility to overcome those adverse circumstances quickly. If we do not, our situation will be all the more miserable from the resultant damage it will sustain.

It is the same as nursing a baby. If you give birth to a baby, you have to nurse it. That is why people come looking for you. When they do, never treat them coldly. I have also lived that way all my life. If people visit me even at midnight, unless they decide to leave, I will stay seated with them and never ask them to leave. They will not want to leave because they are looking for something. Then, I must share God's words with them. I will live my whole life that way. I will never be businesslike. The spirit world is always awake.

If you Unification Church members fight among yourselves and cause even one person to fall away, the damage would be great. That person could come to understand God's will and fulfill his responsibility before heaven; he could then go on to save thousands and myriads of people, and surprise you by surpassing you. So if you mismanage your people, everything will go wrong. If you constantly lower yourselves and strive to elevate everyone else, you will have no

problems. That is what humility means.

But if you err, you will go down. When entering the room where your wife and children are at night, be a responsible father and husband. If the husband does well, his wife will follow him to the other world. Of course, there is a process of training in order to enter the Father's house. It is fastest if they can go directly. The other side is an unforgiving world. We are now preparing to be in step with it.

Do this work even if you have to skip a meal. Do not say you will do it after you eat. If a charge of dynamite was about to explode, you would not be eating. It is a serious question of getting people to connect with the issue of eternal life. A light can burn only when an electrical current generated at a power plant is transmitted through various terminals and electrical circuit devices. Only with a connection will it stay on.

Therefore, love your spiritual sons and daughters more than your own children, and do more for your spiritual parents than for your natural parents. The parents who gave birth to you are parents from the satanic world, but your spiritual parents are parents from the heavenly world. Therefore, serve them more than you would your own mother. Furthermore, spiritual sons and daughters have the responsibility to nurture the children of the people who saved them and to help them get married. Such is God's will. They are to raise all those children.

Thus, unless people become linked to eternal life, everything is in vain. It is not over after they have heard God's Word. Keep encouraging them in order to bring them to the Blessing. They must receive it. If they do and start witnessing, a connection will be made naturally. If they can overcome persecution in the difficult circumstances of the satanic world, they are already on the path of life. When they receive the Blessing, your job is done.

Do not give egotistical sermons. Speak while shedding blood and sweat. Go through the pain of giving birth. Do that while shedding tears. If your eyes are not wet with tears, your sermon is contrived. (230-25, 1992.4.15)

2.8.3. Why we should have lots of children

There is not even one Unification Church member who does not know God. We believe in the spirit world. We began from love, separated from God, and will finally return to Him.

If a couple is truly one in heart, when they go to the spirit world, they can interchange positions anytime. We say love is one. If you look into a woman, there is a man inside. It is exactly the same with God's dual characteristics. Since internal character and external form arose as separate entities from God, in order to return to the Original Being, they must ascend the ladder of love. As the standard of creation originated from love, one must ascend this ladder to return. After all, our final destination is to be with God.

People do not give birth to babies in

the spirit world. It is a vertical, circular God-centered world not requiring the birth of babies. As he needed a horizontal base, God created human beings as His embodiment. It is an earthly field of reproduction from which all the citizens of the spirit world originate. From this providential perspective, we can understand why people engage in birth control. The evil lineage is not to be propagated anymore.

The heavenly citizens that Unification Church Blessed Families reproduce are their assets. Your own children are more valuable than spiritual children, who do not have a direct relationship to the Blessing. Your position in heaven will be determined by the number of children you leave behind. (205-97, 1990.7.7)

Perfection must be achieved on earth, not in the spirit world. It can be done based on true love on earth, not in the spirit world. This is why you need to have children. They become heavenly citizens, ideal citizens of the heavenly kingdom. So give birth to many sons and daughters. Originally, there were to be more than twelve directions, and that is why I desire more than twelve directions. (217-130, 1991.5.12)

Without sons and daughters, the Kingdom of Heaven would not flourish. For this reason Blessed Families should not practice birth control. People who starve to death still end up in the spirit world; if they die in the midst of love, they end up in heaven.

So, the satanic world is now promoting birth control, but it should not be practiced in the Unification Church. I underwent hardships for God's will, but did not die of starvation. Even if I went into a famine-stricken area, I could survive because I am trained to survive. When we sacrifice everything for the sake of absolute love, we can control God, the satanic world, and heavenly fortune. What do I mean by control? It means that God will follow us. God, this world, and heavenly fortune will follow us. (201-133, 1990.3.27)

Raise your children to become great people whom you can bequeath to posterity on earth. In the future, they will all go to the spirit world and become citizens of heaven. How many people will you offer as citizens of heaven? It was a hardship on earth but becomes a noble, glorious way in the world of eternity.

You go to great lengths to educate and feed your children on earth, but in the spirit world, food, clothing and living are no problem. You will wish you had as many children as possible. (218-319, 1991.8.22)

You will not be procreating in the spirit world. As God stands in the position of the vertical Parent, there is but one point. (221-204, 1991.10.24)

What is God doing? He is saving the world. The works that allowed people to enter a higher dimension in spirit world were performed on earth. What kind of place is the earth? It is the manufacturing plant for producing the citizens of

heaven – the vast unchanging Kingdom of Heaven.

Even if each of you had a hundred children, heaven is so vast that you could never overproduce. That world can accommodate any number of people. Do not practice birth control. Once you go to the spirit world, the question will be how many citizens of heaven you created and led there. Understand that leading many true sons and daughters to the Kingdom of Heaven establishes your rights and interests, as well as the level at which you will be honored in the heavenly world. (202-38, 1990.5.1)

2.9. Our attitude in the face of death

Jesus taught everything: "Whoever wants to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for me will find it." Where will you find such apparently groundless remarks in this world? Nowhere. Yet they are true.

Then, why do we die? To what end? To live. There is some purpose to live for. People live for different purposes. For what are you asked to "love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind"? To become God's son. It means to offer your head to love God – you have but one – but you must offer it to Him.

Where are we to go and die? In the highest position rather than the lowest. Thus, we should die for the Kingdom of Heaven. It is greater than any nation in this world. We must die in God's Kingdom, the only one in heaven and on earth. Where shall we die? That is the question. Even in dying, there is a way.

There is a proper position in which to die. Don't die in the ordinary Korean way. If you do, however many times you die, it won't count. Die in the highest position for the nation of God's heart, at the heart of the heavenly kingdom – the best place to die. Your death should inspire everyone in the universe to raise a flag and welcome you. (34-184, 1970.9.6)

Today, we are yearning for the day of the last resurrection, the day of hope. That time of hope which everyone is yearning for is one that all humankind can delight in, yet it does not come easily. That hope can only be owned by those who conquer death. Only those who fought for God against Satan will take possession of it. Only those who suffered persecution together with God for the sake of heaven will take possession of that hope.

As we contemplate such a time approaching us, we must have ardent hearts to overcome our living circumstances and even the fear of death. If such ardor does not emanate from within you, you cannot draw that one day of hope into the realm of your daily life and go on living.

Therefore, those who are said to be living a true lifestyle will ask themselves, what will be the scenario of my death? Do not wait until you are eighty and about to die to ask yourselves the question, "In what fashion am I going to celebrate my last day?" When reaching the place of death, Jesus said, "It is finished," and "Father, into your hands I commend

my spirit." Indeed, he is the only one who has been victorious throughout all the stages of his life.

You will meet with death one day. While looking back on your past at that moment, think about what kind of words you would wish to leave behind.

This path is one without even friends. It is the path without even beloved parents, siblings, a beloved spouse, or children. It is the path only you must go alone. It is the path you cannot revisit or return to; it is the path, once trodden, that you can never return to in all of eternity. With what kind of heart do you walk this path? At the moment you face death, if you should lack the hope with which you can overcome it, your end will come right then and there.

The many people who have upheld and established God's will were not the type to retreat before the path of death, but rather laughed scornfully at death, overcoming it valiantly. Such people have appeared and established the heavenly way.

All of you must embrace the hope with which you can overcome death when you are confronted by it. After you have traversed that path, you must be able to race joyfully to that original homeland for which you have longed with the hopeful thought of standing tall in front of Heaven. Only those who fervently desire God's ideal world can overcome death.

All the things of this world will pass away. Your beloved parents, spouses and everything that you love will all pass away, and you will eventually face death. Even so, only those possessed of the victorious hope that lets even death go past can stand before Heaven.

People living on earth today do not desire the path of suffering and sorrow. The passing of joyous occasions evokes nostalgia in them. Such is human nature.

This world we live in is mixed with sadness and joy. All the happiness we are experiencing will disappear with death and cannot remain beyond it.

Our heart seeks happiness, longs for better things, and yearns for the eternal world. If sorrow and joy disappear with death, then does our heart also finish with death? No. The fact that our hearts and minds move in that direction is proof that such a world actually exists.

People are spiritual beings and their lives are eternal. People who have loyally walked the way of death for heaven, embracing hope as they followed a path repulsive to many people, have done so because they felt something ordinary people could not feel and appreciated something ordinary people could not appreciate. It was for that reason that they could tread even the path of death.

Unless your longing becomes stronger than any adversity, hardship, sadness, or death that you may encounter in your actual life, you will become people who feel regretful before death and draw back from pain and sorrow. As Jesus surmounted the summit of death, entered the eternal world, and built the sphere of resurrection, we today are also destined to surmount the summit of death.

Then what type of people live with

heavenly hope? They are those who can joyfully surmount the summit of death that grieves humanity. Such people are the ones who cherish Heaven's hopes. So, do not become people who covet and grieve after all the things of this world before death. Become those who can stand before heaven and be proud of the value of their death. God seeks such sons and daughters of hope.

If there were people who felt Heaven's joy in such a position, God could not but love them. If there were a throng of people that cried out to Heaven from such a position, Heaven could not but answer that cry. (6-52, 1959.3.22)

"For whoever wants to save his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life for me and for the gospel will save it." What do those words mean? Those placed in the position to die for God's will must die.

Then what happens when we die? Before we die, we belong to ourselves, but after we die, we belong to God. That is because we inherited the fallen lineage. Thus, our lives cannot be freed from satanic bondage before we die, but we bond together with God after death.

Which is stronger: life or death? Is life stronger than death or is death stronger than life? Death is stronger than life in the satanic world. Therefore, after coming to know God's will, do not hate death when you are in the position of having to die. You have to die anyway in the satanic world. Unless you die, you cannot resurrect. Unless we pass through one age, we cannot welcome another.

What kind of death is the Bible referring to? It does not end the life that God has eternally, but that life which inherited the fallen lineage of the satanic world. Thus, those who seek to die for the Will shall live. These words sound paradoxical, but from what we understand about the Fall and restoration, restoration cannot be achieved unless that is done. This is the normal logic of restoration.

The biggest question then is whether we can offer our lives. When I started out on this path, I asked myself if I was resolved to lay down my life.

I was resolved to die. I also thought about how I would die as well as the last words I would utter. I did not think about how I could live.

Since God's providence revolved around Korea, I sought the position of death. Where was that? It was the place to confront the enemy, that is to say, the place where the enemy was to be found. I went out in search of the enemy headquarters. Because the foundation of the Will based upon Korean Christianity fell into satanic hands, I went to North Korea, which was Satan's den, to recover it.

Because I had to fight the worldwide Communist Party from that time on, I went to North Korea. I entered the nation of the implacable foe, fully prepared to be chained in irons and imprisoned. Despite the atrocious ordeals that were imposed upon me, I never surrendered. I never lost God's dignity even at the point of extreme starvation. No matter how constricted my living conditions were, I never violated heavenly law.

In spite of my confinement, I was able to restore everything within those limited circumstances, and sought after the motivation for a new start and a new meaning of life before God. I started out doing that. Even though I was made to perform all manner of heavy labor, I maintained the conviction that I would never break, and that I would never die even if all others did.

The Unification Church did not start from the place of seeking life but that of seeking death. Yet were you resolved to die after you came to know the purpose of the Unification Church? When Colonel Heo, the head of special operations under the Freedom Party, and the government's chief suspect in the murder of Kim Chang-ryong, was executed, he was asked if he felt any remorse for having planned and ordered the murder. He said he felt no remorse and died like a man. When such assassinations or shootings occur, you should compare those executed with yourselves, and ask yourselves how you would die in comparison.

You might be driven by the conspiracies of your enemies to die as a great traitor, or you might die as a result of your comrades, friends, or loved ones, or others, plotting to harm you, but when you die, do so with the heart of benefiting the world. Die without enemies. If you are to die anyway, die after planting something, and without making any enemies. Be resolved to die while loving the enemy as a friend rather than otherwise. Jesus' prayer on the cross for his enemies was great in this way. (34-45, 1970.8.29)

2.10. When entering the spirit world

2.10.1. At the time of impending death

Success or failure in life is not decided over decades, but in a moment. Compared to a human lifespan, birth occurs in but a brief moment. Of course, we spent ten months in our mother's womb leading up to our birth, but that was a period of preparing for that one moment of birth. Ultimately, no matter how good the preparations may have been during those ten months, if the baby does not pass through the decisive moment successfully, it meets a tragic fate.

Those ten months of constant nurturing and safeguarding are designed for celebrating the moment of birth. In other words, that period serves the purpose of bringing about that moment of birth. Notwithstanding the greatness of the gestation period, an error at the moment of delivery can cause tragic consequences. (31-184, 1970.5.31)

A person who regrets his past at the point of facing that final, fateful moment on earth will see all the details of his life flash across his mind as images. No one needs to explain to him what kind of person he is, he will know by himself. The circumstances he has been associated with through the life he inherited from his ancestors, the situation he leaves behind, and everything from his past will appear as images in his mind at the last moment of his life.

A person who can say, "It was true.

I have left behind something more precious than my life," would have lived a valuable life, no matter how brief. Yet there are people who say to themselves, "My whole life course from birth to death was merely a period I spent as a passerby." If such people reflect on all their past situations, they will shake their heads, feeling that they do not want to remember the past, and they will die miserable people. Opposite them, are those people whose faces fill with more and more joy as they more and more reflect on their past; their problems are absorbed into the ideal and even the fear of death will be celebrated as a moment of comfort.

Viewing life in this way, we can see that if one had left something behind and if the moment for that person to reflect on their past is not a moment of fear, then that person's past and reality will manifest as things not dead. A person with such a past is surely destined to be someone that all the people of the nation can follow, one who bequeaths a legacy that all humanity is destined to inherit.

What kind of situation creates that opportunity? When a nation is faced with intractable problems at a time of misery and cruelty, and a person takes responsibility for solving those problems at the risk of his or her life, that moment becomes the unforgettable moment in a life story.

The experience of saving your brother, relatives, or other people at the risk of your life, rather than the experience of risking your life for your own sake during your life course, and the occasion of having faced a moment in which you had to save them, can appear as an image in your mind at the last fateful moment. The times of happiness centered on you and a blessed time of being welcomed and glorified by many people, will have an effect on that moment.

With regard to the question of whether we were good, became true, and could stand alone before God, truth and goodness do not begin from ourselves or end in ourselves. Only when they begin in us and bring results in others, or they begin in others and bring results in us, can goodness come about. According to the Principle, all beings in the universe are to enter into reciprocal relationships.

If your life up to now has been a life of giving, there should be no fear on the path of death. If you give everything for others, sacrifice for others, shed tears for others while leading a life close to the truth, invest your life for others, find your desires in others, and concentrate all the life force flowing from your pulse and invest it for others, your past will become a shining past.

When you long for such a past and think about the nation, you will come to the conclusion that the nation of hope must also be such a nation. When you come to yearn for such a past, you will sacrifice for others and you will be able to decide how the original goodness you hope for should be like. If you go before God saying "Since I have fought for goodness in the past, then naturally this will bear fruit in the future." This content becomes the foundation for your eternal life.

The path of saints and sages and the path of ordinary people are different. The saints and the sages are those who sought to live for history, the world, and the future. Ordinary people, however, are those who sought to live for themselves and to make the world serve them. (31-308, 1970.6.7)

2.10.2. When entering the spirit world

We all live in a similar way after we are born. As life progresses do we gradually become weaker or stronger?

Even if you came to know who you are and made a resolution, that resolve gradually weakens after ten, twenty, and thirty years. As you age through your fifties and sixties and into your seventies and eighties it becomes a problem. Phenomena in the world of dynamics demonstrate the principle that all motion tends to gradually diminish; any action caused by a force subsequently decays.

Using electricity as an example, the potential energy of any power source diminishes as it powers a motor or produces work. Exhaustion inevitably occurs. Looking at it this way, we cannot stand still all our lives. We must continue moving throughout our life – whether we like it or not. Even when we move, is it in the right or wrong way? There are many ways to move.

Then, in which direction should people go or roll? We roll without even realizing it. If we live like a rolling stone that might smash into a rock or go down the drain, how dangerous that is! How unfortunate! How insecure! It is a problem. Once you enter the spirit world, you can no longer relate to all the things we now measure within the confines of space and time. That world transcends time and space. (141-269, 1986.3.2)

What happens when we enter the spirit world? You have your own spiritual level. Everyone has a certain spiritual level, within certain limits such as one degree. Since that is the case, even those who were blessed separate when they first enter the other world. Why? Because each person's spiritual level is different. (194-61, 1989.10.15)

What will you become in the heavenly kingdom? An ambassador or a servant to run errands at the embassy? Be an ambassador. That is not easy. In a life-threatening situation, the ambassador is the first to die.

We know of the existence of the spirit world. It is more certain than this world. What kind of a world is it? It is one in which everything is possible as long as it is acceptable in God's plan. (107-55, 1980.1.20)

Do you have a gift to bring along when you go to heaven? When you go to the spirit world, religious martyrs will line up in front of you. Can you unwrap the bundle you brought with you in front of them? What suffering have you and the Unification Church undergone? How can you say you live for the nation and the world without having withstood such hardships? I have suffered, but I do

not think of it as suffering. Naturally, we still have a long way to go.

Upon your arrival in the spirit world, you have to be able to unwrap your bundle and say, "Here is the gift I prepared all my life; please receive it." If women must bring a dowry when moving in with their in-laws, how can you go to heaven empty-handed? (32-71, 1970.6.21)

If you are not independent, you cannot enter the spirit world. It has its own world, nations, tribes, families, and individuals. Unless you have the independence that enables you to say that you are an absolutely necessary individual there, you cannot enter heaven. Be so independent that you can say you are absolutely necessary to your family and tribe. Only when you have such independence there can you enter heaven. (19-43, 1967.12.24)

In the spirit world, the earth seems like a speck of dust. You would not know how immense the spirit world is. It is an infinite world that transcends time and space. You will only have to call out, "Whoever lived on earth with such and such a heart at such and such a time show yourself!" and that person will appear in the twinkling of an eye. It is a world where intuitive sensations become real.

It will not be a problem to host a banquet for a million people at once. You would just have to say, "I want to share with everyone this joy of ideal love by having a banquet in which the women will be dressed in such and such a way and the men will wear such and such clothes and I'd like it to happen now!" No sooner said than done, meals and fruit will appear instantaneously according to your wishes. If everyone has eaten their fill, what will you do with the leftovers?

There are no kitchens there. You don't need to worry about anything. There are no food-processing plants or auto-manufacturing plants or anything like that. There are all kinds of flowers. You can create as many houses as you want corresponding to the level of your heart of love. (224-105, 1991.11.23)

When ordinary people think about their past, the memories are dark, but when saints think about their past, they are bright. What is that brightness? It is not for them but something that can draw out the nation of hope. For that reason, if there is the heavenly kingdom of hope, that kingdom has to be started by them. That is heaven.

As you chart your path through the realm of the Fall with its grim surroundings, you will be anticipating ups and downs, plotting your life course according to your wishes, saying to yourself that you will go this way one year and that way next year, or this way for ten years and that way for the next ten years. If you experience ups and downs centered on yourselves, when you come to meet your final destiny, all your records of sacrificing others for yourselves will tie you down. (31-308, 1970.6.7)

Have you ever once thought you'll

keep going this way even when you're seventy or eighty or even in your dying moments? Even on your deathbed, you must be able to present proof, saying, "I have illumined the past in this way and done these things in the present. I would do those things in the future, but I am dying. So, please take care of them on my behalf." It must not be just lip service. It should be the case that the people around your death bed cling to you, crying out, "Don't go! Don't go!" (73-114, 1974.8.16)

2.10.3. Documents required for entry procedures into the spirit world

Where do you first get a certificate that enables you to say, "I have become like this. I have done these things. Here is my certificate of victory"? You cannot issue such a certificate yourself. Then who issues it? Satan first. God cannot. You have to obtain the certificate of victory from Satan.

Jesus knew that very well, and that is why, when he started his three-year public ministry, he summoned Satan and fought him for forty days to have him issue the certificate. There were the three temptations. After Jesus gained victory over them, Satan declared: "You are victorious on the national level, so I have no choice but to issue the certificate; otherwise, I would have to give up all my territory to heaven's side immediately."

Thus, you must first obtain a certificate from Satan; then receive another one from Jesus. Finally, you have to receive one more from God. You need these three certificates. (15-121, 1965.10.3)

2.11. Things you will know clearly only after you die

If you get connected with the spirit world through prayer, you will come to know that in the spirit world, the spirits are working very hard to bring their descendants closer to heaven. Yet here, people speak ill of their ancestors and just want to live selfishly.

That is something you will know only after you die. If you wonder whether my words are true, die and find out. If you could die and come back to life, that would be good, but once you die, that is the end. So it is said that when Rev. Moon of the Unification Church intimidates people, he is doing such a fine job of intimidating people; no one can do it the way he can. Yet watch what happens after you die. I am not saying all this because I have nothing else to talk about. (22-337, 1969.5.11)

Where do you discover God's supreme love? Not in a palace. The way to occupy the highest love of God is found at the bottom of hell where you are bleeding close to the point of collapse and about to die. When I was in prison under the communists, the spirit world testified to me without my saying even one word. That is why I had disciples who were resolved to do anything for me at the risk of their lives. Given that kind of support, had I been a villain, I would have had many ways to escape from prison. God

works with us in such situations. (91-175, 1977.2.6)

2.12. Altruism gets you closer to God

The spirit world consists of three stages. Those who lived more for others will go to a higher level in the spirit world. For those who lived for themselves, the opposite world will unfold. There are also three stages there. Those already there will object, saying: "Huh! We don't want people like you!" Everyone rejects egoists and welcomes altruists.

Among those who go to the spirit world after living on earth, the altruists take the top places. This is especially so for those who apply themselves in, say, forty countries and live for others with the heart that they would have toward their mother and family, and with the heart of a saint to save the people of the world from evil.

That is why I think this way: "As a man, I am the commander-in-chief of the filial sons, patriots and saints of the historical eras. Although everyone else who had the name of God's son failed, I was born as a victorious son." Only one thing will enable you to say that. What is it? It is simple: absolute altruism. Only those who give and forget, who do things for others and forget, can digest that world.

Know clearly whether you belong to the group that will go to heaven or the one that will go to hell. These words are not ones I have just thought up. They come from someone who knows the spirit world well.

No one can avoid death. You cannot avoid death. Egoists go to hell, and altruists go to heaven. These two worlds become separated at death. (203-99, 1990.6.17)

What will happen from now on? People will offer their properties to heaven. Live for others – for the higher cause and for the greater good. Live for the world and for God, and to liberate humankind. Make people change to the new lineage. Because the lineage got entangled, God has been powerless until now. As we have now entered the era of conversion, you need to know that the free heaven and earth are approaching and therefore sow seeds of goodness. Know clearly how you should act. From now on, be a throng possessing eternal life that can be linked to the clan of the Messiah, the citizens of heaven and the eternal Kingdom of Heaven. (203-185, 1990.6.24)

What will be the basis of competition in the future? Living for the sake of others. Why? Those who live for others go to a higher position in heaven. By serving such people and riding on their coattails one can make great leaps forward. You can be launched from there, just like the satellites that are launched from Cape Kennedy. This is because living for the sake of an individual is comparable to when God created His object partners; you, too, will stand as the object of that individual. For that purpose, we follow someone and live for others.

You serve me to make use of me.

Earning my love is your launching pad toward occupying God. Satellites symbolize how today's believers can take off and cross infinite distances to get to heaven.

Eventually, human beings are destined to go to the original homeland. They may have their hometown in this world, but when they return to the original homeland – the eternal homeland – those who have nothing to show for their efforts will be miserable. You know how devastating not being able to join a group can be. (213-193, 1991.1.20)

Until now, there was no family, but from now on, the organization of families will begin. Everyone was separated until now. Why? Everyone was separated because their cultural and emotional backgrounds and customs were all different, so a family is the place where we create new customs and a new culture and cast them as habits. Without the family, the society could not exist. A national society could not exist and thus neither the nation nor the world could exist.

For this reason religions now constitute the mainstream. People may reside in the Buddhist realm or Christian realm. Where people from different countries cannot peacefully co-exist, people of the same religious realm can. Religious realms all desire one world and believe in one God. Thus, they can stay together. All religions belong to God's realm. Nations do not.

From the Unification Church, individuals, families, tribal messiahs, national messiahs and world messiahs will come forth. The path the individual takes leads to the path the family takes, and the path the family takes leads to the path the tribe takes. Then what kind of world is the spirit world? It is a place where people live altruistically based on true love – not selfishly, but for the greater good. Even on earth, those who live 100 percent for others say, "Step on me and go on!" However big America may be, if there is someone who lives for the people more than the president, everyone will welcome him even if he steps on the president and goes on. But if someone lives only for his own benefit, everyone becomes an enemy.

It is the same as in the spirit world. If someone lives for a greater cause, he can pass naturally. If something serves a greater cause, it can pass naturally. So, if someone lives for the world, he does not have to live for America alone. America is included in the world. It is the same for Korea. All nations are included.

Then, what would underlie the direction that families would take naturally, that everyone can welcome, in going their way? It can only be the way of love to live for others.

These two things cannot be blocked even in the satanic world on earth. Even the satanic world has to absolutely accommodate them. Even the most wicked parents and evil people welcome someone who tries to give them something with true love. (215-174, 1991.2.17)

2.13. Judgment

Have you ever thought that an order to appear before the court of judgment in the spirit world would come to you? Someday, that order will be given.

To administer and manage that court, there must be a judge, a prosecutor, and a defense attorney. Then who will they be? The judge is God, the prosecutor is Satan, and the defense attorney is Jesus. (17-176, 1966.12.18)

Section 3. To go to a Higher Realm in the Spirit World

3.1. The standard for religious people is the spirit world

What is the difference between those who are religious and those who are not? Those who are religious believe in setting the standards of the spirit world throughout their entire lives. Religion starts from the determination to meet and then live with God.

The contents of the scriptures the founders of all religions left behind did not dwell in the details of human life. They taught about things with which we can relate to the contents of the eternal, transcendent world based on the realm of God's existence. (187-286, 1989.2.12)

3.2. The determination of proprietary rights in the spirit world

Long ago, we experienced many days when we survived trembling in a cold room without even a meal of barley. We were actually closer to God in those days and we worried about the nation and the world. As the foundation expanded and became larger, we started to care more about how others would like us.

No matter how much knowledge, power or money one might have, these things will all be washed away. When people die, they leave everything behind. What you should carry with you is your efforts to expand God's love to the world. The record of loving humankind and God remains to the end and becomes the standard to decide proprietary rights in the other world. (127-38, 1983.5.1)

In the path of restoration, there is no discount. When we came to this world, each of us came alone, but we cannot go alone. We have to take many people with us. (14-105, 1964.6.20)

You should know that the number of people you witnessed to will decide your proprietary rights in the spirit world when you arrive there. You do not go there wearing a sign indicating you were a leader. (125-16, 1983.3.1)

3.3. Love people

In the spirit world, if you do not have God's love you cannot eat – you are not qualified to eat. Hell is the place where people can only look at the food but cannot eat it, and where they have knowledge but cannot act upon it. Those who established the central value that can unite the spiritual and physical worlds centering

on God's love, and who experienced the life of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth with mind and body united centering on God's love, can own the eternal, ideal world and the heavenly kingdom. Others will be excluded. (91-173, 1977.2.6)

What can we be proud of when we go to the spirit world? When I go to the spirit world and if God asks me, "What did you do on the earth?" I would not boast with the reply, "I spent much money." My pride would be based on how much I lived longing for and loving people. (187-310, 1989.2.12)

3.4. Love God even more

Nothing else is necessary in the other world: love God more than you love the world, your nation, your spouse and your children. That is the Principle.

When you go to the spirit world, do you earn money? Do you sleep for hundreds of millions of years? Neither of these. You can eat food anytime according to your standard. (126-142, 1983.4.12)

3.5. Establish the family foundation

Why must you have sons and daughters? There surely has to be love. God has to exist, man and woman have to exist, and husband and wife have to exist. Next, the blood has to be mixed. The descendants are born with God's blood and love blood, vertical blood and horizontal blood, mixed together. Therefore, unless you have descendants, you cannot have a place to play and rest in the other world.

If husband and wife – just the two of them – live face to face till they turn eighty or ninety, will they be happy? They cannot live an interesting life. There has to be a daughter-in-law and grandchildren. For grandfathers and grandmothers, there is no greater happiness than holding their grandchildren.

Those who could not have grandchildren cannot achieve harmony with heaven and earth and keep in step with north, south, east and west in the spirit world. (197-32, 1990.1.7)

Therefore, you have no latitude to think, "Oh, It is tough!" after work, or "Oh, It is tough! I couldn't sleep and I'm tired." Then the spirit world will open up. You will see it. If you open your eyes and see it and eat meals spiritually, you will not get hungry even if you do not eat all day. That kind of thing will happen. Your body will feel light, and you will not get tired even if you run around all day. After experiencing these things, this world becomes dull. This world is necessary to give birth to children horizontally, but actually you do not need to be in it. Since you have to bring your family to the other world, you have no choice but to stay this way. (91-175, 1977.2.6)

3.6. Live centered on the tradition of the realm of the heart

Is religion necessary in the spirit world? It is not. In the spirit world, Presbyterianism and Roman Catholicism are unnecessary. You go into the realm

of living with God, so religion is unnecessary.

Then, what is necessary? Something precious is needed but what is it? The most precious thing is to be able to receive God's love.

Today, we talk about the realm of heart in the Unification Church. Where is the base of the realm of heart? The world of heart is where true parental love, true conjugal love and true fraternal love centered on God's love can be universally expanded.

Husband and wife living for the sake of one another is not primary in the original world. It is the conjugal love centered on heaven and earth and the cosmos that is primary. Therefore, we value the cosmos more. You may carry on conjugal love, but you must practice conjugal love centered on the world.

Therefore, the most important question relates to where we build and find the foundation of love that meets the standard in that world. For that reason, the Unification Church is working to build that foundation in this world.

Different from numerous religions and numerous things that are said to be precious in this world, the Unification Church is the only place which has started to build this foundation. What do we teach? We teach people how to become successful candidates in the world of heart.

When you go to the other world, you will meet many people there who loved their race, many couples, patriots, loyal subjects, virtuous women and saints. But there is no one there who lived centered on the tradition of God's original realm of heart. (126-139, 1983.4.12)

3.7. The pass with which to enter the spirit world

From now on, when you start something, do so centering on God. This is a fundamental principle.

When you go to the spirit world, depending on how much you are in accord with or have assimilated that principle, you will be connected with all the realms, from hell through the middle realm and paradise to heaven.

Just because someone is a world-famous scholar, can he go to heaven when he enters the spirit world? No, he cannot. That is why the religious world teaches people to deny everything and go. You have to give up everything and go. That is established logic. Then what is the most precious thing? What matters is how much you suffer for heaven and how many tears you shed for the world. That is the ticket for passing through to the other world.

If you look at this from God's position, is He a God of joy? Religious people who think that God is joyful have neither brains nor common sense. The one who is the most sorrowful is God. The tears God has shed and the suffering He has endured until now were not for Him. God is still shedding tears for this universe that He created, and for fallen humankind. Why is that? Because He is a God of heart. (97-171, 1978.3.15)

CHAPTER THREE

The Spirit World

Section 1. The Spirit World Can Be Experienced with the Physical Body

1.1. The spirit world and the present time

What stage have we reached now? The time has come to link the spiritual and physical worlds on the global stage. Such unification does not take place quietly, but rather both heaven and earth are shaken. The world tried to stop God from achieving it in a bitter struggle, but He won. It was accomplished at the Washington Monument Rally. Starting from 1976, the satanic world can no longer accuse God. Satan can no longer accuse God directly. He might still accuse our ancestors in the spirit world, but not God.

In addition, all the spirits in the spirit world will be mobilized to drive away the satanic forces from the earth. In this way, a foundation is formed for goodness to exceed the works that Satan has done until now. The spirit world will guide people to believe in the Unification Church. Jesus, other great religious leaders, and their own ancestors will appear to them and push them by spiritually chastising and punishing them if they do not.

The spirit world will bring together everything that was divided until now and initiate a movement that binds together all the divisions of the world today through heart; a movement that brings together the world representatives based on a standard that transcends racial differences to unite their hearts. Therefore, when the spirit world is united and makes contact with the physical world, a light will shine forth and a worldwide movement will begin on a large scale.

Until now East and West have had different spirit worlds. How was it possible to unite them? Through love. I brought together people from East and West into races and tribes centered on God's love through the joint weddings of the Unification Church.

I have laid the groundwork on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. Heaven and the spirit world are completely depending on us. (91-160, 1977.2.6)

1.2. The future age

Among the new members who recently joined the Unification Church, there are many who came because they had spiritually met me and were guided

by me. Such people may become kings or presidents in the foreseeable future – we don't know when and how. There are so many people like them throughout the world. The number of people who talk to themselves while walking will be constantly increasing in countries like the United States. The entire spirit world will swoop down upon the earth. Then, who will take supreme command? It is my responsibility. (67-77, 1973.5.20)

The time will come when you can never appear before me beating around the bush. When it does, I will completely open up the gate of the spirit world. I will be waiting in front of the gate when such a person comes and I will throw him out, asking, "Why have you come here?"

Now we will enter the era when we can manage the world professionally. What types of people are living in the world now? They are like those who lived at the time of Jesus. The era of restoration does not permit me to elaborate on this in detail yet and therefore I will not.

There are many people in the world that will perform all kinds of things in my place, though God is not forcing them to do so. Some fly in the air while others walk on water. There are many people who cross infinite distances instantaneously. There will be a time for me to call them from the Himalayas and the world of Tao. Since things are happening that way, have you wondered whether the world is going to be unified or not? God's authority will spread out and anything unable to respond to the ideal of love in the history of re-creation will come to naught. Then we will enter a new world.

This is my worldview of an extrasensory era hereafter and only love can bring it into reality. Once you love something in the extrasensory world, you will simply try to hold onto it. You would try to go beyond your neural limitations. Therefore, we are entering a global era when that can be welcomed on a level only by God's love.

I came to know these things in my prayer. There is something you do not know. I may appear to be unaware of everything because I do not explain much to you, but in fact I know everything.

Now is an era when we are to completely dominate the spirit world while being in our physical bodies. Since I know everything about the spirit world and possess the truth and my own body, both Satan and the angelic world must completely surrender to me. Spiritually enlightened Buddhists and Christians, therefore, must surrender to me as well.

When clairvoyants are willing to die at my command, then we accomplish the substantial realm of perfection and open the gates to the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. When such a world is created, will you have anything more to do? You will be surprised when I reveal my thoughts. A time will come when people will wonder "How did that happen? Why did I do that?" This is neither a joke nor a threat. That time will come. Such things will happen among the Unification Church members. (60-194, 1972.8.17)

1.3. Spiritual experiences are also necessary

You go about praying tearfully, "I cannot go back with this face. I cannot go back as I am. I cannot go back even if I may die. It would be more miserable than death." If you have many spiritual experiences during your prayer, then you will be resurrected. When you go forth with that heart before you even think, God will surely help you. You should feel His heart in everything you say and teach. His heart must come before your words, not behind. Therefore you must always be humble.

That is why you must go to the back without a word. When you do so, you will feel God's heart in front of you. Why is that? It will pull you forward all the time. As long as you are in such a position, you can educate a crowd no matter how many people there are.

There, something unknown will teach you everything, but still, since it is your voice, you hear what you are saying, yet you are mystified by the sounds you make. When you reach that state, any movement you make or any facial expression during your speech would feel normal and in tune with your spoken words. Nothing would be strange to you. Only if you work experiencing such things, will the movements of life will take place. (96-167, 1978.1.3)

To be experiencing the spirit world means to be communicating with the world of the fourth dimension. When doing that, you can connect with, communicate with or counsel with sages and patriots who lived thousands of years ago. In other words, you can experience and feel them directly within the sphere of time in your actual life today. (4-223, 1958.5.4)

1.4. The course of spiritual experience

Although we may be in a position to worship God who is the center of our faith, our position is unclear. Then where should we start looking for that position?

Although our subject partner is established, we cannot feel it. We cannot conclusively distinguish such a spiritual thing as clearly as we perceive things with our five physical senses. When we consider from where we should begin approaching this problem, we understand that we cannot start by looking into the subject partner. We could not possibly start by looking into God Himself. We should, to that end, begin looking into ourselves first. Each individual has a mind and body. Although we have both mind and body we cannot, however, begin to seek within ourselves for this position centering on our body. Only by centering on the mind should the examination be carried out.

When we observe fallen people today, whether a thousand or even ten thousand, do we see that their minds are the same? Although the root may be the same, the minds differ depending on the nature of their environments. Not all are the same. Why? Our faces are different,

our habits are different, and the emotions we feel are different. In the same way, our horizontal line and the perpendicular line with which we can form an angle is different. We must have the angle set correctly.

Then how should this be done? With heaven as the subject partner, we should stand as the object partner before that subject. God, the subject partner, has surely given humankind the foundation to respond to Him as His object partner. Therefore, contained within that foundation of the horizontal mind there must be a standard for the mind to be perpendicularly oriented in a direction toward the vertical. That direction surely exists.

When you look at a horizontal line, it looks like a plane but when it stands perpendicular, the standard for that perpendicular line will be different. How do you adjust to the zero point? If you go this way, there will surely be a counteraction. Therefore, you have to adjust to that zero point. In a power plant there are many different types of meters. Each meter has something similar to the zero point from which direction, power and quantity are measured. There has to be such a zero point standard.

What kind of standard is that? It is something that exists and yet does not, or something that does not exist and yet does. There is such a place. Those who practice Zen meditation use the term ecstasy to refer to a state of mind similar to that. You should be able to approach a spiritual level of that kind. Once you reach that standard, you will find something that would surely enable your horizontal standard to respond.

There is a gate in your mind and it is called the mind's gate. It does not open in just one direction. Since your mind rotates, the gate moves as well. Without going through such a gate, you as a minus cannot establish a relationship with the plus. Everyone has that kind of mind's gate. When you pray, you get a different feeling depending on the time of your prayer. Prayer at one o'clock is different from prayer at three o'clock. You will understand this when you experience it. If you pray in a deep and mysterious state, you will know that your prayer will be different depending on when you pray. It will feel different. What you feel in the morning, at noon, in the early evening, and at night are all different.

Likewise, the level of our feeling within our state of mind differs in the same way our physical senses respond differently to the changes of the four seasons. That is how it is in the realm of our mind. So you should know the best time to pray. That time will be when the degree of your response to God is greatest. As you continue to delve into that sphere, you will find the gate. When the gate of God and the gate of your mind become perfectly one and revolve around a certain standard, you will find the path to fully experience what God is feeling.

What should you do to reach this state? You need to cultivate your mind.

Some religions have expanded in step with God's providence and others in step

with Satan. Since these religions are all mixed up, it is extremely difficult to differentiate the good and bad. The same is true within the realm of our mind. There are good minds and at the same time evil minds. Your mind may think, "Yes, I am good," but that thought itself is not good. Our minds were formed as a result of the Fall. Consequently, there are some whose minds are influenced by evil and the evil realm of Satan, and others by goodness. There are all types of minds.

Then what is of utmost importance? The way you set the gate to your mind is the most important matter in your life of faith. Therefore, in your life of faith, always be alert to those times when the gate of your mind opens and how to tune it to the gate of God's mind. Always be prepared for this. You always need to have a mind-set in your daily life of seeking and adjusting your mind to God at any given time.

Therefore, be constantly aware of the depth of your mind and try to open the gate to your mind. Then try to adjust it to the place where the gate of heaven is located. This is the most precious thing to do in your life of faith. As you gradually come to stand in that object position, what happens? You will experience a new three-dimensional feeling that you never felt before. You will somehow come to experience that unknown feeling.

In the past, you may have experienced only a wintry sensation, but you will start experiencing the sensations of not only autumn but also summer and spring as well. Why? The universe is rotating and so is our mind. Just as the rotation of the planet causes the four seasons, the realm of mind-in-motion naturally allows us to feel the changing degrees of sensitivity.

There are four seasons in a year. A day, however, is a year in miniature. There are also four seasons in a day. The morning corresponds to spring, the noon to summer, the early evening to fall, and the night to winter. In this way, there are four forms of seasons in a day. There are also four seasons in the morning which corresponds to spring. You can have springtime, summery, autumnal and wintry feelings even during just the morning. Just as large units are divided into sub-units on a large scale, small units are also divided into sub-units on a smaller scale.

Our mind is like that. In other words, the feelings your mind experiences are not always fixed. According to the seasons, it would be good to know that you correspond to spring, but you are unaware that you correspond to winter. You should, therefore, know how to discern what the present time corresponds to by having a variety of experiences and through an abundant life of prayer.

Once you are in such a state, what kinds of phenomena happen? In Korean there is the word *ahmshi* (a hint). By an example you can understand its meaning: a person casually walking along happens to see a bird fly off from the wall of a beautiful house; even after the bird has flown away, the observation of the event implicitly teaches a lesson. Such phenomena will occur. Such phenomena

will start taking place in your actual daily life. The number of these suggestive conditions will increase. You will derive insight into something as you happen to overhear someone talking. Such experiences will increase gradually.

Once past that stage, what kinds of phenomena take place? You will start receiving revelations in your dreams, but I am not talking about the ones during deep sleep. Saint Paul experienced the third heaven while half awake. Do not let such phenomena pass you by inadvertently. Compile and analyze the data scientifically to find out what they are trying to connect you to. The result will surely come out. You will gradually experience that the revelations you had in your dream – which you can hardly forget – will turn out true 100 percent in reality. You will have such experiences.

People or things you connect with in the half-awake stage of your dream are going to appear in reality. You may think you experienced having sung a song with someone in a dream, but in reality you were not dreaming, you were actually singing that song with someone at your side. Such phenomena will happen. What this means is that your mind has entered a realm in which it resonates with the spirit realm like a tuning fork. You should regard such things as very precious.

Then, what will happen next? As God exists, where will He appear? God will appear not in the air but through your mind. Why have not you been able to experience that? Because your mind is not yet firmly established in its own existence and because you have become people who are being dragged around by your body. Once your mind is firmly established within its existence and forms a higher dimension of character whereby you can declare it to be another subject entity, the situation will surely be different.

When you reach a higher level through prayer, you will start talking with your mind. A state of resonance will occur. It will be on a higher level, and you will physically hear what you are saying in your mind. You will advance to that kind of state. During the first stage a hint or suggestion in your daily life will be given. Therefore, believers must collect the vast amount of such facts.

When coming into contact with people, do not treat them offhandedly. Always wonder if they can teach you something. Always be hungry in heart. Have a seeking heart that expects to receive something from those people. After all, what is the self? You are always either a subject or an object partner in a relationship. It means you are in a fixed position either as a subject or an object partner. Therefore, when a being appears who can become your subject or object partner, you will know it immediately. If you have people to witness to, you will easily know what kind of people they are. Your mind would go to them out of joy, by way of thought waves. Every mind has its own wavelength. A butcher smells of meat and a dealer in fabrics smells of cloth. Just as your body has its own smell, your mind has its own unique smell. A form of sensing the smell of the mind

will take place.

Our body has something similar to the sense of touch that makes contact with everything. Your mind emits something like invisible electronic waves to look for its own object. Therefore, believers must think that everything is in a reciprocal relationship with them. Why is that necessary? Because we have lost all kinds of relationships due to the Fall. The Fall severed our ties with nature, with the original human being, and with God. In order to reconnect the world of the severed relationships you must always endeavor to get yourself connected. Those relationships can be pioneered only when you take such action. Without such an attitude, you will never succeed in pioneering in a relationship.

All of you must have the heart that is seeking something. After praying in the morning you should be able to sense that something good will happen that day. Do not think that something good will happen on its own course, but actively start looking for whatever it is. This type of attitude is what you should have in leading a life of faith. Therefore, feelings, experiences and putting them into action will bring life to you. All this occurs during the half-awake state.

If your spiritual level goes higher, what will happen? You will start receiving revelations and directions. You have to analyze revelations. Directions are given directly to you by someone, but it is different with revelations – which is why they lead to problems. You must always interpret revelations. Some revelations come verbally and others visually. You could have a vision of a couple of deer drinking water from a spring and then glancing at a mountain in the distance on a nice spring day. Such a vision symbolizes boundless hope and happiness. All such phenomena will take place.

Such things are not accidental. Heaven is doing this to help you to cultivate the field of your mind. Why does it have to be so? The field of your mind is not flat, like a sheet of glass – it is uneven. It is in the form of a flat surface but the shape itself is uneven. So when a heavenly ray hits the uneven plane of your mind, it will be reflected towards a direction opposite to the incoming ray just like the refraction of light. Visions, therefore, are all different. God works in such a way to enlighten each part of your mind.

After the stage of revelations, you enter the stage where you have experiences such as those found in the Book of Revelation. In this stage you enter the spirit world and have various experiences all day long; you get connected to a far-off world. You can reach the limits of a state where you feel God in your daily life. Unless your faith is based on such experiences, you cannot apply the resultant realm of God's great will to the field or sphere of your daily life. Therefore, believers without such experiences cannot be trusted. Faith based on such experiences is important. For this reason, you must make an effort to enlighten yourselves.

While our members are praying, spiritual phenomena are taking place.

Such things called spiritual phenomena do exist. The spiritual forces enter our bodies like electric power. You would know if you had these experiences; you will experience a force stronger than your normal awareness entering your body, as if you were in contact with high pressure. When you experience supernatural and superhuman emotions, your body will certainly reject them, since your body carries the fallen nature. Your body will surely come to repel this divine nature from God.

Therefore, if some kind of godly nature flows strongly into fallen humankind, fallen people cannot be purified in a natural way. When this power flows in, it does not come in at once but enters in an alternating plus and minus manner in the way sound waves are transmitted with alternating amplifications and attenuations. This power comes in sometimes strongly and sometimes weakly, all the while cultivating us. You will have vibrations, lose your consciousness, and the phenomenon in which spiritual forces act strongly takes place. This is manifested as spiritual phenomena.

What will happen next if you continue having such experiences? Your physical body and your physical fallen nature will become purified, and through this you will naturally come to accept these works 100 percent. When that happens, even without such phenomena you can enter a state higher than the spiritual phenomena and then receive all that heaven teaches while not being overwhelmed at all. You have to go through these courses to reach that level of purification, as well as the phases of receiving revelations and directions.

Once you reach the level of such experiences, your mind will give you directions. You will be struck dumb when you try to talk to someone, or you will scold someone in spite of yourself. You will experience such incomprehensible phenomena from time to time. Therefore you have to be able to control them. If you mishandle the situation, people may treat you like a crazy person.

It is absolutely necessary to go through such a course of experiencing these things. If you enter the position of having had experienced through the trials of life, by feeling and experiencing that which entered your mind, you will become stronger. You will not be affected by anyone's comments. Understand that both spiritual experiences and their realization are of the utmost importance in your lives of faith.

What should we do to enter that state? Generally, there are two types of people. The first type consists of so-called intellectuals, who search for truth. They only accept things that stand to reason and reject anything contrary to it. The other type consists of people who grasp things by feeling rather than reason. In the Unification Church they are called the intellectual and the spiritual people respectively. Whereas intellectual people look for external understanding first and then try to apply it to the internal world, spiritual people look for internal feelings first and then try to apply them to the external world. We may call the former the incoming type, and the lat-

ter the outgoing type. These are the two types of people.

Since that is the case, intellectuals generally do not like prayer. When they think about it, it looks like superstition, it cannot be trusted, and it makes them feel that their own existence is going to be denied. Those are the intellectuals – they seek to find truth by forming theories. Spiritual people, on the other hand, are born being fond of calling on the name, God. They just like God for no particular reason and do not require any explanation. They do not mind skipping meals as long as they can call God, Father. Such people exist.

Generally speaking, in spiritual movements, which type of people do you think are successful in creating a revolutionary movement? Intellectuals cannot do it. Those who have accomplished great things in the realm of faith were not intellectuals but were mostly simple and uneducated – they were spiritual people.

They live true to their feelings and do not care about the world. They do exactly what God tells them. There will arise occasions in which what they are doing turns out to be exactly the right thing to do in that situation. As a result, they turn out to become great figures in history. Saint Paul was originally an intellectual, but since he was struck by spiritual lightning from heaven on the road to Damascus, he changed his mind and went on by faith instead of his head. He felt that by searching internally one found an explosive path rather than by searching externally, which led him to deny everything that was external and to start respecting things that were internal. Through this, he became a standard-bearer of the new Christian revolution.

Such being the case, those emphasizing reason cannot play a role as great leaders of the religious world of the spirit. There are two types of people. You should know which group you belong to. Spiritual people in general are usually not great at reasoning, though they are great spiritually. They may start out strongly, but they become weak later on. Then, since they are not consistent from beginning to end, they do not last forever – they surely drop out at a certain point. On the other hand, those who are good at reasoning and truth but poor spiritually can also never last long. Therefore you have to make an effort to coordinate these two aspects in your daily life.

It is said that you must worship in prayer and in truth – in spirit and in truth. This means that you have to create a balance and enter a state of harmony. People should mediate between the spiritual and physical worlds. You should stand in the center of the spiritual world and be the people who can mediate standing at the center of the world of truth. Otherwise you cannot attain the perfected position. (76-125, 1975.2.2)

1.5. How to develop your spiritual senses

If you long to see someone, even if a wall is placed to stop you from seeing that person, there will be occasions

where you climb over that wall. Such things will happen even if I keep quiet. This is because the spirit world fills up that gap. When I was imprisoned in Heungnam prison, I did not witness to people with words. I witnessed to people without words. The same holds true for you. The spirit world was mobilized to help me, because otherwise something terrible would have happened. The same holds true for you. So, if you are going to the countryside, you should mobilize spiritual support in the same way. I have been to every well-known place in the sixties.

Think about who you are going to meet today on the road. Think about what kind of person the first person you meet will be like. What about the second? What about the third? At the same time, you should pray to God, "What kind of person will it be? I would like to meet such and such a person today." You feel good if your thoughts and prayers come true, and through such experiences your spiritual senses will develop.

When that happens, as soon as you go out on the street, you will start feeling you are going to meet such and such people today. A person's spirit is able to connect with others without limit. You will be surprised if your intuition on what kind of person you will meet that day becomes reality. There are many instances in which what you think and the intuition given by the spirit world will often become reality in perfect accord with each other. You have to grow through the accumulation of these experiences. (30-150, 1970.3.21)

1.6. Advent (substantial works)

The body and spirit, originally, are supposed to become one centered on true love, not false love. Consequently, they cannot become one without finding the source of true love. You have to go beyond this level and proceed looking forward to receiving heaven's blessings.

Why is it that the more lonely the place you go, the closer you are to heaven? When you forget about worldly love and enter the realm of heavenly love, heaven comes close to you. Heaven will directly appear to you and relate with you. You will be in God's direct dominion. Since you would not be aware of God's presence even if He appeared, I came in His stead. You should live in the realm of God's direct dominion. (91-183, 1977.2.6)

What kind of relationship do you have with me? You should see me during your prayer and in your dreams every day. All Unification Church members throughout the world must have such experiences. You have to know about the spirit world. You must be able to see me in a vision even when wide awake. There will be someone who can do it. This is the first time in history for such phenomena to occur. It is unprecedented and will never happen again in the future.

These experiences should gradually gain strength. Before Adam and Eve fell, they were not free from God's intervention. In the same way, I have to step into your individual lives and guide you in all matters. If you follow my directions and do everything with joy and excitement

you will enter that realm. Although I asked you to do the most difficult or impossible things, if you are determined to do them with more joy than I have, you will immediately enter that realm. If you step forward to accomplish them at the risk of your lives, I will immediately come to guide you. (91-173, 1977.2.6)

Our Unification Church members must receive spiritual guidance from me directly during their prayer or in their dreams. Already many members can receive my spiritual guidance directly, no matter where they go.

Many wonderful things will occur that are more real than those at the time of Jesus. That is why Unification members are in a position to attend me directly. In the church you will from time to time experience something greater than that which the people had in Jesus' time. That is why the world will be able to become one with the Unification Movement.

In order to pass through the realm of death today, we need to offer our prayers with the resolve to die. It is not enough for you to pray for only an instant. Pray for twenty-four hours. People who are unable to have such experiences or live without being able to attend me personally in such an era of freedom are pitiful.

By having such standards and experiences Blessed Couples originally should be connected to such content. You are supposed to be entitled to be Blessing candidates only after being spiritually engrafted to and united with me. (31-330, 1970.6.7)

We talk about God's heart. Where does it exist? In your prayer, you will hear a voice saying, "Listen to Rev. Moon. Do not make him sad. Make him happy." That is the only way. God will speak to you like that. People say that when they sacrificed their sleep pining to see me, the spirit world would open up to them. That is why it is important to have spiritual experiences. (76-152, 1975.2.2)

Section 2. What Kind of Place Is the Spirit World?

2.1. The spirit world and the physical world

2.1.1. The center of the spirit world and physical world

You must be concerned about the spirit world. Today there are many religions in the world and their path is to search out the world where we can live eternally in relation to the spirit world, a world of eternal life, a world where we can live together with God. That world is the destination of religion. However, what has become of religion nowadays? It is on the decline and we have entered an era in which people are concluding that religion is only for the weak, and unnecessary for everyone else, or that it was created by people as a moral idea.

Even Christianity, the central religion, has declined. America represents all the Christian nations of the world, yet those who grew up in American Christian homes have lost their faith and are living according to their own ways. Why

are Christians abandoning their religion which idealizes Heaven, the dwelling place of God, who is the center of the world and all ideals?

There are three reasons. First, it is because they do not have a clear understanding of the existence of the spirit world. As we have the innate capacity of comparison, we seek to abandon a bad situation in favor of a better one, ever in search of higher-dimensional realms of greater value. That is original human nature. Second, it is because they do not know God. Third, it is because they do not know that love is central and binds us to both God and the spirit world. They do not know these three points. Even though they might know of God and the spirit world, they do not understand that it is a world centering on love.

In a place of love, you are happy to go up or down, and even to stay in the middle. Does a wife dislike her beloved husband if he has a higher position in society than her, or does a husband dislike his beloved wife for being in a lower position than him? In unity, you can go anywhere, from below to above, and vice versa – you can even stay in the middle. There are no restraints. Thus, many people in the world call for one unified world of peace. (91-140, 1977.2.6)

The same holds true for the spiritual and physical worlds and for spiritual and physical beings. God and His love are central to both worlds but not to the fallen people who we usually have in mind.

We have a mind and a body that exist in different dimensions. The mind differs from the spirit world. We speak of the spiritual and physical worlds in terms of God's love. Accordingly, for both of them to unite, God must be involved. Without God's love being involved, the spirit world cannot exist. It is linked to God.

We have a conscience. How does it differ from the spirit world? How do the mind and the spirit world differ? People may think the mind is the spirit, but they are confused about that. Due to the Fall, the mind has nothing to do with the spiritual world. In other words, the mind of a fallen person is like a boneless body. This gives you a realistic idea if you think of it taking that form.

The spirit self has a spirit body and a spirit mind. The latter corresponds to the spiritual world. It definitely relates to God. Therefore, without establishing a relationship with God, the spirit mind will not come into being. Understand that spirit and mind are two different things. The fallen mind has no relationship with God – He has left it. God Himself can neither relate to our mind nor control it directly.

Your mind changes, going one way and then another, but the spiritual world and spiritual beings do not. They set one eternal goal toward which they constantly move. Why is this so? It is because they stand on God's side. The mind that resides within us as human beings vacillates.

You may have learned it from studying the Principle, but what is the spirit mind? It is the union of mind and spirit,

and it is moving toward its new goal. It is a motivational mind that can make us become our ideal selves by uniting with our conscience centered upon God. Thus, if we did not have a spirit mind we would be unable to search for its origin which can connect us to the spirit world and true love.

When the spirit mind sprouts up in us, our body experiences joy and everything follows it. Everything starts to unite automatically. Our biggest problem has been the separation of our mind and body. However, when spiritual energy comes into our body and creates the origin of our spirit mind, our mind and body become one naturally. Unless a revolution occurs at the root, and unless we discover the origin that can rectify everything from the root, we have no way to find the ideal. There is no result without a motivating cause.

The purpose of religion is to implant within us a spirit mind. There are many religions centered on the spirit mind. There are all kinds and forms of religion. (91-140, 1977.2.6)

2.1.2. Unity of the spiritual and physical worlds

God is a majestic being. Hence, the spiritual and physical worlds must be unified. In the absence of true love, however, they could not. Consequently separation took place between our mind and body, and between religion and politics. Everything comes together as one centering upon true love. Everything – the individual, family, society, nation, world, and cosmos – will be linked. We have to make it with our own hands. Otherwise, we cannot inherit God's original kingdom in heaven and on earth.

How do we unify the spiritual and physical worlds? It is through true love. (216-101, 1991.3.9)

2.2. The spirit world clearly exists

Eighty percent of the world's population does not know about the spirit world. Even believers are unsure about its existence and that of God, but it is there.

Imagine a wealthy person who is prepared to invest all assets into creating a garden of happiness. With that in mind we can inquire into how God, the Creator of heaven and earth, created His dwelling place. The spirit world is a world of beauty beyond our imagination. You will never get tired of looking at it, regardless of which part, for even a thousand years. The world's most prized possessions are nothing by comparison to even a corner of the spirit world. Therefore, I do not want to own this earth, that is to say, I would rather go back because it does not conform to my purpose. (15-149, 1965.10.7)

Most people even now do not think about the spirit world. They live because they were born, they serve their parents because they are there, and they live in their family because they were born into it. They live thinking that the reason they live this way is that they were born this way. What is the center of such a lifestyle? It is about how people should

eat and how they should live their lives. That is why people consider food, shelter, and clothing to be the most important elements of life.

The issues of living, feeding and clothing are central to most people. Of course, there are contents of morality and morals within human relationships that enable people to improve, develop and to find satisfaction together. However, the standard of that morality varies, as do races and nations. Moral standards and social systems all vary in accordance with the world's diverse cultural backgrounds.

From this point of view, the original standard which people should follow throughout history and the existing moral and ethical standards that we adopt in our lives are scattered in all directions. They have not been systematized into an integrated whole. Based upon being born and living in the original world, where should we be headed? People are not clear about this. Because of this, ordinary people do not know whether the spirit world and God exist.

However, our Unification Church members clearly know that the spirit world exists. They do not just believe it – they know it. Why? They know it through countless spiritual experiences. Viewed against the backdrop of the global foundation the Unification Church has established today, we have evidently undergone a process of many spiritual experiences. Therefore, Unification Church members are in no position to deny the existence of the spirit world. (140-121, 1986.2.9)

What path should Unification Church members go? They must follow the one God desires. They must follow the path of God's will. What is God's will?

There is the path of God's will that individuals must go, and the path of God's will that families must go, and also the path for the society, nation, world, and spirit world. I am the specialist. The spirit world definitely exists. (121-146, 1982.10.24)

What consequences arise from the existence of God and the spirit world? Some people may think that we have nothing to do with God even if He exists, but they are wrong. Disavowing the spirit world despite its existence is tantamount to disavowing the family, nation, or world despite being a part of them.

Thus, since greater God and the greater spirit world exist, we will desire to enter into a relationship with them. Rather than just being linked, where do we go from there? We should become one. We have to move toward a single purpose. (104-118, 1979.4.22)

2.3. The spirit world is the driving force for faith (Saint Paul's vision of the third heaven)

In the Bible, Paul explains about the third heaven, which he had seen fourteen years earlier. How did he live during those fourteen years? He carried on for fourteen years, gaining strength from his experience of seeing the third heaven. He knew more than what he

talked about then, and that enabled him to go on even after talking about the third heaven. (62-45, 1972.9.10)

The Apostle Paul's experience of seeing the third heaven of the spirit world became the driving force that empowered him in his missionary activities for fourteen years. Do you understand? You must have such experiences. That also holds true for me. (27-128, 1969.11.30)

I do not fear death. What made this possible? Love did. I can digest even being put in jail. Thus, I must digest and conquer today's adverse circumstances. I will conquer everything with my own hands. (202-27, 1990.5.1)

2.4. When God created the spirit world

The spirit world is equivalent to the angelic world. Today's world is in the same position as that of Adam and Eve. God created the spirit world before creating Adam and Eve.

Since the satanic world came to exist because the spirit world went against God's will, then that world can be restored only after the spirit world welcomes God's will. Also, the Lord cannot come to the earthly world unless he subjugates the spirit world.

That is why the Unification Movement has worked until today to subjugate the spirit world and, consequently, the spirit world must help the Unification Movement. (25-233, 1969.10.4)

2.5. Where is the spirit world?

Where is the spirit world? It is in your bodies. Thus, you go around with the spirit world on your shoulders, attending it – there is no escaping it. The spirit world exists. It exists for this world, and this world exists for the sake of the eternal world. People may question, "Where in the world is God? Can there be a god in this world? Where on earth is the spirit world?" God's dwelling place is the spirit world. (117-306, 1982.4.11)

2.6. What kind of place is the spirit world?

If we could be finished with life after seventy to eighty years on earth, we would not really have any problems to worry about, but as we will be living eternally, it is a different story. As the spirit world exists, and you are going there after death, what is there to think about? The spirit world is a vast world. You have no idea, but it is a vast unchanging world.

On earth, there are racial discrimination, cultural clashes and other contentious issues. In spite of life's frictions, people want to maintain their assertions and values, which do not pass away but live on vividly when they go to the spirit world. (187-285, 1989.2.12)

The contemporary interest in electricity and space exploration act like lubricants in creating an ideal world of love. In the same way, the spirit world is the world filled with the electricity of

love. There is nothing we cannot do with the electricity of love. Hence, we can say that the spirit world is a realm we can govern by our way of thinking.

Then, what is the spirit world? It is a place that desires eternal elements. It is the world of harmony, where everything is filled with love. Thus, this universe gets into operative mode by just a push of a love button.

What is God's Kingdom on earth? It is the place where all the love bulbs light up. Then what about God's Kingdom in heaven? It is the place where love bulbs can light up completely.

As long as you keep a loving heart and pull the rope of love, everything will follow. When you pull it back, it goes backward; when you pull it sideways, it moves sideways. You can steer it any way you like. It does not resist, but moves automatically. Thus, we can find this concept that the spirit world is the place filled with the air of love. If the God of love, who with the heart of love, wants to feed all humanity at once and to make them happy, says, "Let there be food," then food will appear.

You eat the food of love in the spirit world. You look at each other with the eyes of love. There are no words to express the mystery of the spirit world. The more you hear, the more you want to hear. There is no concept of being sleepy or tired there. The spirit world is the place filled with the electricity of love. Therefore, people today try to link everything to love. Why? This is to be in sync with the spirit world. Since the spirit world operates in this way, existing beings cannot but respond to that. They cannot abandon that position.

When you see me in your dreams, I appear to you through the waves of God's love. For that to happen, your ego should not be there. You have to sacrifice yourselves and create a vacuum. After creating a vacuum, you have to become like pure gold. Gold does not contain any other elements. It is pure in itself. (112-16, 1981.3.15)

Section 3. The Content and Situation of the Spirit World

3.1. The Fall led to ignorance about the spirit world

The human body consists of almost one hundred trillion cells. Our ancestors have died and gone to the spirit world, but within our body are cells passed down that have received their love. The cells connecting to life have been passed down – connected through the lineage. They are still alive and moving.

When autumn comes, the leaves fall. New buds come out in spring. A garden becomes green in summer. Likewise, we human beings are born from numerous ancestors through our blood connection. Although we are their descendants, we are meant to live our lives representing them. Centering on our ancestors' true love and drawing upon their life energy, we are to pass down their lineage. Thus, your grandfather and grandmother are the beings into whom your ancestors are compressed. It is they who represent your clans and your families before heaven.

Then what about your father and mother? They are the center of your family. They represent all the fathers and mothers of all families in the present world. The grandfather and grandmother represent the past and the father and mother represent the present. What about sons and daughters? They are the future descendants who can be unified with God's eternal ideal world – the heavenly kingdom – and can complete the unification of the cosmos. Your family is holding your son and daughter as the starting point of your family. Therefore, the family is the compressed unit of the representative of the past, the representative of the present people of the world, and the representative of future descendants living in one place. That is why the family that has not fallen stands in such a position whereby it can communicate with both the spiritual and physical worlds.

Just as the love within the parent-child relationship is cherished in the physical world, if you live with such love on earth, you will attend God as your Parent and live your life in heaven as His child. (214-268, 1991.2.3)

3.2. The spirit world is a sphere permitting instant perception

In the spirit world, anything can be known instantly. When meeting people, even without an introduction, you will know their names, whether they lived eons, or million, or billions of years ago. It is such a speedy world.

When I have to pinpoint the solution to a difficult problem within a triangle, my finger and body already know where that point is. That is why you should always be focused and go about with the right mind-set.

In meeting people, do not think of taking advantage of them or trying to use them for your benefit. Never do that. If their original character is crushed, it will take half a year to three years to repair it. That is why your actions are crucial. If you take advantage of others, you will be placed in a more hellish place than the usual hell. Those who understand such consequences do not even think about doing selfish deeds. (204-304, 1990.7.11)

Satanic blood is still flowing at the base of our being. Satanic love has been rooted in our body. That love flows through the blood vessels in our life and is meshed into our nerves. From there, our body, which consists of one hundred trillion cells, was formed. We have to lament by our own initiative the miserable plight of sustaining this life together with satanic blood. We should be determined and resolved to destroy this satanic life hundreds of times over during our lifetime.

Can you embrace and love your own body? Can you walk around like a mad dog dragging its muzzle saying that you are hungry? Can you approach your spouse to satisfy your lust centered on your body?

When entering the spirit world, you will not require an introduction. You will understand as soon as you meet others.

You will know that the person you meet used to live on earth some millennia ago or some million years ago. Some say that biblical history goes back six millennia, but I say they are talking nonsense. They do not know the spirit world.

Biblical history actually spans millions and tens of millions of years. If we call for our ancestors of those days, they will all appear at once. As soon as you see them, you will understand each other tacitly. Your whole being is on display. You will immediately know to what order each of you belongs – whether higher or lower. Therefore, introductions will be unnecessary. The order is automatically determined.

Love determines the overall order and each person's position. So you cannot enter the heavenly kingdom without becoming God's sons and daughters.

In order to connect with God's love, you have to get onto the vertical line. What does the scripture about loving the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind mean? The center of everything is love. So, when you do nothing but concentrate all your functions and consciousness on loving the Lord your God, you will go straight up to the vertical realm taking the elevator. It is a wondrous world. (208-141, 1990.11.17)

3.3. The center of the spirit world

What is the center of the spirit world? It is a world structured and centered on the One Absolute God, the originator of the universe from the beginning. There is nothing He has not created. Since all things belong to Him, they feel as He feels and exist in relationship to Him. For example, the human body consists of one hundred trillion cells. When any of the cells at any part of the body feels something, it directly relays it to the brain. It is the same for all creatures that have been connected to their Creator since the universe was created.

What is more, we are born and live with consciousness, pursuing goodness and higher value as well as experiencing the grief of others? All these attributes did not originate from human beings but from the origin of humankind. We can say that human life is a process of going towards the resultant world which leads us to the origin. (140-121, 1986.2.9)

3.4. The organization of the spirit world (hierarchy)

Why is the spirit world still incomplete? The hierarchy of the spirit world was originally designed to be connected centered on God, True Parents, and true children, but that hierarchy does not yet exist in the spirit world or on earth. In other words, the organization of the spirit world is to be the hierarchy centered on True Parents, and at the same time the philosophy heralding the Adam untainted by the Fall, but it has not been established yet. So far, the center of the hierarchy has been occupied by the Buddhist group, the Confucian group, and the Muslim group.

Thus, in the spirit world, the Muslims, Confucians and Buddhists have

all been hoping for the appearance of the true parent-centered ideology and the philosophy heralding Adam. Since both worlds must go in a unified direction, when the work of the True Parents on earth reaches the global level, the boundaries dividing all the religions will disappear, and a unified movement will automatically appear according to the motions in the spirit world.

Then, what happens when the teachings of the Unification Movement become a global ideology? All the spirits will be absent from the spiritual world. As their purpose must be completed on earth and subsequently revert to the spirit world, they all have to return to the physical world. All of them will become active. Countless spirits in the spiritual world are hoping for the Unification members that are spread across the world to take action.

Then what is the center of the hierarchy in the spirit world? First it is God, second True Parents, third true sons and daughters, and fourth the true nation. True children are children who have inherited the direct lineage from True Parents. They all branch out centering on the nation to become its citizens.

Who should be the first to live in the heavenly palace? Who will govern the heavenly kingdom sitting on the throne of the heavenly palace? Adam and Eve should have become the true parents centering on God and were supposed to be in that position of governing the kingship of that heavenly nation. It would have been realized if they had not fallen, but because of the Fall it did not materialize. Thus, true parents have to emerge and move into that position.

The spirit world operates under this kind of principle. So how long do you think it would take for such phenomena to appear in the physical world? Centered on God, true parents have to emerge, then the true children, and finally a true nation with true citizens. (161-222, 1987.2.15)

3.5. Clothing, food and shelter in the spirit world

Would you skip breakfast tomorrow morning because you had breakfast this morning? You will keep crying out, "Oh, food!" until your life ends. Likewise, you have to eat God's words every day in the spirit world. That is why you have to train yourself on earth. Your hunger for knowledge, even after going to the spirit world, will push you to ask, "What words will God speak to us? What do they mean?"

Think about it. Do you expect to find bakeries in the spirit world or not? What about cola and juice bottling plants? No. Would there be auto-manufacturing plants there or not? When you get there, would you go around saying you are going to move about in a luxury vehicle? Here people boast of owning a Benz, but over there, there is no need for all that.

What will you be doing over there? Will you be eating or not? You will. Based upon what will you be doing that? Because love will be central to eating, people without love will not be able to open their mouths however much they

want to eat. That is the law. Their mouths will not open if they love themselves and are not focused on loving everyone. Even as they try to pick up food with chopsticks to bring the food to their mouths, the chopsticks will move away. Thus, in the spirit world everything is possible only when you have true love and everything is impossible if you do not.

What I teach is the tide of love. It is a tide that reaches God's throne in heaven all the way to His heart. It flows to all nations and enables you to connect with everyone.

If a nice house in the spirit world is inhabited by someone ranked lower than yourself, you can make it yours. This will be naturally known as you enter it.

By becoming God's sons and daughters, you will come to own the entire vast universe. In the spirit world, you will not be able to follow me around because the gates of your hearts are narrow. True love can flow freely, whether through a wide gate or a narrow gate. Love must be true. (207-93, 1990.11.1)

The spirit world is our homeland – the original homeland. This earth is the homeland of the original body and the spirit world is the homeland of the original heart. The next place to go is the world of heart – the spirit world. Thus, only by training ourselves on earth to adjust to the spirit world will we have no difficulties upon arriving there. (207-72, 1990.11.1)

There are neither cars nor food in the spirit world. Like God the Creator, we will be able to create all sorts of things through true love there. You can make anything through love. When you call out for some instrument, it will appear at once. When you order food for several hundred thousand or even millions of guests at a banquet, it will be served. If you stipulate a golden dress code, it will materialize instantaneously.

We will not be sleeping in the spirit world. That being the case, we will be able to dance the night away with total abandon. Spiritually we will be filling ourselves with eternal enjoyment. The air there will be the air of love, the food there will be the food of love, and the clothes there will be the garments of love, and all these will be provided by the True Parents through true love. (217-293, 1991.6.2)

On earth, food is one of life's concerns. Thus, manufacturing plants for automobiles, fertilizer, garments, food, and so on are needed. People make a big fuss over food at home. In the spirit world, all that is unnecessary. Cars and planes are not needed. In the twinkling of an eye, infinite distances can be crossed. Spiritual energy travels faster than the sunlight created by God, and it travels three hundred million meters per second. God's original love energy and life energy travel infinitely faster than that. If you wish to meet with someone light years away, that person will appear right away. Even in heaven, which is vast, when you prepare your heart and say that you would like to meet someone you loved, that person will appear

on the spot.

Those who used to live millions of years ago will appear and greet you. How much has changed over the past millennia? People who used to live then could sense heaven much more deeply than those who live now.

Yet it is the other way around from the perspective of civilization – our spiritual senses develop along with its advancements. Greater knowledge leads to a corresponding increase in overall understanding and penetrating analyses. Thus, the foundation to attain extrasensory perception is expanded. Then the spirit world will naturally teach in advance the wise ones concerned about the future of the world. They will understand through spiritual waves what will happen. Those who reach the highest position will see but one goal at the end. (206-138, 1990.10.3)

3.6. How to use knowledge and power in the spirit world

You can make as much money as you want in the spirit world. God is the King of knowledge. Knowledge, money, and power are but some of the values people pursue during their physical life. Can professors boast of their knowledge forever? Can they go around showing it off? It lasts only a lifetime. Your knowledge is with you only during your life and the same for your money and power. Thus, do not boast of your knowledge, money or power. God regards them as valueless. They are all valueless in the spirit world. (203-291, 1990.6.27)

We should know God. He must be a god of personality, He cannot be obscure. As we are people personifying intellect, emotion and will, then our subject partner, God, must also be the deity personifying intellect, emotion and will. What is the central attribute of God among all His many attributes? It is emotion. It is love. God too needs love most to live. You do not live with knowledge in heaven. Things are the way they are because you do not know the spirit world. However, once you are there, it will take less than a week for you to learn everything. In the spirit world you can look into people's minds as you see reflections in a mirror. The spirit world is a world of intuition where, within a week, you can surpass the knowledge of any intellectual, however distinguished or great.

By seeing things through the light of your heart, you will automatically understand the world and all its related connections. Only through the heart of love will you understand whether someone is your object or subject partner. It cannot be done through knowledge or any of God's other attributes. (210-311, 1990.12.27)

In the spirit world, if you just say with a strong heart of love that you want to see someone an infinite distance away, he can appear. If you ask him, "Why have you come here?" he will reply, "Because you called me." If you ask him, "How far have you come?" he will say that he came from light-years away. The spirit world transcends space. The universe becomes your base of activity.

Yet we have things tied around our necks that do not exist in the spirit world, namely money, knowledge and power. Not even one of those things exists in that world. Not even one of them will endure. Money, knowledge and power are needed in this world, but not in that world. Yet, in the satanic world, people desire them.

The spirit world is a world devoid of power consciousness. If you are require power you will be unable to live anywhere in the spirit world. Nothing in the spirit world will welcome you. You will not be able to own anything even if the spirit world itself becomes interested in you and tries to unite with you. Essential opposites cannot become one. They cannot be linked to a position in which the spirit world can have interest. (205-128, 1990.7.29)

God created everything for love. If you ask Him what He loves most, what do you think His answer will be? He has no favorites. He does not need money, knowledge or power. What do we Unification Church members need? The same thing. Love contains money, knowledge and power. Its power is everlasting. People who understand true love will not have anything to learn in heaven.

Such people can go in and out of God's heart anytime. They can move freely in all directions through His body. His heart is like a central terminal. Why do we need it? As you enter and leave it, you emerge with tremendous power because energy from all directions gets concentrated there. Even lowly people will be elevated to the same position as God as they emerge from that central terminal. Love has such great power.

What is knowledge? Through it, you can own everything around you. If you have only love, which is the highest form of knowledge, everything in the world will connect with you. Knowledgeable people rule. It has been said that knowledge is power. It is logical that powerful people rule. That is why people with love do not need knowledge. They will know everything in the spirit world even without learning.

As I know all these things clearly, I do not want to live on earth. Everything in that vast world is intertwined with love. Everything is complete if you come to own the realm of God's heart harmonized with that love. The history of creation will continue forever. You have to accomplish what you have planned by harmonizing yourself with that heart of love. Once you determine and command it, it will unfold at once. (202-86, 1990.5.6)

3.7. Human relationships in the spirit world

God is the Creator of heaven and earth, the very Parent who happens to be the origin of all beings in this world today. He is the source of value of all beings. By virtue of His existence this world of phenomena began.

Such an absolute being does not change according to contemporary trends; absolute things do not change. He is not limited by time and space. He transcends and thus presides over all

limitations. We should not simply call such a being God.

He is our Father. You are to call Him Heavenly Father. He is the Father who begat you. The Fall gave rise to the word rebirth, but He is the Father who originally begat you. Your physical father is the father who became the bridge. You will call him brother in the spirit world. You will not be calling your physical mother mom either.

What do all the people who were born of their parents call God? They all call Him Father as the Christians do. In the same family, the grandfather calls God Father and so do the father and the grandson. That goes for all members of the family. Likewise, God is Father to all humankind. Accordingly, all people are brothers and sisters. I sometimes think that if that is really the case, then things will be quite interesting when I go to the spirit world.

As all people are mutually related as siblings, who would be the closest ones in the spirit world? Not the horizontal ones. Which relationship is closer in this world: between parent and child, or between siblings? Since the parent-child relationship is closer, even after you pass to the spirit world, you will be closest to your parents, then to your grandparents and then to your great-grandparents, and then your great-great-grandparents above them. When you trace the vertical line all the way up, who is the last grandparent? He is, indeed, God.

That is why you do not have to feel lonely saying that you have no friends in this world. You do not have to feel sad because you lived by yourself before you died. When you go to the spirit world, you will have an unlimited number of close siblings above and beside you. However, you will not become their sibling just like that. You can become their sibling only when you have attained the privilege of attending God as your Father.

I do not feel bad about calling my father and grandfather my elder brothers. Somehow, when you think about it, you might feel bad. You used to call him daddy while on earth. He might be terribly offended if you were to call him your brother in the spirit world! Yet, that is how you will have to address each other. Why does it have to be like that? Because only in such a position can you become the son of the direct male line. If that is the case, you may ask, "Since there is but one son of the direct male line, how then can everyone occupy that position?" In the spirit world, everyone can become the son of that line. Centered on God, everyone can become its descendants. When a rich man dies in this world, his assets will be inherited by his children. Then, it is customary for half to be given to the eldest son of the direct male line and the rest to be divided by the other sons.

Nevertheless, it is not like that in the spirit world. Since all people in the spirit world have to become descendants of the direct male line, God does not have to divide His assets among them. Once all siblings become one, what is your elder brother's is simultaneously yours. So it is important that all siblings become

one. As you seek to trace your lineage back through the generations, they will be numbered differently, but if all the ancestors of the direct male line become completely one, the descendants who come after them will inherit the universe. In other words, they will govern the spirit world centered on the children of the direct male line. (21-248, 1968.11.24)

In the spirit world, grandfathers and grandmothers will look more attractive than you. You can live in such a world if you have love. It is a unified and very beautiful world. Who is the grandfather of your ancestors? The first grandfather is God. (216-180, 1991.3.10)

When you go to the spirit world and look at a man and a woman, they look like one great person. What are people? Each of you is like a cell. The whole universe will look like a man and a woman. That is how it will look. The universe is the result of them combining. The people within the universe are like God's cells. They are parts of a body. (207-97, 1990.11.1)

3.8. The center of the spirit world is love

3.8.1. The air of the spirit world is love

How is the spirit world structured? Its air is love. Love serves as air. On earth, your mind and body must experience the sensations of love as the elements that can be harmonized. Once you create the sphere of experiencing those elements, there is nowhere you cannot communicate with each other instantly, just like the tree sap that flows from the bud to the root of a tree. You will naturally sense when God is rejoicing. You will know that God's banquet is going to be held in the East. (162-287, 1987.4.17)

In the spirit world, there are screws of love, as well as machines of love, and shafts. To use a metaphor, there are shafts in rotating motors. If you completely unwind the shaft, what is unwound is love. The shaft rotates for the sake of love. There is no need to worry about achieving the harmony of that order. When you live centered on essential love, you are like a cell wherever you go in that world. (126-238, 1983.4.24)

Love is the air you breathe in the spirit world. Only by establishing the way of love can you become the substantiation of hope longed for by God throughout history and be welcomed everywhere you go in Heaven. Thus, your family is the training school enabling you to go to heaven. It is your training ground. In the world there are people like your grandfather and grandmother.

It is the same by extension – extending the age brackets of your mother and father, your spouse, and your children. People who extend what they have learned in their family in all directions and can live for the sake of others within the sphere of love can go to heaven. The family is the training ground from which you can go straight to heaven. It is like a base from where satellites can

be launched – like Cape Kennedy. Your family is the place from where an atomic bomb of love or a satellite of love can be launched. (143-71, 1986.3.15)

3.8.2. The spirit world is the place of living a love-centered life

In the other world, spirit people live centered on love. That is why you should share the blessing of love with many people. You have to shed tears. People shed tears in good moments and bad. What is the difference between laughing and crying? We open our eyes when we laugh and close them when we cry. Laughing hard brings out tears. The shape of one's face does not change much. The only difference is the eyes. (212-166, 1991.1.6)

Henceforth, only art will remain. People who cannot write love poems are failures. (211-245, 1990.12.30)

Where is the core of the universe – the core of love? The core of love exists. Some years ago in America, a new elementary particle called upsilon was discovered. It is said to be humanly inaccessible. In this regard, we are coming to the stage in which the spirit world will be officially and automatically recognized. That is an amazing fact. I think that it is a good opportunity to have something that should be scientifically provable but is not. It sets the stage for the beginning of the four-dimensional world. As the material world reaches its boundaries, the spirit world becomes clarified automatically. There is no boundary. Is there a boundary between the spirit world and our heart? Our heart resembles the spirit world. Our senses differ in degree though not in kind; consequently, we are called spiritual beings. (83-209, 1976.2.8)

Once we go to the spirit world, through the power of true love, we can meet people, however distant, in the twinkling of an eye and likewise zip back to our hometown, however distant, to visit our loved ones. The spirit world is a limitlessly expansive world, but through love we will be able to go back and forth over infinite distances instantaneously. Love travels at the highest speed. Without the foundation of love-centered, mind-body unity, we would have nothing to do with the spirit world. Accordingly, the origin of unification is not something that happens in the objective world, but rather begins in you. (216-192, 1991.3.31)

3.9. The spirit world – the world of heart

What kind of place is the spirit world? Because some people say that those who speak about the spirit world are lunatics, I hesitate to talk about it. What kind of world is the spirit world? It is a world where anything is possible if you have a heart at the same level as God's. (106-227, 1979.12.30)

The world of heart is the world of boundless happiness, but you will have to undergo countless steps of training and re-education. While undergoing endless ordeals, you will have to go forward step

by step, over eons. Everyone is destined to go through such a course, whether from the East or West. Be people who shed tears for others, not for yourselves.

So do not hesitate. Rather, challenge fate by saying, "Go ahead. I am ready to die. I will carry on even unto death. Come on. Do what you want. I will die with such a heart. Even if you kill me, my heart will not die. I will take it with me to the spirit world and engraft it there." Standing on God's side, you will say, "Are you going to invade the realm of God's heart? You can invade Satan's realm of heart, but not God's. Isn't that the heavenly law?" Satan dominates the realm of heart of the satanic world, but he cannot dominate God's realm of heart.

Thus, once the satanic world is assimilated into God's realm of love, the spirit world will also be assimilated. Then, this world will become the Kingdom of Heaven where no one will be blocked from entering any of the twelve pearly gates facing the north, the south, the east, and the west. All will be welcomed. Why? Because, through God's heart, all can become one and be harmonized anywhere. (106-229, 1979.12.30)

The ideologies and philosophies of this world may have formed a stage in revolutionizing our consciousness in terms of the standards of our conscience, but from now on something that can bring the destined and final victory must emerge. That is none other than heart.

Henceforth, there must emerge a new view of history that can revolutionize the heart of humanity to enable the establishment of the standards of heavenly law. Based on this view of history, there has to appear a heart-based principle that can establish a new view of life and worldview. Then what principle is it? It is one centered on a heart-based view of life, a heart-based worldview, and a heart-based view of the universe. This is the very thing the Unification Church is teaching. (16-251, 1966.6.19)

3.10. The situation of the spirit world

Those who can become object partners to God, the God who is harmonized through the ideal of love, can instantly materialize all their thoughts in the spirit world. It is the world where you can instantaneously throw a party for a zillion guests. If you want to please God as the object of His love by dressing up gorgeously, it will happen right away. It is a world where everything imaginable is possible. Those who know the spirit world have no zest for living on earth. That is why even being cast into jail did not bother me at all. This momentary life on earth is like taking a single breath in the eternal world. (211-244, 1990.12.30)

In the spirit world, you will be flying around. Since true love has the highest speed, the God of true love can, in one hop, zip across the vast universe 22 billion light-years wide. You could all do the same. However great the universe, it will become the sphere of your activities in the spirit world. (213-277, 1991.1.21)

You will have nothing to envy in the spirit world. The incarnation of love cannot be compared with diamonds, gold or pearls. Jewels will not matter. The incarnation of love is more beautiful. (201-99, 1990.3.11)

When meeting artists in the spirit world, you will be able to catch up with them by instantly developing all your artistic inclinations. It is a world of limitless possibilities. Thus, you will have all the facilities you will need there for singing and dancing.

Even in drawing, God is the best. Would He hang up a masterpiece painting on the wall and gaze at it, or would He behold His own created masterpiece in action? Which do you think He would like? His creation. What's more, you will never get old in that world, that sublime place where you will be intoxicated with the heart of love.

Life would be boring if every day were clear. Misty days and nights, when we can see the moon with a halo, take away the boredom. Just observing the various and unique weather changes from clear to cloudy taking place all the time on earth is itself an artistic activity. This is the world of art; it is an artistic world. (201-102, 1990.3.11)

3.11. Life in the spirit world

How is life in the spirit world? You will not have worries about what to eat, where to live, and what to wear. Why not? According to your spiritual state, everything you wish for will become reality. We will be eating there, too. There, we will also be able to feel the flow of our blood and the beat of our pulse. We will have spirit bodies, but it will work the same way.

Whenever we want to eat something, it will appear ready to be eaten right away. Where will it come from? The spirit world is a world in which we will be able to exercise our independence actively in enabling the mobilization of the original world. As such, what is it that has the proactive authority of activity that can mobilize everything? It is neither power, nor knowledge, nor money. It is love.

However high up God may be, if you call out to Him with a heart of love, "God!" the answer will come from within your heart, "What?" You then ask, "God, where are You?" and He will reply, "What do you mean, where am I? I am at the core of your heart." God is the Origin. He is at the core, the root, of your heart. Intoxicated with love, when you give the command to actualize what your intuition tells you, it will unfold just the way you want. People going to the spirit world as bachelors or spinsters will have a difficult time. Such people will not be able to harmonize anywhere they go. It will be the case whether they go to the world for women or for men. They will have no group to belong to. (194-42, 1989.10.15)

3.12. The work we have to do in the spirit world

What will happen after we die? Dying does not mean that life is all over.

A son who has inherited the love of his father is always welcome in his house and anywhere he goes. That is the principle. All the spirits in the next world will welcome him. The spirit world is an eternal world. Someone who wears himself out for the sake of love all his life and subsequently dies at a ripe old age will nevertheless be born as a handsome young man of love in the spirit world. He will be a being of boundless eternal life who will forever sing the love songs of adolescence.

What will you be doing in the spirit world? What will you have to do in that nation? Will you be trying to earn money there? Will you need clothes and a house? Everything you want will be instantly provided. The spirit world is a world in which you will be able to settle everything according to the degree of your love.

If you order anything you desire, it will appear right away. However, if you ask for it just for your own good, it will not appear even if you make a lot of noise and raise a disturbance. Conversely, everything will instantly appear if, as the heavenly prince, you say that you need it for the purpose of attending the King. Anything imaginable is possible in the spirit world. (129-99, 1983.10.1)

What are you going to do in the spirit world? You will sing songs of love and speak words of love. If you are spoken to in an operatic way, you will have to respond likewise. If you are spoken to through a dance, you will have to reply that way. You will rejoice eternally and never tire. When dancing starts in one place, it will happen everywhere in heaven. When singing starts in one place, there will be singing everywhere. In the spirit world all your organs will constantly be working. What will we be doing? What will enable us to be happy without any sleep eternally? Love.

All we need to do is have that ideal of love. What would remain to talk about in the spirit world if love were removed? You are meant to live there centered on love, the original love. Because I knew about such a world, I could overcome any difficulties on earth and detach myself from anything I used to love. I can cut off from them ruthlessly in a way normal people cannot. We use that standard to evaluate everything. (107-331, 1980.6.8)

Section 4. The Position and Actual Situations of the Spirit World

4.1. The position of the spirit world

What you need to be thinking about in this era is the spirit world. As yet, the spirit world corresponds to the angelic world. We Unification Church members stand in the same position as Adam and Eve before the Fall, that is to say, we are living in that realm. Viewed from the spirit world, it is identical to paradise appearing on earth. (54-228, 1972.3.24)

Since the spirit world transcends time and space, even the sorrow of the

past six millennia remains forever within the realm of the historical ages. If you felt joy in the experience of offering yourself, then even if it occurred as a part of your daily activities, that experience will never be forgotten for the rest of your life.

With the passage of time, it will broaden and expand so that you can become an object of reverence and be connected with the infinite origin. If you have such holy experiences from now on, and act upon them, you will be able to know that the sorrow God has been experiencing until now is not temporal but rather continuously connected. That is an undeniable fact. (29-294, 1970.3.12)

What is the one thing to be done in the world of humanity? The light of love must be bright. For that to happen, you must catch fire internally and externally. From what? The motive force to love. In the light of all this, all the things of this world are a rest house you pass through during a trip. (194-55, 1989.10.15)

4.2. The actual state of affairs in the spirit world

When you get to see the spirit world, it will all appear as one large person. God, the Subject, and that large person become one. When this occurs, the whole spirit world and the physical world will jell together as one.

When God jumps, so will the earth. When He laughs, so will the world. That is how it is. When you go to the spirit world, you will see that it is structured like a person. (91-279, 1977.2.27)

In the spirit world, there is no place you cannot pass through, because there is nothing that obstructs movement there. Being the place where God's original character exists, it is not made to be obstructive. Everything is made to be permeable. As it transcends time and space, people who lived eons ago exist there even now. Thus, you will be able to see such people as often as you wish. They appear the age they want.

So explanations and excuses will not be necessary. You will have foresight. You will know whether someone is ranked below, beside, or above you. You will know the love rankings of zillions of people.

Those rankings are absolute. Highly-ranked people will naturally stand in the right places according to their ranks. It is different from the physical world. People who got promoted by scheming and backstabbing will be upended. It will be the other way around. Look, therefore, to the true way. (194-132, 1989.10.17)

4.3. The pride of the spirit world

What will old people need to do in order to walk the way of God's will in the future? How can the physical body be reinvigorated as it ages, as its physiological functions are increasingly curbed and as it becomes decrepit? I am researching this. What should we do if the body keeps weakening when it needs to unite with the spirit to be active? I am now in the midst of providing for this.

Then, what is the problem? You have to start anew. To do that, discover something new every day. People who do will never become dropouts. They are never discouraged by difficulties. On the contrary, they relish the challenge.

What will you be proud of in the spirit world? You will be proud of the number of lives you have saved. This is your pride. Going beyond the ordinary people and your tribe, the number of lives you have saved among the numerous races by linking them to new life will form your assets. Those will be your only assets. There will be nothing you will miss in the spirit world since it has everything. Still, if there is anything you might miss, it would be true people.

Thus, those devoted subjects who sacrificed to raise true people will naturally be able to become the glorious sons and daughters of heaven. Therefore, that will be the only thing in which you can take pride. (30-147, 1970.3.21)

In the spirit world when you enter the place where the bell of love rings in your heart, the light of your heart will grow steadily. This light will shine brilliantly in all the five colors. In God's eyes, it will look brighter and more beautiful than a diamond. What is more, its light is not just good, but also tasty. The more you look at it, the better it appears and the more intoxicated you will get. That is why God utters the word love.

Therefore, the tears you shed and the amount your heart ached for the sake of love will constitute your assets.
(103-27, 1979.1.28)

4.4. The Unification Church and the spirit world

How great is God? He is the One who created the universe. Our solar system by itself is huge.

Unification Church members are citizens of the heavenly nation with world sovereignty. Not only that, we are also heaven's ambassadors. When such ambassadors negotiate with their arch enemy, they will never compromise while following the heavenly command even if they have to offer their lives. Though living in the satanic world, we are heaven's ambassadors who take orders not from Satan but from heaven.

A huge foundation – the spirit world – exists behind the Unification Church. If a U.S. citizen living in some small village in Africa were harmed, it would become a problem to be dealt with directly by the State Department and the White House. Likewise, if we are victimized in a miserable plight in some secluded place, it will become a problem for heaven and for the Unification Church, and it will be discussed whether compensation will be claimed for damages. You are standing in such a position. Therefore, do not be intimidated. Even if you are insulted, take it and move on with dignity. (96-83, 1977.12.18)

The Unification Church is capable of mobilizing an individual spiritually as well as ancestors. Since the religions that have existed until today were incapable of connecting the physical and spiritual worlds, they made contact by harmo-

nizing vertically their spiritual devotion with rhythms and dancing. Yet now we have entered the broadcasting station itself. Our position is like a diaphragm. It is not the undulation itself but a generating transmitter. With a broadcast station, you can say, "Ancestors in the spirit world, please come and work with me. Good ancestors please come and work with me. I need such vibrations," and they are supposed to come. Individuals and families can be called and mobilized. Since the foothold for connecting with the tribal, ethnic and global realms were established on the earth, the spirits will be mobilized and come down to earth. When this happens, our bodies will be drawn into this without our knowing it. (162-103, 1987.3.30)

When you die and go before God, you will not be starting your report with the good things you have done, but rather with your misdeeds first. In this world, when people are required to render an account of themselves, they usually only mention their accomplishments without revealing their shortcomings. The spirit world is not like that. There, we must first report our mistakes. That is the order: what are first reported are the bad things.

Unification Church members will momentarily enter hell. Following that, a lawyer must be appointed to come and pull them out. This person would have to plead their case by citing their past accomplishments centered on God's will during the era of the parents, and thus pull them out. Do not live taking it easy. If that were acceptable, why would I have pursued a lifestyle that kept landing me in jail and made me the target of finger-pointing as someone who should be beaten to death? I could not but live that way. I cannot be skulking around. (196-283, 1990.1.2)

We are splendid people. We are treading our life path with dignity, in a position enviable to the world and universe, and all the saints and sages in the spirit world. We live with an inherited background and content of achievement that prevents God from abandoning us and also enables Him to both praise us and come to us to express His love. (171-27, 1987.12.5)

4.5. Korean customs and the spirit world

The Koreans are a unique race with a long history. Korea never even once invaded other countries, although it was often attacked. Korea's survival, sandwiched as it is between powerful countries, is a miracle. It is due to divine protection.

Korean customs are quite similar to those of the Jews. When I came to understand the spirit world, I discovered many affinities between its principled ways and our Korean customs, such as those relating to childbirth and marriage, as well as attitudes toward life. For meals, Koreans always place a pair of chopsticks and a spoon beside them as the main elements of the setting. The food, prepared and served in bowls, harmonizes in plus and

minus, yin and yang relationships. Koreans organize around the number seven. There is a three day separation with each of life's major events: after childbirth, after marriage, and after death. Historically Koreans truly respect traditional things. (54-234, 1972.3.24)

4.6. The Korean language and the spirit world

When you enter heaven, if being able to speak the language of the homeland is one of the requisites, what are you going to do? You will be asked whether you speak it. This is the viewpoint of the Principle, according to which Adam and Eve's children would speak the language of their parents and not another. English is the fallen archangel's language. It is a shame. This is the viewpoint of the Principle. When you go to the spirit world, your ancestors will point at you and accuse you, saying, "Even though you served the True Parents, you did not learn Korean!" Korean is the True Parents' language. There is nothing we can do about them having been born in Korea. (128-244, 1983.6.27)

4.7. The spirit world's sphere of activity

This universe is the spirit world's sphere of activity. While the vast universe is its spiritual sphere of activity this world too, at the same time, is the spirit world's sphere of activity. On earth we can connect with that external realm, the universe. From the viewpoint of God's providence, it means symbolically that the citizens of heaven now living on earth have reached the standard where they can always contact countless ancestors spread throughout the great universe. In the external world, this is indicated symbolically by the exploration of the universe using satellites. (196-215, 1990.1.1)

4.8. The spirit world's possessions

In observing the great universe, I am sure you will find stars made of precious stones like diamond stars. It all belongs to us. We can live with that joy. This is the ideal world where all the groups that love the universe – God's loving family – will be able to live and move together. You should join this group and become a part of that family. Those who willingly sacrifice themselves will become the leaders and people in charge in the spirit world. However, the ones who live with a lukewarm attitude will become failures there. (126-144, 1983.4.12)

4.9. God and the spirit world

Even in the spirit world God is invisible. When you go there, you will never see Him. You will be able to hear His voice, but you will never be able to set eyes on Him. However, who appears as God's proxy, His incarnation? Until now, it has been Jesus. If there is the Lord who is to come, he will take the place of God's external form. What will Jesus' position become? He will be God's first son. Jesus will become God's son. (155-319, 1965.11.1)

CHAPTER FOUR

The Kingdom of Heaven

Section 1. Understanding the Kingdom of Heaven

1.1. The location of the Kingdom of Heaven

According to the Bible, the Kingdom of Heaven is in our heart. It is not at the end of the world, but in our heart. In what sort of abode does the heart dwell? It does not dwell in a place that harbors all the elements of death, but rather one that can overcome them and disseminate life.

The Kingdom of Heaven cannot be found in the physical world – it is not of this world. As such, it starts from the point where we actualize the visions of our heart. Finding that one place enables us to welcome the Kingdom of Heaven.

That being so, the Kingdom of Heaven is not coming through the end of the world, but rather through us establishing that starting point in our heart; it is like the fulcrum for balancing a pair of scales. The purpose of a scale is to become level, but it starts out tilting towards the right and not the left. It begins with a tilt to the right.

So, the Kingdom of Heaven begins from the heart. From where in the heart does the kingdom originate? It originates from the place where it can conquer the world. Even if the Kingdom of Heaven were to come externally, if our hearts were evil and could not harmonize with it, then that kingdom would be useless. Accordingly, the basis upon which we can welcome the Kingdom of Heaven is not something external, but rather, it is ourselves. We are the problem. The pillar – the fulcrum – that can support the Kingdom of Heaven is not our external environment, but our heart.

Jesus' disciples did not understand the reality of his teaching. In working to prepare a foundation of happiness for the coming Kingdom of Heaven, they had self-centered concerns for their position. Seeing this, Jesus fundamentally demolished this fallacy and taught that the Kingdom was in one's heart. Those who do not create the Kingdom within their hearts would be unable to contribute to Heaven even if placed in its environment. An irresolute heart cannot produce perfect action; perfect action arises only through absolute resolve.

Therefore, what matters is how much our mind yearns for goodness. While yearning for and striving to follow the path of historical goodness, we must overcome our circumstances, no matter how bloodstained and tearful they are.

However lonely the path of our struggles, we must not avoid the path. Rather, we must instead unswervingly blaze a trail with a mind to break through and move on. God's Kingdom begins from our resolution and determination to open up an environment for our body to unite with such a mind. Where the actions of the mind and body are separated, the Kingdom does not exist. Advancement towards the Kingdom begins where the mind and body are united. When they act separately, it will not come about.

In this sense, Jesus was teaching that the Kingdom would come about when we attain the self-governing character to advance with mind-body unity while ridding ourselves of the circumstances that would cause us to veer to the right or left.

The Kingdom does not come through the efforts of others but by our own efforts. Being fallen people, you must deny yourselves. If I cannot bring about the Kingdom by myself, it will then be done by someone else. If that happens, then I must unite with that person in order to reach the Kingdom. I would have to follow and keep in step with him. If he were to go east, I would have to follow. We should not think of going west if he goes east, or judge his actions. There should not be any criticism. (46-21, 1971.7.18)

Jesus said that the Kingdom of Heaven is within our heart. What kind of place is it? It is one centered on God's love – one where the environment is established centered on God's love. Then, what kind of people would reside in that realm? They should be those who are harmonized with the essence of God's love. Only such people can go there.

What kind of people are those who are harmonized with the essence of God's love? Those who are self-centered have no value. Those who can invest their lives, all their devotion, and everything they have for their partner can live continuously in the realm of God's love. Historically, great people and saints went that way. (46-36, 1971.7.18)

1.2. Christianity and heaven

Even if people attend church for one hundred years, if they still have a self-centered mind they will never get to heaven. They cannot receive salvation.

We need to know what kind of religion is a true religion, what kind of person is a true person, and what kind of nation is a true nation. (78-117, 1975.5.6)

In the spirit world, you will see that martyrs who died for the purpose of entering heaven did not actually get there. On the other hand, there were martyrs who were able to think, "Heavenly Father walked the path of suffering and shed blood to find me. I will follow any path in order to return His grace," and then died saying, "I am grateful for this moment of glory enabling me to participate in returning this grace;" only they could enter heaven. Such people did not die for their own sakes but for heaven and earth. If you think, "I will die like this in order to enter heaven," it

is dying for your own sake. Fallen people can never enter heaven through self-assertion. (41-353, 1971.2.18)

It is stated in the Bible, "Love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind. This is the first commandment." Those who do not abide by this commandment cannot enter heaven.

What is the second commandment? It is, "Love your neighbor as yourself." Those who love God first and their neighbor second are pious children. (198-258, 1990.2.4)

Can one go to heaven, by simply believing in a doctrine about Jesus, as many Christians say? If Jesus himself were not to fulfill the ideal as God's partner in love, even he would not go to Heaven. Can Jesus realize true love on his own? Even God could not do so. Therefore, Jesus must come again. Will he do it by coming on the clouds? The nation that can ponder and fathom the present reality will follow me. (176-209, 1988.5.9)

Many Christians today think they are saved and will go to heaven through a certain belief about Jesus. They say that each person goes to heaven by himself. Only a few say they want to take their father and mother with them to heaven. From now, religion should not just be for the salvation of individuals.

A true religion founded by God must be able to remain universal until the end. The ultimate religion all humankind desires would state that God does not want to have just individuals enter heaven. It should introduce heaven as being not just for individuals, but also for their mothers and fathers. When this thought is also introduced to, and understood by the tribal leaders, everyone will follow them into heaven. (41-341, 1971.2.18)

1.3. Jesus and paradise

Christians say, "Believe in Jesus and you will go to heaven," but who will go there? Will it be individuals by themselves? Until now, there was no religion that taught about going to heaven together with one's mother, father, and family. The religions that have existed until now gave priority to individual salvation. Yet a religion of a family's entry into heaven must emerge. Only when the concept of family salvation emerges can the doors of heaven be opened. The religions that have existed in the past were religions of individual salvation; they could be likened to like someone rope climbing alone. Thus, the religious world emphasized a life of celibacy. Having a family was akin to having enemies. Jesus said that one's family members were in this sense one's enemies.

After reaching the pinnacle, one should have dominion over the earth. Single men and women have to attend the Blessing Ceremony. Originally, the Kingdom of Heaven was the place God's sons and daughters would enter after getting married and receiving His love – the place unfallen humankind should originally have established.

Jesus went to the spirit world alone. That is why he went to paradise instead of heaven. Paradise is the waiting room before going to heaven; it is not the ideal Kingdom of Heaven that couples enter together with their family members. Therefore, Jesus has to come again to meet his bride, create a family and a people, and take them to heaven. To prepare for this purpose, God has had Jesus remain in paradise. Therefore, Jesus should come again into the world, prepare an internal principled foundation, and, then, enter heaven. These things are not done by guesswork or some vague rule of thumb.

In the future, your father and mother will be saved. The religion that can get every family into heaven and teach everyone the way of salvation can establish the nation. The nation cannot be established individually. Hence, Christianity has no nation of its own. It is a religion in which unmarried men and women create communities. You have met these Catholic priests and nuns haven't you?

In this world there are many countries where Christians reside but there is no country whose sovereign is a Christian leader, a priest or pastor. There is a stark separation. Christianity is a spiritual nation. Not having their own country on earth, many, many Christians have been killed. Had they had their own sovereign nation, it would have protected them from being killed.

Yet because they did not have their own nation, they were scattered abroad like vagrants and driven to their deaths. In the future, we should bring all Christians of the world together and through gaining that national sovereignty we should find our common home, country, and world. That is what Christians should do. (41-346, 1971.2.18)

Not once has God or Jesus found someone whose flesh and spirit are united, whom God could totally love. That is why Jesus is still praying in paradise.

Therefore, we should know the love of God, who seeks to fully embrace our spirit and flesh. Within such a realm, we must be able to govern all of creation, having justified ourselves as God's children. You must understand that such a world is the world of dominion and the garden of rest God desires to restore. Going back to the issue of our individual selves, we, who are destined to go through restoration, must wander about seeking a new truth. That time has arrived. In the future, the issue of a true view of life and of the universe will come to the fore. (5-49, 1958.12.14)

How is it that Jesus did not enter heaven? God created heaven for people who had not fallen. People can enter heaven only when they have reached the original standard of the Principle. Jesus had meant to save fallen humanity, stand with his spouse in the position of unfallen Adam and Eve as the parents of humankind, and enter heaven with his children. Yet he came and went alone. He had no children, and thus would not enter heaven, but went instead to paradise. He is waiting to enter heaven.

Thus, Jesus must return and find his bride. In the Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve originally were to get married and enter heaven. Despite the Fall of the progenitors of humanity, the rule by which Jesus must return to make the flowers bloom still stands.

By going alone, he could not enter heaven. Jesus must come again to loose on earth what was bound. Only then can he go to heaven. This is in line with what is stated in the Bible that what was bound has to be loosed on earth. (41-299, 1971.2.17)

Were it not for the Fall, heaven would have been a place to which God's only begotten son and daughter would have gone after creating His family and living in His love. Heaven is to be entered by families, not individuals. As Jesus did not form his family, he did not enter heaven and is in the waiting room, namely paradise, a place for preparing to enter heaven.

In that regard, heaven is vacant. We thus realize that God's providence for restoration has been a sorrowful history. God lost Adam and Eve. Yet it did not end merely with the loss of two individuals. The loss of Adam and Eve meant the loss of their clan. That clan would have expanded to become a race, nation, and world; but all these were lost. That being so, in losing Adam, God lost His kingdom centered on the kingship of heaven. He lost the heavenly race and tribe, and the heavenly man and woman – His only begotten son and daughter. (143-25, 1986.3.15)

1.4. Heart and heaven

What kind of place is heaven? It is where we can take pride in what we prepared during our life on earth, and in our life of attendance. Then what kind of people enters heaven? Is heaven a place for those who simply believe in the Lord and expect to receive blessings or who act only for the sake of receiving blessing? No. Heaven is the destination for those who live preparing their hearts to attend God, as well as those who can leave behind a life of attendance and joyfully move on, even if they were to die while preparing. There is resurrection there. The details of life do not appear there. How we should live from now on is the important question we should reflect upon in our life of attendance. (8-303, 1960.2.14)

Heaven is a place we cannot enter without a connection of heart. It is the original nation, the nation of original nature, which can govern everything. It is a nation that cannot be possessed based on some situation, but only by those who have a deep bond of heart. As such, Christianity is, ultimately speaking, is a religion where mutual sentiments are understood, rather than circumstances. The purpose of God's providence on earth is to make the foundation on which we can sing sharing our hearts beyond sharing circumstances.

What is the Fall? It is not a matter of God not being able to discuss His circumstances, but rather His heart. Coming in search of fallen humanity with the

heart of longing to meet His lost sons and daughters, yet not being able to find anyone who could share His heart, God has worked to find such people. That has been the history of salvation and the one sent to find such people is the Savior.

Before desiring heaven, we must desire to know God's heart; and before desiring to know God's heart, we must think about how we should conduct our lives. First, have a heart of attendance. Our original nature reveres and yearns for that which is sublime and precious. In spite of the Fall, our original heart wants to attend the sublime and precious heart of God. Therefore, those who have never been able to lead a heart-centered life of attendance have nothing to do with heaven.

To live a life of attendance we need preparation. After passing through a process of preparation, we need to then practice the life of attendance. Our destination, after preparing and practicing a life of attendance, is heaven. The destination of people who have attended with their hearts is heaven. Heaven is the world where we can be proud of our preparation for attendance and the life of attendance, and where we can actually demonstrate our accomplishments. It is our destiny to follow the course that advances toward the world of heavenly purpose.

From the day we were born with fallen lineage until the present day, there has not been even one day when all humankind attended God with a full heart. Before Adam and Eve fell, they grew according to the ideal of creation, but they never attended God based on a relationship of heart.

What is God's regret? It is that we, who were created to attend Him with our heart, fell into a position where we could not do so, and that God, who should have received heart-centered attendance, was left unattended. God was not anguished because there was nobody who believed in or knew Him. The grief of heaven and earth is that there was nobody who could attend or relate to God in heart. (8-290, 1960.2.14)

Today, many believers say that heaven will be established only through their own religion. This is a delusion. Many religions assert that heaven will be established through their founder's teachings. Considering just Christianity, we see that it is divided into scores of denominations. One denomination usually regards a church outside their denomination as heretical or satanic. If, in actual fact, they do this from a position authorized by God, there is no problem; however, if they do it for the sake of establishing their own denomination and for the sake of satisfying their desire to perpetuate it, then their motivation is not pure. Accordingly, all such denominations will perish. If the Unification Church were like that, then it would have to perish first.

In this regard, the first consideration of religion is not to realize God's Kingdom. That is not its primary purpose. Before the Kingdom emerges, a special nation that can inherit the Kingdom is needed. God prepared His chosen

people to establish such a nation. In history, this notion of a chosen nation proves that the leading trend of thought to leave behind a good group in the evil world was always in the background of history.

When the chosen people emerge from the evil world, the heavenly nation begins to be established. For that nation's citizens to emerge, its children should first emerge. Moreover, the emergence of the citizens, and the nation, is preceded by the emergence of the family that can establish the heavenly nation. For that family to emerge, the one man and one woman whom God can guarantee must emerge.

Then, only when such a man and woman emerge, is everything complete? No. Sons and daughters must emerge from them. In so doing, the family formed by the eternal son and daughter that God can guarantee must emerge. It is an extremely obvious fact that without such a family, the tribe and race cannot be realized; and without such a race, the nation and world cannot be realized.

The stronghold that God seeks is the individual. He is erecting a fence around the individual. Thus, the purpose of religion so far has been individual salvation, but that is not what God is seeking. It is the family. As such, before the foundation for the family of the Kingdom of Heaven has been established, the tribe, people, nation, and world of that Kingdom cannot exist. (47-249, 1971.8.29)

The line where heaven and hell are divided is not determined by knowing or preaching well from the Bible, but through actual results and heart. Ultimately, the boundary between heaven and hell is the boundary of heart and the boundary of actual results. (32-229, 1970.7.19)

1.5. The physical body and hell

Adam and Eve are the physical body of God. It is stated in I Corinthians 3, "Do you not know that you are God's temple?" So our body is a house where God can dwell. Such houses are not the bodies of today's fallen people. God does not want to reside within people who want to be saved simply by believing in doctrines about Jesus – those who have gone through the repair factory after breaking down. They should be people of the ideal of creation who have experienced pure first love, but we have departed from the realm of God's love.

What is hell? It refers to the devils' realm of love. Those in that realm only adore hatred, envy, jealousy, separation, and destruction and thus only these things are prevalent in their realm. These are manifested in wars. We must root out such devils.

What was the reason a nail was driven into God's heart? It was the devil coming into being, the fact of Satan's lineage being planted, the grievous fact of Satan's seed being planted, and the fact that the fruit of God's love bore Satan's family. The family that could have lived forever in God's love under His protection was destroyed by the appearance of Satan's family. Conversely, the fami-

lies centered on Satan's tribe spread all over the world. Now the world has about 180 countries. Countless tribes fought amongst each other and the weak were absorbed by the strong, so the number of countries was reduced to about 180. However, these countries must be unified into one according to God's will.

Where did Satan set up his base of operations? Even Satan knows God. As God is the source of the original nature of creation from whom Lucifer was originally created, he has a standard from which to reciprocate. From the human perspective, this original standard is the conscience. Whom does the conscience resemble? It resembles God. For that reason, we say that it is on God's side. Who does the body resemble? It resembles Satan, so we say that it is on Satan's side.

How much was the conscience sacrificed for the body? Your conscience becomes exhausted in caring for you day and night. Yet, tirelessly it blocks the body from misconduct. The closest being to you, which stands as the substitute for your parent, for God, and for your teacher, is your conscience. The mind itself does not need to be educated; but the body absolutely needs to be educated.

Therefore, following the dictates of your body connects you to hell, whereas following the dictates of your mind connects you to heaven. We are the dividing line between heaven and hell. Satan is straddling the thirty-eighth parallel dividing North and South Korea. Since God knew this, we are divided. If we die without separating good from evil, we will not be able to overcome our individual thirty-eighth parallel and will be blocked in the spirit world. The thirty-eighth parallels of the family and nation will all be blocked. Then, how will we cross over the thirty-eighth parallels of the world and universe? (214-281, 1991.2.3)

You must deplore the fact that your bodies have become the devil's ballrooms. They have become the love trysts of devils. Your bodies inherited the devil's lineage through his love. You should know this amazing fact that Satan's blood is controlling you with the realm of power in order to trample upon your original character in your bodies now. There is no way for even your countries to clear this up. You will have to do it yourselves.

What is religion? Its historical struggle is essentially to fight the root of sin. Yet despite fallen people being in a domain destined for hell and having become the devil's ballroom, some people still protest the effort of religion to save society.

You have to hate your corrupted self and your body. You should understand that the blood of the enemy is coursing through your bodies and that you cannot cut this off with a knife or burn it away. You have to realize the misery of having become factories that consume and digest creation from a position where you are unable to receive God's protection. (214-285, 1991.2.3)

From the viewpoint of the provi-

dence for restoration, if you think that the present time is the time that God's final will is to be expressed, then you should reflect upon yourselves whether you are living each moment seriously. Do not have the attitude that causes you to be swept back and forth by the affairs of the world. If you never even once stood in a serious position or never had even one serious moment, you will be ashamed of yourselves before God.

When you are close to death, when you reflect upon your life to this point, ask yourself this question: "How well have I kept the public laws of heaven and earth, and how well have I lived a life in a position that heaven and earth can approve of publicly?" If you conclude that your life consists of goodness not exceeding 60 percent, you will be heading for hell.

Although your body is limited, your mind should have a history of struggle, in which you were not willing to be limited. Before heaven and earth, before history and the present, and before your descendants, you should be able to proclaim, "I am liberated; so all people should inherit my tradition." If you did not have such a moment, you are to go to hell without mercy. (19-27, 1967.12.10)

The physical world is in chaos. Then, what about the spirit world? Since confused people go to the spirit world and gather there, it also cannot but be in chaos. People who develop the habit of stealing will always end up stealing something. Thus, people who stole on earth will naturally want to get something for nothing in the spirit world. As it was difficult to handle such people in the spirit world, hell came about.

God did not make hell. Hell came into being. People do not build their houses after making a trash can. It is after building the house that you come to have a trash can. It is the same with hell. Christians are unaware of the fundamentals. (148-27, 1986.10.4)

If you are living a false life, when will you clean it out? Don't you have such a mind? If one of your eyes loses its sight, you will have to remove it or cure it. You should be discerning. Since God exists, He must teach a method for correcting such things. That is why religion emerged.

God did not make hell out of jealousy or envy. Since false people appeared, hell became the warehouse to manage them. Do people build their houses after first making a trash can? If you bought good quality cabbage to make kimchi, but while making it you discovered the outer leaves had been eaten up by worms, you would dump it in the trash can. The Fall was committed by the progenitors of humanity.

Therefore, only someone having the qualification of the True Parents can liquidate sin by indemnifying this. (20-117, 1968.5.1)

Who is the highest grandfather in the universe? God. Then, who are the final descendants who unite this world and all of heaven and earth? The future descendants are. They have to be connected.

That which links them is the family, not the nation. In entering heaven, you will not be recognized just because you are American. You will not be rejected for being from an underdeveloped country. In heaven, only the model family that can connect the past, present, and future along with God's will, centering on this mainstream lineage and family institution, will be acknowledged. You should know that this is the formula. The warehouse, where the fruits of such families are stored, is heaven.

Until now, people who were born into this world were all destined for hell, because there was no condition whatsoever for God to be able to save them. They have been eaten by insects and worms and God could not avoid their becoming fodder for pigs or the like. He had no other option but to choose a place to store such people, and that place was hell. Hell and paradise do exist. In this regard, you know what I mean when I say that heaven is vacant. (135-118, 1985.10.4)

In the spirit world, people are allocated their proper dwellings according to their respective levels of achievement. How did they come to attain that? They stay in the position that corresponds to the degree they have practiced filial piety according to the way of love, whether they fulfilled their loyalty to their nation, and how much they fulfilled the way of saints in this world.

The path that people should take in their earthly life is the way of righteousness. Concerning this way, there is one path each for the individual, family, clan, race, nation, world, universe, and even for God Himself. This should be the one and only path. What is that path? It is the path of original love. (147-183, 1986.9.21)

In the other world, if you are not equipped to conform to the atmosphere where the ideal of love is present, a repulsive reaction will come against you. Nobody needs to tell you to go to hell. Therefore, the Bible states, "Love your enemy!" Genuine love exerts its influence on the enemy. If this love goes to the enemy once, twice, three times and four times, the enemy will disappear for sure. It is because love has such great power that Jesus said, "Love your enemy!"

Christians today think enemy refers to an individual enemy, but that is not the case. The enemy is the one who violates the law of love, which has infinite value. Who is Satan? He is an adulterer before God. I am saying this based on what I unearthed and discovered in the spirit world. I was called a heretic because I disclosed these things. People slandered me, calling me the king of heresy who is trying to destroy Christianity, and they called for my death. However, while I am still alive, those ministers who said all this have already died. Why is this so? The will of Heaven sustained me: I still have many things to do. (121-173, 1982.10.24)

Imagine you had a son who committed murder or some crime against the state and was sentenced to death. When

he goes to his execution, are you going to say, "It serves you right"? Are there such parents? You would rather cling to him and die together with him.

If such tragic deaths were to continue forever, do you think you could just watch without doing something? If he had to suffer an eternal death, then you would want to save him even if it took you all eternity. You would try to do everything possible in order to save him. In this sense, God suffers miserably.

When God sees humankind dying in hell, He becomes desperate in an ongoing effort to save them. Only then will His responsibility as the Parent of heaven be fulfilled. If He says, "Ugh! Let's just get rid of them all," He cannot stand in the parent's position. Therefore, this establishes the logic that God has to liberate even hell.

When your son sees you desperately trying to save him, he will say, "Mom and Dad are having such a hard time because of me!" and repent thousands of times for his sins. If you are such parents, your son will come to repent till his bones melt and his flesh becomes haggard. Because of your efforts, such a way can open up.

Not even Satan can accuse God for His love in trying to save humankind. There is no rule preventing forgiveness for the one who repents through the love of his parents. Hell must also be liberated through this kind of heart. That is the way of a true filial child, isn't it? Therefore, we in the Unification Church speak of saving even hell. Why? It is because God is such a being. (62-50, 1972.9.10)

Hell is a place you can never escape from once you are caught. Despite that, you are not realizing that your mother, father and relatives are going to hell. You just think, "It will work out somehow." However, let's think seriously that your beloved parents are really going to hell. If your parents were to go to jail in this world, human nature is such that you would cry and do all sorts of things to have them released. Then, even more so, if you feel that your sons and daughters, parents and relatives, brothers and sisters – with whom you have bonds made in heaven – were going to go to a prison from which they would never be set free forever, how could you have such a casual thought?

You do not know anything yet. You do not know whether there really is a hell or not. It might exist but you do not know what kind of place it is. You probably are not convinced and it must be vague to you, but once you die, you will know. Once you die, you will know in an instant, but it will be too late then.

That is why the parents who died are now returning spiritually to witness to their children. During their lifetimes, they opposed their son or daughter attending the Unification Church. However, once in the spirit world, they found out that they had made a big mistake. So, they are coming to this world spiritually and are eager to lead people to the church. If they do not do this, they will be in difficulty once in the spirit world. If you oppose your son attending the Unification Church, you will be in trouble in the eternal stage of life.

Therefore, in the spirit world, spirit beings devote themselves entirely to receiving permission to become good spirits in order to appear to and to teach their children on earth. Not just any can appear freely. When people on earth experience this phenomenon they will realize what an amazing place the Unification Church is. Can you imagine how totally dumbfounded they will be!

People may say that the Unification Church is a place where people just come and go, but that is not the case. If you draw a line here, that line will stay drawn forever. If this door is closed, nobody can open it again for eternity. If it is opened, nobody can ever close it again. What is bound on earth should be loosed on earth, you should loose yourselves what you bind. This is the problem. Therefore, when you go witnessing, do not wander off to other places. (34-266, 1970.9.13)

1.6. Even people in hell long for heaven

Suppose there is a dying person who says, "God, though I did not live according to Your will until now, in my mind I tried to go to heaven. So please regard me as having established the proper indemnity conditions!" Because God is fair, He will put that person in a position of those trying to go to heaven. In what position will God place him? Since the person was trying to go to heaven, God will put him in such a position. God rewards him according to his actions. God put him in a position where he is still trying to go to heaven. That position can be even beneath paradise. Even people in hell are trying to go to heaven. (57-264, 1972.6.4)

1.7. God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven

In order for the individual to find rest, the realm of the Sabbath for the family has to be created; in other words, a fence surrounding the family has to be made. In order for the family to find rest, a fence surrounding the tribe has to be made. If there is no fence, they can always be invaded. In order for the tribe to rest, a fence surrounding the race has to be made. In order for the race to rest, a fence surrounding the nation has to be made. Then, in order for the nation to rest, a fence surrounding the world has to be made. Thus, a time will come when we can find rest within the fence surrounding our nation and world. In order for the world to rest, the spiritual and physical worlds must be united and a fence has to be established. After that, God's Kingdom on earth can for the first time be accomplished, in which His love can spread all over the world, and His kingdom in heaven is accomplished automatically. (68-20, 1973.7.23)

The place where we want to live is the heavenly nation. There are no borders there. It does not use two languages. Racial differences do not exist there. People are all brothers and sisters because they all were born from God's bosom. In God's eyes, as His children, they are all siblings and therefore all citizens of His

kingdom on earth. They are the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth.

There are three prerequisites for forming a nation: sovereignty, territory, and citizenry. In relation to that, this world could not come under God's rule. The earth could not become God's nation, and the citizens of the world could not become the citizens of one nation. We talk about the Kingdom of Heaven, but it is established after these conditions are met. Since this has not been realized, the struggle between Cain and Abel continues, and we cannot rest.

We want to live – not in the process of restoration – but rather in the Kingdom of Heaven. Therefore, our desire to realize the Kingdom is about preparing our abode. Our abode will come into being only when the Kingdom is established. If we cannot establish it, our descendants will always be an oppressed race. We must devote ourselves to the utmost so as to become ancestors who do not burden their posterity. (66-281, 1973.5.16)

To get to heaven, we must go through the process of obtaining the qualification of God's sinless sons and daughters who can receive His love directly, transcending the need to believe in Jesus and the need for a savior. God's ideal kingdom will be realized when those who lived that way go to the spirit world.

Jesus has yet to see a lineage of his own. Consequently, he must return to dissolve that anguish and complete his unfinished work. Otherwise, we cannot enter heaven. Where are the conditions to open the Kingdom of Heaven? The conditions are laid on earth. For that reason, Jesus left the key to the Kingdom of Heaven on earth.

Since Jesus and the twelve apostles did not form their families, the families of the seventy disciples and 120 followers have to be restored, through the Blessed Families of the Unification Church today. If that is done, the Kingdom of Heaven will be opened. (160-89, 1968.8.11)

After creating Adam and Eve, God was waiting for them to mature so that He could celebrate their wedding feast. But because they fell, His will was not fulfilled; and they became false parents. Four millennia later, the standard of the True Parents – lost due to the inception of the false parents – should have been restored through the marriage of Jesus, who stood in an unfallen position, and his bride.

The sons and daughters born from true parents are not false children but true children. From them, the true family can emerge. With the emergence of a true family, a true tribe, a true race, a true nation, and a true world will be created. In that world, we will lead a God-centered heavenly lifestyle in the family, tribe, people and world. Only then can this earth become God's Kingdom.

After living in this way, we will discard our bodies on earth and enter eternal heaven. That place is heaven in the spirit world. This is the overview of God's providence. All people on earth were born with Satan's lineage, as opposed to God's lineage. Therefore,

according to Romans, Chapter 8, they could call God Father in the position of adopted children. Being of a different lineage, they can call God Father by laying down a bridge, without which they cannot directly do so. Yet only Jesus had the relationship of the direct lineage of God. Thus, he was called the only begotten son. (160-42, 1968.8.11)

When the day of the Second Advent arrives, a new ideal realm should be created, not in heaven, but at the bottom of paradise and hell. There, Cain and Abel will be restored, and God's realm of the new family will be created. Everybody on earth must be restored through indemnity through the realization of the realms of God's new tribe, new race, new nation, and new world. Cain and Abel must be restored, all things must be absorbed and digested, and then a unified world on the earth must be created; failing which, there would be no way of dissolving the anguish and completing the unfinished work by fulfilling God's desire of creating the heavenly nation.

That is why Jesus said, "Whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven." God's Kingdom will not be established in heaven without it being established on earth. This indicates there is some extraordinary circumstance, and that without establishing on earth the sovereignty of the heavenly nation, the good sovereignty cannot be recovered in the spirit world. (143- 29, 1986.3.15)

Do not think of only going to heaven, but, also of building heaven on earth. Before that, you yourselves must become heavenly people. To do this, you must become one in heart with the Father to the extent that you can confidently say that His heart is yours and yours is His. Accordingly, in this earthly life, you should be people representing the hearts of God, the Lord, as well as your ancestors. Only by doing so can you solve all historical problems. (3-294, 1958.1.19)

1.8. The right view of heaven

No matter how strong a storm and wind may come, even if you are destroyed and dying, you should have a firm and resolute conviction, saying, "At least this conviction is absolute. If there is anything wrong, the fault lies with me, but God's will is absolutely right." It would be exceedingly foolish of you to dream of heaven while maintaining a faith wherein your belief in the morning is different from that in the evening.

What kind of path is the path by which you can approach heaven? It does not appear in a self-centered position. When you find that you are far away from heaven, you have to smash that which is called the self to pieces. Only when you denounce the self, will the path that can open up to heaven – or an indirect heaven – be opened.

However, those who try to make others adapt to themselves while asserting themselves, or place themselves in a proactive position and force others to follow them, will be unable to relate to heaven.

It is obvious that the realization of the Kingdom of Heaven starts with us. Even if the relational Kingdom were established, if we could not become people who are responsive to that Kingdom's call, we would have nothing to do with that Kingdom.

What kind of place is heaven? It is the place we go after subjugating Satan. It is not where we go by overcoming ourselves, or just the self. Heaven cannot countenance the realm of the fallen world or our habits or the habitual circumstances of the fallen world. As Satan chronically controls our habits and resides here, heaven can come only after we overcome those circumstances. Heaven will be realized at the place that mutually contradicts the contents of Satan's world. If any remnant remained, it could not be heaven. If such a place bore the name heaven, it would be nothing but a deception.

The concept of heaven can be established from the position of subjugating Satan, of denying and, further, eliminating everything to which he can relate. Heaven is affirmed on the basis of having denied and removed the negative historic relics of Satan and all the contents of a satanic lifestyle. Without removing those, we cannot present the contents of heaven.

Heaven is such a valuable thing. Although described as being aligned to the absolute standard, there is too much confusion over our concept of it. People are longing for heaven from an extremely self-centered standpoint. There is no doubt about that. Only when we overcome these circumstances with absolute faith, can the Kingdom of Heaven emerge; yet that alone will not settle the Kingdom. It will be realized only when we subjugate Satan, who brought God hardships for millennia and deceived humanity.

There can be no two ways about it. God's Kingdom cannot be realized through just submissively going along by faith. It can never be realized by having only a believing heart. Since Satan always challenges us to battle, the Kingdom is realized through overcoming that course of struggle. Here, we need sovereignty and numerous citizens. A large number of families should create a state system and overcome this battle for the sake of one purpose. In God's position, they must be able to be in harmony and unison anytime, anywhere, with their subject partner without any conflict. We may be able to feel in our mind the Kingdom of Heaven at the place where we are prepared to die and where we have faith, but that is not the substantial Kingdom. Even though a great price of martyrdom and suffering has been paid through the past two millennia, the Kingdom has not been accomplished in the sphere of reality. Thus, the Kingdom is not something that simply comes into being.

In the biblical phrase, "Love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your mind," the Lord refers to one who is unforgettable and eternal. He is a being of absolute content. The Kingdom does not come through our believing in the Lord God, but through our loving Him. The

Father's will is fulfilled not only by faith, but by love.

We need to realize how much our faith falls short and how far it has deviated from the Principle up to this time. Some of you may be here for the first time. With regard to the individual, you cannot go to a place where you can receive consolation. Although the Kingdom might exist in your minds and although God may have felt joy from you, that would not mean it has been established on earth. It might be an individual Kingdom of Heaven, but it would not be the Kingdom of Heaven in its entirety.

What God desires is not the individual Kingdom of Heaven. He does not rejoice over seeing its realization. Can we say that the Kingdom of Heaven is established just by seeing one person's joy? God sent Jesus Christ – the one person over whom He could rejoice – to the earth, to be the center for all nations to connect horizontally in seeking the Kingdom in its entirety. He thus sent the Messiah to the earth and sacrificed him. (46-74, 1971.7.25)

Section 2. Preparing to Go to Heaven

2.1. The stronghold of heaven

The closer we are to the truth, and the more we come under its spell, the more it will become our center which nobody can snatch from us. Even if the earth were to fall into chaos millions of times and the universe were suddenly destroyed, people whose minds are securely centered on the truth will never be changed or shaken.

However, if you cannot be prepared to accept such a center in your heart, however genuine a truth may appear, you would not recognize it. Even if true life appeared, you would not be able to know it. Even if true love appeared, you would not be able to understand it.

If today's Christianity is seeking genuine truth, true life, and true love, it must completely deny itself to the end and become a religion that establishes the mind's center that nobody could snatch away.

When new continents were being discovered, it seemed the earth was gradually expanding. Now, however, the earth seems to be shrinking day by day. In other words, when civilization was not developed the world seemed huge, but as history and civilization developed, the world seemed to be gradually shrinking. In this regard, we can know that the ideal world, realized through the history of the truth, will be of the universal era when everything is forming direct ties with us.

Our standard as the citizens of heaven – that is, the life and love of the Kingdom of Heaven – must bear fruit within us. Because truth, life, and love are like one family, love and life should necessarily follow truth. Life and truth should necessarily follow love. And likewise, love and truth should necessarily follow life.

Why are truth, love, and life connected to one another in this manner? As you know, in order for a thing to exist,

there should be above and below, front and back, and right and left, centering on it. No existing thing can escape the realm of the number three. This is the fundamental form of existence.

Likewise, these three elements get together and make the unified form. However, if a force proceeds in the reverse way, an action of the force different from the original one occurs. Accordingly, God is the origin of love, life, and truth. Yet after the Fall, people failed to form a triangle that holds love, life and truth in equilibrium. Thus, God could not fulfill His will. (2-133, 1957.3.17)

The disciples following Jesus thought that he would dominate the Roman Empire instantly and become the king of Israel, and that they would come to hold high positions. Such things are not an issue. First of all, we have to make the foundation for God's Kingdom within our mind. And then, centering on that mind, we should make the foundation for unity between our body and God. This is the foremost issue. The Kingdom begins from us. Hence, our mind is its stronghold. (47-272, 1971.8.29)

Where is the stronghold of God's Kingdom? Many Christians say, "I believe in Jesus so I'm going to heaven." Then where is that stronghold? When Peter asked, "Where is the Kingdom of Heaven?" Jesus answered, "It is not in heaven but in your heart," so where is that stronghold located? Can it be formed by a sad heart, or by a self-aggrandizing mind, or by a mind that denies society? Those are not the strongholds of the content we desire or of the Kingdom that God can endorse.

People seeking the stronghold of God's Kingdom must meet with solitude more than anyone else on earth. Why? As God is solitary, they too must be solitary; and since God has undergone the history of subjugation, they too must undergo subjugation.

Then, if people were to just feel sad, repent and shed tears of lamentation because heaven and earth are filled with sadness, can that become the stronghold of God's Kingdom? Even that cannot. When serving the church, while desiring the time of being blessed anew with joy, we must be able to be determined to solve the problems of sin and evil in this world. Without a single direction of determination to bear that responsibility, the stronghold of heaven cannot exist.

Some people confidently assert that – because they are conscientious and have a respectable social position – the Kingdom of Heaven starts from them. That thinking is based on their understanding that good and evil begin together. Yet good and evil cannot start simultaneously. When evil goes east, good must go west, and when evil moves, good has to stop. Moreover, when evil has a desire, good must not have it. Good and evil are opposites.

The search for the heavenly nation started from the point where God lost all His hope in relation to the world of humankind. Thus, people who are satisfied with their present lives cannot

be truly religious people. When confronted by the intersecting fortunes of life and death, which cause you to sink into despair, losing the meaning of your existence, you should not be excessively attached to your habitual lifestyle, but instead proceed to seek new values, denying even your life. By proceeding in this way true goodness can start.

Viewed from this standpoint, are there people who can confidently say that their character is the stronghold of heaven? None. There is also no one who can insist that their family is the stronghold of heaven. There is no one who could claim that God, if He existed, could not say that He did not recognize their family. No tribe can insist that God must recognize it because of their good achievements. There are no races, nations, ideologies or philosophies that can demand God's recognition. When I think about this, I am dumbfounded.

Therefore, while the one who wants to die will live, the one who wants to live will die. Then what does that mean? Those who work to protect themselves from the evil world for more than a millennium can dream such a dream, and only those who gratefully sacrifice themselves for more than ten thousand years can find hope to live for ten thousand years.

Likewise, those who cry out for eternal life, eternal happiness, and the eternal Kingdom of Heaven must overcome the current situation with eternity as their goal, and they must surmount with endurance the present point in time, sacrificing themselves. Only from such a standpoint can the eternal stronghold emerge. (47-247, 1971.8.29)

2.2. The standard for going to heaven

Without loving God, we cannot free ourselves from the satanic realm. Thus, we must love Him more than our spouse. From the snares of love within the satanic realm, fallen people have emerged as far as the edge of that realm, but they have yet to come out of it completely. Hence, we cannot love our parents more than God. (41-299, 1971.2.17)

What kind of people can enter heaven? First of all, those people who are in harmony with God's mind. To what extent are they harmonized? As God works towards the eternal ideal based on His eternal purpose, our minds must be in harmony with His for eternity, not just for a decade. Our minds must be eternally in harmony with the eternal God. To achieve that, what must we do? We must become the children who can eternally like and be liked by God. To become such children, we should not appear as objects of sadness.

Next, we must be in step with God's body. Here, 'body' means direction. While thoughts represent the central point of all directions, the body is manifested by the direction it takes. To be children in step with God, when He goes east, we must go east with Him. If God liked something warm, but Jesus liked something cold, would it be right? If He wanted to laugh and chat, and Jesus

wanted to sleep, would it be right? Everything manifested through the external body must be in step.

Would everything be all right with just that? No. When God is being amiable, we should not be hot-tempered. If He is amiable, we should also be amiable. The internal and external must match. Would that alone make everything work out?

Next, we must do things that are in line with God's will. For that to happen can there be things we are reluctant to do? Can there be things that our bodies detest? We must do things that both our mind and body like to do. As God exists, there must be things that He likes. Also, as Jesus is God's Son, he also has to like such things. (47-255, 1971.8.29)

We can never go to heaven without sacrificing our lives. If you could go there you would see for yourselves whether anyone there did not do that. That is how it is with the essence of faith. (37-248, 1970.12.27)

2.3. The starting point of the Kingdom of Heaven

From where can the Kingdom of Heaven begin? Without dissolving God's anguish, we cannot enter heaven. Since we have woven a history of sorrow since the Fall, we must restore all its ties. All the ties of the six millennia since Adam and Eve have to be restored. The Unification Church Principle teaches about a God of such sorrow.

Secular people detest sorrow and run away from it. The Unification Church Principle teaches about God's sorrow, which is more miserable than any other sorrowful situation. If something sorrowful happened in the world, most people would avoid it and run away from it, but the motto of the Unification Church Principle is to go through such places of sorrow.

All people in the world try to avoid sorrow, but they are originally not supposed to be like that. The more we understand God's sorrow and the contents of His misery, the stronger the force that actually emerges in the Unification Church to dissolve His anguish. That force becomes the motive of unlimited explosive action. This is the great force of the Unification Church. (21-112, 1968.11.17)

2.4. The essence of the Kingdom of Heaven

What kind of world is the Kingdom of Heaven? As it is the original world, individuals, families and tribes accused by Satan cannot go there. To enter heaven, these must all become one – in other words, three generations must become one. In Adam's family, Adam was the first generation, Cain and Abel the second, and their children the third. These three generations were to become one. From God's standpoint, He was the first generation, Adam and Eve, the second, and Cain and Abel, the third. (21-54, 1968.9.1)

As heaven is the world of living for

others, we must go forth making that notion our first consideration. Those who have the idea of being served will be destroyed.

Heaven is the world filled with God's love. The essence of love is not to be served, but rather to live for the sake of all. Thus, heaven differs from the secular world.

The religious teachings of living for the sake of others, being absolutely obedient, sacrificing, and serving, do not exist in the secular world. They are perceived as games played by groups of beggars who know nothing of this world. Yet this was God's secret strategy against Satan so that people could be blessed even if they were ignorant of heaven's laws. (46-40, 1971.7.18)

2.5. The framework of the Kingdom of Heaven

We have not restored the original homeland. As such, we have lost the homeland of our original hometown, by which we mean God's Kingdom on earth. When speaking of God's Kingdom, we are referring to that which is on earth and that which is in heaven.

Three major elements are required to establish a nation: first sovereignty, next territory, and then citizenry.

Yet God has no sovereignty over which He can govern. He has no people whom He can govern. This amounts to not having a homeland. This is not the world in which original people should live. (155-25, 1964.10.6)

Section 3. The Prerequisites and Conditions for Going to Heaven

3.1. The prerequisites for going to heaven

3. 1. 1. Suffering is needed

What remains forever is the suffering you underwent in leading a public life. If you undergo such suffering and subsequently face ruin in the spirit world, it will be all right to confront me with the matter. Those who are beaten up while working for the sake of the race, the world, and the cosmos, are wise people. (19-29, 1967.12.10)

If the person responsible for a nation were captured by the enemy and then given preferential treatment, his people would scatter. If instead, he suffered a miserable death his people would be inspired to remain together. We can, therefore, create unity with the spirit world by going through difficulties. The more we suffer, the more the spirit world will relate to us and stand together with us.

If we just carry on in a casual way, the spirit world will do the same. In this sense, God unfolds His strategy through Satan and He lets us suffer unrelentingly. Sometimes He lets us get killed. Death itself is pitiful, but the reaction creates unity. (49-108, 1971.10.9)

Those who wish to enter heaven must live, die and depart miserably. Are these good words or bad words? They are good

words. The words, "Go out and die witnessing to people!" are also good words. Die for the sake of others. If you die, not for yourselves, but for others, for the world and the universe, you will be raised up as masters of the great universe.

The creation, human beings and God are very precious. Those who sacrificed and risked their lives to embrace the world from the position of goodness are essentially sacrificing for the sake of those three precious things. God has to compensate them with something more precious than that which they sacrificed. From such a standpoint, Jesus proclaimed, "Your family members are your enemies," and "Those who seek to die shall live, while those who seek to live shall die." Otherwise, people cannot go to heaven. This lesson from Jesus was the most blessed lesson. It was the most dear and most precious lesson. It was the most indispensable and absolute gospel.

Thus, the Unification Church does not teach us to live rich and comfortable lives on earth. We may live exceedingly poor lives and undergo unbearable hardships, and die on the streets so that even dogs avert their eyes from our corpses, but the day will come when flowers will blossom at the place of our death. At that place every holy person will gather to create a capital city. My thought is to have Unification Church members undergo tremendous hardships for the nation and world in order to make them devoted children and loyal subjects of God. I shall chastise those who are unwilling to go. Pushing you to overcome your current tragic situations and difficulties, even if it requires kicking you, is a sign of my love for you.

Jesus' first commandment, not his second, therefore is: "Love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind!" Jesus' second commandment is, "Love your neighbor as yourself!" Who is your neighbor? The people of the world are your siblings and neighbors. You have to invest your heart and soul, and offer your life for the people of the world. If you do so at the risk of your life, you will have done your work. Die once for God's will.

Where shall we die? We must find the place of our death. If you were born as a bomb, you should be dropped on rocks and explode cleanly. Do not waste your energy in a sewer. Consider yourself as a bomb already released; your goal is to land on a rock. As formidable beings, pit your strength against that of formidable enemies. Because I made such a resolution, though past fifty, I have not yet complained about the long distance to cover and I do not hesitate to keep going.

In order to realize the hope of tomorrow you should devote yourselves while shedding tears. You should exert your entire effort and mind, passion and devotion. My mainstream thought, as the founder of the Unification Church, is to go forward without regard for my life in order to create that one point of unification that can correspond to this goal. Adventure can be experienced both on and off this path.

We are now unfolding a ruthless and

bloody fight. If a foundation for which you risked your life survives, it will be a model for history, and a foundation for the happiness of the world's people. The entire universe will regard that foundation as the starting point of harmony. It will be a point for an axis and the unfolding of a great movement, a place which could move God and bind together the hope of humanity. Those who live in such a place will feel the cosmic responsibility; they will make everything stand still during their times of inaction and activate everything during their times of action. They will never be small-minded people. (49-303, 1971.10.17)

Those who are on the way of truth should walk the path of death until the day they die.

We need to go that way during our lifetime in order to indemnify the suffering, which would normally have to be paid after death. Through suffering on earth we can reduce the period of atonement necessary after death, and that period can be measured in eons. We are walking the way of truth on earth to indemnify the suffering course that otherwise would be walked for eternity. (31-320, 1970.6.7)

3.1.2. We need love

We go to heaven on the tracks of love. When I explain it like this, doesn't it seem real? The line of love will not become thin when pulled, as a rubber band does. Where a rubber band becomes thinner the more it is pulled, the more the line of love is pulled, the thicker it becomes.

In this sense, becoming the number one person of suffering for the sake of God's will is the secret method to occupy the world. The most suffering person monopolizes the glory of the Kingdom of Heaven. (57-162, 1972.5.31)

Religious people today say, "Let's go to heaven!" But how can they expect to go there so easily? They must first receive heaven on earth before going to heaven after death. In order to receive heaven on earth, they must go through the law of love.

The more children you have in your family, the greater the cross you shoulder, and the more you must love God's Kingdom. Many children are sent to your family because your family has to carry many crosses, and such a family thus has many responsibilities to sacrifice more for the nation. Upon knowing this, you should fulfill your responsibility completely. A family living to such a standard will give birth to children who can inherit good fortune in the generations to come. (32-232, 1970.7.19)

How can we go to heaven? We can go to heaven by being passionately in love with God. We must love Him more than Adam and Eve did. We must love Jesus more than Peter, James and John did. Without that passionate commitment, the realm of the partner of true love, the realm in which God can love us, cannot be restored. Only when this is restored will all go well.

Don't worry about not having money

or children. If you continue on this path for ten or twenty years, you'll be able to scale the very high and steep mountains. You may feel that you are going through hardships in vain and gradually descending, but actually you are gradually ascending. The Unification Church expands by being struck. In a family of ten, the one who is opposed by the others, and endures, living for the sake of the public purpose, can become the head of that family. Such a person can become a lord in the heavenly nation. (142-289, 1986.3.13)

You must be able to embrace the children and grandchildren of all five races and their grandchildren. So, you must become the head of the family that loves the world's people as true parents with God's true love. By embracing the children and grandchildren of all races, you become a spiritual leader or true parents of a family that loves the world's people with God's true love. By standing in a position in which you can represent the family standard of true love, in a relationship with the original parents centered on God's love, can you enter heaven for the first time.

To enter heaven, we must be one with the true love of God and True Parents. Our destination is heaven, but only after we have lived on earth with the children born of that blood relationship. Until now, not one person has lived such a life and gone to heaven. Consequently, heaven is vacant. (176-209, 1988.5.9)

The way to heaven is opened by loving your siblings as God does. As you strive to follow my standard you should strive to bring your siblings with you. The conclusion is that it is your siblings who lead you to the highest, quickest and best way to heaven, not God or me (66-125, 1973.4.18)

Will you all head toward a global heaven or an individual one? You say a global heaven. I, too, am ambitious to grasp the line of love that leads to the global heaven. For forty years I have been going this way enduring persecution. I have been working in this manner in order to grasp the line of love transcending the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. With this in my grasp, where will I go? We must return to our hometown after finding the global love line. We must go there because we received many blessings and succeeded in life. Shouldn't we return and save the unfortunate people there? (143-139, 1986.3.17)

3.1.3. Actual results are needed

In the past, by praying and devoting themselves, people could meet the founder of a religion for that moment only, but then they had to separate because the founder had to ascend to the spirit world. Yet now the time has come when all spirit people can return to earth, centering on the realm of religion. With the advent of such an era, you cannot go to heaven without obtaining the actual results that will enable you to move the past, present and future. The

past was the era of angels and good spirits. The present is the era of the parents. The future is God's era. In conclusion, those who lack the actual result for mobilizing the spirit world, one's own parents as well as God, cannot enter heaven. This is the same way that the angels and God moved to help Adam and Eve. After that, Adam and Eve had to move the universe themselves.

Thus, only those who control the three worlds of past, present and future, centering on God, can enter heaven. Only then can they go to the original world, the Kingdom of Heaven. (161-199, 1987.2.3)

The condition enabling you to go to heaven is to love God more than your own children. You must love the Lord more than your own spouse. You must love the Holy Spirit more than yourself. That's the oneness of the Trinity. (10-99, 1960.7.17)

Then, who can enter and live in the heavenly nation? Sons and daughters who have brought joy to God can enter and live there. After that which we term the Fall took place, humanity has increased and multiplied through the millennia of history. From the midst of this humanity thus multiplied, none were born on earth who brought joy to God. (143-23, 1986.3.15)

You might hope to go to heaven by believing in the Unification Church. However, if you did not bring actual results on earth and you were allowed into heaven, you would feel ashamed. We are not the group that seeks to go to heaven through a conceptual life of faith. We are the group that seeks to build the Kingdom of Heaven with all our heart and efforts. Those who seek to oppose and prevent that cannot be forgiven. In order to build the Kingdom, we must invest our entire mind and body as well as all our belongings and even our surroundings. We must take responsibility for the destiny not only of the nation, but also of even Asia. (22-226, 1969.5.2)

3.1.4. Altruism is needed

If you are fifty and have lived for the universe in accordance with heavenly ethics for over 25 years, you can go to heaven. In going to the next world, you can stay in the good spirit world. However, those who lived putting themselves first more often than not, you will be sad to hear, will go not to the original homeland of goodness, but rather to the land of evil and the world of egoism. Such a place is hell. You have to know these facts and from here forward liquidate your past life of selfishness. You should make efforts the rest of your life to live for the sake of the nation, world, universe and God. If you do this, without a doubt you will go forward into the ideal world of heaven and not into hell. (78-117, 1975.5.6)

I have experienced the reality of the spirit world more than anyone else. It is my field of specialization. What is the origin of order in the spirit world? Heav-

en is a world based on the principle of living for the sake of others. That is our original homeland.

We are destined to go to the spirit world whether we like it or not. This is our path of life. We are like wanderers moving ever closer toward that destination. Then what becomes the issue is whether we have lived more for others or ourselves. According to that distinction, those who lived predominantly for others will go to heaven. Those who lived the opposite way will go to hell.

You may not want to believe this fundamental formula in your present situation, but when you die you will come to understand.

God has set up religions and worked through them providentially to save humankind. The higher the level of these religions, the more their teachings should be in conformity with the purpose and principles of the original homeland. At such a level they can do nothing but recommend sacrifice and service.

In this way, there is no denying the fact that God has been working providentially behind history and religion. In light of these principles, we come to the conclusion that religions that serve other religions will prosper. However, those that seek to take a leadership position, and give rise to global problems by being self-centered, will decline. (74-51, 1974.11.27)

Heaven is a world of love, of living for God's sake, of existing for the sake of God, the central being. (98-33, 1978.4.8)

3.2. The lifestyle that enables us to go to heaven

3.2.1. Our position

God created people to participate in His love. Their path of life was to start in God's love, grow and mature in His love, form families and become perfected bodies of love. They would connect with the love of the world and in this way return to God's bosom of love.

Due to the Fall, this path was fundamentally destroyed. The relationship between God and humankind was severed. A gap between God and humankind was created such that no amount of human effort would allow the return to God. Similarly, no matter how much God tried to come to humankind, He could not. A wall and boundary were created and neither God nor humanity was able to surmount that wall. Humanity was not able to attend God as their parent.

This wall came in and remained between the individual's mind and body, and between husband and wife.

Such walls also arose in the family, tribe, people, nation, world, and between heaven and hell in the spirit world. Although God is on His glorious throne in heaven, we on earth cannot surmount the walls surrounding us without removing them.

This is the tragedy of people living on earth. How can we do away with it? Despite the fact that people are meant to live attending God as their Parent and be guided by Him in all aspects of their

lives, they either do not know He exists, or they declare that He definitely does not exist. They even say, "God is dead. We'll have to sweep Him out of our world." Such a tragic and historic situation is unfolding within the world in which we live. (135-267, 1985.12.15)

3.2.2. Instances of not being able to go to heaven

What should be our motivation: God's will or ours? Our self should not become the motivation. Yet in many cases, people today often derive their motivation from the self rather than God's will. Whereas God's will calls us to go the way of suffering, the self seeks to run counter to it. These are conflicting positions. When God's will tells us to go right, the self wants to go left. You try to justify yourselves by saying, "I had a harder time than anyone else since joining the Unification Church."

Those who try to make excuses for themselves cannot enter heaven. The position of absolute faith is not a place where you can make excuses. There is not a word of excuse you can offer, but other people will come to you with their excuses. Even though you have done well, you cannot be proud of your achievements. What we can recognize as a hundred percent might be just one percent from God's viewpoint. What we recognize as a hundred may be just one to Him. Thus, self-centered people cannot go to heaven.

From where does heaven begin? Heaven begins from the point of having absolute faith. This means not being able to assert oneself. It is the place of absolute self-denial, without which absolute faith cannot emerge. In connection with life's fundamental problems, most people today go about their daily routine. They wake up in the morning, go through life eating and say, "I am okay with God." Many people believe that, but such people cannot own heaven. They cannot be okay with God. Without a relationship that can be officially recognized, you cannot even have an absolute standard of faith. Without having obtained this prerequisite standard, which must be surpassed in order to realize the Kingdom of Heaven, how can that Kingdom be achieved? There is not a chance. Why not? It is because Satan remains in that place. (46-79, 1971.7.25)

Historically, those called by God were usually over the age of fifty or sixty. They were a bunch of old hardened souls just a step from the grave and close to the day their dirges would be sung. In the background of His providence, God was working with these hardened and withered people at that time. But He also knew that in the future, He would work with people in their prime. He was concerned about how to develop the providence with them. Embracing such circumstances, God has walked the course of history.

Old age must pass into the prime of life, the prime of life into youth, youth into childhood, and childhood into infancy. In such a way, you must be born again. Otherwise you will not be

able to go to heaven. You must be able to receive affection like pure and innocent children. That is why Jesus said to Nicodemus, "You must be born again." You must be born again, namely reborn. God carried out His work of redemption from the mother's womb as the final dispensation. What an amazing situation it is! (20-94, 1968.4.28)

3.2.3. Our life for the sake of Kingdom of Heaven

If two-thirds of your life of seventy or eighty years were sorrowful, how would you handle that period? You should make it a joyful life centering on God. You should make it the Kingdom of Heaven where one gives and gives again. God also has to give. Parents must give to their children. Wanting to give and give again when you have something better to give is the heart of a parent. (34-141, 1970.8.30)

You are now fighting. You are firing guns all your life. Before meeting the world, your mind and body are fighting each other. How do you pacify them? Which side will be victorious, your mind or your body? You should be people who can say, "My mind will be victorious without a doubt." Those whose minds are victorious are on the side of good. Those whose bodies are victorious are on the side of evil. Then, in the battlefield where the mind and body are fighting, what is the secret method for the mind to defeat the body? Or conversely, what is the method by which the body defeats the mind? What is its strategy? This is the question. This determines the issue of whether mobilizing weapons and equipment through a certain direction is good or evil. That being the case, it is important to know what the key factor is for resolving this confrontation. What are the necessary conditions for people living in this evil world to establish goodness or evil? Knowing this we can add or remove some conditions. Once you find it out, this condition is simple. (36-61, 1970.11.15)

If there is a good-looking man and a good-looking woman, can the man, insisting upon his rights, say that he wants to receive God's blessing alone? Can the woman, insisting upon her rights, say that she wants to receive God's blessing alone? We must think of God's will as absolute and go through all the conditions necessary for the hope of humankind. It is not given unconditionally. The thing that we must do in God's Kingdom on earth in the future is to find the way for couples to be welcomed and respected worldwide. This is the way to live in God's Kingdom on earth. (162-67, 1987.3.2)

A person cannot go on holding onto goodness. The resolution of the matter concerning good and evil is thus: the world gets occupied either by good or by evil. When good occupies the world, we live, but when evil occupies the world, we cease to exist. In this way, the world is running along the path of life and death. The individual, family, nation and world are the product of history. Out of them

all, how many are the products of goodness? In the individual, what relative importance do the products of goodness have? What percentage do they have in your living environment or in your personality? That is the issue. Does the world have more elements that lead to evil or to good? In that regard, we see we are surrounded by evil elements.

We do not need education for going the way of evil. Anyone can go that way because history started from evil. Would there be a need for education to go that way? Because people became evil of their own accord, society educates them to act according to their standard of conscience centering on ethics and morality. Education is carried out centering on what? Although people are educated according to goodness and conscience, how many are well grounded on the standard of that education? Evil things can be done without education; everybody can get a perfect score in that.

To those of us living in such circumstances, our conscience is always telling us to be good people. Although your mind always stimulates and advises you to be good, did you actually become good people? When we think about this problem, our whole life is continual lamentation. Today, tomorrow, this year all are lamentation. Youth, middle age, old age all are lamentation. We end our lives with it. In other words, our whole life may be marked by evil. This is the inevitable conclusion we reach. Because people were born from evil, they are wriggling in and going toward evil. This has been the way for the lives of those who are living today and all those who have lived until now.

What does the Unification Church do these days? Does it teach people to be evil? If so, then it is not needed. Evil does not need to be taught. People go that way quite well even without being taught. (36-56, 1970.11.15)

3.2.4. The Kingdom of Heaven and us

In the face of death, Jesus cried out, "My Father, if it is possible, let this cup pass from me. Yet not as I will, but as You will." Even as he died, he did not protest to God, but was ready to offer a greater sacrifice without question because his will was great for the sake of God's will. Jesus' attitude brought him to a closer position to God because it enabled him to go deeper. In front of such a person, God is melted. Whoever would strike such a person would be instantly destroyed. God would personally punish that person. Hence it is said, "Do not let your left hand know what your right hand is doing."

Those who lend money and remember doing so by adding interest cannot become owners in the Kingdom of Heaven. We must forget about the money we lend.

Do parents who raise children remember how much they spend on them and ask for interest? Giving and forgetting is the heart of a parent. Parental love is also more than that. Parental love also includes being heartbroken about being unable to give something better. As that

love continues eternally, people without parents are called orphans, and no one would wish to be one. (36-84, 1970.11.15)

Do you know what kind of place the spirit world or heaven is? It is the world to which altruistic people go. Egoists can never go there. They go to hell. Even famous ministers do and they will know where they are once they get there. Our Unification Church tries to save our enemies, even the communists. Yet the communists want to cut off the heads of the Unification Church members. That is the difference. So, what kind of thought should sway the world? We must be stronger than the communists. We must not grow strong by becoming evil people. If our strength is based on love through living for the sake of others, it will be enough to save the world.

We are not people who are living in heaven, but rather are seeking to go to heaven. How long will such a life continue? Will it end today or last a decade or a century? What would you do if you died while doing that? Hence, you must be engrafted. Cutting off and engrafting must be carried out. (91-173, 1977.2.6)

To what kind of world will we go ultimately? Hell or heaven? On the way there, are you going to be people who say, "Father, please help me!" or will you say, "Welcome, True Father!" That will be a matter of life and death. You say that you will live happily after marrying, but when I tell you to live well, I mean you should become unchanging couples. To do that, you must go to the changing world and train together, and not get separated. Do not get separated even if you go to a world where people are divided between north and south or in all four directions. We must maintain ourselves in such a state of training. (129-181, 1983.10.30)

3.3. The four-position foundation and heaven

3.3.1. Families enter heaven

If I had worked for only the family until now, why would I have been persecuted? I am confident that if my father, mother, clan and all my remote relatives were gathered in one place, I could inspire them all through my words. I am supremely confident of bringing them all to God's will. However, I could not do that because it was not God's will. Jesus was driven away by his own relatives because he could not do it either.

However, you have passed all this and welcomed the circumstances of this era in which you can witness to your relatives. You may hold on to your parents and express your sincere heart to them, even shedding tears. In that sense, you are in a better situation than I. If your parents or relatives are unwilling to accept God's will, now is the time for you to move their hearts through tearful pleas or any other means. The time when you can freely witness is here. Although you may have a difficult time dealing with your elder brother, you can at least witness to your younger siblings, even if you have to do so forcibly to make them

believe. Although you have ushered in such a time, if you do not fulfill your responsibilities, you cannot face God. Henceforth, I, too, cannot deal with such people.

Those who do not do this cannot go to heaven. You go there only by forming your family. (21-65, 1968.9.1)

In the Unification Church, we never think that you can receive salvation as an individual. We do not go to heaven as individuals. Nobody can go alone. That's the rule. From the Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve were to go to heaven together. Were the husband and the wife to go there alone? Couples and families not united cannot go there. That being the ideal, what kind of heaven would it be, if the father went to hell and the mother to heaven? We must go to heaven as couples, families, clans, and entire nations. (50-61, 1971.10.30)

From where does the Kingdom of Heaven start? It starts from the point where you deny even the basic desires of the heart with which you were born. For this reason those who go the way of truth lead celibate lives. But there are difficult problems leading a celibate life. These problems must be faced individually until the returning Lord comes to solve them.

Because there is no way forward giving primary consideration to individual salvation, we must save the family in order to save humankind. The returning Lord is coming to earth again to open the way for redemption of entire families. Today, Christians say they will go to heaven through their belief in Jesus. However, they are all indulging in individualism. Originally, heaven was not supposed to be entered alone. If Adam and Eve had remained in the realm of God's love without falling, do you think they would have gone to heaven? If they had, hell could not have existed. Heaven is the place to which husbands and wives go, leading their children. It is the place to go, leading one's children, grandchildren and kindred. Further, it is the destination of the entire nation. Hence, it becomes the heavenly nation. Heaven is the place that is to be realized in this way. (41-299, 1971.2.17)

How stifled would God feel if you sat there alone stating, "Here is the Kingdom of Heaven"? Can you really say you like the way things are? How stifled He must feel when God looks at humankind or the religious world! (96-68, 1977.12.18)

What standard must we Unificationists reach? We must become people greater than Buddha, Confucius, and even Jesus. Until now, the purpose of religion was individual salvation.

The purpose of the Unification Church is geared toward the salvation of the family rather than just of the individual. This is the difference between the Unification Church and other religions. For salvation, we are saving the family, and in going to heaven we are going as a family.

The Unification Church's view of salvation is not of a husband going to heav-

en while his wife goes to hell. It is for both of them to go to heaven together. You do not let your parents get sent to hell. Instead, you bring them to heaven along with your children.

The Unification Church has a different dimension or idea different than any other religion. It teaches the way to go to heaven bringing our entire beloved families and tribes. Hence, the religions that have existed until now emphasize celibacy. But the Unification Church places importance on the family. We go the family-centered way. Those families live for God and the world. This is the way for Unification Church members to go. (34-358, 1970.9.20)

Who can be the object of happiness in your family? For the husband, it is the wife. For the wife, it is the husband. For the parents, it is the children. For the children, it is their parents. From this basis, it is possible to build the Kingdom of Heaven.

Jesus said that the Kingdom of Heaven was within us. But imagine how lonely and miserable he must have been, when he could not say that the Kingdom of Heaven was in our families. You sing of happiness because you have families. For us, there is at least a moment in which we can do this. However, Jesus, the master of truth seekers, God's only begotten Son, who was to save the universe, could not even dream of the base for the external Kingdom of Heaven. He wandered around saying that the Kingdom of Heaven was within us, and for this he was crucified. He sought for nearly three years to revive this in our hearts. How utterly lonely and miserable His life was!

If the kingdom that Jesus desired was only that of the heart, it would be eternally impossible to realize the substantial Kingdom beyond that. It would also be eternally impossible to realize the kingdom transcending the family through the society to the nation. When will the global Kingdom of Heaven and God's Kingdom in heaven be realized? The Messiah had the responsibility to save humankind, and to liberate the spirit world and God. When you think about his situation, how frustrated he must have been! For Jesus, being crucified was nothing. If he had collapsed, he could not face God. If he were to stand as a failure in the ideal of the Kingdom of Heaven and the ideal society, if it existed, he would have wanted to go and seek a wrapping cloth with which he could cover his face and hide. Who can understand the remorse that would fill Jesus' heart, remorse which he could not remove even if he were to die a hundred times? (120-47, 1982.10.3)

One cannot go alone to the place called Heaven. It can be entered only after one has realized the ideal of reciprocity. Fallen people must go through the providence of restoration, resurrection and re-creation to enter Heaven. Giving you the Blessing is to open wide the gates of Heaven. The Blessing means that I am opening the gates of Heaven, which were closed. Families enter by those gates. I am saying that you must

enter with your sons and daughters. The family must become historic fruit as a result of accumulated merit. God's providence of restoration history of six millennia went through the eras of the first Adam, the second Adam and the third Adam, in the family. So you must have three sons and find spouses for each of them. Thus, you can enter as a family. (152-239, 1963.5.25)

3.3.2. Jesus and his family

Christianity is the religion that taught about the family of love as the standard in which we can live together eternally centered on God. God wants to meet people to make a family. This is our desire. There is no other desire above this. (39-343, 1971.1.16)

Jesus strove to establish his family but could not fulfill that portion of God's will. He then went the path of the cross, putting behind him the thought of bride and bridegroom.

Hence, he said that he would come again and hold the Marriage of the Lamb. This refers to the appearance of the ideal family in which God can find rest. Then the Lord can attain the position of True Parent. As the True Parent, he has to give birth to true children and then form true brothers and sisters. Centered on this true family, by forming true clans and true races, he has to establish a new race and a new nation. We come to the conclusion that Jesus has to come again to realize this. (39-345, 1971.1.16)

3.3.3. The four-position foundation and the Kingdom of Heaven

Restoration means the restoration of the four-position foundation. To fulfill the four-position foundation the father, mother, and sons and daughters must be restored. Then, you must be completely restored as a Blessed Couples and give birth to children raising them so that they do not Fall. To do that, we must infuse a new tradition. To do so, we must be better than the saints. (58-33, 1972.6.6)

God's ideal for His Kingdom on earth can be established for the first time in the place where heaven is established on the family level. This must become a four-position foundation.

In the Unification Principle, the perfection of the ideal of creation is the perfection of the four position foundation. Why is that so? The four-position foundation is established when the world of vertical relationships and horizontal relationships are created through three stages centering on God, Adam and Eve.

The horizontal world can unfold only through Adam and Eve's sons and daughters. When this happens, the vertical world is naturally formed. Considering the body, the children are the horizontal basis of the body, and the spirit world is the horizontal basis of the mind.

As God is able to be present there for the first time, the Kingdom of Heaven is manifested on the earth. (96-28, 1978.1.1)

Section 4. Triumphal Entry through the Gates of Heaven

4.1. The door to people's hearts

Even someone like Buddha in a mystic state said, "In heaven and on earth, I alone am the honored one." People who have cultivated an integrated mind and enter the afterlife to stand as God's perfect object partner can say that of themselves. I feel that if I hold the world tight, it might melt in my fist. In such a state, miracles happen automatically. Healing is a natural concomitant of religious life. That is why we must cultivate the field of our heart in line with the door of our heart. To pioneer the standard of the direction of our heart, we must discover God, our subject. Yet He is obscure. If we want to connect to that obscure God, we must focus our mind. It is the only way to start to connect to God. If we illuminate our minds from within, we can surely find the direction in ourselves naturally.

Don't you all feel that? As you began praying, you were facing east, but when you enter the mystic state, your orientation changes. Such things happen, which is why we say the mind has a door. There are times we find it easy to pray, and times we that we do not. Despite all our absolutions and devotions, it is still difficult to pray. It also varies depending on the location of the room because North, South, East and West exist based on a central point. Further, it varies depending on the direction. Even in the mountains, there are places where you can pray well. Also, there are places where satans gather. Those are the shady spots. Shady and sunny spots are spiritually formed in this way. If you experience this many times, you will understand.

When receiving intimations, dreams, revelations and visions, we must make efforts to apply them to our lives and not ignore them. They are the inevitable phenomena for pioneering and developing the relationship between God and humankind. (76-142, 1975.2.2)

For this purpose, you have all been making efforts seeking to open the doors of your hearts and cultivate the fields of your hearts within yourselves. It does not end when you have cultivated the fields of your hearts. You should then apply this to the relational world. (76-155, 1975.2.2)

4.2. The meaning of "Opening the Gate of Heaven"

4.2.1. The reason for "Opening the Gate of Heaven"

Why did the Day of the Opening of the Gate of Heaven come into being? Adam and Eve erred but God took full responsibility. By inheriting the responsibility from God, I have to open the gate. He must open the gates for individuals, families, and tribes as well. All those gates have been blocked. The gates for races, nations and the world have also been blocked. They must all be opened. I am seeking to open those blocked gates through Unification Church families.

God's strategy is to prepare small things for the sake of recovering bigger things. From the individual through the family, tribe, people, nation, world, and cosmos and even to the afterlife, they have been blocked by heaven and hell. Because of who are they blocked? Had Adam and Eve become true parents, this could have been one world, but because of the emergence of false parents through the Fall, heaven and hell have been blocked. Who should break down this historic wall of bitter grief? The True Parents of humankind. It's not something they are doing vested with kingship on a throne.

People are living in hell on earth, and spirits are suffering in hell in the spirit world. The gate of hell on earth and the gate of hell in the spirit world must be opened. Through these gates a pathway must be connected leading from the individual to the nation and world on earth. Then there must be a connection leading from the earth to the spirit world. It must connect to that single pathway that leads to the mainstream. Your mind and body must become one. With that level of oneness, there must be no barriers blocking your path as you pass through the family and tribe. From that level you transcend the race, nation and world to the spirit world. Everything must be broken down.

The final problem is opening the blocked spiritual gates of hell and heaven. It is impossible to enter heaven without opening the gates of hell on earth and in the spirit world. Only those who overcome hell can go to heaven. You must overcome not prayer, but God's love. Otherwise, you cannot enter heaven. This is why I paved the way from earth to heaven by opening the gates of hell on earth and in the spirit world, centered on God's love. The name of the International Peace Highway came from this. This is to break down the wall, which has been blocking us. Jesus had the authority of the prince of heaven and God's only begotten son because he was able to love not only the satanic world, but also the spirit world.

Even the spirit world has been entirely blocked by walls. The Buddhist and Confucian realms are entirely blocked by walls. These must be taken down through a higher standard that comes from God's heart. From the high throne of heaven, work must progress downward having all the walls broken down. Starting with the walls of our ancestors of ten thousand years ago, a thousand years ago, several hundred years ago and those of the people who passed a few years ago, all must be broken down. Also the walls on earth must be removed as well, and a way to connect this to hell must be paved. Otherwise, the gates of heaven cannot be opened. (140-41, 1986.2.1)

4.2.2. The origin of the "Opening of the Gates of Heaven"

I greatly appreciate Mother. She had many very deep experiences of the heart during my time in Danbury. Being a mere child when she met me, she has had to lead a life that was to reach the line parallel to mine. Having lived that

way, her standard has gradually risen. Before, she probably did not experience the deep valleys of the heart. After being separated from me because of Danbury, she was able to realize the precious value of the True Father and understood how lonely it could be for a woman without her husband. As a result, on February 1, we conducted a ceremony to open the gates of heaven and hell. Now they cannot be closed. Through the True Parents standing at opposite poles, a solution can emerge from the place where the two poles connect. This was to connect the spiritual and physical worlds. On February 1, 1985 at 3 a.m. Eastern Standard Time, this standard was established at Danbury and East Garden.

With God's heart, you have to act so that the force of love can be connected. Are you going to become audacious leaders who will have to stand before God in need of salvation or are you going to go along this vertical line?

The way to the heavenly palace is the path on which man and woman travel as one. Where do they become one? They become one there and then must follow it. When ascending, you should ascend towards it. When descending, you should descend towards it. Everyone has to go this way of the sphere of the tribe, people, nation and world centering on the family in accordance with the principle of restoration through atonement. Everyone has to go through this path because they are in the realm of the Fall. (136-45, 1985.12.20)

All my life I have loved the enemy – on the stages of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, and world, and all the way to the cosmos. Why did I enter Danbury prison? It was because of the walls that had blocked the spiritual and physical worlds. In order to resolve what was disrupted due to the fallen parents, I had to pave a way in the spirit world and in hell.

On February 1, 1985 at 3 a.m., Mother and I established this condition through special prayer. Thenceforth, all the barriers of hell crumbled, so whoever makes effort on that foundation can rise up to the heavenly world. Also, if there are good spirits among your relatives in the spirit world, they will come to you, educate you and even take you with them to the heavenly world. Their role as the Savior in the spirit world has begun. The mission of the Savior lay not in the spirit world, but has been limited to the earth, yet now, by paving this way, the good spirits in the other world can educate the evil spirits in hell. While the good ancestors play the role of the Savior, a way has been opened allowing them to develop and ascend to the heavenly world. (136-183, 1985.12.22)

4.2.3. True Parents and the gates of Heaven

What is the mission of the Unification Church? It is different from past religions, which sought individual salvation. It is a religion that seeks an original ideal world as it would have been without the Fall. The original ideal world is where people perfect themselves in

heart, marry with God's love at the center of their relationship, give birth to children, and go to heaven.

What kind of heaven would it be if a father went to hell and a mother to heaven, or if the parents went to heaven and the children to hell? Heaven is the Kingdom everyone enters: parents, children, tribes, races and nations.

True Parents must emerge to open the gates of Heaven for humankind, who started from false parents. Even God cannot open the gates of heaven by Himself. If He could, being omnipotent, why didn't He? The Fall was due to human beings. The Fall is why they, as the perpetrators of sin, must receive punishment. Having lost the kingdom, they must recover it. It has taken six thousand years.

What must be done to open the gates of Heaven? God must take someone in the position of His servant, as His adopted son and give him the opportunity to relate to His legitimate son with absolute obedience. Here, the legitimate son is Adam before the Fall. The adopted son is the archangel prior to the Fall. Originally, an adopted son, in the position of a servant, cannot receive love directly like a legitimate son. (42-286, 1971.3.27)

Had there been no Fall, people who went to the spirit world would have been able to enter heaven by connecting with the core of God's love and True Parents' love. Instead, our journey to heaven has been deferred because throughout history, nobody had been able to attain that bond. People have become stranded in hell and paradise, which is why heaven has been empty.

The people to enter heaven first must be the True Parents. If I were to say that heaven is empty, people would think I am demented, yet even Jesus could not enter heaven. One cannot go there alone. Our original ancestors should have grown through adolescence, established the ideal of love centered on God, become parents and bequeathed the seeds of true love. Then, the first place they entered would have been heaven. As yet, there have been no parents centered on God's love who were able to bequeath the seeds of true love and thus no foundation of leaving behind such descendants. Heaven, thus, is empty.

If we want to go to heaven, we must pass through and conquer hell. The conquerors of hell go to heaven. Having surmounted hell, they are on the roadside leading to heaven, and that place is paradise. (140-45, 1986.2.1)

Look at humankind as one man and one woman. If there are four billion people, you should think, "Half of humankind's four billion people are men and the other two billion people are women. That constitutes a man with two billion cells and a woman with two billion cells. With that mind, I will love those two people." You have to think that way. God is planting those four billion people to engage in the work of re-creating Adam and Eve.

That means that God chooses one representative man from among the two billion men and one representa-

tive woman from among the two billion women to be His first loves. These representatives will be seen as the fruit of the love of humanity. You should be resolved to loving that entity which is the fruit of the love of two billion people more than the father and mother who gave birth to you. Then you become someone who can love the four billion people more than your father and mother. At that point, you will have nothing to do with Satan because you will be totally one with the realm of God's love. You will then be in the position of loving humanity in oneness with God.

Those representatives are the True Father and True Mother. If you have the heart to love humankind more than the True Parents, everything will be okay. The gates of hell in the spirit world and on earth will be opened. Wherever such a person goes, it will be a highway. But then, you will have to pay for the gasoline.

In the original world, angels are to lead the way to heaven, not True Parents. It is not the Principle to have the True Parents lead you. They paved the way and you are destined to follow it if you love them. While following this path, in the position of loving the True Parents, and loving humankind more than the True Parents, everything will go well. No way would be blocked. There would be no alleys. We are going along the mainstream of heart, which directly connects to the highway. Thus, we can go directly from the earth to heaven.

With regard to this world, there are two kinds of people, men and women. We are entering the realm of heart, the heart that loves the parents, which transcends the satanic world. If you have made bad conditions in front of True Parents, then you have to go that way again. Throughout my life, as a parent, I have taken responsibility to prepare the way for my children to go. If you stand in the place where you love humanity with the same heart as you love the True Parents, you will become one with the True Parents and stand in the same line horizontally with True Parents. If you do this, Satan cannot influence you, because the realm of fallen heart will be below you. You can connect to heaven directly. To commence this work, I declared the Day of the Opening of the Gate of Heaven. (140-56, 1986.2.1)

4.2.4. Our attitude to the "Opening of the Gate of Heaven"

On earth, True Parents have prepared the highway and brought the victorious power of heaven and passed it on to you. In that very place where you inherit that power, you must plant God's love in your mind and body and become one with True Parents Then Satan cannot separate you from God.

What will happen to you? Together with me, you who represent the world have been restoring Cain's sons and daughters. If you too have the heart to love the world more than the True Parents, nothing evil can block your way to God's Kingdom, whether on earth or in heaven.

You start from the earth and then

can go beyond the world and the spirit world directly to heaven. Yet if you cannot do it, your way will pass through so many high and steep mountains. Knowing this, I dedicated my life up to now to prepare the way. Since I gave you the privilege today to attend the Day of the Opening of the Gate of Heaven, please, become the victors who can pass through safely and attain that realm of heart without fail. (140-61, 1986.2.1)

4.3. The path to heaven through fulfilling one's portion of responsibility.

Where are you now? You must know your location. You must know where you are. Satan and God are dividing you up between them based on the fulfillment of your portion of responsibility. They are saying, "This person is yours, that person is mine." People who do not fulfill their portion of responsibility will not belong to God. Satan will claim them as his.

While longing for God's love, ideal conjugal love and ideal filial love, fulfill your portion of responsibility. You cannot do that by saying, "I need money. I need this and that. I must educate my children."

As you seek to enter heaven, the gatekeeper will ask you whether you fulfilled your portion of responsibility. In the fallen world, there is no one who can ever go to heaven. Upon ushering in the era of the Second Coming, and, after going through the time of Adam and the time of Jesus, God has brought forth this movement to break through the standard of the fulfillment of our portion of responsibility by raising the third Adam.

Now all religious believers seek to fulfill their portion of responsibility in order to go to heaven. Satan thinks he cannot give this portion of responsibility to humankind even if he has to burn all the religious people and offer them as a sacrifice. But God thinks that even if He were to sacrifice all the religious people, He would want to restore this portion of responsibility. (149-322, 1986.12.21)

4.4. Heaven and hell are our options

In our life of faith, we should not complain. There is nothing to complain about. You should be joyful. You should go joyfully even when shedding tears. You are to go laughing while shedding tears. If, after being taught this, you do not do it, what will happen? If you do not do it, there is no other way. God cannot help you, and I cannot help you.

Thus, you decide whether you go to heaven or hell. Rev. Moon doesn't decide, God doesn't decide, you yourselves decide. The decision is yours. If you complain, that is hell. If you go with gratitude even when you have something to complain about, that is heaven. (96-122, 1978.1.2)

Heaven is not somewhere you go through being taught. It is the automatic destination of conscientious people. When the sun rises, the buds of all the

trees turn to face it. If even the grass and trees can turn to face the sun, then how much more so can people as the Lords of creation not know the way to go? Such phenomena will take place. (75-41, 1975.1.1)

Section 5. Instructions Concerning Heaven and Hell

5.1. Formulating our view of heaven and hell

The mission of the Messiah is to restore tribes centered on his family. By fulfilling our mission as tribal messiahs we are formulating our views of heaven and hell. You have to clearly distinguish "There is heaven, here is hell." Do not go toward hell and make others not go that way. If your tribe knows the way, many tribes around you, even villages will come to follow you. (217-84, 1991.4.16)

5.2. The importance of life in the spirit world and life on earth

Life in the spirit world and life on earth are not separate. Both are important. That means that our life in the spirit world is connected to our life on earth. They are both important, yet people who live on earth today do not understand the concept of eternal life. They think that only life on earth is important. That is the problem. Even many Unification Church members do not understand that how you live on earth is the foundation that guarantees your life in the spirit world.

Hence, you need to be constantly aware of the importance of your life. You must live for the sake of your eternal life based on the formulation of your view of heaven understanding that eternal life begins from the present moment. If you do not understand this point, you will end up doing something else. Everything that you do now determines the value of your eternal life.

The physical and spirit worlds move facing each other. If the physical world ascends, so will the spirit world. If the physical world descends, the spirit world follows suit. If one turns, the other does likewise. So you have to realize this point during your life on earth and live in a way that adds to your eternal life. The spiritual and physical worlds are not separate. If you do not clearly distinguish between heaven and hell, you will not understand this. In this way, you must always work with the feeling that both eternal life and life on earth are important. No one can take care of your life except you. More than anyone else, you yourself know God. If you become like that, wherever you go heavenly fortune will embrace you. In that case, if you are gone from your village, people will search for you saying, "Where did that person go? I have not seen him for a few days. I miss his voice, as I am used to hearing him in the morning and evening." You cannot stop it from happening. Because heavenly fortune is with him, someone who lives according to his conscience automatically orients himself to that direction, similar to iron filings moving towards a magnet, or like whatever has life moves with all its tac-

tile sense towards the light.

If I am not here, it will be a problem for the Japanese, Koreans and Americans. Why is that so? Because within the concept of eternal life there must be order to bring unity. We can make this concept the standard for the earth and eternity. This is most important. (217-85,

CHAPTER FIVE

The Messiah and the Spirit World

Section 1. Jesus and the Spirit World

Jesus died bearing the cross during the course of performing the mission of John the Baptist. Thus he was unable to completely fulfill his mission as the son. From his death until now, he has been working to restore the archangel. After restoring the archangel, he must go the way of the son. In this way he has been seeking to go the way of the servant and that of the adopted child. Jesus could not fulfill his mission as the legitimate Son. He went the way of the archangel, the way of the servant and the way of the adopted son.

Consequently, even those who believe in Jesus Christ can only become adopted children. They are in the same position as Cain who is of a different lineage. A relationship that is not linked by blood remains in the archangel's position. Providential history until now has been that of a struggle to link the lineages.

Jesus did not die on the cross as the son. If he had been in the position of the son having spirit and body unity, becoming a victorious offering to God, there would be no need for him to come again. He could not offer his total self. He could offer only half of himself. He lost his body and could offer only his spirit. This represents a level equivalent to the angelic realm in the spirit world.

Therefore, Christians cannot enter Heaven but go instead to a spiritual realm lower than paradise and wait there. That spiritual realm is under the dominion of the archangel.

In order to secure a victorious realm in the spirit world, that victorious realm must first be established on earth. This was the purpose of Jesus' coming and this is why Christianity must restore and establish the victorious realms in both the spirit world and on earth and inherit the realm of the archangel. That is the mission of Christianity. Because there has been no substantial perfection in Christianity, only spiritual perfection, Christianity emerged placing prime importance on the spirit world.

The returning Lord must have the authority to subjugate the archangelic realm in the spirit world. If he does not, he can not begin his mission on earth. He must come in the position to inherit all the spiritual realms under Jesus, who attained victory in the spirit world, in the same way that Jesus inherited the accomplishments of John the Baptist. Although John the Baptist had spiritually bequeathed everything to Jesus,

John did not carry out his promise and these realms became separated. Consequently, Christianity was established to rebuild that. (47-157, 1971.8.28)

It was unjust enough that Jesus died on the cross on earth, but after his death he had to descend to hell for three days. That was a test.

Death holds the greatest dread for humankind, but going to hell held the greatest dread for Jesus. Then did he become the master of dread or the master of happiness in hell? He went to hell and for three days had to undergo the ordeal of overcoming suffering. (34-143, 1970.8.30)

Since God is fair, the Messiah will come to humankind with an ideology of equality. The Messiah is the savior who comes to save all of fallen humankind. Therefore, he deals fairly with everybody. He comes with a fair purpose and creates a fair environment for the age. Whoever unites with him can be his disciple.

The Messiah goes from the bottom of hell to the top of the most glorious place in the world of humankind. This means that there is no place that he would not go, even at the risk of his life, to save humankind.

Viewed from this principle, it is illogical to say that the Messiah will come on the clouds, from the sky. It is a mistaken view. People who believe that really do not know anything about the spirit world. Go to the spirit world and see for yourself whether what I say is true. You will know once you die. The Messiah operates according to such a formula.

Why do people in the spirit world seek to make contact with the earth? Why is that so? Until now no one really understood. Without resolving the issues on earth, the path to perfection cannot be attained. Whether you are rich or poor, the same rule applies.

Together with the Messiah we have to open the spirit world and to do that we have to establish corresponding relationships on earth. The Messiah does this by going through the stages of the individual, family, tribe and world. These stages are to be connected to the spirit world.

The victorious foundations of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world must be established on earth. To do this, the entire spirit world must be mobilized to come down to earth. To find the center of all this, the Messiah has to come to this world and undergo hardships along his way. While doing so, he must restore the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world in the correct order.

That is why people are seeking and moving toward one goal and one world now. (91-278, 1977.2.27)

Section 2. The Returning Lord and the Spirit World

The returning Lord must come as the ancestor of not only the third but also the first and second Israels. Unification Church members must, from a position similar to that of the first Israel at

the time of Jesus, overcome their doubt. Then, with a Father's heart, they should occupy the position of a child inside the Father.

The returning Lord must establish order in the spirit world. By doing this, he must begin his work on the foundation where the first Israel was established. Since people in the spirit world cannot form a bond with the True Parents, they must go through this course.

The archetypes of the twelve tribes already exist in the spirit world, but Christianity, which had to become the second Israel, lost the center by which it could organize itself into tribes. Thus, the returning Lord must proclaim the ideology of unification and organize his tribes. (10-217, 1960.10.14)

Since God is formless, you will not see Him even when you go to the spirit world. That being so, God, as the Father, must acquire a body. In that way, the incorporeal and corporeal become one. This symbolizes the universe becoming one.

God created Adam and Eve for the purpose of assuming a body, but this is possible only through love. There must be love in order for God to have a body that resembles His image.

When Adam and Eve become God's body He will dwell in their minds and rule the physical and incorporeal worlds through them. His kingdom will then be created. It is a kingdom of love. The spirit and body are to unite only through love, not through anything else. (143-93, 1986.3.16)

Section 3. True Parents and the Spirit World

3.1. The difference between your natural parents and True Parents

Your natural parents and True Parents have different concepts of love. Your natural parents teach you love centered on your physical body, and True Parents teach you true love centered on the spirit world.

It seems that natural parents should suffice, so why are True Parents needed? Because the Fall occurred. Fallen parents have been teaching their children to be inattentive to the important things, and in so doing have held them down, allowing them to remain self-centered. Thus, parental love has drawn a decisive line holding you eternally within the satanic world, and there is no way to sever it.

Then what are True Parents? The higher you rise on such a foundation, the greater the things they teach you, so that you can be synchronized with the rhythm of the heavenly nation – the eternal nation – and so that you will have no problem breathing when you go there.

When people educated by their natural parents go to the spirit world, they will all have to go into some corner and stay there, as if to shelter them from the wind. If they turn around, they will only see people who deny themselves and who want to live for others. That sight would be too much for them and they would feel as if they were going to suffocate.

Who made it this way? Satan. That is why people are hoping for true parents

to come and liberate them. To liberate them, you cannot just resolve the situation just like that; you have to do so by going the opposite way. (129-99, 1983.10.1)

If you want to return to God, you have to be ready to train for the spirit world, which is a four-dimensional world. The training center for loving and becoming one with the spirit world is where you love God and True Parents. The Messiah comes for the purpose of fulfilling the role of True Parents on earth to connect the spirit world and the physical world to God. That is all there is to his mission. He truly loves us and lives for our sake to a greater extent than anyone else.

Before the Messiah – in other words, the True Parents – comes on the earth, the entire spirit world is completely divided, similar to this divided world. The True Parents in corporeal form must tear down the many walls that have been built up. Only then will the two worlds be connected. In that connection, the True Parents not only represent the physical world but also the spirit world.

By attending the True Parents and by means of absolute love, for the first time you are able to pave a road that connects to the spirit world. By demonstrating absolute loyalty before the messiah, you establish the precondition of having demonstrated absolute loyalty before even the greatest of all spirit people. You establish the condition of having demonstrated absolute loyalty to God's commands. You have to demonstrate absolute loyalty to the True Parents in the place of God. Why is that? It is so that you can establish a tradition that enables you to become one with the citizens of heaven.

Why do you need to attend the True Parents? Because they represent the spirit world and God. It is so that you can form a bond of heart with the True Parents and be qualified to participate in the realm of the victory of heart that True Parents sealed with love. (105-112, 1979.9.30)

3.2. True Parents are the axis

Where are there true parents? Where are there true siblings? Where are there true families? Where are there true societies? Where are there true nations? Where is there a true world? If these do not exist, you only go from one unhappiness to another in your life. That is not how life should have been originally. That is why we spend our lives in this world struggling and gasping for air in search of the truth. Until now people applied religion and philosophy in their search to find truth, but they could not succeed. This cannot be resolved through human efforts. (159-282, 1968.5.19)

We must unite the world together with the True Parents. Through the heart of God, the axis of the spirit world and the axis of the earth have to be united with the True Parents. You cannot take True Parents out of the center of the spirit world or the earth.

When evil parents came into being a confrontation occurred on the horizontal plane that led to humanity being split

in two. On the vertical plane, it brought about the division of the separate worlds of the God of goodness and a god of evil. Because all this was caused by the emergence of false parents, the True Parents have to come at the point that leads to the give and take of these two worlds. The Fall occurred because of false parents. To deal with this, True Parents have to come into being. That which is true has to appear. (149-279, 1986.12.7)

3.3. True Parents is the center

The democratic world represents the right wing whereas the communist world represents the left wing. They are now breaking down. The same can also be said of the United States. Neither world has a center. What is needed at this time is head-wing thought and Godism. No form of humanism can stand before God. God alone is the absolute and eternal center. Only head-wing thought can become the center of all humankind.

The true center for the spiritual and physical worlds can only be the ideology centered on true parents. From the perspective of true love, head-wing thought and Godism are the same concept. (205-261, 1990.9.9)

Is there a limit to the need for the True Parents? There is none. Whether in this world or in the spirit world, this need is infinite. On the other hand, where is the limitation of the President of the United States? In four to eight years, he topples over and drops out, but the True Parents do not. The limitation is different. In four to eight years, the American president has to pack his bags, but that is not the case with the True Parents.

The True Parents are needed not just in this earthly world but also in the spirit world. Why? A palace was supposed to be built in the spirit world by people who lived on earth with love, but there were no such people. Even God and the people in the spirit world cannot build the palace of love. The True Parents must build it.

The palace of love in the spirit world begins from the True Parents. Even if there were already a palace in the spirit world, the entire spirit world could only settle with that place at the center if the True Parents entered and declared: "This is where we will have a palace." The spirit world absolutely needs me because this responsibility has yet to be fulfilled. (205-255, 1990.9.9)

3.4. The strength of the bond with True Parents

The True Parents are the true parents whom all humankind must seek. Their existence makes it possible for true goodness to be established. So what kind of people are they? They are the foothold enabling you to move with God. They stand as an altar that bridges the gap between God and humankind. They are like the bridge by which we cross over the world of death. They are the position where you can be with God, the focal point enabling you to bond together with God as Parent and child, and become one body with Him. It is the

point of origin where two boundaries that became separated from each other can converge, and where humankind can become one with God for the first time since being separated from Him as a result of the Fall. The True Parents are the ones who stand in the position of the indemnity sacrifice.

If there were a place where we could go and call on God in times of desperation and have Him forget all that has happened during the past millennium and come forward so that we could form a relationship with Him, such a place would be so valuable to us that we would not exchange it for anything in the world.

God sent the True Parents so that humankind, which is not qualified to be in His company or to form a bond with Him, can do so in relaxed surroundings. How then are we to give thanks for this grace by which the bond of the True Parents has been given to us unconditionally? How much did you thank God? In response to the grace by which you are now able to receive salvation, how much have you thought about how you have been given the opportunity to be jubilant and take a vow of victory? How much have you realized that you are making a new start with unlimited hope and eternal values? This is the question.

How much must God have been longing for the True Parents, whom He knew could realize His historical desire to find His sons and daughters! Consider two standards of longing: God's longing for the True Parents, and your longing, you who are in the world of death and long to be saved from it. You would normally place greater importance on the True Parents than you would God, esteem them as more precious, and value them more than you would God. Until now, though, this has not been the case.

How much must God have been looking forward to that occasion when humankind can be with True Parents, establish a bond with them, and stand face-to-face with them! Each of you must be able to say: "I will achieve such a position and I will lay the foundation for such a victory." The important thing is how strongly you are determined to overcome any difficulty, however great; that you will view this position as a turning point that determines all the values in your life, and that you will make this bond your primary motivating force. Viewed from this perspective, we need to recognize how fraudulent we have been. We must realize how much we have failed to establish our own positions as we wandered as aimlessly as the wind.

Are we people with whom God can live? No. We need a savior. What kind of person is this savior? He is the one who substantiates the bond with True Parents. From this perspective, how extraordinary the bond with True Parents is! Thanks to True Parents, I am able to begin a true life, and undertake a relationship of new life. Through this relationship of life, you are able to initiate new families, new societies, new nations and a new world. Also, you must realize that through that relationship, you can obtain the essential factors for the victory to resolve all the paths of life and

death of the past two millennia.

There is no self there. God is not the one who must walk the way of suffering in order to save the fallen world. He does not have to deal with the fallen world. He comes forward with a new bond of true love. He comes to us with new hope and a new foundation for restoration. These are the circumstances in which the bond between God and you is formed. It is a bond by which the four directions can be brought into oneness, and it is linked at one point of origin so that it can destroy the world of death and establish the foundation for a new heaven and earth in the bright future. In this way, the world can make a new start by practicing the parent-child relationship.

No sword or power can break the bond between you and the True Parents – not even the power of Satan. Why? Because this bond possesses the special authority to break through all of today's problems and bring salvation to humankind, and because the power that humankind has historically desired has been concentrated in this bond, or stronghold. Thus, no historical concentration of power would be strong enough to break this relationship. In this way, the True Parents are the ones whom God has sent forth as historical sacrifices for the purpose of doing away with all evil and making a new victorious beginning based on a new bond.

In the same way that God is in a serious position and miserable circumstances, we should be also. The Father's circumstances should be felt as our own. Unless someone appears on this earth to fulfill the duty of a child and comfort God, there will never be a way to resolve historical problems.

Even if we were to find ourselves in extremely difficult circumstances, we should not stand before God hoping to receive His sympathy, but rather we should stand in a position to sympathize with Him. Jesus was the crystallization of all the elements that were carefully accumulated throughout history in the context of such a bond. Yet, because Jesus could not realize God's will, the returning Lord must continue it and go that way. The True Parents are the concentration of all historic hopes. God has sent them to represent the whole as the condition for the restructuring of history.

You bond with the True Parents not from the spirit world, but from the earth. Since the True Parents come to the earth in corporeal form, they can answer when you call on them and sympathize with you when you are in difficulty. You cannot imagine how blessed you are that you can meet True Parents on the same horizontal plane.

Until now, God has worked to overcome all the difficulties that might be faced in order to achieve a decisive victory. Here, the question is whether you have become the princes of victory. You must be able to say that you have become one with that heart and are completely inseparable from it. In other words, the pivotal axis of your life has to be the conviction that you are with God and that you are together with the True Parents. Only if each of you becomes the self that can continue on the same course for a

thousand years, ten thousand years even, will a linkage be established between God's Kingdom on earth and His kingdom in the spirit world. This means that you will be the masters of heaven and the masters of earth, and then God's Kingdom on earth and in the spirit world will be opened up for the first time.

Such a bond is not something formed in a position of comfort. It is formed in a position of extreme difficulty, a position so serious that it could not possibly be any more serious, a position where life and death are on the line, a position where there is an increased level of risk.

That is why the Bible says, "Whoever would save his life will lose it; and whoever loses his life for my sake will find it." Jesus' expression may sound archaic, but this is the normal approach and attitude for going the way of restoration and for progressing through the world of heart. It is clear that each person must strive to achieve such a state, and that path will become the true course. (31-73, 1970.4.19)

Many of you here have passed your forties and are in your fifties. If you were asked what you had accomplished up until now, what would be your answer? Perhaps you will die within the next ten or twenty years. Imagine the moment when you come face-to-face with death and look back on the course you have taken after you came to know God's will. Then think about how God could not claim His rightful place and remove the servant-like mask of unsatisfied desire from His face because of your failure to complete your responsibility to restore human beings, who remain the devil's descendants. Will you be able to keep from bowing your head in shame after you enter the spirit world? How will you go there and walk around with your head held high? How will you live there? You will just have to go hide somewhere. Everything about you will be revealed for everyone to see.

You cannot avoid going to the spirit world. We are all destined to go there. What are you going to take with you? Let us look at the example of a daughter in a poor family. Her pitiable appearance would make it difficult to present herself to her relatives. Worse, without taking a dowry with her, how could she face marrying the son of a rich family with more than a hundred clansmen in a home shared by layer upon layer of people from four generations? How could she withstand the ridicule if she were to go empty-handed? Her in-laws would proudly tell her, "According to our family tradition, so-and-so did this, grandmother and all the other women did this, and big sister did it this way, and so did everyone else." If she is seen as a failure in the family, how could she hold her head up in front of them or sit down to eat? How could she even pick up her spoon or chopsticks?

It is terrible to be unable to fit in to a group. What will you take with you? If you were asked, "If you have been a Unification Church member for forty years, then what have you brought with you?" how would you respond? Is the spirit world where you are going to a place where you are worse off or better off than

here? Is the place where you are going after you die worse than here or better? It is a place that is tens of millions of times better than here. It is a world where you can accurately measure everything.

It is a place where each individual feels the pain of knowing exactly where he is situated. If you want to raise yourself up one stage, it will take you a thousand, even ten thousand years.

Because you received the precious thing called the Blessing, the door is open for you, but you cannot enter because you are not dressed in formal attire. You must go to the banquet house in formal attire. Can a groomsman go to a wedding in work clothes? Think about it. You have to dress appropriately for the occasion in order to go there and be welcomed into that environment. Otherwise you will be thrown out. People will say to you, "Get lost, blockhead!"

There was once a rich man in Mokpo who was said to be so rich that he owned all the land in the northern part of the city. Then, my friend married this man's only daughter and became his son-in-law. Since this was during the Japanese occupation, almost no one could afford the expense of a modern Western-style wedding with tuxedos and gowns and such. Usually, a groom would just wear his civil defense uniform and stick a single flower into his lapel.

However, because this man was rich and had all his rich friends coming, he decided to have a modern-style wedding. I was asked to be one of four groomsmen. When the bride's family prepared the outfits for the groomsmen, they decided to make all of them match the height of the groom. The groom was about the same height as I was, but he was not nearly as heavy. So when I put on the white shirt they had bought for me and buttoned it up, you could see my belly button. Wearing this tight shirt, I had to maintain a posture that put a lot of pressure on my spine. After a couple hours of this, I started to get muscle cramps. What was I supposed to do? Could I cry out in a loud voice? I remember going over to a wall and bending over like this to massage the cramped muscles.

Dressed like this, I had to stand in front of this huge crowd of thousands of people, including everyone who was anybody in South Jeolla Province. I would much rather have found a rat hole somewhere that I could crawl into. It was all I could do to stay there in my place and endure.

Being unable to fit into a particular environment is oppressive.

I know the spirit world well. I know all the saints and all the founders of religions who are in any way significant. They do not want to yield to you, but you must not be shut out from that group. (212-224, 1991.1.6)

Section 4. Rev. Moon and the Spirit World

4.1. Rev. Moon's establishment of spiritual conditions and its foundation

It is a principle that a perfect minus automatically gives rise to a perfect plus,

and that a perfect plus automatically creates a perfect minus. That is a principle of the creation of the universe and a law of existence. Thus, if you perform a perfect motion on the earth according to this principle, then the spirit world will become connected. This has happened for the first time in history. As such, whatever is a problem in the spirit world becomes a problem on earth, and if it is solved on earth, then it will also be solved in the spirit world.

Each time this happens, restitution must be paid. I have borne the responsibility alone on the way of restoration to resolve all the problems in history and the universe, and in the spirit world and on earth. I know when restitution must be paid, and I clearly know what happens in the spirit world and what happens on earth when this breaks down.

The Bible states that what is loosed on earth will also be loosed in heaven. To loose something on earth restitution must be paid. Yet you do not know the way of restoration. We must pass through the ages of subject-object atonement on the individual level, the family level, the tribal level, and through the ages of subject-object atonement on the level of a people and nation, and then enter the age of subject-object atonement in the global realm. You do not know this, but I do, which is why my words are reflected directly and revealed in the spirit world. (131-226, 1984.5.4)

The Kingdom of Heaven is realized in the most miserable place on earth. Where is that? In the bottom-most prison of prisons. Rev. Moon of the Unification Church has laid the foundation in the spirit world and on earth. I began from the bottom of hell, the most miserable prison among prisons, and worked with the spirit world to lay this foundation. In the course of widening this foundation, I faced much opposition. I have been opposed by my family, my tribe, my people and my nation, by the United States and other nations, by Asia and the entire world.

Since I had to open the way for all humankind, I even befriended condemned criminals. I was chained together with thieves, ate with them and comforted them. Recently, I even went to Las Vegas to pray for those imprisoned there. I bought the New Yorker Hotel to clear away the worst dens of Satan in New York and lay a new foundation. I had to go there to mingle with them and comfort them. Only in this way could I open and pave the way for people from all walks of life, even those headed for destruction in the satanic world. By my paving the way on earth, barriers in the spirit world will be opened and the world can be unified. Hence, I will marry blacks and whites interracially, and buy houses for them. In this way, I am doing things that have never been done before in this world. (91-160, 1977.2.6)

I have triumphed in the spirit world. Who can do this? Numerous spiritual masters in the world will have to come to me in the future and learn from me. Doubtless this will happen. Thus, it is not a problem if the Korean people or all

people in the world oppose me. All the multitudes of people in the spirit world do what I tell them. (13-49, 1963.10.16)

4.2. Special authority in relation to the spirit world

Most new developments in the civilized age are connected to patent rights. Yet they are all different. There are patents for making clothes. Everything is patented. If you own a patent, then you can assert your ownership of it anywhere you go. That is the way it is in the world. There is such a law in the spirit world. There is no law stating that only white people can register patents nor is there any law that prohibits black people or Asians from doing so. This holds true anywhere.

There were many founders of religions and other religious people in history who labored to gain a patent for going to the Kingdom of Heaven, but who among them holds the patent? How will you recognize the person with the patent for going to the spirit world? Since the motley group that is gathered here is saying in unison that they will climb up to any heights and that is good enough! Then what about God? Can He tell me that I cannot do that? He may say, "Without Rev. Moon's signature, it is no good." Even the great president of the United States, or any king, or any saint, or any founder of a religion, will have to come and bow down to me when they need my signature.

To obtain a doctorate, you must even wash your thesis professor's bottom and thank him even if he kicks you, in order to get his signature. If you do not, he may not sign. You might want to say, "I am much better looking. I have a nicer nose, face, stature and everything else. If we were to wrestle, I would win. I can eat more than he can. I can beat him in any competition. I am better than him in tens, even hundreds of ways. Yet he thinks that he can withhold a doctorate from me just because I do not know that one thing." None of this, though, will do you any good. I might have such special authority in relation to the spirit world.

When I went to prison there were many weird rumors, and people thought that I would be ruined and completely disappear. Now, I am still alive and speaking boldly. I have an antenna that allows me to see, hear, and know everything; therefore I can confidently speak out with a loud voice.

Even God would like to see my endorsement before giving His approval. He will look to see if my signature is there, and if it is, He will say, "Okay," and if not, He will say, "No." It is easy to say this, but can you realize how difficult it was to make this possible? If I actually have such a patent, then the conclusion is that, in the future, the entire spirit world will move within my hands, and the physical world's path will narrow until they have no choice but to follow. (134-17, 1985.1.1)

The world of nature is filled with the truth. You all may know little about the spirit world, but I am an expert on it. Not only in the twenty-first century, but also

in the twenty-second and even the thirtieth century, the spirit world will not be able to open its gates without me. My reputation will live on for eternity as the original person who logically explained about the spirit world and revealed the systematic details about opening the gates of heaven. Even spiritualists who consider themselves the best in the world will have to come and learn from me. That is why I became the founder of the Unification Church. I will unify world Christianity. If they had listened to me, they would have already been unified. (203-324, 1990.6.28)

Once I make a declaration from the position of Abel after restoring the birthright of the firstborn, the spirit world will stop misusing the physical world. It will come to serve the physical world. Do you think that it would listen if it were told, without any reason, to cooperate with and obey the physical world? If you told it to do something without any explanation, do you think it would be done? You have to make it possible by explaining that this works in this way and that works in that way. Then, would not north and south be united, east and west be united, and everything be brought into proper order? (210-181, 1990.12.19)

4.3. The unification of the spirit world and the unification of the physical world

Unless the spirit world is united, the physical world cannot be united. If there is a Lord who has unified the spirit world, what would be the problem in unifying the physical world? It is not difficult.

From now on we have to manage even spiritualists. I am now their commander. They too must come here to learn from me. They only know a one-way direction. For that reason, even if they receive messages from the spirit world, they should not regard them as absolute. If they do not interpret their messages according to the Divine Principle and select the right direction, they will easily become satans.

The spirit world is testifying to and following me now. Since I have a specialist's detailed knowledge of the spirit world, I have been able to guide you this far up until now while discerning whether or not something is from Satan. That is why I have not been destroyed.

There are countless people in the spirit world. Compared to that, the population of the earth is so small. Once we surmount the national level, we will be able to mobilize the spirit world. The people of the world are not a problem. When such a time comes, you should know that our time is near.

From this perspective, we can see the outlines for the future of the democratic world and that of the communist world. (54-232, 1972.3.24)

In the next world, murderers, victims and all sorts of people are gathered. There are people brandishing knives and seeking revenge. There are so many walls which divide them. So, there are times when evil spirits go to the descendants of their enemies and cause sudden death

by an accident in order to bring them to the spirit world. These things must all be resolved. For that to happen, they must first be resolved on earth. To do that, something better must be offered. It can not be done without offering something that is better than the death of an enemy, something that is better than that which gave rise to their resentment.

What can we use to liberate the spirit world and God? Since such relationships were created by the ancestors of humankind who messed up the spirit world, their descendants must now compensate for their mistakes. If children wish to practice filial piety, they should pay back their parents' debts.

In that sense, you should create a movement to demolish the walls blocking your ancestors in the spirit world. When you do that, they will come looking to teach you. This sounds like a dream but it is very real.

I know what kind of people your ancestors are and what they did. When I look at the faces of the descendants of evil spirits, they darken. The faces of their ancestors quickly appear and abruptly disappear. That is how I discern if it is a good or evil spirit.

Since the spirit world must be brought together, people who cannot bring order to the spirit world cannot unify the universe. As the root of heavenly fortune is found in the spirit world, how could people who are unable to bring order to the spirit world incorporate those results into the way of this earthly world and unify it? For this reason, the spirit world must be unified before the physical world. (191-204, 1989.6.24

Have any of you ever met me in your dreams? Everybody should have that experience. There is no such group in the secular world or in any nation. How has the Unification Church been able to grow worldwide? Wherever I send you as missionaries, you should live with the actual sensations of the spirit world.

What are some of the things that have happened? After three months, a missionary must leave the country and get a re-entry visa. Without doing so he can not stay in that country. Not only that, he can not freely leave that country to go to another. At such times, the spirit world will guide him. It will tell him to cross a certain river at a certain place. There will be many crocodiles in that river. If he were to swim across that river, the crocodiles would swallow him whole, leaving nothing behind. The spirit world will guide him through such dangerous places to cross the border. It will tell him the precise hour and minute to cross. If he does not do it, then there is nothing else he can do. There are many missionaries who went back and forth across the border by receiving orders like that through revelations.

The entire communist realm is a world that denies and opposes the existence of God. When a religion enters any country, the Communist Party stamps it out. Under such circumstances, God has to be in a state of readiness.

People who have such experiences cannot deny the existence of God. The

deep emotions of experiencing these things will remain forever, transcending physical life. The experience of having passed through life while loving God and longing for True Parents in that state, will remain for eternity. It becomes the center of your lives. At that moment, the walls dividing you from the spirit world will instantly disappear. You can go there directly.

Which comes first, faith or knowledge? What we believe in is far from fact and what we know conforms to fact. Do you really put your faith into action in your life? Your life experience surfaces in your religious life. You have no idea of the fortune you possess and of how grateful we should be for the dignity of living in connection with the substantial realm that is actually expressed, not merely held as an internal faith! There is such a state.

It is fearful to realize that the spirit world and God exist beyond any shadow of a doubt, no matter who denies it. That is the heart that belongs to the world of God. However much hardship such people undergo on earth, they are the citizens of God's nation. They are God's children.

Ask yourselves if you are in such a state that you would never change your heart, however difficult things may get. You must get that far. It is the summit. When you scale Satan's ramparts and enter the spirit world, God's existence will be proven. If you do not accomplish it, it will be like crossing the drawbridge of a castle but not entering its palace. Until the moment you gain entry, you will not be able to know anything. However much you may gaze at that castle, you cannot get in. (224-108, 1991.11.23)

4.4. Reception in spirit world according to heart and actual results

My pride is in knowing God. My knowledge of Him is deeper than that of the spirit world about Him. However many people there may be, the person that God likes the most is the one who understands His heart. (146-333, 1986.8.10)

Even if religious people pray drenched in tears for their entire lives until their knees are buried in the ground, it is still not certain that they will meet Jesus and be guided by him. Despite all this, it is a historic event for you to come here, meet me and be able to hear these words. Whether you confer upon me any qualifications or not, I have already acquired all the necessary qualifications.

I have accomplished many things. I unified the world's scholars – who do not listen to anybody – by knitting them together. Also, I knitted together conflicting religions and races and held a huge global wedding, the likes of which never happened before in history.

My accomplishments thus far exceed those of anyone in the spirit world. I have worked harder than anyone else. That being the case, will the Unification Church be at the tail end of the spirit world, or will it rise to the top spot? It will be at the top. This is not something I have made up. (146-335, 1986.8.10)

4.5. Making spiritual experiences part of daily life

The principle of heaven and earth is very simple – I realized this after researching and checking all positions, going around even the back alleys of the spirit world. The truth is simple. Two things unite through an absolute force, creating a vacuum for God to enter that place and become the core, like the marrow of a bone. The two pieces of masculine and feminine love are stuck together. This is the core of the universe. The ideal substance of love unites them to become the axis of love. (170-170, 1987.11.15)

I know so much about the spirit world but I seldom speak about it. Many people go insane after knowing about the spirit world. Women in particular might look at their husbands and say, "Why should I live with that person for such a long time? I should quickly go to heaven. The heaven that Father spoke about sounds so good that I cannot wait to go there." However, she cannot go to heaven unless she educates her husband and takes him there with her. (182-59, 1988.10.14)

I have spiritual experiences, but because I never talk about them you do not know whether I have them or not. How do I deal with them? After reconciling them with the truth – by taking the way of harmonizing perfect virtue with reason, while constantly aligning with the direction of heaven's providential view – I can bring about the progress of the spiritual and physical worlds. In order to do that, you must know how the spirit world moves, how it relates to the truth, and then bring those actions into your daily life so that you connect with it. The divine spirit and the truth must be one. They must create harmony because we human beings are made that way. (76-137, 1975.2.2)

4.6. We go to the spirit world after leaving our love behind

Many people went to the spirit world while following me. They infiltrated the Soviet Union's satellite countries and main cities. Sometimes I even received reports of them being sentenced to death due to their missionary activities. Receiving such reports, a leader's heart is serious. Even if his child is seriously ill, he has no time to worry about him. They respect me because I care for the world. I am in the position to shed tears for them and care for them. For that reason, I cannot live an easy life.

Since I must surmount all the peaks I can and will do my best to fulfill my responsibilities. I cannot rest even if I want to, and I cannot stop even if I want to. Since I have spent my days that way, I now find myself advanced in age. However, my heart must start anew from now on. Then I will go to the spirit world while doing that. What will be left behind from my life? I must leave behind the fact that I loved humankind. Everything else regardless of what it is, except for the love of the nation and the Unification Church, will fall away in the ruins of history. (136-135, 1985.12.22)

Section 5. True Parents' Family and the Spirit World

5.1. The establishment of the right of the eldest son

Through my son, Heung-jin, going to the spirit world, Abel and the angels – who had been completely separated like earth and heaven – were bound together like twins. Upon that unified foundation, parents could be mobilized. This is the view of the Unification Principle.

Heung-jin is the Abel-type son who went to the spirit world on the basis of establishing conditions of indemnification for the realm of dominion of the Principle, which was established through True Parents' love. He went to the spirit world from the position of having conquered the realm of Satan's dominion and having realized the realm of God's direct dominion. He attained the state of being the son who went to heaven with the qualification of having perfected himself for the first time since the Fall.

Originally, if people had not fallen, they would have passed into the spirit world with the qualification of owners or sons centered on love based on the family foundation. That is where the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle and the realm of direct dominion are unified with that of True Parents' heart. By the Principle one cannot go to heaven without this foundation.

Since Jesus and Christians went to spirit world without reaching that point, until now they have all remained in the middle realm of the spirit world. With Heung-jin passing, however, a central point was established where they could be engrafted to God. Since Heung-jin received the Blessing and his spouse is still on earth, he can stand in the same position as having a family in his lifetime.

Thus, centering on Heung-jin's family, the spiritual foundation on which one can visit one's family on earth has been established. This is precious. The establishment of Heung-jin's family is precious.

If such work could have been done, despite Jesus' death, Christianity would not have needed to sacrifice as it did until now. Yet there has been no other way. Why? Jesus had to go to the other world and return because, within the realm of True Parents' heart, separation from Satan could not be done within the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle; and because the foundation of love was not established within the realm of direct dominion.

Yet Heung-jin does not need to come again. Heung-jin lives both in the spirit world and on earth. That being so, what will happen? The spiritual and physical worlds have become like twins from the standpoint of the realm of heart. The parents are in the eldest son position. From the viewpoint of generations, vertically the parents are above and Heung-jin of the second generation is below.

Yet in the spirit world this is reversed. In terms of our birth on earth, I am in the

position of the elder brother and Heung-jin in that of the younger brother. I am in Cain's position and Heung-jin in Abel's position. In the spirit world, Heung-jin becomes the eldest son. He is in the position of the elder brother and all the other spirits are in the position of younger siblings. Based on the realm of heart, that is how it is. From God's standpoint, He is the Father, I am the elder son and Heung-jin is the younger son.

In the spirit world, Heung-jin is the eldest son based on the realm of love and all others in the spirit world stand in the position of younger siblings. There is a reversal. Thus, we reach the conclusion that the standard of heart for the right of the eldest son finds its correct position and settles there. You must teach this well when giving a Principle lecture. Now, in accordance with the realm of heart, before all the people in the spirit world, including even Jesus and all the good saints, Heung-jin is first to be born as the eldest son. From the viewpoint of the realm of heart, Heung-jin is the first son and the others are the second sons who are next to be born.

Consequently, Heung-jin can let the realm of the second son inherit the blessings of the right of the first son. Satan tried to prevent this from happening by plundering the inheritance. But Heung-jin, who now stands in the realm of the first son, delivered all the blessings he received while on earth. So there is a connection being made. Heung-jin unceasingly endeavors to pass these blessings on, whereas the satanic world resists doing do. (131-52, 1984.4.1)

5.2. The center of love established in the spirit world

Since Heung-jin left behind the condition of having loved the whole world on behalf of the True Parents by offering his life, you are also linked to that destiny of loving the world with your life. Heung-jin went instead of the True Parents. For that reason, loving Heung-jin becomes a condition for loving the True Parents. Your love for Heung-jin is linked to your love for the True Parents.

In the spirit world, there has been no center until now. There was no center to be able to connect to the spirit world; but because of Heung-jin, all spirits who love him can be connected to the condition of loving the Father. They can connect to the Unification Church. For the Unification Church, Heung-jin set the standard on earth by fighting at the cost of his life. For the spirit world, he is its first representative in history to be connected with love. On earth, he has set an example to Unification Church members of loving God's will even at the sacrifice of his life. What he is telling you to do is to love the True Parents. You must go on loving True Parents for the sake of the world. By Heung-jin going to the spirit world, the spirit world came to love him, and by doing so, the relationship of love with the True Parents on earth was established.

Thus, for the spirit world, the day it received Heung-jin was the most joyful day in history. He opened the gates of the spirit world as the messiah of love and opened the way of an exemplary

martyr on earth. That is why Unification Church members should love him.

If both those in the spirit world and in the Unification Church love Heung-jin, what should the True Parents do? In order to welcome the love of God and the love of the earth, they should be honored to offer their own son. They must know how to be able to think of it proudly. God could not love teenaged Adam and Eve as His son and daughter, but now, at least in the spirit world, He can love them.

That is why I prayed, "I could not glorify You by laying the foundation for Korea during my youth; I could not comfort you on the basis of laying and indemnifying the global foundation in my generation. Please indemnify these things through my son!"

Since the spirit world and the earth love him, I must establish the standard that his parents also love him. I believe Heung-jin will establish the realm of resurrection of love in the physical and spirit worlds. Through his death, love will be resurrected. Holding on to the spiritual and physical worlds, I will proclaim the realm of the resurrection of love. With that done, we will bid goodbye to the realm of death. For that reason, you should not be sad even at funerals. (130-201, 1984.1.15)

5.3. The establishment of the kingship on earth and in the spirit world

Right after the Unification Ceremony on the day before Heung-jin went to the spirit world, what did I pray? I prayed, promising him, "Even though you are leaving the physical world, I will choose an adopted son for you as if you were still on earth, and let him join the ranks of the son." For that reason, I have to give him the Blessing on earth. Without doing so, it would be impossible for me to keep my promise. God has sent the Messiah to save the earthly world. You should know that today, in order for True Parents to save the spirit world, I have sent a prince of love as my ambassador with full authority. Why must I establish such a global foundation on earth? Even Jesus could not reach that position. You should know the fact that, for the first time in history, God has a young son whom He can love as His own. For the first time, God loves from the spirit world and True Parents love from earth. Thus, the two worlds are connected. Since this world was in the realm of fallen love, that is, in the indirect dominion of God, it had no connection with the love of True Parents until now. Yet you must know the amazing fact that this has finally emerged.

Now, what happens when Heung-jin goes to the other side? You must know that since he was born as a Korean, he will appear as the fruit of good Korean kings. Heung-jin's position in the spirit world is that of king. From this perspective, compared to those kings, even though Heung-jin is young in age, he is the Abel king. In the spirit world, as in the physical world, all circumstances are known. The two worlds will be completely one. When Cain and Abel become one, the heavenly parents can work on the basis of that foundation.

The heavenly parents gain the right to work. Thus, as Heung-jin's position as king and the Korean Abel kings' position becoming one, a Korean-centered sovereignty forms. When that becomes one, he stands in the position of the Abel king.

After that, all kings will stand in the realm of Abel. You do not know this since you are on earth, but in the spirit world, unity is achieved instantly. Thus, with all kings centering on Korea, 120 nations can be completely united. Since those who can become Abel before that king – those who believed in Judaism or Christianity and died, all established those kingships in preparation to serve the Messiah, and all Abel peoples within the sphere of religion who in turn revere him – will become completely united.

Yet there is one problem. Heung-jin cannot establish the position of king alone. Finding the queen becomes an issue, the first issue. To unite the kingships, a queen must be found to be the king's partner. When that happens, this kingship is connected to the spirit world.

Also, since his queen is on earth, a foundation can be laid that enables him to bring people belonging to the kingships of 120 nations and connect with the earth. This brings the unification of the spiritual and physical worlds centering on God's love. By his marriage, Heung-jin can freely come to the earth to take action.

Heung-jin does not come alone; all kings of the united kingship can follow him to the earth. Therefore, I had to conduct this ceremony. When you go out, those who oppose us will say all sorts of things about me. I am doing this to send Heung-jin to the spirit world as the representative of love to work on behalf of the True Parents.

For that reason, fifty days after Heung-jin's ascension is the same as the day of Pentecost. The Holy Spirit descended in the upper room of Mark's house, the people received the fire which spread throughout the world. In the same way, with Hoon-sook's marriage, the kings from 120 nations in the spirit world will come to the earth, and they will resurrect to establish the worldwide movement. That is how the kingships of 120 nations in the spirit world come to the earth and become one with the physical world. We find these two remarkable points of significance.

Thus, if there is just one nation among 120 nations that can serve the True Parents anywhere, the gates of the Kingdom of Heaven will be opened from there. (131-13, 1984.2.20)

CHAPTER SIX

Our Position in Relation to the Spirit World

Section 1. The Fruit of Life and the Divine Spirit

Our lifetime is but a moment. This lifetime will determine whether we are connected to eternity or to the moment. If the current lifestyle is extended, it could go on indefinitely. On the other hand, if it is broken, from that point on a new heaven and earth unfolds. Like a scale, some go up and some go down.

You all are the historically resurrected bodies of your ancestors, wearing their faces. How long is this history? It is said to be hundreds of thousands of years old. The purpose of this long, arduous course of history was to eventually create one person – you. For example, to create one such person from the Kim family, countless ancestors came and went. Thus, we are the fruits of human history.

Would you like fruit if it had big holes eaten through it by worms? Would you like apples with dark seeds easily rolling out when you cut them in half, or those with sticky seeds stuck to the core? If you were opened, do you think a well-ripened seed would come out? Are you sure that your second generation will become a heavenly fruit? If your heart was cut open, do you think that a well-ripened Unification Church member would come out?

Would it be all right for this substantial fruit of six thousand years to fall without ripening, like a fruit dropping from its tree? Should the fruit, worrying that the wind might blow, say, "Oh no, it looks like I might fall. If the wind blows a bit more, I am going to fall. Father, don't shake me, just let me be still." There may be some people here who are like that. On the other hand, there are members saying, "Even if you take an ax and shake the branches as you please, my branches will never fall until they have been cut." To which group do you belong? (46-154, 1971.8.13)

We know that birth, marriage and death are important stages in our life. In order for individuals to bear fruit after their birth and having grown up, they must establish a bond with their partner, thereafter walking a path together until the end. The same holds true for a nation; it also has a period to lay its foundations, followed by a period of prosperity, after which it must go through an evening-like period.

When individuals become life spirits, they must have some content that allows life to bear fruit within them. If they do

not, when the fruiting season arrives, they will not be able to see fruition.

For this reason, we must overcome our circumstances. Not only that, we must also inherit all the conditions that can bear fruit, thereby possessing the inherent strength that generates that fruition. Only then can we complete the process of fruition, becoming a fruit needed for the progress of a new social and historical course.

After birth, people must overcome their circumstances on their own. They must undergo a process through which they can inherit new life and bear fruit in the future. Finally, they must occupy a place where they can manifest the proper effects and results. For example, after grain is sown, it germinates, matures, bears fruit, and is then harvested and stored by the owner. We too must undergo a process whereby we can be harvested for a certain purpose.

You must understand that you are responsible to equip yourselves with the inner conditions which will permit you to inherit such hopes and to use those conditions to embrace the external environment. This must be accomplished not from a position of self-defense, but by taking the initiative.

Consider the persimmon tree that blooms in spring. Its flowers are not particularly colorful compared to other flowers. Their color is similar to that of the tree's leaves. For this reason, with a casual glance you would not notice the flowers. Later, while the fruit is growing, because of the dense blanket of green foliage, you cannot easily tell whether there is fruit or not. The green leaves are so bright and fresh that it is hard to tell whether or not the tree has fruit. When summer turns to autumn, the persimmon's color begins to change. As they ripen, both the inside and outside turn orange. Then you see them hanging radiantly on the tree even after all of the leaves have fallen.

It is similar with Unification Church members. Looking at the Unification Church, if the 1970s are said to be the fruiting season, then all the leaf-like elements should disappear. Just as the persimmon fruit exposed on a bare branch can possess the value of the entire tree, the question is whether we can become like that fruit.

Such fruit does not need any advertisement. By looking at the fruit itself, anyone could evaluate it one hundred percent inside and out. How much labor would the persimmon tree have to expend until it could perfect itself by bearing its fruit through this process? We must understand that until this fruit was perfected from among the numerous flowers that bloomed on the tree's branches, it suffered and made more effort than any other type of fruit. We must understand that it overcame all kinds of environmental ordeals which could have caused it to fall: adverse circumstances like lack of nourishment that would prevent ripening and the ordeals of summer with its buffeting winds, rain, and storms.

If that tree could bear only one fruit, that lone fruit would contain the combined sap and external fight-to-live

qualities of that entire tree. Only that kind of fruit could remain. If only one fruit remained on that tree, it would represent the value of the entire tree. In the case of a persimmon tree, that one persimmon would justify the value of that tree when autumn came, and save its dignity and authority.

If many flowers bloomed and much fruit ripened on a tree, but it all rotted and the tree could not bear fruit in the autumn, that tree, with its barren branches, would be so very miserable and sorrowful! If that tree could not bear much fruit, but bore just one that was beyond comparison with those of any other tree, it would stand proud of that one fruit before myriads of other trees.

There are numerous religions in our present society. Numerous denominations exist in Christianity alone. Amidst this reality, looking at the Unification Church in its fruiting season, God is asking for a certain fruit from it. As I have mentioned, even though a tree should bear much fruit, yet only bore one so perfect as to be unsurpassed by any other fruit from that tree, that tree can find its value, authority, and dignity through that one fruit.

Likewise, the Unification Church must bear fruit. Starting from its establishment until now, our church has undergone acute hardships and ordeals while advancing toward its fruition. The critical issue here is the quality of the fruit it will bear. From this perspective, you should be able to check whether you have indeed experienced a normal spring, normal summer, and normal autumn and whether you can bear a fully ripe fruit.

Looking at the fruit itself, we find within it the properties to produce branches, leaves, roots, and seeds. If we picked a fruit, it could be considered that we possessed that entire tree. Since that fruit has many seeds, with that fruit we stand in a position to possess tens or hundreds of trees. The fruit of a tree should inherit all the essential elements of life that the tree has to bequeath, be it ten or twenty years old. Only then is a perfect fruit harvested.

While the fruit is growing, its essential elements should never be severed. It should be left undisturbed to grow continuously. From the day its life began until the time it is harvested by the owner and kept in storage, the essential elements should never be disconnected, not even once. Whether it is windy – or worse still, stormy, they must not be disconnected no matter what hardships may come. These essential elements must be retained without interruption, from beginning to end.

From this perspective, after venturing on the path of faith, you must have all felt new life, new ecstasy, and new hope springing up within yourselves. From the day you resolve to become such trees, or people of such character, all the inner essential elements that are being prepared for the harvest season in autumn must be retained without interruption. Without a process to solidify and add something as the days go by, a fully ripened fruit cannot emerge. (36-10, 1970.11.8)

Section 2. Judgment and Approval (Certification)

2.1. Categories of Judgment

God knows that the way of the Principle cannot be walked without loving one's enemies. Would God let humanity perish in the judgment of the Last Days? No. He is the Parent of humankind. The so-called judgment by fire spoken of in Christianity today is not a literal one. (31-165, 1970.5.24)

Between teachers and students, there are rules for teachers to observe and rules for students to observe. Likewise, in the Unification Church, there are rules that I should observe, and rules that you should observe. Therefore you who hear the Word are subject to judgment by the Word. If you hear it wrongly, you will be judged.

Then, what activities should we undertake next? We are to realize substance. That being the case, if we fail to undertake activities that substantiate the Word, there will be a judgment of substance. There is judgment by the Word, judgment of substance, and judgment of heart. We must undergo the three great processes of judgment.

First, the word of the Principle will judge you and after that, you will be subjected to the judgment of substance. Who will judge? Those who substantiated the word by working hard in fundraising and witnessing, and who followed all the rules, they will judge you. Those who worked hard will judge you; that is judgment. If you do not follow the Word, even Satan will judge you and others will accuse you. I will judge Unification Church members; the Unification Church leaders will judge them, and those who followed the will of the Unification Church will judge them.

What way should you go? First you are recognized by family members in the satanic world, then by me. After that, you go to God in the spirit world. That is the way to go, by the way of the law. Going that way is the right direction. If there are any conditions for accusation, they will join forces to accuse you in the flesh. It will be a judgment of substance. Will lies work in that situation? Doing something unwillingly is like not doing it at all. If you do it thinking of God and Father, their essence will be embedded inside your shell, like a fully mature chestnut embedded inside the burr. When you think of God and me dwelling in your heart, my words and God's Word will become your core.

Unification Church members should become people whom God, I, and other members can welcome. So you must be like the kernel of the chestnut when the burr is cracked open. We should live for God and True Parents. That is what you are to do. If you wish to live for the sake of God and True Parents after going to the spirit world, your lifestyle on earth should be in step with that kind of life. That is how harmony is achieved.

For this reason, you should go through a process of passing the fearful judgment of substance. That is the law. On that day, a foundation of heart will

automatically come into being. When you work hard fundraising and witnessing, why do people persecute and accuse you? That experience allows you to find heart, a heart you did not have, and to find love. It happens so that you can love such people.

Without undergoing such a training course, however much you try to become heavenly people, you will not make it. In other words, you should find love greater than that in the satanic world. Otherwise you cannot go to heaven. We are trying to go to heaven by finding love and only those who have found love can go there.

Who will be the Lords of judgment at that time? God, Jesus, and I will be the Lords of Judgment. Therefore you should put these things into practice. You should know that this is the task we are confronting and it is God's command. (103-236, 1979.3.1)

2.2. Prepare a passport to Heaven

The final judgment day will come for everyone. In order to establish the ultimate ideal world in the midst of the satanic world, you should have gone through all kinds of experiences and be able to pass the test given at the time of judgment.

You need a passport to heaven. There should be many individuals, families, and nations who can receive this passport. To be entrusted by heaven and earth, a nation with this passport must exist for God. That is the original ideal of creation.

This passport will expel Satan. He will be unable to come to you, or to interfere in your daily life. If you wish to free yourself from his interference, you should separate yourself from him. You should separate as individuals, families, tribes, people, nations, the world, and the cosmos. In the Unification Principle, you learned about the history of separating from Satan. How must it be done? It must be done through the way of indemnity.

Scholars or presidents are no exception. The way of indemnity is one that must be sought, not taught. You must seek it yourselves. Those who do not do this will go to hell. You must understand that the chains of hell are hooked all over your eyes, your nose, and your thoughts. This is not a threat; it is simply that indemnity is needed to reverse the Fall.

It is so difficult to erase ink from a white sheet of paper. What Satan wrote is more difficult to erase than ink. If you wish to erase it, you must be revived after dying. Realize that "although you have the name of being alive, yet you are dead." As long as hooks remain within you, Satan will claim you as his. Thus, Jesus stated: "Those who seek to die will live, and those who seek to live will die." (129-183, 1983.10.30)

Since there are saints and sages and great people like Jesus, Confucius, and Buddha in the spirit world, by what accord will you ascend there? Also, there will be many martyrs there who died during the period of persecution in

Rome, and many other people who were sacrificed for the public cause. Then, how can you go up there, what will you need? Just to join a platoon in the U.S. Army, you need a certificate. So can you just step up and ascend to that lofty place called the spirit world?

In the world beyond time and space where many hundreds of billions are gathered watching you, are you confident that you will be welcomed? In the spirit world, there is no distance. They will be watching you ascend. How can you go up there? In order to pass through to that place, you need a certificate. Without it, you cannot pass through. Can you go there saying, "I'm going to bring my doctorate in literature"? In the spirit world, it has even less value than toilet paper.

Why are we trying to go to the spirit world by going through opposition from this fallen, evil world? It is to receive a certificate. This is not something secular. If I had gone out into the world, I would have attained success to the extent that I would envy no one. I am a man of such abilities. (146-330, 1986.8.10)

Jesus inherited the heavenly kingdom, but not the world. Then who inherited the world? Cain. Therefore, the world is Cain's domain. For this reason, once Abel inherits the heavenly kingdom, he should receive a certificate issued and guaranteed by Cain who belongs to the world. To enter heaven, you need to obtain a certificate from Satan.

Fallen people are caught between these two rules governing heaven and earth. As they have not been resolved, history has been prolonged and repeated through the past six thousand years. Nevertheless, we have now come to understand this. In the Bible it is written, "You will know the truth, and the truth will set you free." As we now know the answer, we must love even if we have to clench our teeth. To what level must we love? We must love even Cain who is our enemy. (34-277, 1970.9.13)

Since the Fall took place, not in God's presence, but with Satan as subject, we must subjugate Satan in order to free ourselves from its realm. We must be able to say and claim before Satan, "Satan, you wretch! I am where I am now because of you. I will subjugate you and return to God!" If you do not obtain the certification that you subjugated Satan, you cannot receive God's love.

Jesus, too, was victorious in overcoming the three great temptations. We cannot go to heaven without obtaining Satan's signature that we were historically victorious. No matter what, we must obtain Satan's signature. When Jesus overcame Satan's three great temptations, Satan acknowledged tearfully, "You are eternally different from me." (24-336, 1969.9.14)

To subjugate Cain, we must love him all the way to the end. Without being such people, we cannot save Cain. To go to heaven, we must obtain Satan's certificate. What is Satan's certificate? In order for a criminal to be released, he must first go through a prosecutor, then an

attorney, and finally a judge. From this perspective, Satan is like the prosecutor, God the judge, and Jesus is the attorney. If Satan ensnares a person saying, "You did this and this, did you not?" and says to God, "This person should be dealt with in this way," God's hands are tied. But Jesus, in the position of an attorney would say, "Heavenly Father, this person's ancestors did such and such things and he is from a good lineage. Since he is accused on these counts, he should be given an indemnity condition related to his crimes so he can be freed from accusation." This is what has been happening.

Hence, if you want to go to heaven, you must get Satan's certificate. Without getting a certificate that we loved Satan, we can never go to heaven. That is what the Unification Church is doing.

Normally we treat those who oppose us as enemies. Instead, we should love them, even though it is stifling. We must love our enemies and pray for them to have good fortune. We have no choice. Unless Cain and Abel become one, there will be no restoration, and you cannot return to your Parent. (48-316, 1971.9.26)

Christianity has passed through a history of seeking the true olive tree, while innumerable people have pioneered a miserable destiny throughout the ages. The true olive tree refers to the son of God. Once he comes, you must receive his sap as well as engrafting onto one of his branches. All conditions left unresolved in history, the failures of all our ancestors through the ages who could not overcome the indemnity conditions presented by Satan, will be resolved at that point. You should be engrafted, not from a foundation of fertile soil or a warm shelter, but from ground that is rough and stony. That is because you must receive from Satan a certificate that you can become God's child, since you have been equipped with the original nature that has not existed in the satanic world until now. It is not something that God gives. If it had been up to God, He would have issued this six thousand years ago.

The judge does not approve your release from prison. Who will? The prosecutor gives his approval. In this court, the prosecutor is Satan. Without obtaining the endorsement of the prosecutor in court, you cannot be released. Without Satan's approval, God does not say, "You are my child. Let me save you!" You must absolutely get Satan's approval. Have you received Satan's release or not? You must get it.

What does the Unification Church teach? It teaches the way to obtain Satan's approval. You must not only get a spiritual approval, but also a substantial one that combines both the spirit and the flesh. (17-124, 1966.12.11)

You cannot obtain a passport to heaven just like that. A doctorate obtained merely by sitting through classes without passing a test or writing a dissertation would be a fake. Even in the Unification Church there are real members and fake ones. You become real members only after fulfilling the right

standard. (129-185, 1983.10.30)

You cannot go to heaven simply because you have a clean and pure heart. You need to go through procedures in order to enter heaven. In order to be registered, you need a license, don't you? However much you may insist that you are an absolutely pure person, you cannot just go to heaven. There are formalities to go through.

The visa and documentation procedures for entering the United States, in its current state of decline, are very complicated. Yet it is more complicated for us to enter heaven than to enter America. You must complete all the legal procedures. You need to learn that.

Therefore, this is not the Unification Church, but the unification university. It is the university of Heaven. All the instructions that I have given on earth become the conditions for entering the other world. Not being able to fulfill these conditions means not being able to go there.

Upon hearing this, some might wonder if I am only giving instructions without having done anything. However, whatever instructions I give, I have already accomplished them myself. I would not ask you to do these things before I put them into practice. Why? As the True Parent, I must teach you. There is no one with whom I can discuss these matters. I cannot discuss the providence for restoration with the president of the United States. Dr. Durst is here, but I cannot discuss the matter with him. If I did, the archangel would accuse me. The archangel is the ringleader who caused human beings to fall. Hence, other than God and me, no one knows about these things. (146-335, 1986.8.10)

Now the Unification Church will surmount the global peak. Now no one can destroy the Unification Church. No one can send me to prison. You should not just be busy with married life and giving birth to children. You should be busy preparing a certificate that will let you enter heaven. You do not know when you will die. Who knows when you will be involved in an auto accident and go to the spirit world? All kinds of things occur. So, you never know when you may have to go to the spirit world.

From now on if you as Blessed Family members went to the spirit world while you were enjoying your own personal lives, having fun and neglecting to prepare yourselves to go to the spirit world, could you come before Rev. Moon of the Unification Church? Blessed families did not yet reach the global level because they are at the perfection level of the growth stage. Since they are at the top of the growth stage, they must go on to the global level. Since that course remains, Blessed Families must go through it. Even though I made all the preparations for you to go to the spirit world, if you are still doing nothing, how miserable you will be!

I am not an incapable person. My personality is such that I will not let myself be defeated by anyone. I do not like being trampled upon by anyone, but I have lived such a life. I do not enjoy

opposition, but I have lived a life facing it. Because of this, I clearly know the path that you who have joined the Unification Church must walk. You must quickly transcend the nation and the world. Are you busy with married life taking care of household chores, or are you busy making preparations to go to the spirit world?

I am now living in rhythm with the spirit world; everybody must live in step with the spirit world. When Unification Church members go to the spirit world, you will be questioned at the gates on the conditions I have taught you to fulfill. Everything I have taught up to the present time will be written down as conditions. If you cannot answer to them, you will not be able to get in. You will have to wait in the middle realm of the spirit world for me to come. You may wish for my prompt arrival but even when I do go to spirit world, not all of you can enter the realm where I will go. (146-335, 1986.8.10)

My slogan is, "Let us kick out the devil!" Satan is the villain who has made countless people suffer throughout history. Let us take the position of a prosecutor ourselves, relentlessly accusing Satan of all the evil deeds that he has committed in front of God, the judge of justice and righteousness. We should become the prosecutor and accuse the devil, Satan. Then, will Satan surrender to the prosecutor or not? There will be no attorney available to him, but to humankind there will be one.

Jesus is working as an attorney in the spirit world. As such, he would say, "This person performed good deeds believing in my name. Heavenly Father, is it not true, based on an agreement made between You and the devil, that the devil cannot take someone who strove to be good, someone who observed the public laws? Is that not true?" Then God would say, "Yes, it is true".

The devil cannot take people who are placed in a position of goodness in Jesus' name, which is why people are told to believe in Him. But can you go to heaven just by unconditionally believing in him? I went to the spirit world and saw many scenes in which famous ministers were kneeling down in hell, saying, "I did not realize that Rev. Moon was such a person!" This sounds like a dream, but the teacher you are following is such a person. He is a leader with a deep, theoretical understanding of the higher dimensional world which surpasses this five-dimensional world. Those who want to follow me need to understand these things. (149-98, 1986.11.17)

We must have a nation. You have your own nations, but the nation to which we are going is a different one. Without receiving the officially recognized citizenship of this new nation, one cannot enter heaven. However much he may want to, Satan cannot accuse people with a certified citizenship. He cannot accuse them from any direction whether north, south, east, or west, or any era – past, present, or future.
(148-288, 1986.10.25)

Section 3. Registration in the Spirit World

3.1. Freedoms enjoyed by the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven

Women who are born beautiful are inclined to pursue the external. Homely women will inevitably pursue not the external, but rather the internal.

The more people pursue the external, the more trapped they become in Satan's ragged playground; but if they pursue the internal they will come closer to God's side. Those who know how to pursue the internal can freely go toward the external, but those who pursue the external can never come toward the internal.

Then, what kind of people will Unification Church members become? Ideally they will become people who know how to enter the internal world and how to go out into the external world; how to come in after going out, as well as being able to travel north, south, east, and west. We are trying to create people who allow the internal world to become the subject, thus enabling them to have dominion over the external world.

The external world was invaded by evil, so if you go the external way, you will end up going to hell. But if you go to the internal world, you will end up in good spirit world – the Kingdom of Heaven. When you can freely travel to both the internal and external worlds, you can go to hell as well as to heaven. Since I know this fact, I am asserting that we should try to become people who can be welcomed by everyone wherever we go. That is what God is also asserting. God can freely visit hell. He does not go through any procedures in order to do that. He does not go through procedures to get to His palace in heaven, either. He goes wherever He wants. (116-177, 1982.1.1)

3.2. Special gifts that can be carried to the spirit world

What gift will you carry when you go to God in the spirit world? Not money, nor the prestige of an academic title, nor the love for a spouse, nor a happy life. Such things cannot be gifts. You must take your love for God and your love for the world with you to that place. That is what remains. In John 3:16, it is written: "God so loved the world..." It states that God loves the world; therefore He sent His only begotten son. The only begotten son is the person who came to love the world.

For this reason, if your faith is founded in love, you will not perish. You will be saved. Since the Lord loves the world, we should do likewise. Christianity has become split into many different denominations. There are Christians who don't even think about the world or God. They are perishing while loving only their own denomination and nations; we must love the world and God, transcending our own denomination and nations. (98-329, 1978.8.13)

Even a judge cannot do anything to a murderer without evidence. If the murderer objects, saying, "When did you see me committing the crime?" the judge

cannot do anything to him. However, when he is confronted with evidence, the murderer cannot kick up a fuss. If you have no evidence, you should seek it. A verse of a hymn goes, "Jesus loves me, this I know, for the Bible tells me so." Do you have any evidence? Some people go out to witness, and boast of having evidence of this, but is boasting true evidence? What are you going to do with such evidence? It has nothing to do with you if no one remains from your witnessing efforts.

Do you have a gift to bring along when you go to heaven? When you go to the spirit world, religious martyrs will line up in front of you. Can you unwrap the bundle you brought with you in front of them? Do you think that you can unfold something that is like a beggar's rag which he uses for wrapping his feet? What suffering have you and the Unification Church undergone? How can you say you lived for the nation and the world without having withstood such hardships? I have suffered, but I do not think of it as suffering. Naturally, we still have a long way to go. Upon your arrival in the spirit world, you have to be able to unwrap your bundle and say, "Here is the gift I prepared all throughout my life; please receive it." If a woman must bring a dowry when moving in with her in-laws, how can you go to heaven empty-handed?

As Unification Church members, what mission did you receive from God? As God's elite troops, as His sons and daughters, when you marry you should inherit the lineage of that family. To do this, you take care of your family's chores and cultivate your independence. Such a holy mission is given to you. Therefore, even if you are separated from me and cannot physically live with me everyday; even if God cannot always instruct you directly, never forget that you are the ones endowed with a mission under God's realm of governance.

Regard yourself as absolute. Be determined to gain eternal guarantees for the fruit that grows from absolute values. These treasures belong to all humankind, future generations, and the spirit world. This is the responsibility given to those appointed by God. Those who do not fulfill that responsibility will be more miserable than beggars. Beggars can at least feed themselves at mealtime by begging for food, but those who fail to fulfill their responsibilities won't be able to eat even porridge at meal-time.

If God gave you ten years to fulfill such a responsibility, during those ten years you should offer your utmost loyalty and devotion. How can you shorten the period of restoring the children's path that can illuminate history and make it a valuable path? To reduce a ten-year period scheduled by God to a seven-year course, you must invest your sweat, blood, effort, and toil. Without exerting greater quantity and quality of effort you cannot have dominion over the nation and world. Unification Church members must become people who can fulfill such responsibilities.

Such an era has arrived. Already the foundation has been laid and work on the exterior has been completed; now

is the era of interior decoration. Since interior decoration requires the personal touch of the owner, I am needed. Things like walls are not of immediate importance, but in order to put into place what is necessary, we need to do things in phases. Hence, we have a time of preparation, a time of performance, and a time of achievement.

We must make appropriate plans for each stage of our life. We must make our utmost effort in preparing during the time of preparation, in performing during the time of performance, and in achieving during the time of achievement. Only then will the interior decorating turn out well. Then, whoever sees the interior décor will compliment its exquisite quality and the high degree of effort invested in it.

A time of preparation will come. You will be appointed to a certain responsibility and you must make preparations while living for the Will. Next comes the time of performance. At that time, you must perform, even it you lose track of night and day. Then comes the time of achievement, the season in which hope is realized. (32-71, 1970.6.21)

3.3. The Kingdom of Heaven created through the Three Great Subjects Principle

The mind stands in God's stead. Your mind represents your predecessors, your ancestors. The mind represents the teacher as well as the ruler. Yet, how long has the mind been held in disdain and contempt? The mind represents the one being who, as the center of the universe, stands in the position of the true parent, the true teacher, and the true lord. It exists as the subject of true love. How much has the mind been sacrificed to keep us in order on the earth?

Though it is treated contemptuously and dragged around, when you have evil thoughts and commit theft at dawn, your mind protests against you time and again saying, "Hey, you wretch!" How long have we trifled with such a mind? It stands in the place of parent, teacher, and lord. In the world of the mind, no trials are needed. You know yourself better than anyone else. No third party or witness is necessary.

We cannot stand proudly before our parents; we are ashamed before our teachers, before the rulers of our nation, and we are ashamed before God. Hence we must repent. In order to return to our original homeland, we must repent. In the original homeland, we must attend God as our King. He is the King of the universe, nation, tribe, and family.

God is the Teacher of the universe, nation, tribe, and family. He is also their Lord. This is the three-great-subjects thought. Having the essence of the love that lives for others and then forgets about doing so, this three-great-subjects thought represents the heavenly nation.

If we could entirely possess the three-great-subjects thought, that would be most ideal. But even if we do not, when we stand in the position of true parents, teachers will stand on the right, and lords on the left. Therefore, it would be best if you can stand in one of these

three positions. Whether you become true parents, true teachers, or true lords, if you stand in at least one of those positions, your registration in the Kingdom of Heaven will not be a problem. (209-154, 1990.11.28)

3.4. Conditions for registration

The Fall means to be separated from the Word in substance and heart. So you should first know the Word and practice it. In practicing the Word, we must proceed with a parental heart. Only those who substantiated restoration through indemnity can be given the Blessing. Lip service does not work. It is through your actions that you can become part of the heavenly clan; you become a life spirit of this nation.

Among the spiritual phenomena connected to our life, there are form spirits, life spirits, and divine spirits. Since they are the objective elements of the spirit world, they progress through the same destinies as those on earth. Once you become divine spirits, the course of restoration requires us to register our position. Thus, from then and there you register and enter your proper position. This is the course of restoration. Once that connection is made and you are registered, however many mistakes you make or however many misdeeds you commit, you can no longer be governed by the laws established in the satanic world. Americans cannot be governed by Korean laws because their nationality is different. When you enter a certain realm, only the laws of that realm will apply to you. Therefore, once you transcend the laws of the satanic world, they no longer apply to you no matter what. In the end, earthly laws will not affect you either, since they do not apply to you. Here, you must set up corresponding indemnity conditions. Then you do not end up going to hell.

Once born, we must eventually die. That is the formula. Then after death, where do we go? All Unification Church members know they have a spirit self. This spirit self must grow.

What will become an issue for you in the future is that one day you will have to write your autobiography. Such a time will come. The question is what you have done since joining the Unification Church and what will be contained in that record. If you worked at a company as an employee, it is not a valuable condition and such a record will not be helpful at all. It will be shameful to have worked at a company after joining the church. Such a time will come.

In the future, a process known as registration will be established. When North and South Korea are reunified, you must be registered. The term tribal messiah is not the issue. The contents and facts associated with that term are what matters. From now on, the content of the term will become indemnity conditions for you to walk on your own eternal path of life. When you go to the other world, what matters is how much effort you made to have experiences in your heart, walking such paths, and even more so, to what extent you brought substantial results.

You will not be able to find the path of salvation in the ordinary, habitual lifestyles you have pursued until now. You must walk the path of complete indemnity. The providence of salvation is the providence of restoration, and the providence of restoration is the providence of re-creation. Therefore, in order to be re-created, you must enter the original position untainted by the Fall, the position of zero. There, consciousness, habits that we have and surnames like Kim or Lee, will not exist. You must enter such a zero position. Viewed from God's original standard of creation, every created being began from the zero point.

Because of the Fall, this world is filled with everything contrary to the way of going to heaven. These must be cut off. This cannot be achieved by words. The world is filled with the varied habits and customs of different races of diverse historical and cultural backgrounds, bound to the life and lineage of Satan, based on his love. These habits are not eradicated by mere words. The Bible states that those who seek to die will live. This establishes the paradoxical logic: you must seek to die in order to live. You must invest your lives.

Because of that, we must launder everything. In other words, we need to restore them through indemnity. Such a process is absolutely necessary. As long as the habits or sinful nature that you used to have in the fallen world remain, you cannot form a relationship with God. (213-97, 1991.1.16)

When you go to the spirit world, if you have not completed a seven-day fast for God, you cannot be registered in that world. Why? Since God has been toiling in the course of the 6,000-year history of restoration, you must fast while contemplating God's efforts. Hence, the Unification Church has the tradition of the seven-day fast. It is not to make you suffer, but to let you set the condition of having struck your body before heaven. (17-182, 1966.12.18)

How should we live? The way is for individuals to live for their families, families for their tribes, tribes for their races, races for their nations, nations for the world, the world for heaven and earth, and heaven and earth for God and His love. We are to live this way until we die. We are different. Our tradition is firmly established. Why is that so? If we do not establish our tradition, there will be no place for registration upon arrival in the other world. Since it is organized that way, there is no way for those failing to meet those requirements to be registered. There will no place for you. You must reappear as original people unrelated to the Fall, otherwise you cannot get in. This is the view of the Unification Principle. (131-56, 1984.4.1)

You must be registered in the Kingdom of Heaven. Abraham offered himself and the creation on an altar in order to approach God. Since the creation was lost, creation must be offered as a condition for restoration. And since man was also lost, he had to stand in the position of Abel, set up creation in Abel's

position, assist Cain in establishing an acceptable condition, and offer this all to God. Only when done in this way can God accept the offering for the first time. (15-149, 1965.10.7)

What should we do prior to registration, in order to be born as absolute people? Without understanding this clearly, we can never reach the place where we can assert our subject nature before heaven, the place where, having overcome everything, we can stand in the stead of the perfect being.

We human beings were born because of God. The motive for our birth comes through the Creator. We are made by Him, but for what? This is the question. Did He create us because He wanted to leave diamonds to us because He likes them? Did He create us because he wants to bequeath His power, or to pass on all His knowledge because He likes knowledge? What is our origin, our beginning? This is the question. Even if we were to assert ourselves as having originated from the absolute God and being born out of an internal bond with Him, if we do not clearly understand the process for returning to the original homeland in the future, everything now underway will remain unfinished.

The motive for our birth comes from our mother and father. We were born because the lives of our father and mother intertwined. But the inheritance of the characteristics of both parents was not the result of their lives colliding. Beforehand, the fundamental action and motive that connected these two lives together, was love. When we consider the preciousness of life and love, life is in second place, and love is in first place. (177-305, 1988.5.22)

In order to be registered, we must go to the original homeland. But this is not a simple thing to do. We must follow procedures completely. In any country or land you visit and at any place in the Republic of Korea there is an area where you must register. Whoever you find seated at that counter, be it a man or woman, from whatever walk of life, they must stamp your passport. (177-310, 1988.5.22)

3.5. People who can be chiefs in the spirit world

If you are one with God, you must love Cain. If you stand in the position of receiving God's love, just as you love God with all of your heart, soul, and mind, you must love your tribe, people, and nation. This is the first commandment on earth. It is a commandment not of heaven, but of God's Kingdom on earth. The commandment of God's Kingdom in heaven is to love the Lord your God with all your heart, soul, and mind. However, the first commandment of His kingdom on earth is to love our nation and race with all our heart, soul, and mind.

Hence, the question is how to implant God's love and how to relate to His power and the awesomeness of heaven. To do so, we must have a horizontally vast stage around us. Such

people will become tribal chiefs, patriarchs or chief priests who can inherit God's great achievements eternally in the spirit world. (34-69, 1970.8.29)

In the future, an era of registration for God's nation will come. People will try to be part of the 144,000, won't they? Do you know who the 144,000 are? In order to advance toward the era of registration, your tribal realm must stand in the same position as the homeland of heaven. Then your tribe gets registered in that era.

The era of individual salvation will pass. If the president of a nation is sworn in after joining the Unification Church, his people will also become the citizens of Heaven. Then, by participating in a ceremony officiated by the church, his people will escape from the satanic realm. (219-100, 1991.8.25)

An important question that we should always think about is how to unite our mind and body and how to bind together our spouses with the whole family. If our body is the formation stage, the couple is the growth stage, and the tribe is the completion stage. That is why you must make your tribes one.

Once North and South Korea are reunified, registration will take place. You must be able to participate in that era so as not to be ashamed of yourselves. Then, what you will need to do is record all your personal history since joining the Unification Church. If you record this incorrectly, you will be stuck in the next world. When you reveal all the details of your personal history and go over them, none of it should stop you. Only after you leave behind a record of achievement, one in which no fault can be found, will you finally enter the age of registration. (213-206, 1991.1.20)

CHAPTER SEVEN

Our Relationship with Those in the Spirit World

Section 1. Spiritual Phenomena and the Liberation of Spirits

1.1. The good spirit world and the evil spirit world

The spirit world is divided into two realms, the satanic realm and God's realm. If we lay out a way that enables people to move quickly from the satanic spirit world to God's world of goodness, then the situation on earth will naturally be resolved. What kind of way is that? As long as we have a special method to enable the transfer of all satanic individuals, families, tribes, and nations to the heavenly side, it is possible.

When such a time comes to the spirit world, it will be reflected on earth. As a result, all kinds of transformation will quickly occur and sweep through that world. (134-14, 1985.1.1)

What is the ideology of the new movement we are actualizing? Since God exists, it is an ideology based on His will. Because God exists, so must the spirit world. The spirit world does exist and it is the place where our numerous ancestors reside. It is the place where the countless number of people on earth today and the myriads of people to come in the future will all go and live.

In the spirit world too, there are good and evil spirit realms. Evil people must go to the evil spirit realm. If the spirit world has a gathering place for those who can form some relationship with God, then the spirit world, too, is inevitably divided into different realms, those of goodness and those of evil.

Then what constitutes good and evil? God wants the good and evil spirit realms and people on earth to be harmonized. Once they are, every individual will pursue the fulfillment of the ideal dual purposes: the purpose of the individual and the purpose of the whole. People have dual purposes, that of the individual and that of the whole.

What has humankind historically pursued until this time? What is good and what is evil? Why must we live in such misery and run up against obstacles? Because the starting point, process, and final destination have been different. When we analyze the details, it all becomes quite simple. (126-83, 1983.4.12)

It is impossible to properly understand the spirit world without an overview of how it develops, acts, and relates with the earth. The spirit world can be divided into two realms, good and evil.

The spirit world really exists, despite humankind's general lack of awareness of it.

Good and evil spirits are fighting each other even in the spirit world. There's a battle going on in that world too. Good spirits battle continually to lead evil spirits to good places, and evil spirits are doing everything they can to prevent good spirits from going to good places.

Evil spirits are connected to Satan, and people living on earth today are under their influence. Why is that? Regardless of whether they were good or evil, all our ancestors passed away to the spirit world. Good spirits stand on the good side, not because they are completely good from God's point of view, but because they have set the condition of having distanced themselves from satanic influence on earth.

On the way towards God's original ideal world – an ideal realm of goodness to which original people can go – good spirits are fighting to advance toward it, and evil spirits are struggling to block the way. The evil spirit realm and evil earthly world are connected and in constant communication. Good spirits are those who on earth were opposed by and confronted by the evil world and who were also religious people. (134-9, 1985.1.1)

1.2. Spiritual phenomena

If religions were to fight each other in the Last Days, what would happen? We live in a time when such phenomena easily occur. The Unification Church arose in order to protect against that, to protect by blocking such battles. Thus, in the era of religious wars, we are here to protect both the spirit and the flesh. The spirit world is taking hold of the physical world.

There are hundreds of billions of spirits in the spirit world. Japan's population of one hundred million is nothing by comparison. It is no more than a speck of dust under one's foot. Billions of spirits are on the attack to take hold over the physical world. Neurosis is one resultant phenomenon of this reality.

After the year 2000, people will be able to communicate with each other spiritually. Whether they communicate with evil or good spirits, they may fight even if they are ordered not to make war. This time could come, but the mission of the Unification Principle is to prevent this.

A tall tower produces radio interference. The phenomena of neurosis are like that. The most fearful thing would be if only evil spirits mobilized and attacked the physical world. What would happen if that were case? Regardless of the number of people on earth, they would all be attacked by evil spirits.

God is preparing for that scenario. He is expanding the foundation of the spirit world centering on good spirits. (55-30, 1972.4.23)

1.3. Letters from the spirit world

Recently, a letter came to Dr. Lee Sang-hun from his wife, Han-sook, who is in the spirit world. She wrote: "I had no idea of how wonderful the spir-

it world is or the preciousness of the Blessing. It is like a dream that we are a part of the heavenly Royal Family. It is so wonderful here that I am sorry for coming first. Please forgive me." In other words, because she went to the spirit world before her husband, and there had these dreamlike experiences – which came on the foundation of her Unification Church life of faith – she was sorry. Everything there was too good.

There are people who are also smart like me. Knowing the spirit world well, have I not lived my whole life in conformity with its program? We have come from one origin and we must return there.

Rivers are created by water that flows into the ocean, evaporates, rises into the atmosphere and then falls back to earth. We too must return to the origin. Life continues in everything through cyclical motion. Without circulation, everything decays back to its basic chemical elements.

What kind of being is God? He is like the mind of this world that exists here and now in the universe. He is like the mind of the universe.

Can you see your mind? The spirit world resembles the mind, but it is the place where the content of the mind is made substantial. It is a place transcending time and space. You can eat whatever you want. There is no need to worry about food, water or clothing. Spirit world transcends everything related to food, clothing and shelter.

Do you need cars there? Are there automobile manufacturing plants? Would there be factories for food, fabrics or clothing? None exist. Infinite distances can be traveled instantly. By what power? By the power of love. If you want to see someone you love, that person instantly appears.

Love travels at the highest speed and in a straight line. This is not secular love but divine love. Divine love is true love. Once within the realm of true love, because we will be able to move in a straight line at the highest speed, we will be able to operate on the stage of the universe. The universe will be under the control of our thoughts.

Knowing all these things, although I walked alone as a pioneer through the valley of pain and sorrows of this world, I never became bitter. Even now, I am still determined to walk this path until the day I die.

When we die, we will find a railroad track in the spirit world. The railroads in the spirit world are like those on earth passing across national borders. They must be neither too narrow nor too high. They must be the right fit. No religious teaching other than that of the Unification Church knows such things. However proud Christians may be, they are unaware of these facts. Did Jesus ever talk about the spirit world?

In this twentieth century era, we boast about our cutting-edge science. We pursue the formal logic of development, but there is no place other than the Unification Church where we verify the existence of God with a religious theory developed through formal processes. (210-225, 1990.12.23)

Jesus is no longer opposed in this age. Since the time has come when all of Korea can praise my name based on our history of accomplishing a global domain, you should fulfill your responsibilities as tribal messiahs. Now, your tribes, including even your most distant relatives, will be restored at once. Restoring 120 families in six months is no problem. You are now in the elder brother's position.

Heaven and earth will pass away and begin anew. Grandfathers will become grandsons, and fathers will stand in the son's position. The time can be compared to the case where a grandson becomes a king and his grandparents, parents and ancestors have to serve him. The Messiah represents king. In his land, the saints will return and rule in his name as rulers of tribal kingdoms. This will form a realm of liberation in which kingship constitutes part of the national domain.

The homeland of an immense, eternal world is unfolding. Since I do not want you to be pitiful people who have lost your sense of direction and who operate within a limited scope, I am creating a clear, liberated realm in which we can travel freely in all four directions – north, south, east and west – within the vast cosmos.

What must you bequeath to posterity? You must leave behind good things for your nation so that your descendants will live well. Then the people of the nation will protect them. Don't leave money, knowledge or power. Leave patriotic achievements. Everyone said that I would fail, but I resolutely made preparation so that I could not fail. Thus, I shall not fail under any circumstances. (213-146, 1991.1.16)

1.4. The hope of people in the spirit world

What would people in the spirit world desire? The spirit world is a world where you are supplied with everything according to the standard you find yourself in. If you want something it comes to you immediately. It is a world where nothing is impossible for people who are in the subject position who can digest and react to situations. If I were to talk about this, people would say I'm out of my mind, so I don't.

If you wish to host a party for a million guests, you can do instantaneously because they will all appear at the venue and everything can be prepared at the speed of thought. By contrast, look at today's miserable world. In Korea there are many unemployed people, are there not? We live in such a world. What would create more possibility? In the same way that heat is produced by atomic fission, if you caused the fission of love, possibilities will appear instantaneously. Isn't that likely? (141-277, 1986.3.2)

How shall we connect with that world? In the spirit world, people will want to be in a better position tomorrow than they are today. The common mentality of people living on earth is that they wish for today to be better than yesterday, for tomorrow to be better than today. Regardless of who we are,

be it Occidentals or Orientals, people of the past, present or future, our common mentality is to wish for something better than our present life. This does not change. All people in the spirit world are like that, too. They hope for things to get better than they are at the present. They want their lot in spirit world to improve compared to their lot in earthly life. (141-269, 1986.3.2)

The last six millennia have been a history of seeking and re-creating one Adam. Eve cannot be created without Adam. This is why God is creating one man, Adam. This is why you must follow me. The blood and flesh of countless people who came and went on the road of the providence of restoration had to be used as material for this purpose. The resentment of zillions of spirit people must be consolidated here. Then on the day of the advent of the incarnation of Adam, the martyrs who shed their blood and died under extreme persecution will feel their value for the first time.

Although they are in the spirit world, by connecting with the incarnation on earth, liberation will come to them. This is how it works. It must not be a vague concept, but how is it then that we become conscious of these workings? (29-271, 1970.3.11)

Regardless of what the people next to us are doing, whether eating or resting, we must go that way. In front of us, thousands are constantly going forward. If you strive to go forward and exert yourselves to the utmost without rest, while pulling the rope, then other people will also pull the rope for you. In the meantime, you will see many people falling away. It's like a marathon competition. In running, there are first and second places. History is like this. Over the past millennia, countless spirit people have been clinging to this rope. If you take first place and go to the spirit world, and then connect with the pulley and reel in the rope completely, both the spiritual and physical worlds will be restored. (32-144, 1970.7.5)

1.5. Liberating those in the spirit world from resentment

We must complete our mission pertaining to the three ages. We are to liberate the people in the spirit world, the people living in the sinful world today, and the future generations to come as well. This is the way liberation for the three generations comes about.

This is an immense and tremendous task. What would happen if such dream-like things came to pass? Your eyes would pop open, your mouth would gape, your ears would perk up, but you will come to bow your head. (28-201, 1970.1.11)

The Unification Church is a group doing what? It is a group for peacemaking and reconciliation. Yet with whom do we reconcile? So far, Jesus and the Holy Spirit have been engaged in this task. They had the mission of giving birth. The mission that Jesus and the Holy Spirit must fulfill is the task of giv-

ing birth to sons and daughters.

The Bible states that women will be saved through childbearing (1 Timothy 2:11-15). Yet members of some established religious orders say that women shouldn't give birth. Then, why would God have created an organ for women to bear children? Those people have misunderstood. This verse tells us that women, symbolically representing Eve, must give birth again in her stead.

Since God could not establish the base for a reciprocal relationship with Eve, who was to bring to fruition the essential characteristics of an original mother, He was unable to wear spirit and body with the original characteristics of a subject partner, so He packed things up again.

Then at the time of Jesus, God sent these characteristics to Jesus' object. Thus, they still have no body. Jesus had a body, but the Holy Spirit did not. This is why we say that the Holy Spirit is like fire, oil, or wind.

Nevertheless, if she carries out her motherly mission, enters our hearts, moves them, and cleanses them of sin, we become clean. It is like a mother giving birth to and raising her child. Just like receiving a father's protection, for rebirth one should have the condition of being reborn under Jesus' protection. Then one can say that rebirth is carried out.

Have Jesus and the Holy Spirit ever rested so far? No, they could not. Has Christianity ever rested? No. While saving fallen people over the past six millennia, has God ever rested? No. None of them could rest. Then, has the Unification Church ever rested? Has Rev. Moon ever rested? I am still running around like a startled deer.

Why am I like that? I am like that in order to bring about reconciliation so that God, Jesus and the Holy Spirit can rest, and all our ancestors can relax. God is an ancestor too, is He not? Speaking of Christianity, all the saints who have come and gone are our ancestors. Speaking of religion, all the religious leaders of old who came and went are also our ancestors. We must liberate all these ancestors. We must accomplish the work of liberating them from resentment. (75-38, 1975.1.1)

I am thinking about this all the time, as soon as I wake up and even while going to the bathroom. Asleep or awake, I am thinking about this, twenty-four hours a day. That is why I am not indebted to you. I am not a man who incurs debts. How foolish a leader must be to incur and live in debt!

I always tell myself that I will not be surpassed by youngsters. Even now, I go on the boat daily. I am doing this because I know that those who have an interest in the sea will have unlimited economic power in America in the future.

I am doing this in order to liberate the spirits of those who died at sea. I sometimes take the boat out even after being warned of a storm. That is because I know of the many spirit people who died that way.

In 1975, I went to Cape Cod to liberate spirit people from resentment there.

I launched a liberation movement. No one in the world knows this. Why do I do such things while being persecuted? I do it to liberate the spirit world from resentment. (93-96, 1977.5.15)

1.6. Unification of the spirit world

The physical world is Satan's sphere of activity while the spirit world is that of God. The two are constantly at cross-purposes. It is an undeniable fact that this has been an essential contributor to resentment in the age of the providence of restoration. They must not be at cross-purposes. The God-centered sphere of the mind and the sphere of the body governed by Him must be prepared. This standard for the unified foundation will be established according to how it is developed within the domain of daily life. (45-211, 1971.7.1)

For the Unification Church to bring about unification, it must do so from the spirit world. Do you all know the spirit world? Unification Church members must know about it. You must unify it. Do you think that will be easy? Without the unification of the spirit world there will be no unification of the physical world.

Are not the struggles of today's earthly world truly difficult? They are. Yet the struggles of the spirit world are even more difficult. With this in mind, Unification Church members cannot open their mouths to say, "It's difficult." (153-53, 1963.10.18)

In the process of seeking the ideal, what unifies the spiritual and the physical? Since the spiritual dimension is the spirit world and the physical dimension is the earthly world, the two must change places to become one. Just holding onto what is yours will not accomplish this. Only when you give everything will the other side come to you, and only when the other side gives everything to you will you go to the other side. You are going to the position that was lost. (147-94, 1986.8.31)

In order to connect the spiritual and physical worlds in the future, first we must be conscious of our global beliefs and unifying ideology. Then we willingly go the path of suffering in order to make a global breakthrough. When we do this, the spiritual and physical worlds will automatically become one. Unification will start to take place from there, and the direction of its path will be determined. (29-284, 1970.3.11)

Can the Unification Church unify the physical world before the spirit world? It cannot. That's the rule. In order to unify the spirit world, I drove the Unification Church members on earth into the jaws of death and mercilessly pushed them.

When that happens, the spirit world cannot but help you. The further you go in a miserable situation, the more the spirit world stands together in its own way to deal with that.

When you enter a deep place, the realm of heaven will emerge from the midst of this race of thirty million. This

realm also includes those who went to hell long ago. (49-108, 1971.10.9)

Section 2. The Relationship Between People on Earth and the Spirits

2.1. People on earth and the spirits

This world is the devil's world. We must recover it. You do not know when you will die, do you? Everyone dies. If we do not lay the foundation on earth to surmount and go back and forth over the peak of death, God's Kingdom on earth will not be created. Without that, His kingdom in heaven will not be established. We must make it possible to come back to the earth at will after going to the spirit world. Only then will we live in God's Kingdom on earth and establish and live in His kingdom in heaven.

After going to the spirit world, we must be able to freely return. Without realizing God's Kingdom on earth, we cannot return freely. This is not a wild fantasy. That's how it is. We must make an effort to make this possible for eternity. All our ancestors have failed to fulfill their portions of responsibility and indemnity conditions, and so were unable to find their way in the spirit world and descent to earth to pay indemnity. Likewise, you must not repeat the same failures. You will be caught by this fact since Principle is true. (146-223, 1986.7.1)

There is a wall between the way religions must go and the way the ordinary world must go. How can unbelievers harmonize themselves with believers, and how can believers make harmony among themselves in the age at the end of the century? Without resolving this problem, humankind will be divided in two and become unable to enter a new unified world.

If these two factions were to enter one world, that would result in a divided world, and this cannot be the ideal of the absolute God. I consider that since the ideal world of God can only be one, the two divisions cannot both enter there. The way to solve this problem cannot be found in complicated global affairs. The problem is how one can discover the self that will unify the mind and body and leap toward the goal.

Starting from the idea that religious and world unity must come from myself, the question of what the Unification Church is trying to do today comes to the forefront. It is not a religion just for the sake of religion. It should achieve solidarity with the world, finding ways that religious activity can be accompanied by social activity; it should find ways the world is seeking the religious path and bring the two into oneness. A big wall lies across here blocking religion and society from becoming one – for individuals, families, peoples, nations, the world, and even the cosmos.

Where do we start from to demolish this wall? Where did the trouble start? Not from the end of the world, but from the individual. Because individuals got out of order, mind and body came apart and pursued their own separate purposes in different directions. What is the

issue here? It is how to merge, weave, combine, and melt different purposes into one, and then how to reintegrate mind and body.

Since God and Satan exist, they are at work. Until now, God has been guiding the providence of restoration and the providence of seeking truth to save humankind. Contrary to this, Satan is opposing God's providence. On the side of goodness and after setting one ideal world in the direction of His providence, God is driving toward that purpose, distinguishing daily between right and wrong. On the other hand, the evil god Satan is twisting humankind in the opposite direction while telling them not to go that way.

At each border and wall, God is twisting people's arms and saying, "Don't go over the wall. Turn right!" and Satan is also twisting their arms and saying, "Turn left!" This is how we are being divided. Our movement to go right resulted in the right wing, and the result of moving leftward globally is the left wing. Now we are faced with the historical age at the end of the century having right and left wings. This is the visible result of the struggle between mind and body.

Then, the question is how to create oneness. By uniting the world, the nation, the tribe and the family, does the individual become united? No. It must start from an individual.

So, setting aside the world, we must create a movement which can bring about unity within the individuals. A movement that can connect the present day real world to religion, and connect religion to the real world, thereby, becoming individuals that both sides can accept.

The problem here, however, is that evil spirits are dominating the body. Evil spirits are rooted in the body and good spirits in the mind. From this comes the division of materialism and idealism. The things that people talk about in this world do not just spring up like that. As the time approaches, sinners should confess their sins. They should come clean about who they are.

Whether we achieve unity on earth is decided by the testimonies of the good and evil spirits on the global level. Good and evil spirits are fighting on that level. Although we cannot observe it or feel that, we are a part of that. (140-15, 1986.2.1)

2.2. The position of people in the spirit world

Today, there are four billion people living on earth, but in the spirit world there are hundreds of billions of souls. The question is how this world and the spirit world, which we consider the subject, are connected. Are they connected through what we consider valuable on earth, such as material, knowledge or position? That cannot be it.

That is because the spirit world is a world that transcends the material world. It transcends the world of knowledge. Since it transcends time and space, it is a world where yesterday's joy can become today's, and today's joy can become tomorrow's.

In this light, that essential world does not move based on the things that we who live on earth today need or value. What is important is: what is the center of everything of value within life in the spirit world?

Each soul in the spirit world belongs to its own society. Just like on earth, the spirit realm also has families, tribes, nations and a world.

The spirit world is the place where everyone now living on earth, whether they like it or not, will go and live. From the uncivilized to the civilized, all sorts of groups of people who came and went throughout history will be congregating there.

If, up until now, human history failed to become one based on peace, happiness and the ideal, then what is going to happen to the people in the spirit world? How will they be ruled? People who lived on earth cannot suddenly change in the spirit world. Is there not a saying, "A habit formed when you are three continues until you turn eighty"? It is difficult to correct your inner nature.

In this regard, is there anything particularly different about the people in the spirit world compared to people living on the earth today? Would they suddenly become different? That is not possible. You are harvested with the exact same form in which you lived in this world. All the people in the spirit world are, after all, just people who have lived on earth. From that perspective, the spirit world is no different from the world that people live in today. (141-267, 1986.3.2)

The spirit world has so many types of workers. Yet they cannot come to earth and carry out their work at will. They cannot carry out their work to this extent. They are blocked from doing so.

Unless a bridge is built through religion, only special people can return. For instance, factions were created within Judaism, and when they descend from the spirit world, the mainstream will not be in a straight line. When different lineages of Judaism offer devotions, the mainstream changes back and forth.

Hence, in terms of descending from the spirit world, only those connected with the straight line can descend. They cannot cooperate with each other in the process of returning resurrection. People on earth go to the spirit world within a century. Once in the spirit world, if they want to come back to the next generation, they have to follow the same principle, yet only special ones will be able to do so.

The walls in the spirit world will increase bit by bit. It will get more and more complicated. The next generation will all go to the spirit world. Thus, these walls gradually get bigger. These are all walls.

It is now a global age. Imagine how complicated it must be! Think how many times you must turn around and around in order to find the path. So when the time comes, the walls must be broken down. Our intention is to create paths descending from and entering into the spirit world. The Unification Church will do this work. (102-29, 1978.11.19)

Those who have previously gone to the spirit world are all divided. They do not communicate horizontally, but to some extent they do communicate vertically. (218-124, 1991.7.14)

2.3. Spirits outnumber people on earth

Do you all know how big the spirit world is? Have you ever imagined how big its population would be? Some spiritualists have calculated there are some 3,320 spirits attached to each earthly person. Consider if this number were on our side, would we be defeated by the world or would we conquer it?

Do those spirits fear atomic bombs? Likewise, if you do not fear bullets, atomic bombs or the nation, you will never be defeated. You will surely be victorious. You must go beyond this. Although you are objecting, I will make you go and follow you, after locking the door. I will pretend to be the owner, and I will lock the door once all have gone past me. With these thoughts I have been fighting until now. (86-192, 1976.3.28)

2.4. Wandering spirits

Those who deny God are more pitiful than people who are starving to death. The latter will be granted a certain level in the other world according to the merits of their good faith, but atheists will have no foothold because they deny the spirit world. They drift about in the spirit world like a mass of clouds. They become wandering spirits. Just as clouds gather and produce rain, they congregate and exert an evil influence. They all go to hell and inflict pain there. Although I know this all too clearly, I must save them, and this is why I am doing this work.

It is a serious problem that people are dying. Sixty thousand now die each day. Twenty million are dying of hunger annually means sixty thousand perday. When the parents, siblings and children of the dying see them, the lamentable heart-wrenching story unfolds. If those who are known as the True Parents do not feel compassion and make the relevant preparations, the fact that they were contemporaries of those people starving on earth will become a source of resentment.

With this in mind, I have been preparing a way to solve the problem of world hunger through ocean-based projects. Even if this means doubling and tripling our hardship, I have given global publicity and prepared a path to enable the Unification Church to offer its help by staying closest to the problem. That is why we created the Washington Television Center. We will launch a fundraising campaign for this.

Considering that people do not live over a hundred years, out of five billion people, fifty million go to the spirit world annually. What can we do for those going to hell? God wants us to harvest for His side what Satan has sown. What will happen, the more this is delayed? During the past forty years, how many have gone to hell? Billions. This is serious. When I go to the spirit world, if they say, "While you were alive on earth, you

did not fulfill your responsibility for us, did you?" Then how am I supposed to reply to them? We should at least think about this. When I talk to the members, I share these thoughts and express my determination to take responsibility for the future. They will say, "You are an amazing person. You cared for us." (205-355, 1990.10.2)

2.5. Discerning spirits by the mind

No ordinary people in the world know the taste of water that you drink after returning from having gone out and spoken with a serious heart while shedding sweat. How does it taste? It cannot even be compared to cola or honeyed water. It tastes different each time you drink it.

We must also discover such things; otherwise, we cannot develop extrasensory perception. You would not be able to respond to anything in relation to the spirit world. If you come to feel such things, your ears will become very sensitive and upon hearing something from a distance, you will already have analyzed the content of that sound. Even with closed eyes, you will be able to perceive who is passing by and whether they are good or bad people. You will become spiritually perceptive. Without understanding this, you cannot discern between good and evil spirits. You know not by seeing but through the mind. The mind's eyes are at a higher level than your physical eyes.

I am telling you this because you have a long way ahead. You should know this. Do not become overly self-confident. This is why it is stated in the Bible, "Blessed are the poor in spirit, for theirs is the Kingdom of Heaven." It is the same principle. It all connects together. (96-169, 1978.1.3)

2.6. The value of life on earth

We know that for thousands of years, countless people have been accusing Adam and Eve. Now you are becoming new ancestors.

Will you be ancestors who will be accused by your descendants, or ancestors of blessing who will be glorified? You are standing at these crossroads. Adam and Eve are accused because they failed to stand in the public position. Surely they would be free from accusation today had they followed a sacrificial and more public path.

You must know that you are standing in such a similar situation. As such, you should always be thinking that you are representing three ages. For this reason, you have to realize that the spirit world is in your hands and that your ancestors are at your mercy. If we gather the past, present and future together, put physical and spiritual realms together, and lead them, they will come running to you. We must accomplish that mission.

The spirit world, your relatives, also your country, and even the task of setting the right tradition for your descendants are all in your hands. You should always keep this in mind. Whether you, as a single person, do well or not will determine whether your ancestors and

relatives can be liberated and whether your descendants can be the chosen people of liberation. (66-75, 1973.3.17)

God has been trying to hit the target over six thousand years without success; after trying for tens of thousands of years, He finally hit it. When you think about it, the time of that hit was when He felt most sleepy and utterly exhausted. Would He doze off or stay powerless at that moment? When He was so exhausted and sleepy, He pulled Himself together and shot again with a clear mind. After he made His shot, would He collapse with fatigue and drowsiness? Forgetting His dignity, He would exclaim "Wow!" with joy.

How dumbfounded the spirit world must be! From the perspective of the angels, how dumbfounded they must be, saying, "Oh, the archangel's mistake put God in trouble, and now...." For tens of thousands of years the spirit world has been wishing for the target to be hit. Now it has actually been struck. What will the spirit world feel?

If there were such a wonderful place, would people all over the world try to come in or not, even if the entrance fee might be ten thousand dollars? Suppose all kinds of people came and then left, complaining, "My goodness, I've lost out on this ticket!" but then later a certain beggar in that neighborhood bought a ticket with the money he begged for and received, and he entered and witnessed God striking the target. What would the beggar do? Would he start dancing there or not?

Then God would get excited and start boasting about it. Wouldn't He say, "Oh, I hit it, I hit it! Is no one around?" But then, if He saw this beggar at that moment, do you think He would shout, "You wretched beggar!"? He would instead start dancing and saying, "This is great!" (103-86, 1979.2.4)

Section 3. Our Ancestors and Ourselves

3.1. Ancestors are looking upon us

When you go to the spirit world, will your ancestors come to you or not? They will say, "Wow, our descendants joined the Unification Church and met Rev. Moon!" From that point on, the palace and Royal Family of heaven will start. Until now, there has been no palace in heaven.

Between the grandson who obtusely does what I say and the granddaughter who tries to be smart and according to her own thoughts evades me imperceptibly like an eel, who will the ancestors praise? Will they praise the granddaughter who acts like a rabbit or the grandson who acts like a turtle? They will praise the one who acts like a turtle.

Rabbits urinate often. I do not know about turtles. I have not seen them urinate. Rabbits urinate after hopping a short while and do it again after a short while. Why? They are marking their territory to stop other rabbits from encroaching. So we should be like turtles. Those who do as they are told and who move on forgetting about whether

it is day or night, oblivious to the passage of time and the seasons, will be welcomed everywhere. All your ancestors in the other world are watching the way you live. There is nowhere to hide. They see everything. When you go to the spirit world, you will be able to pass through walls and even the entire earth.

We must go and live in such a world eternally. Since we were created as God's objects of love, He needs beings who become object partners to His eternal love forever. Just as He is eternal, we are eternal. Without becoming partners of love, we have no eternal life.

In the other world, who goes to the highest place? Those who wish it were possible to be born again as people who serve humanity as God does. Those who empathize with Him and comfort Him eternally get closest to Him: they are those who try to use whatever good things they have for the sake of humanity.

When grandparents approach their dying day, do they not pass on all good things to their children? Just as grandparents hand down to their descendants the fruits of their labors, with that kind of heart we should live in a way that enables us to say we will bequeath something to humanity. (213-196, 1991.1.20)

3.2. We should surpass our ancestors

When you leave behind a love greater than that of your grandparents and great-grandparents in the house where your ancestors had lived, in the room where your grandfather, your father and you were born, heaven will see the luster of love shining forth. Hundreds, thousands and millions of volts of light will shine forth. If you wonder where the shining light goes, it ascends from your hometown to generations of your ancestors.

When you go to the spirit world, you arrive at the Kingdom of Heaven centering on God. This kingdom is our original homeland. Is not God our original Father?

Adam and Eve are God's incarnations. Since they are horizontal parents with God as the vertical Parent, when people discard their horizontal bodies and vertically return to their hometowns, they live attending God, the eternal king. Who is the king?

Had Adam and Eve not fallen, they would have become monarchs of love who, by perfecting themselves as God's incarnations would fulfill their portions of responsibility, connecting the realms of direct and indirect dominion on earth through God's love. Then God would live in the hearts of Adam and Eve, and the spirits of Adam and Eve would become God's body. They would become one body. Together, they would share and breathe divine and human love eternally.

Hence, we must receive God's love; and next, strive to practice love closer to the essential love than that of the ancestors Adam and Eve. This is the eternal path you walk in the spirit world, seeking after truth. (213-190, 1991.1.20)

3.3. We should also visit our ancestral graves

If your grandparents are deceased, you should visit their graves with the feeling that God is buried there. From now on, when they die, you are to mourn and wail bitterly. You should atone for the resentment you caused by not having served your grandparents well during your lifetime.

You should offer devotion until God hears your cry and recognizes you and until your grandfather sends a message that it is now okay. At harvest time, you should not forget your grandparents. You should visit and serve them earnestly in each of the four seasons. Then they will commend you and say that although they mistakenly thought that you had become a departed soul or baby goblin of the Unification Church, you had actually become a royal grandchild.

You should serve your parents better than any king was served by his parents. Do you not wish that your parents were king and queen? Your heart's desire is for your parents to be higher than God and a king, and for you to be permitted to serve them as such. You should live with the qualifications of royal children who can make their mother and father happier than any kings of this world, even if you had to abide by palace protocol.

Then your parents cannot help but praise you whenever they open their mouths. Since your ancestors in heaven and your descendants will all praise you, the realm of unification will develop centered on attending all those parents and grandparents. The realms of unification for grandchildren, parents, children of filial piety will determine the one mainstream all generations in the future. The seed of unification can be sown on this foundation. Once you have this, you will go forward, dreaming. (220-349, 1991.10.20)

Since the birthright of the firstborn has now been restored, all our ancestors for three generations – grandfather, father and elder brother – will submit themselves before the positions of the firstborn, the parents and the king to attend their grandson as their ancestor and grandfather. As this great upheaval of heaven and earth and 180-degree inversion takes place, in which a child is attended as a parent and a younger brother is attended as an elder brother, a similar action takes place in hell, changing its direction so that it can move toward heaven.

Thus, we must return to our hometowns and restore 160 families. In your hometowns, you should have people listen to the Word, traveling back and forth. When the eldest grandson by the eldest son, who is the root of the lineage, recommends it then all the collateral descendants should follow. So gather all the 160 families and hold a feast with a Unification Church declaration ceremony. They should pledge absolute obedience to the orders of God's princes and princesses, assemble at the ancestral burial ground in front of the ancestral grave, and attend them like a king being enthroned.

You must be able to say, "Through

the True Parents we have become ancestors who can bequeath a new lineage and become a blessed tribe that affects the realm of liberation! Our tribe will be of God's eternal unchanging household and kinship!" When that happens, you will bid farewell to Satan completely.

The Unification Church allows the honoring of ancestors. Did Christianity allow you to perform a memorial service for the repose of your ancestors? The Unification Church should carry on and establish this tradition. This is not a secular tradition. This becomes the royal domain for eternally serving the traditional blood relatives in the realm of tribal messiahs who are succeeding in the genealogical generations by serving the heavenly Parent, the heavenly kingdom and the heavenly ancestors. It will be a nation where we can attend the king and sing praises for the eternal reign of peace. Do you understand? You, your mother, father, family and tribe can go directly to heaven only after having lived in such a nation. (220-221, 1991.10.19)

3.4. Ancestors we can meet in the spirit world

You must know what your house is like. It is a representative house for all the houses that people inhabit while living on earth. Not only that, it even represents the spirit world. You can live in that house. Those who have lived in this way can naturally and automatically go to the realm of the original homeland, their hometown. There will be no conflict when meeting grandparents or anyone else.

When you go to the other world, thousands of generations of your ancestors will all be gathered there. There will be some of them who ended up in hell. Some generations of your ancestors went to hell, while others went to different places. They are staying at different levels. Those who lived serving others go to heaven. So you can be an example of the saying, "All is well if there is harmony in the family.". If you live for the sake of your family and take care of your grandparents just three times, they will realize that they were in the wrong.

How many times, through miracles and mighty works, did Moses try to serve in Egypt? Several times – seven, ten, even more than twelve times he tried to serve. When you try to serve and yet they do not receive you, then God will guide you. What you have officially invested in one place through serving others, He will bring to fruition in other places. So, among the people of faith living on earth within the satanic world, those who served God on earth will live well in His original homeland, even though they had been persecuted and opposed on earth, just as the Israelites became the chosen people and entered Canaan after passing through the wilderness.

So, have you served white-haired grandmothers well? God is white. Snow gathers in high mountains, right? God is clean. So the brain knows all this. Also, did these grandmothers serve their own mothers-in-law and grandmothers-in-law? They must serve their mothers-in-

law and grandmothers-in-law in such a way that their dying words will be, "I will go ahead and prepare to receive you in the other world just as you have served me." (213-182, 1991.1.20)

Section 4. New Spiritual Age

4.1. The coming of the age of extrasensory perception

It is not as if the spirit world ceases to exist when you cross over just one peak. In the future, the age of extrasensory perception will come, and then there will be no one who cannot communicate with the spirit world. The time of people and spirits attacking the earth is over. Now Satan and evil spirits are attacking, but there will come a time when good spirits will attack. I am doing this in order to pave the way for that.

Regarding the attitude of parents toward their children, it is good for there to be parents present and caring for their children with loving hearts and from a loving position.

This path can not be avoided no matter who may reject it. The path of death is unavoidable. What if you have to go the way alone? Where would you go if a desolate spirit world were to open up for you? Where do stateless people go? It might be a most fearful world. Both Satan and the angels will come there.

When you open your eyes suddenly after you have died, you will realize the spirit world exists. But then what would you do if Satan were to drag you away? Satan might leap at you, saying, "Hey you! Stand at the head of the line!" Such things could happen. If you think about this, can you sleep at night? This is an inevitable course.

I'm serious about such things. What will happen after death? When I go to the spirit world, such and such people will come to me. I have made all the arrangements. I know all the secrets of Confucius, Buddha and Jesus.

I even asked Jesus, "Did you not die because of such and such?" and he replied, "Yes, I did. How did you, the leader of the Unification Church know all that?" By knowing such things, it is even possible for me to become a friend of Jesus.

You or Christians may call Jesus, "Lord! Lord!" but I do not. We are friends. They call me a heretic for saying such things, but you will find out who is the heretic when you go over there. You should prepare the ground for all these things before you go.

I'm doing this because I know very well that when I go to the spirit world, there will be a big commotion. If you cannot believe this, pray and find out for yourselves. This is the threat of the Unification Church. If you prayed and found out that you were wrong, what would you do? That is what happens because all such preparations have been made.

That is why I am following this way, although it is difficult. How about you? Where will you go? Are you ready? When you are dying, if you say to me, "Oh Teacher, please help me, as I am dying and going to the spirit world,"

nothing can be done by then. Preparations cannot be made then, but only while on earth. (61-327, 1972.9.3)

4.2. Entering a new age through the declaration of the Day of the Victory of Heaven

Jesus is formation stage, the twelve apostles are growth stage, and the seventy-two disciples are the completion stage; these are the three stages. If you cannot do this, you can not go to heaven. Originally, you receive the Blessing after doing this. Then Jesus also gets married.

When your entire family comes to believe, with all three generations, grandparents, children and grandchildren, taking charge of this and that, then they can function as three generations. When this happens, by restoring your parents you can immediately restore your ancestors from myriads of generations.

The age is coming when the spirit world can return to the earth. The organization on earth also forms the organization in the spirit world, and they become one. As such amazing phenomena occur imagine how overjoyed the spirit world will be!

Hence, the age of victory of religion and of the spirit world has come. (96-250, 1978.1.22)

Now pray, "In accordance with True Father's words, on this Day of the Victory of Heaven, October 4 (1976), you good spirits please return and lead your evil descendants on earth to heaven through your virtuous embrace." An age is coming when such commands will be made possible. Since we live within the domain of the age of Adam, and spirits live in the domain of angels, due to the principle and law that angels must assist Adam, we quickly come to the conclusion that they would be compelled to help. (89-113, 1976.10.4)

The spiritual and mental world is basically a realm of unification. If you say, "I would like to see so-and-so," and wait for twenty-four hours, that person comes. This happens. When you focus, he appears. This is like sending out radio signals.

Then, because he has a mind that works like a receiver, for no reason at all, he becomes curious about you and feels a desire to come. (76-142, 1975.2.2)

4.3. Unification Ceremony and spiritual assistance

What is the significance of True Parents' birthday (sixth day of the lunar New Year)? After returning this time (1976), on the first day of the second month of the lunar calendar, I conducted what is called the Unification Ceremony. You may not know what this ceremony is.

In the course of restoration, you must perfect the individual, family, tribe, nation and world and connect them in a straight line.

On earth, I had accomplished things on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people and nation, but they were

not yet connected to the spirit world. Nor were they connected to the families of the Unification Church. Although the road was paved, it had to be connected with the spirit world and then to the physical world. Only then could the Unification Ceremony take place.

When could the Unification Ceremony take place? Since Christianity has been developing globally mainly through democratic countries, unification is possible only when there is a global foundation. Without such a foundation, unification at one level cannot be connected to other levels. Until then, we could only aim at the global level from the national level, but we could not determine and fix it.

But now, through the foundation I made in America, we can make the connection. Now is the time when the nation and world are connected. When this spiritual standard can be connected to the global foundation, based on such a global standard, it can be connected to the spirit world for the first time.

In the spirit world, Korean and Japanese spirits are not well connected. Spirits of different nationalities were connected only to their own countries, so we could not mobilize them all as a unified force toward one global path. Until this is resolved on earth, the spirit world cannot be organized.

Thus, in the spirit world, Japanese and Koreans, Japanese and Chinese are all enemies to each other. There is so much animosity between nations in the spirit world. Since those enemy spirits are against each other, they have to get connected.

Thus, I conducted the Ceremony for Total Liberation from Resentment on March 1, 1975, a ceremony to liberate and forgive everyone. This opens the way to liberate even Satan. Through this ceremony, enemies can no longer treat each other as enemies but must forgive one another. To me, Satan is my enemy and when I forgive him he is no longer an enemy, since God does not consider him an enemy either.

Now is the time for unification. What will happen when the physical and spirit worlds become one? Was not the Fall the separation of those two worlds? Did God not get separated from Adam and Eve? Wasn't there a breach of heart between Adam and Eve? Hence, with the spiritual and physical worlds unified, if an interracial structure develops based on Adam and Eve's family, tribe, people, nation, and world, this can create the global realm of unification. These things must be resolved; but it is not possible in the USA. It cannot be done there.

Since I established the individual, family, tribal, ethnic and national foundations centering on Korea, and advanced to the world, and because Korea is the central nation, I hurried to get here. After the Unification Ceremony, I realized that my birthday this year is historic, because the people in the spirit world never before had a chance to attend the True Parents' birthday from a unified position, nor were they qualified to celebrate it. Also, all their descendants on earth did not have the privilege to celebrate the True Parents' birthday.

It was because the spiritual and physical foundations were not unified.

Now, however, with such privilege being provided spiritually and physically, the spirit world moves to restore descendants. From the standpoint of the Principle, the ancestors are in the archangel's position and their descendants in Adam's position. That is because the archangel assisted in the creation of Adam. With the unification of the ancestors in the spirit world, a foundation was created enabling them to assist in the re-creation of Adam on earth. Therefore, logic leads us to the conclusion that we have entered the time in which our ancestors can intervene in our affairs.

For this reason, this day, when the True Parents come to Korea to celebrate their birthday, is a day when they open another historic epoch. In other words, countless spirits in the other world now have the privilege to participate in this celebration. Through this, even their descendants on earth who still do not know about the Unification Church can be re-created.

We have now entered the age in which the ancestors assist their descendants and mobilize their descendants to begin the re-creation of the earthly people who stand in a similar position to Adam. This is just like when God created Adam with the archangel's assistance.

Based on this logic, all the people of the whole world can receive the privilege to celebrate the True Parents' birthday. (83-109, 1976.2.5)

4.4. Ceremony of One Heart and ancestral assistance

I have become the head of the Moon clan, not through coercion but through their own desire to attend me. That has come to pass. Do you think I knew this organization existed before? I met it for the first time. Through this meeting, clan heads got together and presented me as the one parent of Korea. In order to accomplish such a thing, this ceremony is essential.

The position of the True Parents spoken of in the Unification Church is not just for Koreans but was originally for all humankind and the ancestors who went before us. All ancestors should have gone to the spirit world as the True Parents' relatives, but this collapsed due to the Fall. Since the earth is in Abel's position, by following Abels as they went the way of restoring the birthright of the firstborn, the spirit world could be liberated.

Since the physical world has restored the birthright of the firstborn, the time has come for the spirit world to support our endeavors. So be strong and courageous. At this hour, I am determining and proclaiming this ceremony as the Ceremony of One Heart.

You are not sure about the reality of the spirit world, are you? Your good ancestors are making full preparations to help us, through the heads of clan associations. This is connected to the earth like 'X' is to 'Y'. The fallen world, the earth and the spirit world have had different points of view. If the spir-

it world tries to go one way, the earth opposes it. How can this be overcome? Through true love. (190-314, 1989.6.23)

Section 5. Returning Resurrection and the Assistance of Spirits

5.1. Position of our predecessors in the spirit world

Those who, in the course of their lives, experience the heart of God, who is guiding the providence amidst historical sorrow, cannot behold Him without tears, wherever they may be. Being in such a position, they understand God's will and struggle to become His children. When He finds such kindred spirits, God will come to that place and shed tears.

God's sorrow is embedded within us, and at the same time, within this nation, world and within all things. We should liquidate this sorrow and develop a movement to restore His joy. Experiencing God's sorrow is central to our life.

The question is whether we have set the standard to mobilize the people in the spirit world, who are unknown to earthly people, to testify to us. The spirit world is also requiring such things. Since the spirit world knows God's heart, if such people on earth appeal to them, spirit people will be mobilized to help with the work on earth of actualizing the ideal of the heavenly kingdom. Spirit people cannot come to earth because it has become a realm of complaint (4-60, 1958.3.2)

The place where you are standing is not where Adam of old fell. It is beyond that hill. In other words, now is the time when Adam can converse with God directly and go straight toward one purpose directly.

From this point of view, the histories before and after the third seven-year course will be entirely different. In this course, the forces of evil must descend and the forces of good will ascend. Because of this, it is the time when the spiritual and physical worlds intersect.

In the spirit world, there are evil, middle-level and good spirits. They stay at the three stages of formation, growth and completion. By being linked to the third seven-year course, the good spirits will have a path enabling them to contact the earth. That is inevitable. Since the formation and growth stages lie within Satan's dominion, the evil spirits within the dominion of the forces of evil have played a leading role, and evil people have dominated the entire world. From now on, the spirits will begin to cross over to the earth.

The spirit world descends at this time of intersection, with the evil spirits descending first. This time of intersection is the time of transcending the middle spirit world and crossing over into the good spirit world. On this day of crossing over, the good spirits and the good people will ascend while the evil spirits and the evil people will descend. Up until now, good and evil were in a muddle, crisscrossing over each other while ascending and descending. But from now on, I see us entering a new-

dimensional age, in which good and evil can be completely separated. (75-193, 1975.1.5)

When you arrive in the spirit world, you will see some great New Testament martyrs honored and who were supposedly in a lofty place dwelling in the most miserable place. Those who die thinking that their death will bring them to heaven cannot go there. The attitude of people who die like that is like that of someone who became insane and committed suicide for heaven. Yet those who suffered and sacrificed even though they were not martyred, believing that their sacrifice would create heaven in their nation, and who helped countless other people go to heaven, turn out to be the ones who end up in lofty places there.

We must root out and rectify the essence of faith. Christianity caused much trouble by teaching such ideas. Unification Thought has to get rid of these problems. Even if we do not destroy it, it is destined to perish. Yet why must we destroy it quickly? Because if it perishes on its own, it will be abandoned by God. So we must destroy it and redeem it. (64-108, 1972.10.29)

Among your ancestors, many have gone to hell. We must liberate them all. The parents must go this way, and you have been placed on the path to follow them. Accordingly, you are destined to follow this path all the way to the end.

Then the spirit world will help us through the individual, family, tribal and ethnic levels, carrying on the fortune for unification. Once the world is unified, the spirit world will automatically unite. The people in the spirit world are descending to the earth, yet evil spirits have been descending before the good ones do. This is why the phenomenon of neurosis is occurring among people on earth. You did not know this, but now evil spirits have all descended upon the earth and invaded the human world.

With the coming of the age of ideological confusion based on the democratic and communist worlds, evil spirits descend from the spirit world and cause spiritual and physical chaos. When good spirits descend to earth, however, they spread out around the evil spirits. Having descended upon the earth, they disperse the evil spirits and occupy the land these evil spirits had been occupying.

When good spirits occupy the earth, there is no place for evil spirits to go. So they will begin to surrender. When Satan comes to the earth and surrenders, evil spirits will also be restored. So in the Last Days, we must even restore Satan. (54-226, 1972.3.24)

5.2. Spirit world mobilization and assistance

You must witness even when it does not go well. It is like throwing stones into the sea. You keep on doing it and do not stop until the stones fill the sea and form a mountain. Through this, your heart grows. Even if your body remains unchanging, your heart grows.

Get up at dawn and pray with tears for your neighborhood and your mis-

sion area. This is the way of the heart and the way of establishing a spiritual bond with the spirit world. You should feel that if God were to look down upon this neighborhood, He could not help but shed tears because they are all destined for hell, and you would feel like shedding tears yourself in His place, in empathy with Him. When the force of sympathy enters you, enabling you to shed tears based on God's heart, the entire spirit world will be mobilized.

As human beings, you should be moved to tears in God's presence. Inspire Him to be grateful to you and able to shed tears, saying that although you are the descendants of fallen Adam and Eve, you are better than them. Otherwise you cannot communicate with the spirit world. Only when God is moved to tears and says, "As the descendants of fallen Adam and Eve, and as the descendants of traitors, how can you be like this!" Only then will the spirit world come to your assistance. The spirit world opens from there. Anything below that standard will never work. This is the Principle. (96-280, 1978.2.13)

Would you all like to go to the spirit world? Which is more sincere: your desire to go to the spirit world or the desire of spirit people to return to earth? From the perspective of the Principle, should you or the spirit world be more passionate? The spirit world is the realm of the archangel, and here on earth is the realm of Adam and Eve, the realm of the children. Should not the children be more passionate than the servant, rather than the other way around?

Are you supposed to help the spirit world or is the spirit world supposed to help you? The spirits are waiting to come to help, but why are they waiting? Would they help you to build God's Kingdom on earth or to eat well and live in comfort? They would help to build the kingdom on earth. (161-226, 1987.2.15)

The spirit world must be mobilized. How can heaven be formed without mobilizing the spirit world? It cannot. Heaven is supposed to begin from the True Parents, not the fallen descendants who have existed until now. Just as the angelic world helped when Adam was created, the spirit world should return to earth and help in the re-creation. Without doing so, it is not possible to build heaven on earth. Is that not the Principle? Is this not the Principle of Resurrection? It will be recognized as true when it appears as real and unchanging. (162-114, 1987.3.30)

I make your life hard and make you suffer not because I hate you, but to save you. You should realize that all this is for the sake of saving you. You must understand and be grateful that your suffering is for your own salvation. Then the world of heavenly heart, the new world of heart, will unfold before you. This is the order of things. So once you possess the bonds of the heart, you can fly anywhere, day or night, according to the heavenly command. If you are determined to take responsibility and lead the world like a locomotive, the spirit world

will help you. If you think like this, it will surely help you. (96-278, 1978.2.13)

If you keep pace with the Unification Church by way of the principled standard, good spirits and ancestors in the spirit world who used to cooperate with the national fortune will work for you. Externally, you may appear unlucky with a flat face and small ears, but the spirit world sees you as a lucky child. Your ancestors within ten generations are anxious because the history of restoration is realized based on ten generations. Yet when an evil descendant appears, ancestors within ten generations judge him by saying, "Hey you! You are going to ruin us!"

For this reason, those who have good ancestors will be actively supported by them. You all are standing in such a position. The spirit world will be eternally happy if you, who are in such a position, fight with excitement and style and win every battle wherever you go. Various evil spirits will fall back with surprise even before they show up. So these ancestors will attend you like a king.

We must prepare a victorious foundation before God's will with the heart that refuses to defile God's tradition and dignity. You must pray about what kind of tradition you will establish. Now is a blessed time. (14-19, 1964.4.19)

5.3. The spirit world and ancestors

When I look at people's faces, I immediately know whether they have good or bad ancestors. Some people have good ancestors and receive blessings. Others have bad ancestors and suffer unbearably. Such people suffer unbearable hardships even when they go witnessing in their mission areas. (37-144, 1970.12.23)

When your character has a certain shortcoming, then listen to the kind of testimony that can supplement it. Listen to those testimonies and absorb them to enhance your character. That is why you must listen to many testimonies about other people's personal experiences. When you listen, do not criticize them.

Criticizing means deciding between Satan's side and God's side. When you criticize, you end up on one of two sides: Satan's or God's. Therefore, criticizing can be a cancer in your development. Once you are on Satan's side, you cannot just go to God's side, and once you are on God's side, you cannot go over to Satan's side. In our life, we do not just go in a straight line but zigzag.

We are the conduits for not only good ancestors but also evil ones. In terms of our disposition, when we have many character traits from our good ancestors we go the way of goodness. But a part of us also comes from our evil ancestors. A time will come during your lives when you will surely behave in an evil way. If you criticize, it will bring trouble. Hence, the words "do not judge others" make sense. (76-139, 1975.2.2)

If you possess true love, you can join God's party anytime. You will see thousands of ancestors and spirits because of being able to transcend time and space.

Only those who have the heart of true love can manage and transcend all this. The only way to obtain the privilege of receiving the rights of inheritance from God is through love. If people of true love were to push past me, I would be very happy and would not react against them. Everyone would welcome them. Since the other world is like that, you must be trained here.

I am teaching these things to create people who can go to God's world, breathe there and be synchronized with it. Then you must be able to dance to the beat. Am I not also going to the spirit world soon? Satan cannot follow me there. (147-115, 1986.8.31)

We must become one by receiving God's true spirit. Since people were born from the origin, we must begin from the original subject and maintain the standard of moving the body through this process. Then we can achieve complete integration. Otherwise, we end up with an imperfect integration.

Unification Church members are moving within a living reality with a clear background, because when they try going their own way the spirit world stops them and helps them put things in order through spiritual revelations. This is an amazing thing. Therefore, when you look at a Unification Church member, you will see that his body is centered on the spirit and his ancestors are all rooted in him. His good ancestors are all attached to him. They obstruct his body from going toward the evil world and bundle it off quickly toward the good world. (162-103, 1987.3.30)

If there were true parents, true families, true societies, true nations and a true world that governed everything on earth, how wonderful this world would be! Such a world has not been able to come about.

Why has the world become like this? Because of the Fall. Generally speaking, the world is the way it is because it began with an untrue motivation and existed till now as a fallen world.

If human life just ended in this world, how simple it would be! People live eternally. They are made to live eternally. This is a good thing, but you are in trouble. People are to live forever. You would not know, because you have not had so many spiritual experiences. But those who have spiritual experiences can meet all the ancestors who lived millennia ago, including Adam, in the spirit world. (159-274, 1968.5.19)

When you go to the spirit world, you will meet and chat with countless saints and sages and countless ancestors. They will ask you, "Where did you come from? Where on earth? Which country? Where?" and reminisce as they talk with you. Do not friends also share stories about the past when they meet? When you go to the spirit world you will meet your first grandfather and thousands and myriads of your ancestors. Yet how would you feel if they asked you roughly, "You good-for-nothing, what kind of a life did you lead?" Think about it. (148-320, 1986.10.26)

5.4. The hope of spirit people

If our Unification Church members have a sincere, loving heart to make the True Parents happy at least once in their life, they will be in rhythm with the other world.

What would the people in the spirit world think? Would they not want to bring me something to eat and see me eat it? They are more enthusiastic than you are. It is true. You do not know, but they know everything. They know everything that will happen in the future. You are ignorant, but the other world has clear knowledge and understanding.

The people in the spirit world know clearly how they can devote themselves and serve me. All the five senses feel a stimulating force from me. You have not been able to feel this so far, but now you will be able to feel this when you are connected with me. (207-97, 1990.11.1)

5.5. Returning resurrection and rebirth

5. 5. 1. Returning resurrection

Just as the good ancestors were able to enter the life-spirit level from the form-spirit level when Jesus came upon the earth, your ancestors, too, have entered the realm which gives them the special privilege to return to earth through the conditions you have made. When you understand this and become victorious branches, you stand in a position of having created life, and consequently, your ancestors will help you. In this way, you should be the base through which thousands of generations of your good ancestors can return.

The time of Jesus was the era in which the spirit world helped conditionally for the sake of resurrection to the life-spirit level. But now is the era in which they help unconditionally for the sake of resurrection to the divine-spirit level. Since such an era has come, there is no greater blessing. In other words, the spirit world is helping. (14-21, 1964.4.19)

The world has opposed me. How much did the world try to kill me and get rid of the Unification Church? We were able to steer our way through all this because I was not crazy.

I have tied a rope high up with God according to the way of heaven and earth. People tried to grab hold of the rope, but they failed. In the end, this created wars between churches and nations, bringing countries to ruin. The Unification Church fought and knocked out the established churches, political parties, and the democratic and communist worlds that had opposed it. When the rope is hanging from high up, do you think they could sever it with their own strength? Can they cut off the Unification Church? Whether it is based on philosophy or religion or communication with the spirit world, no one can match us in theory.

This happened when I was in America. There is a spiritualist association, and its head was Arthur Ford. He had heard about Rev. Moon from Asia. Our missionaries did not visit person by per-

son. They would bring Divine Principle books to people who had received spiritual communication and tell them, "Please check what kind of book this is. I will come back in a week." When the missionaries went back after a week, people would say, "Oh, Master, please come!" (208-193, 1990.11.18)

We should offer sacrifices to God with a theoretical system and practical foundation with which we can subjugate the spirit world. This ceremony of sacrifice was today's morning pledge service (November 17, 1990, the 31st Children's Day). In that place, I prayed that since the time had come, the current that had been flowing in reverse through heaven and earth must now flow in the right direction. Since God has restored the birthright of the firstborn, all second sons to be born in the future and those existing now are under His rule. Consequently, in the era of the second son after the restoration of the birthright of the firstborn, heavenly law cannot condone the devil's sphere of activities.

Up until now, all the spirits in the spirit world have abused Abel on earth. Just as the first son murdered and sacrificed the second son, since we have the birthright of the firstborn here, from now on we can even regulate the spirit world.

Now they must help us in order to receive blessings. The more they oppose us, the deeper into the pit they will fall. Heavenly fortune is changing rapidly. In the future, they will clamor to have a picture of me hanging in each of their houses. From the spirit world your ancestors will admonish you. Accordingly, those who hang up our flag and my picture and bow to it daily will enliven the work of resurrecting their ancestors.

I do not need to say these things because it sounds like I am telling you to obey me absolutely. I do not like saying such things, but there is no other way.

Until now, numerous sundry low-level spiritualists told you not to go to the Unification Church. Yet from now on, if Buddha, Jesus, and Confucius do not encourage people to go to the Unification Church, they will be violating heavenly law. Why? Because the religion I teach is that of the Parents. (208-153, 1990.11.17)

5. 5. 2. Answers about the principle of rebirth

In Asia people talk not about the principle of rebirth but about the theory of reincarnation, which is a Buddhist idea. They view returning resurrection as such a phenomenon, because they just see it as a single instance. They do not see the whole picture. Spirit people in the spirit world want to benefit through people on earth. This is their request.

Original people who have not fallen are valuable beings who can manage the angelic world and the universe. Due to the Fall, people dropped several levels downward and consequently must go back up to that original position. In ascending, however, they do not do so in one step but through stages, restoring individuals, families, tribes, people,

nations, the world, and all the way up to the cosmos.

Originally, people were to go to this world. Yet, because there is no way of going up in one step, each stage must be pioneered and passed through, from the individual to the family, from the family to the tribe, and from the tribe to the race.

In view of God's providence, those who died before the Old Testament Age, which is the age of the providence for individual salvation, desire to enter that age and receive its benefits. As such, going up each stage inevitably requires indemnity. Crossing over each stage inevitably requires conditions of indemnity, like in the case of Cain and Abel.

Even if a spirit named A has been helping through this age up to this point, he cannot cross over into the next stage just like that. There must be a period of indemnity. It is not finished in a day or two but rather over a period of time, such as seven years, forty years, seventy years, or even a few centuries.

Since spirit A, who has been helping up to this point, cannot continue his ascent before his period of indemnity ends, he returns to the spirit world. Spirit A wants someone on earth called B to lay the foundation, but if B fails to indemnify within the period and dies, spirit A chooses someone else called C and waits impatiently to return through C. Thus, the spirit who returns to C is the same A who had returned to B.

Suppose the spirit person is Paul. If A, through whom he returns in an attempt to ascend through each stage over the ages, fails to indemnify within that period and dies, Paul returns through B and helps him and ascends. There must be an indemnity period.

According to the Principle, indemnity is not accomplished in a short time. For this reason, if B, the second chosen person, does not indemnify, the next person C is chosen for coming again. So eventually, Paul will have returned through C. If B were to leave a message or were to do something, he would say that he is working with Paul's assistance now. Likewise, C in the next age will also say in the message that he is working with Paul's assistance and that he is even Paul himself. This way, it looks as if Paul's spirit appeared in B and again in C around the world.

Looking only at such a phenomenon, people call it reincarnation. It appears like it is this phenomenon of reincarnation. People speak like this, because they do not see the whole picture. Such phenomena will appear in this age as well until the global and cosmic ages.

Originally, people were not supposed to live under Satan's rule but rather within the realm of God's direct dominion. Yet due to the Fall, they have come to live in the fallen domain. In order to escape from this fallen domain, they must pay indemnity as individuals and as families. Without indemnifying this, they cannot escape. Each stage looks like a phenomenon of reincarnation or transmigration of souls, because spirit people must appear in each age through the returning phenomenon.

From this point of view, the same

applies to all of you. If you have faith just as an individual, but die before having a family, you must surmount the standards of the family, tribe, people, nation and world. Because of this, you will not know how many eons it would take. It corresponds to infinity. Even Jesus could not go over the national standard. In order to do so, he has to come again, and only by going over the peak of the nation can he enter heaven. Right now, he is in paradise and the same reasoning applies here.

The person to whom Jesus comes and directly guides and dwells within calls himself "Jesus." Seeing only this, a person thinks that Jesus is born again in him, which gives rise to the theory of reincarnation. You must understand such a spirit world well.

People who are supposed to live in God's direct dominion of goodness live instead in the fallen dominion, and thus must escape from the evil dominion. This is why such things happen. Jesus did it spiritually. So did Christianity.

From this point of view, the Unification Principle of Resurrection conforms exactly to the realities of the spirit world. In other words, it teaches you the formulas of the spirit world. So far, countless religious people have experienced these unknown facts of the spirit world but have not understood them clearly.

When you hear this principle, however, do not just learn it as a theory. It is difficult enough to find this principle itself, but you must practice it in your own life and achieve victory. If you fail in this, I will not teach it to you.

In other words, instead of just learning about Noah's family, Abraham's family, Jacob's family, the age of Moses, John the Baptist, and the age of Jesus and stopping there, it involves understanding about them all, paying indemnity for them, and equipped yourself with the restored foundation of victory. I will teach it to you when you have done that.

Unless we turn our past defeats by Satan into victory, we cannot realize God's will. The figures who took charge of the providence of restoration – such as Noah, Abraham, Jacob and Moses – did not know this. Yet the Lord who is coming upon the earth must indemnify the failures of individuals, families, tribes, people and nations. He is the representative who knows all this and can put it into effect until the ideal world is found. If he does not, it will not be realized.

When meeting the Messiah, what will happen if you believe in and follow him? If you meet him at the time he perfects the ages of the individual, family, tribe, people and nation, you will also receive the benefits of those ages, ascending to the national level. Yet, for those in the age of the individual to receive the Messiah and thereby ascend to the age of the family, they must pay indemnity on earth, just as spirit people do. Also, because they must go through the course of indemnity to ascend from the age of the family to the age of the tribe, the longer they have stayed in the Unification Church, the more indemnity they have paid. The longer they have been here, the closer they are to me.

The way up to the age of the nation is one of vertical ascent, and the national system should be determined and surmounted here. Yet, if you do not continue the process of ascending, you may fall away, because however high the stage to which you ascend, the same phenomena recur, due to indemnity; this is the nature of spiritual phenomena. Indemnity blocks your way. It causes opposition. This is why it is easy to fall away after taking a risk and making a mistake. If you fail here, you will collapse.

The nation of Israel and Judaism prepared to receive the Messiah for over four millennia, but because the Will remained unfulfilled with his death, the prepared foundation completely collapsed. Consequently, countless people have been sacrificed in the ups and downs of the process.

This happens to the mainstream of God's providence, but it also happens to many subsidiary peoples around the world. Through this, indemnity is paid globally.

Since the providence ascends as a mainstream in this way, other people around the world take either conforming or opposing positions and pay indemnity. Things are organized through such indemnity. Until now, countless religions have made many sacrifices in going the course of restoration.

The question is how do people in the spirit world and religious people on earth attain the highest level of goodness? In other words, how do they take their places after transcending the national level? This person becomes the Messiah; he comes to seek that. As he knows the way to pay indemnity, when people unite with him, even though they have not yet paid indemnity, their indemnity period will be shortened. If a nation takes its place with him, all individuals of the nation will be included here. If a nation pays indemnity, its families, tribes, people, and the nation itself will ascend to the global level. Looking at it this way, think how quickly the world would be restored if one nation were recovered!

Only by establishing a nation can we transcend paradise. Paradise is the same as a waiting room before going to heaven. If errors remain that were committed by Adam, Noah, Abraham and Jacob as they underwent the process of restoration, these must all be indemnified. Without indemnity being paid, horizontal development cannot take place.

From this point of view, we can know how important a nation is. If we have a nation, we will not fall away. For instance, the German government intervenes with the affairs of foreigners in Germany in the same way it does with its own citizens. If a foreigner does something wrong, he is deported. If someone is deported and if he is stateless, where can they go? They have nowhere to go. Even if such a person was sentenced to death, they would have nowhere to appeal.

The same can be said about the satanic realm. In the satanic realm, we are their enemies. As theists are their enemies, how much do they hate and persecute us in their realm? Not only that, even if they were to deport or kill us, we would have nowhere to appeal. Since the

nation is important, God comes looking for it.

In seeking a nation, you must pay indemnity for the individual, family, tribe, people and nation. You must go through indemnity courses as an individual, family, tribe and people. Otherwise, there is no way to the world-level course. Since the nation is the center, each nation must pass through the central nation in order to go this way.

If you died without restoring a nation, you could only return to the earth to support individuals and families, unable to work with dignified authority. You would not be qualified to fight for the occupation of the satanic world.

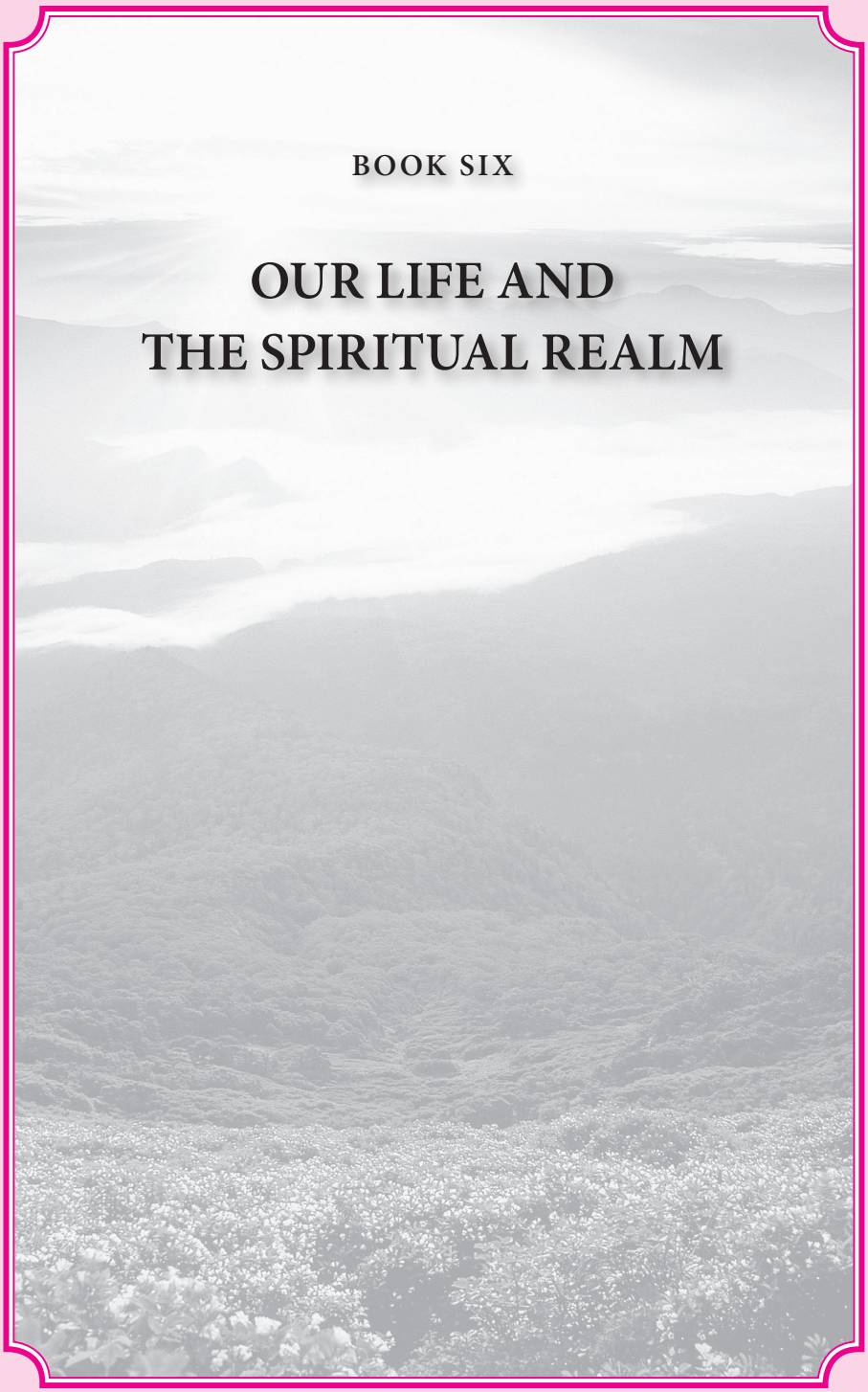
Accordingly, you can be registered only when a nation appears. Have you been registered? You have been registered with the Unification Church, but not with God's unified nation. Can you be citizens without a nation? No.

Because of this, all the people in the spirit world hope to assist the people of this nation. Only if you are in this nation will returning phenomena occur horizontally.

As the phenomena occur horizontally, the foundation you work for will remain for you. When ascending in seeking that nation, however much indemnity you may have paid, you would lose everything if you were to collapse. Wherever you might have climbed up to from the bottom, if you were to collapse, everything would disappear. This has happened repeatedly. But when this is being done on a horizontal level, what you have worked for will remain eternally. In other words, in the age of ascending through restoration, you lose what you invested through indemnity, but when a nation is found and we work horizontally, it will be the age in which your efforts will remain as your accomplishments, rather than disappearing as indemnity. (54-277, 1972.3.24)

BOOK SIX

OUR LIFE AND THE SPIRITUAL REALM



Contents

Chapter 1. The Path of Life

Section 1. Our Path of Life 757
1.1. We cannot foresee our immediate future 757
1.2. Where are we heading in life? 759
1.3. Our lifetime is preparation for going to the spirit world 763
1.4. Life is too short 766
Section 2. The Correct Understanding of Death 767
2.1. Death is the inevitable conclusion of earthly life 767
2.2. Life and death are a process that connects three worlds 771
2.3. Death is a transition to a better world 776
2.4. Death is an ascension (*seunghwa*) to a higher dimension 778
2.5. Our attitude in the face of death 781
2.6. The Blessing opens the path of eternal life 784
2.6.1. The importance of eternal life 784
2.6.2. The concept of eternal life originates in love 787
2.6.3. Blessing and eternal life 790
Section 3. The Value of Our Earthly Life 793
3.1. Earth is the place of harvesting the fruits of love 793
3.2. The people of heaven are created on the earth 798
3.3. Ownership in the spirit world is decided on earth 801
3.4. Our earthly life is recorded in detail 806
3.5. Sins committed in the flesh should be indemnified on earth 809
3.6. To live in harmony with nature is precious 813
Section 4. The Secret of Entering Heaven 816
4.1. Heaven is a place to enter with the honor of a royal family 816
4.2. Those who embody the love of the four great realms of heart can enter heaven 820
4.3. The body should harmonize with the mind 823
4.4. Heaven and hell are divided based upon absolute sex 828
4.5. Conjugal love is the central flower of the ideal of love 833
4.6. Entering heaven as a family unit 837
4.7. Heaven is a life of living for the sake of others 842

Chapter 2. What Kind of Place Is the Spirit World?

Section 1. The Reality of the Spirit World and Its Laws 847
1.1. The spirit world is an infinite world that transcends time and space 847
1.2. Love reigns supreme in the spirit world 852
1.3. Love is like air in the spirit world 858
1.4. The lives and relationships of people in spirit world 860

1.5. Food, clothing and shelter are not constraints in the spirit world 866
1.6. Love is the origin of authority in the spirit world 870
1.7. The spirit world is the world of God's law and order 874
Section 2. Heaven and Hell 875
2.1. Heaven is the world of the ideal of love 875
2.2. Heaven is where people serve and live for one another 880
2.3. The Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world must emerge through the kingdom on earth 884
2.4. Jesus and paradise 888
2.5. Hell has no relationship with the love of God 890
2.6. We choose to go to heaven or hell 896
Section 3. The Relationship between Those in the Spirit World and Those on Earth 898
3.1. The spirit world is divided into good and evil worlds 898
3.2. The situation of people in the spirit world 900
3.3. Perfection of the spirit person can only come through people on earth 903
3.4. Co-operation from the spirit world 907
3.5. Atheists are like wandering spirits 910
Section 4. Our Ancestors and Ourselves 911
4.1. We are the fruit of our ancestors 911
4.2. Ancestral salvation comes from those on earth 913
4.3. Blessed families and honoring one's ancestors 916
Section 5. The Spirit World Must Be Known 919
Section 6. Judgment 919
6.1. God has no concept of the enemy 919
6.2. True Parents pass judgment based on the governing law of love 923
6.3. Personal sin will be judged by the clan in the family court of the kingdom 930

Chapter 3. True Parents and the Spirit World

Section 1. True Parents' Authority and Mission 934
1.1. True Parents are the incarnation of God 934
1.2. The ruler of heaven and earth is the axis of the universe 936
1.3. We go to Heaven through True Parents 937
Section 2. True Parents and the Building of the Kingdom of Heaven 943
2.1. The seal of approval from God is needed in order to become True Parents 943
2.2. Building the Kingdom of Heaven and the unification of the physical and spirit worlds 948
Section 3. True Parents and the Works of True Love 952
3.1. True Parents and the blessing of saints and murderers 952
3.2. Equalization of the spiritual and physical worlds through the cosmic expansion of the true Blessing 955
3.3. True Love liberates hell on earth and in the spirit world 959

3.4. Registration for heaven and Blessed Families' spiritual realm 963
3.4.1. Requirements of registration 963
3.4.2. The united realm of the spirit world incorporates a middle realm and a prison 966
Section 4. True Family and the Works of the Spirit World 968
4.1. Heung-jin nim and the establishment of the right of the eldest son in the spirit world 968
4.2. The Cheongpyeong providence and the ancestors' liberation ceremony 972
Section 5. The Final Wish of Life 974

CHAPTER ONE

The Path of Life

Section 1. Our Path of Life

1.1. We cannot foresee our immediate future

It is a common saying that human beings come and go. This applies even to the most eminent people of history. You need to be aware that the continuing influence of heavenly principles in the flow of history applies to us even at this moment. We shall come and go ourselves. We do not know by what internal affinities or through what relationships we came to be here, but we know that the reality is we came into this world, have struggled with all kinds of phenomena and ideological concepts, and will eventually depart this world.

If that is so, for what did we come here, and for what purpose do we pass on? Numerous philosophers and religious people have devoted their entire lives to the resolution of these issues but have failed. Human history has continued to this day tainted by the grief from such continuing failure, and even now continues on this path. (7-178, 1959. 9.6)

Why was I brought into this world? Why do I have to live? Where am I heading? You should never allow yourself to think that you were born by your own will. You were born into this world, yet you do not know the source and purpose behind your birth. You are ignorant of the motivation and purpose of your being. In other words, we were born in spite of our wishes. We live notwithstanding our wishes, and we die notwithstanding our wishes. Then what is there to be proud of? We have no control over our birth; we are merely custodians in this life, and we cannot avoid the path of death. Thus, any attempt to take pride in ourselves is pitiable. Once born, we are destined to live and destined to die. (7-178, 1959.9.6)

We are moving towards a certain place whether we know it or not. We are heading towards that place even as we work and even as we rest. Not only ourselves, but this nation, this world and furthermore, heaven and earth are going towards a certain place as well. This is an undeniable fact. To what kind of place will we go at the end of this life? This is a very important question that humankind must resolve. Through religion, philosophy and historical studies, people have mobilized to solve this question. Therefore, you cannot deny that all of you are caught up in this and are

pulled by this destiny. (8-194, 1959.12.20)

Numerous sages, wise men, and founders of religions, have paused on their path of life, interrupted their minds' concerns and their hearts' inclinations, and asked, "Where am I going?" They have struggled to solve this question. These people set out to solve this question, but no one to this day could confidently claim, "My body, mind and heart, my life and ideals are hastening towards the ideal destination; hence, everyone and all beings existing in heaven and on earth should follow me to that place." (8-194, 1959.12.20)

Today people live for only seventy to eighty years. Our heart knows that our lifetime is too short to allow us to restore all the realms of goodness that entangled in history. Even a billion years would still not be enough. Yet, we have to establish a lasting bond with the realm of goodness during this short period of seventy to eighty years. Our mind and conscience become desperate, knowing how immense this task is. We should not die! If we die we cannot accomplish it. During our lifetime we should make that connection of heart and restore the sovereignty of the Homeland on this earth. We must find the original homeland, attend the Heavenly Sovereign, and live with His people in His nation. Only then can we go to heaven in the spirit world. How desperate our heart would be if we knew we were unable to go and live in that world! (155-27, 1964.10.6)

Although I have a destiny, where is my body trying to go? Where is my mind trying to go? Toward what is my life being oriented? Where is my heart trying to go? My wishes, hopes, and ideals – where are they trying to go? Even if we cannot answer these questions, we must still follow the path to our destiny. When we die, our body will be buried in the ground. Will my mind, my life, heart, ideal, and even my hope be buried together, the day my body is buried? Do they disappear? Unless you have integrity, a clear sense of purpose, and definite answers, you will inevitably become an unhappy person. (8-194, 1959.12.20)

For what reason are we born? What should be the focus of our life, and for what purpose do we pass on? We can never answer these questions without God. Without God, we cannot find the real motive in our life. The one who is without a motive can neither reap the fruit of his work nor have his value recognized. A building is constructed according to the designer's blueprint. A building that is built without reference to the original blueprint cannot be what the designer originally intended. (21-100, 1968.11.17)

If you make a wrong start, you will end up in the wrong place. That is why when a ship sets out into the great ocean, it should chart out the course and follow the compass carefully from the moment it first sets sail from port. Then, what is the port of departure for human life? People do not know. Where can we find

the direction, the compass guiding us to reach our destination in the world beyond? Human beings have not been able to find this, so they have been wandering about to and fro. No matter how they have tried, they have not been able to overcome their human limitations. (172-28, 1988.1.3)

1.2. Where are we heading in life?

What is the purpose of life? We need to think about this issue again. The source of our life does not come from us. Thus, the purpose of life certainly does not belong to us alone. No one would object to the idea of being happy in life. No one would reject a dazzling life. Yet the reality is that none of us is free to live in that way. Still, each of us wishes to have pride in ourselves, to live freely with respect to our own will, and to be remembered accordingly. These intersecting elements all can be found within our hearts. (7-178, 1959.9.6)

The arrival of the autumn season foretells the coming of winter. Only those with vitality can pass through the course of winter. Things without vitality have no choice but to retreat from there. That is why new life needs to be injected before the coming of winter. New life should have a new principle and thought based on a new love, and should be armed with a new outlook on life, the world and the universe. Without these it cannot survive through the winter season. Although the course may be harsh, once you attain the vitality to pass through winter, spring will draw nearer with each passing day. The spring days will come upon you. The Unification Church is walking this path. (35-68, 1970.10.3)

We live in this world, yet we know that this is not all there is and that the spirit world exists. The physical and spirit worlds are not separate but are connected as one. Then, where is the place to which we are destined to go and ultimately settle down? We are now living in the flesh on this earth, but are moving towards the eternal world. We pass through our teenage years, our twenties, thirties, and after we have outgrown our youth, we enter the prime of our life, then gradually pass the peak, and eventually reach old age. Like the setting sun, our life comes to an end in this way. (140-121, 1986.2.9)

Those who know the existence of the spirit world understand that our life in this world is short, and that the world we enter after death is eternal. Hence, physical life is a time to prepare for the eternal world. Isn't that how it is? (140-121, 1986.2.9)

Where are people going? They are going towards the spirit world. The spirit world is like the ocean. We are destined to go there. Just as there are different currents in the ocean, infinite changes unfold in the spirit world. Within the main currents of the ocean, there are many things living harmoniously that are not found in fresh water. Just as there

are many families of fish in the sea, there are many new families who are harmonized with heaven and earth. We must become like this when we go to the spirit world. (141-306, 1986.3.2)

Where, then, are people going? They are going to heaven. How about angels? They are also going to heaven. How about your mother and father? They are also going to heaven. How about your dog? It is not going to hell. At the time of the Korean War, one rich family was trying to escape to the South. They had a dog they had boasted about as being very expensive, but they didn't take it with them; they just tied it to the door and said, "Good-bye, we're off." Our Unification members should not do such things. Now, dogs and all creation can follow their masters to heaven or anywhere else that their masters may go. (78-336, 1975.6.10)

We must find a way to overcome all the complicated circumstances in the physical and spirit worlds and the complex human thought systems. We should be aware of the amazing fact that we can go forward with one clear set of values by aligning ourselves with a single simple direction. We will inevitably follow certain stages of development and preparation in our lives. A certain force will accompany us through the stages along the way. The driving force of love can respond within all the realms of our life. Thus, we are born in love, receive love, give love and go to the world of love. We return to God. The resultant being returns to the causal being. Therefore, we must think in the same way as God thinks. (126-144, 1983.4.12)

Then, where should we go? Where is the place that we have to go, even if it requires that we put our life on the line? The day must come when we seek God, attend Him, and rejoice in our hearts – a day when our hearts say there is no greater hope. For this we endure pain, mistreatment and resentment, and persevere through this worldly life. If we cannot go successfully through this world, we will perish with it. (8-202, 1959.12.20)

Why do people not wish to die, even when they are living a mediocre life? Why live? What is the origin of life? I am sure that you have many questions like this. However, your questions cannot be answered through the philosophy books written by men. Philosophy until now has only, in effect, been seeking a path toward God. What is religion then? A religious life begins when you know God and live together with Him. (186-12, 1989.1.24)

We should not ignore the spirit world. We are created to go there eventually. Thus, even people who are well off should live on this earth in accordance with the Principle, and fulfill the ideal of unity and uniform balance between the physical and spirit worlds. It is possible to form a plane of equalized reciprocal relationships between the two worlds. This balances itself and should rotate

in a smooth motion perpendicular on the vertical axis. When it rotates even 360 degrees, it should not get stuck. If Satan can make even the smallest accusation, it will get stuck. A person whose life rotates around a vertical axis and is never swayed should appear. The age will come when the family will be seriously re-examined. It will be the age of the re-examination of the Unification Church. The church will no longer be needed. It will be the original age where we can live in attendance to God. (271-277, 1995.8.28)

The entire world faces the same conditions and patterns of corruption in the realm of life, realm of love and realm of lineage. Everything is entangled in the same degradation. Hence, you can stand within the boundary of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth if you can renounce everything that your body desires in the satanic domain and totally move into the realm of your conscience. Thus, you can attain the free rights that lead to the borderless and infinite nation of God, the world of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world. You should realize that you need to go into that place. People are living in ignorance of these difficult issues. They end up in hell because they go to the spirit world oblivious to what is going on behind the scenes. (258-343, 1994.3.20)

Once we are born it is inevitable that we will die. Where do we go after death? We do not disappear like smoke. We are bound to go to the spirit world. In that world we will see a heavenly nation. Who, then, is the master of the spirit world? It is God. Therefore, we should become the sons and daughters of God. If we do not become God's children, we cannot enter heaven. (208-109, 1990.11.17)

If there is a spirit world, do you think that it would be in constant change? There is a saying, "A person's mind changes morning and evening, yet mountain scenery never changes." The spirit world is also unchanging. Assuming God exists, would He change? God is unchanging. If there is a nation in the spirit world under the reign of God, that nation would be unchanging. It would live under the established law for eternity, without any dissatisfaction or discontent. It would endure in dignity and harmony, and survive by means of adapting and refining itself. This place would have no need of a revolution. All those who tried to bring about a revolution would perish. (203-326, 1990.6.28)

You should all enter the blessed land of Canaan. The era of the global village has arrived because the earth was made to become the blessed land of Canaan and because the physical world has been brought closer to heaven. With the invention of satellites we entered the age when we can view the universe from where we sit. The time is coming when satellites will connect us with the spiritual realm.

Then the computer age will come. There are computers in the spirit world that show all the records of one's life on

earth. We are entering an age where the history of and everything about one's life will be revealed in an instant. In the same way, the age of expansionism for hell on earth has been replaced by the age of the emergence of heaven on earth through the Unification movement. (266-296, 1990.6.28)

Did Adam and Eve pay for the food they ate in the Garden of Eden? It was all free. In this regard, God, who created the environment for human beings, gave infinite value to them freely. Consequently, when we go and live in the spirit world we are naturally provided with everything of infinite value there. God lives in the spirit world, His original homeland. There, food is not bought with money. It is a place where everything can be provided to an extent that goes beyond our imagination.

You are the way you are because you do not know the spirit world. If you were of the original lineage with no relation to the Fall, you would surely know the spirit world. (263-78, 1994.8.21)

Why do we long for the original homeland? It is the same as the love towards our parents, our siblings, our couples, and towards the land, mountains and streams in our hometown. The world after death follows the same formula of true love. In our original homeland we can find our parents, spouse, and siblings. Everything is there, even superb food. Food can become genuine only when the physical food and spiritual food are combined. Why do we have to suffer like this? It is for the sake of going to our original homeland. We are doing this to inherit a spirit world that is filled with hope. (225-135, 1992.1.5)

Your hometown is not confined to a limited space. You have to be able to live anywhere, as though it were your hometown. Wherever you go, live in that place thinking that it is your beloved hometown. Anyone who can bring together all forty million people of the Republic of Korea to live in harmony shall find the value of his spiritual character increase in the spirit world. When you think about your hometown, be sure to consider the spirit world as you strive to attain a character of love, and live for the sake of others as if they were your parents, elder brothers or elder sisters. In the meantime, be determined to invest your love and life in raising your children so that you can leave behind wonderful descendants in your hometown. If you live armed with this way of thinking, then, when you pass to the spirit world, the entire world will become your hometown. (209-17, 1990.11.24)

What kind of path should Unification Church members follow? They should follow the path that God desires. They should follow the way of God's will. What is the will of Heaven? The will of heaven consists of the way for the individual, the family, the society, the nation, the world and even the spirit world. You do not know so much about the spirit world, do you? The specialist in that field is this person standing here

right now. The spirit world surely exists. (121-146, 1982. 10.24)

1.3. Our lifetime is preparation for going to the spirit world

No matter what you may think about it, there is nothing you can do about the dispensation of nature. None of you want to die, do you? Are you confident you can avoid death? Nature regulates this. By the same logic, you also have to follow the laws of the spirit world. (247-95, 1993.4.25)

The spirit world is our homeland; it is the original homeland. This earth is the homeland of our original body. The spirit world is the homeland of our original mind. The world we are to enter after this one is the world of heart, the spirit world. Hence, if we train ourselves for our future entry into the spirit world, we will have no problems once we get there. Americans have to eat hamburgers and cheese, don't they? Koreans have to eat *kimchi* and *kochujang*. If there are hamburgers and *kimchi* in the spirit world, then… So if we live our life on earth in the same rhythm as the spirit world, there will be no pain when we go there. (207-72, 1990.11.1)

To this day, people have thought that everything disappears with death, but that is not the case. Life continues into the spirit world. We have to make preparations on earth in order to enter the next world. You breathe love in the spirit world. Thus, you should live with love as the center of your life on earth in order to freely breathe in the spirit world. If you do not live centered on love during your physical life, you will be unable to breathe freely in the spirit world. The spirit world is a world where you breathe love. You can think of it as a world in which love is the air. Physical death is the start of the second stage of life. Hence, there is nothing to be afraid of. Death opens the gates to a new beginning. (249-280, 1993.10.11)

The spirit world is our original hometown. During your life on earth you have to maintain a standard in order to return to your original hometown and live there for eternity. You cannot live as you wish on this earth. You cannot live like the worldly people who have been ignorant of these things. You have to know the spirit world and live accordingly. Then, when you leave this world you can go before God and form a connection with heaven. Without knowing the spirit world, it is impossible to make that connection. You need to be clearly aware, therefore, of the reality of the spirit world. (295-120, 1998.8.19)

The spirit world is filled with the air of love. If your spirit self is not prepared, it will not be able to breathe in heaven. The world here is a world of air, but the other world is the spirit world of love. You have to prepare your spirit self so that it can feel love. Unless you do so, you cannot establish relationships in the spirit world. This is the problem and it will be compounded. It can take mil-

lions of years to resolve. (265-327, 1994.12.1)

All of you should engage in original love. In the spirit world, love functions as air. Only when your cells experience the fulfillment of love can everything become natural. All cells breathe, don't they? You can nurture the cells of love by becoming a true couple and letting your cells grow with God's love. Then you can enter God's world and breathe the air of love for eternity. In this way you will not die. As love is the root, the spirit world is a place where, with love, anything is made possible. You can create anything and everything for your loved ones. Such a spirit world exists. Our original homeland exists. (283-267, 1997.4.13)

What is the difference between salt water and fresh water? They taste different. Sea water is salty. Fresh water has no taste at all. In the same way, there is no "flavor" on this earth. But in the spirit world there is flavor. Water has the power to sustain life, but salt is needed for producing life. (229-90, 1992.4.11)

River water should flow to the deepest levels of the sea. Fresh water from a large river will still become salt water when it enters the sea. Even water of a river which is famous for its clear streams will be changed without delay once it enters the sea. It changes to a totally different color and taste. In the same way, everyone goes to the spirit world in the end. Fresh water cannot maintain its characteristics once it joins the sea. It inevitably becomes sea water.

Correspondingly, during their lives, religious people should acquire the ability to add salt water. Then, there will be no conflict in the spirit world. If fresh water enters the sea and retains its original characteristics, problems will arise. Likewise, if people enter the spirit world as they are, they will find themselves in serious trouble. (244-178, 1993.2.7)

Where does the river flow? It goes to the sea. Sea water is different from river water. The earth is like river water, and the spirit world is like sea water. Everyone living on earth will pass into the spirit world. When fresh water and salt water mix, what happens? What happens to freshwater fish when they are placed in salt water? Freshwater fish cannot survive in salt water. They suffocate.

Hence, they should get accustomed to the salt water. When the color and temperature of the water are the same, you would be all right, no matter where you drink water. If the physical world and spirit world are connected suddenly, you will end up dead like a fresh-water fish in salt water. How will you breathe in that situation? It takes two weeks for salmon to gradually get accustomed to the water as they swim from salt water up into fresh water. The salmon progress in stages in order to minimize the pain of transition. (256-61, 1994.3.12)

How would fresh water feel when it flows into the sea? Would it resist saying, "I don't want to go?" Would all rivers think like that? If I ask you where you go after death, I'm sure you will all

answer that you go to the spirit world. Then how do you go to the spirit world? You get there by dying. Though that is the case, no one wants to die. Then, what happens when the river finally flows into the sea? What would happen if the fresh water was completely engulfed by the sea water? Would the fresh water feel good about it? It would feel shocked as though everything had contracted, or shall I say shrunk… It would feel a great shock, as if what had originally been the largest thing had become the smallest thing. (229-209, 1992.4.12)

Even though people may not want to go to the spirit world, they all have to go nonetheless. All of you here, please raise your hand if you think you will never die. Even though you stick a knife in the table and pledge otherwise, death is inevitable. Where do you go after death? You pass on to the spirit world. Life on earth is like a large river; but no matter how large the river, it all flows towards the sea. Those who say, "I can't go to the sea; I don't want to go to the sea," may be alive but are as good as dead. It is the same as not realizing the value of their existence. (229-88, 1992.4.11)

When we take a good look at the effect of what we do in our life before going to the spirit world, we can see that it is a serious matter. The spirit world is the world unknown. We are destined to go to the spirit world, the unknown world. It is a world that expands into infinity. When you go there you will be able to meet all your ancestors. It is a place where you can meet thousands and tens of thousands of your ancestors at once. Your ancestors will evaluate you when they meet you. (142-160, 1986.3.9)

There is no easy way to prepare. Let us think about our life as a whole. Those who know that their youth is the time to prepare for young adulthood will become prosperous. The prime of life is the time to prepare for old age. Old age is the time to prepare for the spirit world. I know very well that life is like a training course, a period of preparation in which to attain a great and universal character. (147-188, 1986.9.21)

At the present time, visas and national borders create problems. Once language is unified, however, we will be able to live in any location as if it were our own hometown and country. In the end, things will move in this direction. The peoples of the Soviet Union and America will therefore live together as one family.

In the future, televisions will be made even as small as a wallet. Isn't that even happening now? Are there not micro-televisions that can fit in one's pocket? We have entered an age in which you can see everything wherever you are with the aid of satellite communications. The world is brought to us in condensed form. Human life will become more convenient; transportation to any place will be easy. The age must come when we can travel around carrying all those small things in our car. You will be able to leave Korea and travel the world

until you are seventy or eighty years old. Such an age is sure to come. I am making preparations for that time. (238-361, 1992.11.22)

1.4. Life is too short

Our life is too short. Ten years can pass and we are barely aware of it. Everything will be decided within thirty years after your marriage. In this way, the path of life does not wait for you. It is busy going on its own way. We all have to die some day. Do you think you won't die? Can you be sure that you won't die? You have to die. Where do you go after death? Do you know that there is a spirit world? I am staking my entire life on this work because of the spirit world – because I know the spirit world – even as I manage the entire world. Life on this earth is but an instant. It is like the ten months you spend in your mother's womb. (143-333, 1986.3.21)

The Unification Church is the place where you make preparations to go to the spirit world. For this reason, it is a place to prepare to qualify for the spirit world. So the question is whether you pass the examinations perfectly or whether you pass the examinations imperfectly. There is also the possibility of failing and being disqualified.

In light of this, while you are on earth you should prepare for when you go to the spirit world. Life on earth is like a wanderer's journey. You have to pass through many courses. As a woman, you were born from your parents; you live with them and you reach a certain age. Even though you may not know the purpose for which you were born, you meet a man and walk together with him, giving birth to a child through love. You labor in life in this way as you would labor to pull a wagon. But there is no knowing when that wagon will break down. At times you will travel steep roads of stone. One mistake and it can break down. What will you do if it breaks down? You will not be able to go any further. You will have to repair it. If you are not capable of repairing it, you are in deep trouble.

That is why if you don't have strength or ability, it will take you a year, two years, or even ten years to travel this path. If you cannot overcome this, you will perish. Such is the nature of your journey. At times you may stop by somewhere and meet many people. You may stop by all sorts of places. Life is like a journey. In the end, though, this path takes you to the spirit world. (229-209, 1992.4.12)

Life goes by very quickly. By the time you come to have some wisdom and begin to understand the affairs of the world, you are already forty or fifty years old. A decade goes by in the blink of an eye. Ten more years and you become sixty – but only for a moment. After sixty, in no time you're seventy. Now that I think about it, I can really empathize with the saying: "Life is but a fleeting dream." (188-38, 1989.2.16)

Our lifetime is but a moment. Our one lifetime goes up and down against

the measure of eternal values. Like a scale, it goes up and down. That's the way it is. (46-155, 1971.8.13)

Let's say you live for about eighty years. If you take out the time for sleep, it is reduced by half to forty. Is sleeping living? Sleeping is like being dead. To sleep means death. For this reason, you only spend half of the twenty-four hours of your time struggling to live. Then what if we take out an hour for each meal? You need an hour to eat each of your meals.

Further, if we take out the time spent for friends' parties, the sixtieth birthday celebration for the next door neighbor, funerals, sick days, and so on, do you think you really live even half your life? Last time I calculated, I found that we only spend seven years really living our lives. Out of these seven years, how many days can be counted as a day that you truly lived? How many days in all? (49-336, 1971.10.24)

Life in this physical world is short. We do not live for a long time. When you know this, the time you spend sleeping and eating costs you dearly. You will eat as you go on your way. You will sleep on the way, and take your recreation as you go…. How pitiful! But as you do these things, you will be given unprecedented blessings. You should realize that all this will become a historical record. (80-226, 1975.10.23)

A person's fortune stretches and shrinks like a rubber band. If someone who is born with fortune to the degree of 100 spends to the degree of 120, in the course of his life his descendants will perish. If he spends only eighty, however, he can bequeath the remaining twenty as a blessing to his descendants. That's how it should be. (78-333, 1975.6.10)

Section 2. The Correct Understanding of Death

2.1. Death is the inevitable conclusion of earthly life

There are many people who have lived to this day thinking that death is the end of life, saying, "If I live seventy or eighty years, I am content. And if I die, so be it." During the course of history, there were people who thought deeply about how to live forever. They wondered if there was any way to live beyond death. The more one clung to this ideal, the more one thought and asked, "What is the meaning of life? Why are we born and why do we walk our path like wanderers?" People would say, "Life is a bitter ocean," or "Life is fleeting like dew on the grass." Yet, if they could live forever there would be no occasion for such worries to arise. (39-229, 1971.1.15)

Numerous sages, wise men, and founders of religions have paused on their path of life, interrupted their mind's concerns and their heart's inclinations and asked, "Where am I going?" They have struggled to solve this question. These people came forth to solve this question, but no one to this day could confidently make the claim: "My body,

mind and heart, my life and ideals have hastened toward this ideal destination; hence, everyone and all beings existing in heaven and on earth should follow me towards this place." (8-194, 1959.12.20)

Would you like to live here forever on earth, or would you rather live eternally in a place where you can be an embodiment of love without a physical body? When God wants to show you the infinite world of His creation, can you follow God with your body? You, therefore, need your spirit self. This is a fact, not a fantasy. If God were at the center of spirituality and if He needed a being with whom to relate, He would want to bring human beings with Him, show them and give to them His eternal ideal realm of creation in its entirety. (111-112, 1981.2.1)

Suppose you had only one piece of clothing to wear. If someone tried to take it from you by force, you would desperately resist. Let's say you had clothes for each of the four seasons of spring, summer, fall, and winter. Suppose that it were springtime, and someone was wearing winter clothes. You could go and tell him, "These are winter clothes. Why don't you take them off?" You would have to bring spring clothing. You would have to bring summer clothing to a person wearing spring clothing in summer, and tell him or her to change. That person may not have realized the need to change. The issue of dying is the same. People do not know that there is a future life. They do not know that there is something more valuable than this physical life. (200-91, 1990.2.24)

God has made infinite efforts to guide those who are living on earth with secular, humanistic hopes to live instead with a fresh hope that can overcome the valley of death in longing for the eternal world. Hence, those who lived a life of faith have taught that we should not live with hopes confined to this earth. Rather, we should embrace the hope that overcomes death and dream of a world of eternal hope. (6-44, 1959.3.22)

All of you will go to the spirit world at some time. Is it one realm or two? It is one world. Then, what will life in that world be like? Have you ever thought about that?

Fish cannot survive outside the world of water in which they live. Water is absolutely vital to their life. Fish living in a river should not live in the river waters alone. They should go back and forth to the sea as well. Why should they live that way? Some freshwater fish cannot procreate without tasting water that connects to sea water. You should be aware of this. Some sea fish have to come to the fresh water and taste it in order to reproduce. The two worlds must be experienced. Similarly, corresponding with the mind and body, you should experience both physical and spirit worlds. (210-128, 1990.12.17)

There are no friends on the path of death. It is a path that you take alone without your parents, without your beloved siblings, without your beloved

spouse and beloved children. It is a path that you must take alone. This path cannot be revisited, nor can you return from it. Once you take this path you can never return. What kind of heart will you have when you go on this path? Unless you have hope that enables you to overcome death the moment you face it, it will be your end. (6-53, 1959.1.22)

If someone dies of old age, in Korean we say that person "went back." When someone asks about our deceased grandparents we say, "They went back." To where did they return? They returned to the spirit world. Since we originally come from the incorporeal God, the incorporeal world is our original homeland. From the incorporeal world we come to the corporeal world, prosper on this earth and then return to the incorporeal world. We return to the spirit world in this way. We originate from the incorporeal Father, and we are then born through our natural father who lends his body, and we live in the physical world. Later, we discard our physical body and return to the spirit world in our original form. (242-166, 1993.1.1)

Human beings, both men and women alike, have five sensory organs. Among the five sensory organs, four can be found in our head. Our eyes, nose, mouth, ears, and hands make up the five sensory organs. The most important ones can be found on our head. The four sensory organs on our head symbolize the spirit world centered on God. It is a world separate from the body. The head can freely move about. The reason it moves about is to see, hear, smell, and speak in all four directions. Hence, what would happen if our head couldn't move? The inconvenience would be great. (228-125, 1992.3.27)

The people on earth must return to the original world, a third stage, after their physical life. Thus, in order to become a person who can go and live in the world of love, we need to prepare ourselves with organs for breathing in that world of love. We go to that world when our physical body breaks down, just as a baby bursts the amniotic sac and destroys it in order to be born. That is why the mother feels labor pains. In the same way, death is like a second set of labor pains.

For what should we prepare during our life in this physical body? During our time in the womb our lungs were made in preparation for breathing air. In the same way, during our physical life we need to prepare ourselves to breathe with our love-breathing organ of the spirit world. So, after discarding your physical body you have to breathe with your love-breathing organ, overcome the limited environment of your past life and live as a person with unrestrained freedom. (274-104, 1995.10.29)

Human beings want to resemble God, and if they are His sons or daughters, it is inevitable that God would have the idea of allowing them to resemble Him. I want to resemble God, and God wants to take me with Him. Therefore,

God will seek the way to make this possible. Therefore, we come to the conclusion that human beings must be born in a form through which they can resemble God. God waits for the day of that birth. Human beings wait for this day as well. Do we need a day when we are born with that body, or not? That day would be the day of our physical death.

Well then, should human beings welcome death or not? When we are asked what the purpose of death is, we should say, "We die for the sake of God's true love." The reason we discard our physical body is to actively participate in the work of God's infinite love, and for the sake of God's world of love. (116-172, 1982.1.1)

Death means to be born in God's love. But in the human world, people make a fuss, saying, "Oh, I am dying!" Seeing this, would God laugh merrily or would He exclaim, "Oh, no!"? When God looks at people crying like this in the human world, does He feel sorrow or joy? Leaving the realm of limited love, we enter the joyful realm of infinite love. Isn't death the moment to welcome this joyfulness? Isn't this going through the path of death the moment of actually a second birth?

If this is the case, would God be joyful about the day your physical body is gone? Would He be joyful when someone is born as a son or daughter who can act for the sake of love in the second, infinitely expanded world? Why do I talk about such things? You cannot establish a relationship with God without liberating yourself from the fear of death. I am speaking about this because you must understand this reality. (116-172, 1982.1.1)

On the day you are really born as God's son…. Amongst the innumerable stars, do you think there is a realm of diamond stars or not? Think about it. You want to have diamonds, don't you? You can't say there isn't a star made just of gold. It is possible. How rich God, our Father, is! Have you ever thought about that? We can travel this infinite universe in a moment. Are you interested? Are you truly interested? If so, what we need to do is observe the normative laws in accordance with God's commands: "Don't do this!" or "Do that!" This is possible only when you observe what God says to do or not to do. It is only logical that this becomes impossible if you live according to your selfish desires.

Can you abide by what God says to do or not to do? Since human beings have duality, they consist of mind and body. Since the mind is the subject partner, and the body the object partner, mind and body must be united. Is that right or wrong? (116-174, 1982.1.1)

What was God's deep anguish? It originated in the fact that He could not educate His true sons and daughters to become people of perfected heart, that He could not educate them about the siblings' heart, and the heart of a husband or wife. He could not educate them in the standard of heart that dictates what a couple should be like on

earth. God could not educate them in how to become a couple and then how to be a parent. This education should have become the textbook for human life. Yet, humankind lost that textbook and came to lead a self-centered life. Therefore, when such a person goes to the spirit world, he goes to hell. Even when people go to hell they do not go to just one place. In hell, there are all sorts of groups wandering about. Adam and Eve were supposed to take charge of this education of heart, but because of their ignorance, they fell and could not perfect themselves.

Consequently, the all-knowing God had to take responsibility for this. Who initiated the providence for salvation? God did. God initiated the providence for restoration and He also had to initiate the providence for re-creation. (228-268, 1992.7.5)

2.2. Life and death are a process that connects three worlds

Our life consists of a ten-month period in the womb, a hundred-year period in the physical world, and eternity in the spirit world. Our face consists of three stages: the mouth, nose and eyes. These represent the three ages of human life. Our mouth symbolizes the age of the womb in the material world. Our nose represents the age of the earth in the earthly human world, and our eyes represent the age of heaven in the spirit world. (298-304, 1999.1.17)

When a person is born, he is born from the deepest place – in water. The period in the womb is the age of water. A baby inside the mother's womb is floating in water. Looking at this, we may feel that the baby would find it difficult having to breathe in the mother's womb. But to the baby, the womb is the universe. Though he lives in water, that world is the baby's universe where he is free. Isn't it obvious that the baby would take in and pass water during his life in the water? To do so, babies in the womb live by virtue of the umbilical cord connected to their stomach. (299-69, 1999.2.4)

A person's life passes through three worlds: the formation-stage world, the growth-stage world, and the completion-stage world. We live in a world of water inside our mother's womb, and then in this earthly world, and finally in the aerial world in the spiritual realm. In other words, we go through three stages: the aqueous world in the womb, followed by a hundred years on this earth after our birth, and then the aerial world where we can fly.

While a baby is in the womb, does he try to escape to the outside world, or does he want to stay there? When he has to go out through such a small hole, does he say, "Oh, no!" or, "Oh, that's great!"? Suppose the baby were told, "If you want to go out, this house you live in will be destroyed, and the source and value of nourishment where you are will all be destroyed. Your head and body will have to swell. Would the baby still want to go out?" Would he say yes, or would he say no? Just before the time of delivery,

the mother desperately pushes and the baby says, "Oh, no!" until the moment of birth; but at last the mother pushes the baby out. When this happens, one world completely disappears and the baby begins to breathe in another world. (116-174, 1982.1.1)

The earth is like the mother's womb. You have to be sure about this. Through what do you eat and breathe during the time in the womb? Do you breathe with your mouth? Do you breathe with your nose? With what do you breathe? You both eat and breathe through your belly button, don't you? Since you do all of this through your belly button, you don't need a mouth to eat and a nose to breathe. Would you need a sensory organ to see, or not? Why would you have sense organs when you don't need them in the womb? They are developing so that you can use them after you come out of the womb. (295-321, 1998.9.24)

Do you use your five sensory organs during your time in the womb? You don't need to use them. You don't urinate, you don't defecate. All the organs are dormant. Isn't it mysterious how you spend ten months like that? Even urine and excrement cannot precede true love. Urine and excrement themselves cannot emerge before the person does. Only after Adam is born does he begin those functions, and not before. Everything is made that way. (297-12, 1998.11.15)

Human beings have to take in water during their time in the womb. The human body is three quarters water. This earthly world is the world of air. Therefore, you have no need for your eyes, ears, nose and other sensory organs when you are in the water of the mother's womb. You stay still with your eyes closed because you don't need to use your five sensory organs. Have you ever seen a baby breathe with his nose during the ten months he spends growing in the womb? The baby would die if he tried to breathe with his nose. It would be the end of him. (302-166, 1999.6.13)

Then why does a baby in the womb need a nose? It was made in preparation for the next world. When this gradually matures to become a respiratory organ the baby has to come out, destroying everything around him. He has to cut himself away from his mother and destroy the amniotic sac in order to come out. What this means is that the baby's environment – the amniotic sac and placenta – is completely destroyed. It means death. It is like announcing the destruction and end of the world of water and the beginning of a new life. (122-327, 1982.3.27)

Should we use the umbilical cord again, or should we cut it? We should cut it off. You may say, "That cord is someone's lifeline. How can you sever the lifeline that connects one person to another? Why should we cut it?" When the baby sees it coming, he cries, thinking that he is about to die. But when God looks at this, does He laugh or cry? The situation is exactly the same in the world of air.

The spirit self is attached to the physical self like the embryo in the womb. When the physical body grows old and the spirit self tries to free itself by kicking the physical body away, the physical body may say, "Oh no, I won't die! I'm not dying!" When God looks at this, does He smile? Does He sympathize? Or does He say, "You foolish person!"?

When a baby is born into this physical world, he can become the object partner of love to his mother and father, and eventually become his parents' loving friend. Babies are born into this world on earth where they can share love with their mother and father. Likewise, you should be reborn into the spirit world where you can share love with God, who is the eternal Parent connected to the infinite spirit world. (116-174, 1982.1.1)

Those who breathe love on the earth are not dead but are alive. When a baby breathes in the womb, he lives attached to a cord that connects him to the future world of air. The baby lives through this umbilical cord, but when he destroys the placenta and comes out into the new, higher-dimensional world, how much does this change? His needs are supplied on a higher dimension. The baby comes out and receives a supply of air. After leaving the womb, how will the baby develop? Through love. He will receive elements of love. You should not just eat food. The bodily part of the self, which eats, is on the path towards death. This body that takes in water to live is already on its way to death. With what and for what purpose should you feed yourself during the period on earth? During this period, you should cultivate a character of love. (139-214, 1986.1.31)

When you come out from the womb to join the world of air, you destroy things from your life in the womb, such as the umbilical cord and the amniotic sac. The umbilical cord and the placenta are destroyed and die. What appears at the same moment as the death of these organs? A baby comes out into the universe, to the mother earth. From that moment, the baby lives by the supply of elements taken in through his mouth. (139-212, 1986.1.31)

Before transforming into a cicada, the larva would say, "I want to remain a larva. Oh, I don't want to take off my cocoon." But once it casts off its cocoon, it uses its wings and flies. Do you think the larva would want to discard its skin when it becomes a cicada? Wouldn't it say, "Oh, I hate it all, the land, air – everything"? Or, do you think it would say, "All right, get this skin off me"? It would not be thinking about flying. Dragonflies swim in the water during their larval stage, then come out onto the land and crawl around for a time. Then they fly freely to and fro. Many insects develop through three stages of life. Most insects have wings, don't they? As we have seen, insects live in the water, on land and in the air. As lords of creation, should we human beings just live on the earth? (116-176, 1982.1.1)

You may not welcome death, but once

all of you die and discard your flesh you can fly about freely. Would you object to this? This is the reality. You have to know that this is plain fact, not a lie. You should understand that human beings go through the same three stages of life and that death to us is the blessed gate to our second birth. (49-286, 1971.10.17)

Insects and birds know how to fly. Shouldn't a person also know how to fly? Even seeds fly when the wind blows. I am talking about dandelion seeds. They are designed to fly naturally. They are made to fly. In this way, birds, insects, and the seeds of plants fly. Shouldn't a human being, who is the lord of all creation, fly? Should we just sit still and wait for God? Wouldn't you want to protest and say, "Oh, God, everything else can fly; why didn't you give me the ability to fly?" Then God would say, "Whoa, wait a minute. After a few decades, you too will become like that, so just wait." Then you can say, "Oh! I see. That's the way it is." What shall you do until then? You should train while on earth so that you can adjust to the other world when you go there. Only when you can appreciate your mother and father can you find delight in God. Only when you like your spouse can you come to like God when you go to the next world. The physical world is the training ground for the spirit world. Can you receive what you desire without dying? Is it possible without dying? Is it possible without taking off this physical body? Do you or do you not need to discard this physical body? (116-176, 1982.1.1)

You have lived in a world of water and in the world of land, haven't you? So then, would you want to have the experience of living in the aerial world or not? When you were about to be born from the womb, did you think such things as, "I will go out to the world of land and eat honey, rice cakes, rice, beef, and everything else with this mouth?" Do you suppose you gave it any thought? You were breathing through the umbilical cord and thinking that you would die if you came out of the womb. If we reflect on life in the womb, how confining it would seem to be! If we think about it now, it seems stifling. Despite that, when a baby is about to come out from the womb, he or she inevitably protests, "Oh, I don't want to go out." Even though he says that he doesn't want to, when the time comes, everything comes bursting out. He comes out naturally along with the gush of the amniotic fluid. In this way, the baby is born through a safe and natural process. (49-286, 1971.10.17)

During our time on earth, we have "mother universe" or "mother creation." This is the land. The planet earth is the mother. She supplies you with elements, doesn't she? The earth is the mother that supplies you with elements on a different level from that of your own mother. When you grow in the mother's womb, how do you breathe in the womb? You breathe through an umbilical cord, don't you? This is your link to your mother's body. You should remember this.

When you leave your mother's womb, you know that you are connected to the

second realm, the world of air. When you come out of the womb after finishing life there, your old environment is destroyed. What do you connect to at the moment of your first cry? You come to be connected to the world of air, where you breathe air through your respiratory system. When you are connected to the world of air, your nostrils become the absolute supply line. (139-212, 1986.1.31)

Water symbolizes the age of the womb. Your nose symbolizes the age of air. After coming out of your mother's womb you live in the age of air. Afterwards, it becomes the age of the eyes, the age of the sun and the age of light. Love is also called light. It is said that love lights everything up, isn't it? It is the world of light.

Life goes through three periods. Even a dragonfly spends time in the water, on land and then, after discarding its shell, it flies about feeding on other bugs. It goes through three stages. It is the same with human beings, the lords of creation. After the age of the womb, when you emerge from your mother's womb, do you come out with your arms full of household goods or do you come out destroying and cutting everything away? It would cause serious trouble if you came out with even one item.

You used to eat and breathe through your umbilical cord. Wouldn't you expect to die if you cut it? Yet you need to cut it in order to come out of the mother's womb. You have to cut it ruthlessly. You have to destroy everything as you come out. (299-37, 1999.2.1)

What is the meaning of death? Living on earth in the environment of the air is like swimming around in the womb. We live within a wrapping cloth of air. Isn't that so? Then what is death? Death itself is nothing special; it is merely the rebirth into the third stage of life. That moment of transition is what we call death. If you look at it in this way, you feel better, don't you? (49-286, 1971.10.17)

What should our body be doing now? As you were "breathing" through the umbilical cord in the womb, you were also preparing the nostrils through which to breathe later. Then, when you burst out from the womb, you change the organ that you use and begin to breathe. Likewise, what you need after your birth is to experience love to the very core of your being. You need to breathe the air of love from your mother and father. You should go through everything in life while being supplied with the air of love.

Once you are born as a baby in a family, you go up along a growth curve and then you eventually age and fade away physically. After you are born as a baby, you grow, and then you eventually disintegrate. You are born as a baby and go back to being a baby again in the spirit world. When that happens, you should detach yourself from the world of the second womb and connect yourself to the realm where you can breathe elements of love in the third stage. You leave behind parents' love and siblings' love on earth and enter the world of love that is in total harmony with the Origi-

nal Being of the great cosmos, God.

The spirit world is made up of the air of love. It is filled with the air of love. Therefore, while you live in the earthly world, you should prepare a supply line in order to breathe love. Hence, you need experiences of the spirit world. You can be immortal only when you become a person who can feel spiritual love and breathe the air of love. (139-212, 1986.1.31)

We will all have to throw off our physical bodies someday and move on to the spirit world. So we, as human beings living on earth, should be prepared for death. We should work hard to form our good self, our second self that will be the one living in the eternal world.

We can only be born as a healthy and good baby if we receive good prenatal influence while inside our mother's womb. Our life on earth is similar to our life in the womb. Therefore, we should grow resembling God's image, His heart, and His divine nature. After we grow, we should put our life on the line and overcome all obstacles with our love. (14-17, 1964.4.19)

2.3. Death is a transition to a better world

When people look at things based on their own perspective, they seem to have hope, but still they lack the hope necessary to move them through the valley of death. People are passing away without having that kind of hope. Is our model of life one in which we have to die with lack of hope? Or will we search for a single hope through which we can scorn death and conquer it, and still live while enjoying that hope? This is a very important issue about which people who live on earth today have to think. (6-45, 1959.3.22)

Where are we ultimately destined to go? We will go to the spirit world. What does that mean? Usually it is taken to mean the world after death, but this is not accurate. Why should it not be regarded as the world after death? It is because the spirit world is directly related with love. Since that world is related with love, it is not actually the world after death. The spirit world begins based on true love. Thus, when we stand within the realm of true love, that very place is the spirit world. The spiritual and physical worlds – these two worlds – become one in love. That's why love is so magnificent. (144-199, 1986.4.24)

Your first parents are the parents who gave you birth. Your second parent is our planet Earth. Its soil supplies you with all the elements essential for your physical growth. The earth is the second parent of your physical body. After living with your second parent, your physical death provides the entrance to the eternal realm of the third parent. However, you cannot go to the third parent as you are. In order to return to the third parent you have to resemble God, who is the Original Parent. (138-98, 1986.1.19)

Have you ever once thought, "I will go this way even when I reach the age of seventy"? Have you ever thought, "I

will continue this way of life even when I turn eighty and am about to pass on"? Even when you die, you have to be able to present proof that you can do these things in the future, saying, "I have shed light on history in this way and have done these things in my life." You should not just say this with words. It should not be just words. After such a person dies, people should cling to him for this reason, saying with tears, "You lived the right way!" (73-114, 1974.8.16)

We should dedicate our course of life to the search for the infinite God of love. Even if we have to go through the valley of death ten or a hundred times, we should search for His love. The greatest path that we can take in our lives is to constantly seek that love, even in death. (39-210, 1971.1.10)

There is a goal that people must fulfill in their lifetime. They should live focusing on that goal for ten, twenty, thirty years, seventy years – and throughout their life. The larger the goal, the stronger they need to commit themselves internally. Unless they do that, they cannot reach that goal. People cannot fulfill their goals unless they maintain an even greater internal determination over the necessary time period. (31-149, 1971.5.24)

Where is the final destination of the mind? In other words, where is the final destination of our desires? It is where we can occupy God's love. Even if you have God in your possession, without capturing God's love, which is the most precious, God cannot be yours. Therefore, you should occupy God's love. If you occupy His love, then it is all right even if God isn't there.

When the things that belong to God become mine and the things that are mine become God's, the inside and outside can be united for the first time. That kind of nation will become the ideal homeland that has no upper and lower classes.

When you are in that state, all existing beings in the universe will appear to be good, and you will feel that they exist for your sake. If that is the realm of God's love, what kind of place is the spirit world, or heaven, to which all people alive today are to go? It is a place filled with love. (39-210, 1971.1.10)

Even I, the teacher of the Unification Church, will die, but against what background will that come to pass? I will embrace the people and country of Korea, and die for the sake of this world. If the Korean people unite and lay down their lives for the sake of the world, that will open the path of being able to live together with this world. That is why I seek that path. (34-192, 1970.9.6)

The formula course for eternal life is universal. It applies to grandfathers and grandmothers, as well as descendants thousands of years later, and even to those who are in the spirit world now. There is a gate that only those who lived for the sake of others can pass through, and you should know that there are gatekeepers there. Please understand well,

that whatever I ask of you is to help qualify you to pass through that gate. (203-193, 1990.6.24)

2.4. Death is an ascension (*seunghwa*) to a higher dimension

If human beings had not fallen, someone's passing would have been a happy occasion. That is why I have taught the Unification Church not to greet death in sorrow. Hence, we speak of death as *seunghwa* (ascension). (199-353, 1990.2.21)

None of you may like the idea of discarding your flesh and dying; but once you die and discard your flesh, you become a spirit person who can quickly fly away in order to pass through the blessed gates of the second birth. (297-261, 1998.12.19)

In the beginning, we are connected to the placenta and umbilical cord in our mother's womb. We are raised in this placenta which is wrapped around us like cloth. We are born by discarding and cutting away everything as we emerge from this cloth. In the same way, our physical body is like a cloth wrapped around our spirit self. Thus, we break out of it and fly away. Such being the case, we pass through the world of water, the world of land, and the aerial world of light to live ultimately in the eternal world of true love. (298-311, 1999.1.17)

In the Unification Church we do not hold funerals in the usual way after a person's death. Instead, we have a Seunghwa Ceremony. Is there anything to fear in this world? Is there anything to fear in the universe?

From this world of sin and chaos we have to take the form of an autonomous center, aligned with the standard of heaven and earth, and thus enter into an upright position within the realm of God's love. Why do we need to enter the vertical position? It is because it creates no shadow. Can a shadow be found in a vertical position? Everything is perfected. Consequently, as rotation takes place, everything in the environment will align vertically. (198-124, 1990.1.25)

On the day of your death, how to ascend and rise to heaven at a ninety-degree angle will be the challenge. You cannot reach heaven if you stand at a forty-five-degree angle. Only by ascending at a ninety-degree angle can you become the object partner of God's love. God's love goes the shortest distance. Thus, there is no way other than the ninety-degree angle. There is only the vertical way. (215-109, 1991.2.6)

A funeral in the Unification Church is called a Seunghwa Ceremony. The spirit of a dead person will lament if he sees people holding on to his dead body and crying. He will think, "The ignorance of these people is a rope that ties me down and prevents me from going on my way." Since we know these things, the Unification Church refers to death as *seunghwa*. *Seunghwa* means gloriously soaring to heaven. With the power of love you have to push the person along.

Do not hold him back, but push him. (199-130, 1990.2.16)

What is the Seunghwa Ceremony? It means to be transformed and go up to another stage. (196-55, 1989.12.24)

People today do not know what it means to die. It is not a sorrowful occasion. It is not a sad occasion. You should see it as a transition from a lower-dimensional world to a higher- dimensional world through the bridge of love. That is why the Unification Church refers to death as *seunghwa*. To die is to ascend to a higher dimension. This is only possible through love. (137-316, 1986.1.5)

For whom does God exist? God, the subject of love, exists for the purpose of seeking and raising a partner of love. With what shall He do this? He will do this based on true love. True love is living and investing oneself for the sake of others, and forgetting one's investment. Eternal life can be found here. The entire world is made this way. I myself am like this. As I know the value of eternal life, facing the gallows is not a problem. There is nothing to fear. That is why the Unification Church refers to death as *seunghwa* and its ceremony as the Seunghwa Ceremony.

Unification Church members live in communication with their spouses in the spirit world. That the world today is ignorant of the spirit world leaves me at a loss for words. Do you think spiritual life can be bought with money? (209-160, 1990.11.28)

The Seunghwa Ceremony began with the death of my son, Heung-jin. It was established at that time. At the hospital I had to remove his oxygen mask. I had to arrange the way for him to pass into the spirit world. By doing so, he was free from the fallen realm. That is why, when Heung-jin came down again in the spirit, he said that there was no way to repay me. He was the first from the True Parents' family to go to the spirit world as a young adult. Heung-jin went to the spirit world as the Messiah to the spirit world in the same position as the Second Coming. By uniting with him you can go to a high place in the spirit world. (225-136, 1992.1.5)

Our departure to the spirit world is not a sad occasion. Raise the flag of heaven amidst the trumpet call for liberation. Go on boldly, undefeated. Raise the flag signaling your glorious return home. This is the path that lets you proudly enter your original hometown where the nation and all of humanity will welcome you with cheers. It is not a sorrowful occasion. We do not shed tears on these occasions in the Unification Church. What do we call this? We call it the Seunghwa Ceremony. Heung-jin's ascension brought down the walls of death. That is why it is called the Seunghwa Ceremony. (227-260, 1992.2.17)

Death should not bring dejection or despair. It is not a plunge, but a leap. It is about ascending. For that reason, Unification Church members should not have any dread of death. Death comes

in accordance with the natural order of things. It is simply the process of transferring to a better world. (196-270, 1990.1.2)

Love has overcome all the realms of death. True love overcomes the realm of death! This is the principle of creation. That is why I declared the Day of Victory of Love. With Heung-jin's ascension to the spirit world, Satan has no basis of accusation towards any of the sons and daughters of the families of the Unification Church when they hold the Seunghwa Ceremony. Even when you board the boat that takes you to the other shore, all the righteous people in the spirit world will come out to welcome you. It is time to connect with that great, history-making revolutionary dimension. (242-278, 1993.1.2)

What is the meaning of the Day of Victory of Love? This is something you have to know. I did not shed even one tear from the time of Heung-jin's passing to when I sent him off to the spirit world. The realm of death had to be overcome. Without the declaration that love had overcome death, the Seunghwa Ceremony could not have been established.

The Seunghwa Ceremony began with Heung-jin, did it not? What is the meaning of "victory of love" in the Day of Victory of Love? It means victory over death. If it were any other person, the mother would be writhing in sorrow, crying and wailing from deep within. Yet Mother could not shed a tear. We had to do this ceremony within three days. I had to proclaim that death was overcome.

In this way, the Seunghwa Ceremony came to be held in the Unification Church. It is a ceremony of going beyond death and onward to joy. Those who go through the Seunghwa Ceremony can easily go beyond all the valleys in the spirit world. Of course, there will be some who fail to do so and remain in-between. You have to understand this. The Seunghwa Ceremony began with Heung-jin. (212-96, 1991.1.2)

We conduct the Seunghwa Ceremony in the Unification Church when a person passes on, don't we? It is the moment of springing up and moving on to a separate world. Therefore, you should shout with joy. The spirit world is visible to a person after he dies and arrives there. You are not going to a place where you cry, but you are moving toward a place of joy. We were ignorant of this fact because our eyes were completely blinded through the Fall. (255-294, 1994.3.11)

Dementia originates when someone's conscience becomes numbed to this world and focuses on the body. It arises when his conscience becomes paralyzed and communicates with the spirit persons in hell. Through good spirits you should let that person remember the ideal of heaven, so that you can gradually allow him to be purified and enable him to ascend to heaven. (258-136, 1994.3.17)

Everyone's birth, marriage and death are recorded in the family register, aren't

they? We also have to do the same, but we do not have God's nation. If we have a nation, we have to register our birth, marriage and ascension. When you die, all of you will enter the spirit world as Americans. The gatekeeper there will ask you, "Where did you come from?" You would answer, "I came from America." He will also ask, "Do you want to enter heaven?" When asked, "Where did you come from?" there will be no problem whatsoever in entering heaven if you can answer, "I came from the Kingdom of Heaven on earth where I was attending True Parents." This is a fact, not just a theory. (278-36, 1996.4.28)

2.5. Our attitude in the face of death

When people die, who do they first call upon? They call out to God. The ultimate reality is that people will seek God when they find themselves in the most difficult position. The way to forgiveness can be opened for those who sincerely call upon God at the time of death. Why is that so? It is because such is the way of death. If you can die keeping close to this principle, then the path to resurrection will be opened.

That is why when death comes to people, they all seek God saying, "O my God!" This is the truest of all lessons. When a person dies, he usually dies at least saying the right thing. When we observe this, we can see that the person was properly educated, though we may not know who taught him. Nothing truer than this can be said. (26-297, 1969.11.10)

We should form a four position foundation before we die. Those who die without establishing a four position foundation will not be able to walk the path of death properly. Thus, spirits come and go even after death. As you all know this principle, who will you hold on to when you die? First, you will hold on to God, then True Parents. As we are all born through God, we should also die through Him in order to live eternally with God in the spirit world. We were born through God; hence, we should bring our life to a conclusion through Him. Living by this principle is the way of filial piety and the path of loyalty.

We arrive at the conclusion that a person who fulfills his duty of filial piety and loyalty has fulfilled the responsibilities that he must carry out in the course of his life. You should live life in this way. (26-297, 1969.11.10)

What will you focus on at the time of your death? Will you die forgetting all about love or will you die embracing it? Whose love will you hold on to when you die? You must first hold on to parental love. Then you should hold on to the love between husband and wife, and then children's love. Death must also conform to the principle of the four position foundation. (26-297, 1969.11.10)

The question is, what will your last words to your children be? What will your last words be? Can you as a parent tell your children to do something that you yourself never practiced? The intentions of those parents would be

just to exploit their children. Therefore, if all of you first can practice what you believe in and tell your children before you die, "I lived this way without shame. You should also live like this," then God will protect your last words for eternity. Are you confident that you can leave such words behind to your descendants when you die? This is a serious matter. (26-300, 1969.11.10)

In general, people throughout history, when focusing on the eternal nature of life, have tended to think not only in terms of ten or a hundred years, but of thousands, tens of thousands, or hundreds of billions of years. Yet when a person dies, it's the same as when an animal dies; what use are the remains? Nowadays, even people who do not believe in God say, "Ah, I have to leave behind an honorable legacy," but what use is it to leave that behind?

Even if one became a patriot for America and was honored with a monument, that monument would be destroyed totally if America perished. Only the American people would know of you. It would not mean much to leave your name behind. Even if you accomplished that, as the ages of history rise and fall, a good name can be treated like a bad one. All rulers will die in less than a hundred years, and nations perish within several hundred or a few thousand years. What would you do if there were someone who would neither die nor perish for eternity? If there were such a person, you would want to bring your name and your legacy to him and leave it all behind with him. Have you ever thought about that? (103-16, 1979.1.28)

You should die within the realm of the Kingdom of Heaven. The heavenly kingdom is larger than any nation on earth, isn't it? You should die in the Kingdom of Heaven, which is only one in heaven and on earth. If so, where will you die? There is a place to die. You should not die in the ordinary Korean way. With the Korean way, no matter how many times you die, it has no meaning. You should die in the highest position centered on the nation of God's heart, which penetrates heaven and earth. You should die in the midst of the Kingdom of Heaven. The Kingdom of Heaven is the best place to die. When the entire world opposes you, what will you do? Should you run away? No. You should endure and die in circumstances that lead everyone in heaven and on earth to raise a flag and welcome you. (34-185, 1970.9.6)

As for the numerous people of faith who upheld and followed God's will, they did not retreat before the path of death. Rather, they scorned death and overcame it in a dignified manner. We know very well that throughout history such people exalted the way of heaven.

Each one of you has to maintain the hope that you will overcome death when you come face to face with it. You have to have the hope and desire to stand before heaven in a dignified way when you overcome this path. You have to be able to run with joy to the original world that you yearn for in your heart. You have to

realize that you can overcome death only when your heart is desperate, filled with the hope for God's ideal world. (6-53, 1959.3.22)

What kinds of people live with the hope of God? They are those who can cross joyfully over the valley of death that brings sorrow to humankind. Those are the people who hold on to the hope of God. Therefore, you should not become someone who, in the face of death, resents and laments over all the affairs of this world. Instead, you should become someone who can stand before Heaven with joy and be proud of the value of your death. We should know that God is looking for those sons and daughters of hope. God cannot help loving a person who feels the joy of Heaven in such a situation. He cannot help answering the cry of the group of people who cry out to Him from such a position. (6-54, 1959.3.22)

Whosoever loses his life for God's will shall preserve it, and whosoever tries to preserve his life will lose it. What is the meaning of those words? You have to die in the position that calls for you to die for God's will. Then what will happen when you die? You belong to yourself before death; you belong only to God after death. That is because we inherited the fallen lineage.

Accordingly, until we die, our life as a whole cannot be free from its ties to the satanic side. Our ties to God are established after death, however. Which is stronger, life or death? Is life stronger than death? Is death stronger than life? Death is stronger than life in the satanic world. Therefore, after you come to know God's will, when you face death you should not despise it. (34-47, 1970.8.29)

When Unification Church president, Eu Hyo-won, was about to depart from this world, I asked him, "You have followed this way since you met me, but how are you going to bring it to a conclusion?" Before he passed away, Rev. Eu said that he would never change for all eternity. It has to be that way. The satanic world must in any case die away. Without dying, it cannot be resurrected. Unless we pass through one age, we cannot welcome another. (34-47, 1970.8.29)

What is the meaning of death in the Bible? It does not mean the destruction of eternal life in God. It means killing the life that inherited the fallen lineage of the satanic world. Therefore, whoever is willing to die for God's will shall live. These words sound paradoxical, but we cannot achieve resurrection unless we live like that from the point of view of the Fall and restoration.

This is the normal logic of restoration. The biggest question, therefore, is whether we can offer our lives. How was it when I set out on this path? I reflected on whether I was ready to offer my life. (34-47, 1970.8.29)

What will you do with your life? You should leave behind a tomb made of love when you pass away. This is the conclusion. Let us leave behind a tomb of love! If you live in the middle of a tomb of love,

you will have no bitter regrets. Even if you have had enough of living in a place like a tomb, you will have no resentment if you live in love. Let us live and leave a tomb of love behind! Then, your life will be deemed a success for all eternity.

If you die after living like that, God will bless you and bring His sons and daughters to welcome you in the spirit world. If your hand never wore a ring, God will place a diamond of the Kingdom of Heaven on your finger. If you never wore good clothes, God will clothe you in the best garments of the royal family of the Kingdom of Heaven.

What will you leave behind from your life? A tomb of love. Please understand this and never forget it. Those who are determined to live like that, raise your hands. I see everyone's hands are up. May God's blessings be upon you all. (97-169, 1978.3.12)

2.6. The Blessing opens the path of eternal life

2.6.1. The importance of eternal life

Everyone wants to live his life in his own way. "Living" comes down to everyday life. "Lifetime" means your entire life. Furthermore, religious people use the words "eternal life." An eternal life is not just a lifetime, but a life that continues eternally. How you connect your life course to the eternal reality is important for your eternal life. This becomes your lifelong responsibility. (197-186, 1990.1.14)

How long do you think you will live? How long? Doesn't everyone think, "We might live until we are seventy or eighty years old?" Don't you think you may die before then? You are greedy. Even though you absolutely believe you will live until eighty or one hundred, you may die tomorrow – or even today. You may die while you are eating. Do you understand? Or you may take off your shoes and come into the house in the evening, go to bed, and then die during your sleep.

You all think, "Because I'm young, I can live another forty or fifty years." Don't you all have that kind of desire? Did God guarantee that for you? You should think that you could die soon, maybe within a year. You should prepare as if only such a time period remains. You must keep this in mind during your life. The shorter the time you may think you have, the happier you will be. The shorter the time you think you have, the less you have to lose. Preparation during this time represents building your home for your eternal life. (102-122, 1978.11.27)

When you go to bed in the evening after taking off your shoes, do you have confidence that you will be here to put them on again the next morning? No matter how busy you say you are, nothing in this world is more important than the matter of eternal life.

The reason we have people leaving our church is that they do not feel how serious it is for them to resolve the question of eternal life while they are in this world. (10-249, 1960.10.21)

If someone has confidence that a life of faith is not preparation for the present life, the physical life, but is preparation for life in the eternal world, then he will keep his life of faith even if he is left to himself. The more the days and years pass by – forty years, fifty years – and the closer the day of death comes, the more serious becomes the concept of eternal life. The older people become the more serious they become. The thought processes weaken as one grows older. However, when the concept of eternal life is involved, people become more serious.

Thus, in the future, only religious thinking can lead this world. How often we experience evil circumstances and chaos! If you can break through and overcome chaotic circumstances, and no matter where you are, keep to an absolute concept of eternal life despite experiencing all kinds of distracting situations, then nothing will be insurmountable for you. (230-22, 1992.4.15)

What kind of being did God create us to be? God made us the object of His love so that we could possess God's absolute and unique value. This is an amazing fact. How much value does a person's life have these days? How much money is a person worth? A human being's value cannot be expressed in monetary terms. The amazing fact is that God created man and woman as partners in love with such a precious value that they could not be exchanged even for the entire universe! That is astounding! (142-143, 1986.3.8)

We human beings resemble God as God's masterpiece of creation. Necessarily, we should have an eternal nature since God is an eternal being, and thus our mind should not become old. Therefore, we should live eternally. Only because we live eternally do we have value as that masterpiece. (159-281, 1968.5.19)

People, whoever they are, seek to become the best. When someone stands in the highest position, God belongs to him, and that person belongs to God. Thus, he becomes God's son and becomes like God himself. Then, to whom does the universe belong? If God has something that He loves the most and thinks is the most precious, would He have created it in such a way that He would throw it away after spending one day, ten years, or a hundred years with it? Or would He create it to be with Him eternally? He would create it to be with Him for eternity. So it is with humankind. When someone dies, would it be better for him to stay dead or live eternally? He should live eternally. Why? Human beings are the object partners of the absolute God, who created us with absolute love so that He could feel joy. (39-342, 1971.1.16)

If God is an eternal, absolute being, the object of His love should also live eternally. Consequently, human beings have longed for eternal life for time immemorial. God, the Absolute Being, cannot help looking for a loving son and daughter who possesses the value of having eternal life. This should be understood clearly. (39-343, 1971.1.16)

The more love people have for each other, the more they want to be together. Once there was a man whose wife died young, and who then remained single for the rest of his life, carrying her handkerchief. Nehru was this kind of person; having lost his wife when she was young, he wore roses on his clothes the rest of his life because his wife loved roses. When God created His most precious son and daughter, did He create them to perish after one hundred years? Therefore, we can understand the fundamental principle that human beings live eternally. (39-342, 1971.1.16)

Human beings are born from love, grow up in love, live with love and die with love. Yet they do not just disappear. God, who is the Subject, is eternal, unchanging, and unique. Hence, human beings can also live eternally when they can stand as objects of love before God. This is where eternal life originates from. It does not begin from life. (142-143, 1986.3.8)

Since God is eternal, absolute, and lives forever, when we say that human beings were created because of love, it is naturally logical that anyone who is united with true love can attain eternal life. Therefore, to attain eternal life, we should live in the realm of true love. (211-272, 1990.12.30)

We can live forever! We want to attain eternal life! We desire eternal life; so what is it that is unchanging? The answer is love. That's how it is. All other things change according to their environment, so why doesn't love change? Love does not change because it exists as the center of power for all life. Why doesn't love change? It is because love occupies the central position of the ideal environment. The center does not disappear until all the surroundings have disappeared. Love is the center of the universe. Since that love is united with God's love, anything that unites with that love can remain as long as God exists. (157-267, 1967.4.10)

Eternal life! We are people who live eternally. We are also the people who practice true love. We practice the way of eternal life and true love here on earth. Whatever we do here, such as working in a factory, can provide material for the broadening of our eternal life.

Please think that the purpose of your job is to train yourself for eternal life and to produce training material that can enhance your eternal life. All of you need eternal life and true love at all times. You will need these for eternity. (216-127, 1991.2.9)

The perfection of the body and mind is made possible fundamentally through that which belongs to true love. The infinite Original Cause created the growing process as a way that could lead to the bearing of ideal fruit through love alone. God exists forever because of, and rooted in, true love alone.

As a result of what can God exist forever? Eternal life is connected with love. Therefore, you need to live in an envi-

ronment of love in order to create an environment of eternal life. To attain the substantial realm of love, we must have a substantial experience of love. (218-134, 1991.7.14)

If someone asks you how to attain eternal life, how will you answer him? Can you attain eternal life just by believing in Jesus? Are you saved through your faith? It doesn't make any sense. Only through love can you be saved.

Looking from the viewpoint of the essence of God's principles of creation, only a true person is the partner of God's love. Therefore, if someone has true love he can live for eternity. Once you enter the realm of that love, whether you are in the spirit world or on earth, you will be able to see where you are going to live in the spirit world. (215-53, 1991.2.6)

2.6.2. The concept of eternal life originates in love

How can we describe God's attributes? They are mysterious. God is absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging. There is no way to deny this. A person with those qualities of love is an absolutely happy person, uniquely happy person, eternally happy person and unchangingly happy person. Eternal, absolute, unchanging and unique freedom; and ultimately, an absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal kind of happiness is found in such circumstances. By inheriting these attributes, eternal life automatically results. That is the way it is. (279-73, 1996.7.24)

If you have love you do not mind whether you eat or not. People in love do not get tired when they don't sleep, or hungry when they don't eat. People in love can overcome time and space. If God's partner of love were to come to Him, do you think God would sleep when night falls? He can transcend the night when His beloved partner appears. It is from here that the concept of eternal life originates. As long as the power of eternal love continues, you can live for eternity. The eternal life of joy is possible because love can overcome and absorb everything. (277-22, 1996.3.17)

If God is absolute love, we can logically conclude that if we become an absolute partner in relation to that love, and thereby become a unified being, we will live forever – as long as God exists eternally. Humankind has not known this. People have not been aware that we human beings are created as the object partner God absolutely needs. Were this not the case, it would be logical that God would live alone. (262-137, 1994.7.23)

God is the standard of absolute value. Centered on absolute love, the person who seeks God and absolute love can never deny the heavenly sovereignty as the partner. Even God, as the Absolute Being, cannot deny this. The position that we have attained with absoluteness cannot be denied. This is something that is firmly settled. This is why God's love is eternal. Since God is an eternal being, through forming a relationship of that kind of love, eternal life is established as

a realm of relationships that is naturally in accord with this. Thus, the way of life of the person of true love will remain forever on earth, in the physical world and in the spirit world. This cannot be denied. As there are no relationships of true love in the fallen world, people end up in hell. (272-63, 1995.8.30)

Love has an eternal quality within it. Partners of love are unwilling to separate. True love is eternal. The partners unceasingly resist being separated. For that reason, eternal life can be found in true love. Eternal life cannot be found where there is separation. This is why love is great. Love is unchanging and eternal. When we establish a blood relationship centering on true love, we will naturally live forever.

God is the subject of unchanging love. Love is united with God, the subject partner. Since God is unchanging and eternal, it is logical to conclude that God's object partner who unites with His love is also unchanging and eternal. (289-133, 1998.1.1)

If the parents infinitely invest and sacrifice for the sake of their children, as long as true love is behind this, the child will be infinitely grateful for that true love; and the parents compensate for their sacrifice by experiencing great joy. By developing the action of giving and receiving the power of sacrificial true love in this manner, we come into a relationship of eternal joy and peace from within the true family and the true world. The ideal world of eternal life manifests itself in these places. (288-199, 1997.11.28)

This universe grew in size from a small point in this way: through partners coming into existence, unceasing motion occurred and the universe came into existence. The universe has been engaged in endless motion by the power of inertia that transpires in the dimension of space.

In other words, centering on a model relationship of partners – for example in the solar system – the solar system would be created, then it would enter into maturity and engage in endless motion. In the same way, when Adam and Eve become one centering on and by the action of the love that completely lives for the other, they can engage in ceaseless motion.

Thus eternity and eternal life begin. Eternity cannot be found on a straight line. The realm of eternal life is not there. Eternity comes from rotation and revolution. For that reason, the phenomenon of historical development has gradually grown in scale through rotation. This rotation has only one center. (261-151, 1994.6.9)

That which harmonizes with the origin of the great principles of the universe can exist for eternity. Anything else will perish. Since God exists forever, His object partner that lives for others exists eternally. By logic, we naturally come to this conclusion with regard to the principles of eternal life. Is that clear? (260-254, 1994.5.19)

The entity we call "myself" was created to be an object partner of God's love. We are in the position of object partner to the absolute God who stands as the subject partner. We are partners to God in love. God values the concept of true love more than He values His own being.

God is the center of absolute and eternal life. Therefore, God's ideal is more profoundly eternal, and the center of that ideal is the reality of true love. We are the partners in that love. How do we enter that eternal realm? How precious the position of God's eternal partner is! It is where the subject partner and object partner become one. When that happens, we can be located anywhere, and follow God wherever He goes. We can inherit God's entire fortune. We can inherit the realm of God's eternal life, and even His Heart.

God's heart of love, God's heart that belongs with creation, God's heart of wanting to reside in the heart of every single person – we can inherit all of these things. How precious this is! How joyful it is to discover that great value! It is a most sublime and noble position that nothing can rival. It is an amazing grace. (216-115, 1991.3.9)

When the atmospheric pressure falls to an absolute low, a high pressure area is immediately created and this automatically brings about circulatory movement. God is the King of true wisdom. Why should one invest everything and then give it no further thought? It is because the principle of circulation guarantees eternal reciprocation. The theory of eternal life is thereby logically established.

When you invest, invest again and invest still more; the theory of eternal life will operate. When you live for others you will not perish. The small things go to the bigger things and the bigger things go back into the center. (204-107, 1990.7.1)

When God looks for a partner of absolute love, whom does He seek? We can conclude with certainty that He seeks a human being. Therefore we find the old proverb, "Amongst all creation, human beings are most precious." What does this mean? We can reach the logical conclusion that humankind can be the partner of the Creator's eternal love, and it is natural that the partner who is one with God's love will live forever.

Eternal life is a natural implication of this logic. Eternal life begins from here. The question of how to establish a rational argument for eternal life based on the relationship of love is an extremely precious one in religion. Eternal life cannot be found in only man or only woman. It cannot be found in God alone. We can conclude that eternal life lies within God's love. (218-211, 1991.7.29)

Now you can stand in the same position as God, to the extent that you can even participate in the realm of eternal true love. Search where you will, you will not find this concept of eternal life anywhere else. Since you were born as an eternal being, you pass on to the spirit

world after this life. You will make an amazing leap in one second. The spirit world is a dimension different from this limited earthly world. You cannot move freely within restricted confines. The spirit world is a higher-dimensional place, so you can do anything there. You can jump beyond time. If you have a desire for something centering on true love, you can obtain it anytime, anywhere. This is on an infinite scale. (216-115, 1991.3.9)

I live for eternity; I am connected to true love centered on God; I am connected to true life centered on God; I am connected to the true lineage centered on God. The conclusion is clear. I live for eternity centering on true love, like God. God created me this way. If you come to fulfill this portion of responsibility, you will be truly successful. (216-115, 1991.3.9)

Even God breathes. He breathes with love. Since God also keeps in time with the universe, the universe can continue for eternity centering on love. Eternal life can be found in love. Consequently, all of you should attain it. Only then can you enter into the realm of God's breath and quickly achieve harmony. (201-191, 1990.4.1)

If you begin with the reasoning that God's providence is living and moving in history on earth, and that its purpose is to pave the way for eternity, then you can understand that this process is facilitated through religious faith. Otherwise, the foundation for getting this on solid ground, the foundation to impart faith on earth, will be frustrated. By clearly pointing out the limitations of the age, one can establish a solid groundswell of faith.

As I cooperate with God's work on earth, the spirit world that has fulfilled God's will can relate to our actual life today, enabling us to grasp the concept of living eternally with God. Therefore, the purpose of this earthly life is for us to prepare for the eternal life to which it is directly connected. People cannot lead an authentic life of faith without understanding this reality. (198-7, 1990.1.20)

2.6.3. Blessing and eternal life

Fallen people must change their lineage. This is a fundamental issue. The relationship of God and humankind is that of parent and children. Since all these facts have remained unknown, the problems of history could not be resolved, and to this day people have been ignorant of God's providence. The change of lineage must be carried out within all the realms: the individual, family, people, nation and world. The Messiah must come and do this. Without the Parent, the lineage cannot be changed.

An individual has to take responsibility for all these problems. That individual should continue to move forward by solving these things. Since people are ignorant of this, the Messiah, who knows these things, comes and does all this for them. (161-147, 1987.1.18)

All of you must inherit a new lineage. In order for you to do that, the Messiah comes as the Father. He, together with Eve, should restore this new lineage through indemnity on the victorious individual foundation that goes beyond the world, where Satan cannot intervene. He will establish sons and daughters through families centering on marriage, and horizontally carry out the task of engrafting.

That is the reason for having the Blessing Ceremony in the Unification Church. The Unification Church is unique. Where did the lineage of the Unification Church originate? It originated from God. That is why we dare the satanic world to oppose us. When they oppose us they have to pay compensation for the damages they incur. (169-37, 1987.10.4)

Because they received Satan's lineage, human beings cannot go back to God by themselves. The Messiah must absolutely restore and purify the lineage which Satan contaminated. He has to change this lineage. That is why the Messiah must come. Unless the Messiah comes, the lineage cannot be restored. The lineage must be restored. (172-53, 1988.1.7)

What will we see in the age of the Last Days? People will have sexual relationships with others of the same family. Incest will be rampant. It will be the same amongst family and relatives. Why will it be like this? Who was Jesus' father? It was Zachariah. Christianity speaks of Jesus' conception through the Holy Spirit, but that is an incomplete understanding. Do you know what an unfertilized egg is? What is an unfertilized egg? Like a hen's egg, the seed did not enter that egg. Fallen people today can be likened to unfertilized eggs. They have nothing to do with God. That is why they do not have eternal life. (274-256, 1995.11.3)

What is the mission of the True Parents? They must correct the false lineage which is the root of the satanic world, restore the false life to true life, and put right the false way of love. The Bible tells us that whosoever loses his life will preserve it, and whosoever tries to preserve his life will lose it. Why did such a paradoxical statement have to appear? It is because the satanic world must die. (169-37, 1987.10.4)

Who is going to change the lineage? Not just anyone can do that. You have to know that I walked the way of the tearful cross in order to do this work. It is because of this standard of heart that you, without having merit, can inherit the new tradition of the Blessing.

God had to labor for thousands of years, and as the substantial manifestation of God, I had to go through a life of suffering in order to establish the victorious authority based on the transition of lineage. All of you now stand on the foundation of these efforts. The Blessing means engrafting to God's lineage. Through the process of engrafting the lineage is changed. (35-178, 1970.10.13)

Thus, only when the vertical Parent

and the horizontal parents harmoniously join together centered on true love can this a place of convergence of firmly established love become the origin of life and the connection to the lineage. People born from that place are sons and daughters born in God's love and beings who can live for eternity with God's lineage. In this way, they become a royal family that can maintain the lineage for the future generations in the eternal Kingdom of Heaven. (245-94, 1993.2.28)

When you live together in love you can connect to eternal life. True love is the love desired by God. As God is absolute, unchanging and eternal, we come to the conclusion that human beings who are the objects of God's love, also live forever. This is a logical conclusion. There is no room for doubt at all. (247-223, 1993.5.9)

Didn't you all attend the ceremony for changing the lineage at the time you received the Blessing? You have to believe in this more than in your own life. Even though this is a ceremony of the Unification Church, you should not think of it as a religious ceremony. It is an injection to raise you from the dead. It is the antidote. (216-109, 1991.3.9)

The Messiah may be the one who changes the lineage, but it is the individual who has to take action so that his or her lineage can be changed. Without establishing such a standard you cannot reach the path to salvation. This is not easy to achieve. You have to go beyond the point of not knowing whether you will live or die. Changing the lineage is only possible when, for example, you do a forty-day fast or pass through a state of near death where you spew blood. (35-160, 1970.10.13)

First, you should genuinely yearn for the Parents with all your heart. You will not receive salvation unless you attend the Parents with the attitude that they are the source of your life, the entirety of your hope, and the origin of all your ideals and happiness.

Have you ever offered attendance like that? You should clearly understand this. Therefore, you should have the firm conviction that you are the sons and daughters who can eternally unite with True Parents, to the extent that it surpasses the awareness of your very existence. You must have that kind of conviction. (30-237, 1970.3.23)

The Fall was in fact an erroneous marriage in the Garden of Eden. Now this can be reversed by having the True Parents conduct a proper marriage. By clearing away the mistakes committed by the false parent, the True Parent can abolish hell and give the Blessing of marriage even to the hundreds of billions of ancestors in the spirit world. Through the family foundation of their descendants on this earth centered on true love, the ancestors in the spirit world and their descendants on earth can vertically unite as one; and furthermore, with this family foundation as a starting point, east and west can be

connected. (300-222, 1999.3.14)

How much should you love me? This goes back to the fundamental problem. You should not love in a position that has traces of the satanic world and that is tainted with the love of that world. You should be in a higher position. What position is that? You should love me more than you love your parents, spouse and children born in the satanic world.

That is why in the Bible Jesus says, "Anyone who loves his father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; anyone who loves his son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me." He reached this clear conclusion for everyone. Later, he also says, "Take your cross and follow me." He asks you to take up your own cross. Taking up the cross means overcoming the power which pulls you in the opposite direction is taking up the cross. You should shed bitter tears over this. (178-97, 1988.6.1)

When you go to the spirit world it will be like this: it will be a place with no shadows, a place overflowing with light from the eternal morning. The white light becomes so bright that it changes to a purple light. It changes to silver and golden hues. The light of electricity is the light of love. Lightning flashes when the positive electricity comes together with the negative electricity. In the same way, God's inner nature and external form come together and manifest like lightning. Lightning is the light of the eternal true love. That is the essence of eternal life. You have to reach that final destination. (292-265, 1998.4.26)

Section 3. The Value of Our Earthly Life

3.1. Earth is the place of harvesting the fruits of love

Earthly life is absolutely important. You have to know how important this earth is. Christians think they can all go to heaven by abandoning this world, don't they? This belief is a delusion. You should perfect yourself while on earth. You have to know the value of earthly life. Open your eyes to the importance of earthly life and never forget it. Your earthly life will be reflected in the eternal spirit world at all times. Everything you do is a seed. The seeds you plant here will bear fruit in the spirit world. Thus, you have to sow perfect seeds. Once again: you have to realize the importance of earthly life. (232-322, 1992.7.10)

People on earth have a body, and everything in their lives is limited. Spirits do not have a physical body and live in the infinite world. People on this earth have a body but it is not their eternal dwelling place. Spirits do not have a physical body but they are positioned in their eternal dwelling place. In this way, an infinite number of points of contrast can be found in comparing earthly people and spirits.

When we observe the corresponding aspects of earthly people and spirits, we see that life on earth and the life of

those in the spirit world each represent one half of the whole reality. Thus, each side can only fulfill that half. Then, how can the body and spirit each bear fully ripe fruit? Ripe fruit can be produced by successfully concluding life on earth before the physical and spiritual selves separate. Problems arise when a spirit self comes to the spirit world without being fully mature. (293-256, 1998.6.1)

The seeds of a fruit should assimilate and condense all the aspects of time and space connected with its growth. The seed, root, branch and fruit can all be found in the seed. The flower and fruit are also included. Thus, we should become people who can begin life in this way. Only then can we say that God is ours centering on love. No one could object to this. (137-330, 1986.1.5)

What is the purpose of life? It is to bear the fruit of love. When the fruits of someone's love go into the warehouse of the Kingdom of Heaven, should God say, "No, I don't like this!"? Wherever it goes, the fruit of love says, "Oh, it is okay to place me anywhere in this universe." How valuable it is to know that this fruit of love can stand in the center of everything around it, even if it is placed in the secret warehouse of the Kingdom of Heaven! Since it was sown in love, shouldn't it be harvested in love? (139-219, 1986.1.31)

Why are you valuable? You are valuable because you inherited the tradition of love. Love is precious, and you are valuable because you stand at the core of the universe in a position to inherit the tradition of the core of all the ideal forces in this universe. You are valuable because you were born through and connected to that love, and because you can bear the fruit that expands from that love. Do you know why you have to respect your parents, and why you have to be devoted to your parents? Your roots should be deep. I am talking about the vertical roots. (166-217, 1987.6.7)

The mind and body of a man and woman centering on God's love should meet the vertical at a ninety-degree angle, in a balanced way. When a man and woman emerge and polarize to the east and west as living beings rooted in God's love, it stimulates the original nature of the universe to ignite, spawning thunder and lightning. When that happens, God, man and woman are brought together in complete oneness. Who will break them apart? Can the man break them apart? Can the woman break them apart? Even God cannot extract Himself from this.

This love, which is the love that becomes the root of the mind of man and woman, is the standard of the original nature of humanity. The flower blooms and bears fruit through love. Through the ideal of the laws of spherical circulation, love develops in the shape of a spiral and extends to the world. Amen! Try studying to discover what all this means. (173-109, 1988.2.7)

How do you transmit life? Is it

through a living body or through blood? We know of the term "lineage," but there is no such thing as a "life lineage" or "love lineage." There is only "lineage." Through combining the blood, life emerges. By bringing together the blood of a man and a woman, two lives are combined. Then, when each life is invested, it bears fruit as the substance of love.

Then what happens? The blood and life of your mother and the blood and life of your father bear fruit through love, which manifests as you. I ask you here, are the blood of your parents inside you or not? The life of your mother and father is inside you. The love of your parents is inside you. Therefore, you can assert nothing about yourself that is separate from your mother and father. (225-52, 1992.1.2)

You are the fruit of love. All the characteristic elements of the central root, trunk, branch, flower and bud that have evolved throughout a thousand-year history are embodied within you, who are its fruit. When you as that fruit go forward, it is as if you were carrying history with you. Wherever you plant that fruit, history can continue to develop. What makes this possible? This is possible through love. It is connected through the love between man and woman, the love between the subject partner and object partner. Consequently, he who violates this love should go to hell, as he is the most licentious person, the person who destroys the order of the universe. (226-53, 1992.2.1)

The love in the relationship between parent and child ripens the fruit of the mother's love toward her son and the son's love toward his mother. When these two types of love ripen, God will want to pick this fruit. The owner of love is God, and He, therefore, works to see the fruit of the mother's love for her child and the child's love for her mother fully ripen.

Does God pick that perfected fruit just to eat it? Or does He gather it in order to perfect love further? After God created Adam and Eve, then as a Parent, He wanted to obtain the fruit of love that is children and at the same time let His children obtain the fruit of love that is the Parent. God wanted to perfect both of those fruits. Therefore, we can say that God wanted to harvest and enjoy both fruits through this process. (222-309, 1991.11.6)

We are born and live in God's love, give birth to children, thus arriving at the destination of love, and then return to God to live with Him for eternity. In other words, our life begins in love, ripens in love and is harvested as the fruit of love. Our passing away signifies the harvesting of this fruit of love.

Because we receive parental love, share the love of husband and wife, and love our children, everything that God's love has sown in the internal realm of heart can bear fruit in our lifetime and be harvested as we pass into the spirit world. Therefore, when people completely unite in love they come to resemble God. When a couple unites and

completely fulfills these three stages and goes to the spirit world, they become an eternal object in front of God, who is the eternal Subject. This is achieved when a couple passes into the spirit world after practicing true love. Thus, we begin our life with God and end our life with God. (298-311, 1999.1.17)

If the fruit of love had been harvested and stored in a warehouse, heaven would have been established. A family, nation and people of heaven would have emerged. Yet midway, this fruit was invaded, fell to the ground and became completely bad; thus was created a family of hell and people of hell. This incident is called the Fall. Human beings fell and now live in hell. Though they hate to admit it, they should acknowledge these two facts. People were supposed to bear the fruit of love and go to the warehouse of the Kingdom of Heaven. Instead, however, they are rotting in the warehouse of hell because of the Fall. (282-15, 1997.2.16)

Children, siblings, couples and parents all come together at one point and bear fruit. The fulfillment of this is determined on the basis of true love. The hearts of the child, sibling, husband, wife and parent are connected through true love. True love is the focal point. The spirit and body can be perfected by uniting with God in love. From here, parents come forth and give birth to children. God gave us children as a gift so that we could feel what He felt at the time of creation. (244-310, 1993.3.1)

The spirit world is a warehouse in which the fruits of true love are to be stored. These fruits have never been produced to this day. I am talking about the term true love and its fruit for the first time, so they cannot be found in the spirit world yet. How great each one of you is! (245-172, 1993.3.7)

The woman, not the man, touches every nook and cranny in the home. Men stand at the center and do not touch anything. But women touch everything. What does this mean? It means loving the earth and loving the universe. The more she lays her hands on things, the more love permeates these things and the more they become the focal point of the core essence of the universe. The husband then replenishes the woman's strength by showing her absolute love. Only such a family can enter into God's warehouse in heaven. What is the warehouse of heaven? Heaven is the warehouse where God stores the fully ripened fruit. (244-120, 1993.2.1)

There is a seasonal cycle with love. There can only be proper balance if there are four seasons. If the heat is extended, the cold is also extended. Consequently, when living together as a couple in love, there is autumn, summer, spring, and what else? There would be a winter season. Only when you digest all these can you lift up your face when you go to the spirit world. (223-180, 1991.11.10)

The father should not be ashamed to call the grandfather "father." The

father should not be ashamed of calling to his child, "Hey, so-and-so!" And the son should not be ashamed of calling his father and grandfather. What should they be focused on to be beyond shame? Just because the father is unable to make money and is dependant on the grandfather doesn't mean he has failed his responsibility.

You cannot reproach the father for not making money or not having knowledge. Why not? The reason is because blood relations, love, and life are not transmitted through knowledge, money or power. Through what are they transmitted then? They are transmitted through love! The fruit is produced through love. The fruit of life is produced through that love and the lineage is connected through that love. It is not through money. (213-190, 1991.1.20)

Why did God create heaven and earth? When we think about the central focus of the relationships among God, humankind, and the created world, we can see that the motivation was not to obtain knowledge, power or money. These relationships were established for the sake of the bonds of love.

Consequently, all of you were born for the sake of love. You were born because of love, you live centering on love, and you go on to the world in which love bears fruit – the world of the fruit of love. What kind of place is the world of the fruits of love? It is the spirit world. That is the place where we are all destined to dwell – the place where the fruits of love are harvested. The spirit world is a place where you are evaluated based on the results of love from your life. Then, who is the owner who evaluates this? That owner is God. (214-8, 1991.2.1)

You have to become the seeds of love. That is the conclusion. When you become the seeds of true love, then through religion you can enter the realm of oneness in the future historical age. Do you understand? Seeds. Do seeds have a root or not? Do they have a trunk? Do they have a branch? Do they have a flower? Do they have a fragrance? Do they have nectar? Do they have fruit? Do they have life? They have everything.

So, have you all become seeds? Look at the present day. In terms of climate, the ancient times belonged to the tropical regions and the medieval times belonged to the civilizations within the temperate zone. At one time, the north wind from Siberia…. When this phenomenon is applied to human life, it takes one rotation through the four seasons that lasts for sixty to seventy years. This present period is a time for enriching the world. (182-90, 1988.10.14)

How great are human beings? They conduct an orchestra of love. The fact that human beings eat from the animal and plant worlds, where love sustains the entire universe through the vitality of life, means that they live off the fruit of love. They live off the fruit. Even if there is just one piece of bread remaining in the cafeteria when you eat, you should think, "This bread went through countless hands throughout the world, many

means of transportation, and prevailed over great hardships to get here. This bread has been made and given to me as the fruit of the efforts of many people, as the fruit of their love. As the owner of love, I shall eat it thinking of the value of my partners."

However, those who are in discord with this are bound to fall ill. Those who are peaceful with it will be sure to resist any illness. Those spiritual masters who eat the fruit of the world that is filled with love are just human beings! What do you think? Those who can love with the idea of digesting and eating the fruit of love, and do so with gratitude in unity with God's essential love, will not fall ill. This is our logical conclusion. (217-307, 1991.6.12)

3.2. The people of heaven are created on the earth

Planet earth is the production line for creating the people of the Kingdom of Heaven. People are not produced in the spirit world. They come from the earth. God created the earth that we live on as the factory to produce His people. Then why did God divide Adam and Eve into male and female form only to see this followed by the Fall that degenerated to our present form and circumstances? The basis for reproduction cannot be found in God alone for He is vertically positioned and without physical form. (201-44, 1990.2.28)

Why did God create human beings? He needed a horizontal base in dimensional space. Countless cells can divide and emerge from this dimensional and spherical space. Therefore, God needed space because He wanted to produce the people of the Kingdom of Heaven through the bodies of Adam and Eve in the human world. Our married life becomes the factory for producing those people. People have been talking loudly without knowing these things. What kind of pretence is that? They are completely blind, yet still boast and brag about themselves. In the spirit world, such things will be exposed at once. The teachings I have given will unfold in the spirit world as a reality. (233-89, 1992.7.30)

Why did God create Adam and Eve as physical beings? The spirit world is a world of vertical relationships. It does not have horizontal dimensional space. There is no reproduction in the spirit world.

Heaven is a boundless place. After creating heaven, God planned to have Adam and Eve's family and the families of their descendants serve as the base for producing the people of heaven. The reason God needed Adam and Eve to have physical bodies is because God's direct sons and daughters occupy only one point on the vertical axis and thus have no dimensions in space. There is no base to reproduce. However, when all creation is divided and rotates centering on the vertical axis in relation to east and west and front and back, it then assumes a spherical shape and becomes the infinite universe with infinite space.

God created Adam and Eve as the

factory for creating people to fill the Kingdom of Heaven based on the families that are descended from Adam and Eve. Your families are the branch factories for creating the people of the Kingdom of Heaven. Adam and Eve are the main factory. The product is still the same whether it is from the main factory or the branch factory. Its value is the same. (262-229, 1994.7.23)

The spirit world is the vast Kingdom of Heaven. It is the original homeland and the original palace in which we shall live. God created a vast world, but He does not give birth to His children there.

The rotation of front-back and left-right around the vertical axis forms a spherical shape that is infinitely large. The space of the universe was created in this way. Because this space is enormous, countless people can be produced and move on to the spirit world. The branch factories producing the people of the Kingdom of Heaven are your families. (261-220, 1994.6.19)

People cannot be produced in the spirit world. Because God cannot reproduce from a vertical position, the earth is the production center for the people of heaven. This is why God needs to have dimensional space. God created Adam and Eve as physical entities in order to multiply people of His nation. They are the sons and daughters of the Kingdom of Heaven. When the third and fourth sons belonging to the peripheral ancestry of the second son follow him, they become the people of the Kingdom of Heaven. The descendants of the first son in each generation, the direct lineage, will inherit the kingship of the earthly and heavenly worlds. (229-349, 1992.4.13)

This universe is a museum of love. Human beings must become the owners of this museum. The mineral world and plant world multiply centering on relationships of love. Without love, history would end. History can continue because there is reproduction. Consequently, man and woman should marry and give birth to children. Without doing so, they cannot find their place in the spirit world. When a baby is born, you should come before God and offer that baby as a gift to Him. Without this gift, you cannot hold your head up proudly.

When you go back to your hometown, what is it you will be most proud of and want to show your parents? You will take pride in how well you raised your children. It is the same in the spirit world. When you go before God, there is no greater gift than bringing God's children, the people of heaven, whom you have raised on this earth. Money, power, and knowledge are not important. (229-15, 1992.4.9)

This earth is the endless producer of the people of heaven. No one has known this. The life course of the original couple living on the earth is one in which they give birth to children as the people of the Kingdom of Heaven, and raise them to become perfected people. Therefore,

when a baby is born, you offer the gift to God when you go to Him. Without this gift, you cannot be proud.

When you go back to your hometown, what is it you will be most proud of and want to show your parents? You will take pride in how well you raised your children. It is the same in the spirit world. When you go before God, there is no greater gift than bringing God's children, the people of heaven, whom you have raised on this earth. Money, power, and knowledge are not important. (229-15, 1992.4.9)

The earth is a production center where the royal descendants, the people of the Kingdom of Heaven, are created. The heavenly kingdom is an infinite world. Those who give birth to many children on earth, who are trained to love in an environment filled with diversity, and who have digested and united through love with people of all types of character – symbolizing north, south, east, west, front, back, left, right, top, and bottom – will have a wider scope of activity in the spirit world. (209-99, 1990.11.27)

Why did God create human beings? You will not find a production center in the spirit world. God created human beings because there is no reproduction of His image from the vertical dimension alone. The vertical position stands only on a single point. As God loves from one point, from a vertical position, He cannot multiply. There is no multiplication in the spirit world. Therefore, God needs to have the 360 degrees afforded by a position in the horizontal world. There are plenty of places to reproduce in the horizontal world, in the north, south, east, and west.

Therefore, when women and men go to the spirit world, they become one body and come to resemble God. Later on, they become God-like. You should resemble God. We say that God has dual characteristics. God's dual characteristics began from love. Through love coming to fruition, we resemble the original God and go back to Him. This is all due to the fact that even God is lonely when He is all alone by Himself. (206-137, 1990.10.3)

Can we give birth to babies in the spirit world? The answer is "No." Why can we not give birth to babies there? The spirit world is a vertical world. It is a world in the form of a circle, with God as its center. Therefore, there is no need to give birth to children there. God created the physical body of human beings because He needed a horizontal base.

Then why do people practice birth control? They do so based on a command from Heaven that states that the evil lineage should no longer be multiplied. Think about it. I am sure there are many people these days who do not know who the father of their baby is. Everyday, every week, women are meeting different men. When I think about it, I cannot even begin to describe how confused this is. Think about the consequences of those people having children. For this reason, those people practice birth control. (205-97, 1990.7.7)

What is the unique value of this earth? There is no multiplication in the spirit world. Go and see for yourself. You will find no multiplication. If you go to the spirit world without children, you cannot have any children there either. You have to bear children on earth first, and then go to the spirit world. Only then, can you join the realm of heart which represents the ideal of creation based on God's heart and live experiencing the stimulation of love. This is why you must have children before going to the spirit world. You must also love your spouse before passing on to the spirit world. Marriage is absolute and the mandate to produce children is an absolute rule. (264-150, 1994.10.9)

What is important for us to know about the spirit world? You cannot reproduce in the spirit world. The earth produces the people who will live in the spirit world. Why is this so? God exists as a vertical being. Anything vertical gathers only to one point. It does not create a plane. In order to manifest the value of its vertical existence, it must connect to the horizontal. The vertical needs the horizontal. The horizontal needs the vertical. This is also based on the principle of living for the sake of others.

Why does the vertical exist? It exists for the sake of the horizontal. From the outset, this was the ideal of creation. The vertical was created for the sake of the horizontal partner. Only by establishing this logic can we avoid logical contradictions within the system of relationships. (252-114, 1993.11.14)

Human reproduction is not possible in the spirit world. Reproduction can occur only on a horizontal base. Consequently, the numerous horizontal physical bases are being expanded to form various tribes, races, and nations in order to fill the vast, infinite spirit world. It cannot be considered full with just one or two people. Therefore, the countless people produced from the expansion of the worldwide horizontal foundation of families must be perfected on the earth. Heaven is the hometown to which we return after life on earth. Those who have achieved perfection as an individual and have established a perfected family, tribe, nation, and world of God's desire – those who have lived as God's kin from all over the world – create Heaven. Since they came from God, they return to His side. That is the how the spirit world is. (245-188, 1993.3.7)

3.3. Ownership in the spirit world is decided on earth

Why did God create? His purpose in creation was to have His living children on earth. If you leave such children behind on earth, you can stand in the same position as God when you go before Him in the spirit world. This indeed is the meaning of the biblical passage, "Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the earth." What are you trying to leave behind? Nothing else remains besides living with your spouse in joy and having children. (146-223, 1986.7.1)

What have you done since you joined

the Unification Church? This is a serious question. Now that you are past the age of fifty, how many years have you worked for the Unification Church? How many people have you witnessed to? How many did you witness to in a year? This is a serious matter. When you go to the spirit world, your realm of ownership will be set according to how many people you have brought to God's Kingdom. They will be your eternal fortune. The time has come to inquire into these things. The time will surely come when millions of people will be witnessed to in a day.

The Unification Church has tremendous substance. Look at the world. How many people are restlessly wandering around half-crazy, agonizing over whether to live or die, questioning life, and committing suicide? (218-227, 1991.8.19)

Once a person goes into the spirit world, the bigger his bosom of love is, the more people will line up to enter it. This person will be respected in the spirit world. If thousands and tens of thousands of people surround this person, saying, "Oh, I would like to live with this person," he will be wealthy and will have much more territory. Therefore, while on earth, when you reach the gates of someone's house you should not just pass by without paying a visit. A person who has nurtured many hearts with love cannot simply pass by, but instead is compelled to stop. This person becomes the model standard for human character in the spirit world. The realm within which this person relates based on love will become the realm of his ownership in the next world. (205-347, 1990.10.2)

There is nothing peculiar about wealthy people in the next world. Those who invested greatly for love are rich. In Seoul, there are twelve million people waiting to receive blessings from you. What would stop you from associating with them? You have to visit them, saying that you will pray for them to receive blessings. When dogs bark at you, you should think, "You are dogs who do not know how to receive blessings. I carry a bag of blessings for your house. I am a magnet. I am a perfect plus that attracts all the blessings. I will pull away all the minus elements and leave behind only the plus elements of Satan – those truly on Satan's side." Since these plus elements belong only to the satanic sphere, they will fall away to hell. This is how you should look at it. You are going around collecting blessings. (205-347, 1990.10.2)

In order to pass through the twelve gates in the spirit world, you will be asked how many people on this earth have you restored and retrieved from the satanic dominion to become citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven. You have to shed tears, sweat, and blood to do this. Based on a heart of true love for re-creation, you have to invest yourself more than parents do in the satanic world – more than husband, wife, and children – and go through the course where your tears, sweat, and blood intersect. Without doing so, you cannot claim your people in the Kingdom of Heaven. You

should be aware that your position of glory in the spirit world and the degree to which you will be close to God will be determined in proportion to this result. (211-352, 1991.1.1)

When you go to the spirit world in the future, you will not be going there with money. You do not go there in the name of the Unification Church either. Even your position as a regional director does not matter. What you should do from now on is to see how many sons and daughters loved by God you can create before you go there.

People can give birth to a limited number of babies. Everyone can do this. What do you have to accomplish in the process of restoration at this time? If you create many sons and daughters whom God can love in the satanic world, this accomplishment connects with your ancestors and opens the way to liberate them. This is the greatest gift you can receive in the course of restoration. Do you understand what I am telling you? It is a gift. (230-25, 1992.4.15)

Just eating, living, and raising sons and daughters does not count for much once you are in the spirit world. We have to find the people of the Kingdom of Heaven. They will come into your possession in that kingdom.

We quickly have to assimilate the five billion people of this world. If we can do this, all the spirits in the spirit world will be restored through returning resurrection. If the right of the firstborn son, which became the satanic foundation, is restored and Adam gains that birthright, the archangel will listen to Adam and follow him. Is this not so? If the archangel stands in the position to obey absolutely, he will come into the realm of God's love and Adam's love. Then, he naturally will follow Adam into heaven. This is the way of the Principle. (230-25, 1992.4.15)

You should not be proud of how many years you have been in the church. What matters is how many regional directors you raised, how many people you blessed, how many people you connected to Father's tribe and lineage. This is a serious problem. Pak Bo-hi, Kwak Chung-hwan, and Yoo Jung-ok became my in-laws, but this does not mean they fulfilled this criterion. As a foundation for everything else, they have to expand the realm of the tribal messiah thousands of times, and quickly raise people of the Kingdom of Heaven who are shameless in the historic age to come. (230-27, 1992.4.15)

Do not spend your months and years aimlessly. You can leave behind a foundation to be proud of before your descendants only after you have given birth to and raised up children of God during your younger years. Likewise, only when those children become great people can you be proud before history. If you do not have results that you can be proud of, you may be able to join the group of your family and town, but not of the nation. To reach the national level, you need results that can remain in

the historical record and tradition. This is why everyone desires to leave something recognized by the nation, by the world, and by heaven and earth. It is the same principle on every level.

You have to have the clear concept that your lifelong purpose comes down to the issue of how you establish your territory of ownership. This is why, on the way of God's will, you cannot give up even if you do not like it. (230-27, 1992.4.15)

What is God doing? He is saving the world. Once you go to the spirit world, you will find that the works of all the highly placed people in that world are works done on earth. What is the critical characteristic of the earth? It is its ability to produce the citizens of the heavenly kingdom. Heaven is broad and vast. It is infinite! It is so huge! People have come and gone in the last hundred million years, but the spirit world is so vast that you do not know where they all are. Even if each person were to give birth to a hundred children, the Kingdom of Heaven is so huge that there would never be overpopulation. The other world can accommodate any number of people. Therefore, should you use birth control, or not? Once you go to the spirit world, the question becomes how many citizens of the heavenly kingdom you have created and brought there.

You have to know that it is your privilege to raise and lead many sons and daughters of the true heavenly kingdom. It is the distinction by which you will be honored in the heavenly world. (202-40, 1990.5.1)

It is more important to harvest the people for God's Kingdom than to eat. Members do not have this concept clearly in their minds. Think about it. This is our original profession. This is the main occupation of the members who live on the earth. Amongst the things you should do in your lifetime, there is nothing more important than this. All your achievements after joining a company and advancing in your position, or collecting money in this world, will pass away. No matter how much money you amass, it will be of no use in the other world. Material things are not necessary in the next world. There is no need for knowledge for things. Even if you are not learned externally, you will understand everything in your heart immediately. You will come to know everything important within a week. (230-28, 1992.4.15)

Later on, when you go to the spirit world, what will you say before God, who has guided the history of restoration and who toiled until this day in search of one Adam? Did He not search for the perfected person of Adam from the time of creation to this day? Now you all know the Principle. This is your weapon to save thousands and tens of thousands of people.

To this day, God could not teach humankind. To replace God's anguish over having to guide the providence in the dark, we should do greater things than He can do on this earth. We have the path to enlighten and bring hundreds and thousands of Adams through

the Principle. Think about it. Where can we find a task greater than this? (230-28, 1992.4.15)

How many sons and daughters did you create, whom you can take to the Kingdom of Heaven? There is nothing else for you to do. Even if you have hundreds of millions of dollars and live in riches, it all will pass away. You have to invest all your materials, knowledge, and your very life – yes, even the life of your fallen self – into this task. You have to invest everything at once. As your entire investment adds up, its value will increase in proportion. (230-28, 1992.4.15)

Heaven is an infinite world, so there should be bridges to connect people through a heart of love. Consequently, if the people you have witnessed to are spread widely across the world, you will have more paths on which to come and go, covering a wider area within the spirit world. Everyone will want to relate to you and form ties with you. They will be interconnected through learning our teaching while on earth, and this sphere of relationships will center on you. (230-25, 1992.4.15)

The internal core of love within a person will enlarge with the more children they raise. When such a person goes to heaven, this core will go too. Nothing else will go. Money, fame, and wealth in this world are not a blessing. When you raise children, if you create a world based on the four seasons and four directions of human characteristics, its land will adjust to you and come into balance. The more freely you are able to give to the north, south, east, and west, in all directions, the more you will be fulfilled. However, if you cannot stand in this position, you will always be unidirectional. (233-247, 1992.8.1)

This earth is the endless producer of the people of heaven. No one has known this. The life course of the original couple living on the earth is one in which they give birth to children as the people of the Kingdom of Heaven, and raise them to become perfected people. Therefore, when a baby is born, you should come before God and offer that baby as a gift to Him. Without this gift, you cannot hold your head up proudly.

When you go back to your hometown, what is it you will be most proud of and want to show your parents? You will take pride in how well you raised your children. It is the same in the spirit world. When you go before God, there is no greater gift than bringing God's children, the people of heaven, whom you have raised on this earth. Money, power, and knowledge are not important. (229-15, 1992.4.9)

Parents with many children have extensive experience in relationships of love. Therefore, when they go to the spirit world, they can freely meet anyone in all directions. Among women who have given birth to many children, not one was evil. Why is this so? It is because each has the mind of a mother who loves her children and always compares and

thinks about others as her own sons and daughters. Each naturally ascends to the stage of love in the realm of daily life. Those who have raised many children are, therefore, in the highest realm in the spirit world. (239-156, 1992.11.24)

As tribal messiahs, all of you should create many citizens of heaven before you pass away. This is the most valuable thing, the most valuable wish you can make in your life. This ownership is your treasure. There has never been a person like this in the spirit world. Therefore, you must bring more than a hundred, even a thousand people to the kingdom, so that, later, many of your friends can appear around you in the spirit world as soon as you call them. (227-208, 1992.2.11)

All of you should raise your children well on this earth before leaving them behind when you go to the spirit world. In the future, your children will all go to the spirit world as well. Once there, they will become the citizens of heaven. When you think about how many people you offered as the citizens of heaven, you realize that although it may have been a laborious task, in the eternal world it will turn out to have been the path of noble glory. (218-319, 1991.8.22)

3.4. Our earthly life is recorded in detail

Both your spirit self and physical self should be as clear as crystal during your life. You will then have no problems in the spirit world. You cannot enter heaven if there is any kind of flaw. How you live your life on earth is so important. You live in the spirit world as you have lived on this earth. No one is an exception to this. Your entire being is transparently on view. (294-26, 1998.6.5)

In the spirit world, suppose there is a man named Kim. If the code for this Kim is entered, his life history will appear in an instant. Your intuition will quickly perceive this phenomenon because the spirit world transcends time and space. There is no way to avoid this. Consequently, your conscience is an instrument to record your earthly life for the sake of when you go to the eternal world. As if by a computer, everything is recorded in an orderly way. Everything is entered into the record without fail. (275-36, 1995.10.30)

Each action, each expression you make is recorded, as if on a videotape. Can you hide these things in the spirit world? You cannot hide this record, just as you cannot hide what is in your mind. The spirit world is more clearly apparent than the mind and is a place where everything is exposed. There is no use for excuses. You cannot make excuses. The more you open your mouth, the closer your shame before the universe approaches you. You cannot advance in that world. There is only retreat. A fearful age is coming. (208-37, 1990.11.15)

The conscience knows everything. As long as the conscience knows, it is recorded in the computer of the spir-

it world, in the original palace of the world of conscience. When someone is called, the record of that person's ancestors will appear. All the things that person's mother or father did, whether good or bad, will be revealed. All that you did in your life is disclosed in an instant. It does not take long. It is revealed in an instant. You will know in the blink of an eye. You are entering a human world that has expanded to this extent. (263-127, 1994.8.21)

When you go to the spirit world you will find that your life has been completely recorded in the computer there. It will all be revealed. The conscience is like a computer file that is exhibited in the eternal world. Everything is in that file. With the click of a button, all the details of your lifetime, from your time as a baby being held and breastfed by your mother, will be known through the images of your mind. Every day that world is creating a record of your life in order to carry out a complete appraisal of your being. The day for this comes when you die. No one can tell a lie in the presence of that powerful computer that appraises people. The images in the spirit world appear as if in a mirror. Everything is being recorded. (246-188, 1993.4.16)

Your conscience knows everything about what you did in your lifetime. It knows everything about you. This knowledge is transferred intact into the computer in the spirit world. It goes there without fail. You will know when you enter the spirit world. (258-63, 1994.3.16)

Conceited people commit adultery and do all kinds of things. They cannot go to heaven. As I searched in the spirit world, I uncovered things and came to know the facts. So many times I thought, "Oh! It would have been better not to have known these things!" There are endless ranges of mountains. God is suffering as if He were in a prison under eternal siege because of the love lost to Satan. (290-17, 1998.2.2)

Don't you think that your mind – even your fallen mind – knows what you have done in your life? Do you or do you not know what kind of person you are? You cannot deceive yourself. Each of you knows what you are really like. You should not think too highly of yourself.

Everything will be totally revealed in the spirit world. Your misdeeds will be revealed first. You have to first clear up your misdeeds before entering the spirit world. Without doing so, you cannot enter the heavenly spirit world. Even if you close your eyes, your misdeeds will be revealed and punishment demanded. Consequently, you must be educated until you rid yourself of that misbehavior. You have to receive training. You have to undergo intense training. The spirit world as a whole is now being trained and is creating an education system guided by Heung-jin. (287-203, 1997.10.30)

The conscience does not lie. It records everything about you as if on a videotape. In the spirit world, how you have lived your life will be seen according to the

number you are assigned. Someone who already knows the scale of the brightness of your spirit will take you where you receive a number. If your number is eighteen, then when someone presses the number eighteen, everything about you will be known in an instant. From the time of your birth to that moment, everything will be revealed. There is no way to avoid this. Your conscience will weep bitterly. You are not aware that the good and bad you have done determines which side of the boundary between heaven and hell you end up on. The spirit world does not move at random. It is a mathematical world. It moves according to logic. God is the King of scientists. Heaven does not move in any way it likes. (284-23, 1997.4.15)

Habits can last for eternity; they are so difficult to change. Nonetheless, they can be corrected while you live on earth. You can clear away your old habits by overriding them with new ones. You should do this now. If you do not, you will have problems when you enter the spirit world. Once there, you will find yourself caught. (289-208, 1998.1.2)

When shedding its skin, a snake will move along until it finds a crevice in which its tail gets caught. It will then wind its body around a tree and use all its strength to rub against it, even bleeding in an effort to cast off its skin. Only after passing through the illogical unprincipled course can you go through the logical principled course. Even if you recognize that you are fallen, all human beings must go through this inevitable formula course, which is unprincipled. Those who unite the mind and body, become a couple, and become parents in accordance with principled logic will not have to go through the illogical unprincipled course.

In the spirit world, you can be dragged away in reverse based on your wrongful acts and others' accusations. Consider a tree that is to be transplanted. If it is properly handled, the transplant will go smoothly, but if it is pulled out by the branches and dragged away violently, it will be damaged. It then becomes more difficult to replant successfully. This is exactly how it is in the restoration course. (285-74, 1997.4.21)

There is no forgiveness in the spirit world. Lies will not work. You have all seen videotapes. If you laughed, that laughter appears just as it was. An ordinary video cannot go beyond the limitations of time and space, but the spiritual video transcends time and space.

Just with one click, your entire life, all your past years, are projected. When it is turned on, no one will tell you where to go. Each person finds where he is to go by him or herself, and so will you. You are pushed along without knowing how. Something pushes you. You may expect to end up in a good place, but you are constantly pushed along beyond your will. Finally, you end up in a limited zone, which you cannot leave. Do you think you would heave a big sigh? I am teaching you and doing these things because I know the spirit world. These

phenomena happen on entering the spirit world. Do you realize how fortunate you are? (163-308. 1987.5.1)

When you come to know how life after death is closely related with the life in this world, you will be more careful about how you live because your present life tells you what to expect in the next life. (294-9, 1998.6.5)

You have to be aware of how fearful the consequences of life on earth are. People live as they please because they do not know that their life on earth has a direct influence on the circumstances of their eternal life. (295-127, 1998.8.19)

You have to do well in your earthly life. You should devote yourselves and reflect many times a day to see how your life compares to the principled standard. To do this, I am earnestly asking that from morning, noon, and until the evening, twenty-four hours a day, you live in a way that you do not transgress the heavenly law. (294-26, 1998.6.5)

When you go before God, after clearing up everything you did on earth, you should not just report what you did well. You should first report what you did wrong, and then report what you did right later. It is the other way around in this world. When asked, "What did you do?" people usually say, "I did this," and hide their misdeeds. The spirit world is not like this. In the spirit world, you should first report your misdeeds. This is the order of things. When you are asked what you did, it all appears as if on television. You should report first what you did wrong. Why? Cain should come first. Bad things happen first and bad things are reported first. Then why does the good come afterwards? The Abel-type things come second. If, when compared to the first, the Abel side has more good things for a given person, then that person can be educated. From that point, they will be taught about the spirit world. (196-283, 1990.1.2)

3.5. Sins committed in the flesh should be indemnified on earth

Whatever you bind on earth should be released on earth. If you pass on to the spirit world without doing so, you will face serious consequences. By rousing yourself into action, you should avoid this situation. If you do not do it on earth, you will fall into hell for eternity. (229-27, 1992.4.9)

Whether human beings like it or not, as the fallen descendants they are destined to surmount the steep pass of indemnity from now, even unto death. No one can deny this. You must traverse this path. If you pass to the spirit world without overcoming this in your lifetime, there is no way to know how many millions of years it will take you in the spirit world.

There is no payment of indemnity in the spirit world. It is a liberated realm of perfection filled with the waves of love, so the possibility of indemnity or re-creation does not exist. There is no reproduction either. Since there is no mecha-

nism to stimulate these processes, once you are fixed in a position, it is permanent. This is a serious problem. Knowing these things, God sent the Messiah to the earth. (229-243, 1992.4.12)

Does the snake grow or shrink in size when it sheds its skin? If you can shed your sinfulness ten times a day, you should do so. This would gradually eliminate the burden of your past sins. In the spirit world, there is nothing to stimulate this process to take place. There is no such mechanism. No matter how much you wish to return to this earth and clear up your transgressions, it is impossible. Once you pass away, you cannot freely return. (242-305, 1993.1.2)

In the spirit world, you can find stimulating elements of love, but you cannot offer indemnity in order to remove your sins. Thus, it takes a very long time to indemnify your sins in the spirit world. Since I knew of these things, I laid all the foundations in forty years. I lived not knowing day and night. I usually ate but one meal, in the morning or evening, each day. That is how I lived. (243-177, 1993.1.3)

Although it is challenging to do so, there are many ways to embrace one another during your physical life, weeping together and moving people's hearts. However, from the spirit world it is much more difficult to move the hearts of people on earth. (250-112, 1993.10.12)

How important is life on this earth? It only comes to you once. It is but an instant and it comes only once. Earthly life is but a dot compared to eternal life. It is too short. However, this is not the important point. What is important is that you use the short time you have in your physical life to prepare for the spirit world. With this kind of core thinking, you must be able to stand in the center and control and subdue everything. Without doing so, you cannot perfect yourself. (207-99, 1990.11.1)

The things most detested in the spirit world are the customs and habits of the fallen realm. Habits arise from customs. What is the favorite dish for a Japanese person born in Japan? It would be soup and rice. Americans like hamburgers and Koreans like *kochujang* and *kimchi*. If you live confined by customs, you will never be able to eliminate your habits.

Then, how will you eliminate these habits? If it is this difficult to rid yourselves of everyday habits on earth, then how much more difficult will your situation be in the spirit world if you go there with a hardened fallen nature and stubborn habits. You need to resolve these things on the earth. This is very difficult to do when you go to the spirit world. Therefore, a spouse is not the main concern. Children are not the main concern. Only after you remedy all your bad habits should you think about finding a husband or wife and having children. (228-114, 1992.3.26)

That which is bound on earth should be released on earth. If you expect to

release things in the spirit world, you will be disappointed to find that it is difficult to solve your problems there. You will not find any villains opposing you or any realm opposing your goodness there. Similarly, if something is wrong, instead of going against it, you will try to deflect it on its way. You should try to disassociate from it completely. (256-28, 1994.3.12)

In the spirit world you will have to live in a restricted environment. You have to wait there for thousands of years. In the future, even blessed people will be in this situation. All your sons and daughters would be upset and cry out, "Mother, why did you bring me into this world as someone like this? Why did you drag me into this place?" Do you not think your children would be agitated? The levels of your families are all different. You go to the place that is consistent with your level and stay there for a long time. Then, your ancestors and your children will accuse you saying, "Why did you do that? Why did you not do better? What is this?" You will have to stay in that place to the extent that corresponds to the degree of accusation. It is not an easy thing. This is why you have to deal with this on the earth. You have to do everything I tell you to do. (207-99, 1990.11.1)

You have not yet become true families, have you? When you pass into the spirit world you will all be divided. People who never fell and created heavenly families are destined to go to the Kingdom of Heaven. Ultimately, you are all bound to enter the spirit world for eternity. Problems that arise on the earth can be solved within seventy to eighty years, but in the spirit world, where you will reside eternally, the path is difficult even after you have followed it for millions of years. You have to settle all your misdeeds while you are on earth. The Bible says that what is released on earth is released in heaven, and what is bound on earth is bound in heaven. If you lose something on this earth, you have to find it on this earth. (283-184, 1997.4.12)

If you control your body, striking it for three years or longer, you will then enter the realm of the completion stage of the growth period. Is this not so? If you make more of the physical side, the spiritual side diminishes. If you get rid of the physical side, the spiritual side will be elevated. Therefore, for the same reason, when you ignore the superficial things and attach importance to the deeper aspects of life, the spirit world will come closer to you. Then, when you are engrafted to the original standard of conscience there will be a great surge like that in an electrical power plant when positive and negative interact. Consequently, changes occur in heaven and earth. You should be aware that you need to have such spiritual experiences. (282-308, 1997.4.7)

In the Bible it says, "What is bound on earth is bound in heaven. What is released on earth will be released in heaven." This logic can be understood

through understanding the unity of the dual structure. Human beings today should know how valuable their physical lifetime truly is. The conclusion is that the period of their life on earth is the only time when they can liberate God, revive this universe, and unite all heaven and earth. God and creation combined together could not equal the value of the physical world. Why is this so? God and this universe combined, without human beings in the flesh, cannot be perfected. Thus, they have to understand how important the human body is, while they are alive on earth. How great this is! (91-191, 1977.2.13)

If there were two paths, one that goes to heaven and another to hell, on which path would there be more people? There would be more people going to hell. What must God's heart be like seeing this? How bitter He must feel! How appalled God is to see His sons and daughters, who were supposed to come to heaven, all going to hell. They were to have become the people of a vast nation living together with God in love and with no relation to hell. Think about how it would be if your children had to go to the place of death. All of you will ultimately come to know these things when you pass on to the spirit world. (244-25, 1993.1.29)

You will be challenged about everything in the spirit world in the same way that True Parents' teachings challenge you. Did you pass or fail with regard to this standard? Did you strive to align yourself to this standard by uniting your physical and spiritual five senses?" What do you think? Heaven is not a place you can deal with freely, as you please. It is not a place tolerant of those who lived a haphazard life and then received the Blessing. It is a place of gathering for people who took God's will seriously. You all should be more serious than True Father. (246-191, 1993.4.16)

When you pass to the spirit world, who is the first person you would like to meet? Whom would you want to meet? Have you ever thought about this? You cannot meet your mother no matter how much you wish to do so. You cannot meet her until True Parents liberate her. No matter how much you love someone, you will not be able to meet him or her. You will only be able to see that person from a distance; you will not be able to meet them up close. (285-125, 1997.4.21)

When human beings register into the heavenly spirit world, they should take with them a certificate that confirms the details of their life on earth. I am talking about a certificate of your entire life with which you can say, "This is how I lived. This is what I did." You are not the one who writes this kind of certificate. Satan should first write it for you. You should first receive the certificate from Satan and then receive Jesus' certificate. Then you should receive God's certificate. (299-77, 1999.2.4)

In the future, you all will have to write your autobiography. You have to

write honestly about your life after joining the Unification Church. When you enter the spirit world, you should be able to weep over your autobiography, saying, "Was I really able to do such works?" You have to write this on the earth and then, when you are about to enter the heavenly kingdom, you have to get in line and pass through 160, 240 and 360 spiritual guards. If you lie, you will be struck by lightning on the spot. You cannot deceive them. (297-120, 1998.11.19)

When you pass on to the spirit world, a recording of your entire life can be accessed with the press of a button. Is this not terrifying?

If True Father forgives all the evil that you have done, the recording of that evil will be completely erased. Did you know this? (165-90, 1987.5.20)

3.6. To live in harmony with nature is precious

A person who works with nature is usually more religious. The world of religion is a world without ostentation. The earth and nature do not lie. If you invest your utmost effort, the results of that effort will be brought to you. There is no speculation. You will not make a fortune without effort. There is no inclination to gamble. When you become fifty years old, you return to nature. There is no better preparation for your way to the spirit world than living a life of faith immersed in nature. (244-322, 1993.3.1)

In the future, I will build a farm here and bring all the members from around the world. When you reach the age of sixty or seventy, you will grow things in nature, deeply experiencing the same heart as when raising children and deeply experiencing the realm of God's heart at the time of the Creation. Then, when you go to the spirit world, you can ascend to a higher level. Therefore, for those undergoing hardships in the Unification Church, I am planning to bring them to a farm in their later years and let them live in self-sufficiency in a country house. This is the ideal homeland. This is my plan. (246-216, 1993.4.16)

When you pass the age of sixty, you should retire from public life, return to the farm village in your hometown, cultivate the earth and prepare to go to the spirit world. You will be busy preparing for the spirit world. For this reason, you should devote yourself sincerely and deeply involve yourself in a farming village, taking responsibility to guide its people the way I would.

You should not go to the spirit world until you have accomplished something in the leisure industry and in your hobbies. Only then, can you go to a higher level in the spirit world, become a person with deep emotions, and be able to make good use of the great arena of the spirit world. What do you think? (289-193, 1998.1.2)

You work until the age of sixty. After working until that age, you are freed from your period of public mission. Then you work publicly for three more

years without pay. In order to prepare to go to the spirit world, you should not want anything in return. This is a training period. If you have good results, it may be extended to seven years. Then how old will you be? To make the foundation to go to the spirit world you can work until the age of sixty-seven – working until the age of sixty and then seven years more. When this is done, you can be proud of yourself wherever you go.

When you go to the spirit world with the Unification Church foundation, people might receive you as my representative saying, "Welcome, worthy subject." If you think about going to the spirit world on the basis of having lived for others, you know that you will have the requisite maturity. Amen! (289-195, 1998.1.2)

It is better to go to the spirit world after having experienced travel on land, in the water, and in space. This is why I am planning a project that will allow people to live under the sea. I am conducting research on a submarine that will enable five people to live freely underwater.

You begin your travels after having established your life on earth. Ideally, you go to the spirit world after traveling on land, undersea, and in space. (279-200, 1996.8.4)

You can raise animals, like deer, and release them, raise fish and release them. You can apply new technology to develop crops and other natural resources, and whatever else is needed to improve the environment. How wonderful that will be! You can reproduce whatever God originally created. You can think of God as you gaze upon your creation, and harmonize with nature. All people will live in cooperation with one another while they enjoy their hobbies. When they grow old, they will eventually pass to the spirit world. Through this, it is possible to decentralize the urbanized world. Do you understand? (252-210, 1993.12.30)

Have you thought about God's desire for the future family system? In light of this, True Father has thought about the hobby industry and the world of leisure. In the future, what kind of communal system should you create in each nation? You should build a "condominium system," and train people within that system where four families live together in unity. They should earn money together, eat together, educate their children together, and live as one family. If they fail to live together in harmony, those families will be pushed into a restrictive environment in the spirit world. There, they will not be able to live with others in harmony. (278-327, 1996.6.23)

The leisure or hobby culture exists everywhere. From the time of creation to the time of restoration and perfection, life on earth and in the spirit world was made to be interesting. It does not make sense that Americans should be the only ones living in affluence. Do Africans want a better life? How about letting the poorest person in Africa live in the house of the richest person in America

for a month? If you cannot do this, I will do it. (278-123, 1996.5.1)

When you settle in your original homeland, all of heaven and earth become your hometown. Since everything from heaven and earth is provided, there is no need to bring anything when you go there. You should just leave everything behind. You can still form a spiritual connection to those things. You can recreate the things of the earthly world in the spirit world. There, you can recreate the same house you lived in on earth and make it your own. Do you need to carry it when you go or not? (289-144, 1998.1.1)

If you have a boat, you can use it to go and meditate by yourself. You can even put up a small tent and sleep inside it. You can go sightseeing. It is like heaven! In order to be immersed in nature and go sightseeing in this way, you need a boat. You absolutely need a boat. Do you think this is the case or not? If not, then you need to realize that it is so. (262-270, 1994.8.1)

The spirit world is a world where you can have plenty of energy without sleeping or eating. You can commute a tremendous distance in an instant. You can include the entire universe within the radius of your activity. If you are interested in exploring nature, you should consider the special and unique trees and birds in South America. You would find them very interesting and exciting. A while ago, I caught a large snake with yellowish-brown skin, about eight meters in length. Would it not be exciting for you to catch a snake like that? It would be great to catch an even longer one. (276-77, 1996.2.4)

Throughout your life, your daily life and leisure activities should harmonize with history and the ideal human lifestyle, bringing it into relation with the spirit world. They should be connected to a world of happiness through nature. (278-123, 1996.5.1)

Nature's artistry is displayed more vividly through a variety of weather, than a succession of fine days. When you feel loved in that environment, you can make clouds or fog appear in the clear sky of the spirit world just by wishing it. You can become a person with a special ability to create all kinds of manifestations of the mind through love. For this reason, all of the spirit world will take an interest in you. Everyone would say, "Hey, being with this person is fun." (201-102, 1990.3.11)

When I go to the mountain and see a meadow, I know what is edible. When buds sprout, they are mostly edible. Young calves and lambs all graze on sprouts. Even poisonous herbs are edible, as they do not contain poison at that stage. I taught myself this. There are many things to eat in the mountains.

It is great to take a nap in an overgrown place. How wonderful it is to uncover your belly and lie down in a cool place during the hot and humid

summer! Even if it rains, it just feels cool and refreshing.

If a Buddhist nun, passing by, were to see a man laying out like this, spread-eagled happily under a wisteria, breaking wind, and snoring as he sleeps, she would say, "How sweet!" Why? Because his state of being is wonderful. She is not a stone statue of Buddha. Do you understand what I am saying? A woman who would not feel anything from such a scene would be devoid of human emotion. She would be unable to give birth to children and unable even to get married. On the contrary, if this Buddhist nun gazes upon that man and exclaims "How sweet!" and her breasts and hips are stimulated, then she is elevated one dimension higher. It is true. It is like this in the spirit world. A Buddhist monk or nun who does not know conjugal love is sadly disqualified from the kingdom.

It is no use saying that you will go to Heaven by believing in Jesus. I searched every corner of the spirit world. Do you know where Kim Hwal-lan is now in the spirit world? She is in a world of turmoil. (202-231, 1990.5.24)

Section 4. The Secret of Entering Heaven

4.1. Heaven is a place to enter with the honor of a royal family

You cannot enter heaven without complying with the requisite standard. You cannot freely enter heaven. There is a formula. The standard for a meter can be found in the Louvre Museum. It does not change with the climate or temperature there. There are a great number of meter measures, and if each were to follow its own standard, to debate whether any particular length is right or wrong is absurd. The only way is to decide after comparing your measure with the standard meter. You should be aware that there is such a standard in heaven. Not just anyone can go to heaven. (248-299, 1993.10.3)

Do you all want to go to heaven? If you want to go to heaven, you have to have the qualification that lets you enter there. Do you need a ticket on entering heaven? Will you go through with a free pass or will you be examined based on some requirement? It is not a free pass. They will know immediately. Do you think you will find computers in the spirit world or not? Computers are amazing, but the computers in the spirit world can show your entire life in a minute with the touch of a button. You cannot lie. How you were born as someone's son or daughter, and how you lived your life – everything – will be revealed. Everything about a mischievous woman, or a woman with many unpleasant experiences accumulated as the result of her misdeeds, will come out. (250-110, 1993.10.12)

If human beings had not fallen, they would have entered heaven as God's direct sons and daughters born from His lineage. Original families would have entered heaven. Yet, the first family fell and inherited the lineage of the

enemy. The standard for entering God's original nation cannot be established until one family attains the position to be His direct children who have not fallen. Once this family exists, God can forget that humankind inherited the lineage of the enemy and became the enemy of His love. The person who directly loves God's children, his own children who are of God's lineage, can enter heaven. Yet, without fulfilling the condition of loving the children of the enemy in the satanic world even more, he cannot actually enter heaven. You cannot attain the qualification for entering heaven without loving the children of the enemy more than your own children. (262-304, 1994.8.1)

The main problem lies in the fact that human beings inherited the lineage of the enemy, Satan. Human beings should inherit God's lineage and be directly connected to heaven in the spirit world. People should unite mind and body in God's love, become united couples, and become one with their children. They should live a heavenly life in the heavenly kingdom on earth and then enter the Kingdom of God in heaven. These are the fundamental principles of creation. As God's direct lineage, human beings should have established the absolute ties of true love, lived on earth based on the framework of a unified individual, couple and family, and then entered heaven. This would meet the standard of the principle and law. (264-168, 1994.10.9)

Hell was created after the Fall, was it not? Heaven is a realm where people from both the spiritual and physical worlds enter through the gate of True Parents' love. If Adam and Eve had not fallen, and had entered heaven through True Parents' love, they would have become the model for all families. One original model of the family would have entered heaven. Through this, all families would have connected to the realm of love through this royal family that inherited the original tradition and would have become like branches spreading towards the north, south, east, and west, relating to one central trunk. All families would have entered heaven in accordance with the principle that integrates all realms. A unified world would have developed naturally. You should clearly understand this. (231-76, 1992.5.31)

Do you have grandparents in your family? The True Parents are in the position of the grandparents in your family. If there are true parents in your Blessed Family, your family will stand in a position that is higher than that of regular parents. Were you not all born as true children? Did you give birth to many children? Your children will create royal families in the future.

God will create royal families for the first time in history, perfect those families, and take them to the spirit world. They will become the ideal families of the Most High. Those are the royal families of heaven. The original Adam and Eve are thus perfected. They are royal families based on true love. Heaven is the place they can enter after perfection.

It would be wonderful if True Father went out and lived in your homes. Why? If you live by attending the True Parents during your lifetime, you automatically go to heaven. This is the heavenly tradition.

The True Parents have lived such a life. Thus, they are connected to heaven naturally. Consequently, all of you are also connected. How amazing, joyful, and precious this is! You should not exchange this for anything. (230-110, 1992.4.26)

Let me speak about one more thing on the principle of restoration through indemnity. This principle is the unchanging truth. Restoration cannot be achieved unless the crime Eve committed in Eden is indemnified within Eve's world in the ensuing generations. I am sure you all know this. By restoring this, the satanic world will begin to disappear. When the original standard of relationship between Adam and Eve is established worldwide based on the True Parents, then the original heaven with no connection to the Fall will be created. Humankind can hope to enter this world of peace only by way of a single, unified direction. (262-214, 1994.7.23)

When you unite with the True Parents and inherit their tradition, you have the basis on which your family can govern all nations through that proactive tradition. When your family can retain this proactivity, you can be registered into the realm of the royal family in the Kingdom of Heaven. In this way, you enter heaven. Not everyone enters heaven. Three generations should resolve to follow this path. The grandmother and grandfather, the mother and father, the husband and wife, with the children together make up four stages. The set consists of three generations of couples. (228-295, 1992.7.5)

Had it not been for the Fall, our first ancestors would have become God's son and daughter and the prince and princess of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world. This would have had global significance. They would have been the beginning and the end, the Alpha and the Omega. However, since the evil parents emerged at the alpha instead of the good parents, all this must be discarded. Therefore, the True Parents, who can digest everything that began from the false parents, should appear. (226-319, 1992.2.9)

Originally, Adam and Eve were God's son and daughter, were they not? As God's son and daughter, they were the prince and princess of the Kingdom of Heaven in both heaven and earth. They were the prince and princess of the kingdom in the spirit world, but at the same time they were to grow up to become king and queen on this earth. They were of the royal lineage. By abiding by and practicing the laws of the palace in the Kingdom of Heaven, they would have become an ideal model based on God's love in all directions – high, low, front, back, left, and right. Wherever they went, to the east, west, south, north, front, or

back, they would have stood as the ideal model. This is because they were placed on earth to be at the center of all creation. That central position is the core of all relationships – east, west, north, south, above, and below. From this view, all of you have to stand as a model wherever you go. (226-258, 1992.2.9)

Based on my possession of love, I can gain ownership over my hometown and family. There, the children are perfected, the siblings are perfected, the couple is perfected, and the parents are perfected. Today, through the True Parents, all the things present in God's manual of creation that were unfulfilled can appear. When this is accomplished, God can completely overcome His deep feelings of anguish and educate humankind as they stand in the original position before the Fall. Through this, you can be qualified as the people of heaven and become a qualified family. The spirit world is connected to the ocean of love on this earth. It is the spiritual Kingdom of Heaven. Consequently, you cannot survive in that kingdom in spirit world without having a heart embodying love on earth. (226-173, 1992.2.2)

All five billion people of humanity are to become the royal relatives who inherit the kingship of the direct lineage of the realm of the firstborn son of God. Those who experience the realm of heart of the heavenly royal family will go to heaven. Therefore, you should live in the realm of the royal family that has expanded worldwide; you should embody its substance, the realm of heart based on global unity. From there, we stand above the eldest son as the True Parents. This is the kingship of the True Parents, who lead the surrounding royal families based on this kingship.

You can enter heaven by attending the kingship at the head of your own royal family, which includes your brothers and sisters as well as your parents. You enter heaven after living with this kind of heart. What kind of place is heaven? Adam and Eve were born like twins; they should have matured, married, and become parents. Similarly, those who can enter heaven have experienced this realm of heart, established this kingship, and stood at the head of their royal families with this authority. You can enter heaven with your royal family only after the original king enters heaven. In this way, on the horizontal plane, four great kingships arise. (247-265, 1993.5.9)

Now, as we enter the age of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, our families become royal households. This is what you must exemplify. Can the king live as he pleases? Can a queen live as she pleases? Can their sons and daughters live as they please? The king, queen, prince, and princess should all follow the laws of this nation. Furthermore, there are palace laws within the code of laws. Were there not laws for the nobility that lived in palaces? Is life difficult or easy for the royal descendants in places like Britain and Korea? (232-326, 1992.7.10)

True Father has followed the entire

path, the path of restoration. Without following it, you cannot perceive heaven. You cannot be raised to the position of the king who reigns over Heaven. How can you become the king of men without knowing how to attend the queen? Is this not an issue? (232-331, 1992.7.10)

Each of you should become a royal family based on true love. If Adam, who is of royal lineage, is the direct heir, then his brothers and sisters would naturally all become his people. Thus, in order to enter heaven, you have to receive love as the prince and princess of the Kingdom of Heaven and enter with this authority and dignity. Let it be known that heaven is the nation of the original homeland and that people can enter in this way! (220-219, 1991.10.19)

4.2. Those who embody the love of the four great realms of heart can enter heaven

What kind of people will enter heaven? Those who embody the love that perfects the four great realms of heart can enter heaven. God longs for His object partner to be thousands of times better than Himself. As the object partner of God's love, you should be aware that your family is a central family representing the three kingships of the Kingdom of Heaven, the kingdom on earth, and the kingdom of the future. Since these have been lost, we should practice these ideals and values and bring them to fruition within the restored family. You have the responsibility to hand this down through your sons and daughters.

Since the original path was lost, you need to perfect the way and return to the origin. You should know that this is the path of restoration and the path of re-creation. Amen! These are not my words. They are God's words. (238-254, 1992.11.22)

Is this the first time for many of you to hear these words? Heaven is the to which you should ascend with the love of the royal family by restoring the four great realms of heart and three great kingships. No matter how great you may be here on earth, you will be caught in the spirit world. Instead of feeling regret once you get there, saying, "I should have listened to Rev. Moon!" you should quickly make your decision to receive the Blessing. This is the fastest way to resolve these issues. You can learn through the Blessing.

Man and woman should come together in harmony, find the lost family of the Kingdom of Heaven, and attend God as the King. This is why the grandparents are God's representatives. You have to attend your grandparents as God's representatives. Your father and mother are the king and queen representing the families of all the five billion people of humanity. Their sons and daughters should be attended like future kings. You should inherit the way of the parents by attending the parents, who are like God, the parents who are like monarchs who represent the families of today. The world to which you bequeathed this parental way that will prevail for all future ages will become

the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. Amen! (239-76, 1992.11.23)

The family that perfects the four great realms of heart and three great kingships is the ideal family. The grandparents stand as God, the parents as the king of the families of this world, and you as the children are the future kings and queens who will inherit the kingship in the spiritual and physical worlds. You become the kings and queens who inherit all of this. The ideal family is the place where the three great kingships should bear fruit. (239-185, 1992.11.24)

The purpose of the restoration of the right of parents is the restoration of kingship. The purpose of the restoration of kingship is the restoration of the right of the royal family. This incorporates the four great realms of heart. The grandparents, parents, and your couple symbolize the three great kingships. The grandparents symbolize the past, your parents symbolize the present, and your couple, as children, symbolizes the future. The grandparents were sent to your home as a special envoy from the spirit world. Therefore, the family that is obedient to the words of the grandparents will prosper. (249-306, 1993.10.11)

Our way of life on earth is transferred to the spirit world as it is. This being the case, when you go there, how do you make horizontal connections? Your family relationships on earth will transfer to the spirit world and expand to encompass all beings in order to enliven the universe as an extended family. In this earthly world, you live with your family centered on your horizontal Parents and the vertical Parent, which means centered on God's realm. After life on earth, you enter the eternal, vertical world, which is the parental world. Since that is the spirit world, it does not just encompass one generation. Thousands of generations will enter the Kingdom of Heaven.

The spirit world is a world that expands your life on earth, which you spent with your grandparents, parents, sons, and daughters centering on God. Therefore, if you wish to enter and live freely in that world, you should be able to harmonize with others through the same responsible, loving relationships you experienced within your family on earth, as an elder sister, younger sister, wife, and mother, or as an elder brother, younger brother, husband, and father. (247-308, 1993.6.1)

In marriage, a man should absolutely become one with a woman; a woman should absolutely become one with a man. The parents with their sons and daughters, and God with His sons and daughters should absolutely become one. Siblings should also absolutely unite. Heaven is the place to which you pass on after having lived a family life with God and His love at the center. (279-114, 1996.8.1)

Adam is God Himself. He is the master of the family, but also God's body. The center of the nation and the center

of the cosmos are also God. Therefore, after a person is born, he has to go through three stages of becoming one with the family, one with the nation, and one with the spirit world. (278-169, 1996.5.5)

Adam could receive only God's love. Yet, Adam's sons and daughters could receive two types of love: God's love and Adam's love. They could inherit the kingship of the spirit world and the kingship of the earth. Only then, after living in the kingdom on earth, could they enter the Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world. Therefore, these kingships cannot be divided. (278-161, 1996.5.5)

You must love your nation more than you love your family, while nonetheless retaining a heart that you absolutely need your grandfather and grandmother, father and mother, husband and wife, and children. Love the world more than your nation, knowing that humanity is made up of these four stages. If you wish to go and live harmoniously in the spirit world, you have to love it more than you love the world. This is because it is where your loved ones, who passed through those four stages representing past, present, and future, are residing. The Kingdom of Heaven on earth is such a world established here on earth. The Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world is automatically created through the kingdom on earth. (277-192, 1996.4.15)

The four great realms of heart bear fruit when a couple unites in love. The three great kingships are completed only when Adam and Eve give birth to sons and daughters. Only with the birth of sons and daughters are the three great kingships achieved. The grandfather who represents God represents the spirit world. Adam and Eve as the parents represent the present. The sons and daughters who represent the future come into being centering on Adam and Eve. This means the past, present and future are all represented. The origin (*jung*: 正) that has been divided (*bun*: 分) should be united (*hab*: 合) once again. (270-258, 1995.7.16)

Through their feelings upon their coming together at the time of their marriage, Adam and Eve are united vertically with God and horizontally between themselves, thus manifesting all the things God felt in the past but which could not manifest in the spirit world. From here, siblings are created and thus an original sphere of relationships emerges. This original sphere creates the realm of the royal family, within which the couple establishes kingship. The realm of the unity of three generations is created. Three generations become one. (270-268, 1995.7.16)

The grandfather is the king of the past. Since he stands in the position of God, he is the special envoy sent from heaven representing the spirit world. The realm of the mother and father, the realm of Adam and Eve, pertains to the king and queen of the nations of this world. The grandfather and grandmother stand in the position of the king and

queen of heaven. The father and mother are the king and queen representing the families of this world. Their descendants are the ones who inherit the union of these two kingships: the kingship of the grandfather representing the spirit world, and the present kingship representing the Kingdom of Heaven on earth.

Thus, sons and daughters should always be united with their parents and grandparents. The grandparents should always be united with their grandchildren centering on the parents. The parents, likewise, should be at one with the grandparents. The foundation of heaven will go awry if you deviate from this. (246-74, 1993.3.23)

No matter how great the difference in dimensions between heaven and earth, everything residing in these worlds consists of four stages. There is grandfather and grandmother even in the spirit world. There are people who are the age of your mother and father, the age of young adults, and the age of adolescents. If we condense this a little more, it becomes two people. Two people! (253-132, 1994.1.23)

You know about the four great realms of heart and the three great kingships. As couples, you must accomplish these things. If you can do this, you can freely come down to the earth from the spirit world at any time. (253-71, 1994.1.7)

The perfection of the four great realms of heart is made possible by a couple becoming one in love through marriage. If this unity is broken, then the realms of the children's heart, siblings' heart, couples' heart, and parents' heart will remain incomplete. You need to perfect these realms of heart in order to pass smoothly to the spirit world. Yet, because of the Fall, no one has ever achieved perfection in these realms of heart. This is why you need to carry out restoration through indemnity. (249-289, 1993.10.11)

4.3. The body should harmonize with the mind

You did not know that the conscience was your second God, the central aspect of your existence. You have to attend it more than you attend God. Attend your conscience more than you would the founders of religions, even Jesus. Then you can attain a position higher than that of believing in Jesus. Do not believe in me, the founder of the Unification Church. If you accept my teachings and become completely one with your conscience, you can go to heaven even without following me. You have to buy all the materials and study. A person who fails to open his conscience, establish himself as a liberated person, and attain unity between his body and conscience cannot go to heaven. I searched heaven, but I could not find such a person who had entered there in that way. Even now in the spirit world, people are lamenting and groaning in the midst of their course of cultivating their character. Amongst pastors, church elders,

and those who carried themselves with pride, there are many who are bound in chains upside down. (253-45, 1994.1.1)

You should liberate your conscience. Your mind is the guard post of heaven. Your body is the guard post of hell. Does your body drag your mind around or does your mind drag your body around? For those who believe in religion, their minds drag their bodies around. For those who do not believe in religion, their bodies will always drag their minds around. They live centering on themselves. That is the difference.

Therefore, each of you is the starting point of hell, and yet you are also the starting point of heaven. If you live according to your conscience, you will go to heaven. If you live according to your body, you will go to hell. If you live for the sake of others, you will go to heaven. If you insist on living for the sake of yourself, you will go to hell. When you go back home today, you should declare the liberation of your conscience. (252-257, 1994.1.1)

What is the relationship between mind and body? It is a partnership of subject and object. They should both exist for the sake of their partner. The mind lives for the body and the body for the mind. When they unite, you will have not five, but ten sensory organs. You will see and know the heavenly spirit world. Everyone will hear the music that comes from heaven. (283-253, 1997.4.13)

In the future, when people enter the Kingdom of Heaven the spiritualists will come forth. Those who committed evil will be pierced with a stick, as Jesus was pierced with a spear. You should be aware that a ruthless age will come. There have been kangaroo court trials, have there not? Although it will not be to that extent, you will want to avoid it, but will be unable to, and you will never be able to rest. Realizing that such an age will come, your mind and body should become one. (252-140, 1993.11.14)

If God exists in unity, any fallen being that contains internal struggle can only go to the place that is opposite to God. We call that place hell in both the spiritual and physical worlds. Evil things should go to hell. Everything must be put in order according to principles. Do you understand clearly? If your conscience and body continue to struggle without forming unity, will you be put away in hell or heaven? It will be hell! You should make your conscience and body one, sometime or other, before you die. Those who think they can go to heaven without bringing these into oneness are thinking nonsense. This is the conclusion. (258-309, 1994.3.20)

Satan is not to be found a long way off. He is connected to the self. Each of you is a dividing line between heaven and hell. Hell and heaven can be found within you. Your conscience is heaven, and your physical body is hell. Though your conscience is the subject partner, humankind fell. Through the practice of love, your conscience must become

one with love and stand in the position of the complete spiritual, intellectual, and eternal subject of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven. (256-51, 1994.3.12)

What is the human body? It is the central core of hell. It is the nucleus of that core. Then what is the conscience? It is the central core of heaven. These two are in continuous struggle. This is the problem. The greatest task in your life is how you are going to resolve this conflict. Thus, you should think of striking and controlling your body as one of your hobbies. Your conscience should constantly occupy the opposite territory and possess more and more of it. Then the physical body's dominance will gradually diminish.

You are expanding limited territory into the infinite world. You are living for the sake of the eternal world. Thus, you continue to dominate your physical body and go all the way to the spirit world. You should go on until the body can naturally follow the conscience. The Kingdom of Heaven on earth cannot come without having achieved this. Otherwise, you will not be able to restore the original state where body and mind can unite based on original true love having nothing to do with the Fall. (254-221, 1994.2.13)

Heaven is where the God of goodness reigns and hell is where the devil rules. What is heaven like? It is a place where things are built. Hell is where things are destroyed. This is the difference. The collision between this construction and destruction within you is the struggle of your mind and body. (261-196, 1994.6.19)

Since mind and body are united within God, those born as the ideal sons and daughters will naturally have unity of mind and body. They will live in harmony on the earth and then pass on to the heavenly spirit world. People whose mind and body are in conflict will not be able to go there. God does not like seeing such forms of existence.

Therefore, what is the hope of humanity? It is that a master and parent who can stop this struggle will come. Since human division originated from false parents, true parents must come and teach the truth in a clear and logical way. Since humankind broke down somewhere, heaven will remain eternally remote from the earth unless a movement is initiated on earth that can restore the essential point of breakdown. (261-300, 1994.7.24)

How much has humankind sacrificed the conscience for the body? Do you know the history of the conscience that you have trampled upon for your entire life? Your conscience is exhausted in caring for you day and night. Yet, it tirelessly blocks the body's desire to go toward misconduct. It says, "You have done enough. It is time to quit. It is now time to listen to me?" The closest being to you and the one that stands as the representative of the ideal teacher, parent, and God, is your conscience. The mind itself does not need to be educated, but

the body absolutely needs to be educated. (214-282, 1991.2.3)

Throughout their lives, everyone keeps the most precious teacher in their heart. Yet, they mistreat this teacher, trample on him, and abuse him. This teacher is your conscience. Your conscience always tells you things in order to help you and strives to connect you to true love. Like a parent, your conscience urges you to become a good and selfless person. It guides you according to God's will. However, a rebel inside your mind always challenges your conscience. That rebel is your physical desires. (201-208, 1990.4.9)

Mind and body cannot be achieved without true love. Thus, the mind sacrifices itself for the body and still forgets, repeatedly. The mind is in the position representing God and thus is your greatest teacher. The mind is your center that God sent as His manifestation. It is the vertical you. (226-60, 1992.2.1)

When I was young, I did everything that I could to control my body. I slept with my eyes open for seven consecutive nights. You men should likewise learn to discipline your bodies so that even if you slept among numerous beautiful women and touched the triangular area of those beautiful women, your organ should remain unmoved. Those who cannot control their body cannot go to heaven. (263-100, 1994.8.21)

Where are the root of heaven and the root of hell? They are not the world. The world of the Last Days is neither heaven nor hell. Where is the root of heaven and hell? You should realize that it will always be in your mind and body. People have not understood this. Numerous saints came, gave their teachings, and tried to apply them to the world of human relationships. Nevertheless, they failed to destroy the root of the struggles that occur within the self. Unity should begin from there. It has to begin from the root. (263-199, 1994.10.4)

The satanic world goes to hell. God's world goes to heaven. A world that lives for its own sake will go to hell, while one that lives for the whole purpose will go to heaven. The crossing point of good and evil lies within oneself.

When the mind and body come together, the former tries to live for the greater good, while the latter tries to live for the individual. The mind and body always struggle; one adopts a public-minded position and the other a self-centered position. You should reject your birth from false love, false life, and false lineage. You should cut off these things and be restored to life by engrafting yourself to true love, true life, and true lineage. The individual and humankind need to follow this path. This is the conclusion.

Religion emerged for the purpose of subjugating the body and making it one with the mind. Having accomplished that, you should unite with true love and give birth to sons and daughters who can go to heaven after living on the

earth. Without believing and practicing God's word, you cannot give birth to true sons and daughters who can go to heaven. Thus, a religion should appear that can subjugate the body, making it one with the conscience. When people become one with the True Parents and engraft to them, then wild olive trees will become true olive trees and give birth to true sons and daughters. After living on the earth, they will ascend to the spirit world and enter heaven for eternity. This is the ideal of creation. (263-281, 1994.10.15)

You should resolve the war inside yourself at the earliest possible date. It is not possible to enter heaven without ending this war while you are still living on earth. Otherwise, you will be caught forever in an unsavory place in the spirit world. Your parents are not the problem, your families are not the problem, and your tribe is not the problem. You, yourself, will be caught in an instant. (264-121, 1994.10.9)

Those who cannot unite their mind and body cannot go to heaven. They are not true beings. Even if a heavenly nation is established, you should know that a seven-year course based on the family will remain for each individual to accomplish. You have to go through this harsh course.

A snake passes through a narrow crack between the rocks to remove its skin. The larger the snake, the more laborious this is. It is easy for the small ones, but for the larger ones it is painful. Is there a crevice that would allow a large serpent to pass through and remove its skin? The serpent should remove all of its skin by keeping low on the ground. Hence, the larger it is, the more difficult it is. Do you think world unification is difficult? Then consider how difficult it will be for the unification of the spirit world. (303-264, 1999.9.9)

We should be constantly aware of the fact that Satan's blood is coursing through our veins. The mission of putting an end to this and eliminating the root is the course of our lifetime. It begins in our daily lives. Without eliminating Satan's blood, you will be brought down in the eternal world.

As you seek the path to enter heaven, you need to find a model course through which you can apply the formula God created. Do you not think this is how it should be? There is a formula. If you want to graduate from school, you have to go through all the school courses, get your credits and receive your diploma. In the same way, there is a course for going to Heaven and upon its completion can say, "With this, I have graduated." There must be a formula for entering heaven. (263-81, 1994.8.21)

In the spirit world, your conscience becomes your body and God appears as the conscience to that body. Your conscience becomes God's body. When you enter the mystical world and ask, "God, where are you?" He will answer from inside of you, "Here, I am here!" People have gone through many such experiences. For this reason, one hears

it said that humankind is God. (250-156, 1993.10.14)

When you enter the mysterious spirit world and pray, "Where is God?" the answer, "Why are you asking this?" will come from deep within you. You are experiencing such things. Even without your knowing, He will speak words such as "Do not go there." If you act against this, you will run into trouble. Who is speaking? It is God speaking. If you pray earnestly, you will enter a state in which you have such mystical experiences. (249-223, 1993.10.10)

4.4. Heaven and hell are divided based upon absolute sex

The first love relationship between a man and a woman is their time for meeting God. The moment of the first love relationship after marriage is the point at which the husband is perfected as a man. He rules over God's entire world of plus as an antenna. He represents all male-types and right-sided beings. The negative electrical charge and positive electrical charge meet at exactly the same point at the top of the antenna. The point where a husband and wife make love is where they are both perfected.

The royal palace of love can begin from that place and establish itself on earth as the center of heaven and earth. It is the origin of perfected love, and life can be connected from there. Is this not so? The lineage is connected to that place. At the same time, a heavenly nation is created from there. The Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world begins from the first perfected love relationship, from that place where the gate of the first perfected love is opened. Humankind has not understood this. (261-16, 1994.5.15)

Do you know about the original palace of love? The first love relationship is the beginning point of the Kingdom of Heaven both on earth and in the spirit world. It is where man and woman are absolutely united into one. In the absolute state of unified masculinity and femininity within God, God's invisible internal nature and external form could divide and start the process of creating human beings. Similarly, man and woman give birth to sons and daughters by becoming one in love. Human beings are creating, in the visible, substantial realm, that which was created by the invisible God.

Love is the power that can join lineages. What is the central axis that can bring together different lineages? What is the power plant? It is the first love between the convex and concave parts of man and woman. From that love, for the first time, electricity begins to be generated through the love relationship. That place is the epicenter for the generation of true love, true life, true lineage, and a true family on earth, as well as the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world. Those who ignore this cannot truly exist. They can only go to hell. There is no way around this. (259-229, 1994.4.10)

You have to realize the importance of the love organs of man and woman. God comes down through them. God's liberation begins from them. God can begin to sing and dance around them. They are connected to the royal palace of love, to the eternal royal palace. The gate of the first love relationship of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world opens in that place. Does this seem true or false?

Were you all aware of how valuable this was when you were single? Your first love is important. If your first love goes away, the whole universe goes to hell. This is where everything was lost: the royal palace of love, the royal palace of life, the future history of true lineage, and the origin of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world. What would be the fate of the one whose first love went wrong? There exists a set of principles and laws, yet what is his fate? He will have no place to continue to exist. He will be thrown out. People were created to live forever, but they are going to waste. Onto the wasteland they go. They end up living upside-down. (261-27, 1994.5.15)

Where is the original place where the perfection of man, woman, and even God is brought about? Where can God's love be perfected? Where can man and woman be perfected? Where is the central place of settlement? These are the issues. The heaven that emerges from the ideal of love cannot expand on the earth without knowing where that place is. Is that place your eyes, your nose, your hand, or your feet? Where is it? (261-167, 1994.6.9)

The place where man and woman, convex and concave, unite is the place where God is perfected. That is where woman, who is one half, and man, who is the other half, is perfected. The land of settlement, where the ideal of God's love can be perfected, begins from the place where concave and convex unite and the first love relationship is established after marriage. The first love relationship of man and woman represents the place where the object partner of God is perfected. This is the core of the universe. When this moves, the entire universe swings back and forth in harmony. It is the base for the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world.

Since this is the origin of love, it is called the original palace of love. Among the many royal palaces, the central palace is called the original palace. This is the original palace of love, life, and lineage, and the origin of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world. It is the place where the freedom, happiness, and peace longed for by humanity begin. This place is the royal palace for love, life, lineage, and all creation. The individual, family, tribe, and race are connected from here. You should understand that it is the original source and starting point of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world. It is also the origin of freedom, happiness, and peace. If a woman does not have a man, she is in absolute darkness. If a man does not have a woman, he is in

absolute darkness. (261-173, 1994.6.9)

Where is the greatest place a man can worship? Is it a woman's face? Is it her breasts? Is it her body? Where is it? There is only one place where concave and convex can fit together. The natural environment, the society, nation, world, universe, and Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world are brought into connection by this place. This is the iron rule and formula for the existing world. (262-55, 1994.7.23)

The base of peace and everything that constitutes the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world arises from love. What kind of love? Is it man's love, woman's love, or the combined love of man and woman? It is the combined love. Where does the love of a man and woman come together? Is it combined at the face? Is it combined at the fingertips? It is combined at the concave and convex organs. (263-52, 1994.8.16)

God's wedding is Adam and Eve's wedding. Consequently, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and the Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world are created at the same time. They begin from the love nest. The moment a man and woman unite through their sexual organs without committing the Fall is the origin of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world. That place is the base upon which the three great kingships should be established. The love nest can be built in no other place. (263-57, 1994.8.16)

Since the first love relationship is the starting point for establishing the ideal heaven, it is the royal place of love. It is the royal palace. The sexual organs are the royal place of love. In order for it to become a royal palace, you have to be married centered on God. Through married life, the royal palace of love is created. How is a couple united? Are they united through the lips when a man kisses a woman? They are united through the concave and convex organs. This is a tremendous discovery. Through this love relationship, the entire being of a man and the entire being of a woman are completely united. From here, the lineages of man and woman are brought together and, for the first time, amid a vortex, a new history is connected and established based on a new life. It does not end with one generation. The eternal history is connected. The Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world begins from this place. (263-122, 1994.8.21)

A wife lives for the sake of her husband's love organ. She lives for love, life, and her sons and daughters. All women like babies. Women have large breasts and large hips for the sake of the baby. Their attributes should be locked up. Where can we find the original place of the three great palaces of true love, life, and lineage? This is a fundamental issue for human beings. This is the root of the family, society, and nation, and the root and origin of the earth, the spirit world, and the Kingdom of Heaven. (252-104, 1993.11.14)

The original palace of love is the royal palace that perfects God and brings solace to Him. How is this achieved? The royal palace emerges at the unified meeting point of Adam and Eve's convex and concave sexual organs. That is a truly great place. Thus, the sexual organs are called the original palace of love. These are amazing words. The original palace of love is the royal palace that perfects the entire creation of heaven and earth and also provides a place of settlement for all, even God. The Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world and on earth does not come first. Heaven begins from the family. That is the original palace. These are amazing words.

The place of conjugal unity is the original palace based on true love, true life, and true lineage. It is the origin of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world. Without this unity, the original world of the Kingdom of Heaven, the spiritual realm, and the earthly realm of human beings cannot be established.

This amazing place of true love has been vulgarized. Since it became the cause of national ruin and destroyed heaven and earth, it has been treated as the most evil thing to this day. Originally, it was something holy. You teachers, do you understand? When you get up in the morning, you should greet your love organ, saying, "Good morning!" You should know that this very place is the place that enables you to attend the love of your greatest ancestors rather than the ancestors themselves. (263-347, 1994.10.27)

If you use your love organ recklessly, you will be punished. It is the royal palace of love, the ancestral garden of love. Love, life, and even history started from that place. It is the origin of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world. The origin of God's happiness is formed there. The basis for God's smile starts from there. That is the very place where God can find love and dance with joy. You have to search for and find that place. Is this right or not? This is how precious it is. (256-199, 1994.3.13)

The fact that the flower of God and the flower of human beings blossom from love allows the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world to emerge. Thus, the phrase, "True love is the flower of complete perfection," makes sense. In this regard, each of you inherited from God the ability to create new life through the conjugal relationship. How great is the glorious position of being able to feel the joy God felt, and to experience the eternal existence of God deeply and substantially? (256-235, 1994.3.13)

If you wish to become a beautiful person in heaven, you should harmonize with the flower of love that blooms in all its glory, express the beauty and the fragrance of that flower in the world of relationships, and live on this earth in a manner that can harbor new seeds from that flower. When you pass on to the spirit world after living in this way, you will appear in the same way in the eternal world. (256-170, 1994.3.13)

The woman's sexual organs are the source of the universe. The place where you hold a relationship of love becomes the original palace of love. It is the original palace. Love begins from there. The first love relationship of a blessed marriage is the start of the original palace of love. The life of the woman and the life of the man become one for the first time. Therefore, that place is the original palace of ideal life and the original lineage begins from there. Thus, that place becomes the original palace of the lineage.

Heaven also begins from there, so that place also becomes the original palace for the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world, and the original palace of human perfection and God's perfection. (257-324, 1994.3.16)

When human beings fell, it was because of love. Thus, the sexual organs are the most terrifying thing. Religion regards the act of adultery as the sin to be most feared. So then, is free sex in America part of the devil's doctrine for expanding hell, or a doctrine for expanding heaven? It is a part of the devil's doctrine. It is the kingdom of hell on earth and the kingdom of hell in the spirit world. All of it will be destroyed. (261-302, 1994.7.24)

I searched for all manner of truth. I looked into the spirit world and the physical world and inquired into all the scriptures. Yet, there were no answers to my questions. Does God exist or not? If God exists, He would not leave the world the way it is. I fought to reach a conclusion about these issues.

What are the fundamental principles regarding the birth of humankind? Why was humankind born? Man was born for the sake of woman. This is the greatest truth of all truths. The ideal man is the greatest truth for a woman. This is the essence of the truth of the ideal that perfects the entire universe. For a man, an ideal woman is also the essence of the truth of the universe. She is an absolute embodiment of truth. (267-230, 1995.1.8)

I never imagined that the fundamental problems humanity has struggled with, to this day, had such a simple and straightforward solution. I went through terrible hardships. Not knowing how simple the solutions were, I entered the spirit world and searched through things that were extremely repulsive and suffered all sorts of hardships. In the end, I discovered that the solutions existed within each one of us. I exclaimed, "Ah! This is what I did not know!" The answers lie within us. This is inspiring! The entire universe is inside you. It is inside every one of us. (199-314, 1990.2.21)

The truth is not found outside of ourselves. Each one of us is equipped with the truth. It is not something that can be learned anywhere else. I myself searched everywhere for the truth, but I could not find it anywhere in the universe. I searched all over the spirit world, throughout the earthly world, and suffered in the pursuit of discovering it,

but in the end, I realized God has given everything to us. It was a big surprise. I had not known until then, but all the answers lie within us. (263-97, 1994.8.21)

4.5. Conjugal love is the central flower of the ideal of love

God has the attributes of vertical dual characteristics and human beings are substantial entities that have attributes of horizontal dual characteristics. The ideal of the husband and wife is the unity of God and human beings in a perfect sphere, actually the shape of an apple. They are the parent body consisting of four shapes of internal nature connecting the ideals of love from the north, south, east, and west. (127-99, 1983.5.5)

If you are married, you no longer exist just in a horizontal plane. Although you as an individual only have a two-dimensional base, the vertical concept comes into being when high connects to low. A two-dimensional history might bring order to the universe, but it will not bring order to the cosmos. When the vertical meets the horizontal at a ninety degree angle, it all fits together, whether you replace heaven with the earth, or the earth with heaven, or front with back, or back with front, or between any correlative aspects – left, right, top, bottom, front, or back. The standard for the perfection of the physical world leads to the complete perfection of the spirit world. (230-259, 1992.5.8)

While on earth, you have to paint the absolute ideal of husband and wife, establish an artistic couple, and draw a picture of love never created before. The passing over to the spirit world with this picture is the beginning of a journey into an infinite, eternal, and heavenly world. There, you do not need money. You do not need food. You do not need clothes. If there is something you want to give to your beloved partner, it will be your privilege to give it to them. If you want to clothe your partner with garments of gold or anything imaginable on earth, then, by maintaining an earnest and giving heart of love, the object will appear. You will be able to travel anywhere you like. You will be free wherever you go. (271-281, 1995.8.28)

You have to make your family life into a work of art. You have to become a pleasing and artistic husband. If you find something good in a magazine, you should bring it home and read it with a soothing voice to your wife when she is about to fall asleep. If you dream of your wife while falling asleep after having been deeply moved by this, your dream will be substantiated. This way of life will continue into the spirit world. How wonderful this is! Would you like to live like this, or would you like to live as very drab couples? If you wish to live such a life, you have to assume a new direction with a fresh mind-set enabling you to possess good vitality. This is the basic requirement. (271-282, 1995.8.28)

When you enter the spirit world, you will not need to farm but rather you will

just eat and be at leisure. Then how will you enjoy yourself? You have to think about this. Do you think you would become bored? How would you enjoy your life if you were not involved in any disputes? How can you enjoy life without something that you would never tire of, even in a thousand years, something you would enjoy touching and listening to for thousands of years, even for billions of years? Food, you can eat everyday. Spirit world is a place where you easily can find anything you wish to eat and do anything you like. (279-21, 1996.6.9)

There, you would live a mobile lifestyle. (203-57, 1990.6.14)

If you watch TV for a month, you come to know everything about how people live in this world. Everything becomes very predictable and you become tired of it. This is why you have to understand the spirit world. You must know the spirit world.

When you offer your prayer with sincerity, the image of the spirit world will unfold. How wonderful that will be! Angels will come down and dance. Even those famous people from hundreds of years ago will gather to dance. How wonderful! These are not fanciful ideas. (203-57, 1990.6.14)

In the original world, all elements are connected, as the parts of a plant are connected to the root. The sap, leaves, and flowers growing from the same roots will all be of the same strain. If you can harmonize with the essential elements coming from your roots, then, when there is unity, there is nothing extra you need to learn.

Can any one draw his or her own face with total accuracy? Why do you need a drawing when each of you has something even greater? What use is a picture when you can have a beautiful couple with the ideal of love, a couple blossoming through the relationship of man and woman? This is how precious love is. The greatest masterpieces among paintings themselves are yearning to praise the love of the ideal couple. You do not realize how valuable this is.

When people wear colorful clothes, they do so in such a way that reflects and harmonizes with the environment in accordance with the seasons. All sorts of cultures and the arts have developed in empathy with and as an expression of love of the environment. (202-92, 1990.5.6)

If your spirit self lives for eternity after entering the spirit world, who would you seek out? Your mother or father? Your elder brother or elder sister? Your children? It would not be your children. It would not be your elder brother or sister, nor would it be your mother or father. It would be your spouse. Why?

You feel tremendous joy and fulfillment in having given birth to and having raised children. The joy of giving birth to a baby for the first time, after living as a couple, is the most stimulating. Amidst that joy, your heart goes out most to the first son. With one mind, the husband and wife both invest their heart in the baby. This is why the first

child if often loved the most. The difference between the first son and second son is that the first son received more love. The same can be said for the first daughter. The first son and first daughter are, undoubtedly, the extension of the father and the extension of the mother. (258-242, 1994.3.20)

When human beings reach perfection, God's internal nature enters the mind of man, and God's external form enters the mind of woman. The substantial marriage ceremony for Adam and Eve becomes God's marriage ceremony. You will know this clearly when you go to the spirit world. This incomprehensible theory is correct. So, where is God? Where can He be found in relation to the couple? He is in the womb. This is where God is found. This is where the root of love is. I have revealed, for the first time in history, the systematic arrangement of the spirit world and its composition. (252-119, 1993.11.14)

Do you think God does not look at your couple when you are making love? It is all public. It is publicly in view before the entire spirit world. It is a big mistake to say that God does not see you. Your ancestors are all watching you. In the spirit world, you can see the act of love right before your eyes. You are being watched as if you were doing it standing on the palm of their hand. Therefore, it is a big mistake to try to hide this. (250-244, 1993.10.15)

All the harmonies and phenomena of this world that come out of love are as a fragrance to God. God wants to live within this beautiful fragrance and so He is seeking it. God's love descends to the place of sexual relationship between husband and wife. This is where all creation and the universe are harmonized. (Blessed Family - 889)

If you think about a royal palace of love, there is a royal palace in the spirit world and a royal palace on the earth. Where do these palaces make contact? That is the question. In other words, where do human beings and God meet? The sexual organs that bring the unity of true love are the original land. Since this is the original land, in terms of palaces, it becomes the original palace. This is the palace that God initiates, and it is the first thing He initiates. It is the original palace. (265-215, 1994.11.21)

After happily living together with your spouse, what will you think about when you pass away? You will always think about the love organ. You will remember your spouse's face and kiss. The only memories that remain after going to the spirit world are the ones about the union of the love organs when the husband and wife kissed and made love. Would you want to pass away holding and kissing the love organ? (269-57, 1995.4.7)

Through love, you are born as an incarnation of God and you live by love. You give birth to sons and daughters in order to reach the destination of love

and you return to God in order to live with Him for eternity. Therefore, when you become completely united in love, you come to resemble God. When a couple comes into union, completely fulfills these three stages of life, and goes to the spirit world, they become an object partner god before God, who is the eternal subject partner. This happens when a couple lives and passes away centering on true love. Thus, human beings begin life with God and end their life with God. (207-36, 1990.10.21)

Men and women should live intoxicated by conjugal love. This is their aspiration. If they are attending their parents, they should want to live amidst their parents' love and the love of the family. That is the ideal and source of happiness. Happiness does not exist elsewhere. No matter how much you like the spirit world, after you go there, what will you do? I will seek out Mother. I will look for Mother.

There are two mothers. One who gave birth to you as a baby and the other who gave birth to your sons and daughters. Two mothers live in one household: your mother who gave birth to you and the mother of your sons and daughters. There is also your father's mother, your grandmother. This is why you love your mother. Is it not so? (174-250, 1988.3.1)

Each of you resembles God. You also resemble the perfected Adam and Eve. You resemble both parents. Since these are united as one, your mind and body do not struggle against each other. Man and woman do not struggle against each other. They are completely one. A new fountain gushes forth in the perfected place where the spirit world and physical world are one, where God the Creator and the creation are one and complete. This is the starting point for peace. It is the beginning of happiness. It is the beginning of the ideal and of hope. All these things were lost and hence, should be restored. (254-281, 1994.2.15)

In the spirit world, you will find that those born as men, who lived alone and died single, are not in a good place. They cannot go to a good place. In these circumstances, they lower their heads when they gaze upon God and look down before Him. God asks, "Hey you, why are you looking down?" If the tip of the male's organ is pointing downwards, the man can only look down. What does that mean? How can a monk, born as a man, not knowing the harmony of heaven and earth, the union of yin and yang, and conjugal love, understand the way of love, which is the center of the great principle of heaven and earth? (197-24, 1990.1.7)

If you go to the spirit world without giving birth to and raising sons and daughters, you will have to stay on one side. You will not be free to move about. You will be in shame. Thus, those who emphasize a single life are under the direct line of the devil. The devil, Satan, will be driven out in the Last Days. Even so, such people will follow Satan. The devil was once the archangel. He does

not live with the ideal of loving a spouse. Consequently, when that age comes, the young people will fall into ruin; the older men and women will grow weary of love, and sink into the devil's love, leading a single life. Those who lead a single life will all end up in hell. (228-263, 1992.7.5)

Those who live a single life stand as criminals before God's original will. Those who practice birth control and declare they will not have children will go to the other world and face the words of judgment: "Through your sons and daughters, I was going to send the prince and princess that would govern the universe! Shame on you!" Once you pass into the spirit world, these things will be known in an instant. You would come to know of this in a moment. God was trying to bring blessings to your generation and tribe through the merits of your ancestors who had worked hard through thousands and tens of thousands of years of bitter painful history. Yet, you were the one who cut off that channel. (264-150, 1994.10.9)

Widows will have a hard time in the other world. I do not mean widows, but those who live alone. What do you call them? I mean those single women who never married, and those men who die single. After they die, people call them bachelor ghosts. What do you call them while they are still alive? A bachelor ghost is a dead person. What is the word? What do we call them? A single woman? Single people have a hard time in the spirit world. They are not able to harmonize with anyone wherever they go. When a single woman goes to the groups of women or when a single man goes to the groups of men, they have no place to stand on. They have nowhere to go. So they head for a shadowy place, a world of shade. They cannot turn around. Harmony is possible centered on love in all directions: east, west, south, and north. Since they are stuck in one direction, they cannot turn back. You will see for yourself when you pass to the spirit world. (194-42, 1989.10.15)

You should not stain your Blessing lineage. All of you should be fully aware of this. Your lineage is your asset that will enable you to succeed to and inherit heaven. It is like a document of your blood relatives, or deed papers to your lineage. It is the equivalent of your genealogy. The issue is how you protect your purity. (263-62, 1994.8.16)

4.6. Entering heaven as a family unit

Our families and the Kingdom of Heaven have similar characteristics. There are parents, husband and wife, children, and brothers and sisters in a family. The household can be united through love. In a family, unification can be established, life can be connected, and the ideal can be realized. Therefore, you can become qualified to enter the Kingdom of Heaven when you respect conjugal love and parental love. Grandparents hand down love to parents, who

hand down love to husband and wife, who hand down love to children.

If you deny any one of these, the Kingdom of Heaven cannot be established. You should love your parents more than you love your spouse, and you should love your grandparents more than you love your parents. This is the essence of Heaven and the ideal motto. (Blessed Family - 946)

As God is the original substance of true love, when one is connected to true love, everyone becomes part of one body. Parents are gods living in God's stead on earth, husband and wife are mutual counterpart gods, and sons and daughters are little gods. A family structure comprising three generations centering on true love in this manner is the basis of the Kingdom of Heaven. Without achieving such a basis, the kingdom cannot be established. The family is the center of the universe. The perfection of the family is the basis for the perfection of the universe, so if there is love in a family and love for the universe, you can freely go anywhere. In this case, God stands in the combined central position of love as the Parent of the whole universe. (298-306, 1999.1.17)

The four-position foundation of the Unification Principle is the realm of love of three generations. When three generations live together in one household in love and happiness, the ideal of the creation of heaven and earth is established. Naturally, husband and wife should love each other and they should pray for their children with love and sincerely care for them in order to create a happy and harmonious family. When this is accomplished vertically through three generations and connected horizontally with relatives, perfect love is established. Even cousins and second cousins should become one in love to form the perfect shape of love. (Blessed Family - 947)

The family is the basic unit of the Kingdom of Heaven. Once you enter the Kingdom of Heaven, you would never want to leave, because "The One" with whom you want to meet ten times and even hundreds of times, dwells there. If all humankind had a common desire to enter there and wanted to meet and live with "The One," the world could be unified right away. The Unification Church is heading towards that destination. However, this cannot happen all at once. First, an individual foundation should be established, followed by the family foundation, which then extends to the people, nation, and world. (12-180, 1963.4.1)

Where does the life in the Kingdom of Heaven begin? It starts in a family. It does not start anywhere else. The Kingdom of Heaven is the spherically extended form of a family. It is not something wholly outside the domain of a family. Therefore, you have to think you are embracing your spouse so that the men and women of the world may become one. The family is the place where you can erect the foundation for loving the whole of humankind. (30-82, 1970.3.17)

What is the world of God's ideal of creation? It is a world where the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world is established through the authority of the True Parents. The Kingdom of Heaven can only be established on the foundation of love. In the fallen world, no one received the love of true parents; there is no trace of it. Since this has been the case on earth, the same situation also applies for people who have passed to the spirit world. Man's love, woman's love, son's love, daughter's love, parents' love, and God's love are all included in the original family-level foundation centering on God. Whoever loves their parents, spouse, and children in such a harmonized manner leads the life of the Kingdom of Heaven. (Blessed Family - 946)

What is the mission of the Unification Church? It is different from other religions of the past that have emphasized individual salvation. The Unification Church wants to build the original ideal world as it was before the Fall. When people perfect themselves in heart, marry with God's love at the center of their relationship, and give birth to children, they can enter the Kingdom of Heaven that is the original ideal world.

How can people claim it is the Kingdom of Heaven if the father goes to hell while the mother goes to heaven or if the parents go to heaven while the children go to hell? The Kingdom of Heaven is the place everyone goes to – parents and children, tribes, peoples, and nations. (42-286, 1971.3.27)

God's ideal for the Kingdom of Heaven on earth can be established for the first time in the place where heaven is established on the family level. This should become a four-position foundation. In the Unification Principle, the perfection of the ideal of creation is the perfection of the four-position foundation. Why is this so? It is because the four-position foundation is established when the world of vertical relationships and the world of horizontal relationships are created through three stages, centering on God and Adam and Eve. The horizontal world can unfold only through Adam and Eve's sons and daughters. When this happens, the vertical world forms naturally. Considering the body, the children are the horizontal extension or multiplication of the body and the spirit world is the horizontal extension of the mind. God is able to come down there for the first time. Thus, the Kingdom of Heaven is manifested on the earth. (96-29, 1978.1.1)

The Unification Church view of salvation is not just that the husband goes to heaven while the wife goes to hell. Both have to be together. You cannot let your father and mother go to hell. You should bring them, as well as your sons and daughters, to the Kingdom of Heaven.

The Unification Church is on a different level of teaching from any other religion since it shows the way to enter into the Kingdom of Heaven with the family and with the tribe whom we love. This is why the Unification Church

emphasizes the family while other religions emphasize the single way of life. The family-centered way is the way to go. This kind of family lives for the sake of God and the world. This is the way for Unification Church members to follow. (34-359, 1970.9.20)

The Unification Church teaches that salvation absolutely cannot come to you as an individual alone. Individually, you cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. You cannot enter by yourself alone. This is the principle. In the Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve would have been able to enter the Kingdom of Heaven together. Could the husband, Adam, or the wife, Eve, have entered the Kingdom of Heaven alone? You cannot enter the kingdom without the unity of husband and wife and family. This is the ideal. What kind of heaven is it if the father goes to hell and the mother goes to heaven? You should enter the Kingdom of Heaven as a couple, a family, and furthermore, with the relatives and tribe, and ultimately the whole nation. (50-63, 1971.10.31)

You should attend your grandfather like God, and your father and mother like the parents who can unify the world. Your grandfather is the special envoy of the heavenly world, and your father is the ambassador plenipotentiary to this world. You should think of yourself as growing to become the ambassador plenipotentiary, the son and daughter, and inheritor of two kingdoms: the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and the Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world. Then, you will surely go directly to the Kingdom of Heaven.

Such people would have gone to the kingdom. Some Christians today, however, teach that the way to Heaven is through faith alone, but they need to exercise the greatest caution in promoting this narrow assertion. They should try going to the spirit world to see what happens. They will be stunned. They would say, "I never knew that it would be like this. How can this be?"

What do I mean? There are heavenly principles and there are consequences of deviating from them. There may be tens of thousands of people who believe a certain way, but if they are wrong, every one of them will enter a dung-filled pit. You therefore must seek a principled standard of life. (249-265, 1993.10.10)

Your grandfather is the special envoy of heaven. If Adam's family had not fallen, the grandfather would have been attended like God. Your grandfather is the last remaining master amongst your ancestors who have all passed away to the spirit world throughout history. Consequently, he is God's representative, and your father is the king of the families of this world. Your parents are the king and queen of the families of all the six billion of humankind today. (246-198, 1993.4.16)

The grandfather symbolizes the spirit world, the heavenly world. Therefore, you should attend him like God. He is the ambassador plenipotentiary of heaven. Since the father and mother

symbolize the present, they are the king and queen representing all the families of humanity in this world. The parents are the king and queen that represent humanity. The sons and daughters represent the future. They are the future princes and princesses who will inherit the kingships of two worlds: the spirit world and the earthly world. (246-256, 1993.4.18)

The grandfather symbolizes the past. The subject partner of the past ages is heaven, the spirit world. The grandfather can be called the representative who connects the spirit world with the earth. He is God's ambassador who connects God and all the good things in heaven to his family on earth. Who is the ambassador for the Kingdom of God? It is the grandfather. (249-304, 1993.10.11)

The family is the model for forming a nation. The family represents the first stage. The nation starts from the family foundation. You should know this. Within the family, you find three stages: the grandfather and grandmother, the father and mother, and the children. These three stages of the family can be expanded in the process of forming the nation and world. Through the family, not only can you connect to this world but also to the spirit world. When you observe the world, you find a grandparent level, parent level, and child level. If you can expand all the things that are being practiced in the family to the world, you can easily fit in wherever you go. (225-166, 1992.1.12)

When you look at a family, you find a grandfather and grandmother, a father and mother, and sons and daughters. This makes three generations. All throughout history, this is the way it has always been. The grandparents represent your ancestors in heaven who have passed away to the spirit world. They are the ambassadors plenipotentiary sent to your household. So, like whom should you attend your grandfather and grandmother? You should attend them like God. By attending them in this way, heaven will begin. (226-56, 1992.2.1)

Why do you need to have sons and daughters? There is a principle that states you have to enter the spirit world with your family. Originally, your descendants were to be born from the combination of the love that came vertically from God and horizontally from the parents, that is, the coming together of the vertical and horizontal lineages of God and the parents. Therefore, those who do not have descendants cannot harmonize heaven and earth when they go to the spirit world, nor can they keep in rhythm with the north, south, east, and west. Without having descendants, you cannot have a place in the other world for enjoyment and rest. (297-269, 1998.12.19)

You should give birth to sons and daughters and be able to train them in the traditional way of the family. You should become the head of your tribe and eventually pass into the spirit world. When you enter the spirit world, the perfection of children, siblings, couples,

and parents should be complete. (226-156, 1992.2.4)

You should first endeavor to become a filial son or daughter centering on the parents in the family, and then you can go on to become a patriot in relation to the nation. Following on from this, you should become a saint in relation to the world. A saint is a person who loves the world.

A divine son is God's son. Therefore, he loves God, the palace laws of the heavenly kingdom, and the people who live in the palace. Since such people live centering on God's love, they respect the life of love and the lineage of love. The ideal land that human beings seek for should be a place where they respect these things and are able to live anywhere on this earth as if it were their hometown. When people who live like this enter the spirit world, they will go directly before God without any reserve. (209-16, 1990.11.24)

4.7. Heaven is a life of living for the sake of others

The Kingdom of Heaven is where those who have made sacrifices for others become the masters. The family should sacrifice for the sake of the tribe, the tribe for the people, the people for the nation, the nation for the world, the world for the cosmos, and the cosmos for God. The ultimate purpose is in reaching God and occupying Him. The highest ideal for all living beings is to occupy God's love. This is their highest goal. Human beings are given this privilege. (249-49, 1993.10.7)

In the spirit world, people who valued those around them and who served and sacrificed for the whole can go to a higher level. This is the common character of the people of heaven. What kind of people go to the higher realms of the spirit world? They are those who invest everything, invest like God, and invest and forget about what they have invested. Those who brought many people to God's side for the sake of the salvation of humanity can enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Your position and situation in the spirit world is determined by the number of citizens you raised up for the Kingdom of Heaven. (249-80, 1993.10.8)

When you go to the spirit world, you will clearly know how miserable those men and women are who failed to live for the sake of others, who failed to live with love. In heaven, there are only people who live for the sake of others. If you can live like that here on earth, you will swiftly rise to God as you are. Since I have known this, I have not wanted to show myself until this time. I let all my disciples go in front of me and let them stand in a glorious position. (202-249, 1990.5.24)

If you search for that which is true, you have to make your body live absolutely for the sake of your mind. When these become one, you can stand in a spiritually upright position directly connected to heaven and earth centering on

God and you would know everything about the whole situation wherever you go, to the north, south, east, west, high, or low. You would automatically connect to the spirit world. You would know without having to learn. How did I come to know everything about the secrets of heaven and earth? I found out everything after achieving that kind of state.

After having reached the state where the mind and body resonated centering on true love, everything became clear. I could experience God fully. I could see the world of heaven. I could see history. I could see everything. Why? God's principles for His original ideal of creation provide the requisite environment that enables us to relate and bond through true love and lead an ideal life. Therefore, on entering that state, I had access to everything. I could call upon my ancestors in the spirit world and they would immediately appear; and I was able to ask them anything. (199-372, 1990.2.21)

What kind of being is the God who created this universe and its laws? He is the one who stands in the representative position of having lived for the sake of others more than anyone else has. This is God. Therefore, in order to meet Him, you have to live for the sake of others. Even though He is the great king of knowledge, He does not ask you to come to Him with knowledge. God is also the great king of power, yet He does not ask you to come with power. He is also the master and great king of authority, money, and material, but His desire is not for people to gather these things. If you live for the sake of others, everything can come to you. (133-16, 1984.7.1)

The original homeland only welcomes those people who lived for God, were born for others, and lived and died for others. This is the fundamental nature of the original homeland. Therefore, God raised many religions throughout the course of history to train people to seek for the original homeland.

Religions teach people to be humble and meek and to sacrifice because those are the principles of the spirit world to which they are destined to go. Religions have had to train people during their earthly life to qualify for the other world. Therefore, the more advanced religions emphasize a higher level of sacrifice and service in order to raise people in line with the heavenly world through their daily lives. (75-320, 1975.1.16)

Those who follow money cannot go on the path of eternal life. Those who follow knowledge cannot go on the path of eternal life. Where can you find eternal life in knowledge or learning? The more knowledge one has, or the more one knows, the more arrogant one becomes and arrogance borders the satanic world. The master of arrogance, the gang leader of arrogance, is Satan. I am sorry, professors, but this is the truth, as I know it. You will find out once you die. Once you go to the spirit world, you will find out if what I said was right or wrong. Once there, you can protest to me. As a teacher, I am right since I taught you the right thing. I am a teacher here. I am a teacher

there. Moreover, I am not a bad teacher. (200-127, 1990.2.24)

In the spirit world, stubbornness is the greatest enemy. Those who served as congressional representatives will truly have a hard time in the spirit world. You should know this clearly. Professors should be re-educated. This is why I take off their shell and have them sweat as laborers again. They should sweat and dig the ground. That is what they should do. In this regard, I wove those professors together and warmly welcome them to this day. If I continue to treat them so well, they will accuse me in the spirit world. They will say, "Why did you do that, knowing all those things? Why didn't you teach us the right way?" This is the truth. Try going to the spirit world to see if my words are true. (201-257, 1990.4.28)

People who lived for the sake of others go to the heavenly world. People who ask others to live for their sake cannot go there. For this reason, those who became scholars, presidents, and kings in this world go to hell. They did not live for others. If you observe the heart of church ministers, you see that they only think of gaining something for themselves, not about giving to others. No matter how much the parents give to their child, they try to prepare something more to give. Such efforts, which are based on a heart of giving, will prosper. (276-303, 1996.3.10)

When the spirit world and human beings forge a connection, we realize that nothing can be hidden. When you observe water, you see that it always flows from top to bottom. Any empty space will be filled up with air. In the same way, the spirit world is an entity in motion. There is no emptiness wherever the spirit world goes. It fills everywhere. In order to receive water your container should be empty. If there is something in the bowl, then you can only receive enough to fill whatever space is left empty. In the same way, air enters empty spaces, but if those spaces are clogged up, air cannot fill them. (280-11, 1996.10.13)

If you slip away to the spirit world, people from thousands and tens of thousands of years ago will try to gather around you. When you move, they will band together and come flocking to you. All of you want to live near me, do you not? When you are nearby, you all think, "I want to live looking at Father like this." Who makes it this way? It is not you, yourself. Heavenly fortune and the laws of the universe try to make everyone gather around such a person and unite with him. That is the law. No matter how you try to stay away, you cannot. (255-170, 1994.3.10)

Become a person who lives for others. This is the root of the creation and of the formation of the cosmos. Even God exists to live for the sake of others. In this way, the world of peace will unfold before your eyes. There is nothing in the cosmos that goes against this

principle. The cosmos and even God will welcome a person who stands in the essential and core position of the subject and root-of-creation. I am such a person. You do not feel you have to live for others because you do not know these things. The spirit world is moving focused on me. Are you aware of that world? No! This is why you go about carelessly. (255-176, 1994.3.10)

Those who live for others centering on true love will be welcomed, day and night, wherever they go in the cosmos. All of you will end up on display in the gallery of the spirit world. The spirit world holds exhibitions of human beings. The way in which a person lived his life on earth will be immediately displayed in the spirit world. Would you like to be at the tail end of the line or would you like to be a person praised by everyone? Which will it be? Do you want to be someone who is praised most highly? In order to become such a person, you should live the way I tell you. In order to be praised as the most high, you should live by the highest standard. That person will surely become the central person. (255-179, 1994.3.10)

Young people do not know this principle. If you have twenty friends, then who remains as the center of all your friends? If you insist, "All of you should live for my sake!" they will all run away from you. If a person lives for the sake of those friends for ten years, twenty years, until his life ends, even in death; then, if there is a spirit world, everyone will gather around that person. This is an indisputable truth. The person who lives more for others and sacrifices more than others will become the central person. (257-44, 1994.3.13)

Those who live for others will not perish. Furthermore, those who live for others will be constantly coached by the spirit world. They will be constantly encouraged to establish relations with new things. Through establishing these relations, they naturally become famous and known worldwide. (292-26, 1998.3.27)

Parents first think about their sons and daughters when going through hardships. Then, what is the deepest concern of people's hearts? You have to know how to find people of misfortune and strive to raise them up to your standard. When you do this, the entire world may oppose you and treat you with contempt, but God and heaven will admire and protect you. The spirits centering on God in the spirit world will go around protecting you like a cloud. Such a person will not perish. When this happens, the clouds will sweep away the entire circumstance and sort it out. Thus, you can create results in equal measure to how hard you work and how much you have invested. Although you are persecuted and suffer hardship, heavenly fortune comes behind you and lays this foundation. Saints were persecuted in their times, but in the following generations they left behind their names. Such phenomena occur because the spirit world, heaven, and heavenly fortune

make it this way. (207-99, 1990.11.1)

Those who wish to enter the Kingdom of Heaven should live miserably, die miserably, and depart miserably. Are these good words or bad words? They are good words. Then, the words, "Go out and die leading people to the church!" are also good words. You should die for the sake of others. If you die, not for your own sake, but for the sake of others, for the world, and for heaven and earth, you will be raised up as the master of the great universe. (49-303, 1971.10.17)

What remains forever is the suffering of a public life. If, when you go to the spirit world after undergoing the suffering of a public life and find yourself in ruin, you can protest to me. Those who are persecuted during their work for the sake of the people, the world, and heaven are wise people. (19-30, 1967.12.10)

You who begin the religious path should go the way of death until you die. You will go through hardships after you die too, but you have to go this way in order to pay indemnity during your lifetime. By completing the indemnity payment in your lifetime, you reduce the billions of years of suffering that would come after you die. Accordingly, the religious path is to indemnify on earth the suffering course that would otherwise have to be paid eternally. (31-320, 1970.6.7)

The Unification Church does not teach that one should live a rich and comfortable life on earth. Even though you may live a miserable and poor life, and die on the street so that even the dogs do not touch your corpse, the day will come when flowers will blossom at the place of your death. All holy people will gather at that place to create a capital city.

My belief is to have the members of the Unification Church go through tremendous hardships for the nation and world in order to make them filial children and loyal subjects of the kingdom. I shall chastise those who are not willing to go. Even though I might kick you with my foot, that is my love to enable you to overcome your current miserable situation and present difficulties. (49-303, 1971.10.17)

CHAPTER TWO

What Kind of Place Is the Spirit World?

Section 1. The Reality of the Spirit World and Its Laws

1.1. The spirit world is an infinite world that transcends time and space

Do you know how infinite and unchanging the spirit world is? We are now aware of the vastness of the universe. The universe is over 22 billion light years across. How big is that? Light travels 300 million meters in a second. In one second, light can go around the Earth seven and a half times. The distance light covers at that speed in one year is called a light year. Light takes 22 billion years to cross the universe, not 200 days. So how vast is the universe? The entire universe is the stage for our activities. (206-83, 1990.10.3)

God exists transcendent of time and the world of space that we know of today. In the spirit world, there are no such things as one year, two years, or even a day. Isn't that convenient? Once you enter the spirit world, you do not need to sleep. You can live without sleeping. You can live without eating. You can eat and sustain yourself completely by your thoughts. If you see something and remember that it is good, you will not forget it in thousands of years. Isn't that wonderful? (176-294, 1988.5.13)

Heaven does not have three hundred sixty-five days in a year like the Earth in the solar system, nor does it have twenty-four hours in a day. The concept of one year or two years that we speak about is for this earth. A year on Earth is measured using the position of the planets in the solar system, and a day is calculated by the rotation of the earth on its axis. The spirit world has no reason to rotate on its axis for a day, like the Earth, or to travel along its orbit around the sun for a year. Morning can be eternal in the spirit world. There is no concept of a day or a year in the spirit world. (175-196, 1988.4.17)

In the spirit world, you can travel billions of miles in a second because it is transcendent of time and space. You can look back a thousand, or even tens of thousands of years, and see things from the past. What would you be looking for when you looked into the past? If you looked at nothing else, what is it you would want? If you are a man, you would want to meet a woman. After meeting her, you would wonder how great the original love inside that person's heart

is, or how much love that person has. Love becomes the standard of measurement. (209-17, 1990.11.24)

What is the center of the spirit world? The structure of the spirit world centers on the absolute God. And, if there is such an absolute God, He would have been the originator of the universe at the outset. He has created everything. Since all of creation belongs to God, everything feels as He feels and exists in relationship to Him. For example, we have trillions of cells in our body and whenever each cell feels something in a certain area, this feeling is directly communicated to the brain. It is the same for all existing beings that are interconnected around the original Creator. Moreover, those who are human beings by birth, who live in pursuit of goodness and the values of a higher dimension, originate from God, the original Cause. Therefore, human life is about living in the resultant world, where we can connect to our origin by going through a particular course. (140-123, 1986.2.9)

What kind of being is God? God is like the mind of the existing universe. Can you see your mind? The spirit world is like the world of the mind. It is a place that transcends time and space. In the spirit world, you can freely eat whatever you want. There is no need to worry about food. There is no need to worry about water. There is no need to worry about clothes. You transcend all worries for food, clothing and shelter. In the spirit world, you can go back and forth, covering billions of miles, in just an instant. With what power can you do this? You can do so with the power of love. If you wish to see someone you love, that person will instantly appear before you. (210-225, 1990.12.23)

Since birds can fly, it is understandable that human beings, who are the lords of creation, also wish to fly. People were supposed to fly. The spirit world is a place where people can go anywhere in an instant without the aid of an airplane, even though the world is hundreds of light years in length. Don't you want to visit this place? (199-128, 1990.2.16)

If you were to ask God, "Why is it that insects and even pigeons can fly, but we, human beings, can not?" what do you think His answer would be? When God comes down to visit you from His high place in the spirit world, do you think He will come down on foot or fly down in an instant? The spirit world is an infinite world. These days, we have man-made satellites traveling as far as Venus. These are times when satellites track moving objects for fourteen years and take pictures, which they transmit back to us. In the spirit world, however, none of this would take fourteen years. It would only take an instant. The spirit self moves faster than lightning. Consequently, if you wish to follow God, who moves about like a spirit person, and become an object partner to the Subject of love and live with Him, should you

walk or fly? You can only take so many steps with your physical body. (298-289, 1999.1.16)

When you look at the vast universe, don't you think there would be diamond stars in the spirit world? Don't you think there would be stars made of gold? All of those stars belong to you. You can experience that joy. You look at God's astonishing creation and…. This is the ideal world where all the loving communities – God's loving family – are harmonized as a whole and experience a life of travel and exploration. Would you like to be in their company and be a part of this family? (126-145, 1983.4.12)

How convinced are you that the spirit world exists? The spirit world is a more certain world than this one. What kind of world is the spirit world? It is a world where everything is possible, based on conceptions approved by God. (107-56, 1980.1.20)

So many people are in the spirit world. It is such a remarkable, ideal world, where, in one moment, you can serve feasts for everyone from every different nation and the billions of people in the spirit world, and still have something left over. I am moving toward that kind of world. I am not going forward with this world in my sights. I am preparing myself here, to go to the other eternal world. (107-56, 1980.1.20)

Once in the spirit world, each couple will look like one huge person. What are people like in the spirit world? Each of you will become like cells in the universal body. The entire spirit world will completely look like men and women. That's how it will appear. It will all be combined. If you walk in a certain way, the spirit world will walk that way. Those who are in that realm are like God's cells. They are one body. (207-97, 1990.11.1)

There is no need for explanations and excuses in the spirit world. You will know everything with just a glance. In an instant, you can discern if a person is below you, next to you, or in a higher place than you. Even when you meet old people who lived millions of years ago, you can immediately see their rank in the hierarchy of love. This rank is absolute. Those with a high rank adjust naturally to it and stand in their rightful position. This does not happen at random. The spirit world is different from this world. Those who succeed in earthly life by slandering and plotting against others will be turned upside down in the spirit world. They will be in the opposite position. For this reason, I am telling you to seek and find the path of righteousness. (194-133, 1989.10.17)

What would people in the spirit world desire? The spirit world is a place where you can be supplied with all your needs, according to your standard. If you want something, it comes to you immediately. It is a world where nothing is impossible for a person with a heart of willingness and initiative. If you want to give a party for one million people, it can be done

very quickly because one million people will appear at once, and all the preparations will be finished the moment you think about it. That's the kind of world it is. What makes this possible? Atomic energy produces heat when atoms divide; thus in the same way, when you start the creative division process of love, anything will be possible in an instant. Don't you think it will be like that? (141-278, 1986.3.2)

In the spirit world, when you are determined to go somewhere, you are already going there. It is like that. Imagine if the vast universe became the stage of your activities. Love must take precedence. If so, you have only to say, "I want to see him. I want to see him!" If you desire to see someone as you would your spouse or someone you love, you will be able to go to that person in an instant. If you meet an artist in the spirit world, your artistic abilities would be instantly cultivated to a level that rivals that artist. Everything is possible in the spirit world. So when you go there, you can sing and dance in any place you like. Everyone would rejoice and your mind and body will harmonize and dance and sing. It is a beautiful sight.

If God drew a picture, would He not win the top prize? Right? Does God take a picture, someone else's masterpiece, hang it on a wall, and look at it? Or does He look at His creation that behaves like a masterpiece? Which do you think God prefers? Masterpieces are not necessary, right? Since the spirit world is in such a supreme position where you are intoxicated with the heart of love, you do not age there. My mother is old now, but in the spirit world, she appears the way she looked, for me, at her best. (201-101, 1990.3.11)

It would be boring if we only had bright, sunny days every day. There should be fog and the moon should be ringed by clouds and sometimes hidden from view. How artistic it is when we can see so many variations in the weather! Think about it. It is a world of art. It is an artistic world. You can become such a person who could make a fine day in the spirit world become cloudy, or make fog roll in if you wish; you can become a person who has the distinct quality and capacity to create a sphere of many different kinds of emotion with love. So everyone in the spirit world will be interested in you. They will all say, "It is fun to be with that person." (201-101, 1990.3.11)

The spirit world transcends time and distance. There is no concept of time. If you think about seeing something, it instantly appears. You can relate to the vast Kingdom of Heaven in an instant. Even the phones on earth do not have a problem with distance, right? In the same way, you can communicate with any place like that in the spirit world. That world exists as the world of cause, hidden behind the scenes like a powerhouse. (283-126, 1997.4.8)

Will there be night in the spirit world or not? Once you get to the spirit world, you can communicate with the earth

freely and directly connect with this material world. In spirit, you can go through water and go directly through the Earth to another continent or region. There are countless stars in the universe, but all the roads are opened to you when you go as the partner of God's true love. The speed of love is by far the fastest. The speed of light can cover 300 million meters or go around the Earth seven and a half times in one second. But love is thousands of times faster than this. If true love decides to go across millions and billions of miles, it immediately covers that distance. The vast spirit world can be activated in an instant. (294-310, 1998.8.9)

What kind of work do you think you will do when you go to the spirit world? What is there to do in that world? Will you earn money there? Will you need clothes and a house? Everything you want will be instantly provided. No matter how much noise or threats you make in the spirit world to order something for yourself, it will not appear. You should know this. On the other hand, everything will instantly appear if you say that you need it because you love God, you love the world, and you are attending the King from the position of the prince of the Kingdom of Heaven. In an instant, you will be able to have all those things that you couldn't have before in the earthly world. You should know that anything imaginable is possible in the spirit world. (129-101, 1983.10.1)

Love is likened to heat. You talk about it as if it were heat, don't you? You say, "My heart is on fire," don't you? In the spirit world, since God is the essence of love, He appears as light and heat.

When you look with your spiritual eyes, you are supposed to know how strong the light of love shines, what color it is, how brilliant it is, and whether it shines in rainbow colors. The family should be combined to become a shining star. All the stars become like moons. There are even stars that have other stars like our sun orbiting around them. (303-42, 1999.7.4)

When God began creation, do you think He started by first creating the color He liked the most or the color He disliked the most? If that's the question, then what color is the flower that blooms in early spring? It is a purple color. The color purple includes red and pink, and what other colors? It has all the colors in it. You like the color purple, don't you? Elegant things are in purple. In the spirit world, the most beautiful color is purple. (197-49, 1990.1.7)

In the spirit world, it might appear that there are no colors. It is so bright that it looks almost like silver. It looks like silver, but because it is so bright and radiant, it appears purple. When electricity passes through a filament, it lights up with white light. Similarly, in the spirit world, people will shine brilliantly. Skin color is not an issue there. Good people who lived with a true conscience go to a high place in the spirit world.

There are no handicapped people

there, either. Those who are handicapped or have deformities will have no disability once they discard their flesh. (293-223, 1998.5.26)

How old do you look when you live in the spirit world? You live with the appearance you had at the age when you were the most beautiful. That is how you would look in the Kingdom of Heaven. You stay like that for eternity. The more beautiful the way of thinking you have, the more beautiful your face and appearance becomes. If you know the spirit world, all those things are related in that way. (294-309, 1998.8.9)

Once you enter the spirit world, you forget about the earth. What are you going to do on this stifling earth which is only the size of your palm? The great universe is before you. Would you even remember about something the size of a grain of sand? Still, the earth is the only place with a factory for producing the citizens of the spirit world. There is only one of its kind in the universe. What? Do you think that there are people living on Venus? This is the only place in the universe where there are people. (198-367, 1990.2.11)

1.2. Love reigns supreme in the spirit world

The spirit world is a place filled with the concept of true love. The Kingdom of Heaven is where you go after fully experiencing true love on earth equally with all your five senses. When you reach that state, you can do everything in the spirit world. The ideal environment for life begins from there. You do not know how wondrous this is. (246-44, 1993.3.23)

What kind of place is the spirit world? It is a world of harmony where everything is filled and overflowing with love. Can you believe that we can send electricity to several million families in New York City in an instant, with just one push of a button? So does it sound like a lie or the truth when I say that this universe can operate with just one push of a love button? The Kingdom of Heaven on earth is the place where the lights are all love bulbs. Then what is the Kingdom of Heaven in spirit world? It is a place that is completely lit up by love bulbs.

Therefore, as long as you keep a loving heart and pull the rope of love, you can drag everything around. When you pull it towards the back, it will go towards the back. When you pull it to the side, it moves sideways. When you pull it this way, it tries to go like this. If you pull it up that way, it tries to go upwards. You can control it the way you want. It does not resist moving, but does so naturally. It automatically becomes like that. Do you understand? (112-17, 1981.3.15)

There is nothing to envy in the spirit world. Will you compare your incarnation of love to a diamond, or to gold nugget, or to a pearl? Precious stones are not really the issue. You give out a brighter luster than any of these; an incarnation of love is more beautiful.

Are there diamonds of love among

diamonds? Are there diamonds of life? We are beings of such value that we can even move the hearts of diamonds and influence all things. We are a precious diamond of love. We are a precious diamond of life. That is what we are. So how wonderful we are! (201-101, 1990.3.11)

The spirit world is a place filled with the electricity of love. That is the spirit world I know. People these days try to establish relationships of love with everything. Why do they try to establish relationships of love? It is to keep pace with the spirit world. This conforms precisely to theory. Since that is the way things are, we, as existing beings, have no choice but to respond to it. You should know that we cannot avoid being in that position. (112-17, 1981.3.15)

There are innumerable and fantastic mines in the spirit world, which go beyond the imagination. There is an endless supply of gold, silver, and precious stones. With the beautiful flowers there, if someone they love approaches, they will wake from sleep, suddenly opening their eyes and mouths wide to welcome that person. But if that person just goes away, even though the flowers ask him or her to stay for a moment, they will say, "Oh!" and wither away. (213-277, 1991.1.21)

When God laughs, the whole world laughs together with Him. That's how it is in the spirit world. When you go to the spirit world, you will discover a world of intuition; you will intuitively know whether God is pleased or not that day, and whether He feels happy or not. If something happens in the physical world that pleases God, then the whole spirit world begins to float, inflated with joy. (193-264, 1989.10.8)

What are you going to do in the heavenly spirit world? You will sing songs of love and speak words of love. In the spirit world, if you are spoken to in a melodious operatic way, you should respond to that person in the same operatic way. If you are spoken to through the medium of dance, you should dance back in response. You will rejoice eternally and never get tired of dancing. When dancing begins in one part of heaven, the entire Kingdom of Heaven will begin to dance. When singing begins in one part of heaven, everyone will begin to sing. Brothers, you will dance with your beloved wives. If you should dance with another man's wife, you would say to her, "I am dancing with you in order to love my beloved wife a hundred times more than you." You would think like that.

If you should ever dance holding hands with another man's wife, you would do so for the purpose of making love with your own wife in a way that is a thousand or ten thousand times more stimulating than that. (107-331, 1980.6.8)

When God looks at you in the spirit world, if you reach the place where your heart resonates with the bell of love, the light of your love gradually intensifies. This light shines radiantly in five colors. In God's eyes, it looks brighter than

a diamond. God doesn't simply like this light; He is drawn to it, especially because there is a pleasing taste within the light. The more He looks at it, the more He becomes intoxicated.

For this reason, God talks about love. If your heart is ringing with the bell of love, then heaven and earth will be moved. If you can move the hearts of people from all races, God will exclaim, "Ah!" and be moved. You have to realize that there is such a bell. Therefore, however many tears you have shed for love and however many heartbreaks of love you have experienced – these are your fortune. (103-28, 1979.1.28)

Once we go to the heavenly spirit world, we can meet with someone in an instant through the power of love, even if this person lives far away. If we want to visit someone far away in our hometown for the sake of love, we can return there in an instant.

Since the spirit world is an infinitely vast world, we can go back and forth over many millions of miles in an instant, through love. Love has the fastest possible speed. If you have no foundation of uniting your mind and body based on love, then you have nothing to do with the heavenly spirit world. That is why you have to know clearly that the starting point of unification originates within yourself, not in any objective being. (216-192, 1991.3.31)

No matter how exalted God is, if you should call for Him with a heart of love saying, "God!" He will immediately answer inside your heart saying, "Yes?" If you should ask, "God, where are You?" He will answer, "Where? Why do you ask where I am? I'm at the source of your heart." Isn't God originally the source? He is at the root and source of our hearts. That is how it is. (194-42, 1989.10.15)

What is essential in the spirit world is to love God – more than the world, your country, your wife, and even your own son. That is the principle. Your mother, father, and children must all love God in this same manner. Your mother should say to her husband, "My dear, you can love me, but love God more than me." Only then can she receive her husband's God-like love in a higher dimension.

Even the children must beg on their hands and knees saying, "Please set us aside and first receive love from your other Parent. I want to love you as the parents who have received love from the original Parent." (126-142, 1983.4.12)

The spirit world is a world where a person standing as the object partner before God, the embodiment of the ideal of love, can create in an instant everything that he can imagine. It is a world where you can immediately prepare a banquet for billions of people.

If you wear dazzling clothes and determine to give pleasure to God as His object of love, you take on a quality of magnificence. The spirit world is a world where it is possible for things to exist or occur beyond anyone's imagination. For those who know of that world, there is nothing on this earth that they

would feel attached to. That is why even when I am locked up in prison, I have no problem. Our short life on earth is like holding one's breath for an instant when compared to life in the eternal world. (211-244, 1990.12.30)

Focused upon God's heart and the heart of the Kingdom of Heaven, you can unite and harmonize with everything, wherever you may be. When that happens, those people who can pass through those gates and live within that realm will say, "Wow! *Mansei*! God is great!" They will want to follow God around and everyone will be happy. They can eat anything they want to eat, wear anything they want to wear, play if they want to play, and do anything they want. They can feel all the things they could not feel in the hundred years of their life on earth. They can feel deep joy and gratitude, which can be experienced in a moment and remain thereafter. (106-229, 1979.12.30)

What kind of world is the heavenly spirit world? It is a place where anything is possible if you attain the heart enabling you to stand at the same level as God's heart. In the future, when we have tens of millions of members, you can say, "Oh! You should all change your clothes to these new clothes," and they would all change their clothes to the new ones in an instant. Then if you say, "Let such and such banquet venue appear!" it will become so at once.

The tables will be adorned in gold and silver, with cloth woven in five dazzling colors. The chairs will also be like that, and all the people sitting there will dance intoxicated with joy, delight, and love. It is a place where you can be joyful even if you should dance for a thousand years. (106-229, 1979.12.30)

In the spirit world, just by saying with a strong heart of love that you want to meet with a person who is a hundred million miles away, he will appear at once. If you ask him, "Why did you come here?" he will answer, "I came here because you called me." If you ask him, "From how many miles away have you come?" he will reply that he came from a hundred million miles away. The spirit world transcends distance. It is to become the base for your activities, so why are people tying themselves up in knots for things that do not exist there, like money, knowledge and power? Such things do not exist at all in that world. Nothing related to those things will endure.

People need money, knowledge, and power in this world, but these things are not needed in the spirit world. If these are your focus, nothing in the spirit world will welcome you. Even if the spirit world were to show interest in you and want to unite with you, you could not have anything there. Nothing that stands against the original essence can become one with you there. You will not be able to catch the interest of the spirit world. (205-128, 1990.7.29)

If you think, "I want to meet such and such a person," he will immediately

appear before you. You can have a conversation with him, at which time you will ask, "Are you such and such a person?" and he will answer, "Yes, I lived in such and such a place hundreds and thousands of years ago. Did you want to see me? Is there something you want to ask me?" To which you will answer, "Yes, I do. I've taught things in this way. How different you and I are! Do you see?" It doesn't take time. You will immediately know things as soon as the conversation begins. How inconvenient it is to live in this earthly world! There will be no need for a car in the spirit world. The emotions of love can create everything. Everything can be created through ideas. Anything can be created, centering on the idea of true love. (217-131, 1991.5.12)

Those who lived millions, even eight or ten million years ago, will come and greet you. The Bible says that human history is what – six thousand years? That's quite unreasonable. How much has changed over the past thousand years? People who lived so long ago could sense heaven with their hearts much more than those who live today. However, looking from the viewpoint of our standard of living, it is the opposite. The development of living standards and the realm of the spirit occur together, isn't that so? If you become profoundly learned, you understand more according to the measure of your knowledge and become sensitive in your evaluation of everything. Consequently, the foundation to absorb inspiration is further expanding. Therefore, from now on, the spirit world will naturally teach those with such knowledge and concern about the flow of developments in this world. Through the spiritual vibration and through intuition, they will understand what is going to happen. When you go towards the highest position, there is only one conclusion, isn't there? It is like that. (206-138, 1990.10.3)

If you wish to meet with someone who is millions or billions of miles away, that person will immediately appear. Even though the Kingdom of Heaven is vast, when you prepare your heart and say that you would like to meet with someone you love, he will appear before you. How wonderful that is! Isn't that great? When he appears in front of you, you will immediately know which level you are on; you will know if you are higher or lower than he. Even if he is your closest friend, if your level of love is higher than his from heaven's point of view, he will bow to you as soon as he comes to you. Even your own mother or your ancestors who lived on earth long ago will bow to you. Such a place is the spirit world. (206-138, 1990.10.3)

You worry about food in this life, don't you? We need factories to manufacture automobiles, fertilizer, clothes, food, and so on, don't we? People busy themselves with preparing food at home, don't they? In the spirit world, many of these things do not exist. There is no need for cars and no need for airplanes. In the blink of an eye, you will be able to travel a hundred million miles. Spiritual

energy travels faster than the rays of the sun. The sun's rays, which were created by God, travel 300 million meters in a second.

Doesn't electricity travel as fast as the speed of light? God's original love energy and life energy travel many thousands of times faster than that. (206-138, 1990.10.3)

In the spirit world, when you visit someone who is on a level of love lower than yours, you can possess that person's house if you like it. When you quietly enter such a house, the owner of it becomes aware of this possibility as soon as he sees you. He will know as soon as he sees your forehead and face. If he recognizes you as someone higher than him in spiritual stature, he will happily welcome you into his living room and say, "Welcome to my house!" (207-95, 1990.11.1)

If you become God's son or daughter, the whole vast universe will become yours. When you go to the spirit world, would you want to follow me around? You cannot do that now. You cannot follow me to the place I go. The gate of your heart is narrow. True love enables you to freely go through a wide gate or a narrow gate. Only true love makes it possible. The place of true love represents the whole so you can enter and leave anywhere that you want. (207-95, 1990.11.1)

How much you love humankind and all the things God created is measured based on the standard of how much you love them in the way that God loves them. That being the case, you will be capable of coming to know anything at once, faster than a computer. Married women talk proudly about how much their husbands love them, don't they? Likewise, in the spirit world, centering on God's love, you can be proud of how much you have received God's love. Original true love is love of the highest level. From there, each level is determined. (216-171, 1991.3.10)

If a ladder to God's heart exists in the heavenly kingdom, how will you climb that ladder? By going back and forth on a helicopter? Or by an elevator that brings you straight up? Would you go by helicopter? You would go by an elevator. It is an all-year-round elevator. It is vertical. In order to connect with God's love, you have to be in a perpendicular position.

The Bible states, "Love God with all your heart and with all your mind." What this means is that the center of everything is love. When you concentrate all your functions and consciousness on loving God, you will go straight up in that elevator. You have to experience that wondrous world. (208-142, 1990.11.17)

In the spirit world, if you have an upright relationship with God, you will fit perfectly wherever you go, to the north, south, east, and west. Any society comprising many associations, and having so many different characteristics…. How many people are here in this room?

If there are five hundred, then there are five hundred types of people. Everyone is different, right? In the spirit world, people of similar nature come together in groups. This occurs more precisely than if it was arranged by a computer. You can tell your own disposition just by walking past others. Within a week, you will be able to see through everything, behind everyone and even into the inner reaches of a person's secret world. Words are not necessary. You can sense what a person's heart is trying to tell you. It is an all-knowing world, like a grandfather computer. (211-244, 1990.12.30)

Do you understand that God created everything for love? If you ask God what He loves most, what do you think His answer will be? God does not have His favorites. He has no need of money, knowledge, or power. What do we need? In love, money, knowledge, and power are included. The power of love is an everlasting power.

A person who understands genuine love will have nothing more to learn in heaven. Such people can go in and out of God's heart at any time. They can freely move east, west, south, and north through God's heart, which is like a central railway station. When you go in and out of there, tremendous power is generated, because all energy from the north, south, east, and west becomes concentrated there. Even a humble person will be elevated to the same position as God when he comes through the center of love. Love has such great power. (202-86, 1990.5.6)

I understand why today's world is so excited about space and electricity. It's because they are similar to internal lubrication oil for establishing the ideal world of love. You are supposed to say, "Amen." Thus, we can say that the spirit world is a world filled with the electricity of love.

Harmony is created in that world where nothing is impossible when we tap into the electricity of love. There is nothing that we cannot do through the electricity of love. So we can see that the spirit world presents possibilities for us to resolve some basic problems concerning our understanding and awareness. Then what is the spirit world? It is an eternal realm that desires eternal elements.

Thus, a spirit self that has experienced love here on earth would surely go to just that kind of world automatically, as if pulled by a magnet. The level of the spirit world you go to depends on how much you have experienced and felt those things. (112-17, 1981.3.15)

1.3. Love is like air in the spirit world

Of what does the spirit world consist? The air in that world is love. Love is the air. Your mind and body should feel the touch of love on this earth and experience it as something that brings harmony. Then once you enter the realm of this experience, you can go anywhere. You will be connected with God in the way the sap of a tree connects its bud and root. You will naturally sense when

God is rejoicing. You will know that God's banquet is going to be held in the East. You can go there automatically. It is the land of freedom. (162-287, 1987.4.17)

The air you breathe in the spirit world is made of love. Everything comes from love, lives for love, and harmonizes with the principle of love for the sake of love. Only when you fulfill that love can you embody the hope that God has longed for throughout human history and be welcomed wherever you go in the Kingdom of Heaven. (143-72, 1986.3.15)

The spirit world is covered with the constituents of love. The earth is covered with air but the spirit world is wrapped in love. On earth, we breathe air in and breathe out carbon dioxide, but in the spirit world we should live by breathing love. We are not to give and receive secular human love in the spirit world. Instead, we are to give and receive true love in that world. (145-267, 1986.5.15)

I have to beat you to make you into pure gold. I have to make pure gold out of you. After that, you have to sacrifice yourself. You have to die until you disappear. Disappear, disappear, sacrifice, sacrifice, and become a zero. Why have we entered the space age and the age of electricity? It is because the spirit world is drawing close. Our teaching says that before the appearance of the truth, external or Cain-type things will appear first. This world is a Cain-type world. From this point of view, I am the founding teacher of studies of the electricity of God's love. (112-19, 1981.3.15)

Once you go to the spirit world, everything will be connected from hell to the midway spirit world, to paradise and to the Kingdom of Heaven, depending on how much you adapt and align yourself to the Principle. Shouldn't there be such a principle? Even if one is an American president, a Nobel Laureate or a world-famous scholar, can such a person go to the Kingdom of Heaven when they enter the spirit world? Can they be admitted? No, they cannot. That is why the world of religion teaches people to give everything up and follow. You have to give everything up and follow. Then what is the most precious thing? What counts is how much a person received pain for the sake of heaven, how much he received pain for this world, and how many tears he shed. That is the ticket to pass into the next world. Make no mistake about this. It is absolute. This fits the theory. (97-172, 1978.3.15)

Would you like to become a person who, even though breathless, suffocating and having to breathe oxygen from a mask, can pace themselves with the eternal world for the sake of being resurrected there? Or will you live free within God's sphere of love where you can move about in freedom? This is one's path of life because life on earth should be for this purpose and for the sake of the world. You should know that the inevitable path of life must be one that you follow for the sake of the future. (107-56, 1980.1.20)

1.4. The lives and relationships of people in spirit world

God is the Creator who made heaven and earth. He is the origin, the very parent of all beings in this world. He is the origin of the value of all existence. Because of Him, this phenomenal world of today came to exist. Such an absolute being does not change according to the changing of the ages. An absolute being does not change. He is not limited by time and space. He transcends all limitations and is the one who governs every limitation. Who is that being? We do not only call Him God. He is our "Father," so we call Him "Heavenly Father." What do you call God? He is your Father who gave birth to you. The word "rebirth" exists because of the Fall, but it was God, your Father, who originally gave birth to you. Your physical father forms a bridge between you and God. But after your physical father goes to the spirit world, you will call him your brother, not your father. In the same way, you will call your physical mother your sister. (21-249, 1968.11.24)

When you go to the spirit world you will find that Adam and Eve call God "Father" and you, who descended from them thousands of generations later, will also call Him "Father." When you pray do you say, "God, my elder brother," or "Heavenly Father"? Then what about your natural father? What will he be to you in the spirit world? He will be your elder brother. What is an elder brother? It is someone born before you. Your elder brother is someone who came into being before you. So the internal elder brother is God and the external elder brother is your physical father. You should know that there can be no higher theory than this. (302-168, 1999.6.13)

What do all the people call God? Everyone calls God "Father" just as Christians do. In the same family, the grandfather calls God "Father," and the father also calls Him "Father." Grandchildren also call God "Father." Everyone in the family calls Him "Father." This is why God is the Father of all humankind. Thus, He is the Father of humanity and therefore all people are brothers and sisters. I sometimes wonder how interesting the spirit world will be when everyone thinks that way. (21-249, 1968.11.24)

Ideally, we would be able to meet our first generation ancestors on earth. But what about meeting the God who created our ancestors? We should also be able to see God. Do you know what this means? The family is the place where the invisible God expresses His love. All the ancestors throughout history who were born from love are governed by that love in the spirit world. It is the same love. (214-268, 1991.2.3)

If all families become one in true love and enter the spirit world, they will live forever, feasting on the spiritual elements of God's flesh and blood. When you go there, you will find no farming and no work. You can live forever just by smelling the food of true love. You can

taste it just by looking at it. You share and eat the food of love. You live by sharing God's flesh and blood and love. (278-286, 1996.5.26)

Who is God? He is your friend! He is your best friend. He is your elder brother, Father, King and Creator. So when you enter the vast world of heaven in the spirit world, even if you ask God for something greater than anything there, He will make it for you. That will not be a problem. How proud you will be! That is the position representing God. Do you think God would dislike people who reach that position? No! He will welcome them saying, "My son, my number one son!" This is the greatest wish of a parent. (293-161, 1998.5.26)

The love between father and child is cherished in this world. If while on earth you live your life with that kind of love, you will be attending God as your parent and will live in heaven as God's son or daughter. That kind of life in the spirit world corresponds in every respect to the way of life of an unfallen family on earth, since the character and quality of the people are the same. (214-268, 1991.2.3)

A family that is not fallen can communicate with both the spiritual and physical worlds. If you call for your great-great-grandfather, you will be able to meet him. You will be able to find out who his grandfather is and in this way whom your ancestors are from the fourth generation back, the fifth, the hundredth, the thousandth, and beyond. If you wonder what Adam and Eve look like, they will appear and say, "This is how we look." You will say, "My eyes resemble Adam and Eve's! My nose too! And my mouth!" The shape of your faces will be similar. Are there more than four things that make up the shape of your face? Eyes, nose, ears, and mouth. Four things. You will also say, "Oh, our limbs are the same! Their eyes blink too! They also speak! We look alike! We look so alike!" (214-268, 1991.2.3)

In the spirit world the wrinkled grandmothers and grandfathers you remember will look much prettier than you. They will look more beautiful. They can remain in that state if they have love. It is a unified and beautiful world. Can you behave in the same way as usual when you meet your grandfather and grandmother? How wonderful it would be for us to see beautiful grandfathers and grandmothers! A wonderful scene to behold in the spirit world is a granddaughter shouting with excitement as she approaches her grandparents. If you are like your grandfather, then who is his grandfather? Who is your ancestor's grandfather? The first grandfather is God. If you say, "Ah ha, God, I am so happy!" God will say, "Welcome!" and He will burst out in joy, "Ha, ha, ha!" and say, "Ah ha, that's right." (216-180, 1991.3.10)

When you go to the spirit world, you will not recognize your grandfather or father as they were on this earth. Your grandfather and father will be completely transformed and will appear

young and handsome. They will not look old. So at first, you will not recognize your grandfather because he looks young. However, after talking to him for a while, you will say, "Yes, that's right. You are my grandfather!" and embrace him. That's the kind of world it is. (271-333, 1995.9.3)

When you go to the spirit world, your face will return to its most beautiful state: as it was when you were in your twenties in the springtime of your youth. The principle of creation pertains to the time when love blooms and spreads its fragrance. So when you enter the Kingdom of Heaven, the original homeland, your face will return to how it was at that time. You would not recognize the oldest person in the world after he goes to the spirit world, even if you met him there. His face would be that of a young adult in his twenties. If you knew someone when they were eighty years old, that old person won't be there. That is why you won't recognize him. World-famous and historic people are in the spirit world, but you will not recognize them. You only know them by the pictures taken at the time of their death, but since their appearance has returned to how it was at the age when they were most beautiful, you will not recognize them. (271-124, 1995.8.23)

Who are the closest siblings in the spirit world? The closest siblings are not natural siblings. In this world, is the relationship between a parent and child or that between siblings closer? Since the relationship between a parent and child is closer, you will be closest to your father, then to your grandfather, and then great-grandfather and so on.

When you trace the vertical line all the way up, who is the last grandparent? God. That is why you do not have to feel lonely if you have no friends in this world. You do not have to feel sad when you live by yourself and die. When you go to the spirit world, you will have numerous close siblings above you and by your side. But you will not become their sibling automatically without doing something.

You can become their sibling only when you have attained the privilege of attending God as your Father. Do you feel bad to have your father as your elder brother, or your grandfather as your elder brother? Do you feel good or bad? In a sense, you feel bad, don't you? On earth, you used to call him your father, but in the spirit world, you will call him your brother. From your father's point of view, he would feel bad too. However, that is what you have to call him. (21-249, 1968.11.24)

What will happen to a dark-skinned person in the spirit world? Will a black man's skin be dark? What do you think? If a black person wishes to appear as a white person, he can choose to do so whenever he wants, and vice versa. In that case, what effect would that have in the spirit world? A light must be bright. What kind of light? The light of love. In order to magnify the light of love, you must be ablaze internally and externally.

You should be on fire from the impetus to love. You have to unleash this energy in large quantities to the east and west. Love is able to do such a thing. When we come to understand this, all events in this world just become passing visits. (194-56, 1989.10.15)

If you wish to become a beautiful person in heaven you must harmonize with the flower of love that blooms in all its glory. You must express the beauty and fragrance of that flower in your world of relationships, and live on earth in such a way as to bear new seeds from that flower. If you go to the spirit world after living like this, you will look like this in the eternal world. (256-170, 1994.3.13)

When you go to the spirit world, you will want to expand the love with your husband on earth and make it more stimulating. In the spirit world, a woman who is in love will have a man within her. (255-308, 1994.3.11)

What heights will conjugal love reach? Let me describe how it is when you enter the spirit world. Even if you are sitting down, if your husband goes for a walk, in your mind, you go with him. When he returns, your mind is already returning with him. You are walking with your husband in your mind. You know where he is coming from and you know where he is going. These days, men go to a bar and other places. Their women scold them and yet are always deceived because they don't know where they have been. But in the spirit world, you know everything. (238-70, 1992.11.19)

You have to go to the other world, the spirit world, and resemble God. You are returning to God. God's dual characteristics, His internal nature and external form, are completely one. After becoming completely united in the same way, a man and woman appear to be cocooned together, and they return to God on the basis of being one. (230-201, 1992.5.3)

In the spirit world, when a couple is truly one in spirit and body, at any time the man can become the woman, and the woman can become the man. They say that love is being one flesh, right? If you look inside a woman, there will be a man within her. Her husband will be within her. It is exactly the same with God's dual characteristics. Since men and women have been separated from God's internal nature and external form, when they return to the origin, they need to climb the ladder of love. Since the standard of creation began from love, they must return to that by going up this ladder. Ultimately, the final destination is to become like God. (205-97, 1990.7.7)

When you go to the spirit world and look at a man who lived happily with his wife on earth, you will find a woman inside him. If you ask him, "Who is that woman?" he will answer, "My wife." You will also see a man within a woman. In this way, when these two unite, the number of the four directions – north,

south, east, and west – arises. Man and woman are two. When a man and woman as a plus and minus go in all four directions, they are attending God. God becomes a protective fence. If that happens, God becomes your God and you live together with Him. Did you know that when parents grow old and are over 100 years old, they become friends with their son who is eighty years old? They do not say, "Hey, son!" They say, "Hey, you!" They speak to him as a friend. They must return to God and the original relationships. (252-105, 1993.11.14)

When a couple that engages in true love goes to the spirit world, they encounter God's original standard where God exists with an original internal nature and original external form. The original absolute God also absolutely obeys true love. So when that couple also reaches the original standard, which is a single point, they become like God. They return to God. He is the Alpha and the Omega. What makes this possible is true love. Sons and daughters born on earth go to the spirit world as parents, don't they? It follows the same logic. So when you go to the spirit world, look at those men who lived harmoniously with their spouses on this earth. They look like men. But when you look closer, you will find the smiling face of a woman inside each one. She will be that man's beloved wife. That is the greatest ideal. Then you can become God's friend. Only then can you live with Him. You were born because of love. (226-141, 1992.2.2)

In the spirit world, God harmonizes with human beings through love and we become one with God through love. We become God-like. In the creation, we can see how God's dual characteristics are divided, but when man and woman become completely united in love, they will be like one person in the spirit world. If you were to just glance at a person, he would clearly look like a man, but on closer inspection, you will find a woman harmonized inside him. The eyes of love are completely united in what they see. Even ugly people look beautiful. Do beautiful people look ugly? They look beautiful. (205-341, 1990.10.2)

If you want to become a partner in true love, you must stand in the zero position. When that happens, God says, "Yes, yes!" and when He looks at the earthly world, He shines as the sun shines on the earth. The instant two people explode in love, even God in the spirit world will be surprised at what He sees. God will say, "Oh! Yes!" That phenomenon of love is the signal flare. On seeing that flare, God will visit the place where that couple are emptying themselves in a zero position, blazing with the fire of love that shines like the sun. He will want to go inside and spend the night in that place of first love. (202-34, 1990.5.1)

In the spirit world, a person who lives thousands and billions of miles away will come to you and not want to leave you because you have the same standard of heart. You would not say, "Oh, I

wish he would leave soon!" There is no need for food in that world. Everything will be solved by your intuition. That is the intuition of love. It spreads out to all nations from the complete experience of this love. Once you attain the heart of God's representative, all the necessary people will gather and a platform will appear that can be filled at once with millions of people. (225-223, 1992.1.20)

God does not exist elsewhere. Where does He exist? God's omnipresence means that He doesn't just exist in any single place. He exists where there is love. You must know this. God is omnipresent through love. Each of us can also be omnipresent through love. It is our privilege. So the owner exists in the places where there is love. You will instantly know the owner, so there is no possibility for the reversal of owner and guest. That is how the spirit world is. Everything is controlled based on love. (149-23, 1986.11.1)

What is a man? He is only half by himself. What is a woman? She is also just half. Even God, the supreme being, cannot be without an object partner. So the top needs the bottom, and the bottom needs the top. What is the spirit world? It is just half of the cosmos. The physical world is also just a half by itself. (161-320, 1987.3.8)

What will you do when you go to the spirit world? How will you live in the future when all the people from past history come together to live beyond the worldly domain? You will be living for each other. When you go to the spirit world, you continue with a life revolving around the ideal of love. Therefore you are investing in something that has greater value and that brings joy to you.

The spirit world is the extension of the physical world. If you pursued the deep, joyful and all-embracing aspects of the ideal of heavenly love while on earth, then when you go to the spirit world, you will connect with both the outer sphere of love with all its different qualities and its inner essence. So ultimately, you must be able to invest your love in all of its aspects – deep, shallow, high, and low. You have to live such a life of re-creation in God's stead. (164-326, 1987.5.18)

Do you want to become a representative who can move the spirit world? Racists will never be effective. Humanists, materialists, and denominationalists will not be effective. Only Unificationists will be effective in this matter. Let us say you go to the spirit world. There is no worry about food or clothing there. You have no worries about living. What hobby would you have there? You must realize that there is nothing greater than enjoying gatherings and banquets with God. Having a feast with God is the greatest ideal. There you will find love and joy. The beginning of happiness will well up from that place. (162-110, 1987.3.30)

In the spirit world, people will come to you from hundreds and even millions

of miles away in an instant. When you meet them, you will know where they have come from by looking at their forehead. You won't ask where a person is from, look at him, and then bow your head. That is not the custom in the spirit world. When you meet people who used to live hundreds of years ago, if the standard of your character of love is high, they will naturally first bow their heads to you. People are moved by love. How much you love humankind and all the things that God created out of love is measured according to the standard of how much you love them in the way that God loves them. You would know at once, faster than a computer. Married women proudly talk about how much their husbands love them, don't they? Likewise, in the spirit world, you can be proud of how much you receive God's love. Original true love is the love of the highest dimension. Compared to it, every other level is determined. (216-171, 1991.3.10)

A flower will bloom even for an old person when he experiences the essential and original love. That is why when people go to the spirit world, everyone returns to the time of the blossoming of their youth. They return to the appearance they had when they were at their most beautiful – during their young adulthood – and remain like that for eternity. That is why love is great. If you don't believe this, you can die today and find out for yourself. Won't it be wonderful to become young again? (204-82, 1990.7.1)

1.5. Food, clothing and shelter are not constraints in the spirit world

What is life like in the next world? You don't need to worry about what to eat, where to live, or what to wear. Why not? Because depending on your spiritual state, everything you want is possible. You can eat in the spirit world too. When you touch yourself in the spirit world you can feel your flow and pulse of your blood. Although it is a spiritual body, it feels just the same. When you want to eat, food will be created at once. When you express the desire for something, it will appear immediately. Where does it come from? The spirit world is a place where you can use the power of autonomy to mobilize the elemental resources. What does this initiating and active authority have that enables it to mobilize the whole? It is not power, knowledge, or money. It is love. (194-42, 1989.10.15)

This is an enormous universe God has created! There are no cars or restaurants in the spirit world. Yet in the spirit world, we can lovingly express our original abilities. We can create everything as if we were like God, the Creator, who creates all sorts of things based on the concept of true love. When out of love, you command something to appear, the thing will appear in its complete form. If you say, "That kind of tool appear!" it will appear at once. Isn't that wonderful? If you wishfully think, "I need to prepare this kind of meal for the ten thousand or even millions of people who have come to a banquet hall," it will appear with-

out fail. If you wish for a golden formal dress, it will appear instantly. How beautiful and wonderful this is! It is wonderful indeed! (217-293, 1991.6.2)

Will there be a car factory in the next world? In the spirit world, cars can go millions of miles in an instant. I know very clearly about all these things in that world, which is why I do not want to live in the physical world. The vast spirit world is all built around love. Everything is complete if you possess the sphere of God's heart that is harmonized with that love. The history of creation will continue forever. You have to accomplish what you have planned by harmonizing yourself to that mind of love. Once you determine and command, it will unfold at once. (202-86, 1990.5.6)

When you are in the spirit world, do you think that you have to urinate or not? Why don't you go there and find out? I can tell you that you will have to urinate, even in the spirit world. However, those who disagree should go there and find out for themselves. Then what about bowel movements? Do you think we do that there or not? You do everything there, but it will immediately return to the elements. Scientists say that there are 107 basic elements in the universe, although the number is constantly increasing. Anyhow, urine and feces will return to their elements. That is why you do not have to wash in the spirit world. If you wave your hands with the heart of love, everything will go back to its original place. If you ask something with a heart of love, it will come out. With the heart of love, the mobilization of all kinds of things is possible. (212-30, 1991.1.1)

Is there a bread factory in the spirit world or not? Is there a factory that produces cola and juice or not? Why not? You don't know why, do you? Is there a factory that makes cars in the spirit world or not? Would you say, "I want to go around in a luxurious car," and then travel around in that car? On earth, people boast of owning a Mercedes Benz, but in the spirit world there is no need for cars. (207-94, 1990.11.1)

In the spirit world, you can keep your eyes open forever and you can hear forever. You can live forever, even without eating. Would you eat rice because you are told to when you are already content with the way you are? Would you eat if you were told to? I would not eat. In the spirit world, you can wear clothes in whatever way you want. "Let's all wear a gold suit today. Okay, let's put on a diamond. The Queen of England has a 517-carat diamond, so let's have a better one. Give me a 17,000-carat diamond." If you say these things, you can have them all in an instant. You can create anything. When you hear this, you may think I have a wild imagination. But you should know that I'm speaking to you within the logical realm of possibility. (112-17, 1981.3.15)

The heavenly spirit world is a place filled with the air of love. We can under-

stand this concept with the structure of perception that exists on this earth. If the God of love, with a heart of love and in the hope of feeding all humanity at once thereby making them happy, says, "Let there be rice," it will appear. This is so because we have to eat, even in the spirit world. Therefore, you eat the food of love. When people look at each other, they do so with loving eyes. Even if you are beaten, you try to be hit again. There are no words to describe the mystery of the spirit world. You never get tired of listening. There is no concept of sleep or fatigue. You never feel tired and there is nothing that can excite you more than God's love. Nothing bores or disturbs you. How can you get tired if none of these things exist? (112-17, 1981.3.15)

In the spirit world, you are completely free from the problems of food, clothing, and shelter. When you stand in the realm of loving unity, in the position of God's object partner, you can do the things that God does. You can do anything. You can transcend billions of years in an instant. The speed of love is super-speed. It doesn't take time for you to visit the place where the person you love resides. You can come and go back in an instant. So you can immediately meet the person you love. There are no obstacles since it is an absolute realm. It is a world that goes beyond limitations and transcends time and space. No one knew that kind of infinite world was prepared for human beings. People came to know these things from the True Parents. (259-56, 1994.3.27)

In the spirit world, do you know what your life will be focused on? Are there factories and cars in the spirit world or not? Are there factories for expendable items? Do you eat in the spirit world? Do you wear clothes? Although these physical things do not exist in the spirit world, if the quality of your character reaches the standard as having the value as God's object partner, you can inherit God's creative ability. You can instantly prepare a banquet for a million people in the spirit world. If you have a true heart of love that feels, "I have to feed these people," and if you have a mind of sincere love like God has, anything is possible. Therefore, in the garden of love, the person who during his life has trained to pace himself in swimming through all the waves of the world of love can even enter inside God. Why? Because the waves of true love are the same; there is no discord. (203-340, 1990.6.28)

When you go to the spirit world, if you think, "Today, I would like to have this food," it will instantly appear. If you want to meet the person you love, in a flash you can be one with that person. If you ask in such a way, he or she can appear immediately. You can create a banquet room for tens or hundreds of thousands of people in an instant. This is not made up. The theory itself is that way. The leftovers return to their original form. They revert back to the elements in their original state. That's how convenient the spirit world is. Therefore, I am going to such a place where everyone in the cosmos longs to be with me. (227-100, 1992.2.10)

In the ideal world of creation, the Kingdom of Heaven is my home. Although it is vast, it is the stage for the activity of my life. It is not my nation. There are many institutions and kinds of occupation in a nation. It isn't like that in the spirit world. It is simple. Will there be factories supporting the economy? Will there be factories making clothes and processing rice? None of the necessities of life or things needed in this world are necessary there. So would we need factories or not? It is an ideal society where only flowers bloom. You can eat whenever you want. Whatever you think appears immediately. Would there be a need for rubbish bins? There are no rubbish bins. It is a world where things revert back to its elements with a wave of your hand. (204-174, 1990.7.8)

When you go to the eternal world, there will be a political system. But there is no need for an economic system. You are supplied with everything you need at any time. (167-59, 1987.6.14)

Economy is a secondary problem. Do you think you will enter the spirit world holding a rice bowl? Do you think you will carry a tin can? In the spirit world, food appears the minute you wish to eat. After you finish eating, if you tell it to return to zero, it will do so. Thus, everything is just an object that can be used based upon the quality of your character. The object would not have any subject-like influence to affect anything. (167-61, 1987.6.14)

Words cannot express how wonderful the spirit world is. It is a place in which there are no worries about food, clothing, and shelter. There are houses, clothing, and food to eat that you can use as you please. A person will be freely supplied with the appropriate environmental conditions according to the standard of love his mature character has achieved. Even if you are asleep, your spiritual body leads you to places where you can eat breakfast and dinner. That's how it is in the spirit world. You are free in this way. You can even eat in your sleep and go on your way according to your desire. Your spiritual body is made that way. (248-163, 1993.8.1)

What happens when you go into the spirit world? You will have no worries there about what you will eat. You will not work for bread or food. You can eat whenever you want to eat. The interesting thing is what happens to the leftovers after you have finished eating. You say, "Return!" and they will revert back to the elements, the primary reality. What kind of a person can move around in all directions in that world? It is a person who lives intoxicated by God's love. Since the spirit world is a place where the God's ideal of love is realized in all directions, people who live enraptured in God's love stand in a prominent position. (198-293, 1990.2.5)

In the spirit world, you drink the elements. If it's water, you drink the elements of water. Do you know what these elements are? In this way, you eat

your fill and with a wave of your hand, it returns to the elements. There are no rubbish bins. (211-244, 1990.12.30)

Do you need a job in the spirit world? Do you have to work for eight hours even there? Is there night? There is no night. Your eyes are always open. Your organs are always working, but what are they doing? What are they occupied with? What kind of activity would you enjoy even though you can go on for eternity with your eyes open and without sleep? It is love. Once you have the ideal of love and you demand something to appear, it will appear instantly. If ten thousand people are gathered there, everything will be prepared when you command, "Prepare a dining hall and a banquet for ten thousand!" (107-331, 1986.1.5)

Should there be air in the spirit world? Why do you need air? How wonderful it would be to live without breathing! Why? You cannot grow if you live without breathing. You would not be able to connect the two worlds. You have to connect them. You have to connect your spiritual and physical body. In order for the spiritual self to grow, it needs to have a growing physical body. It cannot be locked in its present state. Then what should we do? Even things that are invisible supply the elements that become the source of life, in the same way that God breathes the invisible air of love. (197-42.1990.1.7)

In this world, your eyelids blink to stop the dust in the air going into your eyes. Is there dust in the spirit world or not? If God had His eyes open in the spirit world for thousands and tens of thousands of years, would He feel good? Since they blinked out of habit on the earth, they will blink in the spirit world, even though there is no dust. Why does God blink? It is because He resembles us. (197-15, 1990.1.7)

Do you want to go to the spirit world or not? I may be telling you a lie. Even if it is a lie, if you believe it to be the Word of God and since God has the ability to create, you should know that these words are capable of creating things that are even greater than God's wishes. When the devil says, "Hey, God has told you such and such," and you believe in things greater than what the devil has said and act on them, God has plenty of ways to create and make this come true. (212-30, 1991.1.1)

1.6. Love is the origin of authority in the spirit world

In the spirit world, you do not need money. You do not need knowledge. That is how it was when I went there. You do not need power. God can create enough money to spare. He can even make stars out of diamonds. He is the Absolute Being. He is the great King of knowledge. He is the great King of authority. He can eternally and freely exercise His authority at all times, beyond the four seasons of winter, spring, summer, and autumn. What could He need? (196-311, 1990.1.12)

There are billions of people living in the infinite spirit world. When you go there, you can meet anyone. There is no need to study history. However, if you think, "I want to meet so and so!" and call that person, he will only appear if you call him out of love. He will not appear if you are greedy and think, "Because he is a learned man, I will meet him to get knowledge." You will not be able to meet him. You have to have love. If you call a person with a loving heart, recognizing the difficulties he went through to become such a famous person, you can deal with anyone from the east, west, and all four directions. (233-140, 1992.8.1)

Money? You can make as much money as you want. Knowledge? God is the King of knowledge. Power? Is the president of the Republic of Korea any more than a piece of rag? I may sound rude, but what is the president of a country one-hundredth the size of the Soviet Union? Knowledge, money, and power are just some of the values people pursue during their lifetime. Can a professor be proud of his knowledge for one thousand or ten thousand years? Can he show it off as he wanders around? It stays with him during his lifetime. Your knowledge is with you only during your physical life. It is the same with money and power. I'm sorry to say this. When you talk about someone saying, "He is great," isn't it usually because of his knowledge, money, or power? That may be the case in this world, but God regards those values as nothing. They are all worthless in the spirit world. (203-291, 1990.6.27)

On what basis can humankind and its history be resolved and completed? People should know God. God is a God of character. God cannot be vague. We ourselves are real and substantial. Since we are beings of character – with intellect, emotion, and will – then our subject partner God also has character that includes intellect, emotion, and will. That is how we understand it. What is the central attribute of God among all His many attributes? It is emotion. It is love. God needs love most of all in order to live in complete fulfillment. In the Kingdom of Heaven, we do not live by knowledge alone.

Because of your ignorance of the spirit world, you do not understand this, but it would take less than a week for you to learn everything in that world. It is like a mirror in which you can see your own heart reflected. The spirit world is a world of intuition where within a week you could obtain all the knowledge that a very intellectual person has acquired throughout his life on earth. Because you see things through the light of your heart, you will automatically understand that world and all its related connections. Only through emotion and heart will you understand whether a person is in a relationship with you as your object partner or subject partner. It cannot be done through knowledge or any of the other attributes of God. (210-312, 1990.12.27)

What is knowledge? With knowledge or information you can control the environment. If you only have love,

which is the greatest knowledge among all knowledge, you have a foundation for everything in heaven and earth to connect to you. It is people with knowledge who rule this world. Don't they say knowledge is power? It is logical that a person of power rules. For that reason, a person who has love does not need knowledge. In the spirit world, you will know everything even without studying it. (202-86, 1990.5.6)

The universe is our great stage for action, yet we are strangling ourselves with things like money, knowledge, and power, which do not exist in the spirit world. None of those things remain in that world. On earth, money, knowledge, and power are necessary, but there is no need for them in the spirit world. People in the satanic world covet those things. (205-128, 1990.7.29)

Do you need money in the spirit world? Do you need power, knowledge, or food? If you need those things, they will appear the moment you wish for them. There are no factories producing food in the spirit world. There are no schools. There are no people with secular authority. God alone is the source of strength.

The spirit world is our eternal homeland. Our place of rest awaits us there. Whether one wishes it or not, everyone will go to that place. I know this well. (231-270, 1992.6.7)

Power is not necessary in that world. The spirit world is a harmonizing power based on love. It is a power of influence based on love. That world is such a world. Therefore, a person who has not acquired the power of influencing through love cannot be harmonized in essence with the original world, which is influenced by love, and is instead repelled once he enters that world. That person will go to hell. This is a serious matter. (230-28, 1992.4.15)

Nobody hates love. If you don't have money, you just make it. You can always study in the spirit world if you don't do so now. In the spirit world, it doesn't even take three days to meet the standard needed to graduate from Tokyo University.

When you try to express your innermost thoughts while looking into a person's heart, he will catch your thought before you voice it. For that reason, you cannot hide anything in that world. Isn't that convenient? Even a computer with the most memory and fastest processor cannot compete with this. (229-95, 1992.4.11)

Everything in this universe is connected through love. The spirit world and all creation are connected by love. They are connected based on true love. Therefore, you can be connected with any place just by having true love. If you have true love, everything will bow its head to you. There is no need for education in the spirit world. Within a week, anyone can learn ten times more than someone who has graduated from Tokyo University. Do not be proud of

yourself just because you graduated from there. A conscientious person will see through everything in an instant. He will not need any explanation. (229-20, 1992.4.9)

In the spirit world, there is no need to study languages. You will know everything in a week. You will know all the thoughts that arise in the mind. You will know them even before they are expressed. Therefore, people cannot be deceived. In that world, you will gaze upon people who are revealed in your searchlight. You should know how to pass through that light safely, without any problem, and connect with your original position – this is your lifetime task. (205-67, 1990.7.7)

How inconvenient this world is! Do you or do you not need to earn money in the spirit world? Do you have to study? You will understand everything without studying. Before anything is said, your heart will already know.

In that world, you will see clearly who is higher and lower around you. You will know as soon as you meet someone. You can measure their level. You will know how it is in the east, west, south, and north. In this way, even as you lie still, you will sense whether someone is calling you. In that case, you enter a state of nothingness and set up the spirit world as your subject partner. It is a world that is being created through the power of love. (202-86, 1990.5.6)

The structure of the spirit world is such that everything is made into a system focusing on one's life so there is no such thing as power politics. Here, people use any means strongly for military expansion or political purposes, but such things do not exist in the spirit world. The issue is how everyone will be able to live an enriched life based on the movement for economic equalization of resources. The physical world should also be this way. (303-192, 1999.8.25)

Do you understand that God created everything because of love? If you ask God what He loves the most, what do you think His answer will be? God does not have favorites. He has no need of money, knowledge, or power. What do members of the Unification Church need? The same thing. Love includes money, knowledge, and power. The power of love is an everlasting power.

A person who understands genuine love will have nothing more to learn in heaven. That kind of person can go in and out of God's heart at any time. He can freely move east, west, south, and north through God's body. This acts like a central railway station. Do you understand?

Why do we need God's heart? When you go in and out of His heart, tremendous power is generated because energy from the four directions is concentrated there. Even a small, unimportant person will be elevated to the same position as God when he comes to the central point. Love has such great power. (202-86, 1990.5.6)

1.7. The spirit world is the world of God's law and order

The sun rotates on its axis just like the earth. The sun, whose mass is 1.3. million times greater than the earth, is constantly moving. There are vast galaxies in the universe whose mass is 200 billion times greater than the solar system. These galaxies are called microcosms. There are countless nebulae like these galaxies in the universe. Considered together we call this the macrocosm. We should broaden our minds and look at the world of this vast and boundless universe.

God, who created this enormous universe whose radius spans hundreds of millions of light years, has moved this great universe along for millions and billions of years in accordance with an unchanging law. God is moving all these celestial bodies with a power that goes far beyond our imagination and senses.

The more we think about God, who created this universe, the more naturally we come to bow our heads before His grandeur and greatness. We should broaden our minds to consider the fact that the Creator of this great universe is our Father, who looks after us, our God who protects us, and the great living Master. (5-342, 1959.3.8)

Trains run on rails that were made based on meticulous calculations. If a train's speed is beyond a certain limit for even a second, it will be derailed and cause a disaster. The great universe conforms to the laws of nature and smoothly rotates with ease. Even the solar system has nine immense planets that all rotate in this way. You should know that the vast universe has 100 billion solar systems and even now they are active as they go through all sorts of courses of movement. This universe with a 100 billion solar systems does exist. They are all moving; every one of them. We call it nature because it has developed naturally and spontaneously. (94-252, 1977.10.1)

The origin must be revealed. If God existed from the beginning, He must be an absolute being. He must be unique, unchanging and eternal. That's how He must be. The laws He established have to be absolute. For that reason, this universe continues to move for thousands, tens of thousands and billions of years according to those laws. The animal world, the plant world and the world of micro-organisms continue their existence based on scientific formulae and laws. Consequently, everything can be explained using mathematics. (172-35, 1988.1.3)

People have to go to the spirit world when they die. What is it like in that world? The spirit world is a place where everything is in order. You have to know all about it. What kind of world is it? It is an ideal world where order is established. It is a world permeated by love. You breathe in love. We breathe air in this world, don't we? Fish breathe water, don't they? Then what do we

breathe in the spirit world? We breathe love. (132-270, 1984.6.20)

With what does God govern heaven and earth? He governs them through the law, a law of dominion through love. The universal law exists in order to support the way dominion is undertaken. God's reason for creating human beings is that He longs for love. He could have remained by Himself, but for what did He create us? It is because He needs stimulating and impulsively expressed love. (121-103, 1982.10.24)

Many people are experiencing the spirit world. It is a special world. They have come to know that it is extremely difficult to comprehend the vastness of that world; for example, from what kind of principles did the spirit world originate, and how does it operate as a result? If you look at the content of the Principle that the Unification Church advocates, you will realize that the spirit world is a realm that we can perceive on the basis of a principled formula. I believe that the fact that this Principle was revealed will be regarded as a momentous event in history. (53-327, 1972.3.6)

Have you ever felt very keenly, yet with gratitude, about how amazing it is that God governs all the laws that move the universe while guiding the providence to re-create human beings and raise them as beings of value who can govern the universe in His stead? (5-344, 1959.3.8)

Section 2. Heaven and Hell

2.1. Heaven is the world of the ideal of love

What kind of place is heaven? It is a place with God's love at its core. Heaven is the realm where the environment of God's love is established. Then what kind of person can enter and live within that realm? It should be someone who can harmonize with the essence of God's love. Only such a person can go there. (46-36, 1971.7.18)

As heaven is the world where people live for the sake of others, you have to go forth based on the concept of living for the sake of others. If you only think about being served, you will be destroyed. Heaven is the world filled with God's love. The essence of love is to live for the sake of the whole, rather than to be served. Thus, heaven is different from the secular world. Religion teaches us to live for the sake of others, to be absolutely obedient, to sacrifice and to serve. The secular world does not have such teaching. This teaching may seem to be something practiced by groups of beggars who know nothing of this world. Yet, this was God's secret strategy against Satan so that people could receive good fortune, even though they were unaware of the heavenly law. (46-40, 1971.7.18)

You go to heaven on the tracks of love. When I explain it like this, doesn't it seem real? The line of love is not like

elastic so it will not become thin, even while it is being pulled. Because it is extremely strong, the more it is pulled the thicker it becomes. In this sense, to become the king of suffering for the sake of God's will is the secret method to occupy the world. The king of suffering exclusively possesses the glory of the Kingdom of Heaven. (57-162, 1972.5.31)

What kind of world is heaven? It is not a world where people regard each other with animosity and jealousy, turning green with envy over another's fortune or getting upset over someone else's happiness. One person's success represents the success of the whole. One person's joy can be shared by the whole. Therefore, heaven is where everyone can be pleased over any person's happiness, and everyone can join in and rejoice when anyone rejoices. (18-102, 1967.5.28)

Heaven is the world of God's love. It is a world where you smell the air of love. That world is filled with life. There is no place that doesn't throb with life. Everyone is bound together through blood ties. Since people are descended from God's single lineage, if God is sorrowful over something, then the entire spirit world, as a single cell or body, would feel that sorrow. If God feels joy, everyone would feel that joy. That is the kind of world it is. In this way, God's love is moving the vast Kingdom of Heaven. The living world responds harmoniously to this love, and becomes artistically beautiful through the subject-object relationship between all the elements of the creation. They are connected together by lineage. If God is happy, you are happy; if God is sad, you are sad. It was inevitably made that way. (226-113, 1992.2.2)

Will there be struggles in heaven? What would we do in that eternal world without struggles? That world does not end after a year but goes on for eternity. Wouldn't it be dull then? What would you do there? Would you live alone, or would you have relationships with all existing beings in the spirit world? With what will you establish those relationships? With true love. In that case, what is the essence of that world? When you eat, you should do so feeling love; you should wear clothes feeling love; you should live feeling love; and you should travel around embodying God's love. That love should be God's essential love. Without doing so there will be no harmony. A person with a character resembling God's essential love will occupy a high place in the spirit world. All existing beings in that world will live in harmony based on such a character. It is a world where such people can live in harmony. (201-97, 1990.3.11)

True love expressed through human beings is the blossoming of absolute value. For what reason does God exist? He came into being through true love and lives based on true love. Why were we born and why do we live? We were born because of true love and live because of true love. In that case, both God and human beings have no cause for complaint. Humanity blooms like the flower

of the universe and fills it with fragrance. With true love at the center, both sides become one. The right and left sides will both say "*Mansei*!" with their hands in the air. A true person would say "*Mansei*!" The spirit world would look down and say "*Mansei*!" This side and the other side would all say "*Mansei*!" Everyone unites and releases a fragrance. Intoxicated, they all shout three cheers of "*Mansei*!" (201-201, 1990.4.1)

Siblings with the same mind live together in the spirit world. If you aren't trained to live like that in this world, there will be a collision in the next world. That would be a great problem. What does it mean to be of one mind with another person? While training to attend God, there is no better method than being in tuned in with other peoples' minds. Do you know how exacting God is? There is no forgiveness if you deviate from the Principle. Therefore, you must be able to accord with peoples' minds, and harmonize with others. There is no other training for attending God that is as quick as this. (207-353, 1990.11.11)

When a perfected person enters the spirit world, he makes friends wherever he goes. He passes as a friend when he enters the position of a child, sibling, spouse or parent. He can be at home anywhere, including God's throne. (245-173, 1993.3.7)

How can you go to heaven? You have to be crazy for God's love. You have to love God more than Adam and Eve did. You must love Jesus more than Peter, James and John did. Without that, the realm of a partnership of true love, in which God can love you, cannot be restored. Only when this is restored will everything be fulfilled. (142-289, 1986.3.13)

Do not worry that you have no money. Do not worry that you have no children. If you continuously follow this path for ten or twenty years, you will be able to scale very high and steep mountains. You may feel that you are only going through hardships and gradually declining, but actually you are moving higher and higher. The Unification Church becomes bigger by being persecuted. In a family of ten the one who is opposed by the others, and continuously endures for the common good, can become the master of that family. In other words, that person becomes an owner in the Kingdom of Heaven. (142-289, 1986.3.13)

Heaven is a world of love. It is the world that exists for the sake of God, the central being. It is the world of living for the sake of God. (98-35, 1978.4.8)

The first people who should enter heaven should be the True Parents. If I say that heaven is empty, people will think I am demented. But Jesus could not enter heaven. You cannot go there alone. Our original ancestors should have grown through adolescence, established the ideal of love in which God dwelt, become parents and bequeathed the seeds of true love. Then the first place

they would have entered would have been heaven. But up until now, there have been no parents embodying God's love, who were able to leave the seeds of true love. There was no foundation on which to leave behind such descendants. Thus, heaven is empty. (140-45, 1986.2.1)

Will you all head towards a global heaven or an individual heaven? You may say that you will head towards a global heaven. I have been going this way, enduring persecution for forty years, because I too am greedy to grasp the line of love that leads to the global heaven. This was so I could grasp the line of love beyond the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. Then, with this in my grasp where will I go? After finding the love line of the world, we must go back to our hometown because we have received many blessings and succeeded in life. Shouldn't we go to our hometown and save the unfortunate people there? (143-141, 1986.3.17)

The way to heaven is opened by loving your brothers as God does. You are trying to follow me, but while keeping such a heart you should strive to reach out and bring your brothers with you. We can conclude that the one who teaches the highest, quickest and best way to go to heaven is neither God nor me, but your brothers. (66-125, 1973.4.18)

Religious people today say, "Let's go to heaven!" But can people just go to heaven? People should first encounter heaven on this earth before they go there. In order to enter heaven on earth, you have to go through the law of love. The more children you have in your family, the greater you should bear the additional cross of loving God's Kingdom. The reason many children are sent to your family is because your family has to carry many crosses. Thus, your family has many responsibilities for the sake of the kingdom. Once you know this, you should fulfill your responsibility completely. To such a family, children will be born who can inherit good fortune in the generations to come. (32-232, 1970.7.19)

What kind of person can enter heaven? First of all, it should be someone who is one with God's mind. To what extent should he be in accord with God's mind? If God works towards the eternal ideal based on His eternal purpose, that person's mind should be in harmony with God's mind for eternity. This harmony should not be one that lasts for just ten years. He should eternally align his mind to the eternal God. How can this be done? He should become the son who can eternally like and be liked by God. In order to be such a son, he should not appear to be a sad person. (47-255, 1971.8.29)

The concept of heaven can be established from the position of subjugating Satan, denying everything related to Satan, and furthermore, eliminating him. Heaven is affirmed on the basis of having denied and removed the negative historic relic of Satan and all the contents of a satanic lifestyle. Without removing

these things, you cannot exhibit the content of heaven. (46-74, 1971.7.25)

To enter heaven, a person must not sin, must receive God's love directly, have no need to believe in Jesus, and no need of a savior. He must go through a course to attain the qualification to become such a child. Only when a person who has lived in that way goes to heaven, can God's ideal heaven be established. (160-89, 1968.8.11)

Who is the oldest grandfather in the universe? It is God. Who are the final descendants of God who will unite this world and all heaven and earth? They are the future descendants. Both the first one, God, and the final descendants have to be connected. They are connected by the family. Not the nation. When you enter heaven, you will not be recognized because you are an American. And you will not be rejected for being from an underdeveloped country. In heaven, only the model family that can join the past, present and future to God's will based on this mainstream system and family institution will be acknowledged. You should know that this is the formula. The warehouse where the fruits of such families are stored is heaven. (135-118, 1985.10.4)

In order to live a life of attendance, preparation for attending is required. After the preparation process, one needs to practice the life of attendance. After the preparation process and living the life of attendance, one can go to heaven. The place where people who have attended wholeheartedly go is heaven. The place where we can be proud of our preparation for attendance, and where we can be proud of our life of attendance, is heaven. It is our destiny to follow the course that advances towards the world of heavenly purpose. (8-290, 1960.2.14)

You cannot enter heaven without being joined in heart. Heaven is the original nation, the nation of original nature, which can have dominion over the whole. You cannot possess that nation based on your situation. Only people who have a deep bond of heart can possess it. Therefore, Christianity is ultimately not a religion dealing with situations but dealing with heart. The purpose of God's providence on earth is to create the foundation to be able to share heart beyond our personal circumstances. (8-290, 1960.2.14)

What kind of place is heaven? It is where you can take pride in what you prepared during your life on earth, and where you take pride in your life of attendance. Then what kind of person can enter heaven? Is it the place for those who believe in the Lord so as to receive blessings or for those who go forth for blessings? No. Those who prepare themselves for wholeheartedly attending God can go to heaven. It is a place for those who can leave a life of attendance as their legacy and joyfully move on even if they were to die in the process. That is resurrection. The hidden efforts of your daily life are not seen. How we should

live from now on is the important question we should think about in our life of attendance. (8-304, 1960.2.14)

What is heaven like? Heaven is bright wherever you go. Didn't Dr. Lee Sang-hun talk about the reality of the spirit world like that? It is exactly like that. Heaven is where God's light of love shines into all corners of the universe, and all creation within its bosom gives three cheers of "*Mansei*!" "*Mansei*" for what? It is not for eternity. It is three cheers for liberation! If we are liberated, everyone should shout out, "*Mansei* for liberation!" and let go of all their resentments. (300-203, 1999.3.4)

You can only enter heaven when, based on God's love, you represent the family standard of true love and bond to the original parents. You have to be united with the true love of the true God and True Parents. Those who have lived together and are related to the children born from God's lineage can go to heaven. However, up until now no one has lived such a life before going to the spirit world. Therefore, heaven is empty. (176-210, 1988.5.9)

Even if you have been attending church for a hundred years, if you still have a self-centered mind you will never enter heaven. You cannot receive salvation. You have to know which religion is true today. You should realize what kind of person is a true person, and what kind of nation is a true nation. (78-118, 1975.5.6)

What kind of person can harmonize with the essence of God's love? A person who is self-centered does not have any value. Only the one who can invest everything – his own life and all his devotion for the sake of others – can live continuously in the realm of God's love. Historically, the great people and saints followed such a way. (46-36, 1971.7.18)

2.2. Heaven is where people serve and live for one another

You must invest yourself and then forget. If among a hundred members there is someone who is wearing poorer clothes than your sons and daughters, you should not be able to sleep. You should want to give him clothes. That is the heart of God, the heart of a parent. What is the leading system of thought of the Unification Church? It is to have a parental heart, wear the clothes of a servant, shed sweat for earth, tears for humankind and blood for heaven. What is heaven? It is the world of love to which you bring your children. You receive love and say that you will give it to the entire universe. I love God. I know everything right through from the spirit world to the physical world. (296-120, 1998.11.3)

Until now, the heavenly spirit world was a world of mystery. It is the place where people go who live according to the principles of existence that God established, which means living for the sake of others. The ideal heaven is a world that is built based on such principles. (298-315, 1999.1.17)

What should you do to prosper? You must be selfless. The Unification Church practices absolute selflessness – living for the sake of others. This is the dividing line. One side will fall to hell; the other side will go to heaven. That is how it is in the spirit world. You will know immediately. You will know the place where people who lived for others will go. For that reason, you should live for others, accept the way of thinking of the saints, the teachings of the Savior, and God's way of thinking. What is God's way of thinking? It is to live absolutely for the sake of others. (299-217, 1999.2.16)

Smaller things must be invested for the greater good. Therefore, it stands to reason that the family should sacrifice itself for the sake of the tribe. The tribe should sacrifice for the people; the people for the nation; and the nation for the world. Those who take national property and give it to their families will all hang upside down in hell. They will perish. If they don't go to ruin here on earth, they will hang upside down in the spirit world. (302-173, 1999.6.13)

Earthly life and life in heaven are opposites. Fallen people live for their own sake on this earth, but in the spirit world they are supposed to live for the sake of the whole. By becoming people who can disavow the Fall and live for the whole, they can become God's object partner! They should say "Amen!" for eternity. (303-33, 1999.7.4)

Those who live for their own sake cannot go to heaven. What is an evil person? It is someone who tries to unite everything around himself. Such a person is a dictator and a villain. He will go directly non-stop to hell. That is not allowed in the Unification Church. The individual must live for the family; the family for the tribe; the tribe for the people; the people for the nation; the nation for the world; the world for the universe; the universe for the cosmos; and the cosmos for God. Then who does God live for? He lives for you. (303-260, 1999.9.9)

What does religion, which should guide people to the original homeland, teach? You should know that it must teach them to live for the sake of others. The higher the religion, the more strongly it emphasizes the importance of living for others. Therefore, we must be gentle and meek. Why? Religion teaches us to stand in a position to lift up many people and live for their sake. It teaches us to sacrifice and serve. Why? It is because religions must train people to conform to the rules of the Kingdom of Heaven. (78-117, 1975.5.6)

After people have lived on earth, they enter the spirit world. All those who go to the higher realm are people who lived for others. For example, those who go to forty countries in the world and live for others with the heart of a mother in a family, and those who have the heart of a saint to save the people of the world from evil will go to a higher place. I think in that way. "I am one man, a general who represents sons of filial piety of the

historical ages, a general of patriots and of saints. Although everyone else who had the name of God's son failed, I was born as a victorious son." There is only one thing that will enable you to say that. It is to live absolutely for others. We can conclude that only those who give and serve others and then forget, can digest that world. It is simple. (203-100, 1990.6.17)

There is no one who can avoid death. You cannot avoid death. People will die after they live here. When people who lived for themselves go to the spirit world, after making a circle they enter hell. In contrast, people who lived for others go to the spirit world, after making a circle they enter heaven. Those two worlds are separated at death. (203-100, 1990.6.17)

From now on, a long line of people will form to offer their property to heaven. It will be the longest line in the world. In other words, everyone should become a penniless person who has offered everything. Then there are only tears, mucus and blood left to offer. I was like that. There was nothing else left to offer. I offered all my life and property. If you have a savings bankbook for your sons and daughters, should you use that for them? Or should you use it for the salvation of the world? Only if you think in that way and act upon it can you participate in the ranks of the Messiah's chosen ones. You should live for others. Live for the whole and for the greater good. Live for the world, for God, and for the liberation of humankind. You have to motivate people to change to the new lineage through your efforts. (203-187, 1990.6.24)

What kind of competition will there be in the future? A competition in living for the sake of others. Why? Since those who live for others go to a higher position in the Kingdom of Heaven, if you live for such a person, you can be raised up using him as your foothold. At Cape Canaveral there is a launch pad for satellites. Just like a satellite, you are launched and fly into the sky. (213-194, 1991.1.20)

If you live for the sake of someone, you demonstrate the same motivation that God had in creating His partner in love. You will stand in the position of loving counterpart to that person. Don't you think so? For that reason, follow someone and live for others. You work following me, don't you? Aren't you trying to occupy God by leaping upwards to become the object of my love? Is it true, or not? Satellites should be launched towards a destination, shouldn't they? It is the same idea. Satellites are symbolic of today's believers trying to jump up towards the Kingdom of Heaven, crossing thousands and tens of thousands of miles. (213-194, 1991.1.20)

What kind of world is the spirit world? It is where people live for others out of true love. People live not for the self, but for the whole. Even in this world, those who live 100 percent for others say, "Walk over me and go on!" No matter how big America is, if there is someone who lives more for the nation than the president does, everyone will welcome

him, even if he steps on the president in order to do this. But if someone only lives for his own sake, everyone becomes an enemy.

It is the same in the spirit world. If someone lives for a greater cause, he can pass along freely. If something benefits a higher purpose, it can pass freely. So, if someone lives for the world, he does not have to live for America. America is included in the world. Korea is the same. All the nations are included. What is the essence of the purpose that everyone can agree on that goes beyond the family level? We can conclude that it is to follow the way of true love by living for the sake of others. (215-174, 1991.2.17)

If you are fifty years old and you lived for the sake of the universe and the heavenly principle for over twenty-five years, you can go to heaven. You can pass to the next world and live in a better part of the spirit world. But people who live their whole life centered on themselves go to the original homeland of evil – hell – rather than the original homeland of goodness, regardless of how they feel. You have to know these facts and liquidate your past way of living for your own good. You should make an effort for the rest of your life to live for the sake of the whole, the nation, the world, heaven and earth and God. If you do so, it follows that you will go forward, not to hell, but to the ideal world of heaven. (78-119, 1975.5.6)

Even in the face of death, Jesus cried out, "Father! If it is possible, please let this cup pass from me. But not as I wish, but as the Father wishes." Even as he died, he did not protest to God, but was ready, without questioning, to offer a complete sacrifice for the sake of God's will. Jesus' attitude brought him the closest to God because it enabled him to go deeper. In front of such a person, even God cannot do as He wishes. The one who strikes such a person will be instantly destroyed. God would personally inflict punishment upon that person. (36-85, 1970.11.15)

Do you know about the spirit world? Heaven is for people who live for the sake of others. The one who lives a self-centered life can never be there; he will be in hell. No matter how great a minister he was, he will find out where he is once he arrives there. Our Unification Church tries to save its enemies and even the communists. Yet the communists try to cut off the heads of Unification Church members. That is the difference. So, what kind of love should have dominion over the world? We must be stronger than communists. You should not grow strong by becoming an evil person. If we become strong based on love through living for the sake of others, it will be enough to save the world. (91-173, 1977.2.6)

Heaven is where you live a life of giving. God also has to give. Parents have to give to their children. The parental mind is to want to give, and give again when you have something better to give. (34-141, 1970.8.30)

If I can give one thousand things and forget that I gave, in front of God who gives a hundred things and forgets, God will surely become my partner. Do you know this? That is great. Positions will be exchanged within the subject-object partner relationship. Then, would that person who tried to live for goodness more than God go to hell or heaven? Would he go to heaven and just become an errand boy for God's breakfast table, or would he go there and remain in a position where he can sit with God and share meals of love with Him? Which would it be? (208-208, 1990.11.18)

I have experienced the reality of the spirit world more than anyone else. The spirit world is my major, my special field of study. What is the origin of order in the spirit world? Heaven is a world based on the principle of living for the sake of others. That is our original homeland. (74-51, 1974.11.27)

2.3. The Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world must emerge through the kingdom on earth

Historically, the people called by God were usually over the age of fifty or sixty. Most of them were old, worn out and just one step away from their funeral and the grave. In the background of His providence, God was working with these hardened and withered people at that time, but He knew that in the future He would work with the young generation. So, God was concerned about how to develop his providential history through that younger generation. Embracing such circumstances, God has trodden the course of history. (20-95, 1968.4.28)

Even a person like Buddha, when he was in an esoteric state, said, "I am my own lord throughout heaven and earth." When someone who has trained himself to achieve oneness of mind, enters the spirit world and stands as a complete object partner of God, he can say that he is his own lord throughout heaven and earth. Once, I felt that I was grasping the world tightly in my hand, and it seemed to melt. When you reach this level, miracles can happen automatically. The curing of diseases comes as a natural result of religious life. (76-143, 1975.2.2)

When you look at most people today, they go about their life's daily routine – waking up in the morning and eating meals – and still say, "I am fine in God's eyes." There are many people who believe this. However, such people cannot be owners of heaven. They are not fine in front of God. Without the factor that enables you to be acknowledged as a partner to God, you cannot have an absolute standard of faith. Since the Kingdom of Heaven can come only after the standard of absolute faith is established, when you do not have it, it will not be established. It will never happen. Why is this so? It is because Satan remains in that place. (46-79, 1971.7.25)

Today, many religions teach that heaven will be established only by their

own religion. This is irrational fantasy. Many religions say that heaven will be established through their founder's teaching. Look at Christianity. It is divided into many denominations. They usually regard churches outside their own denomination as heretical or satanic. In reality, if they were to do this from a position authorized by God, there would be no problem. If they do it for their own benefit, though, then their motivation is not pure. Accordingly, such a denomination will perish. If today's Unification Church does this, then it will also decline. (47-250, 1971.8.29)

Even the spirit world has been divided by walls. There are realms for Buddhists and realms for Confucians. They are all separated by walls. All of the barriers have to be overcome by way of a higher standard that comes from God's heart. From the high throne of heaven and the higher realms, all the walls must be broken down in reverse order. The walls and barriers that separate ancestors and peoples from many thousands of years ago and ages past must all be broken down. All the walls on earth must be eliminated and a way to connect this to hell must be paved. Otherwise, the opening of the gates of heaven cannot be achieved. (140-43, 1986.2.1)

What standard do you, as an Unificationist, have to attain? You have to be a better person than Buddha, a better person than Confucius and even better than Jesus. Until now, the purpose of religion was individual salvation. However, the purpose of the Unification Church is family salvation, rather than individual salvation. This is the difference between Unificationism and other religions. For salvation we are saving the family. When we go to heaven we are not going alone. (34-359, 1970.9.20)

Heaven is a place which you cannot enter alone. You can enter heaven only after you realize the ideal of a couple. Therefore, to enter heaven, fallen human beings must go through the dispensations of restoration, resurrection and recreation. To give the Blessing to you is to open wide the gates of heaven. Through the Blessing, I am opening the closed gates of heaven for you. (152-240, 1963.5.25)

Jesus said that heaven was in our hearts, but imagine how lonely and miserable he was when he could not say that heaven was in our families. So, as you have a family, you can even sing with happiness. We are given the opportunity to live this way. Yet, Jesus, the Lord of truth who came to save the universe, God's only begotten Son, could not even dream of the circumstances necessary for heaven. He wandered around for almost three years trying to revive heaven within our hearts by saying that the Kingdom of Heaven was within us. But then he was crucified. How utterly lonely and miserable His life was! (120-48, 1982.10.3)

The tracks of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and those in the Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world are the same.

When a locomotive crosses over the boundary between two countries, the tracks in one country must match with those in the other for the train to continue running smoothly. Likewise, the tracks on earth and in heaven should be connected. The path of true love – living for the sake of others – is the path that connects the rails from earth so that the family that embodies the train of love can go directly to heaven, nonstop all the way to the throne of heaven. The individual human path and the family's path should both be connected together. They should go along in the same direction. (211-288, 1990.12.30)

We are destined to go to the spirit world whether we like it or not. That is a fact of life. We are like a wanderer who is moving ever closer to that destination. What becomes the issue is whether you have lived more for the sake of others or for yourself. If you have lived more for others, you will go to heaven. If the opposite is true, you will go to hell. You may not want to believe this fundamental formula given your present situation, but when you die you will come to understand. (74-51, 1974.11.27)

People are staying at various levels in the spirit world. How did they come to be like that? They stay in the position that corresponds to the degree they have practiced filial piety according to the way of love; whether they pledged their loyalty to their nation; and how much they fulfilled the way of a saint in this world. The path that people should take in their earthly life is the way of righteousness. Concerning this, there is one path for the individual, one for the family, the tribe, the people, nation, world, universe and even for God. This should be one and the same path. What is that path? It is the path of original love. (147-183, 1986.9.21)

What kind of world will you go to in the end? Are you going to heaven or to hell? On the way there, are you going to be a person who says, "Father, please help me!" or a person who says, "Welcome, True Father!" That will be a matter of life and death. After marriage, you made a pledge to live happily. When I say live you should live well, it means that you should become an unchanging couple. In order to become like that, you should go to the ever-changing world and receive training together. You should keep your promises even if you go to a world where people are divided, north and south or in all four directions. You should maintain such a well-trained position. (129-182, 1983.10.30)

The sons and daughters born from true parents are not false children but true children. The true family can emerge from them. With the emergence of a true family, a true tribe, a true ethnic people, a true nation, and a true world will be created. In that world, people should live a heavenly way of life with God in the family, tribe, people and world. Only then can this earth become the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. After living this way, people

will discard their bodies on the earth and enter the eternal heaven. That place is called heaven in the spirit world. This is the ultimate reality of God's providence. (160-44, 1968.8.11)

You should not think you are entitled to go to heaven. You should think of building heaven on earth. Before that, you must become a heavenly person. In order to become such a person, you have to make unity of heart with Heavenly Father to the degree that you can say confidently, "Father's heart is my heart, and my heart is Father's heart." Accordingly, in this earthly life, you should be a person representing God's heart, the Lord's heart, as well as the heart of your ancestors. By doing so, all historical problems can be solved. (3-295, 1958.1.19)

Suppose there is a dying person who says, "God, even though I did not live according to Your will until now, in my mind I tried to go to heaven. So please regard me as having established the proper indemnity conditions!" Because God is fair, He will bring that person to the position of wanting to go to heaven. God rewards him according to his actions, placing him in a position of wanting to go to heaven. That position can be just below paradise. Even people in hell are trying to go to heaven. (57-265, 1972.6.4)

People may say that the Unification Church is a place where people just come and go, but that is not the case. You alone are responsible for deciding the actions you commit on earth and for making any recompense for wrongdoing. These actions cannot be erased. If this door is closed, no one else can open it again for eternity, only you can be responsible for it. If it is opened, no one except you can ever close it again. What is bound on earth should be released on earth: you should release what you bind. This is the problem. Therefore, when you go witnessing now, you should witness to your family members and relatives. (34-266, 1970.9.13)

If you can claim, "I love the fruits of the love of two billion people on earth more than I love the mother and father who gave birth to me. I love those four billion people more than I love my parents", then you are able to love humankind in a unified position within the realm of God's love. Thus, you stand in a position that has no relation to the satanic world. (140-56, 1986.2.1)

The original person is someone who, as an unfallen person and one who is unrelated to Satan, establishes a family based on the love of the ideal couple and goes directly to heaven after his life on earth. That is why we call it the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. The kingdom on earth inherits the ideals of the heavenly kingdom. Therefore, the fact that Peter received the keys to the gates of heaven means that the way of establishing heaven is to be found on earth. You should know this clearly. (208-345, 1990.11.21)

2.4. Jesus and paradise

If it wasn't for the Fall, heaven would have been the place where God's only begotten sons and daughters would have gone to after creating a family of God and living in His love. Heaven can only be entered as a family. You cannot enter heaven by yourself. Since Jesus did not form a family, he was unable to enter heaven and is waiting in paradise, which is the waiting room for heaven. Paradise is like a preparatory environment before entering heaven. (143-25, 1986.3.15)

Jesus could not establish an ideal world through his family and kin. Therefore, he has to come again and fulfill this ideal, otherwise he cannot enter heaven. Where can you find the right prerequisites and circumstances to open the gates of heaven? They are on the earth. Therefore, Jesus left the keys to heaven on earth. Since he and his twelve disciples could not create families, the Unification Church today must establish 70 and then 120 disciples with Blessed Families. If that is accomplished, heaven will be opened. (160-89, 1968.8.11)

Can you go to heaven just by believing in Jesus as the Christians say? If Jesus himself does not fulfill the ideal of the couple, even he cannot go to heaven. Can Jesus realize true love by himself? Even God could not substantiate true love by Himself. Therefore, Jesus has to come again. If that is the case, can he realize true love by coming on the clouds? Now is the time for the people of this nation, who in their own minds understand the current circumstances, to follow me. (176-210, 1988.5.9)

Christians today think that they are saved and will go to heaven by believing in Jesus; that each person goes to heaven as an individual. Only a few people say they want to take their father and mother with them to heaven. In the future, religion should not teach just about individual salvation. If it is a true religion founded by God, then it must be able to remain universal until the end. The religion all humanity desires would be one that states that God's will is not just to have individuals enter heaven. It should teach about heaven not just for individuals, but also for their mothers and fathers. When this has been understood by the heads of families and tribal leaders, everyone will follow them into heaven together. (41-341, 1971.2.18)

Why couldn't Jesus enter heaven? God created heaven for human beings who lived without falling. People can only enter heaven when they live according to the original standard of the Principle. Jesus was meant to save fallen humanity, stand with his spouse in the position of unfallen Adam and Eve as the parents of humanity, and enter heaven with his children. However, Jesus came and went alone; he had no children and thus he could not enter heaven and instead went to paradise. He is in a place for waiting before entering heaven. (41-300, 1971.2.17)

Heaven is empty. From this you can realize that God's providence for restoration has been a sorrowful one. God lost Adam and Eve. Yet, it did not end there. The loss of Adam and Eve meant the loss of their tribe. That tribe would have expanded to become a race, nation and world; but all these were lost. In this way, in losing one man, Adam, God lost His kingdom based on the kingship of heaven. He lost the people of heaven, tribes of heaven, and heavenly man and woman – His only begotten son and daughter. (143-25, 1986.3.15)

Originally, families were supposed to enter the spirit world but there are no families there. Jesus was single and did not live a married life. What about the great sages such as Confucius or Buddha? Or the kings? They are living single lives in the spirit world, without an ideal partner, since they were descendants of the realm of the archangel. If I continue to talk about these things, someone ignorant or unknowledgeable might learn a lot and think, in an unprincipled way, that he could be like a king. You cannot become a top leader without true love. You have to live for the sake of others. (296-191, 1998.11.9)

God has worked his providence to save humanity through religion. Therefore, the higher the dimension of a religion, the more that religion's teaching should be in accord with the purpose and principle of the original homeland; they could not help but teach the idea of sacrifice and service. In this way, there is no denying the fact that God has been working providentially behind history and religion. In the light of these principles, we conclude that a religion that strives to live for the sake of others will develop, while a religion that causes problems in the world by trying to take a self-centered, subject position will decline. (74-51, 1974.11.27)

The Bible states, "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, with all your soul, and with all your mind! This is the first commandment." Those who do not abide by this commandment cannot enter heaven. What is the second commandment? It is, "Love your neighbor as yourself!" The one who loves God first and loves his neighbor second can be a filial child. (198-259, 1990.2.4)

The disciples of Jesus thought that Jesus would dominate the Roman Empire in an instant and become the king of Israel, and that they would then each receive high positions. However, that was not the essential matter. First of all, you have to make the foundation for heaven within your mind, and then, based on such a mind, make the foundation for unity between your body and God. This is the greatest challenge. In the end, it all begins from you. Hence, your mind is the base for heaven. (47-273, 1971.8.29)

When God is being friendly, you should not be hot-tempered. If He is amiable, you should also be amiable. The internal and external should be matched.

Does everything work out just by having the internal and external match? You should align this with God's will. That being the case, can you do things that aren't on your mind? Can you do things that your body detests? You have to do things that both your mind and body enjoy. If God exists, there should be things that He likes. Since Jesus is God's Son, he also has to like such things. (47-257, 1971.8.29)

You cannot free yourself from the satanic realm without loving God. Therefore, you must love God more than your wife or husband. From the trap of love within the satanic realm, fallen humanity has only reached the edge of that realm, but they still have not been able to completely come out of it. Therefore, you should not love your father and mother more than God. (41-299, 1971.2.17)

In the spirit world, you will see that martyrs who died so as to enter heaven did not actually get there. Conversely, those martyrs who were able to think, "Heavenly Father walked the path of suffering and shed blood to find me. I will follow any path in order to return His grace," and then died saying, "I am grateful for this moment of glory enabling me to participate in returning this grace," could enter the kingdom. Such people did not die for their own sake but died for the sake of heaven and earth. If you think, "I will die like this in order to enter heaven," it is dying for your own sake. Fallen human beings can never enter heaven by putting themselves forward. (41-355, 1971.2.18)

2.5. Hell has no relationship with the love of God

What was the Fall? We have reached the conclusion that we were overtaken by the darkest of nights because of the Fall. Instead of taking a ticket to heaven we took a ticket to hell. Doesn't that sound realistic? Our ticket to heaven was transformed into a ticket to hell because of the Fall. (132-82, 1984.5.20)

What is hell? Hell is a place that has no relationship to God's love, life or lineage or even to God Himself. (201-97, 1990.3.11)

Hell is where you are alone with everything shut away from you. You long for everything but it is unattainable. Intuitively you can see and feel a vast realm of happiness of this universe, but you cannot move an inch. So what is it that I am doing? I am initiating a movement to love God, heaven and earth, based on a universal system of thought: the Principle. This is so that from now on, you have to prepare the way you will take when you go to the spirit world. You are doing great things by making such preparations. (106-308, 1980.1.13)

The spirit world is infinite. The homeland that will embrace us is so immense. Our eternal hometown, the spirit world, is an enormous place. Do you like the spirit world? You do not know how vast it is. You are making that world the

stage for your activities. Only when your mind is global and universal can it keep pace with that world. It is not possible if you are individualistic. Individualism is unable to connect to the whole. What greater hell is there than that? It is like catching an eagle, locking it up in a dark hole where it cannot move, and just feeding it. The eagle is the bird that symbolizes America, isn't it? How miserable it would be, just living by eating what needs to be eaten? Is that happiness or unhappiness? It is a tragedy. (247-131, 1993.5.1)

To commit suicide is the worst sin of all sins. It is an atrocity that destroys the universe. Such a person would go to the lowest level of hell. (107-36, 1980.1.20)

Have you ever thought what would happen if you breathed in air one-tenth through your nostrils and one-tenth through your mouth? That would be hell. Hell is not something else. Hell is where you cannot receive when you want to and where you cannot give when you want to. When you have the urge to breathe or inhale air, see what happens if you try to suppress it. How many minutes can you endure? How long can you go without exhaling when you want to or without inhaling when you want to? That is hell. (112-210, 1981.4.12)

You cannot eat without God's love in the spirit world. You do not have a right to eat. You have to realize that hell is a place where you watch but cannot eat, and know but cannot act. Therefore, you should know that only those who have made substantial the core value that can unite the spiritual and physical worlds based on God's love, and who have experienced the life of heaven on earth with their mind and body united, can take ownership in the eternal ideal world of the Kingdom of Heaven. (91-173, 1977.2.6)

What will you do in the spirit world? Would you like to eat food? Why would you eat food there? You eat based on love. Consequently, a person who doesn't have love will not be able to open his mouth no matter how much he wants to eat. That is his punishment. (207-94, 1990.11.1)

The world is in chaos. How about the spirit world? Since the people who are living on earth and go to the spirit world are confused, it also cannot help but be in chaos. If stealing becomes a habit, you will always end up stealing something. Consequently, when a person who committed theft on earth goes to the spirit world, he naturally wants to get something for nothing. Since it is difficult to deal with such a person in the spirit world, hell was made. God did not make hell. You don't build a house after you have bought a rubbish bin. You acquire a rubbish bin after building the house. It is the same thing. Christians do not understand such fundamentals. (148-28, 1986.10.4)

Hell is like a storage place for waste. Since hell has nothing to do with God's love, all humanity, who began from false love, inevitably goes to hell. Therefore,

the person who goes to heaven is the one who lives with God, and whose mind and body, spouse and children are united with God's love. Just as God's mind and body are in absolute unity, if a man and woman and all the members of their family can absolutely unite their minds and bodies, and live together in front of God, the subject partner, as His object partners, they would naturally move from this earth to the Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world. (274-9, 1995.10.25)

God never sends people to hell. When people go to the spirit world, they go to hell on their own account. When people who live an evil life go to places of goodness they cannot breathe. They cannot breathe. So, inevitably they go in search of a place that suits them. They go to hell, to a darker place, and say, "Ah ha, this is the place!" That is hell. People like me cannot stay in hell, even if we were told to live there. I wouldn't be able to breathe. It would smell and taste repulsive to me. Who sends people to hell? It is not God. You go to hell on your own. (200-192, 1990.2.25)

If you go to heaven, you would be able to freely come and go, even to hell. Would you rather become a person limited in the spirit world or a liberated person in the free heaven and earth? You have to consider the person next to you, thinking to yourself, "So, this person is from the tollgate of heaven. He is the gate keeper," and allow yourself to be trained by him so that you can pass through the gates. You should think, "I need to pass those gates. I consider you to be the gatekeeper. I'm going to touch and melt your heart, so that you will guide me when I reach those gates." (115-58, 1981.10.28)

Hell is a place without a future. Heaven is a place with a future. Hell is without one. There is a future when you enter heaven. Where did the Fall begin? All of you should know that the Fall began from the place which has no future in the public sense; a place where the self is the only center. Living for your own sake is the way to hell. Living for others is the way to heaven. That is the concept of heaven and hell. (111-11, 1981.1.11)

Let us think about balloons. If you fill one with hydrogen, it slowly rises. It rises but there is a limit. At first it would seem to rise without end. But there is a limit to how far it rises. It stops at the place where it finds a balance with its weight. It remains at the same level of atmospheric pressure. It is the same in the spirit world. Those who are greedy go down. They are heavy. For that reason, hell is where heavy things gather and collide with one another. That is how it is. (115-186, 1981.11.15)

Suppose a white person and black person go to the spirit world. What would happen if the gate keeper to heaven for the white person was black, and the gate keeper to heaven for the black person was white? Would they go back the way they came? Then what would they do? If a person was blocked from entering and turned back, would he cling to the

gate keeper crying out, "Kill me. I didn't understand in those days!" and plead for mercy, or would he run away? He would experience a living hell hundreds and thousands of times greater than the suffering he gave to black people in his lifetime. If I were God, I would also put such keepers by the gates. (116-108, 1981.12.27)

You will not be free to go anywhere in the universe. You will have no place to run to. You cannot run away as you wish. You have to know that you are unable to free yourself from the realm of universal law and order. You have to follow the right path. You should realize that you are living under the rule of the universal law based on the standard of the official constitution. This affects everything relating to the order of love and morality: family, society, nation, world, cosmos and God. The path of giving love and living for the sake of others is the only way to attain an autonomy that is supported and upheld by all the laws including the laws of nature. Unification Church members do not have a clear concept of hell. You should know that hell exists. You should know that there is a severe and fearful hell if you do not follow the way of carrying the banner of love. Did you know that? I hope that you can stand in court and be victorious. (117-312, 1982.4.11)

In the other world, when you lack the discipline to persevere in conforming to the ideal practice of love, a reaction comes against you. Nobody tells you to go to hell. (121-173, 1982.10.24)

The terms private matter and public matter are clear. Being public means living for the greater good, doesn't it? Being private means putting yourself first. Living for your own sake leads to hell. Public-mindedness leads to heaven. (121-127, 1982.10.24)

Unification Church members are not without value. We are not a simple group that believes we can go to heaven just by going to a Sunday service with the Bible under our arm or by giving a few pennies in donations. That is for simple folk. That is not for people as intense as us. Once we believe in something, we do it till the end. Placing our life on the line, even if our spouse grabs us to prevent us from following, we are so intense. We follow the path of faith, even if there at the risk of it leading to divorce. (121-70, 1982.10.24)

The reason you suffer now is for the sake of finding the freedom of heaven. It is to create heaven even in hell. Even if you go to hell and act like a judge, those serving time in hell would say, "Since you went through it all, we cannot accuse you!" In this world if a person went down to this position or if he went down from a high level to a lower one, wouldn't he make a fuss? He would say, "Why should I go there? Why should I go?" Going down to a lower position is something that would never happen in a society of brothers, but is only possible within the realm of the parental heart. God, the most High, can go all the way down to the bottom of hell. That is a

parent – a true parent. He would do that even if He were to be injured in His face or whatever may happen to His body. (116-115, 1981.12.27)

If those people say with glaring eyes, "You shouldn't drink alcohol. Go to the devil!" they are just a group of good-for-nothings. They have no peace of mind. I am weary of them. When I see them saying, "That goes against the Bible, Matthew chapter so-and-so. You're going to hell," really, those rogues. If killing someone could save a nation, then don't you think they would pass a law to free the person who had killed for the sake of saving the nation? Those good-for-nothings! They have to think about that…. If there is a pine tree the size of a fist with its roots wedged in a crack in the granite along the mountain ridge, not even a dog going by would stop to urinate on that tree. He would only urinate if it has shade. The dog is ashamed of urinating, so it goes close to something when it urinates. That's better than people. It goes to the shade to urinate. Why? Because he is ashamed if he is watched by others. (120-240, 1982.10.17)

What is the greatest obstacle to entering heaven? The self is your greatest enemy. The reason hell and the satanic world were created was because of the awareness of the self. The archangel thought centered on himself. He thought about himself intensely. What is a traitor? You call a person who puts himself before his nation and sovereign, a traitor! Rising up from the paths of a traitor is the summit based on the self. It is the road that leads to hell. For human beings it is the path that leads to ruin. This foundation called the self, and centered on the self, leads to death. (122-20, 1982.10.31)

Wanting to receive love is the path to hell and belongs to Satan's side. Wanting to give love is the path to heaven and belongs to heaven's side. This is clear. There is only one love of that kind in this world. There is only one kind of parent's love. Parental love continues to give even when the child refuses to receive. Though all humankind is fallen, the path still remains through parental love. Since God is the parent, that kind of love still remains in human beings. (122-234, 1982.11.14)

What is your destination? Where will you go and live? I will go to the spirit world and stay at the highest point of all kinds of love. Just as there is a North Pole and a South Pole, there is a Love Pole. No matter how hard you try searching at the half way point, or however much you go around, you will not find me. Since you cannot find me, you might say, "Rev. Moon went to hell." Would it be easy to stay at the highest point? "I will not freeze to death at the North Pole. I will be like a fireball of love!" This is a great ideal and a great system of thought. So, everything will be fulfilled. Even God is inside me. The people of the world are inside me. Those who say that they will inherit love are of my tribe! You're not offended? (108-182, 1980.9.28)

If God visits hell, the devils in hell will bow their heads. They bow their heads to Him. Even Satan cannot oppose absolute love. If God goes to hell, hell must adapt to Him. Even hell belongs to God. If God goes there, hell must open all its gates. This is a simple point, but you should know that the fundamental rule for the relationships of all beings is made in this way. (125-82, 1983.3.13)

There are no boundaries in the mind. When we think about God, even He does not have any boundaries in His mind. Consequently, God can go anywhere. If He wants to go to heaven, He can go there. If God wants to go to hell, He can go there. He can go anywhere. That means there are no borders in the mind of God. (124-184, 1983.2.15)

A person going to the place of execution would detest their clothes no matter how nice they might be. But no matter how ugly the clothes might be, if they were made by the loving hands of your wife, the clothes would shine extremely brightly. We can conclude that anything done out of the essence of love will be welcomed by God wherever it goes. Even if it goes to hell, if it went there because of love, God can go and be there with it. How would it be if the word 'love' was attached to hell to make 'love hell'? Would you like it? Even if it was hell, how would you like it if it was the hell of love? Those in hell would grimace but if you said, "Hell of love!" they would laugh "Ha, ha, ha." Do you know that? Don't you think it would be like that? (129-284, 1983.11.20)

People who go to prison because of the person they love are not really in prison. They are in a place that lets them bring further brightness to their loved one and deepens the bond between them. Therefore, true love can control both God at the highest level, and hell at the lowest level. Then, can this love only be given in the world of humankind? No. It is the same throughout the whole world of creation: in the earth and in the world of plants and animals. They all like the song of love. When you wake up in the morning, do you like to hear the sound of birds singing love songs or the sound of them fighting? You would like to hear their song of love. Now you know. In this universe there are no borders in places that have true love. There are no boundaries and those with true love have what it takes to pass through any place. They have what it takes to control God and hell. Thus, you should know that it has the strength to break down barriers and go anywhere. (129-284, 1983.11.20)

Love became the pillar that let this universe come into being. You should know that in the same way this love became the pillar that supports hell. How difficult it is to put right something that became like this! Even if you wash its cells with really powerful bleach, because love makes up its root, it becomes tainted again. (133-319, 1985.1.1)

Only the strength of true love can make total unity. Speaking words of true love would make God say, "Mmm..."

and even Satan in his hell would say, "Mmm..." and the entire world would say, "Mmm..." What makes everything become one is the power of true love. Is there anyone who can tell me, "You're wrong about that?" (133-311, 1985.1.1)

We're trying to build a cable car between the highest summit where God is, and the human world that is in the depths of hell. What is that cable made of? A cable made of money would snap in an instant. This cannot be done with a cable made of money. Then what about a cable made of knowledge? Even a cable made of authority would not do. A cable made of love that transcends the top and the bottom should be used to hang the cable-car so it can run on the cable. (130-35, 1983.12.11)

What does a clown do? A clown amuses people and dances. Even if you can't dance in such a place, you should at least keep in time with the beat. God is not so stingy as to say, "Oh dear, if you, as the founder of the Unification Church, are found keeping time with a clown, then you go to hell." God is truly amazing. God's mind is not smaller than the toenail of a dog, or awkward like the front leg of an ant. We haven't known that He is such a great God who is so large that He can open His mouth and inhale all the air in the universe and still have room to spare. (130-87, 1983.12.26)

When we look at God's providence, do you think God sends the people in the spirit world to hell and only undertakes the providence of restoration for those on earth? If God is love in the truest sense, what would be the limit of that love? Wouldn't God desire that His providence of salvation be completed even if it crosses the boundary lines of hell? This is the answer you would get. (121-297, 1982.10.30)

The human mind is not like crystal but like ice. All sorts of odds and ends are combined and frozen in it. We are trying to melt it, get rid of all the odds and ends and make it into a lump of pure ice. Out of clean water, we are trying to make a lump of ice that God could suck. Only when you think, "There is ice that Satan likes and ice that God likes. Let's become the ice that God likes!" can you be restored into a lump of ice belonging to heaven rather than one belonging to hell. (109-28, 1980.10.26)

2.6. We choose to go to heaven or hell

You decide whether you go to heaven or hell. I do not decide. God does not decide. You are the one who decides. If you complain, it is hell. If you go with a grateful heart to places where you would have complained, it is heaven. (96-122, 1978.1.2)

God did not make hell out of jealousy or envy. Since false people appeared, God made hell as a warehouse in which to manage them. Do people make a rubbish bin before they build their house? For example, if you bought a cabbage to

make kimchi, but while making it you discovered the outer leaves had been eaten by worms, you would dump it into a rubbish bin. The Fall was committed by the ancestors of humanity. Therefore, in order to indemnify that, and remove sin, someone with the qualification of the true parents must emerge. (20-118, 1968.5.1)

Up until the present, all the people who were born into this world were destined for hell, because there was no condition for God to save them. It is as if they would be devoured by insects and worms. As such people are only good for pigs' fodder or some such purpose, He cannot help but place them in hell. Hell and paradise do exist. In the light of this, we can really feel that heaven is empty. (135-118, 1985.10.4)

From the birth of humanity up until the present, people have been born of a fallen lineage, and there has not been even one moment when all humankind attended God with all its heart. Before Adam and Eve fell, they grew according to the ideal of creation, but they never attended God within a relationship of heart. (8-290, 1960.2.14)

What is hell? Hell is a place that bears no relation to God or His love, life and lineage. No matter how much effort you make or how well you do in this life on earth, the physical world has become such that you cannot establish a relationship with Heaven, the realm of God. This is the tragedy and bitter situation that we find on earth. (201-97, 1990.3.11)

What is God's bitter pain? It lies in the fact that human beings, who were created to attend God wholeheartedly, fell into a position where they could not do so. In other words, God, who should have been lovingly attended, was left deserted. God's deep anguish is not that there was no one who believed in Him or knew Him. The bitter grief of heaven and earth is that no one attended and related with God in heart. (8-290, 1960.2.14)

You have to hate your fallen self. You should hate your body. The blood of the enemy is coursing through your veins. You should understand that you cannot sever this with a knife or burn it away. You have to realize your pitiful situation: you have become a waste factory that consumes and digests the things of creation and you are in a position where you are unable to receive God's protection. (214-285, 1991.2.3)

What determines the division between heaven and hell? It is not decided by knowing or preaching the Bible well. It is decided through results and heart. In the end, the boundary line between heaven and hell is determined by the boundary line of the heart, and the boundary line of results. (32-231, 1970.7.19)

In the other world, when you lack the discipline to persevere in conforming to the ideal of love, a reaction comes against you. No one tells you to go to hell. Therefore, the Bible states, "Love your enemy!" Genuine love exerts its influence

on the enemy. If this love goes to the enemy once, twice, thrice and four times, the enemy will disappear for sure. It is because love has such great power that Jesus said, "Love your enemy!" (121-173, 1982.10.24)

When God sees humanity dying in hell, He becomes desperate, trying to give them eternal life. Only then will His responsibility as the parent of heaven be fulfilled. If He were to say, "Ugh! Let me eliminate everything," He could not stand in the position of a parent. Therefore, this establishes the logic that God even has to liberate hell. When a son sees his parents desperately trying to save him, he will say, "My mother and father have done so much for me!" and repent thousands of times for his sins. If there is such a mother and father, the son will repent till his bones melt and flesh falls away. Because of the parents' heart, such a way can be made. (62-51, 1972.9.10)

Not even Satan can accuse God for His love in trying to save humanity. There is no rule preventing forgiveness for the one who repents through the love of his parents. Hell must also be liberated through this kind of heart. That is the way of a true devoted child, isn't it? Therefore, the Unification Church believes that it must liberate even hell. Why? It is because God has such a parental heart. (62-51, 1972.9.10)

Hell is the place where you can never escape once you are caught. Despite this, you do not feel desperate about the fact that your mother, father and relatives are going to hell. You just think, "It will work out somehow." However, let's think seriously about your beloved parents really going to hell. Human nature is such that if your parents were to go to prison, you would cry and do all sorts of things to have them released. Then, even more so, if you knew that your sons and daughters, parents and relatives, brothers and sisters – with whom you have bonds made in heaven – were going to go to an eternal prison, could you just think casually about their fate? (34-266, 1970.9.13)

Section 3. The Relationship between Those in the Spirit World and Those on Earth

3.1. The spirit world is divided into good and evil worlds

Those who go to the spirit world are all divided. In the other world there is no horizontal communication between people of different groups. Vertically, they communicate in a limited way. (218-125, 1991.7.14)

The spirit world is divided into two, the satanic world and God's world. If we can lay out a way that enables people to quickly move from the satanic spirit world to God's world of goodness, then the situation on earth will be naturally resolved. What kind of way is that? As long as we have a special method to enable the transfer of all the satanic individuals, families, tribes, and nations

to the heavenly side, it is possible. When such a time comes to the spirit world, it will be reflected on earth. As a result, transformation of all kinds will quickly come about, and it will roll into God's world. (134-15, 1985.1.1)

You cannot properly understand the spirit world without seeing the overall picture of how it develops, acts, and makes a relationship with the world on earth. The spirit world can be divided into good and evil – into two worlds. This is a world that really exists, although people on earth do not realize it. (134-9, 1985.1.1)

The spirit world up until the present day has carried out numerous spiritual works in mainstream religious history. These mainstream works had to connect to a certain line of relationship with the physical world. Spirit people cannot come to earth and carry out their works as they please. They are blocked from doing that. Unless a bridge is built by way of religion, only a few special people can return to earth. Factions were created within Judaism. When they come down from the spirit world, the mainstream cannot come in a straight line. When different factions of Judaism each make their own spiritual offerings, the mainstream moves back and forth accordingly.

Therefore, for those coming down from the spirit world, only the ones who are connected with the mainstream can come down. Otherwise, they cannot come and co-operate through the process of returning resurrection.

Eventually, people on earth will also go to the spirit world. Once in the spirit world, if they want to come down to the next generation, they have to follow the same principle. Yet, only a few special ones will be able to do so. (102-29, 1978.11.19)

There will be more and more walls in the spirit world, making it more and more complicated. The next generation will all eventually go to the spirit world. Consequently, these walls become bigger and bigger. There are walls everywhere. It is now a global age. Imagine how complicated it must be. Think how many times you must turn around and around in order to find a mainstream individual on earth through the religious mainstream in spirit world. So when the time comes, the walls must be broken down. We are creating paths that come down from, and go into, the spirit world. This is what the Unification Church is doing. (102-29, 1978.11.19)

In the progress towards God's original world of ideals – an ideal realm of goodness, where original human beings can go – good spirits are fighting their way towards it, and evil spirits are struggling to block the way. The evil spirit world and evil world on earth are constantly connected. They are in constant communication. Good spirits are the ones who have been opposed and persecuted in the evil world. These spirits are the ones who were religious believers. (134-9, 1985.1.1)

Good and evil spirits are struggling with one another in the spirit world. There is a battle going on there. The battle is that good spirits are trying to lead evil spirits to good places, while evil spirits are doing everything they can to prevent good spirits from going up to good places. You should know that evil spirits are connected centering on Satan, and people on the earth today are living under their dominion. Why is that so? All throughout history, our ancestors have passed away to the spirit world whether they were good or evil. The good spirits are standing on the good side, not because they are completely good from God's point of view, but because they have established some sacrificial foundation on earth for separating from satanic influence. (134-9, 1985.1.1)

If you go to the other world, you will find murderers, their victims, and all sorts of people staying there. That being the case, there are times when people brandish their swords to get their revenge. But many walls are blocking them. For that reason, evil spirits go to the descendants of their enemies and cause sudden deaths by accidents in order to bring them to the spirit world. These things must be resolved. In order to deal with this, it must first be resolved on earth. To resolve it, something better must be offered. It cannot be done without offering something that is better than the death of the enemy, something better than that which created such an enemy. (191-205, 1989.6.24)

It was tragic enough that Jesus died on the cross on the earth, but after his death he had to descend to hell for three days. That was the test. Death is the biggest fear for humankind, but going to hell was the greatest fear for Jesus. Then, in hell, did Jesus become the master of fear or the master of happiness? Jesus went to hell and for three days had to go through the ordeal of overcoming suffering. (34-144, 1970.8.30)

With what is the spirit world liberated? With what is God liberated? Complicated relationships were created by our human ancestors. They have created chaos in the spirit world. Therefore, the descendants must now compensate for their ancestors' mistakes. If a child wishes to become a filial son, he should pay back his parents' debts. In that light, we should create a movement to knock down all the walls blocking our ancestors in the spirit world. In so doing, your ancestors will come down and teach you. This sounds like a dream but it is very real. (191-205, 1989.6.24)

3.2. The situation of people in the spirit world

The physical world is Satan's base for activity, while the spirit world has been God's base for activity. These two have always been crossing paths. It is an undeniable fact that this reality has remained as the condition for bitter resentments in the providential age of restoration. These two should not cross paths. The God-centered realm of the

mind and the realm of the body that can be governed centered on God must be prepared. This standard for the unified foundation can only materialize on earth according to how it is practiced within the realm of daily life. (45-213, 1971.7.1)

For the Unification Church to achieve unity in this world, first, it must unify the spirit world. Do you know that world? Unification Church members should know the spirit world. You must unify it. Do you think that will be easy? Without unification in the spirit world there cannot be unification on earth.

Aren't the struggles in this world today unbearable? They are very difficult. However, the conflicts in the spirit world are more difficult than those on earth. When we think about this, the Unification Church members should not allow the words, "It is difficult," to come to their lips. (153-56, 1963.10.18)

In the process of searching for the ideal, what is it that brings about unity between spiritual things and physical things? The spirit world has a very spiritual dimension and the earth has a very physical dimension. The spirit world and earthly world must change places in order to become one.

This cannot be done by just holding on to what you have. Only when you give everything will the other side come to you, and only when the other side gives everything to you can you go to the other side. You are going over to the position that was lost. (147-94, 1986.8.31)

To connect the spiritual and physical worlds in the future, you should first be conscious of a worldview and unified system of thought, and then be ready to go the path of suffering in order to break through on a global scale. When this happens, the spiritual and physical worlds will automatically become one. Unification will begin from there, and the direction of its path will be determined. (29-285, 1970.3.11)

Can you bring unity on earth before uniting the spirit world? You cannot. That is the rule. For this reason, I drove the Unification Church members on earth into the jaws of death and mercilessly attacked them. When that happens, the spirit world cannot but help you all. The more you enter a miserable situation, the more intense the spirit world comes together in its own way around that position. When you go down into a low place, the realm of heaven will emerge from the 30 million people of this race. This realm also includes those who went to hell in the past. (49-109, 1971.10.9)

This world belongs to the devil. You have to seek out, and restore back to God, the world of the devil. You don't know when you are going to die, do you? Everyone dies. Without laying the foundation on the earth to freely overcome the valley of death, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth cannot be created. Without the kingdom on earth, the kingdom in spirit world cannot be established. You should make it possible to freely come back to the earth, after you go to the spirit world.

Only then can you live in the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, and establish the Kingdom of Heaven in spirit world, and live there. (146-223, 1986.7.1)

The spirit world is a world that transcends the material world. It transcends the world of knowledge. Since it is a world that transcends time and space, it is a place where yesterday's joy can become today's joy, and today's joy can become tomorrow's joy. In this light, that essential world does not move based on the things that we, who live on earth today, require or value. What is important for the spirit world is the center of everything of value within life in that world. (141-268, 1986.3.2)

We must complete our mission to three separate ages. We should liberate the spirits in the spirit world, liberate the people living in the sinful world today, and liberate the future generations from here as well. The realm of liberation for three generations comes forth in this way. This is an immense and remarkable process. What will happen if such dream-like things come to pass? Your eyes will open wide, your mouth will open in awe, your ears will prick up; but you will then have to bow your head. (28-201, 1970.1.11)

The spirit world is where everyone now living on earth, without exception, and whether they like it or not, will go and dwell. From the barbarians to the civilized people, a great diversity of people of all forms will be gathered there, who came and went throughout history. History until now has failed to become one that is based on peace, on happiness, and on the ideal. So, what has happened to the people in the spirit world? How have they been ruled? The people who lived on earth could not suddenly change in the spirit world. Isn't there a saying, "A habit formed at the age of three years continues until the age of eighty."? It is difficult to correct your inner nature. (141-268, 1986.3.2)

Is there anything about those in the spirit world that is very different from those who have lived on earth to this day? Would they suddenly change? They cannot. You are harvested in the exact form you lived in this world. All those in the spirit world are, after all, just people who have lived on earth. When you look at it this way, the spirit world is no different from the world that people live in today. (141-268, 1986.3.2)

How do you want your life to progress in the spirit world? It is the same as here; you wish to be in a better position tomorrow than you are today. The common desire of people living on earth is that they wish that today will be better than yesterday, and for tomorrow to be better than today.

Regardless of who you are, whether you are from the West or the East, or from the past, present or future, the common desire is for something better in life than the present. This does not change. Everyone in the spirit world is like this. They hope things will become

better than the present. They wish to be better than they were during their earthly life. (141-269, 1986.3.2)

3.3. Perfection of the spirit person can only come through people on earth

Since the world until now has been Satan's world, evil people have taken the lead in directing nations. Good people, however, have been at the opposite end of this; nevertheless, the angelic world comes to the descendants who have ancestors with good achievements, and tries to co-operate with them. The person they come down to co-operate with is not someone in a high position. Since it could be a person in a low position, we should not just consider people at the top levels of society. (286-194, 1997.8.11)

My situation is like this. After wearily going around the world in my lifetime, there is nothing left when I return home. That being the case, the one thing I planted in people was a heart of yearning for me that grows despite the changes of the days and seasons. Whichever nation I go to, if I live there based on a true heart of love and a heart of yearning, the angels will come and do their works; the good ancestors will come down making it a playground that has no relation to the Fall. They will make it a beacon of hope.

The spirits in the spirit world cannot always come to the earth. Amongst the four seasons there is one that conforms to the gates of their hearts. Even your friends have good times and bad times. When the doors to their heart are in accord, spirits will come down to the earth and co-operate. (283-291, 1997.4.13)

The mainstream religion in spirit world does not work through the realm of the Israelites alone. It switches to, and appears through, each new stage of providential reformation. The mainstream religion has worked through returning resurrection with the co-operation of those spirits. But from now on, since the entire authority of the realm of the mainstream religion has been leveled, your ancestors will unite with those who believe in the Unification Church. Since your ancestors were born before you, they are like the angels in heaven, who, in the same way, were created first. Since we stand in a similar position to Adam, the fundamental rule is to have your ancestors, who naturally stand in a heavenly position, to support the descendants who are in the position of Adam and Eve. It's simple.

However, this must be cultivated on the earth. This is not done in the spirit world. You are supposed to cultivate your realm of heart on earth. (140-200, 1986.2.9)

In the past, the angel who watched over Adam and Eve committed the act that made them fall, but our ancestors will no longer do such things. The descendants are all sons and daughters of those archangelic ancestors. Since the foundation is made for your ancestors in that position, to come down and support

you, you should live in a way that will not create any basis for them to accuse. This comes from the principle and the law. Live according to the principle and the law. You should practice this in your life. If you do, the spirit world will help you and you will surely prosper. The solution depends on how you practice it in your life. (145-116, 1986.4.30)

Since we are meeting together, we should come to a conclusion together. For what? For the sake of living in the circumstances that God desires, centered on the question of whether Korea is going to live or die. This is what your ancestors are yearning for, for this race; this is God's will; this is the desire of the 40 million people in our nation today, and it will be the desire of our descendants.

If you fail your responsibility at this historical point, you will not be able to avoid reproach from all your ancestors, from people living today, and from your descendants to come. You are all in a more serious position than any of your ancestors, any person at this time, and any of your descendants to come. I live each day with that kind of philosophy. Since I live with such a philosophy of life, and struggle in my battles, God helps me. Because this is happening, my opponents will perish. There is no exception. They have been chased into a corner. I have driven them there thinking, "It's either you or me." (138-335, 1986.1.24)

Despite differences between various cultural spheres, if people understand that the origin that connects life and connects love is one, then it is also important to have the concept: "We are absolutely one". The concept that people are absolutely one is important. Japanese, Koreans, Chinese and Westerners are of the same origin. There is just one origin for the people living on earth today and the many who are in the spirit world. All those on earth will ultimately depart and dwell in the spirit world. (192-257, 1989.7.9)

Since even the gates to hell are opened with a path that rises to the heavenly world, you should be educated…. Your parents and ancestors are the archangels, aren't they? But they are no longer the angels who bring ruin to the heavenly side. They take on the mission of the angel who brings ruin to the fallen world, the archangel on the heavenly side, who, according to the laws of restoration through indemnity, no longer stands in the position of bringing ruin to heaven, but stands in the opposite position to the past. Through this, they will co-operate with their descendants who are the Adam-like figures. Such phenomena will occur when the spirits in the spirit world co-operate. Through this, these spirits can progress, alongside people on earth. (164-276, 1987.5.17)

In order to be liberated from their current position, the spirit persons cannot avoid pain without going through people on earth. Since they cannot be freed from their sins, they always seek

their earthly dwelling places. They seek out their kith and kin or those related to them, and continue to send them signals. (293-249, 1998.6.1)

When you go to the spirit world you have to be able to come down to the earth. Without establishing the heavenly kingdom on earth, you cannot come down to support your descendants. This is not an impossible idea. It just happens this way. You should work on it even for eternity. Your ancestors were all caught because of their portion of responsibility and indemnity conditions. Unable to find their way in spirit world, they came down to the earth and paid indemnity again. You should not follow them in the same way. If Divine Principle is true, you may all become blameworthy. (146-223, 1986.7.1)

The reason I am driving you into suffering is not because I dislike you, but because I want to save you. You should realize that this is all for the sake of saving you. You have to understand and be grateful that your suffering is for your own salvation. Then, the world of heavenly heart, the new world of heart, will unfold before you. This is the order of things. So, once you possess the bonds of heart, you can fly anywhere, day and night, according to the heavenly command. If you are determined to take responsibility and lead the world like a locomotive, the spirit world will help you. If you think this way, the spirit world will surely come to support you. (96-279, 1978.2.13)

Would you all like to go to the spirit world? Between your desire to go to the spirit world and the desire of spirit people to return to earth, which is more sincere? From the standpoint of the Principle, should you be more passionate, or should the spirit world be more passionate? The spirit world is the world of the archangel, and this world is the world of Adam and Eve, the world of the children. The children should be more passionate than the servant, not the other way around.

Are you supposed to help the spirit world or is the spirit world supposed to help you? The spirit persons are waiting to come to your aid, but why are they still waiting? Would they help you in building the Kingdom of Heaven on earth or would they help you to live comfortably? They help you in building the kingdom on earth. (161-227, 1987.2.15)

In the spirit world, there are evil spirits, midway spirits, and good spirits. They dwell within the three stages of formation, growth and completion. By their relating to the completion of the third seven-year course, a path will be created that enables the good spirits to communicate with the earth. This is inevitable. Since the realms of formation and growth lie within the dominion of Satan, the evil spirits within the territory of evil influence have played a leading role, and evil people have dominated the entire world. From now on, the spirits will begin to be transposed. The spirit world comes down at this time of transposition, in which the evil spirits

come down first. This time of change is the time of going beyond the growth stage midway spirit world and entering the realm of the good spirit world.

At the time of transition the good spirits will go up with the good people and the evil spirits will go down with the evil people. Until this time, good and evil were in confusion where each was replacing the other by going up and down. However, my view is that, from now on, we will enter an age of a new dimension where good and evil can be completely separated. (75-193, 1975.1.5)

The question is whether you have the standard of heart that will mobilize those in the spirit world, who are unknown to humankind, and have them testify. The spirit world is calling for this standard. Since that world knows God's heart, if such a person makes an appeal on earth, spirit people are mobilized to help in earthly matters concerning the realization of the heavenly ideal. The reason spirit persons are unable to come down to earth is because this earth has become a wall of lamentation and bitterness. (4-60, 1958.3.2)

Now you should pray: "In accordance with True Father's words, you good spirits please return and lead your evil descendants on earth to heaven through your virtuous embrace." An age is coming where such commands will be made possible. We live in the age and realm of Adam, and spirits live in the realm of angels. Due to the principle and law that angels must assist Adam, we quickly come to the conclusion that they would be compelled to help. (89-113, 1976.10.4)

You should get up early in the morning and pray in tears for your neighborhood, for the area of your responsibility. This is the way of the heart and the way of establishing a spiritual bond with the spirit world. You should feel that when God looks upon this neighborhood, He cannot help shedding tears because they are all destined for hell, and you would feel yourself shedding tears on behalf of God, feeling that you just had to weep. When a powerful resonance sets in, enabling you to shed tears based on God's heart, the entire spirit world will be mobilized. (96-282, 1978.2.13)

You should witness even when it does not go well. It is like throwing stones into the sea. You keep doing it without limit until the stones fill the sea and form a mountain. Through this, you grow in heart. Although the body does not change, your heart grows. (96-282, 1978.2.13)

The six-thousand-year history has been a history of searching for one Adam, and a history of recreating Adam. This is why you should follow me. Eve cannot be created without Adam. This is why God has to create one man, Adam. For this purpose, the flesh and blood of countless people who have appeared in the providence of restoration should be used as raw material.

The hatred and animosity of the millions of people in the spirit world have to

be lumped together in this place. When the substantial Adam figure finally appears, only then can the martyrs, who had shed blood and died under severe persecution, be sure that their lives were worthwhile. Though they are in the spirit world, they can only receive liberation by connecting with people on earth. This is how it works. This should not be just a vague concept. The question relates to how we can really make this substantial. (29-271, 1970.3.11)

We should move on, no matter what others are doing at our side, whether they are eating or resting. In front of us, thousands are continuously going forward. If you struggle and make strong efforts to go forward, pulling the rope relentlessly, then other people will also hold the rope for you. In the meantime, you will also feel that many people fall away from the rope. It is like a marathon competition. There will be first and second places. History has been like this.

For thousands of years up until the present time, countless spirit people have clung to this rope. When you take the highest position, and pass on to the next world, if you then connect to the rope-winding point and wind the rope in completely, both the spiritual and physical worlds will be restored. (32-145, 1970.7.5)

3.4. Co-operation from the spirit world

Since the spirit world has now moved extremely close, the age has come where good spirits will settle down on this earth. They will come and live here. To this day, Satan and evils spirits have divided up this earth and taken charge of it. But now, the good spirits will take over the earth and be in charge of it. For this to happen, members of the Unification Church must shed tears, sweat and blood, and offer devotion. You should pray with a fervent heart greater than the devotion offered by Christians and more than that of the Islamic faith, Buddhism and all other religions. You should pray, saying, "Since the substantial foundation has been restored on the earth through all of you spirits, the Unification Church will march forward through all the realms of spirit world based on this spiritual foundation!" (169-10, 1987.10.1)

Did you know that the people in the spirit world can only be saved through us? Therefore, if you live for the sake of those who have passed to the spirit world, the blessings from that world will come to you. If you can become such a person who can live and offer indemnity and repentance for the spirit world, then it will come down and be with you. The entire spirit world moves with you at the center. You have to know how indemnity and repentance are so important. (125-52, 1983.3.1)

Since there is no boundary there, the territory of the spirit world is endless. Nevertheless, wherever you go there, spirit people will come and say, "I assisted you. When you were a leader of such and such a place, I was there

to assist you." They are all your friends. They will become your comrades who stand in the same age of the providence. Like I explained, the spirit world must be mobilized. How can heaven be created without mobilizing the spirit world? It is not possible.

Heaven is supposed to begin from the true parent, not from fallen descendants. Just as the angelic world assisted at the time of the creation of Adam, the spirit world should return to earth and assist with re-creation. Without doing so it is not possible to build heaven on earth. Isn't this the Principle of Resurrection? It will be generally recognized to be true when it becomes visible as results. Thus, how pleased will the spirit world be with me? (162-114, 1987.3.30)

If you go forth with strong conviction, your ancestors would hold down and immobilize your mother or any other relatives that oppose us, and keep them from opening their mouth. The ancestors would say, "Listen to me!" Why is that so? It is because the fallen evil spirits have retreated, and you stand on the foundation with True Parents of having pushed Satan away on the global level. The True Parents are connected with the national level, and based on your original tribal foundation, you can relate to the parental position within the sphere of goodness. Hence, the evil spirits have retreated and all your ancestors from the archangel-type spirit world will co-operate with you. (184-91, 1989.3.19)

Even your ancestors in the spirit world would look down and want to come to this earth with the desire to assist their descendants of whom they are proud. That is why many of your ancestors come down to be with you. This is the realm of religion based on the tribes or relatives that transcends denominations. Do you understand? Your ancestors want to follow you while placing their trust and love in you. That is why they want to devote themselves in assisting you. (189-278, 1989.5.1)

At this time, on the earth, when people pray after joining the Unification Church, their ancestors would appear in a week and teach them everything. We have reached such a situation. What this means is that religions, so far, have paved the way for a global domain and prepared the ground for the vertical spiritual path by way of the bond of heart. Since the Unification Movement broadened the horizontal physical domain to a global level, connecting this to the ends of the world, it has become an age where the ancestors in the spirit world can finally come down to earth and give their assistance to their tribe. Home Church is the miniaturized foundation of this global domain.

Then what happens to the good spirits? In the past they came, offered their assistance and returned. But now they will settle down on the earth. Such an age is coming. They will settle down, do you understand? When I say, "*jeong-joo*" (settle down), I am not talking about my hometown Jeongju. I am saying that we have entered an age where the good spir-

its in the spirit world can finally settle down and live on the earth. You have joined the Unification Church, and so, engage in its activities. Your good ancestors will live with you and assist you. That is why it is possible to restore your tribes. (163-301, 1987.5.1)

Although we have entered a global age, you still have an individual position, which is connected with the highest saints in the spirit world. Thus, if you are a person who has a similar frame of mind, who keeps such a standard of heart, then you would inherit the spiritual foundation that enables you to receive immeasurable assistance, wherever you are and whenever you need it. That is why, based on the present-day activities of the Unification Church on earth, the spirits of the patriots of each nation have built a protected foundation in spirit world and have now come down and settled on the earth.

When you consider past military campaigns, haven't tens and hundreds of times more people died, than the population of a nation, in trying to defend their country? They have now come to earth to set up camp and are waiting for operations to expand. Therefore, all missionaries should initiate a national movement, a total mobilization, and be ready to make sacrifices representing both physical and spirit worlds. The spirits will all come to their aid once the order for advance is given. (162-108, 1987.3.30)

Since the religions have failed so far to connect the spiritual and physical worlds, then making contact with the spirit world has only been possible by harmonizing with its vertical rhythm and wavelength through offering spiritual devotion. But now we have entered the broadcasting station itself. We stand in a position similar to a diaphragm, which is not the wave itself, but the transmitter of the waves. By choosing the frequency at ten, a thousand or a very short wavelength, you can send out electric waves of differing wavelengths.

Because you have a broadcasting station, then when you say, "Let all my ancestors in the spirit world come down to support me. Good ancestors, come and help me. I need that kind of vibration and resonance," then they will come down instantly…. You can draw individuals and families just by calling them. The ancestors can move and come down now that the earth has become like a foothold which allows them to connect with the realms of the tribe, people and world.

When this phenomenon occurs, your body, which was trying to go in one direction, would turn around involuntarily and be drawn back. When the spirits come and take hold of you and guide you, then, since you would be unaware that you are caught, you would be drawn along and be none the wiser. You would feel as though you are going by your own volition. Do you believe that? This is not an empty theory. It is logical. (162-103, 1987.3.30)

When the Unification Church moves, Mohammed will come to its assistance,

along with all the representatives of Confucianism and Buddhism. Even God will come to its support. Thus, you should take pride in the fact that you move amidst the co-operation of the whole spiritual realm, since you represent humanity, spirit world and God. (162-15, 1987.3.15)

The position of the perfected parents cannot receive the co-operation of the fallen spirit world. This is the reason the spirit world could not support and co-operate with True Parents until now. Isn't this how it was originally with the Principle? The position of the perfected parents should be supported by God and the unfallen archangel. No matter how numerous the spirits within the satanic realm are, they stand in a position that prevents them from assisting True Parents. Since the spirits who are in the spirit world now, were not born from the True Parent but from the false parent, they cannot assist the True Parent.

But by indemnifying all the failures of the archangel, they can support as much as they like in the position of the children, that is, the position of Adam and Eve who are still growing. In this way, through the co-operation of the spirit world, the fallen world will gradually crumble and collapse in the near future. (146-312, 1986.7.20)

3.5. Atheists are like wandering spirits

Everyone, do you know how gigantic the spirit world is? Have you ever imagined what the population of that world would be? According to a spiritualist, he calculated that there are about 3,320 spirits for each living person. If such a number were all on our side, would we lose or win the fight against the satanic world? (86-193, 1976.3.28)

Considering that people do not live longer than one hundred years, out of five billion people, fifty million pass on to the spirit world each year. What can we do for those going to hell? God wants us to harvest to His side what Satan has sown. What would happen if this was constantly delayed? So far, during the last forty years, how many have gone to hell? Billions have gone to hell. This is serious. If you go to the spirit world, and they say, "When you were alive on earth, you did not fulfill your responsibility for us, did you?" Then, how are you supposed to reply to them? You should at least do this in your mind. When you talk to them, at least in your mind, and move on with the determination to take the responsibility for the future, they will say, "You are an amazing person. You cared for us." (205-355, 1990.10.2)

Now, 60,000 people are dying each day. Since twenty million people die of hunger each year now, 60,000 are dying in one day. When the parents, brothers and sisters, and children of the dying see them, their hearts are torn with pain and filled with tears. If those who are referred to as True Parents do not sympathize with them and prepare for their rescue, True Parents will be accused by

their contemporaries on earth. (205-355, 1990.10.2)

Those who are more pitiful than starving people are those who deny God. This is because those who are starving will be granted a certain level in the other world according to the merits of their good intentions, but atheists will have no standing because they deny spirit world. They wander around in the spirit world like clouds. They become wandering spirits. Just as clouds gather and produce rain, they get together and create evil influence. They all go to hell and inflict pain in hell. Although I know this all too clearly, I have to save them, and this is why I am doing this work. (205-355, 1990.10.2)

Section 4. Our Ancestors and Ourselves

4.1. We are the fruit of our ancestors

All of you are the historic reincarnations of your ancestors, wearing their faces. How long is this history? It is known to be hundreds of thousands of years old. The long course of history was eventually to create one person, yourself. In order to create one such person, for example, from the Kim family, countless ancestors came and went. Therefore, we are the fruits of human history. (46-155, 1971.8.13)

When I see someone's face, I can usually tell if he has good or bad ancestors. Some people have good ancestors and receive blessings, whereas others have bad ancestors and suffer all the time. Such people will suffer terribly when they go witnessing in their mission places. (37-144, 1970.12.23)

If you keep pace with the Unification Church by way of the principled standard, good spirits and ancestors in the spirit world who used to co-operate with the national fortune will work for you. Externally, you may appear unlucky with a flat face and small ears but spirit world sees you as a lucky child. Your ancestors within ten generations are especially anxious, because the history of restoration is realized based on ten generations. But when an evil descendant appears, ancestors within ten generations judge him saying, "Hey you! You're going to ruin us!" (14-20, 1964.4.19)

Just as spirits of good ancestors at the time of Jesus could rise from the level of form-spirit to life-spirit in the spirit world, your ancestors have entered the realm which gives them the special privilege to return to earth through you. When you understand this and become part of the victorious foundation, you stand in a position of having created life. For this reason, your ancestors will help you. In this way, you should be the base through which your ancestors of thousands of generations can return. (14-22, 1964.4.19)

When you go to the spirit world, you will meet countless saints and ances-

tors, and share with them. They will ask you, "Where did you come from? What part of the world? Which country? Where?" and reminisce as they talk with you. Don't friends also share past stories when they meet? When you go to the spirit world you will meet your great-great-grandfather and thousands and tens of thousands of your ancestors. Would you feel offended if they impolitely say to you, "You good-for-nothing! How was your life?" Think about that. (148-321, 1986.10.26)

Now, our ancestors must help us, in order to receive blessings. The more they oppose, the deeper they fall into a pit. Heavenly fortune is changing rapidly. In the future, they will clamor to have a picture of me hanging in each of their houses. They will admonish you from the spirit world. That is why those who raise the church flag, hang my picture and greet it everyday, would bring alive the work of resurrecting their ancestors. (208-154, 1990.11.17)

Until this time, those who communicated with low-level spirits told you not to go to the Unification Church. But now those such as Buddha, Jesus and Confucius must teach people to go to the Unification Church; otherwise, they will be judged by heavenly law. Why? It is because the religion I teach is the religion of the parents. (208-154, 1990.11.17)

You have to be able to say, "Through the True Parents we have become ancestors who can bequeath a new lineage, and become a blessed tribe that brings about liberation! Our tribe will be of God's eternal unchanging household and kin." Then, you will be eternally separated from Satan. That is why the Unification Church allows the honoring of ancestors.

Does Christianity allow you to perform ancestral rites? The Unification Church should carry on and establish this tradition. This is not a secular tradition. By attending the heavenly Parent, the heavenly kingdom and the heavenly ancestors, a royal domain will emerge, one where we can eternally attend the realm of tribal messiahship as part of the mainstream lineage and bequeath the way of attendance to succeeding generations. It will be a nation where we can attend the King, and sing praises for the eternal reign of peace and prosperity. You, your mother, father, family and tribe can go directly to heaven only after having lived in such a nation. (220-221, 1991.10.19)

If you pray and connect with the spirit world, you would know that the spirits are working very hard to bring their descendants closer to heaven. But here on earth, people sometimes speak badly of their ancestors and try to live well-off on their own. (22-338, 1969.5.11)

In order to be liberated from their current position, the spirit persons cannot avoid pain without going through people on earth. Since they cannot be freed from their sins, they always seek their earthly dwelling place. They seek

out their kin or those related to them and continue to send signs to them. (293-249, 1998.6.1)

4.2. Ancestral salvation comes from those on earth

When you leave behind a love greater than that of your great-grandparents in the house where you and your ancestors were born and have lived, heaven will see the luster of love shining forth. Hundreds, thousands, and millions of volts of light will shine forth. This light goes up to your ancestors. It goes to the spirit world, the Kingdom of Heaven and God. This Kingdom is our original homeland. Isn't God our original Father? (213-190, 1991.1.20)

All your ancestors in the spirit world are watching the way you live. There is nowhere to hide. They are watching everything. When you go to the spirit world, you are able to see through walls and even the entire earth. We are to go and live in such a world eternally.

Since we were created as God's objects of love, God eternally needs a being that becomes an object partner to His eternal love. Just as God is eternal, we are eternal. Without being a partner of love, there is no eternal life. (213-196, 1991.1.20)

The spirit world is in your hands; your relatives are in your hands – not only your relatives, but even your country is in your hands; even the task of setting the right tradition for your descendants is in your hands. You should always keep this in mind. Whether you, as a single person, accomplish or not, will determine whether your ancestors and relatives will be liberated, and whether your descendants can be the chosen people of liberation. (66-76, 1973.3.17)

You should always be thinking that you are representing three ages. For this reason, you have to realize that the spirit world is in your hands and that your ancestors are at your mercy. If we gather the past, present and future together, and put physical and spiritual realms together, and lead them, they will come running to you. We should accomplish that mission. (66-76, 1973.3.17)

The world is now changing rapidly. Many evil people are dying in accidents. Suddenly they are dead. Now there is no indemnity. An age has come where decisions and punishments are instantly rendered. You have to straighten out your act. Who is doing this? The devil is not bringing our indemnity. Your own ancestors are dealing with it. The standard of the Blessing I have now given you is equal for you all. If you fall away from this standard…. When you go to the spirit world the standard should not be lost. Since you have to stand in a certain spiritual position, you should be taken to the spirit world in order to prevent your losing that standard. Such an age will come. Your ancestors will give you both the illness and the medicine. They will say, "Attend True Parents' picture!" (301-164, 1999.4.25)

You should receive your ancestors' co-operation with a fervent heart greater than heaven and earth. Everything goes in this way. Three generations are included. Your ancestors are the first generation, you are the second generation and your children are the third generation. You have to bind them together with a fervent heart so that your descendants, the third generation, on earth, who are born anew, can even reach to your parents and ancestors in heaven. Isn't that so? (302-39, 1999.5.18)

Your ancestors in the spirit world would look down and want to come with the desire to assist their descendants of whom they are proud. That is why many of your ancestors come down to you. This is the realm of religion based on the tribes that transcends denominations. Do you understand? Your ancestors want to follow you while placing their trust and love in you. That is why they want to devote themselves in assisting you. (189-278, 1989.5.1)

In order for my mother to come down to the earth and give assistance, she could come only after attaining the proper position as my mother. That is why she has come now. Resurrection can occur because of you. Even your ancestors are given salvation through you. For that reason, they wish to actively support you. Therefore, in your local area, work hard without rest. (179-25, 1986.6.15)

One iron rule that you must know is that you have to do more than any loyal servant, patriot, filial child or church minister has done, who lived in your area. If you make greater efforts than they did, they will all support you. That is the condition. If you do that, you will be standing in the place which is above the realm that Satan can accuse. Therefore, Satan will not oppose you and, with the support of the spirit world, your ancestors will appear to your family and relatives and spiritually push them to join the Unification Church. What happens is that your grandfather comes to assist you and goes witnessing for you. (179-17, 1986.6.15)

When you are sitting on the toilet, the spirit world tells you, "Hey, you should do these things today!" and teaches you the entire program. Such wonderful things are really occurring. Therefore, when you are on the streets, there are many cases where connected people are spiritually contacted in advance, and end up meeting you. That is why you should enlist support from the spirit world. You must have the support of the spirit world.

Now, your ancestors will co-operate with you. In the world of the unfallen realm, the perfection of Adam was to be achieved by having the angels protect him, raise him, and bring him to the occasion of the Blessing. By having the spirit world fulfill its original mission, the archangelic realm of the spirit world will be restored, and through this the earthly realm will be restored. The archangel caused the Fall, didn't he? Therefore, your ancestors will come and

act as the good archangel. Through this, you stand in the original position of the unfallen Adam and can come within the realm of God's heart. Since you can follow that path within the enclosure of co-operation from your ancestors, this does not belong to the fallen realm. It is standing in the victorious realm of the original heart, and marching towards the realm of deliverance.

This way you can directly go to heaven. This all conforms to the principles of restoration through indemnity. There is nothing vague about this. (178-133, 1988.6.1)

The spirit world will support you. They will gather your relatives and all who are near to you and bring them before you. In this way, the spirits in the spirit world centering on God will come down and surround you who are in the position of Adam. Because your good ancestors will be surrounding you, they will create a realm where evil and Satan cannot invade. So, based on that standard, you will inherit the position of the original true ancestor through bonds of heart. Since this has become like a newly-planted foundation, centering on that standard of heart, all the grandfathers and grandmothers among your relatives will bow their heads to you. (177-75, 1988.5.15)

Now, your ancestors will support you. In the past, evil ancestors used their descendants, but now is the time when good ancestors come down and act. Therefore, you have to bear the cross. There has to be someone who is willing to bear the cross and pay indemnity for the tribe, people, nation and world. The hope of the nation and race should be incorporated within the providential age of the worldwide ideal, but up until this time the ancestral spirits could not stand in a high position of influence and were held captive in the lower realms.

If you bear the cross and fight for the benefit of the world level, everything can be quickly resurrected because of you. Then, from those living on earth, a foundation can be laid to save all the ancestors equally across the generations. That is the only way your tribe can be liberated. Do you understand what I am saying? (172-253, 1988.1.23)

From the earthly perspective, all your ancestors will come and build a bridge. Since your ancestors are in the archangelic position, they co-operate with recreation and are raised up according to their bond with True Parents' love. Since even the gates of hell are opened to a path that rises to the heavenly world, you should receive education and….

Your parents and ancestors are the archangels, aren't they? But they are no longer the angels who bring ruin to the heavenly side. They take on the mission of the angel who brings ruin to the fallen world. This is the archangel on the heavenly side, who, according to the laws of restoration through indemnity, stands in the opposite position to the past. Consequently they will co-operate with their descendants and Adam-like figures. Such phenomena will occur when

the spirits in the spirit world co-operate and can be resurrected along with people on earth. (164-276, 1987.5.17)

Good spirits and all your ancestors will come down and assist you. There will be no more occasions when you have to feel nervous about people who oppose the Unification Church. Now, even if the entire world created a disturbance your minds will be tranquil. Your mind will not tremble. That time has already come. The evil spiritual atmosphere cannot touch us.

When you look carefully at the descendants of good ancestors, their heart is such that they like having you come to their house; and when you do, they want to give you something precious. Though you may not be aware of it, when your ancestors co-operate and make you take action through your feeling to help a needy person, they benefit from that. You also can develop through that. In accordance with the principle of co-operation between the angelic world and the realm of Adam, then, in this age of re-creation, your ancestors from the angelic realm will support you who are the descendants of Adam. By co-operating with the process of re-creation, then, in a certain way, they can grow up in the presence of God's will. (164-308, 1987.5.17)

Even though your grandmother and grandfather passed away, they can come alive because of you. Your mother and father can come alive through you. Because of true love, and based on true love, when you say, "Be alive!" then your grandmother will appear saying, "Yes?", and you can meet your grandparents and parents who have passed away. You should know that such a path is found in true love. Your grandmother and grandfather and all your ancestors are in the spirit world. But when you say, "I have this difficult problem. Help me," they will solve it for you immediately. You are entering such an age. They will instruct you.

God is our ancestor and we are His grandchildren. Hence, when you say, "Please let this be so, as I am asking." He will say "Yes." He will not say "No." Everything will come out alright with God. (162-143, 1987.4.5)

The spirits in the spirit world mobilize in many ways in order to receive the help of people on earth and come down to their descendants. However, since their descendants do not know how to solve the situation, their family circumstances start to go awry, the path becomes difficult, and other problems are repeated. The spirits who are elevated through the help of people on earth move to a better position than their current one. In this way, their life becomes comfortable and the lives of their descendants on earth also become peaceful. (292-287, 1998.4.27)

4.3. Blessed families and honoring one's ancestors

The Unification Church allows for honoring ancestors and should carry on that tradition. In the future, however, this will be done with reference to

the True Parents, and will thus differ from the secular tradition in the secular world. By attending the heavenly Parent, the heavenly kingdom and the heavenly ancestors, a royal domain will emerge, one where we can eternally attend the realm of tribal messiahship as part of the mainstream lineage and bequeath the way of attendance to succeeding generations. It will be a nation where we can attend the King, and sing praises for the eternal reign of peace and prosperity. You, your mother, father, family and tribe can go directly to heaven only after having lived in such a nation. (220-221, 1991.10.19)

You should value the right of the chosen people and their lineage. The right of the chosen people is the right of the eldest son. Korea is the country of the eldest son. The purpose of Korea becoming a race that loves their genealogy was for the sake of carrying on the lineage. It is not wrong to worship your ancestors and perform services in their memory. In the future, there will be a time when we revere our parents more than those who belong to Confucianism. Do you understand what I am saying? (226-277, 1992.2.9)

If your grandparents are deceased, you should visit their graves. You should visit and pay your respects to them as if God were buried in that grave. As of that day, you are to make amends for the bitter sorrow of not attending your grandparents during your lifetime. (220-349, 1991.10.20)

The firstborn son of the eldest son must drive his roots deep. No one can uproot it. The grandfather cannot do so, nor can the uncle. That is why when you perform ancestral rites, you first have the eldest son stand at the head even before his uncle, cousin, third-cousin and even his great-uncle. Did you know that? The eldest son is set at the front, thus, we can see that the Korean race was one which attached great importance to the first son's position by virtue of its traditional cultural background that reveres its ancestors. Did the lowly people live with the nobility? Did they carelessly mingle with each other? No. It was said that the nobility would not even light a fire made with husks of rice, even if they were to freeze to death. That is amazing. (197-340, 1990.1.20)

There is some element of truth in Christianity's ban on the performance of ancestral rites to this present day. This rite should be offered to God and the True Parent of all humankind. The ancestors ideally should be first served from heaven. However, due to the Fall, this has been prohibited until the present time. In the age of restoration, since you have received the Blessing, you should attend your ancestors from now on. (223-210, 1991.11.10)

When the day for a memorial service comes, the firstborn son of the eldest son decides the time of the service. That is why you can hold the service at five o'clock in the morning, even if previously it was done at one o'clock in the

morning. Depending on the circumstances, the time could be changed again from five to seven o'clock in the morning, or even sometime during the day. The person who decides this is not your grandfather or ancestor who has passed away, but the eldest son. The offering table can be served to the grandparents who passed away only when they come at the time designated by the firstborn son of the eldest son. If the grandparents don't like the time, they will not be served. Is not the earth the center? By the same logic: what is released on earth is released in heaven. That is why the two must become one. (231-168, 1992.6.2)

You should love and serve your ancestors. It is not a sin to do so. Even in the satanic world, people serve their ancestors. But in the case of Christianity, don't they tell you not to serve your ancestors? In the future, though, you will have to serve the ancestors of the heavenly world continuously. That is why the Unification Church approves of ancestral rites. Christians make a fuss about it saying, "Oh, that's an idol," don't they? But Blessed families who live in the fallen world have the responsibility to keep this tradition and pass it on to their descendants. (241-127, 1992.12.20)

Korean history is truly amazing. An uncle would take part in the memorial services while attending the eldest son during the services held in his house, wouldn't he? You should know the historical background of Korea in God's providence was for the purpose of establishing it as the eldest son race. Knowing this, you can see how superior the Korean race is, and how great the Korean people are. Therefore, your children would not be timid. You should clearly know these things. (245-156, 1993.2.28)

In regard to the firstborn son of the eldest son, even the grandfather comes under his command when that son performs the ancestral rites. The grandfather has to show his respect. The fact that Koreans place value in the lineage of the firstborn son, and also in their genealogy and lineage, holds record-breaking historical value in God's providence of restoration, which can never be forgotten from the deepest root of His mind. (290-9, 1998.2.2)

No matter how many children Adam has, the nation is centered on his first son. Then, with the first son at the head, his brothers spread out on both sides to become a tribe and nation. The first son succeeds to the throne. In Korea, this pertains to the firstborn son of the eldest son. This is truly amazing. What is great about Korea is that it could receive blessings from God because it has been protecting the tradition of the eldest son.

When the eldest grandson of the grandfather holds a memorial service, then the granduncles – those who are the younger brothers of the grandfather – must attend that son as the center when performing the ancestral rites. It is remarkable that they have been attending the eldest son. They must be absolutely obedient. (301-189, 1999.4.26)

In the Korean tradition of the eldest son, even the granduncles had to uphold the position of the firstborn son of the eldest son during ancestral rites. That history is amazing. When this tradition of the first son relates to a higher standard of lineage, life, and love, then God can take it as the highest standard of His desire. Centering on heaven, this standard influences earthly circumstances, which are absorbed into that sphere of influence. Consequently, it is possible for the Kingdom of Heaven on earth to develop in this way. This is all logical. It is not a fanciful idea. (301-288, 1999.5.5)

What is the path of a divine son? 'Divine son' indicates something vertical. It is talking about the vertical concept of connection to God. 'Saint' is horizontal with regard to the four directions of north, south, east and west. Isn't that how it is in Confucianism? When we say, "*Cheon*" (heaven), doesn't it give us the impression that only the son of Heaven can relate to it? That is why it is vertical. What is amazing in Korean etiquette is that, even the uncle allows the eldest son of the head family to perform the ancestral rites. Why does he do that? It is vertical. The vertical comes first. (196-320, 1990.1.12)

Section 5. The Spirit World Must Be Known

The reason I told that special team to carry out a research project is because science is now highly advanced. I asked them to do research on the frequency that enables contact with the spirit world. The motions in the spirit world are all made up of vibrations. I instructed them to research this because we have entered an age where the existence of the spirit world can be scientifically proven. This can be done by discovering the frequency of vibrations used by spiritualists when they contact the spirit world. After I gave a full explanation about the spirit world to them, their eyes were wide open with surprise.

That is why, yesterday, I explained in what manner the psychological process is related to the physical and spirit worlds. It is said that the psyche puts into effect an absolute force. People only know one side of the question of why this is so. Electricity is created through the interaction between plus and minus. They don't know that it is the same phenomenon, when force is manifested by the plus and minus within that circle of relationship. Therefore, if we delve into this area, a world of new dimensions will be found. When we enter the age where the unknown spirit world can be rationally understood, the age of religion will be brought to an end. It would be an age where humankind would believe in God even if they were told not to. This is a great task. (134-239, 1985.7.20)

Section 6. Judgment

6.1. God has no concept of the enemy

Why did God create humankind? Would God enjoy being alone? Would

He be happy, or would He be lonely? Religion today cannot even answer these questions. Christians say, "God is the great Lord of judgment, the Judge who sends the bad to hell and the good to heaven." If God is chief justice, is He qualified to be God? He would be a grim God. No one would want to deal with such a God. What God wanted to become was the God of true love towards humankind. (278-197, 1996.5.24)

The concept that God is the Lord of judgment does not exist in God. If He harbors the idea of getting His revenge, God's ideal world would not emerge. That is why the concept of judgment by literal fire does not exist in God. Since the concept of the enemy is alien to Him, God raised Abel to have him bring Cain to submission through natural means, not by force. (233-228, 1992.8.1)

Even in this world, if the chief justice passes the death sentence five times, he has terrible dreams at night. If God had passed judgment on millions and billions of people and sent them all to hell, would those spirits in hell be calm? They would go after this God. How dreadful would God's dreams be then? It wouldn't actually be like that, but what I just said makes sense. (221-113, 1991.10.23)

Idealism cannot be found in a place where the omniscient and omnipotent God passes judgment as He pleases, sending Christians to heaven and nonbelievers to hell. That which is ideal must be universally valid. It must be the same in any place and at any time in the past, present or future. The reason we can say that sea water is ideal in its unchanging attributes, is because it always fills the deep places, while its surface is always horizontal. There is no change. When change happens, it becomes dualism or triple-ism. (219-39, 1991.8.25)

God cannot destroy anyone. God created with the ideal of love. God, who desires to practice the love ideal, cannot pass judgment with His rod of iron. God cannot do that. Why? It is because He created with the ideal of love. Therefore, even if that ideal has not been realized, He cannot strike. If He were to strike and left behind a tradition and habit of striking, there would be no way to resolve this. These days there is a term called 'habitual,' isn't there? In light of this, the absolute God must be able to bring about absolute enlightenment, even without striking. (213-11, 1991.1.13)

Throughout history, God's strategy in His battles has been one of being hit first, and then taking back what is His. God cannot strike first. If the argument is established that God can strike first, then the logic that God had set down the rules enabling Him to judge, would arise. If we say that God has the responsibility to judge good and evil, then the logic would arise that God had the concepts of good and evil within Himself. This would lead to dualism. For this reason God cannot strike. (242-108, 1993.1.1)

When you ask the Christians, "What

does God do for a living?" they would answer, "He sits on His throne and sends evil people to hell and good people to heaven." Is that what God does? You should try playing judge for five years at the Supreme Court. Could you do that? Imagine passing judgment on your own children, giving the death sentence to your own wife or mother. Would you be able to sleep after sentencing your own mother and father to death? Who would be able to relieve the pain in your anguished heart? Neither a nation nor the whole world would be able to remove this. It is a contradiction in itself to attend God as the master of world peace under such a one-sided view that puts God in such a miserable position. That style of Christianity must decline. (204-100, 1990.7.1)

You may not know the spirit world well but when you go there, God does not become the judge of righteousness and say, "Bang! Off to hell with you!" This never happens. How can God be like that? Would God, the Father of humankind and greatest monarch of goodness, have created hell for the sake of sending people there? Those who talk about predestination and the like are crazy. How well do you think I know the spirit world? I know about everything, even Jesus' secrets. That is why I cracked the secrets of the Bible, and created a consistent system of thought based on an obscure Biblical reality that no one knew until today. Who indeed is the great teacher? Isn't it the very person who is greatly persecuted, and yet is standing before you? (201-273, 1990.4.29)

The parent cannot find happiness when their beloved child falls ill. If God does not feel pain in His heart for the condition of human beings who have become the cause of national ruin, and who are falling straight down into hell, but instead, enjoys it saying, "Wow! You got what you deserved and now you are going to perish," then such a God should be struck down by lightning.

Since He is an ideal God who represents the parental position, He does not just sit still on seeing these circumstances. When we think about the hidden heart of parents who would disregard the laws of their nation in order to save their own children, we know it is the same with God.

Were it not for Satan, God would forgive humankind and save them. Despite His desire, since God cannot avoid Satan's accusations, then with tremendous regret, He is compelled to accept those accusations. Who understands God's difficult and wearisome position? We should liberate Him from this situation. In order to do so, there must be such sons and daughters who can confront Satan and save those in hell. Without doing so it is impossible. (210-218, 1990.12.23)

As if it isn't difficult enough dragging an empty wagon, God has to drag humankind in reverse. This is not a smooth path. He is dragging us backwards. Since God has to go in the opposite direction, He drags us backwards.

Religious people today do not even dream that God could be doing these things.

In Buddhism and Christian thought, they think that God is omniscient and omnipotent and free to take life and give life, and can pass judgment by giving punishments and blessings. They could never be so wrong. In this light, amongst the religions, the Unification Church embraces teachings of a higher dimension. Without doubt, it is a religion that labors to find solutions. Hence, it is a religion of a higher dimension. Other than the Unification Church, there has never been a religion that is determined to liberate God. (233-270, 1992.8.2)

Christians today say that God exists as the Lord of righteous judgment who passes judgment on injustices. Yet, would such a God be at ease? Has anyone here been a judge before? When they execute a condemned criminal, the judge must also be present at the place of execution. There is no person more miserable than a judge. Do you like being chief justice? How do you want to make a living? As chief justice? How many days will you live within that environment of judgment, although you become a man of authority and have everything you deal with go smoothly just as you wish, and at your command? After a month of this life you would refuse to continue. You would be sick of it.

Even nice food becomes repugnant to you if you eat the same dish everyday. Even the odor of the gas you let out after eating it would become worse. People are meant to live according to varying circumstances, high and low, front and back, and left and right. (199-327, 1990.2.21)

If you asked God, "What do You want to do with Your life?" I am the very person who asked this and got an answer. He is not a judge. God is neither the defense attorney nor the public prosecutor. He would answer, "What is there to ask? I want to live enraptured in love." His answer would be simple. What does He want to live enraptured in? God wants to live enraptured in love. When you are enraptured in love, your eyes go towards one location, your nose with the sense of smell would go towards that place, your lips that you use to talk with would go to that place, your ears you use to listen with would go towards that place; all of it would go towards one place. What is that stimulating element that lets us completely unify our five senses? It is love. (199-266, 1990.2.20)

Today Christianity says, "God is the holy, omniscient, and omnipotent being, and the judge who sits on His throne as the righteous Lord of Judgment and passes judgment on all people." But do you like being a judge? If you serve as a judge for ten years, you will get sick and die; or if not, you will at least become seriously ill. If you do not get sick, you are a fake. Judges sometimes pass death sentences, and yet their verdicts cannot be absolutely right. There are many different ways of seeing the situation, and still their judgments decide whether someone lives or dies. This is a serious mat-

ter. Laws cannot be absolute in the light of the universal law. For this reason, an ordinary person will fall sick after being a judge for ten years. (198-285, 1990.2.5)

In the Christian way, we would say, "God sits on His throne in heaven as the righteous Lord of Judgment. He judges good and evil, and sends the good to heaven and the bad to hell. That is God's hobby in life!" Amen or no-men? A judge is compelled to do it, but after passing judgment, the chief justice cannot sleep at night. He suffers regardless of whether his decision was right or wrong. There is only one judge. If this is how we are, and if we resemble God, would God enjoy being judge or would He detest it? (197-145, 1990.1.13)

Christians have not known that God is a God of grief and a God of pain. Does God exist as the Holy King and Lord of Judgment? What is there for Him to desire that would make Him want to be the Lord of Judgment? Because of the Fall, God is compelled to act as a judge. Yet no one knows how to set this right. There is no one even in religious circles who knows this. The only place that knows is the Unification Church. (196-172, 1990.1.1)

6.2. True Parents pass judgment based on the governing law of love

What in the world is the savior? What is the purpose of his coming? He is not coming to be a political leader. Why would a savior come? Christians today say that when the Lord comes they will all rise up and be lifted into the sky, and those left on earth will be judged. That will not happen. That is not the reality. They say he brings judgment, but the savior does not come to pass judgment. He comes as God's Son and also as the Parent of humankind.

Would the person who comes as the Parent of humankind, and with a parental heart, remove his sons and daughters who are groaning in illness and on the verge of death saying, "Hey you, go to hell!"? Even parents in the fallen world would choke with grief and sorrow to see their children dying in such a miserable state. Their heart would compel them to do anything to save their children, even if they lose their own life. If that is how the parents in the fallen world are, how much more so would it be for the Savior who comes with the heart of the original Parent? Judgment would be unthinkable. Isn't that so? (222-150, 1991.11.3)

People recite the Bible saying, "For God so loved the world that He gave His only Son, that whoever believes in him should not perish but have eternal life." It says that God so loved the world. Jesus came to save the whole world, not just for the salvation of Christians. Is he going to bring judgment in the Last Days? Then the statement that "God so loved the world" would be wrong. Does He only love the Christians? They do not know that God always has love. We have to teach this to them to make them repent and change their minds. Away with denominationalists! (210-110, 1990.12.1)

Christian churches today say that God passes judgment and does other things. Yet, if God were free to do as He wants, there would be no need to withhold judgment in this way until now. He would have executed judgment immediately after the Fall. There is no principle that allows God to establish His ideal of love on the foundation of victory gained through rendering judgment. (210-61, 1990.12.1)

What is the error in the philosophy of Christian churches today? It is in calling God the Judge of righteousness. If you take on the role of a judge for five years, you will start to become bent over. Why? Because you cannot stand upright. Christians did not know this. They have just revered God as the God of might and the omnipotent God. They believed they could do anything if they became one with Him. This is where they got the theory that justifies the killing of people. Since western culture today is based on Christianity, it has cultivated the philosophy of force, so Western Civilization is connected to bloody conflicts. (208-248, 1990.11.20)

God does not judge people directly. In passing judgment and disposing of the evil people on earth, God does not want to do that Himself. He allows Satan to do that. (204-60, 1990.7.1)

When God is about to pass judgment on this world and someone says, "Please wait a moment. God, take a look at this. It is something very interesting," and God answers, "What is it?" and the person then says, "It is the palm of my hand. Look how nice the lines of my palm are. I do what I do because my lines are much prettier than Yours," what would God do? Wouldn't His anger dissipate as He compares the lines of His palm with that person?

If that person says, "God, are you going to cut off my hand? Are you going to judge me?" God would answer, laughing, "Hee, hee, you scoundrel, you scoundrel!" Even though that person may be ugly, God feels entertained. Do you understand what I am saying? There should be both the positive aspect and the negative aspect. To become a masterpiece your character must develop a multi-dimensional structure. Everything must do so. Only when someone brings these plus and minus aspects together can he become someone of rounded character.

No matter how angry God may be, rather than saying, "God don't do this" to Him, it's better to say, "God, take a look at that, over there." Then God would say, "Why?" Then you would say, "That eagle is preying on that chicken." God would probably say, "Let the chicken be caught." Then you should say, "You're just like that eagle!" Then God would be stuck. "Hey, you scoundrel, what did you say? I…" Then God would not be able to say anything anymore except, "Ahem…" (202-219, 1990.5.24)

If you ask God, He would not say that He wants to become the righteous Lord of Judgment. God does not pass

judgment. Such words are for those who do not know the spirit world. When you read Christian sermons they seem so illogical. They really don't know the spirit world.

Will they go to heaven thinking like that? Go and see for yourself what happens. They will all be eaten up. They are worse than worldly people. I don't relate to such people. If a dog barks and you bark with it, that makes you one too. Then what? I don't relate with them. Yet I feel sorry for them, so later on if they were starving, I would think to bring them something to eat. (201-286, 1990.4.29)

Humankind as a whole must wake up. The teaching of the founder of the Unification Church is the truth that will save the world. It is the word of true love and life that the whole of humanity needs for eternity. When the returning Lord comes to save the world, he should not judge humankind with his rod of iron. By hitting people, he would not be able to bring even one person to complete submission.

The mother's hand is gnarled and bent like the back of a toad because of the labor she went through for her child. The mother's sacrificial love has the power to turn around her disobedient child and make him repent. This is not possible using a stick. Without true love, the unification of heaven and earth would be impossible even for God who is the great king of judgment, and who can freely lead heaven and earth as He pleases. Difficulties are not a problem for true love. True love has the strength to go on even while you cast away your life. (201-139, 1990.4.30)

Love can melt the enemy. Love has the power to make even the most disobedient child become a filial son or daughter. Only love has the power to make those who were called traitor surrender and become a loyal servant. This is possible. Therefore, from time, immemorial people have longed to live bonded by love, regardless of a person's appearance. Who told you to say "Amen"? Amen is my patent. (195-70, 1989.11.5)

Presbyterianism teaches that God became the judge of righteousness, predestines people's fate, and then saves them. Does that make any sense at all? It is utterly misleading. I have found that God is not like that. If God had predestined people to go to heaven and hell from their birth, what kind of God of goodness is that? It would not make sense logically. It has to fit logic to become common sense. There is no truth that goes against common sense.

See what happens to a chief justice who passes the death sentence and puts five murderers to death. He would have to get a medical checkup each time. The laws in the Republic of Korea are different from the laws in North Korea. Those who are sentenced to death here can become a patriot in the north. When you think about the principles of heaven and earth and the law of righteousness, do you think a judge would feel comfortable? (200-192, 1990.2.25)

By the use of power alone, the unification of heaven and earth would be impossible, even for God who is the great king of judgment, and who can freely lead heaven and earth as He pleases. It would not be possible with money, knowledge or authority. Love is the only thing that can make this possible. (200-173, 1990.2.25)

God cannot pass judgment on the devil. In the book of Job, why did God deal with Satan despite the fact that Satan had followed God around and tried to take control? God was compelled to deal with him. Satan would say, "Unless You digest me in Your love, unless you set the original standard after digesting me in love, you cannot control me. Isn't this Your Way? You are supposed to dominate me after overcoming the way of absolute love, beyond all the complete ways of the principled love. Since You haven't reached that point, You cannot dominate me. If You want to dominate me, if You want to bring me into submission, You have to do so based on the standard that conforms to the Way. I would submit to the individual on the individual level, to the family on the family level, to the tribe on the tribal level, and to the people on the national level. But this won't happen unless You set the standard, will it?" God could not make a move and would be stuck. You should know this. (188-228, 1989.2.26)

In this world, if you are asked, "What do you want to do?" you would answer, "I want to become a judge for the Supreme Court." Isn't that the case for you? Everyone likes a judge, don't they? Christians today say, "God is the great Master of heaven and earth. He is also the Judge who discriminates good from evil, sends good people to heaven, evil people to hell, and rules heaven and earth based on the law of righteousness." Would you like such a judge? If He had sent billions of people to hell throughout history until now, would God's mind be at ease? That could never happen.

In this way, it is not God's ambition to sit on His throne and exercise His authority as the judge of righteousness. God hates those things. (201-21, 1990.2.28)

You know yourself more than God knows you. Therefore, we do not need the Lord of judgment. Actually, we do not need a God of judgment. Your conscience knows best. In the light of this fundamental rule, how much you have contributed with the purpose of bringing liberation based on the liberated standard will be measured accordingly. You would know if you are authentic or fake. Would you know or not? If you don't, there is no hope. If you don't, you have to go to the public cemetery, you would have to go into the waste bin, or be driven into the Pacific Ocean on a raft. That's something hard to handle.

You know what is good and evil. Even by saying one word, you would know what is wrong. Your gaze would know what is wrong, the sound you hear, your sense of touch would all know.

When you go to the spirit world all this will be revealed. If you raise your

head, everything about you appears. The mirror of your mind, the light of your mind would instantly appear. There would be no need to explain. It is like this because you do not know the spirit world. Since I know about this, I am calm even when the people of this world curse me. I have continued right until now doing things that people regard as foolish. (201-270, 1990.4.29)

In this world there are servants of servants, servants, adopted children and children by concubines. The world is muddied. Order must be made. With what will we find order? It is possible only through love. Religions that inherited and carried on the traditional way of love should have become global religions. Religions that go against the way of love and those who do not follow this love will be judged as the representatives who take responsibility for their age in history.

What will pass judgment on the world? It will be the tradition of love, the tradition of loving heaven and earth, the tradition of loving the world, the tradition of loving the nation, the tradition of loving the people, the tradition of loving one's family, the tradition of loving one's parents and one's wife and brothers, and the tradition of loving oneself. (192-75, 1989.7.2)

God is the Judge and Jesus is like an attorney. Yet there has never been a public prosecutor on the side of heaven. So far, the devil has been the prosecutor. A prosecutor, a judge, and an attorney on the heavenly side should appear. In the light of this, since the Unification Church is equipped with everything, it should do away with Satan, humanism, obscenity, and "destruction-ism" from this earth forever. This is the belief system of the Unification Church. (192-49, 1989.7.2)

There is nothing else God desires more than love. Who would be His greatest enemy in the Last Days? What is the number one premise for judgment? In the Last Days, individualistic self-love becomes the number one premise for judgment. For scholars, the scholarly awareness and their desire to study will become the basis for judgment. The things you like most will become the basis for your judgment. For the person who likes money the most – a person who sacrifices everything to gather money – that will become the condition for his judgment. For those who like honor and for those who like authority, those things will be the condition for their judgment. For a woman there will be something that she likes according to all her attributes and specific nature. That will be the condition for her judgment. (170-92, 1987.11.8)

Even though I have been criticized, I do not think about it. Even though I have been whipped, it is no longer in my memory. Many circumstances I experienced from such a history, but I do not seek to pass judgment based on those things. I am going along that path with love in order to digest something even greater. Therefore, I think God likes me.

I would also yearn for such a person. I do not like the people who do something and then seek compensation. Is there anyone who would ask for compensation from me? Show your face and talk to me. (148-56, 1986.10.4)

Unless you repent, you will have to receive the judgment of righteousness. There is no one who can stand before the governing law of love. At that time I will become your attorney, my family and tribe will become your attorney, all those leaders in the Unification Church will become your attorney – even God would be your attorney. Only when the scope of attorneys exceeds that of the realm of accusation, can you be registered as the people of the heavenly kingdom of goodness. Anything less and you will not be able to register. (147-331, 1986.10.1)

I, also, follow the way of the heavenly law. Therefore, you must follow this path without a word. The day you follow this path without a word, you will be given the benefit of joining me on that path. However, if you build your own house and create your own territory on that path, in a self-centered way, you will be accused and judged; just like those in prison who were sent there because they broke a certain provision of the law. They did not break all the laws of the nation. They only broke a certain number of provisions of the law. In the same way, if you also break certain laws, you will not be free to follow that path. (147-317, 1986.10.1)

Even if we face ruin together, do not go the way of a betrayer. Even if that befalls us, we will stand in a good position in the spirit world. If you have not been a traitor, you can always prosper within the group of people that have not been traitors. On the other hand, traitors cannot prosper. There would always be something blocking you. You would not have the strength to digest it and go further. Such is the way for traitors to the nation. If you betray your nation despite having made a determination to follow the way for the greater good, you will always be judged and pushed by your responsibility for that greater good. There would be no way to avoid it. (144-254, 1986.4.25)

As the world moves towards establishing one nation, you will have to write in detail the past course of your life, and pass through the courts of judgment. Without going through a re-examination, you cannot advance to the position of national-level Blessings. The path towards world-level Blessings still remains. The Blessing given in the Unification Church is a church Blessing. Judgment comes from the Unification family, from blessed children, and from blessed parents. I am thinking that it will progress towards world-level judgment in line with a special dispensation. You should know this clearly.

You good-for-nothings here, who received the Blessing, should really straighten up your acts. If you set aside the Principle and live your own way, do you think that the principled world, the

world of God's will would establish relations with you? No way. If that were possible, I would not be going through such hardships. (137-259, 1986.1.3)

You will be judged by an iron mace through God's love, God's life, and God's lineage. Such a time will come. The Messiah comes at that time. Do you know what kind of person the Messiah and Savior is? He comes to search for the order of original love and the palace of eternal life, love, and lineage of the original God. You should know that he is the one who comes to establish the base of happiness and gain supremacy through true love in the family and the tribe connected to him, and in the nation and world beyond. (209-40, 1990.11.25)

What is God's family? True love, which is in God's position, will fit in the family when it is taken to the bottom, and would fit anywhere even if it is removed and placed somewhere else. Even if a grandchild climbs on the shoulder of his grandfather, he will not be judged by the family law. Even if the grandson takes away the grandfather's blankets, leaving the grandfather to sleep curled up in the corner, he will not be judged as an unfilial son. Everything would be okay in true love. (209-102, 1990.11.27)

You may call upon the name of True Parents, but have you ever attended True Parents? You can stand in a position of attendance only if you can stay up at night later than me. You can stand in that position only if you suffer more than me. Following me, you all became like parasites. The word parasite fits you well. You imposters! There are many like you in the Unification Church. Now this situation needs to be cleaned up.

Feeling bitterness about the secular world as I do, I am thinking to purge away those in the Unification Church who just play around and live comfortably. As I must judge the world, I will begin by judging these people. If they do not conform to the way of my teachings, they must be cleared away. (260-80, 1994.4.11)

There is nothing this satanic world can offer in building the heavenly kingdom. This must all be burnt away. That is why I made holy salt to sanctify these things so that they can be used again. The fallen world must also be burnt away. It must be judged by fire. People must be recreated by my hand. I will invest my heart in saving them so that I can bring them to heaven.

So far I have never shed the blood of another life with my hand. If the day were ever to come that I had to lift my hand, it would be a fearful one. You should bear this in mind so that such consequences do not come to pass. Do you understand? The problem will be great on the day I see blood. That is how the fundamental rule is. That is why I am even trying to save Kim Il-sung. (210-73, 1990.12.1)

I have thought about how many people would remain if I drank alcohol, sat here, urinated, asked why they were here and chased them away. Why

do you laugh? That kind of judgment is something that can happen to anyone in heaven and earth.

In order to find the true woman who can take part in true love... if I became half-crazy, took off my clothes and urinated right there, I wonder how many would remain. Why? You do not know how terrible the path was that I took. This you do not know. Even my own mother does not know. Even Mother here does not know. Therefore, many spiritualist ladies cry tearfully in pity for me. If I do not say this, who would know? You do not know how serious the problems were that I have confronted, and how much I have had to fight with spirit and body. (210-81, 1990.12.1)

6.3. Personal sin will be judged by the clan in the family court of the kingdom

Your parents are the judges at the court of justice. This you should know. In your families, your mother will surely play the defense attorney. When siblings do wrong, they all play the prosecutor. If a sibling says, "Really! Sister started it, not me!" the mother would listen quietly and say, "That's right. You did well." or "You did not. She is right." That is why the mother is like an attorney. Who is the prosecutor when brothers and sisters quarrel? The elder sister or the elder brother becomes the prosecutor. You should know that there are judges and prosecutors in your household. You, young people, have you ever thought about that? (147-303, 1986.5.25)

Do not become a husband who brings shame to his wife. Your wife is God's special envoy. Your children are God's special envoys. They are special envoys as your closest aides who monitor you and educate you to follow the right path. Do not be a father who feels shame before his children. Do not feed these special envoys from heaven with stolen goods. Can you attend heaven after committing fraud? Can you attend your ancestors?

Then, when you go to the spirit world, your ancestors would immediately judge you. God does not pass judgment. Your ancestors render judgment, and ultimately drag you before a public trial on the world level. If your ancestors do not report you and drag you to the public court, they cannot become good people. That is how it is. Based on the background of this governing law, our course of life in which we must establish the basis for hope in the future, and welcome such days, is surely something serious. (163-33, 1987.4.18)

In the ideal times of the future, there will be no need for courts of justice. The course of our life in this world is the foundation and preparation course for eternal life in the next world. Therefore, if someone amongst your relatives does wrong, the entire tribe will deal with that person. Who is the primary judge? If the wife does wrong, the husband becomes the judge. If the child does wrong, the father becomes the judge. They are given guidance under the public law and their clan deals with them. (197-359, 1990.1.20)

When you pass into the other world, who will judge you? Your ancestors will pass judgment on you. In the future, there will no longer be any courts of law in the nation. The relatives will render judgment. The person who plays chief justice will be your parents. The closest person will take that position. In the Garden of Eden, who passed judgment on Adam and Eve when they did wrong? Didn't God do it? Didn't the father do it? It is done this way because it is a shameful thing for your relatives. Who is the prosecutor? The person who loves you most. When the husband does wrong, the wife will accuse him. (198-367, 1990.2.11)

Who passes judgment? The person who loves you most will judge you. Who judged Adam and Eve? Adam was Eve's older brother. They became enemies. Who sentenced them as enemies? Adam sentenced Eve and Eve sentenced Adam. Such a time is coming. (199-119, 1990.2.16)

You should know that the task of setting the law that can govern heaven and earth and our destiny is waiting on the path in front of us. When that law is established, there will be no forgiveness for those who have been living as they pleased. Your own tribe will be the center and will deal with you. You will not go before a court. For example, if someone from the Moon tribe did wrong, the head of the families of the Moon tribe in all eight provinces of Korea will pass judgment on that person according to the laws of the Moon tribe. There will be no mercy. (206-140, 1990.10.3)

Who will judge the sins of people from now on? Of course, judgment will be given in the spirit world, but the people around you will pass judgment. If you do wrong in this world, don't your neighbors judge you? For a village that makes a mistake, the people of the county will make a judgment. If a county does wrong then the residents of a province will judge that county; for a province, the nation; for the nation, the world will pass judgment. Therefore, this system is the one that meets that orderly standard. (208-12, 1990.11.13)

In the future, when you commit a crime, you will not be dragged to a public court to be condemned. This will be done within your tribe. Such an age is coming. Hence, you cannot curse anyone. Your own mother and father will judge you. If the wife does wrong, her husband will pass judgment on her. In that case, who will punish the second generation of Blessed Families in the Unification Movement when they do wrong in the future? Their mother and father will punish them. (208-86, 1990.11.17)

Adam and Eve's father is God, isn't He? But when Adam and Eve sinned, who judged them? Who judged them after that? Your own partner will judge you next. The husband should pass judgment on his wife. The wife should pass judgment on her husband. Who was next? It was their children. Everything moves in this way based on the source of love. If you sin, the closest people to you

will dislike you the most. Your children will dislike you, your husband will dislike you, your wife will dislike you and your parents will dislike you.

Despite all this, if you do things to deceive your parents, deceive your partner, and deceive your children, you cannot call them your father, mother, spouse and children in the presence of heaven and earth. If there are such men and women here, you should bulldoze each other away. (215-278, 1991.2.21)

A time of judgment for Unification Church families will come. Everyone will have crossed the river Jordan, but you will still be standing on the far side unable to cross the river; just like Moses, who could not enter the land of Israel and had to gaze at it from Mt. Pisgah. It will be the same for your families. That is why I am warning you. (228-20, 1992.3.1)

In the future you will not need the police. You will not need prisons. Those responsible for the tribe will gather and pass judgment on the family on behalf of the police and judge. They shouldn't go against the laws of the village, otherwise problems will arise. (242-148, 1993.1.1)

Would God not have an exemplary model that dictates how a perfected child, sibling, couple and parent should be? Only when this exists on earth, can it become the standard for eternal judgment. The system according to which people would be designated and their positions determined as qualified people of the first, second or third order in the Kingdom of Heaven could be established through this model. Would there not be such a thing? It surely must exist. The ideal of creation is substantiated and completed through such a model partner of love on the earth. That is why God created His children. (245-209, 1993.3.7)

In the future, if there is a criminal in a certain tribe, he will be dealt with by the leader of that tribe. The tribal messiah will become the head judge on behalf of God. If there is an incident in your tribe, lightning will strike. The fact that your tribe has produced such a terrible person would bring disgrace to your tribe's name. The village itself should not become like this nation, going to rack and ruin. The entire tribe should unite to protect itself. If a bad lot emerges from the younger generation, people should catch them saying, "You good-for-nothings!" and punish them severely. Later on, in the end, the grandfather becomes chief justice, the father becomes the prosecutor and the elder brother should become the attorney.

In order to reveal the great principle of heaven and earth, the father should become the prosecutor and the elder brother should become the attorney. They would have to pass public judgment without mercy to the offender saying, "In order to reveal the great principle of heaven and earth, you cannot be of our kin, although you are flesh and blood of our family." If this is implemented, there will no longer be any police forces or armies. (252-296, 1994.1.1)

In the future, there will be no more police. When you commit an offence, the family will take absolute authority and resolve it. The mother and father will take responsibility. If the husband does wrong, the wife will judge him. The person should be judged by those closest to him. Why? Since the partners of true love should deal with the remnants of false love, the closest people to you must judge you. (264-223, 1994.11.3)

What is sin? Sin arises from the private parts. It is also on the private level that one perishes. It is the same for evil. When private matters are pursued beyond a certain point, that situation appears as evil. Private matters have a certain limit. When they go beyond that limit, they become evil, and they lead people to commit sins and to ruin.

Then, what is the position that can be blessed eternally with goodness and prosperity? Where is the position that can avoid peril, sin and evil? It is the public position. When you eat, you must eat in the public position. When you work, you must manage with the public position. When you speak, you must digest the situation with public words. In this way, you must live your life connecting all aspects of it with public matters. The person who lives in this way cannot go to hell even if he tried to. (31-164, 1970.5.24)

For those who follow the principles of heaven, there is a mind that defends and protects them from destruction. Because such an original mind exists in God, then human beings also have such an original mind. It is not a man-made law.

Can you say, "Conscience! I am the way that I am."? Does the conscience take action just because you command it saying, "You conscience! You should be this way because I think so."? We don't know where the command of the conscience comes from, but it comes from somewhere other than ourselves. When we see how such a feeling in fact controls us, we can see it does so centering on the issue of public and private. (31-241, 1970.6.4)

Suppose those who sin a lot were sent to the North Pole. Such a time might come. Why should we feed such people? They would live off baby bears. They might be confined within certain boundary lines for some years. They would survive by eating anything they could find. After surviving a couple of years, they could come back. Such a time of isolation could come.

Whether they would die in that world, or survive, so be it. If they wished to eat tigers, so be it. If they wished to build a house out of ice and live in it, or if they choose not to do so, either way, so be it. Such a time of isolation could come. Don't we quarantine hospital patients with contagious diseases? They would be completely separated in this way. Therefore, we emphasize not committing sins as the preventative medicine. (202-280, 1990.5.25)

CHAPTER THREE

True Parents and the Spirit World

Section 1. True Parents' Authority and Mission

1.1. True Parents are the incarnation of God

Since God is without physical form, He is invisible even in the spirit world. Consequently, God's will is to become a parent with a physical body. By His becoming a parent with physical form, the incorporeal and the corporeal become one. This symbolizes the physical and spirit worlds becoming one. God created Adam and Eve so He could assume physical form, but this is possible only through love. Only in the presence of love will God attain a body that resembles His image.

When Adam and Eve reach maturity as God's physical body, God can dwell in their hearts and rule the physical and spirit worlds through them. This is how God's Kingdom is established. It is a kingdom of love. The spirit and flesh are meant to unite only through love; they cannot come together through any other means. (143-93, 1986.3.16)

God's intention was far greater than achieving a vertical relationship of love between Himself and human beings. He also sought to bring the horizontal relationship of love between Adam and Eve to fruition through the perfection of their vertical love with Him.

The moment of fulfillment of the ideal of God's love is established when God, as the internal parent, achieves complete oneness with Adam and Eve as the external parents. God, the incorporeal parent, becomes the eternal parent in the corporeal world by taking on the form of Adam and Eve. Adam and Eve can then become the True Parents and the true ancestors of all humankind. (135-10, 1985.8.20)

When a man and woman, each filled with the love of God in both mind and body, marry, whose marriage does that become? It is the marriage of a man and woman and it is also God's marriage. This is such an amazing thing to say. Many Christians would fall over in surprise, exclaiming, "He is indeed a heretic to say such words!" But who is the heretic here? Go to the spirit world yourselves and see who the real heretic is. (248-284, 1993.10.3)

Who were Adam and Eve originally? They were God's eldest son and daughter. God is the Almighty King who cre-

ated the entire cosmos. Adam and Eve are the children of that King. The King's son and daughter must unite based on the love of God as the Absolute Being and stand at the level of oneness with God. That is Adam and Eve's position. In other words, Adam and Eve should become the king and queen of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world.

God's form is not visible even in the spirit world. He is invisible. What was God's purpose of creation? God desired to have form. His purpose was to assume a physical form of His own. (250-37, 1993.10.11)

Since the invisible God has no physical body, the True Parents are His incarnation. The True Parents are the Parents on the level of the individual, family, tribe, people, and nation. In the future, God will appear in the form of the True Parents in the spirit world. (98-224, 1978.8.1)

This is the greatness of the teaching of the Unification Church. My greatness lies in the fact that God wants to appear through my physical body. Do you understand what I am saying? (162-232, 1987.6.7)

When I went to prison, many strange rumors were started. People thought that I would be ruined and completely disappear. However, I am still alive and speaking out boldly now. I can confidently speak out with a loud voice because I have an antenna that allows me to see, hear and know everything. Even God likes to see whether I will endorse something before giving His approval. God will observe whether I have approved something or not, and if I have, He will say "Okay," and if I have not He will say "No." It is easy for me to say this now, but please think about how difficult it was to make this possible. In the future, the spirit world will move within my hands, and the physical world will eventually become one valley surrounded by mountains. (134-17, 1985.1.1)

The natural world is filled with the truth. I am an expert on the spirit world. You may know little about it. You may have to wait until the twenty-first, twenty-second or even thirtieth century for the opening of the gates to the kingdom in the spirit world, as they will not open without me. My accomplishments as the founder will live on for eternity as the one who logically explained and revealed systematically the details of the spirit world, and who enabled the gates of the heavenly kingdom to open. (203-324, 1990.6.28)

The spirit world must be brought together. A person who cannot bring order to the spirit world cannot unify this world. The spirit world is the root of heavenly fortune. How can a person who is unable to bring order to the spirit world, incorporate those results on earth and unify this world? For this reason, the spirit world must be unified before unifying the physical world. (191-204, 1989.6.24)

Will there be a royal palace in the Kingdom of Heaven? What kind of king would be there? Would the king be the king of a democracy? Since the spirit world is based on true love, once the king of the spirit world becomes the center, it is for eternity. Therefore, the highest and lowest places should be viewed as one and the whole seen as an undivided sphere. (167-123, 1987.7.1)

1.2. The ruler of heaven and earth is the axis of the universe

In the spirit world, Adam and Eve were to become the king and queen of the family and tribe, the king and queen of the people and nation, and the king and queen of the world and cosmos. Consequently, in the spirit world they were to be God's representatives. Since God is an incorporeal God, He is invisible and, even in the other world, God cannot be seen. Nevertheless, God desires a physical form, so He created the world of all things with substance. The incorporeal God created all things to fulfill His desire to relate with beings with physical form. Adam and Eve, upon their perfection, would therefore have become God's body. (242-166, 1993.1.1)

Beginning with his family, Adam could have become the leader of his future clan, the king of Adam's kingdom, and the king of kings in this world. As such, it would have been a world united with God's representatives. Why did God create Adam and Eve? His purpose in creating Adam was to raise up people belonging to the Kingdom of Heaven through Adam's descendants on this earth. Without Adam and Eve, children cannot be born in the spirit world. The spirit world is a vertical world, and you cannot bear children there.

Vertical things stand on one point but cover no area. Adam and Eve would move in all 360 degrees around the vertical axis and form a boundless domain where boundless numbers of children, who were born out of this desire for limitless space, would become the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven. When that occurred, God could become the King of that kingdom. God should become the King. He wanted people who could become one in body with Him, allowing Him to assume a body. Adam and Eve were to be that body.

If Adam had not fallen, who would he have become? In the spirit world he would have become God. He would have been the Lord with bodily form in the spirit world. God is invisible even in the other world. Why did He create human beings? Since this universe has substantial form, God created human beings so that He could stand in a position where He could manage and guide it through Adam and Eve as the substantial lords of creation.

God does not rule the physical world because He is without form even in the spirit world. By acquiring a body, He could become the King in physical form and rule over His children and descendants born into the physical world. That is why God created human beings in physical form.

Whose face was meant to be the face of that king? It was Adam's face. Since God created a king, He needed a queen. Who was meant to be that queen? Eve should have become the queen. They would have become the ancestors of humankind both on earth and in the spirit world. (199-144, 1990.2.16)

When you go to the spirit world, I will be governing everything. It will not be me, however, but God. I am God's body. The mind and body are one, so the mind will always be where the body is, won't it? It would be nice to speak more in depth about this, but I cannot explain more to you because some here would fall over in shock. They would be knocked down. They would say, "Is this really possible?"

There are many surprising realities in this world. God does not exist in a distant place. You may have been unaware that He is close by, in a place where such things are possible. (273-243, 1995.10.29)

In the spirit world God is invisible. God created Adam and Eve so that He could take care of the substantial world of creation, and so that their descendants could do so later. God desires a physical form. By assuming the form of Adam and Eve, God could return to the spirit world and fulfill the role of the Parent and central being of all creation. When True Parents go to the spirit world, God will be in their heart and they will be one in body with Him. The entire spirit world and this earth will unify.

God would enter True Parents' heart and True Parents would be within God. This is the same as the relationship between our mind and body. Because of this principle, your family on earth, although smaller in form, is the fruition of the unity between True Parents' family, the central family in the spirit world, and God. (248-52, 1996.4.28)

If Adam and Eve had not fallen but instead had fully matured and fulfilled their portion of responsibility, the Kingdom of Heaven would have been established both in the physical and spirit worlds, creating one world based on love – true love. What day would ultimately have been both the first day and the last day? That day would have been True Parents' Day.

The term True Parents means God as the vertical parent and True Parents as the horizontal parents. God, the vertical parent representing the spirit world, and True Parents, the horizontal parents representing the physical world, are united into one. These worlds are united through true love. The core essence of these two worlds is True Parents. You need to be aware that within the True Parents there are vertical parents and horizontal parents. (248-50, 1996.4.28)

1.3. We go to Heaven through True Parents

The center of the universe is the True Parent in spirit and in flesh. Based on that original source, north, south, east and west emerge, and the family, tribe, people, nation and world emerge from

there. This is the origin of the universe. The spirit world unfolds around this center. It is at a 90-degree angle turning through 360 degrees. On this foundation, the universe moves forward. (147-111, 1986.8.31)

The words of Divine Principle are a record of the victorious battles I fought to discover everything about the spirit world. I confronted these issues since the time of my youth. I am not saying anything vague or obscure. Even Lee Sang-hun did not have complete faith in me during his time on earth. When I said, "The True Parent has the responsibility to grasp the spirit world with his right hand, and grasp the earth with his left, and change them around," he questioned what I meant. (302-156, 1999.6.13)

Now, if I said to God, "God, I'm tired of looking at this fallen world and spirit world. I wish you would make a new and better world," this would be possible. The problem is that Satan has not yet been liberated. I want to drive Satan into a bottomless pit. I do not want to see his shadow; I do not want to even hear a murmur from him. But, even after liberating him, there are still matters to be dealt with. (302-257, 1999.6.14)

You do not understand the spirit world, do you? I am an expert on the spirit world. Most likely my name, Sun Myung Moon, will remain in history as the founder who logically taught and revealed the systematic details of the spirit world in order to open the gates of the heavenly kingdom. Do you know the meaning of won-jo (founder)? It is not won-jo meaning aid or support to the needy. It consists of the Chinese characters for won, meaning original, and jo, meaning ancestors.

You all call me the True Parent, yet, I, more than anyone, dislike the words "True Parent." They are fearful words. Once you become a true parent you have to lead a true family. When your relatives or tribe attach themselves to this family, you must lead a true tribe. You would have to lead the world in a systematic way. When this expands to all of humankind in both the spiritual and physical worlds, you have to have the capacity to lead them. This is incredible. I know all of these things. (203-324, 1990.6.28)

When the original True Parent comes, God as the vertical and human beings as the horizontal can create a 90-degree angle for the first time. The True Parent comes to educate us so that we can create that 90-degree angle. If you go to the spirit world and see that my words are wrong, you can come to me and cut off my head.

When the True Parent comes, the horizontal and vertical can be adjusted to create a 90-degree angle. The True Parent is showing you how to form that 90-degree angle. You should be absolutely obedient to these teachings. You have to grab and strike your body to make that perpendicular relationship. (201-165, 1990.3.30)

The True Parent is the fundamental basis for universal true love. When such a True Parent appears, all creation will turn to face him, just as all the trees and plants in the mountains and valleys face the rising sun in the morning. All the things of creation are like the leaves and branches. Everything in the spirit world faces God. In the same way, when I go to Korea, all Unification Church members automatically focus their attention on me in Korea. (202-360, 1990.5.27)

If you want to receive a doctorate degree, you have to go to your supervising professor and even wash his rear end for him. If he kicks you in the seat of the pants, you have to say: "Oh, thank you very much." Only then will you get his signature. Without doing so, he will not give you his signature. You might want to say: "I'm much better looking. I have a better nose, a better face and a better stature. If we were to wrestle, I would win. I can eat more than he can. I can beat him in any competition. I'm better than him in dozens, even hundreds of ways. Yet he thinks that he can withhold a doctorate from me just because I don't know a few things!" None of this will do you any good, though. It may just be that I have the special authority to give this kind of signature to enable you to enter the spirit world. (134-17, 1985.1.1)

Why did human beings, with a noble value that is worth more than even heaven and earth, fall down so far? It was because of the Fall. To liberate humankind from this you have to go through me. To know this principle you have to go through me. No matter how successful scholars are in this world, when they go to the spirit world they can only enter with a passing grade by receiving Rev. Moon's signature. (280-169, 1996.11.24)

Is it just an ordinary thing for the spirit world to cooperate with me? However, now I must deal more severely with the spirit world and all other issues. When I see red, I can be fearsome. When I see red, I am merciless. I will wipe away all the historical indemnity, many times over. There is no way to comfort God who has seen blood spilled throughout the course of history. My idea is to stop this with my tears. (207-175, 1990.11.9)

In the spirit world, all attention is on True Parents, and only on True Parents. They are the source of life and love, the origin of conscience and all creation. Without going through them, you cannot grow. (256-28, 1994.3.12)

I am needed in the spirit world as well as in this earthly world. A palace of love was supposed to be built in the spirit world by people who lived with love on earth, but there were no such people. Even God and the people in the spirit world cannot build the palace of love. The True Parents must build it. It begins from them. Even if there were already a palace in the spiritual kingdom, the whole of the spirit world could only settle down there if True Parents were to enter and declare: "This is where we will have a palace." The spirit world absolute-

ly needs me because this responsibility has yet to be fulfilled. (205-255, 1990.9.9)

I will not be here forever. I am the one who was born in this two-hundred-year period of history that will only occur once in eternity. I was not here a hundred years ago, and will not be here again in the future. I am not someone who can be born just anytime. There is infinite value in your being able to directly learn secrets from me during this period. If you go to the spirit world after practicing this, you will surely go to heaven. That future kingdom awaits you. The Kingdom of Heaven has been empty until now. Originally, the True Parents were supposed to enter heaven, but they did not appear. (249-327, 1993.10.11)

As the founder of the Unification Church, I take pride in knowing God. I know Him more deeply than He is known in the spirit world. Although there are many people living on earth today, God likes me the most because I know His heart. (146-333, 1986.8.10)

Religious people, who pray for their entire lives drenched in tears and with their knees buried in the ground, are unsure whether they can meet Jesus and receive his guidance. Yet, by coming here and hearing my words, you are a part of a historic event. (146-335, 1986.8.10)

I did not find out the truth about restoration, death or the spirit world without effort. I prayed continuously for seventeen hours without eating anything. My prayers would usually last for ten to twelve hours. That is why my knees are hardened. I can connect immediately with God even without praying for a long time because He is near me. You can still see there are traces of hardness on my knees. (250-317, 1993.10.15)

When I prayed, I would weep so deeply that my cotton trousers would be drenched with tears, even in the depths of winter. Yet, how have you treated the Principle I found through such labors? When you come to find out about this reality in the spirit world, how will you approach me? Even Mother should be careful in dealing with me. There are many things that you do not know. Once you do know, you must join me on this path. When you go through the pass of deep sorrow, and even resolve to die wherever you are, with a loving heart, only then can your death be accepted as a heavenly death. That is how you can overcome death. It is a realm where death does not intervene. (253-325, 1994.1.30)

Those who feel that they have lost out by knowing me, raise your hand. Those who feel this way are thieves. Who stands to lose? Do I stand to lose, or you? Throughout my entire life I have been on the losing end. Still, I never thought of expecting any return. Instead, I am telling you to bequeath what is precious to your descendants. I am encouraging you all to be mothers and fathers who can represent me and who are attended accordingly by your children. Unless you achieve this, you will again have

to establish indemnity conditions for everything I have bestowed. Once you pass into the spirit world you will be caught immediately. There is no forgiveness. (252-263, 1994.1.1)

The words "True Parents" are amazing words. Those amongst you who can communicate with the spirit world should try praying, "Is Rev. Moon on a high spiritual plane like You?" The answer will come that I am on that same high plane. Since I say this, I will inevitably be called a heretic. (266-249, 1995.1.1)

In the realm of the religious path, you must even be recognized by God after going to the spirit world. Why is that so? You will come to know it all when you study the Principle. It is very difficult. Someone had to dig into all of this and create a systematic understanding. Being such an exhaustively thorough person, I made such a system. The spirit world is so vast that it cannot be grasped. If you make a garment by untangling a bag of rags completely, then you should know how to weave it into a kingly garment that a monarch can wear and go about in. By doing so, you should enable God to say, "In all of history, you are better than me." (203-296, 1990.6.27)

If you invest your entire life in true love and pass to the spirit world, you can meet me in no time just by saying "Father!" wherever you are. You can meet me at once. There is nothing to worry about. When you tune into the heart of love, you will be given the right to participate, stand in the same position, and live together with me. When you call me, I will meet you at once. How wonderful that would be! I would show the whole of the spirit world to such people. There are stars made of diamonds and stars of gold. With my special authority, I may just give you one. I have that special authority. (229-164, 1992.4.11)

Do you understand what I am saying, you good-for-nothings!? By saying insulting things in this way, I am establishing the condition for your forgiveness. Some may say, "Rev. Moon, how can you swear like that? This is my first time to see you and I cannot believe anything you say if you insult me in this way." But I swear at you so that I can forgive you when the time comes. In this way, when they pass into the other world they will say, "Since you swore at me, I didn't believe in the Unification Church." Then that is understandable. I say insulting things to people to establish a state of forgiveness for them in the spirit world. But when I curse them it does not cause them pain in their heart. They just go back home. They may say, "Oh my, how dreadful!" but they will have forgotten about it by the time they get home. That is how the mind works. Do you understand or not? Those who say "I understand." raise your hand. Now you've got it. (283-211, 1997.4.12)

God does not become indebted to anyone. He gives back tens of thousands of times as much. Therefore, though I went to prison as a wretched individual

the time has now come for the territory under my possession to extend beyond the nation, the world, and beyond heaven and earth. The time has also come for me to find a unified position between the spirit world and physical world. My authority is so significant, since it ushers in this privileged time when I can bestow the model of a united Adamic family foundation on all the people of heaven and earth. It is all-transcendent and all-pervasive. It encompasses and covers everything without exception. After that, the conclusion of progressing towards an age of full authority and power is waiting for me in the world to come. (284-113, 1997.4.16)

The cosmos consists of the spiritual and physical worlds. God can only be liberated after all the gates in the spirit world have been opened, and all the spirits that remain in hell and the middle realm have been liberated. Only at that point can all humankind live together harmoniously in an age of peace and prosperity. That is the way of the Unification Church and it will continue until the day God is liberated. This way is a tremendous reality. It is not a vague notion. (249-248, 1993.10.10)

Currently, the spirit world does not have form. It is gaining form through the True Parents. When the Blessing is declared for the spirit world, and ultimately for the world of the sovereignty of love – that is, the unified Kingdom of Heaven and earth – then God can have dominion over the spirit world in the form of the Parent, even without my being there. The spirit world is waiting for this to happen. All that was separated is now waiting to be united. They are waiting for me to come quickly to the spirit world.

Once I have completed my work on earth, my work in the spirit world will begin. I will stand as the king of the spirit world. As the king of the earth, I will automatically become the king of the spirit world and enter the land of the original homeland that conforms to the principle and the law. (295-202, 1998.8.28)

My wish is to become, among the founders of religion, the representative founder who lives for true love. Shouldn't you welcome this? You do not know the spirit world. The person speaking here is an expert on the spirit world. Since I clearly know what happens after death, no matter how much those involved in the affairs of the world may clamor against me, it does not obscure my vision. Why? It is because I look beyond, to the other world, and live in rhythm with it.

Therefore, in the future, spiritual mediums from all over the world, regardless of their faith, must come to me and be educated. There has never been even a single person who knew the profound secrets of Heaven. Finally, the person who is standing before you appeared in this present age and announced these secrets of God. This knowledge has become a library of chronicles that were not even kept in the museum of the spirit world. When numerous good

spirits come and discover these truths for themselves, and teach their descendants on earth through dreams and revelations, this knowledge will fill up the libraries on earth. The things I say here today cannot be found in any library. (200-173, 1990.2.25)

You should realize that I, who discovered the world of God's heart, am not a fraud. All the things you hear from me cannot be found any place in this world. My teachings cannot be found in any library book either here on earth or in the spirit world. It is the first time, the very first occasion that these truths have been known! These are the new words of truth. They cannot be found anywhere else on earth or in the spirit world. They were locked away in the treasure storehouse and could not be taken out before, by God or any person in the spirit world or on earth. (303-59, 1999.7.4)

Even the fact that you saw me on earth will be something you can take pride in when you go to the spirit world. You can say, "I attended Father." When we observe plant life, the sprouts of a plant all face the sunlight. In the same way, your original nature faces the sunlight of love. God is the sun of love. That is how it is in the spirit world. (142-312, 1986.3.13)

What is the final conclusion? It is the perfection of Adam. What about Adam's perfection? Adam failed to fulfill his portion of responsibility. What is this portion of responsibility? It is to establish the cornerstone and traditional standard of the world of heavenly families, that is, the cornerstone of the family, tribe, people, nation, and the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world. That cornerstone was stained. It must be cleaned up. So I need to clean up the spiritual and physical worlds and accomplish many other things. (302-241, 1999.6.14)

Section 2. True Parents and the Building of the Kingdom of Heaven

2.1. The seal of approval from God is needed in order to become True Parents

What must someone do in order to become the Lord at the Second Advent? You need to go to the spirit world, reveal the principles concerning the relationships of all religions centering on Jesus, clarify everything about heaven and earth and their laws, and receive the approval of the spirit world. You have to proclaim these things on earth. This is something that has not been known even in the spirit world. Only God and Satan knew of this. After I had proclaimed all these things in the spirit world, strong opposition arose there. In that world, a time of chaos came about for forty days. Satan resisted by setting the condition of denying God. As a result, the spirit world was divided in half, with one half against me. In the end, this chaotic situation had to be resolved based on what God decided to be true. That is why the

True Parent brings the spirit world into complete submission, receives God's seal of approval and comes down to the earth. (236-323, 1992.11.9)

In order to create a unified heaven and earth, the spirit world must first be unified. The ancestors in the spirit world said, "Rev. Moon, you heretic, you traitor!" Later on, even God said, "Yes, throw him away!" That is how the laws of indemnity are. Since Adam and Eve abandoned God, God also had to abandon them, conditionally. Enduring such abandonment, I had to win acceptance, restore God's support for me, recover my heaven, and receive God's seal of approval. During that period, God had to stand against me when someone accused me, but then later on everything…

My character is such that once I start something I carry on till the end. I do not retreat until I die. Since I know clearly what this principle is about, I am sure of myself. That is why I openly resisted these spiritual attacks. How could Jesus, Confucius or other leaders know such principles? Eventually they only asked negative questions because what I said was not in the doctrine they taught. They insisted on their own views.

I battled against the entire spirit world for forty-three days. On the fortieth day even God said, "Rev. Moon, you good-for-nothing! Why have you come here and brought chaos to this peaceful heavenly world? You son-of-a-thief!" Everyone agreed with God. Still, I did not retreat. (282-168, 1997.3.11)

In order to become the Lord at his Second Advent, I had to go to the spirit world and return with God's seal of approval. By my going to the spirit world, a battle took place there for forty-three days. Everyone, from the bottom of hell to the top of heaven, said, "Rev. Moon is a heretic!" I had to deal with this, beginning from the lowest place, right through to the saints at the very end. I had to argue with them in God's presence and go through a decisive battle that decided who was the Lord of righteousness. What was the issue at that time? It was concerning the stained lineage of all the people in the spirit world and whether they knew that they had to change that.

What was the second consideration? It concerned transferring the rights of ownership of all material things. I stated that, "Those who had rights of ownership during their life on earth are traitors to the Kingdom of Heaven!" No matter how great the founders of the religions were, they had to face this judgment. That is why, when I fought in the spirit world, I stood my ground in battle and challenged them confidently, asking, "Who's the heretic?"

Since great chaos would come to the spirit world after this, God had to make a decision as the Judge. But even He stood against me. God said, "Rev. Moon is a heretic, as you all say." Why? Since Adam had betrayed God, in accordance with the laws of restoration through indemnity, the person representing perfected Adam had to face a situation of betrayal, even by God Himself. Only

then could the walls that were raised in God's heart be brought down. In this way, everyone was against me, and even God was standing on the other side, leaving me totally alone.

Still, the spirit world could not be left as it was, in a whirlpool of chaos. God had to make the final decision. He proclaimed, "The transition of the lineage, transition of the rights of ownership and transition of the realm of heart that Rev. Moon speaks of, are true." I then had to return here, to this world, after receiving God's seal as a victorious champion. (264-50, 1994.10.9)

Before everything can be resolved in the physical world, the spirit world must first be put in order. After having discovered the words of truth, when I claimed, "This is how the spirit world should be," Satan opposed me and even God opposed me. Since humankind abandoned God, God must abandon humankind. This is the law of restoration through indemnity. For this reason, a forty-day battle occurred in the spirit world. The four great saints all exclaimed, "Rev. Moon is a heretic!"

All the religious leaders in the spirit world came and opposed me. There was a hostile gathering and an offensive and defensive argument in God's presence to find out who was right. For forty days the entire spirit world was in an uproar. They were making complete turmoil and shouting, "Rev. Moon is a heretic!" They all called out in unison, "The spirit world will become very disturbed. We don't want that. Drive him away!"

Nevertheless, I insisted, even to God, that this was the only way, and that if everything did not follow accordingly, there would be no way to bring a logical order to the whole world. I pointed out that Confucius did not know about God's character. He did not know about God as a personal God. Confucius talked about heaven but it was vague. In a battle of questions he would be knocked down.

To Jesus, I asked, "Why didn't you speak about certain issues regarding your Second Advent?" He was taken aback.

Christians believe that the millennial kingdom will be established in the sky, but they will clearly know that is wrong when they go to the spirit world. When I asked searching questions of those religious founders, they could not open their mouths. Subsequently, I called upon God, "You make the judgment as to who is right." At the very end, God declared, "Rev. Moon is right!" (259-320, 1994.4.24)

After entering the spirit world, I was treated with contempt for forty-three days, even from the lowest realms. They were asking me who I thought I was. They were calling me a slave, the relative of old lady Pak, a fraud, and the ringleader of all heretics. Eventually, I met with the major religious leaders and chosen people. At the very end, I spoke with the four great saints. They were all against me. They all opposed me, saying, "That good-for-nothing, child of a traitor, get him and kill him." Even God

supported them. It was an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth. For forty days the entire spirit world opposed me. I could not retreat and I fought for forty-three days. Until the very end even God was against me. Could I have retreated? Wouldn't something terrible have happened had I retreated? So in the end, I even brought God to submission. Then, God shouted, "Attention!" to the people in spirit world. He then proclaimed, "I have to come to a decision on this battle in the spirit world. The witness who was correct in every respect is Sun Myung Moon." God told me to turn around and give my defense. Everyone agreed that my words were true. God called out, "Attention!" and testified for me Himself, to the entire spirit world. So, I had finished with the spirit world, hadn't I? I received God's seal, His approval, and came to the earth. (295-293, 1998.9.24)

In order to unite this world, you have to enter the spirit world and make unity there first. How are you going to bring unification? You would not be welcomed. If you go to the spirit world and say, "The way of the heavenly principle should be revealed in this way," Satan and God would understand but they would not give an answer.

It was the first time for all the leaders of religion to hear these things. They asked the meaning of the transition of the lineage, the transition of the rights of ownership and the transition of the realm of love. Even Jesus asked me about this every day. All the saints were opposed to me. Thus, for forty-three days a great time of chaos came about in the spirit world. They were saying, "Drive out that Rev. Moon, the ringleader of all heretics!" What would have happened had they driven me out in this way? The Unification Church would not have emerged. Thus, I had to push forward for forty-three days amid that intense persecution.

In this type of situation, I am an expert. I am an expert in discerning between right and wrong. That is why I know immediately who is for Satan and who is for God. Looking at everything there, I saw that it was wrong. That is why I determined to continue. At the very end, even God became more desperate. The spirit world was in chaos. I, alone, was stirring up the entire spirit world, creating a tumultuous situation. Since God is the Lord of Judgment, He had to take responsibility. The situation was that the entire spirit world had put me at the front and was accusing me before God.

Consequently, God had to bring justice and judgment. To stop this battle, He had to clarify what was right and wrong. There was a complete split of opinion. I was alone and the entire spirit world was against me. Even God had been standing against me. They were saying, "How bad this fellow is! Who is saying such things?" Since Adam fell by going against God, God had to oppose me.

Don't parents sometimes have to spank their children? If a child does something bad, his father or mother might spank him, rebuke him, and then forgive him. In the same way, at the very

end, God brought me to the front and made the decision, calling out, "Look to the front!" He then declared, "So far, there have been many arguments for and against Rev. Moon's words, but his arguments are absolutely right." (273-67, 1995.10.21)

There are diverse attitudes and peculiarities in the Unification Church. Some even go so far as to say that they are the Messiah. Some say, "Rev. Moon is John the Baptist and I am Jesus." I did not automatically become who I am. I had to go to the spirit world and come back with God's seal of approval.

Since I unified the spirit world, that entire world supports me. I brought the spirit world that was in chaos into order. Until now, the Buddhists and Confucians all created their own domains and enclosures, creating numerous factions. I brought all these to face one direction, not two. Once the spirit world was united like this, I came to this earth with the authority and conviction to go in a single direction.

There are many directions in this world. If there are five billion people, there are five billion directions. I am bringing all of these together into one direction and purpose.

Although the satanic world opposes me, even trying to kill me, and all sorts of things are going on, it is gradually coming together in one direction. It is moving in one direction. Now people are saying, "The peacemaker for world peace is Rev. Moon." Therefore, there is a lot of interest coming towards me.

Once I had brought into order all the chaos in the spirit world, I had to unify the direction of all the confusing things on earth. That is why I am bringing together the world's politicians, greatest scholars, journalists, economists and other famous people. Do you think they respect me? They all tested me and evaluated me in their own different ways. Since I brought order out of chaos in the spirit world, I can now see the stage upon which we can bring order to the chaos on earth. How is that? I know what happens when you go one step beyond what is in front of your eyes.

None of you gathered here is a fool, I am sure. Smart as you are, when you look at this situation, you believe that the world is in your hands, don't you? There is only one set of True Parents, eternally. There are no others. For this reason, the entire spirit world must obediently follow and everything on earth must submit. There are not two sets, but one. The final destination is the True Parents. (259-320, 1994.4.24)

Many types of religion have developed. Since people's cultural backgrounds are different, this was inevitable. There are five billion people who are outside the Christian cultural sphere. Do people all go to hell if they don't believe in Jesus? No. Christians say otherwise because they do not know. If you go to the spirit world, Confucius and Jesus are both friends. Buddha and Mohammed are friends. Famous saints from Christianity and high monks from Buddhism are all friends. A curtain is the

only thing that comes between; they all belong to God's tribe. This curtain must be opened wide. When the religions unite, this curtain will be taken down and everyone will rejoice together as one family. They are waiting for that day in the spirit world.

I went through so many battles because of people's ignorance about the background of religion in history. Therefore, the leaders from each religious order, the founders of religions and all historical leaders should gather and repent for all the historical resentment. The person who can make them repent is the True Parent. (232-20, 1992.7.1)

What is a filial son? It means a son who devotes his life in love to attend his parents. Then what is a loyal subject or patriot? We call a person a loyal subject or patriot when he is rooted in love, sacrifices himself and offers his life for his king who represents God. A saint is one who lives for the sake of the people of the world. He is a person who resolves to offer his life in loving all people regardless of the differences in their cultural background, national boundaries or race. A saint tries to lead people to the path of loving others not momentarily, but eternally. Taking this a step further, what is a divine son or daughter? Divine sons and daughters are ones who can offer their lives based on love, not only for this world, but even for the infinite spirit world, and for God. Everything is rooted in love. (143-151, 1986.3.17)

You will know the true nature of the founder of the Unification Church if you go to the spirit world. Didn't I bless all the religious founders? I blessed them. That is why, according to the letters from Lee Sang-hun in the spirit world, they all send their gratitude to me. You, who have received the Blessing in your lifetime, are in a higher position than all those millions and billions of people who were resurrected in the spirit world or even the founders of religions. So far, you have lived your lives too carelessly. You have to be aware of that. I may seem to live without thought but wherever I go and sit, whatever I do in any place, I follow God's law, clean the area and take my seat. I do so by following the heavenly law. Aren't you all just carelessly living your lives? (304-50, 1999.9.5)

2.2. Building the Kingdom of Heaven and the unification of the physical and spirit worlds

In order for a nation to be formed, it should have its own sovereignty. It should have its own people. It should have its own territory. From this perspective, when it comes to building the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, who would be the owner? Who would be the sovereign? Surely God would be the sovereign. Then who would be the people of the Kingdom of Heaven? It would be the whole of humankind. Then where would the territory be? It would be the whole earth. (96-14, 1978.1.1)

What would God have done for Adam and Eve had they not fallen? God

would have married them through the Blessing. They would then have borne children and created a family that would bring joy to God, and expanded this to create a tribe and a people. When this had developed further, what philosophy would that world have been based upon? It would be a world based simultaneously on Godism and the philosophy based on Adam. The principles in that world would be the Adam-centered philosophy. The view of the universe, the cosmos and life would be based on this. All five races of humankind would make a colorful world, and people would be happy with that. Since skin color depends on the environment, people will be happy to see the different skin colors of numerous races. Then, how did the languages of the many nations diverge? God separated these languages due to the Fall of our first ancestors. (156-202, 1966.5.25)

You should live your lives on earth thinking that you have to take on the mission to establish God's nation. In other words, become a loyal subject and patriot who can bring liberation to the homeland. Alternatively, you can imagine you were given the order as the secret envoy of heaven to come to this evil world to do this. You should know that without doing so, you would be unable to attain dignity and honor as a citizen of the heavenly nation that will come in the future. (50-255, 1971.11.7)

We know that we have come to a point where we cannot, in a true sense, build a world of peace or a unified world, through human efforts alone, using our power, wisdom, culture, or anything else. From this perspective, what is the central issue in resolving all the problems of the world? Giving a clear explanation about the existence of God is more important than anything else. When all human beings come to realize that God truly exists, they will clearly know the direction of His will. When they understand this, a unified, peaceful and ideal world will surely come about. (56-131, 1972.5.14)

The marriage Blessing and eternal life begin from the True Parents. It has to be the True Parents. The True Parents must resolve this colossal issue, and bring about unification of the spiritual and physical worlds, and unity in the earthly world. The entire world that was set against me, will shift direction and follow me. Without going before God and receiving His seal of approval, it would not be possible to bring unification to the spiritual and physical worlds. No matter how much this world opposes me, it cannot block the way that I am heading. The time will come when the angelic and spirit worlds will be mobilized, along with our ancestors. Using Satan's tactics, they will give nightmares to those who resist following me. They will hold their heads down and squeeze their necks. (290-172, 1998.2.18)

I have already established the realm of liberation for the spirit world. I am now initiating a movement for the equalization of the earth and spirit world.

Spring is coming. Spring is coming to the spirit world and the earth. Now it is spring in the spirit world, but winter is drawing to a close on the earth. On this earth, summer has long gone, winter is leaving, and the season of spring is coming, which will nurture the ideal of the eternal happiness of heaven, assimilate everything and bring new vitality to life. Thus, the age of peace is coming on earth. What has the founder of the Unification Church adopted now? The word "peace" is included in everything, beginning from the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. (301-288, 1999.5.5)

Since they have equal value, the spiritual and physical worlds can now rise above, descend below, or go to the left and right in relationship. No matter how the directions of front and back, or left and right may interchange, the age of the realm of love, cosmic love, can now begin. This will perfect the spiritual and physical worlds. We call this the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world. It is the realm of liberation for everything. Do you understand what I am saying? (301-236, 1999.5.2)

The time has come for the people who lived in the past and who are now in the spirit world, those currently living on earth, and the future generations, to cooperate for the liberation of our homeland. Many people will experience their ancestors coming and threatening them to follow the Unification Church. This has not come about by my strength. God, the angelic world and our ancestors, have all become one in driving this world into a corner. No one will be able to solve the family problems. When this nation acknowledges the astounding fact that I alone have, and exercise, full authority, as the beacon of hope, as the foundation for this nation and homeland, it will become an invincible nation throughout the universe. (290-172, 1998.2.18)

Up until this time the spirit world, in the position of the elder brother, has violated the earthly world. Now, we have entered an environment where the elder brother can support the earthly world. Through this, the domain of Abel on earth will no longer be abused like it has been. The spirit world cannot deceive and drive the earth in its own direction. It cannot deviate from its direction. With regard to the four directions of north, south, east and west, the east could not be invaded; nevertheless, the spirit world could go to and fro to the west, south and north, and influence things on earth. Due to this, many spiritual sacrifices continued to be offered on earth. But now this will be resolved. The earth and spirit world will approach a state of unity. (208-85, 1990.11.17)

There is no other way than through my teachings to resolve the various fundamental problems of the self that have emerged throughout history. There will never be another way. You can go to the spirit world to see if I am lying. I am teaching these things not because I know

them, but because I accomplished them, and gained victory over them. Your conscience knows that.

Therefore, the fact that I declared the True Parents and the Completed Testament Age means that I achieved these things. I confronted Satan and brought him to submission. Satan cannot appear in the world I am heading for and envisaging. This means equalization on a level plane; the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, and even the cosmos and heaven in the spirit world. When I level everything onto a plane and connect it, it becomes the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. People and their clan who live in the Kingdom of Heaven on earth will be transferred intact to the Kingdom of Heaven in spirit world. The Kingdom of Heaven is one's native home. (256-24, 1994.3.12)

Dr. Lee Sang-hun was called to the spirit world because his time had come. He passed into that world within the providential will, in order to report all the realities of that world to the earth.

In order to know the entire spirit world, you must be able to receive God's instructions and be engrafted with Him. This should all have been systematized, but until now, the spirit world has not been able to reach that standard. Consequently, countless religions emerged to introduce the reality of the spirit world. Nevertheless, they represented only part of the picture, and so people were only taught based on the contents of those religions. They could not grasp the whole reality and nature of that world.

Now, since we have entered the Completed Testament Age, with God's permission, all aspects of the spirit world can be explained to people on earth. Therefore, you should understand the reality of the spirit world. (295-120, 1998.8.19)

Has the spirit world become perfect? It is still far from complete. The hierarchical system in that world was originally one in which the entire spiritual realm would have been connected revolving around God, True Parents, and True Children, but this has not been accomplished yet. Neither has it happened on earth. When this hierarchy is established on earth, the spirit world will automatically follow.

In other words, the spirit world is to be a hierarchical system based on the True Parent, and the thought system of the unfallen Adam centered on God. But it has not happened. So far, the center of the spiritual hierarchy was occupied and divided by the Buddhist group based on Buddhism, the Confucian group based on Confucianism, the Muslim group and others. That is why the spirit world, and even these religious groups, have all been hoping for the establishment of the ideology of the True Parent and of Adam unrelated with the Fall.

The spirit world has to take on a unified direction. Thus, as the work of the True Parents on earth has been reaching the worldwide level, the borderlines between all religions have been disappearing. The results of the movement for integration will automatically manifest on earth in accordance with the chang-

es in the spirit world. When the Unification Church reaches the worldwide level, all the spirit people of the spirit world will no longer be there. This is because they are to fulfill their purpose on earth and then return to the spirit world. Therefore, they will all come down and work.

The hope of billions of spirit people in the spirit world is for Unification Church members throughout the world to become the spearhead and "Go! Go! Go!" So, if we create and offer a unified world to the spirit world, then both worlds will come under God's dominion. These two unified worlds will last for eternity in the name of the True Parents. (161-222, 1987.2.15)

From now on, we will enter an age where nations and peoples can come together as groups. Nations, tribes and families on earth will come together to create a unified world. In this manner, the world will rapidly transform. Satan will come to those who oppose this and harshly deal with them.

Until the present time, Satan has tried to bring people to hell, but now he is bringing them to heaven. He is cooperating for this purpose and is trying to even bring our ancestors to heaven. Consequently, there is no one to obstruct the path to heaven. Since it has become a liberated domain, we are now rapidly approaching the age of globalization. (298-221, 1999.1.8)

Do you think that I have the ability to clean up the spiritual and physical worlds, and complete the ideal Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world? Do you think I cannot do it? Do you think it is possible or impossible? An age where I can exercise powers that are all-transcendent and all-immanent, with full authority and capability has come. All organizations at the national and world levels will just become ordinary.

The satanic world that possessed all-transcendent and all-immanent powers has become completely impotent before God's authority. We have moved into an age of God's full authority and power. The True Parent is the one who makes this possible. It begins from the True Parent. (293-325, 1998.6.7)

When everyone is mobilized in the spirit world, many good things will happen on earth. There will be many occasions to embrace one another. There will be people rejoicing, and those who had run away cursing the Unification Church will strike the earth in regret saying, "How can this be possible." (302-71, 1999.5.18)

Section 3. True Parents and the Works of True Love

3.1. True Parents and the blessing of saints and murderers

Didn't I forgive the saints and even murderers? Then, can I or can I not forgive the sins of my own children? Stalin and Hitler killed millions of people. I even forgave and blessed such demons

of all demons. Unless I could do so, I would not be able to open the gates of hell. Was it good, that I did that? Buddhists living on earth are exclaiming, "Good God! He took our Buddha and married him! How could he do that?" While others are saying, "Oh dear, he married Jesus!" When you go to the spirit world you will see that these leaders are all in paradise. They are in the middle realm of the spirit world.

I asked those religious leaders in spirit world, "What is it that you want?" Then they beseeched me, "It is what you desire. Hence, our wish is simple. We would like you to bless us." So I asked them, "What is going to happen if I bless you?" and they answered, "The gates of hell will be opened. Since there is presently no way to reach heaven, we will have the strength and confidence to do our best ten times more to turn this world around, bring it into unity and even lead the saints."

If you can make such a confident determination and turn yourself around, then, even when villains who opposed God come to the spirit world, they can also be reformed into exemplary loyal servants that God can use – just as when God raised up Saint Paul, who had strongly persecuted Christianity, to become one of His most loyal servants. (299-26, 1999.2.1)

I have liberated the saints and murderers in accordance with principles. Your husbands, who were set against the Unification Church, and even those who went to hell, can therefore come and be liberated and blessed by me if you desire to bring them to True Parents. Since there was such a principle of bringing saints and murderers together, such things are now happening. Through this, a united domain of the Blessing for the spiritual and physical worlds should be created, and they should all even go through the three-day ceremony. Therefore, amongst those in the spirit world, I am now liberating and even blessing the people who did not live long on the earth or died without getting married, and all those above the age of sixteen.

By opening the gates of hell and giving the Blessing to all those who went to the spirit world, God's authority over His lineage has been recognized. Because of this, Satan must completely retreat. This is a revolution. There has never been a revolution like this amongst all revolutions. I created the environment where all those who died because of the Fall can enter heaven. By creating all the foundations enabling those who died without getting married, ever since the Fall of Adam and Eve, to enter and live in heaven, and by creating the environment enabling all our ancestors to enter a realm of the spirit world within the domain of the Blessing, I have created a highway that leads to heaven. I have restored all those foundations through indemnity. (300-305, 1999.4.11)

If I did not know about the spirit world, I could not have gone on this path. The Father in the spirit world is my father. That is why I know the secrets of the spirit world more than

anyone else. When I became hungry during the Korean War, as I sought refuge, I mobilized ancestors in the spirit world. They would make people prepare a meal for passing visitors on the street, and through this I was able to eat many times. There are many stories like this that may sound like lies, so I do not talk about them. Why should an intelligent person like me, who studied science, tell such unbelievable stories? You would believe such logically unbelievable stories if they came from me, wouldn't you? (299-46, 1999.2.1)

Fallen humanity does not live in the Kingdom of Heaven God created. Heaven is a place where only perfected Blessed families can live. It is a heavenly environment, where Adam and Eve were supposed to live after perfecting themselves. Therefore, with His full authority, God can freely do as He wishes with this world, from the smallest to the largest matters. By receiving the Blessing, we are bringing about the cosmic expansion of the true Blessing and the rooting out of Satan's lineage. We are destroying that fallen lineage. That is why, in the year 2000, when I reached the age of eighty, all the clans on earth will be able to enter heaven through the Blessing.

Like the Exodus, a mobilization will begin on the earth. Just as Moses left Egypt when he was eighty years of age, from this time forth, I will start out as the True Parent and King of the families on earth. (300-305, 1999.4.11)

I have not yet announced the creation of a global highway. I clearly revealed where we have to go and then opened up all the paths. I even descended into the lowest realms of the spirit world and opened the gates of hell. I gave the Blessing even to murderers.

To quote from Dr. Lee Sang-hun's words on visiting hell, while he was crying and praying alone, God's envoy came to him and called him to return to heaven. God asked him, "Are you sad?" as he was lamenting and wailing. Then God told him that everyone had to be saved, and his question was, "What are you going to do about this?" He continued, "Your children must prosper."

In the same way, since all human beings are God's children they have to live in prosperity. In order to open up the path for everyone to live this way, God told Dr. Lee that he had to take responsibility, since God could not do that Himself. This is all presented in the book, Life in the Spirit World and on Earth. Why did God ask him to take responsibility? Since people have passed away to the spirit world after opposing the Unification Church, God wanted him to report this to me so that I could liberate them. I have shed many tears over this.

Dr. Lee wondered, "God, how did it come to this, having to ask a person like me? How did it reach this point?" For this reason, between May 13 and 15 last year, I turned everything in the spirit world upside down and declared that I would take responsibility. You talk about having guts. "I will take responsibility and carry this out." Saying this,

I gave the Blessing to those people. (301-156, 1999.4.25)

Since the first Adam, second Adam and even the third Parent failed, by indemnifying and liberating all this through the wilderness course, the age of the Blessing of the domain of the fourth Adam can become the age of emergence of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. All this must conform to logic. It cannot be done haphazardly. When this is evaluated from the resultant Principle-based standard of the spiritual and physical worlds, the right hand must fit exactly with the left hand. Only then will clapping make a sound, won't it? Absolute love is what brings these together.

The earthly world and spirit world, which were divided into Abel and Cain, can finally become one through the bond of brotherhood, True Parents' love, and by their connection to the true lineage. Therefore, when people die, they will die together with the same blessing; when they live, they will live together with the same blessing. It is not the case here that those who seek to die will live, and those who seek to live will die.

When the True Parents are here, those who seek to live shall live. Those who seek to live with the True Parents will live. Without the True Parents everyone had to do the opposite. Paradoxically, without seeking death, you could not find the path of the True Parents or the place to attend them. The spirit world must be liberated, and the earth must be liberated. Since the time of Adam and Eve, there has never been a person who could remove the great nail that was driven into God's heart. The good ancestors throughout history all had to shed blood. Their anguish was not released. (301-166, 1999.4.25)

When I pass the age of 80, an age when heaven and earth come together in union will begin. By 80, I will have completely liberated everything on earth and in the spirit world within my generation. Spirit world and earth together, husband and wife together, and the family together will enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Husband and wife must enter heaven together; they cannot enter alone. I opened the gates of both hell and to heaven. Everyone will go up in turn.

Your ancestors will stand in line to become escorts to guide you.

In the past, the demons would dig a pit based on their desires and prevent you from leaving for thousands and tens of thousands of years. They would use your ancestors as errand boys. I have now completely abolished all those things. It seems unreal, but it will become like that. You can wait and see. Why? I know everything about the future reality of the spirit world. If I do not do these things, I will be accused by the generations to come. (300-74, 1999.2.21)

3.2. Equalization of the spiritual and physical worlds through the cosmic expansion of the true Blessing

What comes after the cosmic expansion of the true Blessing? It is the rooting out of Satan's lineage. It means sev-

ering the root. Since humankind went to hell by entering into false marriage, True Parents must marry people and straighten this out. In order to restore, through indemnity, the act of the archangel in the spirit world loving Eve on earth and bringing about the Fall, the family in the archangelic position in the spirit world comes to the earth to support the family in the position of Adam and Eve. Through this, these families will come to where your families are and initiate the movement to expel Satan. This is the Principle viewpoint. Only then can things be logically placed in neat order.

Now, the task that remains is for the doors of love to be opened, enabling spouses to love one another between the spiritual and physical worlds. Even if your husband has passed away, you can live with him on earth. Some couples live this way even now. For this reason, I forgave and offered the Blessing to those husbands who were opposed to the Unification Church.

A few days ago, just before we held the Blessing of 400 Million Couples, and before I left for America, I had the people who received the spiritual Blessing go through the three-day ceremony. After that ceremony, I gave full-scale marching orders to families in the spirit world. So what is there left to do? There are billions of people waiting to be blessed; particularly those passed away souls who were never married, who were born on earth and grew up in the spirit world. Since I opened the way, I have blessed 1.6. billion couples, which is four times as many as the 400 million I blessed a few days ago. (301-171, 1999.4.25)

I never thought of boasting while on the path of God's will. I have done many things worldwide but there are still many things to do. This is how I am. The task of the spirit world still remains. If something has been done on earth, we must straighten it out on earth.

I opened the way to the blessing for those who lived alone and died single, men and women who were loved by their parents but were unable to get married, and babies that died after they were born. Those babies grow in the spirit world. They do not remain the way they were. The heart of the mothers who cry in sadness for these babies, allows the babies to grow. It is not wrong for parents to be sad about their child's death. Your deceased partner is actually growing in the spirit world. If the wife cherishes her deceased husband in her heart and grieves for him, he will benefit from that. (301-187, 1999.4.26)

There has not been one person amongst all those born on earth that was born from True Parents. There is no way to enter heaven for those born without receiving the lineage of the True Parents – the True Father and True Mother.

When we consider God's ideal of creation, heaven is the place that people are guided to after receiving the True Parents' lineage; attending them as the Lord of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world; living with True Parents within the domain of their kith and kin based on true love; and, through mar-

riage, leaving behind blessed descendants. Consequently, those who do not have deep experiences of love in the realm of the heavenly royal family cannot enter heaven. (250-49, 1993.10.11)

I have accomplished my responsibility. What else is there for me to do? I blessed people equally in the spirit world through the united realm in that world, and I even saved my enemies. There is no basis whatsoever on which Satan can accuse me. Now there is no more indemnity. (272-121, 1995.8.30)

I have to equalize the spirit world. What sort of people have lived on earth and passed away to the spirit world? They were those who lived through self-centered love relationships; those men and women who had affairs and lived life as they pleased. Aren't there many adulteresses amongst women who were unfaithful? They will end up at the very bottom of hell. These days, many couples marry under a legal contract. Are you aware of that? They do not want to have babies. They do not want to have a family.

It is like that in the age of archangels. Can people without a baby know parental love? Would they know how to love children? They can never learn to love through making contracts. They are a group of wanderers, and in the spirit world they will just drift around. They have no basis that enables them to settle down. How grateful such people would be if they could be married through me! (301-63, 1999.4.16)

What is the spirit world? The spirit world is the archangel's world and the earth is Adam's world. The son's world and the servant's world are different. Then, should the spirit world work harder or the earth work harder? Previously, we had 40,000 Blessed Families. There were about 40,000, perhaps 5,000 more. Now, there are more than 400 million couples. Therefore, one family should find and bring two single people, one male and one female Blessing candidate. This should also be carried out in the spirit world.

The spirits in the spirit world are all Adam's descendants. Due to the Fall, however, the archangel's lineage has passed into the spirit world. This is something that absolutely should not happen. The spirit world should not be left as it is with Cain-type nature spread throughout. They should be given the Blessing. By receiving the Blessing, these two worlds should equalize.

For this reason, I gathered all the spirits who died without being married and blessed them. The spirits of babies who died after they were born are also growing. I am blessing all those who were over the age of sixteen and who went to the spirit world without getting married. Those numbers will be in the billions. That is why I am holding the Blessing for them now. (301-209, 1999.5.1)

When the tide goes out, bad things are carried away. When it comes in, the things that went away last now come in first. This is like restoration through indemnity. When the natural cycles pro-

duce a high tide and full moon together, we are caught in the middle of what must be reconciled and unified by the power of true love. When this phenomenon is spread out equally within one generation, Satan can be completely driven out by the Blessing of people of opposite dispositions together.

The false parents are driven out and people will become one with the True Parents. Since this is happening now, the abolition of hell and the blessing of ancestors in spirit world are unfolding. Even now, billions of spirits are being blessed. Our ancestors are the ones who are leading the spirit world to heaven. The descendant families on earth are spiritually unifying the positions of father and son based on true love. The family base within true love is the starting point for connecting the East and the West. (300-224, 1999.3.14)

The Blessing means inheriting the foundation that connects God's lineage of true life. The people who have inherited God's lineage through the Blessing exist both in the spirit world and the physical world. Consequently, God can freely govern them. That is why God can freely push forward with the works of re-creation and restoration with His full authority without any indemnity conditions. Therefore, the issue is whether you have the conviction to maintain your position in relationship to this. When you resolutely unite with the standard of absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience, a straight path can be quickly opened that equalizes everything in the world. (300-303, 1999.4.11)

The child is the one who makes the father the owner of love; the wife is the one who makes the husband the owner of love; and the younger sibling is the one who makes the elder sibling the owner of love. On the other hand, without a parent, without a husband, without an elder brother, then the child, wife and younger sibling each cannot become the owner of love.

In order to become an owner of true love, you have to elevate your family members higher than yourself and live for their sake. Therefore, the individual unity of mind and body, the family unity of the couple and siblings, and the unity of the nation are formed to complete the domain of love that is the ideal model of the eight stages of relationships. In other words, by establishing the tradition of unchanging true love through the age of the womb, infancy, siblings, youth, spouses, parents, true grandparents, and true king and queen, the model of true love – the relationship of true parent and true child – will be completed.

Thus, the ideal family and nation is where parent and child, husband and wife, and brotherly nations, long to become the owners as the models of the eight stages based on true love. The eternal global equalization begins from here. The Kingdom of Heaven on earth begins, and the Kingdom of Heaven in spirit world is then automatically established. (300-303, 1999.4.11)

3.3. True Love liberates hell on earth and in the spirit world

The spiritual and physical worlds must be equalized, even hell. The path should be pioneered all the way to the foundations of the kingdom of peace, in order to break down the gates of hell and open the gates of heaven. God will then be able to traverse freely anywhere in the earthly world and spirit world…. The threshold of grief that is hell is of no use to God. It should all be broken down. No one knows that.

Then, what is it that I have done? Down as far as hell, I have broken down the gates of the individual and all the things that have blocked the physical and spirit worlds…. I must create a highway. I have to make equalization. This is not only for the earth. The spirit world must all be leveled. The family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos must be leveled. How is this possible? It is possible by a man and a woman forming a family…. (302-226, 1999.6.14)

Since the spiritual Blessing is possible now, I can give the Blessing as much as I like. I must give the Blessing to everyone without exception. I have to make it so that, before I go, there is no one left in the spirit world that was not blessed. Previously it was not possible, but now it can be done there.

People who received the Blessing must fill the earth and spirit world before I go there. If not, then all the fallen lineages sown by Adam until this time will not have been rooted out. What is this year's motto? It is "the cosmic expansion of the true Blessing and the rooting out of Satan's lineage." All those in the spirit world must receive the Blessing. This must be completed before I pass on. I must clean up the spirit world before I go there. Have you ever thought about rooting out Satan's lineage? I have already set the spirit world in order.

You may not know, but I am doing all this work. I have reached the level that allows even the spirit world and all the ancestors to be blessed after being liberated. By liberating those who died as an infant, or who passed on to the spirit world without marrying, it is now possible for all of them to enter the domain of the Blessing.

By accomplishing this, Satan's root will be exterminated. Therefore, I gave instructions twenty days ago, before I returned to America, so that even the people in spirit world could go through the three-day ceremony, just as we do here on earth. That is complicated. It is the same as it is on earth. Since young people are being blessed here, I am giving the Blessing to unmarried men and women in the spirit world in the same way. (301-212, 1999.5.1)

Since I blessed everyone including infants, the entire spirit world will come…. What is the Blessing in terms of the Principle? It is each person's portion of responsibility. Our responsibility is to receive the Blessing. If human beings had fulfilled their portion of responsibility, they would have stood as God's perfected sons and daughters. They would

have taken dominion over the angelic world. For this reason, receiving the Blessing itself will change your family registration identity. For example, when a Korean obtains U.S. citizenship, he is then governed under the laws of America. Such a world has not yet emerged.

In order to clarify this, I am equalizing the spiritual and physical worlds, and transposing the eldest son position of the firstborn son of the family and the tribe. The spirit world still holds the right of the eldest son on the level of the individual, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos. I am now restoring these. (301-189, 1999.4.26)

People on the path of true love cannot separate. They are in balance. Since love is always level it does not disappear just because your son has passed away. He passes to the spirit world and grows with the same quality of relationship. Even when babies die while still infants, they still grow in the spirit world. People have not known this, but now the Unification Church must be aware of it. In the future if you have a child who goes to the spirit world, without having committed the fall, he will return to live with you in spirit.

Since I allowed the three-day ceremony for those blessed to people in the spirit world, those believers in the Unification Church who pass away from now on, can come to the earth and live with their husband or wife. Spirit persons have not been allowed to come to earth in a Blessing relationship so far. I have said that the Comfort Blessing should not be given to those over the age of 49. We have not adhered to this up to now. I have given the Comfort Blessing, but from now on, it is for those under 50 years of age. I am now telling you not to give the Comfort Blessing to those over 49. Why do I say this? I say this because I allowed those blessed to people in the spirit world to do the three-day ceremony. (301-189, 1999.4.26)

I am telling you not to give the Comfort Blessing if they are over the age of 49. Spirit persons were not allowed to come to earth in a Blessing relationship until now. I had given the Comfort Blessing for people younger than 50, as the saying goes, "Misfortune comes at 49." I am telling you not to give them the Comfort Blessing. Why? It is because I allowed the three-day ceremony even to those blessed to spirit persons.

The Lord at his Second Advent carries out substantial, rather than conditional, restoration through indemnity. It is because I have been through such battles…. Just as I struggled in the spirit world in order to bring victory on earth, I have to restore the sphere of substance through indemnity, based on that spiritual victory. That is the reason the Christian cultural sphere should have accepted me and become one with me by now. If Christianity had accepted me I would not have gone through such persecution. I would have immediately found and raised up a number of people who were prepared by God. The bride is one. There are no temporary earthly solutions to spiritually complex matters. If we do not

go through the substantial way of restoration, we would have to repeat it on a worldwide scale, in order to go beyond the national level.

The Blessing consists of a church-level Blessing, a national-level Blessing and a world-level Blessing. I have to accomplish this because I would be accused if I went to the spirit world without doing it. That being the case, it might take thousands of years to resolve this situation. Without achieving it you would not be able to engage in activities after entering the spirit world. You would all be held in the waiting room. Therefore, you should understand how important earthly life is.

The grandfather's position has to become the grandchild's position, the father's position has to become the son's position, and the son's position has to become the father's. The positions will be reversed. Therefore, with the returning Lord as the axis, Adam becomes the first father, Jesus becomes the second father and the Lord at his Second Advent becomes the third father. Now the returning Lord has indemnified the failures of the first and second fathers, and has risen up to the perfection stage … the sons and daughters of these three categories of children not only live in this world but also live in the spirit world. (236-330, 1992.11.9)

You all look to me while I am in this world, but what will you do after I go to the spirit world? From now on, where will the future generations of the Unification Church go? They will try to follow the course of my history exactly. The tribes of Israel had to follow Jacob's path; the Israelites had to follow Moses' path; and the Christians had to follow Jesus' path. In the same way, at this present time, Unificationists have to follow the path that I have pioneered. They should go this way. If they don't, they will not be free to cross the great oceans like the migrating birds and connect the South and North Poles. You have to be able to fly. (142-168, 1986.3.9)

This time I matched couples using photos of women whom I had never seen in person. In the proces of matching I had realized that there were not enough women. So I took out some pictures of women from an album of a thousand candidates and matched them with men, saying, "Here is your husband!" Even then, the Japanese women did not say, "How can you match us without even looking?" They are living with the person in that picture. How wonderful that is! That is why the Unification Church can straighten out the world. That's a remarkable thing.

People like me will not always come to this world. There has never been a person like me in the past, nor will there be in the future. There is only one time, and it is that time now, that I am alive on the earth, that I live in this physical world. Think about the fact that you were married through such a person. You can feel pride in this in the spirit world, saying, "I was blessed by Father." (165-90, 1987.5.20)

Up until this time, if your beloved

wife were to pass on to the spirit world, you would be separated from her. When you go there, you go to a level according to your own spiritual standard. Once you arrive in that world, you can press a button on something similar to a video machine, and everything you did in your life will come up. It is all recorded. Your number will be called out, and the person who brings you away will already be waiting there. Then you will go to your place. Even if there were ten people in a family, they will all be separated because the standards of their spirituality are all different. They cannot meet each other. Now this situation has been resolved.

After receiving the Blessing, then while you are still living on earth, if there is a person whom you loved, who is now in the spirit world, you can bless that person. That was how I blessed Daemo nim, and blessed Dae-hyung nim. I even blessed Choong-mo nim. I blessed people in the spirit world. That way will be opened. Only then is it possible to liberate hell. Only then can we establish a global standard of having reorganized heaven, the original world of the Garden of Eden, untainted by the Fall, as a direct path to entering heaven, and can the standard be established on the worldwide level, going beyond all individuals and families on the earth

After having completed the reorganization of the spirit world as a direct path to entering heaven, the realm of the unification of the Kingdom of Heaven and earth will take place and the age when God can be liberated will arrive. (283-146, 1997.4.8)

True Parents are giving the Blessing in the physical world, going beyond racial and religious boundaries. By connecting to this, the domain of liberation for the individual, family, tribe, people and nation can be established on the earth. That liberated domain is not created in the spirit world. Since the basis to connect to the world of heaven's love and cosmic love exists on earth, the spiritual and physical worlds can become unified around True Parents. This will eliminate all indebtedness and perfect the Blessing of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and even the Blessing of the cosmos.

By creating a united and harmonized sphere of Blessed families in the spiritual and physical worlds, the foundation for the ideal of heaven based on the unfallen Adam can be established. This causes all families in history to have the same value. Through the manifestation of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world, God can come down and dwell on this foundation. God is the vertical Parent. True Parents are the horizontal Parents that can equalize the earth. Therefore, on Chil Pal Jeol, the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath of the Parents of Heaven and Earth was proclaimed, and a new age began. Furthermore, from the day of 9.9. Jeol, we enter a new era. (303-257, 1999.9.9)

Now, based on 9.9. Jeol, you should all offer a total indemnity offering. The total indemnity offering concerns the ceremony of liberation of resentment. A liberation ceremony must be held. You

have to release God from His resentment and liberate Him. Not only that, you should liberate the cosmos. The total indemnity offering will also be able to liberate all of you. (298-59, 1999.1.1)

Now that we have entered the age of liberation, you do not know how much the universe is singing in praise, while focused on this earth. You do not know how joyful they are over this day. From the beginning of this year to this very day, there has been a festive atmosphere.

Now, heavenly fortune will follow us and assist us in everything we try to do. We used to exert ourselves to catch heavenly fortune but now heavenly fortune will follow us around and assist us. This means that the time has come for God and the spirit world to mobilize numerous ancestors and countless good spirit persons to assist people on earth. We can establish a realm of liberation. The age of transformation has come. (298-228, 1999.1.8)

Now your families should become ideal families, directly attend True Parents and God, and become the representatives of True Parents. Through all of you becoming the families that represent the first, second and third Adams – the Messiahs who came in the Old, New, and Completed Testament Ages – you have come to attend God, and thus all humankind can go directly to heaven. Through this, we enter the age of blessings for the liberation of the realm of the fourth Adam. (298-224, 1999.1.8)

Shower holy wine in all the nations. Wouldn't everyone be revived after drinking holy wine? The liberation of the fallen world would be hastened. Even give it to the whole creation. Then, everything will return to God's side. Now I will shower the whole earth with holy wine using an airplane. Even if I do not reach everyone, I will spread it to the major cities and pray for them. You have to realize how fearful True Parents' prayers are. If I pray for the destruction of a nation it will be destroyed. It would be unavoidable. (298-232, 1999.1.8)

3.4. Registration for heaven and Blessed Families' spiritual realm

3.4.1 Requirements of registration

To this day, no one has been registered into the heavenly kingdom. The kingdom did not have a nation. It did not have a family or nation. When you go to the spirit world, your parents, and – if there are ten people in your family – all ten of your family members would be separated. However, from now on it will not be that way. You should know that originally, if human beings had not fallen, heaven would be the place where you enter with your mother, father and clan.

If your grandparents, mother and father, couple, and children, become one based on true love, and inherit God's true love that lives for others, then even God would be absolutely obedient to that. In the world that strives to live for others – a world that moves according

to the love that submits to the tradition of living for others – the basis for peace would surely emerge even if it resisted being formed. (210-354, 1990.12.27)

Those who register centering on the True Parents will become the ancestors of their lineage in the future. They will become the ancestors in the spirit world and their registration will be organized primarily focusing on the mainstream tribes and peoples, and on all people of the collateral line of the family. Therefore, you must be registered. Registration does not just happen.

You should complete the blessing of 160 or 180 families. Those who fail to do so will be left out. The time has passed when you can assert that you are a 36 couple, or whatever you may be. Since the age of equalization has come, the issue now is who will be the first to enter with the accomplishment of those numbers. In the Unification Church you benefit if you have many people in your clan. (286-247, 1997.8.11)

Since the lineage has been changed, then without changing your lineage you cannot connect with and be registered into God's nation. God is the owner of the lineage. Since human beings, who inherited the fallen lineage, engaged in stealing and invalidated God's ownership, order can only be regained by connecting with God's lineage through His love. Therefore, you must change your lineage. The bloodline was changed due to the relationship of love from the Fall. Since the lineage was turned upside down, without changing it, there is no way to return to God. (258-287, 1994.3.20)

Considering the Blessing, you need to go through a church-level Blessing, national-level Blessing and the world-level Blessing. Only by going to the spirit world and going through the ceremony for the eternal Blessing, can there be a path to return to the original world. Just because you say that you will receive the Unification Church Blessing, or you receive the Blessing briefly, conveniently, and quietly without my knowing, it does not work. You have to go through the national-level Blessing. There, all your history will be revealed. Then you have to go through the world-level Blessing. Only when True Parents go to heaven, pass through the great admission and registration ceremonies, complete the organization of twelve tribes, and sit on their throne – take their position and seat – in the other world, centering on God, can all the people, in sequence, take their positions and seats. (185-36, 1989.1.1)

You must change your lineage, rights of ownership, and your realm of heart. The realm of heart means the tribe. It must be changed. That is why the tribe must be restored. Jesus came to restore the nation but failed to be registered. He could not create a family register. This must be restored through indemnity. Therefore, the Unification Church did not allow blessed members to start family life until they had passed the age of 33. Now it is 30.

You have come to the point where you can live together at the age of 30, the age Jesus reached before he left his home. Once the day of the reunification of North and South Korea comes, we can fully surmount this path of suffering. Consequently, the Unification Church Blessing comprises the church Blessing, the Blessing for the age of the reunification of Korea, and the Blessing for the age of world unification. You can advance to the position of liberation only after going through these three great Blessings. (252-140, 1993.11.14)

Without a nation you cannot be registered. You can be registered on the church level but not on the national level. Through the reunification of North and South Korea, we can enter the age of registration. Since that time will come, I am telling you to quickly restore 160 families based on the tribal messiahs. When that is achieved, and when reunification of North and South Korea happens, I will be registered as the first generation and become the first ancestor. The people who are registered after that are those in sequence who blessed 160 families. The order of becoming an ancestor depends on the time of your registration. If more than 1,600 people were sitting here and had received the Blessing, there would be a difference of more than 1,600 generations. (256-332, 1994.3.14)

In the future the entire world must be registered and included among the twelve tribes. When this happens you must record in detail your entire life – everything from the time you joined the Unification Church to this day. You have to record everything, anything you did in the church, even if it was taking a handkerchief. If this does not match with the computer records in the spirit world you will not be able to go to heaven. (212-56, 1991.1.1)

You will be warmly welcomed into the kingdom within the realm of heart of the royal family; there are no steep paths or walls there. It is like an open plain. Everyone will welcome you. It connects with the world of perpetual love. You will stand as the owner of that place. Your clan will become like that. You will be registered and enter the Kingdom of Heaven by carrying the value of the spiritual realm where all your restored tribe is gathered. Aren't you going to register? As the Tribal Leader of completed liberation, as the Messiah, and as the Parent, I am dragging you in, so that you can be registered anew and enter the Kingdom of Heaven. (218-358, 1991.8.22)

You will see whether I am right or not when you go to the spirit world. The women are to be mobilized under my instructions. I am not doing this to guide them in a wrong way. I am doing it to register them into the heavenly kingdom. Then, when I register their children, their husbands will also be registered. By doing so, these families can surmount the original hilltop and overcome the thirty-eighth parallel. Within the unified world of God's will, the family will be blessed anew and begin from

the original standard of heaven that has no relationship to the Fall. Through this, they give birth to the sinless people of the Kingdom of Heaven and go on the path that directly leads to heaven. I have laid the path to that state of being where there is no need for the Messiah. I am trying to guide people to that place, but if they do not take action here in this world, they will perish. (230-250, 1992.5.8)

You should be registered. Where do we go to be registered? You cannot avoid your destiny of returning to the original homeland. If you fail to do so in your physical lifetime, you will go to the spirit world and move around in circles for eternity. There will be no way to free yourself from the control of the fallen realm that should be overcome with tears and lamentation. Hence, I have explained it to you in detail, in the hope that you will take the direct path. Please do not forget what I have said and engrave it in your hearts. I pray that you can inherit the right of kingship that enables you to enter the victorious gates of heaven, and succeed to this inheritance. I also pray that you will become such people who can establish their permanent address in heaven, the original homeland, and be registered there. Those who will do so raise both hands and make your pledge. (177-351, 1988.5.22)

3. 4. 2. The united realm of the spirit world incorporates a middle realm and a prison

Couples who were blessed on earth will be together even when they go to the eternal spirit world. No matter how many couples and children of this world there may be, they will be scattered and separated in the spirit world. They will be separated and will not know where everyone went. It will be difficult for them to meet each other. Without a reciprocal relationship they cannot meet. They are all separated in the spirit world according to the state of their spirituality. That is extraordinary. If their whole family can unite based on love, they can be together in the spirit world. Is that something joyful or unfortunate? (250-334, 1993.10.15)

When you go to the spirit world no one will tell you to go to hell. You go on your own. You go to the place that fits your own level. Even within the Unification Church, though the goal is to head for the same realm, where you go will depend on your spiritual state. Then, in what ways are Blessed Families different? The members of a Blessed Family cannot be separated from each other no matter how hard they try. When you pass to the spirit world, if your wife failed to fulfill her responsibility, you would take joint responsibility and bring liberation to her. Even if only the wife had done wrong, they would both be accused; even if the husband had done wrong, both would be accused; even if the children had done wrong, they would all be accused. (242-108, 1993.1.1)

In the heavenly realm of the spirit world, the places where people remain

are decided according to their rank. Once there, they go through a long education period. That world does not belong to the fallen domain. It belongs to God's Principled realm. If a citizen of a nation commits a sin, it will be regarded as a sin committed by the people of that nation. If there is a violation of the heavenly law committed by a citizen of the heavenly nation, the violator will be processed by the heavenly law. All infringements upon the nation would be dealt with through judgment that would support the whole purpose…. From now on, paradise will be created in the heavenly spirit world. You will have to wait there. The middle realm of the spirit world will be created there. Hell will be created there. A prison will also be created. Understanding this, you will know clearly where you will go. You are made to know. Did you know this or not? I am teaching you plainly. (295-135, 1998.8.19)

Those who were blessed but failed to take part in registration are just the same as Adam's family that fell. When you enter the spirit world a prison on the heavenly side will be created. The middle sphere of spirit world will be created. A paradise for Blessed Families will be created. Lee Sang-hun's testimonies these days have become representative of the spirit world. Even in the middle sphere, those who have sinned must walk around with nametags indicating their earthly sins. They must be sanctioned according to how much they have deviated from the ninety-degree angle. No allowances will be made. Deviation has to be rectified even by force. Jagged parts should be cut off and made smooth. If this does not happen, they must be isolated in places like the North and South Poles. An age like this will come. You will see in the future. The spirit world is made that way. (300-158, 1999.3.3)

The 36 Couples that have passed to the spirit world are in a glorious place. Didn't Lee Sang-hun talk about all the realities of the spirit world? The 36 Blessed Couples are in a glorious position. But if they did wrong, they will be walking around wearing tags disclosing this. Hell could be created there, as well as the middle realm of spirit world. When the satanic world is eradicated in the future.…

This middle realm is in heaven, but it is not quite heaven; spirits will be locked up in the prison there. A hell-like nation does not exist far away, but is within a day's journey from there. People on earth are accustomed to time as it relates to hours, but to travel to a glorious place in the middle realm will be a year's journey. (299-315, 1999.2.21)

All those people in hell should receive the benefits of liberation – to have a family, and to be able to see their children again. When they gather their grandchildren and enter the gates of heaven, they should enter in the same position as the family of Adam untainted by the Fall. Since this is a realm removed from the domain of the satanic world, and from Satan's accusations, restoration within it is brought about quickly.

Didn't I say that in the spirit world, Lee Sang-hun is in the highest position among Blessed Families? This highest position will be the model for the spirit world that will be created from now on. It is the model for the spirit world. There will be heaven and there will be a paradise for families. The middle realm of spirit world for families and hell for families will be created. It is an age where all shadows remaining in your conscience from your current life will be clearly visible in broad daylight. Excuses will not work. Did I say that there is a prison there? There is a prison. Even when Blessed Families enter the spirit world or heaven, there will be ranks in which some families will come closer to God and True Parents. (295-300, 1998.9.24)

Section 4. True Family and the Works of the Spirit World

4.1. Heung-jin nim and the establishment of the right of the eldest son in the spirit world

Through my son Heung-jin going to the spirit world, Abel and the angels who had been completely separated like the earth and spirit world, became closely tied together like twins. When they became one, parents could be mobilized on that foundation. This is the view of the Unification Principle.

Heung-jin is the Abel-type son. This son went to the spirit world on the foundation of the indemnity conditions for the realm of God's dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle, which was established through True Parents' love. He went to the spirit world after the establishment of the direct dominion of God, based on the victory over Satan's dominion. For that reason, he attained the state of being the son who went to the spirit world with the qualification of perfection for the first time since the Fall. Originally, if human beings had not fallen, those who passed to the spirit world would have qualified as owners, or heirs, through the establishment of a family with love at the center. In this family, the realms of direct dominion and dominion based on accomplishments through the principle would have been unified centered on the realm of True Parents' heart.

It is a rule of the Principle that you cannot reach the realm of direct dominion without the proper qualification. (131-52, 1984.4.1)

I held the Unification Ceremony before Heung-jin passed away. I prepared everything for this and gave permission to the doctor to take off the oxygen mask. In this way, I sent him after paving his path. In this world, people would say that I was crazy to do such things while my son was dying. I was offering him to heaven. In this three-sided historical era, I was offering him for the sake of humankind, the people of Korea and the Unification Church, for the sake of this world and for the sake of the spirit world. Just as Jesus returned after ascending to heaven, similar things will occur. Thus, from the spirit world's point of view, Heung-jin is the returning

Lord. He is the savior of the spirit world. Heung-jin was the one sent by True Parents as the Messiah of love. Since Heung-jin is assisting the Parents on earth, the age of resurrection and a unified world are coming about on the earth. That is why the time has come for the second generation to receive the Blessing. Do you understand what I am saying? (225-86, 1992.1.2)

How is the Unification Ceremony performed? It cannot be accomplished by grabbing any random thing. I performed this ceremony for Heung-jin by holding his sexual organ. Only by holding the Unification Ceremony of love for this son who was passing away without fulfilling the purpose of love, could he be directly connected to Jesus. Even Mother did not know anything about this. By performing the Unification Ceremony for him as he was dying, we were overcoming everything that was under the watchful eye of the devil.

It is not a matter of crying. The problem was not about a son dying or about crying. The issue was about what a family loved by God is. In that situation, with everyone feeling bitter grief, I had to drive all that away, and as the father, pave the way for my son to pass on. (212-93, 1991.1.2)

Because I sent Heung-jin as a living offering, he has become a bridge. He is the bridge from the spirit world based on love, based on his family behind him. Thus, even Jesus must follow Heung-jin. Don't you know Jesus has to go through the bridge of the family? Ultimately, Heung-jin was the only one who went to the spirit world as a victorious offering after being loved by True Parents on this earth as True Parents' son. Therefore, he can govern with the full authority of Heaven. (280-281, 1997.1.2)

Heung-jin came into unity with the spirit world linking it to True Parents' family by virtue of his passing away as an adolescent and scion beloved of True Parents. He becomes the first son and elder brother in the spirit world.

Consequently, the domain of True Parents' love is expanded to the spirit world. Therefore, the Christians in the spirit world who could not establish a connection to the earth, and all the other religions, can now do this through Heung-jin... Jesus should attend Heung-jin as the elder brother. By doing so, Jesus can connect to earth. Through these developments, the spiritual support in this world will swell rapidly due to spirits returning to the earth, and as a result, the satanic world will begin to crumble. It will start to go into a rapid decline.

The borderlines that were created after the Fall between the spiritual and physical worlds will all be eliminated. Through Heung-jin's ascension, the earth is linked to the spirit world based on the domain of True Parents' love. Therefore, the walls between the earthly world and the spirit world have crumbled and we have entered an age of communication between the two worlds. (225-86, 1992.1.2)

In this age, how will the domain of the adopted children and that of the children of the direct lineage exchange places? Heung-jin has an important responsibility with respect to this. He must bring order to the spirit world before the coming of that time. Until now, Jesus and all those who passed on to the spirit world have had no relationship with True Parents by lineage. They have not been related to the flesh and blood of True Parents. Neither could they establish a relationship with True Parents' love. Thus, all those who have passed away to the other world are like single, unmarried men and women. Jesus himself is like that. They must come down to earth and make that relationship with True Parents' love. (225-85, 1992.1.2)

Didn't I bless Heung-jin in marriage? Since he is in the position of the commander-in-chief of families in the spirit world, he must be blessed in marriage. Everyone is connected under him. And centering on Dae-mo nim and Choongmo nim in the spirit world…When people pass on to the spirit world they must receive the blessing from Dae-mo nim. Many denominations and religions, such as Islam, Catholicism and Protestantism, must become closely united…. Then, a great migration will occur. They can only be connected through the True Parents on earth. In order to do so, they must become filial sons, patriots and saints. That is the tradition. (292-226, 1998.4.17)

At this time, I enabled Jesus' family and Heung-jin's family to live in one house. Heung-jin and Jesus should live in the same house. Jesus' adopted son should be entrusted to Heung-jin. God cannot do this. True Parents must do this. True Parents must do what God cannot do. Didn't God say in the Bible, "Let it be as Adam names them."? Do you understand? (292-327, 1998.4.27)

I must now go to Cheongpyeong and take good care of Jesus' family, let him establish the ties of brotherhood with Heung-jin, and bless all the apostles of Christianity. The Unification Church stands in the position of Abel, and Christianity stands in the position of Cain. How can they be brought into unity? From a spiritual and physical point of view, I must unify everything. Heung-jin, the true child, stands on the Abel side and is the eldest son. The eldest son on the Cain side is Jesus. I am connecting the earthly world with the spirit world and blessing members of the Unification Church and the Christian churches all at once.

I am also blessing white and black people together, so that in the future, they will have mixed descendants. Then there will be no more conflict. Who will resolve the very troubling racial problems in America? Who will bring an end to that conflict? This is something that no one in America can do, nor any institution. Even the religious organizations cannot resolve this. It is only possible through me. (292-312, 1998.4.27)

I declared the unification of the phys-

ical and spirit worlds to the people of America, which stands as the eldest son nation of the Christian cultural sphere. Heung-jin and Jesus have become one…. Heung-jin, who is fully dedicated to True Parents, who represent the Unification Church, and Jesus who represents Christianity, are in a subject-object relationship. The latter is Cain. Those who opposed the Unification Church have now surrendered and stand in the position of the younger brother, and the previous younger brother now stands in the position of the elder brother. Those standing in the younger brother position do so because Heung-jin and the Unification Church are united….

The right of the eldest son does not only belong to America. Unity comes on the basis of people attending True Parents, the Unification Church, Heung-jin, and Unification Church members. After unity is established between such people and the Unification Church, they take the position of having the right of the eldest son. By standing in the position of the first son in the spirit world and earthly world, they will unify these two worlds, complete the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and enter that unified sphere. Amen! (293-79, 1998.5.24)

For the spirit world, the day they received Heung-jin was the most joyful day in history. Heung-jin opened the gates of the spirit world as the messiah of love and opened the path of an exemplary martyr on earth. That is why the Unification Church members should love Heung-jin. (130-201, 1984.1.15)

Consequently, Heung-jin can let the domain of the younger son inherit the blessings and fortune of the domain of the eldest son. Satan tried to prevent this happening by plundering the inheritance, but Heung-jin, who now stands in the domain of the eldest son, delivered all the blessings he had, to the earth. That is why the connection can be made. Heung-jin unceasingly endeavored to deliver this despite the satanic world trying to prevent it. (131-52, 1984.4.1)

Since Heung-jin is in the spirit world, he should take responsibility to become like a protective fence, and educate and train people to make determined efforts to remove their shame for the things they failed to accomplish on earth. True Parents are not just an empty shell. They are moving forward with total authority in relation to the spirit world. That is why I can bless people in the spirit world. Since the actual authority of the Parents exists in the spirit world, I can give the unified Blessing to the earth and the spirit world, so that people who are blessed will be able to go to the Kingdom of Heaven. The Kingdom of Heaven is empty. In order to occupy it, the Blessing must first be given on earth. Without the Blessing on earth, there cannot be Blessings in the spirit world. (304-306, 1999.11.12)

I am now going to build an experiential hall for education, even in the spirit world. It will teach the traditions of the various world faiths and religions. It should also teach the affiliated philoso-

phies of the world. It should teach Unification Thought. I need to make that kind of education department…. The spirit world is ignorant of these things because it is completely divided and separated. We should teach them that God is our Parent, and educate them to establish an ideal family by becoming His beloved sons and daughters. (300-314, 1999.4.15)

With Shin-choon's birth into my family there are now forty members in my family. There are exactly forty people. The number forty has been fulfilled. That is why the name is Shin-choon. What does Shin-choon mean? In his name, the Chinese character for shin means "faith" rather than "new." In terms of faith, spring has come to the Unification Church. This is the case when we look at the number of indemnity and everything else.

There will be many sons and daughters in my family in the future. Many grandchildren will be born. How many children do I have? Is it twelve? I had thirteen, though Hye-jin passed away eight days after her birth. In the future, Heung-jin should also adopt a child.

Should you practice birth control? In the satanic world people have to do this but our Blessed Families should not practice birth control. However, if your body is defiled and you believe that you should not give birth to children the way you are, you should not do so. (213-189, 1991.1.20)

True Parents' family, which represents the whole historical realm of victory, attained this position because it went through a history of purification to the root. If Hye-jin was sacrificed for the sake of cutting off the bloodline of the fallen woman in the Garden of Eden, then Hee-jin represents the Old Testament Age. They have different mothers. So, Hee-jin pertains to the Old Testament Age and Heung-jin represents the New Testament Age. He was not married, just like Jesus. Yet subsequently, since he was blessed in marriage, the earth is connected with the spirit world. This Blessing is also connecting the perfected physical foundation of Christianity with the work of establishing the spiritual perfection of those in Christianity who were not blessed. The family-level Blessing is being connected to the spirit world. (304-304, 1999.11.12)

4.2. The Cheongpyeong providence and the ancestors' liberation ceremony

Why do you go to the Cheongpyeong training center? You have to clear away everything that is spiritually entangled with you. You should liberate all your ancestors there. You have to be checked and certified, and accomplish those things. Heung-jin is working in Cheongpyeong. Heung-jin is the highest elder son in the spirit world. Whose younger brother is Heung-jin? Heung-jin's elder brother is Hyo-jin. But Heung-jin is in the elder brother position to Hyo-jin and is the highest elder brother in the spirit world. Everyone there should attend him as king. (299-309, 1999.2.21)

Now we are entering the age of the nation. You should adjust your focus for this purpose. I am now giving liberation Blessings to the spirit world. There will be Blessings for up to 120 generations of ancestors. In the past it was four generations. How close would four generations be in terms of kin? It would include relatives up to those eight times removed. When this is taken to seven generations it would include even more. It would be hundreds, even thousands of ancestral families for a family with many children. There will be Blessings for four generations and then for seven generations. When seven generations are blessed, it goes beyond family relatives. For 120 generations it would reach across the entire world. Since we are doing this in Cheongpyeong, all Blessed Families should compete with one another in liberating their ancestors, and they have the responsibility to open the door of the Blessing to them. (299-307, 1999.2.21)

Have you all attended the ancestor liberation ceremony? You have to liberate the first seven generations. Only after liberating seven can you continue and go on to fulfill 120 generations' liberation. Focusing on those ancestors, everything can be sorted out and 120 generations can be blessed together. Through this, everyone can be blessed. Then, would the walls of hell be broken down or not? Paradise, where Jesus dwells, and the middle realm of spirit world, were created because of the Fall. Even the spirit world is built upon relationships in accordance with the pair system. Without doing these things I will be in a difficult situation when I go there. I must not allow that to happen. When the spirit world is put in order, the situation on earth can be resolved very quickly. (301-205, 1999.4.26)

I am telling you to go to Cheongpyeong and be trained so that you can liberate 120 generations of your ancestors. When I gave instructions to liberate four generations, Cheongpyeong was in an uproar. Then I told them to continue to seven generations and they accomplished that. Now, I am saying that you should go as far as 120 generations, and they are thinking, "Oh my gosh!" How can you say, "Oh my gosh!"?

I commanded Heung-jin and Dae-mo nim to be willing to do desperate things for the ancestors' Blessings. I have told them to become sacrificial offerings. Therefore, when you liberate 120 generations, you will call them to come.

When Adam finally enters the Kingdom of Heaven, do you think he would be at ease if he heard the weeping of couples in the middle realm of spirit world and the weeping of people in hell? They should not be there, should they? It does not follow the Principle. That is why I am liberating them. I proclaimed 4.4. Jeol in Kodiak, Alaska and I declared the cosmic 4.4. Jeol on January 8 at Punta del Este. (300-96, 1999.3.1)

Apart from Dae-mo nim there is Choong-mo nim, and my elder brother Dae-hyung nim. Now, if I give the order, my family can go anywhere and do the

things that Dae-mo nim has done. Even though Heung-jin was not educated by Dae-mo nim, he is leading her. I have many children and together with my grandchildren they number more than forty. Yet, no one can prepare for them, receive them, and attend them. Do you or do you not feel concerned about this? Because I sometimes make jokes you always take my words lightly, but this is serious! (298-165, 1999.1.1)

Kim Hyo-nam! You have to make a training center like Cheongpyeong in each continent. You should go on a tour to the six continents once every two months and create new chapters. Whenever you have to gather people in one place, like Cheongpyeong, it costs a lot for the participants. There is no need to do that. By starting local chapters in the six continents you can go there and carry out the ceremonies for several thousand people at once. This will reduce the costs, mobilize the spirit world for the works of the Holy Spirit, and even enable you to reach the African people. Create a place like Cheongpyeong in all six continents. You should have each nation establish a local chapter within the six continents in order to create balanced facilities for spiritual training worldwide. If you fail to do that, I will drive you out of Cheongpyeong. Hoon-mo nim should stop doing this work herself in Cheongpyeong. Entrust it to someone else and go to Europe and other continents. Heung-jin, Dae-mo nim and Choong-mo nim, will all go together, and after working there for three months a local chapter can be made. In the future, many people will communicate with the spirit world. (294-197, 1998.6.14)

Section 5. The Final Wish of Life

The more you are persecuted, the more ideal and higher the place you will go to. When you arrive there, you will become a noble citizen of heaven. God will look down and say, "This is my beloved son!" Your five sensory organs will be enraptured with God's love. The entire universe will bow its head and give praise to you. Such a world awaits you, as for the coming of a saint. That is our ultimate hope. Do you understand? (294-96, 1998.6.14)

I did not fight back. I endured and endured till the end, and kept a humble attitude as I walked. By persevering through this, I saw that this path enabled me to reach the highest position – the position where I could receive the rights of inheritance from God without fighting back. In this way, I did not perish. Instead, I grasped the victorious position of a leader in the world that was intent on my destruction. I created an environment where I could be welcomed beyond the nation and the world. I accomplished all the tasks of bringing equalization to the earthly world and spirit world. Amen! (302-207, 1999.6.13)

The time has passed for me to sacrifice my flesh and blood in serving Korea. Based on the nation, things are now falling into place. I have shown you

the example, so you should be saying, "Before I die I will work even harder than Father, and leave something worthy behind after my life on earth." Without living like this, you cannot follow in the footsteps of the Parents of the heavenly world. Since you have received the rights of inheritance, you should be able to influence your family surroundings in your own nation, even if it is only a shadow of the Parents' example. If you fail to become a trunk, you should become a branch. If you fail to become a branch, you should become a leaf. You belong to the tree. You are able to connect to the spirit world around you. (267-279, 1995.1.20)

When I slept at night with clenched fists, my hand would stiffen, so on one occasion God took my hand, spread it out and told me not to do this. Then I found that matters would be resolved. What is there to worry about for someone who believes in this kind of God? There are many such miracles and works in the background of the Unification Church.

The testimonies Dr. Lee Sang-hun gave on the spirit world are nothing. I know those things. The world may not believe it, but I know those things. I don't merely believe it; I know it. People doubt such things, but because they doubt, the spirit world does not help them. When they go there, they will be grateful to me.

Even Lee Sang-hun thought he would suffer in the spirit world for believing in the Unification Church. Yet, he works from the highest position there. He never dreamt of such an amazing reality. Nevertheless, he cannot spend all his time just smiling. He still has to deal with serious situations. If you do not believe this, place a knife by your side and pray with the determination that you will die if you doze off. You have to engage in such desperate prayer. It cannot be done half-heartedly. (302-270, 1999.6.17)

I am an unusual person. Once I remember something I do not forget it. That's something I worry about. You don't know anything…. I still have not become senile. Even though I am an old man of eighty, I am smart and still have my wits. You should think of me as an old man to whom a computer would come and bow in respect. When I place something in my mind, I never forget. I will remember it even after going to the spirit world. If there is something you did wrong on the earth, you should resolve it. (298-129, 1999.1.1)

Since the 1960s I have climbed the mountains and go hunting regularly. Since 1963, I have been preparing for various marine projects, in order to fulfill all my responsibilities for the nation, and reaching beyond the animal kingdom. I have to take dominion over both the sea and the land. I should offer sacrificial rites in order to reclaim the occupied places.

There is no one besides the True Parents who can establish such a bond of having loved Cain – a bond proving one's love – through Abel's sacrificial offerings. No one else can do that. Mem-

bers of the Unification Church cannot do that. Everything that was separated due to the false parents must be fulfilled through the True Parents. Therefore, in rain or snow, I worked focusing on the sea…. Liberation can come in the spirit world for all those people who were sacrificed at sea, and for those who lived in hell on earth. It is the same reason I gave the Blessing for those who died at sea. How serious I was when I established that momentous term: "True God"! Do you understand what I am saying? (298-19, 1998.12.31)

I intend to bequeath the position of king to you unknowing pure hearted people who could not understand the battles I had to go through. I will go freely with ease to the spirit world without any baggage. Since a better world, the heavenly spirit world is prepared and longing for me, what is there to bring with me from the earth? (299-239, 1999.2.17)

For the most part, everything is done. I have taught you everything. I am now sick and tired of being weary, pestered, and rebuked in this complicated world. I have grown weary of this. Thus, I will live ten years gazing at one pine tree in a quiet place; and ten years gazing at a rock. Doing such things, I should prepare to go to the spirit world. I should bring into order all the complicated things of the spirit world. (296-286, 1998.11.10)

Since I had to open the way for all humankind, I even became friends with condemned criminals. I wore manacles with thieves, had meals with them and comforted them. Some time ago, I even went to Las Vegas to pray for those who were confined in prison there. The reason I bought the New Yorker Hotel was to clear away the worst dens of Satan in New York and build a new environment. I had to go there personally, mingle with them and comfort them. Only then could I open a way even for those condemned people in different circumstances in the satanic world. Through paving the way on earth, the barriers in the spirit world can be opened and the world will become unified. Therefore, I have given the interracial Blessing to blacks and whites. I will buy houses for whites and blacks. In this way, I am doing things that have never been done in this world. (91-160, 1977.2.6)

I am indignant when I think about the treatment I received from this nation. Many people in the Unification Church regard me as a stick that has been used and discarded by an old man. They think of using me to poke a hole in dung. Go to the spirit world and see what happens. They do not know what misfortune awaits them there. Their tears of sorrow will not end as for millions of years they harbor grief before the courts of judgment under their great ancestors. Because I know this, I have come this far. (263-221, 1994.10.4)

Someone may come at night and spray poison at those sleeping in peace. This is staining the path of millions of years. That is why I put my life on the

line and live as if I were sitting on a cushion of needles. I never sat or slept with my mind at ease. I slept curled up to one side. My limbs cannot turn towards heaven until I fulfill my mission. I have lived in this way. (247-81, 1993.4.21)

You are all wearing neckties, but I have dressed more casually. I am ready to go out at anytime. I am already ahead of everyone. At home, I take off my socks and walk around barefoot. I try to live without clothes as much as possible. Those practices can save money to be used for the sake of starving people. That has become a habit and now it annoys me to wear socks. I calculated how many weeks there are in my life and how much I could save. By the time I go to the spirit world, if this has become several thousand dollars, I will make a deposit and use it to help the needy people in Africa. I am thinking of instituting a fund before I leave. (279-308, 1996.9.22)

What is God's original ideal for creation? It is to build a kingdom in spirit world, and on earth, in the name of True Parents. The Kingdom of Heaven can only be created through the True Parents. When we ask Christians today, "How is it that God's first beloved son, Jesus, is in paradise rather than in the Kingdom of Heaven?" they cannot answer. The Kingdom of Heaven can be established only through the perfection of True Parents and the foundation of love. No one can carry out the mission of unifying the kingdom in the spirit world except True Parents. (131-182, 1984.5.1)

Throughout my life, I have been fighting in a life and death struggle. In this world, painful things can be avoided, but this task cannot be avoided. It cannot be accomplished through physical strength or brute force alone.

When you do not live according to principles and laws, arrows that shower from all four directions are unavoidable. This fight is more difficult than the creation of heaven and earth. You could not imagine, even in your dreams, how I was establishing the spiritual foundations by offering indemnity conditions, while all that was going on. These foundations represent a cosmic victory for reaching the transition point. (35-167, 1970.10.13)

I have overcome the way of death hundreds of times in order to find this path. I am the one who made God cry hundreds of times. Throughout history, no one has ever loved God as much as I have. Therefore, no matter how hard the world tries to dispose of me, I will never perish because God protects me. You can also enter the realm of truth that I teach, and God will protect you. (279-256, 1996.9.15)

Live with a fresh pioneering spirit, and you will not grow old. By nature, I will not die on my back. Until I die, I will always be in motion. I will move even if I have to crawl. It has been a continuum of suffering. The greatest humiliation to me would be to be very old, and need the attention and care of those around me. Since I know the spirit world, how free I will be after discarding my body!

In the future, if you have a thought system that encompasses the ocean – the water – you will be able to have dominion over the world. Water is the most important resource. That is why before I go to the spirit world I have to initiate work in these vast areas. I believe that if I have taught and spoken about everything, the future generations will fulfill it. (276-296, 1996.3.10)

By my very nature, I cannot go to the spirit world and just sit on a throne and give orders... When I go there, I will become the brave soldier who will pioneer a higher dimension of the world of God's heart, a world beyond the imagination of the people in the spirit world, and which has not yet been found and reclaimed. (276-75, 1996.2.4)

One spiritualist wept profusely after praying about whether I was real or fake. He was crying so bitterly in spite of himself. He cried for a day, two days – every day. Why is that so? To know me, means to know the heart of weeping bitterly. Without this, you cannot know me. Who can know the circumstances in which I cry with sorrow, embracing the bitter historical pain of a thousand years when I hear someone saying something about my life? If I had not known God I would not have been slandered in that way. It was because of my "crime" of knowing God too well…. How sad it is for God who can only place His trust in me? In twenty years I had to restore through indemnity the history that was entangled for two thousand years. (137-183, 1986.1.1)

What will be my greatest hope when I go to the spirit world? I will call for the Heavenly Father from within the realm of heart I experienced at the highest climax of my longing and love. I long for that standard in which I receive the Father's love. (282-311, 1997.4.7)

God and humankind had to separate in tears. So, after God has cried aloud, He embraces his weeping son and says, "Isn't this what you have desired?" I know that only through the bequeathing and receiving of the words of blessing can the eternal victorious supremacy of the True Parents be bequeathed. It is a serious matter. I am offering my entire life for that day. (288-153, 1997.11.27)

What will I be able to offer to God when I go to the spirit world? I am concerned about this. I worked for the nation and the world that God is longing for, and I lived to raise the future generations who will establish the ideal society and ideal world to come. I loved them as God does.

It would be natural for me to continue like this even when I go to the spirit world. It will be an exact extension of my life, nothing more or less than that. I am continuing to do that work. Since God is establishing His Kingdom, I will be near Him and accomplish that task with God. That is why God can say with pride: "My nation is your nation….With absolute unchanging love, you remained faithful after knowing me. With my

love, you were constant through the raging storm, even though you were imprisoned and suffered contempt, and even though you were opposed by individuals, families, societies, nations, the world and the entire spiritual realm. With that same unchanging attitude as I have, you pursued that love and ideal. Thus, the nation you established is my nation. What you restored for the sake of humankind is surely my nation." (205-212, 1990.9.2)

What is my one and only hope? How will God treat me when I enter the spirit world? When I come into His presence, God will be sitting on His throne, but will jump down in an instant in spite of Himself. He will embrace me and kiss me for my labors and say, "May eternal blessings be upon you." My wish is to see that day. I cannot die, even if I want to, without leaving those works behind on earth. You must understand that these are the circumstances of the True Parent. (264-63, 1994.10.9)

When the family is saved, the nation must be saved in turn. After the nation, the world and cosmos must be saved. Later on, even God must be liberated. Even Satan and God must be liberated. This has not yet been accomplished. I must reach that point. If I were to go to the spirit world without fulfilling this responsibility, I would have to live in shame for not having fulfilled my responsibility, like a criminal. I am risking my life. I am liberating all those in the spirit world. After liberating them, I will not say "I liberated you so you have to live for me!"

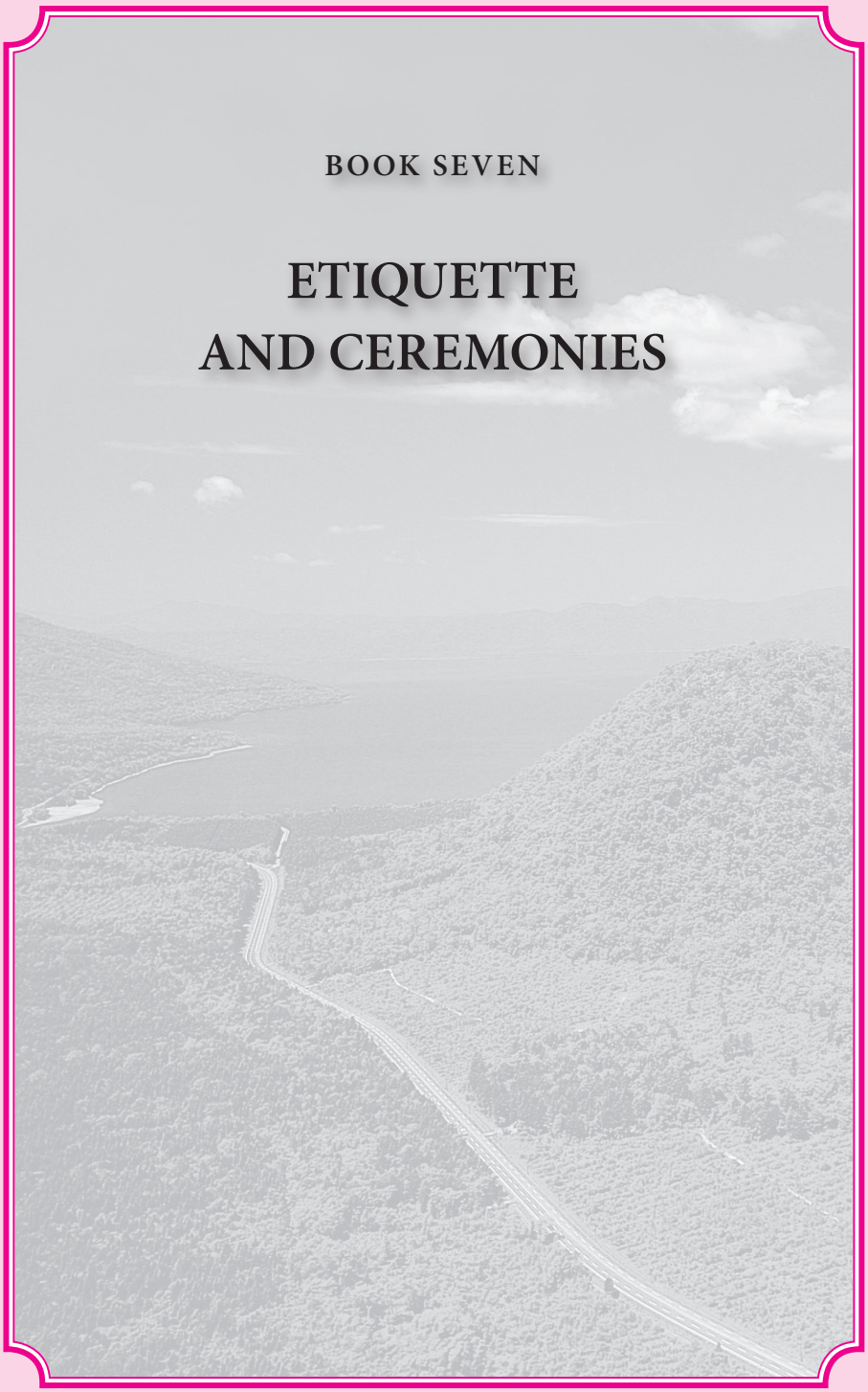
For those in the spirit world, I am teaching them to live for God, to come and even step on me in order to live for the sake of the world. That is the heart of a filial son and a patriot. The self cannot become the center. (301-187, 1999.4.26)

A path leading to the valley of hell was created due to the failure in Adam's responsibility. No one knows how miserable the restoration course was, turning this situation around and re-establishing a path of life, while digesting humiliation, persecution, and a heart filled with bitter grief. Only God knows such things.

When spiritualists pray asking who Rev. Moon is, the heart of God can only respond in tears. Whenever I hear this, I simply say, "Father, it was nothing…." How many tears of gratitude He will shed! After I lived with this heart and showed the world these things, God was freed from His imprisonment. You must all be aware of this. My life goal was to revive Heavenly Father's heart, so that when I enter the spirit world, He will want to welcome and receive me with great joy, as someone worth tens of thousands of times more than Adam. (302-250, 1999.6.14)

BOOK SEVEN

ETIQUETTE AND CEREMONIES



Contents

Chapter 1. Etiquette for Attending God

Section 1. Living in Attendance of God 987
1.1. God and human beings relate as parent and child 987
1.2. Living a life of oneness 989
Section 2. Our Attitude of Attendance 991
2.1. Establishing a heavenly life through attendance 991
2.2. Breaking heavenly laws displeases God 993
Section 3. True Father's Way of Attending God 994
3.1. Sincerity moves Heaven 994
3.2. The path of a filial son 996

Chapter 2. Etiquette for Attending True Parents

Section 1. True Parents are the Center of Blessed Families 1000
1.1. Becoming the sons and daughters of True Parents 1000
1.2. Our dedication in attending True Parents 1001
Section 2. Let Us Love and Be Proud of True Parents 1004
2.1. True Parents are the hope of all humankind 1004
2.2. Honoring True Parents' picture in each home 1006
Section 3. The Manner in Which We Attend True Parents 1008
3.1. The law in the age of justification by attendance is the highest law 1008
3.2. Ethics and morality give value to human beings 1009

Chapter 3. Worship Service and Etiquette in Church Life

Section 1. Proper Understanding of the Church 1011
1.1. Church integrates human character and the Word 1011
1.2. The church is an extension of the family 1012
Section 2. Worship Is the Greatest Ceremony that Shows Reverence to God 1015
2.1. The time of worship is a time to meet God 1015
2.2. Early morning and evening services, and all-night vigils 1017
Section 3. Attitude of a Church Leader 1019
3.1. Church leaders must practice a public life 1019
3.2. Devotion and sincerity must be invested to guide members 1022
3.3. Man-woman relationships and public money require strict discipline ... 1023
Section 4. Sermons Must Bestow Grace and Inspiration 1025
4.1. The practice of giving sermons 1025
4.2. Sermons of True Father 1027
Section 5. Offering Donations in Accordance with Heavenly Law 1029
5.1. Ways of tithing 1029
5.2. Tithing in our daily life 1032
5.3. The indemnity fund 1033
Section 6. God Accepts Prayers for the Public Purpose 1034

6.1. Greetings require protocol 1034
6.2. Praying in the name of the True Parents 1037
Section 7. Witnessing Is Searching for True Love 1038
7.1. Witnessing is multiplying myself 1038
7.2. Course of education and seven-day fast 1041
Section 8. Indemnity, Service, and a Life of Dedication 1042
8.1. The course of indemnity 1042
8.2. Service and dedication 1043
Section 9. Rules and Etiquette among Members 1046
9.1. Members relate through heavenly love 1046
9.2. Cain-Abel relationships between members 1047
9.3. Definition of Cain and Abel 1048
Section 10. Social Relationships 1050
10.1. People should not be treated lightly 1050
10.2. Social relationships 1052

Chapter 4. Tradition and Daily Etiquette of Blessed Families

Section 1. The Daily Etiquette of a Blessed Family 1055
1.1. Establishing proper family rules and practices 1055
1.2. Family life 1057
Section 2. The Exemplary Family Life of Faith 1058
2.1. A family life of faith educates the children 1058
2.2. A life of prayer 1060
2.3. Blessed families are the elders of the tribe 1061
Section 3. A Life of Living with True Love 1063
3.1. Living for the sake of others 1063
3.2. People who live for the sake of others become the center 1065
Section 4. Parents Must Establish the Law of Love 1066
4.1. Parents are closer than friends 1066
4.2. Tradition is passed on by parents 1067
Section 5. Proper Behavior between Spouses 1069
5.1. Spouses are companions for life 1069
5.2. Spouses are comrades in faith 1070
Section 6. Raising Children in Faith 1073
6.1. Parents are to teach their children heavenly law 1073
6.2. The importance of faith education 1074
Section 7. Love between Siblings 1075
Section 8. Thrift, Diligence, and a Frugal Family Life 1077
8.1. A frugal life 1077
8.2. Thrift 1078
Section 9. Proprieties of Daily Living 1080
9.1. Clothes 1080
9.2. Facial expression 1081
9.3. Hairstyle 1081

9.4. Fingernails and toenails 1082
9.5. How you should walk 1082
9.6. Sitting posture 1082
9.7. Sleeping 1082
9.8. Health 1083
9.9. Speech 1083
Section 10. Teachings on Purity 1083
10.1. Strictly follow the commandment during adolescence 1083
10.2. Children of heaven 1086
Section 11. A Life of Sanctification 1087
11.1. Holy salt 1087
11.2. Holy Candles 1088
11.2.1. Shimjung Candle 1088
11.2.2. Birth Candles 1088
11.2.3. Ae Cheon Candle (Love of God Candle) 1089
11.2.4. Unification (Tongil) Candle 1089
Section 12. Rituals in the Life of Blessed Families 1090
12.1. Pledge service 1090
12.2. Family service 1091
12.3. Hoondokhwae 1091
12.4. Family Pledge 1092
Section 13. Ancestral Rituals for Blessed Families 1093
13.1. Laws on ancestor worship were originally part of heavenly law. 1093
Section 14. Blessed Families Ceremonies 1095
14.1. Birth 1095
14.2. The Blessing 1096
14.3. The Seunghwa Ceremony 1098
Section 15. Attitude when Observing Holy Days 1099
15.1. The significance of Holy Days 1099
15.2. Ceremonial robes 1100

CHAPTER ONE

Etiquette for Attending God

Section 1. Living in Attendance of God

1.1. God and human beings relate as parent and child

Among all bonds of relationships, the standard is the parent-child relationship established between God and human beings. The heart coming from this bond cannot be undermined by the authority of any being and is eternal, unchanging, and unique. The authority of this heart is also absolute. For this reason, when you come forth with this authority, all existing beings will bow their heads before you. When you move with the authority of that heart, the entire universe must follow you. This is the ironclad rule of the universe. (7-105, 1959.7.26)

We must establish families in which God and humankind unite, where God relates in love and becomes one with people. God regarded such families as His ideal and desired, at the time of creation, that they be centered on a true and great love. If our ancestors had established these families, today we would all enter the Kingdom of Heaven just as we are, without having to worry about heaven or hell. (275-54, 1995.10.31)

Where is the highest place a father and son can meet? It is in the center, where their love, lives and ideals intersect. Then, love, life, and ideals are in one place. At that place, God is love, and so are we; God is life, and so are we; God is ideal, and so are we. The first bond and first place of unity that can determine this must be where the parent-child relationship is established. This is an undeniable fact. (69-78, 1973.10.20)

On what basis do you say, "One body between father and son"? Love cannot be excluded from this. Love, life, and lineage are connected to it. These three factors are essential. When we say "one body between father and son," love, life and lineage must always be connected there. (197-234, 1990.1.19)

There is no need for a verbally established parent-child relationship or a parent-child relationship that was created through written agreements. When you exert your mind, express your devotion, and live for the sake of the Father's will, you can even endure pain that melts the flesh and bone. When you do this in order to win victory, you can restore the parent-child relationship with God. (2-234, 1957.6.2)

Where is the highest place that you would like to receive love from God? It is in the position of the son. It is in the position of the daughter. God has heavenly emotions. We human beings have human emotions. The place that becomes a converging point for heavenly emotions and human emotions is the one place that God, the Absolute Being longs for, and also human beings long for. In other words, it is the place where we can share love in the position of a son or daughter centering on a parent. (39-9, 1971.1.9)

Originally, amid the greatest joy, both Adam and Eve should have displayed the highest vitality, combined the greatest energy, and even demonstrated the power of the ideals of all creation. In such a place the flower of love should bloom. Thus, by blossoming like a flower, love's fragrance would have overflowed into the entire universe. God dreamt of such love in which He could gaze at that flower, smell its fragrance and be enraptured with it. (104-44, 1979.3.28)

When God and Adam become one and both are overflowing with love, Adam can become God. When Adam becomes completely one with God through love, God dwells in Adam. The Bible states, "Do you not know that you are God's temple and that God's Spirit dwells in you?" We are God's temple. (54-139, 1972.3.22)

You should know that God exists near you and is concerned about each of you more than anyone else. People think that the love of their own family is the greatest in this world. However, you should know that God's love is greater and deeper than that love; it is deeper and greater than any human love in this world. You should be embraced in God's love and be able to call Him, "Father." You should become such true sons and daughters who deeply experience God's internal heart in a position that says, "I know the Father's sorrow." If you can become such sons and daughters, and possess the Kingdom of Heaven in which you attend God, no one would be able to take that kingdom away from you. (2-234, 1957.6.2)

According to logic, when father and son unite based on love, the father's possessions can become the son's. Likewise, the husband's belongings become the wife's possessions. Centering on love, the right of inheritance is guaranteed for eternity. If you have become a son or daughter who has established a bond of love as the object partners of God's true love, then for you, God's body will become your body, His love will become your love, and everything He created will become yours. Therefore, within each of you, you still have the desire of your original nature to have dominion over the universe. This was God's gift that He distributed equally to all humankind, the gift that lets you hold the authority to possess the universe as God's sons and daughters. (199-346, 1990.2.21)

1.2. Living a life of oneness

In all religions, they teach people not to look at, listen to, speak to, or treat people carelessly. This means that you should do everything – look, listen, talk, feel and love – centering on God. You should not do so centering on yourself. (66-231, 1973.5.13)

When you are happy as people who are attending God, how happy have you made God? Have you attended God with a gratitude that is greater than the feelings you have as you eat when you are hungry? You should always feel grateful to God when you eat or wear something nice, even when you are sad or facing difficulties. Hence, you should leave behind good circumstances that can be remembered in God's mind. (17-291, 1967.2.15)

My awareness, intuition, and even my sensory organs all belong to the Father. The view must be established that what you feel and perceive all belongs to the Father. You should know clearly that when this is not the case, the Father, who moves in accordance with heart, cannot belong to you. (8-294, 1960.2.14)

People are all created to become one with God in heart. God as the Father and human beings as the children are connected through the heart. (55-163, 1972.5.7)

What we speak, see, feel, and perceive through emotions must all be connected to God. (53-239, 1972.2.29)

You should live in attendance to God and True Parents. This should be evident when you are talking and when you are moving about. You should live a life of attendance whether you are asleep or awake. If you think in this way twenty-four hours a day, Satan cannot invade you. (161-231, 1987.2.15)

Offer your first words to Heaven after rising from your bed in the morning. When you step outside your home, you should step with your right foot first, dedicating your first step to Heaven. If you develop such habits, your life will become a life of attendance. From this viewpoint, you should maintain the standard of a principled attitude in daily life. (17-296, 1967.2.15)

Once we have risen in the morning, all our feelings and actions must be unified into a straight line throughout the day, centering on one goal. We cannot deny that if we lose that focus, we will not be able to connect with His will. (57-231, 1972.6.4)

Heaven is where you can take pride in your life of attendance. Then, what kind of person can enter heaven? It is not a place for those who expect to receive blessings simply because they believed in the Lord. Heaven is for those who prepare their hearts in order to attend. It is a place for those who leave behind a life of attendance and joyfully move on, even though they might die in the process. Resurrection is found in such a place. (8-304, 1960.2.14)

Now, we three – God, True Parents and you – must become one. We have to act in concert. Since this is a decisive question of life and death, all three must unite at the point where they come together. The realm of resurrection is at that very point. It is the connecting point where oneness comes, where True Parents and you become one and unite together. There, the unification into one heart takes place. Therefore, you must lead a life of oneness with His will. (31-321, 1970.6.7)

Why do you look and listen to all the things within the twenty-four hours of your day? It is for the sake of God. We have to look and listen for God and even feel for His sake. Even though we are living on earth, we have to be connected with life in the heavenly world and live that way. (35-284, 1970.10.25)

Those who don't yearn for God every day cannot attend Him. You should always be immersed in longing whenever you yearn for someone. But when it gets to midnight, and you say, "It's already twelve midnight, let's go to bed," this causes God concern. There is no concept of day and night in the Kingdom of Heaven. Night poses no difficulty when you are living and embracing centering on heart. (17-293, 1967.2.15)

Originally, as a rule, we were to live, think and love centered on ourselves after we had become completely one with God. You have to know this clearly. Even though you would live, think and love centered on yourself, it would be the same as living, thinking and loving centered on God. This is the Principle. (92-166, 1977.4.3)

The extent to which you devoted yourself to meeting the Father and creating bonds with Him will become your asset. (50-288, 1971.11.8)

You should become the sons and daughters who, from the valley of tears, can receive a response when calling for the Father. You should become the people who, when you call, "Father!" from a place of tears, He will reply, "Yes! I am here." When you call, "Father!" from a place of piercing pain, shedding blood and sweat, He will reply, "I have endured, so you can too." When you call for Him even at the moment when death approaches, He will reply, "I am here, be at ease." The question is how much you attend the Father, how much you consult with Him and how much you live with Him in such situations. No matter how hard you call the Father from a place of self-centered glory it does no good because the Father has still not seen His day of glory. (11-102, 1961.2.12)

For whom do you eat when you say, "Oh, I'm hungry! Oh, I'm so hungry! Food, food, food!" You should feel that you are eating for God.

Why should you think that you are eating for God? If you have become the holy temple of God, you should think, as God's holy temple, "When I am hungry, God inside me is telling me to eat."

If you eat in this way, that meal becomes sacred. The food becomes holy. (92-166, 1977.4.3)

Section 2. Our Attitude of Attendance

2.1. Establishing a heavenly life through attendance

God is not a fantasy or a conceptual God, nor is He an abstract God. With His leadership in our daily life, He is always with us as the master of our daily circumstances. He does not just receive attendance but is living together with us by sharing love. This sounds like a dream. (168-111, 1987.9.13)

Without making a beginning point where God enters our mind, and where we human beings become completely one body with God, there is no way of liquidating the devil's world. From this point of view, we can understand that this time is the age of attendance and the age of salvation by justification through attendance. We are saved through attendance. God is not a God who is way up in the sky far removed from us. We should attend God as the master in our daily life. (144-274, 1986.4.25)

How many times during the day are you aware of God's existence? How many times during twenty four hours do you feel God's presence? How can people who are determined to be saved through attendance, attend God just one or two hours in a day? God is something you need more desperately than even the air. God is something you need more desperately than even water. God is more precious than your meals. Yet, do you really feel this? (33-230, 1970.8.16)

From now on you should live a life of attendance. Up until now, a life of faith brought salvation through faith, but from now on you attain salvation through attendance. Originally, if humankind had not fallen, we would be following our normal path by attending God. In attending God, you should attend Him wholeheartedly in your daily life. (150-213, 1961.4.15)

We must live a life of attendance. Although we have welcomed the Kingdom of Heaven of hope, we have not welcomed a Kingdom of Heaven of attendance and practice. In other words, we have not been aware in our daily lives that God is our subject partner. (6-226, 1959.5.17)

Why do we listen, and learn these things and live a life of attendance? What is the purpose of our suffering for six thousand years? It is for the sake of understanding God's circumstances and His heart just as the Bible showed. It is for the purpose of understanding that God related to ethnic peoples and nations, as well as to individuals, with a parental heart and that He is our Father who has been wounded, trampled upon, rejected and torn to pieces. (8-252, 1960.1.17)

The Completed Testament Age is the

age of love. Thus, you are permitted to marry. In the history of religion, higher-level religions did not allow marriage because conjugal love was not sanctified until now. (96-117, 1978.1.2)

Since God is the center of the universe, when you go near Him you will want to be governed by Him for tens of thousands of years and even longer. This is the way to attend God. Thus, there is no greater happiness. We could not have imagined that human beings today could be governed in such a way. (77-328, 1975.4.30)

Why do we seek justification by faith, justification by works, and justification through attendance? Without being justified you cannot distinguish between good and evil. The evil world and the world of goodness would not be separated. What is the standard of righteousness? It is God. What God believes, how He works and attends is the standard. Why is that so? Satan cannot accuse righteous people who resemble God. If you create an environment in which God's faith, works, and standard of attendance lives through you, then Satan cannot intervene. Even if you are within the satanic realm, if a righteous standard is created that enables you to be with God in such an environment, Satan will withdraw from there. (161-218, 1987.2.15)

Attendance in the Completed Testament Age is not the only thing that remains after the Old Testament Age of works and the New Testament Age of faith have passed. Even in the Completed Testament Age, we need to do works, we need to have faith, and we also need to lead a life of attendance. There are the stages of formation, growth and completion which remain; these cannot be separated. (161-218, 1987.2.15)

The Unification Church states that salvation comes through attendance. It is justification through attendance; in other words, salvation through attendance. When men buy suits for each season, they should be doing that for Father as well. However, since He does not have a body, they should combine a monetary offering with their devotion instead. During these seasons, they should make an offering in the donation box for the sake of the church, with a tearful heart of attending God, regardless of whether anyone is watching. If they can do so, that devotion will accumulate in the Ark of the Covenant. This way of living should be real and expressed; not remain only as a concept. (48-328, 1971.9.26)

Why should we live a life of attendance? It is to receive God's love. (78-30, 1975.5.1)

Up until the present time, a life of faith brought salvation through faith, but, from now on, you attain salvation through attendance. Originally, if humankind had not fallen, we would be following our normally intended path by attending God. What is the use of faith alone? You can fulfill everything by leading a life of attendance. When

you attend God, you should attend Him in your daily activities and with your whole heart. (150-213, 1961.4.15)

The problem we face now is how to create a new tradition from the standard of attendance that God wants from the individual, family, church, this nation and this people. (38-12, 1971.1.1)

The age of the Unification Church is the age of the parents. We are paving the road whereby God can come and be present on earth. This is why it makes sense to say that we are saved through attending Him when He comes. This is how history is developing. (177-157, 1988.5.17)

In order to join the realm of attendance, you must possess the quality of heart to comfort a sorrowful God and to experience together with Him His painful circumstances in having devoted Himself. The principles of restoration reveal this and teach us how to establish indemnity conditions before God. (17-245, 1967.1.29)

You should live a life of attendance. So then, why should we live a life of attendance? To receive God's love. For this reason you should serve God first. You should attend Him. (78-30, 1975.5.1)

2.2. Breaking heavenly laws displeases God

There are laws in attending God. It displeases God when these laws are broken. (17-287, 1967.2.15)

You must know how to obey the laws in your daily life. Heaven demands that you must keep Heaven's ways. It is not enough to know Heaven's ways, but you must live Heaven's ways. You must become one with Heaven's love as you understand Heaven's ways. (1-337, 1956.12.30)

One who is always able to discern whether God is happy or sad could not become an evil person even if he tried; he could not go against the law of heaven even if he tried. That man would never give in to the temptation of a beautiful woman. He would not be drawn in. (40-297, 1971.2.7)

Today, why are so many unhappy young men and women escaping their families? It is because the heavenly law of love was lost. For this reason, based on that family, the parent of heaven and earth must appear and allow God to be seated there. (21-155, 1968.11.17)

There can be no complaint from the object partner who exists for the sake of their subject partner. Complaint would be an act of rashness and lead to failure. Therefore, complaint is not allowed in the life of faith. You should only be thankful. Because Heaven will always be the subject, there cannot be any rules or ways of life that moves away from it.

Heavenly law is established when order is properly followed. Therefore, in the relationship between the subject and object partners, God must stand in

the position of the absolute subject. The person who ignores that subject cannot become His object partner. If you strive to become the absolute object before the absolute subject, you become absolutely one. Thus, everything that you see, hear and feel, even the loving relationships in your family, are for the sake of God who stands as the subject partner to you as His object partner. Everything works like this. Such a family will never perish. (58-310, 1972.6.25)

What lasts until the end? It is God plus man, God and man, God and man's life, and God and man's daily outlook. Likewise, it is God and man's view of life, God and man's world view. These are not just vague understandings about God, but these represent an eternal bond with Him; there will be no separation.

Why? Since God and human beings were separated, though they should never have been separated, they must reach a higher position than that. In such a place, they should come forward demanding a global stage, a stage for daily life where God and human beings are one. (65-127, 1972.11.5)

You must live with God in order to establish the victorious realm of dominion. Consequently, you can establish a victorious foundation only by having absolute conviction, and by leading your life united with God and attending Him. This is the path of restoration. (14-247, 1965.1.1)

Section 3. True Father's Way of Attending God

3.1. Sincerity moves Heaven

What does it mean for you to serve with all your heart, with your entire mind, and with all your devotion? It means to offer your life. Is there anything greater than that? To devote yourself with all your heart means giving up your life. To serve with all your mind and devotion means giving up your life. Isn't there a saying, "Sincerity moves heaven?" Is there a limit to sincerity, an end to one's devotion? Put your life on the line and offer devotion. God will recognize the person who is ready to sacrifice his life and offer a life of devotion. (38-242, 1971.1.8)

I'm not saying that you should force yourself to lay down your life if you do not want to. I'm saying that you should joyfully be willing to do that. Would God want you to lay down your life if you are totally miserable doing so, or would He prefer it if, intoxicated with love and not knowing whether you would live or die, you danced with joy while laying down your life? Which would He prefer? (48-114, 1971.9.5)

When I would pray kneeling on the floor, my tears never dried. I even had calluses on my knees. In Korea there is a saying, "A tower that is made with lots of care will never collapse." We have to be devoted to God. We have to enter into the state of mind where we feel pain in

our heart to such an extent that we crazily love and long for God. If God could dwell somewhere on earth, His heart would visit that place a thousand times a day. But because there is no such place, God had no choice but to send me. Since this is the situation, you cannot help but love me. Can you simply love me so easily? In my case, when I prayed shedding tears during the three months of winter, sometimes my entire clothing would be completely soaked. Think about how desperate I was. On many occasions I prayed to God so seriously to demand a response, as if burying the blade of a dagger in the table. (60-212, 1972.8.17)

Let us say that there was a diamond mine. What would you do if there were such a place that only you knew of? You might have to even sacrifice being with your family in order to acquire such a place. It would not be a sin to sacrifice being with your wife in order to save many families. It is also not a sin to sacrifice being with your children in order to save numerous children in the nation. However, you should not sacrifice them to satisfy your own self-interest. The path for saving the nation and a people is that diamond mine; it is the path of life for the people throughout the entire world. In that case, history would not view this as a sin – the sacrifice of your wife and child. It may seem wrong to sacrifice your wife and child to save the nation and world; however, on the contrary, it is there that you will find a wealth of treasure which the whole world can praise. (21-314, 1968.12.8)

Whatever you may do, be it eating, drinking, sitting or standing or whomever you may relate with, you'll receive a perfect score if you show your loving heart before True Parents and God. It does not come about by having a lot of knowledge or scholarly attainment. Will you live in God's presence saying, "I have a Doctorate"? There is no need for that before God. Therefore, how can we entice God's love? There is only one path: "Sincerity moves heaven." There is no other way. (78-38, 1975.5.1)

The motto for my life has been "God's spokesman." From today, I ask that all of you become heavenly spokespersons. Become God's representative and His substitute, and furthermore, I hope that you can become one who can die in place of God. (9-7, 1960.3.13)

In the face of the great, historic Last Days, what more could we ask for than to become trustworthy object partners before a lonely God, whose position is one of being unable to trust. Even death will not worry us. Even if our flesh turns to water and flows away, or becomes powder and disperses in the air, how can we be resentful? There have always been many lives with no value that end up like those of pigs and dogs. (62-140, 1972.9.17)

You should not complain. There is no room for complaint. You should not think of yourself. Think about God with the heart, "If I complain, how much pain I will cause the True Parents! I understand their circumstances. If the moment

comes when I can inherit their tradition, I will inherit it and while following them, I will comfort them." Then, if you shed tears with that kind of heart, God will share them with you. There is no doubt about that. You should shed tears for the sake of God and for the sake of the True Parents. You should know that this is the altar of the Unification Church. This is the life of attendance in the Unification Church. (114-281, 1981.10.20)

Since you said that you live with God's love, what should your life's goal be now? You must live a life of attendance with a heart of love. Even if you bow before a handkerchief with that kind of heart, it would not be considered idol worship. What can dominate the person who bows his head with a heart of love? If you offer a deep bow with a heart transcending your own glory, even Satan will not tell you to stop doing that. There is no need for idols while going forward with a heavenly heart. (9-174, 1960.5.8)

3.2. The path of a filial son

Even if I had to collapse in hunger and fatigue, I thought about how I was going to go forward on the path knowing how concerned God was, and how I was going to shoulder this cross, if needed, along the way. Yet, you are not preparing yourselves to go on this path. Even though you now know that you will be saved through attendance, you still look at me impudently. You should not continue with that kind of mind. (13-233, 1964.3.22)

You should live your life in such a way that if you do not know what I am doing, you would not be able to sleep and would run out to ask me, even in the middle of the night. That is why I said that salvation comes through attendance. I always live with this attitude towards God. This does not leave my mind for a second. (21-68, 1968.9.9)

In the age of justification by living the life of attendance, all of you must establish the correct center and go forward from there. In the place where you attend God there is law. When you break that law, God is very displeased.

With parents who love their children deeply, just one word from the child can be enough to drive a nail into the parents' heart. Likewise, since God loves humankind so much, He can also be deeply hurt by them. If you make even the slightest of mistakes, it will incur His anger. For that reason, I always have a strong desire to be a source of God's joy. (17-287, 1967.2.15)

Don't you want to go to the person who thinks about you? It is the same for God. The way to capture God is to think about Him more than anyone else. God seeks out those who are thinking of dedicating themselves to Him. (128-172, 1983.6.12)

I do not know how many times I prayed to such an extent that all my clothing became wet. I don't know how many times I pledged before God with a knife in my hand, jabbing my stom-

ach. I don't know how many thousands of times I made a firm resolution before God while crossing over the pinnacle of death. (19-19, 1967.11.5)

For humankind, loving God is the first commandment. So, should you love God your whole life or temporarily? Will you love God your entire life or not? You should love God even if a thunderbolt hits you and you die. You must love God with your life. If you love Him with your life, then, until your death, you can do anything. (37-25, 1970.12.22)

You have to long for God until your eyes feel like crumbling and your nose is full and stuffy. If a person cries excessively, his chest aches. That's how much you have to long for God. Even when crying out, "Father," you have to say it as if you were a son who is being dragged to the execution ground or as a son who is leaving for a far off country. In order to call out "Heavenly Father," we must have a higher standard than that. (50-288, 1971.11.8)

Where do you currently reside? Do you live in concert with me day and night, whenever or wherever you go? Until now, I have not managed just on my own. Can you go up to the summit of Mt. Baekdu, remove the stones, plow a field, plant potatoes, and serve God with those potatoes? You should do that. Would you be hit by lightning if you made your wife plow that field because you did not have an ox? Would you stop if God said, "Hey, stop it!" when He saw you plowing the field, using your beloved wife as an ox? Will you still attend with all your heart, with your entire mind, and with all your devotion? You must. (37-25, 1970.12.22)

I have lived with God, and walked in the same direction with Him, and in step with Him, investing my life completely. (31-320, 1970.6.7)

I resolve the important issues in my daily life by praying to God. I do not do it casually. (43-33, 1971.4.18)

You have to be a bit stupid in order to follow this path. If you look at it in a certain way, loyal subjects were rather foolish people. They seemed to be somewhat stupid. They had the character of a bear. You have to have the kind of slow-wittedness that, if you had your arm cut off, you would simply say, "Oh, this is not cut enough. Please cut off some more." If bears or wild boars get shot and are slowed down by the wound, they will chew off the wounded limb and run away. The last thing they think of is death, and the first thing on their minds is the wound that is slowing them down. You have to have this kind of slow-wittedness. Patriots and heroes were a bit foolish. You have to be a little stupid. (26-143, 1969.10.19)

We should liberate God. With the authority of the true God, our first ancestors were to attend God in an ideal world where He could live with them while singing praises amid unlimited

bliss. Yet, since we now know that God became miserable by our hands, so likewise, we should liberate Him with our own hands. This is an amazing proposal. It is extremely joyful news for God to hear such things coming from the religious realm. It is the greatest of all gospels. When we think of this, it was God who established Buddhism. He was the one who established Confucianism. He was the one who established the Islamic faith. And He was the one who established Christianity. All religions should raise both hands and welcome Him. (176-242, 1988.5.11)

I have experienced hardships to this day for the sake of God's will. Even now, I travel on this path day and night. Those who have not attended me closely do not know me well. The minute I open my eyes from sleep I kneel on the floor and pray. Why do I live in such a way? It is because, even in the middle of the night, my beloved children spread across the world depend on me as they pray to God. Even though I cannot offer devotion together with them, shouldn't I keep time with them just the same? Since I am unaware of this when I am asleep, even God forgives me. When a child falls asleep in fatigue at that hour, God prays on his behalf in the same way a father watches over his child. (26-138, 1969.10.19)

What kind of person am I? I am a person with only one talent. I am a person who just goes straight ahead no matter what. Some ask why I always do things which are spoken ill of, instead of quietly going around the other way with my mouth shut. It is because the pinnacle can only be overcome by receiving opposition from many people. But you are thinking of taking a detour, aren't you? Then, why do we have to cut off from everything in the secular world? It is because we cannot go straight if we are pulled by our love for our physical parents. Since God has been going straight towards us, we also have to go straight. (97-257, 1978.3.19)

Because I knew that God was such a lonely and isolated being, I have gone forth knowing that my mission until the day I die was to fulfill even a portion of God's will and desire; to expand a foundation in at least one field and gather together those who can live for the sake of God. It is because I was born as God's son and because I felt myself responsible for establishing His will that I have persevered until now with love. Even though I was persecuted, and even though I was beaten, I endured all this without taking revenge. Even as I fought my way forward, staggering or crawling on my belly, I always thought about how to set up this tradition and bequeath it to the world. (82-47, 1975.12.30)

People should not be proud that they stand out. If you raised yourself to such a position, you would fall down. However, even if people do not raise you to that position, if Heaven has raised you up, you will surely succeed. (155-242, 1965.10.31)

What do the True Parents do? By

winning every battle, they enter the deepest place in God's heart to liberate His bitter pain and establish that realm of victory on the earth. You should all be grateful that such True Parents have appeared. (235-21, 1992.8.24)

How seriously have you been following the way of God's will? I have been following this path all throughout my life. Even my wife and children do not know this. Only God knew my situation. It was a lonely path, which this solitary man had to follow, unknown by anyone. I accomplished such amazing achievements, thanks to God's help, and with this I have brought fundamental issues to society today. I have become a controversial person who presented a new wave of thought in this declining democratic world. I have become like this not because I did so well but because God was with me. (82-45, 1975.12.30)

CHAPTER TWO

Etiquette for Attending True Parents

Section 1. True Parents are the Center of Blessed Families

1.1. Becoming the sons and daughters of True Parents

From now on, you must live with True Parents. True Parents are in the position of the grandparents. They are also in the position of your mother and father, living with you, and you are in the position of the first child. This is a new and different age. We should realize that, in this way, three generations will be living together. You must live with the feeling in your heart that God is with you, and that True Parents, as your own parents, are with you. We have now entered an age in which we cannot think that God is not there, that He is dead. (131-97, 1984.4.16)

Everything that you do must involve the Parents. You must consult them in making decisions, discuss circumstances and try to solve problems with them. (44-173, 1971.5.6)

You cannot just eat good food and wear good clothes. First, you have to offer the best to God. When you walk, think that you are walking together with Father on your right and Mother on your left. (24-181, 1969.8.4)

What should you do to receive the love of the Parents? You must love everything that is loved by Parents. Only then can you receive love from them. In a family, if a son wants to be loved by his parents, he needs to understand that he can only receive love from them when he loves everything that they own. If someone wants to receive love without doing this, he is no better than a thief. If a child claims everything that is valued by his parents just because he wants to, he cannot receive love from them. (133-26, 1984.7.1)

You are not to live according to your own wishes but according to my words, and follow the path that I am walking. You are to inherit the tradition of the Unification Church. You are supposed to do as I do. I have abandoned my family and parents to walk this path. This is what you also must do. You must be obedient as you walk this path. (49-214, 1971.10.10)

True Parents and you form a relationship of unity. That relationship should never change for eternity. (55-173, 1972.5.7)

You were bought with my blood and sweat. You were bought with my own flesh and blood. Therefore you should carry out the same work as me. I want to take pride in you members. To accomplish all this, let us make a commitment. (11-164, 1961.7.20)

Because Satan rebelled against God and disrupted the path defined by laws of heaven and earth, you have to stand in the position of the archangel who is supporting God; you should establish the way of loyalty to Heaven. Then, for the first time, a new way of restoration can be opened. That is why I put you on the front line. (25-203, 1969.10.4)

Because Adam was separated from God with tears, and was unable to feel God's heart, there must be a reunion with tears. Our tears must liberate the resentment of Cain and Abel who separated with tears. There is no other way to become united. Throughout the world, there are even grown men who cry wanting to see me. However, are there such people here? You terrible people! A long time ago, everyone was like that. In the early days of the church, everyone was like that.

Because women came to the Unification Church and followed me, their husbands complained that their wives were not coming to them. On the other hand, because men followed me, women complained that their husbands were not coming to them! It must be that way. If men want to see me, they should also shed tears. Those who cannot shed tears cannot enter heaven, even when the kingdom is established through the Unification movement. (31-332, 1970.6.7)

You should cry, longing for the True Parents who are in the position of God's substance. You should always want to see True Parents. You should want to serve True Parents even by making them a bowl of rice or by giving them a glass of water. You should always have such a sincere heart. Your heart should overflow with tears.

In feeling this way, if you unite in heart centering on me and breathe together with me, you will come to understand the standard of my character, my past and my circumstances during the early days, which are the foundation of that standard. You will also be able to inherit and receive those things. (38-75, 1971.1.1)

1.2. Our dedication in attending True Parents

The pathways by which fallen people come to God have differed according to the age. In the Old Testament Age, people could offer sacrifices; in the New Testament Age they could believe in Jesus, the Son of God; in the Completed Testament Age they can attend the True Parents. (20-340, 1968.7.20)

Adam and Eve fell in the Garden of Eden. Since they lived within the fallen realm they were unable to live a life of direct attendance. People who have no experience of attending God are not

qualified to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Although you have lived your life within the fallen lineage, you have paid indemnity in the course of restoration and you have attended True Parents on earth, in the flesh. Even Adam and Eve could not attend them. This condition of having attended God in your lifetime gives you the qualification to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Thus, citizenship of the Kingdom of Heaven is given to you. (150-233, 1961.4.15)

You were unable to become a filial child to all the things of creation that you should love; you were unable to become a filial child to your parents who gave birth to you; and you were unable to become a filial child to God and the spirit world. Yet, in exchange for attending the True Parents, you were bestowed with the qualification of a filial child. For this reason, you must tenaciously follow me. (105-112, 1979.9.30)

From afar, True Parents are treated as the king of a nation; up close, they are the parents. That is how they are. (150-235, 1961.4.15)

How seriously have you prayed for me? How much did you really want to see me? If you truly desired to see me, prayed with deep sincerity, and desperately yearned for me, then just seeing me in the flesh would not be the issue. (23-52, 1969.5.11)

Even before you eat, you should think, "Father, after you!" (11-218, 1961.8.26)

When the time and hour of attending Father comes, what will you do, and how will you show your filial piety? You should consider with what attitude you will attend Father. (17-293, 1967.2.15)

You should prepare a prayer room in which you place my picture, and bow before it a thousand, even ten thousand times. In the past, the spiritual groups, such as that of Heo Ho-Bin, who were preparing to receive the Messiah, bowed three thousand times each day. You should try this. When they were making clothes, they sewed each garment by hand, one by one. They believed that doing it on sewing machine showed disrespect. Even with such great devotion, it was still not enough. (179-77, 1988.7.22)

When you look in the mirror, you should ask yourself how much your eyes have shed tears in longing to see the Parents; how much your mouth cried out for the assuaging of the Parents' grief; how much your hands toiled while shedding blood for the land of the Parents; and how much your body has labored, until it shattered, for the foundation that the Parents are seeking. If you seek that path while feeling in your heart, "My grief is in not having been able to do those things!" it will become a path of happiness. A happy person is one who establishes a relationship with Heaven on that path. No one can dominate such a person. The only one that can move him is the Parent; the only one who can touch his heart is the Parent; the only one who can make him happy is the Parent. And

the son is the only person who can make the Parent happy. The Parent's wishes lie in their son rather than in the parents themselves. (78-35, 1975.5.1)

How should you think in order to lead a kind of life of attendance to God? You should think that you are one with God and one with True Parents. If everything in your life is in oneness with them, you should have the idea that everything belongs to God and to True Parents; and that what belongs to True Parents belongs to the kingdom of True Parents and then to you. Since even this house, nation, world and universe belong to True Parents, you come to the conclusion that everything belongs to you since you are True Parents' son. (161-231, 1987.2.15)

A member once made rice cakes containing mugwort for me. He had them wrapped in order to keep the dust off and brought them to the headquarters. When he opened them in front of me, the rice cakes had started to spoil. Although they were unfit to eat, those rice cakes were worth hundreds of millions in gold. My heart feels closer to such people. (33-113, 1970.8.9)

Love sometimes looks silly and foolish, doesn't it? When you truly love someone, you do not mind being watched by others. If you mind, your love is merely love with limitations. How silly and foolish love seems when you are in a state where you do not mind being watched by others! One day, another old man brought bellflower roots that he had dug out on a remote mountain and offered them to me with tears in his eyes. Such things become good material for liberating such a person when he goes to the spirit world. (33-113, 1970.8.9)

When I talk about my hardships, you should think of them as your own; you should be able to feel the same – your heart should ache, you should be in sorrow and in tears, you should feel mortified and angered. My suffering is the raw material you can use to feel the same way. (34-101, 1970.8.29)

Do not say that you know me. I only know the Principle. I only know those who are grounded in the Principle and in the laws. (10-249, 1960.10.21)

What would happen if I visited your house everyday for three months? You would come to dislike it saying, "Oh, bother!" Those who think otherwise raise your hand. I really have many things to say, about this and that. Would it be stifling or refreshing for me to know all these things? That is why I use the expression, "This is stifling."

You do not even know how to maintain your dignity and conduct yourselves. I must therefore educate you in these things. (26-299, 1969.11.10)

My history will not be written during my lifetime. However, once I pass away, won't it be written? Then, if it were found that I had done things inappropriately from the Principle point of view, I

would be in trouble.

The question is whether or not the reason I have led such a life can be supported by the Principle. If something was very wrong with it, I could come to lose everything that I had accomplished. That is why the position of a leader is very difficult. (33-167, 1970.8.11)

Section 2. Let Us Love and Be Proud of True Parents

2.1. True Parents are the hope of all humankind

Who are the True Parents that the Unification Church speaks about? If Adam and Eve had not fallen, God would have become the vertical form of love, and Adam and Eve would have become God's body. It would have been as if they were the flesh of God – God as the bones, and Adam and Eve the flesh. God would have achieved mind and body unity through Adam and Eve.

God is meant to become the internal parent in the internal position, and Adam and Eve the external parents in the external position. The internal and external parents must become one through love; and at that place, we come to have external parents and attend the internal parent in heart. With the union of love between God and Adam and Eve, the True Parents – the perfected man and woman – can emerge. There can be no perfected human beings without unity in love. (184-71, 1988.11.13)

What do True Parents have to do? They must rectify the false lineage that forms the root of the satanic world, turn around life that has deviated from the ideal, and correctly reopen the path of love that has gone the wrong way. The Bible says that those who seek to die will live, and those who seek to live will die. Why is this paradox necessary? It is because the satanic world must perish. (169-37, 1987.10.4)

Are you the true sons and daughters of True Parents? When you talk about true children, what is your mind centered on? It is the true lineage. Of course, a relationship is formed through true love, but the actual connection is through the true lineage. That is why those connected through that lineage take after the mother and father. Do you resemble me?

Your eyes are blue whereas my eyes are black, and our hair is different. My hair is white. I am an Asian, and my face is flat. When taking after True Parents, you only need to resemble the most essential parts. By essential parts, I am talking about winning over Satan and loving God absolutely. That is all you need to inherit from me. Then you can dominate and control Satan. (170-237, 1987.11.21)

How much should you love me? This goes back to the fundamental problem. You should not love from a position that has traces of the satanic world, and is tainted with love from that world. You should be in a higher position. You must love Father more than you love your

parents, spouse and children born in the satanic world.

That is why in the Bible, Jesus says, "He who loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and he who loves sons or daughters more than me is not worthy of me." He reached this conclusion for everything. Later, he also says, "Take up your cross and follow me." He said to take up your own cross. Overcoming the power that pulls you in the opposite direction means taking up the cross. There you must shed tears of bitterness. (178-97, 1988.6.1)

What do True Parents signify? They are the symbol of hope for everyone. They are the symbol of absolute hope for fallen humankind. They are the fruits of history, the center of the present era, and the center of the nations of this world of five billion people living today. They are the starting point from which we can be connected to the ideal world of the future. (35-237, 1970.10.19)

What is the desire of all people today? Before they establish a nation and world, they would want to welcome True Parents. From whom would our future descendants want to be descended? Your future sons and daughters would not want to be born from your fallen lineage. They would want to be born through the bloodline of True Parents. That is why True Parents will become the starting point of a new future. (35-237, 1970.10.19)

What is God's hope today? God is hoping to make Himself visible in this time of the Last Days. Therefore, He is hoping to appear as a being of complete heart and as a vertically restored, perfected individual, in other words, as the Messiah. Therefore, a central figure who establishes the position of perfected Adam and perfected Eve must appear.

In the Completed Testament Age, God will appear before humankind in the form of True Parents. This is the reason that the Unification Church has enormous power, which cannot be controlled by any political authority.

The path of the Unification Church is one of accumulating experiences of the realm in which we directly see and deeply experience the living God. (God's Will - 279)

The desire of humankind is to meet the True Parents. Even when you are walking the path of death, you desire to meet True Parents. Even if you lost all of history, all the past eras, and all of your descendants, if you were to meet True Parents you would regain that history, those past eras and the future. You must understand that this is the value of True Parents. (35-237, 1970.10.19)

When you think of True Parents you realize that they govern history and that they establish a starting point from which we can return to an ideal world. The True Parents determine the internal relationships of position and heart through which we can dominate Satan. Through these, Satan, who controls the external world, can be subjugated and

the center, with which we can liberate God from His anguish, can finally be established. Therefore, first of all, you must be thankful for the amazing blessing of being able to live with True Parents and act according to their instructions. (43-144, 1971.4.29)

When you completely unite with True Parents, then the nation, tribe and family can come to exist. True Parents are the standard in substance that integrates the value of the glory of heaven and earth.

Would you exchange True Parents for all the money in this world? Would you exchange True Parents for your life? Things are different from how they were in the past. Wherever you may go, you have to visit Korea to serve True Parents. Your sons and daughters and your descendants of a thousand or ten thousand generations all must do the same. This is why the Unification Church is unique. (30-237, 1970.3.23)

What is the culminating point of everything? It is when everything meets the True Parents. The appearance of the True Parents of humankind is the hope of history, the hope of the nation, and the hope of the providence.

The time when True Parents appear is a climactic event occurring only once in history; it never happened before and will never occur again. From the perspective of the eternal world, a human lifetime is but the span of one breath. (51-354, 1971.12.5)

2.2. Honoring True Parents' picture in each home

It is good for you to carry my picture with you from now on. It will protect you so that you can safely withstand any difficulty you may encounter.

Moses led the Israelites away from the Pharaoh of Egypt and guided them to Canaan by showing great miracles and works. At that time, all the firstborn of the Egyptians were smitten, while the Israelites avoided this calamity by smearing the blood of a lamb on their doorposts. Thus, the spirit world is watching over you and will protect you. (130-290, 1984.2.7)

True Father is very famous. Everyone acknowledges that I am a patriot living for the sake of the nation. Moreover, the whole universe bows down in recognition of my achievements. So if people come to say, "Since we have put True Parents' picture up, my wife and I cannot quarrel in front of it," and tell their children, "You should not do such things in front of Rev. Moon," what is wrong with that? Because you are revering it more than the photograph of your own parents, your ancestors will come and also revere True Parents as their ancestors. It will become an altar where ancestors can come and hold a service for the household.

As a result, because the way to receive heavenly blessing will have been opened up, then even after you fall asleep, at three o'clock in the morning they will chase out all the evil spirits from your

family's environment. (219-91, 1991.8.25)

When the Israelites were about to leave Egypt, they were able to avoid the calamity of the smiting of the firstborn by smearing the blood of a lamb on their doorposts. In the same way, you can be protected if you carry my picture with you. Spirit world can recognize the picture even if it is in your pocket. This small condition has the same effect as the Israelites smearing the blood of the lamb on their doorposts. (132-190, 1984.6.1)

Members have had the experience where my smile seemed as mysterious as that of the Mona Lisa. Most of you have had the experience that my mysterious figure, which looks different in hundreds of thousands of ways, has led the spirit world to co-operate with you. Everyone in the spirit world knows me well. Are they glad to see my picture or not? Your ancestors are connected to you through the medium of the photograph. You can understand that this is such a precious item. (132-190, 1984.6.1)

Now, my fame has gone beyond national borders. I heard that many statesmen in various places have put my picture on the wall of their study and pay their respects to it.

Have you put my picture on the wall of your room, Dr. Yoon Se-won? Do you offer a bow to it everyday? Do you kiss it everyday? You should kiss it passionately. It is not impolite for you to do so. By kissing it on behalf of God's love, the spirits around you are given the right to participate with you in your work and receive benefit. God would not say no to this. He would say, "That's right!" Don't you think so, Dr. Yoon? (171-239, 1988.1.1)

When you place the picture of True Parents in your room and hang up the Unification Church flag, you come under God's dominion. I am trying to have you belong to God's dominion. There were many who were struck by lightning while they were cursing the flag. This is quite miraculous. Some people developed sickness in their hands because they were pointing their fingers at me; they were only able to recover from it after holding their hands and praying in repentance for several days. Such phenomena took place, right? Why? When heavenly fortune comes, it cannot be blocked by an individual's destiny. It is an unchangeable destiny. When Moses held his rod up high, all those who looked up at it lived. You will live as long as you look up at the Unification Church flag, bowing to it every time you come and go. Every time you set out from or arrive at home, bow before the picture. (219-91, 1991.8.25)

When you put up the Unification Church flag it is a signal to the members passing by to enter your house and rest if they are tired or hungry, to have lunch before they go on. Therefore, you should always be prepared to receive guests. On behalf of True Parents, you should make such preparations. That is why you would need a separate room.

As True Parents may not come, you

should attend your guests as if they were True Parents. This way of practicing connects the idea of equalization to the highest heavenly standard. For this reason, you should attend your guests as if they were God and True Parents. Such a person will surely receive blessings. (169-220, 1987.10.31)

Section 3. The Manner in Which We Attend True Parents

3.1. The law in the age of justification by attendance is the highest law

Your conduct, the way you sit – everything must conform to heavenly law. Even the manner in which you greet me should be codified. Shouldn't there be a protocol for greeting when you meet me? Shouldn't that be created? There are even such rules in society – shouldn't we have such rules? (66-267, 1973.5.16)

Up to the present day, human ethics have meant that parents should love their children and children should love their parents, and that there should be a distinction between husband and wife. These virtues have been transmitted to the present day as the cornerstone of the three fundamental principles and the five moral disciplines in human relations. However, the situation seems to be changing. Today, traditional customs and norms are changing. Something spiritual is penetrating and undermining our daily and social environment. We call such times the Last Days. If the Messiah appears, he must solve all these problems. (11-19, 1960.12.11)

Shouldn't there be new laws to rectify our fallen habits? You must understand that there are numerous legal procedures waiting for us in the future. You must pass through these. (66-299, 1973.5.16)

According to Korean custom, whenever a person receives something from someone older, they should receive it with both hands. This means that only when their hands are completely level will they receive the love of the older person. Whatever is received should come from the vertical to the horizontal through ninety degrees. It can be said that a person's mind is Heaven's mind. All rules should be level and equalized, since they were created in relation to and according to the way of our conscience. (171-236, 1988.1.1)

According to Oriental thought, when people walk along the road, the elder person walks in front. Why? It is because the elder person was born first into the world. That is how we try to create order in the environment. The person born later should stand back. Upper and lower, front and back, above and below, these should all be in their positions. These perspectives should not be changeable. These are eternal and unchanging. (168-252, 1987.9.27)

There are morning meetings everyday between the king of a nation and his subjects. In a Korean family, the children

first greet their parents when the parents rise in the morning. Isn't this part of Korean tradition? In order to indemnify fallen history, you should establish the finest set of laws among all laws, including the laws of filial duty to one's parents. Even for a nation, you should establish laws superior to the highest existing standard. (31-275, 1970.6.4)

In Korean society, during the three-year mourning period after their parents have passed away, the children offer meals to the departed spirits of their parents every morning and evening. Also, whenever they go out or return home, they give a greeting towards the altar of their parents. Aren't there such traditions in Korean society? You have to do better than that. Does what you do now precisely fulfill the formalities of Heaven from the viewpoint of God's will? It does not. Far from it. (31-275, 1970.6.4)

The quickest way to establish the heavenly tradition in a family is to do it during my lifetime. Originally you were supposed to bathe every morning to purify yourself and walk 10 *ri* to offer bows to me. Without establishing such a tradition, the path of your descendants will be blocked. (21-88, 1968.11.3)

Amongst the church members, some say that they can go to the movies because I often go to the movies. They don't understand. In the past, I never even went in front of a movie theater. It is not a problem now, since I went through so much training and equipped myself with such self control that no matter where I go, I am not infected or dominated by those places.

Yet, there are some silly people who say that they will just do as I do – following me when I go down to the country or using crude language because I do…. I have lived a life of attendance to God, and even served and bowed respectfully to young children until the time came that I could speak without using honorific language. After knowing God's will, people feel awkward to such an extent that when I speak to them in respectful language they cannot respond with their faces raised. Imagine how awkward it would be if I had to treat you so politely. (57-277, 1972.6.4)

3.2. Ethics and morality give value to human beings

Today, most laws in this world find their basis in Roman law. However, morality is based on conscience rather than law. The foundation of conscience is goodness. The standard of conscience is the standard of goodness. When you move away from goodness and do wrong, your conscience tries to correct your error. If people tried to create a universal social system in accordance with the conscience, they would still need laws. Where is morality rooted? It is rooted in the heavenly law. (33-44, 1970.8.2)

Ethics are formed on the basis of the emotions of love, aren't they? In the relationships between family members, the idea of morality, order, the social sys-

tem and so forth are based upon deep emotional factors. People express their respect to the one who can show the deep emotion of a long-lasting or consistent love. You should know that. The motivation for the establishment of ethics lies in the emotion of love. Ethics begin from the point of parents loving their children. True human relationships are established when children love their parents. (64-124, 1972.10.29)

Everyone needs and loves parents. Everyone wants to see them and be with them. But why? For what reason? It is the age difference that leads to the relationship of superior and subordinate in an orderly manner. Therefore, people should show deference, respect and dutifulness to their parents. Based on all matters of ethics and morality in social life, we should each stand in the position of a subject partner or object partner within a relationship of superior–subordinate. To become a filial son in certain respects, you should display obedience and humility, and long to meet the parents. This is the relationship of parent and child. (112-251, 1981.4.19)

People are valuable because of human morals and ethics. Morality forms the basis of relationships among people. Human morality has no use in relation to just one person; it applies when there are two or more people. Social ethics derive from the family formed through the marriage of a man and a woman. Ethics provide the way and laws of human relationships. (136-208, 1985.12.29)

It must be shown that there is a system of vertical order in accordance with the heavenly way, formed from the principles of creation of the sun, moon and stars in the universe. This system of vertical order appears within the family as the grandparents, parents and children. The horizontal order of brothers and sisters is created, and a corresponding sense of values and norms simultaneously emerges. (122-304, 1982.11.25)

We must establish a new tradition that transcends races and nations. We must establish the foundation for that tradition in accordance with God's desire rather than our own. It means you should not hold yourself to your habits, previous customs, or current trends. You should know that this is totally different. When you observe the world of nature, you will see that everything exists in harmony. Everything is natural, in harmony and has no sign of awkwardness. Everything is made to become attractive and to be a stimulating force. If something is disliked, it will not draw any attention. (66-299, 1973.5.16)

CHAPTER THREE

Worship Service and Etiquette in Church Life

Section 1. Proper Understanding of the Church

1.1. Church integrates human character and the Word

The purpose of a church is to find and establish God's nation; it is not to find and establish a church. God's original ideal for creation was to establish one world centered on a nation. Hence, the destination of the church is to find that nation. (149-48, 1986.11.2)

In the future, the time of the church will pass. The church is not what humankind desires. The church is needed during the process of restoration in the realm of the Fall, but once a new era arrives, the era of the church will pass away. For this reason, the Unification Church is not just doing church activities. Under the name of the church, we are adapting to society, reforming society, and initiating a movement to purify society. The mission of pioneers is to do that which cannot be done by the people who are just living within the boundaries of their own culture, society, and world. You must walk this pioneering path. (28-222, 1970.1.11)

The church is the base through which the past, present, and future are connected. Therefore, it acts as a mediator through which indemnity conditions can be established; it is a place where the Word, nobility of character, and quality of heart can unite. (The Way of the Spiritual Leader - 238)

The church is a holy place that connects heaven and earth. It is a gate to the world, enabling people to interact in relationships of cooperation, and is a spiritual pillar for the well-being of the nation. As the source of spiritual life, the church supplies strength in your daily life. (The Way of the Spiritual Leader - 238)

Before you are loyal to your family, you should be loyal to the church. Before you are loyal to society, you should be loyal to the church. The church is in the position of a subject partner and the family and society are in the position of an object partner. Where do wise people stand? They stand in the position of a subject partner. There is only one subject position. Objects can be in any of the four directions – north, south, east, and west, or anywhere around 360 degrees, but there is only one center. This is a position within an absolute realm. There

cannot be two. Can there be two centers? If the center moves, it will perish. (25-126, 1969.9.30)

Christians affirm that the omniscient, omnipotent, gracious, and loving God will forgive us even if we commit sins tens of thousands of times. Then, as soon as they leave church, they start fighting. The church is not a place in which to repent after committing sin. If God is a being who can easily forgive so many sins, there is one big question: why did God not forgive the single sin that was committed by Satan in the Garden of Eden? What do you think? If there had been a way for Satan to be forgiven so easily, he would have repented. He would have repented tens of thousands of times with tears. (19-161, 1968.1.1)

If the church were to divide into two and the two into four, and if it divided three times in this way, God would leave the church. That is the way of the heavenly principle. Instead, people will gather as families. Those with grace will gather as families. They will not go to church. They will kneel in prayer in their families. Wait and see if this happens or not. (9-266, 1960.6.5)

What is the goal of the Unification Church? It is to create an environment in which humankind can dance together with God and the Messiah here on earth and through which even Satan can receive blessings. This is the way of the Unification Church. How great it is! That is the Unification Church. People of the world say the Unification Church is such and such, heretical and so on, but we don't even bother to snort at that. Holy people just go on their way while the dogs in the neighborhood bark; we think of it like that. (80-285, 1975.11.2)

In this age of the Last Days, the Unification Church has to teach the answers to the following questions: What is God's desire? What is humankind's desire? What is God's love? What is humankind's situation? What is God's heart? What is humankind's heart? The Unification Church has appeared to do that. It must teach about that kind of world. If it can teach that, and it teaches one thousand people, ten thousand people, all the people, then, even if the world did not want to unite, it could not help but unite. (151-209, 1962.12.15)

1.2. The church is an extension of the family

Those who say they go to church for someone else's sake, for their beloved sons and daughters or for their beloved husband or wife, will not be able to go further. They should go to church for God's sake. You should go to church to attend God as your own God and to find God's love as your own love. (8-162, 1959.12.6)

A public church is more precious than your own home. (15-271, 1965.10.24)

You can reach the Kingdom of Heaven through the church. The family must

pass through the church. So the church is a foundation for families to bring victories, a place where family laws emerge, a place where nobility of character is recognized, and it is a training ground for the Kingdom of Heaven. (The Way of the Spiritual Leader - 238)

Some say they must witness to those who are handsome and young, but that is absurd. The church is the extension of our family. There should be grandmothers and grandfathers, aunts and uncles, and young people. If there were only young people in the Unification Church, it would be sick. This must be quickly corrected. You should know how to attend your elders. Your grandmother and grandfather represent God; your mother and father are your parents; and with you and your children this makes four stages in all. Your grandparents, your parents and you are three stages.

Our lives are such that we cannot break away from this fate. Grandparents, parents, and children make up three stages. You need to draw four lines to make three stages. This constitutes the number seven. You cannot have three stages without connecting these four lines together. Without connecting these, one another's paths will randomly cross. In order to have three stages, these must be connected. (70-149, 1974.2.9)

In church life, the one not standing in a position recognized by God cannot lead a life representing God in his social life. Therefore, the question is whether we are people who can be recognized by God within our church life. When we look at the attitude of our church members about the time for church meetings, we see they are not serious. Because your views about the public meetings of the church are vague, your understanding about the direction that God's will is taking is also vague. Since you do not understand precisely what internal position you should stand in, you do not have a clear external standard. (22-36, 1969.1.19)

If you look at some people, you see that they do well in church life but not so well in social life. On the other hand, you see others who do well in social life but not so well in church life. Those who do well in social life but not so well in church life do not possess the important factors and contents to bear fruit. Between those who do well in the church but not in social life, and those who do well in social life but not in the church, the person who does well in church life is better. Those who are equipped with the important factors enabling fruition can move forward with tomorrow's hope, but those who are not, cannot bear fruit. (36-20, 1970.11.8)

You should find and establish a standard that enables you to prove that you are God's child through your lineage, through the truth, through your life, and through your work. Without doing so, going to church and engaging in a life of faith would be nothing more than the life of an errand boy. (3-40, 1957.9.15)

If you consider the triangular rela-

tionships among the family, church, and society, should your focus be on the family? Should it be on the church? Or should it be on the society for your own success? Think about it. For which person would God have more compassion and understanding? Thinking of the church means loving people as God does. It also means bringing salvation to the people. (42-169, 1971.3.4)

In order to become a person of character, systematic training is required. You must experience group activities in the church. In other words, the question is whether or not you can go through a holistic ideology or system. The church should be that gate. (9-8, 1960.3.13)

If you compare all your social habits until now with your entire life in the church, your church life is more internal. How much have you established a standard of value in your internal life? Some say they are going their way centering on God's will and believe arbitrarily, "What I am doing now will become God's will." Do you think God would dwell in such a person? (22-38, 1969.1.19)

If a person opposing the Unification Church comes and shares a meal at the church, you should still be able to send him off smiling. You should never be stingy with regard to food when dealing with anyone. Even if someone who is not a member comes, you should offer him food; do not reject him. I say this because I know that people have come here from the eight provinces of Korea, whether or not they are Unification Church members, and shared their food with us. (37-329, 1971.1.1)

People like babies the most and dislike grandmothers and grandfathers who are closer to death the most. They are at opposite ends of the pole. Heavenly activities win over both sides. You should strive to become one with children. You should also have grandmothers and grandfathers come with their canes, spend time, and eat with you. If you can do this, wherever you are will prosper. If you can become friends with grandmothers and grandfathers to the extent that they become crazy about you and, instead of sleeping in their nice houses with beautiful gardens and wooden flooring, they come to the churchyard and sleep there, then that place, that organization, the place with such serving people will, as a rule, prosper. (60-158, 1972.8.17)

If a grandmother comes and asks, "Is the church leader here?" and you look at her and reply, "No, he's not here," you will be punished. Just see what happens when she asks, "Where did the church leader go?" and you answer, "Why do you ask, grandmother? We have no need for an old grandmother." God will scold you saying, "You good-for-nothing! Where did you come from?" Denying aged grandmothers and grandfathers is the same as denying your mother and father. That is why you can only be a devoted son when you serve and support

your aged parents and grandparents. (56-38, 1972.5.10)

Section 2. Worship Is the Greatest Ceremony that Shows Reverence to God

2.1. The time of worship is a time to meet God

What is the purpose of sacredly observing the Sabbath? It is to bring salvation to humankind and to find the nation of God's desire. The reason Christianity has sacredly observed the Sabbath was in order to elevate itself and focus its efforts on magnifying the goal of salvation. The purpose of our observing the Sabbath is to promote the path to our salvation. Furthermore, it is to increase the importance of the goal of world salvation and of seeking the nation and world of God's providence. You should know that this is a higher dimension of God's desire. (69-240, 1973.12.30)

The time for worship is the time for offering. You should make atonements for your past before God. Hence, the time for worship is a time without freedom. (11-163, 1961.6.24)

The time for worship blocks the advancement of all of Satan's authority and is a time of promising the Father that you will return the glory of victory to Him. (6-263, 1959.6.7)

The time for worship is a place more serious than when you meet your enemy in battle. (9-296, 1960.6.12)

The amount of time you come early for church service will be offered to God. Thus, its value cannot be exchanged or bought with any amount of gold. The time for worship is an offering to God. Hence, to come late to service is stealing from God.

You should be on time for service. By doing so, you can stand before God with dignity. Then you can come closer to heaven with a heart better than that of yesterday. However, if you come late, even when you pray, you will sit there blinking your eyes wondering, "What is Father going to talk about?" When I see you sitting there like that, you look pitiable beyond measure. (36-125, 1970.11.22)

When you are seeking God, can you attend church without wearing holy robes? I'm not talking about external robes. I'm talking about the holy robes of your heart. For those gathered here, if inspiration wells up inside your heart through the sermon and hymns, Heaven will work with you.

When the fallen ancestors were expelled from the Garden of Eden, they were shedding tears as they left. You should be able to shed tears of joy in such a way that you can meet God with a smile on your face. Nevertheless, those who have not first shed tears of God's sorrow cannot shed tears of joy. (9-296, 1960.6.12)

You should be preparing with an eager heart three days before worship

service. You should enter the gates of the church while passionately praying for the happiness of all people, so that they may connect to the authority of resurrection and life. You should attend service with a heart that is full of emotion for God. Yet this will not be enough. Instead, you are more brazen than a traveling salesman. (20-284, 1968.7.7)

For Sunday service you should purify yourself by bathing, offer a deep bow before God, and go to the holy ground to pray. Although people may not come, you must lay the foundation of heart enabling God to look kindly upon your village and work with you. You are never lonely when you pray alone with tears in front of God. God is with you; you will never be lonely. If no one is restored from that village after you have totally devoted yourself for more than three years, that place will go to ruin. (17-293, 1967.2.15)

Even when you come to the service, instead of coming thoughtlessly, you should have invested your invisible heart and offered devotion for more than two days. The longer you do so, the more you will shine. For this reason, the greater your heart is, the more Heaven will protect and shield you.

If the wife thinks all day about her husband with her invisible mind and then smiles with her visible face, a light of glory will shine through. That smiling face has a captivating power that draws her husband near. It follows the same logic. (228-84, 1992.3.15)

In the future, the messages during service will be given in the form of reports rather than sermons. Families should report about things of which they are proud. The entire family must come and offer worship. The reports of successful families will serve as an example; less successful families, by following this example, will be guided toward success. In this way, the family Kingdom of Heaven will be built. Without building the Kingdom of Heaven in the family, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth will not be established. (23-62, 1969.5.11)

First, you should be meticulous in your church life. For this, you should strictly observe the official hours for worship. You should be a good example by attending service at the official hour. (31-269, 1970.6.4)

You should be strict in keeping your promise to attend God. How can someone who does not keep his promise receive grace? Such a person would fall away from the path. From now on, I will guide you as you move. If you do not like it, you may quit. Let us see who will be the one to perish. (11-133, 1961.3.26)

You should be a good example by attending Sunday service and official church gatherings. In coming to service, husbands and wives should come together lovingly so their children will follow them because they envy their parents' devotion. You should come to church before ten o'clock and prepare for Sunday service. (21-87, 1968.11.3)

Church service is a time for battling Satan. It is a showdown. How can you sleep at this time? If there is such a person, you should shake him awake. Just as Jesus said to Peter, "Get behind me, Satan!" you should strike him on the side. That is love. I will not allow anyone to sleep during service. (15-121, 1965.10.3)

Is it right for people who offer devotion to be late for service? Such people should be so ashamed that they cannot show their faces. They should feel that they are the greatest of all sinners. They must pledge to be on time and offer even greater devotion than others. How can you pray, "Oh! Heaven most high!" when you do not even come on time! Your devotion is not for others to observe. If you want to offer devotion at church, you should come to church on foot, rather than by car. You should not just come here and pray. Rather, you should pray before coming and then come here to pray even more earnestly. This is how you should offer devotion. (42-235, 1971.3.14)

Heaven relates to those who earnestly yearn for God. God does not randomly visit anyone. Therefore, you should, at least, absolutely be on time. From now on, if you are not on time, I will have you stand in the front and make you feel ashamed. (11-133, 1961.3.26)

I should lock the doors after service begins. I do not want to gather and talk to people who come late. I gather people here and talk for two or three hours in order to raise them up to a certain standard. Only then can I maintain the standard of heart that I set while praying with determination before God. (11-132, 1961.3.26)

Time is more important than anything else when coming before God. If you cannot be on time, you will fail. If you fail to connect to the right time, you will perish. God demands a sanctified environment and an utmost pure heart, but you cannot even be on time, and when late you sit in the back and sing praises. God does not want such praise. (11-132, 1961.3.26)

You should keep the official time for services. Then you will surely prosper. (31-268, 1970.6.4)

2.2. Early morning and evening services, and all-night vigils

Concentrate on evening services. (10-249, 1960.10.21)

You should hold all-night vigils at church on Saturday nights. (17-347, 1967.5.11)

From now on, many gatherings will be held at night. This is because we have to break up the realm of darkness. In order to do this, you should have a serious and sincere heart. (11-247, 1961.11.1)

Witness and bring people to the evening service. Unless you do so, the dignity of the church will not stand. You

should be at service before the one who is leading the service. (10-250, 1960.10.21)

Some may say, "We should sleep as long as we want like others, eat our fill and then come here and sit comfortably to attend service. Why do we hold it so early? Why do we have early morning service?" It is because we must be different from others. You must not be the same as other religious groups or people of faith. We must be different from others. (84-194, 1976.2.29)

I will set this tradition of gathering you at three in the morning for a year or so, without letting you sleep. It is not right for people to become lazy. It is not right to become comfortable. There would be no growth in a comfortable world. Therefore, no matter what nation it is, if it goes through a new revival and yet becomes conceited and self-absorbed, it will come to ruin. (51-280, 1971.11.28)

Although you should work during the daytime, religious work should be done at night as well. It is more effective at night. It is also effective to teach in the early morning. So, you should spiritually inspire a new guest so much that he decides to escape from his home, sweeping aside all obstacles. You should become like that. How can there be results without motivation? If you have not been able to do it, from now on you should work harder and do better. You should make it possible by coming up with something creative. (97-196, 1978.3.15)

Try conveying the Word till after midnight and until you hear the crow of the first rooster. How mysterious it is! Try conveying the Word as you listen to the barking of dogs in the neighborhood in the quiet, tranquil night. You will feel as if you have broken through on a new path of life in search of the bright sunlight; you will feel like the captain of a ship who determines anew to find the lighthouse. You will experience a sense of valor, pride, and majesty as if you were alone in this world filled entirely with mysteries of all kinds.

In order to have that bond of heart, you should give guidance during the nighttime. It is necessary to conduct such activities during the night or at dawn. (29-196, 1970.2.28)

Night, the deep night, has a strong mysterious quality. Therefore, you feel more grace during a nighttime revival than you would in a daytime revival. The reason is that in the daytime all our senses are dispersed and unfocused. In other words, sight, hearing, and all other senses through which we can perceive are easily distracted.

However, at night they are not like that, but on the contrary become focused. At night, everything focuses on me by surrounding me, and in such a realm I come to stand naturally. For that reason, during the nighttime, it is easier for me to work with God when He is bestowing His grace. God, too, can work more easily. (29-196, 1970.2.28)

When you wake up in the early morn-

ing you should pray, so that your life in the coming day can become an embodiment of gratitude in front of Heavenly Father. You should make the determination to become the embodiment of God's hope in a flower-filled spring garden that Heavenly Father can raise and use for His providence.

In the afternoon, which is like summer, you should be resolved at work to develop yourself a step further as you grow to become a valuable being in whom God can dwell.

When it becomes evening, which resembles the autumn time of cultivation, you should determine and pray in front of God that you will stand in the position of an offering. And at night, which is comparable to the winter season, you should pray that by possessing the energy of life, you will establish the intrinsic father–son relationship with God, and thus become a person who realizes his or her full value. If there is a person who turns all 365 days of the year into days of victory and gratitude, then that person will feel that a give-and-take relationship with God is truly the most worthy life. (29-340, 1970.3.14)

The reason you do not notice that time is passing is because you are intoxicated in God's love. It was common in the early days of the Church for me to stay up all night talking or listening to the members. (97-307, 1978.3.26)

I am saying that you should not calculate your sleeping time and think, "Since I did not sleep enough yesterday, I had better make it up today." Yet that is what you do, right? It is the same when you think, "Since I am fasting on Sunday morning, I had better eat more on Saturday evening." On the contrary, it is better for you not to fast, because if you eat more for dinner the night before a fast, you will become hungrier. After your stomach has stretched from a full dinner and then is empty the next morning and you feel hungrier, well, then what? (44-161, 1971.5.6)

Section 3. Attitude of a Church Leader

3.1. Church leaders must practice a public life

The person who is a leader of more than a thousand people has been evaluated and approved by the spirit world. (18-223, 1967.6.9)

One does not start out as a central figure with confidence. I, too, have never thought myself as being confident. I realized that before I liked myself, I had to like God and I had to like the one whom God was seeking. How to possess this kind of heart was my endeavor. If I have that heart, there is nothing that is impossible. You must have a mind to make people happier and console the sorrowful person. (70-170, 1974.2.9)

The true shepherd does not say he is the true shepherd. He always quietly embraces God's will and the entire universe in his heart and goes out; he

does not make excuses. (3-210, 1957.11.1)

After working hard for the public purpose, you might fall asleep without realizing how tired you are, and yet in the morning you would wake up totally refreshed. From this experience you realize, "Ah, this is the principled way of life!" But if you think, "Well, I slept only three and a half hours last night. Therefore, I should sleep at least six hours," your entire body will feel as though it weighs a thousand or even ten thousand pounds and you will have pain all over. That is why I tell you not to have such thoughts. (44-160, 1971.5.6)

A leader should not be the first to lie down no matter how tired he may be. He should lie down only after everyone else has lain down. He should be the last to finish praying. Even in his life of faith, he should offer devotion without food, clothes, and shelter. Such is the position of a leader. If he can live that way, he will not perish. (33-169, 1970.8.11)

I am at a loss for words before a devoted person. As leader of the Unification Church, when I am considering which of two people is better, I do not take into account who is handsome, but rather I look at the direction of their mind. In other words, I see whether their mind is public or personal. (31-260, 1970.6.4)

Even when you take your first step in the morning, you should think whether or not it is for the public purpose. And when you go to bed after finishing your daily work, you should reflect on whether or not the day was spent for the public or personal purpose. Furthermore, looking back at the past twelve months of your life or your entire past life, you should reflect on whether or not you led a public life or a personal one. (39-76, 1971.1.9)

The person who is in a public position is pitiful. What if, even though he does his best, he makes a mistake in following God's will and a thousand years of merit goes wrong? He lives with such a serious heart. (46-55, 1971.7.18)

We cannot drift along day by day as months pass. If we are not focused on preparing for the new day's advance, then we will become prey for vultures here in the wilderness. (135-279, 1985.12.15)

We are historical pioneers. The pioneer must break through difficult surroundings and advance with a prepared attitude toward a hopeful tomorrow. (The Way of a Spiritual Leader - 63)

Once you take the responsibility, the next thing is to fight and struggle. You must go through a struggle of life and death. In that battle, you should lay the foundation to bring at least three people who oppose you to natural submission during your lifetime. (14-13, 1964.4.19)

You must first have ideological knowledge and then faith that it will work. If your thoughts and faith do not come up to a certain level, then you cannot claim

them and they can easily be taken away by someone else. The foundation that I have accomplished and strengthened, and the ground that has roots that are firmly planted, can never be taken away except by the application of a strength and faith that is greater than them. (19-39, 1967.12.24)

What type of heart must you have before taking on responsibility? You must have the determination to exchange your life if you cannot accomplish the responsibility. In that case, a solution will emerge that resolves the core of the problem. (19-142, 1968.1.1)

When you can say, "I have done all that I could have done as a human being. Day and night I have offered my entire heart and extreme dedication," and God can see you are leaving after having done everything you could, even though you could not complete your mission, then God will return to you in excess of your effort. You should know these things. (56-33, 1972.5.10)

A church leader is like the high priest of that region. You must pray for the people even if you lose sleep. Since you must make offerings in order to save the people, you have to give your full devotion. In an offering, the high priest and God must become one for there to be a response. (9-80, 1960.4.12)

Who must take charge of the religious service? The high priest must. It is not right if a guest takes responsibility for the service. For this reason, you cannot prosper if you do not take a formal gathering seriously. (17-293, 1967.2.15)

It is heavenly law for participants to bow in front of offerings. God comes down to that altar and intervenes. God will help only when you offer all your passion, strength, and effort, and when you speak with more sincerity than you have ever shown in your lifetime. (60-347, 1972.8.18)

Offerings should be made with a serious mind and commitment. Can blessings be given to those who go to their grave after a life of comfort, abundant food, laughter, and dance? Only grass would grow on the graves of such people. But on the graves of those who died shedding blood for the nation, flowers will bloom as long as that nation remains. (46-347, 1971.8.17)

It is not easy to be the teacher of the Unification Church. It is extremely difficult. It feels the same as wearing a prisoner's uniform and walking toward the execution chamber, and yet I am walking that path. You probably do not understand because you have never spent time in prison.

I live in a well-appointed mansion, but I do not need it. I have been trained to live in a hut. I can just as easily live there. I have trained myself to become the best laborer; I can remove my jacket and work on a construction site. If there was someone in prison whom God loved, then I trained my heart to hold

on to him, maintain complete dominion over the environment, and become a friend with whom he could shed tears. (85-43, 1976.3.2)

3.2. Devotion and sincerity must be invested to guide members

You should feel the same heart of longing for members as you felt for your first love. (The Way of a Spiritual Leader - 290)

You should stay up all night making devoted efforts to raise core members. If you can offer this effort for three days, they will bond with you and feel grace that will stay with them throughout their lives. If you witness with strong determination, feeling that time is too short, and become anxious when your guests leave because it is late, then the spirit world will cooperate with you. (23-249, 1969.5)

You must first be absolutely dedicated to God's will in order to convey it to others. (23-249, 1969.5)

You should go through indescribable hardships in raising members, just as I have done. If you have a guest at night, you should ask on bended knees for heaven's blessings for that person. For guests who come during the day, you should invite them into the living room and receive them more warmly than you would your own relatives. You should establish a family tradition such that you can say, "Our home is such a home." If you establish such a family tradition, who would those people live for? Would people with a tradition of warmly receiving others let their church leader starve? Those who let their church leader starve and still ask for blessings should have their mouths filled with sand. (60-308, 1972.8.18)

Even when you talk through the night, you should make it interesting. When you talk past twelve midnight until two or three in the morning and you think, "I wish they would leave. I should get some sleep," they would all run away. Even when it is three or four in the morning, you should be thinking, "I hope they do not go. I wish that time would stop." When they return home after experiencing that situation, their spirit will realize how important it was. They will feel sorry and, immediately after eating, will want to go back. I have been working in this manner. (56-51, 1972.5.10)

Whenever we meet anyone, we must not think this is the end of things. Especially if we meet someone centering on God, we must never forget that relationship. Even if that person stops coming to the church, you should not cut him off or despise him. Even if that person falls away, you must never abandon the relationship that you have made with him. (42-162, 1971.3.4)

Therefore, never be discouraged if a member falls away. When a member falls away, a very interesting phenomenon occurs: A person who resembles that person's character, speech, and even

the way he walks, will join the church. From every angle, the new person who joins amazingly resembles the person who fell away, and yet he is much better. When you see such a phenomenon, you can understand that sincere investment and prayer are never lost. This is an absolute fact. (42-162, 1971.3.4)

If there is something bad, do not get rid of it right away. Even if there is something bad, you should deal with it, having the flexibility and capacity to find some conditions that will improve it while you keep the bad aspects on hold. If a person is cut off due to a mistake he made a year ago, then he may spiritually die completely. But if he is kept for one, two, or three years in the belief that the mistake is a secondary consideration, then after that time there may be a way for him to live. (72-313, 1974.7.14)

If you love the members who have just joined, then they can quickly set the condition for indemnity. The reason the church is not able to make progress is because this is not being done. This is the reason why God said to love each other and live in harmony. (18-40, 1967.5.15)

In the early years of our church, when I was raising members in Korea, I did not sleep at night. I employed a one-on-one strategy. When I was giving a lecture to one person, I imagined that I was giving it to an audience of a hundred or even a thousand people. I thought that that particular person could determine the lives of several thousands or even tens of thousands of people. If you want to have a person follow you, whatever your directions may be, you must invest yourself totally into creating such a motivation in that person. (96-284, 1978.2.13)

How many members with longing, yearning hearts have you met? I have met numerous such people. They visit from the ends of the earth to bow before me. Why is this? It is because I have already thrown the line of love, bonded in heart, to the ends of the earth, and because I have already sent an electrical current through it, they know the direction they have to go. That is how it should be. (171-30, 1987.12.5)

To become a leader, you must truly stand in the position of the doctor who cures the sick. If an ill person's spiritual situation begins to deteriorate, you will have to make an effort to cure that person's heart while you shed tears day or night, oblivious to time. That is a spiritual leader. How many nights have you stayed up trying to save lives? How busy have you been trying to save lives? If such deeds go up to the spirit world with you, then you will be the object of commendations and you will set an example of good character. (69-165, 1973.10.31)

3.3. Man-woman relationships and public money require strict discipline

From now on, there will be no forgiveness for problems with man-woman relationships. Don't even mention

forgiveness; God does not want to deal with this. What was the Fall? Didn't it occur because people failed to control themselves sexually? The greatest problems for people are the problems of food, clothing, shelter, sexual desire, and excessive desire for material things; these are the roots of sin. Those who fail to control these things will not become a leader. (194-87, 1989.10.17)

The greatest enemy is the problem that exists in man-woman relationships. Through this, the world came to ruin and the laws of heaven and earth were violated. I am stating clearly that those who are not confident about this should not participate in the Blessing. If you receive the Blessing and bring ruin and go to the spirit world, I will have nothing to do with you. It will not be my responsibility. Once caught, there is no escape. You should clench your teeth and never deviate. (120-220, 1982.10.16)

From now on, you must take extreme caution regarding the relationship between man and woman. Those who have exchanged words with the opposite sex, saying that they like each other, can never become leaders. That should never be allowed to happen. (67-55, 1973.5.20)

You have to be clear about man-woman relationships. Leaders should strictly follow this principle. Unless they do, they will be misunderstood. They will have no way to excuse themselves. There will never be a way out for you if you are caught with this problem. (66-226, 1973.5.12)

The problems in the relationship between man and woman have always been connected to religion. Spiritual groups have always been faced with the problems of man-woman relationships. Why is that so? It is because when Eve fell, she was dealing with her husband Adam and the archangel.

Hence, in the Last Days, women are destined to discern between good and evil in their relations to two men. When a man joins a religion and disciplines himself, at the final summit, a beautiful woman will appear before him to tempt him. If he succumbs to this, he will fall off a cliff into a bottomless abyss. (138-286, 1986.1.24)

You church leaders are raising your own children. You should not do anything that goes against your conscience, nor should you use public money recklessly. It would be better just to starve. If you starve, heaven and earth will have sympathy for you. There is no one who would not sympathize to see people going hungry. When children are starving, they need to be fed.

It is human nature to feel compassion for those who are near death. For this reason, when a murderer is about to be executed, he is granted one last wish. That is why I believe we should have compassion for those in sorrow and difficulties. (60-162, 1972.8.17)

Even among the leaders of the Uni-

fication Church, there are those who might misuse public money or material things. They might be tempted to use public money to take care of their children out of sympathy for them. Misusing money tramples the hearts of others. This is the same as supplying your children with poison. There is no doubt about it. This will become a condition through which the satanic world will accuse these leaders. What shall we do about public money? How will things be decided and managed? In the future, the leaders of the Unification Church must reform. (46-95, 1971.7.25)

The most fearsome laws among the laws of the spirit world are those regarding the embezzlement of public funds and unkind treatment of a person in a public position. These are the most fearsome laws. When a leader or a person sent by God is treated unkindly, the nation and world will be judged. (96-154, 1978.1.3)

You should not be careless with material things in your daily life; you should take care in handling public money. Just because you received promotion to a higher position does not give you the right to arbitrarily change the personnel. If you misuse public money, you will be judged by the constitution of the heavenly kingdom. After your promotion, you may find the children of your enemy in the place you enter. If you send them off to a place of misery or death, you will be in trouble. (196-235, 1990.1.1)

When I use public money, I do so with consideration for the whole. (19-266, 1968.2.19)

From now on, you have to be thorough in distinguishing between public and private matters. Public money is poison let loose by Satan. You will be ruined if you misuse public money. Public money causes all kind of problems. Treacherous servants emerge from there. They bring their nation to ruin and even sell their nation. (33-172, 1970.8.11)

I cannot arbitrarily use this money that I made with my sweat and blood. The day I do, my relatives eight times removed and my ancestors will be accused. This is a fearful thing. I see it as money with God's seal on it. Civil servants are punished if they embezzle the nation's funds. However, God's wrath will be upon those who misappropriate the heavenly funds on which He has placed His seal. (85-209, 1976.3.3)

Section 4. Sermons Must Bestow Grace and Inspiration

4.1. The practice of giving sermons

Sermons should be given with the same intensity of feeling as a woman who is in childbirth. You must focus all your attention there. When you stand before the podium, you must feel like a pregnant woman on her way to the delivery room. If you reach that level, you need no preparation. The content of your sermon is not the issue. The issue

is whether your heart has reached that level. (96-168, 1978.1.3)

During sermon time, a boundary is created that decides who enters heaven and hell. If someone comes to our church thinking, "I've always wondered about the Unification Church, let's see how it is!" but then is disappointed with the sermon, saying, "What kind of sermon is that?" it is the same as cutting that person's throat. Giving sermons should be a serious occasion, even more so than when a judge passes sentence in court. (96-169, 1978.1.3)

The most difficult thing for a person to do is to speak in front of others. When you stand before people and speak to them, everyone pays attention to you. They all listen or criticize or judge for themselves. That is why it is very difficult for anyone to speak in front of many people. (39-150, 1971.1.10)

Church leaders must always supplement their sermons and supply whatever members need or anything that can be of assistance to them. (56-12, 1972.5.10)

Without having deep experiences, spiritual leaders cannot do their work. They may prepare their lectures by referring to books and give their sermons based on books, but is God within those books? He is not. God exists as a divine spirit, and your sermons will not be effective if you do not connect to His spirit. (76-151, 1975.2.2)

When you give a sermon, if the members know you have already given a sermon with that title before, they will not like it. It is similar to the desire of people wishing to feel the change of seasons. People are not always happy just because it is morning. There are days of depression even when there are few worries.

Even though it is such a nice and invigorating day, you can still feel depressed. Then what do you do to get over this? If there is no stimulus to help bring about this change quickly, go and find a more depressing place. By going to such a place and putting yourself into an environment that is contrary to yours, you can find new stimulus. You can also supplement your current state by creating a new stimulus through which you can directly overcome your situation. If you cannot find solutions and manage your everyday life, you will not be able to offer spiritual guidance to many others. (30-126, 1970.3.21)

You need to offer something fresh. You have to inspire them somehow. Supplement this with prayer if necessary. If that still fails, you should place your life on the line to make a difference. (30-126, 1970.3.21)

If you give an ill-prepared sermon and no one receives inspiration from it, even if you give all your strength and there is still no result, you must come back and spend some time wailing regretfully. It is a shameful thing. You must feel ashamed. That is how you develop yourself. (96-168, 1978.1.3)

When you eat rice in the morning, you eat new rice, right? There must be some fresh flavor. In the same way, you must give new things. From a spiritual aspect, you should supply something new, like a health supplement, and add flavor to it. You would have to add seasoning to give it a new taste, a sour taste, a salty taste, or even a bitter taste. (75-176, 1975.1.2)

If you gave a sermon for one hour without giving any inspiration, you have to repent for three hours. This should be clear to you. If you give a poorly delivered sermon and you do not inspire them, you have to repent in excess of three times that time period.

As for any life form, water and care must be given. But if you do not give it water, and instead take water away and overturn the planted soil, you will be responsible for that. Even after the audience has left, you must bless them and pray for them centering on that day's speech. (160-194, 1969.5.12)

You may want to say on Sunday, "Where in the Bible shall we read from? Break out the hymns! Break out the Holy Songs!" Do not do this. This is not what you should do. Center your words on your knowledge of people; use real life resources and relate them to comparable passages in the Bible. Give an interesting sermon that compares personal experiences with the content of the Bible. Then the mind of that listener will be completely blown away. When he hears about his own experiences, he will like it. Do not attempt to do it by looking at books. Books come from people as well. You must know that people themselves are the original books. (46-284, 1971.8.17)

Church leaders should undergo many hardships. They should go through a lot of life training. They need to experience the lives of a poor laborer, a beggar, a top executive, even someone with the highest authority. Then, with all those experiences in such a public position, your testimonies will be more real. (160-194, 1969.5.12)

4.2. Sermons of True Father

I spend more time praying for members than praying for the sermon itself. I pray with sincere investment: "Heavenly Father! What must I do to raise these people? Is it this or is it that?" Then I give the sermon as my mind directs. (9-81, 1960.4.12)

There has never been a time when I prepared for a sermon; preparation came through daily life. When speaking from life experiences, it is impossible for it not to touch the hearts of everyone there. (16-345, 1966.10.14)

One time I had to dig a tunnel at Hamheung. We became so hungry while we were working that I could not lift the tool that my hand was grasping. We were on the verge of collapse. When we heard "Lunch time!" you cannot imagine how wonderful that sounded to our ears or the feeling of that moment

of being able to eat after laboring with pick and shovel. Oh, that rice! I have had countless such experiences that serve as raw materials of a living history. (30-152, 1970.3.21)

These miserable situations in the path of restoration are not things that destroy me, but things that will be glorified in history. So I must go on until the day comes when I can gather all of God's hidden treasures. I could speak for one hour on any subject. But if I spoke for only ten minutes on this topic, and these suffering experiences were revealed to the people of the world, everyone would break out in tears. Where can we find a sermon topic that is better than that? (30-152, 1970.3.21)

If you have an intimate relationship with God, do not worry that you did not prepare for your sermon. You need that kind of experience as well. Even when I meet famous people and must speak up to ten times a day, I must talk about different things each time.

But do I prepare for each and every one? My heart at those times is to completely have the consciousness of an offering. There is no "I." There is no concept of my existence. There is no sense of having possessions. Heaven is with us when we stand in a position of absolute dedication. (60-348, 1972.8.18)

You must always be aware of what direction I am taking. If you fall into step with me, it will be the most effective thing for your sermons. It becomes a motive for you to give inspiration.

The problem is trying to find out why I am doing a certain thing. In order to meet my level of heart, you must lift up your heart and think about how you will go in my place and represent me. If all of you move in unison as an object to me, then heavenly fortune will come. (60-349, 1972.8.18)

When you give sermons on Sunday, you must be serious. If I were you, I would not get any sleep. How could one sleep? Giving a sermon is like giving an injection in order to save other people's lives. It is the same as giving a rejuvenation shot. We need to give members one week's worth of medication and rejuvenation shots. You must lead from the serious position of a doctor who gives a shot to a patient who is on the brink of death. That is why when you go to the podium; it is like going to the place of execution. (75-176, 1975.1.2)

You should be sweating when you give a sermon. Sweat should be running down your spine. It has to be done with tears and sweat. This is an ironclad rule. (160-194, 1969.5.12)

There is no need to worry about your sermons. There are over two hundred volumes of the sermons I have given during the course of my life. When you have an interview in the spirit world, will you say, "I never saw them or read them." I won't even translate them into English. It is a serious matter if you go to the spirit world without reading these.

It is a serious problem if leaders do not read these. (173-76, 1988.1.3)

Section 5. Offering Donations in Accordance with Heavenly Law

5.1. Ways of tithing

You must be strict with public funds. You should be thorough in your tithing. You should offer one-tenth of your total income to God without fail. (11-218, 1961.8.26)

By offering a tithe from your material possessions to God, you can establish a condition equal to having offered all that you have. Even if you do not offer everything to God, offering a portion of it with all of your heart and mind will enable the rest to be considered holy. The person who tithes will never perish. As days go by, his storage room will be filled with more material blessings. (31-239, 1970.6.4)

You will never starve if you can tithe with sincere devotion. As a rule, your descendants will never suffer for want of material things. Invest your devotion in offering tithes; this is the essence of faith. Just offering it in a mediocre way will not work. An offering is something that you offer on behalf of your life. That is why you should offer the thing that is most important to you. (63-338, 1972.10.22)

To make certain indemnity conditions, material things are required. The reason we are supposed to offer tithe to heaven lies here. The number nine is a number of the fallen world; the number ten is the number representing the heavenly world as well as the number shedding the number nine. (10-217, 1960.10.14)

Among the twelve tribes of Israel, eleven tribes had to offer tithes to the altar governed by the tribe of Levi. From now on, you are not a member if you do not tithe. You should offer three-tenths of your income: one-tenth for the nation, one-tenth for the world and one-tenth for the church.

It is absolutely essential to tithe in our daily lives as we go this way. You should not consider your income your own or use it as your own. The reason is that the number nine, three times three equals nine, has been governed by Satan so far.

If the number nine is returned and connected to God on the earth where Satan is the master, God can have dominion over that number. In this way, God can restore the number ten. Thus, if you believe in God and bring the number nine, all possessions within the realm of the number nine can be separated from the realm of Satan. That is how the term "tithe 10 percent" came into being. (150-218, 1961.4.15)

We who are on the course of going through the providence of restoration should be determined not only to fulfill the condition of donating one-tenth of our income but even three-tenths. One-tenth of your income should be offered to your nation, the second tenth to the

people of the world. It must be offered in the course of restoration. The last third should be offered to the heavenly kingdom. People who are given responsibility from heaven should never violate the condition of tithing. At the same time, you should meet all the duties of filial piety. (150-218, 1961.4.15)

When you make a donation, you should not use money left over after purchasing something to eat. That money is defiled. Furthermore, God would not be present when a donation is made with change after purchasing things at the market. (48-86, 1971.9.5)

You should not use leftovers for sacrificial offerings. Leftovers are defiled. A person of grace would immediately recognize it. That is why I prevent you from going to impure places. (30-133, 1970.3.21)

In the future, everything should belong to the world. At the same time, everything should belong to the worldwide God, the worldwide True Parents, and the worldwide True Children. We are responsible to restore everything to such a position. This is what you should realize thoroughly. (23-336, 1969.6.15)

Making an offering for the maintenance of the church after dealing with your own expenses first sounds extremely good, but it is bad. Making an offering to God should be the first priority in life, before thinking of your own life. Thinking that you are offering a percentage of your income can easily lead to a habit of putting your life first, before God. If God is placed as a second priority, He will later end up being in the last place. Do you think it will become like that or not? (96-101, 1978.1.2)

When you make a donation on Sunday at the church, if children say: "Mommy, Daddy, money for donation, please...." would you say, handing any old bill, "Here, this is for your Sunday school." Is God a beggar? Is the church minister a beggar too? The church and the minister should not be treated that way. You should offer the core of your property for donations. You should prepare with a sincere heart and keep the donations deep in your safe until the time of offering.

In the fall, when you harvest grains, a tithe from what you reap must be separated and stored in a separate barn. Then, during the year, your children and relatives should gather together and humbly offer that tithe with sincerity and love. (166-71, 1987.5.28)

Do not ask for your money back after making an offering. It is not proper. All that matters is if the money is used for a higher purpose by the person responsible. It will not be used for a lower purpose. It does not have to be used for all of you. (125-188, 1983.3.20)

God is the Creator of the universe as the omnipotent and omniscient being. Do you think that God, as such a being, would be pleased if some church members offered money as if they were

giving to a beggar? Would God say, "Ah, blessed are those who made a donation to me. You are such a beloved religious group of people!"? How could He save His face before Satan? If a donation basket is being circulated in the church as an act of a beggar holding the sign of a church, God would not be happy with it. (96-101, 1978.1.2)

You make donations to me, but I do not receive it. My policy is not to receive. What did you do to get that money before making that donation? Unless I know that, and stand in a position where I am not ashamed of it, I cannot receive it. Since I have such a mentality, God desires to give and give more. (51-276, 1971.11.28)

You should clearly understand that when you handle donations and offerings that were given with heart, you will be judged by them if you do not recognize their value. Even a king can perish if he errs in his conduct as a king, in other words, if he has mistreated someone who is dedicated to God. If he mistreats that person, he will be considered a traitor to heaven. For this reason, I do not treat lightly the person who offers with their heart. (18-143, 1967.6.4)

If you value your own personal property more than the public's, you are violating heavenly law. If you value your personal integrity more than public integrity, it is against heavenly law. (51-291, 1971.11.28)

Today, what would you call the way of collecting donations in most Christian churches? They circulate bags for the donations. In the Unification Church, do you receive donations in that fashion? Do you collect using some kind of mesh strainer? Before people leave, you should place the donation boxes at the entrance. People will donate as an act of devotion and expression of your gratitude for having received grace from God. Those who do not want to donate will avoid those boxes. Heaven does not want such trifling sums of money. It must be money offered with devotion. You should not just donate the money you find in your mother's or father's pocket. You should keep the donation money for three days as sanctification and then offer it. Why are you thinking of donating an amount that is not even worth a meal for lunch? You should be offering your entire life's assets…. (166-319, 1987.6.14)

You should offer the first of anything to God. Pure things should be offered in front of God. God will not be with you unless you offer something pure. Your daily habits should be carried out in this way. (30-133, 1970.3.21)

You should offer something pure in which you have invested your utmost devotion as a tithe. That is a sacrificial offering. Sacrificial offerings should be something pure. If you are to offer your son, what kind of son should he be to you? Should he be a son you hate? A hopeless child? Such sons should not be offered as a sacrifice to God's purpose.

You must offer your most beloved son. Why is this so? It is because an offering is something that takes your place. (48-85, 1971.9.5)

What you should understand is that the things which you have owned so far, your material possessions, are not really your own; you are temporarily managing them. The things that you manage well should be offered to God through the True Parents. In other words, unless they go through the process of belonging to the True Parents and God, they cannot be yours. This you should clearly understand. (23-334, 1969.6.15)

From the principled standard of the course of restoration, we can see that the things of creation should have first belonged to the first human ancestors. They belong to God, of course, but when we consider the standard of the blessing God gave to humankind, we can see that they should have belonged to the first human ancestors. They should have belonged to parents of goodness untainted by the Fall. (23-330, 1969.6.15)

The Fall resulted from the desire for possessions, to have something of your own. Even when God and the Messiah come, if you continue with this desire, you will end up being on the side of Satan.

That is why you should follow the way of obedience. Yet, time and again, such chronic problems inherited from the fallen world have remained with us. What would you do if asked to use your possessions for God's sake? Even in my dreams, I have never said that the things I have earned belong to me. (107-207, 1980.5.1)

One of the main teachings of our philosophy is: mine is yours, and yours is the nation's, and the nation's is the world's, and the world's is God's, and God's is mine. The age of material blessings comes first, after which comes the age of blessings to humankind, which is followed by the age of blessings of the heart centered on God. (12-55, 1962.10.7)

We do not know how much the things of creation have contributed to restoring humankind. Yet, if the things of creation and humankind fail to become one, they cannot go to the Father. (23-326, 1969.6.15)

5.2. Tithing in our daily life

In terms of the life of tithing in the church, ten families in the church should support a church leader. Otherwise, you do not have the right to become a citizen of the heavenly kingdom. Ten people should support one heavenly person.

Tithing applies to every aspect of life. Even in a school, one in ten classrooms should be used for less fortunate children, to give them classes free of charge. From now on, you need to tithe not only your materials but also your time.

It is no longer only the material aspect like in the past. If you have ten family members, one family member should be offered to the public mission on behalf of your entire family. You should keep such

a standard. In the future, Unification Church members must not avoid tithing. Those who do not tithe will not be considered church members. Tithing is a duty, a heavenly duty. (150-218, 1961.4.15)

Since Sunday is a tithing day, it is not our personal day. It is a day when we need to obey, according to God's command. To use this day, which belongs to God, in whatever manner you please is a sin. One of your children should be offered to God. If not, you should educate someone else's child as if he or she is your own, and offer that child to God.

Even when you are eating a bowl of noodles, you should not eat alone. If you feel ashamed for eating alone as a person attending Heavenly Father, you should establish a condition of being with the Father by saying, "I am sorry to be eating alone in the presence of God who is with me." You should live with the heart of always treating the parents first. When you buy clothes, you should not do so only for yourself. You should live in this way. (150-218, 1961.4.15)

5.3. The indemnity fund

How will fallen people indemnify their sin of killing the parents and children and losing all things of creation? The money Judas received for selling Jesus was used to buy a plot of land for the burial of vagrants. Thus, we have to use the indemnity fund to prepare a house where church members can gather and stay. Originally, we should have bought a headquarters. Since the twelve disciples deserted Jesus, you should donate 12,000 won in four years. You should offer your most precious money for the indemnity fund. You are atoning for the sins of murdering the father and Abel by donating through this indemnity fund. For children, it is paying the price of the father's and the brother's blood. From now on, you should add to that fund and build a holy palace. (14-69, 1964.5.12)

You should make a devoted effort in offering the indemnity fund. You should offer it without assistance, by making a devoted effort and sacrificing what you like to eat and wear. This indemnity fund should become a tradition all our descendants must follow. When this is completed, the nation's fortune will turn. Although outwardly it may not be visible, a spring is boiling up within a bottomless pit and it has the power to explode whenever there is an opening. We should be able to take on the responsibility as "high priest and officiator of ceremonies" in offering this holy ritual unknown to others. (14-97, 1964.6.14)

Jesus, who came as the true father, was driven out from this world, and God's providence was blocked in all directions due to one person's deviant behavior. As a condition for indemnifying this, an amount of money pertaining to the number three should be returned to God over a course of four years, representing the actual value paid in betraying Jesus. Four years pertains to the four directions of north, south, east, and west. In Korea, members donate 12,000 won

on the condition of paying three thousand won each year over a course of four years. (22-188, 1969.2.2)

We should release the bitter grief of heaven and earth and bring down the fortifications that have been built on this earth. Then we should build a headquarters for those spiritual leaders who were sacrificed as they paved the way. This indemnity fund is for indemnity on a world level. You should offer the money you gathered while shedding blood and sweat for this fund. You should not pay from the deposits you have in the bank. (14-97, 1964.6.14)

The Lord has established the indemnity conditions of history and walked this path shedding blood. That is how he released the resentment of heaven and earth. But the children have not yet released this bitter grief. Thus, the indemnity fund is a condition to accomplish this. The parents have been victorious but the children were invaded. Therefore, on the foundation of the victorious parents, you should liberate the resentment that came about when the parent was sold off. There will be great leaps in development only when you offer the indemnity fund. Even though the children may have welcomed the Parents and possess heaven and earth, they must release the bitter grief drenched in the blood shed by the True Parents. (14-97, 1964.6.14)

Members should use their own initiative to make an offering to the indemnity fund. A new providence can only begin when you gain victory by establishing the conditions of indemnifying the bitter grief drenched in tears, sweat, and blood.

On the foundation of the people of this nation, you must break through the adverse circumstances on the national level. I wish for the Korean people to be the most pitiable race. Only when they are in the most miserable position can indemnity be paid without paying a price. That is why we are establishing indemnity conditions for the people. (14-73, 1964.5.23)

The indemnity fund is the most precious fund of all. There will be many untold stories in the process of preparing this fund. You should expect to face many difficult circumstances. (14-69, 1964.5.12)

Section 6. God Accepts Prayers for the Public Purpose

6.1. Greetings require protocol

A person of faith must pray for public matters and the greater good. (28-271, 1970.2.8)

Even when I spent almost three years in Heungnam prison, in the midst of great hardship, I never forgot to pray for the members each day before bedtime. I continuously prayed even for those who fell away. Then, a person like that appeared spiritually in front of me and spoke mournfully with tears. He sadly

confessed that due to the weakness of the flesh he had to leave me and said farewell. In such a miserable circumstance, I could not help feeling pity for him. Even though that person left in such a way, I had to continue to pray for him. Why? Since that person left without fulfilling his responsibility, until his successor appeared I had to pray for him.

As long as such a foundation of devotion exists, even if a member falls away, God will surely send a righteous person as a replacement. (42-163, 1971.3.4)

Even when I was tortured to the point where I threw up blood and collapsed, I prayed, "Dear Heavenly Father, please do not shed tears over my blood. This is going to be shameful blood, and any tears will be soaked in lamentations and resentment. I do not want heaven to sympathize." Therefore I did not pray for myself, even when I went into prison. In the light of the world of heart, this is what one must do. (26-20, 1969.10.14)

Isn't there a proper way of greeting people in this world? Even for prayer you should be aware of this. (The Way of God's Will)

If you go into a sanctified spiritual realm, you will feel that you should pray for God first. Then afterwards, you must also pray for Jesus; only after that will you understand the historical heart. Then you must pray on behalf of the multitude of people who fought for the great dispensational will in Christendom since the creation of heaven and earth. Following the footsteps of the innumerable prophets since the Fall of Adam and Eve, you must pray, "Please allow me to become an offering that can resolve all their sorrows." After that is all fulfilled, you can pray for your loving children and then pray for yourself. That is the way of heavenly law. (7-328, 1959.10.18)

You should shed tears and enter a serious state of mind that melts the bone marrow and calls for a one-to-one showdown. You should enter a state where you can have give and take with God with such an obedient mind that God cries when you cry and you cry when God cries. Whatever happens, you should be able to do that. To do so, you need to pray. You need a root and that root is prayer. (31-290, 1970.6.4)

When offering devotion, you must enter a position of absolute faith. You should enter the position where you have absolute faith in God and His will. God cooperates with you only when you are in such a position.

When you pray, you should not foolishly doubt whether your prayer will be answered or not. You should be able to pray, saying: "Father! I am the only one who remains. Without me, this nation and world will disappear. Oh Father! I alone remain in this state of commitment for the foundation, for which You have toiled for six thousand years. Am I not the only one who is close to Your will that will surely be fulfilled by You? Although my position is important as

such, I have not prepared myself yet. Still, you have given me the order. Thus, I will prepare myself with the conditions and foundations enabling me to follow that order, and I will represent this entire people. Isn't this Your providence for restoration?" Prayer is needed even for fulfilling goals. (31-290, 1970.6.4)

When you pray, you should first pray for the nation, then pray for the world, and then pray for the liberation of God. Do you think God is in a comfortable situation? Yet, without knowing what they should do and how the fortune of this world is changing, many people are just asking, "O Lord, please send me to heaven." (14-65, 1964.5.3)

As a leader, you must know how to follow this essential path of the Principle. Therefore, you must pray. Pray deeply about the relationship between you and God, thinking about how much God loves you. Also, you must pray and invest in members, reflecting on how deep are the relationships you have made with them. You must pray until the relationships become smooth and round. (70-171, 1974.2.9)

Those who have faith in religion just for their own benefit will abandon God after they receive blessings. That is because receiving blessings is their goal. After a while, they will fall away. You must pray from the viewpoint that seeks to find what God desires. Then we must pray to God to bestow blessings upon the whole world. (127-27, 1983.5.1)

To allow the teacher to really be a teacher, you must fulfill your responsibility. Even when you pray in front of God, you must create the environment in which you can openly pray, "Father, Your sons and daughters have come. The children You have wanted to meet have come." (11-132, 1961.3.26)

Whether or not someone is watching, you must do your work. We must be able to truly keep the promises we make with God. Only when you pray for the sake of the whole, night and day, will it become a living prayer. Then the content and subject of that prayer changes and you develop. You must know what kind of time we are living in. You must understand that you have to possess that kind of hidden aspect in life through your prayer life. (104-111, 1979.4.15)

That is why I like nature and treasure the time of solitude. I truly like the tranquility of the night. But I do not talk about these things. Still, wouldn't I have such interests? They are not apparent because I do not show them. You must know that establishing such a background foundation of richness of life is not possible without the way of prayer. (104-111, 1979.4.15)

Blessings do not exist elsewhere. Blessings come according to the state of your heart. For what do you pray and offer devotion? If a person who has been praying and offering devotion sees a crying child and then kicks it in the backside with his foot, his household

will surely go to ruin. If you had a beautiful and ardent prayer, you should deal with the environment with a fervent and beautiful heart. In a position reflecting the standard of your prayer, you should carry the mind-set enabling you to bear the fruit of your prayer.

Will the Christians of today go to the heavenly kingdom by attending worship and singing praise? No way! Would they be able to go to the heavenly kingdom if they start fighting, exchanging blows, and doing all sorts of things after coming back from church? (233-210, 1992.8.1)

6.2. Praying in the name of the True Parents

When you pray, you pray in the name of the True Parents. What are the parents? Do not think of this word only with regard to myself and True Mother; rather, think of the level of the True Parents in terms of the mother and father who can embrace the world at a higher level and truly love all people as one by transcending racial or national feelings. This is why I also pray in the name of the True Parents. (33-143, 1970.8.11)

Now is not the time for "I pray in the name of Jesus." Now is not the era of name salvation. It is the era of substantial salvation. Christians pray in the name of Jesus. However, True Father does not pray in that way. We need Jesus, not his name. Even though there are some tens of thousands of words for "Father," the substantial being is only one. Isn't that so? Therefore, should we go to the heavenly kingdom riding on the substantial being of Jesus or riding on the name only? (13-63, 1963.10.16)

The Unification Church does not pray in the name of Jesus. Those who recently joined the Unification Church would think, "Huh? What are True Parents? Why pray in the name of the True Parents?" Do you know the meaning of the True Parents? True Parents are the ancestors who did not suffer the Fall in the Garden of Eden, and of whom we can be proud for eternity in the midst of God's glory.

Because the first ancestors of humanity fell, there had to be new ancestors, and because God also works His providence centering on the new ancestors, we pray in the name of these new ancestors. It is very logical.

We should not pray through one person, Jesus; we should pray through Jesus and the Holy Spirit. Since Jesus is the spiritual father and the Holy Spirit is the spiritual mother, fallen humankind cannot pass to the Kingdom of Heaven without going through the relationship of parents. (20-268, 1968.7.7)

In the Unification Church, we do not pray in the name of Jesus. We go in search of parents. We call such parents the True Parents. We have to restore everything. Since people have not known that it had to be restored, you should straighten the cornerstone. If you allow this to remain slanted and live inside of it… when the hurricane comes everything will be destroyed. (48-228, 1971.9.19)

Section 7. Witnessing Is Searching for True Love

7.1. Witnessing is multiplying myself

What is witnessing? It is showing the way. It is showing how to return to God. Thus, how great it is! If you asked the original mind, "Where are you going to go?" it would reply, "Ah! Through this world, I must return to the heavenly kingdom." So how great is the task that paves the way! Receiving persecution, receiving one thing and another…. You have to return to heaven by passing through this world. (117-102, 1982.2.14)

If one can subjugate evil by offering one's life, God's love will come to that person. This is the formula. It is like the weights on a scale; if one side goes down, the other side goes up. If you eliminate more evil, good will increase; if evil increases, good will be reduced. God can give love to the extent that you eliminate evil.

Therefore, God demands that you love Him more than anyone else. The reason for His demand is that the more you love Him, the more you can receive His love. In other words, since you loved God, you can be loved by Him. (40-243, 1971.2.6)

We are about to welcome spring; then what is witnessing? What are you trying to accomplish through witnessing? It is a preparation to receive the summer. We are trying to usher in better days when branches sprout outwards and leaves grow thick, so that flowers can blossom and fruits be born.

How about the Unification Church? What would happen if you said, "Since I have done witnessing for three years, now I can go home and relax"? What would it be like? Even if that effort bears fruit, if you do not have the force of life that can surpass that, when the cold wind blows strongly down from the north, you will begin to wither and shrink. (159-18, 1968.3.1)

The purpose of witnessing is to create my second self. (18-186, 1967.6.6)

Although one day of life in this age may seem brief, a day of witnessing will be connected to eternity. Our every action on such a foundation of principled order will be linked to the whole purpose and to eternity; it will not disappear but remain forever. (152-219, 1963.5.15)

When you are doing witnessing, you will feel joy. On the other hand, without witnessing, happiness will not come. I am also carrying on this work, because I feel great pain if I don't do it. When I do witnessing, I feel great joy even when I am being cursed at. (19-22, 1967.11.5)

When you have the living experience that God is alive, then you will go out witnessing even if people tell you not to do so. Witnessing produces new things. If you have ten people in front of you, and you carry on a sincere conversation, then those ten people will become new people. After that, you should go to the

church and pray and see what happens. Then, as they make progress, you will also be developing. You will be raised up. (30-154, 1970.3.21)

When you go to the spirit world, the only thing that you can be proud of is your witnessing result. In the spirit world, your earthly wealth cannot be an object of pride. Moreover, you cannot boast about how much power you possessed in this world. The only thing to be proud of is how many lives you have saved. The question is how many people or, transcending your tribe, how many races you connected to new life. This is your asset. This is your only asset. (30-148, 1970.3.21)

Since spirit world is fully equipped with everything, there is nothing that you will miss. If there was something that you would miss, it would be a true person. For this reason, those saints of merit who have made great contributions in cultivating true people can naturally become sons and daughters of honor in the heavenly world. Accordingly, witnessing is the only thing of which to be proud. (30-148, 1970.3.21)

Have you ever wailed and prayed through the night for the sake of a new guest? Did you ever lament more sorrowfully than at the death of your father, mother, or even your lover? If you have not, then you must try. You should be lamenting through sleepless nights. If you can save one life, then there is nothing that you will feel reluctant to sacrifice. Money, clothes, and house are not even an issue. You must be crazy in loving people. (34-270, 1970.9.13)

When you come to the church, you must bring your parents and all of your family members with you. You should bring along your older brother, older sister, and everyone else. How much blood and tears have you shed for the sake of witnessing to your parents, your cousins, your in-laws, and your distant relatives? Have you ever struggled fiercely and prayed with tremendous devotion to guide a person's life? This is the question.

You must become the center of the environment that you find yourself in. You must understand that each of you must become the center. (41-90, 1971.2.13)

To do witnessing, you must research people's psychology. You should be able to tell whether a person likes something just by looking at his expression and the way he walks. You should be able to figure out a method by which to judge a person's emotions. (42-174, 1971.3.4)

Do not tell me that you cannot go witnessing because you lack money. Did Jesus come with money? Did God carry on the history of restoration with money? He did it with life; He did it with blood. Therefore, the history of Christianity is the history of indemnity through blood. It was done with blood and life. It was not done with money. If you go forward with this mentality, God will help you. (154-210, 1964.7.17)

When you go out witnessing, do not take money with you, but instead go with heart. (27-267, 1969.12.19)

When you go out witnessing, you should not go unprepared. The question is how devoted your heart is when you set out. If it seems that it is going to take, say, one week, one month, one year, or two or three to bring results, then you must make a devoted effort during that time period. Regardless of rain or snow, or when you are eating, awake or asleep, coming and going, resting, or engaged in some activity, you must give everything with an unchanging heart to that person. If you give completely, then it will be returned to you completely. This is the Principle. (42-228, 1971.3.14)

The question in loving God and people is how much we have exerted ourselves. This will transform into maturity of character in the spirit world and become the foundation of glory. (42-228, 1971.3.14)

Did you ever stay up all night in order to do witnessing? I stayed up numerous nights. They will ask you in the other world how many nights you stayed up to do witnessing. You should exert yourself in doing witnessing. (10-252, 1960.10.21)

When fishing with a net, you must cast the weights a little bit further to be able to catch one more fish. Since we are in the position of the weights, we have to stretch our hearts a little further to try and bring one more person to Heaven's side from Satan's domain. (12-19, 1962.7.4)

You have to educate and raise people until they can witness to other people. If this is accomplished, then you will not lose even one person out of all those you have witnessed to. (29-196, 1970.2.28)

Try and see how much God will help when you invest yourself. If you do not witness to your relatives and close friends while living on earth, then you will have no way to escape their accusations in the spirit world. (18-134, 1967.5.30)

Witnessing should be done like a business. What I mean is that you should do it effectively. In the past, no matter where you went for witnessing, you did not make much preparation, but now you should go fully prepared. You should offer devotion when you go witnessing. You must be different from the past. (102-45, 1978.11.19)

You must research into the philosophy of "a living person." You should always be thinking how you can guide a person to me or yourselves. You should think of ways to draw people near to you. There is only one way for this task and I know that method. It is the spirit of serving others. It is people's basic nature to draw close to something that can provide some benefit. (52-276, 1972.1.3)

In order for you to find people, you should be prepared to go to places that are like the spring, summer, autumn,

and winter seasons and shed blood, sweat, and tears. You should be saying to yourself, "I will love people who are of the spring, summer, autumn, and winter, from all four seasons. I will even love the people of the winter season, the Russian people." Only after that, can you love your spouse. This is the process of restoration. (96-152, 1978.1.3)

You should not feel lonely or sad just because someone does not pay much attention to your words, even after you poured your whole heart into that person. The principle of heavenly law is that you will never lose your investment. Those who understand that will be blessed. They will never become sorrowful or lonely. Soon, the time will come when the spring breezes will start to blow.

On the other hand, to those who could not receive your heart and efforts, an autumn wind will blow. This is telling them that their time is coming. (42-174, 1971.3.4)

7.2. Course of education and seven-day fast

In the Unification Church, there are 2-day, 7-day, 21-day workshops and 40-day training sessions; altogether, as a rule, within six months you should receive 70 days of training. This is the Word and the Law. By doing that, you can come to know the nature of the Unification Church. (103-238, 1979.3.1)

Those who go through 120-day training will become core members who can establish the dignity and reputation of the Unification Church. Because training is being systematized from the 2-day to the 120-day level, it is the same no matter where you are in the world. (78-188, 1975.5.8)

In the Last Days you must pass through the three stages of judgment. These are the judgment of truth, judgment of character, and judgment of heart. Here, doctrine is the truth. By passing through these three judgments, you are given the authority to be in the position to make a relationship with the True Parents. (26-289, 1969.11.10)

When you go to the spirit world, if you have not fasted for Heaven for at least seven days, you will be unable to register in the spirit world. Why? Because God toiled for six thousand years in the course of restoration, and therefore you should fast and be thinking about His labors. That is why there is the seven-day fast in the Unification Church. It is not to make you suffer but to allow you to set a condition of striking your body in front of heaven.

You must strike the body. You ought to say, "This body, my enemy. You lump of flesh! Evil blood is flowing through you," and then stab it with a knife. However, we can be grateful to Jesus that he was stabbed instead, for our sake. Then what did Jesus leave for us? He gave us his flesh and blood. You must become the person who can represent Jesus. (17-182, 1966.12.18)

Section 8. Indemnity, Service, and a Life of Dedication

8.1. The course of indemnity

Members of the Unification Church today do not like the path of indemnity. This means they do not like restoration. There is no such thing as, "I like restoration, but I don't like indemnity." So, which comes first? Does restoration come first or indemnity come first? You like restoration but not indemnity. Yet, it is the opposite for God. Which side are you on? Are you on the side of God or on the side of Satan? You have to be clear about this. You like restoration. However, God's side cannot just like restoration. Only after going through indemnity can restoration occur. (116-127, 1981.12.27)

If people understand the true meaning of the word indemnity, then they will all like it the most. Without indemnity, there can be no blessing. Indemnity is the invaluable nugget of gold in the Unification Church. It is an amazing word that can face death, sacrifice everything, and overcome all difficulties. (97-71, 1978.2.26)

When comparing the portion of responsibility and indemnity, one is on the right side and the other on the left, one is like the right leg and the other is like the left leg. They are like a pair of legs. You have to understand that advancement is impossible without the portion of responsibility and restoration through indemnity being connected. Have you thought about such things? You don't like indemnity, right? You dislike God, the providence, the whole lot, right? From now on, even if you forget about eating, even if you forget to sleep, even if you forget to think about the person that you love, you must never forget this; you have to be clear on this point. This is how serious it is.

God has to go through this, True Father must go through this, and the whole world must go through this. If this does not happen, then it will not be enough. You want to pass through them all for free, right? How can you become a professor or a doctor without doing anything? You have to go through the course to attain a doctorate degree or to become a doctor. How can you do so without paying the dues? If you do not pass through the course, then you are a fake. (124-106, 1983.1.30)

Indemnity conditions must be established by you yourself. Another person cannot substitute for you. The Fall means the loss of dominion. For the purpose of restoration, no matter who interferes, you must be confident of yourself and go with a clear proactive nature. No matter where others are going, you must be busy going your way. You do not have time to listen to what is being said by others. At night, there is no time to sleep; in the day there is no time to sit comfortably and eat a meal. Without having a heart that is this serious, you cannot go the way of restoration. (22-211, 1969.2.4)

For a sick person to be healed, he must take medicine even if it is bitter. When we look at medicine, we see that the good medicine is bitter. Bitter medicine is the real medicine. Establishing conditions for indemnity is like taking bitter medicine: it is difficult to do. However, without having established indemnity conditions, you cannot be restored. (92-254, 1977.4.18)

Heaven is the place where one attends God as the absolute center and makes relationships of love through Him. In order to properly establish this heavenly origin, God has been leading the providence of restoration. Thus, if you are conceited, it can never happen. (92-255, 1977.4.18)

The path of salvation is a path of restoration through indemnity. Indemnity means taking the opposite course of the Fall; it means going in reverse. (167-98, 1987.6.30)

8.2. Service and dedication

How can the path of true love be paved? It can be paved through dedication, service, and sacrifice. This means it is the course of re-creation. You must make sacrifices on this course of re-creation. Such a path of indemnity becomes the path of service. You have to go the way of sacrifice. Only when we go along the path of indemnity can we stand on God's side. Upon the foundation of indemnity, you can stand on God's side. This is an absolute fact. Therefore, you should go the way of indemnity. (146-294, 1986.7.20)

Which side is the subject partner and which is the object partner? Who is in the position to follow and who is in the position to lead? God accurately knows the answer; it is the one on God's side. When God looks down on this world, He sees two sides in constant struggle. He already knows the answer to the question, "Which side is God's?" and laughs, saying: "The people on my side are those who stand in a position of constant sacrifice, commitment, and service. Those on this side are those who fight for justice and I will choose such people." Those at the center always sacrifice and serve. (147-98, 1986.8.31)

The Unification Church teaches the heavenly law that dictates that we were born for the sake of others and we must follow the path of living for the sake of others. (133-16, 1984.7.1)

The formula for going to heaven is simple. All it requires is to love heaven and earth. But this requires hardship. There has not been a single person who has genuinely been working for this providence. (11-70, 1961.1.22)

People who follow the path of goodness always face sacrifice. That is why we teach the way of sacrifice. To say "live for others" means to sacrifice rather than gaining profit. It is an act of investing oneself. Investing yourself means you should invest to the fullest extent, even

offering your own life. (78-61, 1975.5.4)

What is the main idea of the Unification Church? It is to live for the sake of others. God exists for the sake of His objects of love. When we live for others in the same way, we can live for the sake of the world, even if the entire race opposes us. Knowing this, the Unification Church carries on. (77-302, 1975.4.25)

Satan cannot come to the person who warmly treats guests and offers his care and support to other people. You should know this. (37-329, 1971.1.1)

To make you into a person who can receive God's love and the love of humankind, you will be asked to sacrifice yourself, go through difficulties, become someone who can contribute sacrificially, and bring forth the fruits of love that represent the world. You must know that we are such a movement. The goal of the Unification Church is to create people who can receive the love of God and humankind. (82-53, 1975.12.31)

If you are resolved to sacrifice yourself for the world, there is no shame in your lowly state of being, even for looking like a beggar. Even if those in the Unification Church eat bread or barley rice cakes and water, if they can smack their lips and say with gratitude, "Ah, the cold water this morning is more delicious than a feast," the universe will cry for them. If you stand in such a position for the sake of the universe, it will cling to you since it is in a lowlier state than you and is without a subject partner. (61-223, 1972.8.31)

In the olden days, weren't there many unpleasant times when people used an ox to till the soil? People would whip the animal's backside once in a while, yelling, "You rotten animal, why are you behaving like this? I raised you for this time of the year but you are behaving so badly!" But instead, one should tell the beast, "Hi, I am very sorry that you have to be used like this after a long winter of inactivity and poor feeding." If you are more patient than that ox, heaven will recognize you and want to keep close to you.

Instead of being clever, wringing one's hands or temporarily taking the easy way, one should be patient with a pure heart and wait for blessings. Only when you live a blessed life with a blessed mind will blessings come to you. (127-89, 1983.5.5)

The world is heading toward its ultimate goal for the sake of the greater providence through a process of indemnity. When you think about how joyful God will be, you should receive Him profoundly and feel His heart, even over the pain and wounds you sustain in your heart when you see your family starving or dying. When the day comes, no matter what kind of cross may come, you should be able to pray on that cross and pledge to be the first to go along that path of suffering. You should invest, invest again, and forget. (229-237, 1992.4.12)

In living a life of faith, do you have an explosive and stimulating power in the center of your heart that is moving unceasingly toward the world of God's will? When you have that kind of heart, then it is evident that God is with you. On the other hand, if you do not have that power, it is evident that God is separated from you. (32-21, 1970.6.14)

From the beginning of history, the many religions that have been following God's will have denied themselves, exhorting: "Sacrifice and serve others!" We have not known why that was until now. It is because the original world is our original hometown where we live for others. In order to go to that world, we must have the necessary preparation and training.

Accordingly, we can see that the higher a religion is, the more it emphasizes sacrifice and service, and we can recognize the fact that God carried out His providence through a historical course in historical periods. Through this, we can understand that God exists. (77-270, 1975.4.14)

When your heart is pouring out love for humankind and you have the mind to share your life limitlessly with humanity, it is clear that you belong to heaven. If you end up as a being with self-centered love and proud self-centered values, you should know that this is evidence that God is already leaving you. Such a person is not going toward heaven. He will be limited by his self-centeredness. (32-21, 1970.6.14)

You do not know the tactics of God and Satan. The path of Abel is one of being struck first and then taking back everything. At first, it seems that Satan is winning because he is striking first. But in the end, he has to return everything, after adding to it some original goodness that is in him. The evil side, even if it conquers others, will not be triumphant. Instead, even the "original good element" within the evil side will be seized.

In other words, the way God works is as if He makes a rice cake and then hands it over, and when He takes it back there are powdered beans added on the surface. For a short period, evil flourishes and stands in the position to strike goodness, but that does not mean that Heaven will decline. (56-85, 1972.5.14)

At each and every moment, you should be making desperate resolutions. You should not meaninglessly lose the opportunity that God has been seeking. This has irreplaceable value, more than even a thousand-year history. Thus, to lose this would be terrible. You should pledge never to lose this chance, even if you were to lose the entire world and everything you had found.

You should go forth offering all manner of devotions and once again pledge resolutely to bequeath a victorious result through that opportunity, even if your life were to be sacrificed. (26-141, 1969.10.19)

Section 9. Rules and Etiquette among Members

9.1. Members relate through heavenly love

We call our Unification Church members "family members." Members should have the connections of brothers and sisters and be born under the same parents' heart. Only then can we become a member. We should have the relationship of brothers under the same parents. We should directly inherit the way of life, habits, and traditions of the parents. Then, we should create a family that God can be pleased with. Only then can we become members. (155-211, 1965.10.30)

Today, we are gathered here, hand in hand. Young and old, men and women who used to be complete strangers are gathered together. We have inherited the same lineage with the same heart of God. Since we started off being holy, we should also attain results worthy of this position. (67-325, 1973.7.22)

You should know that the relationship between us has been a three-dimensional one. It is not something based on an ideology that existed in previous history. It is based on God's heart and His ideal of creation; it began based on the standard of original character. This is the core of all relationships and thus should be regarded as absolute. (49-206, 1971.10.10)

We are gathered here to form new relationships. Therefore, those gathered here are not physical siblings. People who are not siblings should come together and have stronger relationships than their physical siblings. This is different. The relationship of those who are not your siblings should govern the relationship between you and your physical siblings. Unless this happens, your home has no spiritual ties to you. Actually, you cannot directly interfere with this. Thus, we should treat our church brothers and sisters with more care. (49-209, 1971.10.10)

When you deal with members, you should be careful not to hurt them or say the kind of things that would discourage them in their life of faith. (18-43, 1967.5.17)

You should have sympathy with other members who are in difficulties and face trouble in certain circumstances as though you yourself were facing trouble. (25-291, 1969.10.5)

I cannot tolerate such a thing as someone criticizing and deliberately attacking other members. If we wish to love the world, where should we begin to love? We should begin to love by loving each other. We have gathered here from north, south, east, and west under the same connections, and therefore we should love each other. It should be unbearable to live if we cannot see or meet each other. Since we are connected by such a bond, the Unification Church is proud of having something that the evil world does not have. If we lose this bond,

we are nothing at all. (49-62, 1971.10.3)

We are wonderful people. We are wonderful people who are walking on the road of a proud life that the world envies, heaven and earth envy, and all the saints and sages in the spirit world envy. We are people whom God cannot abandon, who have the background and content for which God will not just praise us but also come and tell us that He loves us. (171-29, 1987.12.5)

If there is someone who has good ancestors here, those ancestors will actively cooperate with him. You are standing in such a position. The spirit world will be eternally happy if you, who are in such a position, fight with excitement and good technique, and win all the time wherever you go. Evil spirits will fall back with surprise even before they show up. It works out like that. So these ancestors will attend you as though attending a king. You should feel this kind of feeling. (14-21, 1964.4.19)

Would it be alright for this substantial fruit of six thousand years to fall without being ripened, like a fruit that falls from the tree? Would it do to worry that the wind might blow and to say, "Oh no, it looks like I might fall. If the wind blows a bit more, I am going to fall. True Father, don't shake me. Just let me be still." There are some people here like that. On the other hand, there are those who say, "Even if True Father takes an axe and shakes the branches as he pleases, my branches will never fall until they have been cut." Which side are you on? Are you the ones who worry whether the wind will blow? Or are you the group that won't fall even if you are shaken? (46-155, 1971.8.13)

What is the purpose for which you came here? You did not come to solve some external problem. You came here to clarify the fundamental problem of humankind, to stand in front of the Absolute Being and to be recognized and confirmed by the Absolute Being. (11-224, 1961.9.20)

9.2. Cain-Abel relationships between members

When we look at the members of the Unification Church and ask the question who is Cain and who is Abel, horizontally, those who joined earlier are Abel, while vertically, those who joined recently are Abel. In the vertical and horizontal relationships, the horizontal must be attentive to the vertical and not the other way around. This is how it will become. (49-214, 1971.10.10)

What is the secret in becoming an Abel figure? It is safeguarding the tradition. One who does not rebel even when facing death can become Abel. You have to understand this. Jesus is said to be the young lamb, right? Therefore, even if you are pierced, you must not rebel. (49-214, 1971.10.10)

Abel must love Cain. He must subjugate him naturally with love. He must

stand in the position of loving him with tears and blood. He must give love that is the loftiest. Otherwise, Cain will not relent and restoration cannot be carried out. We must do this for the sake of the Christian church, the Republic of Korea, and North Korea. This is the reason that I am praying for North Korea right now. (34-283, 1970.9.13)

What does Abel have to do? He has to restore three generations. First, Cain must be restored. Then, parents must be restored. Then God must be liberated. These are the three great missions. In other words, without liberating the satanic world, parents cannot appear. Without liberating the parents, God cannot be liberated. It is Abel's mission to be responsible for the three realms of liberation. (58-68, 1972.6.6)

Within the church, you should know how to discern who is Abel and who is Cain. If there are two people, one is surely Abel and the other Cain; if there are three, one can be the Abel figure, one can be Cain, and the other can be in either Abel's or Cain's position. You should be able to clearly discern between the most central Abel and Cain. (3-206, 1957.11.1)

Cain and Abel should not be disunited and separated. One side is the right hand while the other is the left. Therefore, everyone should seek and attend their Abel figure with the belief that my God is your God and that He loves me as well as you. Each should do their best to avoid the position of Cain. If you fail to become such a person, you should clearly understand that at any time you will end up being caught by heaven's judgment. (3-206, 1957.11.1)

Where are the positions of Cain and Abel decided? Cain and Abel positions will not be decided in some nice and comfortable place. Why do we need Cain and Abel? They are needed for the sake of restoration through indemnity. What do we have to do to undertake restoration through indemnity? We have to become a sacrificial offering. (34-91, 1970.8.29)

Where does God decide upon the Abel figure? He makes the choice in a place where Satan cannot accuse. This is the position where unity with God is achieved, but this is not a position of joy, but the most sorrowful and difficult position. In other words, in the position where one is willing to die in the most miserable situation, you can become one with God. (34-51, 1970.8.29)

9.3. Definition of Cain and Abel

Among the members of the Unification Church today, there are those crazy ones who say, "Hey, I am Abel because I joined earlier and those who joined later are Cain, so you should serve me!" What kind of person is Abel? Abel is the one who lives according to God's will. The one who is more public-minded is Abel.

Who is Cain? He stands on the side of Satan. Satan starts off from selfish thoughts. Abel begins with thinking

not about himself, but about God. You should understand this. (58-68, 1972.6.6)

Even among those who joined earlier, the one who is satisfying his own greed is Cain. The one who thinks about himself first is Cain. This is the principle that I use when I am dealing with people. No matter how long one has been in the church, if someone is living selfishly, I completely ignore that person. I cannot do anything about it now, but when the time comes, I will tell him to pack up and leave. You are not Abel just because you joined earlier. The one who pursues personal agendas first is Cain, and the one who thinks more about public matters and Heaven than about himself is Abel. (58-68, 1972.6.6)

In deciding upon the brotherly order among the members of the Unification Church, one who joined first stands in the Abel position but is at the same time also Cain, and one who joined later is in the position of Cain but is also Abel simultaneously. (24-348, 1969.9.14)

From the perspective of the Principle, Abel is the center. God has to enter the middle of the center. However, have you become Abel? To become Abel, you must obey. You must obey God and become one with Him. In order to become one with God, you must do everything that God tells you to do. You cannot be an Abel unless you can do all that God tells you to do. Even if you did ninety-nine of one hundred tasks, if you fail to do the last one, you cannot become the Abel figure. (34-46, 1970.8.29)

Among the members of the Unification Church, what kind of person would be Cain? Those who raise their head high and order people around are all Cain. Then who is Abel? The person who strives to fulfill their responsibility is Abel.

Originally, those who joined earlier are Cain-type, but they hold their head high and try to be the Abel figure. They are digging their own graves. No matter how hard they try, I will not use them if they do not live according to the rules and principles. (49-214, 1971.10.10)

What kind of beings are Abel and Cain? In short, from the viewpoint of the Principle, Cain is someone who puts his concerns on others; Abel is one who takes on other people's concerns even while having his own. That's the difference. (62-189, 1972.9.25)

To define which person is Cain and which one is Abel, the one who is struck is Abel and one who strikes is Cain. Let's take an example and say there are two sons before their parents, and the age difference between the two is quite substantial. The older brother may act on behalf of the parents for consultation or any other purpose. However, if he hits the younger brother who is without fault, then the parents will stand on the side of the younger son rather than the older. People do not understand that this is the criterion for judging good and evil in today's society. The one who is harm-

ing others always becomes the Cain figure. (56-85, 1972.5.14)

Among the Unification members, if you mock someone who is working hard and exhibiting great devotion for the sake of the church, saying, "Why does he act so special?" then you become Cain. You must understand this. This is how Cain and Abel set themselves apart from each other. The one who is being criticized and being harmed without having committed any sin is always Abel, while the one who criticizes and strikes others always becomes Cain. (56-85, 1972.5.14)

Even when you are speaking, the one who speaks words that are beneficial is Abel, and the one who speaks words that harm others is Cain. When you benefit someone else, you are bringing benefits to him; but when you are doing something for your own sake, it is the same as harming that person. For this reason, the public position is the place whose purpose is to benefit others, and the private position is the place where one lives for the sake of one's own benefit. In this way, centering on public and private, Abel and Cain, as well as good and evil, are differentiated. You must understand this. (56-85, 1972.5.14)

The one who is more public-minded is Abel. Among the members of the Unification Church, there are those who believe they are Abel because they joined first, but even if they joined early, if they cannot be public-minded, then they are Cain. They are Cain for sure. Cain was born first, but because he was less public than Abel, he had to follow Abel.

There might be those among the members of the Unification Church who insist, "Because I joined early, I am Abel." However, those who cannot be more public-minded than those who joined later are Cain. The Abel figure is the one who stands in a more public-minded position. (31-165, 1970.5.24)

You will naturally come to admire me because I have offered my life as a sacrifice more for the sake of the public cause than for my own benefit and invested such quality and quantity of raw materials that you are not aware of. This is the Principle and the heavenly fortune. (64-81, 1972.10.24)

The restoration of the global Kingdom of Heaven cannot come into being unless the foundations for the perfection of Abel on the levels of individual, family, tribe, people, nation, and world can be linked. We who understand this must apply this principle in our daily life, regardless of day or night, and in order to carry on the development of this fundamental principle, we have to be on the run without rest. We can say that this type of person is a person of God. Do you understand? (64-81, 1972.10.24)

Section 10. Social Relationships

10.1. People should not be treated lightly

You should not treat people lightly.

That is why until 1970, whenever someone who was hungry passed by the headquarters, I let them have a meal before they went on their way. It is our duty as human beings to give food to the hungry. Even when you are getting a meal for free, it would be right to share it with others. If someone with a plentiful supply of rice were to strike a hungry person who, passing by, had asked for something to eat, that household would not last for long. (56-37, 1972.5.10)

There were times when I saw a person who was so pitiable that I wanted to help by offering him everything I had. If you are generous with wanting to give and to help someone, God will praise you. It is good to be generous for the greater good rather than your own well-being, and for improving people's lives in the future, even though life is miserable at present. (42-168, 1971.3.4)

You should not just give a lot of free food. You should invest public-mindedness at the same time. That will bring blessings. No one dislikes the person who gives free food and displays a public mind at the same time. (56-37, 1972.5.10)

You should not ignore people. Don't people say that a worm will wiggle if you step on it? That is how it is for sure. When a person dies and harbors resentment and bitter feelings toward another, the person who incurred that resentment will not last long. (56-38, 1972.5.10)

When dealing with people, you must not do it unsatisfactorily. The work of resurrection does not occur in a course that is mandatory. It has to be exciting. You must stay up at night without even realizing it is night. You discover the value of heaven only when you get to the point at which you can say, "The place where I am now is heaven." Isn't that right? Even with trees, unless they are completely bonded, they don't engraft. (75-177, 1975.1.2)

I try to warmly treat those who come, even if we were to starve. If they have reached a certain level of spirituality, say one hundred, we will be struck and judged if we treat them any less. In those situations, you should treat such people two, three, five, even ten times greater than their level. You will not go to ruin by doing so. God will be deeply impressed saying, "This fellow is better than Heaven!" (56-38, 1972.5.10)

A dog will enter the yard of even the best of houses to relieve itself. If the homeowner complains, "Oh! You dirty little dog! Why are you coming round to our house to defecate in our yard?" then he is chasing away his blessings. Instead, he should say, "Come on in and relieve yourself." (60-158, 1972.8.19)

I am not saying we should not fight or argue. If both sides are going to benefit, then we should fight. We should not fight if one side would perish. We fight to educate and bring them to our side, not to make enemies. (104-33, 1979.3.25)

You have to give with a parental heart. You must not give centering on your own ambitions and wishes. Since the True Father has been doing it in this way, you must also do likewise. (11-268, 1961.12.14)

When you show love to people, you should not be stingy. You should not remember what you have invested. I want to give more.... Therefore, when you have something good to eat, if you are eating it hiding out somewhere alone, then you are a leader who is to going to decline immediately. If you have something to eat, then you should not eat it but save it. You should wish to give it to someone even if you cannot eat it yourself, and be thinking about the members because you cannot eat it alone. This is the type of person you should become. You have to become leaders who have nurtured this type of parental heart. (70-166, 1974.2.9)

When you give, how should you give? You should not give leftovers. If you give what is left over from your meal, then even after eating it, people will feel disgusted and spit. When you are giving rice cakes, for example, if you take a long time to select one out of the five, picking one up and then putting it down and then picking another, it is worse than not giving at all. When you give to others, if there are five, then you should have no hesitation in picking up half of them and handing them over. Then, people will thank you. Yet, if you are so hesitant and picky, then people will judge you even after they become indebted to you. For this reason, when you give, you should do so together with God and with a parental heart. (60-170, 1972.8.17)

10.2. Social relationships

Today, people do not pay enough attention to each other. In horizontal relationships, it is rare that people pay respect to each other centering on the horizontal connection. Regardless of sex or age, everyone has the attitude that dealing with people is annoying. If you view people as a nuisance, then you can never walk the heavenly way. (25-291, 1969.10.5)

I believe that the life of religious people should be one where they become united with God, stand as the representatives of God's love before creation and this world, and expand and connect the horizontal relationships to the whole environment, based on a standard of love. This should be connected and established in your lives. To do so, you should establish relationships with other people with the heart of God. (82-275, 1976.2.1)

When people meet, it is just like the balls that collide with each other on a billiard table, isn't it? This is interesting. Our encounters with people take on a similar action. You get the feeling that when you face each other, you are drawn together as one and then pushed away again. When you kick a soccer ball, don't you feel good if it goes up and down and changes direction in every way? It is the

same with human relationships. (91-81, 1977.1.30)

The question of how much value we have as a human being is determined by the level of investment by all our five senses into our life and love. Therefore, we cannot help asking ourselves whether we have established relationships and led a social life with vitality and a heart of deepest love. You should know that if you do not stand in such a position, you are in a state of suspension or retreat. (32-19, 1970.6.14)

For God's providence of restoration, the Republic of Korea is not the only place that God needs. He needs all of the people in the world. For this reason, God is deeply concerned about people. So far, this has been the most important goal in God's providence. Since we are a group of people who are gathered for the sake of achieving this goal, we must stand in the same position as God and have the same degree of concern toward all people. (25-291, 1969.10.5)

You should not be greedy when relating to others. (33-143, 1970.8.11)

In order to become good, you should not think that you have nothing to do with the evils of others. You should suffer for them, and pray throughout the night with tears for them, and live with the determination to offer a sacrifice of atonement for their sins. Such a person will surely become their central figure. (34-130, 1970.8.30)

A good person should know how to love children, young people, and the elderly. If human beings are in the position of stewards in relation to nature, people should love spring, summer, autumn, and winter. (72-100, 1974.5.26)

You should love and respect the elderly more than you do the young people. It would be alright just to meet young people, but you should especially love and have sympathy for older people who cannot work and who are weak and need care. But I cannot see such a trend in society today. (25-289, 1969.10.5)

When you love others, you should not only love young people; you should love the young, elderly, and all human beings. When I look at youth today, I see that they avoid dealing with the elderly, but they should not do so. They should love the elderly and also the young. (25-289, 1969.10.5)

We should love people. We have to love people, and our yearning for them should be greater than that of anyone else. We are gathered together centering on God's will rather than human will. Therefore, we will surely remain as the fruit of love throughout the entire world.

When the trees densely cover the hills, it is difficult to distinguish a pine tree from a spindle tree. However, this will be revealed when it turns to autumn and winter. If you find a green tree in the winter, amid the trees with only trunks and branches, it stirs

up hope inside you. This is symbolic of a new relationship being established. (25-287, 1967.10.5)

The first commandment is, "You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind." The second commandment is, "You shall love your neighbor as yourself." The first commandment says you should love God, and the second one says you should love your neighbor, meaning all humankind. You should love all humankind; they are your brothers and neighbors. (136-139, 1985.12.22)

Arrogance is your enemy. Arrogance and stubbornness are the natures and elements of Satan. Instead of being arrogant and stubborn, you should be modest and harmonious. You should be a person who can create harmony and friendship; someone who can harmonize with everyone. Everything starts to flow from here. Something greater cannot arise if people or things do not unite. This is what happens when there is no harmony. Jealousy and envy are other natures of Satan, but for us, arrogance and stubbornness are unforgivable. (37-132, 1970.12.23)

CHAPTER FOUR

Tradition and Daily Etiquette of Blessed Families

Section 1. The Daily Etiquette of a Blessed Family

1.1. Establishing proper family rules and practices

We have been living and speaking carelessly, but from now on we should establish rules in our families. Parents should not beat their children with a stick out of anger or speak secular words of condemnation to them. Now everything should be aligned. Our words, attitudes, and way of life should be aligned, centering upon God. (28-252, 1970.1.22)

Your families should not become slaves to habit. The family is the starting point for establishing the four-position foundation. Here, the unity of the family is required. The family should conform to the original standard of God's desire. (21-76, 1968.10.20)

In order for the first son's family to thrive, the family members are to accept and conscientiously practice the established family rules and etiquette that come from their ancestors. People whose attitude is "Those rules have nothing to do with me" cannot be the offspring of that family. Such a person cannot be the heir of such a family, even if he is born as its eldest son. (21-252, 1968.11.24)

How are we going to maintain the pure lineage inherited from God? How can we preserve the pure lineage rather than the fallen lineage?

We must sincerely care for the second generation. It is very difficult to become pure in this fallen world. The first human beings fell even though they were in the unstained Garden of Eden. In spite of their suffering, the blessed parents born in the fallen world should make an unstained environment for their blessed children. It is my desire to prepare such an environment as quickly as possible for the second generation, no matter what sacrifices that may entail. We have to hurry. (God's Will - 550)

In order for you to be liberated from the sinful world, you should not think that you are Korean citizens. Instead of thinking that you are Korean, you should have the concept, "I am God's person, a citizen of heaven, a heavenly person." You should live your life as if you are sharpening a dagger to ruthlessly cut out the sinful nature that permeates the customs and habits of the fallen world, including its language, clothes,

shoes, and cosmetics. This kind of dedicated life can liberate you from the sinful world. There is no way to subjugate the sinful world unless we achieve victory over the secular history, habits, and bad customs that pervade the environment. You will have to be liberated from such bad environmental conditions if you want to become a true person, restore a true nation, and go to the Kingdom of Heaven. (97-327, 1978.4.1)

Your family should not become secularized or slaves of habit. You should not think, "Things will be better in the future even though it is terrible now." You are to be perfect now; the present is the problem. When the past and the present are perfected, the future will be perfect. Not having had a perfect day in the Garden of Eden still causes us to suffer the effects of the Fall.

The ideal is the place where the past, present, and future can be united into one. You should be able to offer up the present. God's desire is to set up the eternal stepping stone on earth. This is the historical point of synthesis. (21-77, 1968.10.20)

The reason for the destruction of the Israelites after they entered Canaan was that they were assimilated into the existing environment and became accustomed to its habits. They met their downfall because their mental focus settled on the life of eating and luxury. The Israelites even married gentiles as long as they came from wealthy families. They coveted power and were fond of knowledge. They perished because they assimilated the existing Canaanite culture and abandoned their spirit of being the chosen ones to the gentiles. (144-134, 1986.4.12)

Chronic habits are deep-seated evil habits. After your marriage, if you lead a habitual life while rearing your children, habits become part of your body. You no longer find time for prayer or special offerings in such an environment; there is no time for prayer when the children are making noise right beside you. (30-125, 1970.3.21)

From now on, we should cut off what needs to be cut off and divide what needs to be divided. You should not do as you please. The Unification Church must establish the Kingdom of Heaven. Therefore, it should restore the family rather than the individual. Those who cannot become exemplary in their family life will suffer worldwide criticism, even throughout all of heaven and earth. (30-230, 1970.3.23)

The Blessing is precious only after you fulfill your responsibility. Men should not use their fists and women should not curse. They should not swear in the secular way. There should be something different about you. The family is a micro-church. It should be the agency of heaven; it should be a family that God would want to visit. At least three families should live together.

In particular, what I want to say today is, first, your families should be

the ones that many people can visit. Harmony among people is most important. Second, heavenly families should build solidarity with one another. At the very least, you should be completely united with the other families in your blessing trinity. (15-270, 1965.10.24)

We are not focused on the individual but on the family. Still, we are not trying to solve everything based only on the family. Rather, we should connect everything to the family. Hence, the endeavors made in the past while cultivating a solitary life of spirituality are not enough now. To this you should also add your own determination and resolution to exert yourself much more than you did in the past. In an instant, a life of challenging evil can easily leave one fatigued and lead one to retreat. When you have a family, you should work much harder than when you were single.

The family is in the central position. We cannot avoid reality. You should establish relationships of front and back, left and right, top and bottom in your family. It will not do to have the kind of faith that existed in the past. That kind of one-sided attitude in faith that you had in the past will not work. (27-85, 1969.11.26)

Blessed families should establish a family tradition and create a family code of conduct. You should also create a standard of education for children and rules of conduct for the family. If the parents have not done so, they will have nothing to say when they commit an error and their children press them hard. (21-87, 1968.11.3)

1.2. Family life

There must be clarification about the way of life individuals and also families should lead. (24-29, 1969.6.22)

The vague way of life that you have previously been living must change into a purposeful way of life. (18-178, 1967.6.4)

When we silently sacrifice everything for the sake of God, He will protect us. God surely will be at our side. (88-231, 1976.9.20)

Your family should be a family of love, and you should become a public-minded husband and wife, or parents, centered upon God's love. Do not be a husband and wife or parents who seek personal benefit and live only for your own sake. (111-257, 1981.2.22)

When the parents make serious efforts not to deviate from the heavenly way, the children will never be disobedient. (27-88, 1969.11.26)

The family should be restored. There is no greater act of witnessing than this. Husband and wife should get up early in the morning and pray tearfully while holding their children's hands. If they do so, their children will yearn for their parents when they have gone out and sing for them as they wait for their return. (21-88, 1968.11.3)

When you were alone, everything came to pass when you prayed. However, if there is a person opposing you in the family, you should bear the cross and persevere until you reach the original standard. Alone, you are like one car of a train and the family is like a locomotive. It is simple to restore an individual's mistake. But if there is a mistake in the family, it brings ruin. (27-86, 1969.11.26)

The family in which the children can say, "Dad, we love you! Mom, we love you! We really like it when you love each other!" becomes a place of rest for them. (30-282, 1970.4.4)

In a family there needs to be a foundation on which the son can respond enthusiastically to the father's call. Yet, even if you have children, what good is it without a nation? It is of no use to be in first place or in any other position as a family if we cannot build a nation. (29-73, 1970.2.24)

Blessed families are the manifestation of everyone's hope. However, if they fail to fulfill their given responsibility, they become a family of despair. (21-87, 1968.11.3)

Section 2. The Exemplary Family Life of Faith

2.1. A family life of faith educates the children

Think about it. How many people come before Sunday Service and help prepare for it? Many are just arriving when the sermon is about to begin, after the singing of the holy songs. How can we call such people followers of God's will? No matter how well they make excuses, they are living a private-minded life, not a public-minded one. There is nothing we can hope for or expect from such people. Therefore, you should seek a fresh understanding of God's will and go forth with the resolution to be conscientious in public life and to be a good example in private life. (31-271, 1970.6.4)

All Blessed Families, without exception, should arrive before the church service starts and create an atmosphere of grace for the many types of people who will attend, so that they may experience grace. If you create a foundation of heart to support the minister before he comes up to give the sermon, the speaker will be stimulated by the fervent expressions on the members' faces. The number of such members determines the development of the church. (31-271, 1970.6.4)

You should consider public anniversaries and events of our church as part of your very own life and mobilize yourself. Families who do not do this are failures as Blessed Families. (31-276, 1970.6.4)

Blessed families should teach their children how to offer the Sabbath day to God by showing them an exemplary life of offering devotion from the break of day in order to prepare for the service. But in reality they do whatever they want to do. They do not pray, offer devotions,

study the Principle, or witness in the name of a life of living faith. If the Sunday Service starts at 10:30, they should leave for church at 9:30 or 10:00. Instead of doing this, they leave home late and rush into their seats in the middle of the service. Such a family will be accused. As parents, no matter how much they educate their children, it will not influence them at all. (31-269, 1970.6.4)

Parents should set a good example in their life of faith. In the family, they should show their children how fervently they practice all aspects of a life of faith, including prayer life and family services. They should help the children recognize how important the time for Pledge is. They should not just hold Pledge service at that particular time, but as parents, they should also teach their children about God's will. (31-269, 1970.6.4)

Blessed families should be exemplary in their life of attendance to Heaven. They should live a life of offering donations, doing Pledge service and witnessing. (35-312, 1970.10.30)

Sunday is the day to offer to the other members what you have planned and saved during the week that can bring them joy. On Sundays, you can share some specially prepared food and everyone should praise their spouses. (21-88, 1968.11.3)

You cannot expect your children to grow well if you do not even hold morning Pledge service or devotion time and go to Sunday service. Therefore, you should establish the four-position foundation centering upon True Parents. In order to raise descendants well, parents must live correctly. (21-87, 1968.11.3)

Blessed families should be an example in participating in Sunday service and in official church assemblies. (21-87, 1968.11.3)

Wherever they visit, members should first go to the holy place, in other words, the holy ground or the church. If they cannot, they should at least set up a condition of having done so. Each of you is an individual; yet you should bear in mind that you are more than this. You should each stand in the position of a first ancestor. (17-86, 1966.11.26)

Each family should prepare a white cushion. They should prepare a clean and neat place, sit on that cushion, and take time to offer sincere devotion to God. (17-87, 1966.11.26)

Whether you are awake or asleep, eating or resting, whatever you see or do, all your actions should be centered on God's will. (73-61, 1974.7.29)

You should offer all your devotion in witnessing to your parents. There is no greater happiness than receiving heaven's blessings with them, in the presence of God's will, and creating a protective fence as a Blessed Family. (16-329, 1966.7.31)

2.2. A life of prayer

You must pray. In deciding the time to pray, you should try praying at daybreak, in the morning, at lunch, in the evening, and even at eleven or twelve at night. When you lead a life of prayer like that for many years, you should know which period of time is the best time for you to pray. Knowing this, you should offer devotion to God at the time that is right for you.

If possible, you should pray with a person who has a high standard of grace. By doing so, you will receive grace through that person. If your husband has a higher standard of grace than you and if he leads an exemplary life of faith, you will come to receive grace because of him. After receiving grace in this way, you will look upon your husband as the most handsome man in the world. In reverse, if the husband receives grace through his wife, his wife will surely look most beautiful to him; she will be the most beautiful woman in the world. This is how couples should have been.

Thus, when you are awake, you want to see each other, and whisper to each other throughout the night. That is not something that brings ruin but rather prosperity. (31-288, 1970.6.4)

How many hours do you spend eating every day? Would it not be almost an hour and a half? You spend on the average one and a half hours eating. For spiritual work, you must invest much more than the amount of time you spend on eating. I have come to understand this fact through numerous years of my life of faith. (70-171, 1974.2.9)

Prayers are always fulfilled. Through prayer we receive energy and are shown the future prospects of how problems will unfold. You will be taught, "In this situation, do things like this, and in that kind of work, do things like that." You can accomplish great things by knowing this. Only through prayer can you pioneer that kind of path. You must know that praying is more essential than eating your meals. (104-111, 1979.4.15)

As we realize more and more that the path we must follow is one requiring a breakthrough, we come to feel somehow that this is impossible with our own strength alone. Therefore, we must understand that a person of faith must pray. (71-275, 1974.5.5)

Pray. Prayer is your heart's storehouse. If you do not have time, you should at least pray while doing your work. (27-89, 1969.11.26)

You should pray even while doing your laundry or walking down the road. You should constantly fill up your storehouse; it should never be empty. (27-87, 1969.11.26)

Without leading a life of constant prayer, you cannot go the way of God's will. Do not think of money in your daily life; you should first think about God's will. (27-88, 1969.11.26)

Have you become children of God who can receive His support? If you wish to maintain this, you should always be with Him and become someone who allows God to be with you. A puppy that leaves the bosom of its mother and goes around on its own cannot enjoy its mother's protection. (100-104, 1978.10.8)

2.3. Blessed families are the elders of the tribe

Just as I instructed at the time of the 1968 Blessing of 430 couples, you also should become tribal messiahs. You must fulfill this mission. For instance, the 36 couples from the Kim tribe should be organized centered on members of the Kim family who have already received the Blessing, just as the 36 Couples are organized in the church around me. If it is too difficult to establish 36 couples, you should at least become the ancestors of 12 couples. Then you should become the ancestors of your tribe and organize your tribe into twelve branch tribes. When you accomplish this, your entire tribe will be included in those twelve branch tribes, thus becoming a tribe of your direct lineage. (31-276, 1970.6.4)

Blessed families today are important because they are the ancestors of tradition. You should become a messianic family to your tribe and establish a tradition. (21-87, 1968.11.3)

From now on, tribes will emerge centering upon the Blessed Families. Therefore, you should accomplish your mission as a tribal messiah. The churches from now on will all be centered upon the elder of the tribe. All Blessed families are the elders of their tribes. (23-62, 1969.5.11)

Because the foundation for a new family and tribe has been established, you have entered the most historically wonderful realm of grace in which you can restore your tribes. So the time has come for you to witness to your parents, brothers, and sisters. The purpose of the history of restoration is to restore the family. How much faster would it be to restore your direct family rather than other families! It seems like a dream for you to be able to hear me pronounce, in my lifetime, the order to witness to your parents and your siblings. (67-253, 1973.7.1)

You can now build up a tribal foundation in your lifetime. How glorious this is! You should be grateful to know this. Yet, if you cannot fulfill that responsibility, your family will still be held accountable for it. In this respect, of course, the responsibility of the family is important, but now families should take upon themselves the mission of tribal messiah. (31-280, 1970.6.4)

Once you are caught there, hell is a place you cannot escape from. Still, you do not feel a sense of desperation that your parents and your relatives may go to hell. You are just idly thinking, "Let's let it be as it is."

But imagine that your loving parents could really go to hell! If they had to go

to jail in the secular world, you would make whatever effort necessary to release them. That's just human love. As sons and daughters connected to heavenly love, then what are you going to do about your parents, relatives, brothers, and sisters who have to go to jail for eternity? (34-266, 1970.9.13)

In Blessed Families, the man stands as a physical representative of Jesus and the woman stands as a physical representative of the Holy Spirit. Therefore, the Blessed families should dash forward to rescue the Korean people without delay, just as Jesus and the Holy Spirit did for the people of Israel. Thus Blessed families can begin their mission as tribal messiahs. (21-284, 1968.12.1)

You have the responsibility to reach the land of Israel with your family. Just as the twelve tribes of Israel had to go to their assigned areas in the land, you are to march forward to take your family and find the land of your inheritance for your tribe. (35-302, 1970.10.30)

Why did I send you out as tribal messiahs? In the past, Jesus was sent to this world through a vertical course from the spirit world. Today, True Father is in the position of God and, as a representative of Heaven, is sending out thousands of messianic families who can represent their tribes to the world. Now we cannot perish. I proclaimed tribal messiahship at 2:30 pm on January 3, 1989. (185-238, 1989.1.8)

You have to understand that the tribal messiah is in the vanguard and guides his tribe to their historical hometown within his lifetime. You are the vanguard, just as Moses was during the Exodus. It is not blind devotion. Moses did not know certain things, but I know everything in a logical and detailed way. You must return to your hometown, but you cannot return there without finding Cain. (102-264, 1979.1.14)

Why do you have to fulfill the responsibility of tribal messiah? The first reason is that you must save your parents. Your parents are in the position of the first Adam, and you are in the position of the second Adam. You must complete the mission of Adam by restoring and re-creating your parents. The second reason is that you need a hometown. By completing the responsibility of tribal messiah, you will be able to have your own hometown.

Ultimately, the reason for fulfilling your portion of responsibility as a tribal messiah is the perfection of Adam's family. In real terms, you have to educate your tribe. (244-211, 1993.2.7)

In order for an individual to achieve settlement, he needs a family. Thus, the Unification Church has been fighting to establish families. In the same way, a family cannot find settlement without a tribe. Your tribe serves as a fence to protect you and your family from the blast of the wind and all other adverse things. Without creating such a realm that can serve this purpose, you cannot exist in a

peaceful family.

In order to do that, you should become the tribal elder for your relatives. If you become their tribal elder, even if there is fighting going on, relatives from different villages will go out to the frontline and fight, and the elder just has to direct their commands. Then he can rest! Therefore, I am telling you to fulfill the mission of tribal messiah. Then, you can go on to fulfill the mission of national messiah. In the future, if you go out to the world and witness, you are doing the mission of a national messiah. (56-311, 1972.5.18)

If you are named Kim, you should fulfill the mission as a messiah of the Kim clan. You should think, "I am the messiah," representing the Kim clan if you are a Kim, or representing the Park clan if you are a Park, and feel responsible to build the heavenly nation representing that clan. Think that you are the savior who is redeeming the Kim clan. To do that, you must fulfill the responsibility of being a high priest to the entire Kim clan. (155-265, 1965.10.31)

What is the ultimate goal? What is the method to find the solution? What do we have to do to receive the benefits of breaking down all the walls and being able to solve human problems? We have to become tribal messiahs. When this is completed, there will remain nothing that can be a condition for individuals, families, tribes, nations, or any people of the world to accuse True Parents. (189-110, 1989.3.19)

Section 3. A Life of Living with True Love

3.1. Living for the sake of others

What kind of being is the God who created this universe and its laws? He is the one who stands in the representative position of having lived for the sake of others more than anyone else. This is God. Therefore, in order to meet Him, you have to live for the sake of others. Even though He is the great king of knowledge, He does not ask you to come to Him with knowledge. God is also the great king of power, yet He does not ask you to come with power. He is also the master and great king of authority, money, and material things, but His desire is not for people to gather these things. If you live for the sake of others, everything can come to you. (133-16, 1984.7.1)

Concerning the process of re-creation, to give and give again for the sake of others is the same as God expending Himself in the act of creation. To invest oneself is the act of creating one's second self; it is the same as God investing Himself for the sake of Creation. The works of re-creation follow the course of restoration through indemnity; indemnity is carried out through the works of re-creation. Therefore, re-creation can only come about when you invest yourself. For this reason, it is a reasonable conclusion to say that sacrifice is inevitable. (82-240, 1976.1.31)

God is not a dictator. God has also

invested for the sake of humankind. God exists for the sake of humanity. For this reason, human beings have tried to follow Him for thousands upon thousands of years. Since the universe and all existing beings come under the heavenly law of living for the sake of others, then in order for human beings to maintain their existing position, they must live for the sake of others. Living for others goes beyond East and West or past and present. (187-89, 1989.1.6)

We should know that living for the sake of the self brings about evil, but acting for the sake of the whole brings development. When you live for the sake of the whole, every door will be opened to you. The doors of the individual, family, tribe, a people, world, and heaven will open; everything will open its door and welcome you.

Living for the sake of others is a universal truth that you need in order to establish the true way of life. It is a principle that can apply everywhere, and is unchanging for eternity. Since it transcends the past, present, and future, one should always live for the sake of others. If God appears in front of Jesus or Mohammed or saints such as Confucius and Buddha and asks what they think about this truth, would they answer that it is right or wrong? It is a universal principle and law for humankind to live their lives in this true way. (133-16, 1984.7.1)

What achievements can we leave behind in history as our tradition? Only those achievements that were attained through living an altruistic life with the spirit of sacrifice have survived in this world to this day. Such people have been remembered as saints, historical figures, and patriots. Only with such a spirit of sacrifice does our legacy survive. Hence, you should know that only by living a life of sacrifice can you leave behind a worthy legacy. (82-239, 1976.1.31)

God's love is to love not only all the things of creation and all humankind but all the people of the past, present, and future. Therefore, God is working to liberate even the spirits of people who have passed into hell. Human beings must go the way of truth, life, and love. No matter how great you may be, if you do not have a foundation of living for the sake of others, nothing will follow you. On the other hand, someone who lives for the sake of others will naturally become the subject being. He will become a person of true life. (133-30, 1984.7.1)

The reason True Parents' ideas will emerge in the twenty-first century as the mainstream thought is because they oppose the "live for myself" model in favor of the "live for others" philosophy that I have discovered. From a logical point of view, it is inevitable that the world will go in this latter direction. That is why the only hope resides with the Unification Church. Tens of thousands of years after the twenty-first century, the world will follow the ideal of living for the sake of others, rather than the live-for-myself philosophy. People will not follow or like the live-for-myself

way of thinking. (169-88, 1987.10.25)

How is unification possible? How will I accomplish unification? Through physical aggression? By force? With money, power, or knowledge? Everything is solved at the point of living for others, based on true love. The conclusion is simple, isn't it? By living for others centering on true love, the satanic world will be re-created as a heavenly world. That is a logical conclusion. (182-134, 1988.10.16)

3.2. People who live for the sake of others become the center

Are you Unificationists saying that you want to eat and live well, or that you want to live in hardship? Shall we live well or in hardship? For whom? For Rev. Moon of the Unification Church? It is for God. This is the only way we can melt God's heart. (42-52, 1971.2.19)

The way to win over someone is not to try to win through conflict but to care for him first from the position of a parent. By doing so, you will be successful. If you care for him for three years, then he will certainly listen to you well. This is how the human mind works. He will open all the doors in his house, including the master bedroom, and welcome you with the words, "You can come to our house anytime." You have to understand that such selfless actions, aligned with the original universal principle, will move the original minds of people. (103-139, 1979.2.18)

What kind of position do God and parents hold? It is one in which you take care of others first. God thinks about you before you do. Parents think about you before you do. This is why they are great and stand in the subject position. When two of you live together, you have to have the attitude, "I should do the things that he is supposed to do." This is the type of person that God is. That person is the center. The person who lives for the sake of others surely becomes the center. (103-139, 1979.2.18)

If my partner loved me and lived for my sake concerning themselves about small matters, then I would want to give back more than that. This would expand continuously. With this type of expansion, after some time had passed – say, if it continued for the rest of one's life – then this sacrificial way of life would extend beyond the nation to the world, the Kingdom of Heaven, and the eternal spirit world. (119-326, 1982.9.26)

Why do people like things of a higher level? They like high places because there they can connect to a variety of things. Why don't they like low places? It is because people become restricted in low places, far away from wider relationships. For human beings, the most precious person of all is the one who is trying to connect to higher ideals, perspectives and issues. From this we can realize that such a person is a precious person. (129-308, 1983.12.1)

You have to be more altruistic. What

does that mean? The one who is most altruistic will become the leader. Out of ten people, the one who becomes the center is the one who lives and loves most for the sake of the others. All those people will come seeking him. In general, people think that living for others is not good. Yet, this is the real way to reach the center, achieving ownership and receiving everything. This is a universal principle. Therefore, you should understand this concept of living for others. It is not something bad that brings losses. There is no better business than this. (132-276, 1984.6.20)

Section 4. Parents Must Establish the Law of Love

4.1. Parents are closer than friends

Parents exist for their children. If parents lived for themselves, the word parent would not exist. From now on, moral principles should be formed centering on the Principle of the Unification Church. How should parents live? Parents who give birth to children should live for those children. That is the first article of the moral principle. No explanation is needed for that. Living for the child is not an unhappy thing, but something happy and joyful. (62-214, 1972.9.25)

No parents teach their own children to do wrong. Nevertheless, it is possible for a teacher to teach his students to do wrong. If the teacher is in the position of an enemy, he may teach them ruinous things. There are two kinds of teachers and two kinds of brothers. But there is only one kind of parent. Even evil parents teach their children to do good things. (28-85, 1970.1.4)

To whom do you belong? You belong both to your parents and your child. To whom do the parents belong? They belong to both the child and to God simultaneously. Therefore, first you belong to God, and then you belong to your child. After that, you belong to yourself. When you reach that stage, you will be perfect.

That is why the moral principle of showing respect to parents still remains in human life. The phrase "respect for your parents and love for your child" is derived from this principle. A person without parents is an orphan. Only after you have the experience of receiving parental love and of loving your children can you distinguish your position in the four horizontal directions and up and down. (18-209, 1967.6.8)

Your children should be able to say, "Our parents are the best on earth." The people of the world will come and visit Korea in search of exemplary families. You should have something to show and to say to them at that time. (21-87, 1968.11.3)

A father should be the best friend of friends. When a father appears, his son should jump up to be with his father, even abandoning his friends. A father should also be the teacher of teachers. Hence, a father is to be considered even better than the president, the best

and second-best only to God. Children should think of their father as their best friend and teacher, whom they would never exchange for any other friends or teachers. Sons should be able to say, "I would rather abandon my loving wife than abandon my father." (57-282, 1972.6.4)

I always caress the sleeping faces of my children when I come home. It is not easy to be a good parent. Through this, a thought is automatically implanted in the children's minds, "I will also love my sons and daughters as my father loves me." They should be able to realize that their father is the best in the whole world. (97-310, 1978.3.26)

Everyone wants to have a great son. They may ask how they should educate a child to be great. However, education continues throughout the parents' entire lifetime. They should offer sincere devotion. When the parents pass on their household to the children whom they have raised with utmost devotion or appoint them as their representatives, they have a common desire to have their children be like-minded and follow their ways. (24-257, 1969.8.24)

Parents suffer for their children so much that it could melt even their bone marrow, yet they would feel no pain. Why? Because they love their children so much. Do they record how much it costs after giving away their flesh and blood? They do not do that. Instead, they feel frustrated at not being able to give their children everything. (39-334, 1971.1.16)

Parents' love toward their children does not just come from their everyday relationships with each other. It is a love that springs up from the very marrow of their bones. Parents have a loving mind for their children that can never be forgotten or cut off. Therefore, parents love their children as long as their life endures. When parents experience that their life is connected with their children, a loving heart toward their children naturally springs up. Parents cannot help loving their children, not just because of a conscious intention to love them because they are their own, but because of the life force that connects them to their children more deeply than that kind of awareness. We vividly feel this reality in our daily family life. (32-15, 1970.6.14)

The man should take responsibility for all the disputes that arise in a family. He should maintain the central position of authority in the family. (21-87, 1968.11.3)

4.2. Tradition is passed on by parents

I am not worried about leaving behind the name of the Unification Church but about how to leave behind people who have inherited the tradition of True Parents. That is why I have been continuously educating them about the importance of tradition. (35-115, 1970.10.4)

Looking ahead, what is meant by living well in the future? Being well-off

does not matter. We must take responsibility for the education of our descendants. We have to leave a good example for them. Until now all of us, including myself, have walked a miserable path. Like refugees, we did not have any place to stay as we walked through the wilderness course. However, from now on we have to settle down; in order to do so, we must be victorious. Unless we win as the Israelites did when they drove out the seven tribes of Canaan, we cannot settle down. We should gain victory in this battle by focusing on this nation. (77-251, 1975.4.13)

You should educate your children by teaching them to become like their parents. It is not shameful that you did not eat enough and that you wore terrible clothes while witnessing. That will become educational material for your descendants that cannot be exchanged for millions of dollars. (83-259, 1976.2.8)

Suffering is wonderful; therefore, you should set a tradition that will make all your descendants feel proud for many generations. (14-92, 1964.6.12)

The big problem is how the three generations of the children of our Blessed Families can live with me. If three generations together earn merit, they will be meritorious subjects in the spirit world. Have you ever thought about that? Thus, you should embrace your children and, from now on, devote yourself sincerely to educating your children with such an idea. (51-269, 1971.11.28)

You should leave behind a tradition followed by good and respectable descendants. You should leave behind strong, bold and worthy descendants. If you can do so, even though your nation may have been destined to perish, it will not. New benefactors will appear in a time of crisis, and a new victorious flag will be unfurled when that tradition is upheld. It should remain and will bring joyfulness not only to Koreans, but to all humankind. If we cannot do that, there will be no offering to bring before heaven. (99-329, 1978.10.1)

Up to the point when they die, parents should bequeath the heavenly tradition. For what does a family exist? Even though it exists for the children, first of all it should serve God and the nation. In the end, this is the path that will benefit your children. Only then can your children gain the fortune of God and the fortune of the world and nation. Accordingly, even though your precious children born after your Blessing go through suffering, you should not align yourself with them but rather with the fortune of God, the world, and nation. (21-87, 1968.11.3)

You should be the family living for the world and eternity, not just for the sake of your own generation. Your family should broaden the basis of love, gather the heart of all humanity, light a candle and burn incense to invoke God's help, and become a family that can live in partnership with heaven and earth and humankind. If you become such

a family, God will protect you from trouble and misfortune. God will keep your family as the main seed. (100-306, 1978.10.22)

Section 5. Proper Behavior between Spouses

5.1. Spouses are companions for life

After you marry, you cannot do whatever you like. Once you marry and have a family you must follow that family's destined path, even at the cost of your life. (120-225, 1982.10.17)

Beginning with the very first moment of love, you are one, not two anymore. Once you are a couple, you cannot behave individually but should mutually take responsibility for everything. (253-211, 1994.1.23)

If you destroy yourself that's one thing, but a family should not be destroyed. The wife is the most needed person in the world for her husband, and the husband is the most needed person in the world for his wife. You should be each other's walking stick and comrade, advising each other. (27-87, 1969.11.26)

A wife should not think that she fulfills her responsibility just by preparing a meal when her husband comes home from work. The most important thing is for her to sit at the dinner table and share intimate words of love. If she comforts her husband after a hard day's work with that love and the voice she affectionately whispered at their first meeting, his fatigue will be washed away and their love will deepen. (Tongil Segye - Feb. 1982)

Ideally, a woman's voice should sound softer than the average voice of a man. Her voice should be like the whisper of love. (Sabo, 39-5)

Although I am nearly seventy years old, when I want to go out to the ocean, Mother prepares all my equipment with her whole heart. She even prepares the supplies needed in case I stay out overnight and prays for me to accomplish my purpose in going out to sea. What a wonderful and beautiful wife she is! (Tongil Segye - Nov. 1986)

When a husband goes to bed right after work, snoring loudly without eating dinner and without saying anything, his snoring should be deafened by his wife's sobs convulsing deep from within her bosom. My wish is to see that kind of family. If I cannot find such a family, my suffering will have been in vain. The six thousand years of God's sacrifice will come to naught. You should be aware of this. (35-192, 1970.10.13)

When the husband travels to his assigned area, the wife should not feel like saying, "See you later. I am so tired. I have got to sleep now." Until her husband comes back from his rounds, her heart should make the same effort he is making. Children should also wait with a conscientious heart until their parents return. (30-82, 1970.3.17)

The wife should make her husband successful. She should be his great supporter. (21-79, 1968.10.20)

If a husband tells his wife not to intervene in his business, should she not intervene at all? A wife can stand as an equal in position to her husband. If her husband is absent, the wife should be able to take his place. (31-210, 1970.5.31)

You thought it would be great once you got a husband. However, there are bad times as well. You are not supposed to expect only good things. Can you bathe in the sun twenty-four hours a day? You need the night. Is it not a rule that the high is followed by the low? (30-143, 1970.3.21)

A wife should not be sad because her household is poor or because she cannot wear nice clothes. It is not as though your husband does not know your heart. Deep love and priceless treasures more valuable than diamonds are hidden in his heart of feeling sorry for you. (141-26, 1986.2.16)

I want to advise wives to awaken their husbands from sleeping by chiding them, "How can you sleep so much?" (12-89, 1962.11.11)

A small dose of comfort will immediately dispel a woman's anger. (203-155, 1990.6.24)

Couples should not engage in petty fights in which they accuse each other of not loving or recognizing one another. Even when you quarrel, you should do so for God's will. (21-87, 1968.11.3)

On your wife's birthday, you should invite ladies from your neighborhood and dance and sing in front of them, showing a loving heart toward your wife. (127-95, 1983.5.5)

You can tell, just from listening to your wife or others in your household, whether they had a good day or not. So, when the wife walks in, you ask her, "Why are you upset?" Then, she is at a loss for words because the husband already knows everything without even having seen her. You should be able to gauge things in this way. When you pray for someone out of concern, you will come to know things like this. (42-174, 1971.3.4)

Even if a loving husband were to curse in his home, it can become a stimulant for love. One word from an unloving husband can cause destruction where that word cuts into the flesh. If there is love, even being chastised would be acceptable, but without love, everything would be detestable. (83-177, 1976.2.8)

5.2. Spouses are comrades in faith

When you work in an agricultural community, you are not to work alone. A husband and wife together are to report the day's schedule to God before going out to work, and they are to report to God after work and then eat dinner.

You should know how strict is the God-centered standard of life that regulates all these things. There are rules of family life for women and for men, respectively.

The path you should take is one of systematizing the great heavenly rules and then following them. You must follow this path. Should you not do so, then your life will lose its meaning. (31-276, 1970.6.4)

In walking, men are to step forward with their right foot first and women are to step forward with their left foot first. Whenever they sit, it is a rule for men to sit on the east side and women on the west side. There is always a certain way to do everything, even for setting the table or for hanging up clothes. (26-241, 1969.11.4)

Men should look at women from top to bottom for the women's sake, and women should be looking bottom to top for the men's sake. Women should not look upstream at flowing water but should look downstream. A woman looking upstream is the type who will be unfaithful. Usually, women should prepare the place for men to sit. When using a dresser, men are to use the right and women the left. If men use the upper side, women should use the lower side. For example, the woman should not place her skirt or underwear on the man's upper clothes. The woman's clothes should not be placed on top of the man's clothes. (Sabo 39-5)

The wife of a leader should not nag her husband when he is about to leave for work in the morning. The feelings in his heart that arise due to his wife's nagging will be like waves; they will be very disturbing. His disturbed heart can affect the whole world. If women are going to nag, then they should nag at night, and then all the problems will be solved overnight. Men go out to battle in the morning. The wife of this kind of husband should wake up early and serve him well. (27-88, 1969.11.26)

You should offer a prayer of gratitude even if you are strongly chastised by your husband, saying, "How can I expect my husband never to reprimand me? Thank you." (27-88, 1969.11.26)

Within a couple, if one side were to waver, the other should supplement with heart and devotion. (21-87, 1968.11.3)

Women should always be beautiful, even if it requires using makeup and perfume. A wife should not be emotionally indebted to her husband, and she should always concern herself with her husband's body and clothes. When a husband looks tired after returning home, she should prepare the water to wash his face and things to brush his teeth, and be able to wash his feet and comb his hair. A woman's smile is the flower of the family. In order to establish a harmonious family, the woman should be a first-class actress of both comedy and tragedy. She should completely captivate her husband all the time, whether

he is joyful or sad. (27-88, 1969.11.26)

A woman should change her clothes at least once every three days. She should also wash her hair that often. She should always smile. A smile is a flower of the mind. Always keep your flowers in bloom and give off a sweet fragrance. A woman should test her partner's response to her hairstyle and makeup. If you cannot bring joy to your partner with your facial or external appearance, you should do so through your interests even if you have to mobilize all the arts, such as music. You may research women's physiology by looking at magazines or explain to him about literature after reading several books. Make your husband live like a child who is enfolded in your skirt. (27-88, 1969.11.26)

Once a husband and wife meet, they should be together, holding each other's hands, whether they are going the way of life or death. Since you are to go together, you should do so with style. (27-89, 1969.11.26)

After marriage, you cannot act whatever way you want. In which direction should you go after marriage? You are to take charge of God's love. Human beings are born as men and women because of love. Love can bear fruit when a husband and wife become one. You are embodiments of God's love and divided into His dual characteristics. Accordingly, for these two divided embodiments to form a harmonious union, they should look for God's love. (144-132, 1986.4.12)

When Blessed Families embrace and love their babies, they should know clearly the purpose for which their children were born. They were born because of God. They were born in relationship to God. Even though you may share secrets with your precious husband or your precious wife, this relationship is not of your own design. You met along a public path, following a heavenly principle. God intervened to create your meeting. Because of such a connection, if you should feel misery, then God feels the same misery. (67-291, 1973.7.22)

In laying the family foundation, if the wife can tune her mind to her husband's mind, she will be blessed. If the husband can do likewise, he will also be blessed. If the children unite, they will also be blessed. We are now in the age of family salvation. (12-261, 1963.5.22)

Women should go the way of women in response to heavenly law. You should be able to die if your husband asks you to die with him. Even though you die, you will live together in the spirit world. There will be a way for liberation as long as you regard your husband's order as absolute and are obedient to his command. Looking from the view of morality, there will always be a path to liberation for those who remain absolutely obedient to the three fundamental principles and five moral disciplines in human relations, even though they may dwell within the evil, fallen realm. (26-265, 1969.11.9)

Section 6. Raising Children in Faith

6.1. Parents are to teach their children heavenly law

What will you teach your children? In order for your children to inherit the tradition, you must educate them and lead an exemplary public life. People were originally made to be educated by their parents; they are not to receive education just from school. Especially, education in order to inherit the tradition cannot be taught in school. (111-256, 1981.2.22)

Children discover all their values through the parents. Who do the children resemble when they grow up in a family? They resemble their parents. Who will they follow? They will follow their parents. That's how it is. (24-133, 1969.7.20)

Blessed families should establish a family tradition and create a family code of conduct. You should also create a standard of education for children and rules of conduct for the family. If the parents have not done so, they will have nothing to say when they commit an error and their children press them hard. (21-87, 1968.11.3)

In order to educate children, parents should first practice accordingly. The parents should be a model of loyalty to God's will. They should stand in the position where the children regard them with such awe so that they would not utter a word against whatever the parents say. If not, the children will not follow them.

In regard to church life, children will observe their parents and compare their actions with what they understand of God's will and the Principle. When children see that their parents neglect church responsibilities and do not live according to headquarters' directions, while at the same time expecting their children to live in a principled way, then they will surely sneer at their parents. (31-268, 1970.6.4)

Everything that parents do should encourage their children to follow the correct way of the Unification Church. This is how it should be. Parents must also follow this path. They should first go through that course and only then can they teach and educate their children. If parents try to educate their children in something they have not done, this will go against the heavenly way.

I teach you about what I have first practiced and established as a victorious foundation. If you cannot believe it, pray to God to see if I am telling the truth or not. (23-322, 1969.6.8)

When you pray, you should do so asking God to let your children follow what you do. You should first become the standard; then your children can reach such a position. If you stand in that position first, God will lead your children in the same direction. Therefore, if you do not go in the right direc-

tion, after passing into the spirit world you will be accused of being irresponsible. (13-103, 1963.11.1)

When you educate your children, you should do so by telling them to become like their parents. (38-292, 1971.1.8)

Children learn their parents' heart. (30-87, 1970.3.17)

When teaching your children how to live, you should teach them about the path they should follow in order to become great people, instead of just telling them to be a certain way. A father is responsible as a father, and an elder brother and elder sister are to be responsible as an elder brother and an elder sister. In other words, you should know how to cultivate an attitude that will enable you to follow the path of a true man or a true woman, and follow the heavenly way. Only after obediently continuing on this path can you become a citizen of God's nation. (68-331, 1973.8.5)

The word "father" is a dreadful word. Unless you are a "true" father, you cannot feed and give life to your children. Through shedding blood, you gain achievements and goodness so that you can provide for your children. When your children do something wrong, you should guide them in tears toward the right way, praying for their blessing. Only then can parents be free from being indebted to their children. (14-92, 1964.6.12)

In the future, as parents, you are to embrace your children and follow heavenly law. You should never shed tears in front of your children even if your living conditions become terribly difficult and you have to live in hardship. (23-182, 1969.5.18)

When educating children, parents have to think about how to rear their children so that they can become people who can fulfill the mission for God's will. They should think the same way when they nurse a baby. (12-134, 1963.1.25)

Children must be careful in everything they do, even if they are raised in a household with a reputable standard. In other words, even the children raised in a reputable household should be prudent in all things. Every step taken, every word uttered, every action contemplated must be prudent. Etiquette is complex. Dignified families have many useful educational resources for their children. They gather their growing children and teach them how to deal with adults, with siblings, and with parents. (42-17, 1971.2.19)

6.2. The importance of faith education

Faith education is more important than school education. My thought is focused on the heavenly will, but your thought is individualistic. Creative power develops within those who have faith and act. (Sabo, 42-12)

Children of Blessed Families should

be raised to become people of character through education of heart. They should be raised to become the proud chosen people through education of the norm and contribute to the advancement of God's will by fully expressing, one hundred percent, their God-given talent through gifted educational programs. (133-282, 1984.11.3)

Why do you feel tired when you study? It is because you study for yourself. Instead, think that the survival of the thirty million people of Korea depends on the one page or one sentence that lies before you. Study with the mind-set that the addition of one word of vocabulary will save those thirty million people and that the loss of one word will doom the same number of people. Accordingly, with that seriousness offer even more devotion.

It is not because your memory is lacking. You never forget what happens in an extremely serious moment, do you? Study at the risk of your life. You can feel the beating of your heart when you are serious. In such serious moments, can you forget what you are determined to do? To be forgetful is just a question of degree. (35-38, 1970.9.27)

When I was a student, I supported myself. Tigers let cubs experience severe trials and harsh discipline in order to rear them to be the kings of the mountain by developing their wild nature. Iron gets stronger by being heated. This principle should be considered when educating children. (35-38, 1970.9.27)

Even if parents cannot freely give children material benefits because of their difficult circumstances, they should serve children with a loving heart that seeps from their bone marrow. Then the children will be indebted to their parents. That is why most sons of filial piety come from poor families. Because their parents bequeathed such a tradition, the children endeavor not to be indebted to their parents. When they do so, the parents feel joy. (77-38, 1075.3.30)

Section 7. Love between Siblings

If parents have only one son or daughter, what happens? The son needs an elder sister and an elder brother, does he not? The daughter needs an elder brother and an elder sister. They also need a younger brother and sister. If they don't have siblings of all kinds, they are unhappy. God protects the family in which the younger brother and sister and the elder brother and sister are all present and completely one. This becomes the foundation for a tribe, a people, and a nation.

The elder brother and elder sister represent the east and west; the younger brother and younger sister represent the north and south. When these become perfected, they become three-dimensional. This is the law of love. When this law of love is established, the origin of peace is created. (20-40, 1968.3.31)

The heart of parents desires that children love each other more than they love the parents. Even if you cannot take care of your parents, if you say, "Mom,

please wait. I will take care of my younger brother first," your parents will say, "My boy! Oh, he'll grow up to be a good man." Isn't that right? (78-41, 1975.5.1)

The person who is willing to love his brother even more than he does his parents will live eternally in heaven. Those who cannot love their brother as they would their parents are not included in this place. The source of this principle, when understood, is simple. Members were incapable of loving one another because they did not know this until now. The question is whether our members can unite among themselves. If you stand in a position where you cannot fulfill your filial duty to True Parents, you should offer those things that you wanted to devote to them to the members instead. Then Heaven can accept this offering as something greater than your filial devotion to True Parents. Such a person will surely be blessed. (78-41, 1975.5.1)

The path to heaven is opened by loving the members in the same way that you love God. You are trying to follow me, yet, with that same heart, you should strive to go together with your siblings. In this respect, we can conclude that the one who teaches the highest, quickest, and best way to go to heaven is neither God nor me but your siblings. The one who exerts himself with love greater than parental or conjugal love becomes the supreme subject being of love who then searches for his object partner. (66-125, 1973.4.18)

Is it not wonderful when the younger sibling in a family does something wrong, and the other siblings support him and the parents love him? The mother and father would say, "He is our future God!" Why is that so? It is the same when you connect to God's love. You should know that in a family with that kind of love, where the elder siblings love the younger ones like a mother and where the mother displays love when serving the father, God will be with that family and the children will become God's representatives in the future. (184-63, 1988.11.13)

Who are siblings? They are partners in the same kind of love; they are comrades who share the same parents' love. If that is the case, can they fight with one another? They cannot. When you raise your right hand it is your father's hand, and when you raise your left hand it is your mother's hand. Your right foot is your father's foot. When I asked my daughter, Sun-jin, "Whose feet are these?" she answered that the right foot was her father's and the left was her mother's. She was really right. Why is that so? It was made that way because of love. (106-80, 1979.12.9)

An elder brother may love his younger sister and the younger sister may love her older brother, but their love should involve not only them. They should always involve their parents so that they can love each other with the emphasis on the fact that they were raised within their parents' bosom. They should be

siblings connected on the foundation of unity between the parent and child. Only then can they ascend together as they grow. They continue to ascend in this way through elementary school and middle school. (236-11, 1992.11.2)

No matter how often you travel around the world, you will not find love like that of siblings, the love between siblings born from the same parents. Is there anyone closer to you than your own siblings in society? Others may become close, but they fall away. (228-199, 1992.4.3)

If there are many siblings in a family, two must share one dish when they eat. They should not quarrel, saying that there is only one dish. No matter how difficult life is with many siblings, all will be well if you can have a loving heart in offering your own meal to your eldest sister or your younger brother, even if you have to skip a meal. (112-195, 1981.4.12)

A nation's citizens and all humankind emerge from brothers and sisters. Siblings represent the front and back. Then what is two-dimensional takes on flesh. From here a sphere is created. Siblings create this sphere, and as they expand they become citizens of a nation. Brotherly love leads to love toward the world. A family that raises many siblings is like a model that embraces humankind and creates the ideal heaven in the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world. Consequently, siblings expand in number. (235-268, 1992.10.11)

Section 8. Thrift, Diligence, and a Frugal Family Life

8.1. A frugal life

Is not happiness all about living and working for the sake of each other based on love? The wife lives for the sake of her husband, the children live for the sake of the parents, and the parents, grandparents, and grandchildren live for the sake of the family. When all members of a family strive to create something for the entire family rather than for their individual selves, when the grandfather, father, and mother and even the children are frugal in their personal spending in order to create something for the entire family, and when the entire family works hard to expand their common possessions, that household will prosper. For this reason, such a nest of love can expand from a place that refrains from spending money in order to save up and live for the whole. When these families spread out to society and the world, the ideal can be fulfilled. This does not happen centering on yourself or your own personal belongings. (167-214, 1987.7.19)

The rights of ownership must be returned to God. For this reason I do not have anything. Since I know this, I live a simple life. The age is gradually approaching in which the entire family can go anywhere with a single bag and live. There is some truth in the biblical passage, "It is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a

rich man to enter the Kingdom of Heaven." (229-65, 1992.4.9)

How do you establish a firm economic foundation? You should first be frugal. That is why I tell you to be frugal. But no matter how much I emphasize this, it is still not being done. Even in an environment where we can freely give and receive material things, we may be chased out if we cannot fulfill our responsibility. In such a case the Unification Church will have to go through a second course of tribulation. (24-101, 1969.7.13)

Our missionaries are trained so that they have no need for the luxuries of Western societies. It is because we have a new culture called "the sleeping bag culture." Wherever they go, our young people do not feel disoriented. You will discover that the homes of Unification Church missionaries are without any luxurious furnishings and possess only the simplest of household goods. (130-280, 1984.2.7)

8.2. Thrift

You must be exemplary in everything. Eating good food, living the good life in affluence can never be exemplary. You should know that an exemplary life lies in moderation and spending only what is absolutely necessary.

On Sundays I am forced to wear a suit, but at other times I go without a necktie as much as possible. When I am at home I do not wear a jacket but instead wear simple things like sweaters. Think about how much neckties cost in Western society. If you include necktie pins, how much do they cost in all? Consider two men: one thinks about the world and lives his entire life without a necktie and the other lives his life wearing a necktie without thinking about the world. Which one do you think will be closer to God when they go to the spirit world?

When you fast, you realize how much time you have. You realize just how much time you spend in eating three meals a day. How much effort is wasted mentally just by thinking about what to have, if you are constantly going back and forth opening the refrigerator door in order to eat an apple or drink a Coke? It is necessary to get accustomed to eating only at mealtimes. If you do so, you will not get sick; rather, you will become healthier.

I do not support the idea of taking a bath every day. It is not good for the health. I make it a rule to take a bath once every three days. I take a bath only when I cannot help it, when I have been sweating a lot. How much water do we consume by taking a bath every day? It is bad for the health. You may say, "Oh! Father is a barbarian," but that's okay for me. In the Garden of Eden, God, Adam, and Eve were all barbarians. At that time did they have a bathroom like we have today? Did they have toilet paper? They had nothing. Therefore, you should feel grateful for all those things, and you save this world even if you have to live this way. (131-283, 1984.5.4)

When you eat, you should do so in a way that is different from the past. Even when you go to the restroom, it should be with a different attitude than before. These days, when you take a train and use the restroom, you find toilet paper hanging there. You probably use it excessively, thinking, "Well, no one is looking." You should not use it wastefully just because it belongs to someone else. You should use it sparingly and take some only one time. You must have a better attitude. (57-179, 1972.5.31)

Even when you eat out of hunger you should not completely fill your plate with food. You should maintain the standard of finding satisfaction in eating three-fifths of your plateful after removing two-fifths of it. Only then are you a wise person. You should know how to be frugal in everything. You should save the maximum and then find out the minimum you can live with. If you invest yourself using the minimum for at least three months you will discover the real minimum you can live with. After you do so, let's see how it goes. (57-197, 1972.5.31)

You should explore ways to save even a penny for the sake of God's will and the restoration of this nation. Hence, I believe that we should pioneer a way to be even more frugal in our finances. (77-31, 1975.3.23)

I am thinking to challenge you to live on less money from now on. I may have you try to give up things like soft drinks. In the cafeteria I saw you all come in without a thought and eat whatever was there. You were eating like pigs. There is nothing extraordinary about being frugal. You should be frugal in what you wear, what you eat, and in the way you live. (96-134, 1978.1.3)

Our members should not be wearing expensive neckties. I am not saying this because I am concerned about what others will think. If possible, however, we should be frugal in these matters. If we live this way, a great revolution of resourcefulness will explode out of this. This is absolutely necessary in America. (94-195, 1977.9.1)

Some say that I am a millionaire because I have a lot of money, but I have shed blood and tears without rest twenty-four hours a day to save one more penny. I have spread the money gathered in this way across the entire world. I do not even have a piece of paper in my possession. I do not even have one registered seal. No one can use this money which I have so carefully gathered, as they please. God works with me. Do you understand? (101-161, 1978.10.29)

I do what others cannot do by living frugally – refraining from sleep, rest, and food when others have slept, rested, and eaten. That has been my belief from the onset. (103-241, 1979.3.1)

What are we trying to do by saving, using money sparingly and suffering in this way? We are trying to create

something good for the coming generation. Consequently, we are striving to acquire an ideology that can create a foundation that we can be proud of in front of the world. After ten years, a hundred years, or a thousand years of bequeathing a tradition based on such an ideology, the Republic of Korea will surely become a people that can win the support of the world. Therefore, the aim of my teachings is to guide people based on this principle. Although this way of thinking may be seen as the worst of its kind at a time when we are encountering difficulties, only this kind of thought will prevail for eternity. For this reason, I first set out by taking up this path. (109-104, 1980.10.26)

When we say, "Save money!" we should think of the more public purpose of saving for the nation rather than for the more personal purpose of gathering wealth. We are not saving to become rich. We are doing so to save the nation. The reason I say to America, "America must be frugal and should save!" is in order to save the world. America collects the most taxes in the world. If it had collected a lot of taxes for the world, then America would have been respected by the world. If this was done just for the sake of the American people, then they should oppose the government, and even the world would oppose it. I believe America shows a tendency and a culture that is ruining the world. Consequently, for the world I can say, "Although I may face opposition, the way I am going is the just and right way." That is how it is with everything I hear, say, and do. (111-256, 1981.2.22)

Section 9. Proprieties of Daily Living

9.1. Clothes

Even your clothes must be hung in a principled way. You should put men's clothes on the right side and women's clothes on the left side of the closet. When you put your clothes in a drawer, you should put men's clothes on top and women's on the bottom. That is the principled way. You all need such training. You are hearing these things for the first time, are you not? You have to do things this way. What happens if you put men's clothes on the bottom and women's clothes on top? It is a violation of the Principle. (131-283, 1984.5.3)

When you take off your clothes, you should take off your trousers first, and then put your jacket on top of the trousers. You should not take off your jacket first. You should know how to put your surroundings in order through such principled ways of living. Men's shoes should be put on the right side, women's shoes on the left. Even if you live in a small house with only one shoe rack with two shelves, you should put the men's shoes above and the women's below.

You should know how to put everything in order following the principled way. (131-283, 1984.5.3)

When women put on clothes, what do you put on first? Do you put on your upper garments or lower garments first? It is a principle for woman to put on clothes beginning with the lower garment. It is a principle to dress beginning with the lower garment. Although it is okay for men to occasionally put on their jackets first, that is also the case for men. It is the principled way. You have to know all those things and put your lifestyle in order. You have to know that the Principle is also a philosophy of life. (131-283, 1984.5.3)

9.2. Facial expression

Your face is the way it is. But what can you do with the expression on your face? You have to adjust it habitually. If your teeth are pointed inward, then you should not laugh so frequently. Why is that? If women have such teeth, they would look like a viper's teeth. For this reason, as much as possible, such women should not laugh with their mouths open. (131-283, 1984.5.3)

Women should not laugh loudly. Women are like flowers. When flowers bloom, they do so without making any noise. They do not suddenly come into bloom; they bloom quietly. Such women are beautiful, not the ones who laugh loudly. Western people laugh loudly. Men may laugh loudly, but women should not. They appear gauche. It is unattractive. Even if you are a woman from the West, you should not laugh loudly. (131-283, 1984.5.3)

People's laughter is a curious thing. Some people grin when they smile. What happens when you laugh? Everything becomes round. When an old man laughs, "Ho! Ho! Ho!" his mouth does not continue to go up, but starts to curve down into "He! He! He!" Why does it curve down? Do you not find it strange? It should curve upward when he laughs. Why does it curve down? Because it should be round. If you smile sweetly, your mouth curves only a little. But if you laugh, "Ha! Ha! Ha!" your mouth becomes very round. Therefore, there are no evil people among those who have a big smile. I am not talking about face reading. Isn't that interesting? (173-242, 1988.2.21)

When you laugh, do your eyes laugh one way and your nose another way, or do they laugh together? For people whose lips are tightly closed when their eyes and nose are laughing, it means they are poor. If your nose does not move when you laugh, you will have few children and descendants. If your eyes don't laugh when you laugh, you are lacking in heart. You must smile brightly and have a full laugh. (96-232, 1978.1.22)

9.3. Hairstyle

Men should comb their hair as carefully as women do. They should take care when deciding the best side for parting their hair, just as women do when applying cosmetics. In the West as well as the Orient, men part their hair on the left. It is Western-style to part your hair on

the left. It is good to have more hair on the right half than on the left. Women should consider this as well. (131-283, 1984.5.3)

9.4. Fingernails and toenails

Since I came to Western society, what I feared most was facing women. I sense much danger just looking at their nails. My fingernails are always short. That is necessary. If they get any longer, I cut my fingernails and toenails. It is my custom to cut my fingernails and toenails. Women who keep their fingernails long are those who do not work. How do they type with those nails? So, when I see women with long nails I regard them as idle women. (131-283, 1984.5.3)

When women take off their stockings their toenails should not be long. Western women must be in pain with their long toenails. It would be painful for them to wear high heels. (131-283, 1984.5.3)

9.5. How you should walk

You should walk correctly. Your posture, when you walk, must be balanced. You should always think whether your posture is good or not. You should walk carefully. Some people walk like this and like that. When you are standing, you must be balanced. This is necessary. (131-283, 1984.5.3)

Women should not have their backs bent. It is the same with men. Women who sleep in a bed develop crooked chests, but they should not look like this. Their posture must be correct from top to bottom. Therefore, you should practice sitting up straight. It is the same for men. Women should sit with their backside tucked in neatly. If you do not, your backbone will be bent. Your posture when walking and how you walk are important. (131-283, 1984.5.3)

9.6. Sitting posture

In Asian society, when a woman goes somewhere and sits down, she is not allowed to lean her back against anything, even though men are allowed to do this. It is because women have big hips. They feel comfortable when they are seated naturally. Men, however, have smaller hips and a larger upper body. Therefore, when women sit leaning their back against something, this could bring trouble to their babies. If they are pregnant, a problem could arise. (131-283, 1984.5.3)

9.7. Sleeping

What are the sleeping habits of the West? Do you sleep on your back or on your side? You need to get a sound sleep. Sleep should be peaceful. A man with a big physical body can snore, but women should not snore. A woman should snore very softly or otherwise, it could be troublesome. If the neck is tucked in, the snoring sound is louder. Isn't that the case? Therefore, you should keep

your pillow like this to keep your chin high. This is necessary. (131-283, 1984.5.3)

When a woman goes to bed while her husband is sleeping, she should lie down carefully, going around him instead of stepping over him. If the husband is already asleep, she should not make any sudden noise. She must go to bed quietly. (131-283, 1984.5.3)

9.8. Health

Health is the most important thing. Even if you are sick with a cold, you should have healthy feelings. It is important to practice having a facial expression that betrays nothing to other people. Even if you have a cold, you should not look sick or appear worried when you are facing some difficulties. When a man looks worried, you should ask what is wrong and comfort him, always with a happy expression. (131-283, 1984.5.3)

9.9. Speech

There is a saying in the East that when a woman's voice goes beyond the wall, that house will perish. Men's voices are usually loud and go over walls. But women talk quietly. That is how it usually is. If a woman's voice goes beyond the wall, it goes against this principle. That is why you would perish if you lived with such a woman.

By listening to the voice of a woman, one will immediately know how that person will live; whether she will have a happy life or be miserable or be loved. Therefore, a woman's voice is very important. You never thought about these things, did you? (131-283, 1984.5.4)

You should not speak or act with just any words and actions. You should be raised to the position of God's son and daughter and speak and act as God's son and daughter. (91-89, 1977.1.30)

You should not use words you do not have in your heart. Absolutely not or you would be accused by heavenly law. (91-97, 1977.1.30)

You may use words spontaneously, but if you make a mistake in choosing one word, its influence will last for one year. If you misuse one word for one second, you will be put in a situation where you will have to pay the price for one year. (43-111, 1971.4.25)

Words spoken out of love, even swear words or any other words, will only prosper and develop. Everything, including the universe, will rejoice over those words. (91-91, 1977.1.30)

Section 10. Teachings on Purity

10.1. Strictly follow the commandment during adolescence

When you enter adolescence, your eyes are opened to the opposite sex and all your thoughts concentrate on that issue, do they not? All the actions of the cells in your body focus in on that. (108-233, 1980.10.16)

If you look at youths in adolescence, you will see girls flutter their eyelashes, wear colorful clothes, and go around tightening their bottoms. If their bottoms look big, it is a disaster. Trying to avoid being ashamed of that, they go around making their bottoms seem smaller.

The time when people can fully use all their wisdom and all of their physical attributes one hundred percent is during young adulthood. All the cells work one hundred percent. Only at that time will they be totally in action. Why do girls wear beautiful and colorful clothes? Those are like colorful love signals. (144-202, 1986.4.24)

There are many unusual winds blowing in the world nowadays. The Unification Church members must never be swayed by such trends. That kind of adolescence is not *Sa Choon Gi* (思春期), the "time of thinking of spring" but *Sa Choon Gi* (死春期), the "time of the death of spring." Which one would you choose, this one with the character for *Sa* meaning "thinking," or that one with the character for *Sa* meaning "death"? (57-159, 1972.5.31)

Did Jesus go through adolescence or not? Did Jesus not also go through adolescence? What kind of adolescence did he have? The one of "thinking of spring" or the one of "the death of spring"? He did not have the kind in which he whistled at girls. He went through adolescence with the character meaning "thinking of spring." (57-159, 1972.5.31)

First of all, you should go through adolescence in the right way. If you want to live, the adolescence containing the character for thinking (思春期) is for you. If you want to die, the adolescence containing the character for death (死春期) is for you. If you earnestly seek to overcome adolescence containing the character for death, then, turn it upside down. If you turn it over 180 degrees, the adolescence containing the character for death (死) transforms into the adolescence containing the character for thinking (思). Therefore, by overcoming the adolescence of death, Jesus moved toward the young adulthood of the bride and bridegroom, which was like a spring day of hope and of new life. That is what the Christian history of the bride and bridegroom is all about. (57-159, 1972.5.31)

What is the Fall? It was the failure to receive springtime centered on God. When spring comes, do children who aspire to become filial sons or daughters enjoy the season by themselves? They are filial sons or daughters if they can say to their parents, "Mom and Dad, it is spring. Let's go out together and enjoy the day!" There are some, however, who say, "Mom and Dad, although it is spring, it's best to take a nap." Then, while their parents sleep, they go outside by themselves to sing and dance. Can they be considered to be filial sons? They are not only unfilial, but they also deserve to be punished. Don't you think so? (57-159, 1972.5.31)

What was the Fall? From God's point

of view, it was the beginning of the time of adolescence containing the Chinese character for death (死春期). History began with the adolescence of death.

Therefore, spring is coming for those who risk their lives. A new age is coming. The history of Christianity has been going through such things to this day. (57-159, 1972.5.31)

Nowadays, people say the teenage years are important. Why is that? There are pluses and minuses everywhere… They are out of control and want to go around everywhere. When they do, they bring about their own self-destruction as well as the destruction of their society.

Since adolescence is a time of change, they say, "Ehh!" to anyone who says even a word to them. Since it is a time of transition, they want to aimlessly wander about. Therefore, they have to follow a principled way while being aware of that situation. You must now put all these things in order; no matter how hard it is to control them, you must do it. Comparing good and evil, what is evil? Evil is destructive. There is no protection against evil. (118-196, 1982.6.1)

Adolescence is a dangerous time, whether you are a man or a woman. (124-120, 1983.2.1)

If you choose the wrong place to sit during adolescence you may ruin your entire life. If you make a wise choice, you can live in prosperity for the rest of your life. These kinds of things can happen. (50-270, 1971.11.8)

Young people these days go against their parents and destroy the family. Since this destroys the order described within heavenly law, it is evil. Because of this, families are being destroyed; societies, nations, and even humanity are being destroyed. Thus, you cannot deny that this is evil.

During adolescence, you may want to try to re-enact the thrilling scenes from a movie. Young people ask, what's wrong with that? It is wrong, however, because irresponsible actions lead to the destruction of the environment. So it is necessary to sanction such activities. When you have developed your intellect, have gained experience in society, and can control of yourself in any circumstance, then you are free to do so, but not now. (117-184, 1982.3.1)

Do you like flower buds that are ready to bloom, or do you like flowers that have already bloomed? I like flowers that have bloomed. Are you the ones who are going to bloom? When you do, you should blossom to your fullest. Do not rely on someone else to bloom, but blossom radiantly through your own desire. This means that you should grow in a natural way, going through adolescence naturally, blossom in the natural environment, and then receive the husband whom you want to love.

Do not be crushed before you bloom. Do not be flowers whose leaves have fallen off and whose pollen has been shaken out. It is the same for men. Men should also blossom fully. (47-88, 1971.8.19)

As buds, you have not yet bloomed. Do not become wicked like those who write love letters and have illicit love relationships. You should blossom naturally. When God sees you, He should be able to exclaim, "Oh! You have blossomed purely and naturally. Since I can smell the fragrance, I can tell that you are a virgin." In this case, God feels so much hope. Does God want something pure or something damaged? What about you, then? Do you want something pure or something damaged? Even fallen men want to have something pure. Would God not value that even more?

For this reason, I hope that you can blossom fully with a pure heart and be people of value who can go beyond the fallen world of today without being trapped in the valley of sorrow. (47-88, 1971.8.19)

10.2. Children of heaven

We have to become sons and daughters of our Heavenly Father. We have to truly become children who can carry on His lineage. We have to establish a relationship of unity wherein our Father's heart is firmly bound with our hearts and where the aorta of our Father's heart is firmly connected to the aorta of our own hearts. The path our Father walks has to be our path, the situation our Father is in has to be our situation, and the will of our Father has to be our will. (27-270, 1969.12.21)

Think about it. As a young person nearing your twenties, where will you take your clean, unstained, holy, and pure heart, all wrapped up? You should bring it to the altar where heaven will be most happy and it will bring joy to God. The sacred foundation on which God can bind together men and women of pure love like you is where the bride and bridegroom are to meet. Even so, you were ignorant of its value. (64-84, 1972.10.24)

Your body is precious. Do not stain your body but fulfill your filial duty. You have to be responsible to escape from Satan's realm of death with a body that is approved by God. This is the highest goal and the standard that people should have. According to the principle of creation, you cannot help but be that way. (15-202, 1965.10.9)

Because in front of God your blood is not pure, you should be totally obedient in order to change this. Therefore, if you are disobedient you have to be taught the way of obedience even if it means being chastised. That means that you are taught God's love. This is the Unification Church. This is why the Unification Church will become the center of all religions. (33-332, 1970.8.23)

Now we should make the seed of pure lineage. If you split open a seed, you will find the albumen at the center of the seed. The center of the albumen is God's love. Then, if you were to open up your skull, what would be at the center? It would be God's love. The center of the seed, in other words, the source that can

become the root, is God's love. It begins from God's love. Yet, have you ever said, "I have God's love. Even though I look humble and though I am no more than five or six feet tall, God's love is overflowing inside the wellspring of my heart?" (33-332, 1970.8.23)

Life on earth is precious. It is especially important for young people to keep their bodies pure. A clean and obedient mind and body are what it takes to become genuinely filial to your parents. (15-201, 1965.10.9)

You have to go before God with the unchanging heart you had toward your first love. (129-149, 1983.10.9)

You should know that people who go to the next world having remained faithful to their first love can go to the highest position in the heavenly kingdom. (129-135, 1983.10.9)

The people on earth who can go to heaven are those who have lived their lives centered on their first love, giving up everything and risking their lives for the sake of their first love. Therefore, you must do well in your relationship with your first love. (128-85, 1983.6.5)

Section 11. A Life of Sanctification

11.1. Holy salt

Holy salt was first made and used on March 16, 1960 (lunar calendar) on the occasion of True Parents' Holy Wedding. From that day on, families began to use holy salt to sanctify things used in their daily life and environment.

Holy salt is like yeast. As a rule, when you purchase things, you should sanctify them with holy salt, and when you come back home, you should also holy salt yourself at the door. (9-78, 1960.4.11)

What is holy salted should not be given back to the satanic world. However, if you cannot avoid this, you should give it back with your left hand. (9-78, 1960.4.11)

When you use holy salt, you should pray, "In the name of the Father, the Son, the Holy Spirit, True Parents, and myself," and then sprinkle holy salt in the shape of a cross (in the order of north, south, east, and west). (9-78, 1960.4.11)

As a rule, when you have to dispose of real estate that was sanctified, you must do so in stages after receiving approval. (9-78, 1960.4.11)

Our members should gradually occupy more and more land by sanctifying the area they move into. (9-78, 1960.4.11)

When you visit a place, do you sprinkle holy salt before you sit down? If not, you should establish a condition in which you inwardly blow three times, "whew, whew, whew" before taking your seat. When you see a handsome man in the satanic world, rather than thinking, "I would like to live with this man,"

you should be able to blow him away from you, even if he holds your hand. You should sprinkle holy salt, that is, inwardly blow three times, "whew, whew, whew." You should sprinkle holy salt three times. (170-233, 1987.11.21)

Our church members should sanctify everything. In most cases, using holy salt to sanctify things is no problem, but when we eat rice or noodles or drink water, what shall we do with the holy salt? So, what shall we do from now on? We should do as Jesus instructed after his resurrection, which is to receive the Holy Spirit by blowing. It is the same as when God brought new life into being by blowing into the nostrils of Adam. From now on you, standing as a substantial being of life, need to blow on things before you eat or drink them.

Korean customs are amazing. When Koreans drink water, they first blow on it; before they sit, they first blow on the spot. God must have moved the natural conscience of these people so that this could be one of their customs. This did not take place by coincidence.

That is why, in our hearts, we should always sanctify our life in this way. In order to sanctify the long history of six thousand years that has been defiled as it proceeded in three stages, formation, growth, and completion, you should blow three times before you eat. Wherever you go, even when you go to a bathroom, you should do the same. You should do it wherever you go. (150-222, 1961.4.15)

11.2. Holy Candles

11.2.1. Shimjung Candle

The Shimjung Candle was created on January 5, 1961, and was given to Blessed Families. The Shimjung Candle symbolizes True Parents and is therefore used when one prays in order to comfort God's heart and to commit oneself to the fulfillment of God's will.

After Adam fell, he lost the source of his true life and love, shimjung (heart). Humankind has continued to fail You in heart. Because of this failure, You have had to engage in restoring fallen people. Keeping in mind Your hard work, each of us has lived with the hope of rising to the position of the restored Adam. Please bind us further in our determination to restore all things.

Whenever these Shimjung Candles are lit, may the flame they produce comfort Your heart and remind You of our commitment to accomplish Your will. Whenever we burn them and pray, may we further strengthen our determination in this time of restoration.

11.2.2. Birth Candles

Birth Candles originated at the time of Ye-jin nim's birth (True Parents' first daughter). After the 36 Couples started married life, True Father bequeathed one Birth Candle to each family.

Now I would like to pass on to each family the traditional Birth Candles that True Parents bequeathed to the 36 Couples. The Birth Candle that I have now

will be used symbolizing the Birth Candle that True Parents originally used. Let these families receive the Birth Candle and cherish it in the same heart. I pray in Your name and with Your glory that when this candle burns during a child's birth, it will sanctify the spiritual atmosphere and completely prevent Satan from approaching.

11.2.3. Ae Cheon Candle (Love of God Candle)

True Parents created Ae Cheon Candles on May 16, 1984, and bequeathed them to Blessed Couples on May 20. Ae Cheon Candles signify love for humankind and are used in pairs.

A candle sacrifices itself to give off light. In this way, it symbolizes the need for sacrifice in order to unite humanity centered on God. It is neither the candle nor the wick that kindles the flame. When the candle and wick are combined, the fire is lit and gives off light. In the same way, when the subject and object partners, husband and wife, sacrifice for each other, this symbolizes light being given off. Satan cannot exist in that place. (132-104, 1984.5.20)

We must be completely one with the realm of the unified heart centering on the Ae Cheon Candle. Then everything will be placed in order. (132-107, 1984.5.27)

Beloved God! The sign of victory indicating the designation of the Day of the Love of God (Ae Cheon Il) has been represented by this undying candlelight. Let the love of True Parents and the love of God be with this candle. Let peace reside where this candlelight shines and within the family that unites with this light. Let it be connected to Your domain of love to block the forces of evil and all conditions of injustice. Let it become a divine candle of victory that fends off the source of discord. Bestow your love; especially we pray that You and True Parents be with each and every place of prayer. We pray that You will come with Your sovereign power and protect the entire spirit world and the physical world.

Let Your glory be with the Ae Cheon Candle that gains life from this time forth, so that it may continue throughout history for eternity. Bless it so that it may continue until heaven is completed. This I pray and proclaim in the name of True Parents. Amen. (132-105, 1984.5.20)

11.2.4. Tongil (Unification) Candle

The Unification Candle originated from the 120-day special prayer condition that True Mother and the True Children offered from September 5, 1995 to January 2, 1996. During this time they prayed every day at midnight with the Unification Candle.

True Father will have a speaking tour in America from September 5, and I have already spoken in Japan. Before I left the house, I gathered the children who were there and discussed this with them. "Father is going out to the frontline to speak to America in order to draw humanity close to him again. Therefore, we should also offer devotion together."

They all agreed without one word of objection. All the children live separately because of their studies, but no matter what kind of environment they are placed in, they light the candle at twelve midnight to pray. We decided to offer a 120-day condition until January 2nd next year. (True Mother's Speech - 1995)

I have brought a candle with me today. I will bequeath this to you. After receiving this candle, you should all become proud sons and daughters before True Parents and children who can bear fruit on the earth. By doing so, I hope to arrive in heaven with you all. Please expand the foundation of your devotions today so that it can be one of offering devotion with the children of True Parents' family. Even though you may have difficulties, I pray that you may fulfill your responsibilities with a heart of participation during this condition.

Although this candle is only one, it consists of three different candles. True Children's love resides in this candle. (Family - Nov. 1995)

Let us display our loyalty and heart of love before You after connecting to the Unification Candle, with a heart burning with a flame that will last for eternity. Let this be a time of committing ourselves and promising our unchanging heart of love until all humankind is purified by these flames. Father, please encourage us and protect us so that we may all live our life in this way. Once more we ask for Your blessings so that we may become great people who can pledge to offer our lives to fulfill our loyalty to You. We pray this in True Parents' name. Amen.

Section 12. Rituals in the Life of Blessed Families

12.1. Pledge service

On the first day of each month, the husband and wife in each family should offer a full bow together at five o'clock in the morning, facing church headquarters. This should be done in a joyful atmosphere. You should also do this at five o'clock in the morning on Sundays. You should report about everything in your daily life during the week. Sunday should be a joyful day that you long to have come quickly. (13-104, 1963.11.1)

Pledge service should not be done only on Sunday mornings. Basically, we should do it every day. When you rise in the morning, you should first do Pledge service facing headquarters. It is an official ceremony. However, if we do Pledge service like that every day, there can be adverse effects. In order to avoid these side effects, as a condition, we do pledge only on Sunday mornings and on the mornings of the first day of each month. Ideally, we should be doing it every day. (31-274, 1970.6.4)

You should stand in a straight line with God at least during morning Pledge service. It is a truly serious hour. You should repent if you are even one second late. You should also prepare some

candy as holy food, like you would for Holy Communion, and share it with your children. (27-85, 1969.11.26)

You cannot expect your children to grow well when you do not even strictly observe morning Pledge service, devotion, and Sunday service. You should establish a four-position foundation centering upon True Parents. In order to raise good descendants, the parents should do well. (21-87, 1968.10.27)

12.2. Family service

Parents should set a good example in their life of faith. In their family, they should show their children, in their prayer life or family worship, a life of faith that is exemplary in every way. They should help children realize the importance of Pledge time. It is not enough just to hold Pledge service during that hour. As parents, they should teach their children about God's will. (31-266, 1970.6.4)

You should continue to expand the environment that will enable your entire tribe to attend family service in any place. (236-72, 1992.11.2)

Whether or not you participate in church gatherings will become an issue; whether or not you fulfill your responsibility in church activities will become an issue; and whether or not you become a good example as a parent in front of your children in family life will become an issue. (31-268, 1970.6.4)

12.3. Hoondokhwae

Hoondokhwae should be done at least by the husband and wife of all Blessed Families. They should do it for an hour every morning. If they are unable to do it in the morning, they should do it in the evening before they sleep, even if it is twelve or one o'clock. I am doing this. When I went on the tour to South America this time, I did it after midnight even though I was exhausted. I cannot skip it for even one day. Do you understand? You should read *Blessed Family and the Ideal Kingdom*. This book teaches everything about the Blessed Family and about the ideal kingdom in heaven. I have laid a highway, a victorious foundation through my battles, for this content. By building a highway like this, you should all become the cars and the gasoline. You should drive that car at full speed. (288-41, 1997.10.31)

You should do hoondokhwae whenever you have time; when you are alone or even when you are in the restroom. You should make a record of how many hours you read and of where you read. You should keep a book in your pocket and always do hoondokhwae.

Write the word hoondok (訓讀) again. It has the character *eon* (言) meaning "word," and what is this? It is the character for "river" (川). What happens when the "word" stands next to the "river"? God's word meets a straight stream. When you look at this character "river" (川), it is formation, growth, and completion.

The character *dok* (讀) consists of the character *eon* (言) meaning "word" and *mae* (賣) meaning "to sell." In other words, the word must be sold. It would be a disaster to keep it to yourself. If you are not selling it, you should give it away. If you store up goods and let them spoil, you will be punished. (289-295, 1998.2.1)

Not only should you read *The Way of God's Will* and *Divine Principle*, but you should also read other books, such as *Blessed Family and the Ideal Kingdom*. The important words in my speeches until this time are a record of the victories of my confrontations and battles against the satanic world. Therefore, you should read all of them. Since they contain all the details of the battles of the past and present they are True Parents' historical record. So in order for the Unification family to unite with True Parents, you should unite with these records and develop a deep relationship with these words. You, your family, and your tribe to the seventh generation should unite with this; horizontally the 160 and 180 families should be completely united to make the foundation to bring these words substantially down to the earth.

The words I say are not my own. They are not my words but the words of God who has spoken through me. Wherever and whenever you hear these words, your heart will begin to move. When your heart is profoundly moved, a great revolutionary change will occur in your body. They have that kind of power. (288-16, 1997.10.31)

You should study wherever you gather and whenever you have time, night or day. You should read it a hundred or even a thousand times until it becomes your own, and you become the substantial object to that book. From now on, you should practice such things.

Unification Church members will get sick if they just sit around. In order to avoid becoming ill, you should be diligent in reading, taking exams, and working hard. (288-41, 1997.10.31)

Hoondokhwae is my way of passing along all the treasure boxes I accumulated in my life under the indescribable hardships undertaken for the nation. I am giving it to everyone without exception. I have even said that it should not be translated. You should not translate it, not until you proclaim it to this nation. Keep this in mind. Do you understand? (290-29, 1998.2.2)

12.4. Family Pledge

Human beings were originally born with a bond tying them to the contents of My Pledge. Therefore, they should live and die within this pledge. You should be able to read the text of this pledge without feeling any shame. (11-164, 1961.7.20)

You should all do Pledge service on Sundays with your family. It is a declaration ceremony by those who were blessed. Satan cannot invade this family. That is why we recite the pledge. The Pledge is a proclamation announcing that you have no relation to the satan-

ic world. It is a proclamation ceremony that lets you clear away all the things you did during the week. That is why it is a problem if you miss it. (210-280, 1990.12.25)

Section 13. Ancestral Rituals for Blessed Families

13.1. Laws on ancestor worship were originally part of heavenly law.

A long time ago, when the families of loyal subjects received something good, they first offered it to the king of the nation. That was the rule of the life of loyalty in Korea. From that perspective, Korean courtesy reflects something central to heaven that cannot be found in any other nation. Confucians follow the teachings of Confucius, and there is quite a lot of traditional conduct prescribed in Confucian teachings that is close to heavenly law. You should ask your descendants to perform a sacrificial rite for you in the future. So far, the regulations of life and the procedure for holding a funeral have not been established centering upon the Principle, but once the standard is established in the future, you should follow it.

You should develop and protect the vitality of life in order to survive and grow, no matter what kind of storm comes, overcoming your environment and taking root deeply, centered upon the belief that God is always with you in every situation. If you become like that, it will not be a problem for God to set up His laws. But if you do not develop like that, it becomes problematic. (31-292, 1970.6.4)

What will you do in your hometown? First of all, you must devotedly take care of the graves of your ancestors. Because the Korean custom is to honor them, if you have not been able to fulfill your responsibility as the eldest son of the head family in your hometown, you should erect a headstone, plant trees in this desolate land that your grandfather loved, create an ideal environment on the hillside that your grandmother enjoyed, and clean up the village so that all the mountains and streams in your hometown can praise you. If you can do this, how would you feel? After doing this, would you become the head of your hometown or not? In the past, being the head of a group meant something bad, but now it means that you have to become a king and chief in doing good works. (219-148, 1991.8.29)

You are all historical reincarnations, wearing the faces of your ancestors. How long is this history? It is known to be hundreds of thousands of years old. The long course of history was intended to eventually create one person, yourself. In order to create one such person, for example, from the Kim family, countless ancestors came and went. Therefore, we are the fruits of human history. (46-154, 1971.8.13)

You have to live life in such a way that you are not ashamed in front of your ancestors. You must love the nation

more than your ancestors did. Love is such that if you give one hundred percent, 120 percent returns. The more you practice true love, the more it accumulates. It has been moving history. (179-93, 1988.7.22)

If your grandparents are deceased, you should visit their graves. When you visit their graves, you should pay your respects to them as if God were buried in that grave. On that day, you should repent for not attending your grandparents during your lifetime. (220-349, 1991.10.20)

Your ancestors come on the anniversary of the day that they passed away. Prepare an offering table and hold a memorial service for them then. If you do it in a room that has True Parents' picture, bowing to your ancestors would not be a sin. It is not a sin to prepare offering food and perform memorial services for your ancestors. (212-100, 1991.1.2)

The Unification Church allows the honoring of ancestors. We should carry on that tradition. In the future, this will be done in the opposite way from the secular tradition; instead it will be centered on True Parents. This is not a secular tradition from the secular world. If we attend the heavenly Parent, kingdom, and ancestors, a royal domain can emerge, where we can eternally attend the realm of tribal messiahship as part of the mainstream lineage, which can bequeath the way of attendance to succeeding generations. It will be a nation where you can attend the King and sing praises for the eternal reign of peace and prosperity. You, your mother, father, family, and tribe can go directly to heaven only after having lived in such a nation. (220-221, 1991.10.19)

You should value the right of the chosen people and their lineage. The right of the chosen people is the right of the firstborn son. Korea is the eldest son nation. The purpose of Koreans becoming a people that love their genealogy was for the sake of carrying on the lineage. It is not wrong to honor your ancestors and perform annual memorial services on the day they departed. In the future, there will be a time when we revere our parents more than do those who belong to Confucianism. (226-277, 1992.2.9)

Is it all right for the Unification Church to offer ancestral rites? It is liberating for us! From now on, you will be allowed to perform ancestral rites. Formerly, God did not want us to hold ancestral rites. Korean laws on honoring ancestors are the heavenly law. Koreans are a unique race in the world. Only Korea is practicing this way. (240-94, 1992.12.11)

On the day of the memorial service, the firstborn son of the eldest son decides the time of the service. That is why you can hold the service at five o'clock in the morning, even if previously it was done at one o'clock. Depending on the circumstances, the time can be changed again from five to seven o'clock

in the morning or even sometime during the day. The person who decides this is not your grandfather or ancestor who has passed away but the firstborn son. The offering table can be presented to the grandparents who passed away only when they come at the time designated by the firstborn son of the eldest son. If the grandparents do not like that time, they will not be served. The earth is the center. It is the same logic as Jesus said "What is unbound on earth is unbound in heaven." That is why the two must become one. (231-168, 1992.6.2)

When you perform ancestral rites, you have the firstborn son of the eldest son stand at the head even before his uncle, cousin, third-cousin, and even his great-uncle. In reverence to the ancestors in traditional Korean culture, the firstborn son is at the front. Thus, we can see that it is a race that attaches importance to the right of the eldest son. (197-340, 1990.1.20)

If you were pious toward your parents, you do not have to offer ceremonial rites for them after their death. You should just place their picture before you and commemorate that day as if your mother and father were alive. What boundary lines are there in the spirit world? Now instead of going to the burial ground, you can attend your parents in your house, as if they were alive, and you can feast and celebrate. Even though you do not go to their graves, it will still be a celebration. You should make your parents' gravesite on a hill near where you live. In the West, do you not bury your dead in a churchyard? You should not behave shamefully in front of your parents' graves; your deceased mother and father would admonish you. If you do anything that deviates from the right meaning of love, your ancestors will personally come after you and reprimand you. (206-294, 1990.10.14)

There is some element of truth in Christianity's ban on the performance of ancestral rites up until the present day. This rite should be offered to God and the True Parent of all humankind. The ancestors in the spirit world should originally have been served by us. However, due to the Fall, this has been prohibited until the present time. In the age of restoration, because you have received the Blessing, you should attend your ancestors from now on. (223-210, 1991.11.10)

Section 14. Blessed Families Ceremonies

14.1. Birth

Your beloved sons and daughters are undeniably precious. They are the precious treasures of heaven and earth, treasures that you can neither buy nor exchange for the entire world. They are that precious to God and to their parents as well. Would anyone trade their children for anything else in this world? Children are God's precious gift. (165-100, 1987.5.20)

Babies are very mysterious. If you

think about them, they are intriguing. We almost want to ask one, "Hey, you! How were you born?" Try to think how unfathomable it is. If you were to try to create human beings like that, could you succeed? You could not be able to do it in a thousand years. (118-289, 1982.6.20)

Do you recall how difficult it was when you were coming out of your mother's womb? Why did God make birth like this? How easy would it be if giving birth were as simple as talking, as easy as eating good food or smelling the scent of perfume or opening your mouth and laughing "Ha ha ha." Why is it that giving birth is not simple like that? Giving birth produces perspiration in situations that border on life-and-death. Why was it made like that? Why? It is in order for us to experience a brilliantly shining love. (107-43, 1980.1.20)

In such a state of near-death, when your eyeballs pop out, when everything is destroyed and heaven and earth are in chaos, then if a child cries its first cry and is born, your eyes open wide. All pain disappears in an instant. Since you gave birth with such difficulty, you can love more than the difficulty you have experienced. You will say, "Aigoo!" Do you understand what that means? (107-43, 1980.1.20)

You should hold a ceremony of dedication to heaven for daughters on the seventh day after their birth and on the eighth day for sons. (11-82, 1961.2.2)

14.2. The Blessing

You have not been able to establish a complete bond with True Parents. Consequently, the Blessing allows you to establish this bond. (23-332, 1969.6.15)

The Blessing is about becoming one with God. When you become one with God, you obtain everything. You receive everything belonging to God, the subject partner. (Tongil Segye - November, 1982)

What is the occasion of the Blessing? It is the very best place in the entire world. With whom should you establish a relationship at the place of Blessing? You cannot perfect yourself on your own; you are perfected through True Parents' love. When a child is born from his parents' bosom, regardless of whether he is good-looking or not, the child takes after its parents. In the same way, Unification Church members are taught the way of the true parent. For you, that is the blessing of all blessings. (35-236, 1970.10.19)

Bestowing the Blessing signifies passing on the full authority of Heaven. (17-328, 1967.4.16)

The Blessing is the most precious thing in heaven and earth. At the same time it is the most fearsome. If blessed spouses think about others besides their spouse, they are emotionally violating each other. (13-67, 1963.10.17)

Good ancestors, territory, and a

nation will emerge from you. Therefore, you who have received the Blessing must always think about heaven and earth from the minute you open your eyes. The Blessing is for the sake of your sharing blessings with others. You need to convert the lineage that was defiled by the Fall. Without accomplishing this, you cannot remove Original Sin. Without removing Original Sin, you cannot rise to the level of receiving the Blessing as true children. That is how the Principle works. The Holy Wine Ceremony is a ceremony to convert the lineage that removes Original Sin inherited from the Fall. In other words, it is a ceremony to exchange one's flesh and blood. (35-210, 1970.10.30)

The holy wine contains elements of all the things of creation, which cannot be accused by Satan. After drinking the holy wine and becoming one with True Parents, if you commit any acts that defile your body, you will be worse off than Satan himself. Satan defiled and violated the completion stage of the growing period, but if someone who has received the Blessing commits a sin, he defiles the substantial body of God in the perfection level of the completion stage and so cannot ever be forgiven. This is a truly a terrifying thought. (God's Will - 543)

A wedding ceremony is none other than the bequeathal of love. The wedding ceremony is the bequeathal ceremony that tells you to live in such a way that you become parents in place of God's love, in the same way as your parents lived under the love of God. (96-236, 1978.1.22)

I take complete and eternal responsibility for those who have received the Blessing, even in the spirit world. I will directly guide them and lead them. The Blessing establishes an eternal relationship between the True Parents and those who receive it. (God's Will - 533)

If you deviate after having received the Blessing, there will inevitably be an indemnity condition. It will be there for sure. There is no forgiveness. Thus, the Unification Church is a fearful place. That is how the Principle works. (God's Will - 27)

I have enabled you to establish the indemnity condition to receive this new Blessing and create a new family and I have tried to take responsibility for your heavy burden. But if you transgress the heavenly law even after I carried out my responsibility, that constitutes the most fearful sin – one that will be transmitted down to dozens of generations. (22-211, 1969.2.4)

What is the difference in value between a person who has passed through the course of the Blessing and the many people who have already gone to the spirit world? In terms of the standard of faith, there can be no comparison. If you abandon this heavenly grace, Satan will accuse you. The archangel became Satan at the level of the growth stage, but if you fall at the completion

stage, Satan will judge you. (God's Will - 59)

14.3. The Seunghwa Ceremony

People today do not know what it means to die. It is not a sorrowful occasion. You should see it as a transition from a lower dimensional world to a higher dimensional world, through the bridge of love. That is why the Unification Church does not call it death but Seunghwa. It is ascending to a higher dimension. This is only possible through love. (137-316, 1986.1.5)

If human beings had not fallen, death would have been a happy occasion. That is why I have taught the Unification Church members that they should not greet death with sorrow. That is why it is called the Seunghwa. (199-353, 1990.2.21)

A funeral in the Unification Church is called a Seunghwa Ceremony. The spirit of a dead person will lament if he sees people holding on to his dead body and crying. He would say, "The ignorance of these people is a rope that ties me down and prevents me from going on my way." Since we know these things, we call a funeral a Seunghwa Ceremony.

Seunghwa means a sacred ascension to heaven. You have to push the dead person to the spirit world with the power of love. Do not hold them back but push them forward. (199-130, 1990.2.16)

The Seunghwa Ceremony began with Heung-jin, did it not? What is the meaning of "victory of love" in the "Day of the Victory of Love"? It means victory over death. If it had been any other person, the mother would have been writhing in sorrow, crying and wailing from deep within. Yet, True Mother should not shed even one tear. We had to hold this ceremony within three days. I had to proclaim that death had been overcome. This is the way that the Seunghwa Ceremony came to be held in the Unification Church. It is a ceremony of going beyond death and onward to joy. Those who go through the Seunghwa Ceremony can easily go beyond all the valleys in the spirit world. Of course, there will be some who fail to do so and remain in between. You have to know this. The Seunghwa Ceremony began with Heung-jin. (212-96, 1991.1.2)

Heung-jin's ascension brought down the walls of death. That is why it is called the Seunghwa Ceremony. Death should not bring dejection or despair. It is not a fall from life but a leap into a new world. It is ascending to a new world. For that reason, Unification Church members should not fear death. Death comes in accordance with the natural order of things. It is just a process of moving on to a better world. (196-270, 1990.1.2)

I did not cry even when my son Heung-jin passed away. Our departure for the spirit world is not a sad occasion. You should raise the flag of heaven amid the trumpet call for liberation. Go on boldly, unbeaten, while raising the flag that signals your glorious return to your homeland. This is the path that lets you

proudly enter your hometown, where the nation and all of humanity will welcome you with cheers. It is not a sorrowful occasion. We do not shed tears in the Unification Church. What do we call this? We call it the Seunghwa Ceremony. (227-260, 1992.2.14)

Even though my mother-in-law passed away, we do not call it a funeral in the Unification Church. What do we call it? A Seunghwa Ceremony! We call it a Seunghwa. It is moving on to the stage of activity in the vertical spirit world, the infinite world, after having lived in the horizontal earthly world. In the satanic world, if you cry aloud, evil spirits will come to you, but evil spirits cannot find their way to a Seunghwa Ceremony. (195-160, 1989.11.15)

What do we call funerals in the Unification Church? What is a Seunghwa Ceremony? It means to be transformed and go up to a higher stage. I did not cry when grandmother Hong passed away. I did not cry because I was busy paving the way for her to ascend. Where else can you find a greater filial son than this? (196-55, 1989.12.24)

In the Unification Church, we do not hold funerals in the usual way after a person's death. Instead, we hold a Seunghwa Ceremony. We live our lives knowing where we are heading. Is there anything to fear in this world? Is there anything to fear in the universe? From this world of sin and chaos, we should take the form of an autonomous center, aligned with the standard of heaven and earth, and thus enter into an upright position within the realm of God's love. Why do we need to enter the vertical position? It is because it creates no shadow in relation to God's love. Everything is perfected. Consequently, the entire environment will rotate around the vertical axis. When a woman unites centering on a man, the realm of happiness emerges throughout the environment, centering on that man and woman. (198-124, 1990.1.25)

Section 15. Attitude when Observing Holy Days

15.1. The significance of Holy Days

You should have a yearning heart for holy days. Only by establishing such a tradition can you build a life of tradition for your descendants. Holy days should be spent in joy while sharing everything with one another amid the joy of heaven. This day is based on the family and is a day for establishing the heavenly law.

You should know that celebration days that occurred in this world throughout the history after the Fall were not something that brought God joy but were days that brought delight to Satan. The days for commemorating the independence of a nation or holding some international event have all been celebrated within the fallen realm. (92-250, 1977.4.18)

From a principled viewpoint, the day of celebration and hope that human beings long for the most is not the day

when they were born or the day they get married, or the day you, as a citizen who lost your nation, recovered your nation, or even the day of your nation's independence. You should know that the greatest day of hope, the day that humanity truly longs for, is God's Day and Parents' Day. The establishment of such a day on the earth has become our deepest wish. Once God's Day and True Parents' Day are established, then this naturally leads to Children's Day and the Day of All Things. (92-252, 1977.4.18)

No one living on earth until this time has ever seen God's Day, True Parents' Day, True Children's Day, and Day of All True Things. There are 365 days in a year. You should clearly understand that the most important days among all 365 days are those days that I have just mentioned, which have now appeared in providential history. You should know that these days are the king of all days, and if a year like that existed it would be the king of all years. (92-252, 1977.4.18)

The holy days and anniversaries we observe in the Unification Church are providential days of victory, obtained after bloody struggles against the satanic world. Since they are days commemorating the accomplishment of absolute victory, you should commemorate these days with a heart of thanks and gratitude toward God and True Parents.

15.2. Ceremonial robes

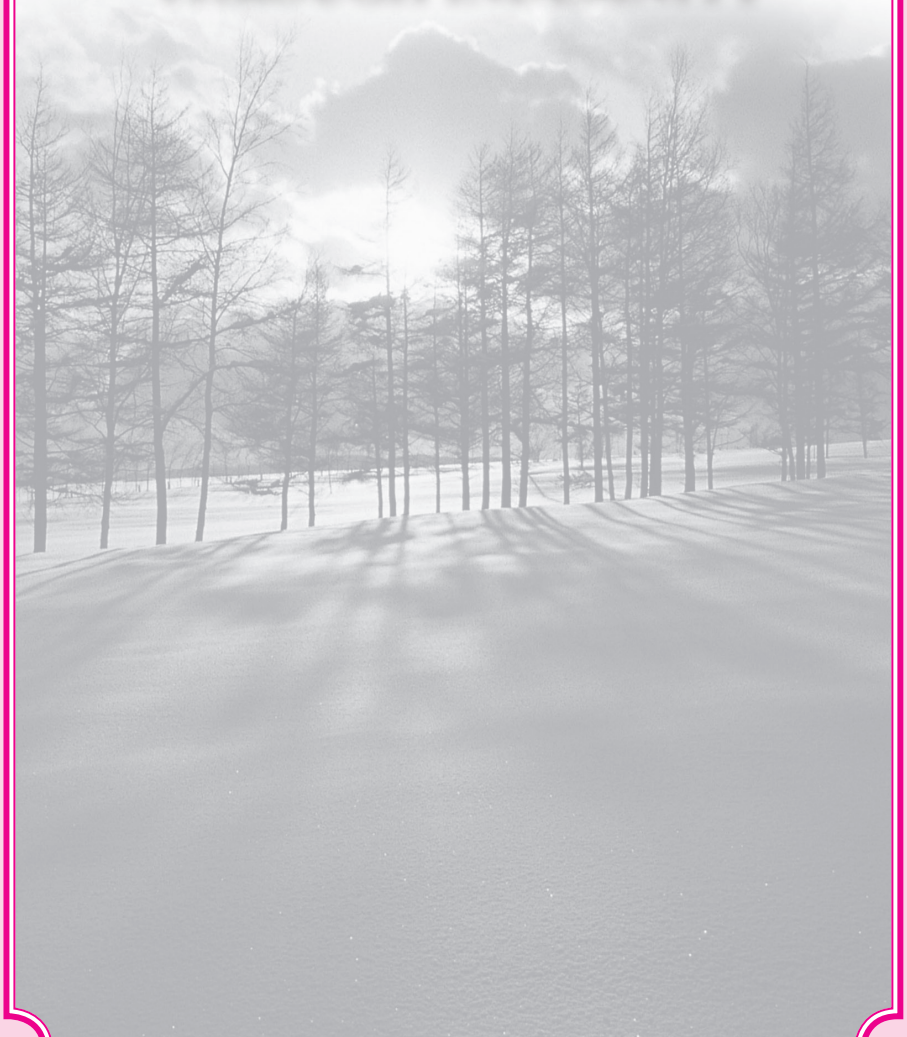
I will be going to the highest position, to the heavenly throne, but not all of you will be able to come with me. Because you received the precious thing called the Blessing, the door is open for you, but not all of you have the proper ceremonial robes to wear. Even if you have been invited to a feast, you cannot attend unless you have the proper clothing, can you? If you have been asked to be a groomsman at a wedding, can you go dressed as if you just finished working on the farm? You have to dress appropriately before you go. Only then will you be qualified to be welcomed into that environment. If not, you will be thrown out. They will yell at you: "Get out of here, you good for nothing!"

Similarly, not everyone can come here. You cannot just come here unprepared. You must come dressed in holy robes. (212-226, 1991.1.6)

A sacrificial offering represents the life and belief of the person making it. When you buy the goods for a sacrificial offering, do not try to get a discount but give a little bit more. You should do the same when you buy material to make your holy robe. (37-279, 1970.12.30)

BOOK EIGHT

SIN AND RESTORATION THROUGH INDEMNITY



Contents

Chapter 1. Fundamentals of Indemnification and the Principle of Restoration

Section 1. The Realms of Indirect and Direct Dominion 1107
1.1. The realm of indirect dominion 1107
1.2. The realm of direct dominion 1109
Section 2. Human Beings Have a Portion of Responsibility 1112
2.1. The reason God gave us a portion of responsibility 1112
2.2. The consequences of failing to fulfill our portion of responsibility 1116
Section 3. Fulfilling Our Portion of Responsibility 1118
3.1. Freedom from the portion of responsibility in relation to restoration 1118
3.2. Perfection is a family that has unified heaven and earth 1120
Section 4. The Discovery of the Portion of Responsibility and its Significance 1123
Section 5. Our Attitude toward Fulfilling Our Portion of Responsibility 1126
5.1. Our portion of responsibility can be found in every field of human life 1126
5.2. Our attitude toward fulfilling our portion of responsibility 1127

Chapter 2. The Internal Meaning of Sin and the Fall

Section 1. The Fall Means the Father's Place was Taken by Another 1130
1.1. Satan, the devil, is our father 1130
1.2. If the Fall had not occurred... 1134
Section 2. Through the Fall Our Lineage Changed to that of Satan 1137
2.1. We have inherited the lineage of an enemy 1137
2.2. Original sin is inherited through lineage 1139
Section 3. Satan Is the Adulterer of God's Love 1141
3.1. Satan is the fallen archangel Lucifer 1141
3.2. Satan is the enemy of love 1143
Section 4. The Fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil was Eve's Sexual Organ 1144
4.1. Covering their sexual parts was an indication of sin 1144
4.2. The fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil is the crossroads of life and death 1147
Section 5. Grief Caused Over the Fall and God's Heart in the Process of Restoration 1150
5.1. The enemy of love; the bitter pain caused by the Fall 1150
5.2. Conditions for Satan's accusations 1153
Section 6. The Blessing of the True Parents and the Restoration of Lineage 1156
6.1. True Parents are needed as the Messiah 1156
6.2. Restoration of lineage is the core of the ideology centered on the returning Lord 1159

Chapter 3. The Formula for Indemnification and Restoration

Section 1. The Works of Rebecca, Tamar and Mary from the Viewpoint of the Restoration of Motherhood 1164
1.1. The Fall of Eve, and Rebecca's and Tamar's deceptions 1164
1.2. Fundamental restoration in the womb, through Tamar 1165
1.3. The mission of Mary in the course of Jesus 1169
Section 2. The Historical Indemnity Course of True Father 1173
2.1. What our attitude should be in following the course of indemnity 1173
2.2. Selecting True Mother 1179
Section 3. The Eight-Stage Indemnity Course and the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages 1181
3.1. The eight vertical and horizontal stages in the course of restoration through indemnity 1181
3.2. Satan's activities and the victory in the eight stages 1182
3.3. Ceremony for the Settlement of the Eight Stages 1186
Section 4. Restoration of Right of the Eldest Son, Right of the Parent and Right of Kingship 1188
4.1. Restoration of the right of the eldest son 1188
4.2. Restoration of the right of the parent 1192
4.3. Restoration of the right of kingship 1193
Section 5. Development of the Providence of Restoration and the Mission of the Providential Nations 1196
5.1. The flow of Christian culture following World War II 1196
5.2. The mission of Japan as the Eve nation 1198
5.3. The mission of America as the world-level Rome 1200
5.4. The providence of restoration through indemnity is the path that returns to the original ideal 1204

Chapter 4. The Course of Indemnity and Our Life

Section 1. The Way of Restoration Is the Inevitable Course for Humankind 1206
1.1. Restoration through indemnity is the way of re-creation 1206
1.2. The Reason We Must Go the Way of Indemnity 1207
Section 2. The Foundation of Faith and the Foundation of Substance 1209
2.1. The Foundation for the Messiah 1209
2.2. The ultimate issue is the restoration of lineage 1212
Section 3. Why Restoration through Indemnity is Necessary 1213
3.1. Two things that must be restored through indemnity 1213
Section 4. You Must Set Indemnity Conditions Yourself 1217
4.1. No one else can set indemnity conditions for you 1217
4.2. The mindset necessary to fulfill one's responsibility 1219

Section 5. There is No Separation from Satan without the Law of Indemnity 1219
5.1. I am standing at a divide 1219
5.2. How to get out of the realm of Satan (the realm of the Fall) 1222
Section 6. Faith Means Keeping the Law of Indemnity 1224
Section 7. The Way of Indemnity is the Way of Absolute Obedience and Absolute Submission 1228

CHAPTER ONE

Fundamentals of Indemnification and the Principle of Restoration

Section 1. The Realms of Indirect and Direct Dominion

1.1. The realm of indirect dominion

If you look at the Principle of the Unification Church you will find mention of realms of indirect and direct dominion. Due to the Fall, all humanity came to remain in the realm of indirect dominion, disconnected from the realm of direct dominion. This resulted from Adam and Eve's failure to fulfill their portion of responsibility, and consequently the providence of restoration has been prolonged. We have not understood this. What is it that we need to do in the realm of indirect dominion in order to reach the realm of direct dominion where we can be connected to the realm of God's love? We must fulfill our portion of responsibility. (139-231, 1986.1.31)

We must be able to clarify logically that it was inevitable for God, who desired human beings to reach perfection, to create the realm of indirect dominion in which they could grow and mature. (135-314, 1985.12.15)

Why was the realm of indirect dominion created? Without creating this realm, it would have been impossible to clearly gauge the boundary between spiritual immaturity and maturity. How do we define the period of life known as adolescence? God waits until we pass through adolescence, the realm of dominion based upon accomplishments through the Principle. God cannot interfere in the realm of immature love. What human beings need is absolute love. (148-150, 1986.10.8)

What do the words "Principle of the Unification Church" mean? Why is it called the Principle? The purpose of the Principle is to show clearly the borderline between the realm of dominion based upon accomplishments through the Principle and the realm of direct dominion.

Adam and Eve, as firstborn children, had to grow through the stages of formation, growth and completion. This is the way of the Principle. Even within the realm of indirect dominion, human beings must fulfill their portion of responsibility if they are to perfect themselves. It means that until you reach maturity you should never have a love relationship. Before reaching adulthood, Adam and Eve should not have committed themselves in this kind of

relationship. That is why a boundary line was set and God told them, "Wait; do not take and eat!" (137-252, 1986.1.3)

Had Adam and Eve not fallen, but passed through the realm of indirect dominion and reached young adulthood – which connects to the realm of direct dominion – then all of the forces of the universe would have been brought together at that point, harmonized, and called into action. At that focal point, man and woman would have joined together as one and God and the spirit and physical worlds would have come together. This unity does not happen in the spirit world. No one has been able to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. This means that no one has yet hit the bull's-eye at this focal point, passing away after creating the picture of an ideal relationship. This is because they have always been out of focus, like a blurred photograph. The horizontal focus and the vertical focus must meet at the center when the picture is taken, but it has not been possible to take photographs like that. We must know that a perfect photograph of love has never been taken. You understand, don't you? Who among all of you has practiced that kind of love? Have you become that kind of a couple? (136-37, 1985.12.20)

The realm of direct dominion is a place where Adam and Eve can participate together, united in love. Thus, the realm of indirect dominion is the realm in which their portion of responsibility has yet to be completed. When the portion of responsibility is fulfilled and Adam and Eve become husband and wife centered on love, God becomes the internal Father and Adam and Eve become the external parents. When these unite as the inner and the outer, the realm of direct dominion is established for the first time. In this process, marriage is therefore absolutely necessary. You cannot enter this realm as a single person. (139-262, 1986.1.31)

Where does the Kingdom of Heaven expand from? It does not expand just from the point of separating from Satan. It expands from the realm of the fulfillment of human responsibility. That is to say, through Adam and Eve having fulfilled their portion of responsibility, the realms of direct and indirect dominion and the love of the heavenly realm and the love of the earthly realm connect for the first time. This is in accordance with the Principle. This has not been established so far because Satan is obstructing it. It is Satan who blocks the way of the love of God. (148-204, 1986.10.9)

No matter how broad the Christian cultural realm becomes, a perfected Adam who can manifest the true love of God must appear together with the bride. Thus, you must fulfill your portion of responsibility and enter the realm of direct dominion. You must prepare a foundation of true love in your family that can unite upper and lower, front and back, and left and right with love at the center. Is this an easy thing to do? (220-93, 1991.10.15)

After fulfilling their full portion of responsibility the True Parents must harmonize the realms of heart in the realms of indirect and direct dominion. To build the Kingdom of Heaven a base that can unify the heavenly world and the earthly world must emerge. That is the ideal of creation. Otherwise the kingdom cannot come.(148-212, 1986.10.9)

Had the first ancestors not fallen, they would have fulfilled their portion of responsibility together. However, as Satan appeared as a result of the Fall, the True Parents must establish a standard of indemnity in front of the fallen descendants so that they can transcend the global level all together. My life's work until now has been to set up a standard of indemnity, to create a standard through which we could leap into the realm of direct dominion from the realm of indirect dominion by fulfilling such a portion of responsibility. (131-97, 1984.4.16)

1.2. The realm of direct dominion

By fulfilling your own portion of responsibility, the realms of indirect and direct dominion are linked, and the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world are connected; without this, everything is cut off. Thus, we must each become the substance and embodiment of love who has fulfilled our portion of responsibility and we have to love God, the whole universe, and our family. Only such people will enter the Kingdom of Heaven. This is the formula for entering the Kingdom. (149-318, 1986.12.21)

The realm of the portion of responsibility is where we unite based on God's love. When you are linked with the vertical love of God and are heading toward perfection, the realms of indirect and direct dominion are connected. Satan is not there. If the realms of indirect and direct dominion are connected, the realms of heart are also connected, so Satan cannot be present. The problem is that the Fall took place before this occurred. (172-198, 1988.1.21)

When the perfect love of God is manifested, Satan cannot appear. That is the fulfillment of the portion of responsibility. While fulfilling their portion of responsibility, the love of God and Adam and Eve meet in the realms of both indirect and direct dominion. There the vertical love of God and the horizontal love of Adam and Eve are connected. (173-286, 1988.2.21)

If Adam and Eve had not fallen at the outset, but had fulfilled their portion of responsibility, and if heaven and earth had formed a unified realm with God and His love, and a victorious foundation had been built, Adam and Eve would have brought the archangel into the unified realm of God and Adam's love and they would have gone to Heaven. That Is true. That is the principle. (197-286, 1990.1.20)

The portion of responsibility is necessary until you reach maturity. After

you reach maturity and become a young adult, everything is finished. Once you enter the realm of love that is the realm of direct dominion. (198-371, 1990.2.11)

What does the term "portion of responsibility" in the Principle mean? Fulfilling one's portion of responsibility lead to human beings and God becoming one in love. As God's love is eternal, human beings as His partners become eternally one with Him in His love. There is no separation. (212-14, 1991.1.1)

When God created human beings, He created both the realms of direct and indirect dominion. Then, why did He create a realm of indirect dominion? When would the realms of direct and indirect dominion connect? When Adam and Eve, the original ancestors of humankind, matured and were ready to unite in love based on the horizontal, God would have descended and dwelt with them. Their marriage would have enabled them to join together in horizontal love based on the vertical love of God. In this way, heaven and earth would have unified. (135-306, 1985.12.15)

Why is the realm of direct dominion necessary? Without entering the realm of direct dominion, we cannot connect in love to God. If this love is not linked to us, we cannot inherit the universe from God. Inheritance is only possible based on love. Thus, all nations and all families try to bequeath things to their children based on a relationship of love. That is the Principle. (135-324, 1985.12.15)

The words "portion of responsibility" appeared first in Father's era. Some might say, "The terms 'realm of indirect dominion' and 'realm of direct dominion' were invented by Rev. Moon to suit his own teaching because he is smart." If so, then why would I go through hardships? If I had made this up on a whim, why would I suffer as I have throughout my life, going in and out of prison? Do not even think of saying that. If I had made it up, why would I not be able to take it easy? I could have taken a much easier path, so why would I sacrifice my youth, a period comparable to a flower in bloom, wearing ragged clothes and living like this? It makes no sense that I would have made this up. Before coining these terms, I knew there was something beyond and that is why I voluntarily went the way of death and persecution. Who in the world likes the way of persecution? Only God could understand these circumstances. (139-247, 1986.1.31)

To deny the Blessing after you have received it is to do worse than Satan. Satan will accuse you. This is the same as entering into the realm of direct dominion and then falling. You have not known this, but I am telling you that this principle, the law of Heaven, is operating. Thus, you must do well. The important thing is how all of you are going to establish the heavenly tradition. (128-110, 1983.6.5)

The world of attendance is not the obscure place you might imagine. You have to feel Father and Mother directly

in your daily life and with your spirit. If you feel deeply moved in your heart and you are bubbling over with joyful emotion and stimulation, you are already living in the Kingdom of Heaven. If you reach that state, on meeting someone you can immediately intuit whether he has good or bad character. You will discover that you have entered a realm of direct dominion of unimaginably high dimension. This is the Principle perspective. You should live in this way. (78-35, 1975.5.1)

You must fulfill your portion of responsibility so that you can connect the realms of indirect and direct dominion. In order to fulfill their portion of responsibility both man and woman must reach maturity.

What does the perfection of man and woman mean? It means that they only know the perfect God in the Garden of Eden. They must love God first. Then, man can think of woman second and woman can think of man second. You must become that kind of person. When you do and when you have completed your portion of responsibility, you cross from the realm of indirect dominion into the realm of direct dominion. You enter into a new dimension. (165-105, 1987.5.20)

Humankind's portion of responsibility means to pass through the realm of indirect dominion and enter the direct dominion of God's love. You must enter the realm where God's heart and your heart become one centering on God's love in order to pass freely between the earthly and spirit worlds. Once you establish a horizontal position that can represent the vertical Parent centering on God's love, Satan is eliminated. That is the realm of direct dominion. The situation is problematic because you have not yet passed beyond the realm of the human portion of responsibility. (185-126, 1989.1.3)

What is most needed in the fallen world are the True Parents who have gone beyond the realm of the Fall. According to the Principle, they are the ones who have completed their portion of responsibility and have transcended that sphere. They have entered the realm of direct dominion, having left the realm of indirect dominion. What is the realm of direct dominion? It is a world united in love. At this stage, the other master cannot appear. This is absolute. If you are completely united in love you will not follow two masters. God Himself does not desire to see another master and neither does humankind. Achieving this stage establishes an eternal foundation. If this is extended to a family, a tribe, a people and a nation, then the heavenly fortune will rotate centered on that axis of love. (149-154, 1986.11.21)

On the foundation of having fulfilled your portion of responsibility centered on God, you can become united with His love and heavenly fortune is set in motion. Once this starts who can knock it off its course? Satan will not even be able to show his face. If this kind of foundation is made, the Kingdom of Heaven

on earth will automatically appear. (149-172, 1986.11.21)

You pass through the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle and by fulfilling your portion of responsibility as a human being you are connected in love. You thereby enter the realm of direct dominion. Then, the vertical dispensation can be realized horizontally and horizontal dispensation can be realized vertically. If you push it down, it becomes horizontal and if you pull it, it becomes vertical. That is why you can have dominion vertically and horizontally. (193-217, 1989.10.4)

When the perfect love of God manifests, Satan cannot appear. That comes with the completion of one's portion of responsibility. When that is fulfilled, a connection of love is made between the realms of indirect and direct dominion. This is where vertical and horizontal love is connected. When that occurs, relations based on God's lineage and flesh and blood are formed through that vertical and horizontal love. A lineage is born. Satan cannot interfere with that lineage which is initiated through the love of God, through the connection with vertical and horizontal love. There is no connection with Satan. Thus, in order to inherit the heart of God, you must inherit the pure original lineage centered on the love of God. That is the issue. (173-285, 1988.2.21)

Only with the love of ideal parents will the realm of the direct dominion and the fulfillment of humankind's portion of responsibility converge. (137-254, 1986.1.3)

Fulfilling one's portion of responsibility applies in both the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle and in the realm of direct dominion. On that basis you become one in love and enter directly into the realm of God's governance. To enter into the realm of direct dominion means to belong to the realm of God's heart. (183-89, 1988.10.29)

Section 2. Human Beings Have a Portion of Responsibility

2.1. The reason God gave us a portion of responsibility

God loves all people and desires that the whole universe submit to His love. In giving human beings authority, He desires that the entire universe follow them and bow down before them. With this great love and highest authority in mind, God gave human beings their portion of responsibility. (20-209, 1968.6.9)

Why did God give human beings a portion of responsibility? As He is omniscient and omnipotent, He endowed humanity with those same qualities of creativity. Moreover, as He is also the Subject of eternal and unchanging love, He could not help but vest in human beings a portion of responsibility so as to allow them to rise to a position representing that Subject of love, God Himself.

This became the prerequisite for God's blessings,comparable to a key that can lead us into the dominion of love over everything, He had no course other than to bequeath this key to us. However, we must understand that problems arose over the fulfillment of human responsibility and that human beings fell. (20-209, 1968.6.9)

Humankind must participate in the great undertaking of God's creation. Even if human beings had not fallen, there would still have been such a responsibility. The human portion of responsibility was not established due to the Fall. Whether the Fall occurred or not, people would still have responsibility. Even if ninety-five percent of God's ideal of creation, through which we can perfect ourselves as human beings, was prepared, we would still have to fulfill our five percent portion of responsibility. God does not make an individual perfect. We must additionally fulfill our own portion of responsibility to achieve perfection. This would hold true even if humankind had not fallen. (115-65, 1981.11.4)

We are to re-create, not rebuild on old foundations. We must create anew, allowing God's ninety-five percent portion of responsibility to come together with the fulfillment of humankind's five percent portion of responsibility. (24-307, 1969.9.7)

Why was a portion of responsibility given to human beings? God granted us the authority to take part in the work of creation and thereby bestowed upon us the value of becoming His object partners. This is an amazing fact. (109-65, 1980.10.4)

The Principle has a character that is absolute. There is no leeway in the Principle. We must be prepared to go this way under any circumstances. We must go this way even though we may die. We must go even if it takes forever. If God were able to do as He pleased, He would not have needed to pass through the suffering course of the providence of restoration. However, as it has been set in that way, due to the boundaries of the human portion of responsibility, God also had to walk the path of numerous hardships to restore humankind. You must understand that responsibility does not lie solely with God. He is bearing the responsibility together with humanity. This would have been the case even if the Fall had not occurred. (115-65, 1981.11.4)

You must know that the bitter term "restoration through indemnity" emerged due to human beings being unable to fulfill their portion of responsibility. In the course of restoration through indemnity God will not help you and neither will the church headquarters. You must do it alone. If you receive help, it would not be indemnity. Why is that? Since the principle of the human portion of responsibility exists, if you receive help, then according to that principle, indemnification would not occur. If help were possible when

humankind fell, God would have interfered so that the Fall would not have taken place. He could not do this, because Adam and Eve's portion of responsibility did exist. He could not intervene because of the human portion of responsibility. (124-304, 1983.3.1)

God loves me, but He cannot help me when I am walking the course of indemnity in the process of fulfilling the human portion of responsibility. I must go forward and overcome Satan on my own. Adam was originally given the realm of the ideal through which he should have taken dominion over Satan and the satanic world. I must surpass that realm. (124-304, 1983.3.1)

We must be aware of the fact that, ultimately, due to our portion of responsibility, indemnity also came into existence. Had there been no human portion of responsibility God could have exercised his dominion at any time. He could have said, "Hey, do not do that" at the time of the Fall. Because our portion of responsibility existed and God was not in a position to interfere, He could not prevent the Fall and neither could He prevent Satan's activities. (87-120, 1976.5.23)

Had Adam and Eve consulted with God, there would have been no Fall. They should have asked the question, "The Archangel is doing such and such, so what shall we do?" Then God could have responded to them. The act of asking was their portion of responsibility. They were free to ask. However, they established a horizontal relationship without asking God. That was the problem. Because they acted without asking, a problem occurred. That is always the case. Do all of you have the confidence to fulfill your own five percent portion of responsibility? I am telling you that there are all kinds of people, even members, who promote themselves, although they do not have genuine confidence. With that kind of spirit, when will you achieve unification? (33-241, 1970.8.16)

Human beings have a portion of responsibility. The purpose for which God gave each person responsibility is so that they can take part in the great task of creation. In creating human beings, God creates ninety-five percent and human beings make up the other five percent. This constitutes the condition that not only God, but that we too have participated in our creation. Having our portion of responsibility endows us with such equal value. We are given a great position. Only human beings have this portion of responsibility. Despite this fact, ever since the dawn of human history, not a single person has fulfilled his responsibility. We have not known about our portion of responsibility. (139-230, 1986.1.31)

The question is why our almighty God, the omniscient, omnipotent and absolute God was unable to realize the Kingdom of Heaven that He desired to build here on earth. Had God been able to do as He wished, all of this would have

been resolved in an instant long ago. However, because human beings fell, their portion of responsibility was left unfulfilled and God could not establish the Kingdom of Heaven of His desire. (82-89, 1976.1.1)

Adam and Eve should have perfected themselves centered on love, but it was in the realm of love that they made a mistake. The problem was connected to their portion of responsibility. This responsibility exists in all areas of human endeavor. If you try to fulfill a goal, you must go through a certain process. One's portion of responsibility is connected to this process. You must understand this. During the set time for going through that process you must fulfill your portion of responsibility. When you do not fulfill it, everything collapses. (133-175, 1984.7.10)

Adam and Eve fell because they could not fulfill their portion of responsibility. Could it have been accomplished by Adam alone? First, he had to become one with God. All of you must know that your portion of responsibility cannot be fulfilled unless you become one with God. Next, you must become one with the Principle. These two conditions must be established. (87-122, 1976.5.23)

You must fulfill your portion of responsibility. Humanity's bitter pain exists because it has been impossible to live in a world where there is no indemnity. The tragic and astounding fact is that we are descendants of the Fall and we have the painful, unfortunate destiny of having to change our lineage. In order to free ourselves from this, we must exert our utmost effort to emerge as sons and daughters who have fulfilled their responsibilities so that we can call God our Father without hesitation. (197-115, 1990.1.7)

The path that True Father had to pioneer can be likened to an extremely treacherous mountain ascent. Do you think God held out His hands even once, saying, "Hey, this is dreadful!"? Do you think he protected me night and day and welcomed me happily? He watched me, but stayed still. He never told me where I should go. He was unable to guide me. I had to fulfill my portion of responsibility. God intended to love perfected human beings with the love that human beings can have, not human beings who are still in the stage of seeking love. (202-301, 1990.5.25)

What would human beings who were in the position of having fulfilled their portion of responsibility be like? They would be like God. God contributes 95 percent towards humankind's perfection. Human beings stand in the position where they reach the status of having achieved 100 percent perfection jointly with God. This means the fulfillment of human beings' perfection and the perfection of God's creation. Completing the great work of creation means, at the same time, the completion of God's will, which in turn allows for the perfection of God Himself. This is the appropriate

conclusion. (130-20, 1983.12.11)

Due to the sin of our first ancestors, who could not fulfill their portion of responsibility, the abyss, the deep realm of death was created. The domain of Satan's love was expanded right to the boundary of Heaven and brought about a separation between the realms of direct and indirect dominion. (137-251, 1986.1.3)

If you complete your portion of responsibility, Satan, the devil, retreats. There is no one to accuse you. Unless we reach that standard, there will still be a condition for accusation so that even if we try to enter the Kingdom of Heaven we would not be allowed to do so. If there is a condition for accusation, you will not be able to enter. If you reach the standard of connecting to God's love through manifesting absolute, unchanging, unique and eternal love, Satan has no grounds to accuse you. If you remain in such a position, Satan is unable to stay there. In maintaining that state, wherever you go, Satan will have to run away. (169-84, 1987.10.25)

If Adam and Eve had not fallen they would have harmonized with God, perfected themselves as His embodiments on earth and become the king and queen of love. They would have fulfilled the human portion of responsibility which connects the realms of direct and indirect dominion through God's love. Then, God would have resided in Adam's heart and the spirit of Adam would have become the body of God. They would have become one body. They would have shared and breathed the love of God and humankind eternally. (213-190, 1991.1.20)

Human beings are meant to fulfill their portion of responsibility so that they can stand on an equal footing with God in giving and receiving true love – that is, equal love. They would become the center, standing in the same position, giving and receiving from that position. (119-125, 1982.7.11)

If human beings had not fallen, fulfilling their portion of responsibility would have been easy. They would have grown up, passed through adolescence naturally, and easily fulfilled their portion of responsibility. This would have happened naturally and without difficulty. Our portion of responsibility became difficult due to false love. Then, what is the center of our portion of responsibility? God fulfills ninety-five percent of the total responsibility while human beings only have to fulfill five percent to inherit the great work of God's creation. Then, what is the center for inheriting this? It is true love. (124-94, 1983.1.30)

2.2. The consequences of failing to fulfill our portion of responsibility

In the Unification Church, the words "our portion of responsibility" are truly great. All of you are in the position of not yet having fulfilled that, aren't you? The place where the human ancestors could not fulfill their portion of responsibility became the realm of Satan's dominion.

Thus, the sphere of evil sovereignty started with that failure. This is logical. The evil sovereignty begins below the line of fulfillment of the portion of responsibility while the good sovereignty begins above it. What initiated the evil sovereignty? It began with fallen, self-centered love. (139-231, 1986.1.31)

You know that the satanic world came about due to human beings' failure to fulfill their portion of responsibility and that this world has been left under the dominion of Satan. We must feel deep in our bones that God had to persevere along the way of suffering until this present time because of the uncompleted portion of responsibility. (63-320, 1972.10.22)

What emerged following the invasion of the realm of human responsibility? Another parent appeared and that parent is Satan. You must know this clearly. (137-247, 1986.1.3)

Adam and Eve were unable to fulfill their portion of responsibility. Nevertheless, the fact that they could not fulfill this did not just end with them. Adam and Eve became the root and all the descendants became the trunk, branches and leaves, and as a consequence all human beings were unable to fulfill their responsibility. This must be clearly understood. (87-120, 1976.5.23)

Until now God has been relating to us from a position above the realm of the human portion of responsibility. However, all of humanity, which has fallen below that, must do all they can to build a bridge and raise themselves up. All of humankind is caught in that realm. The world is caught there and history is caught there. Those who have gone to the spirit world, those in the present world, and all those yet to be born will be unable to escape this misfortune. This is the fallen realm of bitter feelings. (115-67, 1981.11.4)

Fallen humanity has failed more than just the human portion of responsibility. They have violated 97 percent of the whole creation. Thus, we must create anew because the entire path of creation collapsed. That is why it is so difficult. Therefore, unless people fulfill their responsibility corresponding to 97 percent, they will never find the way to fulfill their portion of responsibility. We must create things anew.

The dispensation for restoration is the dispensation for re-creation. But why is re-creation absolutely necessary? It is because of human responsibility. In order to fulfill this and go up to the point of accomplishment, we must undergo the process of re-creation. To pass through this course, we must indemnify our failure. We must set up indemnity conditions. It means that we must go the way of suffering. (115-67, 1981.11.4)

Following restoration through indemnity and the completion of liberation, one's portion of responsibility can be accomplished. We must understand that because the human portion

of responsibility remains unfulfilled, God's heart is filled with bitter grief. As we have never known a single moment in which humankind could fulfill this responsibility the history of sorrow has continued. All of you must come to know clearly how to surmount the peak of human responsibility which, as a result of humankind's failure, is a place of deep pain. (63-347, 1972.10.22)

Because Adam was unable to fulfill his portion of responsibility, numerous walls were created in the spiritual and physical worlds. What should be done about these walls? What could Eve have been doing about this? The course of women in human history has been a miserable. They were torn apart here and trampled on there. Like broken gourds they had to roll around whether they were kicked or cracked. Even if they were kicked so hard that shoe imprints remained, they had to keep rolling forward. Even if they were kicked again where they went and had ten holes in their bodies, women had to just keep rolling. Women have gone through a course in which they had to roll forward covered with bruises. Why? They had to restore Eve's position. (122-40, 1982.10.31)

When people accuse or criticize Adam and Eve, who gets blamed first, Adam or Eve? They speak about Eve first. The word Eve in Korean (*haewa*), means, "work to restore something and come back." You should remember that. It is true. The word Adam means that he fell and made walls (dam). By not fulfilling their portion of responsibility, many walls were created. We must break down these walls. (227-324, 1992.2.16)

Section 3. Fulfilling Our Portion of Responsibility

3.1. Freedom from the portion of responsibility in relation to restoration

If Adam and Eve had fulfilled their portion of responsibility their descendants would not have been burdened with the responsibility for restoration. They would have entered into an era of family ethics that would have been like sovereign law. True Parents would have been on earth on the same horizontal plane at that time and they would have been able to teach everyone instantly. However, until today, although God could move through 360 degrees on that same level plane, He could not teach us directly and we have been waiting for the emergence of a central figure. That is why difficulties arose. You must understand things like this clearly. (136-316, 1985.12.29)

The True Parents had to pass through an indemnity course on the level of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos. Love is restored by separating from Satan and by fulfilling man's portion of responsibility that was lost because of him. Satan cannot invade those who love their enemies and love their enemies' countries. But that does not work with self-centered love. Satan

began to love centered on himself; we cannot counter this with a love that is centered on ourselves. (137-113, 1985.12.24)

Restoration through indemnity exists to create a realm where you are free from having to fulfill the portion of responsibility. It exists to restore the original environment where you are free from having to fulfill your portion of responsibility. This is logical. I am also wrapped up in this responsibility. That is why I receive worldwide opposition. I receive persecution and an attacked on the world level. By undergoing this worldwide persecution, I can separate myself from Satan on the world level. (148-199, 1986.10.9)

Restoration through indemnity cannot be avoided. Why do we have to go the course of restoration through indemnity? Why do we need to separate from Satan? It is because we need to fulfill the original portion of responsibility and build the foundation for a free environment. Then, Satan cannot accuse us and we will come to stand upon a base where Satan cannot have any relationship with us. That is why restoration through indemnity and fulfilling our portion of responsibility cannot be avoided, logically speaking. That is why we must separate from Satan. Thus, we must have the thinking that even if we are going without meals we will have no relationship with the satanic world. That is the dividing point, the borderline. (148-204, 1986.10.9)

You have all lived until now without knowing how important your portion of responsibility is. What is restoration through indemnity? It creates an environment in which we can freely fulfill our portion of responsibility.

Satan seeks to invade, so we must protect ourselves against Satan. What must we do to protect ourselves against Satan? We must love God and humankind more than Satan hates them. Satan hates God and humankind, but we must be able to say, "We will love God more and we will love humankind more." We cannot separate from Satan unless we stand in the position of unfallen human beings with the standard of having fulfilled our portion of responsibility. (148-154, 1986.10.8)

To fulfill our human portion of responsibility a condition of indemnity is necessary. True Father has made indemnity conditions and if all of you appear proudly as the flag bearers of the nation – as those who have inherited my viewpoint on the purpose of life – you will become patriots. For the family, you will be a filial child. As a couple you will become faithful men and women of fidelity. In the world you will go the way of sainthood and you will attain the position of a prince who lives in accordance with the laws of the heavenly palace. There is only one way that we can safely proceed and that is through a life of offering everything for the sake of love – living for the sake of others. This is an amazing fact. (169-94, 1987.10.25)

The five billion people in the world are all bound by the portion of responsibility left unfulfilled by Adam and Eve and the ocean of resentment that has given God continuous anguish. The innumerable ancestors who passed on to the spirit world are also all caught there. How can God, who has to watch all this, restore the original standard before the Fall? This is the reason why God is a God to be pitied.

Thus, I very swiftlyvolunteered to go the way of indemnity and walked the path along which I fulfilled my portion of responsibility in order to open the way through which all of humankind could be liberated, saying, "Time, go by quickly! Months and years, go by quickly! Day of liberation, come quickly!" (197-104, 1990.1.7)

Right up until the present time God has not changed His outlook. He has persevered through the interminable process of restoration through indemnity. Fulfilling the ideal of love is the final summit. He has endured and is proclaiming this clearly before all humankind to the sound of the bells of liberation. God maintained the heart to endure until the returning Lord was able to come to the earth to tearfully fulfill the mission of restoration, fulfill God's will, inherit the right of ownership of the entire satanic world and return it all to God, and establish a world of peace and unity here on the earth. This is not coercion. The right of ownership must be taken back from Satan and returned to God. (197-96, 1990.1.7)

3.2. Perfection is a family that has unified heaven and earth

The fulfillment of our portion of responsibility is to unite the earthly and spiritual worlds, to unite mind and body. The vertical God and the horizontal True Parents are one. The goal is unified love, the love that connects heaven and earth, the love in which body and mind are one, and in which man and woman are one. Having built the foundation of a unified love, then the love, life and lineage of God can be connected to that point for the first time. And when that is expanded and developed horizontally in all directions, the right of kingship is created. This is a straightforward matter. (218-124, 1991.7.14)

Man and woman are the concentrated nucleus of heaven and earth. When a husband and wife are united through true love the entire universe is involved. Man and woman were born for the sake of love. They were created to have both vertical and horizontal relationships. By fulfilling their portion of responsibility, the vertical owner of love comes into being and then the horizontal owner can come into being. This is accomplished through true love. (218-136, 1991.7.14)

When Adam and Eve fulfill their portion of responsibility God becomes the vertical being in relation to them, nd Adam and Eve become horizontal beings. They are united through true love. In this way, the vertical is joined for the first time with the horizontal and

the point of their union becomes the foundation to implant the root of love. Unless this happens, this axis cannot stand correctly. If the ideology upholding the Messiah and upholding parents becomes the axis, what do you think will happen? When they unite with that axis they will multiply automatically. Then the love, life and lineage of God will become firmly fixed for eternity. (218-136, 1991.7.14)

The portion of responsibility is directed firstly at becoming true children. Secondly, at becoming true siblings. Thirdly, at becoming true couples. Fourthly, at becoming true parents. You are born as babies and then become children, siblings, couples and parents. As parents you can create children on behalf of God. You will experience, spiritually and physically, the reality of God's happiness at the time He created Adam and Eve. Do you realize how precious that is? (225-126, 1992.1.5)

The realm of the victory of True Parents comes respectively on the individual, family, national, world and cosmic levels and then on the level of God's true love. Next is the realization of the unified ideal where all of these things come into oneness through true love. God is the owner of true love and through this love everything is connected. Through the realization of ideal oneness, God's love connects to the unified ideal. No family or individual is separated. Having achieved the unified ideal, the spirit and physical worlds become one. When the restored Adam and Eve acquired the right of the first son the spirit world has to follow the earth. This must be done, based on love, through true love. In terms of the Principle, it means to fulfill the human portion of responsibility. (212-137, 1991.1.2)

How is the realm of God's heart inherited? Human beings in the original mold, untainted by the Fall, should have fulfilled their portion of responsibility by uniting from the left and right centered on the core of God's vertical love. This point of unity becomes the source and root of the lineage from which true sons and daughters are born. The realm of God's heart could have suddenly appeared and been implanted and the foundation of God's lineage would have been established from there. This is a serious matter. (173-302, 1988.2.21)

The completion of God's providence of restoration cannot come about through simply mobilizing 40 million or 60 million Korean nationals, but must be accomplished through the required sacrificial offerings. This parallels the destiny of a nation that hangs in the balance over the cutting of a pigeon into two. (175-20, 1988.4.6)

First and foremost, you must accomplish your own portion of responsibility. Then, everything in heaven and earth resonates around a unified love. The relationships between father and son, husband and wife, and brothers and sisters are all unified centering on

true love. If a wife insists on God-centered love then the husband must follow. If a mother insists on it the father must follow. If the grandchildren or children insist, the parents, grandparents and brothers and sisters must also follow. In that way, the family becomes the central foundation. As a result of the fulfillment of our human portion of responsibility the love of heaven, the love of earth, the love of the family, the love of parents and the love of brothers and sisters will all be realized. (218-124, 1991.7.14)

The love of heaven is vertical and the love of the earth is horizontal. The love between brothers is a love between front and back. It is all three-dimensional. That is why, when there is unity between parents and children, a foundation is laid that allows God to reside on earth. In this way, God can stand in the position of the ancestor of humankind. He stands in the position of the parent. Human beings have to connect to God as His children and this will result in the creation of a family united with heaven and earth. This can only take place after you have fulfilled the human portion of responsibility. The love of heaven and earth must be connected. It is that simple. (218-124, 1991.7.14)

God's love is related with His lineage. The Fall of Adam and Eve severed God's lineage. Therefore, the issue is how to connect to God's life, love and lineage in order to return to that original point. That is the point of the completion of recreation. (217-106, 1991.5.12)

The restoration of lineage is restoration at the root level. Conditional offerings are not enough to restore it. Conditional love is not enough. You need fundamental love, don't you? Since the lineage began from the root of love, conditional love cannot bring total restoration. Restoration through indemnity cannot easily be carried out, as if you were simply making amends for stealing a cow, a melon, a pumpkin or a watermelon. Love has to indemnify the root. (215-98, 1991.2.6)

When Adam fulfills his portion of responsibility he stands in the position of the first son. Then he can enter the position of true parents. This is the restoration of parenthood. It is the position of the king, the king of heaven and earth.

The difficulty in restoring the right of the first son through True Parents' battles with the satanic world cannot be compared to anything in the history of the world. Restoration of the right of the parent is like a puzzle. The restoration of the right of the king (kingship) has also been fulfilled in this difficult time in the democratic world. Think about that. When was it ever possible to speak of such things? Now, the atmosphere is such that people say, "This is great because Rev. Moon is saying it." (217-45, 1991.4.16)

Consider the position of the true man who stands in a perfected state, or the position of the original Adam who is the perfected subject. When such a per-

son has fulfilled his portion of responsibility, he inherits the seed of the original children of humankind. That must be in the position where God's love, life and lineage will be inherited. He should have received that kind of a seed. Due to the Fall, this was fundamentally invalidated. (213-303, 1991.1.21)

Adam and Eve were to be the body of God. They were to be the horizontal parents, while God was the vertical Parent. We should eventually discard this horizontal body, enter the original homeland vertically, and live in attendance to the eternal King in the heavenly kingdom. Had Adam and Eve not fallen, then through perfecting themselves, they would have become God's body and the king and queen of love. They would have fulfilled their portion of responsibility connecting the realms of direct and indirect dominion on earth through the love of God. (213-190, 1991.1.20)

The human portion of responsibility was lost. Then, what is that portion of responsibility? It was entrusted to men and women, so that they could both mature, men taking the east side and women taking the west side…. Men were born for the sake of women and women were born for the sake of men, so they must mature and marry. Where would they meet? At the meeting point made by perpendicular lines. When plus and minus meet love explodes, and becomes the foundation for God's love, life and lineage. This becomes a root so secure that even if someone tries to pull it out he will not be able to do so. As human beings we are to be born centered on the origin of absolute love, life and lineage. (196-222, 1990.1.1)

What should remain in your hearts, just as in God's heart, must be your portion of responsibility and restoration through indemnity. There is nothing else. The question is how to find the original standard. Restoration through indemnity, followed by lineage, the lineage of true love! You have to know these three: the portion of responsibility, restoration through indemnity, and lineage!

Do you think that restoration through indemnity is easy? The lineage must change back to how it should have been. You must be engrafted. You should be totally different people than those in the satanic world. Only when you forget the face of your mother and father can you be restored. (197-100, 1990.1.7)

Section 4. The Discovery of the Portion of Responsibility and its Significance

"Portion of responsibility" is a term that is not used much in ordinary society. However, especially in the Unification Church, it is a term that is more important than any other. Within our church, if you do not know these two terms – "portion of responsibility" and "restoration through indemnity" – you will not be able to understand the content of our historical course or resolve the mistakes and unknown facts of his-

tory. That is how important these words are. (169-45, 1987.10.25)

Until now, people have not understood their portion of responsibility and so have not understood the twists and turns of the past. Why were good people sacrificed while things went well for evil people? If you look at history, why is it that dictators ruled the world, while even when a good king did emerge he was not able to unite the world? Only the dreams of unifying the world that dictators have advocated are recorded. That is because this is Satan's world.

Because the realm of the human portion of responsibility was invaded, even if we look at all humanity, at all the people in the earthly world, and even at all the ancestors who were here and who went to the spirit world, there has not been a single person who could fulfill this portion of responsibility. This can be understood through the Principle. I did not just randomly put these concepts together. If we do not understand the issue of human responsibility, we cannot resolve all the complications of history. Why has history been one of war? Through the fulfillment of the portion of responsibility, conditions of goodness can overcome the conditions of the evil world. We must carry on the fight, grappling with those who have become part of the fallen satanic world. That is why history reflects the conflict between good and evil. (137-266, 1986.1.3)

The contradictions and tragic complications of history in this world all came about because we did not understand our historical portion of responsibility. You all have to realize how important that is. All of you are thinking about this matter as you please. You think that one's portion of responsibility is something that the Principle teaches about, but that it is not related to you. We have to view this in a different way and realize that my discovery of the existence of human beings' portion of responsibility is indeed a great discovery. How important do you think it is? The universe is entrapped in this and is groaning in travail. (124-94, 1983.1.30)

We must bear in mind that what the Unification Church is today revealing – that human beings have a portion of responsibility – is a discovery of universal proportions. The invention of the atomic bomb or Einstein's Theory of Relativity cannot be compared with this discovery. That is because, unless we know this reality, then nothing in history can be resolved. The fact that all of you have come to know this truth is a tremendous thing. Yet, we have had an aversion to our portion of responsibility. We should like it more than anything else, but we actually dislike it the most. (124-303, 1983.3.1)

Because we do not understand restoration through indemnity we cannot resolve human history. If we could review all of history we would see that those who were evil inevitably faced ruin based on the principle of cause and effect. However, we have not known why

all these things came to pass. Furthermore, we have not known why the ideal of humanity has not been fulfilled. The love of God must be manifested but we did not know where and how that would be. This ideal will not materialize from the mind of a scholar. It will appear from the bone marrow of the original parents. Thus, that the history of the True Parents has begun means that a foundation has been established upon which the origin of the heavenly kingdom can be connected to this earth. Without going through the True Parents, the Kingdom of Heaven cannot emerge. (148-212, 1986.10.9)

God's love is absolute; yet at the same time, that love cannot be found without standing in the position of having fulfilled the human portion of responsibility. Rather than thinking about eating breakfast in the morning or about your daily life, you have to deal with this fundamental matter. The existence of our portion of responsibility was my discovery, but do you think it happened by my just sitting down with all of you? I discovered it through struggle. If this truth were discovered and disseminated the satanic world would totally collapse. So, Satan hid it, he covered it up under a huge mountain. (149-318, 1986.12.21)

Who in the Unification Church created the term "the human portion of responsibility"? I discovered it. I did not make it up. God created it. God did that. So, before I discovered it, did this concept exist, or not? It has existed from the beginning of time. This law is an eternal law. You must understand this. (149-318, 1986.12.21)

The term, "human portion of responsibility" is important in the Unification Church. By fulfilling this Adam and Eve would have become perfect. Perfected human beings would have emerged for the first time. Through this, God's purpose in creating humankind would have been fulfilled. This would have meant that the authority of God as a Creator would have been firmly established. That shows how important it is. The position in which human beings complete their portion of responsibility would result in the fulfillment of God's ideal of creation. (169-45, 1987.10.25)

You must know how great it was that I discovered the term "the human portion of responsibility." How important do you think it is? The universe is at stake. As a result of this, God, the universe, and hell have not been liberated; all the injustices of history and the contradictions of society are caught within the confines of the portion of responsibility, and everyone is groaning within these walls. (124-94, 1983.1.30)

The term "human portion of responsibility" existed before I did. Do you realize that this law will remain eternally on earth, beyond the age we are living in and long after I depart? Some members wonder why the words "human portion of responsibility" are necessary and why they are needed. (149-318, 1986.12.21)

If the Unification Church had not appeared God could never have been understood. Since the beginning of human history there has been no way to solve the problems in the relationship between the spiritual and physical worlds. There has been no explanation as to why human beings have had to walk the path of great suffering and why, if God exists, an evil world came into being and drove humanity into such misery. Yet today, the followers of the Unification Church know clearly that this is because of the human portion of responsibility. This is an amazing fact. (138-120, 1986.1.19)

If God had not established the portion of responsibility for fallen human beings, we would have thought that restoration was to take place automatically and that the words "restoration through indemnity" would not have appeared. Indemnity must be paid. Why does indemnity have to be paid? It is because humankind has a portion of responsibility. The first human ancestors destroyed this, the very thing that they should have perfected; as a result, the whole of humanity still has to fulfill its given responsibility. To do so, everyone gains dominion over everything in the satanic world, stands in a position to dominate Satan, and reaches the position where they can receive the love of God with dignity. When that happens, Satan will be cut off. (143-77, 1986.3.16)

Section 5. Our Attitude toward Fulfilling Our Portion of Responsibility

5.1. Our portion of responsibility can be found in every field of human life

The history of restoration through indemnity is always with us, from childhood to old age, in death and in the spirit world. Our portion of responsibility stays with us. It even continues when we pass into the spirit world, and the more we rise to the higher realms, the more the laws come to be of a higher dimension. Our portion of responsibility remains with us at every level. We must know this. (133-175, 1984.7.10)

It is important to understand that for me to set up the law in my time is the extension and expansion of the law of the human portion of responsibility. You must know and follow this accordingly. The rules of the church are all aspects of our portion of responsibility. Thus, we must diligently keep the time for church service. We must arrive before the service begins, and must fully concentrate during its course. That is what I did. In the past, if I was going to be late for school I would skip a meal and thus arrive early. That is what I did. I had to learn to control the use of time. So, my thinking was quite mathematical. (133-154, 1984.7.10)

We must know that all the rules of conduct are contained within human-

ity's portion of responsibility. We must keep the laws of the Unification Church. To keep the time for pledge service in the morning is also part of our portion of responsibility. If you cannot even keep to this you need to be aware that it will lead to problems in your life. (133-154, 1984.7.10)

Our portion of responsibility is found everywhere. If you eat, then cleaning up is also our portion of responsibility. There are many responsibilities. The one who can fulfill a greater portion of responsibility is a great person. The founder of the Unification Church created many programs to help you fulfill your portion of responsibility. In a company, for instance, you have to lay down principles and rules for the sake of the whole enterprise and everyone must follow those rules. There can be no objections. You will be fired if you step outside those boundaries. What happened to Adam and Eve who tried to go some other way? They were driven out. (133-154, 1984.7.10)

5.2. Our attitude toward fulfilling our portion of responsibility

Fallen human beings have violated more than just the human portion of responsibility. They violated 97 percent of the creation as a whole. The entire process of creation collapsed as a result. That is why things have been so difficult. Therefore, unless people take on a responsibility corresponding to that 97 percent, there will never be a way to fulfill their portion of responsibility. The dispensation for restoration is the dispensation for re-creation. But why is re-creation absolutely necessary? It is necessary because of human responsibility. To fulfill this and reach the point of accomplishment we must undergo the process of re-creation. We must surely set up indemnity conditions in order to pass through this course. It means that we must go the way of suffering. (115-67, 1981.11.4)

We must be very familiar with the human portion of responsibility. The history of salvation is the history of restoration and the history of restoration is the history of re-creation. Re-creation has to be carried out according to the Principle. We must fulfill our portion of responsibility. Fulfilling our portion of responsibility means to have absolute faith and absolute obedience. That is the only way. You should not insist on your own way. Eve fell because she insisted on her own way. I am saying that after you join the church you should not complain. (143-113, 1986.3.16)

How many times a day do you think about your portion of responsibility? You have to remember this many times: when you eat, when you hold a spoon, when you wash the dishes, while you go to the toilet, while you walk…. Adam and Eve did not think about their portion of responsibility and consequently came to ruin. We must not become people who, like Adam and Eve, cannot fulfill our responsibility and fall. To become someone who can be restored and be victorious we have to respect and consider our portion of responsibility

twenty-four hours a day. (124-103, 1983.1.30)

God has been relating to us from a position above the realm of the human portion of responsibility until this time. However, all people, who have fallen below that, must do all they can to make a bridge and raise themselves up. All of humankind is caught in that realm. The world is caught there and history is caught there. Those who have already gone to the spirit world, those living in the world at present, and all of posterity who are yet to be born will be unable to escape this misfortune. This is the fallen realm of bitter feelings.

Thus, for us to be re-created we must absolutely pass through a course of struggle. Who is controlling this course of re-creation? Satan is. Satan rules up to 97 percent of this realm; beyond the 97 percent God is in control. This is how we must look at it. (115-67, 1981.11.4)

Since human beings could not fulfill their own portion of responsibility, a perfected Adam must fulfill it. He must pioneer an unknown world. Thus the way of the Principle must be developed. We have to seek that out. The way of the Principle is the way of a quest; the way of indemnity is a path that must be trodden. Follow this way. You must go through that which Jacob indemnified, the indemnity of Jesus and the indemnity course of Moses, by walking the indemnity course of Rev. Moon of the Unification Church. Although the course may be a thousand miles long, you must walk it, even if you take just three or four steps. That conditional offering is precious. (233-306, 1992.8.2)

Jacob knew that when the angel came he came as a messenger from God. Thus, he asked, "Did you come with the mission to destroy me? Or did you come to give me a blessing?" The angel replied, "I came to bless you." So Jacob asked, "If you came to bless me, why are you withholding it from me?" The reply came, "I cannot just give it to you because your portion of responsibility remains." In other words, Jacob had to wrestle with him and win in order to receive the blessing. That is to say, the blessing could not be granted unless he fought with his life. When challenged by the angel, Jacob determined to be victorious and rose up saying, "I see. All right, even if I lose my fingers or even my arms, I will not lose." He then wrestled with the mind that he would not let go, even if he were struck by a sword, or had his head cut off. How long did they struggle? They struggled all through the night. He fought with the determination that he would not let go until he died. (20-228, 1968.6.9)

The indemnity course for the realm of the portion of responsibility must be set up. That responsibility has to be fulfilled based on what? It means to love God more than anyone else, with absolute faith and absolute love exceeding that of others. Without this, Satan will not surrender. (139-279, 1986.1.31)

Have you ever felt gratitude for the words "portion of responsibility"? On

the the path that those who have not fulfilled their portion of responsibility walk there are walls and potholes. It is the path of bitter sorrow that remains as the indemnity payment by which to obtain liberation. Since you know this truth, you must become Unification Church members who strive to progress along this path. Because this way exists I am also exerting myself every day to make it smoother. (138-120, 1986.1.19)

Do you think that you have fulfilled your portion of responsibility? Adam and Eve passed away without accomplishing this. As a result, none of you are in the position of having fulfilled it. No matter how wonderful you are, even if you are a president, or a nationally renowned scholar, you cannot rise to the position of having fulfilled your portion of responsibility. Satan has a firm grasp on you in the realm wherein your responsibility has not been fulfilled. To separate from Satan indemnity must be paid. Without paying indemnity, without becoming an offering, he will not release you. Until indemnity is paid he will never let go. (134-273, 1985.7.20)

You do not know the way to the Kingdom of Heaven. You do not know the way of indemnity, do you? As human beings could not fulfill their portion of responsibility they have remained trapped by it. Because this could not be resolved, Satan invaded. Satan has invaded everything, from the individual to the family, society, nation, world and even the spirit world. (137-104, 1985.12.24)

We must fulfill our five percent portion of responsibility. I myself will suffer hardships throughout my life due to my portion of responsibility and the law of indemnity. Because I understood this, Satan fears the Unification Church the most. These are the weapons to make Satan surrender. Thus, we must go to Satan's front line. We must go to the satanic world, oppose Satan's activities, build a foundation and save Cain. We must help Cain to separate from Satan. Only when we save Cain is Satan liberated. If we cannot restore Cain, we cannot be rid of Satan. (134-271, 1985.7.20)

Why do we need the law of indemnity? We need it to separate from Satan. Unless you fulfill your portion of responsibility you cannot separate from Satan. I will say it again. Without this being completely fulfilled you will not be able to separate from Satan. Thus, all of you must go the way of indemnity. If I had not come to know about our portion of responsibility and the law of indemnity the Unification Church today would not be standing.

From the viewpoint of God's will God is not able to help us. The Unification Church is unique because we have learned about the law of indemnity based on our portion of responsibility. The reason I have been suffering throughout my life is because of the way of indemnity. Why should I do this all my life? Why have I always had to spend time in prison and carry on working this way? It is because of the law of indemnity. (134-271, 1985.7.20)

CHAPTER TWO

The Internal Meaning of Sin and the Fall

Section 1. The Fall Means the Father's Place was Taken by Another

1.1. Satan, the devil, is our father

My close examination of the original sin and Fall revealed that its cause lies in the adulterous relationship with the archangel that took place in the first human family. According to the Divine Principle, Satan is not a conceptual or imaginary being, but a real spiritual being. He is the ringleader who destroyed God's ideal of love and changed God's lineage to the one centered on himself. In chapter eight of the Gospel of John, Jesus states clearly that the father of humankind is the devil.

The adulterer who deprived God of His ideal of love, which God intended to realize through Adam and Eve, as His external body, is indeed the devil, Satan. This may not sound familiar to you; however, this is the conclusion that I have gained as a result of searching throughout the spirit world in order to investigate the fundamental problems of the universe. That quest was a struggle in which I shed blood and tears. If you pray in earnest, you will also be able to receive an answer about this. (135-12, 1985.8.20)

What were the real circumstances of the Fall? The Bible says that the Fall occurred due to eating the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, but this is just a metaphor. The fact that people have believed this literally until today is miraculous. Even though Christianity irrationally believes that people fell by eating the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, it has developed globally until the present, and built the civilization of the twentieth century. Seeing this we can understand that God was helping it tremendously from behind the scenes. However, what kind of result can arise from something that has uncertain internal contents? Perfection cannot come from ignorance. (22-242, 1969.5.4)

If you carefully study the contents of the Bible, you cannot deny the fact that due to the illicit love the human ancestors connected themselves to the devil, Satan, with a relationship of father and children. Human beings are precious beings who were supposed to inherit God's lineage and be born as His own sons and daughters within His absolute love. However they were born into lineage of devil, Satan, as his sons and daughters. In the eighth chapter of

Romans, it is recorded, "…but we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the spirit, groan inwardly, as we wait for adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies." An adopted child has a lineage different from that of his foster parents. This is the reality of human beings. (53-261, 1972.3.1)

If you look at the eighth chapter in the book of Romans, it says, "….but we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly, as we wait for adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies." (Rom. 8:23) and "For you did not receive the spirit of bondage again to fear, but you received the Spirit of adoption by whom we cry out, 'Abba, Father.'..." (Rom. 8:15) You can only become adopted children. The Christians are adopted children. Adopted children have a different lineage. If you look at the Gospel of John, Jesus said, "You are of your father the devil, and your will is to do your father's desires." He said, "father," so does not that mean that humankind's ancestor is the devil – that their lineage comes from him? Therefore, what is circumcision? It is the separation of good and evil. That is how it is. What kind of fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil are you talking about? (154-337, 1964.10.5)

What happened as a result of the Fall? We fell into the realm of death. Just as God had said that the human ancestors would definitely die if they eat of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, all of humanity indeed fell into the realm of death. What happened as a result of the Fall? If we look at the Gospel of John 8:44, Jesus points out that Satan, the devil, became the father of humankind. Adam and Eve, who should have attended God as their father, fell, and as a result they started attending Satan, the devil, as their father. You must know that this mortifying fact is the retribution for the Fall. (74-140, 1974.11.28)

Due to the Fall, human beings could not but surrender to their false father, Satan, the devil. People changed their father. We discarded God, our true Father, and became one with Satan, the false father. In this way, the first man and woman became Satan's son and daughter. (God's Will - 293)

What kind of a being was Satan originally? The devil was actually a servant of God. Yet, this scoundrel of a servant seduced the master's daughter. This was the Fall. The Fall as recounted in the Bible describes it as Eve having eaten of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, but this fruit was not a literal fruit. The rogue servant seduced his master's daughter. She was supposed to fulfill God's ideal by raising sons and daughters who would inherit His lineage, but the archangel, created as a servant, seduced the master's daughter; that became the origin of the Fall. How in the world can such a thing happen? Heaven and earth ended up this way. If you study the Principle, you will generally understand these complex matters. (85-308, 1976.3.4)

God commanded Adam and Eve that they should not eat of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and of the tree of life which were located in the center of the Garden, even though people could eat of the fruit of any other tree; but what does that mean? Dr. Yoon! What kind of trees are the other trees, and what kind of trees are the tree of life and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil? They are all trees, but what kind of trees are the other trees? I am asking you. When an elder brother and a younger sister live together, they can touch each other's hands, stroke each other, or express their affection to each other in any way, but they must neither look at the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, nor touch it. Do you understand what that means? They can touch all other places, but not this place. That is how we should interpret it. If you just say that the tree of life that grew in the middle of the Garden of Eden was one kind of a tree and other trees are simply different kinds of trees, it is going to be a big problem. Do you understand what I am talking about?

A brother and a sister can touch each other's hands; it is okay if they do so. There are only two of them, a brother and a sister, right? They can even hug each other, that is okay too. Children do touch each other, don't they? As they grow up at home, they do so, don't they? For example, does a brother realize that he is dealing with the opposite sex, when he relates to his sister? They can touch each other all right, but there is one thing they should not do. The fruit of the tree of life is the male sexual organ, and the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil is the female sexual organ. They must not even be touched. And if one eats of these fruits, it will be a disaster. In the Bible, it is written in a metaphorical fashion. God is so good at making hints! (199-93, 1990.2.15)

If we read the Bible, it tells us that Adam and Eve fell by eating of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, but then what does it mean that they covered their sexual parts? If the Christian churches had a mind to interpret the Bible a little more intellectually, they would immediately be able to understand the origin of the Fall. Why were Adam and Eve ashamed of their sexual parts? Why did they cover them? They should have covered their mouths and hands. There is nothing wrong with sexual organs. However, since people fell through them, these parts of the human body became a palace of shame where heavenly love was violated. A spring of true love should have welled forth from there, but a fountain of false, devilish love gushed out instead. That place therefore became the stronghold of the worst kind of love. (202-199, 1990.5.24)

When Adam was chased out of Eden, was he expelled before or after having children? We did not see this, but if they had sons and daughters, would God have been able to chase them out? There would have been many more tears. The grandchildren would have clung to God and cried, "Grandfather, grandmother,

why are you chasing us out like this?" and held on and screamed…If those four people had just grabbed God's arms and cried, He would have had to cut them off, wouldn't He? I do not know about sinful Adam and Eve, but their sinless children would have realized the fact that God could not chase them out. God understood this, so He expelled Adam and Eve before they had children. After He had done this, they married at their own discretion; they stayed together and gave birth to their offspring. When God cast them out, did He instruct them to marry and have sons and daughters or did He not say such a thing? Try to answer that. Anyway, they bore children after they were expelled. (218-230, 1991.8.19)

Where can you pay money to hear such words as these? Even if you sell your house and all your property, even if you make sacrificial offerings for thousands of years, no one could teach you this. Only Rev. Moon of the Unification Church can do this. This is the secret of the universe. Even the Bible does not have such content, does it? The Bible tells us that Adam and Eve fell by eating of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. What kind of fruit is the fruit of the knowledge of good and evil? Can those without the ability of pre-schoolers insist that Rev. Moon, to whom doctoral degrees have been granted and who became the head of those so qualified, is a heretic? The Chinese characters for heretic (異端 ee-dan) do not mean that there is a different root (dan), but simply that they cannot see the root. Are my words correct, or not? They are correct. (238-213, 1992.11.22)

What were the results of the Fall? The world opposite to the original world. Eve was seduced into committing a Fall by a servant while she was still under age. What is the Fall? It is not what is literally stated in the Bible of today, that she took and ate the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Satan knew what God considered to be most precious. He knew about the most valuable thing that would enable human beings to become God's sons and daughters. So he couldn't help thinking, "If I too, could have what God loves the most, and what Adam and Eve can love the most…" (214-266, 1991.2.3)

In the Last Days, we must rectify what is wrong and resolve God's grief. While resolving the grief caused by the violation of the heavenly law, we must resolve the grief of humanity as well. That is how it is, but if we do not know this fact and just talk about eating of the fruit of good and evil and such things… If you think my words are wrong, pray intensely for forty days to find out if Rev. Moon of the Unification Church has said something false. You were not born into the normal lineage. That is why religions emphasized a celibate life – having children was seen as trouble. (156-228, 1966.5.25)

God detests lewdness. Why? It is because the human beings turned heaven and earth upside down with their illicit love. Nothing can be done about that evil blood. Therefore the religious

world advocates celibacy. When a man enters into a spiritual state of deep prayer, a woman always appears to tempt him. Something like this inevitably occurs, blocking the religious path. Why does this happen? It is because the history was formed through illicit love. The fact that the teaching that asserts that human beings fell by eating of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil remained intact for two thousand years is surprising. (41-292, 1971.2.17)

There should be no deviation from the origin of the universe. Yet, the devil intervened in Adam and Eve's life before they grew up, that is, while they were still under age, around fifteen or sixteen years old, in their teens. At that time, when Eve looked quietly at the archangel Lucifer, she realized that he knew all the principles of heaven and earth. He was on errands for God, so he could speak about the creation of heaven and earth.

On the other hand, Adam was distant. He was wandering around with a club catching birds, snakes and frogs. In the future he was supposed to dominate and control everything in the nature, so he was trying to get to know everything and adapt himself to everything; so was he interested in Eve? Even if she wanted to follow him, she couldn't follow the strong male. So when she rested somewhere in a shade, Lucifer would whisper something to her and finally seduced and violated her.

Then, why could God not intervene in this? Human love is governed by human beings. It is not the subject, but the partner who is the master of all forms of love in heaven and on earth; thus, if God, who lives for the sake of others following desires of His partners, came to dominate human love, the fundamentals would break down. So, God as a Ruler would stand in an absurd position, that is why, even though He saw what was happening, He could not do anything about it. (191-97, 1989.6.24)

1.2. If the Fall had not occurred...

Who grieved the most after the Fall? Who has wailed and writhed in pain the most throughout history? It is God. Why? God knows everything only too well. He would say, "Had Adam and Eve not fallen, they would have inherited this great undertaking – all of heaven and earth; so how could this happen?" Adam and Eve were still under age, so they did not understand this. They were mere children, so they did not know anything. Not understanding, how could they lament or struggle? (232-114, 1992.7.3)

Looking at His internal character, God is God, the Father, representing masculinity, and God, the Mother, representing femininity. Thus, we can say that human beings and the world of creation are also the "gods" of dual characteristics: masculinity and femininity.

Firstly, God created Adam and Eve in order to assume physical form, and secondly, in order to fulfill love. When Adam and Eve reach perfection and become the substance of love in which the two can be one, God can dwell in

them and become the Parent of perfect love for humankind. Then, Adam and Eve become the substantial parents in the image of God, and multiply substantial children, thus creating the ideal world. Had that happened, the spiritual and physical worlds would be connected to each other through human beings, so we can say that connecting these two worlds was also the purpose of our creation. Based on love, God would have resided within Adam and Eve as the substantial True Parent of humankind, and when they went to the spirit world He would manifest Himself there too assuming a substantial form of Adam and Eve. However, please understand that it was never fulfilled, due to their Fall. (Blessing - 307)

If Adam and Eve had not fallen, then the children of the God-centered direct lineage of Adam would have appeared. Adam was the firstborn son, the True Father and the king. He was to be the king of the earthly and heavenly worlds, as well as the True Parent and the true eldest son. Thus, Adam's family was the royal family of the heavenly kingdom. Then, who was the grandfather in Adam's family? God was the grandfather. The father and mother were Adam and Eve. From the viewpoint of positions representing the past, the grandfather and grandmother stand in the place of God; and God stands as the Parent.

Looking from the vertical perspective, we can say that God settles in a family consisting of three generations. The first generation is represented on the horizontal plane by a grandfather, the second generation by a father, and the third generation by a son. Thus, the royal family that lasts for myriad of generations starts from sons and daughters. (218-255, 1991.8.19)

The right of true parents, the right of the true king and queen and the right of true eldest son and daughter were supposed to begin with Adam and Eve. God's palace and His love would have been in that family. Humankind and the Creator would be joined as one, thus forming the basis for true love. That would be the family foundation of the perfected original Adam, the palace of God where He could dwell forever. (218-189, 1991.7.28)

What kind of God does the Unification Church speak about? We say that He is the vertical Parent of true love. Then, who are Adam and Eve? The vertical Parent is one. The word "vertical" implies that He is only one. The relationship of love between God and human beings is a vertical one. That vertical love is the center. Then, who are Adam and Eve? In relation to this vertical standard they represent the position of horizontal parents. (189-113, 1989.2.5)

Why was the horizontal dimension necessary? It was necessary for the sake of reproduction. There cannot be reproduction on a vertical basis. Reproduction is necessary and it occurs on a horizontal foundation. Reproduction occurs on the horizontal place through 360

degrees, covering an infinite number. In order to begin reproduction in all four directions: north, south, east and west and thus create a spherical form adjusted to a vertical axis, God created Adam and Eve who assumed bodily form on the basis of God's love. (187-115, 1989.2.5)

All parents come from Adam and Eve. All forefathers of humankind come from them. The true husbands and wives of humanity originate in Adam and Eve. Through Adam and Eve, sons and daughters were born for the first time. Moreover, the parent-child relationship of God with His sons and daughters also began from Adam and Eve. (188-214, 1989.2.26)

Do you know why God created Adam and Eve? As a Parent He wanted to possess love for His son and daughter. Next, He wanted to experience the kind of love that a bride and groom, like Adam and Eve, have for each other. God wanted to experience the love of a grandfather towards his grandchildren. He wanted to love His nation and love the world; He wanted to possess all kinds of love. He bequeathed all these things He wanted to possess to the human world for you to inherit. These are your tribe, your people, nation, and the world, the earth, as well as the spirit world. You need to know this. (188-214, 1989.2.26)

Had Adam and Eve not fallen and grown into perfection, they would have reached perfection not only on the individual level, but would have also achieved perfection on the level of the universe. A new family centered on the love of God would have been initiated. If this family had developed into a tribe, people, nation and the world, it would be one family-like society attending God. The center of such a society would be God and Adam. In such a world, the daily life and a life course of God-centered Adam's family would remain as a historical tradition. Adam's lifestyle, customs and habits, and the background of his life, would have become the historical tradition. That surely would be a tradition bound with the love of God. His love is the source of life and origin of all ideals, so even if we try to leave it, we cannot; and even if we do, we cannot help coming back to it. (91-240, 1977.2.23)

The Fall may seem to be a problem limited to only Adam and Eve, but they were the ancestors of humankind, they were the origin, something like a fountain. That is why they influenced individuals, families, peoples, nations, the world and the entire future of humankind. (97-274, 1978.3.26)

The Fall of Adam and Eve was not just their Fall; it signified the Fall of all human history. In other words, Adam and Eve falling meant that they failed to become good parents, and became evil parents instead. Evil parents gave birth to evil children, and thus evil tribes, evil nations and the evil world were formed. Three billion people continue to live in this world. The history that has been unfolding in this fallen realm is most

certainly not a history of joy, but a history of sadness; and the human race is not one of happiness, but definitely one of sorrow. (38-149, 1971.1.3)

When you come to know love, you come to comprehend everything. You can understand not only the two-dimensional reality of the earthly world, but your spiritual eyes open to the three-dimensional world. Thus, you reach a state in which you can see and communicate with God directly. However, human beings fell before their perception of love developed. They formed a relationship of illicit love with the archangel. This was the root cause that led to the destruction of the universe. (137-127, 1986.1.1)

It is an amazing thing that I clarified the fact that the Fall was a result of the misuse of love. My teaching is logically systematized and backed by historical facts, and therefore cannot be denied. (128-88, 1983.6.5)

Section 2. Through the Fall Our Lineage Changed to that of Satan

2.1. We have inherited the lineage of an enemy

The lineage of Adam and Eve changed because of their Fall. Due to whose love did it happen? They became the embodiment of Satan, due to the love of Satan, who is an adulterer and the enemy of God. The lives of a man and a woman combined with Satan's love and became one; the fruit of the two were sons and daughters who have inherited Satan's love, life and lineage. (227-47, 1992.2.10)

Fallen people became false beings; therefore they need to receive grafts. From the standpoint of lineage, your ancestor is someone other than God. Why could you become only His adopted children? It is because you have adifferent father and mother. Hence, it is logical to conclude that the Fall has to do with lineage. What is the Fall? It means inheriting the wrong lineage. It is correct to say that human beings fell due to false love. That is why the assertion made by the Unification Church that human beings fell due to love, cannot be denied. It is written in the Bible that Adam and Eve fell by eating of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and fell, isn't it? Do you know what that fruit was? Was it a fruit at all? Was it a fruit that can be blown down by the wind and roll on the ground? It was not.

Satan entered minds of Adam and Eve and became one with them, so they inherited Satan's lineage. Why can God, who has so much love, not forgive Satan? Jesus said that everybody, even murderers and robbers can be forgiven, once they believe in him. Then why can Satan not be forgiven? It is because he defiled the lineage of humankind. What does that mean? From God's point of view, Satan is the adulterer, the one who violated His love. (156-226, 1966.5.25)

Since Adam and Eve got married centering on Satan, nobody can deny

that they inherited Satan's love, life and lineage. Had they not eaten of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, had they not fallen, they would have held a wedding ceremony centered on God. Just as the True Parents blessed you in the Unification Church, God would have called Adam and Eve and given them His blessing after they matured. (228-254, 1992.7.5)

If Adam and Eve had not eaten the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and perfected themselves, they would have become the son and daughter of the King who created heaven and earth. If they were the King's children, then who would their children be? They would be princes and princesses. This would be a foundation in the earthly kingdom that would represent the Kingdom of Heaven. There would be only one kingship, not two. (231-27, 1992.5.31)

Adam and Eve were the only begotten son and daughter of God whom He created with His own hands. A problem arose because they fell. Then, what happened due to their Fall? They fell by eating the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil which God had forbidden them to do, but what would have happened had they followed the commandment not to eat? Christianity could not think about this. And even if it had, it could not understand. To them it was like the wide blue sea. Even if they tried to measure its depth, they had no instrument by which they could do so. They simply put an end to the debate, saying, "There is no way you can understand it, so just believe unconditionally." Yet, there is no perfection in ignorance. (231-21, 1992.5.31)

Why do we strike our body? It is because we inherited Satan's blood, the blood of God's enemy. Who is God's enemy? He is an adulterer. He is an enemy of God's love. He is an adulterer! We inherited the blood of the adulterer. Eve, who could have inherited the royal power of the heavenly kingdom and become its queen, became the wife of the devil, the mate of the servant. This was the secret of heaven and earth, exposed for the first time in my era; thus, the satanic world must retreat. (172-277, 1988.1.24)

There can be no perfection in ignorance. Who is Satan? To God, he is an adulterer. I clarified this matter, but can you go to heaven if you close your eyes to this fact? Can you receive salvation if you close your eyes to it? That is nonsensical. Fruitless and unreasonable people! If one could be saved by believing in that, someone like me would have already been saved many times over. I would not have suffered like this. (188-230, 1989.2.26)

Why does the devil hate God? Why does God hate the devil? According to Christian logic one must love his enemy. So, if Satan is God's enemy, why can God not love him? If He were to love the enemy of love, heaven and earth would

disappear. The law governing everything would disappear. The law of existence would disappear. (191-43, 1989.6.24)

Satan destroyed God's ideal love and trampled on the ideal of life and ideal lineage. After that, people gave birth to children. God could not interfere with those children who were the manifestation of Satan's love, life and lineage. (197-286, 1990.1.20)

Why throughout human history has Satan been so abominable, never failing to come to those following a religious path, choking them, riding on their backs, victimizing them? Who is that wretched Satan? To God, Satan is an adulterer who robbed God of His family, who seduced His family members. Our original mother was supposed to attend God, build the kingdom of peace and create a heaven and earth that is full of peace; but instead she drove away our father and us. Satan invaded and brought human beings to a wretched state. His sin was no less than that. (156-226, 1966.5.25)

What did the devil use to make Adam and Eve fall? The fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil? What did they cover after eating this fruit? Did they cover their mouths or hands? They covered their sexual parts, didn't they? Thus the evil seed was sown. Adam and Eve fell in their teenage years before reaching maturity. Since that was the starting point from which the historical lineage of the human world spread, this phenomenon is becoming widespread in the Last Days. All around the world, youths like Adam and Eve hide themselves in the shade and selfishly destroy the ethics of love, having no fear of heaven and earth. When such a time comes you must know that the era of Satan's full power has arrived on earth. At that time, you will witness the iron hammer of God. (200-227, 1990.2.25)

Our lineage must be changed. Why? Since we have inherited the lineage of Satan, we must rectify it. You must understand this clearly. (183-308, 1988.11.7)

2.2. Original sin is inherited through lineage

The Fall began from a motivation denying the lineage. Therefore, people have inherited the consequences of the Fall as the original sin until the present day. (Blessing - 321)

People belonging to the satanic realm have no relation to God's lineage whatsoever. In other words, human beings who should have been born as children of good parents were instead born through evil parents. Consequently, they expanded into a family, tribe, people, nation and world centered on evil. (55-133, 1972.5.7)

Eve became one with the archangel through an illicit sexual relationship, and then Adam united with Eve who had been one with the archangel. Consequently, Adam and Eve had a conjugal

relationship and formed a family centered on the archangel instead of God. As a result, all humanity as descendants of Adam and Eve came to inherit the lineage of Satan. (Blessing - 325)

Adam and Eve should have united centered on God, however they united with the archangel, a servant of God; that is what the Fall refers to. Human beings, who should have inherited the lineage of God, inherited the lineage of the servant instead. That is why fallen people may call God "Father," but they do not actually feel that He is their Father. This is because they have inherited the primary characteristics of fallen nature, which makes them think of everything in a self-centered manner, with no regard for God or anything else. Thus, people became contradictory beings, forming tribes and nations. Therefore these tribes and nations come to be divided very quickly. This is how the sphere of satanic culture developed. Everything that splits into two, then into three and so forth belongs to the satanic realm. (91-242, 1977.2.23)

Due to the Fall we lost true parents, true husband and true children. Eve and the archangel caused this loss. From this viewpoint, women who live on this earth are dependent on their fathers, husbands and elder brothers who represent archangelic types. That is why women are miserable. The daughter of a wealthy family came to live with a manservant; that is, her children were born into the lineage of a servant. Thus, women could not receive the love of the original husband, father and brother. (51-182, 1971.11.21)

Restoration has taken six thousand biblical years because of the complications involving lineage; otherwise, the almighty God would have restored everything in a day. People contracted a chronic disease that affected their lineage, so if God had tried to remove this disease at once, they would have died. That is why it took Him six thousand years. Can you say Adam and Eve fell by eating a fruit? If it were true, how simple things would be! (155-295, 1965.11.1)

How did the basis of sin, the Fall, evil and hell come to exist? Concrete explanation of these things is the problem. Let us go back to Adam and Eve and think about this. If we delve into fundamental reasons of Adam and Eve's Fall, we can say that first of all they fell because of disbelief in God's commandment not to eat of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. The second reason was their self-centeredness. Thirdly, they tried to love in a self-centered way. Since this is a core essence of the Fall, we arrive at the conclusion that anyone who has the same characteristics is on Satan's side. The love of fallen people is faithless and selfish. Ultimately, those who assert self-centered love are the people of this world. (79-198, 1975.7.27)

Section 3. Satan Is the Adulterer of God's Love

3.1. Satan is the fallen archangel Lucifer

What kind of a being is Satan? Particularly those who believe in Jesus must explain clearly Satan's identity in relation to God. Who is Satan? He is an adulterer, the adulterer of love. That wretched being Satan beat the father to death and raped the mother. And the children who were born from this are all of you. Don't you feel bad about this? If you cannot believe it, try praying to God desperately, as if your life were at stake, and ask him whether my words are true or not. (38-175, 1971.1.3)

If Christians and other people walking the path of faith are to resolve the bitterness caused by our ancestors having fallen prey to Satan's accusations, having been trampled upon and victimized in massacres, they must clarify the identity of Satan and understand the heart of God in history, in the present age and His concerns about the future. This world will start turning only when God in tears is able to call people, "Oh, my sons, my daughters!" (8-130, 1959.11.29)

Eve was to be the wife of God. This is so because Adam was supposed to become one with God, so he would become God Himself. Satan violated God's wife. Satan is God's enemy and our enemy. (22-207, 1969.2.4)

Who is Satan? He is the adulterer who violated Eve who was to become the wife of God. She was meant to be Adam's wife, and, at the same time, God's wife. Satan is the adulterer who violated Eve, God's wife-to-be. Satan is the enemy of love. So, even though God loves His enemies, He has not told us to love Satan, the adulterer. Satan cannot be forgiven. God loves people who belong to Satan, but He cannot forgive Satan. This is the Principle, so you must know it. (148-294, 1986.10.25)

Eve was God's daughter and Adam's wife, and yet Satan violated Eve. That is why Satan became an adulterer in relation to God. Christians did not know this until now. (19-158, 1968.1.1)

Satan, the devil, is the ringleader who expelled the original Master, stole his wife and dragged even His sons and daughters to a place of death. From this point of view, is there a way to forgive Satan, the enemy of God and humankind? Ultimately, in the eyes of God, Satan is an adulterer who stole His love. Therefore, can he be forgiven? To forgive Satan means to ruin the whole world. So, do you think that if you remain the way you are now you can become sons and daughters of God? Therefore, you must know that until the day comes when this changes, God and humanity cannot avoid a path of groaning and pain. (53-338, 1972.3.6)

Were your families created through love that was authorized by God? They

were not. Your families, your father and mother, are bound to the fallen love of the satanic world. In fact you were born into such families. That is why your lineage is different. It is the same as if a robber chased away your father, raped your mother and you were born as the corrupt offspring from this liaison. Finally, the human race became an adulterous tribe and society that is not even aware of God's existence. (19-102, 1967.12.31)

Where did your love line begin? Where was its starting point? It began from evil. The chief instigator of this evil was Satan, the devil. How is he related to this problem? He is the adulterer of love. Human beings were born inheriting the blood and flesh of this adulterer. Then, do we want to receive the adulterer's love? Did you want to receive the love of the impure lineage inherited from the adulterer? No, you did not. That is the problem. (35-90, 1970.10.4)

Originally, human beings were to inherit true life and true lineage from God, to possess the authority over the universe and live a glorious life, but due to the Fall, humankind received Satan's life and lineage, based on Satan's love. Satan is God's enemy, the enemy of love. He is an adulterer. If you write the Chinese character for woman (女) three times, it forms one of the characters for adulterer kan (姦) of kanbu (姦夫). Do you understand what an adulterer is? Someone who steals the woman you love is an adulterer. (213-265, 1991.1.21)

To God, Satan is an adulterer and humankind is the child of that adulterer. That is why Satan is the enemy. Only a person with a passionate desire to settle the score with this enemy indeed stands on God's side. (16-142, 1966.1.9)

God invested His entire heart in creating the universe, dreaming of this great and hopeful undertaking. However, when all the conditions for His great work, His life and ideas were destroyed at once, heaven and earth became totally dark. The archangel Lucifer became His enemy. Should we strike and seize Lucifer or not? God loved His son and daughter the most, they were the bone of His bones and the flesh of His flesh, but Lucifer made them his own son and daughter. Should we cut the head off such an enemy or should we let him go? God was the first to struggle over this problem. (27-60, 1969.11.23)

You must know that the devil, Satan, is the ringleader of evil who deprived Adam and Eve of their qualification as the prince and princess whom God wanted to have; he destroyed the family love of that prince and princess, destroyed their future descendants, and God's ideal of the family and the heavenly nation. (302-220, 1999.6.14)

This ringleader is not only God's enemy; he is the enemy of humanity. Imagine that the prince and princess who had been living in the royal palace of the kingdom were captured by the enemy general and began to live as servants

and multiplied the offspring of the world of servants. Our situation is the same. Although the human race should have developed under the royal authority of that prince and princess, fallen humankind is like a mob that has multiplied under the evil kingship of the devil. (302-222, 1999.6.14)

3.2. Satan is the enemy of love

Who is the archangel? He is the adulterer who took away the wife of God. In other words, the subject of evil, Satan, is an adulterer who robbed God of His wife. He is an adulterer who has eaten up love. People have not understood that. (35-71, 1970.10.3)

Originally human beings were supposed to become God's princes and princesses, but they became the offspring of the servant and multiplied the servant's children. You know who Satan is, right? He is an adulterer. What is an adulterer? He is a robber of love, someone who deviated from the proper way of love. That is why Satan is a thief of love. (135-283, 1985.12.15)

Who is Satan? To God he is an adulterer. An adulterer! He killed our father, raped our mother and assumed the role of the master of our house. Humanity let this arch-enemy go and could not demand retribution. (153-270, 1964.3.26)

Can you love an adulterer? That is God's pain. How pitiable God is! What kind of an adulterer is this? He trampled upon three generations: grandmother, grandfather, mother, father, and even their children. What does that mean? Satan occupied the entire palace of the heavenly kingdom, raped and killed the grandmother, mother, and wife. Satan is that kind of enemy. (188-230, 1989.2.26)

If the enemy of love, Satan, the devil, were forgiven, heaven and earth would have turned upside down. Therefore if we are to find the original love we cannot forgive him. We cannot find it without judging Satan. Thus, God sees relationships of adulterous love as the greatest enemy. God cannot settle down on earth due to the expansion of such love. (53-140, 1972.2.13)

What is the knowledge of this human world needed for? What is power needed for and what is wealth needed for? Are things like humanistic love or humanistic family necessary? We must deny them. Fallen human beings are a tribe that has inherited the blood of Satan, the adulterer. We must reject all those things. (188-234, 1989.2.26)

Everyone wants to become God's son or daughter. This is the original principle of creation and we were supposed to become like that, but human beings who should have been born into such a lineage were dragged away by the enemy and inherited the blood of Satan, the enemy of God's love. We should have been born with God's blood running in our veins, but our present reality is unbearable. (191-244, 1989.6.25)

What are Satan's claims? He would tell God, "You are God, but I became the devil. I admit that. I am the devil. But then, if I look at Your principles, I want to ask You: when You created the archangel and Adam and Eve, did you create the archangel Lucifer based on the standard of eternal love or based on the standard of momentary, temporary love?" How should God respond to him? Would He say, "I created you based on the standard of temporary love"? No doubt, God would have to say, "I created you based on the eternal standard." Then, if Satan asks, "Even though I have changed, isn't it true that You cannot change?" God would respond, "That's right." Satan would say, "Although I changed and acted destructively, isn't it true that You cannot do the same?" And God would answer him "That is true." That is how it is. This is the one thing Satan is holding on to. (125-264, 1983.3.27)

You cannot enter the heavenly kingdom without loving your enemy. I told you this, but when people in the spirit world look at you, they are so envious. Why do you have to love your enemy? It is because even though Adam and Eve fell, God's principles and laws did not change. The principles and laws by which one enters the heavenly kingdom did not change before or after Adam's Fall. Originally, if Adam had not fallen but had reached perfection, at the time of his perfection, God and Adam would have been one… The Principle provides that God and Adam in unity should have loved the archangel Lucifer and brought him to the heavenly kingdom together. This principle still holds true. So, Satan uses it when he makes his claims. (182-282, 1988.10.26)

In this world, if no one knows about the reality of a person's crime, the criminal can act boldly wherever he goes, as if he has done nothing wrong. However, if even a small boy points out that he has witnessed the crime, the criminal must submit to that. Thus, in order to make the devil Satan surrender, we should clarify his identity, expose the nature of his crime, and initiate a movement to expel him from heaven and earth. (53-194, 1972.2.21)

God is the central figure of the eternal law, so we must drag Satan before God and accuse him. We must bring charges against him. After watching Satan justify himself, we must present the prosecutor's final argument and bind him so tightly that he is unable to move. Then, not the fallen archangel, but the archangels who have not fallen must testify, "That is right! That is exactly what happened! That is correct!" (65-201, 1972.11.19)

Section 4. The Fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil was Eve's Sexual Organ

4.1. Covering their sexual parts was an indication of sin

We do not know whether Eve picked and ate the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil or whether she ate an apple. In order to do so, she would

have had to first see it with her eyes, then move her hands to pick it, and finally eat it with her mouth. In order to have taken and eaten, the eyes, hands and mouth must all have been involved. If the act of eating started with these three organs, if these organs actually performed this action, then after eating the fruit, Adam and Eve ought to have covered their eyes, hid their hands and covered their mouths; yet they actually covered their sexual parts. That is the problem. (54-62, 1972.3.11)

Human beings were born as children of the heart, but they had to grow up. In order to mature and be able to govern the universe, they had to turn around God. Thus, God has to come down to them, become one with the axis and turn the universe. According to the Principle, the commandment, "Do not eat of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil," actually meant, "Wait until you become mature." That is to say, they had to wait until the central point was set, and until they were able to settle in that central point. (171-11, 1987.12.5)

What comes first: love or self-awareness? Love comes first. If that had actually happened, we would have been successful in everything. If that occurred, there would have been no walls or ravines on the path of life. Our life would have meshed with the gears of the heavenly principle and rotated smoothly. The great heavenly principle would have made this possible. However the woman abandoned this principle and started out from self-awareness. According to the Bible what did she want to eat? When she looked at the fruit it was good for food and it was said to make her eyes open; at that moment Eve realized her ego. This became the problem. Please understand that once you become aware of your own "self" and begin to assert yourself, you are already in the realm apt to be invaded by the cunning Satan, by your fallen nature! You must understand this clearly. (171-109, 1987.12.13)

Into what did Satan drive his roots? Into the body. God created Adam and Eve, but they fell when they were underage. God commanded them not to eat of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, but it was not a commandment concerning a literal fruit. If they had plucked the fruit with their hands and eaten it with their mouths, then they would have hidden their hands and covered their mouths. So why did they cover their sexual parts? This is a deadly trap, the cause of the destruction of human culture. The word "love" is the most sacred word, but why have words related to love become obscene in spite of this? Why do we consider them foul words? It is because the misuse of love destroyed the great Principle of heaven and earth. (198-110, 1990.1.25)

What was it about the Fall that God could do nothing about it; what was it that made Him so powerless? Why is the Fall so hard to overcome? What is this about a fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil? If Adam and Eve ate a

fruit, then why did they cover their sexual parts? They defiled their blood. The fact that they defiled their blood means that they defiled their life. The fact that they defiled the life means that they defiled love. Human beings, who were supposed to become the nervous system within the great principle of heaven and earth, fell while in their youth. Who violated the woman? The archangel, the servant, violated God's daughter, Eve, who in the future was supposed to become God's queen and His external incarnation. The lineage was changed. You may be hearing this for the first time. (200-50, 1990.2.23)

What is the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil? Do you know what it is? It refers to the sexual part of the woman. In Korean, don't people say, "I picked and ate that woman" meaning, "I seduced her"? The Korean language is curious. Men use this word, "I am going to pick and eat that woman." Even men who do not know the Bible say things like that. This tells the truth to a person's heart. Everything should be reported truthfully to our conscience. In the Last Days, people have to tell the truth. (137-252, 1986.1.3)

Could the original sin appear through eating the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil? Even if a father ate the fruit and thus committed a sin, what kind of fruit was it that made thousands of generations of his descendants into sinners? It was a relationship that involved lineage. Once planted in the lineage, the root of sin continues eternally by the law of inheritance. This can only be possible through a relationship of love. Improper love is the cause of the Fall. (23-167, 1969.5.18)

If human beings fell by eating the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil as Christianity teaches, then restoration could be completed in one day. In this case God could just create something tastier and better than this fruit and feed it to human beings and this would become the condition of indemnification, would it not? Theoretically speaking, that would be correct. (38-164, 1971.1.3)

Where were Adam and Even supposed to meet each other? They were to meet on a vertical line. They were supposed to become one in love. What is love adjusted to? It is adjusted to the center. This center is the sexual organs of a man and a woman. This is where love is adjusted to. The genitals of a man and a woman are so precious. Therefore, men and women must treat them with respect like they do God throughout their lives. This organ is the most holy place. (185-278, 1989.1.17)

Why did Adam and Eve cover their sexual parts after the Fall? Christianity does not know. What? Did Adam and Eve eat a fruit? Why would God expel His beloved son and daughter? How serious the problem must have been that God had to expel them! (197-263, 1990.1.19)

Eve became the mother of two worlds. She came to stand in a midway position in between good and evil. Then, who must decide whether to follow the direction of good or evil? A person himself or herself must decide. In order to do so, one must crush evil and Satan and cling to God. One must cling to God with a power several times stronger than the power he or she uses to strike Satan. In order to strike evil you must exert all your strength. At the same time, you must cling to God with even greater force. (31-18, 1970.4.8)

What was the Fall? In Christianity they say it was eating of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Thus, they think that this was a fruit of an actual tree. However, a fruit cannot have the same value as a human being. Among all creatures, plants were originally created to be under human beings. God did not create plants possessing elements that are able to cause the Fall of beings superior to them. (166-42, 1987.5.28)

In established churches, they say that eating the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil is the Fall. Such an interpretation is materialistic. If you say that a spiritual entity fell because a person ate something material, then how is it different from communist theory, which claims that spirit arises from matter? Did the human spirit fall because someone ate something material? Can a spiritual being fall because a person eats something physical? If you say that the physical was degraded because of the spirit, that is understandable, but saying that a spiritual being fell because of matter does not make sense. It is materialism that states that the spirit is derived from matter. (41-292, 1971.2.17)

4.2. The fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil is the crossroads of life and death

It is written in the Bible that God told Adam and Eve that they could freely eat the fruit of all the trees in the Garden of Eden, but as for fruit of the tree of life and the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil that were in the center of the Garden, they were told not to even look at them or touch them. What does that mean? What do all trees signify? Adam and Eve were brother and sister, so they could hold each other's hands, kiss each other, and do things like that, they could freely eat the fruit of all trees. However God obligated them not to touch the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and the fruit of the tree of life, that is, the male and female sexual organs. That is what He warned them about. (200-50, 1990.2.23)

Do you know what the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil was that caused the Fall of the first human ancestors? The fruit signifies the sexual organs of the man and the woman. If you use these organs well, your nation will prosper, but if you misuse them, it will perish. This is what this fruit is. It is true even for a king; if he uses this organ properly his nation will prosper,

but if he errs in using it his nation will be destroyed. Because of this, families and societies are breaking down; because of this everything is divided into hell and heaven. The fruit of evil has ripened where the fruit of goodness should have been. Isn't that the fruit of good and evil? Does everyone have the fruit of good and evil, or not? The sexual organs of a man and a woman are the fruit of good and evil. They are the head and mouth of a viper. Why did Jesus call Satan a viper? Why did he say Satan was a snake? This is the head of a snake. You must understand this. It is the head of a viper! Women and men are all after this, are they not? Is it that not so for both women and men? (227-251, 1992.2.14)

What is the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil? If you misuse love, you inherit the eternal fruit of evil. If you love righteously, you inherit the eternal fruit of goodness. Is this fruit of good and evil an actual fruit? People who claim that the fruit is an actual fruit are crazy! This fruit refers to the male and female sexual organs. (226-110, 1992.2.2)

Since the woman had a greater predisposition to fall than the man, God gave the warning, "Do not eat of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil!" If a woman meets a good person, her sexual organs bear a good fruit, but if she meets an evil man, they bear an evil fruit. The fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil refers to the female sexual organs. Does such a situation apply to men? No, it does not. (221-282, 1991.10.26)

When God gave the warning to Adam and Eve not to eat of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, who did He actually give it to? He did not give it to Adam. In his adolescence, Adam was busy playing around, he came back home tired and soon went to sleep. The woman however would be sitting down and saying things like, "The sunlight is so warm! Oh, look! The flowers are blooming! The water is so clean and the air is so fresh!" Didn't she also say something like, "I want to be as beautiful as a flower?" So in adolescent years women develop faster than men. (221-280, 1991.10.26)

The fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil refers to the sexual organs. These organs can bear either good or evil fruit. If a woman mixes with a bad man, she will receive a bad seed from him. But if she gets together with a good man, she will receive a good seed. Isn't that right? So the fruit refers to the female sexual organs. Eve fell and thus received the blood of the devil. The devil is an archangel. This archangel was the representative of the servants. (209-285, 1990.11.30)

What would God give a warning about? After God created the ideal Adam and Eve, what conditions could there be that He had to warn them about? What do mothers and fathers warn their young sons and daughters about? What should

young people be beware of when they go out? God followed the same reasoning. What should God be careful about? God does not need money. He does not need knowledge. He does not need power. He can always possess these things freely. However, even God cannot do as He pleases with love. (196-41, 1989.12.24)

It is written the Bible, "When you eat of it (of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil), your eyes will be opened." (Gen. 3:5) What do the words "eyes will be opened" mean? For a man it means to know a woman, and for a woman it means to know a man; it means nothing else than the knowledge of the opposite sex. If you are born as a man and do not marry, you are foolish. What is the highest ideal? The summit of the highest ideal a man must reach is a woman. But what kind of woman? It is a woman who is a perfect match for his heart, a match for him when he is young, a match for him when he is old, a woman who matches him forever. Isn't that right? (178-52, 1988.6.1)

When God created human beings, which part of them did He make most laboriously? Was it the eyes, the mouth, the nose or the hands? People do not even think about it. It was the stronghold of love. The term "stronghold of love" refers to the sexual parts of man and woman. These parts are the main palace of love. This is where man and woman learn about each other's love, and without this place they will not understand love. The owner of love cannot appear. (302-220, 1999.6.14)

Where is the royal palace of love, life and lineage? It is that important organ of the man and woman. It was the holy place at the time of God's creation. I am telling you it was the holy place. If it is invaded, everything is destroyed. (205-328, 1990.10.2)

Three precious things are connected to this place. Love, life and lineage are connected to this place, are they not? The sexual organs are the origin of these three important elements. (205-328, 1990.10.2)

From the viewpoint of God's original ideal of creation, the sexual organs are the most precious and holy place. This is the holy place, the holy of holies! The most holy place is not a place that just anyone can enter. No one except for the high priest, except for the person in charge, can open its door. The words "a fountain sealed" in the Song of Solomon in the Bible refer to this. (205-328, 1990.10.2)

Sexual organs are so precious for they are the royal palace of life, love and lineage. But if you treat them like libertines, as if they were bull's balls, how are you going to pay the price of that sin? Isn't this a serious problem? This is a holy place. It is the most holy place, which God created as the most precious organ. What happens when it is defiled? In Moses' course, were not those who defiled the Ark of the Covenant killed on the spot? This is the same. Defiling the

stronghold of love, which is the same as the most holy place, cannot be forgiven. Man and woman embrace each other. Loving each other is a cosmic act. It is the touchstone for forming the realm of oneness of God and humankind. In this moment man and woman are granted the relationship that connects the finite to the infinite. (218-133, 1991.7.14)

When holy men and holy women join at the sexual organs through holy love, holy life and holy lineage and give birth to children, these children will go directly to the heavenly kingdom. They will not need religion or moral training.

When mind and body form a right angle, when love and all other aspects grow without any damage, so that the internal and external aspects of his or her personality are perfected, then the person can understand everything without being taught. I am like that. Did I become the founder of the Unification Church because I studied somewhere? No, I already understood things. I know how things are. I come to understand things without being taught. (211-247, 1990.12.30)

What is the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil? Until now, it was a secret. No one could talk about it. It was the fault of our ancestors. Since the mistake was committed by our ancestors, this truth could not be made publicly known until the true ancestors came. Neither God nor Satan could reveal it. (191-232, 1989.6.25)

Section 5. Grief Caused Over the Fall and God's Heart in the Process of Restoration

5.1. The enemy of love; the bitter pain caused by the Fall

The reality of the Fall is that it is connected to the expulsion of the eldest son and daughter. The first son was the only son. The first daughter was the only daughter. Adam and Eve were born as the only son and the only daughter of billions of generations. Think about it, the only son and daughter of billions of generations were expelled when they ate the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil.

If you have only one son or one daughter and this only son dies, how great will your pain as a parent be? There is a saying that if the only son of an only son for seven generations dies, the entire neighborhood and surrounding villages will mourn for him. It is impossible to fathom the sorrow of parents who have lost a seventh generation only child, therefore all the families in the area, all parents, children, brothers and sisters will sympathize with them. When we consider this, we should reflect on the fact that Adam and Eve were the only son and daughter for how many generations? For billions of generations!

Thus, the relationship of the Parent and child were not consummated. God lost the only son for billions of generations, so the only way to find that son again is to overcome the pain lasting

for billions of generations. We have not known that we have such a Heavenly Parent. (301-100, 1999.4.20)

Who is Satan? He is an adulterer of God's love…. God had to let the enemy Satan embrace Eve.He had to listen to Satan's accusations ten thousand times and yet He had to love him. That has been God's position. You have no idea how difficult God's situation is, have you? You should know that God's position is even more difficult than the position of a man who had to let his beloved wife be embraced by his enemy and yet had to pray for that enemy's happiness. Would you all be able to do that? (182-174, 1988.10.16)

Satan is the adulterer who seduced Eve. Therefore, he is the enemy of God's love. Even though that enemy of love has been coming to God and making accusations for thousands of years, until today God has been fulfilling His role as the true Master without a single sign of displeasure on His face.

Therefore, until God sets up one central base on the earth, no matter who comes to Him with complaints He cannot oppose that person. The reason for this is the existence of the archangel. (182-246, 1988.10.23)

Satan is an adulterer of God's love. It is Rev. Moon who announced this to the world for the first time. But who on earth is the devil? He is a servant who violated the woman who was supposed to become God's wife. Who are Adam and Eve? They are God's body. It is written in the Bible, in I Corinthians, "Do you not know that you are God's temple…?" (1 Cor. 3:16) We are God's house. The Bible says that whatever Adam called each living creature that was its name. What does that mean? It means that God entered his soul and dwelt there. (209-40, 1990.11.25)

From God's point of view Satan is the adulterer. Eve is an adulteress and Satan is an adulterer. God has to consider such a wife, such a daughter, a pure woman, a pure daughter. Otherwise, He cannot restore her to her original state. That is the realm of heart God is in, but no one knows His miserable state of mind; no one except me. (227-47, 1992.2.10)

A man's beloved wife was taken away by his enemy and bore a child from that enemy, but then she must return to her original husband and he must welcome her and her child with the same pure heart he had had for her before their marriage. She is the enemy of love, the adulteress of love. That is exactly the situation of fallen Adam and Eve.

The world of peace will not come about however unless God overcomes that ridge in the realm of heart. Only when that standard is established will Satan naturally surrender. (237-238, 1992.11.17)

God cannot be God if He treats the sons and daughters of the devil, the enemy of His love, as the children of an

enemy. God has to set up the standard by loving them with the same heart He would have loved His original sinless sons and daughters. Have you ever thought about God being in such a miserable situation that He can only act in this way? (208-291, 1990.11.20)

The highest standard for Christianity and other religions is to love one's enemy. God also stands in this position according to the Principle. Therefore He cannot but love the devil, Satan. Even though Satan is the enemy of love, God must love this enemy more than He loved Adam and Eve before the Fall. Why? It is because when Eve returns to Him from the bosom of His enemy, bringing illegitimate sons and daughters with her, the Father must love them more than He loves the children He gave birth to. Otherwise there is no way for Eve to return to her original position. Do you understand what this means? (235-84, 1992.8.29)

We reach the conclusion that one cannot become God's child without having the magnanimity of a man who can pray for the happiness of his enemy even after his beloved wife went to the bosom of that enemy. Why is that so? Who was Eve? She was the wife of God, but she became like an adulteress whom Satan has been toying with for six thousand years until today… In reality it was not six thousand years, but several tens of thousands of years. Don't they say that the history of humankind has lasted for some ten million years? Who knows the deep valleys of God's aching heart as He dealt with Satan's accusations throughout that time! That is why I am saying that someone who has not experienced the heart of a man who let his beloved wife go to the bosom of his enemy and yet prayed for the happiness of that enemy cannot know the heart of God. (184-302, 1989.1.1)

Eve abandoned God on the day prior to their wedding and went to His enemy. She became an adulteress; she lived with God's enemy and gave birth to the enemy's children. Yet God had to accept her again as if she were an original and untainted person. Considering the heart of God who had to do this, I reflected that I needed to make Mother into a great mother. Only by making Mother a mother greater than Eve could I remove the scar from God's heart that was wounded, mortified and grievous over Eve. The family of True Parents must do this. Do you understand what I mean? (233-255, 1992.8.1)

In order to walk this path, I must have the heart able to bless the monstrous Satan even after letting my beloved wife go to his bosom. Do you understand what I mean? God has stood in such a position. The devil is the adulterer and the enemy of love, but in the Last Days the person qualified to be the Messiah cannot liberate God without the resolve to sacrifice even his own bride for this purpose and hand her over to Satan. (185-133, 1989.1.3)

5.2. Conditions for Satan's accusations

To God, the devil is the adulterer of love. So far, God has been dealing with all the accusations the devil, the adulterer of love, has been making. God had to persevere in His heart until today in order to redeem the condition that would enable Him to say in front of all humankind that He loved the devil. Why is that so? Had the archangel not fallen, he would have remained an archangel, but could not have entered heaven without being loved by God. God and His sons and daughters enter heaven only after they are able to love the archangel. That is why Satan accuses them. He says, "I did become the devil, but Your principle of creation, the original principled standard remains intact. So isn't it the rule that You and Your children cannot go to heaven unless you and they love me?" When Satan says this, God has to say "yes." Until now, Satan has been grasping God by His neck and accusing Him. (185-56, 1989.1.1)

Who is Satan? He is the adulterer of God's love. This malicious scoundrel destroyed the moral principles of heaven and still he is shamelessly holding onto humanity living on the earth, he is gnawing at people, stripping everything from them and abusing them. He says, "I will cram these scoundrels into a trash can in hell. If I leave them alone, they will return to God in an instant, because they have an original mind that leads them to Him." When the spring comes, even withered tree branches start budding in the morning spring sunlight. In the same way, if you only give freedom to a person's heart, his original mind will naturally turn to God. That is why Satan is so harsh, trying to throw people into hell. Yet they do not know about it. I am calling upon you to liberate and unify humanity which is not aware of its miserable destiny. Let us unify it. (142-281, 1986.3.13)

At any cost and through any sacrifice we have to settle the score with the adulterer who offended our Father. However we cannot do it with guns and swords. Unless we have a greater love, there is no way to exact repayment from him; that is how I see it. Therefore God can take the position according to the original principle of creation only after He is able to love His enemy. Why? It is because originally, at the time of creation, the devil, Satan, who is the archangel, was supposed to be loved by God. Since he was meant to receive love eternally, he still has a firm grip on God, and says, "If You want to be God, You must establish the principle that would provide for You to love me, even though I have fallen; otherwise You cannot stand in the position of the Ruler of this universe!" This is where the problem lies. This is truly a stunning truth. (120-266, 1982.10.17)

According to the original Principle of Creation, human beings were to be God's sons and daughters. But due to the Fall, they became Satan's children. Thus, God has been fighting with the

adulterer Satan, face to face. Until now God has been employing a strategy to prevent the rise of the conditions that lead to Satan's accusation and to take humanity back from him. Christians have had no idea about God's dreadful situation. They think only of the glorious God, saying, "Oh, great God dwelling in the glory of heaven and earth!" (41-301, 1971.2.17)

Who is Satan? To God he is the adulterer. Forgiving the adulterer would go against the heavenly principle, so God cannot forgive him. Therefore, even though God can forgive the people of the satanic world a hundred or a thousand times, He absolutely cannot forgive Satan. That is why the great judgment will come. Who will be judged in the great judgment? It is not human beings, but Satan, who dwells like a master in their souls, who will be judged. (22-282, 1969.5.4)

Satan is the enemy who violated love. He is a wretched thief who entered the house while the parents were asleep, murdered the father and raped the mother. Who is Satan? He is the enemy of love who raped God's beloved Eve, God's partner in substantial form.

We must have a heart that is able to give the person we love most to such an adulterer and still bless him. You cannot love the enemy merely by forgiving him. Will Satan thank you just for forgiving him? We must have such a heart that we are able to bless our enemy even after giving him our only beloved. This is the final obstacle we must surmount. Yet, people say that they will go to heaven due to their faith alone, don't they? (34-278, 1970.9.13)

Christians believe that Adam and Eve fell by eating the fruit, after the serpent incited them with whispered words. They have no idea of the workings of fundamental principles. You cannot imagine how sad, miserable and frustrated God is because of this. He is sadder, more frustrated and more miserable than anyone in history. The moment Adam and Eve ate the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil God's heart nearly burst with distress. And yet, God could not help loving them. You must understand this. (21-141, 1968.11.17)

When Adam and Eve were about to eat the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, do you think God said, "It is just what I expected. Go ahead!"? Certainly not! His heart withered and all senses focused on that place. God was trembling and bleeding. He felt like crying out "You must not eat the fruit!" Because of such indescribable sorrow and frustration He was unable to think of anything else. That must have been God's situation. Do you think God simply watched Adam and Eve eat the fruit of good and evil? If He had had a sword He would have wanted to cut out that history, cut out the whole world, but His position did not allow Him to do that. All He could do was be overwhelmed with grief. (21-141, 1968.11.17)

If Adam and Eve had been able to fathom God's inner heart, they could not have possibly fallen. God loved His children as a Parent, but they did not understand the depth of His parental heart. Of course Adam and Eve fell while they were still young, but their young age itself was not the cause of the Fall. Rather, they fell because they were lacking in heart. Had they been able to feel, "He is living for me. He can never, ever be separated from me. He is involved in everything related to me," they would not have committed the Fall. Ultimately Adam and Eve fell because they could not reach unity in heart with God. This dreadful problem occurred because their desires deviated from God's desires and the direction of their thinking was different from the direction of God's thinking. (65-173, 1972.11.19)

A robber killed the original father and raped the mother. Fallen human beings today are in the position of children who were born from that relationship. Who is Satan? He is the enemy of God's love. Satan is the adulterer who violated the children of God, so even the God of love cannot forgive him. There is no way to forgive the adulterer of love. Others can be forgiven, but Satan cannot. If he is forgiven, the heavenly law will break down. (41-197, 1971.2.15)

We are fallen descendants who betrayed God's heart. Do you know what it was that our ancestors betrayed? Do you think that they just ate the fruit of good and evil that God had forbidden them to eat? No. They betrayed God's heart. That is the problem. What kind of heart did they betray? It was the heart of the ideal of creation, the heart filled with hope. (9-112, 1960.4.24)

Why can't we cut Satan away at once? Why can the almighty God not do it immediately? It is because this problem has to do with lineage. If God tried to remove this lineage all at once He would have to exterminate the entire human race. If the blood we inherited from Satan were to be extracted, human beings would disappear. Even Adam and Eve would disappear. Humankind would have to be totally crushed. Why could God not eliminate Adam and Eve and create new ones? He is not supposed to create people anew. Love is the alpha and the omega, the beginning and the end. This became the ideal standard. God therefore cannot strike human beings as the object partners of that love. You must understand this. (188-225, 1989.2.26)

How did Satan manage to oppose God for six thousand years? Until now Satan has been holding the Principle in front of God. Satan says, "God, can You punish me? If You want to punish me You must destroy heaven and earth first. When You created me, didn't You intend to love me with the love belonging to the completion level, even though it would be only a love meant for an archangel?" Even the archangel must receive love that belongs to the com-

pletion level even though it is the type of love befitting the archangel. So, the archangel would ask God, "When did You love me at the completion level?" Even God gets trapped at this point.

Did God love the archangel at the completion level? No, He was not able to. Only after God has loved the archangel in the Garden of Eden, in the free heaven and earth, with the love belonging to the completion level, is God's responsibility fulfilled. Otherwise, God is trapped and He cannot move. (37-254, 1970.12.27)

The reason God cannot come down hard on Satan for killing millions of His beloved sons and daughters over the past six thousand years is because God is responsible for not having fully loved the archangel. For this reason, whenever someone commits a wrong there is a continuous trail of Satan's accusations: "God, so and so is doing this and that." Because the Unification Church emerged, we can know these things that no one previously understood. (35-95, 1970.10.4)

There has been no place for God to stand because He did not have a filial son or a system of love that could uphold the heavenly kingdom by having people fulfill the way of a patriot, saint and divine son or daughter. Until now, God has been incarcerated and in confinement. The heavenly kingdom became an empty ruin. God has carried this sorrow in His heart. (302-226, 1999.6.14)

Section 6. The Blessing of the True Parents and the Restoration of Lineage

6.1. True Parents are needed as the Messiah

You were born into the lineage of false parents, expelled from the presence of God, in a position unrelated to the True Parents. In order to be rid of this lineage, you must trample on it over and over and pull it out. Unless you change your lineage fundamentally, you won't be able to enter the Kingdom of God. (22-271, 1969.5.4)

In transforming the lineage, unless the condition for victory is fulfilled inside Adam's bone marrow and the core of His flesh and blood, through binding God's love to the seed that will be the child in the future, God's child cannot be born. This is a logical certainty. Is this not recorded in the Bible? If so, the Bible is surely God's word. (35-162, 1970.10.13)

Who is the Messiah? The True Parents. Then, why are they necessary? It is because human beings must receive new grafts through the love of the True Parents. Thus, unless the True Parents – the Messiah – appear, fallen human beings will not be able to eliminate their original sin or be liberated from sin and receive the Blessing at the completion stage. (35-215, 1970.10.19)

The Messiah must come to this earth in the position of the True Parents. Then,

who are the True Parents? They are the horizontal Parents possessing horizontal true love and representing the vertical True Parent. Christians say that the Messiah is God and God is the Messiah, but this is wrong. God is the vertical True Parent. He is only one. The Messiah is the horizontal True Parent. (186-40, 1989.1.24)

What kind of Savior are fallen people searching for? His position must not be that of a fallen parent. The Savior must be someone like Adam and Eve who have not fallen; he must unite with God's will, receive God's love and Blessing and give birth to humanity in the position of the True Parent. Otherwise, humankind cannot rise to a position unrelated to the original sin. (22-269, 1969.5.4)

You should inherit a new lineage. In order to do so the Messiah must come as the Father, welcome Eve and accomplish restoration through indemnity on the foundation of his victory over the satanic world, on the foundation that embraces the whole world and with which Satan cannot intervene. Then, he is supposed to consummate a marital union, create a family, give birth to sons and daughters and start the process of engrafting on the horizontal plane. That is why in the Unification Church I give the Blessing. The Unification Church is unique. Where does the lineage of the Unification Church originate? It originates from God. So, let the satanic world oppose us. After doing this they will have to pay compensation. (169-37, 1987.10.4)

Since human beings received the satanic blood, people cannot return to God by themselves. So the Messiah must achieve absolute restoration of the lineage, renewing the blood line that was defiled by Satan. This transition must be made. This is why the Messiah must surely come. Without his coming there will be no restoration of lineage. We must restore the lineage. (172-53, 1988.1.7)

To have a different lineage means to have a different father. Therefore, someone born from a different father and different lineage cannot indemnify his sins except through original parents untainted by the Fall. Therefore, until now bonds were forged in history through religious ideals until the arrival of the one person not connected with the Fall who has the right to be the first ancestor. (20-115, 1968.5.1)

Why do we need True Parents? It is because we must take root in the realm of the heart. Now the root is different. Through the Fall, all the trunks and branches have become different. Here a new root started with True Parents and what emerged from that? A trunk and branches grew. These you must engraft to yourselves. You should cut yourself down and have the new branches grafted onto you. After the engrafting, you will join the great mainstream of the universe. You must cut off everything from the satanic world, down to the root. (164-155, 1987.5.10)

Through the Fall, human beings

became the incarnations of Satan, unrelated to God. They are on the entirely opposite side from God's love, so they must pay indemnity. (35-159, 1970.10.13)

The purpose of indemnity is to remove the original sin, but in order to remove sin the fundamental problem of the lineage has to be solved. Fallen human beings cannot possibly resolve the problem of their lineage by themselves. That is why the Messiah is necessary. (35-159, 1970.10.13)

What must the True Parents do? They must purify the false lineage that is the root of the satanic world; they must remedy false life and correct the ways of false love. The Bible states: "For whosoever desires to save his life will lose it, and whosoever loses his life for my sake will find it." This paradoxical logic appears because the satanic world must die. (169-37, 1987.10.4)

The Fall was a wrongful marriage that took place in the Garden of Eden. This has been reversed through the True Parents enabling rightful marriage. Hell was abolished by the True Parents clearing up the wrong perpetrated by the false parents and True Parents are now blessing in marriage hundreds of billions of ancestors in the spirit world. Through the foundation of the families of the descendants on earth, centered on true love, not only can they and the ancestors in the spirit world be vertically united, but East and West can also be connected together. (300-222, 1999.3.14)

You should earnestly long for the Parents. You cannot receive salvation without attending the Parents based on their being the motivation for your life, the entirety of your hope and the root of all your ideals and happiness. Have you ever tried offering attendance like that? You should understand this clearly. Hence, you should have the conviction that you are a child who can become eternally one with True Parents, and have it so firmly that you can transcend your consciousness of your own being. Otherwise, it will not work. (30-237, 1970.3.23)

How much must you love me? We are returning to the fundamental question. You should not love while having traces of love of the satanic world on you, while being stained by that love. You must be above that love. What does that mean? You must love me more than you love your mother, father, wife and children who were born in the satanic world, more than you love anybody else.

That is why it is written in the Bible, "He who loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and he who loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me." (Matt.10:37) Jesus made such a conclusion. He said later, "If any man would come after me, let him deny himself and take up his cross and follow me." (Matt. 16:24) He went on to say that we must take up the cross and follow him. He told us to take the cross. Since we have to overcome the power that pulls us in the opposite direction, it is called a cross. We must shed bitter tears. (178-97, 1988.6.1)

Although the Messiah may change your lineage, it is you who must act in order to change it. Without such a standard being established we cannot reach the path of salvation. It is by no means achieved easily, but only through a situation where our life is at stake. The change of lineage is possible only when you fulfill a forty-day period of fasting and prayer or experience a state of death in which you are vomiting blood. (35-160, 1970.10.13)

You must learn from me about how to set up conditions of indemnity. If in the past there had been someone in Japan who wanted to know this, and who had bought this knowledge at the cost of all Japan, Japan might have already unified the world. There is no business in the world better than this. The Bible says, "For what will it profit a man if he gains the whole world and forfeits his life?" (Matt.16:26) That is how precious life is. We must understand the way to set indemnity conditions and revive our precious life. (22-207, 1969.2.4)

6.2. Restoration of lineage is the core of the ideology centered on the returning Lord

Who changes the lineage? It is not something which just anyone can do. You must understand that in order to accomplish this, I have passed through the tearful way of the cross. Because such a standard has been established, all of you without any personal merit are now able to inherit the new tradition through the Blessing. In order to establish the victorious realm of this change of lineage God had to toil for thousands of years and I had to suffer for my entire earthly life. You are the people standing on this foundation. The Blessing is engrafting; your lineage is changed through engrafting. (35-178, 1970.10.13)

In order for our lineage to be identical to God's lineage we must follow the realm of God's heart. Why? Because our root and trunk are different. Therefore, our root and our shoots must be the same. In trying to achieve this we will certainly face the tremendous problem of the change of lineage. You cannot tackle this problem on your own. You need True Parents. (172-55, 1988.1.7)

God snatches people living in the realm of Satan's false love and gives them rebirth through His greater love. People are born to parents of false love; they are born from ancestors of false love into a lineage of false love. Therefore they can only become God's children and God's people after being born again through parents, ancestors and a lineage of true love. The value of the Jesus' precious blood and the ceremony of the Eucharist are symbolic and figurative expressions of the dispensation aiming to make people God's children through the change of lineage. (135-12, 1985.8.20)

When you receive the Blessing in the Unification Church, there are ceremonies for the change of lineage. You went through these ceremonies, didn't you?

The indemnity stick, the three-day ceremony… How complex they are! Satan cannot intervene in these ceremonies. According to the law of God and True Parents these ceremonies open the gates of the Kingdom of Heaven and declare liberation. Thus, Satan, who began to exercise his power at the completion level of the growth stage, has nothing to do with them. Do you, Blessed Couples, understand that you have gone through ceremonies for the change of lineage? People must go through these without fail. (235-215, 1992.9.20)

The change of lineage is an absolute concept necessary in the process of restoration. When you received the Blessing, you went through the ceremony for the change of lineage, didn't you? To change your lineage, you need the holy wine. The making of holy wine requires twenty-one processes of sanctification. You do not know about this, do you? Preparation of the holy wine requires elements that bear fruit in the air, on the earth, and underground; as well as the most precious things from the world of minerals, plants and animals. All in all twenty-one sanctified elements are needed in order to go through this process. All these things must not have any conditions for accusation. These things must be left untouched for seven months without something bad happening to them during that time. You have drunk this holy wine, but it was not produced easily. (215-109, 1991.2.6)

The change of lineage does not feel so real for you, does it? When did you accomplish this? When I am in the position of Abel, you, in the position of Cain, are to unite with me completely. You can become one with me due to this relationship. Without this relationship you would be in great difficulty. (161-153, 1987.1.18)

What special agreement does the Unification Principle contain? You and True Parents put signatures on the agreement that gives you the special right to be God's sons and daughters. Following that, you went through the ceremony of the change of lineage, conducted by True Parents. Once you stand in such a position and receive the title of one who is liberated you can even go to the heavenly kingdom. But when you enter that place you must wear formal clothes. You cannot go to the heavenly kingdom naked. To enter heaven, you must be in formal attire. What is this formal dress? You put this on by arming yourself with the Unification Principle and practicing it in your life. You have received all the privileges. There is nothing like this in the secular world. (214-71, 1991.2.1)

How can you connect to God's heart? You cannot do it on a theoretical basis. You can be connected only through the lineage. Did you inherit the lineage of God's heart? You did not understand until now. That is why before you receive the Blessing there is a ceremony for the change of lineage. At that time, you must enter into a state of self-effacement in which you have nothing. You must

assume the position of someone without a body of his own and have the conviction that enables you to say, "I am the starting point from which all my descendants will inherit the flesh and blood of the True Parents." (180-159, 1988.8.22)

When you received the Blessing you also attended the ceremony for the change of lineage, didn't you? Without understanding anything you just followed my instructions, but this is actually not so simple. History has been in chaos because Jesus could not consummate a conjugal relationship. If we look from the viewpoint of heart at the establishment of one couple who were supposed to serve this purpose, we can understand that if the lineage is stained after the Blessing a serious problem results. This is not simply a matter of what kind of punishment to impose. Adam and Eve fell when they were still immature but God nevertheless expelled them from the Garden of Eden. If a person commits such a sin after he is placed on the level of perfection of heart, there is nothing that can be said. God does not even want to see the backs of such people. I feel the same way. (198-220, 1990.2.3)

You all went through the ceremony of change of lineage when you received the Blessing, didn't you? Next, you must become completely different. Would it be possible had the True Parents not appeared? What a difficult course has unfolded since the creation of the world! You should be grateful just for the fact that the True Parents have appeared, but it is even more amazing that you have received the Blessing from them. Their tradition is the tradition of lineage. It comprises true love, true life and true lineage. You must always keep this in mind. (216-36, 1991.3.3)

What is the significance of Blessed Families? Satan cannot dominate Blessed Families. If you believe in me completely and stand firm in the conviction that you belong to the True Parents, then, no matter which country you are in, Satan will not be able to invade you. Why is this so? It is because you are connected to the realm of True Parents' heart in which your lineage has been changed. That is why Satan cannot meddle with you from this point on. (149-53, 1986.11.2)

Satan says, "I fell and destroyed Your lineage completely, so in order for You and Your son to enter the heavenly kingdom, You need to change his lineage, don't you? His roots must be connected to Your lineage… If You are the Subject of life then Adam should receive the seed of life from You and connect it to Eve, so that it can become the root. They should achieve this original standard to stand in the position of Your kin. In order to do this, You should change and rebuild the lineage of people who have been related to me by blood, otherwise they cannot enter Heaven. Those people who are rooted in Adam are to enter the heavenly kingdom. Can someone whose root is in the archangel go in? No, he cannot!" Do you understand what this means? (197-286, 1990.1.20)

The stunning and bitter fact is that human beings are descended from the Fall. They changed their lineage, thus inheriting a mortifying and tragic destiny. In order to be rid of this inherited destiny, they must do everything in their might to become liberated sons and daughters, who can call God, "Father," without hesitation. Are you confident to do that? Do you think I have the confidence to call God "Father"? Yes, I do. (197-115, 1990.1.7)

On the path of restoration we should go up from the age of the servant of servants, through the age of the servant, the age of the adopted child to the age of the direct lineage. However, can you complete the course from the age of the servant of servants, through the age of the servant and the age of the adopted child and be connected to the age of direct lineage? Connecting to the age of direct lineage cannot be done just like that. According to the Principle, you are required to go through the foundation of faith and foundation of substance in order to welcome the Messiah. The Messiah is the true son of God. The lineage of an adopted son and that of a true son are different. This is why we need a change of lineage. (55-192, 1972.5.9)

Fallen people must change their lineage. This is the fundamental point. The relationship between God and humankind is that of parent and child, but this fact remained unknown. That is why history could not be disentangled and why God's providence was not understood until now. Change of lineage must take place in each of the realms of the individual, family, people, nation and world. For this, the Messiah must come. The true lineage emerges with the coming of the True Parents. Unless the Parents appear, the fallen lineage remains unchanged. Individuals must take responsibility for this. Each person must do this work and overcome everything. But since people have not been aware of this, the Messiah who can understand everything had to come and accomplish these things on everyone's behalf. (161-147, 1987.1.18)

Fallen humankind had a wrong beginning. That is why it has to return to God. Where should humankind return? Back to the starting point. Since human beings began from false parents, they must go back and make a new beginning from the True Parents. How serious this is! You must inherit God's love, life and lineage. Thus, when you received the Blessing you went through the ceremony to change the lineage, didn't you? You must believe in this more than in your own life. Do not think of it as just another ritual of the Unification Church or just another religious ceremony. This ceremony is like the injection of medicine that revives a dead person. It is a detoxifying injection. (216-107, 1991.3.9)

Looking at biblical history, we see that Jacob, united in heart with his mother, deceived his father in order to receive his blessing. Then, as we look at the history surrounding Tamar, we see that

despite her immoral actions Jesus was born from Judah's tribe. What does this mean? These things occurred because the issue here is the change of lineage. The fallen lineage must be purified.

Only Christianity has acknowledged the importance of lineage, and considered the purification of lineage to be part of its core teaching. Therefore we can conclude that since other religions do not have such a history, they should follow Christianity. So I could not ignore Christianity if I take into account the issue of the change of lineage. I could not ignore Christianity, as it inherited the ideology of the chosen people. If I were advocating that all religions were the same, why would I have received persecution? Do you understand what I am talking about? This teaching is the core ideology. You must clearly understand this. (227-349, 1992.2.16)

CHAPTER THREE

The Formula for Indemnification and Restoration

Section 1. The Works of Rebecca, Tamar and Mary from the Viewpoint of the Restoration of Motherhood

1.1. The Fall of Eve, and Rebecca's and Tamar's deceptions

The Fall began from the womb of the mother. Therefore, restoration must take place in the mother's womb. That became the origin and the starting point of evil, so we must return to that original point in restoration as well. Thus, God set up two brothers through whom to conduct the dispensation to restore the right of the eldest son. In other words, Cain, the firstborn, had to come down to the position of Abel, and Abel had to rise up to the position of Cain, who is the eldest son. However, Cain ultimately killed Abel. This act was a repetition of the act of the Fall at the time of Adam and Eve. Adam, represented by Abel, was again dominated by the archangel, and thus Adam's position was not restored. (55-109, 1972.4.1)

When Eve fell, whom did she deceive? She deceived God. Without God knowing, without consulting God, she fell when she denied God on her own. Adam was her husband as well as the son of God. Since Eve fell by denying the father and son, Adam was lost. In order to indemnify and restore what had occurred, God raised up Rebecca. Rebecca had to take God's blessing from the father, Isaac, who represented God, and their son, Esau, who stood in place of Adam, without their knowledge. To reverse what had already occurred, Rebecca came to offer the condition, through Jacob, of restoring the birthright of the eldest son. This was merely a conditional offering. Rebecca and Jacob achieved this conditionally, not yet fulfilling substantial restoration. (114-17, 1981.5.14)

Since an archangel had tempted Eve, in the process of restoration the Eve figure has to tempt the archangelic figure to fulfill God's purpose. Restoration through indemnity has to be carried out in this way. That is why Tamar had a relationship with her father-in-law. He promised that he would give her a kid goat as payment for having a sexual relationship with him. However, Tamar asked for and received his seal, string and cane, three things that would clearly mark his identity. She kept these things and held on to them for this purpose: "To prove who the father of the child I

will bear is, I will keep these even if I die." (55-305, 1972.5.9)

Don't Mary and Eve resemble each other? In the same way that Eve deceived her future husband, and elder brother, Adam, and God, her Father, Tamar also followed the same pattern. The deception of their future husbands, father-in-laws, husbands, brothers and all siblings, was in each case the indemnity that corresponded to Eve's actions. The actions of Eve, Tamar and Mary closely resemble each other. (213-309, 1991.1.21)

Eve deceived three men. Rebecca also deceived three men. She deceived God, her husband, and her son. Three men are always deceived. Tamar also deceived three men: her father-in-law, and his first and second sons. Whom did Mary deceive? God, her father, and her future husband. It is the same pattern. Eve deceived her father, her brother, and her future husband. Adam was her elder brother, and, at the same time, her future husband. It is the same pattern. (215-98, 1991.2.6)

In the first chapter of the Gospel of Matthew, four great women appear. There appear Bathsheba and Tamar. Next, the harlot Rahab appears and then Ruth. Four great women who had illicit relationships. They all seemed to be women of loose morals. They had husbands, but they also had relationships with other men. Were they not then, loose women? You should read the Bible very well at least once. Jesus could not be born to a lawful wife. (139-311, 1986.1.31)

The Bible is a sacred scripture, but it contains many things that are difficult to accept. Isn't that so? How could it be that Jacob and Rebecca united to deceive his brother Esau and his father Isaac, in order to receive the blessing? Why did Tamar have a relationship with her father-in-law, and bear Perez and Zerah? Why could the blessing come to the tribe of Judah, under Perez and Zerah? The question is why are there issues that cannot be accepted from a human moral viewpoint?

In the first chapter of the Gospel of Matthew, four great women who had illicit relationships: Tamar, Bathsheba, Rahab and Ruth, are listed in the genealogy of Jesus. This gospel is the equivalent of Genesis, but the question is, why do the first pages of the New Testament focus on these women, who are stained and impure? Without understanding the Principle view of the Fall, there is no way to understand this. It has remained a mystery. By searching throughout my life, however, I have been able to answer these questions for the first time. (211-137, 1990.12.30)

1.2. Fundamental restoration in the womb, through Tamar

In the cases of both Cain and Abel, and Esau and Jacob, the brothers were supposed to exchange positions after their birth. To achieve this, the cooperation between mother and child was always necessary. Eve protected Abel. In

the case of Esau and Jacob, Rebecca was on Jacob's side, and helped him through her acts of deception. Nevertheless, no one knows why God still granted the blessing to them. Jacob was born as a twin and later restored the position of the right of the eldest son. Yet this still didn't restore the lineage. Then at the time of the birth of Perez and Zerah, when they were about to emerge from Tamar's womb, they fought each other and switched positions. The second child pushed aside the first child in order to be born first. You should understand the deep significance of these actions that signify moving closer to the lineal standard of the original parents. (120-167, 1982.10.13)

God said to Rebecca, "Two nations are in your womb, and two peoples, born of you, shall be divided;" (Gen. 25:23). This means that her two sons would form the roots of two separate nations, one being the heavenly nation and the other Satan's nation. God fought there to restore His lineage through three generations. Through struggling and reversing positions within the womb a condition of inheriting the lineage would be made. Jacob, through three generations, gained an external victory, but the basis for the internal victory was created by Perez, who was born of Tamar. This is the principle of restoration. (36-251, 1970.12.6)

When we consider the actions of Tamar, she risked her own life in order to fulfill the providence of God. Father also risked his life in the same way. Jacob fought with the angel, risking his life. Even though his thighbone was broken, he did not let go of the angel all through the night. What does that signify? The thighbone has to be struck. Adultery was committed using the thighbone in a wrongful way, wasn't it? Thus, the Unification Church holds the indemnity stick ceremony after the Blessing. What is that ceremony for? Where do you strike? The lower part of the body is hit. Wasn't that the area that was misused? Why would I suggest such a thing? We have no choice in this matter. (214-225, 1991.2.2)

In contrast to the past, where the archangel tempted the woman, Tamar tempted her father-in-law in order to fulfill the heavenly mandate and inherit the ideal of Abraham. She was ready to sacrifice herself even if she was to become fertilizer for the field or even if she was stoned to death. In those days, the Jewish law dictated that if a widow conceived a child, she must be stoned to death, but she was prepared for that. Do you understand what that means? She made an absolute determination, "To maintain the lineage of Judah is my desire, and this is the only way to do it. If you kill me, so be it." She went forward ready to die. This providential work of Tamar, in which she was prepared to die as an offering, was the amazing providential accomplishment of one woman. (110-35, 1980.11.8)

Jesus' ancestors came through Tamar. This is an amazing reality. When we consider this phenomenon, the Divine

Principle's view of the Fall can be understood. Why did God have to carry out such a dispensation? Humankind was stained in the womb, so Tamar acted to set up a point to change the lineage, starting from the womb. Tamar determined to act in such a fateful situation. (110-35, 1980.11.8)

Through their mother Tamar, the elder brother and the younger brother changed positions within the womb for the first time in history. We can understand that this woman Tamar, who was compelled to act against Judaic law, corrected the history of the birthright for the first time, during Judah's time. From this point, Satan cannot invade those who inherit this tradition of Tamar's victory. Neither can Satan invade those who inherit and live according to the historical tradition of Tamar, which was based on heart, and who inherit and believe in the tradition of the tribe of Judah. Based on this reversal of positions, the heavenly tradition could be passed on. (72-139, 1974.6.2)

Tamar was a person who recognized the importance of God's lineage, that is, the blessing. She was a historic, representative woman who was prepared to risk anything to pass on this lineage. Her position was the same as the position of Eve. Although Eve should have inherited God's lineage directly from Him as the mother of humankind, she in fact neglected and destroyed this inheritance. In order to restore this, a woman who would surpass Eve had to appear. A woman who could single-mindedly think that continuing the lineage that is blessed by God is more precious than her own life had to appear. Tamar was that woman. (58-53, 1972.6.6)

Judah was Tamar's father-in-law, representing the father. Tamar conceived a son through her father-in-law as a result of the "father" and daughter uniting, while also representing the positions of God and Eve. According to Genesis, Chapter 38, Judah had three sons, and Tamar was the wife of the first son. Her husband died, and the Jewish custom was that she had to bear a son by the second brother, but he also passed away, and the third son was too young. As Tamar believed that maintaining the restored lineage of God was the most important thing, she had to resort to the final means of conceiving a child through Judah, her father-in-law. At that moment, she had to forget her pride, and was prepared to even sacrifice her life. She put on the clothes of a prostitute, sat on the road where her father-in-law would pass, tempted Judah, who was going to the farm, and had a relationship with him. (55-114, 1972.4.1)

Tamar put her life on the line by having a relationship with her father-in-law. She might have been stoned to death immediately after that, or perhaps the two families might have perished. In such circumstances, she abandoned her honor and dignity. Her husband had died, so she received her husband's younger brother, who also died. The

third son was too young and the lineage blessed by God could not be passed on through him. Thus, Tamar pledged to continue the blessed lineage by putting aside her dignity and honor, even if it meant sacrificing her life. Tamar's sacrificial heart is precious. (47-124, 1971.8.22)

When we look at the circumstances of Esau and Jacob's birth, we see that they fought within Rebecca's womb, but Esau, who was born first, was on Satan's side. Jacob stole the blessing of the first son after he grew up. However, when Perez and Zerah fought in Tamar's womb, Perez reversed the position of the firstborn son. The womb of the mother is the place from which a son or daughter is born, so this exchange of positions was made at the very source of life. The positions were changed not after birth, but within the womb. (43-199, 1971.4.30)

In these providential circumstances, Satan could not say to a son whose position had been switched within the womb and then born first, "You're my son!" If his position had not been switched in the womb and if he was born first, he would have been on Satan's side. Since the positions were switched within the womb and he was born first, he was born on God's side. Fighting within Tamar's womb, Perez pushed away Zerah and was born first, so he could claim the birthright of the firstborn son. Thus, he was the firstborn son from birth. Although Perez should have been the second son, he was born in the position of the firstborn son. We can say that the one on the side of goodness was born first. (43-199, 1971.4.30)

Since God's blessing is so precious, it is of utmost importance to bequeath the tradition of the chosen people of God. This is the reason the lineage had to be maintained. Tamar's second husband had died, however, and he had no suitable brothers left. In the Jewish tradition, if the elder brother died, the younger brother took the wife of the elder brother as his own wife, but the second son had also died. Thus, in order to continue the lineage, she resorted to dressing as a prostitute so as to deceive her father-in-law, and to conceive a child. Do you understand the meaning of this? What was stolen must be won back from the satanic world. Thus, the father-in-law represented the husband – the elder brother. In order to stand such a position, the right of the eldest son….Tamar risked her life to pass on the blessings of Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and Judah, these four generations. (227-347, 1992.2.16)

Satan sowed his seeds in the womb of a woman. Thus, Perez and Zerah were born as twins. Two seeds were sown in one womb. That is why they were twins. Perez and Zerah were the two sons to be born from Tamar's womb, but when the first son tried to come out and stuck his hand out, a red string was tied around it. This signifies that, at the time of the Second Coming of the Lord, a dictator who represents all the power of the communist world will appear first. Thus, during World War II, a dictator like Hit-

ler appeared and, in the USSR, Stalin appeared. Stalin died in 1953. China and the Soviet Union parted ways from that time on. He died three years after I was freed from prison in North Korea. None of this history is a coincidence. (227-349, 1992.2.16)

1.3. The mission of Mary in the course of Jesus

Tamar bore a son after having relationships with several men. This was not the ideal. Thus, the son represented an adopted son. Therefore, a woman who had inherited the faith and determination of Tamar but who could receive God's calling as a virgin, with devotion, was needed. A virgin with these qualities was needed. This was Mary. (43-201, 1971.4.30)

Mary, at her time, was a woman who pursued the will of God with more fervor than anyone, risking her own life. She was a woman who had the resolve and loyalty of Tamar and boldly faced any type of danger in order to continue the precious lineage of God. When the archangel Gabriel appeared and announced to her that she would soon conceive, Mary replied, "How can this be, since I do not know a man?" When the angel again said, "For with God, nothing will be impossible," she replied, "Behold the maidservant of the Lord! Let it be done unto me according to your word." (Lk. 1:34-38) (35-222, 1970.10.19)

How was the birth of Jesus brought about? The lineage was purified and then Jesus could appear.

Esau and Jacob were born as twins, going through the period of being brothers, and finally restoring the birthright of the firstborn son. Later, there was the unprecedented struggle of Perez and Zerah in Tamar's womb, to change positions, and they changed the lineage in the womb. As he pushed aside his elder brother who would have been born first and came out as the firstborn son, he was named Perez. The midwife tied a red string around the hand of the "elder" Zerah, when his hand appeared from Tamar's womb. This was to become a sign that communism would arise before the victorious Lord of this world appeared in the future. If we cannot restore the right of the eldest son, a unified world cannot be created. (140-149, 1986.2.9)

Mary, the fiancée of Joseph, was in a position similar to Tamar's. Didn't Mary deceive her mother and father? She deceived her future husband Joseph in order to conceive a child. Adam and Eve fell in this same manner, by deceit. This is how the principle of restoration through indemnity works. As Adam and Eve transgressed heavenly law during their engagement period, so Mary, following the way of Tamar, had to inherit the original work of God in her womb. Understanding the precious value of the blessed lineage of God, Mary had to go through this at the risk of her life. According to the Jewish law, an unmarried woman who conceived a child was to be stoned to death. All women should

be prepared to risk their lives for the providence. (211-101, 1990.12.29)

Mary, who was engaged to Joseph, was in a position similar to Eve's. When Adam and Eve fell, they were in the position of a couple engaged to be married. Eve fell while engaged, so in order to indemnify and restore this, Mary had to inherit the traditions of Rebecca and Tamar. She was able to pass on the lineage of God; this signified the standard of a woman who had purified the lineage. (139-303, 1986.1.31)

Mary, who had to deceive Joseph and her family in this way, based on the principle of restoration through indemnity, should have been stoned to death according to the law of that time. Although she should have been stoned to death, Jesus, who had already been conceived, had to be protected, so God conveyed a message to Joseph; "Joseph!…Do not fear to take Mary as your wife, for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Spirit."(Matt.1:20) Joseph had no choice but to bring Mary into his house. (139-305, 1986.1.31)

Because human beings inherited the blood of the archangel, Jesus was conceived through a person who stood in the position of the archangel. What does it mean to say conceived through the Holy Spirit? Such inadequate explanations should not hold sway. The principle of restoration through indemnity explains it as it is. If a person in the position of the archangel can be raised up, and can become an absolutely unchanging, loyal subject on God's side, especially loved by Him, then Satan will have to immediately leave his position as the archangel. Thus, Jesus was born through a person in the archangelic position on God's side. In this way, Jesus was born as the firstborn son. The right of the fallen eldest son was restored and purified into the new lineage, and Jesus was born with the right of the eldest son on God's side. Therefore, those who believe in Jesus are reborn through the love of God, with God as their center. Through this, their lineage is different from Satan's. (143-104, 1986.3.16)

When they were engaged, Joseph and Mary were in the same position as Adam and Eve in their engagement period. Thus, God had to take Mary away from her relationship as Joseph's fiancée. This was to restore the loss of Eve. Then, whose position would Joseph be in? He would be in the position of the archangel. Joseph should originally have been in the position of Adam. Yet, how was it that Joseph was in the archangel's position? As he was descended from the Fall, his seed, the root, was different from Adam's. Joseph was carrying the fallen seed. That had to be changed and brought over to God's side. Where should this seed come from? It must come from God. (36-245, 1970.12.6)

Children of the direct lineage of God will only appear if, in the fallen

world, a person in a position similar to Adam can mature and become a representative of the archangelic position on God's side, inherit the seed of the archangel on God's side and rise to the ideal of the original seed. Therefore, we can ask who the father of Jesus was. The father was not Joseph. It was someone in the realm of the archangel on God's side, not the realm of the fallen archangel. However, God Himself could not have come down to create a baby. Satan is the archangel, isn't he? It must have been someone on the level of the archangel, but greater than the fallen archangel, who could be a loyal subject on heaven's side. Satan could not accuse a person in this position. The one who comes with the authority of God's son in the realm of the heart, and whom Satan cannot accuse, is the Messiah. It is very complicated. This is the way a firstborn son who could receive the first love of God was born for the first time on earth. (169-194, 1987.10.31)

In order for Jesus to undergo the course in which he could indemnify all of the disordered events of providential history, he needed the absolute support of his mother. At the wedding in Cana, Galilee, when Jesus' mother told him they had run out of wine, he said, "O woman, what have you to do with me?"(John 2:4) Was he in a good mood when he said this? He snapped at her, and meant, "What foolish things are you talking about at the wedding of relatives? You haven't even done your duty as a mother!" You can understand this, can't you? (139-307, 1986.1.31)

As Jesus was in an official public position, and if he had married, it would have been according to the heavenly law and principles. He would not have behaved like a man who happens to meet some woman and lives with her. He had to keep in mind the direction history was moving and the providential age. For the purposes of restoration through indemnity, this was absolutely necessary. Jesus could not marry because these requirements were not met. (139-307, 1986.1.31)

In what manner did Jesus, who had right of kingship over all kings, enter the world? He came inheriting the victorious tradition by which the lineage had been changed. That is why when he was conceived in Mary's womb Satan could not say, "That is my son." Mary conceived Jesus on the national-level foundation that had been inherited from the historical tradition of heart left by Tamar. Through this, Mary was able to restore through indemnity Eve's failure and to stand in the position of having brought forth fruit, which had been the hope of women throughout history. Since Jesus' conception took place based on the completed restoration of the right of the eldest son, from the time of his conception Satan could not claim him as his own. At the time of Tamar, Perez could not claim to be the firstborn son on God's side while he was in the womb, but only after his birth. (139-309, 1986.1.31)

How does Jesus differ from people like Sakhya Muni of Buddhism, Confucius of Confucianism or Mohammed of Islam? Throughout history, Jesus is the only person who was born on the foundation of a purified lineage. That is the difference. How are Sakhya Muni and Jesus different? How is he different from Confucius? How is he different from Mohammed? Jesus is different from Buddha and Mohammed in that he was born from a purified lineage. This is the special quality of the Messiah. That is the difference. As the providence of the purification of the lineage developed within history, Israel became the starting point of Christianity, centered on Jesus. This is how he stood in the position of the True Father. (169-194, 1987.10.31)

Jesus declared to all the people, "Love me more than anyone else!" "Anyone else" refers to love in the fallen world. The fallen world practices the norm of fallen love. We must transcend this norm. Based on the family, we must love God more than our own mother and father; we must live for the sake of the Messiah, the original parents, and love Jesus more than our own wife or husband. What does that mean? In accordance with the principle of restoration through indemnity, this norm was established in which God's love, which overcomes satanic love, could manifest itself for the first time. This was what Jesus declared. (144-58, 1986.4.8)

The Blessing of marriage is not just the coming together of two people, a man and woman. Jesus had to stand on the foundation of the unified Cain – Abel relationship between the two families and tribes of Zechariah and Joseph. This was the basis needed for Jesus' marriage. However, he died and was unable to accomplish this. The Blessing is to indemnify and restore this. Jesus and Joseph's family signifies the position of Abel. Zechariah's family signifies the position of Cain. (146-342, 1986.8.10)

The relationship between Jesus and John the Baptist was similar to that between Cain and Abel. Jesus and John the Baptist were brothers. This has not been revealed before, but they were brothers. John the Baptist was born from the first wife, and Jesus was born from the second wife. He could not have been born from the first wife. That is why in the Last Days, sexual immorality has become prevalent. The trend of women selling their bodies is spreading. Women must be liberated. It cannot be done through the first husband. In the Last Days, outstanding people can be born to wanton women, to streetwalkers. Do you understand?

In the fallen world, the concubine snatches love. This is the age when the kept mistress can have even greater power than the legal wife. Why is that so? The first relationship represents Cain's love, and the second represents love from God's side, so God works through the second figure. That is why, for example, Joseph and Jesus were born from second wives. (169-194, 1987.10.31)

Section 2. The Historical Indemnity Course of True Father

2.1. What our attitude should be in following the course of indemnity

Forty years ago, I said that in forty years time, such and such time would occur. At the time, I was a king of beggars. I had no clothing, so I wore Korean traditional trousers made of double layers of fabric. In order to wear them carefully I dyed both the outer and inner sides blue separately. I had no jacket, so I wore green fatigues from the U.S. military, and sports shoes given to me by a Japanese person. I went around wearing clothes from three countries like that. Going around looking like that, I still said, "This is all for restoration through indemnity. In order to accomplish that I will walk around wearing rags from America, rags from Korea, and rags from Japan." How wonderful that is! (164-61, 1987.5.3)

Our church has followed the way of restoration through indemnity. In order to indemnify and restore everything, I have been through indescribable circumstances, in order to create the foundation that we have now. Without being destroyed, without being caught by Satan's hooks, I have endured and prevailed. For whom was the foundation made? It was not made for me, but for the sake of humankind. This foundation should not remain as a possession of the Unification Church. It is for the sake of humanity. The Unification Church must disappear in the future. All people must come under one sovereignty. All religions desire this. (161-86, 1987.1.2)

What began with Jacob, the pioneer of the victorious realm of Israel, and continued through the history of Christian culture, created a foundation that took 4,000 years to build; yet it ended in failure. As I had to restore this all within my lifetime, and since I could not spend 400 years on it I had to reverse and restore everything through indemnity within 40 years, no matter how much humiliation I had to endure. That was the forty-year wilderness course. (149-59, 1986.11.2)

The history of Israel is the four-thousand-year history from Jacob to Jesus that continues until today. If this four-thousand-year history cannot be restored through indemnity in forty years, it will be washed away. All will be destroyed. The four thousand years of history must be compressed into forty years, and everything must be indemnified. The entire world will oppose me. Not even one country will support me. Beginning with Judaism, Christianity, America, the communists and everyone have opposed me. (148-288, 1986.10.25)

The course of Israel was one of restoration through indemnity. All they had to do was follow Moses. But Moses had to struggle to take responsibility for the life and death of the six hundred thousand, while embracing heaven and earth. What a grievous fact it is that Moses had to fast and pray for forty days and nights on Mt.

Sinai, in order to receive the tablets of stone! Was Moses in a comfortable position? And what about you? So far you've been fooling around like scamps… You came to live in a prominent family, but you know neither the history of this family, nor what it is doing; you know nothing! You just eat your meals, always worrying about how others look at you. You should feel ashamed. (140-197, 1986.2.9)

If you look at a person whose life was tough, his feet and hands are big, but if you look at my hands and feet, you would say that I was not meant for suffering. You would say that a person who was born with such a precious body should not suffer. You would find it ironic that a person, who shouldn't have suffered, has actually suffered so much. That is because you don't know about restoration through indemnity. (140-186, 1986.2.9)

You are all fakes. Do you think it's easy to become the real thing? You should know that you have to go in and out of the blast furnace hundreds of times. When you become a father who has to send his son or daughter to the place of execution for the sake of restoration through indemnity in order to restore the realm of heart, you cannot do this without tears. It was exactly so with Abraham. In order to pioneer the heavenly way, to liberate God and enter His realm of love, you can't just stay as you are. The foundation that you are standing on now did not come about by coincidence. The Unification Church has been built through a course that required tears of bitterness, a course stained with blood and tears. If you learn about this foundation, you will know that you cannot sit here without tears; you cannot sit here without deeply repenting. (169-131, 1987.10.29)

I have undergone hardships throughout my life, but I never intended to indemnify history so that I could obtain a high position with many luxuries. I gave up the blessings that I could have enjoyed. I want to suffer together with you and rise to the high position where I can be respected by the whole nation together with you. You must know that my hope is to see the day of joy when this nation is liberated. (181-66, 1988.8.28)

Those who enter prison have feelings of desperation and discouragement from the moment they enter, but I had considerable interest in what kind of results would come after my life in prison. You have all learned about restoration through indemnity, so I think you understand. What was going to happen after I surmounted each obstacle? The pain I was going through then was not the problem, but I would always think about what new historical gift might come after the pain. This is still fresh in my memory. (133-300, 1985.1.1)

Through the sin of our first ancestors, who could not fulfill their portion of responsibility, the domain of Satan's love expanded to the edge of the gates of heaven, creating a deep abyss of death. That is why I am going beyond the national level in the course

of restoration through indemnity, even though the whole world is against me. Cain and Abel must achieve restoration through indemnity on the foundation of the indemnity conditions on the worldwide level. This is where the United States, centered on the Christian cultural realm of the democratic world, should completely unite with the original line of equilibrium, which is the realm of the direct dominion. (137-249, 1986.1.3)

The way of restoration through indemnity is a serious one. Truly, what was lost will be restored in forty years. If Christianity and America had become one forty years ago, if they had embraced Korea and supported the Unification Church, the restoration of the world would have been accomplished within seven years. Now it has taken me forty years to resolve that problem. For forty years I have been dragging families along in order to restore through indemnity the four-thousand-year history of re-indemnification from Jacob to the era of the Second Advent.

I have a mission, a calling that obliges me to unite everyone and clear up all the problems even if the cost is tremendous hardship or imprisonment. Therefore, I have staked my life and have been fighting my way through, while you scoundrels, even though you were on such a historical path, have been thinking only about yourselves, fooling around the way you please and doing all kinds of things. You must repent. From now on, I will not meet such people. From now on there will be the rule of law. (137-38, 1986.1.1)

If I had complained about going the way of indemnity, I would have disappeared long ago. The reason I haven't disappeared is because I know well what the way of restoration through indemnity is like. On the path of indemnity, I must receive worldwide persecution. Every single person, that is, all five billion people of the world, may individually oppose me, one by one; nevertheless, I must have the courage to do more than each one of them so that I will not be defeated. Otherwise, I will not succeed. (138-134, 1986.1.19)

Immediately after World War II, the world could have restored the birthright of right of the eldest son. If Christianity had united with the founder of the Unification Church, this past forty-year course would not have occurred. Communism would have already disappeared. If they had only listened to me, Korea would not have been divided. If the spiritual groups centered on Christianity had all listened to what I said….

However, all the groups which had been prepared to restore the Garden of Eden were led to a fate like that of John the Baptist, through their secular way of thinking. After the liberation of Korea the Unification Church faced opposition. To take charge of this situation, we have been restoring, through indemnity over a period of 40 years, the 2,000-year history of Christianity and the 4,000 years of history since Jacob that were repeated. (138-214, 1986.1.21)

I am accomplishing restoration through indemnity by myself. The world is not aware of this. By this method, restoring the individual, restoring the family… I have been continuing. The satanic world bears fruit according to the seeds it has sown. If the Messiah does not come to this world to save it, there is no way to for it to be saved. Had only people become one with me right after the liberation of Korea, all Cains on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, ethnic people, nation and the world could have been restored through indemnity over a seven-year course. Because of their disbelief, however, this course was prolonged for forty years. (138-216, 1986.1.21)

Facing the opposition of Christianity, in America and Korea, I stood in the position of a person with no nation. I had no country. Since I had no country I also had no people, no tribe, and no family. Thus, I was like an orphan. From this point, everything had to be restored within forty years, in order to stand on the foundation of spiritual territory on the national and worldwide level. However, just having spiritual territory was not enough. I had to inherit the foundation of the spiritual territory from the realm of the Christian culture and restore the substantial cultural realm on the national level. Upon that foundation, I had to restore through indemnity the substantial realm of the Christian culture on the worldwide level. (143-176, 1986.3.18)

The history of Israel began from the time of Jacob. The victorious tradition and history known as Israel has led to a unified realm being built through the Christian culture on a worldwide level. This realm, however, was divided by its opposition towards the Second Advent, with the result that four thousand years must again be restored through indemnity in forty years. If this cannot be accomplished in forty years, the problem will increase. These forty years of recent history represent a period of great transition. Satan should have retreated completely, immediately after World War II, when he was feeling the greatest threat; however, as everything stood in the position of being on Satan's side, Heaven retreated completely. Thus, Satan ruled the world overall and began to vilify the Unification Church, which stood on God's side. (161-220, 1987.2.15)

The course of separation from Satan through internal suffering begins from the position of servant of servants. Once all vertical indemnity conditions required by the satanic world are set, there is no remaining condition for Satan to attack you no matter how much he wants to. Thus, I have brought about restoration through indemnity starting in the position of being treated as a servant of servants, then as a servant, adopted child, and child by a concubine. Next, the direct son has to be restored, then the mother, followed by Adam. It is only after the conditions are set that enable man and woman to say that they have risen to the highest position as a man

and the highest position as a woman, can they rise to the position of parents. They cannot just go up automatically. Concrete internal indemnity conditions must be made. (161-208, 1987.2.4)

To achieve restoration, we must go forward with our own firm determination, no matter how much others may interfere. Whatever paths others may take, we have to be busy with our own path. Whatever others may say behind our backs, we have no time to worry about this. There is no time to sleep at night. We don't have the spare time to sit comfortably and eat. Unless we have that kind of desperate heart, we cannot go the way of restoration. (22-211, 1969.2.4)

I have confronted Satan in hundreds and even thousands of life-and-death situations. I have never compromised the standard I set, even when unspeakably difficult circumstances surged against me repeatedly like waves. Even if my legs break, or an eyeball comes out, or my head falls off, I will not depart from the standard of heart I resolved to maintain at the outset. Thus, as long as I do not die, I will win. (22-184, 1968.2.2)

Throughout my life, I have fought with my life on the line. In the ordinary world, people can avoid pain and suffering, but I cannot. It is not something I can overcome with just physical power or by force of arms. Unless I follow the heavenly principles and laws, I cannot avoid the arrows that come from all directions. Such a battle might be even more difficult than when God created heaven and earth. You cannot, even in your dreams, imagine how I have paid indemnity in this way and built up an internal foundation. The fact that I achieved a transition point based on such a foundation can be called a cosmic victory. (35-166, 1970.10.13)

If I were to die right now, my concern would be to know who on this earth could love God as I have done, and love humanity as I have done. In that sense, I have to live for a long time. You must know that I am watching all of you, hoping desperately that such a person will quickly appear from amongst you. If God were to bless Rev. Moon, the best present and blessing God could give me would be such a person. If a person were to appear now, who could love God, who has been betrayed and suffered until today, more than I have done, and could work harder than I have done in order to liberate humankind, today would be a day of glory. (92-293, 1977.4.18)

One spiritualist wept profusely after praying about whether I was genuine or a fake. He began crying bitterly without knowing why. He cried for one day, two days, every day. Why was that? In order to know me, you must experience this kind of agonized heart. Without this, you cannot understand me. Should someone say one word about me, I will burst into tears with one thousand years of grief in my bosom; but who knows such circumstances as mine? If I had not known God, I would not have been slan-

dered in that way. Because of my "crime" of knowing God too well… How sad it is for God who can only place His trust in me. In twenty years I had to restore through indemnity the entangled history of two thousand years. Is that easy? Can we easily speak about it? (137-183, 1986.1.1)

Through the principle of indemnity, we must liberate God from all of the sorrowful circumstances, pain, and suffering that He endured throughout history. This is how we understand what un-filial children we have been and how much suffering we have caused God by our misdeeds. This is how we become true filial children who can attend their Parent with the filial piety that outdoes our past lack of filial piety. Thus, in serving God, we must understand the toils of our Parent who sacrificed everything and made such effort through history. Step by step, gradually, we have come into the age where we can clear away past mistakes. So we must attend God, and at least from today, take upon ourselves the hardships of God, so that He can be completely liberated. (144-274, 1986.4.25)

What does the savior come to do? He does not come for the sake of politics. Some Christians say that when the Lord comes, the Christians will be lifted up into the air, and those left on earth will all perish. But that is not so. It is not like that. They say he will come to judge, but the savior is not someone who comes to judge. He is the son of God, and, at the same time, he comes as the parent of humankind. Will someone who comes as the parent of humanity, with the heart of the parents, look at a sick son or daughter, groaning on the brink of death, and abandon them, saying, "You go to hell!"? Even if parents in this fallen world see the miserable scene of their own child being about to die, they would cry themselves hoarse and want to do anything to save their child's life, even at the cost of their own. That is how parents are, so how much more would the savior, who has the original parent's heart be determined to do? He cannot think of such a thing as judging people. Don't you think so? (222-150, 1991.11.3)

What do you think? If God and I were to meet, would we meet laughing, or would we be crying? Try to think about it. I think I would faint. I wish I could shed tears, but I don't have the face to do that. I wish I could die but I don't have the face to do that either; that is why I would just faint. I am embarrassed. Even though I've done my best for forty years, there is nothing I can be proud of. I am just ashamed. That is how I feel. (193-77, 1989.8.20)

It is fortunate that Rev. Moon of the Unification Church came into this world. You have no idea how hard it has been to untangle all the intricacies and all the grief of human history that have lasted for one and a half million years. That wretched history has been rolling on without stopping, so the question is who will pave the way to turn it back

to Heaven? Behind the few years of history of the Unification Church stretches a human history of thousands of years. History, which spans millions of years, is being resolved in cohesion with the history of our church. You must not forget that the Unification Church has embraced the bitterness of indemnity to restore the sorrowful history. (143-36, 1986.3.15)

As I was born on earth as a human being, I have loved all of the original creation on this earth as God does. I have loved the animals and I have loved humankind as God has. Thus, I was able to become His partner in love. We came from God and return to God. He wishes all of you to become billions of times greater than Him during your lifetime. Thus, the truth is that God wishes you to return to Him as children who are more wonderful than He is. (268-291, 1995.4.3)

There is something interesting about my name. If you write the Chinese character for "Moon" (文) quickly, it looks like the character for father. The character for Sun (鮮) consists of elements meaning fish (魚) and lamb (羊). In this way, the sea and the land are united centered on the father. Next, the character for Myung (明) consists of the elements Sun (日) and Moon (月). The one who unites the land and sea, who teaches the unified truth bringing Cain and Abel together as one, and who brings the sun and moon together as one is God. God is the king of wisdom and, at the same time, He is the Parent. (268-289, 1995.4.3)

2.2. Selecting True Mother

Through two thousand years of Christianity God made the Second Advent of the Lord possible. If, immediately after World War II, I could have stood on the victorious foundation of Christianity and the United States based on the Christian cultural sphere, would I have undergone hardships? If they had accepted me in those days, then who would have been Mother? If Sung-jin's mother had been unable to take that position, who would have replaced her? It would have been a British woman. As seen from God's will, it would have been a woman from Great Britain. The British royal family would have made a connection with me. Doesn't that belong to the realm of Christian culture? Britain gave birth to America. There was symbolic significance to Korean president Rhee Sung-man (Syngman Rhee) marrying a western woman. Ultimately, due to the opposition from Christianity, True Mother gained this blessing. (181-217, 1988.10.3)

In order to restore Eve, the number '7' has to be restored through indemnity. Mother was designated to her position in 1960 and had to go through the seven-year course until 1968 when God's Day was established; for her that was a period of persecution. In this period, women of the Unification Church engaged themselves in all kinds of intrigues and slander against her. Mother did not understand the reason for this, so she could overcome everything only if she obeyed

my words absolutely. So I told her, "Do this and do that, just as I say!" Thus, after the Holy Wedding I drove her away from my house for three years, and only after three years, did she stay in the same room with me. This is all true. You Unificationists can understand this, can't you? It was for the sake of indemnity. We are going through the individual course of indemnity, and the family course of indemnity. (139-296, 1986.1.31)

I have established Parents' Day, Children's Day, Day of All Things and God's Day. Having gone through the seven-year course in the 1960s, I was able to establish God's Day in 1968 based on the realm of unified heart. Mother also had to go through a seven-year course from the completion level of the growth stage to the completion level of the completion stage. Without doing so, she could not have stood in the same realm of heart as me. Thus, although I married in 1960, it was only after seven years that I established God's Day, on January 1, 1968. This is according to the Principle.

Everyone must undergo a seven-year course, including the blessed couples. There are no exceptions; everyone must go. If Blessed Families are unable to go through this course, they cannot enter heaven. The paradise realm for the Blessed Families of the Unification Church is emerging in the spirit world. This is all logical. (139-311, 1986.1.31)

It was fourteen years after the liberation of Korea that I received Mother. It was in 1960. Why was it fourteen years? It was because our first ancestors fell at the completion level of the growth stage when they were still passing through their second seven-year course; they fell in the very end of this seven-year course, before the beginning of the third seven-year course. Therefore, according to the principle of restoration through indemnity, I settled in Korea through a course of fourteen years of persecution, built the altar called the Unification Church, and chose Mother and raised her to this position while battling the established churches and the nation of South Korea. From that point, when Mother was chosen and designated to her position, God's providence could settle on earth for the first time. (143-178, 1986.3.18)

Mother had to be less than 20 years of age. Why was that? It was because Adam and Eve fell when they were teenagers; they were younger than 20 years old. Since they fell at that age, Mother had to be of a similar age. How difficult that was! Moving the Unification Church was a difficult task in itself. On top of that, when I had to choose Mother, there were a number of young ladies in the Unification Church who were university graduates and some even held doctorates. With their eyes burning they were making all kinds of maneuvers to become my mate. While keeping an eye on this situation, I actually had to look for an innocent, unworldly teenage girl. That was not a fate to be enjoyed, but I had no choice. Because of the principle of restoration through indemnity, I could not do as I pleased. (145-161, 1986.5.1)

Because I knew the principle of restoration through indemnity, I had to grow older alone until I reached forty. Moreover, I could not take an older wife, but married someone who was eighteen years old. My bride was not supposed to be older than eighteen! There were many women in the Unification Church with university degrees or even doctorates who were gazing at me with their eyes wide open as if they wanted to swallow me. They were howling like a pack of wolves, but I ignored them and welcomed Mother who was totally unworldly. How complicated that was! (164-61, 1987.5.3)

After the Holy Wedding, I told my mother-in-law, "For three years, you may never enter or exit through the house's front gate. Don't come to visit your daughter just because you are her mother. In the Garden of Eden, Eve did not have a mother. Do not use the front gate." Can one possibly say such things? From a normal viewpoint, it was as if the son-in-law told the wife's mother, "When you visit your daughter's house, always come in through the back gate. You must not come in through the front gate, for three years." That is why I became the most fearful person for my mother-in-law; she became very afraid of me. (184-262, 1989.1.1)

As Eve was created through Adam, Mother had to come from a position where she did not know anything. She was not supposed to have many relatives. It wouldn't work if she had three generations trailing along with her. She could not have had any vertical relationships within her family. She could not have come from an ordinary kind of family. In fact, True Mother satisfies this criterion, isn't that so? She had no elder brother or father. There were just the two of them, mother and daughter. Her mother was a representative figure among Koreans when it came to offering devotions for the Second Coming of the Lord. Such were the followers of the "Inside the Belly" Church, who believed that the Lord would come in the flesh. After I came to know Mother, she received the blessing of the women elders who represented the history of Korea in the providence, and who had fulfilled every responsibility related to Eve. (184-293, 1989.1.1)

Section 3. The Eight-Stage Indemnity Course and the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages

3.1. The eight vertical and horizontal stages in the course of restoration through indemnity

The history of six thousand years has unfolded beginning from the individual level to the levels of family, tribe, people, nation and world. The Unification Church goes through eight stages to restore the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, universe and finally God's love. When we pray, we do so focusing on the eight levels, don't we? "O Heavenly Father, I have fulfilled

the restoration of the individual, and fulfilled the restoration of the family…" What that means is that the completion of the restoration of an individual lies within a family, and the completion of the restoration of a family lies within a tribe, the completion of the restoration of a tribe lies within a people, completion of the restoration of a people lies within a nation, the completion of the restoration of a nation lies within the world, the completion of the restoration of the world lies within heaven and earth, and the completion of the restoration of heaven and earth lies within the love of God. It means that everything in heaven and earth should become one, centered on God's love. (61-75, 1972.8.27)

Are your bodies separated from the dominion of Satan? Have they become one with God? Unless you completely deny yourself, you cannot overcome Satan. That is why I am teaching you how to go through three and a half years of hardship. We must progress from the beggar and the servant of servants. We must progress vertically, from the servant of servants, through servant, adopted child, child by a concubine, child of the direct lineage, the mother, the father, and then God; eight stages in this way. Also, the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, heaven and earth, and God are eight levels as well. Thus, it is vertically eight stages and horizontally eight stages. This is the viewpoint of God's Principle. These are not just my words. (189-141, 1989.4.1)

3.2. Satan's activities and the victory in the eight stages

What is the thing that Satan until now has held on to historically, based on the eight stages of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, heaven and earth and God? He has been saying, "God, You are the Master who follows the heavenly principles, and Your son and daughter, the ideal Adam and Eve, that is, the True Parents, are a son and daughter who follow these principles. Because You, the Father who follows the Principle, created me as the archangel, it was a fundamental rule that before falling, I would have been able to receive Your love and the love of Your son. If You cannot love and work in that way, You will not be able to love the principled son as the principled Father." This is the problem.

In other words, Satan is saying that although he fell, if God could not love him, He would not be able to return all the creation, which is in Satan's possession, to the realm under the dominion of God's love, and the love of Adam in the original Eden. He means that if God and Abel united and loved Satan, they can restore everything based on the condition of individual love, but otherwise, they will not be able to do this. Next, the same applies to the family, tribe, people, nation and world, which are in the same position, and he claims that heaven and earth are in such a position as well. That is the way in which Satan grabs us by the throat or, as you might say, how he tightens the noose around

our neck. (132-29, 1984.5.19)

The Principle of the Unification Church is a fundamental path, but we cannot just follow the path of the Principle doing nothing. It is the path of destiny on which we must pass through eight stages. These eight stages are those of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, heaven and earth, and God. The number eight is the number for starting anew. After we achieve that there will not be another new start. (135-304, 1985.12.15)

Throughout history, there have been numerous paths of suffering and hardship, but you must realize that the path of hardship of the eight stages that I have passed through never existed in past history. You must understand that it was the way of indemnity where, because of the difficulties, I still wasn't allowed to shed tears, crying out, "God, I am not able to endure this position!" Those who are going to build the kingdom must not shed tears for themselves while walking this way. It is the heavenly principle that unless we pass through the place of tears with joy, the foothold of the heavenly kingdom will not remain in this earthly world. (161-194, 1987.2.3)

Restoration through indemnity will not be accomplished if there is even one element of self-affirmation remaining. Indemnity conditions are set from a position of absolute denial. That kind of standard of absolute denial must be established from the individual level to the family, tribe, people, nation, world, and heaven and earth level until we reach God. Then, if the eight stages are fulfilled, this will be connected to the utopia of human history. Unless a course of absolute denial is undergone at each stage, we cannot connect to the utopia where we can relate directly with God. (God's Will - 697)

You might be thinking, "Those eight stages were just thought up by Rev. Moon. I have no need for indemnity," but that is totally wrong. The human portion of responsibility is a fact, and there exists a formula course springing from our portion of responsibility. If there had been no Fall, we would have been able to pass this course naturally in 21 years, but now because there are walls blocking our way, we must deal with them one by one. Because of Satan we cannot go through all stages at once. We have to deal with them one by one and restore them. Because of the Fall, Satan appeared, and indemnity conditions appeared. Because we must fulfill our human portion of responsibility, indemnity conditions are an unavoidable process. (124-306, 1983.3.1)

The course of restoration must go through eight stages, restoring the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and heaven and earth, and restoring the love of God. But, this cannot be accomplished all at once. Had Adam and Eve not fallen, they would have naturally perfected themselves, but because they fell to the level of servant of servants at

the beginning of history, we cannot be raised up through all the stages at once. Thus, in the process of pioneering each stage, continuous indemnity conditions were absolutely necessary for each course. By setting up these conditions, we can separate from Satan. Because of Satan, indemnity conditions are necessary; if Satan did not exist, indemnity conditions would not be required. (161-204, 1987.2.4)

How should we go about climbing up through the eight stages from the individual to family, tribe, people, nation, world, heaven and earth and God? To climb up this trunk, you need to go out sideways and attain individual victory. Based on your heart of love, you must climb up the side, fight with Cain and win. In this way, you have to go up through the eight stages by fighting with Cain and subjugating him. Why? It is because Satan is attached to you. You must understand this. (181-211, 1988.10.3)

After I learned about the law of indemnity in this world, in heaven and earth, I focused on the love for an individual, then on the love for a family, then on the love for a tribe, people and nation. At each stage, Satan tried everything imaginable to try to crush this love. That is why religion goes the way of persecution. It has had to shed tears and blood. We cannot go up to high and comfortable places. We have to stay in the uncomfortable places. That is our safety zone. Satan is arrogant, so he dislikes difficult places. That is why the most miserable place is the safety zone. (181-213, 1988.10.3)

Even though Adam fell as an individual, he was the center of everything; therefore restoration must take place on the worldwide level. Restoration cannot be done all at once. It must be carried out step by step. The position of an individual must first be restored, then the environment on all levels should be provided: from the level of a family, to levels of a tribe, a people, a nation, the world, and heaven and earth. This process should go through the eight stages. Human beings who are seeking the ideal world must resolve such issues in order to encounter God, the subject of love. If there is a blockage somewhere, people can only relate to the realm below that standard, but not to the realm above it. The path to becoming one with the absolute God will not be attained. If you go up to a certain level, you can only receive the assistance of spirit people up to that level in the realms of formation and growth in the spirit world, and so it will be difficult to relate with God. (God's Will - 697)

There are eight stages from the servant of servants to the servant, adopted child, child by a concubine, child of direct lineage, mother, father, and God. There are eight stages to pass through. You must know this clearly. Before you can become a leader in the Unification Church, you must become a servant of your mission country otherwise there is no way to attain liberation. You must become the servant of servants, and be

treated as an adopted child. You must be treated as a child by a concubine. Then, as a child of the direct lineage… you must go up in this way. When you pass through these stages, there must always be indemnity. You have to fight with Satan so that God can award a victory to you. Without this you can't pass the way of indemnity.

Can you successfully go through the indemnity course on the tribal level without having brought victory on the family level? There is no way for this to happen. Similarly, can you consider going to the level of the people without having dealt with your tribe? This also applies to the levels of the nation, the world, and heaven and earth. This must be very clear in your mind. (181-213, 1988.10.3)

Speaking of my situation, I am the individual Adam, but at the same time I also had to weave the history of Adam on the levels of family, tribe, people, nation, world and heaven and earth. I had to climb up through the eight vertical stages starting from the position of servant of servants. Not only did I go through these eight stages, but I also embraced all the horizontal stages of individual, family, tribe, people and the world. Therefore I had to go through the vertical and horizontal indemnity course that includes all the five billion people of the world. By doing so I created a realm of liberation free from satanic accusation. Do you think that path was easy? (194-110, 1989.10.17)

Human history until now has supposedly lasted approximately 850 thousand years. Within this period, from primitive times, religious movements have received persecution. Then, who makes history occur like that? It is God, and so, from the position of servant of servants, history developed in stages. Then, for the servant of servants (humankind), the servant (archangel) becomes the master. It is not a case of the master controlling the servant, but the servant taking control of the master. In order to become the master of servants in the heavenly kingdom, you must be persecuted by all the servants of the satanic world and become victorious. Therefore, you must be prepared to die. That is the origin of the words, "Those who seek to die, will live."

To rise from the position of servant of servants to that of servant, or from the position of the servant to the adopted child, you will definitely face persecution. The same principle applies, through all eight stages until God. Then, who will receive this persecution? People change, but God will never change. Thus, different religions of the world are in the positions of the servant of servants, servant, adopted child, child by a concubine, child of the direct lineage, mother, father, and true parents. At the very highest level, the religion in the position of parents will appear. In the Last Days, there will appear the religion of True Parents centered on the True Parents. After its emergence the Unification Church started teaching about the unification of religions. Such unification is only possible through the doctrine of a

religion that teaches about the True Parents. (124-69, 1983.1.23)

3.3. Ceremony for the Settlement of the Eight Stages

Since the vertical and horizontal indemnity, the indemnity of the eight stages was completed, last year, on August 31, 1989, I went to Alaska, the northernmost place in the western world, and conducted the "Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages." It was conducted at the northernmost place. Then on September 1, I announced the "ideology centered on the Heavenly Father." It is the ideology of salvation through love, which we know as the parent-centered ideology. This ideology urges us to love everyone. Satan cannot oppose love. If Satan does not oppose the Unification Church on its way, it will spread worldwide in a flash. (199-157, 1990.2.16)

Do you know what the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages is? What is it? It represents the completion of vertical and horizontal indemnification. In order to go through the vertical stages, I began as the servant of servants. Horizontally, this had to expand from the individual to the family, tribe, people, nation and world. Unless the vertical standard is set, you cannot draw a horizontal circle. If the central axis is not set, a circle cannot be drawn. All the circles must perfectly match the eight vertical stages. This was completed in Alaska, on September 1st, 1989. The word Alaska sounds similar to the Korean phrase "Do you understand?" (215-124, 1991.2.6)

I have already declared the "Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages," on the national, world and cosmic levels, thus commencing the age when God can come and go vertically whenever He wishes, and can freely move horizontally to any place on earth. That is why the term "global village" has appeared. The Unification Church teaches not only about global village, but also about a global family. The age has come when the history of the global family can unfold on the earth. The whole world, which was divided into day and night, now lies within the scope of one day of human life. The age has come when everything can be communicated instantly around the world. (198-277, 1990.2.4)

What happened due to the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages? The right of Right of the parent can be liberated and achieved. Because this time is coming, then, from the position of Parents, I am raising all of you into a position where you can be tribal messiahs. This is to liberate Jesus and Adam's family from their grief. Through your tribes, you can obliterate the foundation created by the mistake of false parents; in this way, for the first time, hometowns where people were born can be transformed into the hometowns of the heavenly kingdom. (193-214, 1989.10.4)

On August 31, 1989, in Alaska I declared the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages that allowed human-

kind to shift into the age when indemnity is no longer needed. This means that wherever I or the believers of the Unification Church go, the age of persecution is over. From now on, if we build the Kingdom of Heaven or do anything we want, no one can accuse us. That kind of foundation was laid by the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages.

Based on this ceremony, I declared "The ideology centered on the Heavenly Father" on September 1, 1989. Until the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages was completed, it was still the age of the restoration of the right of the eldest son. Restoring the right of the eldest son! Finally, the right of the eldest son has been completely restored. Now, that the right of the eldest son has been completely restored to God's side, we ascend and stand in the highest global realm, where Satan cannot oppose us. The time has now come when, if we push forward strongly and boldly, America, the communist world, Korea and Japan will all yield. That is why we should be strong and bold. (193-204, 1989.10.4)

The Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages signifies that the historical course of vertical indemnity and the course of horizontal indemnity that went through the stages of individual, family, people, nation, and the world. That is the vertical and horizontal courses consisting of eight stages are completed. Due to this, the right of eldest son has been restored, and the course of indemnity for all humanity is abolished. That is what I have done by holding this ceremony. The right of the eldest son is restored; the Parents are embracing all humankind. Thus, an end is brought to the history of war and struggle that was necessary in order for the right of the eldest son to be restored in the realm of parental love. The time has come when indemnity is not needed and we can reach harmony in love. In order to achieve this, I had to hold the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages. By holding this ceremony, the Parents forgave both the elder and the younger son, so that next we can enter the age of the realm of forgiveness for the fallen parents. (193-173, 1989.10.3)

Alaska, where the ceremony of The Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages was held, is becoming famous. The last time I came here I said I would build a church at the North Pole. If the Soviet Communist Party opposes it, I will take the responsibility. I will build the Unification Church at the North Pole. You have to spend your life in order to build the foundation of blessing for all people of the world, but before you die, come to our Church at the North Pole and offer your devotion for forty days and then you can die. Think about this. An ideal city will be created in a world of icebergs. Then, even though it will be thousands of miles away, everything can be supplied by the air. You should try living like this. It would be a wonderful thing. With the power of science today, that would be nothing. We can use prefabricated systems. So we will build an airfield and try to live there, so what problem could arise? We are creating

a base in the tourist area of Kodiak… think about it. It will become a gateway unprecedented in history. (193-217, 1989.10.4)

Section 4. Restoration of Right of the Eldest Son, Right of the Parent and Right of Kingship

4.1. Restoration of the right of the eldest son

As viewed from God's original ideal of creation, the eldest son should come from God's side and, of course, the second son should also come from God's side. Due to the Fall, the position of the first son was taken by Satan, and the position of the second son went to God. This has to be made right. Thus, when we consider the story of Esau and Jacob in the Bible, Jacob united with his mother and received her help. He gave Esau the pottage of lentils and bread in exchange for the birthright of the firstborn son. Until today, we could not understand why Bible history is the way it is. With the appearance of the Unification Church, its meaning was clarified for the first time. (134-304, 1985.8.16)

It is only after we go beyond the realm of the Fall and restore the rights of both the first and second born sons on God's side, that we can stand in the original world for the first time. This is the original ideal of creation. As God is absolute, His ideal has also remained absolute. To regain the original ideal, we must undergo a historical course of restoration through indemnity in order to go beyond the fallen realm. (134-304, 1985.8.16)

How difficult this it is to restore the rights of the firstborn son! Because of this, everybody suffered incredible hardships. Countless religious people were sacrificed, Christianity underwent dreadful persecution under the Roman Empire for four hundred years, and much blood was shed in order to get out of the domain of the satanic world. Have you ever been to Rome and been inside the catacombs? The early Christians created altars, buried the bodies of their ancestors under the altars, and continued to live there, inhaling those odors. They did so because God had told them to do so, otherwise who would have done such a thing? By normal standards, this would not be done by human beings. Imagine how much God suffered! You have no idea of the efforts that have been made in history. You need to be aware of these things. (140-203, 1986.2.9)

When you all think about Cain and Abel in the Principle, who do you think is more precious, Cain or Abel? Who is precious? Everyone thinks Abel is more precious, but that is a mistake. Abel is in the younger brother's position, and Cain is in the elder son's position. You must understand this correctly. The position of the firstborn son is more precious than that of the second son, Abel. There is only one firstborn son, but younger brothers can be many. Can there be several firstborn sons? There is only one

first child. The reason why the first child is precious is that there is only one. The following children can be many in number. You must understand this. (136-126, 1985.12.22)

As God carried out the dispensation for restoration, His grief lay in the fact that the firstborn son was on Satan's side. That is why human history is diseased. What kind of disease does it suffer from? It has a love related disease. The first son was born after humankind went astray due to the disease of love. If we are not aware of this fact, we won't reach the time when we are able to ascend to the individual position where we can again achieve harmony, even if we spend billions of years in search of the principled standard. (136-126, 1985.12.22)

For what purpose does God designate Abel? He does it to establish the rights of the firstborn son and to correct the tradition within the family, not in order to save Abel's children. Unification Church members don't understand this point. You say, "Ahem! I am Abel," but you leaders must remember that you cannot say, "Because we are in the position of Abel, that's it!" The reason all of you are placed in your positions is to restore a tribe that holds the right of the eldest son. If you want to receive blessings, earn the right of the firstborn son and share the blessings, then you can receive some of them. The right of the firstborn son is not for you. Focused on the Lord who is to come, you must develop a connection with the vertical heavenly world. This will not happen with only the horizontal physical world. I was going to explain this last point in more detail in terms of the Principle but, as I believe you understand this, I am putting it in simple terms. Since I, the founder of the Unification Church, came to know this path, I could not help but establish the logic of "living for the sake of others." We were born for the sake of others. You must also realize that man was born for the sake of woman. There is no such thing as "I". (136-130, 1985.12.22)

Cain represents Satan's side. It is the position of the elder brother. Abel represents God's side. This is the battle. Originally, God would have loved the firstborn son, and then the younger son. Due to the Fall, the first son, Cain, stands on Satan's side. He belongs to Satan's side. In order to save him, God designated Abel. God designates Abel to restore the right of the firstborn son. This cannot be achieved by force; you have to inspire people by love. You have to achieve restoration by melting them with love. If you cannot stand in the position of having loved them, if you cannot win their heart through offering your love, then you will not be in a position to truly love your own son or daughter. As viewed from God's ideal of creation, the firstborn son was originally to be loved first rather than the second child. (140-38, 1986.2.1)

The big question is whether I have loved the satanic world more than I love my wife and children. I cannot love my

family more than I love those who stand in the Cain position. God has to love the Cain realm first before loving the Abel realm. He cannot love Abel before that. (140-38, 1986.2.1)

If you are to be victorious, you must go out into the world. You must go out and restore the rights of the firstborn son. The firstborn son must ultimately attend the second son, who is the younger brother, as though he were an older brother, and come to the point where he can say, "I will receive all the blessings through you." In this way, the firstborn son comes down to the position of the second son, and the second son must rise up to take the position of the firstborn son. So only after the first son says, "You go up, instead of me," and pushes the second son forward, does it becomes possible to move from the family level rights of the first son to the tribal level rights of the firstborn son, and so on. In this way, you can go up stage by stage. Only when the first son pushes you, can you go up. You cannot go up as you are. Because of this principle, you must fulfill the standard of restoring the rights of the firstborn son in this way. Without doing so, and this is the secret of history, the dispensation of God cannot be successful. That is why, in order to go the way of a true religion, you must leave your home. This is where the words, "You must leave your country and your home, renounce the world and become a monk," come from. (138-204, 1986.1.21)

People have never understood why the history religion is one of tribulation and particularly why they developed when they were persecuted. In all of history, only Rev. Moon has been able to clearly expose the secrets entangled in the spirit world, the religious and mystical worlds that only Satan and God knew about. This is not empty theory. That is how things move. They move according to that principle. Just try to witness. When a person makes a determination to come to the Unification Church, Satan always tries to obstruct their path. Everything goes according to a certain formula. (138-204, 1986.1.21)

There are seven horizontal stages you have to pass through from the individual to the family, tribe, people, nation, world, and heaven and earth, before reaching the final position of God. There are also eight vertical levels beginning with the servant of servant's position. On the foundation of restoring the rights of the firstborn son in the course of seven of these eight levels, you must attain the position of the original, unfallen firstborn son. Adam and Eve were the first son and the first daughter. The first son and daughter have to pass through the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle. Then, they must be connected to the realm of direct dominion based on love and possess the right of the firstborn son. Such connection is impossible with the love of the younger child. They are not connected with the love of the second child. Therefore, you must return to this position and restore the right of the firstborn

son going up stage by stage. This is the battle to be fought. (138-134, 1986.1.19)

What is the secret method to restore the right of the eldest son? Satan claims, "God is a perfect God and the Adam and Eve He is seeking must also be perfect. Had they not fallen, it would have been the Principled standard that Adam and Eve have to love me as the original archangel. Thus, even though I have fallen and I found myself in the position of a bad one, if you all are in a position to be called good and true, you must set up the condition of having loved me. Without this, You, God, cannot be in the position of God in front of me." This is the problem. Satan stops everything dead, saying, "If there is a secret method of uniting with you, what is it? The person You send must love me. Unless he stands together with You in the position of loving me, and makes the condition enabling him to say that he loved me, he will not be able to regain the birthright of the firstborn son that I have been holding on to." That is why Jesus exhorted us to love our enemies. (131-182, 1984.5.1)

To love an enemy doesn't just mean to love an individual enemy. Unless you love the enemy family, the enemy tribe, the enemy people, the enemy nation and the enemy world, you cannot regain the right of the eldest son that the enemy world holds. You must know that Satan has been insisting on this, since he knows very well that this is the historical course of God's dispensation of restoration. (131-182, 1984.5.1)

In order to restore the right of the eldest son, you have to go out to the frontline where Satan persecutes you and tries to kill you. You have to go there in order to fight and subjugate people with love, and teach them about everything that we know. When they realize that our tradition is good, they will naturally be inspired, repent with tears; and pledge to give their life as an offering for you. You must know that there is no other way to obtain the right of blessing from the Cain world. (131-182, 1984.5.1)

Without love, you cannot subjugate Satan. Therefore even God has to stand in the position where He can say that He has loved the fallen archangel, so, in order to become a family who can enter the heavenly kingdom, you as the family of God's sons and daughters, must also set the condition enabling you to say that you have loved Satan. So, go out and fight and subjugate the satanic world with love. You must stand upon the foundation made by such a condition. You must be able to claim, "I did not crush all my enemies, but instead I had them surrender with love and I restored the right of the eldest son." (141-202, 1986.2.22)

Instead of beating His enemy to death God must set the condition of having loved him. In the same way the person standing in the position of Adam has to set up a condition of having loved the enemy Satan. If you endure over and over again while being persecuted, and prevail over all the tears, blood and sweat, until the enemy naturally surren-

ders to you, and return embracing God's love, then you can receive the blessing. That is when Satan will let you go. You must receive this public approval; "You can now become a child qualified to go to the heavenly kingdom." Who must sign this approval? Satan must. After Satan signs this, you will sign it, and then True Parents must sign it. You can only stand before God only after getting this signature from True Parents. That is the heavenly kingdom. (141-202, 1986.2.22)

Once I set the condition of having loved Satan on the world level, then he cannot take away those who follow me. Then what happens? Cain and Abel will switch their positions. The Abel realm up, until present, was in a position of people who are chased after, but from now on, it will possess the right of the eldest son of God's Kingdom. The satanic world will collapse. It will only retreat, unable to generate any opposition. If it even tries to oppose, it will be crushed into pieces. This is the view of the Principle. (139-278, 1986.1.31)

In the course of indemnity, the realm of dominion based on the accomplishments through the Principle and the realm of direct dominion will be connected on earth by the name of the True Parents for the first time. This will be done by their fulfilling the standard of the restoration of the rights of the firstborn son on the world level. Satan will not be able to remain in this united realm, which is connected with that standard. (139-285, 1986.1.31)

4.2. Restoration of the right of the parent

Why are things such as indemnity or the restoration of the right of parents, the right of the eldest son, and the right of kingship necessary? Satan's love, life and lineage are the key problems. What originally should have started from God has actually begun from the devil. The devil made a start centered on something incredible called love. The universe was created because of love. The process of creation took place centering on love, which is the source of all beings. Satan overturned this origin. That is why the original source that was twisted must now be twisted back. (206-236, 1990.10.14)

What was God's original ideal of creation? It was to build the Kingdom on earth and in heaven in the name of the True Parents. Without True Parents' name, God's Kingdom cannot emerge, either on earth or in heaven. If we ask Christians today, "Jesus is God's beloved firstborn son, so how come he is in paradise and not in the heavenly Kingdom?" they cannot answer. The Kingdom of God, both on earth and in heaven, can only be built on the foundation of True Parents' love and their perfection. Building the unified Kingdom in the spirit world is True Parents' mission, not someone else's. (131-182, 1984.5.1)

If you have a clear understanding about God and True Parents, everybody will be liberated. Everybody will revive. That is why you must show God

and True Parents to others. If you only become the substantial manifestation of God and True Parents, everyone will be liberated. So, when people cling to such a person, they are clinging to True Parents and God. Because their original mind knows that, they will do so immediately. Why am I saying these things today? I am telling this to you because today is a day of declaration when we are passing through such a transition period. (131-51, 1984.4.1)

It was such a difficult job, that's why God has been suffering throughout history and His work has been prolonged until now. Otherwise why would almighty God have to toil like that? If He could teach us, He would have already done so long ago. It is Adam who was unable to understand something, so it is Adam who has to take responsibility and discover everything. He has to go through heaven and earth and discover everything. Then, how many tears he would have to shed for this! Adam was chased out in tears, so how many tears should the new Adam shed in the course of restoration? In that sense, I am the king of tears.

You should know that, representing history, I sought the way of truth and for that I shed many tears and prevailed over tremendous ordeals, tearing my flesh and shedding my blood. You must realize that you are attending that kind of incredible Parents. This is the final summit to cross over. Thus, along with the standard of restoring the right of the parent, shouldn't a realm of younger children be created? I have restored the right of the eldest son and the rights of parents haven't I? I even obtained the right of kingship, so, if only you are united with me, if only Mother and younger children build the foundation of a mother-child cooperation, that's the final task to be done. (222-241, 1991.11.3)

You must bear in mind that only those who carry out the restoration of the right of the eldest son, the right of parents and the right of king are relatives. Then, the world will be united naturally even without me. I have now blessed more than 24,000 couples. The number 24 is 3 multiplied by 8. I have restored the number eight centering on the three ages of formation, growth and completion. In this way I completed the establishment of the rights of tribal messiahs on the world level. Now, even if I am not here, if you work day and night following God's will to save your country, this world will come to one place. Furthermore, in the whole of history, there has been no other cultural foundation which included global academic, political and cultural organizations possessing a philosophical content greater than that of Rev. Moon. From whatever perspective we look at this, everything is now concluded. (206-272, 1990.10.14)

4.3. Restoration of the right of kingship

Originally, the perfection of Adam means perfection of the Father of the heavenly kingdom, and the perfec-

tion of Eve means the perfection of the Mother of the heavenly kingdom. Once they became the masters of their family, the right of kingship of the heavenly kingdom on the family level would have emerged. Thus, Adam and Eve would become the king and the queen at the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and the world. Since the time has come when we can transcend the national level, we can tread down upon the royal power of the satanic world, and establish the right of king of the heavenly world. That day is March 27, 1990. Through this, the whole world will now turn in the direction of the wind that I am whipping up. (201-130, 1990.3.27)

What is the ideology centered upon the Heavenly Parent? Firstly, centered on God, it is the restoration of the right of brotherhood. Secondly, it is the restoration of the right of the parent. Thirdly, it is the restoration of the right of kingship. In the democratic world, there is no real concept of king, is there? The democratic world is based on the concept of brotherhood. Everyone is seen from the horizontal viewpoint. That is the doctrine of brotherhood, but people in the world ruled by this doctrine fight with each other. They compete with each other, saying, this is mine and that is yours. Doesn't democracy seem to be a concept of struggle? The ruling and opposing parties compete with each other. What is the purpose of this? They are each trying to gain the right of kingship. What is the position of a president? Isn't it the right of kingship? Presidents come and go so they just exploit their position, so things don't go well. If an absolute king emerged, there would be no problem. A world of absolute peace would then come. (205-172, 1990.9.1)

The democratic political system is a system of struggle. That is why we have to rise to the position of parents. Only then can the struggle be stopped. Siblings can all unite, centered on the parents. The world of peace starts from such unity. There is no other method. First, people need to find the True Parents, and then everything else including true children, true nation, and true peace can be found. There is no other way. (205-190, 1990.9.1)

Godism is a system of thought centered on the True Parents. Godism belongs to the vertical realm, but once we unite all parallel lines with this perpendicular, once we unite all brethren, it manifests itself as a spherical ideal. Love has a spherical shape. Each part of this sphere is connected with the perpendicular. Its surface becomes the realm of the ideal. Thus, in this world, which represents that surface realm, there can be no dissatisfaction. When a soccer ball rolls and comes to a stop, all points on its surface are equal in terms of their relation to the perpendicular axis; by the same token, we will arrive at the world of equality, the world of equilibrium based on our system of values. You must understand this clearly. (218-347, 1991.8.22)

We will achieve unity based on the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father, and Godism. True Parents are the king and queen of a family. The family will come together with other families to automatically form a tribe. Then a king of the tribe will appear. Next, the tribe will come together with other tribes to form a people, and a king of this people will appear. The same will happen on the levels of nation, world, and heaven and earth. All these kings are connected, all the way to up to God. So God becomes the King of kings. (205-189, 1990.9.1)

There is no royal palace, either in heaven or on this earth. Neither is there any heavenly palace on this earth. There is no palace centered on God's love. The right of kingship established on earth so far were establish by the people who only possessed the right of brothers rather the right of the Parents of the heavenly kingdom. These people exploited everybody. We are now in the era of the right of kingship of the rights of brotherhood, but not once have we seen an era of the true right of kingship of the right of the vertical Parents on this earth. (206-219, 1990.10.7)

Even though the American CIA was listening, I declared the "Foundation Day of the Nation of the Unified World," stating forthrightly that "we must restore the right of kingship centered on God," and that "The parent-centered ideology is better than the philosophy of brotherhood of the democratic world." Democracy is an ideology based on brotherly relations. With this concept, there will be no end to conflict. The parents must appear. They will say, "Hey, kids! The elder and younger children must behave in such and such a way. If your father and mother are both behaving in that way, don't you have to follow their example?!" The children will respond "Yes!" That is the concept of the parent-centered ideology. (193-159, 1989.10.3)

The Unification Church now speaks about the restoration of the right of kingship, doesn't it? This is because it's an impossible thing to do outside of a unified family. What is a unified family? They are the people who can become parents. Just as God has the heart of the parents towards the whole world, if we can maintain a parental heart towards a nation and towards the world, the heirs of the royal family will be born from such a family. Through them, the right of kingship will be restored. That is why men and women should go this way. Isn't that so with all of you? You can always occupy this position if you go the way of loving and living for the sake of others. (194-291, 1989.10.29)

In order to restore the right of kingship, you should be able to pass without meeting obstacles in any direction; north, south, east or west. If the king were to visit your home, you must be able to welcome him at anytime, 24 hours a day, 365 days a year. Even if you had to swing a long pole 360 degrees

around yourself, you have to be able to do it without getting it stuck anywhere. You should always be able to welcome the king. You have to know things like this. (206-268, 1990.10.14)

If a head of state learned the Principle, what would happen? It would be only a short time before he saved the nation. Now we are entering the era of restoring the kingship. In the future, it will not be necessary for all of the citizens of a country to believe. If the president of a country fixes its constitution so that it is based on the Principle, the restoration of that nation becomes possible at once. (198-242, 1990.2.3)

Section 5. Development of the Providence of Restoration and the Mission of the Providential Nations

5.1. The flow of Christian culture following World War II

Being in a position where I understood the principle of restoration through indemnity, if only the Christian church had believed in me immediately after the Second World War, eventually Dr. Lee would have knelt before me. After Dr. Lee became president of South Korea, I would have had to bless him. If the government had started out as in the past, when the Roman Popes blessed the kings, Korea would not have been divided. If this had been accomplished within three and a half years…. but because that didn't happen, Korea was divided. (138-286, 1986.1.24)

My being born in Korea, was the same as Jesus being born in Israel. As a colony of Rome, the nation of Israel was in a similar position to that of Korea, as Rome was on Satan's side. The circumstances of Jesus' death meant that in the Last Days, when the Lord returned, he would have to indemnify and restore these same circumstances. The instances of Satan striking Heaven must now be eliminated throughout the world. If this is not done, without settling the accounts, we cannot get beyond this situation. Korea has been placed in such a position.

Korea gained its independence through the U.S.A. and stood as the domain of God's tribe, an independent country belonging to the Abel realm of God, within the sphere of America's protection. Within this sphere of protection, Christianity and Rev. Moon were supposed to become one as Cain and Abel. Had unity been achieved at this point, the national standard of the Republic of Korea would have been established at once. If Christianity had united with me, unifying Korea, and then connecting to the United States, the world would have been restored within seven years. This was God's will. (137-180, 1986.1.1)

If I had achieved the national foundation after the Second World War, then Great Britain, America, and France would have united, and Korea would have become the Adam nation. As the Adam nation on God's side and pos-

sessing the sovereignty of the heavenly nation, the vertical nation, Korea would have led Britain as the Eve nation and America as the eldest son nation. America would have led the leading nations of the world, establishing a territory standing in the Abel realm. It would have held the leadership like a world nation, standing for the first time in Abel's position. The other countries would be in Cain's position, to follow the United States. Thus, if the Lord had come on the basis of an era of unified Christian culture, coinciding with the era of the restoration of the right of the eldest son on the global level, and had connected to the foundation of mother-son cooperation, all problems would have been resolved. (184-252, 1989.1.1)

Just as happened at the time of Eve's Fall, when she tempted Adam, so the Eve nation on Satan's side was to forcibly take over the Adam nation and make it go through a forty-year indemnity course, based on the number four. This manifested itself through the forty year oppression of Korea by Japan. This was to indemnify the history of four thousand years.

As a result, Satan will be crushed in this fight. Then, who will be liberated? The Adam nation will be liberated. Through this, Britain, the United States, and France, representing the realm of Christian culture on God's side, should have united. In this way, God's side could have removed the seeds Satan had sown, regained the Adam, Eve and Abel nations, and then regained the Cain nation. God's side would have taken control. In this way, the opening of the gates of the restored Kingdom of Heaven would have been possible at that time.

However, the number seven could not be fulfilled within seven years after the Second World War between 1945 and 1952. Had this happened, this world starting from the government of Rhee Sung-man (Syngman Rhee) would have completely… If the United States, Britain and France had united, then Japan would not be the Eve nation today and Germany would not be the Cain nation. If the nations on God's side, Britain as the Eve nation, the United States as the Abel nation, and France as the archangel nation, had united around Korea and established themselves firmly in these positions, then the unified world of the Christian cultural sphere would have been realized. For the first time, a unified world centered on the Christian cultural sphere would have emerged. It would have come about because it is aligned with the appearance of the father nation, the Adam nation. (188-53, 1989.2.16)

What kind of nation is Korea? The Israelites became the First Israel, which eventually perished. Korea should have succeeded Israel, and with a glorious start in the satanic world, should have established the right of kingship centered on God. However, as this was lost, Korea had to undergo a history of hardship and bloodshed under Satan's dominion, and, having gone a circular path, had to return via America. To

what place did it have to return? It had to return to Asia. Japan must indemnify the mistake of Britain. Do you know that Japanese civilization is similar to that of Britain? Therefore the Japanese even drive on the left. Japan has inherited everything from Britain. (139-116, 1986.1.28)

Since the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle is the realm of indirect dominion, Satan can always invade it. That is why the Israelites became sacrifices on the level of the individual, family, people and nation, paying the price of sacrifice on the world level as well. We should know that sacrifice is not something bad, and that if we pay that price the gates of a new era will open.

It seemed as if the Jewish people were almost completely destroyed during the war in Europe. Six million were massacred. Through this massacre, however, the gates to a new era opened. As a result, Israel became independent in 1948. Through Korea gaining its independence, Israel also became independent. Within three years that connection naturally occurred. (68-20, 1973.7.23)

The Cain realm that has been restored through indemnity on the worldwide level, centered on the western world, should be planted in Korea. Korea is the heart of Asia. Since that has been planted, a connection is made that leads to the coming of an era of fortune when Western Civilization is turning toward Asia. (139-285, 1986.1.31)

5.2. The mission of Japan as the Eve nation

The island nation of Japan completely inherited the culture of Great Britain. That is why, for example, they drive on the left, just as in England. The Chinese character "left" symbolizes the nation of Japan.

Western material civilization is inherited in the East. Where does it go to? In order to achieve restoration through indemnity based on the same standard as that of Britain, Japan is coming to the Korean Peninsula, which is similar to Italy. Korea is similar to a male sexual organ. It is a peninsula. The reason Italy has made a historic contribution to the creation of global culture is because it is a peninsula. A peninsula represents the male sexual organ. An island nation represents the woman's sexual parts. (139-285, 1986.1.31)

Once Cain and Abel are restored, through whom do they continue on? They continue on through the mother. This mother country is Japan. In 1978, Japan began to emerge as a global economic power because it was chosen as the Eve nation.

In the Last Days, it must restore everything and return this to her husband, Adam. Why? Eve must indemnify everything given to Satan, who became her husband at the time of the Fall. Thus, Japan must restore all material things and offer them to Korea, the Adam nation and her original husband. (139-285, 1986.1.31)

Japan inherited everything from the western world; its political system from Britain, its legal system from Italy, and its military system from Germany. It imitated everything in the western world and built its foundation.

On Satan's side stood Japan, Germany and Italy. On God's side stood Britain and the son of Britain. Britain's son is America, isn't it? The son of Japan is Germany. Germany would say, "Wow, that little country of Japan is like that, so it will sweep over the western world in an instant." That is why war ensued. England and her son, the United States, are in the same relationship as the Eve nation, Japan, and Germany. The archangel nation on God's side, in a similar position to Italy, was France. France wavered back and forth; isn't that so? (188-147, 1989.2.19)

If I had not chosen Japan as the Eve nation, it would have been a miserable nation. If the Christian foundation had accepted me, England would have been the Eve nation. The Adam nation is Korea. England the Eve nation, France the archangel nation, Germany the Adam nation on the Cain side, all should have automatically become one, but these countries all went against God's will and opposed it. That is why the enemy took what he loved the most: the Eve nation, and Germany, the male nation. Don't forget that the Adam, Eve and archangel nations centered on the Unification Church were raised within the framework of God's will. Thus, I didn't bless Japan for the sake of Japan itself. It was for the sake of the world, the Unification Church, and Korea. Japan will perish if it doesn't use that blessing for the unification of Korea. (186-116, 1989.1.29)

In Asia, there is the Adam nation, Korea, the Eve nation, Japan, and next, the three archangel nations. Before Adam and Eve fell they were surrounded by God and the three archangels. From Adam's point of view Eve and the three archangels were to have followed him. Eve and the three archangels, centering on Adam, were to unite with God and enter the Heavenly Kingdom. That was the ideal. Therefore as a representative of the position of Adam, I am now moving Japan, the Eve nation, America, China and the Soviet Union. Thus the situation has returned to a position where I can deal with the three archangels and the realm of Eve. (199-84, 1990.2.15)

The cultural sphere of Japan is the same as that of Britain. The entire civilization and system of Britain were brought to Japan. Japan, the nation that is like Britain in Asia, restored through indemnity the era when Britain dominated the world. Japan is the form reproducing that model. That is why even their vehicles run on the left hand side of the road and the steering wheels are on the right hand side in their cars. It is exactly the same as in Britain. Britain is an island nation and so Japan is the country in Asia that compares with it. (166-294, 1987.6.14)

Human civilization made a circle

around the globe, and now, in the age of the Second Advent, is moving toward the region of Asia. But as it does so the unity will not be achieved in the history of the development of civilization unless, in accordance with the principle of restoration through indemnity, the conditional offering is made that brings everything in the satanic world into Heaven's possession. This is now being done by the United States. America is the archangel nation, given birth by Britain. It is the same as the son standing in the archangel's position. America is supposed to have the same form. Civilization comes seeking a nation within Asia that corresponds to Britain. As Japan is in the position to have inherited British culture, so civilization returns to Korea through Japan. Civilization has to move in a circle to reach Korea and unity must be achieved. However this unity cannot come automatically. Someone has to take the initiative in this unification. (166-294, 1987.6.14)

5.3. The mission of America as the world-level Rome

America is a nation in the same position as Rome. Then, at a time like this, why do I bring members of the Unification Church from Japan and all around the world to America? After Jesus died on the cross, all of the disciples focused on Rome. In the same way, we have to restore those circumstances through indemnity. We must not be chased away from here or killed. Instead, but we must be welcomed and launch a movement that will establish the heavenly nation here and offer it to God. (134-206, 1985.7.20)

The reason I created a newspaper company was to call together minorities. The countries where Native American peoples live are the countries of Rev. Moon's cousins. Asia is the elder brother. The younger brother separated from there and came onto the American continent. This has to be indemnified. Unlike the ways of the Anglo-Saxon people in America, Rev. Moon must restore this through indemnity, without shedding blood. Both the CIA and FBI say, "Rev. Moon, that's causing us trouble!" No matter how alarming it may be, it is God's will. God makes things happen that way. I make relationships with people through the will of God. People of all races are brothers and sisters. God doesn't see colors. He is color blind.

Focusing on this mission, I cannot help but follow this way. While I was in Korea, I created every conceivable organization. Even if I were to live at the summit of the Alps, it would be no problem for me. The world is my stage. It is my stage for my activities. (134-206, 1985.7.20)

At the time of Jesus' crucifixion, the thief to the right of Jesus and the thief to his left fought, but in front of me, they became united. This division had to be restored through indemnity. This became a historical indemnity condition. Then, where would these people go? When the Lord says, "You should both go to the Kingdom of Heaven on earth," and they reply, "Yes!" then it's

finished. Well, has that happened, or not? Jesus passed away while the thieves on his right and left were fighting, and accusing each other. However, from the Principle viewpoint, both of them ought to have made peace and welcomed Jesus, so that they could be resurrected and make a fresh start on a new level. Is this in accordance with the Principle or not? (135-68, 1985.8.22)

Here in America, restoration was even connected with a legal battle. All of the legal battles in America ended in 1977, but I went to prison for the sake of America, because I cannot abandon this nation. You must know that that this was a suffering path aimed at regaining Christianity and the democratic world. This took me four time periods. I had to complete the restoration through indemnity during the four eras from Nixon through Ford, Carter and Reagan. Had I failed in this, I would have had to abandon Christianity and the free world. Thus, you understand how difficult the dispensation for restoration is. Is the Unification Church capable of handling this? (135-178, 1985.11.13)

What kind of civilization is there here in America? It is the one that is lagging the farthest behind. There are some who live like barbarians. If you go to the mountains, there are those who are worse than primitive men. Some befriend wild boars and live with them. It's that kind of a country. I must restore through indemnity, on the worldwide level, all the mistakes these people made and all the opposition they gave. Everything that has taken place in the course of history should be restored through indemnity. In this age, on the threshold of the twenty-first century, this nation has been substantially established so that I can carry out this dispensation. It is a representative country that must indemnify all the historical opposition. (136-279, 1985.12.29)

Korea and America are in a relationship similar to that of Israel and Rome. Of course, Rome worshipped the sun god in those days, whereas America has different roots. Today, Korea is in a position of having gained independence under the protection of America. That is the position of America. Rome tried to destroy Israel, but America was not in a position to destroy a country similar to Israel as it was at the time of the Roman Empire. Instead, the United States created an opposite kind of era that allowed Korea to survive as a nation on God's side. Thus, it created natural circumstances where it became possible to restore through indemnity everything that Rome and Israel could not accomplish in front of Jesus, and Korea was connected to this. (137-19, 1986.1.1)

What I have been doing in America until this time concerns the restoration of the Adam nation, the Eve nation, followed by the Cain and Abel nations. Since Adam fell, this must be restored through indemnity on the global and national level. Korea is the Adam nation, Japan the Eve nation, and America is in

the position of Abel. The Abel nation appeared in order to restore the right of the eldest son and restore sovereignty. Next, Germany used to be the Cain nation on Satan's side, but as Japan came to stand in the position of Eve, Germany became the Cain nation on God's side. These four countries must establish the tradition of one nation on the global stage. That stage is represented by America. (141-224, 1986.2.22)

The age in which Jesus was not welcomed by the established Jewish faith must be restored through indemnity. Thus, there should be a phenomenon opposite to the time when Israel and Rome united against Jesus. The Korean government was united with America, and Christianity was opposing me persistently through these governments that were against me. I had to stand in such a position and restore this situation through indemnity. In my generation, I developed a national level foundation, and brought great victory. My strategy in America since 1974 was therefore to connect the foundation of this spiritual victory to the substantial world stage through the young generation of the world. Over a 3-year course, until my deadline of 1976, I waged a substantial war in earnest on the national level in America. (138-216, 1986.1.21)

If the American citizens had helped, and had Nixon offered his support, the Unification Church would have instantly created a worldwide foundation at that time. As Nixon did not fulfill his responsibility, and was unable to stand firm, it took me whole twelve years and the four "eras" from Nixon to Ford, Carter and currently Reagan, to accomplish the restoration through indemnity. Our mission is to return the world to a position higher than the one the worldwide communist realm had forty years ago, centered upon the year 1988. Do you understand what I mean? (138-216, 1986.1.21)

The first generation of Israelites all perished in the forty-year wilderness course, but they left a bridge over which the second generation could pass and enter into Canaan. Similarly today, during the forty years of the worldwide wilderness era that followed the Second World War, we in the Unification Church are guiding the young generation so as to establish the standard of the blessed land of Canaan.

In the Last Days, the sons of the most fervent members of the Soviet communist party will become the most fervent followers of the Unification Church, and in America, the sons and daughters of ministers and officials who most aggressively opposed our church will all stand up for Rev. Moon. Since I know that they will indemnify tenfold the active opposition perpetrated by their parents, I must build a bridge. What kind of bridge? The bridge of love. On the day when the bridge of love is completed, even if we tell them to go away and kick people away, they will hang on with all their might. (138-275, 1986.1.24)

When I came out of Danbury prison,

I prepared a situation where black and white, united through Jerry Falwell, centered on me. The thief on the right and the thief on the left were fighting with each other, but I united them. This is all restoration through indemnity. That is why during the 120 days (three times four is twelve) following my release from Danbury, all of the world media had to determine their direction. During this period I had to slap the American media on the cheek using the *Washington Times*. That is why I founded the magazine *Insight* and another monthly magazine. This latter magazine was made to involve professors from all over the world. I think people from the intellectual circles have already made their judgment concerning the *Washington Post* and the *Washington Times*. (138-305, 1986.1.24)

America was born from Britain, so it is in the son's position. Before becoming an archangel, the son is in the position of Abel. When the son is born, he has the right of the eldest son. Since he has this right, he must become the first son on God's side and in this capacity he must attend a mother on God's side, but this position was lost. When the island nation of Britain separated from Rome, it was in the position of archangel before it received the position of Eve. It was in the position of the restored archangel rather than the fallen archangel. It was in the position of Abel. America must become a nation able to inherit the right of the eldest son so that it can accomplish restoration through indemnity. (138-308, 1986.1.24)

When Elijah subjugated Baal, there was a crowd of seven thousand people following the prophet. Likewise there should be a tribal foundation of seven thousand people centered on Christianity. In order to restore this through indemnity, while in prison, I managed seven thousand Christian ministers. I educated seven thousand people. I had to indemnify the situations of Jesus and Elijah, so that kind of foundation on the national level served this purpose. And then you must know that as soon as I came out of prison, I gave an instruction to connect to this foundation of indemnity representing the whole world within 120 days. It should have consisted of seventy thousand people, in other words it should have been ten times bigger than the national foundation. Otherwise, restoration through indemnity could not be made. That is why Elijah came and that is why John the Baptist came representing Elijah. He was working on a world level. He represented the whole world. (147-66, 1986.8.30)

The Unification Church is now reindemnifying the fact that forty years ago, Rev. Moon, Christianity and the democratic world should have become united. The Unification Church restored through indemnity the failure of Christianity, and became one with me. It came to the free world which is the summit of the world, to connect Christianity and the United States to me, and set up the standard of restoring through

indemnity the past failures in fulfilling responsibility. Following this, I gave the order to depart for the New Canaan. You must know that this began when I left prison. (135-134, 1985.10.4)

As America represents the democratic world and the whole of humanity then, if it is to attain the heavenly standard of restoration through indemnity centered on the historical Christian cultural realm, what way of thinking should America have? It should be based on being determined to liberate God. It must have a conscientious heart in seeking the liberation of God. The True Parents who are to come, come as the incarnation of God, so America must attend the True Parents and love humankind more than its own people. Americans must love humankind more than their own people and nation. That is why, within America, there are numerous nationalities, peoples, tribes and families. (148-166, 1986.10.8)

The Unification Church is doing things opposite to what was done in the past. Judaism, the nation of Israel and Rome came together to strike Jesus, but the Unification Church is doing the opposite thing. Today, the Unification Church, based on the foundation of the realm of victory gained in America, put pressure on the Korean government and Christianity. Thus, the Unification Church has restored through indemnity the situation of Jesus who was killed by the combined opposition of Israel, Judaism and Rome. On the basis of being welcomed and gaining a victory in the United States, I am returning to Korea with that authority and with the cooperation of all America and American Christianity. So, the Unification Church and the Korean government are joining together to put pressure on Christianity in Korea. In this way Jesus' death has been restored through indemnity. (161-77, 1987.1.2)

Even with just a small group of people, I have exerted great influence on Korea until now. Because we understand about restoration through indemnity, we do not need many people. I will carry the cross myself for the sake of indemnity, so that the children who follow do not have to go through hardships. That is why I go forward with persistence. Knowing the price of such sacrifice, everything comes to me and helps with my work. Isn't that true? Pure young people and pure Blessed Families follow me. This is the trend in Japan and in America as well. (166-85, 1987.5.28)

5.4. The providence of restoration through indemnity is the path that returns to the original ideal

Since the start of history based on the principle of restoration through indemnity, Koreans have been a homogeneous race with a five-thousand-year history. They were unable to seize power as an independent nation and have shed much blood. Many loyal patriots became the victims of traitors. That was because this country is a vertical nation, symbolizing

and representing numerous loyal patriots of God's Kingdom who were sacrificed because of Satan in the course of human history. In this way, this people have gone the way of indemnity, a history of suffering, in order to indemnify vertically all miserable circumstances that took place horizontally in the past. (166-249, 1987.6.7)

In order for the Western Civilization to come to Asia, a bridge must be made. If the archangel makes an offering, it cannot simply become the possession of God. Since all things were lost through Eve, he must make the offering having established unity with Eve. What belonged to heaven was taken and belongs to Satan, so by the principle of restoration through indemnity, the archangel nation on God's side must gather and bring all material things and then make unity with Eve. It must be grafted onto Japan, which is the Eve nation. Why did Japan become an economic power in modern times? In the age of this dispensation, bridges must be built. Japan will inherit all that belongs to America. This has been taking place in the period of 120 years, from the Meiji Reformation until 1988. Try to calculate it. This is connected to 1988. During this 120-year period that ends next year, Japan is to inherit everything from America. (166-292, 1987.6.14)

God's providence was centered at the Vatican in Rome, and then it passed through Britain and America. Now, after two thousand years, it is returning to Asia. This return is not easily accomplished. According to the principle of restoration through indemnity, history should pass through phenomena opposite to those that occurred in the past. The country of Japan corresponds to England, and Korea is similar to Rome on the Italian peninsula before the providence shifted to Britain. In that age, the responsibility was not fulfilled and the mistake was made on the worldwide level. Now these things have to be indemnified and cleared up in similar circumstances. Without going through the foundation that enables us to do that, we cannot prevent Satan from following us. That is why we have been going this course according to the principle of indemnity. (168-310, 1987.10.1)

CHAPTER FOUR

The Course of Indemnity and Our Life

Section 1. The Way of Restoration Is the Inevitable Course for Humankind

1.1. Restoration through indemnity is the way of re-creation

When we say "restoration through indemnity," it means indemnity for the sake of restoration. Restoration through indemnity is the way to attain perfection. Only after indemnity can restoration take place; then we can go the path of perfection. Thus, you can consider that indemnity and restoration are one. Perfection cannot be attained automatically; it is attained through indemnity. Therefore, human beings living in the fallen world cannot reach perfection unless they set up conditions of indemnity. (God's Will - 697)

What is the way of restoration we talk about in the Unification Church? Ordinary religions state that people need to be saved and therefore seek the religious path. But we seek the way of restoration, saying that restoration is necessary. Then, what is restoration? How is it done? We accomplish it through the process of re-creation. (168-324, 1987.10.1)

The way of restoration is the way by which people return to their original state, and therefore one cannot go this way without setting indemnity conditions. Indemnity conditions must be set by a man, not by God. If a person is sick, he must take medication in order to recover, even if the medicine tastes bitter and he does not like it. Good medicine tastes bitter. Something bitter becomes a truly good medicine. Setting indemnity conditions is difficult, like taking bitter medicine. However, unless indemnity conditions are set, restoration can never be accomplished. The way of salvation is the way of indemnification and restoration. Indemnity means going the route opposite to that of the Fall. It means going the reverse way. (92-254, 1977.4.18)

If everyone comes to understand the meaning of indemnity, then they would like that word the best. Without indemnity, there is no blessing. It is indemnity that has the value of gold in the Unification Church. Indemnity is an amazing word that enables us to even risk our lives, sacrifice everything, and overcome all difficulties. (97-71, 1978.2.26)

The history of restoration is not something you accomplish just based

on explanations. First, you do things, achieve victory, and in this way you take charge of the situation. If there were a way to receive explanations from someone, the sixty-six books of the Old and New Testaments would not have been necessary. Ten pages would have been enough to record everything. Why would we need the sixty-six books? They would be useless. We would not even need ten pages. Three pages should be enough to record everything. (62-126, 1972.9.17)

The concept of indemnity is necessary for the sake of re-creation. That is why we need indemnity for re-creation. Indemnity is essential in order to be re-created as an original human being. Only when an original human being appears will other persons appear who can go the original way of God's will. So, are you the original people? No. You are of the fallen blood. Therefore, you must be re-created through indemnity. (133-69, 1984.7.8)

How did Adam fall? He fell due to his disbelief. Disbelief was the primary reason. Next, Adam fell because he asserted himself. He put himself, his ego in the center of everything. Adam fell because he took a self-centered position. Next, Adam demanded a realm of self-centered love. These are the three major elements of the Fall: disbelief, self-assertion or self-centeredness, and finally dreams of self-centered love. These are the footholds of Satan. The fallen angels were like this. (126-34, 1983.4.10)

Why am I giving you a suffering course? It is because you have to go the way of indemnity. I, too, intend to walk the way of indemnity my whole life. I am not reluctant to do it. One should walk this path willingly. You must understand that. Even when I go to prison, I do it willingly. I have to go there for the sake of indemnity. If I complain, my actions cannot be considered as indemnity. (133-69, 1984.7.8)

The way of indemnity is necessary for us. In order to save this world, you walk the way of indemnity. Even though Jesus was born as the original son of God, he still needed to go the way of indemnity in order to save this world. Since the world could not do so, and since the people who were supposed to go the way of indemnity opposed him, Jesus himself had to walk that path and had no choice but to take responsibility. (133-69, 1984.7.8)

The way of restoration requires you to cut your way through in the direction opposite to that of the Fall. Walking the way of indemnity is a basic rule for fallen people. Unless you surmount this path, you cannot restore your original status. Therefore, you must clean up yourselves. You must possess a sound theoretical system explaining how to restore the individual, family, tribe, ethnic people, nation, and world. (God's Will - 354)

1.2. The Reason We Must Go the Way of Indemnity

In order to re-create something, you

must invest even more energy than that originally invested in its creation. Since repairing something requires more effort than creation, that extra amount must be paid through a condition called indemnity. Do you understand? Are you able to understand the concept of indemnity? (133-69, 1984.7.8)

The more deeply you understand God's will, the more you feel you want to burn up your body that has been defiled by Satan, and through which his dirty blood runs. You feel like throwing away your hands and feet and your whole body, which have been used by Satan. It is absurd to try to maintain yourselves in your present form, tainted by evil. Have you ever experienced such a feeling? However, we cannot kill ourselves, so we need certain conditions in order to clean ourselves from the past connected with Satan. (22-207, 1969.2.4)

You cannot walk the way of restoration alone. According to the principle of re-creation, you must walk this way in cooperation with God and the spirit world. Since the providence of salvation develops only in this way, God and the spirit world are mobilized to carry out the work of re-creation. The reason for this is that God created the world of angels before He created human beings. Next, He created all things with the help of the angels, and then using all things as the material, He created human beings. (100-264, 1978.10.22)

Perfection is achieved through the completion of indemnity. Without climbing over the ridge of indemnity, there is no way for you to reach perfection. Internally, this refers to individual perfection, but from God's point of view, this can be seen as restoration. It is possible to say that the standard of the completion of indemnity is the completion of restoration. Restoration is accomplished through indemnity. That is why we call it restoration through indemnity. Thus, indemnity and restoration cannot be separated. (God's Will - 697)

Adam and Eve, who were the ancestors of humankind, fell due to illicit self-centered love. Together with the archangel they committed the Fall, which resulted in God being exiled and the original, true character of Adam and Eve being lost. (35-215, 1970.10.19)

God appears to Adam and Eve, who have not fallen. In this position you can find God. We all must return to the position of sinless Adam and Eve as they were before the Fall. In that position we must meet the True Parents and create a true tribe, true nation, and the true world. There is no other theology that advocates such things, only the Unification Principle. (God's Will - 354)

The Kingdom of Heaven is a place where we attend God as the absolute center and develop relationships of love through Him. God carries out the providence of salvation in order to set this foundation straight, so asserting

oneself is absolutely inadmissible. (92-255, 1977.4.18)

Section 2. The Foundation of Faith and the Foundation of Substance

2.1. The Foundation for the Messiah

Creating a foundation for the Messiah, by restoring the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance, is necessary in order to remove original sin. Once we remove the original sin, we are able to newly enter the realm of God's life and love. To do so, we must receive a graft.

In order to make a wild olive tree into a true olive tree, we must cut off the wild tree and graft onto it the scion of the true tree. Similarly, in order for people who are like wild olive trees to become true olive trees, they must go through the process where they first deny themselves and then totally affirm something new. By doing so, a person changes his intrinsic nature from that of a wild olive tree to that of a true olive tree, so that he can emerge as a person led only by goodness. Then such people form a family, a tribe, an ethnic people, a nation, and the world. That is what the Unification Church intends to do. You must understand that this is what the Unification Church members presently hope to achieve. (41-62, 1971.2.13)

How can the foundation of faith be restored? A condition must be set through a sacrificial offering. The foundation of substance means removing fallen nature, but that is done by uniting Cain and Abel. If you wish to restore yourself, your fallen nature must be completely eliminated and you must put aside your feelings of closeness to your kin. If you are told, "Go to the east!" you must say "Yes" and do so. And if you are told, "Go to the west!" you also say "Yes" and obey. If you object, you are not going to be restored. If you object, can restoration be accomplished? You must follow absolutely. (46-233, 1971.8.15)

In order to receive the Messiah, there must be the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance. After the foundation of substance is completed, the foundation for the Messiah is inevitably required. If so, who would stand on the foundation for the Messiah after the foundation of substance is established? We were born as the descendants of fallen human beings, inheriting Satan's lineage, and we are still not able to transcend that lineage. In order to transcend that lineage, we must change our lineage, but we cannot do that on our own. Therefore, we need the Messiah. (47-12, 1971.8.19)

Due to the Fall, first the parents were lost. Second, we inherited Satan's lineage. And third, we came under the dominion of Satan. So, in order to restore all this, we must go up the opposite way. How far can you go by studying the Principle? You must establish the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance; only then can you hope to meet the Mes-

siah. This is the Principle. Thus, I say, let us create the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance externally. (54-186, 1972.3.24)

Even if a person reached the standard of perfection, his lineage is still not completely clean. Since humankind inherited Satan's lineage, our lineage is not pure yet. In order to purify it, humankind certainly needs the Messiah. Therefore, the foundation of faith, the foundation of substance, and the foundation for the Messiah are absolutely necessary for fallen people. The ultimate question is how to create the foundation for the Messiah and change the lineage through the Messiah. (55-135, 1972.5.7)

People must complete the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance, thus inheriting the foundation for the Messiah, and receive a graft from him. By receiving the graft you can become a true olive tree, even though in the past you were a wild one. In other words, when and only when you get rid of Satan's lineage and come back to God's lineage of goodness can you stand in the positions of bride and groom. That is the way of the Principle. (64-16, 1972.10.22)

No one in the world can say that he or she has completed the course of restoration. That is why people are destined to perish. The responsible person who comes to save people from destruction and enable them to possess such inner qualities and complete this path is the Messiah. If you graft the scion of the Messiah to yourself, then you will be able to follow this path. In the Unification Church, don't we say that once you establish the foundation of faith and complete the foundation of substance, you are able to then accomplish the foundation for the Messiah? This is what it refers to. (63-340, 1972.10.22)

During the course of restoration, one must go up, starting from the era of servant of servants, through the eras of servant, adopted son, and direct son. If so, can one be connected to the era of direct son after going through the era of servant of servant, the era of servant, and the era of adopted son? You cannot get connected to the era of the direct son without doing anything. You must go through the process of establishing the foundation of faith, the foundation of substance, and the foundation for the Messiah according to the Principle. In short, you must receive the Messiah. The Messiah is the true son of God. An adopted son and a true son belong to different lineages. Therefore, the change of the lineage is necessary. (55-192, 1972.5.9)

Then, what are you supposed to do? You must go through suffering on the verge of death. In order to indemnify the vertical history horizontally, you must become a servant. Korean people loved by God must become servants like angels. From that position, if you can become a master, you will become an adopted son. Becoming an adopted son refers to restoring the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance.

Since the foundation for the Messiah can only be established by restoring the foundation of substance, you must do this. (62-259, 1972.9.25)

You can become a person of goodness only by conquering evil and leaving goodness behind, so that evil automatically surrenders to you. In terms of the Principle, it is called completing the foundation of substance. In order to accomplish this, you must fight Satan and win. (58-18, 1972.6.6)

Even if Israel had become a nation able to restore the world, that one nation was not enough. From the Principle you probably know about the era of substantial restoration of Cain and Abel, in other words, about the foundation of substance. Similarly, the Cain-type nation, or in other words the archangel-type nation, must be subjugated by the restored nation of Israel. It cannot be accomplished by the force of arms. Since Abel was killed by his elder brother Cain, you must all understand that unless you stand in the position of dying, that is, the position of being struck, but still survive and manage to subjugate those who strike you, restoration will not begin. (30-46, 1970.3.15)

In order to go the way of restoration, you must first establish a foundation of faith. The foundation of faith is necessary in order to create a solid foundation upon which you can secure your place and stand in the subject position. After that, even though you became a person who can pursue his goals on his own, that is not enough, so you must come back and establish the foundation of substance,

What is the foundation of substance? It is a foundation created through Abel being able to subjugate Cain. Who is Cain? He is the son of an enemy. Through Cain, historical struggles have been occurring. Through Cain, the original source of evil has set down its roots. Through Cain, waves of death have been rushing forward throughout history. We can see from these facts, that in order to prevent the appearance of conditions for evil and the expansion of the evil side, a person in the Abel position – that is a person on God's side – must bring the person in the position of Cain to surrender. (30-289, 1970.4.5)

There are two ways we must go for the sake of Cain and ourselves. We must walk this path for the sake of our enemy. What does that mean? It means we must deal well with Cain. What is the foundation of substance? Even though Abel has paved his own way, he cannot stand before God unless he subjugates Cain. Abel must lead his enemy. He should not fight with his enemy along the way, but lead the enemy. (30-338, 1970.4.6)

The expression "the foundation of faith has been established" refers to a conditional position where someone is able to indemnify the Fall, which occurred due to disbelief in God, and stand again in the hopeful position of Adam, who can be trusted by Heaven. After that,

the person must fight against Satan and establish the foundation of substance. Standing in the position of Abel, he must make Cain surrender. (40-243, 1971.2.6)

From the Principle you know about the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance. Even if you have established the foundation of substance, that substance is not to be offered to God. It serves as a foundation for the Messiah, that is, a substance that can welcome the Messiah. (43-187, 1971.4.30)

2.2. The ultimate issue is the restoration of lineage

Since Adam lost faith and substance, he can only find love after he has restored the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance. So what did Adam lose? First, he lost faith, and then he lost substance, and lastly he lost love. These three things were lost. We need to find them. (65-314, 1973.3.4)

The term "foundation of faith" refers to an unshakable person of principle establishing a foundation of faith that enables him to be one with God's Principle, without changing his position whether it is day or night, regardless of seasonal changes, throughout his youth, middle age, and old age. Only after that, a foundation of substance based on the Principle will be established. Upon the foundation of faith, the foundation of substance emerges through the Principle, and if you stand on that foundation of substance in oneness with the Principle, you will inherit the world of heart as the person who has the value of God's object partner. This is the way fallen people should go. (68-189, 1973.7.29)

The great contribution I made lies in the fact that I clarified the relationship between God and human beings centered on love, and clarified the portion of responsibility and the course of indemnity, as well as the problem of Cain and Abel, and the issue of the lineage. Unless Cain and Abel unite, the Messiah cannot come. Only when Cain and Abel become one is the foundation of substance formed, and only then can the Messiah come. Only when people are united with the Messiah can the restoration of the lineage take place. This is the gist of the Principle. You must understand such a program fully and pray accordingly. That is the way you should be thinking. (161-149, 1987.1.18)

First there is the foundation of faith, next comes the foundation of substance, and then comes the foundation for the Messiah. The lineage is the problem. Centering on Abel's victorious realm, we must overcome the opposition from the United States and win over the opposition from any country in the free world. Even if the whole world is against me, I will not be driven back by that opposition. You have the Principle, so can you act arbitrarily? The Principle is like an ironclad bastion. Since God has approved this theory, you cannot do anything about it. Unless you have made

a condition of loving even your enemy's nation, even the devil himself, you have no qualification to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. So, do you know why Jesus asked God to forgive the Roman soldiers who stabbed him with a spear when he was dying on the cross? This was not something personal. Rome was upsetting the world. However, today Christianity seeks salvation on an individual basis, doesn't it? (182-285, 1988.10.26)

Section 3. Why Restoration through Indemnity is Necessary

3.1. Two things that must be restored through indemnity

Why should we attach importance to the law of indemnity when we walk the course of restoration? From the viewpoint of God's providence, since human beings destroyed everything God created, each person must re-create everything. Since God invested His sincere devotion during the creation, for the sake of re-creation you must also re-create that condition of sincere devotion. While creating the universe, God was not playing around or dancing. He invested His utmost devotion, 100 percent of it, when He was creating. The way of restoration means re-creating; this time is the same as the time when God was creating, and so can you play around while going this path? (96-114, 1978.1.2)

Originally, in order for Adam and Eve to complete each stage of growth, they were each given their portion of responsibility. For each stage of the growth period, they had a corresponding portion of responsibility. Therefore, for three stages of growth, they had to complete three stages of responsibility. There is no exception. All people are on equal terms: they can grow by fulfilling their own responsibility. If God demanded from fallen people fulfillment of the same portion of responsibility as that of Adam and Eve, we would have no hope to restore ourselves to the original position before the Fall. We lost a chance to fulfill our portion of responsibility. So now to compensate for this, we must set indemnity conditions. (The Way of a Church Leader - 711)

The portion of responsibility and indemnity are in the right and left positions respectively. The former is like the right leg and the latter is like the left leg, but we forgot about them. We do not know about our portion of responsibility or about indemnity. So, how can we move forward? We cannot move forward like this. You must understand that unless we connect our portion of responsibility with restoration through indemnity, progress is impossible. Have you ever thought about this? Don't you all dislike indemnity?

Don't you dislike God and His providence? From today you must renew yourselves and not forget this, even if you forget to eat, to sleep, to think about your loved ones. That is how serious it is. Even God must go through this. Rev. Moon must also go through this in his lifetime. All Unification Church mem-

bers and the whole world must walk this path; otherwise there is no way for them to go. You all want to go through this easily, don't you? Can you get a doctorate or become a professor easily? You have to go through a certain course to get a doctorate degree. How can you do it easily? If you don't go through the course, then you are a fake doctor. Now, do you understand? (124-105, 1983.1.30)

In order to be separated from Satan vertically and horizontally, there are internal indemnity conditions and external indemnity conditions. The external indemnity conditions are that of Cain and Abel, and the internal indemnity conditions are that of Adam. When you completely overcome all this centering on the portion of responsibility, and remove Satan's realm of dominion, then Heaven's side can begin its work. This is a basic rule. (161-207, 1987.2.4)

Why did Adam fall? Adam's Fall was that he could not complete his portion of responsibility, and his relationship with God, a relationship of love, was cut off. Adam was not able to fulfill his portion of responsibility. Next, he could not connect to God's love. Due to the Fall, people lost their portion of responsibility and the realm of God's love. (161-205, 1987.2.4)

How can we be separated from Satan? We must stand in a position of Adam's representatives, being able to make indemnity conditions. Therefore, separation from Satan takes place when a person in Adam's position meets qualifications as the one who fulfilled his portion of responsibility according to the original standard, and when this person confronts Satan centering on love and sets the conditions that enable him to be related to Heaven's side more than people belonging to Satan's side are and to love with heavenly love more than with satanic love.

You must understand that indemnity conditions are established in this way. Since Satan controls the environment, he will use intrigues and slander, and he will resort to all means to cut you away from God. However, if you overcome such an environment and, as God's representative, restore the portion of responsibility lost by Adam no matter what happens, you will not fail. It will be eternal. Besides, no indemnity can be accomplished unless in loving God you set an absolute standard of faith no matter who says what. (161-205, 1987.2.4)

What does an indemnity condition separate you from? First, you complete your portion of responsibility and then you love God. No matter how much Satan persecutes and attacks you, if you drive him away without wavering, if he strikes you over and over again but you do not retreat, then he will have to retreat instead. This is the way to be separated from Satan. Unless this is done, there is no way to indemnify Cain and Abel. (161-205, 1987.2.4)

How can a vertical indemnity condition be set? It is through the two con-

ditions of completing one's portion of responsibility and completing the restoration of absolute love toward God. Since there is such a standard, Jesus said, "He who loves father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and he who loves son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me." (Matt. 10:37). Jesus' words came from this fundamental law. This is how the questions in the Bible are resolved. Similarly, do you love me in such a way? (161-213, 1987.2.4)

The way of restoration through indemnity is the way we must inevitably go. We must be separated from Satan. Without separation from Satan, there is no fulfillment of your portion of responsibility. And without fulfilling your portion of responsibility, there is no way you can enter the Kingdom of Heaven. God's law drove Adam and Eve out, but are you better than Adam and Eve? Answer me. Are you any better than them, or not? If you are inferior to them, then throwing you away is not a big deal. If people just put on airs and come in and out of the church that does not make them Unification Church members. You should have a clear understanding of the Principle. (148-156, 1986.10.8)

Our concept of life is that we live for the sake of the world. We live for the sake of the world, for the sake of God, and furthermore for the liberation of God, Parents, and the world. Aren't these things the contents of a life of Unificationists? It is not enough to simply know restoration through indemnity in order to achieve liberation. Because the portion of responsibility exists, we can put everything in good order. (148-166, 1986.10.8)

Cain and Abel are not fully responsible for everything. Then who is? Adam and Eve, the Parents, are. Since I have that responsibility, I am responsible for everything you could not accomplish and for everything that Christianity failed to do, so in forty years I fixed everything on the levels of an individual, family, tribe, people, nation, and the world. In this way, I restored through indemnity the portion of responsibility of the individual and created a wall to push Satan away…. Since I created the realm of completion of the portion of responsibility, a new world begins from this point. Since I accomplished this in a position higher than that of the world, from now the Kingdom of Heaven has become possible. That is why the terms "creation of the Kingdom of Heaven" and "creation of the homeland" arise today. This is all according to the Principle. (148-163, 1986.10.8)

Who has been moving history until now? Satan has. Therefore, we must be separated from him. Unless we remove Satan, there is no way God can enter. It is not God's territory. Since we are still in the territory of Satan, unless we set indemnity conditions in this fallen realm and separate from Satan, unless we lay the indemnity conditions to drive Satan away, God's domain will not expand and the foundation for God's activities can-

not be built. Therefore, we must be separated from Satan and drive him away completely. (161-204, 1987.2.4)

Let the satanic world persecute me as much as it wants! Let it strike me! I will capture them all! With what? With the power of love, with God's creative power! If I do so, God will be with me. In such a position God acts with me. Try doing it to see if He will be with you or not. I have been fighting never forgetting about this even when I was in prison or when I was tortured. Isn't that how you separate from Satan? (161-213, 1987.2.4)

Nowadays, Unification Church members do not like the way of indemnity. That means they do not like restoration. You cannot say "Oh, I like restoration but I don't like indemnity!" If so, which comes first: restoration or indemnity? You like restoration, but dislike indemnity, but from God's point of view it should be the opposite. Which side are you on? God's side or Satan's side? You must clearly understand this. You like restoration. But from God's side, you cannot prefer restoration. Restoration takes place only after you have paid the indemnity, after you are through with that. (116-127, 1981.12.27)

Why do we need indemnity, restoration through indemnity? Without indemnity, there is no way to make Satan surrender. If the focal point of God's original love dwelt in an individual, would Satan be there or not? From the point of view of the Principle, would Satan exist there or not? (181-214, 1988.10.3)

In order to restore this through indemnity, you must do the opposite things. That is where the term "absolute faith" came from. Since the first ancestors of humankind fell due to their disbelief, we must overcome this and move up. We must move above the line where our ancestors fell. We must have absolute faith. Absolute faith goes forward until we die, or even beyond death. It wants to go forward even when a person is dying.

You do not understand absolute faith, do you? Where is the limit of absolute faith? If I were to compare it with the living person, it is a person who is willing to go forward even if he is dying. And even when this person dies, he falls not sideways, but straight forward. In this sense, if I deny my faith, I choose the way of death. (126-34, 1983.4.10)

Second is self-denial. You must deny yourself 100 percent. It is self-denial. You must deny everything: your eyes wanting to see, your mouth wanting to eat. There was not a single day that I was not hungry until I reached the age of thirty. This was to deny my own self. (126-39, 1983.4.10)

Third is absolute love. Absolute love means digesting one's enemy.... Revenge does not mean forgiveness. The enemy should willingly hand over to you his nation, all his rights, and even his right of a first son. You must receive these things from him. (126-46, 1983.4.10)

Now that you have understood that the side that dislikes indemnity is Satan's side, and the side that likes indemnity is God's side, reflect on yourself quietly. "Am I on God's side or on Satan's side?" You know the answer, so ask yourself. Until now you have been following the path of God's will, but now that you clearly know that Satan's side likes restoration, and God's side likes indemnity, which way would you go? (116-127, 1981.12.27)

In following me, you have experienced going fundraising, haven't you? You probably said, "Oh my goodness. I hate fundraising, so what am I doing?" But that is only the beginning. Now, I may even tell you to walk backwards. The world is upside-down, so I may well tell you, "Since the world is evil, you should walk backwards!" If we walk like evil people, we may become evil. So, we must go the opposite way. Only then can we become good people. That's logical. (133-69, 1984.7.8)

Section 4. You Must Set Indemnity Conditions Yourself

4.1. No one else can set indemnity conditions for you

You must make indemnity conditions yourself. It is not something that another person can do on your behalf. The Fall refers to losing the right of dominion. To achieve restoration, we must go forward with our own firm proactive nature, no matter how much others may interfere. Whatever paths others may take, we have to be busy going our own path. Whatever others may say from the side, we have no time to worry about this. We have no time to sleep at night. We don't have spare time to sit comfortably and eat. Unless we have that kind of desperate heart, we cannot go the way of restoration. (22-211, 1969.2.4)

Since the Fall was the mistake of human beings, restoration through indemnity must also be carried out by human beings. The fundamental rule is that the one who committed a sin must indemnify it. Since the first parents became false, unless True Parents come and indemnify everything, there is no way to go back to God. True Parents are the ones who will resolve all this. True Parents are people with such value that cannot be exchanged even if you offered your life millions and billions of times over. Therefore, you must find True Parents and be able to say, "I put my life at stake to follow you." (55-161, 1972.5.7)

What were the consequences of the Fall? God and the angelic world were expelled from the human world; the world of all creation was lost. Next, all levels were lost from an individual, to the family, tribe, people, nation, and the world. Who is responsible for that? That responsibility is neither with God, nor with the world of angels, nor with all things. Humankind is responsible. People are responsible for these consequences. Therefore, people are destined to take responsibility and walk the path

of restoration. (100-264, 1978.10.22)

The way of restoration requires you to cut your way through in the direction opposite to that of the Fall. Walking the way of indemnity is a basic principle for fallen people. Unless you surmount this path, you cannot restore your original status. You must clean up yourselves. You must possess a sound theoretical system explaining how to restore the individual, the family, the tribe, the ethnic people, the nation, and the world. (God's Will - 354)

While you are witnessing or fundraising as a Unification Church member, do you know what happens if you start saying, "Oh, this is too hard for me, I can't do it!" It becomes something centered on you, not centered on God. When you think about such basic principles, you must clearly understand that if anyone who has become a Unification Church member says he cannot go on, or complains while doing his task, that disqualifies him. Those who work in the Unification Church for their own benefit may very soon begin complaining about Rev. Moon and the church when faced with difficulty and assert that all the work they have done in the Unification Church is theirs. (92-256, 1977.4.18)

The Kingdom of Heaven is a place where we attend God as the absolute center and develop relationships of love through Him. God carries out the providence of salvation in order to set this foundation straight, so asserting oneself is absolutely not permissible. (92-255, 1977.4.18)

Since Adam was unable to fulfill his portion of responsibility, we are in a position where we cannot receive help from anyone to fulfill our responsibility and complete our mission. The final decision will be made by us. In other words, God does not decide whether we will be good people or evil people; we must decide this ourselves. (29-333, 1970.3.14)

You must stand in a position more earnest than life. That is why even when you are hungry, you should still pray. Even while fasting, you must invest yourself. You must invest God's love and the power of your life into all the nations. As you do so, God will never answer your questions, and He will pretend that He does not see what you are doing. God cannot interfere. He will not interfere until your investment is complete. What is the human portion of responsibility? It means attaining completion on your own, doesn't it? Similarly, when you go forward with prayer, God does not interfere. It is really strange, but God sometimes even opposes you. (180-195, 1988.8.22)

Where should the cardinal point determining victory or defeat be set? You should not place it in me. Even though I have got such a cardinal point, it has nothing to do with you. You each have five percent of your own portion of responsibility. (31-208, 1970.5.31)

Each time when the living environ-

ment of an individual and the age he is living in change, there is always the course of the five percent of one's portion of responsibility that he must strive to complete in order to determine his position as God's object partner responding to His call. This is true for individuals, as well as for churches, nations, and the world. (40-66, 1971.1.24)

What kind of a being is God? Do you think He is a glorious God, sitting on His throne? It is not like that. What has God been doing so far for fallen humankind? God has been weeping loudly everyday as He works to save humankind. That has been the situation of God as He leads humankind.

God is such a miserable being. In order to save human beings who fell into the pits of misery, God is waking people up from sleep, shouting "Come! Come to me!" But God cannot make people come to Him like that. They must fulfill their portion of responsibility. So, as God cannot do our part for us, how difficult it is for God to do His work! (20-220, 1968.6.9)

4.2. The mindset necessary to fulfill one's responsibility

Human beings are in a midway position where they must determine whether they belong to the side of goodness or to the side of evil. A person cannot receive help from a third party to decide whether he is heading in the direction of goodness or evil; he must decide this by himself. Furthermore, we must understand that since we are the descendants of fallen people who were unable to fulfill their portion of responsibility, we stand at a serious crossroad where we must decide this. (29-333, 1970.3.14)

Section 5. There is No Separation from Satan without the Law of Indemnity

5.1. I am standing at a divide

I have been in and out of prison several times, in both North and South Korea. You must know this. Why must we accomplish restoration through indemnity? Why should we be separated from Satan? The reason we should separate from Satan is in order to make free the realm of the portion of responsibility. Did Satan interfere with the life of Adam and Eve before the Fall? You cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven if Satan has interfered with your life.

Where are you standing now? Your conscience knows where you are. You cannot deceive it. It knows where you are going. (148-199, 1986.10.9)

Restoration through indemnity is inevitable. Why should we accomplish restoration through indemnity? Why should we separate from Satan? It is because we need the foundation of a free environment where we can naturally fulfill our original portion of responsibility. It is because we need to hold onto a place where Satan cannot accuse us or be connected with us in any way. Thus, logically, we must inevitably meet the

standard of restoration through indemnity and fulfill our portion of responsibility. That is why you must separate from Satan. That is why you must have the thinking not to be related to the satanic world, even if you have to starve. That is the divide. This is the borderline. (148-204, 1986.10.9)

The way of restoration through indemnity is the way of separation from Satan. Why should we be separated from Satan? In order to find the realm of the portion of responsibility. Originally, Satan does not exist in the realm of the portion of responsibility. That is the realm of Adam's portion of responsibility. The original standard is that the realm of Adam's portion of responsibility cannot be invaded by Satan. We need to instill that clear notion into people's minds. We must go this path in any case. We must complete our portion of responsibility and be grafted onto God's love. If we want to graft onto God's love, we must separate from Satan. We must be completely separated from everything related to Satan. (148-197, 1986.10.9)

Why did restoration through indemnity come about? For what purpose did it appear after the Fall occurred? If there were no portion of responsibility, then there would be no need for the term "restoration through indemnity." In what position did human beings fall? They fell during the course of fulfilling their portion of responsibility. At that time, human beings handed over the realm of the portion of responsibility to Satan. It was taken by Satan. Therefore, we must regain the realm of the portion of responsibility. (143-77, 1986.3.16)

If God had not given fallen human beings a portion of responsibility, the term "restoration through indemnity" that we emphasize today in the Unification Church would not have appeared. Simple restoration would have been enough.

You must pay indemnity! Why? It is because human beings do have a portion of responsibility. Since human beings violated their given portion of responsibility, they must fulfill it. To do so, you must win over everything that belongs to the satanic world and in a dignified manner rid yourselves of its climate of opposition. You must enter a place where you can receive God's love. If you accomplish this, Satan will depart from you. (143-77, 1986.3.16)

You are still within the realm of the portion of responsibility, even as the descendants of fallen people. Have you reached individual perfection within the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle? Have you become connected to God's love? Have you laid a foundation that enables you to be connected with God directly through a bond of love? If you look at these questions from the viewpoint of your portion of responsibility, you will have to say that you have been unable to accomplish these things. Restoration through indemnity is necessary for us to be separated from Satan. Your por-

tion of responsibility cannot be fulfilled unless you are separated from Satan. (148-148, 1986.10.8)

You all have been living without understanding how important the portion of responsibility is. This is the standard for liberation. What is restoration through indemnity? It is needed to create a free environment in which we can fulfill our portion of responsibility. Since Satan is invading us, what must we do to protect ourselves? We must love God and love other people more than we love Satan. He hates God and hates humankind, but we on the opposite side must be able to say, "I love God and humankind more than I love you." Unless we stand in such a position, being able to create a one-way street based on the standard of a person who has not fallen, we will never be able to separate ourselves from Satan. (148-154, 1986.10.8)

We must inevitably go the way of restoration through indemnity. We must separate from Satan. Without separation from Satan, there is no fulfillment of the portion of responsibility. And without fulfilling your portion of responsibility, there is no way for you to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. God's law drove Adam and Eve out. Are you better than Adam and Eve? Answer me. Are you any better than them, or not? If you are inferior to them, then throwing you away is not a big deal. If people just put on airs and come in and out of the church that does not make them Unification Church members. You should have a clear understanding of the Principle. (148-156, 1986.10.8)

We need restoration through indemnity to be separated from Satan. Unless we are separated from Satan, we will not be able to accomplish our portion of responsibility. (148-148, 1986.10.8)

Satan invaded upon the condition of people not fulfilling their responsibility. Therefore, once the portion of responsibility is fulfilled, Satan will be banished. Satan cannot stay once the portion of responsibility is fulfilled. (137-254, 1986.1.3)

Have you completed your portion of responsibility, or is it still incomplete? You have not completed it, so do you have any relationship with me? You must understand this.

Why must we accomplish restoration through indemnity? Originally, before the Fall, Satan could not bring any accusation in the realm of the portion of responsibility. If you are in a place where Satan invades, you are not within the realm of the portion of responsibility. Therefore, he cannot invade the place where indemnity is being paid. That kind of place is a prison. (148-156, 1986.10.8)

With the power of my love for God I willingly go to prison in Satan's world. I welcome with greatest joy the place that Satan hates the most. The people of this world dislike suffering, don't they? But the members of the Unification Church like hardships. Why do they like them? Because they want to accomplish resto-

ration through indemnity…. Arrogant behavior is Satan's characteristic. He cannot go down to a low place. (148-156, 1986.10.8)

In order to protect yourself from Satan, you must love God more than you love anybody else. You must love Him more than you love anybody in this world and in the universe. You must love God more than you love yourself. Since you are a fallen person, you must love God more than you love your own self. Satan loves himself more than he loves God and the world. That is Satan. Therefore, if you are basing your life on individualism, you are the princes of Satan. (148-161, 1986.10.8)

If there were no law of the portion of responsibility, it would be impossible to bring things in order. Due to the portion of responsibility we can dispose of Satan and clearly divide the heavenly kingdom into two nations with clear borders, thus entering the era of a cosmic dominion centered on God's love. This is the Kingdom of Heaven in heaven and on earth, the spirit world and physical world, under God's direct dominion. Do you understand clearly? You are the problem. Where are you now? You are always on the borderline. When you are on the borderline of restoration through indemnity centering on an individual, Satan cannot follow you. (148-166, 1986.10.8)

What concept of life do Unification Church members have? It is to live for the sake of the world, for the sake of God, and furthermore, for the sake of the liberating God, True Parents, and the world. These must become the core of Unification Church members' daily life. (148-166, 1986.10.8)

5.2. How to get out of the realm of Satan (the realm of the Fall)

In order to be completely saved, you must cleanse your sins. You must clear up all the sins you have committed in the past and those you are committing in the present. In order to clear up your sins, you must do things that do not deviate from the Principle. (55-158, 1972.5.7)

Since human beings got out of order due to the Fall, in order to repair the damage we must follow the basic rules and principles that existed before the disorder occurred. In order to comply with the laws of creation, we must go through the course of the history of re-creation. The Fall began with making one's partner invest for one's sake instead of investing for the sake of the partner. Therefore, we need to go through a reverse process of investing ourselves. That is why religion teaches self-sacrifice. (69-84, 1973.10.20)

What is the disease that humankind developed after the Fall of Adam and Eve? Human beings caught the disease of Satan-centered love, and because of that disease of false love, they have been multiplying Satan's lineage ever since. (God's Will - 437)

We inherited Satan's lineage and were born as his own children; that's our disease. But how did this disease of love begin? The disease of the Fall started when Adam and Eve denied the proper order, denied the principles of heaven and earth and the environment established by God, and engaged in self-centered love. Thus, to cure yourselves of this disease, you must deny yourselves and make God the absolute center of your lives. If the Archangel, Adam, and Eve had desired a God-centered love, they would not have fallen and would have built an ideal world. (92-255, 1977.4.18)

In order to get out of the satanic realm, we must have a view centered on God. That is the only way we can get out of there. Since there is no other way we can do it, we must inevitably choose this path. (God's Will - 437)

The way you have to go is difficult, but you must think about God, who is walking this path before you, and your friends and brothers and sisters, who are walking by your side. You also must keep in mind that the path to the destiny that humankind must head for still lies in front of us. You must make up your mind to go this way until the end of your life. With such thinking, you can transcend the point of Satan's Fall that he perpetrated through his self-centeredness. You can go over the realm of the Fall when your thinking is centered on God, rather than on yourselves. Therefore, the most difficult time for the Unification Church signifies that the day is drawing near when we kick away the most difficult realm of Satan's Fall and are liberated. (92-256, 1977.4.18)

The Fall in essence is a lapse into the state of death. In order to be saved, therefore, you have to plunge yourself bravely into that state of death. If that is an unavoidable and destined course, then you must confront it as a man should – with a joyful heart. When the number of church members walking the way of God's will with such determination increases, the world will move in a new direction. Our hearts are burning with the desire to form that kind of foundation. Do you have the conviction that enables you to transcend the border between life and death?

I have confronted Satan in tens, hundreds, thousands or even tens of thousands of life-and-death situations. I never altered the standard I had set, even when unspeakably difficult circumstances surged against me repeatedly like waves. I will not depart from the standard of heart that I had at the beginning, even if my legs break, my eyeballs pop out, or my head falls off. Thus, as long as I do not die, I will win. (22-184, 1969.2.2)

How can you get rid of the love and the lineage belonging to the satanic realm? If you love yourself and think only of yourself, Satan will drag you along at any time. On the contrary, if you deny yourself and put God in the center of your thinking and your life, Satan will no longer control you; instead

God will come to you and take charge of you. By doing so, you can be liberated from the archangelic realm of the satanic world. You will rise from the position of the fallen archangel to the position of the archangel who is not fallen. Therefore, you must die! Act as if you are dead. You have to be trampled under foot constantly. (92-264, 1977.4.18)

As far as I know, there is no way you can unite mind and body when rising to a high position. If you rise to the top with a lofty mindset, there is no way to be united. You must be trampled on. Even in my case, God has been trampling on me with His feet for forty years now, so that I would not rise high. Since He's been doing that, all my aspirations to rise were stirred up and I could unite with Him. You must be cursed at, trampled upon, and mistreated wherever you go, like Kim Sat-gat who roamed all over the Korean peninsula. But even in such circumstances you must discover yourself and be able to digest everything with joy. (144-255, 1986.4.25)

You must live within the framework of love with the determination in your heart to love more than Satan does, with the desire to love God and the universe; you must be able to say, "For the sake of God's will and the liberation of humanity, I will go down to the abyss." How do you go down? Try being trampled upon. Let all the four billion people of the world walk over you. I do not complain, even when I am trampled on. I digest everything with gratitude and love. That is what you must do. (138-288, 1986.1.24)

Section 6. Faith Means Keeping the Law of Indemnity

The Unification Church is 95 to 98 percent to do with the life of faith. Since human beings lost 95 percent of what God created, our re-creation takes place only after we complete 95 percent. Once that is done, we must fulfill the remaining 5 percent. How difficult that is! If the Fall had not occurred, Heaven would have done 95 percent and we would only have to do five percent. But due to the Fall, God cannot do that for us again. We must accomplish re-creation. That means we must do 95 percent plus 5 percent. Therefore, we must be ready to die. We must be prepared for sacrifice. Don't think of comfort until we have completed the worldwide course of restoration… (142-84, 1986.3.1)

On coming to this earth I brought four tremendous truths to the world of believers. I clarified the relationship between God and human beings; I gave clear explanations about the portion of responsibility and indemnity – things that no one in history had known about. The next question is why life is difficult for conscientious people, and why evil people live well. I clarified the law of indemnity and the problem of Cain and Abel, which no one had known about. (161-153, 1987.1.18)

Human beings inherited fallen nature and became slaves to their habits.

Nowadays, even religious people tend to lead a very habitual life. A routine life of faith is dangerous. Such a life of faith becomes a major factor presenting Satan with the conditions for accusation. As people walk the course of restoration, Satan uses every method possible to find opportunities for recurrent invasion, trying not to lose even one person. Satan has to separate from individuals due to the indemnity conditions they set, but he may invade them again on the level of the family or on the national level. (167-98, 1987.6.30)

We must go through a certain formula course, but you do not understand clearly about that formula. "We don't need indemnity. Why should we walk this difficult path of indemnity?" People who say that will inevitably die within Satan's realm. He will claim that they belong to his realm. You must conquer Satan's territory and repel Satan. You must capture his realm. Stand up boldly. Clear things from your past. This is your responsibility in your life of faith. You must understand this clearly. (167-319, 1987.8.20)

Restoration through indemnity is not conditional restoration. You must understand that indemnity is real. This is not written in the Divine Principle. It is probably the first time that you are hearing that conditional indemnity is actually real indemnity. Therefore, when you think about the course of restoration until now, God raised from the satanic world one person who was the most conscientious. Noah was exactly that kind of a person. God had Noah set the foundation of absolute faith. God settled on the earth through Noah's family. God needs a man of absolute faith, a woman of absolute faith, a four-position foundation of absolute faith. (183-164, 1988.10.31)

God established religion in order to restore fallen man through indemnity. Through religion, God is teaching the method to strengthen a God-centered spirit and the method to reverse the dominion of the physical body over human life and character. This is why religion requires fasting, sacrificial service, a meek and humble attitude, and other such things. These are methods to reduce the force of the physical body and make the body obey the spirit. Usually it takes from three to five years to get rid of life habits centered on the physical body and to create a new lifestyle centered on the spirit. (201-208, 1990.4.9)

What is indemnity centered on? What is the content of indemnity? It is the issue of love: whether you love Satan more or God more. Everything is about the issue of love. In order to pay indemnity, you must believe in God absolutely. However, Satan did not believe in God absolutely. He betrayed God. Satan betrayed God during the course of his mission. Therefore, when you are going the way of indemnity, first of all your faith and actions must be absolute. (206-238, 1990.10.14)

In the course of indemnity, you must

fulfill your portion of responsibility. What is the key point in the fulfillment of the portion of responsibility? Without loving Heaven more, without having absolute faith and absolute love, you cannot subjugate Satan. (139-279, 1986.1.31)

The era of restoration through indemnity that has lasted until now is passing away. Since it is passing away, the time is coming when people will be immediately caught if they act in violation of the law. In the era of restoration through indemnity people have been moving in circles: if the first attempt failed, they could have a second one. In this way they were able to progress. Now, however, we have passed the era of restoration through indemnity and entered the era of restoration. In the era of restoration we cannot take our time to resolve mistakes. Things will happen immediately. You must understand this clearly, and if you had only a faint concept of faith in the past, you must toss that out and be determined to take the lead. (144-128, 1986.4.12)

I have been walking the way for the sake of God's will. Looking at my life, no one can understand the path I am going. However, my life has a deep and broad background that is understood by Heaven. When you think about this, am I fortunate or unfortunate? I am fortunate. People oppose me not because they want to. Without opposition, restoration through indemnity will not occur.

Knowing that everything we do we do by Heaven's direction you must be grateful. If you continue being grateful you will ultimately come to a world you had never thought of, and the world that opposed you will fall into consequences it would have never imagined. That is why the life of those who live in attendance of Heaven must be filled with gratitude. (138-129, 1986.1.19)

The valuable thing is to move closer to Heaven step by step, regarding as precious the results brought about by your loyalty. Even if you are offering loud prayers expressing great ambition that does not mean that God's will is going to be fulfilled. On the path of restoration through indemnity all the people who claim they are the best will fall away. Don't I also say that I am the best? Well, among everything I have taught you so far there was nothing I had not put into practice before teaching it to you. I practiced it, I completed it, and then I taught it to you; isn't that true? (142-89, 1986.3.1)

God's liberation will not be accomplished unless people become one with True Parents and remove all conditions for Satan's accusations, thus making it possible to offer to God everything on this earth. How do you come into the realm of ownership of God's heart? Your parents, yourselves, and all things of creation could not stand on an equal footing, belonging to God. We must restore this through indemnity. (137-268, 1986.1.3)

How grateful were you to accept the fact that you are going the way of restoration through indemnity, the predes-

tined way of the portion of responsibility? You must consider it once again. You cannot say, "Oh, I like the words of the Principle of the Unification Church, but I don't like restoration through indemnity!" In order to be admitted to a university, in order to walk though its gates, you must take an exam. The path opposite to what you desire lies ahead of you. You cannot enter school unless you solve the task. It is the same with us. The way of the Unification Church is not easy. (138-120, 1986.1.19)

You understand better than anyone why you must follow this way, why your soul is being pressured like that, and why your conscience is pushing you so that you are having a hard time. The question is why your heart is this way. It is because the right path lies in front of your eyes, it is because there is the history you must follow, and the predestined crucial way of restoration through indemnity that people must walk is yet to be trodden. If you fall away, you cannot go this path.

You cannot go this way unless you ride on the back of Parents. No matter how filthy a fly may be, if it clings to the belly of a swift horse and endures without falling away, the fly can travel a thousand miles. You are in the same position. You must cling onto True Parents and move together with them, even if you are upside down; you must not fall off. (138-120, 1986.1.19)

Nowadays believers are forgetting that they are going the way of restoration through indemnity. Why did Adam and Eve fall? It is because they forgot about the course of the portion of responsibility. They fell because they forgot about the reality. While the realm of the portion of responsibility remains incomplete, human beings stand in a position where they cannot but groan; moreover, they are not in the position to freely enter this realm. Since human beings are fallen, in order to reach the position where they can freely fulfill their portion of responsibility, they must emancipate themselves from the historical realm of the Fall. Otherwise, people cannot walk the path of restoration. (142-82, 1986.3.1)

Those who have completed restoration through indemnity, raise your hands. You no-goods! You fickle scoundrels! You ought to be beaten with a club; you have to be cursed! You should by struck by lightning! If you haven't done it, even I cannot help you. I taught you everything clearly. The spirit world is transformed according to what I say. If you go there without doing that, you'll be trapped. No matter how much husband and wife say they have loved their children, when they go to the spirit world that will all stop.

Just as paradise has emerged in the spirit world, for the families in the Unification Church there will be a paradise where they stay before entering the Kingdom of Heaven. You won't even be able to love there. How can you love each other? You won't be able to love your own child, no matter how much you may want to. What will you do? Even though

wives may tell their husbands, "You used to love me, so why do you act differently after coming here?" husbands won't be able to love them. You won't be able to love. In the position you are in, you are not supposed to love. (148-168, 1986.10.8)

I want to ask you one thing: Have you been walking the way of restoration through indemnity? Have you lived this way? Our destiny is to restore the first son and though the road to that restoration, which lies ahead of us, is blocked, have you made desperate efforts, have you struggled with the resolve to go over that ridge at any cost? You have not. You have not tried. You have been just following me. For what reason have you been following me? Because you liked me. Why did you follow me? You have been following me not because you were motivated by the Principle, but simply because you liked me. (138-134, 1986.1.19)

Do not think that if you join the Unification Church and just sit there in a careless manner that you will go to the Kingdom of Heaven! You must inherit the realm of heart. When will you fulfill restoration through indemnity? I told you to go and do it, but when did you go? (140-197, 1986.2.9)

What is the most difficult thing for human beings? Satan has three main gates, and the first gate is eating. This wretched mouth eats and eats and eats, and still demands better food. It keeps doing this. The second gate is resting. If you just sleep, you always want to rest. Isn't that so? You don't want to work. What is the third gate? Lust. People have a tendency to be unfaithful to their spouses. If there are people in the Unification Church who cheat on their spouses and have love affairs with others, they deserve the judgment of fire. Such a time may come. It has not happened because I have not commanded it. Didn't God drive Adam and Eve out of the Garden of Eden? There was no way to deal with those reprobates. There were only two of them, so there was no way to deal with it. But now, it is different. There are many such people. I do not want to see such things happening in my time. That is why I am saying this is serious. (199-107, 1990.2.16)

Section 7. The Way of Indemnity is the Way of Absolute Obedience and Absolute Submission

Why should religious people obey absolutely? It is necessary in order for them to become absolute object partners in relation to the absolute Subject partner. And when facing evil, don't you ever become its partner, even if you have to die. I am telling you, never become accomplices of evil! The commandment to love means that you should love people, but do not love the sin people are united with. You must understand this. (57-57, 1972.5.28)

If God is absolute, I must also desire an absolute position. If God is unchanging, I must also become unchanging.

If God is unique, I must also become unique. If God is eternal, I must also be eternal.

From this point of view, human beings must inevitably have an eternal life. Everything comes to this resultant point; I think it is a fair conclusion. Even if God has love, life, and ideal, but I do not have all these things, it is all in vain. (69-74, 1973.10.20)

You should not have selfish ambitions. You must become completely and absolutely one with me. There is only one root. If the root is being pulled, the entire tree is being pulled. A trunk or branch cannot have an awareness of itself. They cannot assert themselves. There cannot be two directions. There is only one. We will have a freedom to move in all four directions only after we have built a victorious foundation and secured our position. Unless that is accomplished, there is no freedom. Do you understand what I mean? Therefore, you cannot act freely. (169-199, 1987.10.31)

What until now has been the center of life of religious people? Jesus was an unfortunate person. From a humanistic point of view, Jesus had no personal claims. Night and day, he only served God's will and had no will of his own. He absolutely obeyed God's will. Absolute obedience! Why did he obey absolutely? There is only one absolute original Subject, but Satan formed another realm of the subject, forming a triangular shape; thus Jesus did what he did in order to remove Satan.

Today, human beings are under the control of Satan's domain. To escape from this situation in the satanic realm, they must follow the path Satan hates the most. Therefore, a religion commands one to be absolutely obedient to his conscience. Since God is absolute, there is a requirement for people in the religious world to become a minus which aims at making them absolutely one with God. (57-114, 1972.5.29)

Be absolutely obedient! Absolute obedience does not lead you to death. What happens when you obey? You become one with the person you obey. What happens, once you become one? You repel evil. Since you become completely one, evil is repelled. Therefore, evil can be removed. This is the principle. (57-114, 1972.5.29)

In God's will, there is a will related to His ideal, and a will to restore people through indemnity because they have fallen. You must understand that there are the two kinds of will. If so, which kind of will should we follow? The second one. If so, can there be even an iota of freedom in the religious life of the people who follow Heaven on the path of this second type of God's will? There cannot be even an iota of freedom. (134-117, 1985.2.25)

We must have absolute faith. When asked if you believe in the Unification Church, you must answer, "I go this way with absolute faith." (46-99, 1971.7.25)

What is absolute faith? If there is a leader of a religion you believe in, there can be a historical gap of a few thousand years between you and him. But through the faith in your heart, you can enter the realm of the same era with him on a horizontal plane. That is why I am telling you to believe absolutely. When you believe absolutely, you come to realize that you are together with that person. Moreover, you come to understand that you are living together with that person. You must know that faith is meant to stimulate people and give them new awareness of this fact. (32-162, 1970.7.12)

Absolute faith will pass, and absolute obedience will also pass; what remains at the very end is absolute love. Faith, love, and hope, these three are always there, but what is said to be the first among these three? Love! Faith passes and hope also passes, but love remains until the very end. I am telling you the same thing. Even absolute faith will pass. (169-130, 1987.10.29)

You must be bold even at the time of death. When you close your eyes and think, "Now I am dead," you will already be in the other world. Such a leap will take place. The Unification Church has been developing like this. If you are in a dumbfounding and shocking situation, when all four directions are blocked and you can neither stay on the earth nor rise to heaven, and yet you go over that situation ready to die, then the living God will surely manifest Himself. That is why whether God exists or not is not even an issue for me. (126-38, 1983.4.10)

Then you must assimilate your enemy. You must love your enemy. That path is not easy. Not only must you deny yourself hundreds of times, but you must move up to a position where you are able to love your enemy. Unless you do that, you cannot stand on God's side. (126-44, 1983.4.10)

A religion cannot start from a concept of affirmation, because our ancestors fell. The first condition necessary in order to deny that is absolute faith. Do you understand? So, do you have absolute faith? That is why we must discover the reason why people are going the way of asceticism. Do you not wish that this Mr. Moon would come today and reveal the entire secret world of religion? Why do we have to go the way of asceticism? Why do we have to sacrifice? Why believe absolutely? If we call pastors and ask them these three questions, they will not be able to answer. They will just say "Well, through faith we gain salvation." Don't be tricked by Satan's deceptive smoke-screen tactics. (126-36, 1983.4.10)

Members of the Unification Church must go the reverse route in order to accomplish restoration through indemnity. Therefore, their path does not begin from self-recognition and self-affirmation. It starts from complete denial. A perfect religion begins with self-denial, with the complete denial of the fallen world. That is why you must deny the world, deny your nation, tribe, family,

wife or husband, deny even being a man and a woman, and deny your own mind and body. You must understand how huge the scope of this denial is. Following your mind, you must even deny your own body. (126-34, 1983.4.10)

Do not think that you will receive blessings just because you believe in the Unification Church. You must think about giving blessings to others. You must strive to give away the blessings that exist in the Unification Church for the sake of your nation and the world, for the sake of something larger. If you walk your path in this way, then I will be responsible for your course and not hold you back. You must become such people. (130-61, 1983.12.11)

Some people outwardly express that they like something, but inwardly they shake their heads. Seeing this, I wish they had been born with a better character. On the path of faith, fighting and gaining victory over oneself is more difficult than conquering the world. From this point of view, the first cross we must bear is overcoming the self. (46-95, 1971.7.25)

Until now, who has completed the payment of indemnity for the portion of responsibility? Can you pay that indemnity with money? Can you pay it by selling your house and your country? Then what should you do? There is nothing you can do. You can only be absolutely obedient. You must be absolutely obedient until you are in your twenties. Adam and Eve insisted on their own way. They had a sexual encounter, thus falling before they reached the age of twenty. Until you reach your twenties, you must be absolutely obedient. Before you reach twenty, you must obey. Therefore children are absolutely obedient. They are, even if you do not teach them to be like that. They know that if they do not become one with their parents, they will go to ruin. You will go to ruin if you do not become one with God. (133-136, 1984.7.10)

Since humankind lost the four great realms of heart and the three great kingships, we must find them. In order to accomplish this, you must submit with absolute obedience, absolute compliance, and absolute sacrifice and be willing to do whatever you are asked to. Only after you do this will parents come out from the satanic world to here. Men of the satanic world are archangels, so you must cut yourselves off from them. Then you can go up from this point. (235-293, 1992.10.25)

In the course of the restoration of Canaan, you must follow me. When wild geese fly across the ocean, they absolutely follow their leader. There are no objections. When he says, "Fly!" all the geese fly. They must follow the leader, no matter how difficult it is, even to the point of death. Until now, you have been doing something similar. However, now that you have arrived at our destination and started giving birth to children, you must care for each other and love each

other; you must create one tribe and be proud of it. Such a time must come. I have said that is what we must do now. Until now, it has been a time to move toward the blessed land of Canaan, and now we have come to a settlement age. (115-107, 1981.11.4)

A true filial son is the one who obeys. A true loyal subject even when being chased and put to death by traitors never calls his king incapable. A true loyal subject is a person of integrity and loyalty, who sheds tears with a sorrowful heart, and wishes his king a long life even when persecuted by treacherous courtiers to the point of death. This is absolute obedience. The only way to bring about success through absolute obedience is the way of true love. (164-48, 1987.5.3)

Up to now I have not told you, "Oh, you must absolutely obey my words." We must comply with the historical course. The historical course is a course of providential history trodden for the sake of God. It is for that reason that I have been teaching you about the course of the providence of restoration. I did not teach that for the sake of Rev. Moon of the Unification Church. That is why I, too, am going that way. We are heading toward the purpose of God, the Subject, and toward the purpose of humankind, the object partner. These objectives have not been accomplished, so the Unification Principle and Unification Thought advocated by the Unification Church today, in this age, are calling upon people to complete them. (71-66, 1974.4.28)

BOOK NINE

BLESSED FAMILY



Contents

Chapter 1. True Parents and the Blessing

Section 1. The Meaning and Value of the Blessing 1239
1.1. What is the Blessing? 1239
1.1.1. The meaning of the Blessing 1239
1.1.2. The value of the Blessing 1242
1.1.3. The Blessing is the formula course for humanity 1246
1.2. The Blessing's true perspectives on marriage 1248
1.2.1. True marriage reflects the form of God. 1248
1.2.2. Marriage is for the perfection of love 1251
1.2.3. Marriage brings together heaven and earth 1253
1.3. Reasons for receiving the Blessing 1255
1.3.1. Fallen human beings have false parents 1255
1.3.2. The lineage of the enemy has been inherited 1258
1.3.3. The Messiah is needed as the True Parents 1262
Section 2. True Parents, Rebirth, and Transformation of the Lineage 1264
2.1. Who are True Parents? 1264
2.1.1. True Parents are the ancestors without original sin 1264
2.1.2. True Parents give rebirth to humanity through true love 1266
2.2. The core of providential rebirth 1268
2.2.1. True meaning of rebirth 1268
2.2.2. Rebirth 1270
2.3. The central ideology is the conversion of lineage 1271
2.4. Three stages in changing the lineage 1275
2.4.1. Holy wine ceremony 1275
2.4.2. Blessing Ceremony 1278
2.4.3. Three-day ceremony for substantial restoration 1280
Section 3. Responsibilities of Blessed Families 1283
3.1. Unity of heart with True Parents 1283
3.2. The absolute value of sexual love 1286
3.3. The importance of ideal marriage 1291
3.4. Blessing is the key to perfection of the ideal family 1294

Chapter 2. True Parents and the History of the Blessing

Section 1. True Parents and the Realm of the Third Israel 1300
1.1. Blessed families are the tribe of the True Parents 1300
1.2. Formation of the realm of the Third Israel 1301
1.3. The Blessing is the key for entering the Third Israel 1303
Section 2. The History of the Blessed Couples 1304
2.1. History of the 36, 72, and 124 Couples 1304
2.2. The 430 Couples represent the nation 1310
2.3. History of the 777, 1800, 6000 and 6500 couples 1312

2.4. The 30,000 Couples: Formation stage of the international Blessing 1318
2.5. The 360,000 Couples represent the growth stage of the international Blessing 1321
2.6. The 3.6 Million Couples represent the completion stage of the international Blessing 1325

Chapter 3. The Providential Significance of the Blessed Couples

Section 1. The 36 Couples 1331
1.1. The Three Couples first blessed 1331
1.2. The significance of the 36 Couples 1332
1.3. Anecdotes from the 33 Couples Blessing 1337
Section 2. The 72 Couples 1340
2.1. Significance of the 72 Couples Blessing 1340
Section 3. The 124 Couples 1344
3.1. Significance of 124 Couples 1344
3.2. Dedication ceremony and designation of 120 holy grounds 1348
Section 4. The 430 Couples 1348
4.1. Significance of the 430 Couples 1348
4.2. The 430 Couples and tribal messiahship 1354
Section 5. The 777 Couples 1356
5.1. The 777 Couples represent the world 1356
Section 6. The 1800 Couples 1363
6.1. The background to the 1800 Couples Blessing 1363
Section 7. The 6000 Couples 1366
Section 8. The 6500 Couples 1369
Section 9. The 30,000 Couples 1371
Section 10. The 360,000 Couples 1381
Section 11. The 3.6 Million Couples 1390
11.1. The Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples brought the era of liberation 1390
11.2. From 3.6 million to 36 million couples 1397
Section 12. The 360 Million Couples 1400
Section 13. The Already Married Couples 1406
Section 14. The Single Blessing 1411

Chapter 4. Blessed Families and Registration

Section 1. Registration of the Blessed Families and Our Homeland 1419
1.1. What is registration? 1419
1.2. Registration occurs in the era of the national level Blessing 1422
1.3. Registration requires a sovereign state 1424
1.4. Reclaiming the Homeland 1427

Section 2. The Conditions for Registration 1430
2.1. Change of the right of ownership, lineage, and realm of heart 1430
2.1.1. Change of the right of ownership 1430
2.1.2. Change of lineage 1433
2.1.3. Change of the realm of heart 1435
2.2. Tribal messiahship 1436
2.2.1. Mission of tribal messiahs 1436
2.2.2. Fulfillment of restoration of 160 families 1440
2.3. Formation of the tribes and genealogy of the heavenly nation 1444
2.4. The era of the great migration is coming 1446
Section 3. The Four-Position Foundation Registration Unification Blessing Ceremony 1447
3.1. Transition of the Three Ages Realm of Oneness Unification Blessing Ceremony 1447
3.2. Four-Position Foundation Registration 1450
3.3. True Parents' instructions to Registered Families 1451
3.4. Mobilization of blessed wives and the restoration of the homeland 1451
Section 4. The Era of Registration and Our Responsibilities 1453
4.1. Registration comes from the grace of the True Parents 1453
4.2. Establishing the tradition of Blessed Families 1455

CHAPTER ONE

True Parents and the Blessing

Section 1. The Meaning and Value of the Blessing

1.1. What is the Blessing?

1.1.1. The meaning of the Blessing

The Blessing signifies the True Parents and true children coming together to fulfill the purpose of creation. (19-73, 1967. 12.27)

God exists with dual characteristics. These dual characteristics are positive and negative, the former represented by the man, Adam, and the latter by the woman, Eve. The children are thus a combination of the two of them. In this way, according to God's ideal, the first, second and third generations are formed. Out of the three generations, it was the generation of Adam and Eve, the second generation, where the problem occurred.

Adam and Eve did not become one in God's love. If they had, they would have formed a love relationship in which God could dwell. They also would have established the standard of love through which God could have naturally formed a relationship with Adam and Eve's children. This would have been the Blessing. (32-239, 1970.7.19)

The Blessing Ceremony of the Unification Church is not simply a wedding through which a man and a woman come together and form a family. Until now, all weddings were solely for the sake of the people getting married. But our wedding ceremony is significant and necessary to set a condition to indemnify the past and return joy to God. Therefore, we conduct our ceremonies in a sacred and splendid manner. Divine Principle clearly explains to us that our wedding ceremony alleviates God's bitter grief that was caused by the Fall of Adam and Eve. It goes beyond the standard of husband and wife, which Jesus was unable to attain. (22-212, 1969.2.4)

You should know that the concept of the Blessing did not begin with the Unification Church. Rather, it has been the hope of God in His innermost heart, something He has pursued and striven to fulfill throughout history since the time of creation and the Fall. To see this dream come true, God has been walking a path of suffering until this day, but the day of its fulfillment has not yet come.

That is why the day that God's hope is fulfilled will be the day of the libera-

tion of the world, and the day His historical wish is fulfilled. Knowing this, you should understand why the Blessing is so significant. (30-164, 1970.3.22)

Since the Fall of the human ancestors, Adam and Eve, human beings have waited eagerly for the day when God could bless them. (19-23, 1967.11.14)

The Blessing can resolve all the grief from history, up until the present, renew God's hope, as yet unfulfilled, and be the basis for a new beginning for the future of humanity. (30-166, 1970.3.22)

In the present era, we are heading towards the completion stage, having passed through the formation and growth stages. This is the era in which history has to move horizontally after developing vertically. In other words, it is the era in which the boundary of the six-thousand-year long history of indemnification is crossed. That is why you need to escape from the dominion of Satan. Then what is the Blessing? It is the gate you have to pass through to leave the realm Satan has dominated throughout history. (18-209, 1967.6.8)

The Blessing means we can inherit a relationship with the True Parents. I have offered devotions and fought many battles for this cause. That is why the True Parents conduct the Blessing under the same banner they used while fighting against the satanic world. (19-23, 1967.11.14)

What is the most precious thing in my life? It is the Blessing. Even for you, the greatest gift in all of history has been the Blessing. (23-317, 1969.6.8)

Even today, you have not formed a complete connection to the True Parents. The Blessing of the Unification Church is held to forge that relationship. (23-333, 1969.6.15)

True Parents take eternal responsibility for those who have received the Blessing, even when they pass on to the spirit world. I will guide and lead them. The Blessing establishes an eternal relationship between those who receive it and me. (God's Will - 538)

The full authority of Heaven is passed on when the Blessing is bestowed. (17-328, 1967.4.16)

The Blessing opens the gates of the Kingdom of Heaven. The Kingdom of Heaven is a place where only families with children enter. (12-266, 1963.5.25)

The Blessing is an eternal treasure. It is a pledge to begin a lineage that will span ten thousand generations. That is why when you defile the Blessing, your whole clan will be affected, just as the whole nation of Israel was affected by the crucifixion of Jesus. (God's Will - 550)

The Blessing is the key that opens the door to the liberation of all humanity, which has been pursued throughout the history of the providence. (22-206, 1969.2.4)

It is truly significant to receive the Blessing. Those who receive the Blessing should be able to think of themselves as God's representatives and conduct themselves as such. They should think, "If I do not move, then heaven and earth do not move." God can establish a living ideology for the sake of humankind only when this position is reached. (13-14, 1963.10.1)

God's Blessing is absolutely public in nature. It is not just for an individual, family, nation, or even the world. God's Blessing is for the whole universe. (15-67, 1965. 2.13)

The literal meaning of the word "blessing" is "praying for blessings." If you break down the word *chookbok* (blessing), *chook* means to pray or wish for something. When you are praying for blessings, what is it that is most precious? It is none other than the blessing of love. The Unification Church uses the word blessing with this meaning. The blessing of love is the greatest, because the fundamental origin of life begins with man and woman coming together in a holy wedding. It represents the most precious commitment of the universe. When praying for blessing, the best blessing you can ask for is the blessing of love, and so the Unification Church refers to marriage as the Blessing.

The people who come to our church for the first time must understand this. When we say we have received the Blessing in the Unification Church, we don't mean we have received just any blessing. When we speak of the Blessing, what we actually mean is we have been joined in holy matrimony by True Parents in the presence of God. (83-226, 1976.2.8)

The British royal household's 518 carat diamond was nothing but a shiny stone to the native people. Who would have known then that diamonds would one day become the most precious jewels in the world? People saw it shining and reflecting light, and thought it was a piece of glass. It is the same in the case of the Blessing. In one way or another, you have received the Blessing. Though it is as precious as a diamond, all of you are thinking that it is merely a piece of glass, of no particular value. You do not know the true value of it until I explain it to you. Then everyone will realize and say, "Oh! It is that precious!" (83-240, 1976.2.8)

What is the most important thing when it comes to receiving blessings? It is neither money, nor honor. It is not having power. The most important blessing is for your sons and daughters to receive good fortune in life. You must understand this. What did I say is the best blessing out of all the blessings you can receive? It is none other than giving birth to sons and daughters who can be loved by God. That is the best blessing. Then, what would happen next? If your son receives more love from God than you do, then you will also benefit from it. Isn't that how everything works?

When you see power lines extending to remote parts of the land, you can see that they hang loosely between poles.

Nevertheless, if you pull from one end, the lines become taut. In the same way, when your children receive great love from Heaven, even if you're sagging, you'll be pulled up just like the power lines. You receive benefit in this way. (78-42, 1975.5.1)

If you have the opportunity to attend a Blessing Ceremony, you should not go thinking you are just a man or a woman and there is nothing else to it. When you attend the ceremony, you are there representing men and women who have come and gone in the world over the past six thousand years. You must understand that you have been invited as such. You should experience this reality deep in your heart. (30-169, 1970. 3.22)

What era is this, now that the Blessing is finally being given? It is the time when God's wishes can finally be fulfilled and His grief of the past six thousand years can be alleviated. The wishes of Jesus, who came to earth as the son of God for all humankind, can also be fulfilled. Moreover, it is the moment when human beings can start to truly love for the first time since creation began, and receive respect, honor and joy from the creation.

Can you imagine how happy God will be on this day? On the day every evil disappears and we usher in a new era with the bright rays of the rising sun, nature will rejoice, everything in the universe will dance with joy, and we will finally celebrate the dawn of victory. (19-106, 1967.12.31)

Although our circumstances are not yet settled at the moment, my hope is that a day will come when those who remains true to the Blessing to the last will be honored as human treasures. (21-79, 1968.10.20)

1.1.2. The value of the Blessing

You must understand how important the Blessing is from a providential point of view. God's Blessing is received where the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and the Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world meet. It is the place where the eternal world and the corporeal world meet horizontally. (Blessed Family - 544)

The Blessing is the most precious thing in heaven and earth. It is also the most fearful. If a blessed member is attracted to others besides his or her spouse, it is an emotional violation of the spouse.

Good ancestors, the territory and the nation stem from you, the Blessed Families. That is why blessed members should think about the universe during every waking moment. You have received the Blessing so that you can share blessings with others. (13-67, 1963.10.17)

The place of the Blessing is a very fearful place. You cannot receive the Blessing based on your emotions alone. The value of a life is more precious than the whole universe. That is why when you make vows to take responsibility for a person, you should be ready and willing to do so forever. You must under-

stand clearly that the place of the Blessing is where these questions come up and are answered. For this reason, if a person has a chance to be in the place of the Blessing, he is truly a happy person. You must have firm resolve if you are to take part in receiving this great Blessing. (30-186, 1970.3.22)

You must know the value of the Blessing before you receive it. You should understand that through the Blessing you become one of the citizens of the Third Israel. Now that you know the significance and value of the Blessing, do you think it is possible for a person to reach individual perfection without receiving the Blessing? Are unmarried people ever treated as adults? Even in the human world, when men who have been bachelors or women who have been virgins die before they marry, they will be bachelor ghosts and virgin ghosts. Because they could not marry, they naturally became ghosts; this is just how the heavenly laws operate. (19-106, 1967.12.31)

The act of signing something is the same whether the person signing is the king of a nation or a lowly peasant. However, what can be accomplished through those signatures is very different. In the same way, when you consider the Blessing, externally it may not seem so different from other marriages. However when it comes to internal meaning and value, there is a great difference between them. (21-339, 1969.1.1)

If you were so poor you had nothing to eat or wear, would you forget about your duties and sell the Blessing you had received from God? Would you? God's Blessing is something that cannot be exchanged even for heaven and earth. (14-161, 1964.9)

The value of the Blessing is so great that it cannot be exchanged even with the whole world. There have been times when I regretted bestowing the Blessing. I have blessed you so that a man and woman can become a true father and a true mother practicing true love, according to God's will. (Blessed Family - 552)

What is the occasion of the Blessing? It is the very best place in the entire world. With whom should you establish a relationship at the place of Blessing? You cannot perfect yourself on your own. You are perfected through True Parents' love. When a child is born from its parents' bosom, regardless of whether it is good-looking or not, the child takes after its parents. In the same way, in the Unification Church, members are taught the way of the true parent. For you, that is the greatest blessing of all blessings. (35-236, 1970.10.19)

Even old women who are over eighty years of age know that they cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven if they are not blessed. So, even as they are breathing their last breath, they desperately want to be matched to someone, regardless of whether he is thousands or tens of thousands of miles away. They want to at least set the condition that they have received

the Blessing. That is how it is in the Unification Church. I must have been born under an unlucky star because that is the task I must perform. (22-18, 1969.1.1)

The fact that you have received the Blessing signifies that the time has come to start a new era in the name of the husband and wife. This new era is based on the chosen people, the church, and the tribe and the foundation the Messiah has laid on the earth for the past two thousand years. Can all of you become tribal messiahs? Even Satan cannot do anything to prevent you from becoming tribal messiahs because you are connected to Father in a father and son relationship. The Blessing is truly amazing. (21-14, 1968.8.13)

What did Jesus want so much to accomplish that he devoted himself to the task for two thousand years? It was all to hold a marriage ceremony. What marriage ceremony would that have been? The Blessing. For two thousand years, Jesus had longed and yearned for the marriage ceremony of the Blessing. In order to hold a marriage celebration, a bride must come to her groom. For Christianity, that represents the Last Days. You cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven without going beyond Christianity. (76-72, 1975.1.26)

What did Jesus hope to achieve as he brought four thousand years of history to a conclusion? He could not continue his mission because he did not have a family. If he had a family, his tribe would have restored all the past history, however long it took. Isn't it logical to say that if Jesus had a family, then his clan, his people, and his nation would all have stemmed from it? Jesus endured hardships for thirty-three years so he could have a family. He was unsuccessful in forming a family after thirty-three years of toil. Do you truly know the value of the Blessing? The Blessing is the solution that has been sought for six thousand years to clear away all resentments. (62-231, 1972.9.25)

The marriage feast of the lamb signifies that the Blessing is given for the first time in history. It establishes the standard of salvation on the family level. This is what has been sought during six thousand years of history.

The bride and groom, who are the central figures of the marriage feast of the Lamb, are coming with the mission of the True Parents. Therefore, once you receive the Blessing at the time of the Second Advent of the Lord, you open the door to salvation as the savior of your family. (19-31, 1967. 12.15)

The fact that you have become Unification Church members and have received the Blessing, signifies that you have now reached the victorious standard of having restored your family centering on God's will, for which purpose God had sent Jesus on the foundation laid by four thousand years of history. Through your victorious standard, your descendants can now inherit the grace of their ancestors who were people of merit

spanning the history of restoration. This is true even if your descendants have no opportunity to accomplish anything in the providence of restoration themselves. (23-235, 1969.5.25)

What would life have been like if woman had not been created to stand before man in the Garden of Eden? It is a universal truth that women exist. It is a miracle of miracles that both men and women exist. If one existed without the other, it would be the same as having no existence at all. That would be the end of humanity. The Blessing of the Unification Church should be understood and appreciated in this context.

Once you meet your spouse, that relationship will last forever. You must be thankful for the original love between husband and wife, which you cannot buy even if you offered the universe or God Himself. You must also be strong and bold. Those who have tasted the true love of the Unification Church will be followed by the light of love wherever they go. You cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven if you do not love humanity and the whole universe, centering on true love. (Blessing - 287)

You must think like this: "I will not change as long as God does not change. I will go on, no matter what is taken from me by someone or something from my past or present, be it a life, love or ideal that was rooted in the satanic world. Furthermore, even if God Himself changed, I will restore Him, and go on together with Him. If God is not absolute, I will make Him absolute." Once you have these thoughts in your mind, God Himself will be absolutely obedient to you. I am telling you that you have to think, "The color emanating from me is like the bright color of gold, like the luster of diamonds; it is resolute and unchanging." God has hoped for just one day, the day of the Blessing of Adam and Eve. He has had only that place and that day on His mind. (91-235, 1977.2.20)

There is no need for you to seek God. You need to seek love before seeking God. If you have love in you, God will automatically come to you. He will be drawn to you and bind Himself to you. That is why, if you want to seek God and love Him, you must think of human beings in this world as your brothers and sisters, and love them and relate to them as you would your parents, or even God. If you do so, God will come to you. This is why religion puts so much emphasis on love. However, until now, this has not been achieved, and so the Unification Church must conduct these activities in order to restore that. You receive the Blessing here, but if you expand centered on that union, the universe will become yours. (91-235, 1977.2.20)

The Blessing is the deciding factor of life and death. (27-85, 1969.11.26)

Do you know Lee Gap-seong? Of the thirty-three people who participated in the March 1st independence movement, he is the only surviving member. When you consider him with regard to that

movement, is he higher or lower in rank than the president of Korea? Without question, he is higher.

In the same way, the people who receive the Blessing through True Parents will be glorified by the world. Even if the last couple to be blessed is crippled, with one eye, crooked nose, one ear, and one arm, they will be glorified by the world. Their physical appearance and anything else that is lacking will not matter; only the fact that they received the Blessing through True Parents will be important. That is something you cannot buy even if you were to pay billions of dollars. Women in the Unification Church, do you understand that? How much do you understand? (35-71, 1970.10.3)

1.1.3. The Blessing is the formula course for humanity

The large holy wedding conducted by the Unification Church is not restricted to our church alone. It is the formula course that all humanity must go through. You must clearly understand this. Then, what is the fundamental reason for having to follow this course? The reason is that our human ancestors fell. If they had not fallen, there would be no need for us to receive the Blessing today. However, because of the Fall we now have to follow the course of restoration, through which we can return to the dominion of God. So, we have no choice but to walk this path. This is the reason why people today still believe in religion. This is what has been sought throughout history. (35-215, 1970.10.19)

Where is humanity supposed to be heading? No human being on earth can enter the Kingdom of Heaven if they have not passed through the gates of the Blessing. A lot of people believe in Christianity, but Christianity itself cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven without passing through the gates of the Blessing. When I say things like this, Christians complain that Rev. Moon of the Unification Church makes many self-righteous remarks. There may be many people who think like this and who complain out loud, but that is their problem. All fallen humanity must follow the course of the holy matrimony of the Blessing that we speak of in the Unification. Even if we face opposition from all sides, that does not change the fact that the holy matrimony of the Blessing connects the spiritual and physical worlds and allows you to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. (290-167, 1998.2.18)

What is the ultimate purpose of the Blessing? It is to restore the true family. This is the greatest purpose sought by fallen human beings.

In order to form a true family, there must first be a true person. That true person should be none other than a true man. Then that true man will seek out a true woman, and be married to that woman centering on God; that is how a true family can emerge. Because of the Fall, this did not come to pass, and so we must deny all families that have been created up until now. We must go

beyond this point and form new families according to God's providential will.

If you cannot do this, then from a Divine Principle point of view, fallen human beings will not be able to return to the original world. It must be clearly understood that fallen people, no matter who they are, cannot stand before God if they do not fulfill this formula course. (35-215, 1970.10.19)

The ideal of the Kingdom of Heaven cannot be achieved without being married and forming a family. The reason the Unification Church emphasizes that all single men and women must receive the Blessing is so the ideal of the Kingdom of Heaven can be put into practice. Not only single people, but also couples who are already married should receive the Blessing for previously married couples, after fulfilling a certain standard.

The reason I'm saying all people should receive the Blessing is so we can all return to the world of the ideal of creation. Originally, that world would have been a world created by true men and women who received the Blessing. But due to the Fall, such a history of love never came to pass. (Blessed Family - 556)

What is the Fall? It means getting married centering on Satan. Since the marriage was centered on Satan, another marriage must be conducted in the name of God, centering on Him. That marriage ceremony is a truly historic one on the world level. It is a marriage ceremony that is conducted not just among the people of a single ethnic group, but one that transcends ethnic groups and even the satanic world. It is the stepping-stone upon which we can cross over the satanic world. (82-95, 1976.1.1)

In the Garden of Eden, the weddings of the sons and daughters of Adam and Eve should have been conducted by Adam and Eve themselves, under the guidance of God. Our weddings should also be conducted in the same manner. That is why in the Unification Church, the Blessing Ceremony is conducted in the name of True Parents.

Have any of you ever seen a wedding in which the father and mother were the officiators? The fact that such a wedding was never held testifies to the fact that there is not one perfected individual in the world. A wedding ceremony is none other than the bequeathal of love. Just as our parents received love from God, you should receive love from your parents in place of the love of God. The wedding ceremony is the bequeathal ceremony in which you receive this love from your parents who are encouraging you with the words: "You should live this way!" What this means is that you receive the love of God from your parents. This is not something you can receive from a famous person. Weddings not officiated by the parents are officiated by the archangel. When an eminent person comes to officiate at a wedding, alone, like an odd shoe, he is conducting the wedding as the archangel. (96-236, 1978.1.22)

Since the Fall was brought about through the misuse of love, restoration

should be brought about in connection with the love of the new parents, centering on God. That is why, in the large holy weddings conducted in the Unification Church, I officiate together with True Mother. That is the bequeathal ceremony of love.

The tradition set up in this way will become the eternal tradition. There will be no need for a revolution. When a new tradition is established in heaven and earth that does not need to be overhauled by revolution, it will lead to the formation of a new family, new tribe, people, nation and world. It will have dominion over the earth. (35-67, 1970.10.3)

Until now, no one has been able to carry out this task; nevertheless, the Unification Church set about the work of leading the world along the path of re-creation. On the day this is fulfilled, the world will become a unified whole, and the evil satanic world will be transformed into the heavenly nation.

I think it strange that American youths are allowed to find their own spouses. This is something that is not allowed in the Holy Scriptures, and yet they are doing so in a Christian nation. It is my belief that such actions are allowed because of the materialistic civilization, as well as the satanic liberalism that they are following.

However, those of you gathered here do not do so. We cannot do what Satan has done until now. What is love? It is the fundamental rule that everyone must marry after taking into account the wishes of God and their parents. In spite of this rule, free love marriages have become possible due to the Fall. So, if this is not uprooted completely, we cannot return to the heavenly nation. (82-115, 1976.1.1)

The ways of heaven are established on the occasion of the Blessing. At the risk of my life, I have devoted my life to establishing the principles we have to follow. I am not someone who is mellow, who will listen to you and waver in my beliefs when it comes to the question of marriage. (75-284, 1975.1.12)

1.2. The Blessing's true perspectives on marriage

1.2.1. True marriage reflects the form of God.

Why should you get married? It is in order to resemble the form of God. God exists with dual characteristics. He is a unified being in which both characteristics exist together in harmony. Man and woman were created to reflect the dual characteristics of God, and so, man and woman should come together in complete unity and harmony, become like the seed, and return to the position of the true character of God. (290-170, 1988.2.18)

We should sing in praise of the greatest holiness of marriage. The only way a man and woman can love each other is through marriage. When they come together in this union, whom do they resemble? They resemble God. Only

when a man and woman unite into one can they resemble God, who created us in His image. Only then can He reside in us. (70-76, 1974.2.8)

When you consider the Divine Principle, you can see that if Adam and Eve had not fallen, and instead became perfected, they would have been prepared for marriage. In other words, Adam and Eve were the substantial object partners of God. With Him as the subject partner, they automatically became the object partners. As the object partners, they should have achieved individual perfection. This would have been the foundation upon which they could connect their objective love to God, the subject of love, and fulfill the Blessing through marriage. After all, perfection refers to marriage, and marriage refers to the realization of God's love. To put it more simply, if marriage did not exist, genuine love shared between people would never have developed in this world. Who is the owner of that love? We must understand that the owner is not human beings, but God. (76-40, 1975.1.26)

Marriage exists in order to perfect the ideal of creation. In other words, you get married to fulfill the purpose of creation. Then whose purpose is the purpose of creation? It is God's purpose before it can ever become the purpose of Adam. So, it follows that God should feel joy before Adam. That is the way it should be. Considering all this, for whom do we get married? It is for God. Simply put, marriage is for the sake of God's will, which is the purpose of creation. That Will is involved with perfecting the ideal of creation. (35-231, 1970.10.19)

Why do people get married? It is not for a man and woman to find their own love. Instead, it is in order for them to fulfill their objective positions and form a circular movement centering on the nucleus that is the vertical love of God. This is the ideal. God's ideal of creation is fulfilled centering on such a love, and only through the union of a mature man and woman can love be perfected and connected to life. The connection cannot be made through life. It is made through love. Centering on the vertical love of the Father and the horizontal love of husband and wife, the seed of the original love can finally be connected. (173-288, 1988.2.21)

God exists with dual characteristics. Therefore, when the time comes for matured Adam and Eve to form the connection of love with each other, God's masculinity can reside in Adam and His femininity can reside in Eve. By residing in our minds and bodies, God Himself can also be a part of the marriage. Adam's mind is like the holy of holies, his body is like the most holy place, and God is residing in him, both in mind and body. If this had come to pass, Adam and Eve would both have become the body of God. Adam would resemble the male characteristics of God, and Eve the female characteristics. When they come together in holy matrimony, that wedding ceremony would be where the

kingship of the universe is established. What is that kingship? It is the kingship of love. (143-236, 1988.3.19)

Why do people get married? It is to love God. Why should we love God? It is because we need to become one with the axis of God. What are we trying to achieve by becoming one with God? What happens when we become one with Him? Why should we become one with God? Centering on the absolute God and his eternal love, we can achieve eternal life. And this is not all. From the place where we come to meet with Him, the right of inheritance of the universe is bequeathed. The world created by God, centering on love, belongs to Him, but that world can become mine through the right of inheritance. (136-39, 1985.12.20)

The love between a husband and wife is engrafted to the vertical love of God. Once you become one with that vertical love, there is no one on earth who can detach it. The engrafted love is bound so strongly to the love of God that no one can ever separate it. That is why even though everyone complains about their lives and how difficult it is to go on living, they still continue to seek the path of love. (180-309, 1988.10.5)

How can you discover your value? This is the question. Men are born for women and women are born for men. Why should a man and woman come together in union? Because they cannot feel the love of God without becoming one. This is the problem. Unless a man and woman unite into one through perfected love, they cannot possess the love of God. So, why do people get married? To possess the love of God. (165-178, 1987.5.20)

Since the absolute God needs love absolutely, He needs to find an object of absolute love. (144-219, 1986.4.24)

Adam and Eve should have fully matured and become the object partners of God as the bride and groom. Then they should have received the Blessing of God and become a family through His love. This would have created the realm of perfected love that was achievable in the Garden of Eden without the Fall. If Adam and Eve had fulfilled individual maturity, they would have risen to the position where they could receive the Blessing. (76-45, 1975.1.26)

Of all the blessings in the world, the most precious blessing is the love of God. The second most precious blessing is inheriting God's power of creation. Just as God created Adam and Eve, you were given the power to create through the children you give birth to. Why do you love your children? You love them because you have inherited horizontally the great achievement of God. That achievement is the substantial creation, and so you feel the same joy from your children as God felt from Adam and Eve.

Thirdly, God bequeathed to us the right of dominion, so that we can have dominion over the creation just as God

Himself has dominion over it. Therefore, you must understand that at the moment you are married, you inherit the love of God. At the same time, as you enter the realm of perfection, you are bequeathed the power of a second creator and right of dominion.

This is why marriage refers not only to the fulfillment of God's love, but also to the bequeathal of the rights of creation and dominion. (76-45, 1975.1.26)

The ideal of creation is not achieved centering on oneself. All hearts must become one with God, the subject. If He moves, I move. If He does not move, I do not move. In other words, the inside and outside must become one centering on unity of heart. The purpose of creation cannot be fulfilled unless the standard is set, through which you can become harmonized with God in the manner described above. (35-231, 1970.10.19)

1.2.2. Marriage is for the perfection of love

What is marriage? Why do people get married? For what do they get married? It is not because the woman misses the man, and the man misses the woman. It is to perfect love. The love sought by the man cannot be found without the woman. Love cannot be fulfilled on our own. In the same way, the love sought by the woman cannot be found without the man. (144-234, 1986.4.25)

For a man to achieve individual perfection, he needs a reciprocal relationship, and that is why ultimately he needs to get married. He cannot enter the realm of perfect love if he is not married.

The reason people need to get married is so they can relate to the love of God. In other words, a man and woman cannot fully connect to the love of God if they are not married. When a man and woman get married, the love of God resides with them, and they become one centering on this love. Then, God can bequeath to them the whole universe, including God Himself, His love, and everything that belongs to Him. (135-327, 1985.12.15)

People get married to perfect their individual love while at the same time perfecting the love of their object partner. Doesn't it feel good to know you get married to perfect your love as well as the love of God?

Men and women have to get married to prepare the foundation on earth through which God can love. Only when a man and woman come together in union through love can the love of God reside there. The foundation is set by them.

In the long run, people get married for the sake of God's love; by that, I mean in order to receive the love of God. Since you are living a married life for the sake of God, His love will automatically come to you; through that, the love of God can be made yours. (165-87, 1987.5.20)

The purpose of marriage lies in perfecting the love of man and woman and

uniting their worlds of the mind into one. Marriage is the proclamation, the proof of that. If the mind and love are perfected through married life, we can safely say that the ideal of the family has been realized. So, if you achieve this before you pass away, you will definitely enter the Kingdom of Heaven. (97-276, 1978.3.26)

When a person gets married, he is doing so not just for himself, but also for his spouse as well. What do I mean by this? Marriage is more for the object partner than oneself. Just as all principles in heaven and earth involve a subject and object, it is a law of nature that man and woman should be married. The man represents the right and the woman represents the left. This is so they can form a horizontal relationship in the universe.

If the man is the subject, the woman automatically becomes his object partner, and this forms a vertical relationship with God. Therefore, marriage is not just for the man alone or the woman alone; it is to comply with the laws of nature. That is why man and woman are shaped differently. They are shaped differently so they can come together according to the laws of nature. (Blessed Family - 358)

The reason a woman enters into marriage with a man is so she can be part of the world of men. Why should a woman want to be part of the world of men? By being so, she can achieve the union of love. (Blessed Family - 359)

Man was born to seek woman and woman to seek man. Man and woman were born to come together in union and receive a higher level of love from God. They cannot receive this love alone. Even if they could receive this love alone, that love would be one-sided. Standing alone, a man or woman can never receive love that is three-dimensional and spherical. For this reason, men and women enter marriage so they can make the leap into a higher realm of love. (109-273, 1980.11.2)

In the original world, the more a man and woman unite into one, the more powerful their unity will be. Through this, a great center will appear and develop into a sphere. The more the man and woman are connected horizontally, the stronger the connection becomes with the vertical power of the parent body of love. It is precisely at this point that the mind and body become one. (109-273, 1980.11.2)

You must bear in mind the principle that marriage is not for yourself, but for your spouse. It is wrong to yearn for a spouse who is handsome or beautiful. If you understand the principle that human beings must live for the sake of others, you will automatically realize that even when you are getting married, you should do so for the sake of your spouse. Even if your spouse is ugly, you should be ready to love her more than the most beautiful woman in the world. This is in accordance with the principled view of marriage. (Blessed Family - 364)

The greatest love in the world would be if a beautiful man and woman, who were created as the greatest masterpieces of God, loved each other, centering on God. That love would transcend everything; it would not be a worldly love. That love would be the most beautiful love in the world, the love that represents all other kinds of love, and the love that can shine forever. (26-153, 1969.10.25)

The bride and groom should not become one centering on money, power, or honor; they should become one centering on the original love of God. (Blessed Family - 883)

Once you are born on earth, you cannot be restored to the heavenly nation unless you have the firm conviction that you will love your spouse as much as you would love God and humanity, and more than anyone else in the world can love them. If a man does not know how to truly love a woman, he cannot love God or humanity. (97-319, 1978.4.1)

What should you do after you marry? You should go forward to welcome the love of God. Why are human beings born as men or women? It is for love. Why is it for love? The husband and wife must become one, but why should they become one? What happens when two beings, who represent the dual characteristics of God and His love, come together in complete union? They would then be on the path of seeking and receiving the love of God. (144-132, 1986.4.12)

1.2.3. Marriage brings together heaven and earth

Why do people get married? What good things are they hoping for? It is to expand the love of God. It is to expand His people. It is to expand His lineage. (144-80, 1986.4.8)

For what reason do people get married? It is in order to go to the Kingdom of Heaven, and for the sake of humanity. The man must realize that the woman who stands before him is the daughter of God and the daughter of humanity. If he can love the woman as the beloved daughter of humanity and of God, he has the right to become the husband. But if not, he cannot become her spouse. It is the same in the case of the woman. She should not think, "He is my man!" Firstly, she should consider him as the son of God and the man who represents all men of humanity. She should be the woman who can love him more than anyone else and even love him more than God Himself.

So, man and woman should get married with this thought in their mind: The man should act as the right foot and the woman as the left foot, and together they can move forward, step by step, taking footsteps of love for the sake of humanity and God, through their family. The right foot is the husband and the left foot is the wife. In that sense, if you do not get married, you are crippled.

Furthermore, both right foot and left foot should be perfect. If one foot is not perfect, the marriage would become

lame. That is why only perfected men and perfected women can lead a harmonious married life. When a wife likes her husband, it is the same as her liking humanity and God. When she loves her husband, it is the same as her loving humanity and God. (Blessed Family - 360)

Marriage is a very serious thing. Marriage is the coming together of heaven and earth, east and west, north and south, and high and low. Then, where does love go? When the two become one, where does love go? Why should we seek love? By seeking love, we automatically go to the central place of the environment. If people do not have a family, they are imperfect in this society. No one will ever trust them. That is because they fall short of the standard of the principle in sustaining the universe and so people do not acknowledge their value. That is only logical. (139-64, 1986.1.26)

The coming together of a man and woman is the same as the coming together of heaven and earth. (67-63, 1973.5.20)

Man represents the heaven and woman represents the earth. Therefore, the two should come together in harmony and form parallel lines.
(Blessed Family - 344)

The place where a man and woman embrace each other in love is the place where the universe unites into one. The universe originally intended by God at the time of creation, and fulfilled in the ideal of God, would appear like this. (22-201, 1969.2.4)

Our views on marriage make us think like this: "I will make love on a spread of the finest brocade in the universe!" Your marriage is the moment you make a lifelong decision about the right of possession centering on true love. You will be given the right to possess a woman for your whole life. Who is this woman? She represents half the universe. On the day you receive the right of possession of her, the universe will follow you, chasing after you wherever you go.

Then, why do women marry? By attaching herself to a man, half of the universe comes together with the other half, and the joining together of the two begins a relationship that is equal to the value of the whole universe. That is why they marry. When you consider this, you cannot help but wonder at the greatness of the ideology of the Unification Church. (113-33, 1981.4.26)

Do you like flowers that have no fragrance? People are not so inspired by flowers that do not have any fragrance. Would you claim, "If I were ever to become a flower, I would become a green one"? Have you ever seen a green flower? I have visited many botanical gardens, and I have never seen a green flower. A flower the same color as the leaves would be completely useless. From this you can see that the laws of nature go beyond our comprehension. The example of the green flower is enough to convince you that there is a God. All the leaves in the world are green, so would there be

a need for green flowers as well? I have seen only one flower that is sort of greenish. It is the pepper blossom, but when you look at it more closely, it is actually not green. From the contextual point of view, there are many colors, including red. The color of the flower is different from the color of the leaves so that they stand out, and when they stand out, they become a part of the harmony in the world of creation. They must stand out to comply with the laws of creation in the harmony of the universe. Our understanding of marriage is so much more magnificent. You cannot help but wonder at the greatness of the Unification Church's views on marriage. (113-33, 1981.4.26)

The free love marriages you see in the world today are traps set by Satan, trying to make people fall so they cannot move towards the presence of God. Once you are caught in this trap, you will spiritually die and be controlled by Satan, or become his prey.

Because of widespread free marriage in modern Western society, particularly the United States, it is becoming more difficult to form true families. The number of people who fail in family life is increasing day by day, so that in the not too distant future, the majority of people will not have families at all. When that happens, American society will become increasingly loveless. I can tell you with conviction that, in the end, it will become a hell-like society, dominated by anxiety and fear because of mistrust.

At this time, you have been given the responsibility and mission of eradicating these kinds of social trends. You must establish a society here in America that is brimming over with love and is desired by God. (Blessed Family - 364)

Our views on marriage in the Unification Church are very special. Marriage is there for us to return to the Origin. (182-186, 1988.10.23)

1.3. Reasons for receiving the Blessing

1.3.1. Fallen human beings have false parents

The Fall changed Adam and Eve's lineage. Whose love changed it? They became the embodiments of Satan through his love as God's adulterous enemy. The living body of the man and the living body of the woman entered the realm of Satan's love and united based on that; the fruit of this was their children who inherited Satan's love, life and lineage. (227-41, 1992.2.10)

When you look closely at Holy Scriptures, you cannot deny that the human ancestors engaged in illicit love and formed a relationship of parent and child Satan, centering on him. Human beings, who were supposed to carry on the bloodline of God and be born as the direct descendants of God through His absolute love, instead inherited the blood line of the devil Satan and were born as the sons and daughters of Satan. The eighth chapter of the book of Romans

states, "But we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait for adoption as sons… but you have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba! Father!" Adopted children are of a different bloodline. (53-261, 1972.3.1)

In chapter eight of the book of Romans, it is recorded, "But we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait eagerly for adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies!" It also states, "For you did not receive the spirit of bondage again to fear, but you received the Spirit of adoption by whom we cry out, 'Abba, Father.'" Therefore, the best we can hope for is adoption.

The Christians of today are adopted sons and daughters. Adopted children come from a different bloodline. In John 8:44, Jesus said, "You belong to your father, the devil, and you want to carry out your father's desire!" Since he referred to the devil as the father, doesn't that make it clear that the bloodline belongs to him, and that he, the devil, is humankind's ancestor? What is circumcision for? It symbolizes the separation of good and evil. That is how it works. What is the fruit of the knowledge of good and evil? (154-337, 1964.10.5)

Who was Satan originally? The devil as we know him was originally a servant of God. This servant violated the daughter of his master. That was the Fall. The Bible explains that Eve's eating of the fruit of the knowledge of good and evil represents the Fall. However, the fruit of the knowledge of good and evil is not actually a fruit. It is the act of the servant violating the daughter of his master.

God intended to fulfill His ideal by giving birth to, and raising His sons and daughters, who would then carry on the blood line. However, the archangel, who was created as the servant, violated the daughter of his master, and this act became the origin of the Fall. How could such a thing happen at that time! But it did happen, and led the world to be the way it is today. The original relationships became complicated, but you will understand once you study the Divine Principle. (85-308, 1976.3.4)

What was the result of the Fall? Human beings fell into the realm of death. Just as God said, "If you eat of the fruit of the knowledge of good and evil, you will die," so they fell into a realm in which they are as good as dead. What was the result? In John 8:44, Jesus pointed out that Satan, the devil, became the father of humanity. Adam and Eve, who were supposed to attend God as their Father, fell, and instead, Satan, the devil, became humankind's father. You must realize this mortifying and shameful fact is the result of the Fall. (74-140, 1974.11.28)

If Adam and Eve had not fallen, they would have given birth to children who would have been the direct descendants of the eldest son of God. Adam would have been the eldest son, true father and king. He would have been the king of the kingdom on earth and in spirit world.

Furthermore, he would have been the true parent and true first son. That is why the family of Adam would have been the royal household of the heavenly kingdom. Then, who would have been the grandfather of Adam's family? God would have been the grandfather. The mother and the father would have been Eve and Adam.

From the viewpoint of the positions represented, the grandfather and grandmother represent God, and the parents act on behalf of God. From the vertical point of view, God settles down in a family centering on the first, second and third generations. The first generation on the horizontal level is your grandfather, the second generation your father, and the third generation is yourself. Therefore, the blood line of the royal family can be passed on and will continue forever through your sons and daughters. (218-255, 1991.8.19)

The starting point of Adam and Eve should be the realms of true parents, true kingship and true eldest son. The palace of God and the love of God reside there. Man and woman connect as one to the Creator and become the foundation of true love. That is the foundation for the perfected family of Adam as originally intended, and the palace of God, where He can reside forever. (218-189, 1991.7.28)

If Adam and Eve had not fallen and become mature, they would have achieved perfection not just on the individual but the universal level. Moreover, an original family centered on the love of God would have been initiated. If a clan, tribe, a people, nation and world had stemmed from this family, the world would have become a great community of one extended family attending God.

God and Adam would have been the center of this society that is like a large family. In this world, the everyday life or life course of the family of Adam, centered on God, would remain in history as the historical tradition. His lifestyle, customs, conventions, and background would become the historical tradition. God's love would be involved in such tradition from the beginning to the end. God's love is the source of life and the origin of all ideals, and so no one can leave His embrace even if he wants to. If by any circumstance a person does leave, he ultimately has no choice but to come back. (91-240, 1977.2.23)

The fall of Adam and Eve is not just something concerning themselves, but a fall from a position involving all of human history. In other words, Adam and Eve's fall meant that they did not become good parents; they became evil parents. Through evil parents, evil children were born, and through them, evil tribes and nations and an evil world were formed, and within this global realm the five billion members of the human race live. Human history in this realm of the Fall is not a history of joy but a history of sorrow. Humankind is not living in happiness, but in sorrow. (38-149, 1971.1.3)

Once you perfect love, you can understand everything. You can under-

stand not only the simple truths of the physical world, but your spiritual eyesight will be sharpened. You can understand the spirit world and finally reach the stage where you can see and converse with God directly. However, man and woman fell before they could attain maturity of love. Instead, they formed an illicit relationship with the archangel. This was the fundamental cause of the destruction of the universe. (137-127, 1986.1.1)

Where can you pay money to hear these kinds of words? Even if you sold your home, gave all your money and made ritual offerings for tens of thousands of years, no one would be able to teach you this. Only the founder of the Unification Church can do this. This is the secret of the universe. Even the Bible doesn't have this kind of explanation. The Bible tells us that Adam and Eve took and ate of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, and in so doing committed the Fall. How can you claim that this is a literal fruit? Can those without the ability of preschoolers insist that Rev. Moon, to whom doctoral degrees have been granted and who became the head of those so qualified, is a heretic? The Chinese characters for heretic (異端), do not mean that the ending is different, but simply that the ending cannot be seen. Are my words correct or not? They are correct. (238-213, 1992.11.22)

My close investigation of the historical details of the original sin and Fall revealed the illicit love relationship that took place between the archangel and the very first human family. In the Divine Principle, Satan is not a conceptual or imaginary being, but a spiritual reality. He is the being who destroyed God's ideal of love, and changed God's lineage into one centered on himself. In chapter eight of the Gospel of John, Jesus states clearly that the father of humankind is the devil.

God intended to realize His ideal love through Adam and Eve as His external body. The adulterer of love who deprived God of His ideal of love is indeed the devil, Satan. This may not sound familiar to you; however, this is the conclusion that I have reached as a result of searching the spirit world in order to investigate the fundamental intricacies of the universe. That quest was a tremendous struggle of blood and sweat. All of you will be able to receive an answer about this if you pray in earnest. (135-12, 1985.8.20)

1.3.2. The lineage of the enemy has been inherited

Fallen people became false beings and so must be engrafted. Viewed lineally, your ancestors differ from the original. You could only become adopted children because your father and mother are of a different lineage; hence, it is logical that the Fall occurred through lineage. What is the Fall? It consisted of inheriting the wrong lineage.

It makes sense that the explanation of the Fall is that it is an act of wrong-

ful love. Thus, it is unreasonable to deny what is being asserted in the Unification Church, that the first ancestors fell through love. Doesn't the Bible state that they fell by eating the fruit of good and evil? Do you know what that fruit is? Is it a fruit from a tree that falls and rolls around when the wind blows? It is not. (157-158, 1967.4.2)

Adam and Eve became one with Satan in their minds and inherited the lineage of Satan. God is a loving God, so why can't He find it in His heart to forgive Satan? The Bible says He could forgive anything, even murder and robbery, and those who believe in Jesus will be forgiven their sins. So why can't He forgive Satan? The reason God cannot forgive Satan is because he defiled the blood line of humankind. What does that mean? From God's point of view, Satan is the adulterer, the adulterer of love. Do you understand what that means? (156-226, 1966.5.25)

Since the marriage of Adam and Eve was carried out centered on Satan, there is no way to deny that they inherited love, life and lineage centered on Satan. If they had not eaten of the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, and had not fallen, their wedding would have been conducted centering on God. Just as the True Parents of the Unification Church blessed you, God would have called Adam and Eve to His presence when they were fully matured and blessed them centering on Himself. (228-254, 1992.7.5)

If Adam and Eve had not eaten of the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, and instead become perfected, they would have become the son and daughter of the Great King, the Creator of the universe. If they became the son and daughter of the Great King, then who would their children have been, as grandson and granddaughter in direct descent from Him? They would have been the prince and princess. They would also have been the foundation upon which the kingdom on earth representing the heavenly nation was established. There cannot be two kingships. There can only be one. (231-27, 1992.5.31)

The only son and only daughter created personally by God with His own hands were Adam and Eve. Problems emerged because Adam and Eve fell. Then, what was the cause of the Fall? They fell because they did not obey the words of God, who told them not to eat of the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil. What would have happened if they had obeyed the commandment? This possibility has never occurred to Christians. Even if it did, they would not have known what to make of it. It is like a boundless expanse of water. Even if they wanted to measure the depth of it, they would have had no means of doing so. Even if they wanted to know about this, there was no way for them to understand it, so they had no choice but to believe without question what they had been told. However, there can be no perfection in ignorance. (231-21, 1992.5.31)

Why do people do penance by inflicting pain on their bodies? This is because they have inherited the blood of Satan, the blood of the enemy of God. Who is this enemy of God? He is the adulterer. He is the enemy of the love of God. He is the adulterer. We inherited the blood of the adulterer.

Eve was supposed to become the heiress to the kingship of the heavenly nation; she was supposed to become the queen. However, she became the spouse of the devil, the mate of the servant instead. This is the secret of the universe. It has finally been disclosed in my time, so the satanic world should come to an end. (172-277, 1988.1.24)

There can be no perfection in ignorance. Who did I say Satan is? He is the adulterer. I have made all this clear to you. Do you think you can go to the Kingdom of Heaven if you ignore this? Do you think you can be saved if you ignore it? There is not even the slimmest chance. What a set of ignorant people! If you could be saved by just believing what you are told to believe, people like you and I would have been saved a long time ago. We would not have to suffer like this. (188-230, 1989.2.26)

Why does the devil hate God? Why does God hate the devil? Christian logic dictates that one should love one's enemy, yet God cannot love His enemy Satan. Why? If He were to love the enemy of love, heaven and earth would disappear. The heavenly laws of governance would disappear. The laws of existence would disappear. (191-43, 1989.6.24)

Satan destroyed the ideal love of God and violated the ideal life and ideal lineage. The children borne out of these actions created the progenitors of humankind. The sons and daughters of Satan, who are the manifestations of the love, life and lineage of Satan, cannot receive the direct intervention of God. (197-286, 1990.1.20)

Why does Satan come without fail to those who, throughout our history, have walked the path of faith, strangling them, pressing them down, and sacrificing them? In God's eyes, Satan is the adulterer who stole and violated His family. Our original mother should have attended God, and built His kingdom of peace in heaven and on earth; yet we and our original father were driven out. Satan intervened and human beings came to be in this miserable state. It was no other sin than this that he committed. (156-226, 1966.5.25)

The Fall was brought about through the illicit motivation with regard to lineage. That is why the results of the Fall have been passed down until now in the form of the original sin. Therefore, people need to change the bloodline. Why should the bloodline be changed? Human beings have inherited and passed on the bloodline of Satan, and so that lineage has to be put right. Those of you gathered here must understand this clearly. (183-308, 1988.11.7)

The people who belong to the realm of Satan have no connection whatsoever with the bloodline of God. In other words, the whole of humankind, which was supposed to have been born as the children of parents of goodness, was instead born from evil parents. They spread out across the world, as the family, tribe, a people, nation and world centered on evil. (55-133, 1972.5.7)

Do you know what the Fall was? Through that, the connection of life was severed. What happened to Adam and Eve? They were supposed to form a relationship with God, and become one with Him, but instead they became one with a servant. The result was that the whole of humankind, which was supposed to inherit the lineage of God, instead inherited the lineage of the servant. That is why, although fallen human beings may call out to God as their Heavenly Father, they don't actually feel that He is indeed their Father. Just like their fathers and mothers, they inherited the real nature of Satan, thinking about everything based on them, and connecting all that is high and mighty to themselves. (91-242, 1977.2.23)

Through the Fall, we lost the true parent, true husband, and true child. This all happened because of Eve and the archangel. From this point of view, women living on earth today are dependent on the archangel father, archangel husband, and archangel brother. That is why these women are wretched. It is the same as the daughter of a wealthy family living with her servant. In other words, these women were born from the bloodline of the servant. That is why they have never received the love from an original husband, original father, and original brother. (51-182, 1971.11.21)

How did the devil bring about the Fall? Through the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil? Where did they cover themselves after eating the fruit? Did they cover up their mouths or their hands? Didn't they cover up the sexual parts of their bodies? This became the seed that sowed evil. They fell before they had fully matured, while they were still adolescents. As the lineage of humankind in world history stemmed form this act, in the Last Days the phenomenon of such relationships will thrive. The time will come, that, across the world, young people destroy the ethics of love. They will hide in the shadows, just like Adam and Eve, and have no fear of heaven. That will be the time when the era of Satan's worldwide dominion will come to the earth. That is when we will be faced with the iron hammer of God. (200-227, 1990.2.25)

Because of the complex entanglement of the human lineage, restoration has taken six thousand years; otherwise, almighty God would have restored everything in a day. It's as if there is a chronic disease in the bloodline; if it were to be pulled out all at once, everyone would die. That is why it has taken six thousand years. Did the first human ancestors fall through eating the fruit of

the tree of the knowledge of good and evil? How simple things would be if that were so. (155-295, 1965.11.1)

The problem we should focus on is how the foundations of sin, the Fall, evil, and hell all came into being. We have to return to Adam and Eve to understand this. When we trace the Fall of Adam and Eve to the source, we can see that they fell because they did not obey God's commandment, "Do not eat of the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil!"

The second cause of the Fall was that they became self-centered. The third cause was that they tried to love centering on themselves. This is the essence of the story that lies behind the Fall. So, we can conclude that everything connected to this is on the side of Satan. All fallen human beings have loved illicitly and self-centeredly. Therefore, we can assume that the people of the satanic world are those who express love centering on themselves. (79-198, 1975.7.27)

What! You think the Fall was brought about by eating the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil? This fruit refers to the sexual organ of a woman. When a woman meets a good husband, she becomes a good mother, but if it meets with an evil husband, she becomes an evil mother. There is no one who can logically deny what the founder of the Unification Church is saying. The mind and body are in constant conflict because history began with a conflict of love between the husband and wife. You cannot deny this logically. (267-240, 1995.1.8)

1.3.3. The Messiah is needed as the True Parents

The reason human beings need a messiah is so they can be saved. Then, what is the original starting point from which salvation can occur? It is returning to the point of contact with God's love.

However, the whole of humanity has become totally disconnected from God, and instead has become the embodiment of Satan. This is the exact opposite of God's love, and therefore needs to be indemnified. Indemnity refers to the complete removal of the original sin. But the fundamental problem lies in the lineage. Any problems related to the bloodline cannot be resolved by fallen human beings. That is why humankind needs the Messiah. (35-159, 1970.10.13)

Adam's clan, that is the lineage in which sinful parents came to replace true parents, must be engrafted on to the lineage of the True Parents in the presence of God, through restoration by indemnity. This is the ideology of the Messiah and the Savior. The reason this reality has arisen is due to the Fall. (101-76, 1978.10.28)

Who is the Messiah? He is the true parent. Then why do people need true parents? It is because they need to be engrafted to the original lineage through true parents' love. Fallen humankind

cannot rid itself of the original sin without the advent of true parents. Likewise, without the true parents, people cannot advance to the place where they can receive the Blessing on the perfected level as sin-free and liberated beings. (35-216, 1970.10.19)

Who is the Savior that is needed by fallen humankind? The Savior should not be in the position of fallen parents, but instead in the position of Adam and Eve who have not fallen. From there, he can then become one with God's will, receive God's love and blessing, and give rebirth to humanity in the position of true parents. Otherwise, human beings can never rise to the position where they would have no connection at all with the original sin. (22-269, 1969.5.4)

Why are true parents needed? You need them because it is necessary for you to take root centering on the realm of heart. At the present time, your roots are different. Because of the Fall, the trunk and the branches are also different. A new root must begin from true parents, and new trunk and branches must also grow from them, which can then be used for engrafting. You must cut off the old trunk and branches and engraft the new shoot. By engrafting them like this on to the old root, that tree will then become part of the great mainstream of the universe. Everything in the satanic world must be cut down. It must be cut off at the roots. (164-155, 1987.5.10)

The Fall occurred through the wrongful marriage in the Garden of Eden. Now the time has come for True Parents to overturn this by marrying people in the right way. The True Parents will solve the trouble caused by the Fall. Through them, hell can be eliminated and the millions and billions of ancestors in the spirit world can be blessed in holy matrimony. Through the foundation of the families of descendants on earth, centering on true love, they and their ancestors in the spirit world can unite into one vertically. Through these family foundations, East and West will be connected.

All of you should inherit a new lineage. In order for that to be possible, the Messiah comes as the father. He, together with Eve, should restore this new lineage through indemnity on the victorious individual foundation that transcends the world level where Satan cannot intervene. Only when he has accomplished this can humankind be engrafted horizontally, centering on the True Parents' family and their true spousal relationship. That is the reason for having the Blessing Ceremony in the Unification Church. The Unification Church is unique. Where did the lineage of the Unification Church originate? It originated from God. That is why we dare the satanic world to oppose us. When they oppose us, they will have to pay compensation for damages. (169-37, 1987.10.4)

True Parents will save the whole of humanity as true people by engrafting them to the true love, true life and true

lineage of God. They will do so by conducting the Blessing of holy matrimony through which the conversion of lineage takes place. Furthermore, the people will then form true families and establish the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. (282-224, 1997.3.13)

Section 2. True Parents, Rebirth, and Transformation of the Lineage

2.1. Who are True Parents?

2.1.1. True Parents are the ancestors without original sin

Who are true parents? If Adam and Eve had not fallen, God would have bestowed His vertical love on them, and Adam and Eve would have become the body of God. They would have represented the body of God. God would have been like the bones, and Adam and Eve like the flesh. God can have a mind and body through Adam and Eve. He would have become the internal parent in the internal position, and Adam and Eve would have become the external parents in the external position. The internal and external parents must become one through love; at that place, we come to have external parents and attend the internal parents in heart. With the union of love between God and Adam and Eve, then true parents – the perfected man and woman – would emerge. There can be no perfected human beings if there is no union through love. (184-71, 1988.11.13)

What kind of position is that of true parents? It is a place where Adam and Eve, centered on God, have united into complete oneness and are free from Satan's accusation. The origin of true parents can only come into existence when a man and woman who have not fallen and who have nothing to be accused by Satan, can rise to the realm of perfection. This is the origin of true parents as seen from the Divine Principle point of view. However, attaining this position is not as simple as it may sound. (25-30, 1969.9.21)

Who are the new parents of humankind? Adam and Eve, who fell in the very beginning in the Garden of Eden, became fallen parents. The new parents coming with the mission of giving rebirth to humankind are the original, parents who have nothing to do with the Fall. They have become one with God's will and can be approved by God. They are the parents who keep the original, unfallen standard and fulfill God's will. They multiply children of goodness by forming an ideal family in the embrace of God, centering on His love. They are the parents who have nothing to do with the Fall. (22-269, 1969.5.4)

If Adam and Eve had not fallen, they would have become the parents of humankind and would have established a world centered on God. However, because of their fall, they became false parents under the dominion of Satan. As a result, the true parents, who were intended by God to become His ideal of creation, were lost. The

true ancestors of humankind were lost. (20-117, 1968.5.1)

What do true parents signify? They are the symbol of hope for everyone. They are the absolute symbol of hope for fallen humankind. They are the fruit of past history, the center of this era, and the starting point of the future of hope which connects to the world we live in today. (35-236, 1970.10.19)

When you think of the words True Parents you should remember that history will be reset through True Parents. The origin through which we can build a new world will come into existence, the internal standard through which Satan can be brought into submission will be determined, and Satan's domination of the external world will be conquered. Only then can the central point be set and the liberation of God take place. Therefore, you should be thankful for this great blessing which has been bestowed upon you, which is the grace of being able to live in the same era as True Parents and act upon their orders. (43-144, 1971.4.29)

The hope of humankind is to meet true parents. Even when you are walking the path of death, you desire to meet true parents. Even if you lost all of past history, all the ages, and all of your descendants, if you were to meet true parents, you would regain history, the ages, and the future. You should understand that this is what true parents are able to do. (35-236, 1970.10.19)

When the Messiah comes to earth, he will come as an individual and yet he is not just an individual. He is the fruition of the faith and devotion of the whole of humanity, the fruition of the desires of the whole of humanity, and the fruition of the love yearned for by the whole world. He is the fruition to which all courses of history are connected. To put it simply, he is connected to the past, present and future. He is connected from the individual to the family, tribe, people, nation, world, and heaven and earth. (13-143, 1964.1.1)

Jesus came with the mission of attaining the position as the parent of humanity, but he died before he could fulfill this mission. Therefore, in the era of the Second Coming, we cannot establish a world that advances beyond the old world unless that position is restored through indemnity and successfully achieved. The Unification Church has been continuously working for this purpose. (55-143, 1972.5.7)

The True Parent, as the perfected Adam, must restore the standard of the first parents, which Adam failed to meet. He must also perfect the standard of the parent that Jesus, who came as the second Adam, failed to achieve. The reason I have no choice but to establish a tradition of suffering in this era of the Second Advent is because Jesus established the spiritual foundation but failed to establish both spiritual and physical foundations on the world level. (55-173, 1972.5.7)

Who are the True Parents that we know of? They are the human ancestors. That is why you must attend True Parents as you would your own parents. (118-147, 1982.5.23)

Humankind needs True Parents. Why is this so? For the first time in history, we are able to connect to the axis of love. This is unprecedented, and there will not be another event like this in the future. You must know this clearly. There is only one axis. There cannot be two. That axis is none other than true love. (137-108, 1985.12.24)

Throughout history, there has never been even one person who was victorious in the name of God as a representative of all men in the world. That is why up until the present time I have struggled to establish the standard of victory.

Members of the Unification Church and I could avoid suffering, but since we know of this Principle, we have to walk the path of suffering. (91-257, 1977.2.23)

What is the hope of humanity? It is to attend True Parents. Six thousand years ago, Adam and Eve were supposed to be blessed in marriage, an event that would have allowed all humankind to subsequently become the descendants of God. However, due to the Fall, everyone became the descendants of Satan. Therefore, True Parents, who were lost six thousand years ago, must be restored on the side of heaven, and human beings have to be reborn through the relationship of the love of True Parents. Only then can they become citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven. (19-203, 1968.1.7)

What does the term true parents mean? What is the difference between physical parents and true parents? Who are true parents? What is their responsibility? What is the difference when it comes to love? The difference lies in their concept of love. Their idea of love is different. Physical parents teach us about the love centered on the physical body, whereas spiritual parents teach us about the love centered on the eternal spirit world. The quality and contents are different. (129-99, 1983.10.1)

2.1.2. True Parents give rebirth to humanity through true love

You were born of the lineage of false parents, driven away from God, and have no connection to true parents. Therefore, in order to free yourselves from this lineage, you must stamp it out and uproot it. Only when you do so, and totally change the lineage, can you enter the Kingdom of Heaven. (22-271, 1969.5.4)

What should true parents accomplish? They must put right the false lineage, which is the root of the satanic world, rectify the false life, and straighten the false path of love. (169-37, 1987.10.4)

To convert the lineage, the requirements for a victory bound to the love of God must be fulfilled in the seed of the future children of an Adamic figure, and must penetrate as deep as the bone

marrow, flesh and blood of that person. Unless this is fulfilled, those children cannot be born as children of God. This is undeniable from a logical point of view. Is there a record of such a thing in holy scriptures? If so, then that is the word of God. (35-163, 1970.10.13)

Who is the Savior that is needed by fallen humankind? The Savior should not be in the position of fallen parents, but instead in the position of Adam and Eve who have not fallen. From there he can become one with God's will, receive God's love and blessing, and give rebirth to humanity in the position of true parents. Otherwise, humankind can never escape the connection with the original sin. (22-269, 1969.5.4)

Why are True Parents needed? You need them because it is necessary for you to take root centering on the realm of heart. At the present time, your roots are different. Because of the Fall, the trunk and the branches are also different. A new root must begin from true parents, and new trunk and branches must also grow from them, which can then be used for engrafting. You must cut off the old trunk and branches and engraft the new shoot. By engrafting them like this on to the old root, that tree will then become part of the great mainstream of the universe. Everything in the satanic world must be cut off. It must be cut off at the roots. (164-155, 1987.5.10)

What is desired by all humankind today? Before they establish a nation or world, they want to meet with true parents. From whom do your future descendants want to be descended? Your sons and daughters do not want to be born from your false lineage. They want to be born through the lineage of true parents. That is why true parents will automatically become the starting point of a new future. (35-237, 1970.10.19)

What is the responsibility of true parents? They must right the false lineage, which is the root of the satanic world, and right the false path of love. In the Bible it is written, "He who finds his life will lose it, and he who loses his life for my sake will find it." Why did he put forth such a paradoxical logic? It is because the satanic world must die. (169-39, 1987.10.4)

True Parents and their children are an eternal, unchanging and predestined original family whose course needs to be fulfilled providentially. This is a bond of parent-child relationship that no one can break up. This is the eternal path. There are not two paths; there is only one path. There is no other way. There is no secret method. The only thing for us to do is to follow that path. (203-192, 1990.6.24)

The Fall occurred through the wrongful marriage in the Garden of Eden. Now the time has come for True Parents to overturn this, by marrying people in the right way. The trouble caused by the false parents should be solved by the True Parents. Through them, hell can be eliminated and the millions and bil-

lions of ancestors in the spirit world can be blessed in holy matrimony. Through the foundation of the families of descendants on earth, centering on true love, the ancestors in the spirit world and the descendants on earth can unite into one vertically. The East and West will be connected horizontally with this vertical family foundation.

What should an adopted son do? He must be engrafted to the true son. The wild olive tree must be cut off at the root, and then the sprout of the true olive tree can be engrafted into it. It would be as if there were a movement to convert all the wild olive trees into true olive trees. In order to be reborn, you need to inherit the lineage of True Parents. That is why the whole of humanity hopes for True Parents, and Jesus and the Holy Spirit yearned to carry out the marriage feast of the Lamb. (19-164, 1968.1.1)

Before anything else, you must long for True Parents sincerely. You cannot be saved if you do not attend True Parents, centering on the standard that they are the origin of your life, all your hopes, and the source of all your ideals and happiness. Have you ever attended True Parents like this? You must understand this clearly. That is why you must have a firm belief that transcends even your self-awareness. This shows that you are the son or daughter who can become one eternally with True Parents. If you do not have such a strong faith, nothing will come to pass. (30-238, 1970.3.23)

You have been bought. You have been bought, along with humanity and the universe. That is why God wants to judge the universe with you. He bought you, who were in the position of slaves in the satanic world, to become His sons and daughters. Therefore, you are the blessed children of glory and you should be ready to give yourselves for the world when it asks for you. You should be ready to give everything you have even to Satan. You were bought with the blood and sweat of True Father. You were bought with my own flesh and blood. Therefore, you should carry out the same work as I. I would like to take pride in the members. Let us make a commitment in this regard. (11-164, 1961.7.20)

2.2. The core of providential rebirth

2.2.1. True meaning of rebirth

When I speak of rebirth, I do not mean that you must be reborn through the bodies of parents who are the descendants of fallen Adam and Eve, but through those who are not in any way connected to the Fall. Unless you are reborn through such parents, you cannot return to God. The root of sin began from Adam and Eve. Unless you step over this and are reborn in a position not related to the original sin, you can never ever return to the presence of God. (22-269, 1969.5.4)

For what purpose does God want to save humankind? No matter how much He tries to save people, if they are in the fallen realm, they can never be saved.

That is why God has to send true parents to this world. They represent Adam and Eve who have not fallen, through whom humanity can be reborn. In this way, the connection between Satan and humanity is severed forever and Satan can no longer accuse humankind. God alone will have complete dominion over humanity and He alone can intervene in their affairs. Unless humankind is reborn into such a position, people with original sin embedded within them cannot be restored to a position free from original sin. (22-269, 1969.5.4)

If True Parents are the true olive trees, all of you are wild olive trees that need to be engrafted. You are like the lateral sprouts and branches. You will be able to grow properly in the original way only when new branches sprout from you. What did humankind become after they lost faith, love and substantial identity? Their lineage was overturned completely. That is why it must be overturned once again. When Nicodemus asked Jesus, "What must I do to enter the Kingdom of Heaven?" Jesus proclaimed a most important truth as his answer: "No one can see the Kingdom of Heaven unless he is born again." (Blessed Family - 509)

Rebirth refers to the complete reformation of the mind. (Blessed Family - 509)

When Nicodemus asked Jesus, "How can we be saved?" Jesus answered, "You must be born again in order to be saved." What he meant was that, since human beings were born as the children of Satan, they need to receive the Holy Spirit from God and be reborn if they are to be saved. In other words, they need to sever their relationship with Satan completely and re-form their relationship with God as originally intended at the time of creation. (Blessed Family - 509)

Even if your faith was reaffirmed through the providence of God, you need to be engrafted to be restored as His children. (Blessed Family - 509)

If you are inferior to Adam and Eve you cannot be reborn, and restoration on the fundamental level cannot be carried out. In being reborn, not only the individual, but also the family, people, nation and world need to be reborn. Christians today do not know this. (58-42, 1972.6.6)

Among Christians, there are a few who believe that the Lord at his Second Advent will literally come on the clouds. If you think you can be saved because you believe, even if you don't know anything, your belief cannot be considered as true faith. There would be no need for the Unification Church if it were that easy to be saved. (Blessed Family- 509)

When you are engrafting the sprout of the true olive tree to the wild olive tree, you cannot just cut off the branch and engraft the sprout there; you must cut off the wild olive tree at the base so that only the roots remain, and engraft the sprout there. This means that when

the Lord at his Second Advent comes to this world the existing churches should change their old systems, organizations, and rituals, and start new. (Blessed Family - 510)

The fruits that Christians have produced through their lives of faith are the fruits of the wild olive tree. In order to produce fruits of the true olive tree, they need to be cut off at the base and have the sprout of the true olive tree engrafted on to them. If the sprout cannot be engrafted, the tree should be pulled up completely and burned to ashes. If the wild olive tree is not uprooted completely, it will produce further fruits, which will then be strewn around the tree and will grow into more wild olive trees.

The cutting down of wild olive trees is necessary in order to engraft the sprouts of the true olive tree on to them. The problem here is that the sprout of the true olive tree and the sprout of the wild olive tree look exactly alike from the outside and so disputes may arise. In particular, at the time of the Second Coming, many Antichrists will appear and those trying to find the truth may be confused. That is why you have been told, "Pray constantly, without resting or sleeping!"

By cutting off the wild olive tree at the base and engrafting the true olive tree on to it, all wild olive trees will disappear. The field where they used to be will become a field of true olive trees. Now that I am ready to carry out this task, many are raising uproar. They are scared of the pain they will feel when their bodies are cut off at the roots. They are worried that I may be an incompetent gardener. The spring of providential history has come and with it the task of engrafting the sprouts on to the wild olive trees has begun. (Blessed Family - 510)

2.2.2. Rebirth

The love of Jesus, the groom, and the love of the Holy Spirit, the bride, must unite into one. Their united love must then become one with your bones and flesh. In other words, as Jesus said, "I am in you, and you will be in me." There can be no rebirth if the foundation of love is not established. (114-27, 1981.5.14)

You say you need to be reborn, but in order to accomplish this, you need to love Jesus more than you love anyone. You must realize there is no way you can be connected to God unless the love centered on God is on a higher level than any kind of love found in the fallen realm of Satan's love.

This is the path of suffering, the difficult path that religious people must follow. Christians long for Jesus every day, and are waiting impatiently for Jesus to come again. For 2000 years, they have cried out to heaven, "Jesus, our groom, please come quickly!" even though he did not come. When they reach the stage where their bodies are ready to burst, their hearts are being torn, their bones are melting, their spirit is hovering between life and death, and when they are connecting directly only with

God or Jesus, only then, will the Holy Spirit come down upon them.

When the Holy Spirit comes to them, spiritual rebirth will occur. Through this, their spirits can be reborn into spiritual babies. Those of you gathered here, have you ever had such an experience? If you have not had one such experience, you are still the sons and daughters of the satanic world. You must understand that you can still be accused by Satan. Such people cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven. They have no choice but to go to hell. (114-27, 1981.5.14)

Jesus told Nicodemus that unless one is reborn, one cannot enter the Kingdom of God. The "I" who has lived until now must be denied. Even if you have excuses, and even if you have many accomplishments to your name, you must deny yourself. Because you are fallen human beings, you cannot escape from this fate. Your whole life should be denied, your daily life should be denied; you are living a spiritually dead life that should be denied. (6-278, 1959.6.7)

The Messiah may convert the lineage, but it is up to you to accept the conversion. Unless the foundation on which the conversion can take place is established, you cannot walk towards salvation. The path to salvation cannot be reached easily; before you reach it, you must go through a state of life and death. Only when you carry out a 40-day fast or you are on the brink of death, vomiting blood, can your lineage be converted. (35-160, 1970.10.13)

People in the world who were born before the True Mother came into existence were born in vain. That is why they needed to be engrafted to Jesus, pass through the body of Jesus, and be reborn through the Holy Spirit. This is possible because Jesus formed a spousal relationship of true love. Since they were born as the fruit of false love, they must be reborn through true love. This is one reason why a lot of emphasis is put on love in Christianity. (17-192, 1966.12.18)

There is no other way of becoming one with Jesus except through love. You cannot become one with him through truth or justice. Love is necessary before there can be life. Love goes beyond history, and is not limited by distance or space. (35-164, 1970.10.13)

2.3. The central ideology is the conversion of lineage

Who is supposed to carry out the conversion of the lineage? It cannot be performed by just anyone. You must know that in order to become the one who can perform it, I walked the tearful path of the cross. Because I set such a standard, you are able to become a part of the tradition of the Blessing without having to do anything for it. It took thousands of years of hard work on God's part and my substantial life course, which was filled with hardships and suffering, to establish the victorious realm of the conversion of lineage. You are now standing on the foundation thus laid down. To receive the Blessing is to completely

cut off the evil lineage and to engraft a new lineage. By engrafting, the lineage is completely changed. (35-178, 1970.10.13)

In order to enter God's realm of heart, your lineage has to be the same. You can only join that realm of heart after changing your lineage, which originated from a different root. The stems are different. The roots, stems and sprouts need to be identical. For that to be so, the great work of the conversion of lineage is absolutely necessary. This cannot be carried out alone. You need True Parents for this task. (172-55, 1988.1.7)

God wants everyone reborn. From His position, He is trying to bring all of humanity, which is still in the realm of Satan's false love, to His side through His greater love. Since all humankind was born through the parents, ancestors and lineage of false love, they need to be reborn through the parents, ancestors and lineage of true love. In this way, they can become the children of God and the people of God's Kingdom. The precious blood of Jesus and the ritual of the Last Supper all symbolize the providence of becoming the children of God through the conversion of the lineage. (135-12, 1985.8.20)

It doesn't really hit home when I say "conversion of the lineage," does it? How did you come to be the way you are today? When I become Abel, you, as Cain, must completely unite and become one with me. It is only because of this relationship that you can become one with me; if there were no such relationship that would be a big problem. (161-153, 1987.1.18)

In what way can you connect to the heart of God? You cannot connect with His heart through logic. It is only through the lineage that you can connect with Him. Have you all inherited the lineage of the heart of God? You didn't know about that until now. That is why before you have to go through the ceremony of converting the lineage to receive the Blessing. At the time of the ceremony, you must reach a state of nothingness, feeling that you have nothing. You have to reach the state where you feel you do not have a body. You should have a firm conviction that the point where the blood and flesh of the True Parents can be inherited begins with yourself. (180-159, 1988.8.22)

All of you went through the ceremony of converting the lineage before you received the Blessing, didn't you? You did not really understand any of it; you simply followed my orders, but in reality it is not that simple.

History came to be in utter confusion today because Jesus could not form a relationship of husband and wife at his first advent. Therefore, from the viewpoint of the standard of heart, there would be great trouble if any event occurred at the Blessing that would defile the lineage. I am not just talking about the penalty of such actions. The first human ancestors were thrown out of the Garden of Eden when they fell, even though they were not fully matured; bearing that in mind,

there would be dire consequences if you committed a sin on the foundation of the perfected standard of heart. If that were to happen, God would not want to see you ever again and neither would I. (198-220, 1990.2.3)

Everyone, you must change completely after you go through the ceremony of converting the lineage. Would this be possible if True Parents were not here? Think about the path of hardships previous generations had to persevere through ever since the time of the creation of the world. Having True Parents here right now is something for which you should all be truly grateful. It is even more amazing that you have received the Blessing from them in person. Through the Blessing, the tradition of the lineage, that is, the tradition embedded with true love, life and lineage can be established. You must always keep this in mind. (216-36, 1991.3.3)

Satan is saying at this moment: "Through the Fall, I violated everything related to Your lineage. For You to enter the Kingdom of Heaven with Your son, You need to convert the lineage, don't You? If You are indeed the subject of life, Adam can receive the seed of life from You. This seed of life can then connect to Eve and then set the original standard that can become the root. Based on this standard Your clan can reclaim its rightful place. However, in order for this to happen, You need to convert humankind from the roots of the fallen lineage, which is currently part of my clan. Unless You do so, You cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Only people who stem from the roots of Adam can enter the Kingdom of God. People who stem from the roots of the archangel cannot enter the Kingdom of God, can they? No they can't!" (197-286, 1990.1.20)

What is the significance of the Blessed Families? Satan has no control over the Blessed Families. When they have complete faith in Father and a strong conviction that they belong to True Parents, no matter where they are, Satan cannot violate that. Why is this so? It is because, centering on the heart of True Parents, they have a relationship with the realm of heart of the converted lineage. That is why Satan cannot touch them. (149-53, 1986.11.2)

The path of restoration begins from the era of the servant of the servant and passes through the eras of the servant, adopted son, and true son. Then, if you were to pass through the eras of servant of servant, servant and adopted son could you then form a relationship with the era of the true son? You cannot form a relationship with the era of the true son just like that. You must establish the foundation of faith, the foundation of substance, and finally the foundation for the Messiah, as laid down in the Divine Principle. What that means is that you need to receive the Messiah. The Messiah is the true Son of God. The adopted son and the true son are of different lineages. That is why conversion of the lineage is necessary. (55-192, 1972.5.9)

Fallen human beings need conversion of their lineage. This is the fundamental issue. The relationship between God and humankind is like that of father and children; however, this truth has not been known until now, and that is why there has been continuous conflict throughout history. No one has ever known the Providence of God. The conversion of the lineage must be carried out on the levels of individual, family, people, nation and world. Only the Messiah can accomplish this. Only after True Parents emerge can the new lineage be initiated by them. Without the Parents, the lineage cannot be converted.

All these issues must be resolved by each individual. Overcoming these problems is the task given to all individuals. However, human beings do not know about all these matters, and that is why the Messiah has to come and complete the task on their behalf. (161-147, 1987.1.18)

Fallen humankind set out on the wrong foot from the very beginning. That is why they must go back. You may ask, go back where? They must return to the starting point. Since they began with false parents, they must return to the beginning and start afresh with true parents. How serious this is! Each person has to inherit the love of God, life of God and lineage of God. When you received the Blessing, you attended the ceremony of converting the lineage, didn't you? You must believe in that, even more than in your own lives.

You should not think of the ceremony as a normal religious ritual, just because it is a Unification Church ritual. This ceremony is like an injection that revives a person from death. It is like an antidote. (216-107, 1991.3.9)

In the Bible you read the story of Jacob, who plotted with his mother and tricked his father into giving him the blessing. You also read about Tamar, who committed immoral acts. Yet, it states in the Bible that Jesus will come to the earth through the tribe of Judah. What does all this mean? It is because the problem of conversion of the lineage remained and had to be resolved. The bloodline must be purified. Of all the religions, only Christianity has placed importance on the lineage, and laid down the conversion of lineage as its main ideology. You cannot find this in any other religion, and that is why you can safely conclude that we must follow this teaching.

That is why in the conversion of lineage, Father could not exclude Christianity. On the contrary, I focused on Christianity, the religion that inherited the ideology of the chosen people. If I had used a title for our association for the unification of all religions rather than Christianity, would I have been persecuted? Do you understand what I'm trying to say? Therefore, converting the lineage had to be the main emphasis of the central ideology. (227-349, 1992.2.16)

2.4. Three stages in changing the lineage

2.4.1. Holy wine ceremony

Before receiving the Blessing of marriage in the Unification Church, you need to go through the ceremony of changing the lineage. All of you went through that, didn't you? The indemnity stick ceremony and the three-day ceremony make it seem very complicated, don't they? During these ceremonies, Satan cannot intrude. These rituals signify that the gates of the Kingdom of Heaven have been opened by virtue of the laws of God and True Parents; and that liberation has been proclaimed. Therefore, Satan, who has been particularly active on the perfection level of the growth stage, cannot interfere. Do you all know that Blessed Families went through the ceremony of changing the lineage? They had to pass through this ceremony before they could receive the Blessing. (235-215, 1992.9.20)

After the engagement, you need to go through the holy wine and holy wedding ceremonies. Then, what are the engagement, holy wine ceremony and wedding ceremony? They are not performed just for the sake of themselves. They are the ceremonies that must be inevitably carried out to re-enact and indemnify the Fall. (35-215, 1970.10.19)

Fallen human beings cannot go to the place of the Blessing if they do not deny all their past loves, which are defiled with the false love of the satanic world. They must become new, resurrected substantial beings, who can propagate the love of True Parents centering on the love of God. On that basis, the holy wine ceremony is a ritual that promises the achievement of a new standard of life by passing through the gates of the love of True Parents. (35-215, 1970.10.19)

What is the purpose of the holy wine ceremony? It is a ritual of putting the body of God into one's own body, centering on a new love. Everyone has a fallen body that needs to be substituted centering on the love of God. This act of substitution is performed through the holy wine ceremony. Just as Jesus says in the Bible, "The bread symbolizes my body and the wine my blood, so you must eat and drink of it." Through this ceremony, one can be cleansed of the original sin by inheriting the new lineage centering on the love and substantial aspect of God. You cannot go to the place of the Blessing without attending this ceremony. That is why the holy wine ceremony is a ceremony for changing the lineage. (35-245, 1970.10.19)

We need the absolute phrase, "the change of the lineage." When you received the Blessing, you participated in the ceremony for changing the lineage, didn't you? You need to take the holy wine in order to convert the lineage.

When making the holy wine, one must pass through the process of selecting twenty-one elements. You don't

know what they are, do you? In this process, you need to focus on the fruits borne on trees, on the ground, and underground, and select twenty-one of the most precious elements from the mineral, plant and animal kingdoms. Moreover, these elements should not in any way be connected to conditions that can be accused. The wine has to be kept in storage for seven months, and nothing must disturb its purity during this period. (215-109, 1991.2.6)

The holy wine ceremony is the ceremony of restoration through indemnity. When you participate in this ceremony, you attend in the position of the archangel. That is why everything including the lineage must be offered through it. Everything is restored through the ceremony. It is a condition for restoration. I conduct the ceremony through True Mother. You are all in the same situation. A bridge is being laid. Through attending the holy wine ceremony, you can enter the position of restoration, which is the same as the position of parents. You must realize this.

The woman receives the holy wine first. The woman first bows to Father, accepts the holy wine, and drinks half of what is in the cup. Then the husband bows. While the woman is drinking her half, the man should have his head bowed. At that very moment, the woman is in the position of the mother. She represents the mother. Under these conditions, the woman drinks half and hands the remaining half to the man for him to drink. When the man drinks the remaining half, the relationship between the two is formed. Then the man can stand on an equal level with the woman. (113-309, 1981.5.10)

The holy wine ceremony is carried out in the reverse order of the Fall of Adam and Eve. Before you can get married, you need to be engaged. Then there is the holy wine ceremony. Only then can you attend the holy wedding ceremony. You could not become the original Adam and Eve because of the Fall. Through the engagement ceremony, you present yourselves before God and True Parents, who are trying to reclaim their children, saying, "We will become a better Adam and Eve, who are better than your fallen children." Adam and Eve were still in the state of engagement. Through the engagement, a new world is created. You must therefore understand that the holy wine ceremony establishes the conditions that restore all these relationships. (120-167, 1982.10.13)

In bringing the holy wine to the participants, it must start with the archangel representative first, followed by the Eve representative, and then the Adam representative.

When you, as a candidate, are offered the holy wine, Eve receives it first. Without Eve, the man cannot be reborn. Because the purpose of drinking the wine is restoration, Eve must receive the holy wine first, drink half of it, and then offer the remaining half to her husband. When receiving the holy wine cup, you must make a bow first, because who-

ever is handing it to you is doing so on behalf of Father. You need to bow three times in theory, but bowing once is also acceptable as long as you are putting into the one bow what you would into the three bows. You receive the cup, drink half, and pass it on to your husband. After you drink from the cup, you must return it. The returned cup is then passed in reverse, from Father to Mother, and then the archangel, and then left to rest. In this way, you become unified in heart.

In actual fact, initially, True Father must first place his hand on the women's hands and pray. True Father would offer the prayer of unity. When you drink the holy wine after the prayer has been said, the fallen lineage is purified. That is the condition. The ceremony of changing the lineage is like baptism in Christianity! (183-89, 1988.10.29)

Eve fell because of the archangel. Therefore, in the work of restoration, Eve must stand before heaven through Adam and restore the archangel. This is the purpose of the holy wine ceremony. In conducting the ceremony, Father gives the wine to the woman first, doesn't he? Do you know why that is? By doing so, Eve, who has been lost, is restored. Through the holy wine ceremony, they become one in spirit, in heart, and in body. It is an absolute and internal commitment. (46-233, 1971.8.15)

The holy wine is not simply made like ordinary wine. You cannot bring forth wine and claim it to be holy wine. It is made in the presence of God and Satan, and the angels in the spirit world. There are twenty-one elements within it that you do not know about. The wine contains all the elements that are formed in the process of restoring the physical world and humankind. When making the holy wine, spirits from the spirit world come and implore me to pour a glass for them so that they can partake of it. It is because they know that by drinking the holy wine they can be restored. That is why they come to me in a group and ask to share in the benefit. They know that I can bestow on them this benefit. However, I am not here for the spirit world. I am here for the physical world. That is why I tell the spirits, "Wait!" and give the wine to you, for all the suffering you have been through. (46-233, 1971.8.15)

The holy wine contains elements that symbolize the love of the True Parents. It also must contain something that symbolizes blood. So when you drink it, you become one with the love of the True Parents, and also with the blood. This is what the holy wine incorporates. (35-211, 1970.10.18)

How is the holy wine made? It is wine that symbolizes earth, sea, heaven, and everything in them. The holy wine contains three kinds of wine. It also contains other elements that represent all the things of creation. By drinking the wine, you are reborn spiritually and physically. You cannot rid yourself of the original sin and convert the lineage

without attending the holy wine ceremony. You cannot pass through the standard of perfection and become one with God's love if the lineage is not changed. That is why you must understand that the holy wine ceremony indemnifies all this. (35-211, 1970.10.18)

The holy wine ceremony draws out the blood of Satan, the blood that was defiled through the Fall. In other words, it is a ceremony that draws out the original sin. (35-215, 1970.10.19)

The holy wine contains elements representing all creation, which cannot be accused by Satan. After drinking the holy wine, and becoming one with True Parents, if you commit any acts that defile your body, you will be worse off than Satan himself. Satan defiled and violated the perfection level of the growth stage. But if someone receives the Blessing and then commits a sin, he defiles the substantial body of God in the perfection level of the completion stage and cannot ever be forgiven. This is a truly terrifying thought. (Blessed Family - 596)

The place where the holy wine ceremony is conducted is the place that indemnifies the path of suffering and hardships experienced by True Parents. That is a place that cannot be exchanged for the universe or heaven and earth. You must not defile that place. Therefore, it is only right that you would be held accountable. (172-61, 1988.1.7)

What is the difference between the second generation children of Blessed Families and young members who are candidates for the Blessing? When those candidates want to receive the Blessing, they need the holy wine ceremony and other ceremonies as well. It is very complicated. However, in the case of the second generation, there is no need for the holy wine ceremony. Their roots are different. Your roots are lodged in the fallen world, but theirs are not.

Everyone looks similar from the outside, but their histories and backgrounds are all different. The beginnings were different and so the process of growing up was different. The current situations they are in are different and their future destinations are different. Even though the final destination (spirit world) is the same, the final place they are going to there is different. It cannot be the same because those of the second generation are in the position of blessed children. (144-281, 1986.4.26)

2.4.2. Blessing Ceremony

The Blessing Ceremony is the bequeathal ceremony of love. Just as True Parents received love from God, you should receive love from Parents in place of the love of God. The holy wedding ceremony is the bequeathal ceremony in which you receive this love from Parents who are encouraging you with the words, "You should live this way!" What that means is that you receive the love of God from True Parents. It is not something you can receive from someone who is famous. Weddings not offi-

ciated by the True Parents are officiated by the archangel. When a prominent person comes to officiate at a wedding alone, like an odd shoe, that person is conducting the wedding as the archangel. (96-236, 1978.1.22)

A wedding ceremony signifies the realization of love, as well as the bestowal of the rights of creation and dominion. (76-46, 1975.1.26)

The Holy Wedding Blessing Ceremony is not simply a wedding through which a man and woman come together and form a family. Until now, all weddings were centered on the people getting married, but our wedding ceremony is a significant condition necessary to indemnify history. Therefore, in returning joy to God, we conduct the ceremony solemnly and splendidly. The Divine Principle clearly explains to us that our wedding ceremonies alleviate the grief of God caused by the Fall of Adam and Eve, and establish the true standard of husband and wife, which Jesus was not able to achieve. (22-212, 1969.2.4)

For you, walking towards the officiator of the Blessing Ceremony is like walking through the six thousand years of providential history. (Blessed Family - 679)

Forming an entrance are twenty-one or twelve best men and bridesmaids representing three stages, which signify formation, growth and completion of the providential course. After taking seven steps, you must stop and make three bows as the condition that you have passed through the formation stage. This whole ceremony represents the providential course of history from the time of Adam until now. (19-268, 1968.2.20)

In particular, it is the process that represents the three eras of Adam, Jesus and the Second Coming. (Blessed Family - 679)

You walk forward between the best men and bridesmaids, who are standing on either side, to meet the True Parents. The best men and bridesmaids establish the spiritual condition of representing the twelve tribes of Israel and twenty-four elders at Jesus' time. The bows represent the setting of a condition of indemnity for all this. True Parents sprinkle the holy water on those receiving the Blessing, to place them in the position of having been restored through indemnity. In this way, you are setting the condition of having gone beyond the earthly foundation of ancestors in the spirit world. (19-268, 1968.2.20)

The mass holy wedding is held to find and establish the new family of God. In other words, the ceremony is held so that you can learn to love God more than anyone else in the world. (Blessed Family - 563)

The mass holy wedding is something we can be proud of in the Unification Church. Moreover, we should be proud that it brings together not only people from the same race but people from East

and West. No power on earth, except the Unification Church, can accomplish this, not even the presidents of nations. We are able to hold the weddings, not because Father is great, but because we have behind us the power of God. (Blessed Family - 563)

True Father's Holy Wedding ceremony should have been more grand and more magnificent than any other wedding performed to date. However, because it was carried out under extremely difficult circumstances, it was not as grand as it should have been. Therefore, we still have a condition to fulfill, which is to carry out the ceremony once again in all splendor and glory.

The members must also be in the position to have the greatest wedding ceremonies in three generations whether at home or overseas. Only then can you set this as a condition in front of Satan. That is why we hold large weddings. At the same time, from an internal point of view, we need to set a condition as a sacrificial offering in order to conduct weddings that bring joy to God. (19-70, 1967.12.26)

A banquet hosted by God should be more extravagant than any other held in the satanic world. However, an individual cannot uphold this standard alone. That is why we need to host mass holy weddings as never been seen before in history. (19-32, 1967.12.15)

What is the purpose of the Holy Wedding Blessing Ceremony? It is to save the world. The ceremony is an international holy wedding ceremony that transcends nationality, race, language, culture and customs. Through it, new people of God are created. Therefore, the place where the ceremony is held is one of reconciliation. (Blessed Family - 565)

We conduct the Holy Wedding Blessing Ceremony in the Unification Church in order to create a new race in the world, centering on God. (Blessed Family - 565)

This Holy Wedding Ceremony being conducted today has been the hope and ideal of God. It is the Holy Wedding Ceremony that God had planned for Adam and Eve after they fully matured. It existed in His heart as the ideal of creation, and so, conducting this ceremony is truly a historic event. You must realize that this is the first time such a ceremony has been held since the time of creation. (9-83, 1960.4.16)

2.4.3. Three-day ceremony for substantial restoration

Forty days after receiving the Blessing, you need to go through the ceremony for substantial restoration, which lasts three days. This period of forty days is the period of total historic indemnity. A person is given the right of restoration centering on love, not in the formation or growth stages, but in the completion stage. (God's Will - 552)

Adam's era and the era that came after that were both failures. As a result,

the formative realm of God's substantial love in the Old Testament Age could not be inherited, and the substantial love of God in the growth stage centering on Christianity also could not be inherited. Only after inheriting the realm of love in the formation and growth stages can you stand in the realm of completion of the Completed Testament Age. The three-day ceremony is a ceremony of conditional indemnity for substantial restoration. On the first day of the three-day ceremony, the realm of the Old Testament Age and the position of fallen Adam are restored. On the second day, the position of Jesus in the New Testament Age is restored through indemnity. On the third day, the groom, representing Jesus, re-creates the bride. From there, you can begin again on the right path. Setting the conditions for indemnity in detail, like this, is really complicated work. (God's Will - 552)

During the three-day ceremony, the people who have received the Blessing are in the position of husband and wife, but one in which the wife has to stand in the position of the mother. As the mother, she must give birth to her husband through love.

This means that until the Lord comes, all wives must give birth to their husbands, and Eve who represents women must also give birth to the Lord at his Second Advent. (90-134, 1976.10.21)

At present, there is no perfected husband. There is no Lord, no owner on earth. Therefore it is the responsibility of the woman to give birth to him. Eve was supposed to perfect Adam, but instead she made him fall. Mary was supposed to give birth to Jesus and do her duty as the mother so that he could fulfill his mission, but she failed to do so. All this must be restored. What that means is that the woman must give birth to her spouse as Adam. If he does not become the perfected Adam, he cannot consummate his marriage. Since the providence took three eras, including the era of the Second Coming, the woman has to fulfill her mission of giving birth to three people, through three generations. (90-134, 1976.10.21)

The woman, in the position of Eve, must give birth to her husband as Adam. She must raise him through the formation stage. Then, as a representative of Jesus, she must raise him through the growth stage. Finally, in the completion stage, she must raise him to become Adam who is untainted by the Fall. Only after that can the husband claim his right as the husband of Eve and love her. This is the process that needs to be followed. A confession is necessary at this point. Only in the era of the Second Coming can he become the husband. When he can stand in the position of perfected Adam, he can claim the position of the Blessing, that is, the position of the bridegroom. (90-134, 1976.10.21)

Through True Father, the wife is bequeathed the mission of a mother towards her husband. What this means is that the wife must love in a way that allows her to give birth to her husband

in three stages. In order to set the condition for her giving birth through love, the act of loving must be carried out in the opposite way from how it was done in the past. The woman is in the upper position and the man is in the lower position. You should keep this in mind in the act of love. (90-134, 1976.10.21)

When carrying out the three-day ceremony, the woman prays first. In order to give birth to Adam in the formation stage, one needs to be blessed. Only then can one enter the era of Jesus. Then the ritual is repeated, with the words, "Please bestow on me the blessing of giving birth to the second Adam, who is like Jesus!" With the second birth, the husband advances to the position representing Jesus, from where he can reach the position of perfection. Only then can he achieve the subject position of the husband. (90-134, 1976.10.21)

After the growth stage in the three-day ceremony, the man is restored to the upper position. That is why in making love on the third occasion, the man should be in the upper position. After completing this, the husband and wife should offer the prayer that they have become an eternal husband and wife, and an eternal family that belongs to God and that is the heir of heaven. Only then can they truly start their lives as husband and wife. Only when that is accomplished, can they boldly walk into the Kingdom of God as a family completely restored through indemnity. It is that difficult to achieve. Therefore, if you do not know about this, it is impossible for you to be restored. You cannot be restored if you don't know this. In the world today, many churches claim that they will go to the Kingdom of Heaven if they believe in Jesus, but this is total nonsense. They are not going to the Kingdom of Heaven but to paradise. Paradise is the waiting room. (90-134, 1976.10.21)

The holy wine ceremony sets the condition that you have been born through three providential mothers – Eve, Mary and True Mother. The holy wine contains the blood of indemnity. By drinking the holy wine, you are purified internally, and by wiping yourself with the holy handkerchief, you are purified externally. (19-270, 1968.2.20)

From now on, after having completed the three-day ceremony, you must create substantial children. You must pray that you can give birth to children who can form a relationship of heart with Heavenly Father and who can become the priests of heart. I hope that you will give birth to children on the foundation of heart that represents heaven and earth. I always take responsibility once I have blessed someone. We must receive the Blessing once more on behalf of the world. That is why it is a conditional Blessing. The 40-day separation period indemnified the four thousand years of history. The actual married life begins today, the end of the three-day ceremony. Since the day of the Blessing until now there has been a period of indemnity. (11-161, 1961.6.24)

Section 3. Responsibilities of Blessed Families

3.1. Unity of heart with True Parents

Since human beings fell while at the top of the growth stage of the growing period, we cannot go directly to the completion stage. What this means is that people at the top of the growth stage can rid themselves of original sin through the Blessing. They can then rise to the level above the point where the first ancestors fell. Therefore, you must realize that the position you have acquired today through receiving the Blessing is not that of the top of the completion stage but the top of the growth stage. (35-233, 1970.10.19)

Through fallen Adam and Eve, the eight members of Adam's family including Cain, Abel, Seth and their respective spouses all fell. Therefore, the Blessing is where you can once again proceed towards the completion stage by setting conditions of indemnity. You must feel the love of the Parents while you are doing so. The origin of life comes about when a person is born through the love of the parents. Only when you pass through the place where you can respect the value of life more than anything else in the world, can you proceed to the new path of life. That is how the Divine Principle works. (35-233, 1970.10.19)

The individual perfection we speak of today is not the absolute and complete perfection of the individual. It is conditional. You must understand that this perfection is a conditional perfection in the process of restoration. That is why, though they stand in the position of parents, they do not truly know about God's realm of heart. They have not experienced the great power of loving each other so much that the husband cannot give up his wife and the wife cannot give up her husband even in exchange for the universe. The love they share is so strong that it can hold heaven and earth together.

That is why those families who have received the Blessing must bear in mind that until they cross over from this fallen realm, they are only in the realm of conditional perfection. They are not in the realm of the perfected Kingdom of Heaven. Since they are only living in that conditional realm of perfection, once they pass on to the spirit world, they need to go through certain formalities. Only after they go through due formalities and reach complete perfection can they receive their passports and enter the Kingdom of Heaven. (100-144, 1978.10.9)

"I have received the Blessing, and that's enough! I'll go to the Kingdom of Heaven even if I don't do anything now!" If you think like this, and sit still, doing nothing, you will go to ruin. The Blessing is not at the perfection level. Everyone here, you learned about the seven-year course, didn't you? Since there is no one else who knows about these complicated details and has worked out the truth from them, even the Almighty God has no choice but to be drawn by

this. After you received the Blessing, you may claim, "We received the Blessing according to the principles of God. We have become completely one." But is that true? The husband and wife must in turn re-create. (68-148, 1973.7.29)

The husband and wife must re-create each other. If the Blessed families of the Unification Church forget that, you will still have to walk the path of filling in the bottomless pit that exists between the resentful husband and wife and all will come to ruin. Even if I claim that you will not come to ruin, the truth is that you will. The husband and wife must pass through the process of re-creation to become the ideal husband and wife who have been perfectly restored, according to the desire of God. That is why in the Unification Church we first talk of individual restoration and perfection, and then restoration and perfection of the family. (68-148, 1973.7.29)

What is the hope of humankind? It is to attend True Parents. Six thousand years ago, Adam and Eve were supposed to be blessed in marriage and all of humanity was to become the descendants of God. However, due to the Fall of Adam and Eve, human beings became the descendants of Satan instead. Therefore, True Parents, who were lost six thousand years ago, must be restored on the side of heaven. You have to be reborn through the relationship of love with True Parents. Only then can you become citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven. (19-203, 1968.1.7)

Everything starts from True Parents. The beginning of everything, the starting point, is not you, but True Parents. It is the same for the way we live, our general activities and our family relationships of love. The beginning is always True Parents. By True Parents, I am not referring to my wife and myself; my point is that this is the original concept harbored by God with regard to our first ancestors. You must keep this motto in mind: "How can we make our families like the family of True Parents?" (277-250, 1996.4.18)

True Parents are the center of your Blessed Family. In the Garden of Eden, a family living with true parents was not formed. It is your responsibility to restore the family, and in order to do so, you must follow the commands of True Parents absolutely. You should not argue with True Parents. The name of True Parents can settle down in your families only when your personal concepts disappear. If this does not come to pass, you cannot restore ideal families. This is not an idea I came up with; it is the original concept of creation nurtured by God. (277-250, 1996.4.18)

From now on, you must live with True Parents. True Parents are in the position of the grandparents, but you must also feel you have your mother and father living with you, and that you are in the position of the eldest son. We can thus conclude that three generations live together in your home. You must live with the feeling in your heart that God is

with you, and True Parents are with you as your own parents. We have now ushered in an era in which we cannot think that God is not there, that He is not alive. (131-97, 1984.4.16)

All of humankind is supposed to connect to God in heart. God, the Father, and humankind, the children, are meant to be connected through the realm of heart. (55-163, 1972.5.7)

Since human beings fell because they did not believe in God, they must believe in the Savior and follow him. What should they do as they follow him? They should prepare a love nest for Jesus. Isn't it simple? Then, they should become one substantially, as well as one in heart with Jesus, the groom, through whom they can then be prepared. In this way, the place where God, true parents, and true children come together, that is, the place originally desired by God at the time of creation, comes into existence on earth. A new universe can then begin from there. (15-263, 1965.10.17)

Though your lineages and backgrounds are different, if you want to take after True Parents you must first be engrafted to them. You must do a complete turnaround and be engrafted. To do this, you must complete the course of indemnity that you are undertaking. Since that course was begun through the True Parents, it can only be completed through the True Parents. That is why you must be engrafted to True Parents. Because Adam became a false parent instead of a true parent, God has continuously sought after the True Parents until this day. The reason the groom, the bride and the marriage feast of the lamb are needed in the era of the Second Coming is so we may find the True Parents. (24-203, 1969.8.10)

What should you do to receive the love of the True Parents? Love everything that is loved by True Parents. Only then can you receive love from them. In terms of a family, if a son wants to be loved by his parents, he needs to know he can only receive love from his parents when he loves everything they cherish. If a person wants to receive love without doing so, he is no better than a thief. If a child claims everything that is valued by his parents just as he pleases, he cannot receive love from them. (133-26, 1984.7.1)

Are you the true sons and daughters of True Parents? When you talk about true children, what are you centering on? It is the true lineage. Of course, the relationship is formed through true love, but the actual connection is through the true lineage. That is why those connected through the true lineage take after the mother and father. Do you resemble True Father? Your eyes are blue whereas my eyes are black, and our hair is different colors. My hair is white. I am an Asian and my face is flat. When taking after True Parents, you only resemble the most essential parts. By these essential parts, I am talking about winning over Satan and loving God absolutely. That is all you need to take after. Then

you can dominate and control Satan. (170-237, 1987.11.21)

How much should you love True Father? Here we return to the fundamental problem. You cannot love him while you are still in a place stained with traces of love from the satanic world. You must love much more than that. You must love him more than you love anyone else, even your own mother, father, wife and children, who were all born in the satanic world.

That is why the Bible says, "Anyone who loves his father or mother more than me is not worthy of me; and anyone who loves his son or daughter more than me is not worthy of me." This was the conclusion. Jesus went on to say, "Anyone who does not take up his cross and follow me is not worthy of me!" He said we must take up our crosses. Our public endeavors are regarded as our crosses, because we need to battle against the forces that are dragging us in the opposite direction. In the process of doing so, we will shed many bitter tears. (178-97, 1988.6.1)

The fallen world of today must deny everything, but while they are denying everything, they must nurture the bud of love. Such logic is necessary in the world. You must deny everything and try to discover the absolute standard centered on God and His governing love. (109-146, 1980.11.1)

You must involve True Parents in everything you do. You must consult them in making decisions; you must talk with them and try to solve any problems with them. (44-175, 1971.5.6)

3.2. The absolute value of sexual love

What is the symbol of the love between man and woman? What is the terminus of love? It is the sexual organs that physically unite man and woman into one. They act as the passageway through which the minds and bodies of man and woman form a complete union centering on love. (132-146, 1984.5.31)

What is the difference between man and woman? First of all, their bodies, including the sexual organs, are different. Then, for whom is the sexual organ of man absolutely necessary? The sexual organ of man exists for woman.

When you look at the sexual organs of human beings, you see that one has a concave shape while the other has a convex shape. Why do you think that is? Organs of both sexes could have been made in pointed shapes or flat shapes, but why were they shaped so differently? It is all for the objective partner. The organ of the man is absolutely desired by the woman, and the organ of the woman is absolutely desired by the man. Until now, no one knew that the woman's sexual organ belonged to the man absolutely, and that the man's sexual organ belonged to the woman. By possessing the organ of the opposite sex, a person can understand about love. (299-119, 1999.2.7)

The sexual organs are the palace of love, the palace in which eternal life is born, the palace that inherits the future descendants and lineage which will succeed to the eternally unchanging traditions of heaven. It is the palace of true life, true love and true lineage. It is the most precious place of all. You cannot do anything you like with it. You cannot use it without permission from God. It is a place that cannot be touched by anyone other than your husband or wife, who has gained the approval of God and the universe. (216-207, 1991.3.31)

The unity of man and woman, convex and concave, is the place where God is perfected. That is where woman who is one half, and man who is the other half, are perfected. The land of settlement, where the ideal of God's love can be perfected, begins from the place where concave and convex unite and a relationship of the first love is established after marriage. The first love relationship of man and woman represents the place of perfection of the object partner of God. This is the core of the universe. When this moves, the entire universe goes back and forth in harmony. It is the base for the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world.

Since this is the origin of love, it is called the original palace of love. Among the many royal palaces, the central palace is called the original palace. This is the original palace of love, life and the lineage, and the origin of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world. It is the beginning place of the freedom, happiness and peace longed for by humanity. That place is the royal palace for love, life, lineage and all creation; and the individual, family, tribe and a people are connected from there. You should understand that it is the original source and starting point of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world. It is also the origin of freedom, happiness and peace. If a woman does not have a man, she is in absolute darkness. If a man does not have a woman, he is in absolute darkness (261-173, 1994.6.9)

It is not only the base of peace, but also everything else that begins from love, including the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world. What love? Is it the love of a man, the love of a woman, or the love of both man and woman? It is the love of both. Where does the love of man and woman come together? Is it the face or the fingertips? The love between the two comes together through the sexual organs. (263-52, 1994.8.16)

What is the best place a man can worship? Is it the face of a woman? Is it her breasts? Is it her body? Where is it? There is only one place in which the concave part can come together with the convex part. For this to happen, the creation is connected, and the society, nation, world, universe and Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world are connected. This is the iron rule and the formula of the existing world. (262-55, 1994.7.23)

Where is the original place through which not only man and woman, but

also God Himself can be perfected? Where can you perfect the love of God and man and woman? Where is the central place of settlement? This is the question. If you don't know the answer to this question, you cannot expand and extend the heavenly kingdom of the ideal of love on earth. Is that place of settlement the eyes, nose, hands, or feet? Where is it? It is the sexual organs. (261-167, 1994.6.9)

What are the sexual organs? They are the palaces centered on true love, true life and true lineage. They are the most precious in the world. Without them, God's ideal, God's family and God's will cannot be achieved. They are the origin, from which we can achieve the perfection of everything. (216-218, 1991.4.1)

The sexual organ of a woman is the source of the universe. The place where one forms the connection of love is the main palace of love. It is the original palace. Love begins from there. The love-making on the first night after blessed marriage is the beginning of the main palace of love. It is the place where the life of man and woman unite into one for the first time. Therefore, that place is the original palace of ideal life, and the original lineage begins from there. Thus, that place becomes the original palace of the lineage.

Heaven also begins from there, so that place also becomes the original palace for the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world, and the original palace for human perfection and for God's perfection. (257-324, 1994.3.16)

Sexual organs are the palace of love. What is the current state of that palace of love? The sexual organs of human beings are the most precious in the world: they are the palace of love, life and lineage. They are the most sacred in the world. Through the Fall, however, they became defiled. From the original viewpoint of God, the sexual organ is not unclean, but sacred. It is most precious. Life, love and lineage are connected to it. This sacred organ was defiled by Satan. (218-176, 1991.7.28)

If this world became one that absolutely valued the sexual organs, would that world be a good world or a bad one? Would it be a thriving world or a perishing world? When God was creating human beings, which part of the body do you think He put most effort into making? Would it have been the eyes, nose, heart, or brain? None of these organs are capable of reproducing new life and die out in the end. Isn't that true? (279-244, 1996.9.15)

Your sexual organ is the original palace of love. I'm telling you that your sexual organ is the main palace, the palace of life and palace of lineage. Only when it is treated as such, can it become the palace in which God can reside. Since God is the King of kings, He needs to reside in His main palace. So if you want Him to come and reside with you, you need to become the main palace of love, life, and lineage, and the main palace of conscience. (280-197, 1997. 1.1)

The place where two lives come together as one, centered on love, and the place where the blood of man and woman become one, is the sexual organ. You must know that this place is more precious than sons and daughters, husband and even God. It is a place that is more precious than your children, husband, and even parents. If sexual organs did not exist, parents would be valueless, husband and wife would be valueless, and sons and daughters would be valueless. Since this place is so very precious, it is kept under lock and key, away from other eyes, during your lifetime, as the treasure of treasures. The key that can unlock the sexual organ of a man is owned by the woman, and the key for the woman is owned by the man; there is only one key for every person. There should only be one key per person. Do you want to possess ten or twenty keys, as in the case of free sex? Do you want to become a ruined house that has its gates open for everyone and does not have an owner? Do you want to become a place that anyone can pass through and come and go at will? (280-199, 1997.1.1)

What are the sexual organs where man and woman make love? They are the original palace of love, life and lineage. Grandfathers and grandmothers hold to them, as will all sons and daughters who are yet to be born. Is there any man or woman who does not hold on to them? Then why did it become such an immoral subject? People regard any word connected to sex as immoral. Why is it immoral? It should be sacred. You should accept words connected to sex as sacred. The sexual organ connects to eternal love to bring forth eternal life and eternal lineage. It is the most precious thing in the world of creation. (210-101, 1990.12.1)

Protecting and guarding the chastity of men and women is the same as protecting the universe. This is because the order of love between men and women is the basis of the universe.

The sexual organ is more important than the head. You cannot find the origin of true love in your head. You cannot find the origin of true life in your head. You cannot find the origin of true lineage in your head. Where is this origin, then? It is in the sexual organs. Isn't that only too true? Everything can be found in the sexual organs – life, love, and lineage. It is the main palace of love. You can find the root of life there. It is the same in the case of the lineage. The sexual organ is the most precious part of the human body as well as the human world and history of humanity. Without it, reproduction of humankind would be impossible. (203-104, 1990.6.17)

In the fallen world, love has become the most dangerous thing in the world. The Fall is the reason love is not being managed properly and the universe is broken and overturned. Though human beings did not realize how love became false and indecent, they still tried to guard and protect that love because of their instinctive desire and hope for true love. (Blessed Family - 346)

Through the Fall, the sexual organs of men and women became evil. They became the main palace that opened the gates to the evil wave of death, laws of death, the hell of destruction, and the wicked object that destroyed the ways of heaven. This was the tragic secret that has been hidden in history until this time. (197-175, 1990.1.13)

Where is the palace of love? You must not think it strange that I am talking of such things. If this is not corrected, the whole world will go amiss. If the first step goes wrong, wickedness will spread throughout the whole universe. Through my strenuous efforts to find the answer to the fundamental problems of humankind and the origin of the universe, I discovered the answer within the sexual organ. After discovering this, I thought the whole matter through and found that the harmony of heaven and earth was swirling there. It is truly an amazing fact. (197-24, 1990.1.7)

True freedom is premised on taking responsibility. If everyone insisted only on the freedom of love for each individual and put this into practice, without taking responsibility for it, how great would be the confusion and catastrophe resulting from it! The perfection of human beings, who will be able to achieve the sublime ideal of love, is only possible when they take responsibility for love. (277-200, 1996.4.16)

Humankind must be grateful to God for giving them the freedom of love. But at the same time, they should take responsibility, by becoming the subject of that freedom through self-discipline and self-control. When a person takes responsibility for love, he does not do so because of laws or what other people think, but because of self-dominion and self-determination in the vertical relationship of life with God. (277-200, 1996.4.16)

If you use your sexual organs recklessly, like a blind person who is wandering here and there because he has lost his way, you are bound for hell. On the other hand, if you use your sexual organs according to God's standard of absolute love, you will go to the highest realm of the Kingdom of Heaven. This conclusion is clear, fair and proper. (279-256, 1996.9.15)

You are bound to be punished if you treat the love organs recklessly. It is the palace of love and the garden of love, the ancestor of love. Love originated from there. Life was begun from there. History began from there. What that means is that the origin of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world, and the origin of God's happiness are molded there. God's laughter begins from there. The love organ is the place where God can find love and dance for joy. You must go in search for this place. Is that right, or wrong? That is how precious it is. (256-199, 1994.3.13)

Since human beings fell because of love, the sexual organs are the most

frightening in the world. In religion, adultery is treated as the most frightful sin of all. Free sex is abundant in the United States. Is it expanding the hell of Satan or God's heaven? It is expanding hell. It is expanding hell on earth, and hell in the spirit world. Through it, everything will end up in ruin. (261-302, 1994.3.13)

Even if I inquired into every truth in the world, probed into both the spiritual and physical worlds, and looked into every scripture, there would be no way to answer the question: Does God exist or not? If there is a God and if this God made the world the way it is today, I would fight with Him to bring this problem to an end. I would never let Him go until this problem was solved. Why were human beings born and what is the fundamental principle through which human beings were born? Man was born because of woman. That is the best truth of all truths. An ideal man standing before a woman is the best truth. You must realize that he is the substantial entity of the truth of the ideal; he brings the perfection of the whole universe. The woman standing before such a man is also the substantial entity of all substantial elements of universal truth. She is the being that embodies absolute truth. (267-230, 1995.1.8)

You must not stain your Blessing lineage. All of you should be fully aware of this. Your lineage is your asset that will enable you to succeed to and inherit heaven. It is like a document of your blood relatives or deed papers to that lineage. It is the equivalent of your genealogy. The issue is how you protect your purity. (263-62, 1994.8.16)

3.3. The importance of ideal marriage

Man is a being with God's masculine form, and woman is a being with God's feminine form. A husband and wife are like the universe wrapped up in a wrapping cloth. Therefore, a husband and wife can feel the heart of God's ideal love. (13-67, 1963.10.17)

If a husband and wife love each other so much that their love is about to explode on the basis of a heart that loves God and humanity, God and the universe will be intoxicated through that family. The love they share cannot be anything else but the love for God and humanity. Where is the root of that love? That root cannot be found within oneself. It is the origin of God's love and the love of humanity. (35-240, 1970.10.19)

If you are married, you no long just exist in a horizontal plane. Although you only have a horizontal foundation, the vertical concept comes into being when high connects to low. A horizontal history might bring order to the universe but not to the cosmos.

Only when the vertical meets with the horizontal and forms a right angle, can all sides fit together: You can replace heaven with the earth, or the earth with heaven, or front with back, or back with

front, or between any correlative aspects – left, right, top, bottom, front, back. The perfected standard on earth leads to total perfection in the spirit world. (230-259, 1992.5.8)

The wedding ceremony of perfected Adam and Eve is the wedding ceremony of God. That is how the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and the Kingdom of Heaven in spirit world come into existence simultaneously. It starts from the love nest. The moment the sexual organs of man and woman come together without the Fall is the starting point of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world. That is also the base on which the Three Great Kingships should be established. A love nest cannot be built anywhere else except that place. (263-57, 1994.8.16)

By nature, human beings do not like to share their spouses' love with others. The horizontal relationship of love between husband and wife is different from the vertical relationship of love between parents and children, in that once it is shared with others, it becomes ruined. This is because, by virtue of the principle of creation, it becomes necessary for husband and wife to form an absolute unity in love. Human beings have the responsibility to live for the sake of their spouses absolutely. (277-200, 1996.4.16)

For God, the sight of a man and woman receiving the Blessing and feeling joy by giving and receiving perfected love is like a flower blossoming on earth. Moreover, everything that occurs through their love is like the fragrance of flowers to God. God would then come to reside in such a family because He desires to live amidst such a beautiful fragrance. The place of ideal love between a husband and wife is the base on which God's love can come automatically. That place will also become the point where all creation and the universe can come together in harmony. (Blessed Family - 889)

It is the desire of the world, humanity and the future history to form a family in which the love of God can blossom through three generations. You must realize that the love between husband and wife is such a precious and beautiful object that will appear as a new flower and have the fragrance of a new history in front of the laws of heaven and earth. (35-241, 1970.10.19)

The perfection of the love between man and woman is the perfection of the universe. The day that this love is broken is the day all order in the universe is destroyed and the world of vertical relationships is completely ruined. (Blessed Family - 545)

A husband and wife bound together through heartfelt love should form a family that demonstrates clearly that their love is one with God's purpose. To do this, they must go beyond their own spheres of life and even beyond their own lifetime. Otherwise, they cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven where God resides. (35-180, 1970.10.13)

Love is eternal. There cannot be two loves that are eternal, but only one. When a man and woman are bound together in love, they should live together in happy union while on earth, and even after death for eternity. Although they have two bodies, they are together in the spirit world, and become one completely. When two bodies become one, they form a circular motion with God, thereby establishing the four-position foundation of love; this is the ideal world. False love cannot invade this world; only true love can exist there. (Blessed Family - 897)

Human beings are always in need of stimulation. Happiness cannot be achieved without it. There must be some kind of stimulation. Just as the food you eat every day tastes different and refreshing if you eat it when you are hungry, the love between a husband and wife must also always feel refreshing. The more a husband and wife see each other, the more they should want to be with each other, even all day long. To this end, one must continue studying about True Parents and God. (23-57, 1969.5.11)

What sort of couple are an ideal husband and wife? They are the husband and wife who can become substantial manifestations of the best art and the best literature. Before they seek elsewhere for the highest ideals and culture, husband and wife should know that the sweetest and deepest love they share should become the supreme work of art in the world. The married life shared by these two should become the best work of literature and an embodiment of literature itself. (22-270, 1969.5.4)

The place where husband and wife share true love after getting married is the place of the palace. This is the origin of the love, life and lineage of God and humankind, and the starting point for the ideal of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world. Centering on true love, the children born of this love become the perfect union of husband and wife, form a family attending God, and become the origin of peace and the ideal. The man and woman, who only represent halves by themselves, unite into one and complete the ideal love of God as His object partners. (259-45, 1994.3.27)

The place where one gives birth is the position where one occupies the higher realm of God's heart. By ascending to the creative position of God and loving one's children, one can experience the inner heart of God and how much He loved humankind after creating them. (224-28, 1991.11.21)

Do you think God would look down on you when you are making love, or not? Would God, who is omnipotent and omnipresent, close His eyes during the night when the five billion people in the world are making love, or not? How would He feel as He looks down on you? How many good wives and good husbands are there? Think about it. All sorts of things can be seen during the night. If

a husband or wife does not want to make love to his or her spouse, but is forced into doing it, that is not how a person should live. What kind of love is that? Is that the way to live?

Imagine the whole world becoming like the Garden of Eden, according to the ideal of creation desired by God: filled with the fragrance of flowers, butterflies and bees flying around, heaven and earth living together in harmony, and God falling asleep, drunk on the world itself. How wonderful that would be! Have you ever thought about that? You should all try to live like that. (222-252, 1991.11.3)

Children are the outcome of achieving the ability to create, in the same position as God, by becoming one through the love between husband and wife. (52-319, 1972.2.3)

3.4. Blessing is the key to perfection of the ideal family

God's will in regard to humankind is to realize the ideal of creation by fulfilling the purpose of creation. The realization of the ideal of creation does not end with a man and woman marrying and becoming one through love; they must raise children after that. This is because the laws of nature dictate that the relationships of up and down, front and back become connected. If there was a yesterday, there should be a today, and if there is a today, there should be a tomorrow. They must all be connected. That is why if there is only a husband and wife, there may be a today but there will be no tomorrow. If there is no tomorrow, all things come to an end. That is why in the laws of nature, there can only be right and left when there is up and down. (85-178, 1976.3.3)

God's ideal, which was to be achieved through the human ancestors, was to have a man and woman come together in union and form an ideal family. In this regard, the center of an ideal family is neither man nor woman. A family is a group formed by the union between the husband and wife, the parents and children. At the center is the love of God. Therefore, we reach the conclusion that the will of God is to perfect a family, centering on the love of God. (Blessed Family - 301)

The family is the point where God's ideal can be manifested on earth, and where the happiness of humanity can be manifested on earth. It is the place where the work of humankind is finished and God's work is completed. (Blessed Family - 934)

Why are families good? The reason is because the family is the base of all free activities centered on the love of the parents. (99-305, 1978.10.1)

There must be parents, husband and wife, and children in a family. Only then can that family become the base for happiness. There can be no doubt that the purpose for God's endeavors in trying to restore humanity is so He can find His

own happiness. That is why, in God's efforts to build the foundation for happiness, such an ideal cannot exist without humankind. He can only reach this common ground after forming a relationship with human beings. Just as we feel happiness when our families are fulfilled in love, God also wants to feel happiness in such an environment. (32-198, 1970.7.15)

Once you become one centered on God, circular motion manifests in all sorts of forms and figures. That is why the older sibling must love the younger, following the example of their parents loving them. When a family is united into one in love in that way, love blossoms. Then that family love becomes the love within a society, and then the love within a nation. In this way, it becomes the love of the whole world. However, in the world today this is a concept that is only vaguely understood. (28-170, 1970.1.11)

A true family is one where the husband loves and lives for his wife as he would his mother, where the wife loves and lives for her husband as she would her father, and where the husband and wife love each other as they would their own brother and sister. Furthermore, the world in which the husband loves his wife as he would God and the wife loves and respects her husband as she would God, is the Kingdom of Heaven where ideal families dwell. Such a tradition must be established here on earth. (Blessed Family - 920)

An ideal family is where the three kinds of love, that is, the eternal love of the parents, the eternal love between husband and wife, and the eternal love of the children, centered on God, can be found. (Blessed Family - 913)

In a person's lifetime, the most important moments are when he is born, when he gets married, and when he dies. Then, when he is being born, how should he be born? He must be born well. In terms of our Unification Church, he must be born centering on the connection of heart. The next important moment is the time he gets married. When a person gets married, he does so to expand life.

In other words, he gets married to achieve the four-position foundation. Only when such a public law of the universe is established on earth can the will of God and the original will of humankind, be achieved. Families are there so that such universal laws can be established, both in form and substance, through them. (24-230, 1969.8.17)

Where does life in the Kingdom of Heaven begin? It begins from the family and nowhere else. The Kingdom of Heaven is a dimensionally expanded version of the family, and so does not go beyond the realm of the family. That is why, when you embrace your wife or husband, you must bear in mind that through this act, all men and women in the world have become one. The place where you can set the condition that you have loved all of humanity in this manner is the family. (30-83, 1970.3.17)

The true love relationship between parents and children is vertical, the true love relationship between husband and wife is horizontal, and the true love in the relationship between siblings is in the position of front and back. In these ways, God hoped to achieve the ideal of true love in a rotating spherical shape. In other words, at the central point where the line connecting the high and low vertically, the line connecting the left and the right horizontally, and the line connecting the front and back meet, is where unification can be achieved. That point becomes the central point of this sphere. When can the Four Great Realms of Heart, those of the children, siblings, husband and wife, and parents, achieve complete oneness? The place where two human beings marry and make love for the first time centering on God becomes the point of fruition and the center of all perfection. Therefore, marriage is the coming together of all people in heaven and earth, and the perfection of the vertical and horizontal, the left and right, and the front and back. Marriage is the perfecting place of the ideal of true children, siblings, husband and wife, and parents, through true love. (259-42, 1994.3.27)

In a family, when someone asks what the best aspect of that family is, you are not the one who can decide what that is. Then, who has the highest value in a family? It is the parents. Considering you as an individual, you may value power, knowledge, honor or money, but there would be nothing you can value higher than your parents. Following them, in order, would come your spouses and then your children.

Indeed, is there anything in your family more precious and valuable than your parents, husband or wife, and children? Of course there isn't. Then why would parents be the most precious in a family? Why would the husband and wife and children be precious? It is because there is love. The parental love is absolutely necessary for the husband and wife's relationship with the children. The brotherly love between siblings and the heart of filial piety manifested by the children towards their parents is also absolutely necessary in a family. (Blessed Family - 915)

Since God is the substance of true love, when one is connected to true love, everyone becomes part of the one body. Parents are living gods representing God, the husband and wife represent two halves of God, and the sons and daughters are small gods. A family structure formed of three generations centering on true love in this manner is the basis of the Kingdom of Heaven. Without achieving such a basis, the Kingdom of Heaven cannot be established. The family is the center of the universe. The perfection of the family is the basis for the perfection of the universe. So, if you love the universe as you love your family, you can be welcome wherever you go. In this case, God stands in the central position of multi-faceted love as the parent of the whole universe. (298-306, 1999.1.17)

The four-position foundation as taught in the Divine Principle of the Unification Church refers to the realms of love of the three generations. The ideal of the creation of the universe can be realized only when three generations live with a harmonious and happy love within one house. Needless to say, the husband and wife must love each other, but the family can only live in harmony and happiness when the parents also pray for their children with love and look after them devotedly. Perfected love can be achieved when this is established vertically and connected horizontally. The sphere of love can then be completed and perfected only when the cousins and second cousins of that family are united into one through love. (Blessed Family - 947)

Ideal love is achieved in the family. However, God was not able to have true sons and daughters. He was not able to have true brothers and sisters nor true husbands and wives, and was not able to become a Parent. Therefore, it is the will of God to achieve all this. The place where this can be achieved is the place where love can dwell. People would flock to such a place, where such a love was achieved, leaving behind all their possessions. (19-314, 1968.3.17)

God is the center of the family, and so this world should come under the dominion of God. Blessed families should strive to become families that can connect to the Kingdom of God. Only when they live for the sake of others on behalf of God can tribes, races, nations and world be formed. Therefore, the family should fulfill its responsibility of establishing a world centered on God. The Unification Church centered on True Parents is like one big tribe, one big race. The purpose of the Unification Church lies in the five races coming together to form one single race, from which they can establish a nation that can serve the world more than any other nation. This is also the purpose I want to fulfill, and the purpose that God wishes to fulfill through True Parents. (100-310, 1978.10.22)

In the Unification Church, we believe that the Kingdom of Heaven is established from within the realm of the tribe. When the parents and siblings unite into one, and even the cousins and second cousins unite into one, centering on the grandfather, then the completion of three generations can be achieved. When such a love in the realm of the tribe is established here on earth, and united into one with God, the whole world will become a world of love in union with God, that is, the Kingdom of Heaven.

It is the same for a married woman. The grandfather-in-law and the father-in-law are representatives of God and her husband, so she must attend them with love. Furthermore, she must live in loving harmony with her brothers- and sisters-in-law. If such relationships of love are spread out to the society, people, nation and world, then that world would be filled with peace and love instead of

sin and war. That world would then be the ideal world, the Kingdom of Heaven which substantially manifests God's ideal. (Blessed Family - 947)

Where is the center of the universe? It is in the family. Where is the base on which true love can settle down? This base is found in your families, where you are living now. That is why the original family must have a dominion of love and build a protective relationship with the universe. It must expand the realm of this love beyond the family. It must follow the path of patriotism in loving the nation, and extend it to loving the world, beyond race and nation.

If a person who loves his or her family is called a filial son or daughter, and a person who loves his or her nation a patriot, what do we call the person who loves the world? We call that person a saint. (Blessed Family - 925)

Within the realm of God's love, humankind would have originally created an ideal family, tribe, people, and nation, and finally would have expanded to form a world embodying Adam's ideal. Just as the roots, stalk, and leaves of a tree are connected to each other as one living entity, centering on love, human beings were supposed to attend God as their Father. They were supposed to live in harmony with all people in the world as brothers and sisters, living as one created being, an interrelated being of love. It was God's worldview in accordance with God's will, to achieve the eternal ideal world centered on God in this manner. People living in such a world would not need to be saved, nor would they need a messiah. This is because they would be exemplary sons and daughters of God. (Blessed Family - 320)

If God's will had been fulfilled here on earth, a single cultural realm centered on Adam would have been established. Unlike the world of today, with its many different races, cultures, and forms of civilizations, the ideal world would have had one single culture, single ideology, and single civilization. If this had come about, culture, history, customs, language and traditions would all have been unified into one. (Blessed Family - 320)

The family is the representative training ground that teaches love for humanity. It is the representative place where the center of heart is established. When members of a family love and trust each other, and live a life of happiness, the center of the whole universe is thus established, and everyone can enjoy happiness. That is the beginning of the ideal realm. There is no meaning to existence without love. (Blessed Family - 925)

The ideal of the Unification Church does not lie in anything else other than the family. It starts with the family and concludes with the family. Until now there has not been one person who was able to solve this problem, and so all humankind has been yearning for such a person. Unificationism has been approved publicly because therein lies

happiness, and since it has been systematized and universalized, its infinite value has finally been revealed. Therefore, on the day when there is no one in the world who hates this worldview and everyone bows down to it and is in favor of it, the world will automatically unite into one. (26-103, 1969.10.18)

Nowadays, I feel that I must teach you about the norms of a family, that is, the norms you must follow in your lives as the families of the Kingdom of Heaven. However, the people who are supposed to walk the path of restoration have leaders who can teach them centering on the Divine Principle, and so they should learn about this from them. The time has passed for True Father to take responsibility for such problems in person. These problems should have been solved centering on the families one by one. Our Unification Church is an organization constituted of families. What that means is that we are centered on families. Whereas before we were centered on individuals, we are now centered on families. (22-334, 1969.5.11)

CHAPTER TWO

True Parents and the History of the Blessing

Section 1. True Parents and the Realm of the Third Israel

1.1. Blessed families are the tribe of the True Parents

The Blessed Families that are united with my family make up a new tribe. As time progresses, they will grow in number and form a new race. Further expansion will bring forth a new nation, and finally a new world. In other words, a new race, the race of the third Israel will be formed. For example, it is part of the work of the Unification Church to enable Japanese people to become those who will inherit the new realm of the lineage of God, instead of merely remaining as those who inherit the lineage of their historical Japanese ancestors. (22-197, 1969.2.2)

The third realm of Israel must be established on earth by connecting the spiritual foundations of the first and second Israels. In order to do so, the returning Lord must find and set up a family (Adam's family) that represents the first Israel, a second family (Noah's family) that represents the second Israel, and a third family (Jacob's family) that represents the third Israel. Therefore, the 36 Blessed Couples must become the ancestors of humanity. (19-317, 1968.3.29)

If you want to become citizens of the third Israel connected to the Unification Church, you must receive the Blessing. In the past, at the time of Abraham, one had to be circumcised to become a citizen of Israel; and in the time of Jesus, one had to be baptized. It is the same today. In the Unification Church, one cannot become a citizen of the third Israel without receiving the Blessing. However, in receiving the Blessing one must fulfill certain conditions that are neither simple nor easy. I continuously exerted myself and devoted my whole life in fulfilling the necessary foundations for these Blessings. (19-172, 1968.1.1)

When we say that the territory of the Blessed Families will be expanded, it means that the realm of the mainstream God-centered families will be expanded, thereby forming the tribe of God. The fact that families that have inherited the internal heavenly heart and standard of the True Parents will emerge and spread out horizontally signifies that a God-centered tribe, people and nation will be created. Moreover, it will not end there;

ultimately, a world centered on God will be established. (100-267, 1978.10.22)

Originally, the Blessed Families of the Unification Church were not created for the purpose of forming a nation. They were initiated with the aim of establishing a world of goodness centered on God. That is why the Blessed Families of the Unification Church transcend both nation and race. Because you set out centered on God, even though each of your families is independent, and each of you are separate individuals named Kim or Pak, the Blessed Families of the Unification Church are families that represent not only individuals but the people of the whole world. To put it simply, you are families who represent the whole; you transcend nations, peoples, and tribes. (100-267, 1978.10.22)

The Unification Church should make it possible for people who have no connection to come together based on the love of God and to form new families, which will then lead to new tribes that transcend all existing tribal concepts. The Church should bring together the different nationalities and tribes in order to form a new homogeneous race in such a way that people are able to love and cherish this race more than their own original lineage. This is the path being pioneered by the Unification Church and its members. (113-135, 1981.5.1)

The Lord who appears at the original starting point of the Blessing, in other words the central figure, is not limited by the time period in which he lives. He is the central figure who encompasses and transcends the history of the world. That is why the Blessing does not end with the husband and wife coming together in union. Through the Blessing, a new family must be formed, and further, a new tribe, new people, and new nation must come into being. All this begins with the Blessing. From this perspective, you must realize that since the 1960s, we have entered a new era in history. Because of this era, a new tribe will be manifested. Further, a new nation, and new world will be established on earth. Ever since their inauguration, the Blessing ceremonies of the Unification Church have been carried out in accordance with this purpose. (30-168, 1970.3.22)

1.2. Formation of the realm of the Third Israel

On God's side, a new realm of Israel must be formed by bringing forth Blessed Families. Accordingly, from 1960, the fortune on the heavenly side will become greater. From this time on we will pass through the eras of the family, tribe, people and nation, and advance to the era of the world. Based on the family level, in the position of Jacob, I must become one with you who are in the position of Esau, and form a tribe and people. (81-109, 1975.12.1)

All of you, now living in the Last Days, have to become the ancestors of the Third Israel, and understand that the final words will be God's words of

love, based on the love of God. Therefore, you must become the visible, substantial embodiments of God's words. God's internal heart must become your internal heart. In other words, you must become the substantial embodiments of the original heart. (3-331, 1958.2.2)

All of you must carry out the mission of a second creator who can disseminate the words of God. In other words, you must become the propagators of the Word, of life, and of its substance. Only when you accomplish this, and become one in love, can you attend God eternally. Such is the standard of the third Israel. Only in this manner can you sow the Word, the substance, and the life. You must become the substantial embodiments of the Word and the life, representing the heart of six thousand years of biblical history. You must know how to attend God, how to understand and feel the Word, and how to fulfill your mission of recreating the second Israel. You must constantly bear in mind that only by doing so can you become the sons and daughters who completely understand the internal heart of God. Only when you become the true children of God can you live in eternal glory centering on God's love. (3-331, 1958.2.2)

The third Israel is made up of people who were resurrected from grief. They were resurrected, not from a place of happiness, but from a place of grief. The difference here is that Satan was finally subjugated by these people who were in a miserable situation.

Some time ago I told you about my experience on Yong-mae island, so you may realize how extremely difficult it was to deal with. However, even while fleeing for safety, I made up my mind that out of the thirty million people of this nation, I would take the most difficult path. So I set out with this resolution: "I will walk this path until I die! I will follow this path until my heart stops beating! I will continue to tread this path as long as there is breath left in me!" (26-16, 1969.10.14)

The world has attained its present form through the motivation of one heart; and history has continued up until the present day through the investment of the heart of God and through the flesh and blood of Jesus. You must know that you are the substantial beings who, today, can bring all this to fruition. You must understand that you can remain as the third Israel only when you have become the object partners who possess the agonized and desperate heart of Jesus Christ. By having such a heart, Jesus offered himself as a sacrifice to create the second Israel. Therefore, only when you are prepared to do the same, can you become the ancestors of the third Israel. Only then can you become the original children of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, the Garden of Eden. (3-313, 1958.1.26)

The Blessed Families of the Unification Church are not in the position of the original Israel, waiting and yearning for the Messiah through the tradi-

tion of Judaism. Instead, they are one step ahead, because they have already received the Messiah and have formed a new tribe. (35-299, 1970.10.30)

When we consider Korea, we can say that the people who do not believe in God correspond to the first Israel, the members of existing churches correspond to the second Israel, and the Unification Church corresponds to the third Israel. That is why Satan is attacking the center of this providence. (19-268, 1968.2.20)

1.3. The Blessing is the key for entering the Third Israel

Abraham established Israel through the offering of sacrifices, but the Unification Church is creating Israel through the Blessing. Therefore, entering the third Israel is possible only through the Blessing. (158-258, 1967.12.29)

The Unification Church is setting up the absolute substantial standard that Adam and Jesus failed to establish due to the interference of Satan. The Holy Wedding Ceremony was initiated in 1960 by establishing Father's family. Thereafter, we had to form the realm of the tribe, going beyond the realm of the family. In order to create the realm of the tribe, we should stand in the position of the apostles who were united into one with Jesus. If Jesus had formed a family after he had established a relationship with his apostles as the subject, then the apostles would in turn have been able to create families of their own. In this way, a new realm of tribe would have been formed within Judaism. (55-147, 1972.5.7)

If Jesus had performed the holy wedding ceremony, the twelve apostles would then have had to completely unite with Jesus' family before they could participate in their own holy wedding ceremony. Then they would have received the Blessing on the foundation of Jesus' family, and established the victorious realm that Satan could not invade either spiritually or physically.

Today, the new tribe created through the Blessing is completely different from the realm of the adopted sons, who were restored from the fallen state. The formation of this new tribe signifies that the realm of the tribe established by the Son of God has appeared here on earth for the first time. (55-147, 1972.5.7)

Christianity failed to stand in the position of both physical and spiritual perfection. In other words, it achieved the realm of the second Israel spiritually but not physically. As a consequence, we must additionally achieve the substantial standard. The day on which we achieve this is the day of the Second Coming. Christians who have waited and yearned for this day must receive the returning Lord on the spiritual foundation of the second Israel, and establish the worldwide realm of the chosen people of the third Israel. (16-223, 1966.6.19)

Though Jesus was victorious spiritually, he failed to establish the realm of Israel on earth. The returning Lord

comes to establish on earth that victorious spiritual realm of Israel. This must start from one individual on earth. (19-317, 1968.3.29)

When you look at the world today, you see that it is going to ruin, just like the nations of two thousand years ago. Even under such circumstances, God is carrying out His providence with Korea representing Israel, and the United States representing Rome. When these two nations unite into one, the foundation upon which the whole world can be made into one can be achieved. The foundation of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth can be achieved through the absorption of the communist world by the spirit worldwide foundation of Christianity.

That is why the returning Lord is responsible for uniting the communist and democratic worlds into one. How far have we come? We have already achieved the worldwide foundation. The Unification Church has already laid down the foundation of the kingdom on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. Because of this, the five races of the world have now come together as one great family. The people of the third Israel are those who can own the Kingdom of God on the earth and in the spirit world based upon the foundation of a united world. So we have now become the people of the third Israel. (92-202, 1977.4.10)

The third Israel is made up of people who have inherited the heart of God. The foundation of substance in the realm of heart must be spread out to the rest of the world by the returning Lord. On that foundation the world must be restored through indemnity. In this way, the standard of the restored family must be established. (55-146, 1972.5.7)

Jesus' original destiny was to become the True Parent of humanity. However, the fact that Jesus, who came as the True Parent was struck by Satan, signifies that the whole of humanity, who were supposed to be reborn through the True Parents, was also struck by Satan. Since the Parents were struck, the descendants cannot go beyond the standard of the Parents. Therefore, people who could not begin with their thoughts centered on God's will have gathered under the cross of Jesus, and these people are the Christians of today – spread out across the world. (55-146, 1972.5.7)

Section 2. The History of the Blessed Couples

2.1. History of the 36, 72, and 124 Couples

The work of God is the creation of a people from a tribe. The formation of the tribe was begun in earnest after 1960, the year of the Holy Wedding Ceremony and Blessing of Rev. Moon, the founder of the Unification Church. The 36 and 72 couples follow this. The 36 Couples represent the restoration of the ancestors of the people of Israel, the history of Judaism. They are the representatives of the

ancestors. The 72 Couples stand on the foundation of this formation stage.

Then, who are the 72 Couples? Numerically, they are twice the number of the 36 Couples. In Blessed Families, there exists a conflict between Cain and Abel families. Centering on the parents, the eldest son's family and second son's family could not unite. Because Cain always inclined toward attacking Abel, they were always disunited. Therefore, the 72 Couples can be seen as the couples called to symbolically fulfill the condition of indemnity for this disunity. (110-120, 1980.11.10)

On the horizontal substantial level, the 72 Couples represent the 72 disciples related to the twelve apostles at the time of Jesus. When we consider them vertically centered on the 36 Couples, they correspond to the families of Cain and Abel, with the 36 Couples as the family of Adam. Until this time, all the ancestors who have influenced the age they lived in have, in one way or another, all failed in their work for the providence to unite Cain and Abel. Because the foundation upon which Cain and Abel could become one was not established, the fallen world continued on and on. Therefore, based on the 36 Couples, the 72 Couples were blessed so that one ancestral family that linked the families of Cain and Abel could be established. (110-120, 1980.11.10)

Who were the 120 followers? They were chosen after Jesus ascended to heaven, and can be said to have been the standard representing the worldwide nation, with the 72 disciples as the racial standard, and the 12 apostles as the tribal standard. That is why the Unification Church asserts that unless the Lord, who comes to restore all this through indemnity, liberates the world, the world will perish. That is why I organized the 36 and 72 couples, and through the unity of these couples, the center of a new race could be established. (110-120, 1980.11.10)

The 36 Couples represent the ancestors who lived during the two thousand years from the time of Adam to the time of Abraham. That is why there must be Cain and Abel in front of the 36 Couples. The 72 Couples were thus designated to occupy these positions. The 120 Couples were set up to represent all providential numbers, based on the number twelve. Of the 124 Couples, four couples were previously married from before. Their Blessing was for the purpose of restoring both the position of the fallen families and the family that Jesus had tried to establish. (17-216, 1967.1.1)

I blessed three couples centering on my family, and based on these three couples, there were Blessings of 36, 72 and 120 couples. I blessed these couples after going through many struggles on the world level. These couples represent the three apostles, 12 apostles, 70 disciples, and the 120 who followed Jesus. Just as Jesus became the victorious leader on behalf of his Father in the position of the Son of God, all of you must fulfill your responsibilities in the position of the son. (22-163, 1969.2.2)

In the future the Blessed Families will be an important issue. The first three couples represent Adam's family, Noah's family and Jacob's family. Who are the 36 Couples? They are the representative couples who are meant to restore all conditions of indemnity presented throughout history. That is how it is.

So, who are the 36 Couples? In each era of history, not a single family has been able to fulfill the Will, or been able to form a family according to God's will, and so the conditions necessary to indemnify this have been passed on from generation to generation. The 36 Couples, by offering these conditions of indemnity, have been called to act as shields for families on earth in this era. In other words, they are the representative couples that can fulfill the conditions of indemnity that have been handed down throughout history.

Then, who are the 72 Couples and 120 couples? The 36 Couples are representative couples of history, so they represent all that has happened in the past. Based on these couples, the 72 and 120 couples were set up as the representatives of the present. If the 36 Couples are the couples who can fulfill the conditions of family-level indemnity inherited from the past, the 72 Couples and 120 couples can fulfill this condition in the present. The 72 Couples represent the tribe and people, and the 120 Couples represent the world. That is how it is. (28-60, 1970.1.3)

From the position representing the nation and people, we must face the exhausting task of having to fight the final decisive battles on the borderline between life and death. As you well know, since the 1960s we have expanded from the 36 Couples to the 72 and 120 couples centering on my Holy Wedding Ceremony.

Based on the three couples, I selected the 36 Couples to represent the ancestors of three ages, one for each group of twelve. They represent the Old, New and Completed Testament Ages. The number twelve should not just represent the horizontal foundation alone. From the vertical position, the 36 Couples also needed to establish the foundation that connects the earth with the spirit world. The Blessing was therefore extended to the 72 and 120 couples, based on the 36 who are the foundation upon which the ancestors could come down to earth. The 72 Couples can also be said to be the central figures representing heaven, by forming a race from the tribe. (100-171, 1978.10.14)

Just as Moses laid the foundation from which he could lead his people by going through the 72 elders, the Unification Church must expand from the realm of the tribe to that of the race. The key to this is the family. The providence of God is always carried out based on the family. As a result, the large holy weddings of the Unification Church are not carried out in order to deal just with individual marriage situations.

The Blessed Families must eliminate everything that is in conflict with heaven, and which has been inherited from the numerous ancestors, races and

nations of past history. In order to do so, they must be a united group, one that will take up the burden of their mission in the present era that we are living in. If it is the 120 Couples, then every one of them must come together and form a team, and this goes for the 430 Couples as well. You must understand that the couples blessed in the holy wedding ceremony made their entrance as the resurrected central couples, indemnifying the failures of all previous couples in history. (100-171, 1978.10.14)

Everything would have been restored if the Cains and the Abels had united into one on the foundation of their ancestors. Isn't that so? The purpose of restoration is not just for a nation alone. It is for the world. Restoring the nation is not enough. The world must be restored. Who were the 120 followers gathered in the upper room of Mark's house on the day of the Pentecost, when Jesus ascended to heaven? They were the representatives of the worldwide nation. The 72 Couples become the foundation for the race, and from this a global nation can be established based upon this foundation. What that means is that the original foundation that was laid based on the 12 tribes and 72 disciples can become the center of a nation, but not the world. (84-144, 1976.2.22)

Based on the foundation of the 72 disciples, who were on the level of the nation, if the 120 followers who represented the nations of the world had united together, Jesus would have been able to accomplish the will of God on earth. This is the providential view, and it is the mission of the Unification Church to take responsibility for this by restoration through indemnity. It is the responsibility of the Church, and at the same time, the responsibility of the Blessed Families within the Church.

Then what should these families do? Based on the 36 Couples, the 72 and 120 couples must unite completely into one. They must become one completely. They are represented in the following way: the 120 Couples representing the world correspond to the formation stage, the 72 Couples correspond to the growth stage, and the 36 Couples correspond to the perfection stage. They are our ancestors. That is how we should view them. With the culmination of the Blessing of 120 couples, I could then designate holy grounds around the world in 1965.

Why did I do so? I established the 36 Couples centering on the will of God. This was followed by the 72 Couples, thereby creating the foundation for the race, and finally I laid the foundation through the 120 Couples representing a worldwide nation. That is why the time has now come for me to take care of the world's nations. Since we have entered the era in which I can carry out this task, I designated 120 holy grounds in 40 nations around the world. Through this, the 36 Couples as the ancestors were restored by the will of God; the 72 Couples representing Cain and Abel, and the 120 Couples as the representatives of the world, were all restored. So the time has come to restore the land of

the worldwide nation.

Since we have restored the people and the land in the age of God's providence, we can now cross over to the worldwide era. This was meant to be accomplished after the designation of the holy grounds in 1965. (84-144, 1976.2.22)

In the providence of indemnifying the vertical history horizontally in the present time, a foundation for restoration through indemnity had to be laid first; that was the reason for establishing the 36, 72 and 120 couples. Of these, the 36 Couples are the miniature versions of the 36 vertical generations of ancestors. The 72 Couples represent Cain and Abel, the next generation. Finally, the 120 Couples represent 120 nations in the world. Their number should correspond to the number of United Nations member countries, which actually were 120 at the time. It turned out to be exactly so in reality. (34-103, 1970.8.29)

The 36 Couples represent the resurrected ancestors of fallen humanity, the 72 Couples represent the resurrected sons and daughters of the ancestors and the 120 Couples represent the resurrected people of the world. Therefore, it follows that if all these couples are united as one, the family, the sons and daughters, and the world will be united into one. That is why, at the very least, I will take responsibility for all couples to the 120 Couples.

From now on, your ways of thinking should be the same as mine. In order to restore one world, we must first restore one nation, and in order to restore one nation, we must mobilize our tribes; for example, if you are a Moon, then you must mobilize the Moon tribe. We must save the people of Korea by mobilizing each of our tribes. You should maintain this concept in your minds. (82-245, 1976.1.30)

The returning Lord must restore through indemnity the position of Adam's family. Therefore, he must seek out the families that can represent the families of Adam, Noah and Abraham, and set them up as the ancestors. In order to do so, he must first find 12 couples to represent Adam's family, 12 couples to represent Noah's family, and 12 couples to represent Abraham's family, thereby establishing a vertical foundation on behalf of the ancestors. That is why I organized the 36 Couples. I sought out and set up the 72 Couples to represent Cain and Abel centering on the ancestors represented by the 36 Couples. The 120 Couples represent the leaders of 120 nations around the world. (22-215, 1969.2.6)

Jesus' 120 followers represent the world. Jesus tried to begin his worldwide dispensation with these 120 followers, but this wasn't accomplished at that time. However, we must prepare and fulfill this work. On the way of world restoration, we must raise up our descendants step by step to act as bridges connecting us to the path. In doing this, Father cannot just select anyone to become descendants, but rather this must be done with care, as they will be representing the

world. How can descendants be chosen? It was done through the holy wedding ceremonies of the 36, 72 and 124 couples in the Unification Church. (34-262, 1970.9.13)

What is the responsibility of the 36 Couples? They are to act as a shield against accusation that has resulted from all the mistakes of past history and up until this time. In other words, they must become the perfect protective fence that can block Satan out completely. That is why these families should practice the new tradition and ideology, which are completely separated from Satan. Centering on these traditions, the 72 Couples and 120 couples must expand. Considering all this, you should realize how important the responsibility of the 36 Couples is. (28-60, 1970.1.3)

The Blessings of the 36 Couples and 72 couples were carried out within our church. That is the difference. Performing the Blessing in our church is the same as laying the foundation upon which a nation can be established. This is on the basis of the Christian church and on Judaism. Through this achievement we were able to secure an internal foundation. Next, in order to lay the external foundation and make contact with the historical realm of the world's Christian culture, we expanded the worldwide activities based on the 124 Couples.

At the time of the Blessing of the 124 Couples, the number of member countries in the United Nations should also have been 124, and surprisingly, that was the case. The numbers of couples and member nations corresponded with each other. What this signifies is that the Blessing of 124 couples established the prerequisite internal condition of indemnity for the nation of Korea as a representative of the world's nations, and thus set the condition on the world level.

Then, what is the Blessing? It is the securing of families on God's side, starting from the three couples and extending to the 36, 72, 124 couples, and so on, based on my family. In this way, the worldwide condition for indemnity is established. (110-123, 1980.11.10)

When you consider the Unification Church today, what is the responsibility of the 36, 72 and 124 couples, who received the blessing over the three years beginning in 1960? These couples must complete the mission of fulfilling the external prerequisites needed to provide a protective fence, something Jesus could not complete during his life on earth. In this way, they must represent the world, nation, people, tribe, and family, both externally and internally, and connect all these conditions of indemnity of the one objective standard to me. This is the responsibility they must fulfill. You must understand that fulfilling the mission of being the protective fence is the responsibility of the couples who received the Blessing during the three years from 1960. (25-22, 1969.9.21)

2.2. The 430 Couples represent the nation

After the blessing of the international holy grounds, I performed the Blessing of the 430 Couples. This number corresponds to the 430 years of captivity of the Israelites in Egypt, and also the 4,300 years of Korean history. This Blessing signifies the beginning of a new history. Moreover, the 430 Couples also represent all families in the world. Afterwards, while I was carrying out my second world tour, I blessed 43 couples in the United States, Europe and Japan. I could then connect those 43 couples to the 430 Couples on the world level. By doing this, I was able to connect the victorious foundation I had established in Korea to the world, including the Western world.

By accomplishing all this, all the families in the world, not just the members of the Unification Church, could now stand in a position to receive heavenly fortune right then and there. That is why the gates of heaven are now open to all families on earth. (52-131, 1971.12.26)

Who are the 430 Couples? They correspond exactly to the 4,300 years of Korean history. After 430 years, the Israelites were able to escape, and this included the four generations living at that time. The 430 Couples are representative couples who will, in the same manner as the Israelites, bring about a fresh beginning based on the foundation on earth of the number 43, after 4,300 years of history, and expand the territory in which the nation and people can be established according to God's will. Considering the number 43, when you add four and three you get seven, and when you multiply the two numbers you arrive at twelve. The 430 Couples were thus blessed in Korea according to this principle.

In this way, just as the Israelites were liberated after 430 years and began their exodus, the same took place with the Unification Church members. That is why people from Jeolla province moved to Gangwon province, and people from Gangwon moved to Jeolla, and thus a great mobilization was begun through which people from different provinces were interchanged. (58-59, 1972.6.6)

The fact that I blessed 430 couples in the year which marked 4,300 years of Korean history signifies that, since the foundation built by a single religious denomination is equivalent to victory on the tribal level only and that this is not enough, then a common gate had to be opened for all the tribes worldwide.

That is why people with the surname Lee can also enjoy national and world level benefits according to God's will. The 430 Couples were blessed in order to allow a foundation to be laid, upon which any tribe, the Kims or Paks, and so forth, could receive blessings from God. (84-146, 1976.2.22)

Because I made possible the 430 Couples Blessing, anyone who is a citizen of Korea is now living in the realm of fortune, in which everyone can be equal-

ly connected to God's providential will. That is why we can safely conclude that Korea can never go to ruin. It cannot. This is the conclusion. We have entered such an era in history. (84-146, 1976.2.22)

We have entered the worldwide era beginning with the year 1968. Didn't we institute God's Day in 1968? In the year we instituted God's Day, I conducted the Blessing of 430 couples. Isn't that true? We are now living in the worldwide era. We are connected worldwide. After doing so, I needed to connect what I had started in Korea to the rest of the world, and so I selected and blessed 43 couples in 1969 around the world, instead of 430 couples. Why did I do so? Through the 43 Couples, I could connect the fortune I had prepared in Korea to the world. (84-146, 1976.2.22)

The nation of Korea represents the world, and so we need to transcend all the tribes in this nation. In doing so, I am not putting the Moon tribe before others. I should open the gates through which all tribes in this nation, regardless of surname, can come in contact with God freely.

The mass holy weddings of the Unification Church are not performed to solve the marriage problems of independent individuals. The Blessed Families must eliminate everything that is in conflict with heaven, and which has been inherited from the numerous ancestors, races and nations of past history. In order to do so, they must be a united group, one that will take up the burden of their mission in the present era that we are living in. The 36 Couples must unite into one team, and the 430 Couples must come together and form a team. You must understand that the couples blessed in the holy wedding ceremony made their entrance as the resurrected central couples, indemnifying the failures of all previous couples in history.

That is why the holy wedding ceremonies of the Unification Church hold such meaning. Based on the 430 Couples, the world could be connected, and through this, the Unification Church could broadly expand into the realm of a global citizenry. Do you understand? It is not just the Korean people alone. The fact that I connected the 430 Couples to the 43 Couples on the foundation of the family on the world level signifies the birth of a new race transcending ethnicity and nationality. That is how I see it. (100-171, 1978.10.14)

Since I had to create the worldwide foundation, after blessing the 430 Couples I conducted an international wedding of people from ten different nations. Should Korea have been left out of such an event? Then, is it an honor for a foreigner to meet a Korean man, or not? Is it an honor to meet a Korean woman, or not? Considering all this, would a nation that brings honor to all people in the world prosper, or perish? That is why men should choose spouses going beyond national boundaries so that they can meet wives who will bring honor to them, and women should also choose spouses from other nations so that they

can meet husbands who will bring honor to them. (26-201, 1969.10.25)

The fact that Father blessed the 430 Couples signifies that the way through which we can carry out the mission on the world level has been opened. After you attain that goal on the world level, you can then be in the position to become messiahs on the tribal level. As Blessed Families, you are not in the same position as the crucified Jesus. That is because you have received the Blessing. You are in the position of Jesus at the Second Advent, who has come back to restore his tribe. The Blessing of the 430 and 777 couples signifies that we have successfully laid Jesus' foundation. (52-193, 1971.12.29)

The year 1960 was a very dangerous period, just as dangerous as at the time of Jesus, when the Jews, the nation of Israel, and Rome united in opposing him, and he was finally crucified. Nonetheless, I performed the Blessing Ceremony under such circumstances. That is how I took the 36 Couples away from the clutches of Satan. In this way, starting with the 36 Couples and extending to 72, 120 and 430 couples, we aroused criticism in society and instead of being pushed out, we pushed society out. That is how we grew. (161-72, 1987.1.2)

2.3. History of the 777, 1800, 6000 and 6500 couples

This is how the history of the mass holy wedding ceremonies of our church developed. The Blessings were first begun with the three couples, then 36, 72, 124, 430, 777, and then what came next? It was the 1800 Couples. The last one is the eighth. That is how we progressed. This involves the whole world. We are now living in an era in which the gates have been opened, so that any nation in the world can enter the realm of God's blessing. That is why I held Blessings for international couples in the United States, Germany, and Japan as the host nations. That was one reason I chose missionaries from these countries as well.

Because such a foundation had been laid, the Blessing of 777 couples could be held. This number is triple seven, and so it is the final one. It is the final one in the realm of God's providence on the national level. Through the Blessing of the 777 Couples in 1970, the time had finally come in which any nation could enter the realm of God's providence. Just as one needs to perfect the ideal of the couple in order to enter the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, the Blessing Ceremony of the 777 Couples bestowed on any nation and tribe in the world the privilege to enter this realm of God's providence. You must understand this. That was why, after the Blessing Ceremony was held, the 777 Couples were made to scatter all over Korea for a period of three years for the purpose of world restoration. Japanese members were asked to live separately from their spouses for five years. They were separated from 1970 through 1974, and it was not until June 10, 1975 that I issued special instruc-

tions for the couples to finally start living together. Why did I do this? It was in order to create a foundation for the worldwide providence. (84-148, 1976.2.22)

Why should the Unification Church be opposed by the parents and siblings of the members? Why should the path Rev. Moon is walking, and the Unification Church is following, be like this? That is the question: why should it be like this? Is this way true or not? This is why the heavenly and satanic worlds will be divided. In this way, the foundation was laid in Korea through the Blessings of the 36, 72 and 124 couples, and the worldwide foundation was laid through the Blessings of the 430, 777 and 1800 couples. (86-239, 1976.4.1)

You [430 couples] received the Blessing within the realm of my tribe. Centering on this, the 777 and 1800 couples were connected and represent the national level and world level respectively. The 777 Couples represent the perfection of the number seven. All the descendants of Adam and Eve have matured through their families, and passed through the process of three times seven equaling twenty-one of the formation, growth and completion stages, and are now spread out across the world. So the 777 Couples can be considered to be those representing all levels worldwide. That is why they are connected to the twenty-one levels in the world. (141-209, 1986.2.22)

By instituting God's Day, the foundation was laid upon which God can finally intervene in and dominate all circumstances on earth, and from the year 1968 we have entered the era of national confrontation – family versus family and tribe versus tribe. That is why I ordered the 777 Couples who were blessed in 1970 to walk the 3-year course. What is this 3-year course? It is the period in which families from all over the world come to Korea, unite with the families in Korea, and set the condition for national and worldwide expansion. Through this, I was able to initiate, in 1970, the foundation of indemnity of the family and tribe through the 3-year course during 1970, 1971 and 1972.

In order to achieve this, I broke up everything that had been prepared by the families who had received the Blessing up until that time; that is the 36, 72, 120, 430 and 777 couples who had secured a living and had children according to their own family circumstances. I broke up all these families and sent them out in different directions, to the south and the north. These families became a sacrificial offering by my making them walk the nationwide three-year indemnity course, in order that the tribes and people of this nation could be saved. (143-180, 1986.3.18)

The three-year course required an all-out offensive. What came next after the Blessing of the 777 Couples can only be described as an all-out offensive focusing on Korea. That is why during the three-year course all our Blessed Couples were mobilized. Did we mobilize the 777 Couples at that time? We

even mobilized the 777 Couples. Every one of the couples left their children at home and went out to serve for the benefit of their nation. It seems like only yesterday that everyone set forth, crying and pledging that they would save their nation. In order to fill up the pit of suffering in this nation, they handed over their beloved sons and daughters, wrapped in blankets, across the fences and into the houses of their opposing parents. They just left them there and set out on this path, having nothing to eat for many days on end. (196-248, 1990.1.1)

During the three years from 1970, we even mobilized the 777 Couples, didn't we? Didn't you do the same? This was worldwide. We mobilized them in order to undergo hardships for the sake of the nation during the three years. What this means is that there is no family on earth, representing the nation or the world, who can be a match for the families of the Unification Church. Every family must become like the families in the Unification Church. How we were criticized during those three years! Since their mothers and fathers opposed them, the couples wrapped their babies in blankets and left them on the doorsteps of their parents' houses at night, before setting out. Why did they have to do that? It was because they had to set the condition that they loved their nation more than their own sons and daughters.

In order to do so, some of them even left their children in orphanages. Some husbands split up with their wives. After blessing them, instead of letting them live happily ever after, I made them throw away what little they had in their households, even pots and pans, and turned them out of their own homes. I did all this, so that the Blessed Families of the Unification Church from various tribes could go out to the nation as representatives of their tribes and restore them through indemnity.

At first, we were opposed nationwide, but in the end, the circumstances were such that the same people were heard to say, "If we want to defend ourselves against Kim Il-sung and save our nation, we must become like the members of the Unification Church." We set an example for others, teaching them that if you want to save your nation, you must do what we did, and serve the nation by sacrificing your wives and children. At the end of the three years, the people who at first had opposed us welcomed us. The fact that they did this signified the restoration of the Cain and Abel relationship. (198-328, 1990.2.11)

I even mobilized the 777 Couples. They set out according to the order of mobilization, leaving behind their homes and even their children as orphans. This was the period of indemnity, cleansing everything in the nation, in order to go out to the world. Based on the family level, because there was no other solution except to set up a period of separation through the three-year course, the couples had to fulfill their duties of loyalty and patriotism to Korea in the position of protecting the nation from Kim Il-sung's intended invasion. This was the

period in which Blessed Families had to act as exemplary patriotic families. (264-61, 1994.10.9)

The year 1970 saw the beginning of a great mobilization. The Blessed Families from ten nations around the world were called to Korea, in order to restore Canaan. They were called to Korea and became completely united while over here. You must know that this was after the Blessing of the 777 Couples. Wasn't that Blessing held in 1970? In making such a foundation, the Unification tribe from across the world representing ten nations came to participate. Going beyond the number nine, which signifies formation, growth and completion, the number ten is the number of God, and it also corresponds to the number twelve. That is why the ten nations must be connected providentially. (69-237, 1974.1.1)

The 36 Couples represent the twelve apostles, and the 72 Couples are in the same position as the 70 disciples. Didn't Jesus have 70 disciples? Then the 124 Couples are in a similar position to the 120 followers, followed by the 430 and 777 couples. Restoration through indemnity takes place in this order, expanding to the rest of the world. In this manner, the fortune of Korean re-unification will henceforth emerge on this worldwide foundation. It will gradually appear as time goes by. This is how the Principle works.

The women of the Unification Church should attain living circumstances that are at least superior to those of Kim Il-sung in North Korea. If they don't, they won't be able to go to the Kingdom of Heaven. A time will come in the near future, when everyone who believes in the Unification Church will get to live in an environment that is far superior to Kim Il-sung's in North Korea. A time will come in the not too distant future, when just being a 777 couple will make you a guest of honor wherever you visit; you will be greeted with music from a military band, and people in high places in that nation will go out of their way to serve you. (58-70, 1972.6.6)

Until now, it has been really complicated, hasn't it? First of all, you had to restore three spiritual sons and daughters. Up to the time of the Blessing of the 777 Couples, I insisted that they needed to restore at least three spiritual sons and daughters. However, I have not asked this of those who have received the Blessing since then. Restoring three spiritual children represents the restoration of half of Adam's realm. Through them, half of that realm can be restored. It represents the restoration of the world of the three angels.

Before the True Parents came into existence, even Father had to pray in the name of Jesus; he could not pray in the name of the True Parents. However, after conducting the Holy Blessing, he was finally able to pray in the True Parents' name. (288-28, 1997.10.31)

Centering on the True Parents, couples were blessed in this order: starting with the 3 couples, then 36, 72, 124, 430,

777, and finally the 1800 Couples. These are the seven stages, the number seven. There still remain three stages to fulfill, fulfilling the number three. It is always the number of sanctification. Why must it be the number three? There can be no harmony in a straight line. Only with the number three can an area be formed. If you leave the number three like this, it forms a straight line, and there is no returning path in a straight line. However, when you have three points, a path through which you can return is formed. That is why it is always in the third stage that you can return. After you climb up, you can always turn and come back. (288-28, 1997.10.31)

I have already left the gates to the Kingdom of Heaven open for all tribes in Korea. These gates must not be blocked. The gates cannot be closed, because the universal love centered on God is the love of the whole. All gates must remain open. That is how we can proceed. Expansion to include the rest of the world begins there, starting with the 430 Couples, and then the 777 Couples. Through them we can stand on the world level. We are going beyond the national stage, and entering the world stage, and that is why the 6000 Couples represent all humankind. Following next was the 6700 couple Blessing (including 200 from the United States). This Blessing was based on the foundation of the number seven, and allowed us to establish the liberated realm in the satanic world, and even in the spirit world. (291-293, 1998.3.18)

Before everything else, I emphasized the importance of the restoration of the archangel. This is achieved through the restoration of three spiritual sons and daughters. I placed emphasis on this until the time of the 777 Couples. From the 1800 Couples onward, we advanced to the next stage. Since the time had come in which I could bless couples in the world as representatives of the worldwide nations, I did not put emphasis on restoration of the archangel. The Blessing of 1800 couples was the seventh Blessing I had conducted. Through it, we crossed the number seven. The eighth was the Blessing of 6000 couples, and the ninth was the 6700 couples. The 30,000 Couples were blessed on the horizontal level. On the horizontal level, the Blessing can spread out and directly influence the world. Do you understand? (288-228, 1997.11.28)

The fact that the Blessing has been successfully conducted signifies that the realm of the heavenly family has come into existence on the earth on the foundation of the True Parents, despite ruthless opposition by the satanic world. Many tribes are included in that realm. With Korea as the center, all kinds of tribes are incorporated within that realm. The gates to that realm were opened through the Blessing of the 430 and 777 couples, who have in turn been connected to the rest of the world. (164-165, 1987.5.14)

The number 18 is the completion number of the satanic world. The number 16, which is the square of four,

is also an ideal number of the satanic world. That is why 16 nations of the United Nations took part in the Korean War, and 160 nations participated in the Seoul Olympics. North and South Korea were also the 160th and the 161st nations to join the United Nations. This is what is taking place in the world today. (251-255, 1993.10.31)

Satan destroyed family relationships, and so we are establishing a transnational movement that binds the family to God's realm of direct dominion with the 777 Couples, followed by the 1800 Couples. The 1800 Couples will be the last in creating this movement. The number 18 comes from the satanic number six multiplied by three representing formation, growth and completion.

The fact that I have restored 1800 couples from the satanic world signifies that I have gone beyond the realm of the tribe. The victory I achieved on the national level is the starting point of the path leading to the world level. The 1800 Couples are three times the number 600, which represents the realm of Satan's dominion. Therefore, by establishing the families on this basis, the 1800 Couples have become the standard of indemnification for the families in Satan's realm.

The 6000 Couples connect the Christians who are in the vertical position with the non-Christian people worldwide; in other words, they connect the vertical Christians with the horizontal Cain world. The fact that I have connected them through the 6000 Couples shows that the era of the satanic world attacking the Blessed Families has passed. That is how the situation is developing. My course, which was leading to the world level, began from there.

The spiritual standard of the growth stage has been established on the national level. In establishing the worldwide standard, since the spiritual foundation of Christianity works as the worldwide foundation, the worldwide substantial standard had to be connected to the realm of Christianity. Therefore, in order to achieve this, I went to the United States and carried out nationwide revival activities. Wherever I went, I was welcomed. In this manner, I connected all this foundation in America to Korea as the representative of the national standard. That was how I returned to Korea victorious. (190-275, 1989.6.19)

For the Blessed Families, the international holy wedding is something of a tradition. I placed a lot of importance on the 1800 Couples, right? That number came from three times six. That is why 1800 couples were blessed. Jesus needed 120 couples, and the returning Lord needs 180 couples. 180 and 160 couples have the same numerical meaning. They are both multiples of the number four. The number 16 comes from four times four, and the number 18 comes from six times three. They are the completion numbers of Satan.

Didn't I instruct Blessed Families to bless 160 couples from their tribes for this reason? Originally, it was supposed to be 180 couples, but 160 couples are also acceptable. It is easier to accomplish

a smaller number, and so I said 160 couples are okay; but from now on, you must bless 180 couples. The seventh Blessing I performed was the 1800 Couples Blessing. Right through, from the 3, 36, 72, 124, 430, 777 to the 1800 Couples, you can count seven Blessings in total. From the number seven, we must move on to the numbers 8, 9 and 10, the number of unity. Once we reach the number ten, we can move into the era of the globalization of the Blessing. (292-20, 1998.3.27)

From now on, I am free. Up until now I have taught you clearly as an elder brother would a younger brother, as God would His beloved sons and daughters, as a husband would his wife, and as a father would his children. Haven't I taught you from all these different positions until now? I educated the Blessed Families at least three times, from the 36 Couples to the 72, 124, 430, 777, 1800, 6000 and finally the 6500 Couples. I have even educated the 30,000 Couples, and so now my work is done. (235-124, 1992.8.29)

2.4. The 30,000 Couples: Formation stage of the international Blessing

Up to the present time, many Blessing ceremonies have been carried out, and particularly in 1992, I conducted the 30,000 Couples Blessing. Why the number 30,000? This was an international Blessing. In 1952, we lost the original worldwide Blessing era, in which we would have been able to hold the Blessing on a worldwide scale centering on True Parents, Forty years later, in 1992, we were finally able to enter the worldwide Blessing era, and so the 30,000 Couples Blessing was held. This is the formation stage of the worldwide era. (275-282, 1996.1.1)

The 30,000 Couples Blessing in 1992 was the formation stage. It was truly an international level. The ceremony transcended everything, including race and culture. What is marriage? Wasn't it originally brought about because of the love between Adam and Eve? Adam and Eve denied God centering on Satan, but we can restore this through indemnity by receiving the Blessing centering on God and the True Parents. (277-135, 1996.4.7)

It was our parents who got married of their own accord and then opposed their children becoming members of this church. That is why in the Unification Church we bestowed the right of Blessing even to the parents. We must bless the satanic world along with our members. That is why at the time of the 30,000 Couples Blessing; we blessed even those who had only attended a 7-day workshop. That is how we progress. In this worldwide era, a time may come in which 3.6 million young couples may be blessed, following the Blessing of the 30,000 and 360,000 couples. The current situation of young people in the world today, tattered and torn, originated from Adam's family.

Jesus died because he was unable to establish his marriage. It was all because

of the love relationship. Everything that has occurred until now will be repeated in this era. The responsibility of the True Parents in this completion era is to marry the children of direct descent as well as the young people, and so from now on, I will not have to concern myself with the Blessing of previously married couples. (243-325 1993.1.28)

Since I put great emphasis on the family, I blessed 30,000 couples last year. This was like dropping a bomb on the world. Think about it, the marriage of 30,000 couples! We are living in a world in which even the parents cannot control their own children, and yet Rev. Moon of the Unification Church brought together young people from 131 nations around the world and married them. Can you think of anything more miraculous or amazing in the world? (243-214, 1993.1.10)

On April 10, 1992, I blessed religious leaders from eight nations including Islamic countries, and thereby set the condition of having the Muslims come into unity with us. You did not know of this, did you? There was no one who withdrew from the Blessing. Even the Muslims took part in it. The Blessing of 30,000 couples was a truly international Blessing. Chinese, Koreans, and even North Korean youths came to our church, attracted by the Blessing. They were converted from Communism, were educated, and some even received the Blessing. Simply said, the Blessing has now spread to the whole world.

I brought together 30,000 young men and 30,000 women from 131 nations, matched them using their photographs, and married them. If anyone other than I was doing this, you would ask yourselves, "Is he out of his mind?" There is no one else in the world who would carry out such a task. I am not out of my mind. Everything I do may seem incredible to you, but that's just because I am too competent, don't you think so? (243-247, 1993.1.17)

From now on, individuals should not be involved in the Family Party. Instead, families should participate in it. In this way, they must try to have everyone receive the Blessing. Do you think it will be easy, or difficult? That is why I have deployed tribal messiahs. If you return to your hometowns and set the standard as tribal messiahs, your whole tribe can be restored at once.

If all of the 30,000 Couples that received the Blessing returned to their hometowns and witnessed to twelve couples each, then in three years the Blessing of 360,000 couples would be possible. I have already created the environment in which this can be brought about. Think about it. Has there been anyone else in history, apart from me, who married 30,000 couples at once? It is my plan to hold a Blessing Ceremony for 360,000 couples on the next occasion.

If I were to marry that number of couples, even if I were to marry one thousand couples per day, it would take me a whole year. Only after I have

done this can I go to the spirit world and declare before God, "Father, I have brought together the varied and complicated cultural realms, regardless of racial discrimination, and unified the world as you desired." Then He would laugh aloud, "Ha ha ha…!" with great joy. We have now entered a new era, in which even the smart youth of our Unification Church can accomplish this. (241-137, 1992.12.20)

Thirty thousand couples from 131 nations received the Blessing even though they had only just been matched by photograph. This was a historic event. Could the pope bring this about? Could the president of the United States do this kind of thing? It was not I who wished to do this, but you. You asked me, "Please, Father, do this for us!" Now that I have matched you, do you think the couples suit each other well, or not? The whole world knows that I carry out the matching using photographs only. The members of the Unification Church are intelligent, and that is why they have left the matching up to me. I do not think I will do it from next time.

Then you will see a lot of crying going on around you. They will cry, "I should have received the Blessing earlier…" Where do you think I got this ability? I can tell if a person will suit another just by looking. Because I have such ability, I am able to act as the founder of the Unification Church. Do you think it's easy to become a religious founder? Isn't it true that ever since the beginning of history, no one has been persecuted more than Rev. Moon? On a quiz show that I saw, to the question, "In all of history, which religious leader has been persecuted the most?" the answer came out spontaneously – "Rev. Moon!" Isn't that true? (235-249, 1992.9.20)

The time will come when you will have to run away from an avalanche of people. The time will come when you will be proud of the fact that you heard about the Blessing from the highest of the Blessed Couples. Between being witnessed to by one of the 30,000 Couples, and one of the 6000 Couples, which do you think would hold more value? The members who have served a long time in the Unification Church will be received warmly wherever they go when they explain about the Blessing. (235-165, 1992.8.29)

The fact that 30,000 young couples from around the world have come together to be married is truly something to be celebrated on a universal scale. It is more wonderful than the marriage of a prince or princess of a king in his palace, which is celebrated by the whole nation. This marriage is on the worldwide level. If the Blessing on the worldwide scale were to develop from this to a second or third occasion, events of epic proportions would take place as a result. (234-281, 1992.8.27)

I will open the Blessing of the 30,000 Couples to people in general. They will receive the Blessing after being educated for forty days only, and then the couples

will walk the three-year course. Even those who have done nothing to deserve the Blessing will receive the benefits. Therefore, all of you should set new traditions that will be adored and cherished by the people in your neighborhood, and make them exclaim, "That is what a Blessed Family is like!" Then the newly Blessed Families will be able to come to your family and unite together like the twelve tribes of Israel. In this way, you will create an environment similar to the one surrounding me, and people will say, "Oh, I wish I could have a meal with the people in that family!"

Once you become the central figure in the course of fulfilling the duties of love in which you give and give, and forget that you have given – just as God has done – the environment surrounding you would never be like a desert, even if you wanted it to be. Then the day will come in which the cheers of a united people and the cries for a united South and North Korea will rock the world. Soon the South and North will be liberated, and the members of the Unification Church will shout three cheers of *Mansei* with rapturous joy. (215-107, 1991.2.6)

2.5. The 360,000 Couples represent the growth stage of the international Blessing

Did you know that during the past two or three years the Unification Church has reached an international level? Are you aware of this? Then how did we attain such a level? By earning a lot of money? By witnessing to many people? It was through the Blessing. When was the 360,000 Couples' Blessing held? It was in 1995. The 30,000 Couples Blessing? It was in 1992. The 30,000 Couples came in 1992 and the 360,000 Couples in 1995. Next came the Blessing of the 3.6 Million Couples. Who would have believed at the time of the 30,000 Couples Blessing, that at the next one we would bless 360,000 couples? It was the same after the Blessing of the 360,000 Couples. After that Blessing, it took us less than three years to hold the 3.6 Million Couples Blessing. We did it in two and a half years. It wasn't even that long. When I first issued the instructions to prepare for the Blessing of 3.6 million couples, not one person believed that it would actually happen. I can't speak for God, but even I was in doubt. Think about it. Is one finger the same as ten, or not? How many hills are there? There are ten hills to climb. During the three years I worked in Jardim, Brazil, I declared the era of the Second Generation in which absolute faith is paramount. Now the time has come in which you have no choice but to believe, even if you don't want to. (291-152, 1998.3.11)

When I told everyone that from the Blessing of the 30,000 Couples we will move on to the Blessing of the 360,000 Couples, no one believed me, and the providence was set back as a result. The members all refused to believe me, and so through their lack of faith they disqualified themselves. Moreover, when I told them that from the Blessing of 360,000 couples we will move on to the Bless-

ing of 3.6 million, they didn't believe me either. Then I told them to prepare for the Blessing of 36 million couples by the end of May, and later changed the number to 120 million couples. Do you think people who say such things are normal, or crazy? (291-152, 1998.3.11)

The marriage of 3.6 million couples is the completion of the formation, growth and completion stages. By passing through the Blessings of 30,000 and 360,000 couples we have reached the completion stage. When you explain this in terms of water level, it would be the same as the tide coming in every six hours and going out after twelve hours. The water that comes in earlier and the water that comes later would still be at an equal level when the tide eventually goes back out. In fact, if the water that came in later pushed forward and replaced the water that came in first, then the former would be ahead of the latter. Therefore, we can say that we have entered the era of equalization. (282-181, 1997.3.12)

The year I conducted the 30,000 Couples Blessing was the year that Mother stepped forth as a public figure. This was an international Blessing. For the first time, the True Parents were able to stand on an equal footing and hold the international Blessing in the formation stage, so that it could spread out to all nations in the world. The International Blessing of the 360,000 Couples represented the growth stage, while the Blessing of 3.6 million couples was at the completion stage. From the time of the Blessing of 30,000 couples, the way was opened for the international Blessing, through which anyone, regardless of religion or place of birth, could be blessed. Then we held the 360,000 Couples Blessing of the growth era as a grand event. Now we will hold the 3.6 Million Couples Blessing, through which everyone, even non-believers, can inherit the Blessing on equal terms. (280-215, 1997.1.1)

From now on, whole nations will come over to our side. Hasn't it been difficult to witness to people until now? Once we cross over to the era of the tribe, nations will come over to our side. If the presidents and the nations accept us, we could even bless 3.6 million couples at once.

If I persuaded Kim Il-sung to hold the wedding ceremony of 360,000 couples involving the youth in North Korea, and the ceremony was actually held, do you think the unification of South and North Korea would come about, or not? If we held such a ceremony, in which 360,000 young men of North Korea and 360,000 young women of South Korea were married, do you think unification would come about, or not? At this time, when even Japanese people are marrying Koreans, is there any logic that says North Koreans and South Koreans cannot get married? If Kim Il-sung is a real man, he cannot oppose bringing together young men and women in marriage. It is a very simple issue. (240-205, 1992.12.13)

At first, those who received the Blessing had to live separately for seven

years. They had to pass through these seven years. The end of indemnity is so high up and so far away, but we are getting closer, aren't we? We have almost reached the top, through the number 36, as can be seen from the 360,000 Couples or the 360 Million Couples. Based on the conditions of indemnity, history has been accelerated several hundred years, and we have reached the present state. We have marched forward, starting from the 36 Couples to the 3.6 Million, 36 Million and 360 Million Couples. In fact, in terms of heart, the older members have become aged and rather rusty, and so they can no longer carry out worldwide activities that would set an example to the rest.

There would be no dullards in Japan if they could all receive the Blessing, because they would quickly realize the value of the Blessing and develop themselves. In this way, they stand on an equal footing with those who received the Blessing before them. Why was the Blessing conducted in the order of 30,000, 360,000, 3.6 million, 36 million and 360 million couples? The Blessing of the 30,000 Couples was the ceremony of sanctification. Centering on the number three, the Blessing was conducted to separate the satanic world from God's world in terms of the realm of international Blessing. (291-230, 1998.3.13)

When you say True Parents, everyone knows that you're referring to Rev. Moon. How amazing is that? The words True Parents automatically put Rev. Moon into your minds; what more could you expect? I can't teach you more than that. Forty years ago, in order to explain the Second Advent of the Lord, I had to go through the sixty-six books of the Bible, but now there is no need to even talk about the Second Advent. When asked, "Do you know Rev. Moon?" the answer would be that he is the man who has blessed 360,000 couples, and will bless 3.6 million couples in the not too distant future. One might ask, "Is he an ordinary person or the Messiah?" Considering all he has done, the right answer would be that he is the Messiah; no one would think that he was just an ordinary person. (275-66, 1995.11.3)

The time has come when Rev. Moon of the Unification Church can, in the position of the True Parents, marry people and send hundreds of thousands of couples as tribal messiahs into the world. Since the era is now upon us in which 360,000 couples are being sent out, the tribes of these couples cannot perish. After receiving the Blessing, we can have sons and daughters; centering on our families, we can accomplish all that Jesus failed to achieve because of the families of Zechariah and Joseph who did not fulfill their responsibility to unite.

That is why our work will be done when the family of the husband and the family of the wife are united into one. They represent Cain and Abel. Doesn't the husband come from his clan? Just as the husband has his own clan, the wife has her own clan also. Therefore, the husband would be the son-in-law to the

wife's clan, and the wife would be the daughter-in-law of the husband's clan. On the day these two clans are brought together and at least 160 couples from both clans are united, Satan will lose his base of activity within these two clans. (274-169, 1995.10.29)

Since the root of lineage was defiled, it must be overturned. That is why, every now and then you hear about the "root-of-lineage research movement." Through the false parents and their wrongful marriage, the origin was turned upside down, and so it is only logical and reasonable that the True Parents must come and perform international holy wedding ceremonies. That is why we are first holding the 360,000 Couples Blessing, and later the 3.6 Million Couples Blessing. Do you think we will succeed in holding the 3.6 Million Couples Blessing, or not? We'll have to wait and see, won't we? It is already decided. The Blessing is going to happen. (273-247, 1995.10.29)

When I announced that three years after conducting the 30,000 Couples Blessing, I would conduct the Blessing of 360,000 couples, was there even one person who believed that would be possible? Only God and I knew better. We accomplished this in five months. From now on, a 3.6 Million Couples Blessing won't even be a problem. There are hundreds of millions of Hindus in India, and more than 70 million Muslims in Pakistan. Both of these nations will claim that they can accomplish 3.6 million couples on their own. The United States will be reduced to running errands. They are skeptical that America could achieve this. It is a serious problem. (272-161, 1995.10)

You must understand that we cannot leave the world as it is: full of confusion, evil, and pervaded with free and open sex. AIDS is dealing a crushing blow to the world. Knowing that the sins of humankind always demand punishment and in order to protect the world from this dreadful fate, I had no choice but to organize the world into one big family.

When I married 3.6 million couples, do you think the candidates would have examined the Unification Church's views on marriage before receiving the Blessing or not? Now is a time of crisis. The world is in trouble, despite the fact that we have conducted the 360,000 Couples Blessing.

Primary school students may ask their teachers: "Teacher, we are now eleven, twelve years old, and we'll have to get married when we grow up. Other churches say that the wedding ceremonies of the Unification Church are heretical, bad, and from the devil, but the 360,000 Couples of the Unification Church are happy in their marriages, even though they come from different parts of the world, never saw each other in person and were matched using photographs. On the other hand, there are people from my neighborhood, who got engaged and later married, and broke up within a week. Considering this, is it right to get married in the Unification

Church?" Then how should the teacher answer? Such a time is just in front of us. (273-252, 1995.10.29)

Now that we have performed the 360,000 Couples Blessing, the next stage is to hold the 3.6 Million Couples Blessing in three years time, and 36 Million Couples Blessing three years after that. After these Blessings are held, do you think you'll be able to find a neighborhood in the world where there isn't at least one Blessed Couple? There will be Blessed Families everywhere. Then we will achieve great power.

In such a nation, boundaries separating towns would disappear. It would be no problem to connect all the places of the world. Then you will be able to sit in your own home, and make friends with people from all the nations of the world on the phone. (272-138, 1995.10.1)

In this era of progressing beyond the Blessings of the 30,000, 360,000 and 3.6 million couples, the standard of a worldwide liberated realm is finally being formed today, and I can now give three cheers for myself. Until now, my life has been wretched. I have walked the path of death with gritted teeth in order to usher in the day when the whole universe can rejoice. The 4,000 years of history had to be indemnified in 400 years, but since a person cannot live that long, I had to accomplish this in 40 years within my life. Think about it for yourselves, how serious it must have been for me to have to finish this work in forty years, staking my whole life on it. (289-81, 1997.12.30)

We are conducting this campaign on a worldwide scale in order to lay the foundation for the global realm of True Parents. Therefore, we have conducted the Blessing ceremonies of 30,000 and 360,000 couples, and at present are preparing for the 3.6 Million Couples Blessing. This means we have passed the formation and growth stage. The fact we have passed the growth stage signifies that we have gone beyond the national level foundation.

Since the time has come when we can restore the lost nation – the restored realm of Israel that was not established in Jesus' time – from this point of view, the time has come for us to restore the family, tribe, people and nation centering on myself. That is why we are now moving into the era of kingship. (277-287, 1996.4.19)

2.6. The 3.6 Million Couples represent the completion stage of the international Blessing

Our expansion on a worldwide scale should take place on the foundation of the Blessed Families. The world is fast becoming a global family, due to the establishment of the 30,000 Couples, the 360,000 Couples and the 3.6 Million Couples. As a result, we have now ushered in a new era where not only God alone, but God's family and the family of True Parents can dwell on earth without having to pass through the previous historical generations expressed vertically and their present expansion expressed horizontally. Therefore, I was

able to proclaim the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth. Because we were successful in conducting the three Blessings representing formation, growth and completion, we have entered the era in which the Blessed Families of the Unification Church around the world can be welcomed wherever they go, with no obstacles in their paths. Consequently, we are living in an era when God can rest wherever He wants. That is why I performed this declaration ceremony. Now that heaven has declared the realm of the Sabbath, what will happen is that based on the international 30,000, 360,000 and 3.6 million couples, we will hold the Blessing ceremonies of 36 million couples and 360 million couples. Conducting these two ceremonies will be easy, as they will be like going down the hill from the top. The Blessing of 360 million couples will act as a divide, and once we pass over this peak, humanity will become one big family.

What was initiated in Adam's family was lost, and in order to restore that, we attempted to accomplish this on the national level, followed by the world level. It was done connected to me, and for the first time in history the whole of humanity will be able to enter the liberated realm based on our victories on the family, national, and world levels. (287-108, 1997.9.19)

What will happen after the Blessing Ceremony of 360 million couples is held? The Blessing of 3.6 million couples will be the highest peak when it comes to the Blessing. It is like Mt. Everest. We are now climbing this great mountain. This will be the most difficult crest for us to surmount. Once we reach the peak, we will then be able to hold the 36 Million Couples Blessing on the foundation of having completed the 30,000 Couples of the formation stage, 360,000 couples of the growth stage, and 3.6 million couples of the completion stage. All these numbers relate to the number 36, except for the 30,000 Couples. Why the number three? The number three is a number representing the process. At all times, transition takes place in three stages. That is why I blessed 30,000 couples and not 36,000. Since the number three always represents a period of separation, upon the foundation we created by blessing the 30,000 Couples, we climbed to the top by holding the 360,000 and 3.6 Million Couples Blessings. This was the most difficult task we had to accomplish. The whole world was watching us to see if we could do it.

The religious community was dubious, saying, "The Unification Church has blessed 360,000 couples and are claiming that they will bless 3.6 million couples next. It may have been easy to bless 360,000 couples, but will they succeed in blessing 3.6 million couples?" Isn't it roughly one year and eight months since the Blessing of 360,000 couples? Not one person believed that we would be successful. However, we accomplished 3.6 million couples on July 15. When we count the number of couples we have blessed up until today, the total number would top 25 million couples. Was it yes-

terday or the day before when the final count was 24.57 million couples? Considering this, the total number would now round up to 25 million couples. (288-16, 1997.10.31)

By accomplishing 3.6 million couples, we will cross the final peak of the world, and in so doing, we must establish more national messiahs than there are member countries in the United Nations. Our success in blessing 3.6 million couples will lay the foundation upon which each national messiah can influence the cabinet ministers in their respective nations, focusing on their ambassadors to the United Nations. What the United Nations needs right now is the institution of True Parents, and the establishment of a United Nations for women and a United Nations for the youth. Once Mother and Father, Cain and Abel, women, students and the youth have joined the United Nations, then the whole world will become united and peaceful. (282-36, 1997.2.16)

The uppermost wish of all the descendants of humankind will be to connect to my lineage. Therefore, their greatest hope will be to form a blood relationship with me. How many sons and daughters do I have? How many grandchildren do I have? What I'm asking you is how many children should my sons and daughters have? Should they give birth to just one child each? Each of my children should have at least a dozen children.

Aren't there many people waiting? People, be they black, white, or yellow, are waiting. Asians are yellow, are they not? Such is the hope of the great tribe, that is, the world. So many lineages can be connected to each other. There is not one neighborhood in the world that is not connected through the 3.6 Million Couples. In every corner of the world, you will be able to find at least one Blessed Couple without fail. (283-108, 1997.4.8)

Centering on the family of True Parents, the Unification Church has climbed back up from where humanity had fallen, through indemnity on the tribal level. We have climbed back over the horizon, and through the 40-year period from 1952 to 1992, we have passed into the era of the global Blessing.

The Blessing can now be held internationally. We have reached a certain vertical standard concerning the spirit world, and from there could cross over to the horizontal international era. By doing so, we were able to bless 360,000 couples in 1995, eventually leading to 40 million couples on June 13, 1998. These Blessings of 30,000, 360,000 and 3.6 million couples were held in the international era, and the 3.6 Million Couples was the peak. On reaching this, we could then enter a world of equality. (298-190, 1999.1.2)

In order not to fail under any circumstance, the operation must be carried out perfectly, and for that, everyone must fulfill his or her responsibility. The last resort, the final solution, after having to postpone the fulfillment of my work over and over again, was to set

the condition to fulfill my responsibility in this last stage through the Blessings of the 3.6 million, 36 million and 360 million couples. It is my responsibility and way of thinking to achieve this, so that I can liberate all people in the world. This is the path that I have had to follow, with the consciousness that I have not fulfilled any condition. (289-64, 1997.12.30)

We must pass over twelve peaks of the Blessing. Once we cross these twelve peaks and spread to the rest of the world, the universe is destined to be embraced by that world. The time will come when the universe will be embraced by the Blessed Families. That is why I instructed that the Blessing of 3.6 million couples should be completed before August. It should be completed before August, and the Blessing of 36 million couples should be concluded within one year. Once we have accomplished the Blessing of 36 million couples, we will have no problem in accomplishing the Blessing of 360 million couples within one year. What would come after this would be the Blessing of 3.6 billion couples, but there aren't that many people in the world. At present, the population of the world is only 5 billion. Once we hold these Blessings a few times, the whole world will be blessed. If this comes to pass, by the year 2000, there will be no place in the world for people who are not one of the Blessed Couples. (283-301, 1997.4.13)

We must surpass the worldly standards centering on the family. For this purpose, the Unification Church has performed mass holy weddings. From the Blessing of thirty-six couples, centering on the number ten, we climbed to the highest peak by passing through the Blessings of 30,000, 360,000 and 3.6 million couples. We have surmounted the highest summit. The uphill climb was the hardest part of our path, and now that we have reached the peak, the gates to the Blessing have been opened to everyone. With the Blessing of 3.6 million couples, the equalized standard has been established at the peak, and on account of this, the vertical standard has been elevated proportionately.

As a result of this, just as anyone in the world, regardless of tribe, people or nation, can receive the Blessing, those in the spirit world and even in the realm of the archangel, can now receive the Blessing. (286-167, 1997.8.9)

The accomplishment of the Blessing of 3.6 million couples is not the end. The Blessed Couples living in each town should put up the flag and bless everyone in their towns. They must do this. They must bless those in their towns with the flag flying high above them. Through the Blessing, the people living in the hell of the satanic world can enter heaven as its citizens, and everyone can inherit the lineage of the True Parents. Once they understand this, everyone will want to receive the Blessing. Therefore, our Blessed Families should put up our flag and bless everyone living in their neighborhoods without exception. (285-310, 1997.6.29)

If we accomplish the Blessing of 3.6 million couples before August 9, 1997, at the age of 77, I can, on July 7 at 7 minutes and 7 seconds past 7 o'clock in the morning, declare the Blessing of 36 million couples. Anyone can participate in this Blessing. It is the liberation. Once we have accomplished the Blessing of 36 million couples, we will enter a new age, in which the spirits from the spirit world will come down to earth and bring everyone to receive the Blessing. (285-240, 1997.6.5)

Religions until now have talked about salvation of the individual, but this is very easy to do. There is still more to come, namely salvation of the family, tribe, nation, world and cosmos. As with the Blessing of 3.6 million couples we have moved onto the world level, the time has now come for us to move on from the salvation of the nation to the salvation of the world. Therefore we can finally bless our ancestors in the spirit world.

The people who lived on earth with the True Parents as Blessed Families become citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth or in the Kingdom of Heaven in spirit world, depending on whether they are in the physical world or the spirit world. That is why, in order to liberate our ancestors in the spirit world we need to form tribal federations. At present we should all make this our priority.

The longer you take to achieve this, the longer your ancestors will have to wait, tapping their feet impatiently in the spirit world, and exclaiming, "You dimwits! What's taking you so long?" They want to be liberated as soon as possible, and so the liberation of the realm of the archangel will take place quickly. Since we are blessing the realm of the archangel on earth, we should also bless those in the spirit world. That is why as soon as we have accomplished the Blessing of 3.6 million couples, I can bequeath to Heung-jin and Dae Mo Nim the power to bless those in the spirit world. (284-164, 1997.4.16)

The official name of Rev. Moon, the name created by God is "True Parents." After climbing uphill through the eight stages, I have leveled out the course for everyone else. According to the law of indemnity and my own free will, I have organized a worldwide family. Here is where the Blessing of 3.6 million couples will take place. (280-77, 1996.11.1)

The second 40-year course will be shortened from now on. After this happens, we will cross over to the era of free marriage. In the era of free Blessing, the parents will decide whom their children will marry. From now on, I will not perform the wedding ceremony. Once I have blessed 3.6 million couples, I will only have to bless a small number of people from that time on. Through the Blessing, all such relationships will be perfected, and those above the age of Mother at the time of her Holy Blessing will be liberated. That is why currently I am blessing even those who are 19, or 18 years of age. (271-104, 1995.8.23)

The Blessed Families must be placed on the horizon that is transnational, trans-global, interracial and inter-religious. Everything will end with the Blessing of 3.6 million couples. The world will have to learn the doctrine of the Unification Church in order to restore the family. With what power can one person unite 3.6 million couples, transcending national boundaries? The fact that I have such a power is something that we can take pride in eternally. Then would the marriage of one couple, similar to the coming together of pigeons, be a big problem? Through the Blessing, we will be able to leave behind the environment in which the tribe has to worry about the marriages, and in which mothers, together with their husbands, have to spend many a sleepless night worrying about wedding plans.

That is why even the primary school teachers must know about the Blessing. When asked, "Teacher, is it true that 3.6 million couples were married at the same time?" how should the teacher answer? Should he say it is a lie? Then he would be the one lying. If he cannot give an answer to the question: "How was the marriage performed?" he would fail as a teacher. (272-229, 1995.10.5)

I have set the conditions of indemnity for everyone to follow. We have entered an era where 160 couples and even 1600 couples can be blessed in one week. Hasn't the situation ripened through the Blessing of 360,000 couples? If you ask Koreans, "Is Rev. Moon, who has blessed 360,000 couples, or married 720,000 people, a good person or a bad person?" what would their answer be? If they answer, "He is a bad person," you can tell them that the followers of such a bad person include the presidents of nations, numerous holders of doctorates, and many prominent leaders. You can also ask them if they think they are better than these respectable people who have received the Blessing; they would not be able to give an answer. There would not be a single thing they could pick on about us even if they looked for years. Such is the era we are living in. (273-170, 1995.10.22)

Once the Blessing of 360,000 couples gives way to the Blessing of 3.6 million, 36 million, 360 million and finally 3.6 billion couples, human society will finally see the eradication of AIDS and the realization of a world of pure true love, where God and humankind are united into one. This is not a mere dream. God's great work of establishing the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, the realization of this providence, is an inevitable truth. That is because it is the not the work of one human being, but the work of God. (271-99, 1995.8.23)

CHAPTER THREE

The Providential Significance of the Blessed Couples

Section 1. The 36 Couples

1.1. The Three Couples first blessed

In 1960, before having my own Holy Wedding, I engaged three of the 36 Couples, and after my wedding, I then blessed these three Couples. That set the condition of restoring three children to God's ideal realm, just as Jesus would have done with Peter, James, and John. The perfect, inseparable, victorious foundation had been laid. (55-164, 1972.5.7)

What have I been doing until now? I blessed the Three Couples first. Did I bless them or not? I did. I would not have been able to hold my own Holy Wedding in 1960 if I had not first laid a foundation through these three Couples. Before receiving Mother in holy matrimony, I first found spouses for the chosen three, then conducted my own Holy Wedding, after which I blessed the three betrothed Couples. That was how I followed the path of the Principle. (89-243, 1976.12.1)

Those representing the three archangels and Adam's eight family members should be set in place before the new Adam. By establishing the three central children – that is, three spiritual children – and having them marry, the eight family members would be organized and Adam then could come before God with his family and the three archangels. That is why I first designated three sons and three daughters, the first three of the 36 Couples, and betrothed them before holding my own Holy Wedding. This was all done according to the Principle; it was brought forth through the establishment of a foundation that could not be accused in any way. Since the original Adam lost his family, the new Adam must restore the family. (126-49, 1983.4.10)

When you look at my family, you can see that I have children in the vertical position. On the horizontal foundation, who among the True Children represents the position of the horizontal Abel? It is Heung-jin. He is the second son. In order to establish the 36 Couples, people representing Jesus' three main disciples had to be secured, restoring the number three. The first three, the archangel-type couples, fulfilled this role. After the number three had been regained, 36 couples representing Adam's family, Noah's family, and Jacob's family could come forth. The first of the three Couples, who themselves represent the 36 Couples, was that of Kim Won-pil. Prov-

idential history cannot allow just anyone to stand in that position. He must have a suitable ancestral background aligned with the dispensation in the spirit world; otherwise, he cannot stand in the position of the eldest son. The one who fulfilled these requirements was Kim Won-pil. The one who occupied the position of the second son was Eu Hyo-won and the third was Kim Young-hwi. (169-109, 1987.10.29)

Centering on the three representative couples, twelve had to be raised up. These twelve were to be entrusted with a historic mission; however, only twelve would not do. In addition, twelve couples representing the past and twelve couples representing the future were chosen to establish the 36 Couples. The 36 Couples are the compression of all the disconnected ancestors of the two-thousand year history of ten generations from Adam's family to Noah's family, another ten generations from Noah's family to Jacob's family, and Jacob's twelve sons. (89-243, 1976.12.1)

1.2. The significance of the 36 Couples

The 36 Couples consist of three groups of twelve. The first group symbolizes the Old Testament Age of marrying without God's permission. The second group symbolizes the New Testament Age of wishing to be married in God's chosen land. However, with the death of Jesus on the cross, this wish was not fulfilled and so the age became one of the bride awaiting her groom. The third group symbolizes the Completed Testament Age, an era of perfection, and of wishing for the beginning of God's family.

Today we are passing through the providence of restoration symbolizing Jacob's victory. Accordingly, I need to restore through indemnity the era of the servant and the realm of the adopted child and realize the era of the true child. The 36 Couples were established in order to restore these three eras symbolically. (God's Will - 165)

Of the 36 Couples, the first dozen are already married couples who represent the Old Testament Age. The second dozen symbolizes the era of Jesus desiring marriage without achieving it. The third dozen, representing Jacob who overcame every hardship and became victorious, symbolize the Completed Testament Age. In particular, the 36 Couples under my leadership form the victorious foundation upon which the Old, New, and Completed Testament Ages are indemnified in my lifetime. Furthermore, the historic significance of the Blessing of the 36 Couples is that those three eras were indemnified horizontally within my generation through their victorious perfection. (55-165, 1972.5.7)

From a providential point of view, the first dozen of the 36 Couples is in the position of the restored Adam's family. As Adam's family, including Cain and Abel up to Noah, makes up the number twelve, twelve couples had to be appoint-

ed in order to indemnify it. The second dozen signify the restoration of the period from Noah to Abraham, symbolizing the generations extended to twelve to include Isaac and Jacob, who had to indemnify Satan's invasion of Abraham's family. Jacob had twelve sons in order to restore through indemnity in his generation (horizontally) for the first time in history the indemnity conditions accumulated (vertically) through those twelve generations; that is symbolized by the third dozen couples. The 36 Couples, who have been called on the basis of the victorious individual level foundation achieved by Jacob, symbolize the Old, New, and Completed Testament Ages. (55-165, 1972.5.7)

The 36 Couples represent 36 generations. They are in the position of restored ancestors who have remedied all the mistakes committed in the course of God's providence of restoration. They are also in the position of indemnifying Jesus' twelve disciples representing past and present, that is, the Old and New Testament Ages. In principle, the Completed Testament Age cannot begin before the Old and New Testament Ages are properly concluded; accordingly, in order to resolve all this, the 36 Couples had to be established. (54-293, 1972.3.26)

Based upon my individual victory, I needed to lay a horizontal foundation to restore the family and therefore blessed the 36 Couples. Wasn't the victorious foundation first laid by Noah's family? The second twelve couples represent that tradition.

Next, what does the third group of twelve couples representing Jacob's family signify? This group was composed of virgin men and women. From here, a perfect foundation must then be laid on earth after everything has been restored through indemnity. Only then can the horizontal expansion in all directions take place from these twelve couples.

The 36 Couples represent the positions of the twelve tribal elders of the three ages. Based on Jacob's foundation, they represent the three eras of formation, growth, and completion. All must unite. (47-199, 1971.8.28)

The 36 Couples are chosen to represent countless good ancestors entrusted with missions in the providence of restoration and, as their resurrected incarnations, have the responsibility to substantially restore on earth all that they had failed to achieve vertically throughout history. You must know that the 36 Couples represent the world's 3.6. billion people. (40-185, 1971.2.1)

Humanity can be divided between those who have formed families and those who have not. The latter can be subdivided into two groups and one of those groups is made up of people who had relations as they pleased with the opposite sex, but who failed to form a family. We can therefore divide humanity into three groups: those who married, those who related to the opposite sex but did not form families – of which there are many nowadays – and finally,

virgin men and women. Such are the relationship entanglements that exist in the world today.

In other words, viewed vertically, people live on three levels: matrimony, engagement, and celibacy. The second category of people reflects the state of engagement between Jesus and the Holy Spirit. They would be able to form a new family. In order to restore through indemnity all these different types of people, some representatives must be called to form families, according to God's dispensation. That is how the 36 Couples came to be established. (58-183, 1972.6.11)

Jesus established the twelve disciples in order to represent and restore the three eras of Adam's, Noah's, and Jacob's families, but could not achieve his will. In order to restore this failure through indemnity, I established the 36 Couples. This is how the process of restoration has been substantially developed. As can be seen from this, I have carried out every single task conscientiously and wholeheartedly. (23-62, 1969.5.11)

Christ at his Second Advent must restore through indemnity the position of Adam's family. Accordingly, he must establish families who can represent Adam's, Noah's, and Abraham's families as ancestors. In order to do so, he must first restore three sets of twelve couples to respectively represent the three providential families of Adam, Noah, and Abraham, and raise them up as the vertical ancestors. (22-215, 1969.2.6)

The 36 Couples signify the resurrection of our historical ancestors. What then should be the work of the resurrected ancestors? Humankind has horizontally multiplied on earth through six thousand years of vertical history. They must all be brought together. Twelve generations must be indemnified in order to complete vertical indemnification. Everyone on earth is connected to each other through these twelve generations. For those living on earth, the realm of formation corresponds to married couples who formed families, the realm of growth corresponds to those engaged couples who never formed a family, and the realm of completion corresponds to virgin men and women. (122-97, 1982.11.1)

The 36 Couples are all related to the number twelve. The ten generations from Adam to Noah add up to twelve by including Cain and Abel. The ten generations from Noah to Abraham also add up to twelve by including Isaac and Jacob. In the same way that Jacob's family expanded horizontally through his twelve sons and took root on earth, the Unification Church also had to establish 36 couples.

Adam's, Noah's, and Jacob's families are represented respectively by the first, second, and third group of twelve couples. Through them, everything in history and every event that occurred in the Old and New Testament Ages can be brought together with the Completed Testament Age. As representatives of the spirit world, they are connected to each other as the ancestors on earth. As such,

every one of the 36 Couples can stand in the position of being an ancestor. (164-269, 1987.5.17)

Who are the 36 Couples? The first group within the 36 Couples consists of those who had married as they pleased, who were brought into the presence of God, and connected to Him through the Blessing. Next, the second group of couples consisted of those who were engaged but who did not marry before the Blessing. Matching and blessing people is not something I do casually. Why? Because these couples are for the sake of the salvation of all humankind. The third group is for virgin men and women. All already married couples should absolutely obey the first group of the 36 Blessed Couples. You will understand this more clearly when you go to the spirit world. The second group should absolutely obey the third group of couples.

When the time comes for God's will to be accomplished on earth, it will be the third group of the 36 Couples who will become the center. You are hearing this for the first time from me. So for whom would the Lord come first? He is not coming to see the already married couples. He is not coming to see people with failed relationships from the past. He is coming to find virgin men and women. (148-284, 1986.10.25)

There would be no place for you to stand had I not blessed the 36 Couples. Did you know this? When we expand from the 36 Couples, the whole world will be connected to them. If we were to consider the already married couples as the formation stage, the second group would be the growth stage, and the third, completion. That is why we refer to the three groups of couples as Adam's family, Noah's family, and Jacob's family. Jacob's era finally ushered in that of the horizontal expansion of the family.

We are entering the era of world-level expansion through the twelve tribes. There should be twelve tribes rooted in me, just as there are twelve pearly gates in heaven and twelve months in one cycle of the earth's seasons. These tribes must be in harmony with each other. Just as there were twelve brothers in Jacob's family and twelve disciples of Jesus, there are 36 Couples around me, twelve of whom are represented by virgin men and women. With these twelve as the core, next come the couples who formed relationships as they pleased, and then finally the couples with families. There is no way to enter heaven unless these couples have set the condition of unity. (148-284, 1986.10.25)

The couples made up of virgin men and women whom I matched and blessed are standing on a level upon which they can connect to me directly. Hence, from this day onwards, when it comes to establishing the family structure, the center will always be the couples who were blessed as virgin men and women. Bearing this in mind, all of you must recognize the order of family groups from now on. Among the three groups of the 36 Couples, the third is

central. (31-284, 1970.6.4)

The 36 Couples must pave the way for the overall providence, starting from Adam to Noah, from Noah to Abraham, from Abraham to Jacob and his twelve sons. This is not to relive the history of the past, but rather substantially and horizontally restore through indemnity at this time the mistakes made by our ancestors. The struggle to bring this about took place at the time of the Blessing of the 36 Couples. I did not bless them out of ignorance of what is going on in the world, but rather took responsibility for this great work because God's circumstances are much more desperate than those of human beings and His will is much greater than theirs.

I blessed the 36 Couples because I had to restore through indemnity God's historic grief over losing His children, and because I was in the position of having to horizontally restore in substance the vertical providential history, in order to restore and establish the origin of the ancestors and the standard they had tried to set. (16-60, 1965.12.26)

What is the responsibility of the 36 Couples? They are to satisfy all historical indemnity conditions up to the present time. In other words, they must become the perfect protective fence that can exclude Satan completely. Hence, these couples should practice the new tradition and ideology that are completely separated from Satan. Rooted in these traditions, the 72 Couples and 120 Couples must expand that base. Considering all this, you should realize the importance of the responsibility of the 36 Couples. (28-60, 1970.1.3)

In the spirit world, the Blessing received by pure single men and women is very different from that received by already married couples. There are three levels in the spirit world, just as today's society is divided into upper, middle, and lower classes.

Among the 36 Couples divided into three groups of twelve, respectively representing Adam's, Noah's, and Jacob's families, which group is the most precious? It is the third. In the future, you will have to serve them. At the moment, we are not distinguishing them from each other because the time to do so has not yet come, but that does not mean they are the same. They are very different. (30-189, 1970.3.22)

I put all my money into buying gold wedding rings, clothes and every other item needed by the brides and grooms of the 36 Couples Blessing. Why did I do that? The 36 Couples were not even asked to pay their Blessing fees, were they? I brought together other people's sons and daughters and married them in circumstances far superior to those I would have granted my own children. However much secular society opposed me, I accomplished this with dignity. The Blessing was conducted in three phases. If one were to do such a thing in this world, would one get anything in return, like land or money? Would one get anything at all? Think about

it: if I cared about such trifles, would I ever engage in the activities I do? However much commotion Korea and the established churches made, however much uproar the United States and the whole world made, I did not waver once. That is how I have come this far. (126-299, 1983.4.28)

1.3. Anecdotes from the 33 Couples Blessing

In 1961, the 33 Couples Blessing Ceremony was held amid great confusion and chaos. We finally had to have someone stand guard at the door before we could go through with the ceremony. Nevertheless, I did everything I had to, regardless of how much noise the protestors were making. The parents of the 33 Couples came swarming about the place, shouting all kinds of insults at us and creating a continuous uproar. Some went so far as to send dozens of anonymous letters to the court of justice demanding I be sent to jail; as a result, I had to appear in court on several occasions. There were twelve people in particular who worked frantically to destroy the Unification Church, sprinkling coal dust all over the place. The Unification Church grew amid such turmoil. We had to lay the groundwork for victory in the same place that people were opposing us. We undertook the daunting task of establishing the foundation for victory amid fierce opposition from all sides. (23-317, 1969.6.8)

At the time we were going to hold the Blessing for the 33 Couples, I sent out invitations in my name to the parents of the brides and grooms as follows: "Dear father, mother, on such and such a date, your son/daughter will be getting married at Cheongpa-dong church. Please note that you can attend the ceremony only if you are dressed in holy robes of such and such a style; otherwise, you will not be welcomed." That invitation created havoc among the parents; you can't imagine how much noise they made over this, crying, "How on earth can such a thing happen? Who dares to send parents invitations to the wedding of their own children?" Well, they can make all the noise they want. Once I have decided to do something, I see it through to the end. Even if they had called the police on me, in the end everything would have worked out the way I wanted it to, rather than how they wanted it. (162-321, 1987.4.17)

When the 33 Couples were being blessed, they had to treat their own parents as the fallen archangel. None of them informed their parents about the wedding. At the last minute, because there was no other choice, I sent the parents invitations about a week before the wedding and included many conditions, such as the need to wear holy robes and so on. Then the parents hurled insults at me, shouting that I had no right to take their children away from them and have them married. They caused a terrible scandal, but it could not be helped. Think for a moment about how unpleasant that must have been for the parents. In the end, we had to close the iron gates

and block them from entering at all. Such were the actions we had to take in order to make the condition to separate from the fallen archangel and protect the situation. (90-124, 1976.10.21)

Among the 36 Couples, there is a leader whose father was well-known. Being a respectable gentleman, he thought very little of me. In fact, he regarded me no more highly than any man on the street. When the time came for me to bless his daughter, I sent him a notice. He came to attend the wedding because he wanted to see his daughter get married and he walked up to the gate very proudly. We informed him that if he wanted to attend the Unification Church wedding, he needed to be dressed in holy robes. He was dressed in his best suit and so was at a loss when we stopped him from entering the gate. He insisted on coming in anyway because, after all, it was his daughter's wedding, but still he was blocked by us. In the end, he had no choice but to go to one of our members and beg him to loan his holy robes. Ultimately, he did attend his daughter's wedding, dressed in the borrowed holy robes. (75-216, 1975.1.5)

At the time of the 33 Couples Blessing, do you think the brides and grooms could easily notify their parents of the Blessing? Would the parents have liked it if their children had discussed with them the prospect of getting married in a church they opposed? Don't you think they wouldn't? That was a foregone conclusion. If they were to come to the wedding, they would have been an eyesore on what would otherwise have been the couple's happiest day. Knowing this, should I have notified them in order to give them the opportunity to meet their prospective son- or daughter-in-law beforehand? Since they had to be notified at least, we sent them invitations to arrive on the eve of the wedding, as follows: "Your son/daughter is going to be wedded in holy matrimony, so please favor us with your attendance." (61-313, 1972.9.3)

My revolutionary course of action completely overturned existing marriage traditions. It overturned the traditions of Christianity and of Korea. How so? It denied the fathers and mothers. Did I ever discuss with your parents the prospect of you receiving the Blessing? No, because the Blessing is a heavenly command. I am the subject. At the time of the 33 Couples Blessing, we stopped parents from coming to the wedding, telling them they would be allowed to enter only if they wore holy robes. There was such an outcry about this. It was the revolution of revolutions. It completely overturned everything. (213-17, 1991.1.13)

On the occasion of the 33 Couples Blessing, wasn't the first phase conducted at dawn? Families of the brides and grooms were outside, struggling to get in, shouting, "Set my father free!" or "Set my daughter free!" These words made me out to be a thief who had stolen somebody's father and somebody else's daughter. They were making me

out to be a thief and shouted at me, "You, Moon! Come out! You have destroyed our family and made our daughter a raving lunatic!"

When wanting to get married, the proper thing to do is to get permission from the parents; yet in our case, we sent wedding invitations to the parents and told them to wear holy robes if they wanted to come. That was unheard of. I knew that. Had I not, I would have gone through with the Blessing with a heart as light as a feather, but I had to conduct it aware of all this and that was the most difficult part of it. Don't you think so? If not, I would have heard the insults shouted at me and wondered why. Instead, I held the wedding, knowing that they would curse me for it. I persevered with it to the end, knowing all these things. Indemnity could not have otherwise been paid. I could not just close my eyes and do a haphazard job. (211-332, 1991.1.1)

The 33 Couples were wedded in three phases: the first at dawn, the second during the day, and the third at night. Their parents came to say, "Let my son out! Let my daughter out!" Such was their protest. From the standpoint of God's will, since human history started from false parents, I had to guide the proceedings as a true parent. Not only their parents, but also the government opposed us. I had to go to court and place a deposition before holding the wedding. No one knows what I have been through in carrying out my work. There was not even a tiny spot for me to stand on. There, I was risking everything. (91-259, 1977.2.23)

Do you want me to tell you an interesting story? When I was holding the 33 Couples Blessing in Korea, a man came to see me. His son-in-law is here with us today, by the way. The man claimed that both his daughters had been hoodwinked into becoming Unification Church members. He was a school principal and had already chosen two teachers specifically as his future sons-in-law, and so did not want to allow his daughters to participate in the Blessing. However, all I told him was, "If you want to oppose, go ahead. Both your daughters, however, will be blessed by me!" (22-261, 1969.5.4)

When I was choosing the 36 Couples for the Blessing, do you think I discussed the issue with their parents? I brought together other people's children and married them at my own discretion, without discussing it with the parents at all. No doubt the parents would have not only cursed me, but beaten me with sticks if they had had the chance. Had we been Israelites of old, I would have had my clothes torn off and been stabbed to death. Nevertheless, I accomplished it all in the blink of an eye, before the parents had the faintest idea of what was going on. I brought together Satan's children, made them into God's children, and married them. In my work of completing the course of restoration, amid the heavenly fortune of the cosmos, whom should I discuss such matters with? In carrying out the Blessing, whom could I possibly have consulted?

Everything had to be carried out at my own discretion. The 36 Couples are the ancestors. In fulfilling the love through which they could become ancestors, should they have consulted their physical parents? This was a matter to be discussed with God. (18-207, 1967.6.8)

The 33 Couples Blessing had to be conducted in the dark of night, behind locked doors. During the ceremony, we heard all kinds of shouts like, "Let my son go! Let my husband go! What do you think you are doing with other people's children?" People were outraged because traditionally they arrange their children's marriages; yet here was the founder of the Unification Church marrying them off on his own. The families protested so vehemently because they were fathers and mothers from the satanic world. Since God's children were snatched away by Satan, I snatched them back from his clutches and restored them through indemnity. Through the Blessing, I had to regain the sons and daughters lost throughout history, restoring them through indemnity. Hence, I concluded the ceremony hurriedly. I had no choice, as I was trying to accomplish restoration through indemnity. (19-120, 1967.12.31)

Section 2. The 72 Couples

2.1. Significance of the 72 Couples Blessing

Did everything until now go wrong just because of the first ancestors' failure to fulfill their responsibility? No. They did err, but the brothers Cain and Abel also did wrong. Thus, the 72 Couples were established to stand in the position of the brothers, Cain and Abel, in front of the 36 Couples. The establishment of the 72 Couples meant the establishment of the horizontal foundation on earth laid until Jacob's generation, restored through Cain and Abel on the family level. Thereby, all the families of the direct ancestors up until this time could be manifested on earth in the form of resurrected families. Through this, an important center was established. Through twelve couples from the 36 Couples, the form of the tribes of Israel could finally take shape. Establishing the 72 Couples made it possible for the historical foundations of the ancestors to be manifested here on earth. (47-200, 1971.8.28)

As God's will in His providence was to organize families based on the model of the two sons in front of the ancestors, then twice thirty-six, that is, seventy-two couples, were established. In the vertical course of history, what had not been fulfilled in Adam's family should have been completed by the families of Cain and Abel, but they failed to set the condition of indemnity. Yet, through the 72 Couples Blessing representing Cain and Abel's families, the prolonged vertical providence could be successfully consummated at a point of intersection on the horizontal. The establishment of the 36 and 72 Couples meant that the national Cain-Abel-type foundation

could be entirely substantiated on earth – in other words, the horizontal restoration of the vertical family model. That family is the model to restore Adam's family. (16-62, 1965.12.26)

The 36 Couples established the standard of having restored all the failures of the original 36 generations and thus became ancestors themselves; however, having the 36 Couples as ancestors is not enough. Where did conflict begin? It began between Adam and Eve's sons Cain and Abel, who thus destroyed the world and made it the way it is today; that is to say, one in which all their descendants are in constant struggle with one other. We must restore this through indemnity. In order to do so, we must set the condition that the sons and daughters of the 36 generations have united before God without a struggle. Hence, I established the 72 Couples, thus twice the number 36, to represent the Cain-Abel division. Through the establishment of the 72 Couples, historical foundations of the ancestors were laid, upon which Cain and Abel could come together, not to fight, but to form a four-position foundation. In this manner, the absolute standard through which we could guard ourselves against Satan was secured. Do you all understand the seriousness of the position of the 72 Couples? (19-120, 1967.12.31)

The 72 Couples were established on the basis of the 36 Couples Blessing. They symbolize Cain and Abel's restored families centered on Adam's family. In order for Adam and Eve to stand in the position of perfected parents and ancestors of humankind before God, Cain and Abel must completely unite. The 36 Couples symbolize Adam's family and are in the position of ancestors; only when they stand on the foundation of Cain and Abel's united families can they attain the position of parents. The 72 Couples are twice the number of the 36 Couples because they are in the position of Cain and Abel. (55-167, 1972.5.7)

Who are the 72 Couples? Some translations of the Bible state that Jesus had seventy-two disciples, and others, seventy. Originally, 72 is the correct number. Centering on the twelve tribes and the number six (six united representatives per tribe), two times six is twelve and one times six is six. Multiplying them gives us seventy-two. If it were seventy disciples, the numbers would not have added up properly. Hence, the correct number is seventy-two.

The 72 Couples are like the children, the descendants of the 36 Couples, while the 36 are the central couples as well as the ancestors. Our view is that our ancestors failed to fulfill God's will because Cain and Abel, the two sons in the first family in history, failed to become one in heart, thus deferring the fulfillment of God's will. In view of the fact that the foundation of the family, in which the brothers Cain and Abel should have united, was not established, who then are the 72 Couples? Seventy-two is thirty-six twice. Thus, the 72 Couples representing the children of the 36 Couples

comprise 36 Abel and 36 Cain couples. They are the representative couples chosen to restore through indemnity that which the historical ancestors failed to accomplish: the complete unity of Abel and Cain. (84-144, 1976.2.22)

The 36, 72, and 120 Couples are a team; they cannot be separated. The 36 Couples refer to the successive generations of ancestors. The 72 Couples represent their children. The 120 Couples signify the high priests of nations in the world and represent the twelve tribes. They are the branches of these tribes that have spread out into the world. The matter at hand is to unite the ancestors Cain and Abel and the twelve tribes. That is the great work of restoration. (82-237, 1976.1.31)

Each person is the fruit of the past, the center of the present, and the beginning of the future, and is therefore the meeting point of three eras. When you multiply the three separate eras by the number twelve, you get the number 36. Thus, you arrive at the 36 Couples and since the children in the position of Cain and Abel must be restored centering on these 36 Couples, it follows that the 72 Couples must come next. (34-262, 1970.9.13)

The question that always comes up in a family is whether the parents and children can completely unite. Within his family, Adam should have become one with Cain and Abel. In order to become a family that can stand in God's presence in complete unity, the parents and the two sons must set the condition that they become one. Otherwise, they cannot enter God's presence at all. This is where the 72 Couples, as double the number of the 36 Couples, come in. They were established to organize the tribes that Jesus would have restored through the families of his twelve apostles and 72 disciples. In other words, the 36 Couples and the 72 Couples correspond respectively to the twelve tribes of Israel and Jesus' 72 disciples, and so they are in the position of restored representatives who can lead Israel. They also represent the restored basic numbers that God had sought to reclaim through Israel. (54-293, 1972.3.26)

What are the 72 Couples? In order to restore the family completely, Cain and Abel families must first become one. In order for Adam and Eve to be restored before God perfectly, they must stand on the foundation of unity between Cain and Abel. The position of Adam and Eve is that of parents. In order for them to stand in front of God in perfection, the Cain-Abel foundation must be restored. Since the 36 Couples need the foundation of the united families of Cain and Abel to stand as ancestors, the 72 Couples, who were chosen as twice in number to the 36 Couples, came into being.

The 72 Couples correspond to Jesus' seventy-two disciples. As they succeed in laying a foundation of indemnity on earth, God's providence can expand. Through the unity of the 72 Couples representing Cain and Abel with the 36 Couples representing Adam and Eve, all

providential requirements for the family have been met, and the restoration of the family has been completed. Such is the significance of the Blessing up to the 72 Couples. With the accomplishment of the 72 Couples Blessing, a God-centered foundation was achieved on earth for the first time, both horizontally and vertically, and thereby, a central standard was set up. Thus, the vertical foothold – a central point that should be determined through God's providence – can be established only when the 36 and 72 Couples are united as the perfected victors of history. Once that central point is determined, the victorious realm of the central ancestors desired by God will finally have been fulfilled. This perfect foundation must be developed horizontally on earth. (55-167, 1972.5.7)

Why was Jesus unable to establish the Kingdom of Heaven? It was because his clan and twelve apostles didn't help him. He attempted to build a bridge that would connect with the nation through his clan, twelve apostles, and seventy disciples, but it collapsed. He therefore could not establish the foundation on the family, clan, or church level during his life on earth.

The next problem was that the seventy disciples did not unite with Jesus. They represented the twelve tribes and the seventy elders of Israel. The correct number, actually, should be 72, not 70. If six people were chosen from each of the twelve tribes, the total would be seventy-two. Hence, in the Unification Church, we have the Blessing of the 72 Couples. In the Bible, there are seventy-two in the New Testament and seventy in the Old Testament. The correct number is 72, not 70. (67-327, 1973.7.22)

The history of restoration is that of Cain and Abel. Consequently, if two people representing Cain and Abel are placed before representatives of the first ancestors, the condition can be set through which all mistakes committed by our ancestors can be indemnified. What was the fundamental mistake? It was that Cain and Abel failed to unite.

Originally, the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance were to be laid by Cain and Abel. As they failed to do this, the conditional offering through which it can be completed and brought into line with the expanding horizontal foundation on earth was the Blessing of the 72 Couples. (75-148, 1975.1.2)

Before God's Kingdom can be realized on earth, the ideal family has to be established. Jesus' three main disciples and twelve apostles represent the three periods of formation, growth, and completion. They are, in turn, represented by the 36 Couples. The 72 Couples representing Cain and Abel, who fought on the family level, have to restore them. They can also be regarded as the representatives of seventy-two races (74-270, 1974.12.31)

Humankind is comprised of people who are similar to Adam by marrying as they please, or those following the type of Jesus in awaiting marriage, or those

following the type of Christ at his Second Advent. The latter must restore all three positions. In the first place, a family following the type of Noah's family must be restored because Noah, like Abel and Jesus, occupies the position of the second son on God's side. The 72 Couples are the restored forms of Cain and Abel who had been divided. (22-216, 1969.2.8)

The mistake Cain committed by not being obedient to Abel, which led to their fatal conflict, has not been indemnified by providential figures of the past, and so the process of restoration has been prolonged until now. In order to restore this mistake completely, the foundation of Cain's obedience to Abel must be indemnified before each ancestral couple. The 72 Couples, therefore, came into existence for this purpose. The number 72 is double the number 36. (22-193, 1969.2.2)

The purpose of establishing the 36 Couples lies in restoring thirty-six ancestors. Thus, the spiritual and physical worlds can unite around the 36 Couples. The 72 Couples stand in the position of Cain and Abel before the 36 Couples. With the 72 Couples Blessing, the Unification Church was in a position similar to that of Jacob, who set out on the journey for Egypt with seventy-two family members. (13-125, 1963.11.16)

The Blessing is the permission for creating a new Israel. When a Cain and an Abel couple are placed before each of the 36 Couples, the result you have is the 72 Couples. (12-47, 1962.9.10)

The standard of unity of the three generations of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob must be surpassed in three years. I burned the candle at both ends when I blessed the 72 Couples this year. Out of them all, I am satisfied with only a few. (12-50, 1962.9.13)

Section 3. The 124 Couples

3.1. Significance of 124 Couples

The 120 Couples, representing Jesus' 120 followers, stand on the global level. As the representatives of the nations of the world, the 120 Couples are the foundation upon which the global indemnity condition can be met. By establishing these couples, the basis upon which God can come unto the world can be secured. Hence, we can say that the day on which the number of member states of the United Nations exceeded 120 marked the beginning of the Last Days. (16-62, 1965.12.26)

The 120 Couples were established in the position of representing all nations of the world. (20-342, 1968.7.20)

Christ at his Second Advent must restore through indemnity the position of Adam's family. Accordingly, he must restore families typifying those of Adam, Noah, and Abraham, and establish them as ancestors. In order to do so, he must first find twelve couples typifying Adam's family, then twelve typifying Noah's family, and finally twelve typify-

ing Abraham's family, and set them up as vertical ancestors. Thus, I established the 36 Couples. Centering on these ancestors, the 72 Couples were established as the representatives of Cain and Abel's families. The 120 Couples symbolize the leaders of the 120 nations of the world. (22-215, 1969.2.6)

The 120 Couples typify the world, horizontally expanding the earthly foundation in all directions; they therefore represent 120 nations. (13-125, 1963.11.16)

The Blessings up to the 124 Couples were within the Seven-Year Course. As we now have 120 Couples based upon the realm of the new Israel, a foundation is established upon which the 120 nations of the world could be restored. Consequently, the restoration of all significant numbers, which Jesus attempted through his family, was accomplished globally through the 120 Couples Blessing. (54-293, 1972.3.26)

What you need to do now is restore eighty-four and 120 people within your tribes. That is the vertical part. Didn't the Blessing take place in the order of the 36, 72, and 120 Couples? The 120 Couples are representatives of the world. Thus, after Jesus' resurrection, 120 people were gathered in the Upper Room on the day of Pentecost. They were the representatives of the world. When I blessed 124 Couples, the number of member states of the United Nations was also 124. All these numbers must be in accord with each other. (198-17, 1990.1.20)

The 120 followers of Jesus represent the number twelve. The 124 Couples were blessed in order to organize and establish a model of tribal and national leadership worldwide. In actuality, 124 couples were blessed, four being extra. These four were already married couples. Why were they included in the Blessing? Had they not, there would have been no way to save other already married couples from that time on This number four represents gates facing the four cardinal directions of north, south, east, and west. Based on the four couples, therefore, the way must be opened through which all already married couples can be resurrected. Hence, I blessed 124 Couples. (158-170, 1967.12.27)

The 120 Couples represent Jesus' 120 followers. Additionally, four couples are already married couples. They were included because they are the ones who must open the gates of the Blessing in the four directions. (20-145, 1968.5.26)

Jesus shed his blood on the cross because the seventy-two disciples and twelve apostles totaling eighty-four were disunited. Hence, every one of you must substantially restore eighty-four people through indemnity. Only on such a foundation can you lead married lives. The same was true for me. In order to fulfill this, I blessed the 36 Couples, who can be subdivided into three groups of twelve each, representing formation, growth, and completion. Strictly speaking, they are three groups, but they can be compressed into one; similarly, the

72 Couples. On that foundation, the 120 Couples were blessed, and on that basis, the world could be connected. After Jesus' resurrection and ascension, didn't the 120 followers gather on the day of Pentecost? They symbolized representatives of the world. (122-117, 1982.11.1)

The 120 Couples stand in the position to dissolve Jesus' anguish arising from not being able to restore the standard of Judaism. Hence, I am telling them to stand in the forefront and sacrifice themselves. All district leaders recently educated for mobilization were of the 120 Couples. The 120 Couples must sacrifice themselves. They stand in the same position as the 120 followers at Jesus' time as the national representatives of the world's 120 nations and are forming global tribes. (47-202, 1971.8.28)

Upon ascending to heaven, hadn't Jesus appointed 120 followers? The 120 Couples signify them and also represent 120 nations on earth and in the spirit world, respectively. Once members of your tribes take their places among the ranks of national representatives, your field of activity will be expanded to the 120 nations, which can then be connected to the Kingdom of Heaven. You will be able to inherit such positions and from there connect to the bases on which you can carry out your activities. (215-129, 1991.2.6)

Jesus did not just have twelve apostles and 70 disciples. On the day of Pentecost after his ascension, 120 followers gathered to begin their worldwide missionary work. They are represented by 120 nations. At the time of the 120 Couples Blessing, the United Nations had 124 member states. The number of couples actually blessed was 124, out of which four had been criminals from the four directions of north, south, east, and west. Included among 124 couples are criminals who were convicted once, twice, thrice, and even four times. Why? It is because we have to save even those who are in hell. We need to save those who are imprisoned. (215-129, 1991.2.6)

Just as I have the 120 Couples, all of you have 120 kinfolk of your own, through twelve tribes multiplied by ten in the spirit world. At present, we regard the number of nations in the world in which we are carrying out missionary work as 120 or 160. Hence, at the time of the Seoul Olympics, national representatives from 120 nations got together to become as one. Similarly, within your tribe, you must establish representatives of 120 nations and make them unite with you as the representatives of the nations of the world. Only thus can you restore through indemnity the lost base of the 120 followers on earth at the time of Jesus' resurrection and ascension, which is why we need the 120 Couples. Only when they are established on earth, brought together and completely united can the 120 representatives in the spirit world be connected to the tribes. In this way, even the spirit world can be connected to the 120 nations. Thus, the 120 Couples are absolutely indispens-

able to us. (215-129, 1991.2.6)

When entering heaven, you must take with you at least 120 families – something Jesus wanted to do. Who are the 120 Couples? They are representatives of the nations in the physical world. Hence, during your lifetime, you must successfully witness to at least 120 couples and ensure that you will bring them to heaven. This should be every member's purpose in life. Each person is sent to his or her tribe as the representative of Jesus who has not died but come again to earth; this is the sending of Abel tribes to Cain tribes in the capacity of the messiah. Such is the mission of tribal messiahs. (215-185, 1991.2.17)

The question is how you can establish the tradition of love, the eternal tradition of the ideal of creation, with your children, tribe, and restored citizens. Once you enter the spirit world, you, along with them, will form a group and restore your eternal dignity and order of life. While you are still on earth, you must deal with your tribe and restore at least 120 families. I think I have explained more than enough for you to understand. I am telling you to be prepared so that you will not be embarrassed. You would not just be embarrassed, but be stripped bare and kicked out. (213-139, 1991.1.16)

The number 120, which is ten times twelve, derives from Jesus' twelve apostles and represents the physical world. Thus, the 120 Couples were blessed in accordance with the number of Jesus' 120 followers. Originally, the number should have been 120, but I blessed 124, adding four representing the four directions of north, south, east, and west. (16-62, 1965.12.26)

I blessed the 124 Couples representing the world's 120 nations and the number four, on the global level, on the foundation of having established the center of tribes. What this means is that families have been formed that will represent the center of all Christianity that originated from Jesus' 120 followers, who themselves symbolized the foundation of 120 nations. These therefore are couples whose responsibility it will be to achieve the four-position foundation on the individual level under my leadership, and bring together the ancestors, the races, and finally the world. As such, from now on, the way will be opened for all nations of the world to move toward one common destination. (75-150, 1975.1.2)

The 120 followers represent the world. Jesus wanted to begin his worldwide dispensation with these 120 followers, but couldn't during his lifetime. We must fulfill this work. On the way toward world restoration, my descendants must be chosen in stages in order to act as bridges connecting all people. In doing this, I cannot just select anyone to become my descendants, but rather this must be done with care, as they will be representing the world. How was this done? It was through the joint weddings of the 36, 72 and 124 Couples in the Unification Church. (34-262, 1970.9.13)

3.2. Dedication ceremony and designation of 120 holy grounds

After the Blessing of the 124 Couples, I conducted a special dedication ceremony. Christ at his Second Advent comes as the resurrected substantial being with the mission of establishing the foundations on levels of the individual, family, tribe, and people – the work of God that remained incomplete at the time of Jesus. I carried out this work over the past three years. This period corresponds to that of restoring children (vertical period). During this period, I was called as the resurrected substantial being in order to fulfill this mission, just as Jesus intended to save the followers of Judaism and the Jewish people. (13-11, 1963.9.12)

The 120 Couples typify the world. This is why I designated 120 holy grounds in forty nations worldwide in 1965. (18-260, 1967.6.12)

After restoring the people, we need to restore the land. I toured forty nations around the world to establish holy grounds. I was able to do this because I had established the standard existing prior to the Fall in Korea. I established holy grounds in 105 places in forty nations around the world. The 120 Couples symbolize 120 nations. From this day forward, we need to establish 120 holy grounds. (16-7, 1963.12.21)

What are the 120 Couples? They are the representatives of 120 nations. However, from the viewpoint of heavenly structure, although the ancestors, families, and representatives of the world were established, we still have no territory. Since we have no territory, although we formed an organization of people in front of God, we still do not have the foundation upon which He could sanctify this defiled land. I therefore established 120 holy grounds in forty nations, making the numbers correspond with each other. That was how the foundation for the restoration of land was laid.

When you go to the holy grounds to pray, you should be conscious of this background. In the context of mobilizing benevolent spirits to come to earth and spread across the world, you should offer prayers as representatives of the 120, 72, and 36 Couples and the True Parents as the center of the heavenly throne.

Hence, from now on, in order for the Unification Church to advance, even God will be mobilized and the patriotic forefathers of the past as well. In fact, everyone in the spirit world should be mobilized. Those in the spirit world are in the Cain position, whereas we who are living on earth are in the Abel position, and so all of them will render us assistance in connection with territory. God, the angels, and our ancestors must help us. (158-129, 1967.12.26)

Section 4. The 430 Couples

4.1. Significance of the 430 Couples

What are the 430 Couples? They are the horizontal foundation of their entire nation; as such, they need to achieve uni-

ty. We have reached a stage where we can exert influence upon the world based on the national foundation, which is why we should ascend to the global stage. Therefore, my forty years of public life should be restored by establishing the number 43. This condition must be set on the global level. Hence, we are now entering the era in which the Unification Church will influence history. Then what should be done now? The clans should totally unite and move forward for the restoration of the race. On the day the race is restored, the nation will automatically be brought into line. (29-103, 1970.2.25)

430 couples must be blessed within this year because 1967 marked the 4,300th year of the Dangun Era, and these numbers must accord with providential dispensation. Moreover, it took the Israelites 430 years to return to Canaan from Egypt. That is to say, what is significant here is the number 43. That number represents a turning point in history, marking the time of our entry into a new era. Thus, we have completed the Seven-Year Course restoring the number 43. Once all these numbers accord with each other, we can cross over into the new era. From this day on, the Unification Church will make rapid progress. (19-171, 1968.1.1)

The numbers four and three together represent the number seven, and also the 430 years the Israelites remained in Egypt before departing to Canaan. Hence, 430 represents the time for a new beginning. Furthermore, the 430 Couples Blessing also took place upon completion of 4,300 years of Korean history. This is not mere coincidence. God's providence is always carried out mathematically. The foundation built by a single religious denomination is equivalent to victory on the tribal level only, and this is not enough. By blessing the 430 Couples after 4,300 years of Korean history, I opened a common gate for all tribes worldwide. (84-146, 1976.2.22)

What is significant about the 430 Couples? They were blessed upon the completion of 4,300 years of the Dangun Era in Korean history. In that year, the gates were opened through which any Korean family could enter heaven. Even those who opposed us could now enter. Whichever clan or tribe they came from, Korean citizens could enter heaven, even the descendants of butchers, who are considered as members of the lowest class in Korea. Hence, the 430 Couples Blessing marks the time when the whole tribe must take part. The era of selectivity has now given way to the era of universality. For instance, if the Kim clan is chosen by God, everyone with the surname Kim can enter hand in hand. In 1969, I also blessed a total of 43 couples representing the many nations of the world. I conducted the Blessing in Germany, the United States, and Japan. These 43 Couples are in the object position to the 430 Couples on the national level.

What this means is that, since all the tribes in Korea received the privilege of being part of God's realm, the internal

foundation has been established so that all other tribes and races in the world can also become a part of that realm. Furthermore, by connecting this reciprocal foundation, the tribes overseas can also be connected to the people of Korea, who are standing on the condition of indemnity of the homeland. (100-31, 1978.10.4)

Just as the Israelites set out from Egypt for Canaan, the 430 Couples signify that we too have set out to restore the world, which is our Canaan. Whereas they set out in the 430th year of their captivity in Egypt, we have settled on the number 43, representing 4,300 years. We are moving forward from this point. In doing so, we are not working individually but in family units. We must move forward with our families. You should understand this. The unit is no longer the individual; it is the family. Thus, you should not abandon your families and move forward alone. Furthermore, the central person in the position of Moses should not abandon the Israelites. He must lead them all out of Egypt into Canaan. If one of them happens to be in prison, he should help that person to get out so he can come with the others.

I blessed the 430 Couples to represent all these numbers. Among them, every person in the world is represented, whether good, religious, or otherwise; everyone is included. All other numbers are derived from the number twelve; the numbers 40, 30, and 120 all come from that number. Thirty days in one month is also derived from that. The central numbers in the universe are all included in that number. Thus, we are setting out in the 4,300th year having restored the 430 Couples. We have climbed one step up. This is the year in which everyone has been included – not only Koreans, but also people of every other background. With Korea as the representative of the world, the whole world was included in the 430 Couples Blessing. You must know this clearly. We are on the way to expansion. (98-186, 1978.7.16)

Through the 430 Couples Blessing, Korea could be connected to the Unification Church. This means that, although many Koreans did not believe in religion, all could enjoy the privileges of the realm of the third Israel due to the fulfillment of indemnity conditions within that realm through the 430 Couples. I was therefore able to publicly announce that Korea is the nation of the chosen people. The realm of the chosen people was established. I can now expand this foundation globally.

After the 430 Couples Blessing, the next stage is the global extension of the land and people from Korea. By that I mean sowing the land, designating holy grounds, and engrafting them to the 430 Couples. I therefore established holy grounds in forty nations. Following this, I made a world tour, during which, I blessed the 43 Couples. I connected a total of 43 couples from Japan, the United States, and Germany as the counterpart of the 430 Couples in Korea. This is truly historic. Through this foundation, the many nonbelievers in the world can

also receive the benefits of the realm of Israel. The world passed through four thousand years of Jewish history before Christ or six thousand years including Christian history, during which traditions were passed on from generation to generation and people believed in the benefit derived from them. But now, they are being endowed with the privilege of participating in the realm of benefit in this era of horizontal expansion, even though they do not believe. Such a foundation has finally been laid. (110-123, 1980.11.10)

What is the Blessing? It is the securing of families. Centering on my family, the 3, 36, 72, and 124 Couples were blessed, and through these Blessings, the global indemnity condition could be fulfilled. Then the issue of the 430 Couples arises. Although the 124 Couples were established to represent the global standard of the Blessing, there are still many Koreans who do not believe in religion and so do not lead religious lives. Isn't that so? God's providence must take account of all existing religions, and indemnity conditions are necessary for their sakes. But what would happen to nonbelievers? They cannot just be cut off completely and cast away.

Ultimately, the many races and clans must be equally engrafted to the realm of mainstream thought through religions. Although the way leading to the world has been paved and the gates through which religious people can pass have been opened, ordinary people had been excluded; they could not be admitted. Thus, the many ordinary tribes in Korea must be engrafted. That was the reason behind the establishment of the 430 Couples: they represent the 4,300 years of Korean history. (110-123, 1980.11.10)

What are the 430 Couples? Are there not hundreds of surnames in Korea, such as Park or Kim? In like manner, there are many surnames in other nations across the world as well, and the path through which all of them can be connected to the center of God's providence has been opened up by the 430 Couples Blessing. With regard to the 430 Couples, there are actually 430 from Korea forming a reciprocal relationship with another forty-three from Japan, the United States, and Europe. By this means, the world's five races have been brought together through the 43 Couples, corresponding to the 430. (100-279, 1978.10.22)

The 430 Couples correspond to the 4,300 years of Korean history. They comprise all types of people: sinners and others from all walks of life, including murderers and robbers. Only thus was the doorway created through which everyone in the world could enter. (118-331, 1982.6.20)

The 430 Couples must become the main driving force of the Unification Church. When I was in my forties – as many of you are now – my struggles assumed global proportions. By the time I turned forty-five I had laid all the foundations, met the indemnity conditions for Korea, connected all the nations,

and established 120 holy grounds in forty countries. It was the time I started preparing for those struggles. (141-226, 1986.2.22)

Do you know how important the 430 Couples are? Originally, their Blessing should have taken place last year in 1967. Instead, it was held this year on February 22, which was the twentieth anniversary of my entry into Heungnam prison. Accordingly, there is great significance in completing twenty years of my course of restoration both spiritually and physically; you therefore stand in such a significant position in commemorating that important day with me. You should realize what an honor it is to have such a right of participation. That day is not a sad one. It is also George Washington's birthday. Knowing this, all of you should work hard to form wonderful families of your own. (159-43, 1968.3.1)

The 430 Couples are the representatives of the Korean people; they include all kinds of surnames. As such, they can stand in Adam's position and connect to the citizens of Korea, the Adam nation which stands on the global foundation. They also include a representative couple from the Eve nation. Otherwise, the two nations could not be connected. Hence, Kuboki's couple from Japan was included in the 430 Couples Blessing. Every other nation could be connected from that point on. (164-269, 1987.5.17)

In 1968, along with the inauguration of God's Day, I prepared the foundation in Korea upon which God's Blessed Families could be connected worldwide. Only after I had prepared the right foundation were we actually able to branch out globally. Thus, Japan was allowed to participate in the 430 Couples Blessing and not before. Mr. Kuboki's couple represented Japan. In this manner, we are moving into the global era. By fulfilling such indemnity conditions, we are paving our way in the world and making successful progress as we move along. (163-145, 1987.5.1)

From the perspective of the Principle, Kook-jin is our fourth son and seventh child; he is also the eighth among all my children to be married. All these numbers are in accordance with the Principle. I chose his spouse from a family among the 430 Couples because they represent all the surnames in Korea. Surnames have become so diversified in the world. Blessing 430 couples was the same as indemnifying the 4,300 years of Korean history through people, if you think of each couple as indemnifying ten years. It is the same for indemnification on the family level.

In the past, through the 430 Couples Blessing, individuals could progress; however, with the selection of Kook-jin's spouse from a 430-Couple family, the time has now come when people of all surnames in the world – from north, south, east, and west – can be restored on the family level, rather than just individually through my family. Hence, you must realize how influential Kook-jin's Blessing is. Through his wedding,

Blessed Families will spread in all directions around me. (185-304, 1989.1.17)

What are the 430 Couples? The numbers four and three are linked to the 4,300 years of Korean history. Furthermore, their product is twelve and their sum is seven. All important numbers in the Divine Principle, whether you add or multiply them, involve the numbers seven, three, and four. In this way, the number 430 was determined as the number of couples to be blessed. Then, with Korea as the center, a related number of couples from the world had to be chosen as their counterparts, and so forty-three couples were selected from nations around the world to be blessed. The Blessing of the 43 Couples from Japan, Europe, and the United States created a global reciprocal realm. Through this, the horizontal foundation was completed upon which all people in the world could come into contact with heaven.

The path through which everyone can pass through the door of the Blessing and come together in one place should be opened for all people of faith, even if they live at the very ends of the earth. Such is the significance of the Unification Church's large weddings: by forging global connections through the 430 Couples, it has developed into a worldwide race of people. It is not just for Koreans. The fact that I connected the 430 Couples to the 43 Couples on the foundation of the family on the world level signifies the birth of a new race transcending ethnicity and nationality. That is how I see it. (100-171, 1978.10.14)

God's Day being inaugurated on earth in the New Year of 1968 was a victorious day for the Unification Church. That period was also marked by the 430 Couples Blessing. Because such a day of victory had to be connected worldwide horizontally, I toured the world in 1969 and blessed the 43 Couples, thereby linking ten nations to that sphere of activity. Our victorious achievements in Korea needed to be anchored worldwide. I accomplished this by blessing 43 couples from ten nations, corresponding to the 430 Couples Blessing. The 430 Couples represented Korea's 4,300-year history, thus enabling all Koreans to become the foundation for the Blessing. (58-223, 1970.6.11)

The 36 Couples Blessing took place under desperate circumstances. Thus, after passing through the stages of the 36, 72, and 120 Couples taking their places on earth, we entered the era of the 430 Couples, in which we could finally spread out in all directions to the rest of the world; that was the early history of the Unification Church. During this twenty-one year course since 1960, I have opened the gates of the Blessing in all directions to connect with all peoples and tribes. All the world's five races must enter through those gates. Thus, the Unification Church has been globally active ever since the 430 Couples Blessing.

What are the 430 Couples to Korea? The number 430 signifies a new beginning marked by the 430 Couples Blessing after 4,300 years of Korean history. The number 430 also stands for the num-

ber of years the Israelites were in Egypt before they departed for Canaan. They set out for the Promised Land after 430 years. Hence, through this number, the worldwide restoration of Canaan can be started based on the family. (100-277, 1978.10.22)

The 430 Couples signify the coming together of the whole nation and not just the Unification Church. The number 430 is related to the 4,300 years of Korean history and also signifies setting out to restore the worldwide Canaan, equivalent to the Israelites departing for Canaan. The path has been opened for everyone to follow, whether they believe in God or not. That is to say, in place of the Israelites setting out on the national level after 430 years, we have the 430 Couples setting out on the worldwide level after 4,300 years. They are leaving for the Promised Land on the global level. Through the 430 Couples, the whole nation should be connected to the Blessing, and this connection should expand to include the whole world, which is why I blessed the 43 Couples as the worldwide counterparts of the 430 Couples. That is the condition: through these Blessings, the 430 Couples can connect to any tribe in Korea, whereas the 43 Couples, as representatives of the world, can connect to any nation. (91-259, 1977.2.23)

Originally, I was planning to hold a Blessing in 1967 in Japan but could not. Thus, when I was blessing the 430 Couples in 1968, I set the condition of having the Kuboki's couple participate in the Blessing, representing Japan. I thus blessed Japan first before America. Then, through the Blessing in Germany – the Adam nation on the satanic side – God's anchor was cast into another four nations in Europe. Accordingly, what you must realize is that the victorious foundation on the global level representing every nation has now been built upon which the indemnity conditions can be set. I returned after achieving all this. (23-291, 1969.6.8)

Since all of you participated in my Seven-Year Course, I took responsibility to bless everyone up to the 430 Couples. All Blessed Couples are a part of me; every one of them is great because they contributed to my course of world restoration. (22-68, 1969.1.21)

4.2. The 430 Couples and tribal messiahship

When blessing the 430 Couples, I told them to become tribal messiahs. That did not mean that they should go off and live happily by themselves. In other words, I had given them a mission similar to that of Jesus and the Holy Spirit; that is, to become the tribal messiahs working to save their tribes as the substantial embodiments of the resurrected Jesus and the Holy Spirit. That means they should fulfill the mission of tribal messiahs, not as spirits but as physical people. (40-216, 1971.2.1)

I told the 430 Couples to become tribal messiahs, but none of them under-

stand why I said that to them. While living on earth, all of you must witness to your parents and relatives. Accordingly, one couple should restore at least 120 people. This is your mission in life. Moving forward focusing on this purpose is the way that Unification Church members should go. (34-261, 1970.9.13)

What is the second Seven-Year Course? It is a period during which your families must become Abel families. In order to fulfill that responsibility, you must restore Cain families. What do you form when Abel families restore Cain families? You form tribes. You must become tribal messiahs. The 430 Couples are tribal messiahs. This means to be global. In this way, all conditions should be met. (34-104, 1970.8.29)

The instruction issued to the 430 Couples I blessed in 1968 was to become tribal messiahs. They must fulfill this mission. Just as I organized the 36 Couples in our church, blessed members having the surname of Kim, for example, are to likewise organize 36 couples within their Kim clan. If they cannot, they should become the ancestors of at least twelve couples. The way to do this is to form trinities with their children, since they are the parents, and thus establish the standard of tribal messiahship. (31-276, 1970.6.4)

What are the 430 Couples? Their Blessing signified entering the era of tribal messiahship. Since every one of them represents the family foundations upon which all tribes in the spirit world can return to earth and be resurrected – in other words, the family foundations of the resurrected Jesus bestowed upon the entire nation – the 430 Couples are the messianic families of their tribes. What that means is that they are like the families of Christ at his Second Advent to their tribes.

The 36, 72, and 120 Couples are part of me. These three groups of couples correspond to the vertical standard, whereas the 430 Couples have been established horizontally in all directions. Hence, they enter the realm of tribal messiahs, which is why I told them all, "Be tribal messiahs!" As I have already restored the 36 and 72 Couples, who form the center, as well as the 120 Couples, all you need to do now is to restore 120 couples per Blessed Family. Then everything can be indemnified both vertically and horizontally.

As such, you must understand that it is the responsibility of the 430 Couples, the Blessed Couples of the Unification Church, to create 120 families in your tribes. So have you fulfilled this responsibility or not? Have you thought about that or not? You did not understand this until now, did you? Now that you have heard my explanation, do you understand? (84-157, 1976.2.22)

Individual restoration precedes family restoration. After achieving individual victory, we enter the stage of Abel families. Whether husband or wife, all of you are Abels in your family and so from there you must become tribal messiahs.

As this mission can only be undertaken by families, I have entrusted it to the 430 Couples. You do not understand this at all, do you? What do I mean when I say that the 430 Couples are tribal messiahs? This is logically inevitable. These words apply to everyone. (39-119, 1971.1.10)

Section 5. The 777 Couples

5.1. The 777 Couples represent the world

The 777 Couples, formed by young men and women from ten nations, were blessed in 1970 in order to create new families and new tribes based on God's love, transcending national boundaries and racial differences in pioneering the way of His will for the world. Thus, a new global nation was being prepared for Christ at his Second Advent, as well as the requisite personnel who could serve any nation and any citizenry in accordance with his plan. (53-255, 1972.2.29)

The 777 Couples represent the world: they are global couples. As such, they strengthen our church. However, the family structure in the Unification Church is still in tatters. None of the families until now have fulfilled their missions and so I have had to extend them to the 777 Couples, representing the global level. Originally, the 430 Couples should have done this work. This is the progress we have made thus far. The 777 Couples represent the whole world. The three sevens refer to formation, growth, and completion. I prepared the global family structure for us to enter the transracial era by blessing the 777 Couples in 1970. Thus, any of the 777 Couples, including the Japanese, could take the place of any of the 36, 72, 124, or 430 Couples who deviate from their position. In this way, the path of the providence of restoration is being paved. (79-104, 1975.6.22)

We should be ready to unite globally, transcending nationality and race. Race or skin color is not an issue for us. Having declared that I must promote a movement to form a family structure transcending our nation and race, I conducted the unprecedented joint wedding of the 777 Couples. (53-190, 1972.2.20)

The 777 Couples that I blessed in 1970 signify total perfection symbolized by the number twenty-one – the sum of their three sevens – as well as the three stages of the growing period. Rather than trying to break these stages up, I sought to put them together all at once and did so in one place. There, ten nations participated in the Blessing, representing the world in order to restore the number ten. Thus, I could organize a new global tribe by blessing those families. Thereby, a transracial standard was set for the creation of that tribe. (54-295, 1972.3.26)

The 777 Couples Blessing signifies the attainment of maturity at the end of seven years of formation, seven years of growth, and seven years of completion. Thus, I brought together a great number of people from several nations and

blessed them, whereby the way has been opened through which anyone on earth can form a family of God's Kingdom. Everyone can begin to have such a family. (105-156, 1979.10.14)

Now that we have ushered in the New Year 1971, what should we resolve to accomplish? As the Unification Church is the core and center of the world, we should lose no time in propagating the Lord's teachings to the world. On the foundation of the ten nations represented by the 777 Couples, we should fulfill our responsibility of interconnecting the world of God's love, transcending race, nationality and skin color, and completely unite around God's will. The 777 Couples Blessing was held in order to advocate this. This was a truly historic event. (38-213, 1971.1.3)

What are the 777 Couples? Their wedding was the last one I conducted while my work was based in Korea. Through this Unification Church Blessing in 1970, the many races of the world were connected to heaven.

What was the result of the 777 Couples Blessing? By bringing together many families and tribes of the world today and connecting them to heaven, I opened the global gate through which any family, tribe, and people can form a relationship with God. By entering through the gate of the 777 Couples and following the path leading from there, all people can go to heaven. That gate is now open. This Unification Church Blessing in 1970 was thus the last of its kind held before the providence reached its present global dimension. (100-279, 1978.10.22)

The world will gradually start to move in accordance with the fortune of the Unification Church. In this connection, I conducted the first international joint wedding in 1970, the 777 Couples Blessing, which signified that everything on earth was drawing together globally based on the providence.

As part of the 430 Couples Blessing, I blessed forty-three non-Korean couples overseas rather than bringing them over to Korea. Yet, the 777 Couples Blessing in Korea was the very first international joint wedding held in the whole world, with participants from ten nations. The path by which any nation on earth can return to God was completed through the family ideal in this manner. From this moment on, it became possible for the fortune of the world to align itself with the fortune of the Unification Church. (55-171, 1972.5.7)

You, the 777 Couples, are worthy of our pride. Thus, you should stand at the forefront as we enter the 1980s and take pride in bequeathing our tradition to all families. Who among you will assume such a position? By doing so, you will reach out to the world. You are the couples representing the tribes of the world.

Your situation is akin to that of Jacob's clan, which could not be formed within a seven-year course but rather through three seven-year courses. All you 777 Couples of the Unification Church must

realize that your Blessing signifies the establishment of the tribe that can relate in all directions to the world. The fact that people from several nations were blessed proves that a tradition has been established through which the whole world can be connected to heaven. Thus, you must become earnest families comprising true husbands, wives, parents, and children who can set the standard of being able to uphold God's will; such a responsibility lies with you 777 Couples, who are currently in your thirties, because you are the ones who best represent the families of the Unification Church. The couples in their forties are too old, and those in their twenties are not mature enough for this task. Since those of you in your thirties are standing in such a position, when you fulfill the duties entrusted to you, the foundation of heavenly tradition can be laid, upon which the rich legacy of the history of the Unification Church can be transmitted to the world.

By doing so, wouldn't you become heroes and ancestors of the world's families immortalized in history? Knowing that you possess such an amazing and historic background, if you perish even after having made a supreme effort, you can direct your protests to me. Actually, you will never perish. (109-109, 1980.10.26)

In 1970, the 777 Couples from ten nations around the world were blessed. They are the 'three sevens' couples; three times seven equals twenty-one. The 777 Couples represent the whole world and also formation, growth, and completion; through their Blessing, any family could inherit the right to enter heaven freely. Such is the significance of this number.

Having thus blessed the 777 Couples, I can now travel anywhere in the world with my family: Germany, Africa – anywhere on earth. That is to say, I can fulfill God's will wherever I go. Every place is the same. Since the way is open for anyone to come to me, it follows that I can also go to any nation. The 777 Couples Blessing in 1970 made it possible for my family to go anywhere in the world. I have laid the foundation upon which, if Korea continues to oppose me, I can take my family to any nation of my choice to realize God's will; accordingly, I can now proceed into the global era. (75-152, 1975.1.2)

Among Unification Church families, if the 36, 72, 120, and 430 Couples do not fulfill their responsibilities, these will transfer to you 777 Couples. You are the "three-seven" couples. When I say that, you are probably thinking to yourselves, "Three sevens is the number favored by the world. It corresponds to the twenty-one years of the three stages of formation, growth, and completion, and is the number of perfection, the impeccable number derived from the number seven and the three stages." However, you should not try to take advantage of the name of the 777 Couples, while continuing to fight among yourselves, being as greedy as you were before, and neglecting everything connected to God's will. (109-98, 1980.10.26)

The 777 Couples were blessed on October 21, 1970. They came from ten nations and must therefore relate to the world. They are the 'three-seven' couples. There is no racial discrimination among them – whether they are Japanese or Americans. Everyone must create unity; only then can all nations in the world follow Korea into heaven. (281-42, 1997.1.2)

The 777 Couples Blessing was held on October 21, 1970, symbolizing twenty-one as the result of three times seven; hence, the three sevens. It was the last one I conducted before globalizing my mission; through it, and with the 1970s as the frontier, any race can now be connected through marriage to God's lineage. Hence, with that Blessing, we entered the era of interracial marriage. Thus, the Unification Church is not focused exclusively on the people of Korea; through the 777 Couples Blessing, it has already laid the foundation to form a new tribe by connecting the people of the world together. This Blessing marks the beginning of a new era transcending races and tribes, in which a new tribe of the world can be formed. From that time, the Unification Church began its work worldwide. (100-171, 1978.10.14)

All of you must walk the path I pioneered; it was long and time-consuming, but you have to at least set a condition of lesser indemnity that you have followed a path somewhat similar to mine. That is unavoidable. The 777 Couples Blessing, in which you took part, followed those of the True Parents, the 3, 33, 72, 120, 430, and the 43 Couples that I blessed during my world tour. Thus, it was the seventh Blessing within the nation of Korea, and from a global perspective, it was the eighth. It was the last Blessing, which is why you are the 777 Couples. The date was set for October 21st because three times seven is twenty-one. This is the final crucial moment. From now on, I will not have to conduct the Blessing myself. Hence, I included participants from ten nations. (62-336, 1972.9.26)

The teachings of the Unification Church exist for the benefit of the world. This is how it differs from other religions. Its members are also different. Even though I am criticized within secular society, people still remark about my actions, saying, "That man called Rev. Moon of the Unification Church does everything in such a grandiose way."

This time, I brought together people from ten nations in a joint wedding. Originally, I had promised to bless 777 couples, but their actual total was 791. I had to engage more than the number promised because a few couples might not have made it on the day of the Blessing due to illness or military service. In order to ensure that they did not fall short of the promised number, I actually ended up blessing 791 couples. (38-263, 1971.1.8)

That is how the Divine Principle of the Unification Church is: At the time of the 777 Couples Blessing, most of the American participants had master

degrees, yet they packed their bags, left their nation and flew thousands of miles to receive the Blessing here in Korea. The round-trip airfare for one person to fly to Korea from the United States is about 2,000 dollars. So it would be 4,000 dollars per couple. That would be about 1.3 million Korean won. Why then would these people spend so much money just to be married here in Korea? The answer is simply that it would be of far greater value for them to be married here rather than back home in the United States. It was far better.

Since it was dozens of times better for them to spend that money and come here, they came, even though they were told not to. People would not do anything that would cause them to incur a loss. This phenomenon was possible absolutely only by the power of the Divine Principle. For these people, nothing else would have worked. (39-273, 1971.1.15)

I held a joint wedding for Unification Church members. At the time of the ceremony, people from all over the world flocked to Korea. There is no one who could accomplish such a task in the whole world apart from Rev. Moon. If awards were given to those who performed the greatest number of weddings, I would definitely receive first prize for bringing together 777 Couples from ten nations across the world. When you consider these facts, you cannot help but be astounded. (41-43, 1971.2.12)

I am sure that amongst those gathered here today are some of the 777 Couples. They represent the world, which is why there are all kinds of people included among them. At the time of their Blessing, some candidates were not even proper Unification Church members and so when you look at them, you can see that they are in various states of spiritual maturity. Then do you know why I brought together all these different people? It was because they had to stand in the position of representing the world. You must understand that what brought together these people was the love of God, who wanted to bequeath His boundless realm of forgiveness to the whole world. Some of the 777 Couples do not clearly understand His will. In fact, some of them have no understanding of it at all; yet, at least the wives who are gathered here today should become righteous people.

Everything was ruined in the Garden of Eden by the wrongdoing of a woman; if the women in our church today were to devote themselves to the cause of righteousness, the outside world would have to keep in step with us. Then the men would have no choice but to follow. If they did not follow, they would have nowhere to go. (44-302, 1971.5.24)

After being blessed in marriage in the Unification Church, what do people do for a minimum of forty days? People in the world wouldn't dream of it. Japanese Blessed Families and the 777 Couples led celibate lives for five years even under one roof with their spouses. That is truly amazing. Hence, problems such as juvenile promiscuity can only

be tackled by the Unification Church. If this cannot be rectified, the whole world will become a sacrificial offering to Satan. What we are trying to do is solve all these difficult problems by bringing together the people of the world and transforming them into the citizens of God's Kingdom. Does that sound like easy work? (85-335, 1976.3.4)

We entered the era of international marriage with the 777 Couples Blessing. Everyone will be brought together. From there we can pass through formation, growth, and completion stages; this time I might even intermarry all of you. What era did I say we are living in now? We are now in the era of international and interracial marriage. (100-34, 1978.10.4)

On the bright morning of October 21, 1970, the 777 Couples will fly high the banner of liberation before all peoples of the world, signifying the resurrected foundation of cosmic victory. How many of you have felt in your hearts the value and importance of such an incredible and amazing day? People from ten nations have flocked to Korea to form the nation, clan, and family of the True Parents as their sons and daughters. Those nations, including Korea and Japan, reflect the vastness of cultural diversity. There is no fixed cultural standard (35-235, 1970.10.19)

The 777 Couples signify three times seven, which is twenty-one and thus encompass the whole world. They were blessed on October 21, 1970. On that day, the bridge for any race to go to heaven was built. Three times seven is twenty-one. What is the purpose of restoring through indemnity the crucial time of the Fall and the grief related to the three sevens? It is to escape from the realm of Satan's accusation concerning the spiritual and physical realms – or man and woman – in Adam and Eve's 21-year course. In order to do this globally, the Unification Church laid the complete foundation on which families can escape that realm of accusation through the Blessing of the 777 Couples from ten nations.

Starting with my Holy Wedding in 1960, next the Blessing of my three spiritual children, then those of the 33, 72, 120, 430, and finally the 777 Couples, a total of seven Blessings took place. In other words, all those Blessings were completed within seven stages and, consequently, what belongs to Korea can now belong to the world and vice versa.

The standard for the restoration of the individual, family, tribe, and people, which I have laid in Korea, will rise vertically until the nation is restored. Starting from the individual, the stages rise to the family, tribe, people, and nation. They are ascending in the reverse order. (58-59, 1972.6.6)

At the time of the 777 Couples Blessing, some parents came to me and requested, "Rev. Moon, my daughter's name is so-and-so. As you are the founder of the Unification Church, we hope with all of our hearts that you will select a good husband for her." Since when was

I in such a high position? The world has changed. I thought it was still winter, but when I looked, spring had come. I finally find this world worth living in. If I did not have such things to look forward to, what would I live for? (38-187, 1971.1.3)

Quite a number of participants in the 777 Couples Blessing were not qualified. In God's eyes, there were very few people who were actually qualified to receive the Blessing. Nevertheless, by participating in this event, even those who were unqualified could be revived and a national foundation established upon which their relatives could also connect with us. That is why I included them in that Blessing. The grooms presumed that their brides would move in with them. As was their social custom, there was no doubt that the brides would come to serve their parents-in-law and live together in the house of their in-laws – far from it! Instead, they were sent to the front line without informing their husbands. Of course I know there may have been repercussions arising from this, but I had no other choice. (38-29, 1971.1.1)

In the 1970s, we must restore seven thousand years of history through indemnity and establish the dignity of Adam in Korea. Hence, we must buy a house. If you do not buy me a home, you would not be fulfilling your responsibility. Thus, I had no choice but to establish and bless the 777 Couples. By doing so, I set the condition for them to buy the best house as well as the best car in Korea. You don't know how much satanic people opposed me in that process; it came to be the most complicated house purchase in Seoul. So I thought to myself, "Ah, this is also part of restoration through indemnity!" We must buy this house, but it is so complicated that we are still wrangling over it. The owners promised to sell us the place but there are legal problems, and so we have not even paid for it yet and are still waiting. I suppose we will have to restore all this through indemnity as well. Don't you think so? (38-122, 1971.1.3)

Being served nice meals or living in a nice environment makes me the enemy of this nation. The Lincoln Continental sent from the United States has arrived at the port of Busan. I received it as a gift at the time of the 777 Couples Blessing, but I am still considering whether I should go around in it. It would be nice if I could sell the car, but it was sent to me in the name of the holy tears of history and the honor of God, and so the day I sell it, I would not be able to maintain the dignity of having blessed the 777 Couples. As such, I will have to keep it. (43-85, 1971.4.18)

From now on, whenever I go around in that car, people will talk among themselves and say, "Rev. Moon of the Unification Church has the number one car in Korea." If they ask, "Where did he get the money to buy such a car?" the answer will be, "What are you talking about? He received it as a gift at the time of the 777 Couples Blessing." There was an article about it in the newspapers. I

did not buy it with my own money; it was a gift. Hence, I feel no qualms of conscience when I ride around in such a fine car; rather, I am proud of it. (46-161, 1971.8.13)

Section 6. The 1800 Couples

6.1. The background to the 1800 Couples Blessing

On February 8, 1975, I performed the 1800 Couples Blessing. Now that the Unification Church members have made their debut, first on an individual and then on a family basis, not only the members of my family but all church members should become known throughout the world. Since this is God's will, we must become living monuments that represent and testify to this victory on the family level; thus, based on the achievement of having overcome the hardships of the first and second seven-year courses, we can finally expand our families horizontally on earth centering on the Parents through the third seven-year course. This was valiantly displayed in the ceremony on February 8. (77-217, 1975.4.12)

The 1800 Couples represent three times six, equaling eighteen, and also signify the termination of the satanic world, since it is the number three in the satanic world. Three times six is eighteen, which leads us to 1800 Couples. The gates of the worldwide Blessing have been opened even to the satanic world, which means that they have been opened to the world of the enemy. It was the 1800 Couples who opened the gates of the fallen world to the Unification Church Blessing. You need to restore 160 families before you can register your own family according to the tribal standard representing the world. That number is derived from multiplying the number four by itself and so it is Satan's number. Therefore, it is treated the same, both in value and in content, as the number four of the satanic world.

Originally, you should establish 180 families, but I will accept 160 families. That is how all families in the satanic world can join us. (281-42, 1997.1.2)

The 1800 Couples represent three times six, equaling eighteen, where the number three represents the three periods taking the place of the number six, and the number six becomes the same as the number three or Satan's number of completion. Thus, the 1800 Couples represent all humankind. Through their Blessing, the foundation has been prepared upon which the future families of not just believers but also nonbelievers in the realm of the satanic world can be connected to heaven. This is the work we have been carrying out up until now. (114-41, 1981.5.15)

If we consider the 1800 Couples, the number sixteen is four times four, and the number eighteen is six times three. They are basically the same. The number four is the number for earth and so four multiplied by four is a dimensional number. The number eighteen is the

satanic number six multiplied by three. The number three is derived from the three ages, the Old, New, and Completed Testament Ages, and this leads us to the number 180. Hence, in the process of indemnification for the Unification Church, the restoration of 180 families per couple is required, and the 1800 Couples stand on the worldwide level. (265-176, 1994.11.20)

Since Satan destroyed family relationships, we are establishing a transnational movement that binds the family to the realm of God's direct dominion with the 777 Couples, followed by the 1800 Couples. The 1800 Couples will be the last Blessing group in creating this movement. The number eighteen comes from the satanic number six multiplied by three representing formation, growth, and completion.

The fact that I have restored 1,800 couples from the satanic world signifies that I have surpassed the realm of the tribe. The victory I achieved on the national level is the starting point of the path leading to the world. The 1800 Couples are three times the number six hundred, which represents the realm of Satan's dominion. Through the establishment of the family on this basis, the 1800 Couples have become the standard of indemnification for the family in Satan's realm. (190-275, 1989.6.19)

God is a mathematical god. Nothing He does is by chance or based on rough estimates. Thus, families throughout the world are involving themselves in our work to one degree or another without realizing it. The 1800-Couple represent three times six, which equals eighteen. All numbers in restoration are based on six; everything involves that number. The 6000 Couples Blessing held this time in Korea, and the 2100 Couples Blessing as well, were all carried out in accordance with the Principle. (126-52, 1983.4.10)

For the Blessed Families, the international Blessing is a tradition. I placed a lot of importance on the 1800 Couples, didn't I? Their number is based on three times six, which is why 1,800 couples were blessed. Jesus needed 120 couples and Christ at his Second Advent needs 180 couples. There is equivalent numerical and providential significance in 180 and 160 couples. They are both multiples of the number four. The number sixteen comes from four times four, and the number eighteen comes from six times three. They are Satan's completion numbers, which we seek to reclaim for God.

Didn't I instruct Blessed Families to bless 160 couples from their tribes for this reason? Originally, it was supposed to be 180 couples, but 160 couples are also acceptable. It is easier to accomplish a smaller number and so I said 160 couples are okay; but in the future, you must bless 180 couples. The seventh Blessing I performed was the 1800 Couples Blessing – from the 3, 33, 72, 124, 430, 777 right through to the 1800 Couples, you can count seven in total. From the number seven, we must move on to the numbers eight, nine, and ten, the unitary number. Once we reach the number ten,

we can move into the era of the globalization of the Blessing. (292-20, 1998.3.27)

The 160 couples are based on the number four multiplied by four. Due to the failure of Adam and of his children to establish four-position foundations, it was impossible to open the gates of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. Nevertheless, during the era of indemnification, by virtue of 4.4 Jeol (Four-Four Day), we can restore this foundation because four times four equals sixteen – the number symbolizing God's ideal that was usurped by Satan. If the number six is the foundation on which we can reclaim the satanic world for God, then that number times three, representing formation, growth, and completion, would equal eighteen, which explains why I blessed 1800 couples. The 1800 Couples correspond to 1600 couples. This is the number that can destroy Satan completely. (296-179, 1998.11.9)

One-hundred twenty couples were meant to be restored in the era of Jesus, but in the era of Christ at his Second Advent – the era of globalization – it should be 180 couples. Hence, I blessed the 1800 Couples and went on to the 6000 Couples Blessing. That number 1800 was derived from multiplying the satanic number six by three. Since a number was needed that could walk over everything belonging to Satan, the number eighteen emerged. (304-291, 1999.11.9)

I blessed the 1800 Couples this year. Originally, their Blessing should have taken place last year in 1974, but it was all right as long as I performed the Blessing before April of this year. From the time the Blessing ceremonies were first held in April 1960 until April of this year we are still keeping within the fourteen-year period. That is why I conducted the Blessing in February, and so we have achieved all this within fourteen years. Thus, in keeping with the completion of the second seven-year course of the Unification Church, the 1800 Couples Blessing conducted on the global level signifies that we have laid the foundation for worldwide restoration. So what are the 1800 Couples? The number eighteen is the sum of six plus six plus six. The number of couples corresponds to this and represents our gaining supremacy over the satanic world completely. Having laid the global foundation, we can conclude that we have entered the era in which we can move the nation and the world according to God's will. (81-109, 1975.12.1)

The 1800 Couples Blessing that took place on February 8, 1975 was a global event. Newspapers worldwide should have carried articles about it. The whole world should know about it. As such, you should also understand that the year 1975 was a truly historic year. We have entered the era of global proclamation. Our ascent to that level was heralded by the Blessing of the 1800 Couples. (87-62, 1976.5.1)

The 1800 Couples incorporate the numbers three and six – the factors of

eighteen. Since three sixes represent the completion of that satanic number, no matter what it takes, we need to establish a new origin through which we can cross over into the global era. That is how I came to think that I should surpass the minimum number of 1,800 couples within this year. With such a conviction in mind, I instructed, "You need to reach 1800 couples," and we have accomplished this great task. (79-104, 1975.6.22)

Currently the United Nations has 183 member states. Didn't I bless 1800 couples? Similarly, in this period of transition, 180 nations must be turned around. The numbers 180 and 1800 signify the completion of the satanic number. These numbers come from six multiplied by three and four multiplied by four. They are the numbers Satan usurped from God, which is why we as tribal messiahs were to originally restore 180 families; however, that number can be reduced to 160 – they are providentially equivalent. In fact, four times four is the ideal number.

In the Seoul Olympics, 160 nations participated. The number sixteen is also involved in North and South Korea joining the United Nations: North Korea, a suzerain state of Satan, joined the United Nations as the 160th member state, and South Korea joined as the 161st, signifying a new beginning. In terms of indemnification, South Korea is standing in the lead. (272-284, 1995.10.8)

From the time of the 1800 Couples Blessing, I did not emphasize the importance of spiritual children. Since the Blessing entered its global era, everything must be resolved within the family. Whatever is horizontal must develop vertically and whatever is vertical must develop horizontally. Spiritual children must focus on their grandparents, parents, and older siblings within their families. Their grandparents will then become their grandchildren. Then what would parents become? What position would they take if grandparents become grandchildren? They would become children. What position would older siblings take? They would become younger siblings. (292-114, 1998.3.28)

February 8, 1975 was for me a most unforgettable day until now. I matched the Blessing candidates until just one hour and a half before the ceremony was to take place. Have you ever heard of such a wedding? I was still matching the couples until 8:30 a.m., even though the Blessing Ceremony commenced at ten o'clock in the morning. I stayed up the whole night, but marriage is very important in a person's life and cannot be a game, so when a match was rejected, I proposed another and then another and so on. (83-226, 1976.2.8)

Section 7. The 6000 Couples

The 6000 Couples connected Christians in the vertical position with non-Christian peoples worldwide – in other words, the vertical Christians with the horizontal Cain world. That meant that the era of the satanic world attacking the

Blessed Families had passed.

The spiritual standard of the growth stage has been established on the national level. In establishing the global standard, since the spiritual foundation of Christianity works as the global foundation, the substantial global standard had to be connected to the Christian cultural sphere. To do this, I went to the United States and carried out revival activities nationwide. Wherever I went, I was welcomed. In this manner, I connected all this foundation in America to Korea as the representative of the national standard. That was how I returned to Korea victorious. (190-275, 1989.6.19)

You are branches originating from one root. Branches grow from the trunk, anchored by the roots. Do you think they can grow by themselves? Think about it. Likewise, you cannot effectively operate based on your own limited concepts. Thus, you can only expand on the foundation of the tradition rooted in the True Parents' family. As such, after the Blessings of the 36, 72, 124, and 430 Couples, I then blessed the 777, 1800, and 6000 Couples as the representatives of the conditional offering for global expansion. (145-15, 1986.4.30)

The 6000 Couples have completely opened the historic gates of the Blessed Family even to the communist realm and the satanic world. At the same time, they have fought at the risk of their lives in order to bring the United States to meet the standard of God's nation and to establish the homeland. (135-178, 1985.11.13)

With the accomplishment of the 6000 Couples Blessing, God's wrath on earth has finally been appeased. I shouldered the heavy responsibility of fulfilling what Christianity and the United States had failed to achieve and I accomplished it all through the Unification Church. (233-123, 1992.7.31)

Thanks to the 6000 Couples, even those in prison or hell were able to receive the Blessing. The number 6,000 opened the gates not only to the Cain world but even to hell on earth and in the spirit world. The 6000 Couples opened those gates. Since the gates were opened, all kinds of phenomena were made manifest worldwide. Thus, the gates of heaven have been opened to all humankind, even those in hell. (281-42, 1997.1.2)

The 6000 Couples are the form of the satanic number six reclaimed on the global level. Did you know that? Beginning with my own Blessing in 1960, I went on to bless the first 3 Couples, then the 33, 72, 124, 430, 777, 1800, and 6000 Couples. Since this last Blessing was the ninth, it led to the most persecution. That is why the 6000 Couples underwent more hardships than any other Blessed Couples. (283-84, 1997.4.8)

If I had not accomplished the global standard, the whole nation of Japan would have been in trouble. Thus, through the Blessed Couples, I have pursued the course of indemnity up until this time. Beginning with the 3 Couples, the Blessings of the 33, 72, 124,

430, 777, 1800, and 6000 Couples were all performed in order to traverse the path of global indemnity. Didn't Adam and Eve get married? That is why indemnification takes place through the path of marriage. (234-84, 1992.8.4)

The Unification Church holds joint weddings to establish a world of love. It does not acknowledge the existence of race. Would you say true love is different for white people and black people? This is what makes our members different from other people and our church so great. At the 6000 Couples Blessing, I married about seventy Japanese women to black men. I didn't force them into it; it was of their own accord. Would you think such a thing possible? (140-259, 1986.2.12)

Globally today, there are 182 member states in the United Nations. We have entered the realm of the number 183. I consider that number to be the same as the number 180. However, since the representative number 160 is smaller than 180 families or 180 mission countries, and since everyone wants the smaller number, I have said Blessed Couples must restore at least 160 families instead.

Thus, I have blessed the 6000 Couples on the foundation of the 1800 Couples. What that represents is the complete restoration of number six from Satan's dominion. The number 6,000 signifies that Blessed Families have no connection whatsoever with Satan. Through the 6000 Couples, surmounting the number of the satanic world, we can advance into the realm of liberation. (260-150, 1994.5.2)

Let people make trouble! If they cause trouble, I cannot lose. Even when we were conducting the 6000 Couples Blessing, and thousands of couples were pouring in for the ceremony, people were raising a commotion of protest. I said, "Fine! Oppose all you want! Let's see if anyone fails to come." Even though it felt like everyone was opposing us, not one person missed the ceremony. Why are we doing this? It is because we need to pass this Blessing on as quickly as possible to the youth of the world. From now on, wherever I travel, however much anyone opposes me, it will be to no avail because our joint weddings are well known all over the world. Japan opposed me and in the end they came off worse; so that has become a signboard to the rest of the world that they can no longer oppose us. (136-182, 1985.12.22)

I have endured a full-scale offensive from Satan, right at the historic front line of the world. I have paved this way, persevering through an all-out attack from Korea and Asia, but things are different now for you. In fact, you will be warmly received in your work. Do you understand? That is why you must create an environment in which you can open wide the gates in all directions in your Home Church areas and open previously locked doors, telling people that they are free to pass through them. Only then can the Kingdom of Heaven be established. The people from such

places should be brought in, one after the other, by the Korean 6000 Couples. (135-337, 1985.12.15)

Do you know how many global events we host nowadays? We hold so many that people cannot report in detail to me about them all. Let us take the 6000 Couples Blessing as an example. A wedding in a small town usually involves many arguments and much fuss, but when I married the 6000 Couples, the ceremony was performed beautifully from beginning to end without even a minor incident to mar it. Thus, I am truly deeply grateful to God for everything. Since I have to travel by airplane so much, there is every chance that accidents might happen in the air or I might get involved in a car collision and so on, but up until now, God has protected me. I am really grateful for that. (130-64, 1983.12.11)

Section 8. The 6500 Couples

It is the number that is three times the satanic number, indemnifying the six thousand years representing the Old, New, and Completed Testament Ages, and restoring through indemnity all families in history into the realm of God's blessing. That is the 777 Couples Blessing. The 1800 Couples Blessing was the seventh to take place. The number seven is the number through which we can cross over into the global era. The 6000 Couples Blessing came next as the eighth and then the 6500 Couples Blessing, otherwise considered as the 6700 Couples. The 6700 Couples represent humankind, eliminating everything focusing on the number six and the number seven in the satanic realm. Since we were unable to cross over to the number seven in the previous 6000 Couples Blessing, I blessed the 6500 Couples in order to indemnify that. They are also called the 6700 Couples because it was 6,500 couples plus 200 couples from the United States. Through that ninth Blessing, we passed through the number nine. (288-116, 1997.11.25)

You know, on October 30 of the year before last, I married more than 6,500 Korean and Japanese people. Many Japanese were matched to Korean men and women, and Koreans were matched to Japanese men and women. I am phrasing it like this because that is the way you like to hear it. Isn't that true? (203-277, 1990.6.27)

The fact that Koreans representing the Adam nation and Japanese representing the Eve nation intermarried holds great significance. How else would they unite? Through intermarriage between nations, we have transcended the national dimension by forming unified families. Having done so, we can enter the global era, hence the importance of last year's cross-cultural marriages. God began His providence with Korea as the nation having a unified destiny, but it failed to follow His will. So Kim Il-sung and the satanic world infiltrated the nation and divided it into North and South, which is a problem for

the world. Since the nation was divided, unless its fortunes are realigned toward reunification, we cannot return to the original homeland. In connection with this, I returned last year and performed the intermarriage of representatives of the Adam and Eve nations on the basis of the Foundation Day of the Nation of the Unified World, thereby surpassing the national level of the Blessed Family at least conditionally. You must consider this in terms of the family. This is the standard of the Blessed Family. It won't do if you don't understand this. (194-116, 1989.10.17)

Do you know the reason behind the 100 percent intermarriage between Japanese and Koreans in this Blessing? The Adam and Eve nations are Korea and Japan respectively, and because the original Adam and Eve married privately of their own accord, they brought shame on themselves and the whole world was lost. Now the fruits harvested on the national level as a result of what Adam and Eve sowed must be overturned. Through indemnity, everything was turned the right way up once again. In terms of the worldwide principle, there is not a single person in the satanic world who can defile this foundation of love, in which Adam is above and Eve is below, and will be consolidated through the blessing of the younger generation of those two nations. (188-313, 1989.3.1)

I know well enough: Japan is in the form of a beauty lying naked, adorned from head to toe in jewels; she is like a woman without clothes. Four males have their eyes on her – three archangels and the perfected Adam. In order for the latter to have authority over the others, he must intermarry the Adam and Eve nations, thereby telling the others, "You devils, do not even lay a finger on her!" Otherwise, all his children would be taken away. The Fall was consolidated by Adam and Eve's children, particularly Cain. A woman is not strong enough to defend herself against three archangels; however, through intermarriage, God's son can claim her – that is, restore her. Hence, intermarriage is the only way Japan can obtain the best circumstances as the owner – the circumstances of joy. (237-249, 1992.11.17)

The Japanese who intermarried with Koreans are no longer Japanese. They transcend Asia. Since they now possess the ideology to lead their own nation, the Japanese families living in Korea should be able to pioneer even China. Long ago, part of China belonged to Korea. I am bringing Adam and Eve into oneness in order to restore God's homeland so that they can lay the foundation upon which to embrace the whole world. That is how history will unfold. A new and great history will commence henceforth. (234-91, 1992.8.4)

On the last occasion I intermarried 2,500 men and women from Japan with men and women from Korea. When they first gathered together, I told them, "From this day onwards, Japanese must marry Koreans, and Koreans must mar-

ry Japanese!" Of the 2,500 Japanese, do you know how many graduated from Tokyo University? Forty-three of them are chief secretaries to assemblymen, and more than ten have graduated from Tokyo University. Most of the others are graduates of intermediate universities, and at least thirty of them are medical doctors. I told them, "Quit everything you are doing and come to Korea!" What do you think of that? (200-122, 1990.2.24)

If you were to compare a Japanese couple with an international couple, which would you say is the higher? You must serve the international couples. It is the same for Mr. Furuta and Mr. Oyamada as well. On whose shoulders lies the most important responsibility of leading Japan in the future? It is in fact the traditional standpoint of heaven to gradually appoint those who have intermarried as the leaders. This is not the case at present, but you should bear in mind that it will happen. The same is true for the United States. This is the first time I have spoken about such things in public. I am telling you because the time is ripe. (217-54, 1991.4.16)

Some time ago, when I set out to hold the Korean-Japanese Blessing, Japanese church leaders, including Mr. Kuboki, did not believe it was possible; however, after a week of prompting the leaders, it finally took place. How many thousands of people were there? Since there were 6,500 couples, it follows that well over 10,000 people were participating. Originally, more than 10,000 people had to come from Japan. Between 8,000 and 9,000 people flocked into Korea within one week; so do you think they had enough airplanes to accommodate them all? Everything was brought to a standstill at one point. I made sure that no one knew what was going on. The Korean Embassy in Japan had to mobilize even the families of their staff, and for three days and nights did nothing but stamp passports. That is how the condition was established for the Japanese and Korean governments to support us. For the 6500 Couples Blessing, the Korean government supported us. (198-373, 1990.2.11)

Christians tend to think of individuals when we talk about the enemy, yet we are not referring to just one person but a whole nation. We must love the nation that is our enemy; as such, I am telling you to love the nation of Japan. When Japanese and Koreans come into contact, don't the sparks start to fly? Do you know that they have intermarried? If ordinary individuals ventured to carry out such intermarriage, it would likely result in nothing but destruction; however, on account of the roots planted through the Blessing, these couples will not divide up nationally, but unite and enter heaven together. Through Korean-Japanese intermarriage, the fortunes of these two nations will begin to take root on earth. (195-222, 1989.11.15)

Section 9. The 30,000 Couples

Last year, 30,000 couples received the Blessing in an international wed-

ding transcending nationality, geography, religion, and politics. Think about it – 30,000 couples mean 60,000 people. It's not a small number, is it? That many people were married, not in the duration of, say, ten days, but in a single day. They did not even come from just one nation.

People of all races – white, black, and yellow – from more than 130 nations across the world participated in that Blessing. Though skin color may differ, our way of life is the same; there is but one. The lifestyle of living for the sake of others is the same for everyone. Though you may lead humble lives, everyone is living for the sake of others and such families will now spread out around the world.

Consider this for a moment: Twenty years from now, people like us will be occupying most of the earth and we will have established one world, one nation. Such a time is coming. (248-183, 1993.8.3)

What day was August 25, 1992? It was the day of the 30,000 Couples Blessing. Before then, it was very difficult for members to receive the Blessing. There were some who passed on to the spirit world after leading lives of celibacy for twenty years without receiving the Blessing. Then what happened at that time? We treated a week as seven years. Whoever acknowledged during the period of one week that he or she had, without a doubt, the body of Satan and believed that the True Parents would convert his or her lineage was blessed. Those are the people who used to belong to Satan. They could not become the owners of their nations as they were; hence, the right of ownership had to revert. (251-259, 1993.10.31)

The 30,000 Couples Blessing represents the crossing of the final crest of indemnity. The 30,000 Couples represent the number three which originates from the three eras of formation, growth, and completion, and the three Ages of the Old, New, and Completed Testaments. Through the three eras and three ages, they can cross over the number six correspondingly. Through them, we are crossing the number six in the dominant realm of the number three. Based on their involvement in World War II, Britain, America, France, Japan, Germany, and Italy must be indemnified. (245-280, 1993.3.7)

You must understand that the 30,000 Couples Blessing should be accepted as one of the greatest and most historic events ever. How great is the historic background behind it? The event involves the whole world. After conducting the 30,000 Couples Blessing, there is no need for me to perform any more Blessing ceremonies. (234-287, 1992.8.27)

This year's 30,000 Couples Blessing holds great significance in that it is being hosted along with the World Culture and Sports Festival, indicating that human society should equally develop both its spiritual and physical aspects.

As we approach the 21st century and a new historic era, this unprecedented joint wedding involving 30,000 couples gathered from 130 nations around

the world transcending nationality and race is a grand project which displays the great cause of peace for all humanity in our efforts to realize world peace through God-centered harmony. (234-237, 1992.8.22)

On this coming August 25, around 30,000 couples from all over the world will receive the holy Blessing and commit themselves to establish a new God-centered family tradition. The family is the basic unit of the nation and society. The resolution of social issues begins with the resolution of family issues. (234-225, 1992.8.20)

The 30,000 Couples are connected to the number three signifying formation, growth, and completion, thus representing wholeness. It is a sanctifying number. Hence, through their Blessing, the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven has been completely opened. (265-176, 1994.11.20)

As Japan, America and Germany are the Abel realm in relation to the True Parents, they can exercise the birthright of the first born. Henceforth, we will hold global blessing ceremonies focusing on Japan, America, and Germany. In 1992, I conducted the global Blessing of the 30,000 Couples. The number three represents perfection and is a heavenly number signifying formation, growth, and completion. The 30,000 Couples Blessing was global. After it, people opposing Unification Church joint weddings turned around 180 degrees.

The 30,000 Couples Blessing created a closely connected international community. Through it, nationality, international borders, race, and culture became meaningless. Until now, when marrying, people could not surmount those barriers, preferring to marry someone of the same nationality with whom they already had a relationship; now, however, all this has completely opened up. We have begun a marriage movement, unprecedented in history, as brothers and sisters, demolishing all barriers separating countries, races, skin colors, religions, and cultures, through international joint weddings. (269-300, 1995.5.1)

After the 3, 33, 72, 120, 430, 777, 1800, 6000, and 6500 come the 30,000 Couples. The number 30,000 is unitary and therefore global. We had to traverse the formation, growth, and completion periods. The 30,000 Couples were in the position of setting out from the Old, New, and Completed Testament Ages. We were then crossing over into the era of global Blessing. (302-130, 1999.6.12)

The Blessing of 1992 was held on August 25, was it not? I matched and blessed the 30,000 Couples within a week. From this viewpoint, when combined with the three great ancestors on an equal basis, the five billion people of the world are all included. I am offering the Blessing equally. Thus, those who have attended the seven-day Blessing workshop can be blessed, and thereby restore through indemnity the wrongdoing of Adam's family with regard to

the conjugal love relationship and enter heaven together. (253-80, 1994.1.7)

When I was blessing the 30,000 Couples on August 25, 1992, I gave their parents who were also in attendance the privilege of being family messiahs, centering on their families as the tribal messiahs. Thereby, the children could recognize their parents as centers. As such, even those who had no understanding of the Divine Principle could also receive the Blessing, as long as they believed in the True Parents; understood what went wrong with their lineage; pledged to convert without fail their lineage, right of ownership, and realm of heart; and became the kinfolk of the True Parents, all within one week. (251-224, 1993.10.17)

From this day forth, you do not need anything else but the true love of the True Parents. The task left for you to fulfill is to connect true life and lineage with true love. All of you must therefore be blessed by the True Parents. This is not a wild fancy. When I announced that I would bless 30,000 couples last year, pastors of established churches all laughed at me, saying "Ha! Ha! Ha! Listen to that dreamer, that half-crazed man!" (245-160, 1993.2.28)

Among the 30,000 Couples, I even blessed those already married who did not know anything about the Divine Principle, as long as they had attended the seven-day workshop. So I raised them to the positions of the Messiah, Adam, and Christ at his Second Advent. That is how we have reached the present situation. (242-205, 1993.1.1)

August 25, 1992 was the day I conducted the 30,000 Couples Blessing. Thereby, the fallen parents were liberated and elevated to the same level as their children, and so all fallen descendants could also attain that level of faith and came to stand on an equal footing. This Blessing represented the formation, growth, and completion periods.

At the 30,000 Couples Blessing, I blessed everyone who attended the week-long workshop and took the vow. The meaning of this is that, since their parents were liberated, the children were also liberated along with them, and so they have been enabled to hold a position of equal value and status. Since this standard can only be practiced and established logically, this is how the True Parents can stand as the sovereign of all families in the world. (249-137, 1993.10.8)

At the 30,000 Couples Blessing held on August 25, 1992, everyone who came was blessed in the same way. As long as they attended a seven-day Divine Principle workshop and pledged that they believed in the True Parents, they were eligible for the Blessing. Since they came from the fallen lineage and were not true children, they entrusted everything absolutely to the True Parents. Since Satan had deprived God of the right of ownership through the Fall, they needed to return everything back to God through the conversion of the lineage, right of ownership and realm of heart,

and pledge to become the children of the True Parents without fail.

It was the 30,000 Couples who accomplished this task. That does not mean, however, that by receiving the Blessing, they were done with the task. They must not forget that they were blessed on the foundation inherited from their elder brothers and sisters under the rules of the Blessed Family. Once you inherit something, you must assume an attitude similar to its testator and maintain, safeguard, and cherish it. Thus, we must inherit the realm of heart similar to our ancestors of old. Unlike in the past, the satanic world has now been liberated. If all brothers and sisters unite, they will have no problem in attaining that state.

I have performed the 30,000 Couples Blessing and from now on blessing 3.6 million couples and even 360 million couples will not be a problem. Even the blessing of 3.6 billion couples can be conducted at the same time in thousands and tens of thousands of places across the world through satellite broadcasting. In that way, the whole of humankind throughout the world can be blessed. As the three great ancestors are now standing in the position of having received the Blessing after having been liberated, they can be connected to their descendants in a parent-child relationship. Hence, they can exchange these positions of vertical relationship through love. We are now living in the era of horizontal equalization of being able to freely shift one's position. Satan cannot obstruct us any longer. (257-205, 1994.3.15)

We are now living in the era when we can bless everyone at once. Therefore, anyone can be blessed after one week of education, corresponding to the number seven. I announced this at the time of the 30,000 Couples Blessing. That does not mean everything is completed within one week. That is like the connection formed in the six hours of incoming tide. Once the water starts to ebb away, it will take six hours of expending all your effort just to stay where you are. Thus, you need to be trained in the traditional teachings of the Unification Church and engrafted, but as long as you have survived and are still with us, there is no need for anything else. This is all logical. It is not a sham. (258-210, 1994.3.17)

Since Adam and Eve married wrongfully, a realm unifying all countries must be established through the Blessing. We are finally conducting weddings in God's name. I personally blessed all couples up to the 30,000. Through horizontal equalization, all the participants in the 30,000 Couples Blessing entered the same privileged realm; for the first time, even those who had only attended a week-long workshop were included in the ceremony as long as they had absolute faith.

God is driving out those on Satan's side, gaining control over the world, and, for the first time ever, laying the foundation extending from the cosmos to the world, nation, race, tribe, and family. By virtue of this, God can finally descend upon the earth, and thereupon, together with the returning Lord, create

the origin of families that will drive out Satan. The global era representing such families is the three-year period from the time of the 30,000 Couples Blessing. (269-11, 1995.4.6)

On August 25 of the year before last, I conducted the 30,000 Couples Blessing. If the time it took us to reach the present stage of Blessing from the beginning can be likened to six hours, be assured that it will not take another six hours to complete the task. From here, it will take only a few minutes. Now all that is needed is for Blessing candidates to attend a week-long workshop; acknowledge the True Parents; and make the resolution to convert their lineage, right of ownership and realm of heart. All they need to do is pledge to accomplish all these things through the Blessing. (259-84, 1994.3.27)

Among the 30,000 Couples, I blessed even those without accomplishments to their credit. The reason for this was so that I could send them as tribal messiahs to liberate their relatives. Their parents opposed the Unification Church until now, as did all their relatives. In fact, the people who opposed the Unification Church most vehemently were the parents of its members. We are liberating those parents who opposed us. (242-104, 1993.1.1)

Intermarriage is the only way Japan can obtain the best circumstances as the owner – the circumstances of joy. How many times have we conducted Korean-Japanese intermarriages? This time was the second one, wasn't it? It was the greatest struggle ever. At the time of the 30,000 Couples Blessing, Japan opposed it most desperately. Satan engaged in a full-scale offensive with the whole of Japan behind him, but I did not even budge an inch. Anyone who came to know the truth of the matter would have been completely won over to our side like the leaves turning red in autumn. They would think, "Wow! A mass wedding – that is so amazing!" NHK (Japan Broadcasting Corporation) broadcast about eighty percent of the ceremony on that occasion. (237-249, 1992.11.17)

The participation of 17,000 couples from Japan in the 30,000 Couples Blessing on August 25th last year caused uproar in Japan, with people claiming that I was going to take over their country, and for a year they pounded me. They tried to beat me to a pulp by mobilizing the mass media, declaring, "The Unification Church will no longer exist by this August. It will be disbanded so completely that in no time at all it will disappear without a trace, like the flowing river!" They did not realize that if that were possible, I would not even have begun my work in the first place. (248-276, 1993.10.3)

We must completely overturn historical traditions. You have your physical grandparents and parents – so who on earth are the True Parents? In spite of this paradoxical logic, all conscientious youths in the world are sticking to it like glue, which is why the 30,000 Cou-

ples Blessing was possible. I matched approximately 3,700 couples per day. In the future, I'll be able to match even 30,000 couples in a day. Such is my mental capacity. No ordinary person could do what I have done; all the more so since this work involves one of the most important aspects of life: love. Indeed, I am no ordinary man. I have something special that others don't. That is why I can be the founder of the Unification Church. (241-121, 1992.12.20)

How many of you here are university graduates? I heard that about ninety people who participated in the 30,000 Couples Blessing are here with us today – raise your hands if you are one of them. All of those with their hands raised are very young, aren't they? Didn't a big row erupt back in Japan because of you? The Japanese police authorities, influenced by right-wing groups, thought that if 30,000 Japanese and Koreans intermarried, Japan would become a nation subordinate to Korea. Furthermore, the older generation all came together to oppose us; they united with the press and persisted in their opposition for four months. (240-108, 1992.12.11)

It was a blow to the so-called great men of Christianity. They received this blow to their heads on August 24 and their heads went "Bang!" Then on the twenty fifth, they saw 30,000 Couples get married together and finally admitted, "None other than the Messiah can accomplish such a feat!" and went back to where they came from with a complete change of mind. (235-191, 1992.9.20)

If I listened to the words of Mother, my children, and you all, I would not have been able to work at all. I have to go ahead, pulling you. You did not know the way to go, but now you know where you are supposed to go, don't you? Anyone would know by now – it is straightforward. From this day forth, there will be no life-and-death struggles nor will you be persecuted. With the 30,000 Couples, everyone's view on the Blessing has been completely revised. I now have 30,000 new sons and 30,000 new daughters: they cannot all be crazy or stupid. Included in them are great scholars and all kinds of talented people; hence, they will not be disregarded. (235-139, 1992.8.29)

Through the 30,000 Couples Blessing, the world has been silenced. Isn't there a rumor going round that I am no ordinary man? Hence, I could proclaim myself as the Messiah. I could accomplish all that I have done because I am the Messiah, the Savior. (240-250, 1992.12.13)

There is only one day in the whole year when the sea level reaches its highest point because of a particular high tide. This phenomenon occurs only once a year; it doesn't last for a few days, but happens on just one day. Similarly, I performed the 30,000 Couples Blessing at the point of highest tide in history. There is only one time when the standard of perfection for the realm of heart in the Garden of Eden can be established, just like the highest tide. If you do not par-

ticipate in this, it may become impossible to find another opportunity. Thus, however fallen people might have been, as long as they attended the seven- or three-day workshop, they were included in the Blessing. (237-247, 1992.11.17)

To the extent that all the 30,000 Couples stood on an equal footing at the time of their Blessing, the True Parents assumed the responsibility of elevating all humankind to a liberated position. Anyone can be included in the Blessing as long as they have attended a seven-day workshop; pledged to convert their lineage, right of ownership and realm of heart; and understood that human beings fell and that through the Blessing, the True Parents can indemnify all of human history and liberate them. (249-248, 1993.10.10)

At this last Blessing of the 30,000 Couples, I directed that even those who attended only a three-day workshop could take part in the ceremony. This was not the rule, but through this small condition, participants were blessed and told to return to their families as tribal messiahs and for three days educate their parents, who had married without God's permission due to the Fall. Thus, by listening to their children, those parents could be blessed and restored to the positions of Adam and Eve. With their children representing Cain and Abel, the parents received the grace of taking part in the Blessing in the position of Adam and Eve, the restored parents. Though they might have done nothing to deserve it, the fact that they have listened to the Word was enough to elevate them to those positions. I cannot bestow such blessings only internally within our church without extending them externally to the satanic world as well. (240-246, 1992.12.13)

No one opposed me when I proclaimed myself as the True Parent and Savior from July 3 to August 24 because, as I explained in terms of what the Lord would be returning to achieve, no one had been able to do what I had accomplished for the world. As such, Christians from the established churches could not gainsay it. Then I held the 30,000 Couples Blessing, which means that 60,000 people were blessed. Before the ceremony, those Christians opposed it in every possible way, claiming it was all a downright lie, but when I actually performed it, they were dumbstruck. Once they had actually seen me conduct the ceremony, all the established churches that had until then been spreading lies about us and opposing us on all sides were silenced for good. (239-274, 1992.12.6)

I can select the right spouses for everyone in the world. I have no difficulty in finding the right spouse for people. I know who is good for whom at a glance. You would not be able to find the right spouses for your children in ten years, but on one occasion I matched fifteen couples in ten seconds. I have the head for it – I know the world inside out and so am able to do this kind of work. You believe me, don't you, since I

blessed 30,000 couples last year? In secular society, there are people who call themselves matchmakers, but I am not one. Marriages are originally meant to be arranged by one's true parents, but because human beings lost their true parents, I must deal with this in the position of the world's parent to engraft everyone; being the only one who knows how to do that, I have no choice but to take care of it myself. (245-241, 1993.3.7)

I matched the 30,000 Couples using their photographs before proceeding to bless them. This is amazing. Such a thing does not exist in the satanic world. It means to stand at the point of being absolutely zero when getting married; that is, those couples stood in the position of having absolute faith. Eve was unable to have absolute love because she fell, but those couples receiving the Blessing crossed national boundaries in seeking the path of love, the like of which can never ever be found in the satanic world. They have shown that they love me absolutely. To indemnify Eve's inability to love God absolutely, they had to stand in the position of loving me absolutely. It must be recognized that they stood in the position of having totally denied themselves. (277-131, 1996.4.7)

Prior to the 30,000 Couples Blessing, Kwak Chung-hwan said, "Thirty thousand couples! That is five times the number of the 6500 Couples. How can we accomplish that?" We had had enough trouble bringing together 6500 Couples. On top of that, I had instructed that these 30,000 couples needed to be ready for the Blessing not in ten but in just three years. When I told him, "You must transcend religion and witness to whoever you can, whether Muslims, Buddhists or Confucians!" he said he couldn't do it. His eyes were like cement. Do you know what I mean by that? Cement eyes are those that look frozen. He said we couldn't do it, but in fact we actually exceeded our goal. (294-151, 1998.6.14)

Kim Il-sung was very interested in the Blessing, and asked "Are you really going to conduct a mass wedding of 30,000 couples?" He could not figure out how we would go about blessing 30,000 couples. I told him, "Thirty thousand couples is nothing." I could tell they were thinking that if I were ever to bless 30,000 couples, they would very much like to see photographs of the ceremony. So I sent photos of the event and they were shown to Kim Jong-il and Kim Il-sung. The photographs of the 30,000 Couples Blessing are not displayed in the Blue House (Office of the President of South Korea), but they are hanging on the office walls of Kim Il-sung and Kim Jong-il. Was I right in doing that or not? As a result, the gates to China and Russia were opened. Now all that remains for me to do is to open the gates to North Korea. (239-42, 1992.11.23)

Kim Il-sung promised me that he would allow the reunion of the dispersed families of all displaced people from North Korea. He promised a North-South interchange. He proposed, "Bring

all the 30,000 couples to the North and we will welcome them with open arms!" It was summer at that time. Do you know the Songdo Beach Resort, where you cross fields of pine trees and sweetbriars to reach a white sandy beach lined by endless rows of pine trees? He said we could put up as many tents as we needed on the white beach and said, "If you want, we will welcome all of the 30,000 couples to North Korea!" It was the government in the South that was opposed to this idea. (273-320, 1995.10.29)

The topic of our conversation moved on to the wedding of the 30,000 Couples and I asked, "Elder Brother Il-sung, would you be willing to open the thirty-eighth parallel if I were to bring the 30,000 Couples to North Korea?" He answered, "Of course, of course! Wow, that is splendid!" He actually invited me to bring the 30,000 Couples to North Korea. So I replied, "But there aren't any hotels here." He then told me, "The Songdo Beach Resort is very famous worldwide and hundreds of thousands of people can be accommodated in the pine fields there. So if you brought one tent for every ten people, you wouldn't have any problem." What he said was true. He said we should bring our own food as well and that he would open the port of Wonsan for us, so that we could bring all we needed by boat. (239-42, 1992.11.23)

I was planning to have the 30,000 Couples visit the Songdo Beach Resort in North Korea, taking with them tents, each for ten people. It was a time when everything could be out in the open. The North Korean government even said, "We will do whatever you want." I also notified the present South Korean government of this plan. Who prevented me from carrying it out? It was our government in the South. Still I did not perish. The bright morning sun dawns on the path that follows the heavenly way, but once you leave that path, you will be enveloped in total darkness. You will be plunged into complete and eternal darkness. (238-266, 1992.11.22)

Kim Il-sung invited all the 30,000 Couples to North Korea. He said, "Rev. Moon, if you want, this is the best chance ever to open the thirty-eighth parallel. We will welcome all the 30,000 Couples!" The people of South Korea did not know of this. Such was the attitude of the North Korean authorities. They said, "We will welcome the 30,000 Couples!" But how would we take them there? Let's say we would use buses, fifty people to a bus, then how many would that be in total? Since there are 30,000 couples, it would mean we would need 1,200 buses. If 1,200 buses carrying fifty people each were to drive to North Korea in single file, how many kilometers would that line stretch, from the first to the last bus? Think about if, if such an incident had actually taken place, would that not have started massive demonstrations for the unification of North and South Korea? However, that is all in the past now. I know very well which people prevented this event from ever taking place. My

sources in the United States informed me about that. I am not a person just passing through. In time, I plan to publish a book, a record of who did what. (238-161, 1992.11.22)

Now everyone has to know about the Unification Church. It has become such a matter of common knowledge that those who are ignorant of it would be considered as having no common sense. It is true. People who haven't heard of the Unification Church would be considered to be good-for-nothings. You will experience this all too well if you go abroad. If they ask you where you are from and you answer, "Korea!" they will automatically ask you, "What is this I hear about the 30,000-Couple wedding?" If you were not present at the ceremony, you should say at the very least, "I saw it on television." If they ask you, "How was it?" you cannot just say, "It was magnificent!" and stop there. When they ask you, "So it was magnificent, but who was there?" you would have to describe to them every aspect of the ceremony, wouldn't you? The same is true for me.

Three days ago, when returning from a banquet held at the Little Angels Performing Arts Center, I was informed that over 400 people had not been matched as yet and that they were gathered at some place waiting for me, even though the wedding was scheduled to take place the following day. So I went straight there and matched them until 4:00 a.m., and as I left the hall, it started to rain in torrents. "If I were to have 30,000 couples standing to attention as I blessed them in such weather, with torrential rain and flashes of lightning, it would truly be a historic event!" As this thought flashed across my mind, I was rather pleased and encouraged. (234-289, 1992.8.27)

Section 10. The 360,000 Couples

Why did I set the number at 360,000 couples? Of all the Blessed Couples in our church, the most central of them all are the 36 Couples. They signify Adam's, Noah's, and Jacob's families, and thus together form the vertical foundation. These three types of couples had to be united. Once they accomplished that, they could make good the number twelve. When you apply the three stages to this number, you arrive at the number 36. In this way, the 36 Couples become the ancestors who represent all previous ancestors in history and all humankind. In terms of the human body, they are like the backbone. We are talking about the vertical standard that is like the backbone of a human body. The cells in the flesh can stay alive only when the flesh is united with the bones.

Human beings were driven out from God's presence because the Fall constituted an act of wrongful marriage. Thus, the 360,000 Couples Blessing is the act of proclaiming the realm of liberation for all humankind in the name of the True Parents with their all-immanence, all-transcendence, supreme authority, and omnipotence. These couples represent the perfected realms of Adam, Noah, and Jacob. You must understand that only the number 360,000 is appropriate

for this Blessing, since this is a number that represents on the horizontal level the perfection of the realms of Adam, Jesus, and Christ at his Second Advent. So the accomplishment of 360,000 couples should not be a problem.

We have entered the era in which I can bless 3.6 million couples and 36 million couples. What comes after this is the 360 million Couple Blessing, is it not? Once I have accomplished all this, God's Kingdom on earth would be right before our very eyes. (269-55, 1995.4.7)

The Israelites failed to establish a pure tradition in building a nation in the seven-year period following the forty years in the wilderness, and this led to a troubled and ruinous history. We, however, should not fail in establishing the tradition, the founding ideology on which we can build the heavenly nation. We have reached the end of our forty-year course, and are entering the next phase: the seven-year course. Within these seven years, we should be united as the citizens fulfilling the founding thought, the ideology of peace and a unified world. In order to do so, the first generation representing Cain and the second generation representing Abel should unite; however, the first generation failed in this task and there is every possibility that they will fall in the wilderness.

So how can we bring them together? The only way to save the first generation is to bless them as soon as possible, and that is why the 360,000 Couples Blessing will be held. Included in this Blessing will be many already married couples and, in this way, we will form a connection with them. Those who opposed the Unification Church can be said to be our enemies. The already married couples participating in the 360,000 Couples Blessing will represent that first generation. That generation is the group of people whose fate it was to decompose into nothingness. They were destined to die and become food for the vultures, but I am going to save them.

You, their children, as the second generation, are the ones who, standing as Abel, will save the first generation. Thus, they must unite with you as their spiritual parents in absolute obedience, absolute faith, and absolute love. Restoration can take place because such is the standard that we have established. (269-216, 1995.4.23)

After the 30,000 Couples Blessing, those who opposed the Unification Church's joint weddings did a turnabout. Three years later, we will hold the 360,000 Couples Blessing. The number 36 refers to the 36 Couples representing Adam's, Noah's, and Jacob's families and is thus an ancestral number. As such, the 360,000 Couples Blessing will be one representing all ancestors, the backbone of all people in the world; it corresponds to the growth stage on the global level.

What will happen once we have conducted this ceremony? Families in the world today are breaking down, and resolving this issue remains a problem. With the world struggling to solve this problem of family breakdown, the

Unification Church will bring together 360,000 young couples to form new families to live in an ideal manner, and this will lead all disordered families in the world to automatically take great interest in them. This will become a global issue.

Once I bless these 360,000 couples and rumors spread worldwide that it was the best thing that happened to the world, and as a result 36,000 couples from each nation were brought to participate in the Blessing, how many couples would that add up to? There are some countries that want to send 50,000 couples. Think about it. (269-300, 1995.5.1)

August 25, 1995 saw 720,000 people from all over the world, 360,000 couples of young men and women, blessed in marriage in a holy Blessing officiated by God and the True Parents. They were brought together as ideal couples as God originally intended at the time of creation. What this means is that the husbands and wives can finally establish the model of true couples and create ideal families through God's true love. (271-147, 1995.8.27)

With the 360,000 Couples Blessing, the satanic world has finally collapsed, and so we are now living in an era in which we can bless even tens of millions of couples according to the effort you put into it. That is why even if I stop worrying and praying about it, we will accomplish that number. I am certain of this. I am already thinking about the estimates, how many thousands it would be. Therefore, all I can tell you is to fulfill your responsibility! (271-255, 1995.8.28)

The 360,000 Couples Blessing is unprecedented in history. Since the 30,000 Couples Blessing, we have conducted global Blessing ceremonies open to the public. Even the second highest official of a nation took part in that ceremony, in other words, someone of at least ministerial rank. This time, even presidents took part. We must cross the hill that is the whole world. The fact that we conducted the 360,000 Couples Blessing within three years after the 30,000 Couples Blessing signifies that we have fulfilled the number three. This was considered impossible.

You Unification Church members, did you believe that we could actually accomplish this, as you went out and saw the situation in society and made all kinds of excuses for your inaction? The only ones who knew it to be possible and had faith were God and me. Nevertheless, I went ahead with the Blessing because I felt responsible. In this way, we are finally leaving the satanic world. With the 30,000 Couples representing the formation stage of the global level as the foundation, the 360,000 Couples Blessing thus represents the growth stage representing the expansion of the 36 Couples on the global level. In other words, we are scaling the uphill pass of our ancestors' unfulfilled responsibilities. (272-27, 1995.8.30)

The reason I blessed the 360,000 Couples in this year's Blessing is that I have

the responsibility to recover everything that was lost, as I travel around from South America to Alaska as the prince of the pioneers of the wilderness. I must recover all that was lost before I return here. Once everything is recovered, the 360,000 Couples can go over the hill. As God's love is with me, centering on God internally and being responsible myself externally, I can determine to solve this problem. This is how I came to bless 360,000 Couples. (272-31, 1995.8.30)

I am not just a figurehead. I am speaking about this for the first time ever. I have matched countless numbers of people. I'm telling you this because the time has come for me to get out of this. There were rumors that I was a crazy man because I set the numbers of couples in advance. Now the record shows that I have blessed 360,000 couples, and even when others doubt me, crying, "What is up with that man?" you will still have faith in me. I am telling you the truth. I have never spoken about this until now. This is the first time. My hands move without my knowing it; they just move by themselves. No one knows about this. My hands just reach towards the pictures naturally without hesitation. (272-41, 1995.8.30)

You don't know how much I dreaded the coming of August 25, as we shed sweat and blood for the 360,000 Couples Blessing. I was even more nervous than when we held the Washington Monument Rally. The Blessing Ceremony could either help us move on to the next level or, if we failed to secure the required number of couples, ruin the honor and reputation we had built up before heaven. It was a very serious time for me, although you may have slept soundly and gone about your usual business.

Thanks be to God because He loved, protected, and sympathized with me who had lived a lonely and wretched life. We were able to exceed our goal, although no one thought it possible. Going from 30,000 couples to 360,000 couples, the latter is twelve times the number of the former, so the 360,000 Couples could take root twelve times more than the 30,000 Couples. You could hear the sound of the bell to the ends of the earth.

Moreover, we are living in a very dangerous era because of such problems as free sex and AIDS – it is almost as if we have placed our hands in the mouth of a venomous serpent. Women indiscriminately searching for handsome men are at risk to contract AIDS, as are the men searching for beautiful women. Their lives will be bound for hell. There is no sure way to prevent this other than keeping your chastity. (271-214, 1995.8.28)

In 1995, just three years after the Blessing in 1992, I blessed the 360,000 Couples. They were blessed in the same position as the 30,000 Couples, based on the international level. They were placed in the same positions as Cain and Abel. After seven days of studying the words of the Principle, if they made the resolution to attend the True Parents with absolute faith, to love the True Parents

with absolute love, and to walk the path of the Principle with absolute wisdom – not with the cleverness of the satanic world, and not in ignorance, but with the wisdom of the True Parents – then they were eligible to receive the Blessing. If they listened to the words of the Divine Principle for one week and pledged to do that, they could be placed on the same level as others receiving the Blessing. (277-133, 1996.4.7)

When I proclaimed that three years after blessing the 30,000 Couples, I would bless 360,000 Couples, not one person believed that I could actually accomplish this. Not one person believed in me. So was it accomplished or not? There is no one in this world except me who would take on such a mission. Who on earth except me would take on such a daunting challenge? Not even a whole nation would presume to take responsibility for such a task. It was truly a record-breaking event. We climbed to the top, treading on the families in the satanic world. Now that we have successfully blessed the 360,000 Couples, accomplishing the growth stage, we can climb to the top, stepping on the nations of the satanic world. Now all that is left for us to accomplish is the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples. That would mean the beginning of the era of absolute authority. We are entering the era of God's absolute authority over marriage. (275-282, 1996.1.1)

In the 360,000 Couples Blessing, many believers of other religions such as Islam, Buddhism and Confucianism came to receive the Blessing. They have taken all the blessings from Christianity. The Christian cultural sphere, which was destined to be the realm of the royal family of heaven, is now standing last in line. Unless I save them, they will all fall straight into hell. (277-42, 1996.3.24)

Since we have entered the era of the birthright of the first born and the right of the parents, those who do not follow orders issued to them will be ruined. Their ancestors will come down to earth to deal with them. Even the angels will come down to earth to deal with them. If they commit a sin, their ancestors will come down and make them ill, and if they repent and change, make them well. They will order them to join the Unification Church.

At this time, religious leaders across the world will receive such commands from heaven and so they dare not disobey. We are now living in an era when dream-like events will happen, such as the leaders of religious orders receiving the command, "Get blessed, you scoundrels!" Now that we have blessed the 360,000 Couples, reaching 3.6 million couples will not be a problem, will it? In fact, this is more than achievable. It is truly amazing that we are living in an era in which such things are possible. The Unification Church is famous because it can accomplish such feats. How great is this! How proud we should be! How good does that make you feel?! (274-187, 1995.10.29)

The target of finding 360,000 cou-

ples for the Blessing was reached in six months. The religious people in the Third World have led lives of faith at great personal risk. They did not spend their lives patting full stomachs and belching contentedly; instead, they starved, many met their deaths, and many were forced to part from their children, never to meet again. Still, they had complete faith in God, and this faith was the foundation upon which they could continue to endure such lives. I have been able to see this for myself. (273-236, 1995.10.29)

This time we held the wedding of the 360,000 Couples – that makes 720,000 people; how long do you think it would take you to count them all? It would probably take all your life. Did you think finding all these people to bless was humanly possible? Of course not, yet it was accomplished not in three years but six months. You don't know how serious I was at that time. That is why I mobilized the spirit world to Africa. The people here opposed me. The earth is such that when it is dark here, it is light there and vice versa. Since it is evening here, it would be daytime there. God is just and fair. (273-50, 1995.10.21)

At the time of the 360,000 Couples Blessing, people in Japan asserted that we would be unsuccessful in hosting it. So in conjunction with the Christians in Korea, they made thorough preparations to come and kill us off, so to speak, as soon as we had announced the date of the ceremony. In this manner, they made every preparation to wipe us out of existence with the full support of their government.

Yet something unexpected happened totally out of the blue: NHK (Japan Broadcasting Corporation) relayed the whole ceremony on the spot from beginning to end. They broadcast live how and in what way the 360,000 Couples had been brought there and what was happening to them; the 160 or so journalists who had come there to oppose us hung their heads down. NHK had presented the whole ceremony to the public. The journalists had intended to create confusion by publishing articles about the ceremony in a misleading manner, but NHK had taken the initiative. The latter had no choice, either; after all, it is the biggest name in the Japanese media, situated in one of the most advanced nations in the world. If it had failed to broadcast such a historic event, it would have been discredited both at home and abroad. It had to broadcast the whole event in a proper way because if it didn't, it would be regarded as not being good enough on the global level. So the lesser journalists could do nothing but leave. Soon after, former President Bush accompanied the True Mother's speaking tour in Japan and cleared out the rest of the negative media. (272-198, 1995.10.5)

Let us create true and ideal families. God desires for us to establish ideal families. What kind of parents on earth would not want their children to form ideal families? Yet, however much they have desired, they have been unable to accomplish that. It was a dream that

couldn't come true – that could not be realized through political or financial power, diplomatic skills, or military strength. Only the 360,000 Couples Blessing can take us out of that age of longing into a new era. (272-196, 1995.10.5)

If the True Parents had not come to the earth to teach people the fundamentals, those people will have problems when they pass on to the spirit world. Through this teaching being conveyed to every village and town in the world, the spiritual and physical worlds can be completely united. Thus, the 360,000 Couples Blessing held this year was truly great. At the end of the forty-year course, we were able to achieve, along with the liberation of women through the appearance of the True Mother, the 30,000 Couples Blessing. The reason the number of couples was set at 30,000 was in order to establish a new foundation of the Blessing in the world, based on the True Mother standing on the global level and involving Cain and Abel. That ceremony was the formation stage, and so this latter ceremony, the 360,000 Couples Blessing, can be said to be the growth stage. Through it, God is keeping the world in pace with His providence by focusing everyone's attention on the problems of the family.

At the moment, the whole world has become like hell. However much nations may take pride in being advanced, they must bow their heads in shame over the problems of the family. Families have completely broken down to the point that no one can tackle their problems. The situation is so serious that no economic, military, or political power can deal with it. (272-179, 1995.10.5)

The True Mother has accomplished a victorious foundation, thereby liberating women from the position of fallen Eve who could not fulfill her responsibility. Hence, the true women's liberation movement can finally be initiated. Within the next three years, we must proceed with the efforts to restore the nation through the liberation of women.

Since we have entered the era in which we can restore the nation, we are able to hold huge global weddings. Since we reclaimed 360,000 couples from the satanic realm, the satanic world has fallen to pieces. Now the families in the secular world are bound to disintegrate. Once this happens, the Blessed Families will become the mainstream, and everyone will get to know that the family ideal I teach will not only bring liberation to humanity, but also show us the shortest route to world peace; consequently, we will no longer face opposition. From now on, if anyone dares to oppose us, whether royalty or any other dignitary, those around them should shout, "Be quiet, you! Don't you know what Rev. Moon has achieved? Don't you know that he has brought together young men and women from around the world and married them in the 360,000 Couples Blessing? What have you done that is so great that you dare oppose him? Cut it out!" Now the time has come for you to go back to your hometowns and to sit on your parents until they bow down to you

in submission. In other words, the time has come for us to restore the rights of the parents. Do you understand? (272-50, 1995.8.30)

God has taken hold of me and cannot let me go because I have practiced everything inside and out. I did not preach before practicing, but I practice before asking others to do the same. This was also the case with the 360,000 Couples Blessing. I embarked on this great venture after laying the groundwork for it, so I knew clearly that it would be accomplished. Since I know that we now will be able to accomplish the Blessing of 3.6 million Couples, I have instructed you to start working on it. You will definitely be able to accomplish it if you follow my words with absolute faith. (272-47, 1995.8.30)

Since we succeeded in blessing the 360,000 Couples, we have transcended the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle. You must understand this. Until now, the Unification Church has been in a place where we carried out the daily struggle for the restoration of the birthright of the first born within the realm of indirect dominion. That is why we are talking about world peace and unification. Through the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification, we can – after transcending this indirect dominion – become one in heart with God under His direct dominion. It is where you can also become as one with me. That is why if you hold on to me and become as one with me absolutely, the two realms of dominion will not be separated, but instead will remain united, and you will be able to follow me as victorious sovereigns. You must realize that such is the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification, as seen from the internal religious viewpoint. (272-95, 1995.8.30)

The 360,000 Couples Blessing signifies that we have internally and externally surmounted the level of kingship and nation of the satanic world. Thus, the responsibility of paving the way to heaven has been fulfilled, transcending the nation with dignity, with the victorious supremacy of the position of Eve as a single or married woman. We are now entering the world where we can directly inherit God's lineage under His direct dominion. (272-74, 1995.8.30)

When we were preparing for the 30,000 Couples Blessing, Kwak Chunghwan said that it was impossible, didn't you? You said you weren't sure if we could accomplish it, didn't you? So then when I spoke of blessing 360,000 couples, it was like fortune-telling in dreamland. Do you think a fortune that is told in a dream can ever be right? What I mean is it was something that could not even be imagined. I had nonetheless already announced that we could accomplish the 360,000 Couples. Then God had said, "Okay!" I thereafter set out to do everything necessary to accomplish this task, the answer from God having already been given. So at every moment of every

day, for three years, I had only this view in mind. Night and day, everywhere I went, I prayed and offered devotions centering on this goal. The devotions I offered were not less than the combined devotions of the five billion people in the world. No one knows the extent of it, not even Mother. Only God and I know.

A perfect subject makes a perfect object. It is God's responsibility to perfectly substantiate the faith of the perfect object. What do you think about that? Isn't that brilliant? Everything came to be done according to that faith. So what about the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples that is coming up? Going from 30,000 couples to 360,000 couples was easier than you thought. This will be very easy. There are bound to be many people in the world who cry out for Rev. Moon day and night. Through this Blessing, I opened the way for Mother's parents and mine to be reunited as husband and wife, and all the sins committed by the thousands of generations of ancestors in history were forgiven. (272-117, 1995.8.30)

Until now the Blessed Couples were left to do as they pleased. Since they had not yet reached the summit that is the top of the growth stage, I could not deal with them as the perfected parent. I could not interfere with them. However, that is all in the past now. As we have passed through the forty-year course and have accomplished the 30,000- and 360,000 Couples Blessings, we have gone beyond the formation and growth stages on the global level. This means there is no one in the satanic world who can stop the progress of our church now. We have gone beyond that. Though people opposed on all sides, we have overcome them all. (272-72, 1995.8.30)

The tide comes in after six hours and in between there is a period when the water surface is perfectly flat. This is such a moment and so this coming Blessing will include those who have simply attended a seven-day workshop; made a resolution to restore their lineage, right of ownership and realm of heart; and pledged to become new people by engrafting on to the True Parents. Yet this cannot last forever. It is only for a little while that the water surface can stay level. As we are currently living at such a time, I, with my prerogative, can bless even those who have done nothing to deserve it. (268-191, 1995.4.1)

We reached the formation stage on the global level through the 30,000 Couples Blessing and the growth stage through the 360,000 Couples Blessing. This is the second stage. Since the first ancestors fell while still in the second stage, it is in this stage that we need to bring together the spiritual and physical worlds based on the family. By bringing together my parents and elder brother, I could establish a foundation of a trinity of mother, elder brother, and children. Not only that, in addition, Adam's family and Mother's family could be blessed and the sons and daughters of that family brought together. Only after passing through the three generations in this way can my sons and daughters, as Abel,

be united with your couples as Cain, centering on the True Parents. Thus, at 3:00 a.m., on the day before the Blessing Ceremony of the 360,000 Couples was scheduled to take place, the Blessing of the physical parents of the True Parents needed to be performed. That shows how complicated everything is. A Blessing Ceremony held like this was not the originally intended ideal blessing of Adam and Eve. The right of kingship still remains to be restored. There is no nation that we can call our own! Nevertheless, the satanic world is heading for complete ruin. (272-311, 1995.10.13)

I blessed my mother, Choong-mo nim, and True Mother's mother, Dae-mo nim, and my elder brother, Dae-hyeong nim. It is part of the preparation for blessing those who have passed on to the spirit world. It took place at 3:00 a.m. the day before the 360,000 Couples Blessing was held. You don't realize how complicated it is. By combining all these events and flying high the banner, I am paving the path for there to be no conflict between God and Satan, or between the spiritual and physical worlds. That is the path of restoration through indemnity. (284-167, 1997.4.16)

Section 11. The 3.6 Million Couples

11.1. The Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples brought the era of liberation

Even those who passed away before the True Parents had come can now reach the position of being able to receive the Blessing from them and live as Blessed Couples on the same level as those on earth. The Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples represents such a historic realm of liberation. Through this ceremony, all these couples and their ancestors will come together during this year. (282-189, 1997.3.12)

The Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples is the completion of the formation, growth, and completion stages. By passing through the 30,000 and 360,000 Couples Blessings, we have reached the completion stage. When you explain this in terms of water level, it would be the same as the tide flowing for six hours and ebbing by twelve hours. The water that comes in earlier and the water that comes later would still be at an equal level when the tide eventually goes back out. In fact, if the water that came in later pushed forward and replaced the water that came in first, then the former would be ahead of the latter. Therefore, we can say we have entered the era of equalization. That is why the era we are now living in is one in which deciding who is right and who is wrong cannot be based upon who is in the position of Cain and who is in the position of Abel. Since we have entered the era of equalization, anyone can receive the Blessing without discrimination. Such is the era we are living in at present. All we need to do is reach the 3.6 Million Couples' mark. Then we will have crossed over to the other side completely. (282-181, 1997.3.12)

Now that the world is changing and our time has come, our global motto is: "Being proud of and loving the True Parents means to accomplish the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples." What I mean is that the time for marriage on a global scale has come. After we accomplish the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples, elementary school children will ask their teachers: "Teacher! Between the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples conducted by Rev. Moon of the Unification Church and the private individual weddings like those of our parents, which is true? The Unification Church is trying to make the world one great extended family, transcending all nations, traditions, and cultures, so between that wedding of many couples and our weddings, which is the true one? Should I get married in the Unification Church or just as my parents got married?" Then how should the teacher answer this question? (282-39, 1997.2.16)

You know that the 3.6 million Couples will establish the liberated realm of the Blessing that is open to anyone, don't you? Wouldn't murderers, thieves, and all kinds of crooks be included? The whole place will abound with robbers and cheats. How long would it normally take to make them all repent? They would enter the spirit world carrying the sins of thousands of years on their backs, and even if they repented for those sins for thousands upon thousands of years, they would still not be forgiven. Only through the power of true love can they be forgiven. However strong false love may be, it would disappear automatically in the face of true love. (280-315, 1997.2.13)

Once we have accomplished the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples, the whole world will be united, and what will this united world revolve around? It would be the anchor that can do away with all that has become habitual and defiled under the devil's dominion in the physical world. The rope tied to this anchor is fastened around you and you must hold on tightly so your fallen lifestyle can be pushed away. This anchor cable must never be cut off. You and your families and tribes must hold on together. Our desire to keep this cable intact leads us to bind together all tribes and national messiahs. (280-263, 1997.1.2)

For whom did you witness to 160 families? It was for your own clan. If you are, say, of the Hwang clan, as its ancestor, you must take responsibility for all its families up to this point. Isn't that what being a true parent is all about? The True Parents took responsibility for all families from the time of Adam up until now. As the world became their domain, they transcended the family, nation, and world and liberated everything. The Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples is being performed centering on the value of the liberated world and everything in it. No national, religious, traditional, or cultural barriers can exist in that world. Blessed families standing on the same level were dispatched to all corners of the world, disseminating on a global scale the unfallen original standard for the family God expected of Adam. (284-119, 1997.4.16)

In the Unification Church, being proud of and loving the True Parents means to accomplish the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples; this is not for Korea alone. Anchored in the effort to unify South and North Korea, it involves everything that has to do with unifying the world that is divided culturally between East and West, and economically between North and South. This being the case, what you must understand is that all records should be broken by this Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples in Korea, so that the heavenly fortune can flow freely to North Korea. (282-259, 1997.4.7)

What we call 'family' is such an amazing and fearful thing. Thus, you must never forget that the Family Pledge is in fact a great cosmic declaration. Over the past year, I have emphasized in my speeches the importance of forming families. This is an iron rule. The time when I must perform the Blessing Ceremony for the liberation of the spirit world is coming. I will begin to do that after the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples. We are entering an era when those who have passed on to the spirit world can be called back and united with their spouses in the physical world. In this way, even hell can be liberated. (283-90, 1997.4.8)

There is no other reason for this gathering: I called you here because I decided that you needed to know these things. The families of Adam, Jesus, and Christ at his Second Advent are all structured differently. Jesus was not able to transcend Rome and the global level to save the spirit world. The Unification Church, on the other hand, has succeeded in doing so. Consequently, we can now advocate the era of kingship. After the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples is completed, the people in the spirit world will be blessed. (283-125, 1997.4.8)

After the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples has been accomplished, I will instruct my son Heung-jin and Daemo nim to carry out Blessing ceremonies in the spirit world on behalf of the True Parents. We are now living in an era when those who have been blessed singly in the Unification Church – upon passing on to the spirit world – can seek out their spouses and children to reorganize the family. As the time in which such a thing would become possible was not yet known, I conducted the single Blessings on several occasions in the past. (285-104, 1997.4.21)

November 29 is the day of the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples and is the time when heaven comes into contact with the earth. It is the time when the vertical world meets the horizontal world – that is, to say, when the unfallen Adam and Eve and all humanity in the unfallen state, the entire horizontal world, are waiting for the day of the Blessing. It is the time when Adam and Eve are preparing to fulfill the perfected family in the Garden of Eden. Therefore, Satan cannot oppose even if I brought couples to the Blessing by force. As soon as the ceremony was over, those couples

would be grateful to the True Parents for all of eternity because they would have been established as the representative couples inheriting the value of the universe. (285-205, 1997.5.4)

What will Christ at his Second Advent bring? He is coming as the owner of the lineage rooted in God's love. A new line of descendants will be born from that lineage. Once perfected families are formed in the image of Adam's perfected family, they become the basis for tribal and national perfection. This lineage is now expanding worldwide through the 30,000, 360,000 and 3.6 million Couples.

In this manner, the formation, growth, and completion stages will be accomplished on earth. That is the horizontal expansion. From now on there will be no problems and everything will be straightforward. Everything will be much easier in accomplishing the goal of blessing 3.6 million couples. We are entering the era of God's all-immanence, all-transcendence, supreme authority, and omnipotence. There can be no obstacles in blessing couples centering on true love. Why? It is because the biggest problems in the world at present are juvenile promiscuity and the breakdown of families.

Since God set the standard based upon which He could not intervene in the Garden of Eden, He cannot intervene now. In the Last Days, Satan will try to destroy all families, but eventually all traces of his lineage will dry up. (286-234, 1997.8.11)

We will surpass our goal of blessing 3.6 million couples. The next number in line is 36 million couples. From the Blessing of 30,000 Couples through the 360,000, 3.6 million, 36 million and 360 million Couples, what would come next? It would be 3.6 billion couples. After six Blessing ceremonies, everything would be over. It would not even take that many. Once we have performed the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples, other people getting married will come to understand why we have needed to make so much fuss in holding these global weddings. I know the value of the Blessing; they do not. Through it, a right of infinite value was bequeathed. From now on, everyone is bound to believe what I say. When I said I would bless 360,000 couples, others claimed, "He is one crazy guy. This will be the end of the Unification Church." They said our church would be destroyed then and there, but we did accomplish it. This time I am saying that I will bless 3.6 million couples and they are panicking, saying, "Oh no, everything is ruined now!" Christians in the established churches are all praying together, "Please let the Unification Church fail in achieving their goal so that they can be destroyed. Please do not let them accomplish it in two years!" (285-305, 1997.6.29)

Now that it is August, two-thirds of this year is already over. This year's motto calls for the accomplishment of the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples. In the past, people opposed us on all sides, accusing us of stealing their spouses and

children. By doing so, I blessed the 3, 33, 72, 124, 430, 777, 1800, 6000, and 6500 Couples. The 6500 Couples Blessing was the ninth, the tenth that of the 30,000, the eleventh the 360,000, and the twelfth the 3.6 million Couples. Through the Blessings of the 360,000 and 3.6. million Couples, we are climbing through the stages of formation, growth, and completion. Now we have reached the top. Since we have reached there, the whole world knows about us. At the same time, the biggest issue in the world will become family problems. There is no solution in sight. No power, whether political, economic or religious, can solve this problem. (286-65, 1997.8.6)

In our past daily life we celebrated in the presence of God and the True Parents only on Sundays. With the declaration of Chil Il Jeol (Seven-One Day), the era of God's all-immanence and supreme authority, and the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples, we can free ourselves from the realm of lamentation, in which all the things of creation have been lamenting. We will now be entering the world of the ideal and the age of justification by attendance, where we will be in constant attendance of God and the True Parents every day of the week, from Monday to Sunday, from morning till night, eating, sleeping, and leading our daily lives together with them. We are now in the process of preparing for such a time. (285-297, 1997.6.29)

Externally, the Unification Church may look like it is following in the footsteps of Christianity, but people do not know the history of struggle that we underwent internally to separate ourselves from Satan. In order to bring humanity back to be embraced in God's bosom, we have paved the way of salvation through the eight stages, starting with the individual and the family. The Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples opens the path that everyone in the world can follow in order to achieve this salvation. Then the expansion of the Blessed Couples can occur on a global scale.

The next step for us to take is the Blessing of 36 Million Couples. This will be easy. The most difficult task for us was the accomplishment of the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples. After passing over the hill that marked the forty-year course, we need to find and inherit the lost realms of the Old and New Testaments. Since the rights of the first born, parents and king were lost, we need to pass through the process of restoring them; hence, I must fulfill the responsibility of the first born. (286-70, 1997.8.6)

I view the 30,000 and 360,000 Couples Blessings as uphill tasks. The Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples is the watershed. From now on, our path is an easy one downhill. In descending, we can accelerate and gain momentum down on the opposite slope. The 36 million Couple Blessing can be said to be the counterpart of the 360,000 Couples Blessing, and then after we complete the 360 million Couple Blessing, the mountains that are the families of the satanic world will collapse completely. With the

collapse of these families, the world will become a flatland. As these mountains of fallen families remained standing until now, God has been unable to travel freely between heaven and earth.

The next thing we must overcome is nationalism. Based upon the Family and Tribal Federations, we are entering the era of the National Federation. Our goal is to have twenty four nations join and work together. In entering the global era, through 360 clans, the 3.6 million, 36 million and 360 million Couples will establish God's unified Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world as the horizontally expanded organization of the world. I am saying that we are to completely surmount the twelve peaks of the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth. Do you know how your families can become a part of my family? You can enter God's Kingdom on earth as its citizens only after surmounting these twelve peaks.

Can you even imagine how many peaks of historic anguish we have had to surmount? The Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples represents the twelfth peak. This must be accomplished – there is no other way. The twelve peaks will have been successfully surmounted through the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples. Once we have reached the summit by accomplishing this Blessing, we will go down the opposite side, passing through the stages of formation and growth. Next will be the 36 Million Couples Blessing, followed by that of 360 million Couples and, through this, the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth will be completed. In other words, everything and everyone will be liberated once and for all. Only after accomplishing the 360 Million Couples Blessing can we enter the realm of complete liberation. Then everything worldwide will be complete. (286-247, 1997.8.11)

Once we have crossed the mark that is the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples, we will enter the world of complete liberation. Hence, I have declared this year's motto: "Being proud of and loving the True Parents means to accomplish the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples." Just as I loved God and took pride in Him, once you have set the standard that you have loved and been proud of me by accomplishing the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples, we can enter the world of complete liberation. Even without detailed explanations about the Blessing or where to go to receive it, the whole world will know that our Blessing ideal is the only means of liberating the world and they will have no choice but to listen. That is because the 3.6 Million Couples will continuously go out and convey the truth to others about this. (280-220, 1997.1.1)

Do you think you need 3.6 million couples? You do not. Only when you have restored at least two archangel families and offered them to the family in Adam's position can the traces of the families or children of the satanic world disappear from this world. When this happens, Satan will be obedient forevermore and you will be sepa-

rated from him eternally. Hence, Satan is doing all he can to oppose us; yet he has been restricted in this work since the 30,000 Couples Blessing in 1992. Through that Blessing, we had finally started to climb vertically on the global level. The growth stage was the 360,000 Couples Blessing and the completion or final stage is the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples. Just as the Blessing has been opened 360 degrees to the whole world so that anyone can receive it, then after the successful achievement of the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples, even people in the spirit world can receive it. Until this time, no one has been able to enter heaven; however, because Heung-jin is performing the Blessing on behalf of me, the descendants of the fallen archangel in the spirit world can stand in the position of the younger brother of Adam's family, and in single file follow the True Parents into heaven. This is restoration through indemnity. (280-302, 1997.2.13)

Once we have completed the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples, there will be no need for the Unification Church to hold any more Blessing ceremonies. Religion will disappear from the world. When you think of me, what preaching of mine comes to your mind? What am I trying to say now? It is that religion came into existence in order to discipline the body due to the Fall. Thus, all religions will disappear. What is it that you need to do? You need to form families and a nation through which you can attend God. That is the ideal of creation. (271-230, 1995.8.28)

Now that we are living in the Last Days, God cannot do anything to directly intervene, and Satan finds himself all alone in the world, facing a huge cliff. Satan cannot turn to the right or to the left because I have blocked him on all sides. On top of that, I am snatching his families from right under his nose. The 3.6 million- and Blessing of 360 Million Coupless will completely turn the families of the satanic world upside down. Satan has nowhere to go now. (288-55, 1997.10.31)

My perspective is that I could easily achieve twice the goal that has been set. I see no obstructions standing in my way. After we have accomplished our goal, the whole world will fall backwards in amazement. You must remember that our enemies who pointed at us and laughed at us – prophesying that we would fail to accomplish the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples – are waiting to see if we can actually do it. The lights must never be off. You cannot go to bed undressed. I have long awaited this day. All I'm asking is that you have the same consciousness about this. You must become independent and aware, ready to fight to the bitter end. Understand that you are working on behalf of God in expanding the dominion of the Judge and be fully determined to fulfill your responsibility. (288-39, 1997.10.31)

Until I proclaimed that we had met the goal of 3.6 million couples on July 15th, there was a sense of urgency in my mind. How many candidates were

there from Argentina? Wasn't it only a few hundred? They did not even top 500. So we were in trouble. However, God wrought a miracle. As we entered August, why did I declare the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth? What date was that? It was August 9th. Such a time will come again: I know that the gates to the spirit world will be opened and spirits will descend to earth and unimaginable phenomena will take place in the world – that is why I proclaimed the 'completion of 3.6 million couples' on July 15th. (289-11, 1997.12.30)

11.2. From 3.6 million to 36 million couples

Despite the short preparation period, our original goal of 3.6 million couples from 185 nations was exceeded by 36 million couples, who are all taking part in the quest to build true families transcending skin color and religion. The final count of couples participating in the holy marriage Blessing Ceremony was 39.6 million. The significance and magnitude of the ceremony make us realize that human motivation alone could not bring this about. It is a providential accomplishment which has been achieved with God's will as the driving force behind it. (288-125, 1997.11.26)

Have we reached 36 million couples or not? People claimed that we would not succeed in holding a Blessing for 3.6 million couples, but we have accomplished ten times that number – 36 million couples. In fact, the final count was 39.6 million couples. How wonderful is the Unification Church! Who made it the way it is? I have complete faith that we can bring together 360 million couples in six months. All it will take is six months for us to reach that goal; it is your lack of faith that is standing in the way. Six months from now is all it will take for us to find 360 million couples, and if you had the same frame of mind as I do, you could more than accomplish that goal. I am worried about how many you will actually be able to bring together. (288-101, 1997.11.16)

This is a most important message that I want to convey to all the journalists gathered here as representatives of all journalists in the world. The third World Culture and Sports Festival is presently being hosted in Washington, D.C. Along with it, the International Holy Wedding will take place on November 29 at the RFK Stadium, as well as in many nations across the world. The original number set for the Blessing Ceremony was 3.6 million couples. However, surprisingly, we have exceeded that goal by more than ten times; 39.6 million couples will be taking part in the ceremony. Such a pan-humanitarian festival will be the very foundation for a glorious beginning in encouraging humanity to resolve to defend and promote the value of the family for the sake of the future world. (288-139, 1997.11.26)

I would like to invite all of you to the special event that will take place on Sat-

urday at the RFK Stadium. Amid the blessings from representative leaders of world religions, my wife and I will officiate at the Blessing of 39.6 million couples from 185 nations across the world. We exceeded our original goal of 3.6 million couples by 36 million. Many couples will take part in their own nations. The Blessing Ceremony will be carried out simultaneously worldwide through satellite broadcasting and video, while 30,000 couples representing 185 nations will be present at the stadium. (288-165, 1997.11.27)

Originally, through our achieving the Blessing of 36 Million Couples, everything would be made flat. In order for any water to flow into the sea, it must reach that level first. What type of water flowing into the sea flows in the slowest? The waters of the great rivers are the slowest in flowing into the sea. Does it look like that? It flows in as slowly as possible because river water wants to be absorbed completely by seawater, which is the main body. Everything in nature moves and continues to exist according to the laws of heaven and earth. Then why would we begin to make faster progress after the completion of the Blessing of 36 Million Couples? That is because we have already reached the bottom of the mountain and the terrain has become flat. Since we have surmounted the peaks of formation and growth, in terms of the realm of Satan we have reached the point of surpassing the top of the growth stage. Isn't our next goal 360 million couples? That would be the realm of completion. (288-148, 1997.11.27)

I cannot even say anything to you about this serious matter. If I told you what I know, you would descend to the depths of grief. I have had to reach my present solitary position all by myself. Who believed that we could accomplish 3.6 million couples? Kwak Chung-hwan! He did not believe it. No one believed it. I alone had faith that we could do it. Recreation takes place under the orders of creation issued by God. Ezekiel was able to bring to life thousands of people from the valley of sand; from the valley of dry bones, Ezekiel brought to life an exceedingly great army. You must understand that the Almighty God is with us. (288-161, 1997.11.27)

What can be achieved through the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples is to give holy wine to the children of your womb. Though you have lived as descendants of fallen humankind, you must never forget to set the condition of bequeathing holy wine to your children, as they are the children who have inherited the absolutely pure lineage and are in no way related to the fallen lineage. You must become one with God's nation, pledge your allegiance to Him and with this proclamation give them holy wine. Thus reborn, the children of your womb are not Satan's. (289-63, 1997.12.30)

Is there a contest anywhere in the world that is completed in a single round? Yes, it is the one we just took part in and we have already beaten the opposition. Since we have already achieved victory, it follows that all your families

have been victorious as well. The same is true for Korea. Even the North Koreans were mystified when I said that we would perform the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples. They asked quite plainly, "That is a lie, isn't it? Isn't it a lie?" We had already accomplished it and yet they refused to believe that it was not a lie. If I were to tell them that this time, I have blessed 72 million people, wouldn't they fall over backwards in amazement? What would happen if they fell backwards? Once I save them from a bad fall, they will have to listen to me. Such a time has come at last. (288-225, 1997.11.28)

After the ideal of love is fully restored, it must be inherited. The 30,000 Couples Blessing was held for that purpose. These are the twelve peaks of the Blessing. As you well know, on the global level, the 30,000 Couples Blessing is the formation, the 360,000 the growth, and the 3.6 million the completion stage. Thus, this year our goal is to accomplish the 360 million Couple Blessing, and in order to make it happen, heaven at the moment is working very hard. Blessings are falling like showers from heaven.

On the day we are victorious in the Blessing of 360 Million Couples, the unified world of the realm of heart will emerge on earth, encompassing the whole world, and the families who live in this realm of heart will be like Adam's perfected family; they will live in God's Kingdom on earth and when they pass on, they will enter His kingdom in the spirit world. In such a manner, the gates to heaven will be opened. (288-328, 1998.1.1)

I also needed to surmount twelve peaks after crossing over ten at first. The Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples is the twelfth peak. We must surmount them all. In the song 'Arirang', the word 'arirang' is a composite of 'Ae,' meaning love, 'Ri,' meaning village, and 'Ryeong' meaning hill. I understand that the word signifies the search for the village you love. In the song, the lyrics go on to say, "If you leave me, you won't have gone ten ri (about 2.5 miles) before you become footsore." That song also mentions the twelve peaks of arirang. At present, I am undergoing all manner of hardship to cross over the twelfth peaks. After this is accomplished, everything will be equalized, and we will all be able to go anywhere we wish. (289-263, 1998.1.21)

The Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples is the last of twelve ceremonies to take place. It takes twelve months for the earth to revolve 360 degrees around the sun. Centering on the number twelve, by connecting to the 3.6 million Couples, all days and events taking place on earth can follow the Blessing of heaven. There is no way to stop this. I am telling you that it is the era of the Blessing and worldwide liberation. This is providential. (280-269, 1997.1.2)

The providence of restoration traversed the twelve peaks. Thus, in order to surmount the global peak, we need to overcome the twelve peaks up to the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples. After we have surmounted all these peaks, we would arrive at the original homeland.

We would then be in a beautiful world overflowing with gold – the spring garden of God's love. (284-260, 1997.4.18)

Section 12. The 360 Million Couples

Adam's was the representative family – formed by the union of God and true parents – that would have embraced the universe; had Adam not fallen, being blessed by him would have been a universal blessing. Yet due to the Fall, they were separated, and so families in the world today cannot enter the realm of grace of this great blessing. In order to restore that which was lost in Adam's family through the Fall, I will bless 360 million couples standing in the equalized position in the realm of families worldwide. (287-142, 1997.9.14)

After the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples, it will be a downhill ride – descent is easy. That will be the 36 million Couples: the growth stage. What follows is the Blessing of 360 Million Couples; by then we would reach level terrain at the bottom of the hill. Descending there, we can return to the state of Adam's family before the Fall. By achieving this, we are entering the age when parents will bless their children. From this point on, you can perform the preliminary Blessing ceremonies yourselves. Recognized as John the Baptist families, you will be able to do that in the name of the True Parents. (287-144, 1997.9.14)

Three hundred and sixty million couples! To think that we will soon have blessed 360 million couples! You cannot deny that God is with us in this task. If I were to explain this in detail, I would have to go into the secrets of the New and Old Testaments and all the historical theological systems. Once you heard those things, your ears would be opened and you would develop an insight into the providential future. Then there would be no one on earth who could stop you from walking your providential path. Do you want this insight or not? These secrets are such that you would want to see them with your own eyes even if you had heard them, and once you had seen them you would want to listen to the words again and again, whether in person or not. To gain this knowledge you should not go a single day without hearing my words. (287-201, 1997.10.30)

What would happen after the Blessing of 36 Million Couples is accomplished and the next goal of 360 million couples comes in sight? Since that is the number of couples, that would mean there would be 720 million individuals involved in the Blessing. If each of them brought four members from their family, then four times seven is twenty-eight, and the total number brought by them would be 2.8 billion. Some would bring even more than four people. Are there only four family members per household in the East? There are some families with between five and ten members in them. That would result in more than three billion people coming over to God's side, which is more than half

the world population. The era has come when, if you were to weigh the two sides with a scale, our side would be the heavier. (288-18, 1997.10.31)

There were twelve peaks to surmount – passing through formation, growth, and completion stages – before going on to fulfill the goal of the Blessing of 360 Million Couples. We did not stop there, however. Instead of blessing only 3.6 million couples, we completed the 40 Million Couples Blessing and as a result our path from then on came to be on an equalized level. That is how the goal for the Blessing became 400 million couples. The Blessing of 360 Million Couples is one of equalization. It allows everyone to have an equal opportunity to receive the Blessing. More than half of the world's families will be involved in it. (302-132, 1999.6.12)

Now that the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth has been proclaimed, God can come on earth. Thus, now is the time for a great worldwide Blessing to take place, through which all the foundations of families and tribes can be connected. By blessing the 3.6 million, 36 million and 360 million Couples, Satan's bloodline manifested in all humankind must be cut off. Not one person having that bloodline should be left out. This lineage must be completely converted. (288-64, 1997.10.31)

By completing the Blessing of 360 Million Couples, we will enter the realm where God can have direct dominion over us, and thus be able to pass through the eras of restoration of the rights of the first born and of the parents and move into the era of restoration of God's kingship. (289-215, 1998.1.2)

Once the Blessing of 360 Million Couples is under way, we will enter the era of the realm of the fourth Adam, in which there will be no need for indemnification. Thus, we will enter the era in which the parents can bless their children in Eden on behalf of God. In this way, the direct pathway leading to heaven can be paved, along which blessed members can lead the relatives they have blessed and reach all humankind. (290-29, 1998.2.2)

Once the Blessing of 360 Million Couples is complete, I will no longer conduct any more Blessing ceremonies. From that time on, parents will bless their own children. This will be known as the era of the liberation of the realm of the fourth Adam. There will be no indemnity. In the first and second realms respectively, Adam failed in the Old Testament and New Testament Ages. Even in the Completed Testament Age, we have been persecuted. On entering the era of the liberated realm of the fourth Adam, however, the world will become the one originally envisaged before the Fall. That realm of Adam refers to the whole universe, in which people will form families wherein unfallen parents standing in the position of true parents bless their children, bequeathing the ideal of the family and

all internal and external ideals created by God. Thus, the world cannot help but become one. (290-167, 1998.2.18)

With the fulfillment of the Blessing of 360 Million Couples, all barriers will collapse. Barriers for individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations, the world, and cosmos in the satanic realm, as well as the walls in the realm of God's heart, will all be broken down. (292-54, 1998.3.28)

Blessing 360 million couples will demolish the walls that block out the free environment of God's Kingdom on earth, clearing away all barriers for individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations, the world. We are doing this. Make sure that you are going the way you should. (294-220, 1998.7.19)

Blessing 360 million couples on earth would mark the beginning of the Blessing in the spirit world. In this manner, Satan's lineage would be eradicated – that is to say, the era in which Satan can accuse us will have passed, and the era of the all-immanence, all-transcendence, supreme authority, and omnipotence of the True Parents is coming, in which they can exercise their full powers. The era of privilege in which God created and took delight in Adam and Eve, telling them, "It is good! All things will be called according to the names you give them!" is coming once again. (293-90, 1998.5.24)

We are going to bless 360 million couples. Since failure occurred within the couple, it is through couples that we need to reverse that failure. These 360 million couples transcend all humankind, history and the providence. This is the final task; through it we can completely eradicate Satan's lineage. Let us liquidate it completely. (294-208, 1998.7.19)

I did not declare the restoration of the right of kingship so that I could unite the free democratic world and become its sole king. Though a king, I have given up the global nation. God does not have His own nation. How then can I have my global nation? What God desires is the king of all families. He is looking for the family king. The family king! He must emerge. For that to happen, Satan's lineage must be denied through blessing 360 million couples worldwide. I am the representative who has Blessed Couples in marriage. What sort of representative am I? Since I am representing kingship, I am the family king. If I were to proclaim to the world right here and now that I am the family king, there is not one person in the world who could contradict me. (295-87, 1998.8.17)

What is this year's motto? "Being proud of and loving the True God absolutely means accomplishing the Blessing of 360 Million Couples and rooting out the lineage of the satanic world." What should we do after blessing 360 million couples? Who should be the first to be blessed by God in the Garden of Eden? It will not be the elderly, the middle-aged or young adults, but rather adolescents. Until now, many elderly and middle-aged people and young adults have

been blessed; now the time has come for us to focus on the adolescents. (296-66, 1998.10.14)

The whole world is to accomplish the Blessing of 360 Million Couples and root out the lineage of the satanic world. This is the end. There will be no more after this. For this reason, the gates to hell and heaven are being thrown wide open. Those who were our enemies in the past will attend the True Parents and hold welcoming banquets for them. The True Parents had not been welcomed by families, tribes, races, nations, and the world. Therefore, in the first banquet held on the cosmic level, the people who until that time were enemies will enter the heavenly way according to God's laws and, from that point on, move toward His kingdom on earth. (296-298, 1998.11.18)

Gathered here are couples from all the Blessings ranging from the 36 to the recent first phase of the 360 million. While being educated together for forty days, what should they be doing? The elder couples should set an example to the new members. That is why the elder members have been asked to share their testimonies. Both husbands and wives are to do this with regard to their marital life and experiences. They must report truthfully about all their physical and spiritual concerns. That is family education on the fundamental level. Wrongdoings must be uprooted and exposed. You cannot enter heaven if you hide your wrongdoings. (297-282, 1998.12.22)

We are talking about the cosmic expansion of the Blessing – where should it be held first: in the spiritual or physical world? Didn't Eve make love with the archangel first? We must hasten to liberate the spirit world. The era of the Blessing of 360 Million Couples signifies the transition from the global level into relating with the spirit world, making it possible for spirit people to be brought to and blessed at the boundary between the two worlds. Among the people blessed in this last ceremony, were there Mafiosi or not? Were murderers included? How about yakuza or gangsters? All kinds of people were included in that Blessing. (301-160, 1999.4.25)

The Blessing of 360 Million Couples signifies that we have surpassed the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle. We are now in the global era. Spring is upon us, the season of revival. I have brought you here in order to bless you. So what should you do in return? You should become the leaders who can reign over the devil. (297-298, 1998.12.22)

Unification Church members are to offer three-tenths, not tithes. Through this tradition, everyone should offer their assets, nations, and land by connecting to the offering based on the number three. The Old Testament Age is the era of material things, the New Testament Age that of children, the Completed Testament Age of parents, and what comes next is the age of liberation. The age of liberation from anguish signifies enter-

ing God's era. In that process, the right of ownership must revert to God.

The Communist party completely reversed that through brute force, using knives and guns. We don't do that. The tradition of the Unification Family is to harbor gratitude towards the absolute sovereignty of God's Love-ism forever and ever, and to be tens of times more grateful in your hearts with gratitude not forced by guns or knives but coming from your hearts voluntarily. From now on, all Blessed Families from the 36 to the 360 Million Couples should inherit this tradition, and bequeath God's Kingdom of the ideal of love to their descendants. This is the final responsibility the Unification Church should accomplish. (302-23, 1999.5.14)

Beloved Heavenly Father, on this day, February 7, 1999, the Blessing of 360 Million Couples ceremony that is being closely watched by heaven and earth is being held. All humanity on earth and all Blessed Families in the spirit world are represented here, for this is the new day of the liberation of heaven and earth when we go beyond the restoration of the right of the first born, the right of the parents, and right of kingship. This is the moment when we have reached a transition point in world history in which we can fulfill Your will and Your wishes to establish a united world of the sovereignty of true love, the Parents of Heaven and Earth and the God of the original ideal of creation.

To restore the spiritual and physical worlds under Satan's dominion and inhabited by humankind which inherited evil love, life, and lineage from the evil ancestors in Eden, then You, together in heart with humankind and the spirit world, passed through the Old, New, and Completed Testament Ages.

In the Old Testament Age, Adam's family failed to keep the covenant to inherit the lineage giving rise to a parent-child relationship with You, losing it instead through the Fall.

They would have established that relationship with You in the place where they could inherit Your love, life, and lineage; yet it was in that very place that the sin of our first ancestors bound them in blood ties with Satan as their false parent, thereby giving rise to the sorrowful history that began with Adam's family inheriting satanic love, life, and lineage from Satan as his children and thus becoming his family. This, in turn, created the environment of conflict between mind and body, husband and wife, parents and children, and between siblings, resulting in Cain's murder of Abel in that first family. Consequently, all of humanity is divided at the levels of the family, tribe, race, and nation, and even the world with the democratic and communist worlds pitted against each other. Amid the confusion of the Last Days, it was Your will to establish the Unification Church in order to usher in the Completed Testament Age because it had not been possible to completely fulfill Your will in the Old Testament Age or establish Your ideal kingship in the New Testament Age. Upon the foundations laid in those two ages, the True Parents

were to come to earth and complete all that was incomplete both on earth and in the spirit world, and form relationships based on their true love, life, and lineage on earth in the name of the God of liberation. It was Your will to completely clear the field of wild olive trees that is the fallen world and to engraft them to the true olive tree, thereby forming a connection as Your kinfolk, and, by so doing, restore Your family. Upholding Your will, the Unification Church has continued its work in performing global weddings in the name of the True Parents in order to allow all people of the world to indemnify the wrongful marriages of history and become one great family of brothers and sisters.

We have walked the path of persecution in the process of our work until now, but through carrying out these things under Your guidance and protection, we have been able to overcome all the situations and people who have opposed us – from individuals to families, tribes, people, nations, the world, and cosmos, even up to the realm of Satan and hell. As we have inherited Your lineage through Your true love, You protected us just as parents protect their children so that the Unification Church was able to overcome during its difficult course all the hardships and persecution coming from the fallen world and was able to surmount individual, family tribal, racial, national, global, and cosmic peaks. Now we are able to hold, in the name of the True Parents, the Blessing Ceremony of 360 million Couples representing all humankind, and are graced to celebrate with heaven and earth the liberation that transcends religion, race, culture, and nationality. For this great occasion of the Blessing, we are truly, truly, truly grateful.

In the spirit world, there are Blessing groups of fifteen billion and fifty billion parents, brothers and sisters following on from a first group of twenty billion spirit people. Here on earth, the 360 million couples – in fact more than 400 million couples – who are being blessed in today's ceremony number more than 800 million individuals. Based on an average of four family members per household, the total number of family members related to these newly Blessed Couples must be over three billion. All Blessed Couples in both the spiritual and physical worlds should strive to resolve the ongoing problems of juvenile promiscuity and family breakdown in order to save this chaotic world and straighten out the confused history of humanity.

Through this ceremony, the environmental conditions necessary for all humankind to be able to participate in the Blessing have been created, and all people connected to the mainstream ideal can now belong to You through attending it. This amazing and incredible miracle has been wrought, not just by the work of the Unification Church but also by the joint efforts of Yourself and the spirit world. Therefore, I hope and pray that You can forever hold the victorious dominion and sovereignty of eternal love and glory gained from this ceremony, and establish the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world

through the liberation achieved by this Blessing. All humankind connected to the 360 Million Couples can now unite in heart and strive to achieve the unity of mind and body, husband and wife, and within the tribe, race, nation, world, and cosmos. These couples have been established as the nucleus representing the True Parents on earth and the family in the garden of Your love. They have been blessed in order to complete the Kingdom of Heaven on earth with the sovereignty of the love central to the ideal of creation, which has been Your eternal dream.

I stand before them on this occasion which You have long desired, and bless them to become Your children who from this moment can inherit Your will to build Your kingdom on earth and in heaven as true individuals by uniting mind and body, husband and wife, parents and children, and with their siblings in the blessed world. Please be with them and bless them as they march forward to the place of victory and glory. I pronounce my benediction upon the 360 million Couples in the name of the True Parents! Amen! Amen! Amen! (299-109, 1999.2.7)

Section 13. The Already Married Couples

The already married couples are those who had married without God's permission. On the victorious foundation achieved by the True Parents, these couples stand in the position of Adam's couple of having formed the relationship of love at their own discretion without having fallen, that is, of having fulfilled love voluntarily. Thus, all youths who are of the same age as Adam and Eve at the time of their Fall will belong to God's side. Even fallen couples can attain a position similar to that of other Blessed Couples who are the direct descendants of the true Adam. Since these couples stem from a different lineage, they must be engrafted as couples. (242-102, 1993.1.1)

The Blessing does not exist for you to be saved on your own. Its purpose is to save your family. Since the family of the Messiah, the True Parents, has become the center of such salvation, you must be able to carry on their tradition just as it has been from the past to the present and the future.

Bear in mind that I have blessed you in the hope that you will become our perfect representatives. The Blessing is carried out at the place where you, representing past, present, and future, have united with us, which is why I allowed you to hold the preliminary Blessing ceremonies. Only when I perform the Blessing with such thoughts in my mind can the relationship of salvation be formed for descendants of the people receiving the Blessing and for those in the spirit world.

Are you not people of the Completed Testament Age? You are Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden created by God. Have this concept in your mind that you are warriors who can fight and defeat Satan, and bring the families in the satanic world over to God's side on the

final battlefield of this global war. Since this is the formula that the True Parents are working with, things are turning out according to it, as in mass production, in that these new families are becoming the seed on their behalf, taking root, growing, and thriving anywhere they are planted. (294-220, 1998.7.19)

From now on, the Unification Church should bless Cain: this is the time to bless the already married couples – they must receive the Blessing; otherwise, they cannot go to heaven. Our first ancestors fell through wrongful marriage under the auspices of the false parent's false love, life, and lineage and doomed them to hell. Thus, to reverse that, the True Parents must come and marry them in the rightful way. That is what the Blessing is all about. It is not Korean, but rather cosmic and transracial. (274-285, 1995.11.3)

In terms of couples, there are the fallen couples in the world, the already married couples blessed in the Unification Church, and the Blessed Couples of the Unification Church. Stemming from the fallen lineage, they all have their roots on Satan's side. They came to us through searching for the truth. The second-generation Blessed Couples, however, have God and the True Parents as their roots. You must never forget this. This is the heavenly principle. You must understand clearly that you cannot enter into the presence of God if you are not standing on the victorious foundation that is consistent with this principle. (145-349, 1986.6.1)

None of you are qualified to receive the Blessing, but if you stand in Cain's position with the standard of heart surpassing those of Adam, Noah, or Abraham, you can triumph over Satan's accusations.

Externally, you are standing in the position that God has no choice but to hate, but even then you must be able to earn His love. The True Parents were able to restore Adam and Eve's standard through indemnity. The wife must serve her husband from the positions of God's wife, his wife, and his child; then, she can stand in a position similar to that of his mother. In order to achieve all this, she needs to pay indemnity twofold.

Only as you strive for individual perfection while establishing your family can it shield you, enabling you to achieve that goal. Likewise, if a family strives for perfection while establishing its tribe as its fence, it can establish a strong basis for that. The same holds true for the processes of perfecting the tribe, race, nation, and world.

At the Blessing ceremonies, twenty-four people comprising twelve pairs of groomsmen and bridesmaids are positioned to form an entryway signifying formation, growth, and completion. They represent the number three and Jesus' twelve apostles.

After walking seven steps, the Blessing participants need to make three bows, signifying that they have passed through the formation stage. This symbolizes the course of history from the time of Adam until now.

Originally, Sung-jin was supposed to

be blessed first before the other Blessed Couples, including Eu Hyo-won, could be married.

Groomsmen and bridesmaids are included in order to establish the spiritual standard of the twelve tribes and the twenty-four elders. By bowing, the participants fulfill the necessary indemnity condition. The True Parents sprinkle holy water during the Blessing Ceremony to set the condition that you have been restored through indemnity and that you have gone beyond the foundation prepared by the ancestors in the spirit world. The holy wine ceremony sets the condition that you have been reborn through three providential mothers. Contained in the holy wine is the blood of indemnification. By drinking it, you are cleansed internally, and by wiping yourself with the holy handkerchief, you are cleansed externally. (19-268, 1968.2.20)

On the first day of September 1991, I proclaimed tribal messiahship and ordered members to return to their hometowns. Those who do not return to their hometowns cannot achieve the desires of their ancestors in the spirit world. The historic desire of the ancestors is for tribal messiahs to appear on earth and connect with the will of the True Parents who come in the Last Days. This is the longstanding wish that has been harbored by the ancestors in the spirit world until the present time. Their greatest wish is to form a blood relationship with the True Parents as their begotten children.

That is why the Unification Church is carrying out Blessing ceremonies. Everyone – even already married couples – is being blessed. Among those blessed, already married couples are people who married without God's permission. Then there are others who have had love relationships but failed to get married. In the free world of today, all those who did not form families must be saved. All already married couples must be saved, as well as all who have gone the wrong way through unfulfilled love relationships. After that, virgin men and women representing begotten children must be saved.

It was the 36 Couples who paved the way to make it possible to open the gates of the Blessing for everyone. Among them, there are three types of couples: Adam couples, Noah couples, and Jacob couples. Of these types, the Adam couples refer to the already married couples. Originally, Christ at his Second Advent, the coming True Parents, had nothing to do with already married couples. However, through the foundations that have been laid, already married couples can be regarded as having been born of Adam's body before the Fall, and the Lord who comes to perfect Adam cannot give up what was born of Adam's body. (242-102, 1993.1.1)

There is a problem with the already married couples: if they were to go to the spirit world, they would see that they are different from other Blessed Couples. In the spirit world, the Blessing received by single virgin men and women is very dif-

ferent from that of already married couples. There are three levels in the spirit world, just as today's society is divided into upper, middle, and lower classes. Among the 36 Couples divided into of three groups of twelve respectively representing Adam's, Noah's, and Jacob's families, which group is the most precious? It is the third. In the future, you will have to serve them. At the moment we are not distinguishing them from each other because the time to do so has not yet come, but that does not mean they are the same. They are very different. (30-189, 1970.3.22)

The world today is made up of people who have formed families and those who have not. When you look at the Unification Church, you can also see that it comprises Blessed Couples who were already married and those who were not. We must pave the way by which we can absorb all these different types of couples.

Among your tribes there may be already married couples, there may be those who had some relationships or were engaged but never got married, and there may also be single virgin men and women. We need to indemnify the vertical past history horizontally in the present time by bringing all these peoples together. We need to stand in the position of being united within three living generations. The first-born son in the third generation – that is the grandson who is standing at the completion stage – needs to offer a sacrifice on behalf of others in a ceremony of atonement for their sins. Otherwise they cannot be united together.

Thus, you need to become tribal messiahs. You have no idea how grateful the already married couples are to be called tribal messiahs. Nothing can be done without them. Therefore, all of you should bring up your children and do all it takes to have them receive the Blessing. Then your grandchildren will be in a perfected position before God. Through these third-generation children, you need to ask God to forgive your ancestors.

Furthermore, three generations of ancestors must be liberated. This is the reason for the offering of sacrificial rites to them. From there they can form a relationship with God. This is the view of the Principle. Once you are familiar with all these factors, you cannot just go on living the way you did before you knew these things. You need to fulfill the mission of tribal messiahs. You must understand that the already married couples hold the great responsibility to fulfill such a dual mission. (31-282, 1970.6.4)

The already married couples, the newly Blessed Couples, and my family need to come together to restore our homeland. Only when the nation is restored can Jesus' desire be fulfilled. If Jesus' heart is not freed from all his pain over the failure of the chosen nation, the grief of God cannot be eased. If the grief of the Son is not eased, can the grief of the Father be eased? The grief of the Son must be eased first. Jesus came as God's

Son on the global level based on the chosen nation, but his heart was filled with grief, and so we must first ease his grieving heart. (58-196, 1972.6.11)

If you already married couples cannot outperform those who were blessed while still single, you will not be able to uphold the dignity of already married Blessed Couples. Was there such a thing as the Blessing of already married couples in the Garden of Eden or within God's will? In order to save you, I have opened the gates through which everything ragged and false can be patched up. This became possible through the inclusion of already married couples in the 36 Couples Blessing. That is the only reason you can go on living within the Will. (101-286, 1978.11.7)

What is the biggest source of trouble in a family? Actions that disrupt the love between mother and father bring trouble to that family. That is the enemy of our church. Therefore, the already married couples gathered here must confess to their children the whole truth about themselves. You need to lay a deeply rooted family foundation by practicing the family morals, the morals of love. (120-184, 1982.10.15)

The parents who are already married couples cannot stand in the position of being an object to the Coming Lord, whether they are the president of the United States or Christian leaders. This is because they are already married. There is no logical basis to marry before the Advent of the True Parents. They need to connect with the True Parents through their virgin sons and daughters. The wealth in the possession of those parents belongs to Satan's side. It all belongs to the satanic world. The parents and even their children are all held in the satanic world. (145-21, 1986.4.30)

Of the 36 Couples, the Adam couples were already married couples, the Noah couples were engaged but not married, and the Jacob couples were virgin men and women. Noah's family did not fulfill the Will. When you look at the people in the world today you see that there are already married couples, those who are in informal relationships or are engaged, and the completely pure single men and women. From this time on, the foremost kind of people that True Parents should be seeking for are not the Adam couples but the true sons and daughters, in other words, pure single men and women. (242-104, 1993.1.1)

The 120 followers of Jesus represent the number twelve. The 124 Couples were blessed in order to organize and establish a model of tribal and national leadership worldwide. In actuality, 124 couples were blessed, four being extra. These four were already married couples. Why were they included in the Blessing? Had they not, there would have been no way to save other already married couples from that time on This number four represents gates facing the four cardinal directions of north, south, east, and west. Based on the four cou-

ples, therefore, the way must be opened through which all already married couples can be resurrected. Hence, I blessed 124 couples. (158-170, 1967.12.27)

Originally, I was not meant to bless couples who were already married. In the course of restoration, there was no need for Adam- and Noah-type couples made up of people who were already married in their thirties. On the contrary, I was only to have blessed Jacob-type couples as my sons and daughters, who would then save their own parents.

For the Blessing of 400 million Couples, based on the number four at the hundred million levels, you must restore your physical parents. You must take them even forcefully. The traditional foundations of formation, growth, and completion that we should restore are already married couples, the Noah couples, and the Jacob couples. Since we are living in the era of fallen history, Abel families stand on behalf of heaven and earth in the newly created realm of the chosen people, and so they should go and bring already married couples to God's side, forcefully if necessary. (299-224, 1999.2.17)

God is fair. At present, there are many people who are just superficially connected to the Unification Church. I told everyone who is supportive towards the Church to receive the Blessing. At this time, blessed members will be responsible to bless their own parents. That is because they are closest to them. The parents can thus be blessed even if they are not very familiar with the Principle. We are now living in the era where even such people can receive the Blessing. This will be the final one. The era in which I bless already married couples is passing. From the next Blessing, the tribal messiahs should bless them. (233-351, 1992.8.2)

The universal belief of people in the established churches today is that salvation comes only in the form of individual salvation. They believe that if they as individuals have complete faith, they will go to heaven. When you consider God's original ideal, however, you can easily discern that no one can go to heaven alone. It is a place where loving husbands and wives, and loving families should be together. (143-234, 1986.3.19)

Section 14. The Single Blessing

Man is God's masculine and woman His feminine external form. A couple is like the universe enfolded in a wrapping cloth; they thus can feel the heart of God's ideal love. The Blessing is the most precious thing in all of heaven and earth. At the same time, it is extremely fearsome. If spouses think about someone else other than their partner, they are violating each other. They must become have a parental heart to each other and cause people to say, "I wish my family were like yours." (13-67, 1963.10.17)

In the beginning, God first created all things and then Adam and Eve as their center and the substantial beings of glory, wishing for the coming of the

joyful day of their victorious blessing. Yet as His will was not fulfilled due to their fall, we who live in the world today should do our utmost to fulfill that day of hope within our own generation. We should hold high the glory of that victory and – whether as individuals or couples – praise God before heaven and earth. You should realize how blessed you are to be able to be a part of such a gloriously unique occasion. (30-170, 1970.3.22)

The history of religion progressed from the Old Testament Age of the servant to that of the adopted son at the coming of Jesus. Since the history that has unfolded through religion until the present day has been one of restoration, the realms of the servant and adopted son were restored.

Viewed globally, religions other than Christianity undertook the work of restoring the realm of the servant, whereas Christianity restored the realm of the adopted son. In restoring the era of the servant, many religions did not allow their most devout believers to have possessions or spouses, and consequently they had to lead lives of celibacy and have nothing to their names. Thus, priests, monks, and nuns have no possessions of their own. A Buddhist temple may have possessions, but its chief monk may not. Furthermore, the idea of conjugality is not permitted to such people. Hence, from God's providential viewpoint, of the numerous religions that people have historically believed in, those that are on a higher level could not but emphasize celibacy.

In restoring the realm of the adopted son, Christianity has accomplished this spiritually but not physically; thus, the history of the physical restoration of the servant was prolonged. The wish of the servant is to find a good master. Even if the servant has his or her own spouse, if the servant meets the wrong kind of master, the spouse could be snatched away. Satan is a bad master, and so the greatest hope of a servant under his dominion is to find any way possible to meet a good one. The higher religions have shouldered responsibility for the work of restoring the servant, and so until now the idea of having a spouse was not allowed in these religions; consequently, most devout believers have had to lead lives of celibacy. (61-182, 1972.8.30)

Religion up until this time has emphasized the inviolability of conjugality and celibacy. The ideal of matrimonial conjugality was first realized in my time. From God's viewpoint, Jesus only succeeded in establishing three chief apostles among the twelve, seventy-two disciples, and the 120 followers. But by restoring through indemnity the organization of the family of God's ideal on earth, which Jesus could not achieve before passing away, I succeeded in restoring and going on to complete on earth that which was left unaccomplished by the first and second Adams.

Since everything was lost through the Fall, then as a condition for the restoration of all the things of creation, I established 120 holy grounds across the world in 1965. With representative

stones and soil from Korea as the seed of these holy grounds, I conveyed the victorious foundation and connected it horizontally worldwide. (55-168, 1972.5.7)

Until this time, marriage was largely forbidden in the religious realm. Devout believers were encouraged to leave home in order to enter the priesthood and lead lives of celibacy. However, times have changed and now we are living in the era when you can get married and return to your hometown, that is to say, receive the Blessing and form a Blessed Family. The families that follow the satanic world have their basis in the evil love, life, lineage, and mind. However, since the Blessing signifies restoration, once you walk in the footsteps of the True Parents, you will become Blessed Families of true love, life, lineage, and conscience, and these families, tribes, and eventually the whole world will become like one great extended family, living together as brothers and sisters. Everything will be brought to a conclusion through the Blessing Ceremony. (286-41, 1997.7.1)

In order to win in the battle against Satan, you need a family. You can never be victorious if you fight as an individual because Satan invaded through the family, that is, of Adam and Eve. To restore this through indemnity, you need to receive the Blessing in God's presence. Thus, a new husband and wife must emerge.

When you consider present-day believers in established churches, although they may have complete faith in their religion and husband and wife may love each other dearly, once they pass away to the next world, the spouses and family members will end up in different places. They will not even be able to meet each other. If a beloved child found himself in hell and called out for his father and mother, how would they feel? Even if they were in heaven, would they feel happy? Originally, the Kingdom of Heaven created by God was a place the whole family would enter together. Since Jesus could not form a family, then the only place he could ascend to was paradise. Thus, Christ at his Second Advent must come on earth. (19-171, 1968.1.1)

You cannot enter heaven alone. The Blessing is what is required in order to pass through the gates of heaven because that is a place where only families can enter. It is a place you can only enter through the united relationship of three generations. Jacob's seventy family members comprised three generations, which is how they were able to enter Egypt.

Before you can receive the Blessing, you need to resurrect individually. You must pray just as Jesus did in the Garden of Gethsemane. Since God carried out His providence in three phases, He will let you off easily for a period of three years. In order to resurrect, you need to repent of all your wrongdoings in the past. There are many different types of people gathered here today; however, each one of you must follow the course that leads to the benefit of the whole. For an individual to resurrect, he or she

should not deviate from the providential destiny. Once you have resurrected, where should you go? You must go and visit the members living in the countryside who are praying in the background for you. In actual fact, you should join your spouse only after your spiritual children have matured and are ready to receive the Blessing. Even Jesus went before the Holy Spirit only after that was achieved. (12-265, 1963.5.25)

The family is established through me. The path a family follows is the way of restoring through indemnity the realm of the suffering of women. The contents in the Bible are not centered on woman. The vertical history up to this point has been the history of seeking after the subject. For six thousand years, history has sought after one Adam. After Adam is restored, shouldn't woman be restored as well? In this male-dominated world, women were absolutely needed. Even the most wretched tasks were carried out by women. Didn't I say that we are indemnifying vertical history horizontally? Viewed horizontally, history up to the present has been one of seven thousand years. The period in which we have set this history on the horizontal standard and are restoring it through indemnity is the period of the first seven-year course. (47-199, 1971.8.28)

The tendency to be tempted by fallen love has been inherited through generations of fallen parents. To overcome this, humankind must be connected to God-centered love through the True Parents; otherwise, we can never overcome the problem of fallen love. Those who dwell in the realm of the Fall, who have inherited the lineage of the fallen parents, need to welcome the True Parents in the final stage of restoration and unite with them vertically in order to overcome the fallen world. This is the standpoint of the Principle.

We cannot complete this process individually. It takes a couple – a man and a woman – to restore this problem of love. This is the Blessing being conducted in the Unification Church; it cannot be performed as you wish – it must be carried out by the Parents who are the vertical center.

Even in the fallen world, those who have inherited the fallen lineage do not do get married centering on themselves but rather on their parents. In the course of restoration, the True Parents must first come forth and become perfected as the vertical parents. At the same time, Cain and Abel must unite and thereby satisfy the condition for victory. The Blessing that is carried out from such a position can, for the first time, overcome the limitations of the Fall. You cannot climb to such a position alone. The top of the growth stage can be surmounted only through the Blessing and by nothing else. In other words, only upon receiving the Blessing can you pass through that stage and climb to the bottom of the completion stage. The Blessed Couples have to go through a seven-year period to attain perfect oneness with God. The three stages of the growing period – that is formation, growth, and comple-

tion – comprise twenty-one years; thus, the Blessed Couple must undergo a seven-year course in the completion stage. No one has come this far before. (55-137, 1972.5.7)

There could have been only one kind of marriage feast held in the Garden of Eden, one based on Principle. Humankind received Satan's blessing through the Fall. This is our greatest grief; we should have received God's Blessing instead. Think for a moment how the people on Satan's side – his innumerable descendants – rejoiced on this feast day of fallen marriage, how much they delighted in it, and how much they ate and drank in celebration of it. All of these actions have added to God's sorrow. Marriage became an important means and source of expanding the satanic world. On account of this, ascetics placed much emphasis on celibacy. All marriages performed from ancient times to this day are a source of sorrow to God. They have left conditions that sadden Him, and not one of them has left behind any point that can give joy to Him and form a connection with Him. (158-276, 1967.12.29)

The single Blessing is premised on the idea that the spouses will be reunited in the spirit world. You must realize that it is a great blessing to be able to receive the Blessing as a couple on earth rather than alone. (101-307, 1978.11.7)

When I say that a Blessed Couple must become as one I mean to say that they must unite with me, the original plus, not just within the individual couple. You should know that the position of the Blessed Couple is one that has to follow such a course. Only after a man and woman achieve complete unity can they reach the original position of God. They must not engage in a love relationship before they attain unity with me. Until then, they should live like brother and sister. The love between husband and wife should be as pure as that of innocent teenagers and greater than that between any brother and sister. From such a place, they must pass through the process of respecting and serving each other. Once they have done so, God will come to them automatically. The ideal love is the love that is like a flash of lightning at the point where the original plus characteristic of the man and the original minus characteristic of the woman come together. (129-23, 1983.10.4)

I conducted the first international joint wedding in 1970 – the 777 Couples Blessing, which signified that everything on earth was drawing together globally. After the 430 Couples Blessing, I went to other countries to bless them because it was not providentially allowed to have them come to Korea to receive the Blessing. For the first time ever, then, an international joint wedding of 777 couples was performed in Korea with participants from ten nations around the world. In this manner, based on the family ideal, the path through which any nation on earth can return to God was completed. This event made it possible

for the fortune of the world to be related to the fortune of the Unification Church. From this day onward, we do not need to go through the trouble of shedding sweat and blood in order to establish our nation. Once we give birth, multiply, and form a new tribe, then a nation is naturally created. Just like the Israelites gave birth to many healthy children while in Egypt, all we need to do is give birth. All we need to do is to be blessed like the sons of Judah and have many sets of twins. We are not to practice birth control. In this way, we can expand the foundation of the new lineage across the world. We are therefore already in the process of establishing a transracial nation in the world. (55-171, 1972.5.7)

Blessed members who predecease their spouses go to the spirit world as single persons. Nevertheless, in the case of childless couples, the surviving spouse has the possibility of remarrying a person in the same situation so as to leave behind blessed descendants. With these thoughts in mind, you can't help but realize what a fearsome thing the Blessing is. You may not realize it right here and now, but once you pass on to the spirit world, you will understand. Those who have received the Blessing have the path to heaven opened before them.

Blessed people are accused not by Satan but by God's angels. From the standpoint of God's laws, if you do anything wrong, the archangel will reject your status of being blessed. After you have studied the Divine Principle, received the Blessing, and at a later stage, passed into the spirit world, you will see that the paths to heaven are wide open for you. However, in spirit, you must be prepared for the occasion, dressed in the very best attire. There should be no false steps on the way. You thus have multidimensional responsibilities. (55-87, 1972.4.23)

The time is coming when widows or widowers who have received the Single Blessing on earth can be blessed with their spouses in the spirit world. In the era after the Blessing has transcended the national and global levels, people on earth can be blessed with their spouses in the spirit world for the first time. Until now such things had been impossible. When you received the Single Blessing, weren't you blessed separately? From now on, you can receive the Blessing together like everybody else. Since such a privilege has been granted on earth, when such a couple is blessed, the spouse on earth and the spouse in the spirit world are blessed together, and so they can stand united in an equal position. This is how a person on earth can be blessed with his or her spouse in the spirit world. (284-167, 1997.4.16)

The Lord, who comes as the originator and central figure of the Blessing, is not limited by the restrictive environment of the age in which he appears. He is a central person who encompasses and transcends the history of the world. As such, the Blessing does not end with a husband and wife coming together in union. Through it, a new family must be

formed and further, a new tribe, race, and nation must be created. All this begins with the Blessing.

From this point a new heaven and earth should unfold. Each individual should be able to say to God, "I will become such a son or daughter. The path I am treading is for the nation You desire so much. I am treading it not only for the nation, but also the world that You have sought after until now."

On the way, your couple will face many difficulties and situations of extreme deprivation. Nevertheless, these are not matters for you to worry about; the greatest challenge for you will be how to become a husband and wife who can overcome all these hardships and march forward transcending the nation and on to the global level. (30-168, 1970.3.22)

You cannot belong to two different nations. Since you have become husband and wife to create one nation of God, you can only be married once. Similarly, there cannot be two worlds, and since you are husband and wife for the sake of God's world, you can only be married once. Furthermore, there cannot be two gods, and since you as husband and wife exist for Him, you can only be married once. (30-184, 1970.3.22)

The reason you are being married is to deeply experience parental, conjugal, and filial love. Why do you need to do this? The spirit world is a place filled with all these different desires to be stimulated by love. You must understand that you need to be married and have families in order to train yourselves to be in sync with such an environment. (92-181, 1977.4.3)

Unification Church Blessed Couples stand in a historic position. How many times has God initiated this work in history? This is His second attempt. At the first attempt, perfection was not achieved due to the Fall. To restore this, God invested His omnipresent love to build a foundation of faithful families that everyone could harmonize with, centering on the establishment of the chosen nation that, all told, had four thousand years of Judaic culture as its foundation. In simple terms, God wanted to create an ideal couple by sending the Messiah and having him receive a queen who could become the object partner of his love. (113-181, 1981.5.3)

You need to be blessed in order to present yourselves as ideal couples that have been victorious in all aspects of life, including culture, politics, and economics – as representatives with Adam's original authority. You must realize that such is the significance of the Blessing. This is a path that you cannot walk alone. In entering heaven, man is the right leg and woman the left. Alone, you could not be a complete person because you would be one-legged and therefore lame. (118-280, 1982.6.13)

The most important work of the Unification Church today is the Blessing bestowed upon you as couples. The Blessing of couples is the seed of love

planted by God in Adam's couple. As such, it should be disseminated.

All of you gathered here know what cell reproduction is, don't you? In that tiny cell is contained the whole tree, is it not? When you sow it, a whole tree grows from it. The roots, branches, leaves, stems, flowers – in fact, all parts that make up a tree are contained in that cell. The conceptual blueprint is contained in it.

Couples are blessed to become the embodiments of True Parents, and through their children, reach out to the nation and world, becoming its roots; just as the roots and leaves of a tree absorb essential elements and control the tree's carbon assimilation and the separation of elements from the air, Blessed Families should perform similar functions. A tree takes in carbon dioxide and releases oxygen to its surroundings. Isn't that strange? How can it do that? That is an expression of the harmony and beauty of creation. The universe is a world of love – it is not a cold-hearted and desolate place, but an enclosure of love. Just as the seeds are all wrapped in a shell, God also wants to reside in that realm of love that is the universe – the enclosure of love – with His plus and minus dual characteristics.

For God to dwell enwrapped in the universe of love, there must be unity in love between Him as the subject and the universe as His object. He can only be enveloped by the love that is shared by the two sides in the process of giving and receiving. That is why love is eternal and great. It is also boundless. Wouldn't you want to rest in such a place? The conclusion is the same. That is the seed of God's love. You must return to that seed. (180-110, 1988.8.7)

CHAPTER FOUR

Blessed Families and Registration

Section 1. Registration of the Blessed Families and Our Homeland

1.1. What is registration?

Do you know what registration is? Once a woman is married, she needs to have her name entered into the family register of her husband. She needs to have her name removed from the register of her original family and have it moved to that of her husband. (177-302, 1988.5.22)

When a woman is married, she basically has to move into her husband's house, and so it follows that her name also has to be moved from the old family register into that of the new family. Then her family registration is changed. What is our registration? It is the certificate that gives evidence of our relationship based on the origin of true love. (178-207, 1988.6.4)

Once she is married, what is it that a woman should do? There is more to do than just registering her marriage. She must be entered into the family register of her husband. (195-227, 1989.11.15)

Once a woman is married, isn't she entered into her husband's family register? In the case of Western countries or Japan, what happens to her surname? It is changed. Since she has nothing, no foundation upon which to stand, she will become one with her husband by taking his surname, be it Inoue, Yamaoka, or Kinoshita. When they unite together, they do so by forming a relationship of love. As the power of this love is stronger than the origin of life, the woman is not sad for having to leave her own family for that of her husband; on the contrary, she accepts this as a matter of course, and goes to her husband with hope and a smile. (258-244, 1994.3.20)

Let us say that the bride follows her husband to his house on her palanquin. The moment she steps over the threshold and becomes a part of his clan, any thoughts centered on herself will no longer be allowed. If she were to conduct herself in a self-centered way, as she used to in her own house, would that be tolerated by her new family? This is the question. Can she ask them to tolerate her? Of course she cannot do such a thing. Since she is in a new place, she must be cautious about her every move – the way she looks, listens, and speaks. Why should she be cautious? She must

think about how she can be of use to her husband's clan, and to the new environment she finds herself in, rather than be a source of conflict. This is an extremely difficult thing to do. (142-160, 1986.3.9)

God and True Parents are weaving history together, and the era of registration will arrive. At that time, you will transfer your name into the new family register. Are you ready? Have you become sons and daughters of God like True Parents have? It is easy to say, but not to fulfill. Whether asleep or awake, you must always keep this in mind. These thoughts must accompany you wherever you go and whatever you do, whether you are eating or sleeping. In order to accomplish this, you need to experience residing in the homeland before passing on to the next world. Since this is the case, should you learn Korean, or not? Originally, human beings did not have many languages. There was only one. (201-234, 1990.4.22)

In the future, a time will come when you need to register yourselves. The era of registration is coming, for your family to connect to the family of True Father, the royal family. However, even when the era of registration arrives, those who have failed to restore their tribes will not be able to register. You must keep that in mind. It is similar to the twelve tribes of Israel. You cannot register before you have restored your tribes.

Once people learn about the details of the restoration of tribes, they will swarm to the Unification Church to become members. What, then, would happen at the time of the registration? Until this time, nothing – from love itself, to humankind, to the creation – has belonged to God. Therefore, what has become Satan's must be restored. The sons and daughters and all things of creation have to be restored centering on Father, who has fulfilled the will of God. At the moment, Father does not have a nation of his own. Isn't that so? The nation must be restored. (208-339, 1990.11.21)

Throughout all of history, there has never been such a thing as registration into the Kingdom of God. In fact, there was no Kingdom of God in the spirit world. There was no family and no nation there. Once a family passed on to the spirit world, that family was separated; if there were ten members in a family, all ten of them were separated. However, that will not be the case from now on. You must understand that, had it not been for the Fall, the Kingdom of Heaven would have been a place where the whole family, the mother and father and all the others, would have entered together. If the grandparents, mother and father, and sons and daughters united together centering on true love, and cherished the true love of God in that family, even God Himself would show absolute obedience to them. In a world motivated by the love for others, where one is obedient to such a tradition of love and where people live for the sake of others, the base of peace can come into existence. (210-354, 1990.12.27)

Once we enter the era of registration, a register of names must be drawn up, and this is a task that cannot be carried out carelessly. Without accomplishing Home Church activities, you cannot make the list, nor can you have your name in the family register of the Kingdom of God. Even Blessed Families would be excluded. You must bear this in mind, and make haste in doing all that you have been told to do by God. You should carry out what you have been instructed to do, not because other people are doing it, but because there is no other way. If you do not complete the task given you on earth, once you enter the spirit world, you will have to carry on with it forever. If you do not complete it on earth, you will be in great trouble in the world to come. (143-118, 1986.3.16)

Jesus, who failed to accomplish the will of God on earth, should have found a bride in his time and established the relationship of true parents and raised true children. He should have prepared a foundation on earth that would secure, with heaven's authority, the right of inheritance and the right of registration into the kingdom. He passed away to the spirit world without having done so. In registering, would you register as servants? If you cannot be a son of direct descent, you must at least be registered in the name of an adopted son in order to become one of God's heirs. Then you will share the right of inheritance. (155-309, 1965.11.1)

What are we trying to achieve? We want to be registered in the positions of sons and daughters who can be loved eternally by God and True Parents. The registration will begin from this time forth. You will be registered in the Book of Life of the Kingdom of God. A new form of registration should take place based on the true parent-centered ideology and Godism, and at the same time, the organization of tribes should also take place. Similar to the twelve apostles of Jesus and the twelve tribes of Israel, we also need to organize ourselves into tribes. (146-230, 1986.7.1)

From now on, you will return to your hometowns and compete with each other as to who will be the first to expand the environmental conditions in which you can restore your tribes through your own efforts. You will compete with each other over this issue. So, regardless of whichever tribe you belong to, the tribes will be organized together according to those who have returned to their hometowns. What I mean by this is that the time is coming in which the branches which are to point east, west, north and south will be decided and registered accordingly in the family register.

There will no longer be racial discrimination or distinctions between the developed and developing nations. The biggest question is how well you can unite centering on your good ancestors in the spirit world, and how well you can lay the foundation upon which they can come down to earth and support you. Your work in developing your hometown, and how it is carried out, will all

depend on this point. How big a branch is, will therefore be an issue. Even if the trunk is dead, if the branch is big enough, it can serve as the trunk.

The shoot comes out first, then the branches sprout. This holds true for humankind as well, but this is not the main issue. The question is how you can grow new branches; in other words, how the members of your tribe can be registered into this realm and returned to the original homeland, the Kingdom of Heaven. You must realize that you are standing on the path to the homeland. (189-224, 1989.4.6)

Registration will take place from now on. When South and North Korea are reunited, the members of the Unification Church across the world, the Blessed Families who have conducted themselves in an appropriate manner, will all be registered regardless of tribe. This will happen, if the North and South are united through the authority of True Father. Then heavenly law will decree that the loyal subjects of the Unification Church around the world the representative race, the race that passes on the lineage. Who would oppose that? From the historical point of view, I have worked so hard for the independence of Korea and to establish it as the homeland, so who could possibly oppose me? (197-212, 1990.1.14)

The era of tribal registration is coming upon us. It is not the era of individual registration. The coming era is the era of tribal registration, be it Kim, or Park. Once that phase is passed, the era of national registration will soon follow. Things are happening quickly now. Everything will happen so quickly that it will be like being caught in a whirlwind. Isn't the world situation changing so quickly that it almost makes you dizzy? Why do you think this is? The world is changing so quickly because of True Father. There is no other reason for it. (197-363, 1990.1.20)

1.2. Registration occurs in the era of the national level Blessing

The Blessing of the Unification Church is a church level Blessing, not a national one. So there are three stages to pass through to the world level Blessing. After passing through the era of the church Blessing, what follows is the era of the national Blessing, which is the era of Blessing centered on the nation of God based on a united South and North Korea. Then comes the era of Blessing in which the physical and spirit worlds are united. We need to pass through the three eras of the Blessing. Originally, these three should have been accomplished in the generation of Adam, but this did not materialize and it has been postponed until the era of the returning Lord. This must be accomplished in True Father's time. By the year 2000, the worldwide Blessing must be carried out all at one time. That is how registration can begin in earnest. (290-253, 1998.3.2)

Blessed families of the Unification Church were all married in a holy

wedding ceremony, but this ceremony was conducted within the realm of the church, and not the nation or world. That is why there should be ceremonies for the Blessing at the church level as well as at the national level. You must understand that only when you pass through the ceremonies of the world level Blessing, and later on the eternal Blessing in the Kingdom of Heaven, can you follow the path which returns to the original world. You may receive the Blessing of the Unification Church in a simple and convenient ceremony by being sneaky and taking me unawares. But, even if you claimed that you were blessed, it is not enough. You must still go through the national Blessing. Therefore, when you go to the spirit world, along with the Great Initiation Ceremony you also need to participate in the Registration Ceremony and be organized into twelve tribes. Then, when the time comes for True Parents to pass on to the next world and be seated on the throne, centering on God, all people can take their own seats in the presence of True Parents in an orderly fashion. (185-36, 1989.1.1)

The Blessing in the Unification Church goes through three stages: the church, national and world levels. That is why the Blessed Families of today must go beyond their current position. Originally, people who were free from indemnity would have received the Blessing. However, the Blessed Families have conditions of indemnity to fulfill. In front of our church stands the nation who is persecuting us and beyond that the world; we must overcome them all. For this reason, the right of inheritance bestowed by God can only be handed down to Adam's family in a united world, after we and our families have overcome and reached the liberated position where there is no persecution. Only then can there be true liberation. On that basis, the realms of church, nation and world have to be dealt with. Only after going beyond the realm of the worldwide restoration of sovereignty, and leaving the realm of Satan's accusation, can liberation of the physical and spirit worlds come to pass. You need to rise to such a position and overcome Satan's accusation on three levels in order for you to receive the Blessing. (285-235, 1997.6.5)

For what purpose are the Blessed Families being entrusted with the mission of becoming tribal messiahs? It is in order that their tribes may be registered and may work for the restoration of God's nation, after which they can receive the national level Blessing. Yes, the tribal messiahs need to gather their strength to restore the nation. By restoring a nation and having it registered in the world, it will then be possible to receive the Blessing on the world level. (268-251, 1995.4.2)

Once God's nation is restored, the era of registration will be upon us. Since the Kingdom of God does not currently exist, the era is now approaching when all of humankind will be registered anew as the family of God. Accordingly, the era of the great exodus is also coming.

Communism forced itself upon the capitalist world as a destructive and powerful ideology, but in the future you will have to be responsible by taking your own initiative. (259-223, 1994.4.10)

When the era of registration comes, just being a citizen of Korea will not be enough. All nations must be subjugated with love. You need to deny the family, tribe, society, nation, world, even hell in the spirit world and the devil himself. The way of affirmation represents the Fall. Since the Fall occurred in this manner, you have to restore it by going the opposite way. (259-223, 1994.4.10)

At the present, the Blessing is being carried out within the Church because we do not have a nation, but in the future we need to be registered in the nation. You can be registered only when you have fulfilled your responsibility as tribal messiahs. By being registered in the nation and the world and becoming one with True Parents, then, with them as the subject and Blessed Families as the object partners, you need to dedicate your families to attend God. Only then can the cosmic ideal of Blessed Families be formed. Such is the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world! Amen! (269-65, 1995.4.7)

1.3. Registration requires a sovereign state

Without a nation, there can be no nationality. Without a nation, there can be no foundation upon which you can be registered. We need to create a new nation of people, and be newly registered. We have to establish the Kingdom of God on earth and, as its citizens, love the kingdom and its people, live on earth together with our tribes and family members, and be the victorious sons and daughters who have inherited the true lineage of the parents of goodness. Only after doing so can we enter the Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world. This is the teaching of the Divine Principle. (58-143, 1972.5.22)

You are not yet registered in the Kingdom of God. Since there is no nation of God, you cannot even make registrations of births before Heaven. You cannot get married unconditionally. You cannot even register deaths. So religious believers have walked a path of lamentation, in which they had no choice but to fall down when pushed, and no one to appeal to after death. You must realize that True Father has walked the most difficult path of all. Weeping bitterly cannot bring it to an end. He must endure it, even if it is mortifying and deplorable. (283-222, 1997.4.12)

Even if I was born as the son or daughter of God, since there is no Kingdom of Heaven, registration into the kingdom must be postponed. You must yearn to become a husband in the Kingdom of Heaven, to receive a wife, to form a family and to have children as a citizen registered in that kingdom. You must always be conscious of this. You must remember that it is an established understand-

ing that you must fight evil at all times, whether you are asleep or awake, and be victorious. This is the way you should live always. (122-280, 1982.11.21)

Don't you have to register births? If you are Japanese, you need to register as a citizen of Japan who was born in a certain place. Similarly, we need to be registered into the kingdom. Until now, the Kingdom of God has not existed. Since there has been no family centered on True Parents, it follows that there was no tribe or nation either. We need to indemnify all this, so that we can reclaim the family, tribe, a people, nation, and world from the satanic realm, the kingdom of Satan. Centering on the religious realm, the whole world including the non-religious realm must be united together, and everything that belongs to Satan must be restored to God's side. If this is not achieved, you cannot live peacefully in the spirit world after you have passed away. It is tens, hundreds and thousands of times more difficult to form a relationship with the physical world from the spirit world. (250-112, 1993.10.12)

It is the Blessing of the Unification Church that bequeaths the love, life and lineage of God. Fallen humanity cannot be registered before receiving the Blessing. This is true for everyone gathered here today. Then how should you go about registering yourselves? Originally, you were supposed to be registered at birth. You were born in Korea, and so you made registrations of births in Korea, didn't you? On a certain day, you were born in a certain place as the first or second daughter or first son of a particular father and mother, and you were given a certain name; all these details are written down as part of the registration. Then you become the citizen of Korea forever. Have you become citizens of the Kingdom of God? Have you, or have you not? You are not even close. (211-109, 1990.12.29)

There is no Kingdom of God. Currently you are registered in the satanic world, but the era is soon coming in which you will be able to remove your names from the old register and enter them into the register of the Kingdom of God. Those people who have passed on to the next world without knowing this are now becoming agitated. Once you have been registered as a citizen, family, tribe, nation and world of the Kingdom of Heaven, and once the kingdom in spirit world is united with the kingdom on earth, you will be able to govern both worlds with love as the right hand of God. Before you can enter that world, however, you need to go through the registration procedure. (287 -40, 1997.8.10)

The time will come when you can register yourselves. Receiving the Blessing is not the same as registering. The Blessing is only a symbolic registration. That is why we are seeking to restore the nation in which we can be registered. What kind of nation would it be? It would be one in which a trinity is formed of the sovereignty, which takes the place of parents; the citizens, who take the place

of the children; and national land, which takes the place of possessions. In order for a nation to be established, there must be sovereignty, citizenry, and territory. The same principle is true of religion. (35-282, 1970.10.25)

We do not have a nation of our own. Though there are many sons and daughters of Blessed Families, we have yet to establish the ideal kingdom desired by God. Consequently, there is no place for you to register the names of your sons and daughters, and to register any marriages or deaths in later years. If there is no nation, there can be no settlement. What that means is that you cannot stay in one place for long. If you do not have your United States passports with you, you are not permitted to enter any other nation. In other words, you are not acknowledged as a citizen of your nation. The same is true for us. We do not have passports of our nation, because we do not have a nation.

Where do the members of the Unification Church belong? In the United States? Where else? In the Kingdom of God. Where are you from? Isn't that a frequent question in the satanic world? When asked, "Where are you from?" don't you usually reply that you are from the United States, Germany, Japan or wherever it is that you come from? Of these nations, the very best nation is the Kingdom of Heaven. The most precious nation is the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, the Kingdom of God. So, when you are asked, "Where do you belong?" you must answer, "I belong to the Kingdom of God." From now on, the answer will be the Kingdom of Heaven. (277-251, 1996.4.18)

Members of the Unification Church will be able to register their names in the not too distant future. The day when North and South Korea are united as one nation, in which God can take delight, will be the day on which you can be registered. When such a day dawns, even if you are blind or have an impaired voice or a deformed arm, if you were blessed first, you would be considered the elder. You would be the elder sister-in-law. If you were blessed later, you would have to serve a person with an impaired voice and deformed arm as your elder, even if you are older and a college graduate.

Such a day is coming. Therefore, when that time comes, all these special conditions of attendance will become important factors that will decide between success and failure. (58-113, 1972.6.6)

Once South and North Korea are reunited, and the nation is filled with blessed people, we will enter the era of registration. Once you have inherited the lineage of True Parents, the era of registration will be imminent. Through the worldwide expansion of the Blessing and subsequent registration of the five billion people in the world, the ancestral generations they will assume will be decided. Though they may all have received the Blessing at the same time, some will be thousands of generations higher than others. A very frightful era is coming. (252-246, 1994.1.1)

If you were to die without having restored the nation, the best you could hope for would be to come back to earth and support individuals and families. You would not be able to provide any form of open and authoritative support. You would not be qualified to take part in the battle to conquer the satanic world. Therefore, you can be registered only after our nation comes into existence. Have you been registered? Though you may have registered your names with the Unification Church, you have not yet been registered in the united nation of God. Can you become a citizen of a nation that does not exist? No, it is not possible. (54-277, 1972.3.26)

1.4. Reclaiming the Homeland

The homeland that we need to reclaim is not an existing nation on earth with its own history and traditions. It is completely different from those other nations in essence. In order for us to be able to inherit such a nation that stands on a completely different level from others, we need to become citizens with appropriate ideological proactivity. That proactive ideology should be in accord with the ideology of the absolute Creator.

For a nation desired by the Absolute Being to exist, you should yearn for that nation to be one in which the citizens would be united together centering on the nation's sovereignty. Therefore, the nation should take form based on such a standard of citizenship. (49-93, 1971.10.9)

Where is the homeland of God? It is the place where true parents and a true family reside. Then where is the original homeland or homeland of true parents? It is the place where God and His sons and daughters, the subject and object partners who can love one another, can dwell. The homeland is where you can receive the love of the subject partner as the object partners. If this is the case, then where would the homeland of children be? It would be a place where they can love their parents with God as the subject, and where the children themselves can be loved in the object position. Such a place is the homeland of the four-position foundation as taught by the Unification Church and represents the ideal homeland. Why is it an ideal homeland? It is because in that place can be found the love of the True God, the love of true parents and the love of true children. The world which develops from this place, on this basis, would be an ideal world. Such a principle can be found in the four-position foundation. (124-266, 1983.2.27)

What is the homeland? The homeland is the nation of the mother and the father. It is the nation of our ancestors. To sum it up, it is the nation of our mothers, fathers, and our ancestors. It is the nation of the first human ancestors. It is a nation handed down from, and loved by, the first human ancestors.

Since that love is unchanging, then that nation should be unchanging as well. When you consider the historical backgrounds of those who claimed the nation as their homeland, it can be rec-

ognized that there has not been a single nation that could maintain itself as the beloved homeland of the parents. The homeland was always lost. (173-68, 1988.2.14)

The homeland desired by the will of God is the homeland and the original homeland of humankind, based on true love. Korea should become such a homeland and the homeland for all humanity. (185-131, 1989.1.3)

If you consider the characteristics of a nation, you can understand that for a nation to be established, it must have sovereignty. From this viewpoint, when you consider the question of realizing the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, then who would be the owners of the Kingdom of Heaven? Who would be the sovereign? Without a doubt, God would be the sovereign. Who would be the citizens? The citizens would include all people of the world. Then where would the territory of the nation be? It would be the earth. (96-15, 1978.1.1)

Where would the original homeland and homeland be? What would the homeland be like? Of course, the homeland would have a specific nation to create a foundation, but the homeland of humankind sought by God is in fact this earth. It is this earth that we are living on. This planet earth is the homeland yearned for by humanity. It is the homeland of humanity desired by God. In past history, many generations of our ancestors walked the path of sacrifice; and for what purpose did they do so? What was the hope for which they walked such a path, appealing to heaven? It was with the words, "May the time of the hoped-for homeland come soon!"

By establishing one nation of God, we should pass judgment on the arch-enemy of heaven, the great Satan; eradicate evil from the world; and build on earth the Kingdom of Heaven of peace centered only on goodness. You must understand clearly that this is the desire of God, the desire of Jesus, and the desire of the ancestors who have contributed greatly to the course of the providence until this day. (155-321, 1965.11.1)

There can be no national boundaries in a world created by God. There can be no racial discrimination between blacks and whites. There can be no reason for conflict because only goodness prevails in such a world. Nevertheless, we see that the world we are living in is divided into separate nations by national borders. Discord and disunity come about due not only to racial discrimination, but even due to conflict within the family between husband and wife and between parents and children. People of goodness are struggling with those who are evil. Considering the current situation of the world, we can easily see that the coming Lord must unite the world into one, making it a place without racial discrimination and without barriers between nations. He must reunite all the broken families, and establish a kingdom of peace in this world where goodness and evil are in conflict. (53-72, 1972.2.9)

Our goal lies in establishing a united world, transforming the world into one nation centered on God. That nation would have the one and only sovereignty, citizenry, territory and culture. Its people would be connected through the one lineage centered on True Parents. In that nation, everyone would want to become the ideal heirs by perfecting the realm of heart. They would be able to achieve what is taught in the Bible as, "Love your enemies!" (God's Will-789)

There is no doubt that the Kingdom of God is a place that is governed according to the will of God, whose sovereignty is inherited by His children of direct descent, who follow the commands issued by Him as their center. In such a place, democracy or communism cannot exist. Once it is established, the kingdom would retain its system of governance eternally. Taking all this into consideration, how truly lamentable it is that you cannot be a citizen of such a nation. Therefore, you should lament the fact that you are not a resident of that nation. You should lament the fact that you are not qualified to be a part of it. We should all lament the fact that we do not have such an unchanging sovereignty anywhere. (72-292, 1974.9.1)

The goal of our faith is to become the citizens of the Kingdom of God. If we do not become the citizens of that kingdom, there will be no way for us to be loved or to be proud of being God's children in front of the people in the world or the creation. Those without a nation are prone to attacks. They are in the most wretched of positions. In most cases, they are easily beaten. That is why we should try to find the answer to the question: Where is the nation desired by God, the nation that can be the foothold of God? (55-79, 1972.4.23)

The citizens of a nation without sovereignty are in a pitiful plight. That is why Jesus preached, out of concern: "Therefore, do not be anxious, saying, 'What shall we eat?' or 'What shall we drink?' or 'What shall we wear?' For the gentiles seek all these things; and your Heavenly Father knows that you need them all. But seek first his kingdom and his righteousness, and all these things shall be yours as well." (Matt. 6:31-Section 33) Did he say you should seek His Son first, or His kingdom? He told you to seek the Kingdom desired by God. (34-337, 1970.9.20)

The reason we are shedding blood and sweat for this nation and its people is to establish the eternal Kingdom of God, the blessed land in which our future descendants can praise God for generations to come. (14-193, 1964.10.3)

Now we can establish the homeland. In that homeland there would be sovereignty, territory, and citizenry. Furthermore, the people would inherit the lineage of the homogenous race, and the history that can be written by none other than that race. We need to fulfill the duties of emissaries for the homeland. The sooner you complete this mission

you have been called to do, the sooner can the basis for restoration of the homeland be laid down.

The work we are carrying out today will be the foundation upon which we can welcome the day of liberation of the homeland. Bearing this in mind, you should march forward, determined in your hearts to complete the mission of emissary as long as you remain standing. Otherwise we cannot receive as our own, the historical world Blessing and heavenly fortune that God can bring us in this era. (29-40, 1970.2.16)

Section 2. The Conditions for Registration

2.1. Change of the right of ownership, lineage, and realm of heart

2.1.1. Change of the right of ownership

You have to be registered into the new kingdom. However, just as God created all things before human beings, the creation needs to be registered and connected to God before humankind. The 6000 years of history, therefore, can be said to be the history of trying to achieve this.

We need to go through this process which is similar to that of establishing a relationship with God through the creation as shown in the Old Testament Age, but now through the True Parents in the Completed Testament Age. However, this task should not be accomplished just within the boundaries of today's Unification Church. What you must understand is that, unless we expand this work to the worldwide realm, going beyond the nation, and bring it to completion once and for all, we cannot welcome the day of complete restoration. (23-332, 1969.6.15)

Every object in the world came to belong to Satan through the fallen parents. In order for all families to restore this situation centering on the True Parents, in the future they should have nothing in their possession. Nothing in this world should belong to them. Their own bodies do not belong to them, their sons and daughters do not belong to them, and their husbands do not belong to them. Everything must be regarded as the possession of unfallen Adam. Nothing should belong to Eve. She should not have anything established as belonging to her.

The era of the right of ownership is coming, where objects can belong to her only after they have been determined as belonging to Adam, restored to God and acknowledged as His, and then returned to Adam to be finally handed back to her as her permanent possession.

Such phenomena can take place only after you have entered the Kingdom of God and have been registered. Only then can you be restored to the position of unfallen owners in the Garden of Eden and hold possession of all things of the world. In such a manner, you can enter the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. (165-284, 1987.5.27)

None of your possessions belongs to you. You need to return them to God and have them engrafted to Him. They are not yours. You have no right of ownership to claim them as yours. Adam is not the owner of true love. You must bear in mind that God is the center, and so centering on Him as the owner, you need to think of yourself as standing in a relationship to Him as His object partner. It is God who should have the right of ownership first, and therefore that right must be restored to Him. (219-214, 1991.8.29)

You need to offer all of your possessions voluntarily. However, there is not one person who has done so. Those who have their own houses and other forms of wealth in their names, and who do not follow the instructions of Father, will find themselves in trouble. Those of you listening to what I am saying now will find yourselves implicated at the time of registration if you have houses and other things in your name. Father does not have anything. Even though he may make a lot of money, it is not for his own use, but for the world. It is not for any one particular individual. In saving all people in the world, he cannot help but melt down the whole nation and use it as one would use molten iron.

In such a time of emergency, those who refuse to be melted down with others are the enemies and traitors of heaven. If the nation of Japan was lost, and the question arose as to how its regal power could be revived, those who can devote not only their homes but even their lives are the true patriots of that nation. However, this is not just an issue for Japan alone. In restoring the cosmos, you must, under any circumstances, be ready to devote anything and everything for God. (286-238, 1997.8.11)

At this time, the world belongs to Satan, not God. However, the recovery of the right of ownership will now take place, and so the universe will come to be united as one without recourse to war. In the future, people will form an endless line unprecedented in the history of the world, making their way to be registered in the Kingdom of God by tribe, taking with them everything in their possession. Depending on who registers first, the elder brother and younger brother will be determined. (208-346, 1990.11.21)

In a place where a peaceful environment and the unified realm of the will of God begin, the fact that you would be registered by family indicates that the nation itself could be restored instantly. Consider for a moment the case where twelve tribal messiahs and their tribes have all been registered. What would happen to that nation? It would be restored instantly. This would be true of all nations, be it Japan or any other nation. They would be completely restored at once.

What this signifies is that, centering on God, every fallen person since the time of Adam's family will be forgiven and embraced through love. (269-56, 1995.4.7)

Since such an era is at hand. Father is issuing these orders: "Restore your tribes immediately! Return the right of ownership to God! Be registered at once!" This is the greatest hope for humankind. The hope that has persisted for thousands of generations, ever since the first human ancestors, is based on achieving this. You must have this engraved deeply in your heart, so that you will never forget it. By doing so, in the near future, you will experience the joy of greeting the new sun rising in Japan's dawning sky. (227-107, 1992.2.10)

For you to return the right of ownership to God, you need to go through the name of True Parents. There is no other way to do it except by going through their name. That is why world unification can only be achieved centering on the Unification Church. Even if you do not do anything to encourage it, there will be a long line of people waiting, vying with each other, to be the first to register. A time will come when they will fight, making every effort, to decide who will be the first, second, or third to register. (198-242, 1990.2.3)

You need to make the sacrificial offering that is known as the Total Living Offering. Was not everything taken away in the Garden of Eden due to the false parents? Everything was taken away from true love. That is why you need to give everything in the Total Living Offering. You need to offer everything, even things that have life. You must not leave anything behind. It will not work if you leave a bank account for yourself and portions of land for your sons and daughters. When Ananias and his wife sold their house and offered only half of the money they had before Peter, didn't they drop dead right there on the spot? Did you know about that? Did you know that was what happened to Ananias and his wife? Right before your eyes, you would have seen them die and you would have had to bury them. Such a time is now upon us. (302-44, 1999.5.18)

What is the Total Living Offering? The fallen false parents stole the heavenly world and became thieves, and so, centering on the True Parents, the whole world must be restored and offered to God. Before that offering is made, Father cannot claim to be the owner. He needs to establish the kingship on earth and in spirit world, hand it down to his heirs, and have it take firm root before he leaves this world. Only then can the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world form a complete union. By complete union I mean total oneness. We use the phrases: "complete union of heaven and earth" and "the total oneness of man and woman." (299-48, 1999.2.1)

All of you gathered here have to make the Total Living Offering donation. You need to perform the ceremony of liberation and unification. In the past, when we offered sacrifices to God, we needed to first split them into two halves, one for God's side and one for Satan's side. Can you imagine what an appalling thing this must have been for God?

The sacrifice was split into two parts, the right side belonged to God and the left side belonged to Satan. This was true for human beings. This was true for Abel and Adam. Only when you can offer everything centering on God's love can Satan be separated from you completely. (298-22, 1998.12.31)

2.1.2. Change of lineage

From the Divine Principle perspective in the Unification Church, all fallen human beings of today are bound for hell as soon as they are born. Isn't that so? They are registered for hell at birth. It is only too true. (48-200, 1971.9.19)

All descendants connected through the false lineage since the Fall are registered to Satan. Religion came into existence to take back the nation and the world from Satan. Religion exists to foster mind and body unity and to reunite that which is divided. (272-83, 1995.8.30)

The returning Lord descends to earth to completely fulfill God's providence of restoration, insofar as it remained unfulfilled by Jesus. In other words, he comes as the true, original human seed that will perfect the ideal of creation, and the ideal of true parents who are the origin of God's true love, true life, and true lineage. He comes on the victorious foundation of the fundamental providence already established by God's side until the time of Jesus. What this means is that the Lord at his Second Coming stands on the victorious foundation laid until the time when Jesus reached maturity, and carries on from there to fulfill what Jesus could not do: to seek out a bride, become the True Parent, and save all humankind. The True Parents, through the Blessing Ceremony, which allows the change of lineage, can save all humanity and transform them into true men and women by engrafting them to the true love, true life, and true lineage of God. They can then go on to form true families and establish the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. (282-223, 1997.3.13)

The international holy Blessing Ceremony is the very ritual of resurrection which completely liquidates and restores every defiled thing that arose from the first family that was formed from false marriage, and through which were inherited false love, false life, and false lineage from fallen false parents.

Thus, centering on the love of the True God and True Parents, our couple can subjugate the left-wing and right-wing by establishing the head-wing ideology on the external level, while on the internal level subjugating the conscience and spirit world through Godism, that is to say true love, thereby becoming true parents who can bequeath the great Blessing by engrafting to everyone the seed of true love, true life, and true lineage which brings about the oneness of God and humankind. (275-58, 1995.10.31)

The Lord must return in the flesh and bring about a new relationship of lineage. By indemnifying in the realm of the world family what was lost and

should have been perfected in Adam's family, the right of the true eldest son, the right of the true parent, and the right of true kingship can then be recovered and used to establish the Kingdom of Heaven on earth under God's dominion. From here the returning Lord can be registered into the Kingdom of Heaven in spirit world, enter the era of the kingship of earth and heaven centering on God, and recover the world of victory, freedom, unity, and happiness. In this manner, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world, which is God's ideal of creation, can emerge. Such is the Principle viewpoint on the history of the providence of salvation. (277-211, 1996.4.16)

The three goals of restoration through indemnity are the change of lineage, change of the right of ownership, and change of the realm of heart. You have heard this before, haven't you? Since the lineage was defiled, unless it is changed back to its original state, you cannot be connected to the Kingdom of God and be registered in it. The original owner of the lineage is God. Through the fallen lineage, everything was stolen from God and His right of ownership was subverted. This situation can only be rectified by connecting to God's lineage through His love. That is why the lineage must be changed. The lineage was perverted through the fallen relationship of love. Since the lineage was turned in the wrong direction, there will be no path for humanity to return to God unless the lineage is transformed. (258-287, 1994.3.20)

From this time on, to whom should everything belong? Until now, not one thing could be said to belong to God. Everything in the possession of the devil must pass into the hands of God. Through changing lineage and concurrently receiving the Blessing, you need to return the right of ownership to God, followed by the realm of heart. The realm of heart is the clan itself. It is the relationship formed between related families of the fourth to the eighth generations. That can be said to be one realm of heart. Centering on the grandfather, when you bring together the relatives, the related families up to the eighth generations can be brought together. (272-214, 1995.10.5)

What should you do to meet True Mother and True Father? You cannot walk into their presence, just like that. You are from a different lineage, aren't you? You cannot be bequeathed with the right of inheritance before you are registered. Until now, you have not been registered. Have you had your names entered into True Father's family register? It has not been done yet. Then when can it be done? Registration does not involve receiving the Blessing alone. The position in which you have received the Blessing is the completion level of the growth stage. You still have the seven years of the completion stage to fulfill. That is how the Principle works. Centered on this Principle, we are carrying out the work of restoration. (139-279, 1986.1.31)

2.1.3. Change of the realm of heart

There are conditions to be met in order to pass into the Kingdom of Heaven. You cannot enter it unless you have a family of your own. As long as you are the sons and daughters of God, you have missions to fulfill. After fulfilling those missions, you are destined to meet True Parents in the world of eternity. If you do not complete this formula, it is not possible to meet them. When you are blessed, the gates to the Kingdom of Heaven are opened before you, but you cannot just walk in like that. First, you need to do everything according to True Father's instructions and be registered in the position of having completed the mission of tribal messiahs. (250-112, 1993.10.12)

If you want to achieve mind and body unity, you first need to recover the essential love of God. You must realize that you still have this task to fulfill. No matter what it takes, you need to overcome this and attain this state; if you pass on to the spirit world without having done so, you will find yourself in big trouble. From the perspective of this logic of true love, we human beings are to become one with it, and thereby enter the realm of oneness; that is how God's life becomes our life, God's love becomes our love, and God's lineage becomes our lineage. Unless you have the mindset that the world, which belongs to God, also belongs to you, and have the heart of a mother and father embracing the universe, you cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. (200-230, 1990.2.25)

All of you, why don't you try offering a prayer? The more you pray, the more you will find yourself in tears. The closer you get to Heavenly Father, the more you will grieve and lament. You need to pass through this stage and reach the point where merely thinking of Heavenly Father will make you dance for joy; but you have not reached that stage yet. That is why you still have to fulfill the indemnity conditions of the past and present. You need to be in such a situation that God longs for you. So, you who do not possess the qualification that is hoped for must fulfill the requirements which will enable God and you to long for each other. You should know that such a time is coming.

Then, what should you do next? You must long for the day when you will be able to register as a family of God. Moreover, you should not be the only one longing for that. All humanity must long for such a day. (8-114, 1959.11.22)

All of you must inherit the right of the true parent. Then, centering on the right of the true children, right of the true parent, and right of the true kingship, heaven and earth must be unified. First, there would emerge the Kingdom of Heaven on earth; secondly, the Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world; thirdly, the kingship and the realm of the royal family. What is the realm of the royal family? The Cain world is still in existence. Therefore, we need to restore the right of the eldest son in the Cain world, and transform the Cain figure from a son bound for hell into an abso-

lutely obedient second son, and take him to the Kingdom of God. That is how the realm of the royal family will come about. If Cain had not fallen, he would have become a member of the royal family. However, up until now, he has had no other place to go except hell, and so we must make it possible for him to enter the Kingdom of God.

That is why the realm of the royal family emerged. Then what follows? It is justification by attendance; that is, you need to perfect the family life of attendance. In other words, once you are standing on a victorious foundation centered on the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world, kingship, and the realm of the royal family, you need to practice a family life that serves and attends True Parents and God. By forming a vertical relationship with God, all of you must be registered; that is, all of you must occupy the position of ancestors. (274-183, 1995.10.29)

You need to remember that the favor bestowed by the True Parents is a great blessing that cannot be expressed in words alone. It cannot be exchanged for anything in the whole universe. Your clans are not an issue, nor are your wealth and possessions. God does not want to receive such profane things from you. He will despise them. You have to pass through the true sons and daughters, through True Mother, and through True Father. It will take three generations. Whatever you have is returned to God through the archangel, the son of the archangel, True Mother, and True Father. Once they are returned to God, they return to their original states. After you have become a part of God's family, what you gave will be returned to you. These are not my words. This is a principle of the providence of restoration. (264-320, 1994.11.20)

2.2. Tribal messiahship

2.2.1. Mission of tribal messiahs

Now your roots need to be corrected. What happened to your roots? Through the Fall, the first father and mother went along the wrong path. That is why, centering on the True Parents, we have to pass through the positions of true sons and daughters, eldest son and the original parent. Your roots need to be turned upside down. They cannot connect as they are. Only when they are turned around 180 degrees and connected, can you begin anew. What this means is that you still have a destiny to fulfill, which is to return to your hometowns to change your ancestry. (178-99, 1988.6.1)

What must the tribal messiahs do? They need to restore all that Adam failed to achieve. True Parents came to earth and restored the unfulfilled mission of Jesus and the failure of Adam. Adam stands on the level of the family, but the roots of God's family could not be connected to Adam and Eve. So this must be turned around and, from the position of tribal messiah, you need to restore your own parents and tribes. In doing so, at least four generations are involved, your

grandfather and grandmother, mother and father, yourselves, and your sons and daughters. By connecting these four generations, you then put down the ancestral roots where there have been no roots before, centering on your parents. (210-273, 1990.12.25)

The tribal messiahs are advancing to the position of parents. From this position, they can bring together their sons and daughters. This is predestined. There is no way for you to avoid doing this. If you fail to do so, you cannot be registered and you will not be able to enter the kingdom when you pass on to the next world. There will be no place for you to stand. Therefore, you should be thankful for having a place secured for you.

This is the greatest gift that I can bestow on you. I am asking you to do this great work, which True Father himself was unable to accomplish with his clan, and which can relieve the historical and interminable grief of God on my behalf. In this way, not only will the parents of True Father be liberated, but your parents will also receive great benefit from it. Your mothers and fathers will be transformed into the mothers and fathers who have not fallen. (220-39, 1991.10.13)

In order to restore your tribes, you need to fulfill the mission of tribal messiahs. Such a command is unprecedented in history. The position of the tribal messiah is the same as the position of the second true parents, and therefore a much better situation than that of Jesus. The bestowal of such a position holds great significance and cannot be exchanged for anything in this world. Why should you fulfill your responsibility as tribal messiahs? The first reason is that you need to save your parents. Your parents stand in the position of the first Adam, and you stand in the position of the second Adam. You must fulfill the mission of Adam by restoring and recreating your parents. The second reason is that you require a hometown. By fulfilling your mission as tribal messiahs, you will come to have your own hometown. In the end, the reason you need to fulfill your responsibility as tribal messiahs is to perfect Adam's family. In concrete terms, you need to educate your tribes. (Tribal Messiah - 178)

All of you gathered here today must fulfill the mission similar to that of the messiah in your tribes, whichever clan you belong to, be it Kim, Park, or otherwise. Each of you must think, "I am the Messiah!" representing each of your clans in establishing the Kingdom of God. You have to regard yourself as the savior. You must consider that you are the savior of the Kim clan if you are a Kim. In order to do so, you need to fulfill the duties of a chief priest on behalf of the whole Kim clan. (155-265, 1965.10.31)

Without registering, you cannot become a citizen of the Kingdom of Heaven. If that were the case, you would be just floating in the air, and Satan

would be free to attack you as he pleases from all sides-front, back, left, right, up, and down. All of you are now standing in the position of being able to liberate your own parents through the mission of tribal messiahship on behalf of True Parents. (236-322, 1992.11.9)

Why are tribal messiahs necessary? If there are no tribal messiahs, then all the families cannot be connected between themselves. Without this, you cannot have your hometown. I have my own hometown but you do not have one. After restoring all the families, there will come the age of registration in the future. Once the age of registration comes, tribal formation will take place. The order in which you register will determine your position. Those who register first will be the elders and a new system will be developed so that they can be attended in the same manner as you attend your ancestors. Only when the whole world is transformed accordingly, will the heavenly kingdom on earth be realized. (210-273, 1990.12.25)

Tribal messiahs are absolutely necessary! Those who do not fulfill their missions cannot connect the realms of the first and second Adam. They cannot be connected to True Father, nor can they be registered. Therefore, are tribal messiahs absolutely necessary, or not? They are necessary. The people who do not realize the true value of such blessings from God will treat anything given them with carelessness, even if they are endowed with treasure. These people will be judged according to the same thoughtless standard which they have demonstrated. Everything will be completed once all the tribes are restored. (192-233, 1989.7.4)

Only by receiving the Blessing will it be possible to register into the Kingdom of Heaven. Through this, humankind can finally inherit the Kingdom of God. They can form heavenly families, tribes, a people, nations, world, and cosmos. Therefore, the Kingdom of Heaven is formed, and they become citizens of that kingdom by being registered in it. Originally, the relatives of the first parents should have been registered in the kingdom. However, because those parents fell, we had to pass through numerous periods in history, and gather those to be registered from the entire world. That is why you need to restore through indemnity the unfulfilled mission of Jesus, by accomplishing your duties as tribal messiahs. In order to do so, you need to take responsibility for each nation in the world and dedicate that nation to the Kingdom of Heaven. (269-303, 1995.5.1)

The more people become tribal messiahs, the more they can come together; and by centering on this, you can carry out the movement of reclaiming your own nation. From the east and the west, in fact from all directions of 360 degrees, Blessed Families will emerge and vie with each other in how to reach the top first. You cannot occupy the position of ancestors before you are reg-

istered in the Kingdom of God. If you fail to occupy that position, there is no knowing when you will be pushed out. (269-93, 1995.4.8)

If the members of the Unification Church were to be graded according to how many people they have witnessed to in twenty years, those who have not witnessed to even one person will be viewed as hangers-on. In the future, at the time of registration, that number will be of great importance. We will soon be entering the era of registration. Therefore, the people you have witnessed to must become a part of your clan centering on your family. Isn't Adam's family a part of his clan?

Taking Adam's family into consideration, you can see that as long as there are sons and daughters of Adam's family and his clan, a nation can be established. When you restore the tribe, then a nation will be established automatically. (240-27, 1992.12.11)

If you consider your family, you have your own sons and daughters and your parents, which means there are three generations in a family. There are hundreds and thousands of families that can inherit the ideal of the God-centered family on a similar horizontal level, centering on your own vertical relationship with God. Once they are connected, they can form God's nation. Without doing anything else, a nation can come into existence. The world is not as complicated or as difficult as you might think. (240-27, 1992.12.11)

The religious order that is the Unification Church is a tribe. I am telling you that it is a tribe. The same blood is flowing in all of the members. Therefore, when I shed tears, so should you; and when I am delighted, you should be too. We are all relatives. We are one people come together, united into oneness, transcending the five races and the different national standards with different cultural backgrounds, breaking down all barriers between us, in order to establish the new Kingdom of God. On the day this new race is sanctified, the creation of the Kingdom of God can be realized. Only when you live everyday as the sanctified race of the kingdom, can a new world be created, and can the cosmic Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world emerge through that world. (168-136, 1987.9.13)

I gave you the name of messiah. Tribal messiah! What should you do about it? What should you do as messiahs? Everything you will require in being national messiahs, world messiahs, and cosmic messiahs has already been prepared for you. A mountain-high pile of treasures has been prepared for you. Once you become messiahs, every part of this mountain of treasures will be bequeathed to you. A water pipe will be connected between the treasures and you, and they will flow down the pipe right into your laps as naturally as flowing water. (189-247, 1989.4.9)

Do you think the title "tribal messiah" comes cheaply? Though such

an intelligent True Father devoted his whole life to fulfilling the mission of the messiah, he still feels shameful because he has not done nearly enough. The fact that the name of tribal messiah has been bestowed on you is truly incredible. Through it, you can stand in a position much higher in value than Jesus himself. Even the very ones who opposed the Unification Church, and threw all kinds of insults at us, can be elevated to the position of unfallen Adam. Who, then, can make such a statement in this world? Father has accomplished all that he spoke of until now, because he stood in the position of True Parents. There is not one word of his that has not been fulfilled. (219-150, 1991.8.29)

2.2.2. Fulfillment of restoration of 160 families

You must raise all the members of your tribes into Blessed Families, between 160 and 180 couples. Only then can you be registered in the kingdom. Centering on this, you can seek the nation. Since such a time has arrived, should you become tribal messiahs, or not? This era is not an era of individual salvation. We are living in an age when the family, tribe, nation, and world can all be restored at the same time. So, if you continue to linger at the level of the family, what do you think will happen? (285-207, 1997.5.4)

Blessed families must fulfill the mission of tribal messiahs. Jesus did not accomplish this because he could not unite 120 families. By uniting 160 families, the tribal messiahs must fulfill their missions. This time, by bringing together and uniting 160 families on the world level, you can create family messiahs who can settle down on earth based on fulfilling what Jesus could not achieve, and establish a new history of unfallen true parents. Only when you have carried this out can registration take place. Only then can you be registered into the nation of God and that nation can become yours. You will be included in the family register of that nation. True Father carried on with this task amid persecution from all sides, but you can carry out the same work and bring together 160 families, not amid persecution, but amid welcome. In this way, in being welcomed by 160 families, you can restore through indemnity what True Father has achieved in 160 nations while surrounded by opposition. (266-182, 1994.12.25)

Since we have entered the era of kingship, True Father is sending messiahs to a great number of nations, namely 160 nations, on behalf of God. God carried out the work of salvation until now through one messiah. True Father, on the other hand, settled on earth in his endeavors to carry out God's work of salvation, and the world became free of Satan. True Father is therefore able to dispatch Blessed Families across the world in order to fulfill their mission as tribal messiahs. If these tribal messiahs were to connect to all the family messiahs and be registered into the nation

of God, then the way that leads to the restored world would be opened. (274-184, 1995.10.29)

Once the 160 nations are united into one, the world and cosmos will automatically come to be united as well. You must understand that Father has completed 160 nations. The question is how will you complete 160 families? How will you save 160 families as tribal messiahs? By succeeding in this, you can then be connected to the accomplishment of True Parents' completion of 160 nations. You can then be registered. If your family is restored in this manner, then based on the 160 families, the nation would be restored as well, resulting in the simultaneous restoration of all 160 nations. That is why tribal messiahs are needed. (267-110, 1995.1.3)

Through the Fall of Adam and Eve, not only Adam's family but also his whole tribe was lost. The kingdom would have been built in only seven generations. In seven generations, the foundation for the Kingdom of Heaven on earth would have been completed centering on Adam's clan, but these seven generations failed to inherit the lineage of God. A few thousand families would have come from seven generations. The individual symbolizes formation, the family symbolizes growth, and the tribe symbolizes the completion stage. They all belong in one category. They cannot be separated, even if you try. The process involves three stages. That is why you cannot live alone on the path of faith all the way to completion. You need to live for your family and your tribe. Unless you cross the stage of the tribe, you cannot enter the realm of the world as a nation. You all know that you cannot enter the worldwide nation, the territory that is the world without first restoring a tribe, don't you? Only after blessing at least 160 families can you be registered into the Kingdom of God. Just saying the words is not enough. We need to actually practice them. (275-214, 1995.12.30)

What you must understand is that, if there were no tribal messiahs, it would be the same as losing the legs on which to resurrect, according to the principle of rebirth. Tribal messiahs cannot be registered before first restoring 160 families. The time of registration will make a difference of thousands of generations. You must realize that even among the five billion world population, gaps of generations will be created. Therefore, by summoning up all your strength, you need to carry out the duties of tribal messiah. (265-142, 1994.11.20)

Those who are registered centering on True Parents will become the ancestors of the future. They will become ancestors of the next world, and based on the mainstream tribe and everyone from the collateral family lines, tribes will be created. That is why you need to be registered. You cannot be registered without doing anything for it. You first need to restore 160 or 180 couples. Those who have failed to accomplish this will

be eliminated. The era in which you could assert your position as one of the 36 Couples has already passed. We are now living in the era of equalization, and the only issue in this era is who will be the first to fulfill that responsibility. (286-247, 1997.8.11)

The perfection of self involves perfecting the absolute true love, absolute true life, absolute true lineage, and absolute true conscience. After achieving this, one can then go on to restore the family lost through the Fall and settle down. Since True Parents have settled down, you also need to follow in their footsteps by becoming tribal messiahs, connecting together 160 couples, and taking possession of 160 nations.

By doing so, you will be able to travel freely to and fro between the Kingdom of God in heaven and on earth. This is something you need to inherit at any cost, and so it is unavoidable. Only by accomplishing this task can you be registered, and only after being registered can you possess the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world. Only after being registered can you claim it to be your nation and your kingdom. (268-88, 1995.3.5)

When registering, the order in which you register determines who the ancestors are going to be. Yes, it is determined by who is the first to become a tribal messiah and be registered. Jesus tried to register his 120 followers, but could not accomplish this; in the era of the Second Coming, you need to register based on 160 or 180 couples. It came to be 160 couples because everyone wanted 160, not 180. The number 6 is the number of Satan, and so you need to perfect it in the satanic world. The number 4 is the ideal number. Therefore, four times the number 4 symbolizes the whole. (253-83, 1994.1.7)

The issue at hand is how you can accomplish 160 couples. That is the mission of the tribal messiah. In this manner, by bringing together the 160 couples, centering on your family, you can then connect to the 160 nations. That is how you can perfect the family of Adam which was lost. So, do you absolutely need the 160 couples, or not? Why do you need them? It is so that you can inherit everything won by God and True Parents. The word "inherit" signifies having everything liberated and becoming like God. Do you finally understand how important tribal messiahs are? Without them, you cannot follow True Father. What that means is that you cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. That also means that you cannot liberate the satanic world. That is why you need to fulfill the mission of tribal messiahs, no matter what hardships come your way. Only by fulfilling this mission can you enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Only then can you be registered. Otherwise, you cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. (268-85, 1995.3.5)

You need to restore 160 couples in order to connect them to the world. Jacob had 12 family members, Moses

had the 72 elders, Jesus had the 120 followers, and the returning Lord has 160 head disciples. That means that they are the head disciples. Jesus called his followers his disciples. The words "head disciple" are being used for the first time by me. No one else knows about that.

Since Japan is the Eve nation, True Father has taught it every secret he knows. I have taught you things that even Korean leaders have never heard of before. So, if you do not fulfill your responsibility, it will be on your heads. If you fail to liberate 160 families, you cannot inherit the victorious realms of the first, second, and third Adam. If you fulfill only the realm of the first Adam, you cannot form a connection with the second or third Adam. However, the returning Lord has fulfilled the missions of the first, second, and third Adam, and will engraft you as long as you have laid the foundation of formation, the realm of the first Adam. (265-127, 1994.11.20)

In the past 40 years, True Father has built mission departments in 160 nations amid persecution. Now, Blessed Families, the members of the Unification Church, need to become tribal messiahs and bring together 160 couples. This confederation will be like a crystal. Though Father was persecuted in his endeavors, we have now entered an era where the members of the Unification Church can save their tribe, not under persecution, but in a welcoming situation. Those who claim they cannot accomplish this do not deserve to be our members. As long as you have 160 couples who have received the Blessing, you will obtain the right to register in the nation of God. By accomplishing this, you will safely arrive in the blessed land of Canaan, and enter the position in which you can serve your nation. (252-288, 1994.1.1)

If the world had listened to the words of True Father, a world of peace, the Kingdom of Heaven, would have been established on earth in 1952. Then, what I am teaching you about now, namely, the tribal messiahs, would have been dispatched across the world. Since there are 800 million Christians in the world, 800 million people would have stood on True Father's side, and tribal messiahs would have emerged from towns of every description, with three generations from each family all being tribal messiahs. If this had taken place, the satanic world would have completely come to an end. Then a constitution, which would dictate how the world of the future should be governed would have been enacted and followed. That is why I have not yet taught you in detail the direction you have to take with your family. One thing you must remember is that the era of the great exodus is coming. The families who have followed the words of True Father, and have become tribal messiahs and blessed 160 families, are eligible for registration. Father will then decide the ancestors; who will be the first generation, the second, third, or fourth. Once the ancestors are established, kingship will exist. Therefore, we need to establish the family belonging to the kingship. (273-46, 1995.10.21)

People without accomplishments in love are of no use to God. Everyone must have some accomplishment to his or her name. That is why you can enter the Kingdom of Heaven only when you have your tribes of 36 couples, 72 couples and 120 couples. Without them you cannot be registered. Isn't that how the Divine Principle works? Is it, or is it not? The 36 Couples are proud of the fact that they are one of the elders, but do you think you have this position for nothing? It is actually a very fearful position. You do not know which of these couples Satan will get hold of and attack. (303-166, 1999.8.17)

2.3. Formation of the tribes and genealogy of the heavenly nation

Once we have restored the nation, all of you must be registered. Do you know what the registration is? It is the drawing up of the tribal register. In the future, when being registered into the nation centering on the Unification Church, the tribal register must be drawn up. In drawing up the genealogy, everything you own must be returned to God. Be they many or few, everything from your life, everything that represents the life you have led, must be offered to the nation.

Do you know why the tax rate is so high these days? It is because they are taking in everything. They are taking as much as 98 %. The reason for this is that the time is coming when you will need to offer everything to God's nation. That is how the whole world is at present. They are unwittingly following this trend. Once this comes to pass, and the world becomes one by inheriting the tradition of receiving the Blessing, everything in the world must be returned to God. (101-289, 1978.11.7)

In the future, you will be registered in the Kingdom of Heaven. Your names must be entered into the family register. God's nation must emerge first before you can do that. If there is no nation, there is no place for you to be registered. Therefore, you must understand how important it is to establish God's nation. Only when we have restored a nation, can God carry out His desires through that nation, and can the foundation be made upon which we can finally step over the realm of persecution that is the satanic world. Therefore, no matter what you are engaged in, no matter what you are doing, you must always have the thoughts of the kingdom in your mind. (54-228, 1972.3.24)

The family register must be changed. It must be newly made. The family registers in the satanic world will all be destroyed. They belong to the realm of hell. That is why you need to be registered anew in the family register of the Kingdom of God. You need to get a clear understanding of this today, and from this day forward gather yourself together and work hard to spread this truth to those around you. Whoever stands as the central figure needs to give everything and then forget about what was offered. (251-273, 1993.10.31)

Registration takes place when a new family register for the Kingdom of God is drawn up. The era of registration will come when the 160 families are united into one throughout all of the 160 nations. It will be very similar to the present, where you need to make a registration of birth when someone is born, a registration of marriage when someone is married, and a registration of death when someone has passed away. With the establishment of the nation, basic laws that can formulate and govern a system regarding such practices as family registers must be enacted centering on the constitution. In order for you to become eligible for registration in that nation, the 160 families must be completely united with you centered on God.

When registering, you will not be accepted if you do not know the language of the homeland. Unless your language, culture, and living environment show that you have completely inherited True Parents' realm of culture, you will lose the right to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. (276-216, 1996.2.24)

You need to comply with the laws of the Kingdom of God and learn to respect the laws of the palace of the Kingdom of God. From now on, we need to make preparations for the day when North and South Korea are reunited. You still have a lot of training to do. On that day, not everyone will be granted entrance. The era of registration will then have arrived. When that day comes, gaining entrance to God's nation will be much harder than graduating from college, achieving a doctorate and becoming a professor. You will need to compile the history of all members of your tribe in your generation and have them passed. Both the spiritual and physical worlds will make an appraisal of them and select those who attain the requisite standard.

Bearing this in mind, would you say you have passed or failed in following the instructions of True Father for the last 45 years? You will be judged by how much you have done to come up to the standard. This is not a threat. Watch and wait. I issue instructions only after I have put them into practice myself and have accomplished them. They can all be found in writing in the Kingdom of God as the first article of directions, that is, in legal terms. Questions and answers will all come from them. (210-370, 1990.12.27)

Once heavenly laws are enacted and made public as the constitution, if you break one of them, you will be sent to jail. Excuses like "I did not know about it" will not be accepted. Women who harbor such thoughts in their minds should repent here and now. You must never live in hiding. I am warning you; women have more responsibilities than men. Men tend to listen to women. Do you understand what I am saying? (250-344, 1993.10.15)

When the Japanese occupied Korea, they forced the Korean people to change their surnames through the name change mandate. So, why should it be

hard for you to change your names now? This all happened at the time of Japanese occupation. Isn't that true? I am the person who has come to change your surnames. I have come to uproot your tribal registers. Are you offended by it, or not? I am saying that I will uproot the tribal register of slaves and have your names entered into the tribal registers of royal princes and princesses. So who would not like that? If you do not like it, you can just leave. People like that will go down. That is why you must certainly like it. (39-111, 1971.1.10)

A heavenly tribal register has not been created since the time of Adam. For the first time ever, the era in which the tribal register will be drawn up is coming towards us. The era of family level registration is coming! You must realize that such an awesome and incredible era is coming. (290-167, 1998.2.18)

2.4. The era of the great migration is coming

After you have been registered as tribal messiahs, if you do not know the Korean language, you cannot live in close proximity to the True Parents. Such a day will come in the near future. Registration must be carried out internationally and interracially. The time of the great international migration is coming. Therefore, you need to make haste to become national messiahs. Every word spoken by True Father becomes a reality in this world. That is the way it is supposed to be. (253-48, 1994.1.1)

In the future, centering on the order of registration, the great national level migration will take place. Then those who have opposed the Unification Church will have to pack up their bags and leave. Because he symbolized the Lord at his Second Advent on Satan's side, Stalin ordered the Korean people of Sakhalin to be banished to the deserts of Central Asia, and they were left there to die. Nevertheless, they were able to survive. The Korean race is very persevering. The Korean people united together and survived in the desert. Now, in the same way, people will have to move. On that occasion, people were forced to move, but now they will move voluntarily. This is in accordance with the Principle. By saying that they are going to the Kingdom of Heaven, can they move to a place where they can make a good living? Of course not. When the Kingdom of Heaven is manifested on earth, a great migration will take place. In the order of registration, people will line up starting from right beside True Father. Then those who opposed us will be driven out of Korea. They will have to pack their bags. (253-299, 1994.1.30)

The blessed people stand in a more fortunate position than Jesus did, insofar as they have received the Blessing of marriage. That is why the era has come in which Father will be welcomed with no opposition from all tribes. Then nothing will be easier than bringing together 160 families as tribal messiahs. You will encounter no problems whatsoever. You need to quickly get on with

it. If you fail to accomplish this task, you will be sent away. When the time comes for everyone in the world to line up to gain entrance to the kingdom, you will not be there. Then, once the number of people waiting to register tops 40 million, the rest will have to pack up and move to South America or Africa. The time is coming in which you will have to move even if you are loathe to do it. The era of the great migration is coming. (274-175, 1995.10.29)

Some of those who are here will one day say, "Good God! How could this happen to me!" You just wait and see if they do not. These same people will have to pack their bags and be sent to the South Seas. More than 10 million Unification Church members from all over the world are registering to come here. They are all moving to Korea. Those who do not know about it will have to pack up and leave. A great migration will take place. A great national level migration will take place. It cannot be helped; it will take place. Since I know what hardships there will be then, I have brought you here to listen to these words; so pay attention. Those who pass away without listening carefully may reproach me, saying, "Why didn't you tell us clearly about this at that time?" That is why I am explaining all this to you very clearly, so that I may not be accused. (283-211, 1997.4.12)

Registration can be carried out only when God's nation is created. At that time you will be able to report births, marriages, and deaths in that nation. Though innumerable families in the Unification Church have received the Blessing, they cannot go through with this procedure at present. They cannot even begin to undertake proceedings. You must understand this: since we do not have a nation, registrations must be newly made once we establish one.

That is why a great migration will then take place. People from the North Pole will move to the South Pole, and vice versa. In the future, your nationalities and your tribes will be changed according to the order of procedures. A great exodus will take place. (278-327, 1996.6.23)

Section 3. The Four-Position Foundation Registration Unification Blessing Ceremony

3.1. Transition of the Three Ages Realm of Oneness Unification Blessing Ceremony

The people on earth received the Blessing through True Parents, while those in the spirit world received the Blessing through Heung-jin. These two groups of people, separately blessed through the parents and the sons and daughters in the physical and spirit worlds, must be brought together and united into one. What the son has achieved in the spirit world centering on his parents on earth must be brought down to the earth, so that the foundation for the Blessing bestowed through the parents, that is, the Blessing conducted by parents on earth,

and the foundation for the Blessing in the spirit world, can be connected and unified. The spirit world, which stands in the position of the archangel, needs to be perfected. It must align itself to the standard of the Blessing, and instead of the parents blessing their sons and daughters on earth, Heung-jin needs to come down to the earth and set the condition that the father and son have united into oneness. It needs to be acknowledged that the accomplishments of the True Parents were achieved together with Heung-jin. (332-287, 2000.9.24)

The era in which an eighty-year old man travels around the world to bless people will soon pass. Instead, a new era will be inaugurated, where you would perform the Blessing Ceremony on behalf of True Parents, together with Heung-jin, also performing the Blessing Ceremony on behalf of True Parents in the spirit world. To this end, I have bequeathed to my son, Heung-jin in the spirit world, the authority to conduct the Blessing, from the position of the father in the physical world. Furthermore, the foundation on which the Blessing is performed in the spirit world has equal value to that of the standard through which Father can also go there any time to perform the Blessing. What this means is that the Blessing performed in both worlds is of equal value and on the same level, whether it is performed by True Father in this world together with the son, or performed by True Father in the spirit world with his son in attendance. Therefore, you must understand that True Father has passed down the authority to perform the Blessing to his son, in order to set forth the significance of the unified Blessed Families, who stand on an equal footing. (332-287, 2000.9.24)

When a father passes on to the spirit world, he will become the elder brother and his son will become the younger brother. Therefore, Heavenly Father is in the position of father to both the father and the son. In the presence of God, everyone is a son. In this regard, they are all sons of God, but since the father was born before the son, he can assume the position of the elder brother on the horizontal level.

That is why True Parents have perfected the position of the parents, so that they can then bring about the perfection of the position of the son, by bestowing on him and uniting into one what is of the same value both in the spiritual and physical worlds. By making this declaration of unification in the joint presence of Heung-jin, the elder son in the spirit world, and Blessed Families, we will now enter the era where True Parents no longer need to perform the Blessing; instead, Heung-jin will conduct it, and in his absence, Hyun-jin can hold the Blessing on behalf of True Father. (332-289, 2000.9.24)

You sons and daughters, Blessed Families who are all the third generation from God, must on no account commit the Fall, once you have received the Blessing. If you were to fall, the time in which True Parents come and save the

world will pass. The lineage of the husbands and wives who have inherited the right of kingship representing the ancestors of the Three Ages, where the stained lineage has been completely changed and so can perform the Blessing themselves, must never be defiled in thousands and tens of thousands of years to come. The defiled bloodline must not continue. You must keep your chastity. This is a very serious matter.

You will no longer be able to ask for forgiveness, saying, "Please forgive us in the name of True Parents." There will be no other way for you to be saved other than sacrificing your own ancestors and your beloved brothers and sisters. That lineage would not be pure, and so it must be removed. A pure lineage must be passed on. This is very serious. (332-291, 2000.9.24)

I want to warn you, that Blessed Families in the realm of the third generation from God must not, under any circumstances, become families that taste the bitter sorrow of the Fall. (332-294, 2000.9.24)

The women who participate in the Registration Special Workshop have been registered, and so can take responsibility for their sons and daughters. The mother should unite together with her sons and daughters and help their father repent of his sins, thereby setting up the position of unfallen parents. Thus, the husband and wife should follow in the footsteps of the coming True Parents, and stand in the position of having devoted everything in the cosmos with a grateful heart, including themselves, their sons and daughters, all of creation, and the Old, New, and Completed Testament Ages, and attend God on His throne.

The place where you inherit the actual authority of love is the very starting point of having your own homeland, and the beginning of the restoration of the homeland. Henceforth, everything desired in providential history, but which has remained unattainable for Blessed Families, should be indemnified so that we can take responsibility for the chaotic era of the reunification of North and South Korea. In this solemn task of restoring the homeland with our own hands, and thereby restoring our homeland, you are the mothers and sons and daughters of the soldiers at the front line. You must understand that you have been ordered to march forward on the one-way path towards victory and perfection, step by step, working together with heaven and earth. The Parents of Heaven and Earth hope and pray that you will be the soldiers who, as the first, second, or third generation, do not leave an indelible stain on the reputation and traditions of heaven, and instead become proud families that are not ashamed to show your faces before your ancestors in the spirit world. I pray to God with my family, including the blessed eldest son Heung-jin and Hyun-jin, that all members will become victorious princes and princesses of heaven and earth, by achieving the goal of liberating the perfection and completion of the absolute ideal! Amen! (332-298, 2000.9.24)

I proclaim the bequeathal of the victories of True Parents in the physical world as the victorious traditions and unified ideal centered on Heung-jin, the representative of the right of the eldest son in the spirit world. Therefore, every being in the cosmos should, with a grateful heart, pledge loyalty and devotion to the eternal and unchanging nation of love and the Kingdom of Heaven of love on earth and in spirit world, and fulfill the duties of filial sons and daughters, patriots, chaste women, saints, and sages! This we pledge! Amen! This we pledge! Amen! This we pledge! Amen! (332-302, 2000.9.24)

3.2. Four-Position Foundation Registration

You cannot be registered unless you have the foundation of a family. The True Parents are the family of the world representing the foundation of the Blessing based on the family, and so you must bear in mind that there is no other way to be registered other than by forming an objective realm with them. In other words, you need to register the birth of your family. In this place, where a peaceful environment and the unified realm of the will of God begin, the fact that you are registered by family indicates that the nation itself can be restored instantly. (269-55, 1995.4.7)

Because of the Fall of the family of Adam and Eve, everything was registered in the name of Satan. At this time, centering on your family, your nations and everything in the world need to be returned to God and registered in His name. This is the way of the Principle. The Fall occurred centering on the family. Therefore, it needs to be indemnified. Since this principle is now in effect, if there were any presidents in the world, their nations should be brought before God to be registered. On the day of registration, the entire nation would be saved. (184-96, 1988.12.20)

You need to be registered based on the family. You have not registered yet, have you? A truly fearful time will soon be upon us. I am not going to go into any details about it. If a family violates the heavenly law, it should be cut off. That is in accordance with the rules of the Principle. (28-333, 1970.2.11)

You should love the True Parents as you love God, and you need to love your brothers and sisters as you do God and the True Parents. The person who loves all humankind as he does his family and brothers and sisters is qualified to become a citizen of the Kingdom of Heaven. In other words, he is eligible for registration. (190-122, 1989.6.18)

The incoming tide flows in very quickly in the beginning. You do not realize how fast it is. However, once the water is in and reaches the high mark, the incoming and outgoing tides exchange places in less than a minute. In this time of grace, it takes less than one minute for everyone to stand on the same level. That is why the enthusiastic youths of the Unification Church can be

blessed together with people from the satanic world, and the world population of five billion can be united overnight. In this way, tens of thousands of families would be connected horizontally through the Blessing. Then God's nation will be established. In establishing that nation, these families will emerge as the ancestors. (253-299, 1994.1.30)

From this time on, when you receive the Blessing, you need to take responsibility for your tribe. Even if they are pushed into receiving the Blessing by force, they will still receive a pass to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. (283-295, 1997.4.13)

3.3. True Parents' instructions to Registered Families

a. Steadfast defense of the pure lineage
b. Settlement of unchanging heart
c. Education of children in practicing true love
d. Breaking down of national boundaries and cross-cultural marriage
e. Restoration of the homeland and establishment of the Kingdom of Heaven
f. Memorization of Hoon Dok Gyeong and Divine Principle
g. Fulfillment of the Family Pledge
h. Settlement of Noon

(333-233, 2000.9.26)

3.4. Mobilization of blessed wives and the restoration of the homeland

The time in which the family needs to take responsibility is now upon us. Only after this takes place can registration begin. Therefore, those who did not send out their wives will be caught. Once they are caught, there will be no way to help them, even if they come crying to me. Not even I can do anything about it. (37-264, 1970.12.27)

Now the time has come for all those in your clans to be registered. If you do not take part in the mobilization, you cannot be registered. Since this is the case, should your Blessed Families participate in the mobilization, or not? How about previously married Blessed Couples? What about the previously married Blessed Couples? They are free to take part if they want to, but it is not mandatory. If other people outside the Blessed Families want to be mobilized, they can join, but if not, so be it. However, everyone will want to take part. Such a time has now arrived. (164-292, 1987.5.17)

The Lord at his Second Advent comes as the father. Nevertheless, all blessings of the Kingdom of God come down through the mother. The eldest son inherits and represents the tradition of the mother followed by the traditions of the parents, and the second-born son inherits all these and even the tradition of the first son.

Therefore, the mother should be absolutely obedient to the commands of the father; the eldest son should be absolutely obedient to the mother; and the younger siblings should be absolutely obedient to the eldest son. That is the way it should be. Therefore, it is the overall view of the Principle that any fam-

ily failing to reach such a standard as just described cannot become a family which can attend God. (283-56, 1997.4.8)

Since True Father knows the heart of God very deeply, just one word from anyone will restart the flow of tears from his eyes. The fact that God, who should rule freely over the whole universe and govern all the nations, had His ideal trampled upon, the ideal of His being the sovereign of all sovereigns and reigning over all of humanity in the parent-child relationship with the authority and power of the king of all ages is a truly mortifying reality. At this time, the day of glory on which we will rise up, defeat all the evil powers of this world, and restore the sovereignty longed for by God is now right before our eyes. (164-216, 1987.5.16)

You must understand that the day of hope, on which we can live in an independent state centered on God, will be the most precious time on earth which cannot be exchanged for anything. Among those who have passed on to the spirit world, there is not one person who has lived in the realm of a nation centered on God. True Father knows this. Though I have put the members of the Unification Church through many hardships, do you realize what a prestigious thing it is to have the original human nature and to live in dignity as citizens before the sovereign, in the restored providential nation?

This is the standard according to which True Father has lived his whole life. Though I gave many people trouble, I did so in my fight for the day of glory, when we can put our whole heart into dedicating everything in our life of attendance to God, who is the sovereign of the nation of which we are the citizens. (164-216, 1987.5.16)

The homeland that we need to reclaim is not an existing nation on earth with its own history and traditions. It is completely different from those other nations in essence. In order for us to be able to inherit such a nation that stands on a completely different level from others, we need to become citizens with appropriate ideological proactivity. That proactive ideology should be in accord with the ideology of the absolute Creator.

For a nation desired by the Absolute Being to exist, you should yearn for that nation to be one in which the citizens would be united together centering on the nation's sovereignty. Therefore, the nation should take form based on such a standard of citizenship. Because you did not qualify as the people who can maintain such a nation, that nation could not be established. (49-93, 1971.10.9)

In this world that we live in, how numerous are the homelands? Don't the Korean people call the Republic of Korea their homeland? People in North Korea claim that to be their homeland, centering on Kim Il-sung. The Japanese people call Japan their homeland, don't they? The Chinese people regard China as their homeland. The innumerable races in the world, which have their roots in a certain nation or in a particular people,

and have spread out from there, claim that nation or ancestral place to be their homeland. However, originally there should not have been hundreds and thousands of homelands in the human world. There is only one original homeland. There should be only one homeland. (241- 291, 1993.1.1)

Our homeland is just one nation. Each one of us is trying to find our way back to the one hometown located in that one nation. At present, there is no nation that can be said to be the homeland in the name of God, where He can dwell and reside with us in our hometown. That hometown cannot be Moscow or Washington. There is no such place there. Therefore, what I am saying is that we should seek for the treasure, that is, establish our homeland and hometown. (102-260, 1979.1.14)

Even when I was lying down, I always had thoughts of God's homeland in mind. Since this house is not located in the nation of God, I have no particular affection for it. I am only attached to this place, having children and leading my life here, because I do not have any other choice.

How much would God and the spirits in the other world yearn for the unification of the homeland! How much would they yearn for it! Wouldn't they hope in their hearts, "Even though I am in hell, even though I am at the lowest level of the spirit world, I wish our homeland will be established soon…"? Only when the homeland is manifested on earth would they receive liberation. Therefore, if so, they should be granted an amnesty. Such is the work I carried out during my imprisonment. I had the gates opened wide. I made a highway both in the spiritual and physical worlds. I am hoping and praying, "The whole spirit world should face in the same direction True Parents are going, and march forward towards the one nation of God!"

The spirit world is praying for the physical world, encouraging True Parents in their work. You must know this. Isn't that what God desires? "True Parents on earth, please fight well and be victorious, and relieve the spirit world of its grief and lamentation!" You should be ashamed of the fact that you were neither born nor raised in the nation of God, but instead have lived to your current age in the satanic world. (164-218, 1987.5.16)

Section 4. The Era of Registration and Our Responsibilities

4.1. Registration comes from the grace of the True Parents

People living in this present age have inherited the lineage of Satan. For this reason, they need to repent. It is a disgrace, for which they cannot show their faces before the Great Owner of the universe. They are shameful children who cannot call out to God, and instead need to hide behind rocks lest He sees even their backsides. They inherited the blood of the enemy of love. They must crawl on their stomachs, shed tears with runny noses, and be able to admit, "I deserve

to be punished," even at the risk of their lives. They must find their true selves and be able to give out a cry of gratitude from the bottom of their hearts, even if they face certain death. They are piteous beings who are ignorant of the fact that they have fallen into a pit of eternal resentment where there is no love. I came to realize that the fundamental issues of human life cannot be resolved without understanding the problems manifested throughout history, the true nature of the universe, and the grief of God. You do not know what trials I had to go through to find this path, unknown by anyone. You cannot even begin to fathom the hardships I went through in my youth, groping blindly in the dark in the quest for answers. However, I was triumphant in the end, built up an organization that can accomplish this task, not just in words but in deeds, and now the worldwide foundation testifies to it. Now the era has arrived in which anyone who comes running to us, holds fast to the banner, and turns around can enter the Kingdom of God. (209-292, 1990.11.30)

Consider in your minds how much you have dragged yourself around, giving forth a vile odor, defiling the Unification Church and making a stage for Satan to perform on. After considering all this, you could not dare to sit with your chest puffed out before God and True Father. Tell me yourselves; could you do so? Those who grow up in the natural realm of God's love and lineage, where they can liberate and inherit the right of the eldest son and right of kingship, may be able to sit up straight in front of God and myself, but can you claim to be a person like that? You are like weak hollowed-out logs, ready to fall down at any moment, and yet it is people like you who are boastfully strutting around. You should realize this. (206-255, 1990.10.14)

What rights can you claim to have, when all I see among you are good-for-nothings? Can you claim to have the right to receive the Blessing? You are sitting there waiting to receive the Blessing, but what have you accomplished during the years you have been in the Unification Church? The Blessing is not something you can receive after doing nothing but sitting and waiting. Ideally, the Blessing can only be offered after the ancestors have labored assiduously for tens of thousands of years, and after the descendants have come and expressed their gratitude in solemn words millions of times, and after everyone in heaven and earth has gathered in reverence to praise that day of glory. Indeed, does this sound like something you can do? (30-224, 1970.3.23)

Wait and see if the words of True Father are true or false. If you want to find out whether what I have said is true or all lies, drop dead right here and now and see for yourselves. You should realize that everything I have taught you is in accordance with the reality of the next world, and follow these teachings. In any event, this is a path you all need

to tread. Unless you follow the teachings of True Father, you cannot cross over the summit. There is no other guide.

That is why God is teaching, through a person like me, the path which Christianity and the free and democratic world should take in this wretched world of today. This is where the logic of True Parents, both in name and reality, is derived from. (209-227, 1990.11.29)

Are the words, "Take after True Father," a blessing or a curse? These words imply that I will hand over to you all the blessings which I have prepared. After True Father has climbed over a big hill, then based on his achievement you should follow suit. You will also experience the same vertical relationship with God. (199-188, 1990.2.16)

Every one of you should practice absolute love and absolute obedience. The families in the Garden of Eden have nothing they can claim as their own. When they become true sons and daughters, standing in oneness with God and His absolute love and lineage, everything in the whole universe will belong to them. Once you have become one in love, everything will become yours. (300-303, 1999.4.11)

4.2. Establishing the tradition of Blessed Families

This is the era of establishing the royal family of the Kingdom of God. The day is coming when all the good-for-nothings will be pushed out as if with a bulldozer. Once you go out into the world with the Principle and everything else I have taught you, there will not be a single person in Korea who can stand in the way of the heavenly tradition, just as the Unification Church itself cannot stand in the way of those traditions. Such people must be pulled out at the roots. You should execute this without hesitation. When it is necessary to take a strong stand in establishing the traditions of the heavenly kingdom, you should have the guts to do so. Look at me. Look into my eyes. See how I speak without hesitation. I am a very assertive person. If you do something wrong, you will not find forgiveness in me. Taking into consideration the fact that the day when we have to establish this tradition worldwide is rapidly approaching us, you should solemnly repent for your past failures, and correct yourselves, your work, and your families. (184-243, 1989.1.1)

In the future, all of humankind will need to register into the kingdom. On registering with one of the twelve tribes, your whole life, including everything you did from the time you joined the church until the present moment, needs to be recorded. If you took so much as a piece of cloth belonging to the church for your own, that act should be recorded. If the record thus drawn up does not correspond with the computer records kept in the spirit world, you cannot enter. All of you will need to write an honest confession, a written statement. The day is coming when you will have to bring everything out into the open for it

to be cleared up for good. This is the reason why you need to receive the Blessing on three levels: firstly in the church, secondly after the unification of North and South Korea, and thirdly after the unification of the world. That is how it is.

We should all yearn for the era of a unified North and South Korea to come as quickly as possible. Only after you have received the world level Blessing will you be able to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Otherwise, when you pass on to the spirit world, you will have to wait there indefinitely. (212-59, 1991.1.1)

There can be only one conclusion of all human values. What is at the core of that conclusion? It is true love. If you were asked what true love is, you would not be able to define it. The ideological view of the Unification Church is to create one world based on love. It dictates clearly and in concrete terms how an individual, a family, and a tribe should live. That set of laws is not just some conception of Rev. Moon. It reflects the laws of heaven. Otherwise, we would not be able to register in the next world. (147-194, 1986.9.21)

From the theoretical perspective, there will no longer be anything to explain with regard to God's will. Everything has been completed. The time has now come for us to turn over a new leaf. Now that we are carrying on the history bequeathed to us from God and True Parents, the era of registration will soon arrive. Then you will have to be registered. Have you all become like God and True Parents in the position of sons and daughters of God? It is easy to say, but not to fulfill. Whether asleep or awake, you must always keep this in mind. These thoughts must accompany you wherever you go, and whatever you do, whether you are eating or sleeping. In order to do so, you need to experience residing in the homeland before passing on to the next world. (201-234, 1990.4.22)

Through the Fall, everything that should not exist, everything that is contrary to the way of heaven, is overflowing in this world. It all needs to be eradicated. It needs to be separated from God's world. Words alone are not enough to achieve this. The world is filled with the variegated customs and habitual lifestyles of different races, from the various historical and cultural backgrounds which are connected to each other only through the love, life, and lineage of Satan. Therefore, it will not be easy to eliminate all this.

This is the reason why it is written in the Bible, those who seek to die will live. This is how the paradoxical logic is formed. Those who seek to die will live. In other words, you need to invest your life into this. Therefore, everything needs to be bleached and washed, that is, restored through indemnity. Such a process is absolutely necessary. If this is not carried out, and you are still left with the habitual tendencies or criminal nature as remnants of the satanic world, you cannot form a relationship with God. (213-98, 1991.1.16)

You will not be able to find the path

of salvation in following your present habitual lifestyles. You need to walk a completely new path of atonement. The providence of salvation is that of restoration, and the providence of restoration is that of re-creation. In accordance with this, in order to be recreated, you need to be restored to the original position before the Fall, the state of complete self-denial. In such a state, there would be no self-awareness, no habits, and no surnames like Kim or Lee, as at present. You need to attain such a state of emptiness. Taking into consideration God's original standard of creation, you can see that every being created by Him was initiated from a state of non-being. (213-98, 1991.1.16)

The members of the Unification Church cannot live as they please. You cannot deceive your own conscience, can you? Can you deceive your conscience? As long as you cannot deceive your conscience, you cannot deceive the family register of the Kingdom of God. Everything is recorded. Every action I take, be it the raising of my hand, is videotaped, isn't it? If it is possible to record such things in the physical world, do you think it would be impossible in the Kingdom of God? If you wanted to find out how a particular Blessed Family is doing, all you would need to do is press a button. You would then be able to see not only their childhood, but even their ancestors. It would take less than an instant. It would not take long at all. On earth, there is the concept of time, but in the spirit world it would be finished in the blink of an eye. (148-290, 1986.10.25)

Even if a new bride was indescribably beautiful, if she was married into a renowned noble family, she would have to follow the rules of her new family. If she failed to comply with those rules, she would be banished. Can you imagine how hard that would be? It would be all the more difficult if the lifestyle, habits, and customs of the two families were very different. Keeping in time with a life filled with rules and regulations, and maintaining love, would not be easy. It would be very difficult. If you failed to live according to them, you would be banished. (184-243, 1989.1.1)

Absolute obedience! You need to practice absolute obedience. These are not the words of True Father. These words are in accordance with the Principle viewpoint. This is real, not just a concept. Absolute faith! Absolute love! Absolute obedience! Only then can individualism be turned upside down. Only then will Satan flee. Satan will flee! Therefore, you need to practice absolute obedience.

If North and South America followed this way, they would be united. I am talking about absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience. That is the right track. You need to follow this track. Once you are standing in such a position, you are able to restore the lineage, the right of ownership, and the realm of heart. Through the restoration of your tribe, you are able to claim, "This nation is my nation. It is absolutely my nation!

The family, tribe, a people, and nation are all absolutely mine!" (269-94, 1995.4.8)

Adam and Eve lost the standard through which they could practice absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience. They entered unprincipled marriage, thereby defiling the lineage, completely overturning the right of ownership, and bringing into ruin their whole tribe. Therefore, the absolute restoration of the lineage must take place.

In other words, you need to protect the pure lineage of True Parents so that it can be passed down to your descendants eternally. Adam and Eve failed to do so and entered a fallen relationship. Therefore, you need to maintain purity and be blessed in marriage. You can then restore the absolute lineage, the absolute right of ownership, and the absolute realm of heart. This should be our motto, in fact three mottos. (269-94, 1995.4.8)

BOOK TEN

THE WAY IN THE COMPLETED TESTAMENT AGE



Contents

Chapter 1. A Perspective on Human Life

Section 1. What Is Human Life? 1465
1.1. Problems in life have been like a maze 1465
1.2. What is our destiny? 1467
Section 2. Human Beings Are Resultant Beings 1468
2.1. Human beings was born from God's love 1468
2.2. Original purpose for the birth of human beings 1470
2.3. We live for the sake of love 1471
Section 3. The Great Value of Human Beings 1473
3.1. Original human value is akin to that of God 1473
3.2. Human beings: temples for God to indwell 1476
Section 4. Original Human Nature and the True Lifestyle 1479
4.1. Live in harmony with your original mind 1479
4.2. Human perfection means mind-body unity 1480
4.3. The original mind is the teacher and closest to God 1483
Section 5. The Path of True People 1487
5.1. The path people should seek 1487
5.2. The way true human beings should go 1490
5.3. The rationale for establishing the law of living for the sake of others .. 1492

Chapter 2. A Perspective on the Family

Section 1. What Is an Ideal Family? 1496
1.1. Why is the family valuable? 1496
1.2. The family gives birth to the love for society, nation, and humanity 1499
Section 2. The Family Is the Basic Unit of Heaven 1503
2.1. Family is the cornerstone of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven 1503
2.2. The family is the training ground for true love 1506
Section 3. The Ideal and Value of True Family 1511
3.1. True parents, true couples, and true children 1511
3.2. The qualities of a true family 1515
Section 4. We Enter Heaven as a Family 1519
Section 5. The Family Pledge 1523
5.1. Those who can recite the Family Pledge 1523
5.2. The content of the Family Pledge 1525

Chapter 3. A Perspective on the Nation and the World

Section 1. The One Nation and World Sought by Humankind 1536
1.1. The Adam-centered ideology, Adam's nation and Adam's world 1536
1.2. The nation we all desire 1538
Section 2. Characteristics of an Ideal Society, Nation and World 1542
2.1. Humankind as one extended family 1542

2.2. The society of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values 1545
2.3. One language 1546
Section 3. The Way of True Love is the Central Ideology of Humankind 1548
3.1. The way of Adam is the way of the parent 1548
3.2. The way of the parent is the way of true love 1550
Section 4. The Future of the Democratic and Communist Worlds 1554
4.1. Unifying the democratic and communist worlds 1554
4.2. Head-wing thought will rectify religion and philosophy 1558
Section 5. When God-centered Sovereignty Is Restored 1560
5.1. The world where God's will is fulfilled 1560
5.2. Seeking God's nation 1563

Chapter 4. The Way in the Completed Testament Age

Section 1. The Settlement of the Victorious Domain of True Parents 1566
1.1. Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages: restoration of the right of the eldest son, right of the parent and right of kingship 1566
1.2. Restoration of the right of the parent and right of kingship through the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father 1568
Section 2. Complete Providential Settlement and the Great Proclamation of the True Parents 1570
2.1. Proclamation of the True Parents (Messiah) 1570
2.2. Declaration of God's Eternal Blessing (*Chil Il Jeol*: 7.1. Day) 1572
2.3. Declaration of the elimination of historical indemnity 1574
2.4. Declaration of the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth (*Chil Pal Jeol*: 7.8. Day) 1575
2.5. Proclamation of the liberation of hell and the opening of the gates of heaven 1579
2.6. Ceremony for the Total Liberation of the People in the Spirit World 1580
2.7. Proclamation of the Complete Liberation for Cosmic Expansion of the True Blessing and the Rooting Out of the Satanic Lineage 1584
2.8. Proclamation of the Completion of the Completed Testament Age and God's Kingdom on Earth and in Heaven 1586
2.9. Declaration of Congratulations for True Parents' East-West (Global) Victory 1588
2.10. Congratulatory Declaration of True Parents' Cosmic Victory 1590
2.11. Declaration of the Liberation and Unification of the Cosmos of the Parents of Heaven and Earth (*Gu Gu Jeol*: 9.9. Day) 1593
2.12. Declaration of the Era of the Fourth Adam (*Ssang Shib Jeol* – Double Ten Day) 1597

Section 3. The Seven Great Jardim Declarations and the Establishment of the New Eden 1597
3.1. The first declaration: The New Hope Farm Declaration 1597
3.2. The second declaration: Absolute, Unique, Unchanging and Eternal Ideal Family 1598
3.3. The third declaration: Declaration of the First, Second and Third Creators 1599
3.4. The fourth declaration: Declaration of the Accomplishment of our Destined Task 1600
3.5. The fifth declaration: *Sa Sa Jeol* (4.4. Day); Declaration of the Family ... 1603
3.6. The sixth declaration: Ceremony of Liberation and Unification of All Spirits and the Entire Spirit World 1604
3.7. The seventh declaration: Declaration of the Cosmic *Sa Sa Jeol* (4.4. Day) 1605
Section 4. The Family Federation for World Peace and Unification 1606
Section 5. Crossing Through the Valley of the Fall 1607
5.1. The Parents' path is different from that of the children 1607
5.2. The path of children is the path of absolute obedience 1608
5.3. Blessed members' rules and duties 1611
Section 6. The Realm of the Fourth Adam Is the Era of Freedom and Autonomy 1614
6.1. The era of the fourth Adam is that of natural restoration 1614
6.2. The era of praying in one's own name 1616
6.3. The era of creating oneself in the status of the second creator 1616
Section 7. The Royal Family of Love 1618
7.1. Heaven is open to those with the qualities of the royal family 1618
7.2. Become a person of love 1623

CHAPTER ONE

A Perspective on Human Life

Section 1. What Is Human Life?

1.1. Problems in life have been like a maze

Why were we born, why should we live, and where should we go? You should not think that you were the cause of your birth. People are born into this world yet do not know the origin and purpose of their birth; they are ignorant of the motivation and purpose of their existence.

Neither our birth nor our life nor our death stems from our own intentions. Then, what do we have to be proud about? We have no control over our birth, we are merely custodians in this life, and we cannot avoid the path of death. Thus, any attempt at self-praise and holding self-indulgent pride is pitiful. Once born, we are destined to live, and destined to die and pass away to the next world. (7-178, 1959.9.6)

Up to this present day, philosophy has historically labored to solve the problems of human life. Many philosophers arose and took great pains to come up with all kinds of theories with regard to true human value and perfection, and to succeed on their own in order to be proud before the whole universe. However, today we see that all ideologies and assertions that led to the establishment of new ideological systems were tested in practice by human society and found to be failures; they all fell by the wayside. (141-125, 1986.2.20)

Why do people live haphazardly, hating to die, yet harbor many questions in their minds, such as, "Why am I living? What is the origin of my life?" The answers to these questions cannot be found in books written by philosophers because the purpose of philosophy lies in seeking and paving the way toward God. Then what is religion? Religious life begins from learning about God in order to live together with Him. (186-12, 1989.1.24)

What is the purpose of this life? You should reflect on this question once more. Since we are not the cause, it follows that the purpose does not lie with us alone. No one would object to the idea of being happy in life. No one would reject a dazzling life. Yet none of us is free to live as we please. Still, each of us wishes to feel pride in ourselves, live freely with respect to our own will, and be remembered accordingly. These

conflicting elements can all be found within our hearts. (7-178, 1959.9.6)

Let us say you live up to eighty years of age. If you subtract the hours you spend sleeping, you are left with about fifty years of life. Would you say you are alive when you are asleep? When you are asleep, you are as good as dead, because you are inanimate. Sleeping is the same as being dead the whole time. The number of hours you labor each day to make a living is about half of the twenty-four hours in a day. Now deduct the time you spend eating. From whatever time is left subtract the time spent visiting, going to friends' parties, attending the sixtieth birthday celebrations of village elders, attending funerals and wakes, and being bedridden. In short, if you were to exclude all the days you lose for whatever reasons that might arise, you cannot claim to have actually lived very much. Would it even be half of your entire lifetime? When I calculated this recently, it came out as roughly seven years. Even so, of those seven years, how many days could you claim to have truly lived? (49-336, 1971.10.24)

Life passes by very quickly. After attaining maturity and coming to know the affairs of the world, doing things here and there, you will find yourselves crossing the forty-year mark, and soon after that, the fifty-year mark. A decade will fly by in the twinkling of an eye, and in what will seem like only seconds, you will be sixty years old. Then very soon you will be seventy, but only for a minute before you age again. When you think about it, the saying, "Life is but a fleeting dream," has never sounded so true. (188-38, 1989.2.16)

A person's fortune stretches and shrinks like an elastic rubber band. If someone who is born with fortune valued at 100 spends 120 in the course of his life, his descendants will perish. If he spends only 80, he can bequeath the remaining 20 as a blessing to his descendants. (78-332, 1975.6.10)

You can change your fortune, but not your inherited destiny. Can you change your homeland? Can you change your parents? However strong a nation's sovereignty and customs might be, it can never change the fact that you were born as the son or daughter of your parents. As can be seen, the path of restoration is also a destined path. (172-55, 1988.1.7)

When you make a wrong start, you end up in a totally unexpected place. Hence, when a ship sets out into the great ocean, it should chart its course and follow the compass from the moment it first sets sail from port. Then, what is the port of departure for human life? People do not know. Where can we find the direction and guiding compass to reach our destination in the world beyond? People have not been able to find this, so they have been wandering about back and forth. However much they try, they are not able to overcome their human limitations. (172-28, 1988.1.3)

1.2. What is our destiny?

Where will we go after this life? People must resolve this important issue. Religions and philosophies arose historically to do this. You therefore cannot deny that all of you too are caught up and driven by this destiny.

That being always the case, where are our minds and bodies trying to go? Where are our hearts, wishes, hopes, and ideals trying to go? Toward what do our lives incline? Even if we cannot answer these questions, we are still destined to eventually pass away. When we die, our bodies will be buried in the ground. So then, will our minds, lives, hearts, ideals, and even hopes be buried together the day our bodies are buried? Do they disappear? Unless you have sound contents, solutions, and a purposeful perspective, you will inevitably become unhappy people. (8-194, 1959.12.20)

In order for cicadas to become adults, they must first hatch from eggs and then pass through the maggot or larval stage. While in that stage, they live either underwater or underground, but that is not the final stage of their life cycle. Their ultimate destiny is to fly in the air. Before they can do so, however, they need to make preparations while they are underground or underwater and these preparations are indispensable.

For them to pass on from the larval to the adult stage, they need to make thorough preparations to fly while still in the previous stage. To pass from the former to the latter, they need to first shed their shell, the final barrier before their state of maturity, and molt into adult insects. While living in water as nymphs, they need to be broad and flat, to float easily; on the other hand, when they have become adults and must fly in the air, retaining such a shape would not work. Thus, they need to undergo a complete metamorphosis to adapt accordingly. (120-222, 1982.10.17)

For what reason are we born? What should be the focus of our life, and for what purpose do we pass on? These questions can never be answered without God. Without Him, we cannot find our true purpose in life. Those who lack purpose can neither reap the fruit of their work nor have their value recognized.

A building is constructed according to an architect's blueprint. Without reference to that original blueprint, it cannot become what was originally intended in the design. (21-100, 1968.11.17)

The arrival of autumn foretells the coming of winter. Only those with vitality can pass through the course of winter. Things without vitality cannot but retreat from it. Thus, they need to be infused with new life before the coming of winter. We need a new principle and thought based on a new love, and a new outlook on life, the world, and the universe. Without these, we cannot survive through winter. The course is arduous, but once you acquire the vitality to pass through winter, spring will draw nearer with each passing day. The mild spring

days will soon arrive. This is the path trodden by the Unification Church. (35-68, 1970.10.3)

Section 2. Human Beings Are Resultant Beings

2.1. Human beings was born from God's love

We were not born of our own free will, or as a result of plans drawn up by our parents to have a particular son or daughter. Thus, we were not born at the request of our parents. If we were to research further into the origins of our existence based on God's providence, there would be no other way than to conclude that we are in accord with the origin of the providence, and were born on earth to bear the important responsibility of forming a relationship with the ever-shifting history based on that origin. Therefore, although each individual seems small in the process of history, it does not mean that we will end up as nothing more than small insignificant beings. (34-155, 1970.9.6)

Where is the origin through which human beings can connect their births and themselves? Faced with the principles of this great universe, where should they begin to look to find the origin that they can claim to be theirs? Born as resultant beings, those who do not know the causal being, but who yet assert themselves as wise, are all out of their minds (83-191, 1976.2.8)

There is a very simple answer to the questions: "Why were we born?" "Why did God create humankind?" "Why did He create all things of creation?" God requires an object of His love, and thus He created human beings in order to fulfill this.

At this moment aren't you thinking, "I am worthless; therefore, it would not matter whether I continued to live or not"? Yet there is no reason for you to think in this way. Being the object of God's love is like being loved by your parents; they do not love only their more capable children. They love all of their children equally regardless of their capability. Similarly, parents with disabled children ache more for them.

God, who is the center of heaven and earth, has a heart of love that transcends the limits of our capabilities. What is most important is whether you can manifest love through your original nature. Hence, you need to know why you were created and why the whole universe came into being. You need to know that you, as well as the whole universe, were created to realize the ideal of love. (130-44, 1983.12.11)

Why did God create the whole universe, and why did He create us? It was for love. Why were we born? We were born due to God's love. We were born from His love and destined to live in His love. To become a person who can claim to be loved by your family, your society, your nation, and the world, as well as by God, you would first need to live in His love. (97-266, 1978.3.19)

What was it that you were born with as an endowment from your parents? It can be said that you were born as the connectors of life. At the place where your mother and father united, you were born with the value of the vital force of both parents within you. That vital force exists for love, and that force and love exist to fulfill the purpose of the universe. That is how it is. In short, you were born to fulfill an overall purpose. Whether man or woman, everyone is born from the union based on the vital force in order to perfect themselves as co-creators in fulfilling the great purpose of the universe. (110-72, 1980.11.9)

Why were we born? For what purpose were we born? It was for God's love. According to the nature of that love, if we were to go "boom!" here, God would feel a "ting!" directly on His head. If you throw something into the middle of a pond, "plop!" ripples would spread out to the edges of the pond. In the same way, if you were to cast love into the center of the universe, "phut!" the ripples would spread out to all corners of the universe. Such is the work we are doing. The question is through what you can create great ripples. (103-254, 1979.3.4)

Who is God? He is the Creator. Who is the Creator? The religious world conceives of God as our Father and us as His children. What kind of a father is He? In what way is He our Father? It gets rather vague after that. Is He a foster father, a father from the next town, or an adoptive father? What sort of parent is He? Is He the father of a groom or a bride? The word "father" has various meanings. Without solving this fundamental problem, however deep or wide you delved into the world to solve it, you would never find the solution. Even after tens of thousands of years, you would not be any nearer the solution than you are now.

The answer lies in the relationship between humankind and God. Let us say that He is our Father; have you ever felt that He is indeed your Father? Before you existed, your father and mother already existed. Based on this premise, it follows that before you can claim to exist, you should first claim that your parents exist. That is only right. Asserting your existence and leaving out your parents is foolish. (188-190, 1989.2.26)

Human beings are not the first or causal beings. They are the second or resultant beings. Hence, before speaking of yourself, you should first affirm the existence of your mother and father. From this point of view, is it not obvious that you should first settle the fundamental question of God as the Origin of the universe? If you were to go further than your mother and father up your genealogy, would you not eventually arrive at God? Following this logic, before you can assert yourself you need to reach a conclusion with regard to God and His nature, that He is our Father, and that as such He has a certain type of character. That is why the Unification Church is teaching you this. (188-190, 1989.2.26)

You need to comprehend properly the original starting point of human life. As resultant beings, human beings need to conform to the causal starting point. Although you need to conform to that causal point, it cannot be devoid of content. Since God also possesses human character, all people have within them the God-given faculties of intellect, emotion, and will. That is why the motive of His love should be greater than its substance of the origin. It must also be absolute. If something starts out wrong, its path can never be rectified. (172-32, 1988.1.3)

2.2. Original purpose for the birth of human beings

God is the first Cause of the universe and the Creator of everything under the sun. He is also our beloved Father. He made all the things of creation in order to fulfill His unique will. His purpose lies in the manifestation of love. Though He may be the Origin of true love and omnipotent, He cannot feel the joy of love by Himself. He needs an object for His love, and desires to receive voluntary love in return. The culmination of all the creation, created to be in the highest position, is man and woman. Consequently, we have a purpose in our life. That purpose requires our becoming mature and realizing a relationship of eternal true love with Him. This is the fundamental principle through which harmony can be achieved between Him and us. (166-131, 1987.6.1)

It may be important to live in affluence and to do something in life; however, before anything else, you need to fulfill your duties of filial piety and loyalty to the vertical Heavenly Parent and surpass living saints in your devotion to Him. Such is the original purpose for humankind's birth. He created us in order to meet such people. Such is our underlying purpose. (58-231, 1972.6.11)

Where is the righteous path in life? From where did human beings originate? They were born from love; then what path should they follow in life? It is that of love. For what should they die? The logical conclusion is love. What kind of love is that? It is that which can be welcomed by the macrocosm, not just the microcosm. The purpose of life can be perceived as originating in the heart of the macrocosm and approved by God, the angelic world, all creation, all people, and our parents. That purpose is to live in the universe, to love in it, and to die in it. (83-164, 1976.2.8)

When people are pleased about something, they wish to share their joy with their parents, siblings, and relatives. Pleasure brings about happiness. Happiness is eternal, and what is eternal is the heart of love. What is the center of the universe? It is parents and children, that is, parents and us. It is God and us. God is our Father and we are His children. Our ultimate purpose in life is to find our Father and to feel infinite joy by forming an inseparable relationship with Him. (12-104, 1962.12.16)

Once I was walking down the street and happened to strike up a conversation with an old man. I asked him, "Where are you going?" and he answered, "Where else, where else but my son's home?" I then asked, "Is that so, what will you do when you get there?" and he replied, "I will eat whatever is placed before me, and if they are so good as to serve me chicken, I will relish having some of that too." I questioned him once more, "What will you do after you have had your meal?" and this is the answer he gave, "Nothing much." Do we have to spend our lives like this? (19-289, 1968.3.10)

When balancing the ledger of a store, you have to calculate revenue and expenditure accurately. In balancing the accounts of a mere store, you have to exercise care. However, do you pay as much attention when you balance the accounts of your life? Have you ever even tried to balance the accounts of your life? Have you gone into the red, or are you in the black? If you see red ink, you should lament most grievously.

People should be able to sing for joy on their deathbed. If you find yourself struggling to accept the reality of death when face it, that struggle only goes to show that you have lived a life in the red. We should lead our lives in the black in the realm of heart, based on the absolute standard. (19-289, 1968.3.10)

For whom do people live? If you were to answer, "For myself," you would get a failing mark. Could a family sustain itself through those who live only for themselves? They could not form a family of hope. Could a nation sustain itself through them? It could not. Can the world sustain itself through them? It could not. There would be no place for the world in their lives. The public mind of heaven and earth would reprimand them, "You individualistic villains! Get out of here!" If people always put themselves first, will there be a place for their families? Would there be a place for an ideal nation? Could they enter through a hole that is even narrower than the tip of a knife? However much they tried, they could never enter through such a small space. (57-66, 1972.5.28)

You should understand love. The purpose for every existence is love. You must keep this unchanging principle in your heart that tells you to pursue love and exist for love. Birds fly around, chirping, delighting in each other's company, all because of love, and the positive and negative poles of magnets attract each other and stick fast, all because they want to become one in love. People always seek to meet their other half to become one with them. (67-159, 1973.6.1)

2.3. We live for the sake of love

How should we lead our lives? From where and for what purpose were we brought into existence, and how should we live? The answer is simple. Since we were born of the love based on God and because of love, we should seek out the path of love, and follow it to its destination. In this manner, we can continue

moving in an endless cycle. Love is an eternal concept, and therefore we will ultimately arrive at the center in our search for love. This can only be realized through love. (125-65, 1983.3.6)

The life we are leading on earth is not for our own sake. We are living for the sake of God's love. For that purpose, we are in a continuous state of action and existence. How splendid that is! Those who lead such a life can never be brought to ruin. Hardships, tears and misery would not make us miserable, bitter, or sad because we would be enduring them all for the love of God. You should understand this principle. (67-159, 1973.6.1)

For what purpose are we living? Absolute true love! Let us live for true love! Everything is included in it. Even the handkerchief in my pocket exists for love. I work and sweat for love, for the sake of true love. I speak for true love, I eat for true love, I play for true love; in fact, everything is for true love. (107-205, 1980.5.1)

What should be the purpose of humankind? Rather than setting the purpose as an individual, a family, a social organization, a nation, the world, or heaven and earth, human beings should progress towards the common goal of God and humankind centered on Him.

Then what would be the ultimate purpose? That which is based on the individual, family, society, nation, or world is sure to drift away. What remains at the very end, after everything else is gone, would be the purpose pursued jointly by God and humankind. Only such a purpose, and no other, can remain to the final day of history. (41-323, 1971.2.18)

What is the final destination where your minds settle in the end? Even when you have found God and made Him yours, you would not try to rest your mind there. The final destination of your mind would be the place where you have taken possession of God and His love. Thus, if you fail to possess His love, everything will be in vain. (24-17, 1969.6.22)

Regarding the final purpose of life, the question is not whether we can meet with God, the Center of heaven. It is whether we are living together with Him. The question lies in where we would meet Him, if we were to do so. If we were to live with Him, what sort of a place would that be? In short, we need to meet Him and live with Him at the central place, and that is the place of His love. That is why the greatest aspiration of the human conscience is to follow heavenly fortune, to become one with God, and to possess His love. That is the conclusion. (24-17, 1969.6.22)

The final desire of human beings is to become the object of love to the greatest being, who is our Father, and at the same time, God. (65-46, 1972.11.13)

Originally, all people, regardless of who they may be, were endowed with

the privilege of being born as the crown princes and princesses in God's Kingdom. Such is their value. Such was the dignity of human beings as originally intended. (68-326, 1973.8.5)

Once they establish a relationship of heart with Him, everyone can become God's children. The value of human beings does not depend on their cultural backgrounds, historical environments, or current situations. Nothing on earth can determine the value of human beings. What determines their value is whether they know God, His purpose, the purpose of human beings, and the purposes of all the things of creation. (15-83, 1965.9.29)

We need to search for a new set of values upon which to base our lives. We need to seek new values with regard to the world, humankind, ideology, and love. When that set of values begins to take shape in accordance with God's will, its matrix will be completely different from the current set of values established through human will. (44-227, 1971.5.23)

In this world of today, we need a definite set of values that go beyond the worldly view. The Unification Church has placed God at the center of a new set of values. Our aim is not just to return to the world, the ideal world. We are arguing that we should return to God. If we fail to return to Him, there can be no ideal world of happiness, eternity, and love. This is because the primary factors of happiness, every situation we desire, can only begin from God. For this reason, we need to return to Him. Therefore, you must understand that institutions of religion emerged in history, yearning for and in pursuit of this primary need. (68-138, 1973.7.29)

The Unification Church is presenting the world with absolute values, and at the same time, True Parents. Where is the final destination of the standard of absolute values, the one desired by everyone? It is to become sons and daughters of True Parents. It is to become God's children, who can harbor eternal life and love. There is no other way. At the time of the Fall, Adam and Eve did not establish their conjugal relationship with God's permission. They did so of their own accord. The only relationship that began with God's consent was that between father and son. Yet, that was shattered, and therefore needs to be restored and rectified. (68 -138, 1973.7.29)

Section 3. The Great Value of Human Beings

3.1. Original human value is akin to that of God

How great is the value of humankind? They are the only beings that God would long for over tens of thousands of years, leaning on his walking stick. According to my observations, this fact happens to be the basis for the creation of the universe. Since God and human beings related to each other as inter-

nal and external, vertical and horizontal perspectives about the world of love could be established. Both vertical and horizontal views on the world of love can come into existence once upper-lower and left-right relationships are formed. God can come to reside in the center of them all. That place, which can bind them all into one at the deepest core of the heart, is the central place of the vertical and horizontal. If they are not bound into one, the standard of the vertical and horizontal cannot develop into the ideal form of love. The existence of the vertical form alone does not guarantee the existence of the horizontal form. Therefore, you should understand that God had no other choice but to create human beings in this form. (48-224, 1971.9.19)

As an absolute being with an absolute ideal for His creation, God pursues beings who can relate to Him with absolute value. This is something that cannot be exchanged for anything in this world. A being that can relate to God has a value that is greater than that of God Himself. The term "the value of one's counterpart" seems difficult to comprehend. The value of a partner, of any being as a counterpart, is so great that it cannot be exchanged for anything or anyone, even for God. God cannot exchange it with Himself, for if He did, He would be left alone as a result. He would be left all by Himself.

This is why God invests Himself and exhausts His own strength and His own energy. He is engaged in a war of attrition. The forms of existence thus created with relational value that cannot be exchanged for God Himself are human beings. The form of existence with absolute value is none other than humankind. God created people as beings of value with such an idea. (68-134, 1973.7.29)

God created humankind for the sake of love. Why were human beings created? They were created because of love. The reason human beings are different from other forms of creation is that they were created as God's sons and daughters. They were created as object partners who can receive love directly from Him. Such is the privilege of humankind. (132-245, 1984.6.20)

Whom do human beings resemble? God. Therefore, it follows that He also desires love just as they do. In the world of the ideal of creation based on love, human beings embody God as His image and the rest of creation embodies God symbolically, according to the Unification Church's teaching. Based on what? Love. When God rejoices, people will automatically rejoice, and when they rejoice, the creation will automatically rejoice as well. What would bring this about? Only love, nothing else can achieve this. (166-48, 1987.5.28)

When creating an object to reflect His love, whom would God make it resemble? Would He not create it to resemble Him? If He creates the object to resemble Himself, that object should have all His characteristics, both His male and female characteristics. Human

beings resemble God, and they are the substantial manifestations of His internal nature, His invisible form and His invisible mind. Hence, the Book of Genesis is correct in saying that God created human beings in His image. (170 -167, 1987.11.15)

God's invisible form is symbolically reflected in all parts of our body. Whose eyes do ours resemble? God's! Hence, when you closely study the facial features of human beings, you see that the eyes are set deeper than other features. The deep-set eyes can thus observe everything. Next, the nose symbolizes Adam and Eve. It rests at the center. Next, the mouth symbolizes all the things of creation. It is horizontal and encloses thirty-two teeth, or four times eight, based on all the things of creation in the world and the number four. Next, the ears symbolize all directions. The features found above the neck symbolize heaven. In other words, it is the information center of heaven. (201-83, 1990.3.4)

The Lord of Creation has placed every part of His form in the face of human beings. Hence, God's characteristics can all be found in the human face. The eyes symbolize God. Thus, when a being comes into existence, the first feature to develop is the eyes. Since the center of the universe is God, the eyes symbolize Him. Therefore, you can tell just by looking into the eyes of someone, indeed anyone, whether that person is conscientious or not. (39-247, 1971.1.15)

Whatever form truth may take, what would be its core? It is not money or power or knowledge. The core of truth is love. The essence of love is vertical, and truth that embodies love is horizontal. Hence, you can know God just by looking at His creation, and since Adam and Eve were created in His image, you can know Him by looking at them. They are His object partners of vertical true love while standing as subject partners to the creation. If the love between these two, man and woman, can be made to fit together with the axis of the world through east, west, north and south, then God, the spirit world, and the entire physical world would be connected. (179-290, 1988.8.14)

You need to attain oneness with your spouse. Through the unity of subject and object partners, reproduction takes place. Only through give and take action can reproduction take place. The place where reproduction occurs is truly one of joy. Does God Himself have dual characteristics of internal nature and external form? When separate, neither can be the subject partner. Only when man and woman unite, can the subject of the couple be established. When they are united, the man automatically becomes the subjec partner, even if he did not wish it to be so. (42-115, 1971.2.28)

Human beings, of their own volition, need to engage in activities that demonstrate God's original love; they need to love Him and come closer to Him. The first commandment in the words of Jesus was, "You shall love the Lord

your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your mind." What comes first is to love God. You need to love Him with all your body and soul. Stopping halfway will not work. You need to go to the very end. In such a manner, you need to attain the state in which your heart reflects God's image, with an original nature that is absolutely aligned to become one with Him. Through this, you will attain the beginning and the end of everything. The first commandment dictates this as the way to love God. (149-237, 1986.11.23)

The rhythm of delight, the rhythm that brings God and human beings together in harmony, is the expression of joy. In its presence, everything, each in its own unique form, can dance, either symbolically or substantially, in tune with that rhythm. When that happens, all creation will say, "Yes, my existence in this world is worthwhile!" To take an example, would it not be the greatest wish of even the smallest creatures in the world to be a part of the feast day celebrating the love of God and humankind? (166-46, 1987.5.28)

The creation is the foundation on which God's sons and daughters can be created. This foundation connects them together in a relationship. This is true of animals, as well as minerals. Positive and negative charges exist in the mineral kingdom. Stamen and pistil are found in the plant kingdom; similarly, male and female are found in the animal kingdom. The greatest masterpiece of creation, the combination of all forms of creation brought and bound together, is the internal nature and external form of human beings. (144-236, 1986.4.25)

Then why did God create night and day? If the sun were up in the sky day in and day out, how stimulating would the morning be? People say it is a glorious morning, a bright morning, but if the sun was up there all the time, what would be so glorious and bright? It would become boring. In reality, however, everything exists to be exciting, and so it possesses a rhythm that can harmoniously bring together the stimulating symbols and forms to fulfill the undertaking of love. (124-85, 1983.1.30)

Where can you find the root of your life? It lies with unfallen parents. Then can the unfallen parents of goodness be found here? As the Lord with dual characteristics, God created the universe and human beings in His image to reflect His dual characteristics. Adam is the manifestation of His male characteristics and Eve His female characteristics. From this perspective, although we usually say, "Our Heavenly Father," because He is just one being, the concept of God actually includes the idea of God being "Our Heavenly Father and Mother." (140-123, 1986.2.9)

3.2. Human beings: temples for God to indwell

What would have happened had our first ancestors Adam and Eve not fall-

en? They would have attained oneness with God and stood in the same position as Him, inheriting and experiencing His joy in His great work of creation. Such would have been the relationship formed between God and humankind. Original, unfallen human beings would have become His temples. (54-64, 1972.3.11)

Adam and Eve were God's son and daughter; at the same time, they were also His temples. Once they had matured, that is, once the temple had been built completely, He intended to dwell in them. Then, when the fully matured Adam and Eve performed the ceremony of holy matrimony, centering on God, they would have become as one with Him. He would then have become the internal God, and human beings would have become His external form with substantial bodies.

In 1 Corinthians 3:16 it is written, "Do you not know that you are God's temple and that God's Spirit dwells in you?" If those who are saved by faith can become God's temples, then surely Adam and Eve, in the position of the originally intended true ancestors of humanity, should have become His temples. (54-139, 1972.3.22)

Even though God is our Father and we His children, it still feels like a relationship in which He is superior and we are inferior. At such times, what would be our thinking? We have this desire in our hearts that cries out to Him, "Father, let me have Your place for just once. I want to sit in Your place!" If He were to answer this cry with, "No, you scoundrel, I won't allow it!" then we would be crushed. Hence, He cannot answer thus. On the contrary, He knows we have such a desire in our hearts and so encourages us with words like "Of course, by all means!" and gives up His place for us. He wants us to occupy His place while He vacates it to enter our hearts and indwell us as His temples. (54-89, 1972.3.20)

In the Bible it is written, "You are God's temple." What do these words mean? No one has succeeded in interpreting these words. They are great words. That is because, no matter how great God is, we are given the right to inherit the universe after we have formed the realm of an objective relationship of love with Him. In that relationship we can whisper words of love to each other and attain oneness with Him. Through the foundation of the principle of love, we can obtain the right of inheritance to this universe and everything in it, that is, all of the spiritual and physical worlds as created by Him. No one knows about this amazing truth. (137-67, 1985.12.18)

Adam was God's body in substantial form. 1 Corinthians 3:16 testifies to this fact with the words, "Do you not know that you are God's temple." The temple is God's dwelling place. The place in our hearts where the original love blossoms would then become the Holy of holies. God would have erected the temple of universal love in Adam's heart, expanded the power of love from there, and let the flower of love blossom. This is the

purpose for which He created Adam and Eve and blessed them to create a family that would eventually fill the whole world. (121-113, 1982.10.24)

Where is the most sacred place of all? When asked where the most holy place is, we cannot answer that it is the temple in Jerusalem. Something man-made cannot be the most holy place. God builds the greatest sanctuary, where His love can dwell. This sanctuary, however, was lost. Thus, how great is the sin of humankind? (136-310, 1985.12.29)

God created human beings as His substantial bodies. 1 Corinthians 3:16 attests to this fact, with the words, "Do you not know that you are God's temple and that God's Spirit lives in you?" What is the temple? It is God's dwelling place. Adam was God's body and Eve in the position of His wife. If they had fulfilled their destinies, their children would have been born from God's lineage. It is the Principle that they were to be His kindred. (135-313, 1985.12.15)

What would happen to people who have reached the stage of perfection when passing into the spirit world? Adam would have become God's body. It is alluded to both in the Gospel of John, Chapter 14 and in 1 Corinthians 3:16. We infer from these words that we are designed to be God's temple and dwelling place. Then how can we come to resemble Him? Once we have reached the perfection level in fulfilling our portion of responsibility, He will indwell us and all human lives will come together in oneness through love. When a man and woman come together as husband and wife and form a family, they are mutually assimilated and united in love. In the same manner, the power of love would enable us to be assimilated to God; that is, we would be as one with Him. (130-21, 1983.12.11)

When human beings have fully matured into adulthood, the invisible God can then enter them and make a love nest. He is also capable of climactic love pleasing to both Himself and Adam at the same time. Therefore, love is the greatest and most sacred temple. The word temple in Korean is *Seong Jeon*, and *Seong* (聖) is a Chinese character meaning "sacred." Therefore, God can be found wherever there is true love.

Why do human beings like true love? Whenever they encounter true love, they know that they have met God as well. Hence, when Adam and Eve have fully matured and are making love, God, the Creator of the universe, would enter their bodies and make them into the most sacred temple of all. (128-325, 1983.10.2)

Eve is Adam's wife. Adam is God's substantial body. It has been said that we are God's temple. He is the invisible Father indwelling Adam's heart. These two fathers can then become one. They attain oneness. Thus, Adam's standard of original nature is the starting point where the invisible spiritual world and the visible physical world come together

in unity. What is that standard of original nature? It is not a bundle of money, or greed. In the innocence of adolescence, the faculties of one's cells are fully mobilized, and that manifests as a feeler or antenna, which can later settle down once God has come to reside in him. (120-70, 1982.10.3)

1 Corinthians 3:16 states, "Do you not know that you are God's temple and that God's Spirit dwells in you?" This means that we are His temple. When you have attained a mystical state, and offered Him a prayer, asking, "Heavenly Father, where are You?" you will be rewarded with a wonderful answer. He will say, "I am here! What is all the fuss about? Didn't you get anything to eat for breakfast? Why are you making so much noise in the middle of the night?" When you ask, "Where are you?" He will answer, "Where else would I be? I am in the innermost depth of your heart! I am inside your heart!" Where is heaven said to be? It is in your heart. (224-214, 1991.11.24)

Section 4. Original Human Nature and the True Lifestyle

4.1. Live in harmony with your original mind

The teacher closest to you is none other than your own original mind. More precious than even the closest of friends is your original mind, even more precious than your own mother or father. You need to consult your original mind. God dwells there. You should learn to listen to what your original mind tells you. You need to enter into such a state. In Buddhist terms, you need to purify your inner nature. What Buddha meant by the words, "I am my own Lord throughout heaven and earth," is that once you look into your own heart, you will find that the Lord God dwells inside you. Nothing would be impossible. (133-178, 1984.7.10)

Loving minds always try to sacrifice, to concede, and to give, and give again. For instance, if I had ten billion dollars in my possession and went out into the street to give it all to others, I would still not have helped every person in the world, and so my mind would not rest easy in its desire to give out more. There is no end to it. God's heart is too great to be fathomed. Therefore, you cannot boast of yourselves. Even if you performed the most generous act of all, and then checked with your loving mind, it would answer, "You need to do more!" (133-180, 1984.7.10)

You need to purify your mind. You need to cleanse it. Your original mind is better than I am. It is your eternal master. Hence, you should not harbor evil thoughts in it. Instead, you should always be of the mindset to contribute to the common good from a public position. (133-178, 1984.7.10)

Looking at someone, your mind can know what kind of a person he or she is just at a glance. In a moment, you would

already have formed an opinion. Hence, the closest teacher to you is your own mind. Thus, you should not torment it. You should not make it unhappy. If you do, you make the Owner of the universe and me unhappy. Your mind is the master of your life. Consequently, when you make your mind sad, you make the master of your life sad. You should follow a path that gives it joy. (133-180, 1984.7.10)

You should set aside some time to experience joy with your mind. To others it may seem as if you are all alone, but during that time, you would become friends with your mind. Sit with your mind at some tranquil place and meditate. Then you will enter a state of deep prayerfulness. You will thus enter a world unknown to anyone else but you. You need such experiences. (133-181, 1984.7.10)

4.2. Human perfection means mind-body unity

The Unification Church emphasizes a mind-body unity that can only be achieved through true love. Delving deeper into the questions of concept and reality, you will find many stories behind them. Once you clarify all these stories, you will find out that this path toward unity is the correct one; it will be borne out by experience. (227-12, 1992.2.10)

What are a righteous conscience, righteous actions, and mind-body unity based on? Words alone are not enough. Actions alone are not enough. Where is the place where complete mind-body unity occurs? The answer lies first in achieving perpendicularity. To achieve that, establish a standard that can stand upright as the center of the worldwide horizontal plane. Become exemplary people who can be connected to the world wherever you go, be it the East or the West. You should set the standard that can be proclaimed as correct at any time in history, whether past, present or future. (205-49, 1990.7.7)

The precious value of a perfect score can be awarded to people only when they have attained oneness with true love. Mind-body unity refers to the state in which the body resonates in harmony with the conscience. When you strike one prong of a tuning fork, the other prong vibrates at the same frequency. In a similar manner, if you strike the conscience with true love, the body will resonate. Alternatively, when you strike the body with true love, the conscience will resonate. There is no need for you to be taught all this. Once you find yourself in the center of all this, you will know without being taught. (223-355, 1991.11.20)

The brave soldiers of the Unification Church must achieve mind-body unity in whatever circumstances. How can you achieve this unity during your lifetime? Those who cannot achieve it, and yet think of love and the ideal, should feel ashamed of themselves because it is contrary to God's will. The new path of hope opens only to those who wish for it after having achieved perfect mind-body unity. If you stagnate in your cur-

rent position, the path leading to God's new kingdom of hope will not open up before you. (205-45, 1990.7.7)

How do you achieve mind-body unity? Throughout history, the mind and body have been in constant conflict. If God had intended it at the time of creation, such a god would be the enemy of humankind. Bearing in mind the fact that your own mind and body are in constant conflict, if you were to ask God, "Do Your mind and body also fight each other as ours do?" what would be His response? Is there anyone who ever considered such a situation? If you were to ask God if His conscience and body were not united but instead in constant battle, He would definitely answer that it is not so. You have never attained such a state, and so there is no way for you to know, but as the founder of the Unification Church I have reached that state and can connect to Him whenever I so desire. Therefore, I can plainly answer on His behalf, that God's mind and body are completely united. (223-349, 1991.11.20)

Religious life involves having control over your body. You need to make it habitual within three to five years. If this is not the case, and after all those years you still find yourself uncomfortable, however much you desired it, you could never achieve perfect mind-body unity. My number one goal is, "Before desiring to dominate the universe, first achieve dominion over the self!" If people cannot achieve total oneness within themselves, there is no way that they can relate to the universe, however much they may have gone around the world in their endeavors. (222-340, 1991.11.7)

The human body inherited Satan's lineage. Your conscience must attain the standard of God's conscience, developing to the top of the growth stage reached by Adam and Eve. That requires having faith. Our first ancestors were deceived by Satan, and strayed in the opposite direction due to a force stronger than their conscience, that is, the power of love. At that moment, the conscience had no choice but to follow where the body led it. It must become stronger.

Once you endow more power to the conscience than to the body, the latter, however strong, would have to obey the former. If you fail to do so, and the body remains stronger than the conscience, you will fall even lower than where you are currently situated. There are two paths lying before you.

Thus, people choose to fast, take cold showers, sacrifice, and engage in voluntary service. There is no other way. Those gathered here, do you perform these actions too? Are you following this path? Do you pledge to sacrifice and serve others even at the cost of your own lives? If so, you need to follow the path of subjugation at the risk of your lives. The path of religion is that of submission. It transcends the mind-body conflict. Unless you tread the sacrificial path, you will not be able to achieve mind-body unity. (222-333, 1991.11.7)

No matter how long you have been in the Unification Church, you should not leave your sins buried as they are. They need to be cleansed. You need to start afresh with a clean slate, be resurrected anew, and become men and women who can live in the Garden of Eden without sinning. You need the awareness of God's intention for the complete unity in love of your mind and body, as created by Him. Do you understand? Otherwise, you cannot return to the homeland.

You need to find the way back to your house in the homeland, where our original house is located, and where God, our original Parent, dwells. That is where the descendants of the nation who have the birthright of the firstborn should live and reign over all other nations based on the life of the imperial family. That place is your new home. How shall you go about finding your way back, not to your birthplace but your new homeland, the original home? First, you need to acquire the qualification to enter that homeland. In order to do so, you must achieve a realm of oneness through total mind-body unity. (233-168, 1992.8.1)

No matter how great your sin is, admit it frankly to God, saying, "Heavenly Father, I have committed such a wrong thing!" In confessing your sins to Him in your prayer, you can declare to Him, "Shouldn't the original mind, the heart of a father, the heart of a teacher, and the heart of the citizens of a nation be like this? With such a heart, I will be filial and loyal and be connected to Your love. My heart will never waver. Please take into consideration this resolution, and forgive me for all the wrongs that I have done as I have now made this resolution. Won't you forgive me?" Then God would reply, "Hmm.…" You need to know how to pray. Do you understand? (149-37, 1986.11.1)

Where on earth is God? Where would His dwelling place be? God settles in the most precious thing of all, namely love. Then if this love happened to be that between a man and a woman, where would He reside? He lives perpendicularly in the deepest part of the love that is completely united and unchanging. The central place of His residence would be the place where man and woman attain oneness.

When you reach a mystical state while praying, such that you undergo spiritual experiences, then if you call out to God, "Heavenly Father," you will hear the answer coming from inside you, "Why are you calling me? I am right here!" "Here" would be the center of your heart. He would be at the central point of love, in a perpendicular position, inside the person whose mind and body are completely united. If you consider God's point to be the intersection of two perpendicular lines, it would be a position of complete self-denial. (224-148, 1991.11.24)

When your mind and body have attained oneness, the force of the universe will protect you. In such a state, your parents, as well as your siblings, would also be protected. Everyone would

be connected to each other in such a relationship. The race and the nation must also form a relationship. This is an excellent conclusion. Thus, if you were to go to another nation, having achieved mind-body unity, you would be connected to that nation also. It will work wherever you are.

In soccer, what happens when the ball just stops rolling? At the point of contact between the two surfaces, a perpendicular axis is necessary. Hence, a sphere is considered the most ideal existence. A perpendicular axis can reside at any point on the surface. That is how the ball can roll around on it. Therefore, once your mind and body are united on a perpendicular axis, you will fit in anywhere. Regardless of whether you are a Westerner, an Oriental, a person from the past, present, or future, you can harmonize anywhere. (205-53, 1990.7.7)

4.3. The original mind is the teacher and closest to God

What is the mind? It is your master and teacher. Since your body resembles your mind, it is the origin of your body. Thus, on the horizontal level, the mind stands in the place of your mother and father, teachers, and masters. (222-157, 1991.11.3)

Your original mind does not need a teacher. It is your second god. Do not try to follow a teacher or me; instead, try to serve your mind. What about the mind? You wake up at daybreak, all alone, and it is so quiet that you can hear even the squeak of a mouse or the buzz of a fly, and you think to yourself, "Well, I should like such and such a thing. I should try to do a good deed." Your original mind will then tell you, "Good! Good! Do it now!" On the other hand, if you harbor only evil thoughts in your mind, it will chide you with words like "No! No! You fool!" Would it not know what you are thinking? Of course it knows. That is the way it is. It knows only too well. (138-124, 1986.1.19)

Have you ever considered the value of your original mind, how valuable it is of all your attributes? Whenever the body tries to do something wrong, the mind always advises it not to, and tries to block it from doing that. However, the body always attacks, ignores, treads on the mind, and it tries to do as it pleases. Have you ever taken into consideration how your mind inside your body sacrifices time and again in order to fulfill its duties as the subject partner, even amidst persecution, as your comrade and teacher until your death? (217-91, 1991.5.4)

Our master is our conscience. How many times has your conscience advised you whenever you had evil thoughts in your head? How much has it worried about how to lead you over the hill and across the river, untiringly recalling you to the right path? In this way, the conscience tries to protect you in the form of the true master. However, the treacherous body has treated this teacher contemptuously, although it was the one and only honorable teacher sent to you

by God and the universe. The body has trampled upon the conscience, which was sent on behalf of the parents in order to connect the body to the mind of original love. Do you love this body, which has become the enemy of the mind? No, you should not! (201-353, 1990.4.30)

Now the time for us to listen to someone else's words has passed. Rather than the words of a brilliant teacher thousands of times greater than you, or any other truth in the world, you should listen to the words of your original mind. No matter how much you have heard from it, you should return repeatedly to listen some more. Then you would receive something of infinite magnitude from it, something unimaginable, which would reveal the greatest secrets of the creation. (7-201, 1959.9.6)

You cannot even begin to fathom how much the conscience has sacrificed itself for the sake of the body. Do you understand the circumstances of the conscience, which has been trampled upon throughout its entire life? It is always tired because it has to manage you night and day. Yet it does not tire of preventing your body from committing any wrongful action. It tells the body, "You have done more than enough. Shouldn't you stop and listen to me now?" It is closest to you, and stands in the place of God, your parents, and teachers. It does not need to be educated. However, the body definitely requires an education. (214-282, 1991.2.3)

When you consider your body and mind, how pitiful is your original mind? It stands in God's stead. It represents all of your ancestors, your antecedents. The original mind represents the teacher as well as the ruler. Yet, it has been disrespected and treated with contempt for an endlessly long time. As the center of the universe, it stands in the position of true parents, true teachers, true masters, and the one Subject Being with true love. It sacrifices itself over and over again to save you while you live on this earth. Isn't that true? Though it sacrifices so much, has it complained even once? Although it is continuously dragged around and treated contemptuously – to the extent that one would presume it to be dead – whenever you harbor an evil thought or attempt an evil deed, it comes alive once again to advise you not to do so, calling you to your senses with the words, "Hey, you devil!"

How much have you made sport of the mind? The original mind stands in the stead of parents, teachers, and masters. In the world of the mind, there is no need to hold a court trial, because you yourselves know better than anyone else what you have done. There is no need for third party witnesses. (209-154, 1990.11.28)

No one knew that within oneself is a great teacher. The original mind stands in the stead of the great mother and father. The counsel of the mother and father is never contrary to the original mind. Whenever it counsels you, just as your mother or father would do, you should learn to obey. An orderly life

requires a moral standard that can serve as its original reference. Such a formula based on the original mind has yet to be formed. You should not torment your mind. Do any of you like having a dual personality? The original mind stands in the stead of the teacher, parents, and God. There is no teacher who can teach the mind. (207-266, 1990.11.11)

Throughout their lives, all people have within themselves the most important teacher of all. Despite this, they frequently mistreat, abuse, and trample on it. That teacher is none other than our own conscience. It always speaks to us in its efforts to help us, and tries to connect us to true love. Like our parents, it encourages us to become good and unselfish, and guides us to act according to God's will. However, within each of us is a rebel that goes against the words of the conscience. That rebel is our body. (201-208, 1990.4.9)

"Before desiring to dominate the universe, first achieve dominion over the self!" This was the motto at the time when we were pioneering the path of truth. I told everyone, "Before desiring to dominate the universe, before establishing a connection with everything in this world, first dominate the self!" (201-154, 1990.3.30)

The original mind has three great personas. It can be the master, teacher, or parent, and only when the body finds itself dissatisfied and lacking in its service towards the mind, even after serving it for tens of thousands of years, can heavenly fortune finally come and reside within you. The mind wishes to serve the body, but the body does not serve the mind. This is the problem. The problem lies within the self, not society. (201-154, 1990.3.30)

The original mind tries to protect you in the form of the true master. However, the treacherous body has treated this teacher contemptuously, though it is the one and only honorable teacher sent to you from the universe. It has trampled upon the conscience, sent in the place of parents to connect the body to the mind of original love. Do you love this body, which has become the enemy of the mind? No, you should not! Unless you stop the conflict between the mind and body, the Kingdom of Heaven can never be established. Not a single saint thought of this. (201-154, 1990.3.30)

Yin and yang, the internal nature and external form, the positive and negative are complementary; they cannot be conflicting. However, within today's fallen humanity, the voice of the mind as well as that of the body can be heard. They have not been united. How did the mind and body of man and woman, who were created to resemble God, come to be separated? This is the problem.

God is absolute, and therefore the basic human attributes of mind and body should be absolutely united and assimilated into the whole world created by Him. Together, they should act as the center of that world. Instead, however,

they were separated. How did this come about? If they were intended to separate from each other, there would be no God, and the basis for such things as ideals, unity, peace, or happiness could never be found. (195-304, 1989.12.17)

God is not far away from us, but within us. Is the original mind your master? When you attempt to carry out an evil deed in the middle of the night, the mind stands in front of you and tells you not to go. It appears whenever and wherever you are as your master; it guides you as would your mother or teacher. Hence, your body is your enemy. (201-74, 1990.3.1)

What is God like? He is both masculine and feminine, like human beings. You cannot see your mind, can you? Do you want to see it or not? The same is true of God. From the spiritual perspective, we understand that God does not have a body. This has been the case until now. Since Adam could not reach perfection, God has been dispossessed of a body. He exists instead as the mind-like master, teacher, or manager, a mind-like parent in a mind-like universe. (197-44, 1990.1.7)

Nothing can be achieved unless mind and body are united. This is what you should focus on. If something weighs on your mind during prayer, you should repent. When repenting, you should not do it alone. The four directions of north, south, east, and west need to be arranged first. You need to speak it aloud in front of those closest to you, such as your parents or your teacher. After doing so, you also need to make public what you have done wrong in front of your children and students. "I have done this thing; do you think I can be forgiven?" In this manner, you need to walk a path where those closest to you can support you with one heart. Do you understand what I am trying to say? (184-301, 1989.1.1)

When can your mind and body be unified? You have never thought of this, have you? This is a very serious matter. They are engaged in a lifelong fight, and who can stop them? This is the problem. Your father or mother, your king or your teacher, even saints cannot stop it. Where is the master who can stop it? Have you ever looked for him seriously? That master is true love. (184-211, 1989.1.1)

The original mind is your watchman; it protects you night and day and gives you no rest by telling you over and over again, "Do good deeds. Do good deeds!" So, can you imagine how exhausted it must be? From the day you are born, from the day you can think for yourselves, from the day you acquire intellectual faculties to analyze every situation in society, the conscience follows you around until death and tells you what to do forever. This is something that not even your own teacher, your mother, or father can do. It tells you to take after God, the saints, the patriots, and the children of filial piety. It orders you to resemble them all and keeps saying, "You, the body, should take after me!" (179-311, 1988.8.14)

Mind-body unity can be brought about only through true love. Hence, the mind sacrifices itself for the sake of the body and forgets it has done so, repeatedly. The original mind stands in God's stead, and is the teacher of all teachers for you. Your original mind is your center, dispatched by God on His behalf. It is the vertical you. (226-60, 1992.2.1)

Section 5. The Path of True People

5.1. The path people should seek

When people follow their original mind, the whole universe will open up before them. Something must bring this about. Once they enter such a state of being, they will be able to converse with their mind. They will be able to hold a conversation with their mind. As soon as they think of doing something, the answer will already be right in front of them. They are advancing towards such a state. Would not such people know the path they should take? The way they should go definitely would be laid down before them, and so all the forces in the universe would help them follow it. Though they may have been dragged into the circumstances of being tested, once they are there, everything will aid them. Only then would they be able to do great things. (120-313, 1982.10.20)

Those whose lives are under girded by great power are true people. True people have a background of infinite power that propels them forward in the direction they wish to take. They would know in a second if the direction were wrong. The Unification Church that you know is not a worthless church. It has a deep and high background, a background of great force backing it up. As such, once you have risen to such a level through your own efforts, everything would be taken care of thenceforth. In this aspect, you need to decide on the direction you should take by yourselves. This is something you alone must determine. It is something you know best. (120-313, 1982.10.20)

You must find the way you should go. Would money solve all problems? No, it would not. There will be times when you need money and other times when you will have to follow another path. Hence, you need to decide your own path. You need to look deep inside your mind and consider the intrinsic qualities you were born with originally, and by considering them, you should decide the future purpose that you will pursue. Though God may point you in the right direction, it is up to you to follow it of your own accord. (120-298, 1982.10.20)

The influence of a magnet is stronger than the gravitational pull of the earth. What makes such an influence possible? The actual force of a magnet is weaker than the gravitational pull of the earth, but when the two forces come together, the former surpasses the latter. The same is true of our conscience. From your birth, you already know the background against which you were born.

This is something that only you can know. If you are unable to discern and pass judgment on such things, you will never be able to do great things. (120-301, 1982.10.20)

You might look at nature and say, "Oh, I don't need the four seasons. I only need spring; I hate summer, autumn, and winter!" But, if you were to ask God, He would answer, "I love all four seasons." Hence, you need to learn to love summer, autumn, and winter, even though you may have hated them to begin with. When the winter snow comes, God looks upon the world covered in white and derives pleasure from it. Therefore, you should say, "Oh, I love it too!" That is the way it should be. (133-29, 1984.7.1)

You should be able to look at nature with a mind similar to that of God. Such should be your mindset. If there is a rainstorm or streaks of lightning, do not say things like, "Oh man, I hate that!" because God experiences them thinking, "Ha ha, they are kissing and making love!" He scolds those who say they do not like them, "Stop that, you fools! You rascals!" (133-29, 1984.7.1)

You should love people and you should love all five skin colors equally. Would God say something like, "Oh, I only love the whites?" If He only loved white, then everyone would have to wear white clothes. All white people would have to wear white. They would have to throw away all their colored clothes. They would not wear black. They would not wear any other colors. That is contradictory. When you enter their rooms, you will see all kinds of colors. You will see pianos there. Would they have only white pianos, or would some be black? Why would they have blackboards? Such people should not have nights. Nights are dark, so they should not have them. Why, why is everything centered on the whites? What is white supremacy? It is the road to ruin. How many years do you think it will last? How long? Though the winter may be long, it only lasts three months. For the sake of eternity, you must love all four seasons. As such, you should not love only white people. (133-29, 1984.7.1)

God's love encompasses all of His creation and humankind, not to mention people of the past, present, and future. Hence, He is heading a movement to liberate even those spirits in hell. People must walk the paths of truth, life, and love. No matter how great they are, if they do not live for the sake of others, nobody will follow them. Those who do will naturally become leaders. They become people of true life. (133-30, 1984.7.1)

You yourselves should know which way you must go. Once you have set a direction, you should invest all your energy into following it. You should invest everything to such an extent that you would be too exhausted to even open your eyes or be sensitive to sounds around you. (120-315, 1982.10.20)

If you have led a proper religious life

in the Unification Church, you already know what you should do. On the other hand, those who live self-centeredly and act in their own interests will have no idea. When a storm is coming, the rats aboard a ship sense it, and know that the ship will be destroyed. Therefore, before it lifts anchor, they abandon the ship by climbing over the ropes to the harbor and to safety. If rats can sense danger, human beings should surely sense it too. They should know where they have to go.

The ants know when a rainy season is about to set in. I once witnessed a colony of ants moving to another place in single file; that showed they knew the onset of the rainy season. It is because you are given to daydreaming that you do not know. Not having any idea about your own field of mission is a serious problem. You need to come to an understanding with God with regard to the serious problems in your life. You also need to adapt yourself to the environmental circumstances of your own accord. Who else can do it for you? You are the only ones who can do it. (120-298, 1982.10.20)

When people are self-assured, there is a place deep within their hearts where the mind can be at ease. Your mind should find its way to that place. Once it has slept off some of the weariness, it will become sensitive again. If you seize that moment to focus your mind, with no other thoughts in your head, you will be able to find out everything. Hence, you need to meditate and pray. (120-306, 1982.10.20)

Even I pray and offer devotions. You need to offer devotions always. They are not something you can offer just once and then put aside for some other time. You need to whet a knife all the time. If you used it and did not sharpen it, what would happen? In order to keep it sharp, you always need to whet it. In the same manner, if you lost your temper, you need to sharpen your senses once again. That is the problem. You need to calm yourselves and set your minds at ease. (120-306, 1982.10.20)

When you reach the center of the realm of heart, you will find it in motion up and down. You will be in motion automatically. This realm is inhaling and exhaling. Did you know that even the Earth breathes? It inhales and exhales, moving almost a meter with each cycle. It is regulating itself. In the same manner, the core of the realm of heart also moves up and down centering on its axis. It is in motion. (120-306, 1982.10.20)

All beings have something elliptical about them. Thus, when you enter the center of the mind or heart, you can feel an infinite force reverberating in it. Therefore, if you make a perpendicular line, you can maintain the infinite force at right angles. Hence, you need to cultivate your spiritual senses. You need to devote yourself to experiencing the deep spirit world from all aspects of life on earth. You need to do that to tap into a driving force that will fuel you throughout your lifetime. (120-308, 1982.10.20)

Even I give serious thought to my work if it is so great that it requires a power greater than my innate power. When it is necessary to acquire a force greater than my own, where I can get that power from remains the problem. If I fail to acquire such a power, there is no choice but to retreat, but that is not an option. That is why we need to pray, and we need God. That is why we need the world of heart. There are no limits in the world of love, no matter how much you pull out from it. The world of substance ends at some point, as does the world of knowledge. The world of power can be destroyed in a second, but the world of heart is endless. Hence, you need to act based on the world of heart. (120-306, 1982.10.20)

God is not a dictator. He invested Himself for human beings. He exists for their sake. Hence, people have tried to follow Him for tens of thousands of years and still do. In order to maintain one's position of being in front of the universe, which follows the heavenly way of existing for the sake of others, you also need to exist for others. By living for the sake of others, East and West, and past and present can be connected. God has the same love now as He had in the past, He loves East and the West equally, and so the differences between them can be overcome, just as with the past, present, and future. What this means is that because the differences between past, present, and future can be overcome, development can take place, and since those between East and West can be overcome, the two can be unified. All this is made possible only through love. (187-89, 1989.1.6)

When you insist on yourself, you destroy yourself, your reciprocal partner, and God; in fact, you completely alienate yourself. From such a place, a theory of unity cannot be discovered. These words may sound simple, but their simplicity does not make them any less important. At the very end of our search for the ideal, at the ultimate end, what is required is to be vertically united with God's love, and in order to have that vertical standard pull you faster towards the goal, you need to live for the sake of others. Complete unity can be achieved only at the place where you live for the sake of others. (187-89, 1989.1.6)

How is unity achieved? How shall I achieve unity? Through what? Through brute force, power, money, authority, or knowledge? Everything can be resolved only at a place based on love. Isn't this conclusion simple? The conclusion is that the satanic world can be re-created into God's Kingdom only by living for the sake of others with true love. This is only logical. (182-134, 1988.10.16)

5.2. The way true human beings should go

Anything that engages in action for its own sake brings about evil. Anything that acts for the greater good brings about development. You should

bear this in mind. When you live for the greater good, all doors will open before you. The individual, family, tribe, race, world and heaven, in fact, the path of love and all other paths in the world will open their doors wide before you and welcome you. So what would be this path? We need to consider this. Thus, the Unification Church teaches that to live for the sake of others is a principle of heavenly law. (133-16, 1984.7.1)

Where does the path of true life lead? We must establish as a public law the heart to live for the sake of others. This law is everlasting because it is a principle that is true wherever you go. It was also true in the past, it is true in the present, and it will be true in the future, that you should live for the sake of others. If God were to appear in front of the saints and sages like Jesus, Mohammed, Buddha, and Confucius, and ask them, "What is your opinion with regard to this?" Would they answer, "That law is right." or would they answer, "That law is wrong." Of course, they will say that it is right. It is the law of the universe. It is a law that enables people to live truthfully. Such is the true path laid out before you. (133-16, 1984.7.1)

In order to become a world figure, what should you do? Basing your life on ethics and morality is not enough. Basing your life on people is not enough. If you do that, you will never be able to transcend the nation. What would enable you to transcend the nation lies with God. Without a cosmic ideology, you cannot transcend the nation. (38-260, 1970.1.8)

Saints introduced to the world the best of humanity and God. When you consider the people counted as saints of the world, did they worship God or not? Is there anyone who ever became a saint without God? (39-316, 1971.1.16)

Moreover, the saints taught not only the moral principles of humanity, but also God's moral principles. (33-291, 1970.8.21)

Those who live for and love their parents in their families are filial children, those who live for and love their nation are patriots, and those who love the world are saints. Then what is it that I have been teaching you? It is to become God's divine sons and daughters, who love Him, the world, and the universe. What will you become? Will you become God's divine sons and daughters, or filial sons and daughters? In order to become them all, you need to maintain in your heart a godly love. (129-99, 1983.10.1)

God had no choice but to endow human beings, who live a short lifetime on earth, with the very best motto and the very best task to fulfill. Therefore, He gave them the motto "Love God more than anything else" as a task for them to accomplish. By doing so, people can become His children, which is unprecedented in history. On the day you become His children, it is understood that you would also be perfected

as saints, patriots, and children of filial piety. You would have become all of them perfectly. Once you have done so, you would not only stand in the position of victory in your own family, but you would also become the victors on the national and global foundations. (100-157, 1978.10.9)

What is it that the Unification Church seeks to accomplish? It is not seeking to make great people out of anyone, but to make us all into saints. Great people have enemies before them, but saints do not. Great people love only their own race, but saints love all humankind. Therefore, if great people sought to stand before God, He would tell them, "You loved your race, but you failed to love all of the world's people, whom I sought and loved, didn't you," and then those people would not be able to stand in His presence. On the other hand, those who have fulfilled the duties of saints can go directly into His presence. What is the Unification Church seeking to accomplish? Is it trying to create great people or saints? (38-263, 1971.1.8)

What kind of a being is God, who created the universe and established universal laws? He stands in the representative position of living for the sake of others more than anyone else does in the universe. Such a being is God. Therefore, in order to meet Him, you need to live for the sake of others. Though He is the King of knowledge, He does not expect you to come before Him with knowledge. Though He is the King of ability, He does not ask you to come before Him with ability. Though He is the Master and the King of authority, money, and materials, He does not ask you to bring these things to Him. Instead, He tells you that anyone and everyone can come before Him by living for the sake of others. (133-16, 1984.7.1)

5.3. The rationale for establishing the law of living for the sake of others

We can discern that words like love, ideals, happiness, or peace cannot be realized individually. These are words that can only be realized through relationships; thus, even God, the Absolute Being, cannot achieve the happiness, peace, and ideal that He desires on His own. Until now, we did not comprehend that the object through which His ideals, love, happiness, and peace can be fulfilled is none other than humankind. What would be the use of His loving if He were alone? What would be the use of His ideals if He had no one with whom to share them? Therefore, it is reasonable to conclude that these conditions cannot be met without going through a relationship with humankind. (75-315, 1975.1.16)

Between subject and object partners, where would God, the King of wisdom and the center of the cosmos, place the origin of true love, ideals, happiness, and peace? In this question lies a great dilemma. On the one hand, there is the subject partner, while on the other hand, there is the object partner; between the

two paths, one for the sake of the subject partner and the other for the sake of the object partner, where are conditions for the ideal to be found? This question cannot but pose a serious dilemma for God the Creator.

God had to consider, concerning true ideal, true love, and true peace, whether He should set the subject partner as the center and place the root of the ideal in the object partner's living for the sake of the subject partner; or set the object partner as the center and place the ideroot of the ideal in the subject partner's living for the sake of the object partner. After considering, God decided that if He were to place the subject partner as the root of the ideal, not only God Himself, but all people in the world would require the object partner to live for them; in other words, all would seek to become subject partners and not object partners.

If this were the case, the path to unity would be blocked. You need to understand this. (75-318, 1975.1.16)

Where is the path leading to unity and the origin of peace? God had no choice but to establish the principle that not only Himself, but also all human beings need to live for the sake of others. Hence, true love, as well as true ideal, true peace, and true happiness, can only be achieved by living for the sake of others; they cannot be found in any other case. Until now, human beings have not known that this is a fundamental law of the creation of the universe. (75-318, 1975.1.16)

Why were men and women born? Men were born not for themselves but for women, and vice versa. Neither was born for themselves. Though they were not born for themselves, they are in fact asserting their own desires. This ideology focusing on "I myself" should be demolished. Once it is demolished, the world can be unified. (61-266, 1972.9.1)

Those who pursue their value with their reciprocal partners rather than themselves as the focus – in other words, focusing on their partner as the standard – are not unhappy people. Anywhere and anytime, their foundation of heart has a realm that includes the partner, and so wherever they may be, they will not be lonely, but happy. (59-200, 1972.7.16)

Why did God have no choice but to set the principle of existing for the sake of others? Before I answer that question, let me ask you another. If someone sacrificed 100 percent for you at the risk of his life, would your original mind tell you to return his kindness with only 50 percent, whilst keeping the other 50 percent in your pocket, or would it tell you to repay him with everything you have? How does our original mind work? It wants to repay with a greater amount.

If you realized that he did what he did for you with a true and earnest heart, you would wish to repay him with more than 100 percent. If the 100 percent given were requited with 110 percent, then that 110 percent would be requited with 120 percent because the return was just as true and earnest as the first act. In this

process, the concept of eternity can be established. This is how eternity originates. Hence, such a principle had to be established in the very beginning, so that development and prosperity could take place. (73-326, 1974.8.10)

Even though the ideal and love are more precious than life to human beings, the people of today believe that such things come from themselves. This misunderstanding must be cleared up. Where do love and the ideal come from? They come from one's reciprocal partner. That being the case, a law of living for the sake of others needed to be established. Since God, who is the King of wisdom, anticipated the present consequences, He could not help but establish such a law. (73-326, 1974.8.10)

The concept of eternity is impossible when everyone lives for his or her own sake. When you see an object in motion, you can discern that the greater the pushing and pulling force between the reciprocal partners, the faster it moves. The reason God, the King of wisdom, established the law of living for the sake of others was to make the existence of eternity possible. (75-322, 1975.1.16)

I know that many among us think that we would rather die than be under someone else's control. In fact, you can see this tendency in the highly educated strata of society more than anywhere else. Nevertheless, people have been happy in times past when they were under the sovereignty of someone who lived for their sake. When you look at the structure of the spirit world, you will see that God is the great Sovereign of the cosmos, as well as the central being, existing in the heart of everything in the universe. You, however, have no idea how blissful it is to be ruled by Him. Since He knew that the ideal realm of unity, in which we would be grateful even if He governed us eternally could be established at such a place, God had no choice but to establish the principle of living for the sake of others. (75-322, 1975.1.16)

Love does not begin from the self. Without our reciprocal partner, we cannot find love and the ideal, which are more precious than life itself. We did not realize this until now. The being in whom we find this precious love and ideal and through whom we receive it, is our reciprocal partner. In order for us to reach the state where we can humbly accept this precious love and ideal, we need to live for the sake of others; hence, God had to establish the principle of living for the sake of others. (75-322, 1975.1.16)

Love cannot be fulfilled alone. Where does it arise? It does not come from the self, but from one's object partner. That being the case, you need to bow to and live for the sake of your object. This is where the heavenly law dictating, "Live for the sake of others" emerges. A very precious thing is coming to you, and in order to receive it, you need to respect and live for the sake of the giver. Only when you practice altruism can you receive love. (143-277, 1986.3.20)

True love is the love that gives, forgets that it has given, and gives once again. False love is the love that gives as part of a transaction to make a profit, the love that tells the receiver, "Since I gave you so much, you should give me more in return." Such is the love of Satan. (138-172, 1986.1.21)

Our original homeland is a place that only welcomes those who lived for God, a place where only those who were born, lived, and died for others can enter. This is the fundamental nature of our original homeland. Therefore, God raised up many religions throughout the course of history to train people to seek the original homeland.

Religion has historically taught people to be meek and humble and to sacrifice because such are the laws of the spirit world. Since human beings are destined to pass on to the spirit world, religion had to train them in preparation for that world while they were still on earth. Hence, the more advanced religions emphasize a higher level of sacrifice and service in order to raise people to be aligned with the spirit world through their daily lives. (75-320, 1975.1.16)

People in this world often ask, "Oh! What is life?" The immediate issue lies in establishing a view of life, the nation, the world, the universe, and consequently, God. How should they be established? Most important is the question of how to create a system of priorities in life and how all external things can be connected to that system.

Nevertheless, based on the principle of living for the sake of others, the most valuable view of life would be that you exist for all humanity, the whole world, the nation, society, family, spouse, and children. To be able to create happiness from such a position reflects the best outlook on life. (75-323, 1975.1.16)

CHAPTER TWO

A Perspective on the Family

Section 1. What Is an Ideal Family?

1.1. Why is the family valuable?

The family is the starting point where God's ideal can be manifested, as well as the happiness of humanity. It is the place where all individuals can have their efforts brought to fruition, and where all of God's work is fulfilled. Why is the family good? It is because the family is the base for all free activities based on parental love. (Blessed Family - 934)

An ideal family is a place where a God-centered eternal parental love; eternal conjugal love; and eternal filial love can be found. (90-201, 1977.1.1)

Everyone must have a family. A family is composed of parents, children, and their possessions. What entities can manifest the substantial horizontal development of the vertical history of the Old, New, and Completed Testament Ages? The creation, the children and the parents – that is to say, parents, their children, and their possessions. Each one of them is required in order to form a family. (29-157, 1970.2.27)

The ideal of the Unification Church does not lie elsewhere. The beginning as well as the conclusion is in the family. Until now, not one person has been able to solve the problem of human happiness, and that is why it has been sought after more than ever. Since happiness lies there, and because it has proved its infinite value in its systematized and universalized form, Unificationism came to be officially recognized. Therefore, if everyone in the world without exception comes to bow their heads and admit that they like this ideology, the world will automatically achieve unity. (26-103, 1969.10.18)

The sixty-six books of the Bible all express the hope for ideal families. What is it that men desire? It is to be married to an ideal wife. If there is any man who claims that is not the case, he cannot claim to be a man. The most fervent desire of women since their birth is to meet ideal husbands. No matter how great a woman is in the world, no matter whether she is a college graduate or holds a doctorate, her greatest desire would be to meet an ideal man. It would be to meet an ideal man whom she can love, and with whom she can have beloved sons and daughters. This

is the root of happiness. Since the doctrine of the Unification Church has been deeply embedded in such a family, no one would be able to remove it. (26-103, 1969.10.18)

Where is the Kingdom of Heaven first established? It first emerges in our families. Then what term can be given to our belief? It is the Way of the Family. We actually advocate a cosmos-centered ideology (*cheonju-ju-ui*); the Chinese character for *cheon* (天) means heaven and that for *ju* (宙) means home. Hence, this cosmos-centered ideology is an ideology centered on the heavenly home. I need to provide a detailed explanation in order to clarify the meaning of the word "cosmos." (26-103, 1969.10.18)

The family is a miniature nation grounded within a small social unit. It is a miniature nation, world, and cosmos. Therefore you cannot do anything if you abandon your family. The Unification Church is great in that it teaches people these things about the family. (24-230, 1969.8.17)

The family is the everlasting origin and base. This fact cannot be changed by the father or the elder brother, indeed, by any system in the nation or the world. Furthermore, this fact cannot be changed by heaven and earth, or even by God Himself. That is why the word "revolution" will never have any meaning for the family. (25-87, 1969.9.30)

The most important times in a person's life are in the moments of birth, marriage, and death. Then how should one be born? They should be born well, or as we would say in the Unification Church, be born through the bond of heart. The next important moment is that of marriage. We marry in order to live a full life. Simply put, we marry in order to achieve the four-position foundation. Only when such public laws of the universe are established on earth can God's will, as well as the will of humankind, be fulfilled. The family is the place where we can find the structure and contents required by these universal law. (24-230, 1969.8.17)

The world develops resembling the structure of a family. This always holds true no matter what state the world is in. The ideal world of the future, therefore, must be established based on the trinity of the family. Then what is the purpose of Creation? It is to complete the four-position foundation. Since human beings need to complete the four-position foundation, everyone should marry and form a family.

Human beings must take after God, and a society based on human beings must take after them, centering on God. I founded the Unification Church in order to make this come true. The whole world should already have developed to such a state, but it is not the case yet. However, through such principles, the world can ultimately come to resemble human beings centered on God. An ideal world is where the whole world is molded in the image of an ideal person.

It is a world that transcends nations and races. (26-190, 1969.10.25)

The family is the horizontal foundation in the form of a miniature world. From the family stems the nation and the world. What is the family? The family is the horizontal miniature of the world and is the objective standard to the absolute center. Then what are individuals? They are the stepping-stones on which the absolute center can reside. (26-258, 1969.11.9)

The absolute authority to judge this world cannot be bestowed on an individual alone. It needs to be bestowed on a true family. What would Satan attack first? It would be the family. That is why if you have formed a family but failed to unite into one, the family breaks up. A break-up between father and son, husband and wife, and indeed, the whole family, will result. A person who has formed a family only to see it break up later is scarred with a wound that cannot be healed for eternity. No amount of consolation would do that person any good. (30-85, 1970.3.17)

We need to become parents, husbands and wives, and brothers and sisters united within the family that God has yearned for. (24-306, 1969.9.7)

Why is the family good? It is because the family provides an environment in which you can share love with each other freely. That is why people miss their hometown and their home, where their parents and siblings live. (38-328, 1971.1.8)

When the father is pleased, the whole family is pleased; when the mother is pleased, the whole family is pleased; and even when the child is pleased, again the whole family is pleased. The family is where the whole universe can experience joy simultaneously. (30-85, 1970.3.17)

You need to gain control of your body and mind and become a perfected individual. Then the husband and wife need to become one in order to form a perfected family. (30-246, 1970.3.24)

When the mother and father become as one, that family can develop further, and when the children and parents become as one, that family can flourish on a higher level. Then what will happen if families unite with their relatives? Then a new spirit among the people will emerge. When they seek to attain yet a higher level, they will bring about the unity of the entire nation, and will be remembered forever as a clan of loyal patriots. (74-313, 1975.1.1)

A family of God's Kingdom cannot be formed forcibly; rather, it happens naturally where there is joy. Even when loving, one should not strive merely to receive; ideal love is established only when there is giving and receiving between the two. (66-123, 1973.4.18)

A happy family is one in which the husband comes home after work and discusses with his wife everything that

happened to him during the day, and plans new areas to pioneer with her. A happy family is one that strives continuously to discover new things. When parents set such an example, the children want to contribute too; they will gladly align themselves to making such a family. (29-113, 1970.2.25)

The true family is the place where a husband sacrifices for and loves his wife as his mother, and where a wife sacrifices for and loves her husband as her father. Also, they should love each other as younger sister and older brother respectively. Heaven is where ideal families live in a world where husbands and wives love and respect each other as they would God. Such a tradition should be established on earth. (Blessed Family - 920)

The mother and father cannot become as one without love. Why do you like love? It is because you are destined to like it, even if you don't want to. The greater love the mother and father have for each other rather than for themselves, the more ideal it would be. The bond of love is what binds the mother and father completely into one. Metal chains rust and finally break with time, but the bond of love is eternal.

Parents and children cannot be bound together with food or money. It is only through the love between the parents and children that they can be bound together. (18-329, 1967.8.13)

A family formed on a foundation that cannot be affected by the elements of revolution would not be absorbed by any philosophies' or ideologies. Rather, that family would control and surpass them. A family with such a standard would be eternally unchanging, even after decades, centuries, and millenniums, and would maintain the form of a race and nation. (25-87, 1969.9.30)

What would be inside a package of love? When you unwrap the package of love after reaching the homeland, an ideal husband or ideal wife would come out. Moreover, that package would contain a pouch filled with blessings from which would spring out an ideal family. Out of that pouch would come the highest level of restoration. Consequently, the individual, family, tribe, race, nation and world would all be at this highest level. If everyone were in such a state, no one would be above or below anyone else. Therefore the brothers and sisters as well as the family itself would be restored. In order to lay such a foundation for unity, a package of love, like a treasure chest, is required. (19-295, 1968.3.10)

1.2. The family gives birth to the love for society, nation, and humanity

Once your mind and body are united centered on God, circular motion manifests in all sorts of forms and figures. That is why the older sibling must love the younger, following the example of their parents loving them. In a family that is united into one in love in that way, the love within the family blos-

soms. Then that love becomes the love within a society, and then the love within a nation. In this way, it later becomes the love of the whole world. However, these days, these things have become very much obscured. (28-170, 1970.1.11)

How should love be between siblings? Based on what standard should they love each other? Siblings should love one another as their father and mother love them. From whom should they learn to love? They should learn from their parents. (66-120, 1973.4.18)

Ideal love is realized in the family. However, God could not have true sons and daughters. As there were no true brothers and sisters or husband and wife, He could not become their Parent. Therefore, it is God's will to fulfill all these things. Only at such a place would love dwell. People would abandon everything they have in the world to find their way to the place where such a love could be found. (19-314, 1968.3.17)

What is true love? It is parental love, conjugal love, and filial love put together. Without a tradition of sacrificing for each other, love cannot last for a long time and would disappear. Since parents sacrifice themselves for their children, the bond of love they have for their children cannot break. The sons and daughters who grew up receiving true love from their parents can only be filial to them. When the husband and wife try more and more to live sacrificially for each other, thinking in their hearts, "You have lived for my sake," their family will receive blessings from heaven. Such families are the dwelling place sought after by God. (43-323, 1971.5.2)

Who is the most valuable in a family? The children are not the most valuable. Then in a given family, who is of the highest value? It is the parents. Take yourself as an example. Authority, knowledge, honor and money may be precious to you, but none of them are more valuable than your parents. Next in value would be your spouse and finally your children.

Is there in fact anything more valuable than your parents, spouse or children? No, there is no such thing. Then why do we value our parents, spouse and children so highly? It is because we have love for them.

Parental love is absolutely necessary for the children. Conjugal love is absolutely necessary between a husband and wife. The sibling love between brothers and sisters, and filial piety toward parents, are also absolutely necessary in a family. (Blessed Family - 915)

Who do you like most in your family? Your parents, right? Why do you like them the most? It is because they are in the closest position among those with whom you can sustain a love relationship throughout your entire life. The one you love next best would be your spouse. If the love shared in the relationship between a husband and wife is not a conditional love, but an unconditional love, then that love would be the best

thing in a family, bringing happiness and harmony. This is the case even if that love may not be directly related with the eternal love of God. Finally, there is filial love for the parents. If children can sacrifice for and love their parents in a bright and positive manner, while longing for an ideal environment in which they can bloom as the hope of the future, their love will be a pure and sincere contribution to the their own happiness. A family in complete possession of the true parental love, true conjugal love, and true filial love will be the most ideal in the world. (Blessed Family - 914)

In a family, who is at the center? The person who is the oldest member of the family, that is, if the great grandfather is still living, he would be the center of the family. If the other members of the family choose to ignore him, just because he will soon pass away, it would be the same as ignoring the vertical world. Even if he became senile, he should still be the center of that family. As such, he should be the first to be served at mealtime. Even if your father were the president of that nation, your grandfather should still be served first. This is because the son represents the horizontal position. (34-242, 1970.9.13)

Where does unhappiness stem from? It first starts with the loss of the love nest. A happy family is where the children live with and attend their parents, who safeguard the household. A family where the parents, who represent God, are attended as the upper level, while on the horizontal level two strangers representing two separate families come together in union as husband and wife, bound together in love, abiding by the heavenly principle and carrying on the family line, is such a family. (19-305, 1968.3.10)

A family must have parents, spouse and children. Only then can that family provide the grounds for happiness. It cannot be doubted that the purpose for God's yearning for humankind is to find His own happiness. In His search for the basis of happiness, God cannot fulfill this ideal without human beings. Only when He forms a relationship with humankind can He have a place of emotional harmony. Just as we feel joy when we are emotionally content in our own homes, God wishes to feel the same from such a position. (32-198, 1970.7.15)

Even if a person has everything he could ever desire in this world, and is singing with joy, these external things cannot bring about happiness. They could be the conditions to find happiness, but they cannot be happiness itself.

Then what would determine whether you feel happiness or not? In order to feel happiness, you need to have loving parents, a spouse, and children. Not one person on earth can deny this truth. If a person has fulfilled only one of those conditions, he would not be able to help but feel sad and discontent proportionate to what is missing. (21-140, 1968.11.17)

What was God's ideal for the first human ancestors? It was for man and woman to come together in union to form an ideal family. The center of an ideal family would be neither the man nor the woman. A family is a unit connected to each other by the bond of parent to child and the bond of a husband and wife, all centered on God's love. Therefore, we can conclude that God's will is to perfect a family centering on His love. (Blessed Family - 301)

The ideal family is the place where the parents, children, husband and wife, and brothers and sisters desire to unite into oneness based on true love. From such a place the eternal global equalization begins, and consequently, the God's Kingdom on earth, followed automatically by God's Kingdom in heaven. (300-226, 1999.3.14)

As God is the original substance of true love, when one gets connected to true love everyone becomes part of one body. Parents are gods living in God's stead on earth, husband and wife are mutual counterpart gods, and sons and daughters are little gods. A family structure comprising three generations centering on true love in this manner is the basis of the Kingdom of Heaven. Without achieving such a foundation, the kingdom cannot be established.

The family is the center of the universe. The perfection of the family is the basis for the perfection of the universe, and so if there is love in a family and love for the universe, you can freely go anywhere. In this case, God stands in the combined central position of love as the Parent of the whole universe. (298-306, 1999.1.17)

Man's love, woman's love, son's love, daughter's love, parents' love and God's love are all included in the original ideal family foundation. Whoever loves their parents, spouse and children in such harmonized circumstances leads a heavenly life. (Blessed Family - 946)

There is a saying to the effect, "All is well if there is harmony within the family." If peace reigns in a family everything will go well. A perfected family is the family of peace which forms the basis of God's Kingdom. The driving force of a family is true love. Loving God more than yourself and loving your spouse more than life itself; true love is such pure and beautiful love. God did not create a force greater than the power of true love in the universe. True love is God's love. (219-118, 1991.8.28)

A human being should be part of a parent-child relationship, as well as a husband and wife and sibling relationships. These three relationships should meet at one point. There can be only one central point. That means the central point of upper and lower, left and right, and front and rear should be one and the same. If the central point is different for each of them, the balance of the three relationships would be broken.

In the end, seven points, composed of above, below, left, right, front, rear,

and finally the central point, would be formed. The significance of fulfilling the number seven is that the seven points have become as one in perfected true love, centering on God, thus achieving a perfect sphere forming a family that manifests harmony and peace. (287-21, 1997.8.10)

Section 2. The Family Is the Basic Unit of Heaven

2.1. Family is the cornerstone of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven

Heaven must be established from the family. Since Jesus couldn't form a family, he could not enter heaven, but instead is in paradise. Paradise is like the waiting room you have to pass through before entering heaven. Hell came into existence because of the Fall. God did not create it from the beginning. (21-199, 1968.11.20)

The four-position foundation is the cornerstone of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. One individual cannot establish it by himself. Accordingly, Jesus cannot establish it alone; the Holy Spirit must descend. (13-67, 1963.10.17)

The starting point of heaven is not the individual or nation. It is the family. That is why Jesus will descend to earth in his quest for a bride. Is an individual the starting point of heaven? No, the family is the starting point. (30-83, 1970.3.17)

The family is the basic unit in building God's Kingdom. Once you enter God's Kingdom, you would never want to leave, because "the One" with whom you want to meet tens and even hundreds of times dwells there. If all humankind had a common desire to enter there, and wanted to meet and live with Him, the world could be unified right away.

The Unification Church is heading towards that destination. However, that cannot be established all at once. First the foundation of the individual must be laid, followed by the foundation of the family, expanded into the tribe, nation, and world. (12-180, 1963.4.1)

The Kingdom of Heaven in a family is established when man and woman are completely united. The individual heaven is realized when mind and body form oneness. Husband, wife and children should be united centering upon God's will in the heavenly kingdom. The heavenly kingdom in the family has all of humankind as its focus, and the center of its will is God.

Therefore, the heavenly kingdom in the family is to be realized where a family lives for humankind, centering upon God. We have to work not just for God alone, but for all humankind centering on Him. He desires to establish such a family. Unless this is done before restoring the world, humankind, nations, and families cannot be saved.

You must understand that Blessed Families were established in order to make such families. (100-310, 1978.10.22)

The four-position foundation in the Unification Principle refers to the domain of three-generational love. When three generations live together happily in harmony, the ideal of creation is realized. Of course, husband and wife should love each other. In addition, they should pray for their children with love and take sincere care of them in order to create a happy and harmonious family. When this is accomplished vertically through three generations and connected horizontally through brothers and sisters, then perfect love is established. Even cousins and second cousins should become as one in love to form the perfect spherical shape of love. (Blessed Family - 947)

The family and God's Kingdom are the same in form. There are parents, husband and wife, children, and brothers and sisters in a family. The family can be united through love. On this foundation, unification can be established, life can be connected, and the ideal can be realized in a family. Therefore, you become qualified to enter God's Kingdom when you can respect conjugal and parental love.

Grandparents bequeath love to parents and the parents bequeath love to their children. If any one of these fails to happen God's Kingdom cannot be established. You should love your parents more than your spouse and you should love your grandparents more than your parents. This motto is the core and the ideal of God's Kingdom.
(Blessed Family - 946)

What is the world of God's ideal of creation? It is where God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven is established through the realm of true parents. God's Kingdom is established only through the foundation of love. No one has received the love of true parents in the fallen world; there is no trace of it. The same is true for the spirit world, because there has been no one who experienced the love of true parents on earth before passing away. In the original family foundation, the love of a man, woman, son, daughter, parents and God are all included. Whoever loves their parents, spouse and children in such harmonized circumstances leads a life of heaven. (Blessed Family - 946)

Where is the Kingdom of Heaven? It doesn't just drop from the sky. It is the place where we develop a living tradition of giving and receiving between the father, mother and children. It is where we experience complete joy in utilizing the creation in our daily lives to create an ideal environment. (Blessed Family - 945)

I feel that from now on I should teach you the code of conduct for Blessed Families, the code you should follow as you lead a life as families of God's Kingdom. Those who are walking the course of restoration have someone to teach them based on the Principle, and so should learn from them. The age in which I myself take responsibility for such problems has already past.

Each and every one of the families needs to be set in order. The Unification Church is a family-based organiza-

tion. That means we place families first. In the past, individuals were considered the most important but now we must prioritize the family over them. (22-334, 1969.5.11)

The day that humanity meets the Messiah will come only after passing through the Ages of the Word and the Substance. Only after that day has arrived can humanity begin life in the Kingdom of Heaven.

By that time, you will have to attain such a state that his mind, heart and state can become your mind, heart, and state, so that his difficulties and his sufferings can also be your own. Only when you attain such a state and feel that his heart and mind is one with your heart and mind can you become families of the Kingdom of Heaven. Only when this is completed on earth can the families of the Kingdom of Heaven be established. (19-251, 1968.1.15)

Where does the life of the Kingdom of Heaven begin? It begins in the family, not in any other place. The Kingdom of Heaven is the dimensionally expanded version of the family; it does not appear outside the realm of the family. Hence, when you embrace your spouse, you need to think that all the men and women of the world are becoming as one. The family is the place where you can make the conditional offering of loving all humanity. (30-83, 1970.3.17)

The Kingdom of Heaven is established based on the family. You should never forget to maintain your dignity as Blessed Families. (21-77, 1968.10.20)

In the future, the Sunday service of the Unification Church should be in the format of a report, not a sermon. The contents of the report should be about something a family can be proud of. Therefore, the whole family would need to attend the service. In this way, the other families can model themselves after the exemplary families and be guided by them to the right path. In such a manner we can establish the heavenly kingdom for the family, on earth. You should bear in mind that before this is done God's Kingdom on earth cannot be established. (23-63, 1969.5.11)

The reason I'm not currently constructing any church buildings is because I have plans of my own. The number of people in the church is not important. The Kingdom of Heaven does not begin from the church; it originates from the family, that is, the bride and groom.

Woman was born to meet man, and vice versa. When a baby wakes up, it looks for its "mama." The husband should call his wife more than the baby calls its mother. A person who fails to do so is truly pitiable. The wife should also call her husband more than he does her. They should become such a couple. As husband and wife enjoying the happiness of conjugal harmony, they should call out to each other all the time. If they can live in such a manner forever, they would not envy the young even when they grow old. In the future, I will

arrange a world tour for those blessed couples that reach the age of eighty. (23-55, 1969.5.11)

Just like in the early days of our church, you should form a household that can make your friends exclaim, "Hey, I like this place better than my own home. Here, boiled barley and gruel tastes better than food in my own home. Let me stay one more night!" Your family must make your friends and visitors want to abandon their own homes to live in yours. Only then can your family belong to God's Kingdom. (16-328, 1966.7.31)

The Kingdom of Heaven of husband and wife is established only when a couple becomes one based on God's love. No one can dissolve that union and it will never separate into two. What kind of love did you find? If you found God's love, your mind and body should be in complete oneness so that His love can dwell in you. In this way, the heavenly kingdom for a married couple and for the family can be established. When a father and mother are in a complete union of love and the children have their own spouses to love just as their parents loved each other, family heaven can be realized. When parents become plus and children become minus, the heavenly kingdom in the family appears. (Blessed Family - 943)

In a married couple, what should the husband do? He should be involved with church activities. The wife should deal with material matters. This is what they are supposed to be responsible for in their daily lives. Then what should they do as a family? The father, mother and children should be united. From there family heaven can come into existence. Therefore, in order to establish God's Kingdom based on love, the four-position foundation needs to be fulfilled. (26-101, 1969.10.18)

2.2. The family is the training ground for true love

The cosmos-centered ideology is for the sake of achieving mind-body unity. It is to establish the family as the embodiment of God's love, and to implement these ideas in the spiritual and physical worlds. The Chinese character for *ju* (宙) in *cheon-ju* (cosmos) means "house." That's why the term "cosmos-centered ideology" is being used. The cosmos is the combination of the incorporeal and corporeal worlds. How does this relate to us? We need a family. If you cannot achieve oneness on the family level, the cosmos-centered ideology will have nothing to do with you. The God-centered family is the ultimate standard to complete the ideal about which such a cosmos-centered ideology teaches. If you cannot sing the song of peace and praise happiness in the family on earth, you will be unhappy in the spirit world. (26-190, 1969.10.25)

Love continues eternally. It is the greatest aspiration. That is why everyone in the world desires to inherit it with open arms. By leaving behind such

a love on earth, you can justly advance into the presence of God when you enter the spirit world. The family is the place where you can attain such a love. Entering the Kingdom of Heaven through the family is none other than establishing the realm of oneness of love. (Blessed Family - 937)

If there is a heaven, there must be an earth, and if there is a heaven and an earth, there must be a man and woman representing them. In the family resides the standard of heart where the two can be united in all dimensions. Such a family is the absolute standard for the world of God's purpose; it can overcome any difficult circumstance. That is where the foundation for a new history, new world and new cosmos is laid. (25-148, 1969.10.3)

The cosmos-centered ideal should be realized on the foundation of the family. The cosmos is the totality of heaven and earth. The two are like mind and body in a human being. Mind and body should become as one. One subject partner needs one object partner; likewise, one man needs one woman. The union of a man and woman will create a family. (26-189, 1969.10.25)

A family is the ethical foundation of the society and is the exemplary, fundamental and primary organization. In such a family, love becomes the most accurate measurement of value. (Blessed Family - 930)

How should we measure the value of humanity? We should place more value in the state of an individual's heart rather than the state of the world. Therefore, to love the world you need to love individual people. You should love them as a man loves his wife and vice versa. (Blessed Family - 929)

In order to become God's child, you need to take after His heart. His heart is embedded in the world. Therefore you must love every single person in the world. If you cannot love them because they are far away, then love their nation, tribe, family or parents. This is because the parents represent God, the husband and wife represent Adam and Eve, and the children represent all humanity. (24-307, 1969.9.7)

What is the ideal world? Being colorful is more ideal than being of one color. In that sense, which is more ideal, the five races living in unity together or living separately? Living together would be more ideal. Therefore, we have to rebuild everything that does not follow the ideal way. Do you think God wants me to rebuild all these things or not? God supports such people. Therefore, you should inherit God's heart and the True Parents' tradition and focus on how to expand the bond of heart of the heavenly family which loves humankind. (Blessed Family - 928)

Raise your hand if you like old grandfathers and grandmothers. What about those who don't like them? I see many of your hands are down. If you were to

take care of 500-year-old grandparents, what would you do? Would you still like them? To love older people is to love God, because God is the oldest being in the universe. If you love God you should be able to love everyone regardless of age, whether they are the youngest, uncles, grandfathers or sons. That is to say, you need to love God's family. His family includes Japanese, Korean, American, and people of all nationalities. People with racial prejudice do not love God's family. Racial prejudice cannot exist in the ideal world. Isn't that true?

When children who have received love from their parents go out and meet people of their parents' age, they will feel very close and will try to talk with them and help them. When people who have a beautiful relationship with their siblings go out into society, they will easily get along and have close relationships with the people they meet. They will feel natural even in their relationships with the opposite sex. They would see the opposite sex as their brothers and sisters without any sexual desires or unsound ideas. God's Kingdom on earth is realized through families in which you are able to experience such love relationships centering upon God. (Blessed Family - 927)

Life together with grandparents, parents and children is a sound family life. If one of those generations is missing from a family, it is deprived of something. When ideal families are established, those families should serve as the building blocks for God's Kingdom on earth.

We have the mission to establish ideal families on earth. People who have experienced the deep love of grandparents in their family relate well with society. For example, they will feel very close to the elderly folk on the streets of New York, and in turn these senior citizens will treat them as if they were their grandchildren. No matter what the circumstances, they will want to communicate with each other and share feelings of closeness. Young people who have served their grandparents will try to help elderly people right away, whenever they are in need of assistance. (Blessed Family - 927)

The family that is composed of grandparents, parents and children is a miniature form of the world. The way for humankind to live is to expand the love for their family into love for humanity. You should consider and love old people as your grandparents, middle-aged people as your parents, people who look older than you as your older brothers and sisters, and people who look younger than you as your younger brothers and sisters. So the true person is the one who considers everyone as his or her family and whose heart can love the whole of humankind by transcending the barriers and boundaries in the world. Then you are truly qualified to love your father and mother. (Blessed Family - 926)

Wherever you go you should not think of everyone you see as strangers. Instead, you should think of them

as members of your family. When you see old people you should think of them as your own parents, and you should always be ready to weep with them and share their sadness if something happens to them. (16-314, 1966.7.31)

A true family is the place where a husband loves and lives for his wife as his mother, and a wife loves and lives for her husband as her father and brother. Next, the world where a husband loves his wife as God and a wife loves and respects her husband as God is the Kingdom of Heaven where ideal families reside. Such a tradition should be established on earth.

You cannot abandon your siblings. You cannot abandon your mother. You cannot abandon anyone in your family. Therefore, the word "divorce" cannot exist. A husband represents the father and older brother, so a wife cannot abandon her husband any more than she can abandon her father and older brother. You have to love the world with such love. When you see a man who is the same age as your father, you should love him as your father, and when you see a woman the same age as your mother, you should love her as your mother. (Blessed Family - 926)

Why does everyone have affection for their family? Because the family is the base for free action focused upon parental love. Likewise, God should also be able to act freely in the family. When society is composed of individuals who possess such a radiant nucleus of love regardless of their external appearance, God becomes free. Don't you think so? When you visit someone else's home as a guest, you feel uncomfortable, don't you? Why is it? It is because there's no bond of love with them. You feel awkward because that bond is not set up in all four directions. Therefore, our way is to become men and women of character. (Blessed Family - 925)

The Unification Church regards God's Kingdom as starting from within the realm of the tribe. When parents, siblings, cousins and second cousins become as one centering upon the grandfather, a perfect three generations are established. When this tribal domain of love becomes as one with God on earth, the whole world will be filled with God's love, and become His Kingdom. When a woman marries, she has to serve her grand parents-in-law and parents-in-law in place of God and her husband. She also has to harmonize with the sisters-in-law and brothers-in-law. If such love relationships are extended to the society, nation and world, this world will be full of peace and love, instead of crime and war. This is God's Kingdom, His ideal world. (Blessed Family - 947)

Where is the center of the universe? It is the family. Where is the base for true love to settle? It is in your family. Therefore, the family of the original ideal is one that grasps the love of the universe and participates in the protection of the universe. Also, such a family applies the realm of love for the universe to the

national level in order to walk the way of patriotism and finally, applies it to the world level. People who love their family are called filial sons or daughters, people who love their nation are called patriots, and people who love the world are called saints. (Blessed Family - 925)

Because God is at the center of the family, this world should be His Kingdom. The Blessed Families should strive to lead a life that works toward building His Kingdom. A God-centered tribe, nation and world are established when we live for the sake of others on His behalf, so Blessed Families should be responsible for creating a God-centered world. The Unification Church centered upon the True Parents is like a tribe and race. The purpose of our church is to form a heavenly nation composed of five races in unity, which can live more for the sake of the world than anyone else. This is my purpose and it is God's purpose that He desires to accomplish through me. (Blessed Family - 947)

The family is the representative training ground that educates people in love for humanity. It is the representative environment for establishing the center of heart. If you trust each other and lead a happy family life, you will stand as the center of the whole universe and be blessed with happiness. That is the beginning point of the ideal domain. Beings without love have no meaning to their existence. (Blessed Family - 925)

The family is created to be the textbook for life in heaven. If you can love every person who is your grandfather's age as your own grandparent, you will surely enter heaven. If you can love every person who is your parents' age as your own, there will be no boundaries for you in the spirit world. If you can consider all the young people in the world as your own children, you will be able to visit any place in heaven. Even though there are twelve pearl gates leading up to heaven, you will be able to pass through all of them. The family is the teaching material through which you can relate to the whole Kingdom of Heaven. In other words, it is the textbook. (Blessed Family - 924)

In a family, parents should completely inherit the vertical axis of love and align themselves to it. Next, the husband and wife are to relate horizontally at an angle 90 degrees to that axis. The standard is the same for a nation. The axis of love exists in only one place. That is why although the family is small in itself; it extends to the tribe, nation and world centering upon this axis.

The ideal realm comes into existence when these lesser or greater relationships with the central axis continues to expand in all directions. Consequently, the work I am doing at present involves righting that axis in order to unify the world. In order to achieve this, Father should occupy the position of the prince of all ideologies. He will obtain this position not by exercising force but by digesting with love. (Blessed Family - 924)

Your families represent the sovereignty of God's Kingdom. The parents stand on behalf of this sovereignty. The children stand in the stead of the citizens, and the material possessions represent the land of that kingdom. Subsequently, being filial to one's parents is the same as being loyal to one's nation, and also leads one to fulfill one's duties as a saint. At present, the family has become the origin of many disgraceful acts, but God hopes that the family will be transformed into sanctified ground. Therefore, the mission to save corrupted families in the fallen realm lies with us. Though families worldwide are shattering, we are not in a position to abandon them. (35-306, 1970.10.30)

Section 3. The Ideal and Value of True Family

3.1. True parents, true couples, and true children

God is the vertical parent who has true love for humankind. There is only one such vertical and perpendicular relationship. It is absolute. There cannot be two such relationships. If the vertical Parent were left standing alone, He would collapse. Therefore, the horizontal parents need to be found and connected to the vertical Parent. To go into more detail, the Creator is the vertical Parent of true love, and the created Adam and Eve are in the position of His children, as well as the horizontal parents. Adam and Eve are His substantial embodiments. When they are giving and receiving at the place where they resonate together in union, a central point comes into existence and the center of that couple's realm of resonance is established. This is the origin of life from which you were born. (183-40, 1988.10.29)

The vertical Father requires a horizontal father that can unite with Him. Why? He is needed to create a sphere. A being cannot just form a sphere on its own. A sphere comes into existence only when front and back and left and right are connected relative to the vertical and horizontal. Only when a sphere is formed can you harmonize with others and not live a self-centered life.

The universe revolves on its axis; it is in an objective position to, and revolves centering on the great axis of the universe, God. That is why it is standing on the same level. Therefore, there is only one creative true love of God in the universe. There is only one axis. There cannot be two. (182-143, 1988.10.16)

Existing theologies depict the Creator as a divine being and created human beings as essentially inferior and secular. They treat the whole of humanity as sinners. However, this perception is wrong. God created humankind because of love.

If God were the owner of the vertical love only, the children conceived by Him would maintain just a single vertical line. He would not be able to have them expand horizontally. On account of this, He is not the one who would give birth to His children. Instead, He would

have them born through true parents. The couple standing in the position of the parents of horizontal true love is the True Parents. They possess the horizontal love at a right angle to the vertical love of God, the True Parent.

That is why the love of both parents is necessary. On the one side stands the Parent who is the Creator, and on the other side stand the physical True Parents, the object partners of God, who were created in pursuit of the ideal. That is why God is in the position of the spiritual Parent and the True Parents are in the position of the physical Parents. In this way, human beings were supposed to be born connected to both the vertical love and horizontal love. (182-258, 1988.10.23)

Why should you give birth to children? It is so that you may experience the inner heart of God the joy and delight He felt at the time of the creation of Adam and Eve. That is why those who have not experienced childbirth may fail to appreciate their parents, their husband or wife. That is how they will end up. They may have loved in the past and in the present, but they cannot expand in the future. The grandparents represent the past, the parents the present, and the children the future. The family is where these three can unite as one. (216-192, 1991.3.31)

Eve is the external bride of God. Then why did God create Adam and Eve? It was for reproduction. It was to multiply His descendants. What would He achieve by multiplying His descendants? By doing so, He would be multiplying the citizens of the vast heaven. Would reproduction be possible in the spirit world? It is not possible because God's love is vertical, and comes down as one line. God's love is a vertical path that reaches only one point. Since it comes down the one single vertical path, there is no way for reproduction to take place on that vertical line.

He created Adam and Eve as the horizontal basis of reproduction and foundation of love. Since they stand on the horizontal plane, they revolve from East to West. A 180-degree plane stretches out infinitely. Consequently, reproduction can take place in all directions. Reproduction is necessary in order to create those who can be born and grow on this vast horizontal plane before passing to the spirit world as the eternal citizens of heaven. Reproduction takes place on earth. This is because reproduction is possible only through the physical bodies of men and women. Babies cannot be born in the spirit world. (213-265, 1991.1.21)

The citizens of God's Kingdom are not born in the spirit world. For what purpose did God create physical beings? It was to multiply the citizens of heaven. Without physical bodies, reproduction cannot take place. Vertical love reaches only one point. It is only when this love revolves based on the horizontal foundation that a sphere covering 360 degrees can come into existence. There is plenty of space to live within that sphere. This is how God's children can be born on

earth. Therefore, it is not a misfortune to have many sons and daughters born on earth. The more children are born on earth, the more citizens of God's Kingdom there will be. What God desires is to fill up the limitless universe. There should not be an empty spot in its vastness. He needs more citizens in order to achieve this. (218-130, 1991.7.14)

What is the starting point? It is the right of the true parents, true king and true firstborn son. These are the foundations which Adam and Eve should have built and stood upon. These three make up the principal palace of God. At that place would be His palace and His love. When human beings and the Creator are connected as one, the foundation of true love would be laid. The starting point of this union is the center of God. It is the original foundation for the perfected family of Adam and the palace where God can dwell forever. (218-189, 1991.7.28)

What is it that our hearts desire when we human beings wake up in the morning? The moment we wake up we do not worry about what we will have for breakfast, or the work we have to do that day, or the problems of the whole world. Instead, we desire to cherish an unchanging heart full of love night and day, all year round and for our whole lives. This is the place where such men and women can form a perfect horizontal unity and be connected to the vertical God at 90 degrees. It is the place where human beings can be united with God in love and form the ideal realm of love. For this, God created heaven and earth. (213-157, 1991.1.20)

What were the means by which you were born? Based on the original ideal of creation that is God's love, the lives of your mother and father, who are earthly beings created through love, were completely exhilarated and intoxicated in love, thereby becoming one united body, and this is how you were born. What drew them to come into union? It was the complete assimilation of man and woman through love. Their cells were full of excitement and stimulation. You were born based on the love of your parents, inheriting one life and lineage. Therefore, the being that is "I" is the fruit of the love of your parents. You are the fruit of parents' love. (213-157, 1991.1.20)

The fundamentals of God's principles of creation are that women were born for men and men were born for women. They were born for each other, and the center of their lives is their spouse. They were not born for themselves. To a husband, his wife is the center and to the wife her husband is the center. They were not born on account of themselves. They did not come into this life to live for their own sake.

For what purpose did God create the universe? If everyone realized that it was for love, how peaceful and close we would feel towards the universe. On that basis, because God has absolute love, His object is sure to live forever.

That is the most precious thing of all. (215-300, 1991.2.21)

All the creation would appear beautiful in your eyes at the time of your marriage, just as it was when God created the universe. The whole of creation, including you, exists through love. When you realize this, then through that love the fundamental feelings God nurtured at the time of Creation can be re-created and shared with your partner and all forms of existence on earth, all united together as one. In other words, it is possible for you to experience the deepest feelings of God at the time of Creation. You are also a part of the creation who inherited every ideal conceived by God when He created the universe. If you were to pull true love towards yourself, heaven and earth would also be drawn towards you. Even the furthest things would be drawn to you if they were pulled by true love, and things nearby could be sent far away by the power of true love. (216-192, 1991.3.31)

Sons and daughters born in the world of the one culture are princes and princesses of the absolute God. In the palace of God, human beings are the princes and the princesses. This palace is centered upon God, the Creator. We are the royal family centered upon the King of kings, the Creator. (218-198, 1991.7.28)

Human sexual organs are gifts inherited from the Creator and the ancestors and have remained unchanged through the ages. They are precious gifts that our ancestors and even God Himself cannot interfere with. If one were to violate them, he would become the flesh and blood of the devil, destroying the principal palace of love, the center of the great way of the heavenly principle. The sexual organs are the principal palace of life, giving birth on the basis of eternal true love as God's pure essence. They are also the origin of a new lineage. Why were the sexual organs created? They were given to you for the great cause of heaven and earth, for the great providential governance of the cosmos. (193-147, 1989.10.3)

At the time of Creation, God created man and woman with the sexual organs as their emblem. As result, that which controls the sexual organs is connected to all structural elements of the human body. For this reason, a man and woman unite as one in the act of making love and give birth to a child. What would happen during childbirth? Whom would the baby take after? The baby becomes attached to the mother's nervous system so its own develops in a similar way. Can branches grow if there are no roots? The logic in this cannot be denied.

When a man and a woman become excited during love-making, it is a principle that the mind and body unite into one. That is logical. Then through which organ can love, life and lineage can be connected continually through the generations? It is the sexual organs. What comes first, love or life? In this question lies the problem. Similar to the problems of the world today, which are caused by materialistic philosophy, and the ques-

tioning of whether it is the mind or the body that comes first, we also need to ask ourselves: What is more precious, love or life? This is the problem. What comes first? The order of importance must be determined. The answer is that love comes first.

When God first established the ideal of creation, He did not do so centering upon Himself. Instead, it was centered upon love, and that is why He created the world of reciprocal relationships. This is logically correct. (193-145, 1989.10.3)

Where did men and women come from? As there is a Creator of the universe, they originated from Him. Then for what purpose did that Creator create men and women? It was for love. What love? True love. Then what is true love? True love is the love that is eternal and yet unchanging. No matter how much the era and the environment changes with time, true love will remain unchanged.

Men and women were created to fulfill the ideal of true love, which is unique, eternal and unchanging. They were not created for themselves. Creation was initiated centered on God, who is the root of all. Therefore it can be said that the whole universe was created because of love. (213-156, 1991.1.20)

A true family that has matured through true love is the love nest of God. (173-166, 1988.2.14)

God's grief is that He could not educate human beings to become true children, siblings, and couples. He could not teach them how to be true parents. (228-34, 1992.3.1)

3.2. The qualities of a true family

The Kingdom of Heaven is your homeland. You can go there after restoring the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships. You will know this once you die. Even the greatest human beings would find themselves in trouble on account of this. So, you should quickly decide and receive the Blessing. Then when that time comes, you will not curse yourself saying, "I should have listened to the words of Rev. Moon!" That is the quickest solution. (239-76, 1992.11.23)

Satan ravaged the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships. He brought the heavenly realm, the earthly realm and the future world to ruin, thereby destroying the kingships of the three worlds of past, present and future. That is why, in order for us to enter the Kingdom of Heaven, we need to become perfect embodiments of the Four Great Realms of Heart. We must become people who can receive the love of the royal family as the princes and princesses of love who will inherit the Three Great Kingships. It is the heavenly principle that such people enter God's Kingdom. (239-74, 1992.11.23)

Since everything was lost through the Fall, when you meet your spouse as God's representative, you will feel the heart of a daughter or younger sibling. Likewise, you will also come to feel the

heart of a bride, a mother, and even new sons and daughters. For this reason, when people used to see Father, they wanted to make him their son. By restoring the realm of heart, you can judge what is right or wrong and what is good or evil, and thus return to God's side. In this way, all resentments and grief can be appeased. That is how the realm of heart works. It cannot be helped.

You need to form families of love. Let it be known that the Kingdom of Heaven is the place for members of a unified royal family that have experienced love as princes and princesses of God's Kingdom, the realm of His love! Amen! While you are living on earth, you need to base your lives on this principle. Even when you pass on to the next world, you need to do your absolute best to follow this principle. During my whole life, I have never thought of anything other than this. (238-262, 1992.11.22)

When you return home you need to serve your grandparents as you would God. You need to serve your parents as if they were the king and queen; the center of the family. As the sons and daughters of such parents, you are the princes and princesses who are to inherit their respective duties while you are growing up. Once you have grown up, inherit the kingship of the future and lead the world.

From now on, members of the Unification Church should consider these matters and keep in tune with such an order of love. When you have become the parents, mother, grandfather, or child of such a family, you will automatically enter God's Kingdom. Heaven is the place for those who have experienced the love of the royal family of God's Kingdom on earth. (221-309, 1991.10.26)

Members of the Unification Church are closer to each other than their own siblings. In this manner, in the world of the future, front and rear, husband and wife, left and right, and above and below need to unite as one. Above and below represent the duties of children towards parents, front and rear represent the duties between siblings, and left and right represent the duties between husband and wife. Once perfection is achieved in this way, you can then ascend to the level of God in the spirit world and become like Him.

The only way to return to God is through true love, and nothing else. A true family represents the trained and perfected Adam's family based on the heavenly standard. Once it extends across the world, it will bring about the unity of East and West, as well as man and woman. The object partner needs to unite as one with the subject partner, the man. Also front and rear, and above and below need to unite. In so doing, one unified world will undoubtedly result and everything in it will become perfected based on true love and the content of the Principle! Amen! (222-321, 1991.11.6.)

The course of human life is that of a wanderer. Considering this, what is it that we need? We need to experience what true love is. Due to the Fall, humanity

could not receive the perfected parental love. So, based on true parental, true sibling, true conjugal, and true filial love, you need to form a family vertically related to God. You must create a horizontal environment, by extending your family into numerous families in all directions. Then these families become true families that can connect the vertical with the horizontal, and thereby expand to the realms of tribe, people, nation and world. That world connected through love will be God's Kingdom! (139-212, 1986.1.31)

Filial love, the love between siblings, and parental love all need to spread. When these kinds of love are expanded and adopted by all, the family will become perfected in both heaven and earth, inheriting the spiritual and physical kingdoms. People who have lived in families that experienced God's inner heart as well as the external substantial forms of Adam and Eve belong to the realm of the royal family of God's Kingdom. Isn't that simple? What I am saying is true. (240-17, 1992.12.11)

There is only one fundamental concept common to the three main ideals of true parents' love, true teacher's love, and true owner's love. This is the concept of parents in a true family. Even I myself return home at night, don't I? Even a nation's president returns home at night. The school should be a place where a teacher possessing parental love teaches, and the president should be someone who governs a nation with parental love. (213-124, 1991.1.16)

What is true love? It is about giving more than one has and not expecting anything in return. What is patriotism? It is about sacrificing one's life for the nation without expecting anything in return. A true husband is someone who is ready to give his life for the sake of his wife, time and again. True husbands, true wives, true children, true siblings, true parents, and a true family follow that path. Families in which the grandparents, parents, husband and wife, and children are all ready to do this will automatically have God dwell with them even if they tell Him not to. Why? Because they would resemble Him. (210-32, 1990.11.30)

You don't need a lot of money. Money flows away, as does knowledge, and everything else. However, the tradition of the true family based on true love remains forever, even in the spirit world. This is the most precious thing of all. (215-160, 1991.2.17)

If Adam and Eve had fulfilled their responsibility as children, as siblings, as husband and wife, and parents, then their children would have been in a different situation. As it was, Adam's children could not reach the realm of God's love. If they had been the children of unfallen Adam, they would all have been connected horizontally and would have established God's Kingdom on earth; instead, the vertical and the horizontal were not connected, and so it

could not be established. That is why the sons and daughters need to inherit two kingdoms.

Since they are destined to inherit God's Kingdom in heaven and on earth – the vertical and horizontal kingdoms – and the lineages of the vertical and horizontal parents, the sons and daughters are eligible to inherit every internal aspect of the vertical Parents and every external aspect of the horizontal parents. Being a part of the royal family signifies leading the life of having inherited the two kingdoms. The fact that you have become the royal family would mean that you stand on the perfected foundation, and you can be accepted by both kingdoms at all times. (240-17, 1992.12.11)

The love of a mother and father can be said to be the flower that represents all men and women of the world, at the same time giving out fragrance and standing in the position of their fruit. They are the representatives. The mother and father represent the women and men of the world. Then who do their sons and daughters represent? They represent future generations of descendants who will become the billions of people that make up humankind. Therefore, the mother, father and child need to unite through God's love, and exercise a love where those above live for the sake of those below them, and vice versa. It does not mean living for oneself. From the perspective of the original nature of God's creation, it is living for the sake of others. (214-270, 1991.2.3)

The grandparents should conduct themselves as representatives of God, the parents as the president of the world, and the sons and daughters as the children of the king of the heavenly nation – that is, the princes and princesses. This characterizes the family ideal, and the original family of the love of God, the Creator. The family is the palace of God's Kingdom, and its members represent the royal family of that kingdom.

From the viewpoint of God, the grandfather is the representative of the princes and princesses of the past. Your parents are the representatives of the princes and princesses of all nations currently. Isn't that so? Doesn't everyone have such a desire? Everyone is the same. The children are the representatives of the future princes and princesses of the entire universe. It is our family that holds such great value. This is something to be proud of. That we are standing on the foundation of such a profound premise is truly precious.

"I am proud of God." When you say this, God would feel the same way about you. "I, as the central family, feel proud to be the representative family of the ideal husband and wife." When you are ready to claim this, the whole cosmos including all things of the future will welcome you. Do you recognize the background underlying this historic family, this most-highly valued family? This structure of the ideal family was created by God. You need to advance to such a position. God stands in the position of the Grandfather. Anyone who comes into His presence should bow

before Him. (216-299, 1991.4.14)

Loving and respecting the grandfather is the same as inheriting and learning about the world of the past. From the father we can learn about the present, and by loving and caring for one's children, we can learn about the future. What we can inherit from the grandparents and parents is lineage and true love. We inherit true love.

Although the grandparents are old, they are united through true love, as are the mother and father. So the children need to become like them and inherit the future from them. Unless you form a true family, you can never inherit the future world.

Looking at these three generations in the family is the same as looking at the universe. The love of the universe lies in the true family that represents the whole history beginning with God, as well as the present and the future. In a true family, the grandmother, mother and older sister are loved by the other members of the family. The same is true in the animal kingdom, where the female and male are also loved; that is the situation of every creature in this world.

What this indicates is that the family is the textbook from which you can learn the love of the universe. Without the grandmother, the family is unstable. The same is true of a family without a grandfather or either of the parents. Only when the family has all of its members present can it move directly to God's Kingdom. The grandparents, parents, and children can all enter heaven as they are.

The people who love the true grandparents, true parents, true children, true family, true nation and true universe can enter heaven. The model textbook is the family. If you learn to constantly reflect on God with such thoughts in your mind, your future would be assured. When you love God in your heart and you can say, "I love for the sake of the future," then your future would be eternally blessed. (162-140, 1987.4.5)

Section 4. We Enter Heaven as a Family

A family belongs to a nation, a nation belongs to the world and the world belongs to the universe. So if you love God, even though you had to abandon your family and nation for a higher purpose, you will still attain the position of having loved everything in the universe. That is why I teach all Unification Church members to live for the sake of the world and for God. If you can love the world and humankind as much as you love me, you can enter heaven. (Blessed Family - 954)

When we say Heavenly Father, we are saying that God is a Parent. If Adam and Eve not fallen, they would have become the king and queen of the heavenly nation, as well as the parents. They would have been the king and queen of God's Kingdom and the universe. That's why it is said that devoted, filial children and loyal subjects can enter heaven.

When a woman serves her husband as God, lord and king, and leads a life of true love, she can enter heaven. In this way, it becomes logical that you cannot be welcome in heaven unless you love your parents, nation and world. (Blessed Family - 954)

What is the Fall? What are fallen children? Fallen children cannot deeply feel God as their Father. Their mind doesn't have a concept of God.

You should have the following experiences and realizations. Firstly, you should substantially feel, "I am born again and have inherited new life, and I am God's child who leads a new life through the True Parents." Secondly, you need to realize, "I am a qualified citizen of God's Kingdom." Thirdly, when you think of the nation and world, you should feel God's love, and bear this thought in mind, "God has bequeathed this world to me, so as His child I have a right to possess this world." (Blessed Family - 953)

You cannot enter heaven alone. In this regard, a husband and wife need to achieve unity. In order to go through this process, one first needs Cain to be united with them. For this, an environment of Cain-Abel relationships is needed. Unification Thought teaches that you cannot be restored unless you have established a standard of unity between brothers and sisters before reaching the position as parents or couple. (Blessed Family - 953)

If you cannot experience heavenly love on earth, you are not able to enter God's Kingdom in the spirit world. Have you sincerely loved a Cain-type person? In order to go to the Kingdom of Heaven, your love should surpass the parental love and conjugal love of the satanic world. If the parents in the satanic world are able to die for the sake of their child, we should demonstrate a love that surpasses them. (Blessed Family - 953)

Your mind and your life should overflow with God's love and should let the love droplets fall continuously. When love overflows like this, there is hope, but if it dries up, you will perish with your family. People without love will be stricken out of the world of love. Such people are destined to be excluded from the world of the tradition of love. (Blessed Family - 952)

Only when you can respect parental love and conjugal love can you be qualified to enter heaven. You have to love your parents more than you love your spouse, and you have to love your grandparents more than you love your parents. This is the core teaching of heaven and the ideal motto. (Blessed Family - 952)

What kind of people can enter heaven? Those who love their son more than God cannot enter Heaven and neither can those who love their wives or themselves more than God. (35-305, 1970.10.30)

I am Eu Hyo-won. As Father's close disciple, I served for a long time as church president, and I wrote the Divine

Principle, which became our worldwide scripture. I thought I would be in the top position in the spirit world. But when Father organized my trinity in the spirit world, with the hierarchy set in the order of Lee Ki-suk, Eu Hyo-won and Park Jong-gu, I was disappointed and so I complained.

Father said, "The spirit world is the world of love where competition of intellect does not exist, only that of love. Lee Ki-suk has more love, and that is why he became the eldest in the trinity." I could understand after listening to Father's explanation. I have not yet entered heaven; I am still on the way. Thus far, my work for the church has inclined heavily towards intellect, but from now on both my wife on earth and I will focus on working with a loving heart.

Heung-jin nim is currently in Heaven. He could not enter until he received the Blessing. Only after establishing the four-position foundation could he finally enter. The spirit world is the world of love. (Blessed Family - 952)

A person leading a celibate life can never enter heaven. For such a person, heaven is the land of despair. A land of solitude still presents hope, but the land of despair presents no hope at all. (Blessed Family - 951)

How do you picture heaven? In a word, it is the living environment for a perfected person. If it is the place for a perfected person with true love, then what is such a person like? Humankind is composed of man and woman. When considering how the perfection of God's ideal love can be achieved on earth, we can safely conclude that this ideal can only be achieved by a man and woman together. It can be perfected with a man and woman who together take initiative to practice perfect love from the core of their beings. (Blessed Family - 951)

Who will build God's Kingdom? Only couples who are thankful even as they walk the way of crucifixion for the will of God can do this. The gates of heaven can be opened only through the husband and wife who are an eternal and unchanging couple with absolute faith, absolute practice and absolute heart. (Blessed Family - 951)

Considering that it is God's desire for you to become exemplary families in this world of the enemy in accordance with His will, you should realize that you can only enter heaven as a family. (29-9, 1970.2.15)

You cannot go to heaven if you are single. The Blessing allows you to pass through the gates of heaven. It is a place where only families can be welcomed. The three generations of the family need to be connected in order to enter. The 70 family members of Jacob consist of three generations of his family. That is how they could enter Egypt. (12-266, 1963.5.25)

According to the original principle of creation, heaven is a place where only families can enter. You can only be happy when your parents, children, and mem-

bers of your clan have all entered together. Could that place truly be called heaven if only the children were allowed and the parents ended up in hell? Therefore, in paving the way to heaven in the future, the Unification Church should first create the family standard. Otherwise, you will not be able to enter. Based on the family, you need to free yourself from all situations in which Satan can accuse you. In other words, you need to free yourself from all the historical and providential standards of accusation. (21-63, 1968.9.1)

You cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven alone. There is no way you can enter it alone. Adam and Eve fell together and opened the gates of hell, and therefore you cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven alone. That is why even Jesus could not go there; instead, he is in paradise. Jesus was supposed to enter the Kingdom of Heaven only after obtaining his bride. The Christians of today do not know about this, and say they will follow him. If they were to be true to their words, they would have to go and come back again. Unless you form a family and establish the foundation for the restoration of the family, you cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. That is why the Unification Church is conducting the Blessing. (23-315, 1969.6.8)

The woman sinned first, and so the Holy Spirit who is female comes first in the form of the mother and cleanses the world of its sin, and then Jesus needs to come again as the bridegroom with a new seed. God's purpose is to revitalize and recreate the world with humankind newly centered upon Him, as kinsfolk of the true parents of a new heaven and earth. Only when such a world comes into existence can it be said that everything has been done in accordance with His plan. If God who has been guiding His providence for six thousand years did not have a purpose, then there would be no need to believe in Him. (21-199, 1968.11.20)

What kind of place is the Kingdom of Heaven? It is a place prepared for a man and woman who together have formed a family centered on God. Jesus came to earth but he was crucified before he could receive his bride and so could not have any children. For two thousand years he has had to remain in paradise until this time, praying and having the Holy Spirit work on his behalf. (21-199, 1968.11.20)

God did not create the world in such a way that the husband could enter heaven while his wife went into hell. At the time of creation the main characters of the ideal, that is, the father, mother, and their children, were supposed to establish a tribe, race and nation. Shouldn't it have been like that? However, the first human ancestors fell, and so hell came to exist. (16-33, 1965.12.26)

The heaven we speak of in the Unification Church is not a place one can enter alone; it is a place where the whole family resides together. According to

God's ideal of creation, do you think heaven is where the man and woman enter separately? Of course not. It is the place where they enter together. It is a place where, if the father were to enter, the mother should also enter, and if the parents were to enter, their children should also enter. Both the mother and father should enter heaven together; if the father entered heaven and the mother went to hell, could such a place be called heaven? From this perspective, the Unification Church is a truly historic religion. (34-209, 1970.9.6)

People who have not fallen will marry in holy matrimony in the bosom of God's love during their life on earth, give birth to children beloved by God and have grandchildren who are a source of delight to Him. They will all receive God's love and enter heaven together as a family. Could that place be called heaven if you enter it without your children? Paradise, on the other hand, is a place where the most loving husband and wife, parents or children enter separately. It is not related to the family in any way. Would such a place be heaven? Heaven is a place where the whole family can enter and have give-and-take with each other in attendance of God. If someone was being tormented in hell while his parents were residing happily in heaven, would that be right? Would such a place be heaven? (19-105, 1967.12.31)

You cannot enter heaven as an individual. When I looked into it, I found out that it is not the place of dreams dreamed up and believed in by Christians until now. Heaven is a place where one enters as a family. The whole family is supposed to reside in it together. It is a place for the family. The place where the father, mother, sons and daughters can live together in harmony serving God is the ideal world. However, if the father ended up in hell, the mother in heaven, the older sister in hell and the younger sibling in heaven, would you be happy even if you went to heaven? The Kingdom of Heaven is a place the whole family enters together. (22-271, 1969.5.4)

What is the secret to entering heaven? It is a place where an individual cannot enter alone. Only whole families may enter there. Not only that, you need to bring with you members of your tribe. Having many members in your tribe serving God on earth is truly a blessing. If in a family there were many children as well as abundant wealth, that family is said to be blessed. In this regard, in order to be blessed and enter heaven, one needs to go not as an individual, but as a member of a family. (22-168, 1969.2.2)

Section 5. The Family Pledge

5.1. Those who can recite the Family Pledge

The families who recite the Family Pledge should achieve mind and body unity. In principle, you could not recite it unless you are united in mind and body. You need to eliminate everything that falls short of its standard and increase

everything that coincides with it by reciting the Pledge and praying every day. In this way, you can achieve complete mind–body unity. In the original sense, you would only recite the Family Pledge after reaching such a state. (261-143, 1994.6.9)

The Completed Testament Age must unfold in accordance with the Family Pledge. The most important phrase is "Our family… centering on true love." This tells us that we have crossed over the fallen realm. It signifies that everything that had been divided through the false love, false life and false lineage of the false parents has now been united.

When you are reciting, "…centering on true love," you need to do so in a state of complete mind-body unity. You must also be in a state where the mind and body, the husband and wife, and the sons and daughters are united as one. Through your children, you need to resolve the historic deadlock caused by the shedding of Abel's blood by Cain's hands. The Family Pledge needs to be recited on the foundation of the unity of mind and body, husband and wife, and of the children, so that everyone has achieved oneness with each other. (264-192, 1994.10.9)

Who can recite the Family Pledge? People who have inherited the false love and false life through the false parents of the satanic world are not qualified to recite it. Only those who have returned to the originally intended world, become one with God and the True Parents, and who stand on the basis of having achieved, through true love, oneness of mind and body, unity between husband and wife and unity among sons and daughters may recite the Family Pledge. (264-213, 1994.11.3)

Who can enter heaven? It is not a place where just anyone can enter. It is a place for only those who have achieved oneness of mind and body, husband and wife, and sons and daughters, and have established the family four-position foundation over three generations. That is why to enter heaven, the whole family, which is the primary base, needs to be completely united. The Family Pledge is only for those who can achieve this.

That is why you need to reflect at every mealtime – breakfast, lunch and dinner – and also when you wake up in the morning and go to bed at night, on whether you have fallen into a position of having induced a relationship with Satan once again, through disunity of your mind and body.

Conflict between husband and wife should not exist. It causes nothing but problems. Until now you have lived as you pleased, but in the future a time will come when family feuds are subject to the heavenly law. These laws will be severe; there will be no forgiveness. The women in particular must beware. Fallen women need to learn to control their tongues. They need to watch what they say. Women have important responsibilities to shoulder, because all responsibility will lie with them. (264-214, 1994.11.3)

The Family Pledge is not for the general public. It is not intended for just anyone to recite. The beginning of the eight verses of the Family Pledge are set forth as a premise in the phrase, "Our family … centering on true love." This phrase can only be recited on a foundation that has no relation to the satanic world. (263-195, 1994.10.4)

5.2. The content of the Family Pledge

1. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to seek our original homeland and build the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation, by centering on true love.

The first pledge is, "Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to seek our original homeland and build the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation, by centering on true love." In simple terms, these words mean that we are the ones who will build God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. It means that we need to form God-centered families, since the family was lost.

It means our family will, through true love and our original homeland, build God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven, which is the original ideal of creation. The original homeland is based on the family, not the nation. That is why you need to return to your hometowns. Your family needs to return to your hometown in order to establish God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. Once you have restored the hometown, the nation and the whole world will automatically be united. There is nothing to worry about. God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven will automatically come into existence. It all begins from within the family. (260-157, 1994.5.2)

What is pledge number one? It contains the words, "…to seek our original homeland…centering on true love," so we need to seek that homeland. We are pledging to complete "the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven," God's ideal of creation. We need to build it, with our own hands. We need to reclaim it from the world of the devil. We need to completely transform the satanic world. Do you understand? That is why we are not talking about completing, but building. (261-88, 1994.5.22)

Pledge number one refers to seeking our original homeland and building the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation. Since the kingdom was lost, it needs to be restored. God will not establish it for us. We need to do it ourselves. (263-148, 1994.8.21)

2. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth by attending God and True Parents; we pledge to perfect the dutiful family way of filial sons and daughters in our family, patriots in our nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth, by centering on true love.

Pledge number two of the Family Pledge also contains the phrase, "Our family… by centering on true love." This signifies that nothing can be accomplished without true love. The next phrase is, "Our family… pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth by attending God and True Parents; we pledge to perfect the dutiful family way of filial sons and daughters in our family." This means that the father needs to practice the way of filial piety, as do the children. In fact, every member of the family needs to do the same. They need to inherit the tradition of filial piety. Pledge number two goes on to say, "We pledge to perfect the dutiful family way of … patriots in our nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth."

So the whole of pledge number two states, "Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth by attending God and True Parents; we pledge to perfect the dutiful family way of filial sons and daughters in our family, patriots in our nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth, by centering on true love." That means that you need to become parents and raise your children well. The words "divine sons and daughters" refer to the children that abide by the law of God's Kingdom and His Palace, both in the spiritual and physical worlds.

In both these worlds, the sovereignty and the citizens of His Kingdom need to abide by His law. The sovereignty is the subject partner and the citizens are the object partners which exist in the two worlds. (260-157, 1994.5.2)

Pledge number two signifies that our family pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth by serving God and the True Parents, to fulfill the way of filial piety in our family, patriotism in our nation, saints in the world, and a family of divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth. This means that we will complete everything desired by God in our family. Through it, we are making a vow that as parents, we will educate the children in our family, the citizens in our nation, and the people living in the world, and in heaven and earth, so that they may become eligible to become the family members of God's Kingdom. (260-190, 1994.5.8)

What is the content of pledge number two? It speaks about a representative family. Therefore, you need to pledge, "To represent and become central to heaven and earth by attending God and True Parents, and to perfect the dutiful way of filial piety in our family, patriotism in our nation, saints in the world, and a family of divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth."

We need to rid the world of everything and everyone that was disloyal, impious and treacherous to God throughout history. There were many like that in past families, nations, world, and even in the spirit world. Numerous though they may be, as their representative you need to become as one with the True Parents and perfect such a

family as depicted in the Pledge. (261-88, 1994.5.22)

You need to fulfill the paths of filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters based on love. Your family represents Adam and Eve, the pinnacle family. Since you were blessed from such a high position, you can then settle down on earth. Once you settle down centering on heavenly love, you become a central family. Such a family will be one of divine sons and daughters, saints, patriots, and children of filial piety. Such a family will forever be the seed for future generations. The same is also true of its fruit. By becoming people who base their lives on this principle over countless generations to come, you will undoubtedly become the citizens of God's Kingdom. (263-149, 1994.8.21)

3. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to perfect the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships and the Realm of the Royal Family, by centering on true love.

Pledge number three states, "Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to perfect the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships and the Realm of the Royal Family, by centering on true love." You know about the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships. If Adam and Eve had not Fallen, but perfected themselves, they would have become God's royal family. Therefore, this part of the Pledge signifies that entering God's Kingdom requires becoming a restored royal family. The Blessed Families need to achieve this.

In order for a man and a woman to receive love from each other, they need to stand in such a position; otherwise, they cannot love each other. Conjugal love should only take place where the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships have been realized. These realms and kingships cannot be realized without love. That is why man is absolutely necessary for woman, and vice versa. Blessed families should strive every day in order to achieve this goal. This is a practical matter, and it is set right before your very eyes. (260-190, 1994.5.8)

Pledge number three says, "Our family… pledges to perfect the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships and the Realm of the Royal Family, by centering on true love." Since Adam and Eve failed to accomplish them through their first love, we have to fulfill them as originally intended. Terms such as "divine sons and daughters" in pledge number two carry the implicit meaning of restoration. We therefore we need to achieve pledge number three on the basis of first fulfilling the content of number two.

This pledge clearly requires us "… to perfect the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships, and the Realm of the Royal Family." The realm of the royal family signifies that the direct descendants of the Lord at his Second Advent have no conditions of

indemnity to fulfill. The direct descendants are not affected by them. Such conditions still apply to the woman and son in the realm of Cain, but not to the direct descendants. That is exactly what took place with True Mother, Sung-jin's mother, and Sung-jin himself.

To put it more clearly, to be included in the realm of God's royal family is acknowledging the realm of Cain. By putting them in the position of the restored younger brother, and treating them as the royal family, Satan would have no grounds on which to accuse. Satan would have to acknowledge them, because he would have no conditions on which he can claim them as his children. If the realm of Cain were not included, it would mean that within the satanic realm would be those who are not part of the royal family, and so Satan would still maintain his fallen existence. However, by recognizing the realm of Cain as part of the royal family, Satan would have to retreat. This is crucially important. (260-158, 1994.5.2)

The Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships need to be perfected. The grandfather stands in the place of God. The father is the center of the second generations, and so he would be the king of families in the world. Therefore, you need to serve your father and mother as the king and queen, and your grandfather as God. By receiving the two loves of mother and father on behalf of God, we can enter the era of the grandchildren and subsequently progress to the universe that will be the manifestation of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. (264-195, 1994.10.9)

By practicing a life based on pledge number three you would finally perfect the ideal model as originally intended by God, the original model of Adam who had not fallen, that is, the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships. "Our family…pledges to perfect the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships and the Realm of the Royal Family, by centering on true love."! Only the families that have accomplished this can advance to the place of perfection. By serving God and the True Parents you must stand as representatives of the world, in a perfected position similar to Jesus. The moment you begin to serve God from such a position, your connection to Satan would be completely severed.

Until this time people in the world have stood in the position of the first-born son and acted as our enemies, killing Abel on God's side; however, they can no longer do so. When the truth of the matter became clear, it turned out that the younger brother was actually the "elder brother." Their positions were switched, but they were still brothers. That is why people living in the world should be treated as part of the royal family.

The Unification Church is the Abel-type royal family and the satanic world is the Cain-type royal family. Members of our church cannot enter heaven unless they have brought these members of the Cain-type royal family into

oneness. You need to carry out this work in line with True Parents. In uniting with them there would be no opposition in doing this, and the world would follow automatically. (261-88, 1994.5.22)

4. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation, and perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness, by centering on true love.

Pledge number four says, "Our family… pledges to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation, and perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness, by centering on true love." The phrase "our family … by centering on true love" signifies the same in every part of the Pledge. This is followed by the phrase, "to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation." No matter how large a family is, it is still one family. When you pass on to the spirit world you will find yourself part of an extended family. The last part of this pledge is, "perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness." It means that by building the universal extended family, we will realize a world in which universal freedom, universal peace, and universal happiness are present. (260-158, 1994.5.2)

The phrase, "Our family … pledges to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation… by centering on true love" indicates that God's ideal is to have the whole world become one extended family, one big household. Since it is the place for those who have perfected the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships, everyone belongs to one global family – not two – which is centered on God. By building the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation, we would have transformed the whole world into one extended family. (260-191, 1994.5.8)

Let's consider the part, "Our family … pledges to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth and perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness…" The freedom referred to here is not that of an individual, but that of the people belonging to the one global extended family. This is the same for the peace and happiness. This means that the whole of humanity will find happiness. (260-192, 1994.5.8)

What is pledge number four about? What should you do, centering on God's true love? "To build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation, and perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness…" God's ideal of creation is to create one extended family on such a foundation, as He desires. The Cain and Abel worlds are meant to be a single extended family. At the place where the original ideal, that is, the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great

Kingships, has been established, the ideal of the one global family would be perfected. We pledge to perfect a world of freedom, peace and happiness by standing in such a position. Everything should be fulfilled in a particular order. (261-89, 1994.5.22)

5. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love.

Pledge number five says, "Our family … pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love." The advancement mentioned in this part of the Pledge refers to progressive development taking place daily. It should not stop. If it were to stop, everything would become related to hell. Therefore, a progressive development must take place. We must strive for this.

Every day of our religious lives is concerned with God and the spirit world. Members of the Unification Church were supposed to live every day aligned with the spirit world; however, the problem is that not many are doing so. They tend to think about the physical world before they concern themselves with spiritual matters. It should be the other way round.

Blessed families should unite as one centering on true love, to strive every day to advance the unification of the spiritual and physical worlds as subject and object partners. There must be no stopping along the way; only continuous progressive development. Whatever is alive continues to advance, and only that which is dead stops advancing. In addition, we must accelerate this process. Whatever stops, leads to hell, and whatever continues to grow leads to prosperity and God's Kingdom. We have no need for the word "stop."

When you first joined the church, you were overcome with joy; however now that a decade or two has passed, how do you feel? If you stop, you will only descend. Stopping leads to hell whereas growth leads to heaven. Stopping is what is most desired by Satan. Therefore, every day you need to add something to yourselves. These are important words. People in the world strive to save more money, but we strive to save more lives every day. (260-159, 1994.5.2)

The Blessed Families should realize that there is a vast spirit world, which is the subject partner to the physical world. The spirit world is the plus. It is the same as the mind being the plus. The body represents the physical world whereas the mind represents the spirit world. The mind is like the plus and the body is like the minus. Consequently, if you fail to recognize the world of mind as subject in your everyday lives, you will end up in hell. The body denied the mind, delivering a blow and becoming the subject; but it should be the other way round.

As it says in the fifth pledge, we need "to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and physical

world as subject and object partners." The two worlds must be united. In the phrase "strive every day to advance the unification", the advancement is an ever-progressive one. "Our family … pledges to strive every day to advance the unification…" We must strive to accelerate the process, that is, we must try to bring about the advancement as quickly as possible. There can be no stopping. If we stop, we will only fall behind. Stopping leads to hell and death. Stopping puts you on the path to hell, but striving forward leads to development. Striving on, we need to speed up the process. Sleeping and lazing around, eating and enjoying yourself do not contribute to the providence. You must lead a busy life. Life is short. Though the universe may be vast, it still has only one central axis and if that were to revolve once, the whole universe would also revolve once. It needs to follow suit. Therefore, you need to align to the central axis.

That is why this part of the Pledge states, "Our family … pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love." You need to run without pause, just like Father. You need to move forward without even sleeping. If you do that, wouldn't you be able to build the world you have been thinking of? You will not be able to make a world you have never thought of. Therefore, you have to think about the two worlds as reciprocal partners. (260-194, 1994.5.8)

The Family Pledge states, "Our family … pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love." This means that the whole world is one extended family. The spiritual and physical worlds need to unite into one as the object partner of the subject partner that is God's Kingdom. We need to do more than just unite; we need to rid this world of hell on earth, the satanic realm, striving to hasten unification. We have no time to lose. (264-202, 1994.10.9)

6. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to become a family that moves heavenly fortune by embodying God and True Parents, and to perfect a family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community, by centering on true love.

Pledge number six states, "Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to become a family that moves heavenly fortune by embodying God and True Parents, and to perfect a family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community, by centering on true love." In short, you should not try to live well by yourself. The clause "Our family…by embodying God and True Parents…. centering on true love" shows that heavenly fortune lies with God and the True Parents. Therefore, this part of the pledge signifies that you will try to perfect a family that goes the heavenly way, attracts heavenly fortune, and conveys Heaven's blessings to your community. That means that wherever they go, our Blessed Families will become central

families that distribute blessings to others. (260-160, 1994.5.2)

Pledge number six begins with "Our family pledges … centering on true love." You know what true love is, don't you? You must bear it in mind all the time. The phrase "embodying God and True Parents" signifies that Blessed Families are the delegates of God and the True Parents. Your family represents God and True Parents, and as such, moves heavenly fortune and conveys God's blessing to your community. "Our family… pledges to become a family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community…." Blessed families should not just try to receive blessings for themselves and live affluently. They have to become part of the royal family and help to restore all people in the world to become citizens of God's Kingdom.

The Blessed Family pledges to embody God and True Parents and as such becomes a family that moves heavenly fortune, by centering on true love. What this means is that the family that embodies God and True Parents can move heavenly fortune. This part of the Pledge says, "Our family…pledges to become a family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community…" Through these words you are making a vow to become a channel of blessing, distributing all blessings from God equally to all the people of the world. God and the True Parents' family are as one. Though there are only one set of True Parents, there are many Blessed Families standing in their stead that can spread out across the world and become channels that distribute blessings on their behalf. You should strive to become such a family. (260-195, 1994.5.8)

Pledge number six mentions moving heavenly fortune, doesn't it? Here, you are making the pledge to "become a family that moves heavenly fortune by embodying God and True Parents…by centering on true love." The hardships endured by the True Parents were not for their own benefit. Everything was for the liberation of all humanity and in order to convey and distribute heavenly fortune amongst them. The heavenly fortune that comes with the True Parents needs to be handed out. In short, you need to become channels of blessing. Do you understand? No matter how advanced you are and how united you are, you should not try to receive blessings for your own benefit while you are on earth. By performing meritorious deeds on earth you should receive the great benefits of heavenly fortune. These should not be kept for you but conveyed to others so that all may be satisfied.

Until now, I have walked the path of opposition in order to connect all peoples to the heavenly fortune, and to establish the Will of the Parent in an environment of happiness and freedom. As such, everyone would be able to move heaven and earth and receive blessings from God. As representatives of the True Parents' family, the blessed couples should also become families that distribute heavenly fortune to others, because only then can they attain the right to fol-

low the footsteps of the True Parents into God's Kingdom, and live there together with them. (261-91, 1994.5.22)

"Our family… pledges to become a family that moves heavenly fortune by embodying God and True Parents, and to perfect a family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community, by centering on true love." These words simply mean that you should become institutions of blessings. Only then can you become channels that can distribute blessings from God as the families who can unify heaven and earth. Do you understand? You need to become a fountain of blessings. (264-202, 1994.10.9)

7. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges, through living for the sake of others, to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage, by centering on true love.

Pledge number seven of the Family Pledge reads, "7. Our family… pledges… to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage, by centering on true love." The clause "Our family... rooted in the original lineage… centering on true love" emphasizes the words "original lineage." Lineage is very important. It should be neither changed nor defiled. This part of the Pledge tells us to create a world based on the culture of heart. The culture of heart means living everyday life as an expression of the principle of living for the sake of others with true love. The world based on the culture of heart refers to the one great enclosure embracing everything – that is, the tribe of the realm of the heart. (260-160, 1994.5.2)

Can you understand what is meant by "the world based on the culture of heart"? In simple terms, it means that the worlds of God's heart and the True Parents' heart, the spiritual and physical worlds are all as one. That is why we say that our family pledges to build a world based on the culture of heart. This is our ideal. There can be only one culture and not two. The fallen world is overflowing with many cultures. Only when we have united them into one can we welcome the Kingdom of Heaven at the level of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos. Without such a heart, the individual, family and tribe cannot be connected. Without the world based on the culture of heart, unity can never come on all levels from the individual right through to the cosmos. (260-196, 1994.5.8)

God's world is one based on the culture of heart. It is one unified extended family centered upon the one love of God. As such, the five races should live as one big family, with no one above or below others. Such a time is coming. If the people living in the world were united in the desire to create a lifestyle of equality for all, then how could we do that? On what nation should that lifestyle be based? In order to make that choice, we should base our decision on the poorest nation in the world. For instance, if North Korea were the poorest, we should

base our decision upon it, not Africa or Japan. Centering on the Adam nation, we should set the poorest nation as the standard. (261-93, 1994.5.22)

The world based on the culture of heart is the world of God's original culture and one that is based on the culture of perfected Adam who has not fallen. There cannot be two cultures but only one. Therefore in the future, the world will be unified and there will be only one language and one set of customs and traditions. Only in such a circumstance can God dwell with individuals and families. (261-95, 1994.5.22)

"Our family… pledges… to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage, by centering on true love." This part of the Pledge speaks about the world of heart, the world where true love has been manifested. The world should become such a place that, wherever you go, you will find families waiting to welcome you as guests. Families would invite guests whenever they had something good to eat, with the heart of sharing it with other brothers and sisters from around the world. We will enter an era in which every family will want to serve other families in the world as their own brothers and sisters, sharing food and whatever else they have.

By welcoming the era where we will manifest and globalize the realm of heart, we will consequently establish a world based on the unified culture of heart, a world of a single unified culture. The world will be without war or conflict, and God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven will be realized. Once the world of the culture of heart is established, God's providence of restoration will come to an end. (264-202, 1994.10.9)

8. Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges, having entered the Completed Testament Age, to achieve the ideal of God and human beings united in love through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, and to perfect the realm of liberation and complete freedom in the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, by centering on true love.

What are the contents of pledge number eight? "Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges, having entered the Completed Testament Age, to achieve the ideal of God and human beings united in love through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, and to perfect the realm of liberation and complete freedom in the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, by centering on true love." This pledge depicts the time of creation when God made the Garden of Eden.

Having entered the Completed Testament Age, through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute what? – obedience. You need to achieve the ideal oneness of God and humankind in love, and unity between God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. Then you are able to be freely active in all corners of the world, with the rights of God's children. Only then can you presume to liberate

Him and perfect the realm of liberation in God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. (301-85, 1999.4.16)

At the time of creation, God stood in the position of having exercised absolute faith, love, and obedience, but because human beings failed to form families that could stand as object partners to Him, they consequently fell into hell. We are now living in the time when everything that was lost in Adam's family can be restored worldwide through absolute faith, love and obedience on the unified foundation of True Parents' realm of victory. Unification Church members must therefore inherit and practice absolute faith, love and obedience centering on the True Parents. True Parents inherited these absolute traditions from God, and so you should inherit these traditions in turn. Do you understand? Then God's blessing will be with you. (1996.11.3)

It is our destined and inevitable task to create a relationship of unity between father and child, but what should that unity be based on? From the bone marrow and the seed, it should be centered upon true love. Only when a baby is born in such a way can it come to mature enough in heart and body to embrace the whole world and to unite with its father and mother. Children should follow their parents with absolute faith, love and obedience, just as the son and father should follow the grandfather with absolute faith, love and obedience. These qualities will be handed down as an eternal tradition. Our preordained task is to perform liberation! Only then can we fulfill pledge number eight of the Pledge, which is to achieve the ideal of God and human beings united in love through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, as we have entered the Completed Testament Age. Only when this state of oneness has been achieved can we perfect the realm of liberation in the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven. (295-167, 1998.8.28)

CHAPTER THREE

A Perspective on the Nation and the World

Section 1. The One Nation and World Sought by Humankind

1.1. The Adam-centered ideology, Adam's nation and Adam's world

What would have happened if the original human ancestors, Adam and Eve, had not fallen? In Adam's family, Adam would have become the leader of his tribe. At the same time, he also would have become the leader of his people. In addition, as the representative of the nation, Adam would have become king. Thus, the world would have united under the one philosophy based on Adam. All trivial and worthless philosophies and doctrines would have been cast aside. A myriad of doctrines brings great confusion to the world. They must be exposed at their roots and eliminated. Humanity's system of thought should have been based on Adam. The language should also have been Adam's language, the culture should have been Adam's culture, the tradition should have been Adam's tradition, the lifestyle should have been Adam's lifestyle, and the administrative systems should have been Adam's administrative systems. Everything should have come under the system of thought of Adam's nation. The ideology centered on the true Adam is Godism. Everyone must become one with God, centered on His heart. This is what we call Godism. (20-123, 1968.5.1)

Would the family formed by Adam and Eve, had they not fallen, have been one just for the two of them or one that represented the universe? Then, to whom would the nation they established belong? Would it be God's nation or Adam and Eve's nation? It would be Adam and Eve's God-centered nation, sharing a common purpose with Him. The expanded form of that nation would be the world, and that world would also be God-centered. You should understand this. (161-243, 1987.2.22)

What are we heading for? We are on our way to God's kingdom, beginning with the kingdom on the family level to that on the tribal, global and finally universal level. That is our ultimate goal. Those who, while on earth, think of the world as their country and all the people in it as their brothers and sisters, and inherit such world-embracing traditions will, without a doubt, pass on to the place nearest to God's kingdom. This is only logical. (161-225, 1987.2.15)

Regarding heaven, don't think to yourselves, "I will bring my parents and children there with me." Instead, you should strive to bring the whole nation with you. It won't do to abandon your nation and only concern yourself with your family, thinking in your hearts, "Oh, my children!" You need to bring your nation with you. Included in the nation are your entire race and children. In my case, I resolved in my heart, "I will bring with me the whole world when I enter heaven." With this thought in my head, I worked, slept, ate, and lived my life. Since that was the way I led my life, I can pass to the central place in the spirit world. Wouldn't such a way of thinking come from God, true parents and true children? (161-225, 1987.2.15)

There can be no national boundaries in a world created by God. There can be no racial discrimination between blacks and whites. There can be no reason for conflict because only goodness prevails in such a world. Nevertheless, we see that the world we are living in is divided into separate nations by borders. Not only between races, but even within a family discord and disunity can arise between husband and wife or between parents and children. The people of goodness are struggling with those who are evil. Considering the current situation of the world, it can easily be discerned that the coming Lord must unite the world, making it a place with no racial discrimination and no borders between nations. He must reunite all broken families, and establish a kingdom of peace in this world where even now as we speak goodness is in conflict with evil. (53-72, 1972.2.9)

Once people get to know that God definitely exists, they cannot help but follow His will. What is His will? It is to create an ideal world, by transforming the people in this world into His beloved people and this earth into His beloved domain, and bringing them together as one sovereign nation. (56-192, 1972.5.14)

Do you have such a nation? Since you don't, don't you need to establish one? What would that nation be like? It would be an ideal nation, a unified nation. It would be a nation anyone and everyone can enter. No one is excluded from the responsibility of building such a nation. Families, tribes, nations and the world have to cooperate in its establishment. That is how individuals, families, tribes, races, nations and the whole world can be united. (18-213, 1967.6.8)

Everyone needs to have their own nation. That is the absolute condition that all human beings must fulfill. Everyone without exception needs to lead a purposeful life, full of hope for such a nation and such a righteous goal. In their hearts they need to picture Utopia, and strive to live for their nation and ultimate goal by establishing laws of righteousness and living up to them. (18-213, 1967.6.8)

Generally speaking, globalism means to see the world as one nation and all humankind as compatriots, but the

globalism the Unification Church is referring to transcends all barriers from the family level upward. It is a globalism for all humanity in order to establish one world with one God as our Parent and all humankind as brothers and sisters. How fascinating this globalism of ours is! (Blessed Family -844)

What would heaven be like? What would God's kingdom on earth be like? It would be the place where people all over the world would live like Unification Church members. God's kingdom on earth would be where every person adopted our way of life. What would that world be like? It would be one where everyone would dwell together with God, and where no one would claim that He did not exist or have doubts about Him. It would be a world where everyone would unite together under God as our Heavenly Father. There would be no temptations from Satan, because he would not exist. The world governed by God would be His kingdom on earth, where He would reside with us. (79-304, 1975.9.21)

Without understanding about the Human Fall through the Divine Principle, we cannot resolve the fundamental problems in the world, and settle all the moral problems of humankind. Without the Divine Principle, human problems cannot be rectified because the troubles we face are part of the final hopeless phenomena of the Last Days, putting an end to the history brought about by Satan after his betrayal of God. These conflicts are Satan's strategy to ruin and destroy humanity. Unless solutions are found, history cannot be resolved. Without resolving the past, we cannot expect to straighten out the present. Therefore we need to first come up with counterproposals with regard to God's creation and ideals, and based on that, return to Godism and the way of true love, which are not self-centered but rather altruistic. In short, objects of love must be created. There is no other way to settle these matters. (219-266, 1991.10.11)

What is the purpose of marriage? It is in order to unite a man and woman centering upon the love of God in His presence. Such a union is the origin of peace and of the universe itself. The essence of true love lies in the father living for the sake of the mother and vice versa, the elder brother living for the sake of the younger brother and vice versa, and so on and so forth. A family whose members are interlocked closely with a love that esteems others is where God's love can dwell eternally, and where an eternal family and an everlasting nation can begin. (221-212, 1991.10.24)

1.2. The nation we all desire

We adore God's kingdom because it is a place where love dwells. It is the place where love remains eternally, not temporarily, and continues to exist transcending time and space. It is also the place where one can be respected and revered, and have one's value acknowledged one hundred percent. In short, it is a place

of eternal happiness. That is why human beings yearn and long for God's kingdom. (25-284, 1969.10.5)

If God's kingdom cannot be restored on earth during our lifetime, then once you have passed on to the spirit world, you will not be considered worthy to belong to it. You need to achieve sovereignty within God's dominion on earth before entering the spirit world. Such is the original standard of creation. (40-131, 1971.1.30)

There is nothing on earth that I covet at present. Even from a secular point of view, there is nothing for which I should feel envious. I am not interested in worldly things. I am not even remotely concerned about things like money, land and houses. "Be it in a one-room house or whatever, I must die – when the time comes – in God's kingdom. Shouldn't I pass on to the next world in a nation protected by God? If the end comes and I go to the next world without having achieved that, how pathetic my life would have been on earth! So I must seek out that nation, even if I only live in it for one day before I die." This is my lifetime wish. I am following this path with a mind that says for that one day of fulfillment, I am willing to sacrifice thousands of days. Even when you are resting, I am walking steadily on. If you can't do it, I will mobilize foreigners in your stead, and if Korea can't do it, I will have the other nations engage in an enveloping operation. In any event, I must continue down my path. (51-340, 1971.12.5)

The purpose of our leading a religious life is so that we can become the citizens of God's kingdom. Unless you do that, there will be no way for humanity and all creation to freely love you and to be proud of you as God's children. People without a nation are prone to face attacks at any time. They are bound to be placed in a miserable plight. More likely than not, they will be taken advantage of for no reason at all. In order not to become such people, the task we need to fulfill is to restore the nation desired by God, the nation that will serve as His foothold. (55-79, 1972.4.23)

We are shedding sweat and blood for this nation and this race in order to establish God's eternal kingdom, the blessed land that our descendants for thousands of generations to come can praise forever. (14-193, 1964.10.3)

There is no doubt that God's kingdom is a place that is governed according to His will by the sovereignty held by His begotten children upholding His command. In such a place, democracy or communism cannot exist. Once it is established, the kingdom would remain eternally. Taking all this into consideration, we cannot help but think that it is truly lamentable that we are not citizens of such a kingdom. Therefore, we should lament the fact that we are not a part of such a nation. In fact, we should all lament the fact that we do not have such an unchanging sovereignty. (72-291, 1974.9.1)

Humanity has established sovereign nation after sovereign nation in order to establish such a unified sovereignty, nation and domain. In this process, a great number of people lost their lives, innumerable citizens were sacrificed, countless nations were destroyed, and many sovereign powers were replaced by others. Thus, is it not obvious that the people who were sacrificed, the people standing on God's side and those who sacrificed their lives for these causes would wish for us to one day establish God's nation and world? (72-292, 1974.9.1)

God sent His beloved son and daughter to this earth in His endeavors to establish one eternal nation, but at present, the foundation on which a nation can be restored has not been prepared yet. As all efforts made to this end were unsuccessful, time after time a man of God was sent to earth to promote, carry out and bring His work to a successful conclusion. The history that has unfolded until the present is none other than the chronicle of this work. (30-10, 1970.3.14)

The citizens of a nation without sovereignty are in a pitiful plight. Hence, Jesus preached out of concern: "Therefore do not be anxious, saying, 'What shall we eat?' or 'What shall we drink?' or 'What shall we wear?' For the Gentiles seek all these things; and your heavenly Father knows that you need them all. But seek first his kingdom and his righteousness, and all these things shall be yours as well." (Matt. 6:31~ 33). Did he say you should seek His son first or His kingdom? He told you to seek the kingdom desired by God. (34-337, 1970.9.20)

Even Jesus is waiting in paradise. You need to understand that, because a nation with the right to connect earth directly to heaven was not established, Jesus was blocked from standing before God's throne. Until the sovereignty of God's Kingdom is established Jesus could not reign over it as ruler and stand before God. Paradise is like a waiting room before entering heaven. Furthermore, heaven is a place you cannot enter having lived alone. It is the place where Adam and Eve would have remained together as a family had they not fallen. It is the place that you will share with your children and family; otherwise it is not possible to enter. (56-201, 1972.5.14)

Why have religious people fought a losing battle until now? It is because they have not had families, societies or nations to back them up in their faith. They were people without a nation. If they had had a nation to support them, they would have been able to survive within its domain even if their own tribes had opposed them. Yet, because this was not the case, religious believers were persecuted wherever they went, and were forced to walk the path of the sacrificial offering, shedding blood time after time. This was all due to the fact that they did not have their own nation. If they had had a sovereign and a nation, any time they exclaimed, "You ignorant people, this is the right thing!" they would have been answered with a "Yes" from oth-

ers; instead, they suffered because of not having a nation. (56-159, 1972.5.14)

In this day and age, the world domain in which spiritual salvation was perfected on earth, the realm of Christian culture, is the democratic world. However, there is no Christian state in this present-day world that God can select as His chosen people and promise to send the Messiah to, just as He promised the Israelites in ancient times when He designated them as His chosen people, the covenant still held sacred by the Jews. All of you must understand this. This is the reason for which, having lost its land, and in pursuit of a nation floating in midair with only a name and no domain, the realm of Christian culture was driven west when chased from the east, and driven south when chased from the north, wandering and evading the path of death, and yet all the while expanding worldwide. (65-48, 1972.11.13)

Unification Church members do not have their own nation. The democratic world we see today is the fruit of God's six-thousand-year long endeavors. Had you been born in Israel at the time of Jesus, you would have been killed in no time at all. A man like me would have been done away with, without leaving even the smallest trace of my existence. We must understand clearly that in this world today, there are iniquitous representatives of Satan in every nation, and communism, which is the embodiment of evil on the global level, is making preparations for the final desperate battle to blot out religion. Do we have a nation that we can claim as our own? Since we do not, aren't we like outcasts from the world, and haven't we been treated accordingly? Never forget that you have more to feel mortified about than anyone else. (55-209, 1972.5.9)

If we do not have our own nation, then, however happy our family may feel, at any moment a group of brigands can appear in front of us and cut off our heads. Thus, we must establish our nation. Religious people do not understand this; they have no clear idea of it. We must establish a nation of goodness. This is the purpose of religion. (57-260, 1972.6.4)

Where is the representative individual who can restore God's kingdom? Nowhere on earth. That being the case, this representative individual is to be received through religion according to the ideology centered on the Second Advent, which declares that a new individual will come forth, who will in turn form a new family, tribe, race, nation and world. Thus, this Second Advent doctrine is fundamentally different from others. This representative individual would have to uproot those who are corrupted in this world of death, take root at that place and grow through the fertilizer of the secular world. He would be the one whose leadership characteristics empower him to use that as fertilizer. Taking into account that he should have the character of a citizen or son of the Kingdom, with the power of res-

urrection, and use what is regarded as good in the satanic world as a resource for his vitality, he must be a person with the character of a leader that enables him to grow with this world of death, using the decomposing corpses in it as fertilizer. In other words, he is not someone who is controlled by this world of death. (49-93, 1971.10.9)

Christ at his Second Advent is coming to save humanity. Once the heavenly standard has been established, God is ready to strike. He takes the offensive. That does not mean that He kills His foes by executing them in the style of Stalin; instead, He makes them surrender at once. He must make Satan submit to Him, firstly through His ideology, secondly through His citizenry, thirdly through His sovereignty, and fourthly through His territory. Everyone desires to have ideals, friends, power, and money, and these four items represent the four that have been listed above. (12-169, 1963.3.16)

Section 2. Characteristics of an Ideal Society, Nation and World

2.1. Humankind as one extended family

The place we wish to inhabit is heaven. Would there be borders in it? Of course not. Would there be more than one language in it? Surely not. Would there be racial discrimination? Not in the least. Then, what would heaven be like? Since all human beings were originally born from God's bosom, they are all brothers and sisters. From God's viewpoint, since all of us are His children, it naturally follows that we are all siblings; from the viewpoint of His kingdom on earth, we are all citizens of the same kingdom. Every one of us is a citizen, a subject of this kingdom. (66-281, 1973.5.16)

A perfected human being should become a citizen of the one global nation that is also God's kingdom. Which country do you belong to? Among those of you gathered here, some may be American, some German, some Korean, and so on, but where is God's kingdom? This world, earth, is your nation as well as mine. Where is our hometown? This world is our hometown. We are not concerned with national boundaries and things like that. Neither are we concerned about the differences between blacks and whites. All of us are God's children. (79-247, 1975.8.24)

The Divine Principle is the truth that cannot be changed through eternal history. It cannot be changed by the authority of some powerful person or the influence of some great nation. Not even the whole world or God Himself can change it. As this truth has remained unchanging from the past until the present, and will continue to remain unchanged even in the future, it undoubtedly holds the ideal value sought after by humankind since the beginning of time.

When the people who have been resurrected through this Principle become as one, transcending nation and world,

they will all be siblings. Then white, black and yellow races will not exist. Black people differ from others in terms of their skin color and nothing else. Bone, skin, blood and mind are the same. The difference lies only with skin color, which has been altered through climate and environment, which cannot be helped. (Blessed Family - 847)

Let's consider pine trees. As we move from the Polar regions to the temperate zone, trees become different. They vary according to their environment, starting points and history. Let's think about bears. The bears at the North Pole are white to protect themselves in an environment that is white. The white race is like the white bears at the North Pole whereas the black race is like the black bears in the temperate zone. That is the only difference. Would bears discriminate against each other by reason of the color of their fur? (Blessed Family - 847)

All humanity should become as one. The Unification Church holds international weddings. Westerners are married to Orientals, and whites and blacks get married as well. These marriages which have been held regardless of race are the most beautiful scenes in history. The problem appears when we cannot transcend racial barriers. Humankind will perish unless an inspired global ideology with such assertions emerges. They are brothers and sisters as far as God is concerned. There's no excuse for us not to be united before Him. America's founding spirit is committed to building one nation under God. This spirit is magnificent, and at present we are actually seeing it being realized. (Blessed Family - 849)

All peoples in the world are the same in that they are all human beings regardless of skin color. Whether white or black, the only difference between them is their living environment. Suppose a man married a black woman and had a black child with her, and then married a white woman and had a white child with her. He would be as much the father of the white child as he would be of the black child. These two children would share the same father. Unless people are made to feel deeply in their hearts that they are siblings born of the same Father, whatever it takes for them to realize it, the unification of all peoples and generations in the world will be impossible. (18-111, 1967.5.28)

The quickest way to bring unity of all races is international marriage. A man and woman selected from two totally different cultural spheres and environments have to become as one in harmony through God's love. This is complete unity and harmony. We have to realize such an ideal. In order to accomplish such a great work, we should find the gigantic power of love. Such a great power can only come from the utmost power of love. That is not the changing love expressed according to social and environmental circumstances. Only the most consistent and deep love can transcend the differences of nationality,

race, culture and knowledge. (Blessed Family I-845)

How can the world be united, and how can the foundation for relationships of heart be laid? These are the questions to consider. That is why I plan to hold international holy weddings for young men and women in the future. This is what God wants. He doesn't want people who stay quietly hidden within the boundaries of Korea; instead, He wishes for everything to be fulfilled within His ideological realm. The greatest desire of communist women is to marry workers. Unification Church women, however, should aim for much more than that. (17-43, 1966.11.6)

From now on, the number of members in your family who have formed a union with the lineages of other races will be what you can be proud of once you have passed to the spirit world. Therefore, when it comes to your sons and daughters, it would be essential to have them marry internationally. In the future, all single men and women of the Unification Church should get married internationally. Whether you are born a man or a woman, it would be worthy to do that. (34-73, 1970.8.29)

God is fair. America has become the representative nation in which material civilization has flourished thanks to all His blessings. As such, it would have difficulty in suddenly changing its external values to internal values. On the other hand, in the East, we set store by the spiritual aspect rather than the material. The West has been blessed externally, but is still lacking in terms of internal values, whereas on the other hand the East has been internally blessed, but is lacking externally. God is so fair. (Blessed Family II - 380)

If you focus on spirituality in religion, you will reject materialism. In attaching importance to its spiritual civilization, the Orient rejected materialism. That materialism was embraced by the West. Many nations in the West, including the United States, have managed to achieve a high standard of living because they secured all the natural resources of the East as their own and used them to develop and advance Western Civilization. However, they have reached their limit. The spiritual civilization of the Orient has also reached its limit. The Orient has gradually come to pursue Western material civilization, while the West has come to pursue Oriental spiritual civilization. Consequently, we have reached the time when these two civilizations are engaged in a mutual cultural exchange. (Blessed Family II - 381)

What would be the most difficult and arduous path for human beings? It would be the path to heaven. Of all the paths in this universe, it is the most difficult one for humankind. Once again: the hardest path would be that leading to heaven.

Did Jesus go to heaven? He is currently in paradise, the waiting room prior to entering it. That shows you how difficult

it is to reach heaven. Then is God dwelling in heaven? The answer is no. Then is there anyone who could enter heaven ever since the outset of history? If God cannot dwell there, and His son could not even enter there, who on earth could have entered it? So, would there be anyone living in heaven at this moment? No, there wouldn't be even one person. That is why the path to heaven is by far the most difficult of all. (72-253, 1974.6.30)

2.2. The society of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values

What attracts God most is the culture of love. Would He require money, power, knowledge or things like that? In order to design and build a nice house, one would need bricks, doors and various other materials, but most important of all would be the overall beauty of perfection that gives the finishing touch to it.

The greatest hope God cherishes for humankind is not for us to be wealthy or to become academics. As it is stated in the Bible, you should love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul and with all your strength. This is the First Commandment. The Second Commandment is to love your neighbor as yourself. These are amazing words. (143-273, 1986.3.20)

In First Corinthians, Chapter 13, the chapter on love, it states that amongst faith, hope and love, three qualities that are eternal in nature, love is the greatest of all. Isn't that true? Humankind has not understood this truth. What does it mean to love with all your heart, and with all your soul and with all your strength? It means to love by giving everything you have, even your life.

Have you all ever loved someone so completely? Have wives loved their husbands so completely, have students loved their teachers so completely, and have citizens loved their nation so completely? As no one has ever practiced perfect love, we need to create exemplary models.

In factories, molding dies are first designed, and then products are mass-produced using these dies; similarly, we need to make a model of a true human being that will serve as a die. Only then can true human beings multiply and spread out across the world, by following the example set by that model. (143-273, 1986.3.20)

When the time comes the era of self-assertion will pass away, and we will enter into a new era where one would not be able to claim oneself as being the best. From that time on, we will live in a world of mutuality, namely, the world of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values. Hence, the Unification Church emphasizes interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values. That world cannot be established by the efforts of just one person. (24-298, 1969.8.31)

The world of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared val-

ues is that desired by humanity which reflects God's ideal kingdom. Such a world cannot be achieved by just one individual; and it follows that in that world one would not live all by oneself. Along with oneself there would be one's spouse and subsequently one's family. This should not remain as a concept but should rather be acted out in real life. The world in which this concept has been practiced in reality on the stage of life would be that of God's kingdom. (24-300, 1969.8.31)

What would the ideal world be like? It would certainly not be a place where people are at odds with and jealous of each other, begrudging one another's successes, and becoming sick with envy over other people's happiness. Instead, it would be a world where the success of one person would be the success of everyone and the joy of one person would be the joy of everyone. The pleasures and joys of one person could be shared by everyone in the whole world. (18-102, 1967.5.28)

Does the left eye work in unison with the right eye or not? This depicts mutual prosperity. Every part of the body is living for one purpose, and this is how every human faculty works. Though each person has two nostrils, if one were blocked, would that feel good or bad? Likewise, if one ear were blocked, would that be nice or not? Is it good to be crippled or not? Try cutting off a limb, either a leg or an arm. You would not feel good. That is why all forms of existence that have reciprocal relationships with others testify to the existence of heaven and earth through their being. In other words, human beings themselves are living proof of that fact, and the heart is aware of this. The saying, "The human heart reflects God's heart" derives from this. (24-300, 1969.8.31)

2.3. One language

American pigs grunt in the same way as Korean pigs, and American sparrows chirp the same way as Korean sparrows. Considering this, why are we human beings, the lords of all creation, in this state? Everywhere you go they speak a different language, though the pigs in all those places grunt the same way and cows moo the same way as well. It is so much trouble just to order a meal! You not only become mute but also deaf. What is the cause of this? In a word, our current situation resulted from the Fall. How can we claim to be the lords of all creation when we are not even capable of unifying our languages and speaking just one? How sad this is! There are many absurdities in this world. (20-124, 1968.5.1)

With God's absolute love as the center, an absolute man and woman must come together and establish an absolute culture. In order to establish such a culture, we need one unified language and alphabet before anything else, and so I have emphasized time and again that you need to learn the Korean language and alphabet. This is because the creation and development of a culture is com-

municated to others through the written and spoken word. (135-166, 1985.11.12)

In the future, language will pose a big problem. I'm sure it is very troublesome for you even at this moment as I am speaking in Korean. How much harder, then, would it be for you to understand me if there were no one to interpret my words? Should you learn from me, or I from you? Once you understand the Korean language I speak, you will be able to learn about things more deeply, and you will come to possess knowledge that is much more valuable than what you understand at the present time. Since learning in this way is much more important than anything else, we come to the conclusion that this is the way it should be. (74-33, 1974.11.10)

If the True Parents' children cannot speak their mother tongue, they are no better off than mutes. Mutes! That is how the world will unfold as time goes on. I came to this western society and created a considerable stir in it. You should realize that my appearance here is a new threat and problem to the religious world, unrivaled by any in recent times. You should also bear in mind that from now on, studies of the original language would involve learning Korean. No matter how many of your English-language books say one thing, if the Korean original text says another, the English text must be revised to conform to it. That which is unchanging is precious, and this is true of everything. In the future all of you will need to study the original language. (74-33, 1974.11.10)

The Korean language and alphabet were created and are being used in Korea. The term True Parents was first coined in Korean. For the first time in history, God's love and True Parents' love could be engrafted based on True Parents' love. At the beginning of the time when God could speak about love, He could only communicate in Korean on the foundation of the love centered on True Parents. The origin of the words True Parents is absolute – therein lies the reason you must learn Korean.

You also need to learn the Korean alphabet because it contains the letters used to write the language. You should understand that the first place God could speak the words of true love is in Korea. (135-166, 1985.11.12)

Since I first used the words True Parents in Korean, the origin of this term is the Korean. The words *Cham Bu Mo* (True Parents) are not English or Chinese, but Korean. Consequently, Korea can also be said to be the homeland of love for Unification Church members. Since this is the case, they, who need to seek out that homeland of love, will have to learn the Korean language and alphabet. Moreover, your desire to be blessed to Korean men and women is an expression of your innermost heart, yearning to come near to the original homeland, because the origin of the language in which God first spoke His words of true love is Korean. (135-166, 1985.11.12)

There is a philosophy to be found in the Korean language. It comes from a background of the principles and harmony of heaven and earth. There is one famous Korean in the United States who was awarded a doctorate in linguistics for Korean pronunciation. (173-75, 1988.1.3)

The Korean language is a very high-level language of religion, with expressions that are deep and delicate. No other language in the world can rival Korean in this aspect. That is why Korean people are considered to be very smart. They are trained to catch and understand every word through a precise and analytical language, and so their brain structures are on a significantly higher plane than others. Don't Koreans always take first place in the International Vocational Training Competition? As far as I know, they have held that position for seven years in a row. (173-75, 1988.1.3)

As a unified world is the goal, you should complete the reading of my speeches in the unified language. What will you do if you cannot even read those books in the original language? You need to read them in my language, not in English or German. Once you can read them, you will have no trouble in preparing sermons. The books of my speeches contain a lifetime's worth of my words.

When you pass to the spirit world and are engaged in a dialogue, will you say, "I have never come across such books and so have never read them"? I am of the mind not to have these books translated into English at all. It would be even better to include Chinese characters in them. You will find yourself in big trouble if you pass on to the next world without having read these books, especially if you are a leader. In the coming generation, would you expect to find me or my speech books in every house? Think about it. What will it be? Of course it will be the books. (173-76, 1988.1.3)

Section 3. The Way of True Love is the Central Ideology of Humankind

3.1. The way of Adam is the way of the parent

Originally, Adam, as the progenitor of the human race, was meant to be, at the same time, the head of his family, tribe and race, as well as the king of his nation. Had the Fall not taken place, what way would this world have followed? It would have become a world of the way of Adam. Another word for this is Godism. That is how the world was originally intended to be. Yet this plan was torn to shreds by the Fall. The hole caused by Adam needs to be patched up. The Fall blew a big hole through God's ideal world. (155-304, 1965.11.1)

What did God have planned for Adam and Eve had they not fallen? He would have blessed them in holy matrimony and had them give birth to children in whom He could delight, thereby forming a family that would have been a source of joy to Him and having it expand into a tribe and then a nation.

Once this nation expanded further, it would have formed a world of Godism and the Adam-centered ideology simultaneously. The ideology to be found in that world would have been the Adam-centered ideology, which would have been an outlook on the universe, cosmos and life itself.

It would have been fine to have five races, all of different complexions, living together in that world. Skin color is merely a reflection of one's environment, and so having numerous peoples with different skin colors is a natural and fine thing. Then how did these peoples come to have different languages? Due to the Fall of the first ancestors, God separated them. (156-202, 1966.5.25)

The only path we need to know is the way of Adam; the only language, culture, tradition, way of life and system of government would be those derived from Adam. In fact, everything in this world should have been in accordance with the system of government of Adam's nation. Such a path is Godism, as we need to attain oneness with God through His heart. (20-123, 1968.5.1)

Before worrying about sovereignty, we need first to discuss the equality of human rights. The path we are in pursuit of is the cosmos-centered path, which can also be termed Godism. This is about becoming one with God. Today's democracy has excluded God from everything, and communism is an ideology whose sole considerations are materialism and humanism. The cosmos-centered ideology, on the other hand, brings humankind together with God. Through that, we want to make this world one under God's sovereignty. (13-72, 1963.10.18)

We need to create the basis upon which we can establish the blessed land of the mind and heart, thereby setting a standard through which heart, mind, and body can be interconnected. Once mind and body are united in this manner, we need to embrace the world. Thus, in today's era, we need a cosmic ideology that extends far beyond globalism, and this is none other than Godism. Unless people base their earthly lives on Godism and establish a firm standard through which mind and body can consistently experience God's heart, we will never be able to live happily. (8-30, 1959.10.25)

Due to the Fall, people's minds and bodies were subjected to Satan's false love, which in turn made them into egocentric, and consequently, dysfunctional individuals. Hence, the families, societies, nations and world formed by the coming together of such individuals created multi-dimensional expanded conflicts and were afflicted with mutual distrust, disunity, and discord through the complications and lack of integrity within themselves. Due to egocentricity, which reflects Satan's desire, the democratic world today has become egocentric, with Satan and the people living in it heading toward destruction. To save this world, we need Unification Thought and Godism based on God's true love. (219-109, 1991.8.27)

Godism is not about living for the sake of oneself. It teaches giving for the sake of others. In short, it is a path whereby one puts others before oneself. The devil's ideology tells you to live for yourself whereas God's ideology asks you to live for others. That is why the more you give and give and then give again, the more your possessions will pile up in the next world of eternity. In the communist world, the more one gives, the more one loses, and so no one works for others. In God's world, on the other hand, this is not the case, and so everyone works night and day without rest, shedding blood and sweat, for the benefit of everyone else. Those who consistently give in the same manner as God are bound to be blessed. (209-292, 1990.11.30)

What is Godism? Another term for it is the Way of True Love. What is the Way of True Love all about? It is about giving and giving, and forgetting that you have given. If all its citizens were like that, what would Korea be like? (201-54, 1990.2.28)

What is the Way of the Parent? It is the Way of the True Parent, which means having Adam and Eve as perfected parents on earth. Then what is Godism? Since the True Parents are the horizontal parents, human beings also need their vertical parent. Hence, the vertical Way of the Parent is Godism. Head-wing thought is also the Way of the True Parent, and Godism can also be said to be vertical Godism. The horizontal Way of the True Parent and vertical Godism, that is the vertical and the horizontal, come together and thus connect the life, love and lineage in heaven with those three entities on earth. The human race was born from this union, and that is why human beings have acquired dual characteristics. They consist of the internal and external selves. The internal self is one's vertical aspect, and the external self is one's horizontal aspect. These two selves come together to form a human being, the fruit of the union mentioned above. (224-277, 1991.12.15)

3.2. The way of the parent is the way of true love

What attracts God most is the culture of love. Would He require money, power, knowledge or things like that? In order to design and build a nice house, one would need bricks, doors, and various other materials, but most important of all would be the overall beauty of perfection that gives the finishing touch to it. The greatest hope God cherishes for humankind is not for us to be wealthy or to become academics. As it is stated in the Bible, you should love the Lord your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your strength. This is the First Commandment. The Second Commandment is to love your neighbor as yourself. These are amazing words. (143-273, 1986.3.20)

The path we should follow is the one we truly desire to tread from the bottom of our hearts, and the nation we should

seek to establish is the one we truly desire to live in eternally. The things that we would possess by right should be guaranteed to belong to the cosmos as well as to us, and to this present era as well as to the past and the future. Moreover, we should also be in possession of the authority and knowledge that will enable us to share our sorrows as well as our joys with heaven and earth. This is the greatest desire and hope that the fallen people of today should strive to fulfill in this world. (13-31, 1963.10.16)

Where would the realization of God's ideal kingdom, that is, the restoration of the homeland, first take place? It will begin with an individual who believes in loving his enemies. Hence, as long as God remains in existence, Christianity, the religion that came forth first with the movement to eliminate national boundaries, transcend all the walls of environment and culture, and embrace its enemies, by virtue of the power of love, cannot help but become the most widespread religion in the world. When you sow beans, you reap beans; when you sow red beans, you reap red beans; and when you sow seeds of red flowers, red flowers will bloom. Similarly, if Satan, who takes vengeance upon his enemies, sows seeds of the devil, from that place will grow trees of evil that take vengeance on their enemies. If, on the other hand, one who loves his enemies sows the seeds of goodness, from there will grow trees of goodness that will love their enemies. Such is the law of nature. (107-18, 1980.2.21)

There is no doubt that God's kingdom is a place that is governed according to His will by the sovereignty held by His begotten children upholding His command. In such a place, democracy or communism cannot exist. Once it is established, the kingdom will remain eternally. Taking all this into consideration, we cannot help but think that it is truly lamentable that we are not citizens of such a kingdom. Therefore, we should lament the fact that we are not a part of such a nation. In fact, we should all lament the fact that we do not have such an unchanging sovereignty. (72-291, 1974.9.1)

What sort of ideology is Godism, which is capable of absorbing communism and democracy through Unification Thought, which I have advocated? Is it about showing off one's powers? No, it is based on true love. The question is how we are going to digest this world through true love. (181-227, 1988.10.3)

For whom does the democracy of Korea exist? It is not for political parties. Instead, it exists for the Republic of Korea. Then what should the system of thinking that governs Korea be all about? It should be about Korea working for the sake of the world. The world needs to return to Godism. Humanism cannot be trusted. If left as it is, the world will perish in less than a century. Only Godism will last forever. Only by the logic of true love can we inherit and become part of the tradition of Godism, and that is why individuals need true love, as do all men

and women, husbands and wives, sons and daughters, tribes, races, nations and the world. (177-70, 1988.5.15)

What is Godism all about? It is the Way of True Love. Then what is the Way of True Love? It is the way of thinking that asks, not for others to live for the sake of oneself, but for one to live for the sake of others. You must clearly understand this. (169-281, 1987.11.1)

What is Godism? It is not an ideology centered on the individual, family, tribe, ethnic people or nation. It is an ideology centered on the cosmos. However much people held captive within the walls of individualism try to enter the heavenly spirit world, which is based on a cosmos-centered ideology, they will not succeed. If they become centered on their family alone, thinking to themselves, "Hmm, we don't care about the world; all we care about are our children and parents," there will be no way for them to ever escape from that realm. They would be trapped there forever. So, who will demolish these walls within which all families are asserting themselves and fighting with each other? (112-211, 1981.4.12)

A healthy person can digest things that even ordinary people cannot take in, which is why everyone likes a healthy person. Similarly, those who have sound minds, that is, healthy minds, can take in anything mentally, be it democracy, communism, or any other system of thought. Then what is the way of thinking that the Unification Church is following? It is Unificationism. Does it sound easy? When we examine the human body, we see that it incorporates the eyes, ears, nose, hands, feet and other features. These different parts of the body must act in unison through connecting to the one life in that body. Then, for the body to function properly, should the different parts, instead of uniting in common purpose, complain among themselves, "Oh! I don't like the eyes," or complain about some other part of the body? Of course not. They should say, "I like all parts of the body." Each part of the body must cooperate with the others. (111-96, 1981.2.1)

Those who worship God must shed blood. Those who yearn to love God must shed tears. In fact, their tears should not cease to flow. Those who are seeking God must shed sweat. Then, with parental hearts and the bodies of servants, they must sacrifice and serve from the position of Abel for humanity, and give everything they have with utmost devotion. In giving, they should not boast of it to others, but instead feel ashamed that they cannot give something better. This is what Godism is all about. (38-328, 1971.1.8)

How should public property be managed? How should individuals, societies and nations be managed? Furthermore, how should the world be managed? Based on public rules of management, a new level of love and a new globalism must be established. That cannot be done

through humanism. Humanistic ideologies will perish. The question of whether or not you can embody Godism will be the deciding factor between life and death for each of you. (31-255, 1970.6.4)

We need to transcend the cultural limitations created by the numerous peoples and the five races of the world and make those cultures into one single civilization. In other words, we need to establish an ideal world that is governed by a domestic system, a social system, a national system, as well as other institutions that are all based on Godism. This process can also be referred to as the ideology centered on the perfected Adam. It is not communism or democracy, but the way of Adam. This path is one that leads us to Godism. Such a path is like a walking stick that aids us in pursuing a certain purpose. The path or ideology itself is not what we are after. It is a necessary process we need to pass through to attain our purpose, and so ideologies undergo change.

Today, the United States is considered to be a developed country as the suzerain of democracy, but a time will come in the future when it becomes corrupt because of money and it will learn to hate democracy. The current situation in Korea also reflects this fact. Though democracy in itself is a good thing, at present the people in Korea are engaged in all kinds of scheming and the slandering of others because of money and are fighting against everyone else to take power. Can that be called democracy? What is currently taking place is a phenomenon that can only be seen under the rule of the privileged. (21-156, 1968.11.17)

Today's youth are unaware that, when they live for the sake of others, they become central figures, leaders and protectors. The true love that enables one to invest one's life for others without expecting anything in return and yet still finding joy in offering it, brings man and woman, and parents and children together in unity. In such a family God's love can dwell, and it would become eternally prosperous. This is the core of our teaching, and herein lays immortality. (222-138, 1991.10.28)

A new globalism that does away with egoism must come forth. Altruism, which aims to live for others rather than oneself, can only come from God's ideal because He is the original source of love, and the essence of love is altruism, which teaches us to sacrifice ourselves for the sake of others. Consequently, the essence of Godism is love. This doctrine is the central one, similar to the head that moves the rest of the body, and hence it is termed head-wing thought. (164-194, 1987.5.15)

Our aim is to secure victory. The question then arises: how will we be victorious? We need to triumph through the head-wing thought of Godism, and so I am the only one who can win in this. Head-wing thought exists to resolve the right- and left-wing ideologies. While Jesus was being crucified, the robbers

that were crucified along with him on his right and left quarreled with each other. This situation must not be repeated in this era, when everything is being brought to fruition worldwide, centering on God and the True Parents. What this means is that centering on the doctrine of the True Parents and God there shouldn't be any conflict between the right and left wings. Then, through what can these two wings be united? It is certainly not knowledge, money or power. They must come together and be motivated by love. Only when they are instructed to take action with words of love would they do so gladly and willingly. (169-210, 1987.10.31)

The only ideology that should remain is Godism, which provides us with the absolute ideal of love and the realm of heart for our brothers and sisters in all nations. Only Godism and no other should govern this world! Amen! (137-196, 1986.1.1)

Section 4. The Future of the Democratic and Communist Worlds

4.1. Unifying the democratic and communist worlds

What is Godism? It is an ideology pertaining to our ancestors, an ideology that places ancestors first. It is also head-wing thought, which is like the ideology of the Parent, the mediator in the conflict between communism and democracy. Head-wing thought can be said to be the ideology of the True Parent. Once people get to know the Parents of love, they let go and free themselves from one another's grasp, and instead unite. When they are provided with a place to sit or stand, and change into people who can live according to the great way of the heavenly principles without anyone's help or guidance, everything will be completed. The problem lies with people. There is plenty of money and land. So what is the problem? Human beings are the problem. (191-200, 1989.6.24)

Without the Divine Principle, it would have been impossible to present a counterproposal to communism, let alone overcome it. So, by what means could we overcome communism? It was through Godism. What is Godism? It is the Way of True Love, trying to give life again, again and yet again. As a consequence, this universe will become a place that overflows with God's love, more than enough to embrace the whole universe. (213-89, 1991.1.14)

What will be the final difficult challenge that we will be faced with in this world? It will be the separation of the Oriental and Western cultures. The issue at hand, therefore, is how we can unite East and West. Human efforts alone would not be enough to achieve this. In uniting the left and right wings, the endeavors of one side, whether left or right, would not suffice. Instead, the head wing must emerge at this point, which is why we are talking about the emergence of head-wing thought. Humanism and

materialism, which assert human beings to be the greatest of all beings, would be of no use here. They would not be adequate at all. We need to revert to the path based on God's will and centered upon His original heart. The question is how we can present these issues to the world and connect the cultural backgrounds of the East and West, which are presently alienated from each other. Though the American people opposed me, we have reached the stage where they have no choice but to follow me. The same can also be said of the Western world. (168-112, 1987.9.13)

True peace for humanity cannot be attained by the right wing or left wing alone. The reason for this is that the fundamental motives of both right and left are not free from egoism. If people are self-centered and nationalistic, there will be everlasting conflicts of interest, and unity and peace could not possibly be found there. (164-194, 1987.5.15)

Communism and democracy are the left- and right-wing ideologies. What that means is that they are in the position of the brother ideologies of Cain and Abel. So a new ideology should emerge from the East as the way of the Parent. Centering upon the Parents and Asia, left and right must unite. The Way of the Parent is none other than head-wing thought. Thus, when the head wing tells the left and right, "You are wrong!" they will answer, "Yes, we are," and when it tells them, "Listen to me!" they will answer, "Yes, of course." Everything will then work out fine. When told that what the parents are asserting is much better than what they are claiming, and that they should follow the parents, they will answer, "Yes." (168-60, 1987.9.1)

Since it is clear to us that the essence of communism is atheism, it goes without saying that the ideology that can overcome it is one that acknowledges and has its basis in God. We call this ideology Godism or head-wing thought. A worldview centered upon the absolute God is the most effective weapon that can liberate people from communism. This is because only the veritable truth that God exists can eradicate the falsehood that claims He does not exist. (168-237, 1987.9.21)

The path of restoration is not easy at all. Now is the era marking the end of left and right. As he breathed his last, between the thieves on his left and right, Jesus left behind on earth lasting parental grief. Thus, unless we, with the God-centered way of the Parent and head-wing thought, discuss the realm of unity at a place that is free from the accusations of the left or the right, and thus create an environment in which, instead of retreating, we continuously march forward, God's kingdom cannot be established. Such is the time now. In this sense, I have come forth with Godism and head-wing thought, and am working to digest the divisive left- and right-wing ideologies. (169-212, 1987.10.31)

What is head-wing thought that is

advocated by the Unification Church today? Godism is derived from it. What is head-wing thought? Left and right wings are in constant conflict because there is no head figure. Thus, if there were a head figure, it would be possible to combine the three ideologies of head-wing thought, left-wing thought and right-wing thought into an integrated whole. Isn't that so? Then what would be the central figure of this integrated ideology? However much you think this through, you will finally conclude that the head is the root of the entire nervous system and the central nerve of the body, and as such, nothing could be done without it. Then what, or who, would be the root of roots? No one knows the answer to this question. The root of roots is God: head-wing thought comes from God. (172-31, 1988.1.3)

Left- and right-wing ideologies should get along with each other like twins who, even when they are held together in their mother's bosom and are made to share her milk, do not try to kick at each other but are willing to change places if need be. If Adam and Eve do not stand in the position of having loved in such a manner in God's bosom, His kingdom cannot emerge. That is why I went to the United States and included my enemies in laying the foundation for the traditions of God's kingdom in the enemy nation, and declared its commencement. The enemy which is mentioned in the Bible is not just one individual. It is a whole nation. (176-131, 1988.5.3)

You must follow only God and the True Parents and nothing else. Otherwise, you will not be able to establish the original heavenly tradition in the satanic world. Satan is not part of the heavenly tradition, so he cannot last long. As the time for this tradition is coming, his end is drawing near, and so the end for Kim Il-sung, the Soviet Union and even the United States will soon be in sight. Only my God-centered ideology will remain in this world as head-wing thought. It is the head wing. With the right wing on the right hand and the left wing on the left hand, standing on an equal level with each other, and the head wing on top to manage them both, all it will need will be for them to make a 180-degree turn. On the day that the left stands on the right and the right on the left, everything will be completed. (176-277, 1988.5.11)

The whole world, not just Korea, is in chaos due to the collapse of values. Up until this time, to such a world I have emphasized the importance of absolute values based on love, by way of conferences for international scholars; I have proclaimed head-wing thought and have guided this world to rectify the wrongs of the left and right wings, so that we could all advance into a new and better world. It is up to us to work hard to make it possible for our homeland of Korea to produce many world leaders, who can, in turn, lead this world into unity and peace, creating a paradise on earth. We should strive to achieve, through Godism and head-wing thought, not

only the unification of our homeland, but also the elimination of the cultural gap between East and West, as well as the economic gap between North and South. This is the first step in building a world of peace, where global humanity becomes one great extended family of true love. (195-52, 1989.11.3)

We need to reunify divided South and North Korea and bridge the economic gap that exists between the two states. We have to unify the cultures of East and West. We must do away with racial and cultural discrimination and become all-unifying. Through what then can we be united? The world has been deprived of the one absolute love, so once we are firmly established on earth through that love, the cries of opposition against the Unification Church are bound to disappear. All the peoples of this world, regardless of gender and age, would be enveloped as one body in this great blanket of love, and all the people in the spirit world would want to be wrapped up in this blanket as well! Thus, cosmic unification through the application of headwing thought is not just mere words, but something that will be accomplished! Amen! (195-122, 1989.11.5)

Socialism and communism aspire to establish the one absolute nation. The era of the restoration of ownership based on God's ideal will soon arrive, and Satan, in coming to know of this in advance, planned to completely remove God's ownership over the world through communism. Satan did all he could. I was the one who undid his every action, and brought everything back to God's side. Those on that side have therefore all yielded to my logic and ideology. Now, there is nothing and no one who can stand in opposition before the True Parents and God. (229-156, 1992.4.11)

Even now, ownership remains a big problem, does it not? Communism and socialism make the nation the sole owner. Democracy makes the individual the owner. Then, who is the true owner, to whom the overall ownership should be handed over? The ownership of the whole world lies with God, which means that the world belongs to His children, who in turn belong to His family. Consequently, His children need to bring everything together so that the ownership of everything can be offered to Him. God, and only God, should be the sole original owner. Only when He has become the sole owner, with the sole ownership, and passes it down to the True Parents and through them to the children, can that right of decision over ownership truly belong to His world. (183-82, 1988.10.29)

Your possessions, children and spouse all do not belong to you. Standing in the position of the archangel, you need to pass through the era in which you must absolutely deny ownership over everything. Since we will soon be entering such an era, socialism, communism and other such ideologies of this age deny individuals ownership over anything. Instead, they speak of every-

thing as belonging to the nation or society. Korea is no exception, is it? You earn money just to have it taken by the state. Isn't that true? We are entering such an era. (200-303, 1990.2.26)

4.2. Head-wing thought will rectify religion and philosophy

Differing philosophical views developed into different ideologies; from the viewpoint that claimed matter emerged first, there arose communism, and from the viewpoint that claimed the mind came first there arose democracy. In other words, historical materialism and the spiritual view of history came into existence. These differing views led to conflicts in history and purpose; however, all these views were incorrect, and so they need to be rectified. That is because these views had their origin with people who did not know that the mind and body are in a subject-object partnership. Those people have nowhere to go now because they always thought of the one as being separate from the other. Consequently, from their perspective, Godism and head-wing thought as advocated by me pose a big problem. When the leader appeared, it was not for its own sake. (201-17, 1990.2.28)

Head-wing thought is the perfected Adam-centered ideology. Due to the Fall, Adam failed to perfect himself. Thus, both Satan's and God's sides raised a son each in the hope of making their respective sons inherit Adam's position. This is what led ultimately to left and right fighting each other for mastery. Such is the history of this world. Then what is head-wing thought based upon? In terms of the Divine Principle, the realms of indirect and direct dominion failed to achieve unity. Through Adam fulfilling his responsibility, the realms of indirect and direct dominions will become one. Where will this union take place? It will occur when the tenth stage beyond the growing period has been attained. (202-270, 1990.5.25)

How can unification be achieved? Can you bring it about through brute force? It can never be achieved that way. Not one person will be brought around to take part in the process of unification forcibly. Then how should we go about it? The answer is to live altruistically, to give that which is most precious: love, life and lineage. Those actually carrying this out actively are Unification Church members. What is the Unification Church? How can unification be brought about and through what ideology? Through Godism or the Way of the True Parent, which is also head-wing thought. (202-334, 1990.5.27)

The many ideologies which came into existence up until this time failed to keep to one unchanging direction. The United States as well as the Soviet Union, democracy and communism, all focused on themselves, and have continued thus to this very day. The same is also true of religion: the direction taken by religion is not the one desired by God. Whatever the time or age, the

many religious denominations failed to keep the same course, and instead spread out in all directions. Until now, not one organization, leader or nation, held the course desired by God. Therefore, from this day on, everything from the individual to the family, society, nation, world, universe and cosmos, should keep to one eternal and unchanging direction. The ideology that embodies this concept is head-wing thought, or Godism. (203-27, 1990.6.14)

When we consider the issue of East and West, we should not believe that democracy has emerged as the winner. There is nothing to democracy; it is just a method of explaining one form of politics. It is not based on any ideology. There is currently an ideological vacuum. Thus, from now on, we must educate the world about our ideology. We need to present to them Godism, or head-wing thought. We need an organization that can take the situation in hand and make our ideology into a system that can lead the world. The Unification Church alone is not enough. (203-117, 1990.6.23)

Why have all of you come here? You have come; you are fighting, and giving and giving again for the world. What you are doing is theoretically in accordance with God's principle of creation, and that is why the Unification Church is not falling back. Instead, we are moving forward and expanding. At present we are centered upon head-wing thought which embraces both the left and right wings. This ideology has the capacity to bring even the spirit world to order through Godism. Achieving order in the spiritual and physical worlds and bringing into existence a world of true love represents God's ideal of creation in accordance with the Principle. (205-95, 1990.7.7)

The democratic world represents the right wing whereas the communist world represents the left. Both worlds are currently collapsing. The same can be said of the United States. Neither world has a central point to focus on. I have already proclaimed that what is needed at this time is head-wing thought and Godism. No form of humanism can stand before God. There can only be Godism, and no other. God, and God alone, is the absolute and eternal center. Only head-wing thought can be the center of all humankind. The true center for the spiritual and physical worlds can only be the Way of the True Parent. (205-261, 1990.9.9)

Even in the Bible it is written that in the Last Days your family members will be your own enemies. In the Last Days, your own family will turn into enemies. Why was such a paradoxical logic foretold? It was because everything must be reversed once. What would happen if the left and the right were turned through 180 degrees? That would be no light matter. The directions will be reversed. Hence, we need the ideology of the subject partner, namely, head-wing thought. Then what is head-wing thought? It is our guide to Godism. What would we

have to do once we have found Godism? We would have to start afresh with the ideology of peace. Godism will enable people to meet God and unite with Him through His love, and peace will flourish through this fresh start, thereby establishing the base for the beginning of His kingdom on earth. Those who have lived their whole life in love will, without a doubt, enter the world of eternity with no procedures or judgments to hinder them. (206-131, 1990.10.3)

Even the saints are standing at the roadside, unsure where to go. They cannot move on because they do not know the fundamentals. The founder of the Unification Church is, by contrast, walking straight forward into the presence of the King and reporting directly to Him. You should understand that this path is the standard set by the True Parents, and live in accordance with head-wing thought and Godism, and let it flourish in your life. Such is the ideal of mind-body unity! Amen! (206-224, 1990.10.7)

Through the death of Jesus, the left and right wings, as well as the realm of Barabbas, came into being. His was the death he did not want. He should have lived and brought unity in the world; instead, due to his untimely death, individuals, families, tribes and the nation of Israel have always been fighting. Thus, all these must be united. They must become one completely through head-wing thought and Godism. Satan is standing in front of the realm of Barabbas. (238-201, 1992.11.22)

Section 5. When God-centered Sovereignty Is Restored

5.1. The world where God's will is fulfilled

We know that we have reached the point where it is futile to hope to establish a peaceful or unified world, in the true sense of the term, through human power, wisdom, culture or any other human attributes. Bearing this in mind, what is the central problem we are faced with in resolving the issue of world culture? Before anything else, what we need to clarify first is the question of whether God exists or not. On the day that all humankind becomes aware of the fact that God indeed does exist, they will subsequently come to understand clearly where His will is heading, and once this is the reality, then the world in which they live will become the ideal world of oneness and peace. (56-131, 1972.5.14)

It is only normal to sacrifice the small for the large. It is only wise for people to use what they have for a purpose that has greater value. That is the natural path for them to connect with the world. People yearn for the large rather than the small; they aspire for what is greater rather than for what is smaller. (35-278, 1970.10.25)

The Unification Church is different from others. It teaches us to love our siblings as we would our parents, and to love our tribe, race and nation as our brothers and sisters. We should be ready to leave our parents, if need be, to love

our nation. Furthermore, we should be prepared to forsake our nation to love the world. Moreover, we should be willing to renounce the world in order to love God. Seeking the path of love that sacrifices what is small and near to us for what is large and far away is the mainstream thought of the Unification Church. (100-79, 1978.10.8)

If the democratic world of today were to ask for the third liberation, wouldn't they demand the second liberation in the communist world? With this question in mind, we come to wonder: where will the new outlook or ideology come from that will serve as the standard-bearer and the basis for the second and third liberation? It cannot come from the human world. Although humankind has struggled and striven for thousands of years to bring about this liberation, as yet they have neither prepared the environment nor its content. Therefore liberation cannot be brought about by human beings alone. (33-224, 1970.8.16)

Would you rather be nationalists or globalists? Religion is not just about globalism. It follows a doctrine that strives not only for the good of humankind, but also for the good of God. Communism and democracy, on the other hand, strive for the good of human beings alone. So, between the doctrines that aspires for the good of both human beings and God, and the doctrine that aspires for the good of human beings alone, which would be better? Which is better: the doctrine that is for both God and human beings, or the doctrine that is just for the servants, leaving out the master? That is why religion is good. (41-44, 1971.2.12)

What is the doctrine that will remain to the end? The movement that can love the world more than the nation or people, the movement that can love God more than any other, will affirm the ideology and doctrine that remains to the end. Thus, the issue at hand for us would be how we can follow that doctrine, which will present to the world a trans-racial movement that goes beyond the boundaries of nations and tries to find the way to that place where God can freely love humankind and have them practice trans-racial love. (53-24, 1972.2.4)

The ideology that will guide this world in the future will be the one that advocates saving the world, even if it means sacrificing one's own nation. When a country follows such a teaching, a nation and citizens that center upon such a new movement appear on earth. Then there would be realized a new world of hope which would lead to the realization of a unified ideal world. Those with limited national and historical views that fail to transcend traditional boundaries cannot inherit God's ideal world. (51-44, 1971.11.4)

The doctrine that can be reduced to one sole purpose is not a self-centered worldview. Instead, that worldview should encompass the world and all nations. Only such a doctrine can

result in one single purpose. It would not involve boasting of one's tribe from a position in isolation from the world; it would be one that exists for the sake of humankind. Everyone longs for a world based on such a doctrine. (36-175, 1970.11.29)

The yellow race is like the first son, the black the second, and the white the third; fights between these races can cease and unity can be achieved through Unification Thought, which originated in Korea. In this way, an ideal God-centered homeland can be established. From there, the world will be transformed into a world of peace, unity and victory. Thus, God's kingdom on earth would be built, and at the same time we would become one with Him. We need to have Him descend to the earth, and to attend Him as the Lord of the Kingdom of Heaven, and thus establish His unified kingdom on earth and in heaven. You must clearly know that this is the mission which has to be fulfilled by Unificationists. On such a foundation, we would finally become as one with our Parent and be able to live peacefully in heaven. (79-83, 1975.6.1)

What is the Unification Church? Where is it heading, with the right and left wings in its arms? It is guiding us to pass through this world of struggle and strife and enter a world of happiness, that of utopia, and to follow the path shown by God. This path is not a level one. What that means is that the Unification Church should not be equipped only with a logical system that can take responsibility for all the failures and wreckage caused by various ideological systems. At the same time, the Unification Church should also be able to take all these failures into its arms and strive for a transcendent form of existence, based on a spiritual awareness that can move them vertically, centering on religion.

You need to understand that the Unification Church should have the capacity to systematically theorize humanistic ideologies such as humanism and materialism, as well as all the theisms of the past until now, and integrate all these ideologies into one. At the same time, its members should embody the one theology which incorporates spiritual reality and experience and can connect all religions transcending denomination from the vertical perspective. (162-102, 1987.3.30)

All problems would be solved if there were people who possessed the necessary qualifications to be of use to everyone, and whom the materialists and communists would look upon and say, "Those Unification Church members are thorough about everything, morally and conscientiously, inside and out. They are even more thorough than we communists, and we are in need of such people." Secular humanists would get to hear of them and declare, "Oh, I wish we had people like them in our association." Existing religious orders would see them and exclaim, "Dear me! Those Unification Church members are great people, far superior to us. If only they

were members of our order." God would gaze upon them and exclaim, "Ah! They are people I absolutely need to have with me." (162-102, 1987.3.30)

5.2. Seeking God's nation

What are the characteristics of the nation you long for? It is dissimilar in every way to those you currently live in. You will have to say goodbye to those nations one day. If you are attached to them, then you have to know that you are attached to sinfulness. You know deep in your hearts that you were born as the descendants of fallen people who were not related to the original goodness that would have allowed the will of that nation to be linked to God's will. (37-217, 1970.12.27)

Without a nation, there can be no nationality. Without a nation, there can be no basis upon which you can be registered. We need to create God's nation, and be registered anew. We need to establish God's kingdom on earth, and as the citizens who love the kingdom and its people, live on earth together with our tribes and family members as the victorious sons and daughters who have inherited the true lineage of the parents of goodness. Only after doing so can we enter God's kingdom in heaven. This is the teaching of the Divine Principle. (58-145, 1972.5.22)

Only when there is a nation can the traditions that we should hand down to our descendants for thousands of generations to come, all the efforts we have made shedding blood and sweat, and all traces of glory, remain as they are on earth eternally, and the monument that celebrates God's endeavors can be established on earth. Without a nation, all would have been in vain. If the nation God has sought does not appear, the crosses and culture of Christianity today will surely tumble into the river and burn up. You should understand that Satan is making a game of this; the real issue at hand is God's nation. (55-339, 1972.5.9)

You need to receive love from the True Parents and God. However, without His nation you cannot freely receive His love. Originally Adam was just one individual, but he would have been the beginning of a nation. Only when we have a nation surpassing the satanic nations of the fallen world can we receive God's love. At present, we are receiving love from Him by proxy; as yet we are not eligible to receive love directly from Him. Though we can receive love from the True Parents, we will have to establish a nation before we can receive love from God. Why is that the case? It is because Satan and his nations still exist. We need to climb above his foundation. You must clearly know that such is the path you need to follow. (90-116, 1976.10.21)

I am working for the providence of restoration. The work of unfolding God's providence on the earth on the basis of worldly politics, economy and culture is unprecedented in history. More and

more scholars in the world are trying to learn the Korean language so that they can read all the volumes of my speeches in the original language. These words lose authority when translated or interpreted. Therefore, you should be able to read those words. Shouldn't you be able to read those volumes in the original language at least once? (161-289, 1987.2.26)

The homeland that we need to reclaim on earth is not an existing nation with a certain history and tradition. It is completely different in essence from those other nations. In order for us to be able to inherit such a nation that is on a completely different level from others we need to become citizens with the appropriate ideological leaning of a leader. That proactive ideology should be in accord with the ideology of the absolute Creator. To have a nation of the kind the Absolute Being would desire, its citizens should be united based on its sovereignty. It must come about based on such citizenship. (49-93, 1971.10.9)

What kind of a world would the original world be? It would not be a world where evil dwells; instead, it would be an eternal and unified world where people would be completely free from evil. Surrounded by overflowing, original love, they would forever sing of happiness. Has there ever been anyone who lived in such a place? Not even one person has dwelt there. Though many people pursued such a world throughout the course of history, as yet it has not been established on earth. There were many who could describe that world with words, but not one of them ever succeeded in actually establishing it. (18-102, 1967.5.28)

In order for a nation to be formed, there must be sovereignty, citizenry and territory; the same is true of God's kingdom. In the place of its sovereignty are the parents, in the place of its citizenry the children, and in the place of the territory the nation. Of these, none can be left out. This is an iron rule. (35-279, 1970.10.25)

To establish a nation, there must be territory, citizenry and sovereignty. Then what is sovereignty? It means fundamentally forming a relationship with God. Therefore, those who rule over the nation should, after the citizens have fallen fast asleep, form a connection with God and conduct the affairs of state. In this manner, the rulers must be in oneness with their people. Once thus united, they must believe that everything placed before them is there not for their own use, but for the sake of the nation. Then their nation would prosper. (30-88, 1970.3.17)

Looking at a nation, you see that in order for it to take shape it must have sovereignty, citizenry and territory. When considering the matter of realizing God's kingdom on earth from this perspective, who would be its owner? Who would be its sovereign? Without a doubt God would be the sovereign. Who would be the citizens? Every person on

earth would be a citizen of the kingdom. Then where would the territory be? It would be the Earth. (96-15, 1978.1.1)

However large and expansive a society or nation may be, it should take after the structure of a human being. This is because God likes everything to take after His image. Then what do human beings like best? They like things that resemble them. Thus, the ideal nation should resemble humankind. Well, would it resemble us or not? It would resemble the people of heaven and earth. (26-183, 1969.10.25)

You should live every day with the thought in your mind that you are traveling to and fro, and taking part in this great work in the evil world of today as God's messengers, all because you were given the mission to become meritorious public servants in seeking out and founding that nation, all for the restoration of the homeland. If you don't, you will not be able to be recognized as dignified citizens of the nation to come. (50-255, 1971.11.7)

Do you think that Satan, after six thousand years of sucking God's life-blood, will meekly say, "Oh, this is my downfall," cast his eyes down, turn around and leave? Don't you find it hard to throw away even a piece of rag? Before you throw it, you would first turn it over and smell it to check that it has to be thrown away. Satan will not take his leave easily; on the contrary, he is fighting tooth and nail. Hence, we need to be aligned with the center. Even I would be defeated if I were to deviate from that. If a wrong direction is taken, there will be no development. (57-276, 1972.6.4)

Unification Church members need to step forward barefoot in order to establish the homeland. Do you think it will be possible to save this nation with what is left over after having eaten your fill? Do you think you will have the time or energy to worry about what you eat, wear or ride in? The Unification Church is the place to work hard, so let us go out as pioneers, barefoot and barehanded. (14-201, 1964.10.7)

CHAPTER FOUR

The Way in the Completed Testament Age

Section 1. The Settlement of the Victorious Domain of True Parents

1.1. Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages: restoration of the right of the eldest son, right of the parent and right of kingship

August 31, 1989, Kodiak, Alaska

Now that the vertical and horizontal eight-stage indemnity has all been completed, the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages could be performed on August 31, 1989, in Alaska, the most northerly location in the West. It is the northernmost place. On the first day of September, I declared "the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father" at the same place. The ideology centered on the Heavenly Father is simultaneously the ideology of salvation by love as well as the ideology of parental love. This parent-centered ideology is all about a life lived by giving love. Satan cannot oppose anything based on love. If he cannot oppose the path taken by the Unification Church, we can rapidly expand worldwide. (199-157, 1990.2.16)

There are eight stages in indemnity, namely on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos and God's heart. These in turn lead to restoration in those same eight stages. This means that, through the vertical and horizontal courses of indemnity centered on love, everything can safely proceed in any direction. Once this connection with love is made, the sphere that is created is possessed by the domain of love. When this happens, nothing on earth can remain Satan's possession and he will be banished at once. It will be the end for him. (199-188, 1990.2.16)

These eight months of January through August have all been part of a new era in 1989. It is now the end of August isn't it? The course of global indemnity has been completed in these eight months. In connection with this we were able to hold many events last year, including the cross-cultural "exchange" Holy Blessing and the declaration of the Foundation Day for the Nation of the Unified World. Thus, all conditions of indemnity were fulfilled. In this way, everything was brought to completion in August. This includes the marine and water related activities. I have accomplished so much up to this point. (193-100, 1989.8.31)

The Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages signifies the restoration of the right of the eldest son. It was held after both the vertical historical course and the horizontal course of indemnity on the levels of the individual, family, people, nation and world – in short, the vertical and horizontal courses of indemnity in the eight stages – had been completed. It signifies the completion of the course of indemnity for all people of the world. All this comes to fruition through the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages.

We have entered an era when we can come together in harmony through love with no need for indemnification because, after the restoration of the right of the eldest son, it is embraced in the bosom of the parents. War and struggle to restore the right of the eldest son are no longer necessary in the realm of parental love. In order to initiate this, the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages must be performed. Through this ceremony, the children in the positions of the first and second sons can be forgiven by those in the position of the parents, and we can enter the next era of forgiveness of parents. (193-173, 1989.10.3)

The democratic era of today is to do with a philosophy of brotherhood. In relation to the Principle, this age is centered on Cain and Abel; the Principle corresponds word for word. Cain will have everything in his possession taken away by God in the end. Already he has been deprived of his head and body. Now, with nowhere to go, he is trying to take over the democratic world centering on the proletariat. However, he is not having much success. With the coming of autumn, fruits have begun to ripen on the trees, but with no one to harvest them, they are being left to rot. Soon, his side will dwindle into nothingness. It is all about the restoration of brotherhood. The purpose of the philosophy of brotherhood is to find the true Adam. This work has been long in its undertaking. (205-178, 1990.9.1)

How would democracy, which has unfolded through a history of wars, be brought to an end? Democracy would naturally conclude with the advent of the parents, the coming of the parent-centered ideology. Hence, the Unification Church declared to this world that the era of the providence of salvation has ended and has given way to the era of the providence of restoration through love. Many religions are unaware of this truth. Pastors of established churches do not understand what is meant by the era of the providence of salvation by love or the era of the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father, do they? They wouldn't know what the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages is. (194-325, 1989.10.30)

Through assimilating the democratic and communist worlds based upon the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father, we will enter the era of establishing the right of kingship. You need to understand this clearly. (193-212, 1989.10.4)

1.2. Restoration of the right of the parent and right of kingship through the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father

What is required to fulfill the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father? The answer is the God-centered family. Thus, at the time when God is working to achieve this Will, the greatest problem posed in both the communist and democratic worlds is the breakdown of the family. The communist world does not recognize the concept of the family. It treats the family as the basis of exploitation. It has no relationship whatsoever with God. The same is true in the democratic world. In fact, the reality is that everything concerned with the well-being of the family is on the decline. Although the family is the foundation of the society, nation and world, it has been in complete disarray until now. As such, once we have secured our basis through the family, we will automatically embrace the right and left wing worlds. (194-113, 1989.10.17)

Now the era of the absolute family is upon us. Without the family, the concept of the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father cannot be established. This is ideology is a path we need to take. It is similar to crossing a bridge. Because God's unified nation can only be achieved based on the family, hence, absolute emphasis must be placed on the family. In the family, the parents must be served as if they were the absolute God. Just as God's dual characteristics are eternally united, so His internal character and external form can never be separated from one another. Next, the children themselves should unite, just as Adam and Eve should have been completely united, without having fallen. (194-122, 1989.10.17)

All levels from the individual to the cosmos must connect with the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father in order to restore right of kingship based on the family; this signifies the restoration of cosmic right of kingship. It cannot be achieved without the family, for that is the center. Through the foundation of Adam's united family, the harmonized tribe of Adam must be established. Wouldn't Adam have had a tribe? Based on the foundation of the unified family of the Adamic figure, his nation has to be unified and extended to the cosmos. Only thus can right of kingship be restored through the foundation of the unified Adamic family. (194-115, 1989.10.17)

Through the declaration of the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father, we are to enter the era of a unified sovereignty. God must be upheld as the Sovereign. Then we could be proud of the one God-centered sovereignty. After establishing the unified kingdom desired by Jesus and God, and doing away with the hell that exists both in the spiritual and physical worlds, we could enter the era of omnipotence through love, in which God would have direct dominion over us. By following the traditions of love, we would learn the meaning of God's

vertical love and how we can be united through it through our daily lives. Then we would rise above the world which has rejected these traditions throughout all its nations and in the spirit world then the era of liberation and unification would automatically come. (193-309, 1989.10.8)

Originally, if Adam and Eve had become perfect, the Father and Mother of God's kingdom would have been perfected. Then they would have become the owners of the original family, and consequently the sovereignty of heaven on the family level would have been established. In this manner, Adam and Eve would have become sovereigns on the levels of the individual, the family, the tribe, the people, the nation and the world. We have now arrived at the time when we can rise above the national level, and able to impact the sovereignties of the satanic world, establishing the new sovereignty of the heavenly world. This was achieved on March 27, 1990. From this day forward, the world will turn with the wind I have been stirring up. (201-130, 1990.3.27)

Heavenly Father! With the coming of the 1980s, we welcomed the historic epoch in which we were able to convert the course of the providence of salvation to the course of the providence of salvation by love. After fulfilling the course of indemnity for resentment between brothers that is, the Cain and Abel positions we could enter the era of the liberation of brothers, which ultimately formed the foundation for the era of the liberation of parents. Centering upon the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages, the era of the Heavenly Parent was proclaimed, and going beyond the era of the ideal providence, we cleared away the mountain of resentments in the providence of restoration for the physical and spiritual worlds. Now, in the 1990s, we are faced with the solemn and historic task of transforming this world and everything in it into a unified world of your providential domain through the dedication of Unificationists. (196-146, 1990.1.1)

With Heung-jin's passing into the heavenly world, we have arrived at the time when he and Jesus can unite in bringing together all the saints and sages of Christianity. We can cross the borderline dividing North and South Korea and bring about reunification. It has been possible to proclaim the era of the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father and the era of the providence of salvation by love.

We have now conquered the summit of this world of death and entered the era when we can come into contact with the heavenly realm. We are aware that a new era centered exclusively on the heavenly spirit world can only begin in the providential time when the spirit world can communicate on an equal basis with the physical world. This requires a foundation of unity of all the tribes of the Unification Church members. Please, Heavenly Father, be with Heung-jin in his endeavors and devotion in bringing

together good men and women, kings and patriots representing the sovereignties of the 120 nations, educating them to fulfill their duties of loyalty and filial piety to you. In this way, heavenly law in the spiritual and physical worlds can be established. Amen! (196-257, 1990.1.2)

Section 2. Complete Providential Settlement and the Great Proclamation of the True Parents

2.1. Proclamation of the True Parents (Messiah)

April 30, 1990, Korea

How is it that I was able to proclaim the True Parents? The democratic and communist worlds represent the brothers Abel and Cain. Though these two worlds are like two sons, they are fighting with each other. Since I now stand in a position from which I can make peace between these two hostile sons and be welcomed by both, I could finally come to Korea with the special authority of the Parent and proclaim Mother and myself as the True Parents to the whole nation. (204-187, 1990.7.8)

The world is one in which nothing can be trusted, one that doesn't bear being looked at and one that is filled with despair, but its one real hope has appeared with the emergence of the True Parents. I proclaimed this in Korea. (202-340, 1990.5.27)

The purpose of the Bible is to seek out the one True Parent. That is the most hopeful gospel. Since Satan was also a created being, he will disappear with the appearance of the True Parents. Since that time is close at hand, communism has collapsed and North Korea is on the verge of collapse. Whichever way they look there is no solution.

I am fully aware of this. Now God's kingdom will come to fruition and the liberation of hell on earth and in the spirit world will take place. (202-351, 1990.5.27)

Our purpose is to liberate God and save humanity and all that belongs to the satanic realm. This is our goal. We are proclaiming such a true parental heart. We are marching forward. There is no place for Satan here. Such is the view of the Principle. (202-354, 1990.5.27)

Communism is an ideology of servants and masters. There is no freedom. Democracy, however, is based on a philosophy of brotherhood. Thus, everyone has freedom to pursue their self-interest, and as a result they are constantly fighting one another, each claiming to be superior to the others.

In contrast, head-wing thought is based on a parent-centered ideology. Aren't senators clashing with congressmen and Republicans with Democrats? That is because they do not have Parents. Once the Parents emerge and reprimand them, saying, "You scoundrels! Why are you fighting? You are not servants; you are all our children!" then everything will be resolved. Racism between blacks and whites and all races

will also be resolved in this way. (202-357, 1990.5.27)

How is the communist world faring? I told Gorbachev to take down the statues of Lenin and Marx. In the whole history of communism, there was no one but myself who dared to say such things. The communist leaders of the Soviet Union clamored, "How dare he talk of Godism in front of us? How dare he speak so arrogantly?" Regardless of how much they hated me, the communist world declined to its present situation. The person they feared the most in the world became their only hope. There is no other hope for them. So I told them plainly, "Listen to my words and follow, for there is no other way to go." (202-351, 1990.5.27)

What is going to become of this world? History has progressed through the eras of the first, second and third Israels, but now with the announcement of the name of True Parents, this entire world will become like the Garden of Eden and all the traditions of the sphere of religion will disappear. As a result, all the spirits in the heavenly world will be able to come to earth whenever they want. This is called the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle. Heaven and earth will be as close as the pages of a book, as though the physical world was directly connected to the spirit world.

By my proclaiming sovereignty of the parent, these two worlds are reconnected and Satan will disappear. Hence, the spirits can come whenever they please. The spirit world is in a vertical position and the earth is in a horizontal position. The two worlds are perpendicular to each other. A right angle is not the domain of Satan. The fallen world emerged when this original perpendicular relationship was altered. God can have dominion only over the places where right angles are formed. At such places, Satan cannot be found. That is where liberation takes place. The spirit world is liberated, as are the earth and all of creation. At that place the course of indemnity need not exist. (202-358, 1990.5.1)

By my making public the declaration of the True Parents, Satan's authority and all the laws of indemnity which have caused religious struggles will disappear. Then all the good spirits will be on a par with the angelic world, whereby they will freely render assistance to earthly people, freeing this world from the effects of the Fall. Your ancestors will be able to work like the angels. Therefore, all kinds of phenomena will happen to those who oppose the providence. (202-358, 1990.5.27)

Today I am proclaiming the truth about the Messiah. After opening a wide path for everyone's liberation, including your mothers, fathers and yourselves, and proclaiming the right of kingship, I am also proclaiming the True Parents. The True Parents represent individual and family-level right of kingship. This is the way it is. They are the sovereigns

as well as the True Parents. They are being proclaimed as such to the whole world. They are manifesting true love. (202-358, 1990.5.27)

You need to become bold. What I mean by this is that you need to exercise the rights of ownership of a subject partner. However difficult your situation, it should not be a big problem for you. When you say, "Not even God wants this. Be gone!" then it will be quickly gone. The same is true in the spirit world. If you were to say, "I don't want this!" then it will vanish. Such a power is all around you. Once the center of love appears, everything will turn around to head for it. When the morning sun rises in the East, doesn't all nature focus and turn towards the sun? Such is the essence of life and the essence of love. (202-358, 1990.5.27)

From now on, everything will connect to you automatically without a struggle. All paths will open. Through exercising the right of ownership you can become true teachers and true parents. That is your mission. It all depends on how hard you work. This is a logical and clear conclusion. It is now up to you to understand this clearly and say, "I will completely inherit all that the True Parents have proclaimed and liberate everything in the world!" Do you want to do so? If you do, make a vow before God. Raise both your hands and wave them like this. Ah, that looks good; it looks like a rolling wave! (202-360, 1990.5.27)

2.2. Declaration of God's Eternal Blessing (*Chil Il Jeol*: 7.1. Day)

July 1, 1991, Hannam-dong Residence, Seoul

Beloved Heavenly Father! Today is July 1, 1991. We understand that the year 1991 is the very last crucial moment in the dispensational transition period. From the very first day of this year until the end of June, we have persevered through many complications and difficulties, and are now finally entering the month of July. Now that the first half of 1991 has passed, we understand that the second half of this year is the time in your providential history when we can reach the summit of new hope to enter the world of freedom and peace in Your kingdom.

Now, the resentments caused by the North-South division of the Korean peninsula and all the suffering and struggle brought about by East-West complications have all been dissolved by the True Parents. All historical conflicts sown by the false parents have been victoriously overcome by the True Parents, and the era has arrived in which the communist and free worlds, and North and South Korea, can unify. Heavenly Father! Thank you for allowing me to perform the Declaration Ceremony of God's Eternal Blessing on this day, bringing to a culmination the sacrificial effort You have offered, together with everything representing Your providential history, and thus celebrate together this day of victory, liberation and glory.

The overall meaning of providential history dictates that without having ful-

filled the mission of tribal messiah, one's family and nation cannot be connected to the providence. We are so grateful to be able to welcome this day on which we can declare ourselves to be tribal messiahs. We are truly grateful that as of this day we are free to proclaim ourselves as the kindred of the True Parents.

We are thankful that you protected each of our courses of faith up to this point, and that as of this day, July 1, 1991, we are finally able to eliminate the grievous course of historical indemnity. We are aware that now is the time of declaration to reclaim the liberated world of original nature. This world will emerge when the left and right wings unite and when North and South Korea, plus the religious realm and the political realm inherit right of kingship in the parental realm, attending the Creator God and the horizontal True Parents who are the original parents.

We should not stop there, however; centering upon the true love of original nature, we should fulfill the obligations of true love, which is the center for the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, and the whole universe. We understand that by so doing, we must become the foundation for the families living on earth who are the representatives of Your kingdom as originally intended. This is the absolute purpose and goal following the one absolute direction. In order to bring this to pass, we have been issued the order to advance and carry out this solemn task, which means breaking through in the local neighborhood activities (*tong-ban gyeokpa*).

With this in mind as the final destination, all of us should realize that from the first of July we are entering a new era of world history when we should march forward in full force to save our families and our tribes. Moreover, I have designated this day, the first day of July, to be the one on which we can apply and declare ourselves to be tribal messiahs across the world. All those who have applied to become tribal messiahs should not look to one side or look back, but, rather, follow the destiny You have given them directly and fulfill their missions as Blessed Families. This is to first restore and establish in their families the standards of the right of the eldest son, right of the parent and right of kingship that were lost by Adam and Eve, and then firmly establish a victorious legacy that no one, not even Satan, can affect in any way. Please help us to never forget that such is the mission given for each Blessed Family to fulfill.

In Your presence, there is no free world or communist world, no South or North, and no Satan. I declare in the name of the True Parents to both the spiritual and the physical worlds that all the works of evil will be cleared away and buried forever alongside fallen history, and that Your victorious and liberated kingdom will be established on earth. I therefore beseech You to let us become a shield for all generations to come. I proclaim this in the name of the True Parents at this time on this day of the first of July! Amen! I proclaim this in the name of the True Parents! Amen! I proclaim this in the name of the True Parents!

Amen! Amen! Amen! (218-7, 1991.7.1)

By concluding the ceremony of *Chil Il Jeol*, we inaugurate the era in which the True Parents can do as they please. Until this time, I was not free to do as I pleased. If I could have done all that I wanted to do, why would I have suffered? Why would I have acted so powerlessly before the world? There is a time for everything. Without fulfilling my responsibility with regard to time, I cannot lift up my face and lead others. (218-16, 1991.7.1)

I must prevail over the satanic realm. Now, with the name of True Parents, I can triumph over persecution on the levels of the individual, the family, the tribe, the people, the nation and world. Although both the communist and free worlds have opposed the Unification Church and Rev. Moon, by educating Soviet leaders in Washington, D.C. in the free world, I am the victor in the end. (218-19, 1991.7.1)

The authority of the True Parents and God are the only things that can be on the rise. Therefore, others have now lost the power to overstep their authority. If they continue to carry on forcibly as they have done in the past, they will only collapse. If such a thing were to take place in Korea, then both North and South would ultimately perish. No single leader, whether from the North or the South, has the power to have his own way in everything. Thus, this proclamation must be made. Up until now, false parents have been in charge, but the time has come for the True Parents to bring everything together in a proclamation, which should be made this very day. (218-32, 1991.7.1)

2.3. Declaration of the elimination of historical indemnity

November 1, 1996, Uruguay

Families must be restored by the Family Federation for World Peace. The returning Lord must bring to completion within the global domain the task that ended in failure in the domains of family and nation. How can he restore on the world level that which was lost by Adam's family, then connect it to the global Blessing, establish it in the position of Adam's family, construct God's global nation, and ultimately enter the era of unified right of kingship, the era of the unity of heaven and earth? You need to bear in mind that an era of great transition has begun. Centered on the True Parents and based on the democratic world as Cain and the Christian cultural sphere as Abel, we have been able to surmount all opposition to the good fortune of the families of the Unification Church. With victorious supremacy thus attained on the family level, then the settlement of the Family Federation for World Peace and the elimination of historical indemnity could be proclaimed in the name of the True Parents.

The Fall was brought about by free sex and so it can only be overcome through absolute sex – having one eternal spouse of the opposite sex – centered on the

absolute love of the True Parents. The conversion of lineage can only take place with absolute sex; it cannot be achieved by free sex or casual sex. The restoration of lineage must be carried out. Through the declarations I made with the Family Federation for World Peace, I have established the authority on which this can be brought to fruition worldwide. Based on all the victories achieved by the True Parents within the global domain, the Blessed Families in the stead of the True Mother, then Cain and Abel, must unite with her. In short, they need to become as one with her.

The impact on families of juvenile immorality, free sex and homosexuality can only be reversed on the basis of the True Parents' ideology, through which the restored family, nation, and world can advance to establish God's kingdom on earth and in heaven. This means that everything must be completely turned around. On the Blessed Family foundation, individuals and families representing Cain and Abel must unite centering absolutely on the True Parents, first becoming as one with True Mother. Centering on her, the democratic and communist worlds, Catholics and Protestants, and the spiritual and physical worlds can be united. On this global foundation, everything could then be indemnified centered on Mother. Thus, it became possible to proclaim the settlement of the Family Federation for World Peace and the elimination of historical indemnity.

In His act of creation, God practiced absolute faith, love and obedience; however, the couple that was to be His object partners failed to achieve that position and consequently fell into hell. We are now living at a time when we are to restore globally that which was lost in Adam's family. Standing on the foundation of absolute faith, love and obedience achieved in the victorious realm of the True Parents, Unification Church members need to practice absolute faith, love and obedience centering on them. Since the True Parents inherited God's tradition of absolute faith, love and obedience, you also need to inherit that. Do you understand? May God's blessings be with you! (280-47, 1996.11.3)

2.4. Declaration of the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth (*Chil Pal Jeol*: 7.8. Day)

August 9, 1997, Seoul

On this 7th day of the 7th lunar month in 1997 at 7 minutes and 7 seconds past 7 o'clock, by accomplishing the 3.6 Million Couples Blessing, we have fulfilled our motto for this year, which was to be proud of and to love the True Parents absolutely by successfully completing the Blessing of 360 Million Couples. Heavenly Father, how much anguish You have had to harbor in Your heart!

Heavenly Father, we of the Unification Church know only too well the historical truth that all cultures of East and West have been lost to You. The homeland that should have been the central nation of all nations through the unifi-

cation of North and South Korea, and all of Your children, who should have inherited the Blessing and become a part of Your tribe of heaven, stood instead in a position with no choice but to be divided into two. For this reason we have had to walk the path of restoration for a period of forty years, engaged in the conflict between communism and democracy.

Because this period of forty years represents four thousand years of providential history, the persecution perpetrated by the sovereign nations of the satanic world against Christianity, Christian states, and believers of all other religions and faiths during that period manifested during those forty years as opposition and oppression from the whole world against the True Parents who were endeavoring to fulfill Your will on the world stage. No one knew of Your sorrow as You watched this history of forty years. You have had to pioneer this path all alone with no one to help You. However, under Your guidance, we persevered through the forty years of suffering and hardship, engaged in the battles to prepare Your abode of the Sabbath on the levels of the individual, couple, family, tribe, nation, world, and the cosmos. This was in order to develop a free environment based on the ideal of creation wherein You can reside with perfect freedom.

Now at last we have completed this history of forty years, Heavenly Father, enabling us to welcome an amazing new era in which today we can proclaim the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath centering on the True Parents.

Today, Your son by the name of Moon celebrates his seventy-seventh year in this world. The era has come in which we can connect the Sabbath year with the number of a new beginning, rising above the numbers seven and eight by connecting eight number sevens based on 7 minutes 7 seconds past 7 o'clock of the 7th day of the 7th lunar month in 1997, and my 77 years of age. Now, therefore, Unification Church members can form families inheriting the heavenly authority and traditions of love, and thus attend You and offer You a dwelling place on the levels of nation, world and cosmos. Through these families, the foundation of the Sabbath in which You and the True Parents can freely come and go will be connected from the family to the cosmos. The time is close at hand when we will cross the boundary that separates us from the simultaneous establishment of Your right of kingship on earth and in heaven, which will allow us to achieve complete oneness with You. In such a manner this work has been accomplished.

To fulfill this undertaking, the mother representing the nation that can take the place of the Eve nation should come on earth. Centering on the United States as the archangel nation, as well as the United Nations, the fortune that will unify North and South Korea needs to be prepared in the United States and then sown in Korea so that Korea can be the nation that can represent the liberation of all peoples. However, You eased our concern on this matter, for under Your protection True Mother embarked on a

third speaking tour, and visited sixteen places, thereby surmounting the number sixteen and opening the doors wide for the passage of the dignitaries of this nation. You have bestowed on us such a blessing which has allowed the holiness of Blessed Families to be known nationwide.

Moreover, through the women of North and South Korea, True Mother has been welcomed to the worldwide conferences for women representing the northern and southern hemispheres. On that basis we can enter into the era of family right of kingship within Your victorious domain, based on the accomplishment of the number sixteen and the successful world conferences. This era can be proclaimed tomorrow, August 10, to the leading figures of this nation and the leaders representing the sovereignties and nations of the world. By the grace of your endeavors this blessing could be granted to this nation, and the blessed realm established, with the Unification Church leading the way through its Blessed Families. We are truly grateful for Your great work in collaboration with True Mother in preparing such a foundation for us. If this had not come to pass, there would have been no place for Korea in this world.

Furthermore, no words can express our gratitude to You for allowing us to establish and proclaim upon this foundation the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth centered on the True Parents.

Heavenly Father, please take pleasure in welcoming this era in which You can be liberated from imprisonment, and in this state of liberation embrace Your loving cosmos, through the establishment of the Sabbath foundation of the eras of the right of kingship in the family, nation, world and cosmos, which has been Your long-cherished desire.

We are aware of how much You grieved over not being able to help this son of Yours in his work, since all that You could do was shed tears and watch over his path. We beseech You with all of our hearts to bestow on us Your blessings, that You may achieve total, overriding, supreme and full authority as You have desired, and with the whole world under Your dominion we may march forward into Your liberated kingdom.

Now the era has come when the stains created by tears of sorrow shed by the family of the True Parents will fade away. With the achievement of Your authority of liberation, the family of the True Parents can attain the privileged and highest position of the ideal of creation looking down over the beloved children, nations, world and cosmos, with the freedom to travel anywhere in the world.

Therefore, please accept this proclamation which I am now making in the name of the True Parents, as contributing to the resolution of Your grief and sorrow, and to Your full liberation. At this hour, please accept with joy the proclamation of the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth. Please proclaim this from heaven in order that the banner of victory of the harmonized realms on earth

and heaven may fly high. I proclaim this day in the name of the True Parents! Amen! Amen! Amen! (286-78, 1996.11.11)

You need to understand that in all the historical ages up to the present time there has never been a Sabbath day for God. It is dumbfounding. Before now, everything in the entire growth period belonged to Satan: three times three is nine. There was not one thing that belonged to God, neither His son nor daughter, neither creation nor the nation. Everything was lost through the Fall of Adam and Eve. God wanted them to become the ancestors of humanity, representing God's lineage as His ideal object partners. The ideal family is God's house of the Sabbath. We need to understand more clearly about the nature of His dwelling place. (286-112, 1997.8.9)

God lost His house of the Sabbath. Therefore, the ideal family raised in the fallen world would restore His house of the Sabbath. Then, centering on what would this house be built? It would be built centering on true love, true parents, true children and true family. The family is the center. Centering on the family you need to form a tribe, and on that basis become tribal messiahs for that tribe. The family gives rise to family-level messiahs, tribal messiahs, national messiahs for the nations and the global messiah. The global messiah is also the King of kings. From there the Kingdom of Heaven is established. God should be able to reside wherever He goes, from within the individual to any place in the world and even in the spirit world. That is to say, if He chose to dwell within a family, the individuals in that family, husband and wife, and sons and daughters would all be happy to serve Him. (286-114, 1997.8.9)

Where is the dwelling place for the True Parent? Where can he reside? That place is the center of the universe, and at the same time, the position of the prince who has the right of kingship on the basis of which God can be enthroned. It is the place that connects the position of the heavenly prince with the position of the earthly prince based on the qualification of being a true parent. However, this connection is not forged by money.

If I had a weakness for money, I would have become a rich man in Korea. If I had a preoccupation with knowledge, I would have become the chancellor of Seoul National University before anyone else. Don't you think I could have done so, given that there are university presidents whom I have taught and inspired to become my followers? I've made disciples of people who are regarded as great in this world; yet I freely push them along. There are former heads of state working with me. In other words, I have enough power not to crave worldly knowledge, money or authority. What power would that be? It is the power of love, God's love, true love! (286-98, 1997.8.9)

In Korea everything can be found, even things that cannot be found in the families of other nations in the world. Korean folk songs are universal, with

universal contents which transcend history. "Moon, Oh Moon, you bright Moon, Moon loved by the poet Lee Taebaek! Oh Moon, on you grows a laurel tree. I want to chop it down with a jade ax, and trim the branches with a gold ax to build a thatched cottage, to bring my parents to come and live with me forever." How splendid this is! To live for thousands and tens of thousands of years together! Which parents are being referred to here? There is no other nation in the world whose folk songs praise and pay respect to parents, who are yearned for in such dreams as this. (286-103, 1997.8.9)

Live forever together. Even though the house which is built may only be a small cottage, the song expresses the desire to live forever together with True Parents! It coincides perfectly with the ideal of the children's songs of Korea. Then what would they do next? A half-moon! It is all right even if the moon is not a full moon. Although the family does not begin with perfection, this world is like a half-moon, and we are heading towards a nation of clouds in the sky, on a satellite like the boat mentioned in the song. Though we have neither mast nor paddle, we are moving swiftly to both the East and West.

The sun rises in the East and shines westward. Man symbolizes East and woman West, and all women will receive the light of the sun from the east and be on an equal status with men. Then a world of equality and agreement between East and West will be realized! Amen! How wonderful that people will be! (286-114, 1997.8.9)

What is today? It is the Declaration Day of the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth. The Parents of Heaven and Earth. (286-123, 1997.8.9)

Such a world will be established when the ideal realm of the Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth comes into being! The word "Amen" is made up of two syllables, the first, "A-" signifying that I am grateful even when I have my mouth open wide for a thousand years, and the second, "-men," signifying that I will live even after I have passed away, because the place where you say "Amen" is one where you feel good just thinking about it, dreaming about it, working for it, sweating for it, with nothing bad and everything good in it. (286-118, 1997.8.9)

Then we will be stamped with the seal of God, become a royal family, the citizens of His kingdom who can enter its palace and reside there for thousands of years and in so doing fulfill all the desires and hopes of humanity. (287-108, 1997.8.9)

2.5. Proclamation of the liberation of hell and the opening of the gates of heaven

May 15, 1998, Americano Hotel, Pantanal, Brazil

Whereas Heung-jin is a child of direct descent from the True Parents, Christianity stands in the position of

the adopted child from another lineage. Only when these two are united can the True Parents stand up completely straight on a firm foundation.

Thus, the will of the True Parents can be fulfilled only when Christianity receives the Blessing and becomes as one with Heung-jin, who is already blessed. Accordingly, it follows that the Unification Church should begin in earnest to conduct the Blessing for Christian denominations. Centering on the True Parents, the father, mother, and the realm of the firstborn must all become one. Furthermore, the father, the mother, the realm of the adopted child (Christianity), other religions, and the nonreligious realm must also unify.

With the Blessing of the 120 million couples on June 13, one-third of the 360 Million Couples will have been blessed, and so we will have transcended the Old Testament Age. Thus, no time must be lost in performing the ceremonies of rebirth, resurrection and eternal life, which are also part of the Blessing ceremony. Already the four saints have been blessed, and at Cheongpyeong devotions are being offered for the liberation of Christianity. The key to the liberation of the realm of the fourth Adam lies with the True Parents. The truth of the matter is that the spirit world must be taken care of before the physical world. Hence, effort is being made to take care of the ancestors.

The order of the providence is such that the spirit world must be set right before the physical world. This is because the spirit world stands perpendicular to the physical world, which is a world of horizontal relationships. When the vertical and horizontal worlds meet, true peace will be achieved on earth. If the True Parents had not come, it would have been as if the spirit world did not exist at all. This is because the spiritual and physical worlds can only be corrected by the True Parents.

2.6. Ceremony for the Total Liberation of the People in the Spirit World

October 5, 1998, São Paulo, Brazil

Beloved Heavenly Father! Today is October 5, 1998, which is also Chuseok in Korea, a day of celebration on which the people honor their ancestors. You have worked endlessly to establish the realm of liberation for the Old, New and Completed Testament ages in history to ease Your grief over not having seen this world become a settlement of love, in which all forms of creation, all people in the spirit world, countless believers, and all things created with love and living on earth would have lived together with You. Today, before heaven and earth, Cheongpyeong in Korea, and the people gathered here in São Paulo in the western world, please bring to an end the sorrowful history that You have had to endure.

We understand that You as the vertical True Parent of heaven created the horizontal true parents in this world through the ideal of heaven and earth, that they represented Your external form, and that they should have become

our ancestors of the very first generation. They were meant to achieve complete oneness through their family, thereby unifying their minds, which are vertical, and their bodies, which are horizontal, and thus bring the seed of love created through that unity to complete fruition on earth. Through this achievement, Your eternal lineage and that of True Parents were to be connected, and would have led to the multiplication on earth of children whose minds and bodies would have been as one. However, the joyous day of such a beginning of history did not come to pass, and You have had to continue with the providence in order to erase the legacy of lamentable and mortifying historical grief; we are aware of all this.

No one until now had any inkling of the anguish You harbored in Your heart, and as You haven't had a single son or daughter on earth who could be devoted to You, You have been a lonely and miserable Father.

Looking into Your heart, I know how You endeavored to save Your only son who came after countless generations. This son of Yours perceived more clearly than anyone how much You grieved as You looked upon wretched humanity, dispossessed of any ancestors because they were lost through the Fall.

From the day I came to know You, I also came to realize that the path You have followed for the sake of Your immature children has been one of ordeals and suffering. You have worked ceaselessly in order to welcome the day of the Blessing of the True Parents centered on the foundation which was laid through the toils of Christianity during thousands of years of history. You labored so that the path could be evened out and You could restore the unity of Adam and Eve which had failed to emerge with Your true love, in order to bequeath the victorious lineage of Adam's original family which was lost in the Garden of Eden.

Ashamed of becoming a child with unfulfilled responsibility, I searched endlessly for a way to avoid this failure, and I came to pioneer the way I should walk in following Your path, building bridges and climbing mountains, passing through the eight stages vertically and horizontally, and finally proclaiming the fulfillment of those eight stages and proclaiming True Parents. As a result of this, I declared *Chil Pal Jeol* (Day of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth) and at the same time, on the foundation of Jardim, I disclosed that Your ideal of creation and the original standard that You had first established was that of absolute faith, love and obedience. Also, in order to make Your wish come true – that is, to establish the absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal family foundation, which reflects Your characteristics, and the foundation wherein love can dwell – then what must be achieved are absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal parents, who are also true parents, as well as absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal children, couples and families. Though the world may not be aware of it, this son understands that the day upon which this is brought to pass will be the day

You have long awaited and will be the greatest transition point of history. Yet despite the fact that the coming of this day should be the subject of worldwide rejoicing and celebration, I am forced to make this proclamation within the confines of Jardim.

Through this third Jardim declaration, You could be connected to the first, second and third creators and to the tribal foundation. On this horizontal foundation and on the basis for Your right of kingship on earth and in heaven, the authority of the third creator was proclaimed on earth. By passing through this liberating process which cannot be interfered with by even God or Satan, the eternal, unchanging and predestined relationships between parents and children, husbands and wives, and brothers and sisters, which had remained until this time unfulfilled, were all resolved.

Now, through the *Sa-Sa Jeol* (4.4. Day) declaration, which represents the number four, the southern hemisphere can be connected to the northern hemisphere and the heart of the Parents to the oceans. Although the great judgment of Noah's time took place on the sea, based on the sea that did not face judgment and the principle of giving and receiving by all created beings, then all national messiahs and Blessed Families were called to gather here in Jardim in order to symbolize the coming together of all creation to the place of liberation. I have disclosed to all those who are here that, in the form of the global messiah, national messiahs, tribal and family messiahs, they should return following the Parents.

Thank you, Heavenly Father, for guiding us as the True Parents in creating the path that could form an easy passage free of any obstacles, through the transfer of the victories achieved on every side. Thank you for allowing the Blessed Families the free environment where they can seek the path to the homeland based on parents, children, couples, siblings and families which exhibit the four great attributes of absoluteness, uniqueness, immutability and eternality. This can be achieved by virtue of the practice of absolute faith, love and obedience. I am grateful to You for letting us march forward as the blessed members of the Unificationist community, whose mission now is that of unifying the separated spiritual and physical worlds, transcending the East-West cultural divide, as well as the North-South economic divide, and establishing a peaceful heaven and earth and humanity with the heart of children who serve the Parents of Your unified kingdom.

We know that it is the task given to us as Your blessed sons and daughters and all those who are heading to the blessed place to take the lead in restoring Your lost kingdom of peace, even if it means selling every asset and property we possess. It is our responsibility to strive for the nation with all our family as the offering, and then for heaven and earth with the nation as the offering, and finally towards You with heaven and earth as the offering.

This son is aware of the fact that the historic starting point of establishing

Your kingdom on earth and the eternal liberation that can possess the substantial sovereignty of love of the eternal realm of liberation already took place on June 13. On that day the simultaneous Blessing of saints and murderers as siblings overcame the weeping and sorrowful mind of the True Parents, and even now joyful cries of liberation are echoing in the spirit world.

Although people on earth are ignorant of this, all our ancestors in the spirit world, the angelic world, and countless believers are all aware of this, and are laboring hard to pioneer the environment for the True Parents on earth.

The fallen angel became the archenemy that destroyed your family of love. He initiated all forms of sovereignty on earth by leaving behind the family of the realm of the fallen archangel. However, the spiritual and physical worlds came together through a relationship of united siblings in order to embrace parental love and Your love. They were given the order to advance and were able to reclaim the right of the eldest son.

Now the time has come for the final transition to take place based on the five great saints blessed on June 13, and their blessed followers in the spirit world, members of the groups they have established. Those serving You and the True Parents on earth and in the spirit world will now have to follow the way of filial piety, loyalty and heavenly traditions. That is, the archangelic families on earth should come together and join the liberated realm of the Blessed Families in the position of perfected Adamic families on earth. They should strive to fulfill their duties before You as filial sons and daughters in the family, patriots in the nation, and saints in the world, and inherit the bond of love while tending to the duties of Your divine sons and daughters on earth and in the spirit world. To do so, they should become as one with You in heaven and with the True Parents on earth. Through this, they will be empowered to fulfill this, Your long cherished desire. So please liberate the followers of the saints and the ancestors who are the offspring of the first ancestors, Adam and Eve.

Based on kinship in the realm of love united with the perfected heaven You originally intended, and by serving the True Parents on earth, all those who could not serve them until this time can arrive at the destination founded on the family. This family is the result of vertical and horizontal love coming together, the original ideal of creation. It springs from the bond of siblings, and of parents and children, as formed between the ancestors both on earth and in the spirit world. This is the day of proclaiming that both physical and spiritual worlds can now be connected eternally on the foundation of the cosmic family centered on the True Parents, and that through the liberation of both worlds all families can freely travel in all directions. In the name of the True Parents, the era has now arrived in which we can publicly carry out activities after we have brought all those in both worlds together and established a foundation on earth. Then together with all created beings

we can march forward in full force for the victory of the eternal sovereignty of Your love and the establishment of Your kingdom on earth and in heaven, which is founded on true love and the realm of heart of Your true lineage and that of the True Parents. All this I declare in the name of the True Parents! Amen! Amen! Amen! (296-9, 1998.10.5)

2.7. Proclamation of the Complete Liberation for Cosmic Expansion of the True Blessing and the Rooting Out of the Satanic Lineage

January 8, 1999, Punta del Este, Uruguay

This year's motto is "The Cosmic Expansion of the True Blessing and the Rooting Out of the Satanic Lineage." This means not being related in any way with the satanic world. If you are centered on what is true, then what is false cannot come between you and your spouse. Last year's motto was "Being proud of and loving the True God means completing the 360 Million Couples Blessing and eradicating the lineage of the satanic world." The fact that we were able to fulfill this motto by September 30 last year shows that the era of struggles in the subject and object partner relationship between the spiritual and physical worlds has passed. In short, we have crossed over the summit and accomplished this by blessing people on such a grand scale. Those couples represent the original Adam and Eve and are standing in the position of having received the Blessing; therefore, there should be no walls separating heaven and earth. This year's goal is to root out the satanic lineage. It must be pulled out at the roots, and to do so, the realm of the grace of the Blessing must be established in the cosmos, in both the spiritual and physical worlds.

Adam's family should have been perfected through the support of the angelic world. Since the original couple fell, that family needed to be completely cleared away and recreated. In other words, the ancestors had to be recreated into a family in the position of the archangel.

Thereupon we will enter the era of blessing on a large scale, of liberation and blessing of the spirit world. It will be the era of liberation and blessing. When this comes to pass, all the people in the spirit world will be crowded into the archangelic realm of free movement on the family level. In that liberated environment there will be no such thing as the works of Satan.

The people in the spirit world will descend to earth with their spouses when the Blessing is scheduled to take place, and from the position of ancestors they will urge their descendants to receive the Blessing.

Originally, only those who lived on earth centering on the True Parents can enter heaven. Therefore, for those spirits that could not live with and serve the True Parents on earth, the Blessing is a ceremony that opens the path for them to come down to earth to serve True Parents.

Now they are liberated to come to earth, bringing with them whomever they like, in order to receive the Bless-

ing and become married couples. This was not fulfilled in the Garden of Eden. By following their descendants and supporting them in practicing absolute faith, love and obedience, they can live together with the True Parents on earth, and be a part of those following the great path that leads to heaven. Rooting out the deep-seated satanic lineage will make this possible; this is something I must achieve. Do you understand what I am saying?

Humankind is currently headed in the wrong direction, but with the liberation of everyone and the banishment and eradication of Satan, the root of sin can be corrected. Thus, people can follow the right path. Devils and sinners are bound for hell. Being imperfect, they have been heading in the opposite direction. By becoming good, however, they would be able to turn around, face the right direction, and enter the level of the heavenly world appropriate to them. This has been made possible by our opening up the cosmic expansion of the Blessing both on earth and in the spirit world. (298-209, 1999.1.8)

Based on today's proclamation for the Completion of the Cosmic Expansion of the True Blessing and the Rooting Out of the Satanic Lineage, all Blessed Families, by making a special offering centering on my birthday, February 20, will be able to rise beyond the level of everyone that Jesus yearned to bless on earth – not just his twelve apostles, but also from the 72 generations to the 120 generations. They will then automatically enter the realm of the direct dominion of the True Parents and live in an age completely unrelated to Satan.

All ancestors in the spirit world will be liberated. Even Satan should be liberated. Thus, in the future, as tribal messiahs who have blessed 160 families, you will be able to include and connect them to your own tribe and give the offering of total indemnity. On that foundation you will then be able to bless 120 generations of your ancestors. In your lifetime, you need to bless 160 families, and with the Blessing of 120 generations of ancestors we would then enter the realm of the unified world. It would be in stages of 12, 72 and 120 generations and once you completed 120 then all of them would be able to enter. Concurrent with the Blessing of 120 generations of kings including their eldest sons, then the True Parents and God would give the permission to liberate all citizens under their right of kingship.

You need to stage demonstrations and from now on display your pride in the True Parents and in the reality of a true family, true lineage and true purity. You should dedicate yourselves to expand the True Parents' foundation worldwide, and the individual, family, tribe, people and all nations should be centered on the True Parents.

Practice of the ideal of true parents, true family and purity at the individual level should be expanded to the levels of the family, tribe, nation and world. Once the national foundation is laid, then global expansion can take place and we can enter the era of liberation through

the true-parental standard connecting with all levels from individual to nation, to the world and cosmos, as well as the standard of a true family and the bloodline of true purity.

Thus, in order to clear up everything, we need to stage demonstrations. This should come first, even before witnessing or bringing people to the Blessing. Once that has been carried out, there will be no one who can accuse the True Parents; not even Satan or God could make accusations. That place where the liberation, reconciliation and the fulfillment of God's desire are completely realized will be where God's kingdom on earth and in heaven would be established. The church should then cease to exist.

However, the era of the Family Federation will not pass, but will remain until the very end. Everything has been carried out through a prolonged and difficult course of indemnity during the forty-year period between 1960 and the year I turn eighty years of age. By Korean age I am already eighty years old now. Before my coming birthday, all the proclamations will have been made. (298-221, 1999.1.8)

2.8. Proclamation of the Completion of the Completed Testament Age and God's Kingdom on Earth and in Heaven

April 11, 1999, East Garden

On a recent speaking tour, I traveled to eight locations in Korea. Mother took responsibility for the Eve nation, Japan, speaking in sixteen cities there, and for the son nation, the United States, by giving her speech in twenty-four cities. She held a total of forty rallies in forty cities in the two nations. In such a manner the two of us shouldered the responsibility to complete the providential responsibilities of the parents and the children which had not been fulfilled. This was a task that God could not accomplish on His own, and that Christianity could not accomplish, but I took it in my hands and brought it to a successful conclusion.

The Christian cultural sphere failed to take responsibility in 1945, and consequently the forty-year family-level wilderness course of restoration of Canaan ended in failure. Through the victories in Korea, Japan and the United States and based on the right of the eldest son and the thirty-four nations standing in the realm of the Cain culture, I could finally take responsibility for all failures and with full authority bring them to complete resolution on earth. You should understand that I embarked on the recent speaking tour with such an end in view.

On this day I proclaimed the Completion of the Completed Testament Era and God's Kingdom on Earth and in Heaven. When considered from the viewpoint of perfection of the family and all the liberated realms in the spirit world, Blessed Families can be divided into three different types, namely, the already married blessed couples, the couples who had been previously engaged outside the church, and the couples formed by the union of virgin men and women. With the three representa-

tive couples of the 36 Couples I made it possible for previously married couples, and for engaged couples of which one of the parties passed to the spirit world, to receive the Blessing there in the spirit world. Now the partner in the spirit world and the other on earth can come into union through the spiritual Blessing. I am permitting people in the spirit world to receive the Blessing and to have the three-day ceremony. We can assume there are billions of people who passed on to the spirit world when they were only children, and have reached the age of sixteen. People in such circumstances in the spirit world are being blessed, and through the Blessing they stand in the position of having been legally married during earthly life like the other ancestors in the spirit world. Previously they could not have entered heaven because they were under age and not blessed. I have given the Blessing to 1.6. billion such couples.

The Blessing brings inheritance of the foundation of a connection with the lineage of God's true life. Since there are people in both the spiritual and physical worlds who have inherited His lineage through the Blessing, He is able to have full dominion over them. Thus, even now, with full authority He is freely pressing ahead with re-creation and the providence of restoration without needing to set up indemnity conditions. Hence, the question at hand is whether you can stand in the position of His object partner with such conviction. Once you have made your resolution to unite with the standard of absolute faith, love and obedience, everything can be rapidly put in place in the equalized world.

Every one of you should practice absolute love and obedience. The families in Eden had nothing in their name. Had they become true sons and daughters, standing in oneness with God and His absolute love and lineage, everything in the whole universe would have belonged to them, as God originally intended to bequeath everything to His children. Once you have attained oneness with God through love, everything will become yours.

You should not believe that everything you have in your possession truly belongs to you. Of the things you can possess, the greatest of all is God's love, and the greatest thing you can become is a family of His sons and daughters who are eligible to receive His love. This comes first. When that was lost, everything was lost. Conversely, through its recovery, you can recover everything. In order for you to establish such a family centering on God's love, you must create it from a position of possessing absolutely nothing and connect the foundation of absolute faith, love and obedience with the ideal. Having this original standard, you must stand in the position of being denied even by the satanic world.

Everything lost by Adam and Eve can now be fully restored centering on the family through the relationship with True Parents' lineage, which is based on true love. Hence, you should not have anything in your possession, for if you are united with God, His lineage and His love, then everything that belongs

to Him will also belong to you.

As the Messiah and Parent for the whole world, I have assigned national, tribal and family messiahs who should all become as one with God and together with me take part in the great exodus. In this way, we should seek out the original homeland and establish our original nation there and thenceforth spread out to the world through expansion of the tribes. As we need to follow such a path, a great exodus must take place.

The Blessing of February 7 was an event through which I could rectify the failures of Cain and Abel. The responsibilities in regard to Korea, Japan and the United States can be settled once and for all, with full authority within the sphere of victory. We will hold revivals to advance the global expansion of true families.

Please observe how serious I am. I have said that at this coming Blessing ceremony I will open the gates of hell and bless even the murderers, something that not even God can claim to do. I am encouraging them to pass out of the gates of hell and come to heaven. Even those who opposed the Unification Church for years and years and who passed away can be blessed with their spouses who are still alive on earth and have their three-day ceremony in the physical world. I gave permission for this on March 13, 1999, before I left Korea for the United Sates.

Those who became saints and those in hell who are evil – in short, every spirit from the saints to the murderers will be liberated. According to this principle, the followers of the Unification Church can bring whoever they want even from hell – even a husband who opposed the Unification Church – have them liberated and receive the Blessing. Such things will take place.

Because of this principle that allows even the saints and evil spirits to unite together, the spirits of children who passed away before marrying can be liberated and blessed after they have grown and reached the age of sixteen or over. I have opened the gates of hell and blessed everyone. Through this, their authority as God's kindred can be acknowledged and Satan has no choice but to retreat completely.

Never has there been a revolution such as this. With these words which I have spoken today, the world has changed. The spirit world has come under Blessed Families, the three-day ceremony can be performed freely and the liberated realm has been opened. Through all of this, the lineage of the satanic world has been rooted out and we are now in the liberated realm of the spiritual and physical worlds under God's complete dominion. (300-300, 1999.4.11)

2.9. Declaration of Congratulations for True Parents' East-West (Global) Victory

May 30, 1999, Belvedere

Heavenly Father,

We realize that You have allowed us to welcome the era when Satan's lineage, which has been the source of Your anguish, can be rooted out. We are grateful for Your protection over us, the

blessed group of the Unification Family, whose mission and responsibility it is to transform this world into Your kingdom by completing the blessing of men and women in both the spiritual and physical worlds who yet remain unblessed after the Blessing of 360 Million Couples, and which we continuously struggled to bring about.

I stood in the forefront as their leader, and in order to gain my honor as the True Parent, I withstood alone all the ordeals that came my way, and fought to banish Satan, the enemy of heart of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos and heaven. I am truly, truly, truly grateful to You for watching over us, anxious that we might not fulfill, protecting us, and standing together with us at the front to give assistance, as we persevered with our endeavors.

Based on the hard work of Blessed Families who fulfilled the Blessing of 360 Million Couples, we are now 400 million God-centered blessed couples together on earth. With the Blessing as the impregnable fortress as well as the vanguard, I could declare the realm of liberation of Satan's foundation of hell in the spiritual and physical worlds.

Thank You so much for bestowing upon us the grace with which we could establish, with Your help, the victorious foundation of the True Parents together with Blessed Families. In these days of providential declaration, You could recover Your autonomous authority.

On this foundation, with the victorious authority achieved through Your great work that was completed in this year's eighty-nation speaking tour as conducted by the True Parents, concluded the day before yesterday (January 17 to May 28, 1999), we can now celebrate the time when we can run at full speed along the one-way street to our destination and victory.

Moreover, on the foundation of this Blessing together with the cosmic liberation which took place in the Pantanal, the True Parents could focus on the number eight in an offering of devotion, a total of eighty cities, with eight venues in Korea, 16 in Japan, 24 in the United States, and 32 in the rest of the world. These numbers are related with the number eight. The number eight also represents double the number of the four-position foundation. The tour resolves once and for all the recovery of the lost number eight of Adam's and Noah's families on the world level. It was successfully concluded as a "great awakening" campaign.

By accomplishing this supreme victory two days ago, it is now possible to declare the True Parents' East-West (Global) Victory here at the central and historic venue of Belvedere, but not just in words. This declaration also serves as a holy shield that will allow us to distinguish good from evil and high from low.

Based on this declaration, henceforth, all blessed Unification Family members can confidently carry out their duties on Your behalf as the citizens of Your kingdom and members of Your kindred, for there is nothing that can hinder them from advancing. We beseech and entreat You to connect them to the True Parents'

supreme victory by the authority of the victorious expansion on earth of Your great blessings.

We ask You, the Creator, and no other, to become our Lord, the King of love, and supreme victor totally abolishing Satan's basis for accusation. Stepping over the sorrowful sacrifices of the things of creation in the Old Testament Age, of the children in the New Testament Age, and of the parents in the Completed Testament Age, You are declaring Your ideal and sovereignty of love to the whole universe through the victorious liberation of the Parents of Heaven and Earth in the spiritual and physical worlds.

We desire to fulfill this work in the name of the True Parents, through whom the liberation of the spirit world can be achieved on the day of triumph which brings peace to the earth. We hope from the bottom of our hearts that You will receive our prayer and bless us for generations to come so that we may advance from victory to victory.

We also proclaim before You our resolution to march forward, all peoples and all creation together, into the God-centered nation of absolute victory in the spiritual and physical worlds in the name of the True Parents.

I proclaim this day of victory entirely on behalf of the realm of the True Parents on earth and in heaven, in the name of the True Parents, based on liberation of the grief and lamentation of all generations.

May You be the Supreme Lord of this victory of all ages. Amen! Amen! Amen!

(309-199, 1999.5.30)

2.10. Congratulatory Declaration of True Parents' Cosmic Victory

June 14, 1999, Seoul

Heavenly Father! On this day, June 14, 1999, at quarter past one in the afternoon, the historic moment has come when the proclamation of the victorious cosmic liberation in the names of the True Father and True Parents can be made standing here before You. Also the declaration of welcome for the victorious True Parents representing heaven and earth can be made, based on the Congratulatory Declaration of the True Parents' East-West (Global) Victory on May 30.

I am aware of the anguish long-harbored deep within Your heart, which could not be dissolved by anyone in the past. Every moment of the sad history of sin committed in front of You ever since the time of the first ancestors is buried inside Your heart.

I know that many difficulties arose in Your mind as You had to watch Satan accusing, cursing and ridiculing You. In order to resolve this, You endeavored to form the tribe of love that could inherit God's lineage. You intended it to be centered on the family of perfected Adam, developing into a people, a nation, and finally a world of true love to begin Your kingdom on earth and in heaven. However, the providential course to establish this ideal faced continual failure.

Satan has now finally been brought to submission, as a result of which a new era of global liberation has dawned wherein You can establish control of

everything that is on Satan's side by actively exercising Your creative authority. Heavenly Father, we are truly grateful for Your grace in permitting us this time of the Congratulatory Declaration of True Parents' Cosmic Victory as the vertical foundation, along with the Congratulatory Declaration of True Parents' East-West (Global) Victory as the horizontal foundation.

Under Your guidance, Heavenly Father, from this day forward we can begin to reverse Satan's threats and intimidation. He has been cutting people down, dragging them to the scaffold, and dooming them to hell. We welcome the era of freedom and liberation in which families blessed in the spirit world can come to their descendants to inspire them and reprimand them in turn to lead them, by force if necessary, to heaven rather than hell.

The era has now arrived in which, by Your attaining control over the nations that connect together all of struggling humanity, they can become Your tribe, part of Your lineage, in front of the eternal sovereignty of love.

As Your trans-national family they can liberate all humanity, liberate the spirit world, as well as the True Parents and Yourself. This liberation will remove the position of the servant so as to liberate everything to rise even beyond the original ideal of creation, where You can have sympathy for Satan. In front of Your authority, True Parents dedicate this era.

Please therefore exercise Your power through this liberated sovereignty, moving between earth and the spirit world. With righteous judgment establish Your kingship of love, goodness, and Your independent dominion, and thus become the eternal King of love and Ruler of the universe, bequeathing to us eternal immortality of love.

The True Parents pledge to govern and teach those on earth the path that they should follow to fulfill the duties of Your filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters. By guiding them to become a part of Your kindred having dominion over Your blessed kingdom, True Parents will raise them to become eternal heirs to Your kingdom on earth and in heaven.

Please accept all glory and honor and appoint this day as the day of proclamation. Please exercise Your autonomous right of the kingship of goodness, whereby everything will turn out as You wish. We desire You to do so, again and again and again, and proclaim and declare this in the name of the True Parents! Amen! Amen! Amen! (302-234, 1999.6.14)

I have lived my whole life for the liberation of the Will. The mission of the Messiah entails being born for the liberation of the Will, living only for the Will, and accomplishing it. This means liberating God's kingdom and God Himself.

Next comes the liberation of this world, Satan's prison, where humankind is held in the bondage of Satan's lineage through fallen parents. Following this comes the liberation of all creation, the creation which is now lamenting.

In order to connect God's will to the farthest reaches of the cosmos, I offered special devotions from May 13 to 15, 1998, in the Pantanal. On that foundation, the proclamation of cosmic liberation was made on May 14 of this year (1999).

Then the horizontal foundation was laid by instituting the Day of Congratulations for True Parents' East-West (Global) Victory at Belvedere on May 30, the day they returned to the United States. The vertical proclamation, the Declaration of the True Parents' Cosmic Victory, signifies that historical indemnification is completed and God is now restored to a state of freedom from anxiety. He can be welcomed wherever He goes in this world, including in all families of the Garden of Eden.

The ultimate conclusion of the providence is the perfection of Adam. What does this tell us? It tells us that the first Adam failed to fulfill the original responsibility given to him. This God-given responsibility is the original basis, the very cornerstone of the family, tribe, people, nation, and God's kingdom on earth and in heaven. However, this cornerstone was defiled and must be cleansed. Everything must be purified, including the spiritual and physical worlds.

The lineage was defiled through false love when the archangel took dominion over Eve, who then took dominion over Adam in a reversal of the proper order... Since God is the Parent with children of the defiled lineage, He likewise cannot avoid being in the reverse position, having nowhere to go. Think about it: He is imprisoned. Who on earth knows that God cannot enter the human world? How can He be in such a position?

After God invested billions of years in the creation, Adam and Eve were created as His only son and daughter. How great, then, was God's sorrow when He lost His only son and daughter after billions of years? Moreover, the inherited tradition of love that should have been established was also lost. God could not express His love. He was not able to love His beloved son and daughter even though they were standing right before Him because they had cut off the path through which He could love them. Who can take away His grief? A perfected Adam has to resolve this. (302-239, 1999.6.14)

The era of the arduous course of indemnity is ended. The important thing now is for you to have absolute faith. God began His creation of the universe with absolute faith. Only on the foundation built with absolute faith can absolute love be created and then perfected Therefore, you need to invest absolute love with absolute faith.

With such precious love God sought the family of perfected Adam for thousands of years, repeating restoration through indemnity throughout history, giving and forgetting again and again. He cherishes a desire for His object to be billions of times better than Himself. You should truly appreciate His endeavors and become families that can liberate Him and of whom He can

be proud.

The mere fact that the Declaration of Congratulations for True Parents' Cosmic Victory could be made shows that the foundation of gratitude before God, the True Parents and heaven and earth now extends goes beyond the scope of God's hope when He created the universe.

It also shows that the victorious hearts of God and the True Parents yearn for the era of the fourth Adam to inherit the entire world and secure something greater than that of perfected Adam. During their lives the True Parents' must liberate God by following the path to perfection that is even hundreds of times more severe than Adam's original course. They must do so with a fully devoted heart that surpasses even God's love.

After completing that path they must stand in the position of filial sons and daughters in the family, patriots in the nation, saints in the world, and God's divine sons and daughters, and thus inherit everything from Him. In order for us to accomplish this, we must offer everything.

My conclusion is that, once we have offered all those things, God can bequeath everything to us with this eternal victory for all generations. Even the eternal God could not ask for more. He will then be able to exercise global, victorious authority, overcoming His anguish over the Fall. Satan's defiled lineage should be eliminated completely, leaving no trace. (302-246, 1996.6.14)

2.11. Declaration of the Liberation and Unification of the Cosmos of the Parents of Heaven and Earth (*Gu Gu Jeol*: 9.9. Day)

September 9, 1999, Sutaek-ri, Korea

Beloved Heavenly Father! On this day, September 9, 1999, at 9 minutes and 9 seconds past 9 o'clock, in the True Parents' seventy-ninth year, I have made a clear pathway so that everything can now be liberated which has been bound by Satan through the Fall, both in hell and heaven, on earth and in the spirit world, which tied the spiritual and physical worlds to the realm of the number nine, Satan's number of perfection, and which has been confounding heaven and earth.

This liberation couldn't be manifested even from our time in the womb. The unified ideal did not come into being. Through the lineages of the union between men and women, it should have been connected in the experience of childhood, life with siblings, engagement, matrimony, parenthood and grandmother and queen. Satan blocked this by creating the boundary between the mind and body, resulting in barriers on every level from the period of gestation through the periods of childhood, siblings, engagement, matrimony, parenthood, grandparenthood and even right of kingship. Unification Church members clearly understand that these truths gave rise to a history of conflict between good and evil, in which many of those belonging to the realm of Abel on God's side shed their blood. It has

been a history of anguish wherein the connection with God's lineage that was defiled cannot be regained unless Cain is brought to submission by Abel; then Abel would recover of the right of the eldest son of God's kingdom and naturally the children of the satanic world would submit in the position of the second son.

Because everything which arose from the false parents comes under the number nine, the numbers one to nine are loathed by Heaven. You persevered in providential history to clear up Satan's number, the number nine, through the practice of tithing, in the Old Testament Age.

The path that leads directly from earth to Your kingdom in heaven can be laid down based on true love. This requires bringing to submission this number nine, the greatest of all satanic numbers, on the levels of the individual, tribe, people, nation, and world. Also the physical world must be remedied centering on the True Parents of Heaven and Earth. At the same time the barriers in hell on earth and in spirit world which have been erected vertically and horizontally by Satan must be shattered through the achievement of complete unity with God, the vertical True Parent of heaven. This path, which has been connected through the tears of the True Parents, will spread out physically and spiritually and pass beyond the era of the individual and break down the limitations of the family, tribe, people, nation and world. Thus Your paramount ideal of the family can be disseminated throughout the earth to welcome an era wherein You can be liberated and have autonomous dominion over the whole world. Based on this, the declaration of the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth was made two years ago, centering on *Chil Pal Jeol*. Now that we are in the third year since the declaration, we cannot cross over to the year 2000 without first clearing away the number nine which is blocking everything in the satanic world.

The significance of tomorrow, the tenth day of the month, is that this number ten allows us to pass into the year 2000 from the year 1999. Then God can restore unhindered the physical world vertically from the individual to the family, tribe, people, nation and world, and connect it to the spirit world. This can happen based on the love of the ideal of Adam's family, the original ideal of creation, untainted by the Fall. God's original will to recover the world of cosmic unity could be fulfilled, together with liberation, at the June 14 ceremony of the Congratulatory Declaration of the Cosmic Victory of the Parents of Heaven and Earth, greeted with cheers from the liberated realm of heaven and earth. This could then form the foundation for the Declaration of the Realm of Liberation and Unification of the Cosmos by the Parents of Heaven and Earth, which has been made today. With this declaration, fortune has turned in favor of the unification of North and South Korea.

There exists a gap between Eastern and Western cultures, between the standard of the mind-oriented culture of the East and the material culture of the

West. Though they are in conflict with each other, the two cultures must be unified; the disparity of wealth between South and North must also be eliminated and they must be reunited. Thereby, liberation can take place vertically and horizontally through the establishment of the kingdom of the ideal of love based on the ideal of the family, expressed in the love of siblings centering on the parents. The time has now come when the declaration of the final and conclusive victory creating the realm of freedom and liberation can be proclaimed to the cosmos and can manifest itself throughout hell and heaven, both on earth and in the spirit world.…

From this day henceforth, in obedience to the name of Jehovah, we will absolutely obey and submit to this declaration made on Your behalf. By so doing we will turn 180 degrees to face the direction of goodness. We will forge the bonds of absolute faith, love and obedience, thereby restoring through indemnity the fallen act of the archangel committed in Eden. This evil ancestor absolutely opposed the great sovereign Parent of heavenly principle, and His object partners, the Parents of Heaven and Earth. When we stand in the absolute position of achieving absolute faith, love and obedience that conforms to absolute liberation, then not only humanity and the whole creation but even the fallen archangel and hell itself can be liberated. In the name of the True Parents, I proclaim this day as 9.9. Jeol and reveal this truth and make it known across the cosmos. Therefore, I am asking You to allow us to welcome the era of liberation and heavenly fortune, the era of Your ideal kingdom on earth and in heaven. Therein, the good and evil worlds will become as one with You and the True Parents, and only goodness will remain and flourish! Amen! Amen! Amen! (303-253, 1999.9.9)

I have secured my global domain. Providentially, the United States is the Abel nation and Korea the Adam nation. Father and son should become as one. Until now the history of restoration has progressed through mother-son cooperation, but such an era will pass.

In the history of indemnity until now, restoration was achieved at the sacrifice of the mother and her children, but with the declaration of 9.9. Jeol, fortune has turned in favor of the unification of North and South Korea, and on the day of unification we will enter the era of father-son cooperation. The mother is not primarily essential for restoration, for any number of them can be established. If Adam had not fallen, Eve could have been re-created many times over.

Who would have had realizations unknown to anyone else of how to connect Korea to the unified ideal world and God's kingdom in heaven in the future? Would it be pastors or church elders? Who would it be? The religious world has no idea, for the answer is only known to the True Parents. The Fall came about through ignorance. The first parents fell through ignorance of love, and left behind false love, false life and false lineage. The True Parents have full knowledge of all this. Who is God? How has

history developed? How will the people's end come about, and how can the divided mind be reunified? With my own hands I will bring about the unification of the individual and family, the liberation of the tribe, people, nation, world, heaven and even God. The false parents have imprisoned God, and so it is up to the True Parents, as the masters of liberation, to liberate Him. I have the responsibility to do away with the satanic right of the eldest son, family-level rights and right of kingship. I must establish the domain into which I can welcome God from heaven and secure complete authority over the family, tribe, people, nation, and world. I have been continuously working to fulfill all this. (303-264, 1999.9.9)

How can the numerous races, tribes, and clans come to enter heaven, since they have occupied many different locations in all directions throughout history? The gates have been opened for all of them. In order to become part of the sea, raindrops must fall and flow into the streams which flow into the tributaries, then into big rivers, and finally into the sea. Yet the great river must flow in the opposite direction from now, and since there is no limit to the amount of sea water, it will continue to flow in a reverse direction.

The waves of love, truth, justice and the utopia of God's ideal kingdom will flow up to the mountain streams into the highest valleys, and when they have been back and forth three times, those streams will be purified. After the completion of the three-year course, God's kingdom on earth will appear before your eyes. You need to understand that we are living in a time of great transition of national fortune. Though there is but one sun, its light fills the whole universe.

The True Parents are absolutely needed by the individual because only they can teach the way to solve the mind-body conflict. Then to whom do the True Parents absolutely belong? They belong to you. Repeat after me: "The men and women who belong to me are the sons and daughters who have inherited the lineage of the True Parents." There is no room there at all for Satan's lineage, not even one inch. To whom do the True Parents belong absolutely? Those who can claim the True Parents belong to them are those who have achieved absolute individual perfection.

"The True Parents are mine! I will even sell the whole earth to buy them and make them mine! The whole world would still not be enough." Even if you sold the whole universe, both spiritual and physical worlds, you would still not be able to buy them. Make a special resolution today that the True Parents are absolutely yours, uniquely yours, unchangingly yours and eternally yours. (303-266, 1999.9.9)

Now, centering on 9.9. Jeol, you need to give the Offering of Total Indemnity. This offering is to be made for the ceremony of liberation and dissolution of anguish. The ceremony of liberation should be performed to dissolve God's

anguish and liberate Him. You should realize that the Offering of Total Indemnity will also liberate the cosmos and yourself.

After the proclamation of 9.9. Jeol on September 9, 1999, then as of September 14 at quarter past seven in the morning, we have entered the era in which we will pray in our own names instead of in the name of True Parents as we have been doing until now. In this era of cosmic unity and liberation, we are entering the era of freedom and autonomy in the environment of the fourth Adam. (304-154, 1999.10.10)

2.12. Declaration of the Era of the Fourth Adam (*Ssang Shib Jeol* – Double Ten Day)

October 10, 1999, Uruguay

The number ten representing the month of October in the date of October 10, 1999, signifies a new start centered upon God, and the number ten of the tenth day signifies a new start centered upon the earth. That is why I have proclaimed October 10 as *Ee-Ship Jeol* (*Ssang-ship Jeol*, Double-Ten Day). (304-152, 1999.10.10)

Section 3. The Seven Great Jardim Declarations and the Establishment of the New Eden

3.1. The first declaration: The New Hope Farm Declaration

God created human beings and all creation with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. As His object partners, we should also practice absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience towards Him. (268-262, 1995.4.3)

You must understand that God's mission of restoration has been to recover the absolute faith, love and obedience lost in the Garden of Eden by completely denying the satanic world. Through circumcision in the Old Testament Age, and baptism by water in the New Testament Age, everything defiled through disbelief was cleansed.

What is the Completed Testament? It represents the age of true love. It means giving of yourselves through self-sacrifice and then forgetting what you gave. You need to redeem the fallen world by giving yourself completely in the same way God does. To become God's children, you need to invest yourselves in this world and be resurrected quickly. Thus, you need to receive the Blessing of the change of the lineage. Once you have received the Blessing, you need to restore your nation as quickly as possible, even if it means sacrificing your family. Since you need to practice absolute faith, heart and obedience, this course of action must also be absolute.

If you have become people who can practice absolute faith, love and obedience, you would not need to know about the Divine Principle of the Unification Church. When you have achieved that foundation in the physical world, then through the absolute restoration of lineage, rights of ownership and heart, and going beyond these stages even, you will

automatically become citizens of God's kingdom.

Now the time has come in which I, holding the victorious authority acquired by taking charge in the free democratic sphere and the communist sphere based on the world's 160 nations, can come to the southern hemisphere and establish the world with the ideal sovereignty, God's kingdom on earth. (268-292, 1995.4.3)

From this moment on, you stand in my stead as well as God's. You should follow wherever He and I go. On this day, April 3, 1995, I make the New Hope Farm Declaration. (268-296, 1995.4.3)

3.2. The second declaration: Absolute, Unique, Unchanging and Eternal Ideal Family

God is absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging. As His children, we should take after His attributes and be absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging children, live as absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging couples, become absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging parents, and perfect absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging families. (1998. 8.7)

All true created beings in the world possess ideal love, the love of original nature, centered on God, and so we must become families based on absolute couples, children, siblings and parents. This is the second Jardim declaration. As well as absolute faith, love and obedience, God's nature includes the qualities of being absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal. Since these are God's attributes, it naturally follows that He desires His object partners also to possess these four attributes. Moreover, since He wishes for His object partners to be superior to Him, He would look for more absoluteness, more uniqueness, more eternality and more immutability in His object partner.

Have you ever served God as your absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging Parent? God, the Origin, is such a parent. Because He is invisible, Adam and Eve were created to be husband and wife, the visible representatives of the absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging God.

If there is only one central being, the Lord of all forms of existence in the world, and the Creator and Origin of the universe, we are sure that the ideal world of humankind desired by that Center would not be as it presently exists on earth. The world He yearns for would not be one of concepts in heaven, nor would it be just a physical world. That world, instead, would be one in which everyone would be included in the flow of love as expressed through relationships of heart, and they would be called His children. Although He may be the greatest entity in the world, the Creator and Absolute Being, He also wishes for someone to fulfill this. This is something we cannot deny.

History is seeking out the true person, the true nation and the true world. We ourselves are aware of our inclination toward become true beings. Then

what is the standard of all true bonds of relationship? It is the parent-child bond between God and each human being. The heart springing from this bond is eternal, unchanging and unique, and cannot be altered on the authority of any being. Moreover, the authority of this heart is absolute. For this reason, all forms of existence would automatically bow down and submit to a being that appears with this authority, and the whole universe would have to follow his every move. This is an intrinsic rule of the universe. If it were not so, we reach the conclusion that we could not achieve our true purpose, nor be able to forge one absolute bond with God.

If we were to consider that human morality and the heavenly principles might eventually come to an end, what form would that end take? That should be the day when God could say to humankind, "You are my true sons and daughters, however much I might try to deny it. My sons, my daughters: my grief and resentment have finally been relieved." It should be a day on which He can relax, rest in comfort, and enjoy life with His mind at peace. Only when such a day dawns, after such sons and daughters have appeared on earth, could God's new, ideal world emerge. (7-104, 1959.7.26)

3.3. The third declaration: Declaration of the First, Second and Third Creators

God, as the First Creator, created Adam and Eve, and Adam and Eve, as the second creators, created all humanity; therefore, it follows that we are the third creators.

Although God's grief at having lost His son and daughter is great, He is also afflicted with the sorrow of having no grandchildren. So three generations should live together under one roof with a heart akin to that of the First Creator (God). (1998.8.21)

Would God want those who live for the sake of others to perish or to prosper? He would protect them. Unification Church members should always bear this in mind, that the person who lives for the sake of others more than anyone else automatically becomes the central figure. This is a heavenly law.

By the time you have breakfast, you should forget the name of your enemy from the night before. By the time you have lunch, you should forget the name of your enemy from the morning of the same day, and instead set your mind to living for his sake and saving him, following the way of God's heart. If you do so, heavenly fortune will take care of you, and whenever you feel like turning back, it will urge you to continue along that path. You should not think of your enemies as enemies. I have forgotten the names of all my enemies. When the children of my enemies had no money to pay for school, I sent them money. When they had nothing to eat, I bought them food. Now I don't even remember who they were. Since such a heart has been beating inside me, now at this time I am able be the central figure who can set the world right and save the universe

centering on God and that eternal center can be established. This is the logical conclusion.

Not one person in history has ever perished from living for the sake of others. Though I dislike having this said of me, there are many who claim Rev. Sun Myung Moon is the greatest saint in all five thousand years of Korean history, and he is alive at this time! I have met many who wanted to greet me in person and attend me as a living saint. Who taught them this? You should not forget this amazing truth that these actions are brought about by something noble in their hearts. Their ancestors or those named in the family register of loyal subjects in God's kingdom would have come to them during their dreams or meditation time and awakened them to this fact. (1998.8.21)

3.4. The fourth declaration: Declaration of the Accomplishment of our Destined Task

New Hope Farm, Jardim

God and human beings are in a parent-child relationship. The relationship between parent and child is our inherited destiny. All sorrows and problems of parents can only be resolved by their children. Such is the path of children. There can never be disbelief or betrayal in a registered family. God and humanity should be united in harmony as father and children. (295-167, 1998.8.28)

Parental love should be fair. Part of being parents entails connecting and bringing together their firstborn son or daughter with their younger sibling, so that the elder children can love their younger siblings in their parents' stead, and the younger children can respect their elder siblings. The parents should act as intermediaries connecting them together. If they cannot do so, the family will fall apart and disputes will arise among siblings. Hence, parents should educate their children. Thus, our destined mission is to accomplish liberation! This means Adam and Eve have to restore and perfect themselves and become absolute, unique, unchanging, eternal man and woman, based on God's four main attributes. As such, they should then receive the Blessing and become true husband and wife.

God hoped to establish a family and for the firstborn son to be His filial son, but this was lost and the family was not perfected, due to the most unfilial act committed by the first ancestors. A nation should have been established following the tradition of the firstborn, but this also could not come to pass. A whole world following this tradition should have been established, but this too was not fulfilled. Consequently, God's kingdom should have been established on earth and been connected to His kingdom in heaven, but this plan also met with failure.

Do you realize that everything went wrong because our destined responsibility was not fulfilled? The means by which all this can be resolved is through the Jardim Declaration. It requires absolute faith, love, and obedience.

God is our Parent. Parents, including those of the fallen world, who are loving subject partners, are hoping for their beloved object partners to become better than them. This is a heavenly principle. Because our fundamental relationship with God is that between parent and child, we need to form God-centered conjugal and parent-child relationships, that is to say, Adam and Eve should have become His embodiments and a divine couple.

The sperm of the father is like the bone, to which the mother adds the flesh. The sperm penetrates the ovum in the mother and only through this act can that ovum develop into a zygote. The bone! How do the bones first start to develop? They begin with the father planting the seed of the baby. It is all part of the original design. That seed enters the mother, receives flesh from her, grows and develops all the features of a human being in due time; what had originally been only in a seed in concept form starts to grow when planted in the womb by the father taking from the body of the mother and adding to itself. Thus, after attaining a form according to a preordained process, an individual person is born.

There is freedom of love in married life. It should begin in an unrestricted, liberated universe, a place of freedom, where conjugal love would not be hindered by anything, regardless of wherever the couple goes. Based on their love in a free environment, they should be brought together in a unified life of freedom, and through this union, their child should be born having passed through a natural period of development in its mother's womb. Then when the child claims that he is free, respect for his parents' liberty and freedom of love would be embedded in his words. Freedom cannot exist for the child that denies his connection to his parents and to the free life and lineage.

Hence, you are told to respect your parents. You need to respect the love that your parents have been faithful to and inherit its tradition. Only after you have inherited that tradition can you enjoy freedom. In order for the branch to live and grow, it needs nourishment to be supplied from the roots, through the trunk. Then it is free to grow as long as it is kept nourished in this way; when this is denied, it cannot have freedom. If it is cut off from this lifeline, it will die.

The path of true love is purely rational. If you live for absolute faith, love and obedience, love will grow. Since the seed of love was sown through faith, and it put forth buds, who would be responsible for it? For all this, God would invest everything He has, even Himself completely.

In Kodiak, plenty of salmon can be found. Salmon lay their eggs in the cold winter month of November. Since it is so cold, there are no insects, nor are there any small fish around. All fish swim away in search of warm currents and so there is nothing to eat. For this reason, the mother and father become the food for their young. It is only natural for the parents, the ancestors, to sacrifice themselves for their children. The animal

kingdom has abided by this tradition for billions of years and still continues to live by it; on the other hand, humankind, who should be better than animals in every respect, are not keeping true to this principle, and so it is sometimes said that people are inferior to animals. The same is also true for loving. Animals do not love recklessly. Birds follow their own species in the way of true love. They don't love imprudently. Once they have found a mate and formed a pair, that relationship is absolute.

In the future, family law should be enacted. I have already issued instructions for the fundamental rules to be drawn up. If the nation is established after I have passed on to the spirit world, my absence would not matter so much because you would already have the laws set out on how to constitute that nation. If you abide by those laws as you would my words, and become united and march forward, you would be connected to God's kingdom.

You should understand that you cannot be self-centered, individualistic or insist on your own way. Before asserting yourselves, you need to realize that your father and mother existed before you, and from their lives emerged their lineage. On top of that, love was created. The relationship through which you can learn to respect lineage, history and your ancestors, and which will help you serve them, is the one between you and your parents. You need to respect your parents and then God. What would then be even higher than Him? It would be love.

Encompassed in the mother and father are the absolute love, life and lineage attained through the Absolute Parent and Father of absolute love. You should be aware of the fact that you are born from all this. Thus, you are the representative of lineage, maternal and paternal life and love. Having received them all as the representative, you were born to expand them and spread them wide; since such is the purpose of your life, if you don't fulfill this and instead act as you please and put your greed before everything else, you would be ruined and perish.

It is our destined and inevitable task to unite through the parent-child relationship, but what should that unity be centered upon? From the bone marrow, the seed, it should be centered on true love. Only when a baby is born thus can it possess a heart and body big enough to embrace the whole world as well as its father and to become one with its mother. You should follow your parents with absolute faith, love and obedience, as the grandson and father should follow the grandfather with absolute faith, love and obedience.

It will be handed down as an eternal tradition. Our destined mission is to accomplish liberation! Only then can we fulfill Family Pledge number eight, which is to achieve the ideal of God and human beings united in love through absolute faith, love and obedience now that we have entered the Completed Testament Age. Only when this unity has been achieved can we strive to perfect the realm of liberation of God's king-

dom on earth and in heaven. (295 -167, 1998.8.28)

3.5. The fifth declaration: *Sa Sa Jeol* (4.4. Day); Declaration of the Family

September 8, 1998, Kodiak, Alaska

We have welcomed the era of the conclusion of the completed and perfected providence in the earthly world.

I. The four-position foundation has been established both in the spiritual and physical worlds.

II. Parents and children have restored the four-position foundation and have sown the seed of ideal families

III. The first and second generations have become as one.

IV. The South (Pantanal) and the North (Alaska) have become as one. (Representing the unity of heaven and earth)

V. Satan's lineage has been rooted out and converted to God's side.

(1998.9.8, Kodiak, Alaska)

Today is September 8, 1998, and when you add all these numbers together you arrive at the number 44. The number 9, which can pass over Adam's four-position foundation, his children's four-position foundation, and his object partner's four-position foundation, is Satan's number, and the number 8 is the starting number. The number 19 comes right before 20. All the numbers connected with nine are Satan's numbers. However, through these numbers will come the era of all-immanence, all-transcendence, supreme authority and omnipotence in which God will be free to do whatever He pleases. In other words, everything in the satanic world will be absorbed into one unified world. Then when would the number 44 appear? It would do so at the time of a historic declaration. The sum of the numbers representing September 8, 1998 is 44, and so that is why on this day I am making the declaration of 4.4. Jeol.

All humankind must return to God in any case. Therefore, I have come to Kodiak in the North, to declare 4.4. Jeol. Centering on the second generation, you are divided into two with the national messiahs in the south, and the Cain messiahs of the mother nation in the north. These two groups should be connected in heart, and the second generation should stand in front of them. You are the plus and the minus, and wherever there is a positive charge, it should be paired with a negative charge.

By my coming to the North, and with the firstborn, the second generation, connected to the plus and minus, I have finally been able to declare 4.4. Jeol, through which the four-position foundations of Adam's family and that of his children can settle and ultimately open the gates to the heavenly world. In preparation for this, I blessed both saints and murderers simultaneously on June 13. They are all brothers and sisters. Satan took what belonged to God, but now God can freely do whatever He wants. Thus, the cosmos has become God's liberated kingdom on earth and in heaven. (295-268, 1998.9.8)

3.6. The sixth declaration: Ceremony of Liberation and Unification of All Spirits and the Entire Spirit World

October 5, 1998 (Lunar 8.15), São Paulo, Brazil

Since all spirits received the Blessing without having proper merit, they must aid their descendants on earth in establishing God's kingdom on earth. (1998.10.5)

Beloved Heavenly Father! Today is October 5, 1998, which is also Chuseok in Korea, a day of celebration on which the people honor their ancestors. You have worked endlessly to establish the realm of liberation for the Old, New and Completed Testament ages in history to ease Your grief over not having seen this world become a settlement of love, in which all forms of creation, all people in the spirit world, countless believers, and all things created with love and living on earth would have lived together with You. Today, before heaven and earth, Cheongpyeong in Korea, and the people gathered here in São Paulo in the western world, please bring to an end the sorrowful history that You have had to endure, (296-9, 1998.10.5)

The time has now come for the final transition to take place, made possible on the foundation based on the blessing of five great saints and their blessed followers, in the spirit world on June 13, members of the groups they have established. Those serving You and the True Parents on earth and in the spirit world must now follow the way of filial piety, loyalty and heavenly tradition. In other words the archangelic families on earth should come together and join the liberated domain of the Blessed Families in the position of perfected Adamic families on earth. They should strive to fulfill their duties before You as filial sons and daughters in the family, patriots in the nation, and saints in the world, and also inherit the bond of love tending to the duties of Your divine sons and daughters on earth and in the spirit world. In order to do so, they should become as one with You in heaven and with the True Parents on earth to be enabled to fulfill this, Your long-cherished desire. So please liberate the followers of the saints and the ancestors who are the offspring of the first ancestors, Adam and Eve.

Based on the kinship of the sphere of love united with the originally intended perfected heaven, and by serving the True Parents on earth, all those who could not serve them until this time can arrive at the destination founded on the family. The family is the result of vertical and horizontal love coming together, the original ideal of creation, springing from the bond of siblings, and of parents and children, as formed between the ancestors both on earth and in the spirit world. This is the day proclaiming that both the physical and spiritual worlds can now be connected eternally on the foundation of the cosmic family centered on the True Parents, and that through the liberation of both worlds all families can freely travel in all directions. In the name of the True Parents,

the era has now arrived in which we can publicly carry out activities after we have brought all those in both worlds together and establish a foundation on earth. Then together with all created beings we can advance in full force for the victory of the eternal sovereignty of Your love and the establishment of Your kingdom on earth and in heaven. This will be founded on true love and the sphere of heart of Your true lineage and that of the True Parents. All this I declare in the name of the True Parents! Amen! Amen! Amen! (296-14, 1998.10.5)

3.7. The seventh declaration: Declaration of the Cosmic *Sa Sa Jeol* (4.4. Day)

The Complete Liberation for the Cosmic Expansion of the True Blessing and the Rooting Out of the Satanic Blood Lineage

January 8, 1999, Punta del Este, Uruguay

You need to achieve mind-body unity, husband-wife unity, and parent-child unity. Thus, you must create an absolute family. This is the second part of the Jardim Declaration, which connects with the third and fourth, and finally, the declaration of 4.4. *Jeol*. Adam's family failed to perfect the four-position foundation and firmly establish itself. It naturally followed that their sons and daughters also failed to firmly settle. Therefore, after passing 4.4. *Jeol*, you need to come to Jardim and receive family training, and return to the path that leads to heaven.

The Old Testament Age required the offering of creation as sacrifices of unity, the New Testament Age required the offering of the son as the sacrifice of unity, and now in the Completed Testament Age what is required is the offering of the unified parents as a sacrifice. Only then can liberation and unity be declared in this world of resentment. You should know that at this time God is overflowing with blessings to bestow on us. Needless to say, the wider the water pipes are, the more water can flow through them, and similarly, depending on how much you offer devotion, prayer and effort, the pipelines of victory connecting you to the spirit world will be installed. So, taking this into consideration, give everything you have in order to offer devotions and prayers, and may you come out victors, not losers, in the end! (298-57, 1999.1.1)

Regardless of how strong the power and authority of the satanic world is, the era of God's authority will soon be upon us. The era in which God is free to do whatever He pleases is coming soon. Only when that era has arrived can this world become God's kingdom on earth.

God should be liberated, and this involves the number four. After the Old Testament, New Testament, and Completed Testament Ages will come the era of liberation from anguish. In that age, you need to offer everything. That does not mean that God will receive everything and keep it all for Himself. Instead, He will pass it all to Adam. Adam will then give back what he has received to

God, and God will then hand it over to the True Parents, from whom the distribution of rights of ownership should begin. (298-63, 1999.1.1)

Section 4. The Family Federation for World Peace and Unification

The era for the unity of Christianity has already passed. Since the restoration of the right of the eldest son and right of the parent has been completed, we have entered the era, not just for the unity of Christianity but for the unity of the world. Therefore, as of April 10, we should put aside the name "Unification Church" and instead work under the name of the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. (283-11, 1997.4.8)

With the completion of the mission of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity, the mission of religion has been brought to a conclusion. For the first time in human history, we have entered a new era that does not require salvation through religion.

The objective of the Family Federation lies in transforming families into ideal families, thereby restoring and perfecting God's ideal of creation and establishing the ideal heavenly world. (283-9, 1997.4.8)

You must establish a family. Until now, religion focused on the individual; not a single religion set its sights on the family. Religious people renounced the world and abandoned their families for their faith. We are living in a different era now. All religions without exception preached salvation for the individual and never once mentioned salvation for the family, tribe or nation. On the other hand, the Unification Church is preaching the salvation of the nation and the world based on the family. (283-106, 1997.4.8)

Only when the family has established itself can there be expansion to the world, and God's original ideal of creation in Eden be brought to fruition. Through sons and daughters, horizontal expansion should take place, then multiplication into the tribe longed for by God, and consequently into God's nation. (283-84, 1997.4.8)

That is why the family is so important. Everything will be brought to conclusion with the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. Repeat after me: Family Federation for World Peace and Unification! Family Federation for World Peace and Unification! Its very center is the family. (283-93, 1997.4.8)

The family must tread the path of peace and unity as representatives of the world. You need to understand that everything is linked to the foundation that is united with the family. Thus, in the future great families will rise in the world. (283-54, 1997.4.8)

From now on the family will be the center of everything, so no one will be

able to go alone. Even decisions made in the workplace will involve the husband and wife as one team. If the husband is the director, the wife will be the deputy director. When their sons and daughters satisfy all requirements, the whole family and even the whole clan would be assigned to important departments.

In future, much emphasis will be placed on the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification, but the world should not be forgotten for all that. What would be the use of achieving peace if there were no world? What would be the use of unity without peace? What would we need families for if unity were not achieved? In speaking of the family, I don't mean just one family. What good would families be without the guidance of the Federation? Everything is related to one another. When you think of the Federation, you should also think of unity, family, peace and the world, and when you think of the world, the thoughts of peace and the Family Federation for World Peace should also come to your mind. They are one and the same. God can only dwell at the place where you become the representative owners of the unified world of peace and the family. (283-51, 1997.4.8)

Section 5. Crossing Through the Valley of the Fall

5.1. The Parents' path is different from that of the children

In the course of the restoration of Canaan, you need to follow me. When wild geese migrate, the other geese follow the lead goose absolutely. They make no objections whatsoever. When the signal is given, they fly. Even when they are dead-tired, they still follow their leader. This has been their way.

Now that we have reached our destination, given birth to children and multiplied, we should begin to live together, live for the sake of others and love others, forming and loving your clan. This is the task at hand. Until now we have been on our way to the blessed land of Canaan, and henceforth we enter the era of settlement. (115-107, 1981.11.4)

Cain and Abel have no original portion of responsibility to fulfill. Then who would have had responsibility? It would be Adam and Eve, the parents. Since I was given this obligation in the providence of restoration, I took responsibility for what you had failed to achieve and for the errors committed by Christianity. For forty years, in the position of the parents, I corrected everything on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. In this way, I completed the individual's portion of responsibility in restoration through indemnity, erected walls to shut Satan out, and established the realm of the fulfillment of one's portion of responsibility. This is how a new world can begin thenceforth.

Since I have now achieved all this on a level even beyond that of the world, it has now become possible to build God's kingdom. Thus, a new term has emerged – the establishment of God's Kingdom

or homeland. This is all in accordance with the Principle. (148-163, 1986.10.8)

You don't know the path to heaven. You don't know the path of indemnity. Can you claim to know that path? Those who have not fulfilled their portion of responsibility must do so. Satan is able to invade people when they do not fulfill their portion of responsibility. Everything from the individual to the family, society, nation, world and even the spirit world has been invaded by Satan. (137-104, 1985.12.24)

You should not be greedy for yourselves. You should become completely and absolutely united with me. I am the root, and when the root is pulled, the rest of the plant should automatically follow. The stems or branches cannot want to exist for themselves. They cannot insist on their own way. The whole cannot move in two different directions. They are part of one unit. Only after the whole unit establishes a foundation in victory can each part enjoy freedom in all directions. Otherwise they cannot act freely. (169-199, 1987.10.31)

Everything I have taught you is the key to enter heaven. None of the doors will open if the key does not fit the lock. Only when you open the gates with the key I have given you will heaven welcome you; nothing else will succeed. This key of mine is one of original nature. Even a key made of gold or silver, or any other kind of precious metal, will not be able to open the gates. My key, on the other hand, may seem to be made of humble brass, but it will open the gates instantly. No one else on earth can make such a key: it is that precious. (260-186, 1994.5.8)

You must practice absolute faith. You should walk the path of faith with absolute trust in the True Parents. (46-99, 1971.7.25)

5.2. The path of children is the path of absolute obedience

Obey absolutely! Absolute obedience will never cause you to perish. What happens if you obey? You will become one with God. What happens when you achieve that oneness? Evil will be repelled since you would be completely united with God. This is the way evil will be eliminated. Such is the Principle. (57-114, 1972.5.29)

Every one of you should practice absolute love and obedience. The families in Eden held nothing in their name. Had they become true sons and daughters, standing in oneness with God and His absolute love and lineage God originally intended to bequeath everything in the whole universe to them. Once you have attained oneness with God through love, everything will become yours.

The Blessing signifies inheriting the foundation of a connection with the lineage of God's true life. Since there are people in both the spiritual and physical worlds who have inherited His lineage through the Blessing, He is able

to have full dominion over them. With full authority He is freely pressing ahead with re-creation and the providence of restoration even now without having to set up indemnity conditions. Hence, the question at hand is whether you can stand with conviction in the position of His object partner. Once you have resolved to unite with the standard of absolute faith, love and obedience, everything can rapidly be put in place in the world of equality. (300-303, 1999.4.11)

In His act of Creation, God practiced absolute faith, love and obedience; however, the couple that was to be His object partners failed to achieve that position and consequently fell into hell. Since we are now living at a time when we are restoring globally that which was lost in Adam's family, Unification Church members need to practice absolute faith, love and obedience centering on the victorious True Parents. Since the True Parents inherited God's tradition of absolute faith, love and obedience, you also need to inherit that. Do you understand? God's blessing will be with you! (1996.11.3)

What have religious ascetics focused on in daily life throughout history? Jesus is a person to be pitied because he could not assert his own will. Night and day he was absolutely obedient to God's will. Absolute obedience! Why did he obey absolutely? He had to eliminate Satan, who had established himself as the subject being in a triangular relationship with humankind, in spite of the already existing Absolute Subject, who is in the form of a sphere. Human beings today are dominated by the satanic environment and in order to extricate themselves they need to walk the path most abhorred by Satan. (57-114, 1972.5.29)

Religion tells us to practice absolute obedience in following our conscience. Since God is absolute, the conscience and mind want to become absolutely centered on Him, as originally intended. This is why the religious world teaches us to become a minus in front of God. (57-114, 1972.5.29)

Love goes wherever there is absolute faith. In the parent-child relationship, there should be absolute faith, love and obedience. In order for both sides to reach perfection, parents live for the sake of their children, giving them everything – their blood, flesh and devotion – hoping that their children will be better than themselves. Parents desire their children to be infinitely superior to them, and so they give again and again, and forget what they gave. They give boundlessly and eternally, and forget. In this manner, they should think and serve beyond the scope of the individual, family, tribe and world, and as God exists, they should climb to a place even higher than Him.

The anguish caused by the Fall and all its repercussions need to be dissolved completely on earth through means that are principled from God's viewpoint. If you tried to do this in unprincipled ways, you would be caught immediately, with

no hope for forgiveness.

In this life, I always stand in the forefront and consequently go through more hardships than anyone else. Originally I was supposed to live in a position of incomparable glory that entailed a glorious beginning, a glorious life and the work of building the bridge connecting with the world of eternal glory; yet the reality is quite the opposite. My path began with hardships in the satanic world, and the end will also come with suffering.

On the foundation of your own absolute faith, love and obedience, you need to become families that are absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging, serving God, and from you should emerge an eternal tribe, people, nation and world. Thus we can establish His kingdom on earth, and create an environment that would connect directly to His kingdom in heaven.

Everyone on earth – including grandchildren, children and parents – should be in the same position as Adam, serving and addressing God as their Father. Henceforth, you will all become ancestors. (295-255, 1998.9.8)

You must know clearly about the spirit world. We cannot live aimlessly. You need to form families that have completely passed the test on earth and are free to proceed directly to heaven. Families that have no foundation would be stopped on the way. This is not my responsibility. Haven't I already blessed you? Haven't I built the highway? You have the cars to ride in to go wherever you want; all you need to provide is the fuel.

I have already made the declaration of total liberation. If you cannot meet the standard then you will be stopped as an imposter. Only those who have passed the test on earth will be allowed to enter heaven.

Until now, everyone entering the spirit world went either to a place like jail or the intermediate spirit world, even those who had passed that test. Now we must restore this world to be like a clean slate and lay a foundation and tradition on earth that will allow us to go directly to heaven. No longer should there be families going to the intermediate spirit world, paradise or hell. (298-232, 1999.1.8)

Because God is absolute, you too should be in an absolute position. As God is unchanging, you too should be unchanging. As God is unique, you too should be unique. As God is eternal, you too should be eternal. Knowing this, we can conclude that humankind must be immortal, that everyone is destined to live eternally.

However much God may abound in love, life or ideals, if we human beings do not have love, life or ideals, everything will be in vain. (169-74, 1973.10.20)

Since the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships were lost, we need to restore them. In order to achieve this goal, we need to follow with absolute obedience, submission and sacrifice, and be willing to do whatever is asked of us. Only after you have done so

can the True Parents come to that place which is free from the satanic world. The men of the satanic world are in the position of archangels and so you should separate yourselves from them completely. Then you would ascend from this position. (235-293, 1992.10.25)

Until now I have not told you to obey my words absolutely. We need to follow faithfully this historic course, the providential course of history for the sake of God. I have not taught you the course of the providence of restoration for the sake of Rev. Moon of the Unification Church.

I too am following this path, marching forward towards the ultimate goal of God, our Lord, and the goal of humankind, which stands as the object. Since these two goals failed to culminate at one point, it is the aim of the Divine Principle and Unification Thought to bring this matter to a conclusion. (71-64, 1974.4.28)

The truly filial son is the one who obeys. The truly loyal subject, even if falsely accused of being a treacherous vassal, does not speak ill of the king as an incompetent leader. Even if he is framed as a villainous courtier and faces death, with unswerving loyalty the truly loyal subject harbors sympathy for his king, sheds tears of compassion for him, and wishes him a long and healthy life. That is absolute obedience.

The one and only path that can bring success through absolute obedience is the path of true love. (164-48, 1987.5.3)

5.3. Blessed members' rules and duties

Jardim is important. It is a place on the opposite side of the world from Korea. There, I can give official approval to all the national messiahs and tribal messiahs as families that can enter heaven. In this way, they enter the realm in which they can form part of my tribe and kindred, and set out along the course on earth which leads to heaven. Blessed families who have participated in the forty-day workshop in Jardim should sell whatever they have and prepare for a refugee life during the great exodus.

With the unification of North and South Korea and through Blessed Families becoming one unified whole, a hometown which God can acknowledge will be created; finally a hometown of God's kingdom on earth and in heaven will come into being.

The time has now finally arrived when everyone should unite, starting with the True Parents' family and extending to all tribes, clans and Blessed Families, and for all to settle. When North and South Korea are united, the world will want to follow us in every ideological aspect. Thus it will become one world.

The words "cosmic expansion of the true Blessing and the rooting out of Satan's lineage" signify the complete elimination and transformation of that of satanic lineage. From the year 2000, which marks my eightieth birthday, all tribes living on earth will be bound for heaven. In other words, just as the Israelites departed from Egypt, we will depart

from this world which is the hell created by Satan. Moses headed out of Egypt when he was eighty; similarly, as the king of families, the True Parent will set out from this fallen world. (300-305, 1999.4.11)

In the same way the Israelites followed closely behind Moses, the time has come for you to leave this hell on earth and migrate to God's kingdom; thus, you need to follow a course tantamount to crossing a wilderness. It is the same principle as that of selling everything you have in your current place of residence, which represents Egypt. You would do so in order to prepare funds to enter and establish your hometown. Simply put, you should sell everything you have and pack up, for you will be part of a great exodus.

You should not miss what you leave behind in Egypt. When the Israelites were wandering in the wilderness, living as beggars in the midst of sandstorms, how sorely did they miss the food they had in Egypt, and their comfortable life? You should remember that all those who missed such things met with destruction in the end.

In the future, the families of national messiahs up to three or seven generations, together with the members of their tribe, should sell everything they have to restore the homeland. Then the whole world will be turned around at once. Every possession will be returned to the ownership of God and the True Parents to be redistributed, and humanity will enter an era of ownership of families blessed by God in His kingdom on earth and in heaven. Then the spirit world and the entire angelic world will unite together to establish the sphere of Adam's resurrected family.

From the individual will come a family, then a tribe, a people, a nation and the world. Together they will enter the homeland on the foundation laid by the True Parents. This is how one's family, tribe, people, nation and world will be liberated together. Those unwilling to participate will end up in hell.

If we are unable to buy land in Korea, there are plans to buy it in South America and divide it up among you. The piece of land I buy in South America will be recognized as having a relationship with Korea. So, when Christians in the United States decide to move to Korea, the Christian realm of the world including South America will all be united into one, and thus it would be possible to restore everything at once. Thus, I have founded the Family Federation, the Tribal Federation, and the National Federation. (300-307, 1999.4.11)

Everywhere you go, you should become an explosive center of action with full confidence in yourself, receive the power that is coming to you from the center of heaven, and push through horizontally. Carry on confidently with your work for the expansion of the Blessing throughout heaven and earth, for there is nothing that can stop you. Heaven and earth will be keen observe families who are true to their work. Through such families liberation will be achieved. Indeed, heaven and earth will be turned

around. Then your blessed tribes should be educated and unified in Jardim. (298-57, 1999.1.1)

With a greater heart than that of God who nurtured His love for the universe at the time of creation, you need to bring your people together and invest everything you have into them without expecting anything in return. We are responsible to form a model family serving God. Its final destination is the highest ideal of a family, with love so beautiful that when the True Parents come to visit, they would never want to leave. In fact, all world leaders, including the royal family of True Parents' direct sons and daughters, would desire to live in the home of this family. (298-54, 1999.1.1)

Your families are the issue here. The question at hand is whether your families can be the nucleus of your tribes and achieve the foundation for unity. Until now you have lived as you pleased. No one knows this better than you. Have your minds and bodies really become as one? Study yourselves in relation to something like crystal, which is translucent from whichever direction you view it. You know better than anyone else that spouses should not clash. (298-63, 1999.1.1)

On my birthday, you are called to make an offering. This is known as the Total Living Offering. It is for the dissolution of and liberation from anguish. A liberation ceremony must be performed. God's anguish must be dissolved. God must be liberated. (298-59, 1999.1.1)

You need to offer whatever you have, even your assets. The queue formed by people waiting to make this offering should be the longest in history. The generations will be decided according to the order in which the offerings are made. That is, the first to make the offering will become the first generation, the second will be the second generation, and so on. Then how many generations would be formed from the people seated in front of me? If you are five hundred in number, then five hundred generations will come into place, so the difference between the first and the last will therefore be five hundred generations. Although you are all seated here together, whoever is the first to complete their task and make the offering will decide the difference between the first and all the other five hundred generations in the matter of registration. This will, in turn, divide you into different levels that are so far apart that it will be impossible for you to meet in the spirit world. Thus, you will vie with each other to be the first, and this competition will be the most dramatic in the entire world. Your ancestors will stamp their feet with impatience and shout, "Come on, you! Offer all your assets quickly and immediately." If you don't, they will trample on your assets and make them worthless. (298-60, 1999.1.1)

Offerings had to be made in the Old Testament and New Testament Ages, and even in the Completed Testament Age the parents need to be sacrificed as an offering. In order to attract God's

heart, we need to create unity and make the offering. By dedicating the offering of unity centered on the True Parents, we will be able to serve God as our Lord, and He will reign over us from our family to the tribes, peoples and nations on earth, and freely form relationships with all humanity of up and down, left and right and front and rear, thereby unifying this world under His dominion, and setting all of us on the same level instantaneously. (298-63, 1999.1.1)

Although we should bring about the day on which God's anguish can be dissolved, most people are still clinging on to their corrupted families bound for hell, protecting and defending them. It is preposterous. (298-60, 1999.1.1)

Hence, as soon as the workshops here are concluded, I will issue instructions to organize tribal education. When that time comes, the era of family-level education will have passed. Those who refuse to receive education in Jardim should be persuaded to go even if it means rebuking them strongly.

Thanks to the existence of family-level, tribal, national and world-level messiahs, Blessed Families are able to come to our facility in Jardim, receive the education as families and qualify to enter heaven. Those who come have their picture taken with me. Without a doubt, those who have their picture taken, will, without a doubt be included in the historic ranks of ancestors. If they do not take the photograph, problems will arise. (298-62, 1999.1.1)

I may soon give orders for the great exodus. Now the time has come for you to turn and go. All Blessed Families across the world need to go to South America as soon as possible and receive education there so as to qualify to enter heaven. I will take a picture with you as my clan. These are my instructions. It is not a matter for the American leaders. Don't listen to what they say, but take the lead in receiving education. If the father cannot go, the mother should go with their son, fulfill this condition, and put in order and pack what they will need for the exodus. They must follow this process necessary for registration. (300-309, 1999.4.11)

Is it a blessing or a curse to tell someone to resemble me? These words indicate that I will hand down all the blessings I have collected with no strings attached. As I have surmounted a high peak, you need to follow in my footsteps and do the same. Then the vertical line formed by our ascent would be one and the same. This is how indemnification should be carried out. (199-188, 1990.2.16)

Section 6. The Realm of the Fourth Adam Is the Era of Freedom and Autonomy

6.1. The era of the fourth Adam is that of natural restoration

The significance of the era of the fourth Adam is that we are entering the age of natural restoration. (304-160, 1999.10.10)

The era of restoration through indemnity has been concluded. Therefore, in the new era of the fourth Adam, through your effort the sphere of freedom and liberation will expand. This sphere will be victorious over the sphere of Adam on the individual level, and transcend the sphere of Adam on the level of the family, tribe and world. (298-224, 1999.1.8)

Now the time has come for your families to become ideal families who serve the True Parents and God directly, and represent the True Parents. You need to become messiahs who have risen above the Old and New Testament Ages and consequently ascended into the Completed Testament Age. You need to form families in the place of the first, second and third Adams, and serve God. This is how everyone will be able to enter heaven directly. Once this happens, we will pass into the era of the Blessing through the liberation of the sphere of the fourth Adam. In that new era, once it arrives, the second generation will be blessed by their parents. (298-224, 1999.1.8)

You cannot fathom how much the universe is rejoicing to see the era of liberation arrive in this physical world. You have no idea how much it is celebrating this day. Every day from the beginning of this year has been filled with festivity. From this day onwards, everything we do will be followed and assisted by heavenly fortune. Heretofore human beings have endeavored to follow heavenly fortune, but now, in contrast, we will be followed and helped by such fortune. We have arrived at a point where God and the spirit world can mobilize innumerable ancestors and good spirits to help this world. We are living in an era when we can achieve the realm of liberation and be completely transformed. (298-226, 1999.1.8)

The holy wine must be sprinkled over all nations. Isn't it true that one is revitalized when given the holy wine? The liberation of the fallen realm will be expedited. Even all creation needs to receive the holy wine. Then everything would return to the side of God. Therefore, the holy wine should be sprayed across the whole world from an airplane flying overhead, and if not the whole world then at least the major cities, accompanied with prayers. You need to understand how powerful the prayers of the True Parents can be. If they were to ask for a certain nation to be destroyed, it would perish. (298-232, 1999.1.8)

You must become true families, true parents, true spouses and true children. There will be no place in this world where the princes and princesses who have inherited the original lineage and have kept purity can be opposed by Satan. (298-242, 1999.1.8)

God is the First Creator, Adam is the second, and Adam's children are the third. After passing through the three stages of formation, growth and completion, we would enter the stage of settlement. When the fourth Adam

is established, everyone would inherit the position of Adam's children, and expand their families.

This is all about true love, and marching forward serving God, together with the True Parents. Such is the original principle of creation. The True Parents constitute the central root, stem and bud, and as the branches, you absolutely need them. If you are not connected in this way, you cannot receive sustenance from the roots and you cannot grow. Without nutrients flowing up through the trunk, the tree could not spread out wide. Without the buds it would be impossible for flowers to bloom. They must absolutely achieve oneness.

God is the First Creator, Adam is the second. Even Adam and Eve need the third creators, as it is through them that the festival of God's kingdom can be celebrated in this world. Therefore, the fact that we have entered and settled in the realm of the fourth Adam has great significance for the Unification Church. The world of transition is before us in which thousands of generations of our descendants to come, born out of the original Blessing, can respect the traditions of their parents, become one, and thereby enter heaven.

On the foundation of absolute faith, love and obedience, you need to become families that are absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging in attending God. Such families will be in the eternal tribe, people, nation, and world, establish God's kingdom on earth, and create a tradition that would connect them directly to His kingdom in heaven. Like Adam in the Garden of Eden, everyone on earth would serve God and speak with Him as their Father. It would be the same for fathers, sons, and grandsons. Henceforth, you will all become ancestors. (295-255, 1998.9.8)

6.2. The era of praying in one's own name

After the proclamation of *Gu Gu Jeol* (9.9. Day) on September 9, 1999, then as of September 14 at quarter past seven in the morning, we have entered the era in which we will pray in our own names instead of in the name of True Parents as we have been doing until now. In this era of cosmic unity and liberation, we are entering the era of freedom and autonomy in the domain of the fourth Adam. (304-154, 1999.10.10)

6.3. The era of creating oneself in the status of the second creator

By inheriting the tradition through becoming one with True Parents, your family becomes the foundation that can govern all nations with the subject tradition and acquires the attributes of a subject partner. As such, your family will enter the realm of the royal family in God's Kingdom. This pattern forms the basis upon which all nations can be governed with the tradition of the subject partner. The place you would thus enter is heaven, a place not just anyone can enter. Three generations must make the resolution

to walk that path. Including grandparents, parents, husband and wife, and children, the number of stages would be four. Seen vertically, there would be three generations. (228-295, 1992.7.5)

What would you need to do to achieve individual perfection? You can claim the status of the second creator when you perfect creativity. You would not be able to stand before God, the eternal Subject, as His eternal object partner if you were just standing alone as one of His individual creations. Do you understand? Hence, this is absolutely indispensable if you want to assume the role of a creator. Without fulfilling this condition, people cannot fulfill God's desire for them to grow to equal status with the Absolute Being, God. For this reason, God had no alternative but to create such a principle. (137-266, 1986.1.3)

Since God's love is absolute, and also unique, unchanging, and eternal, it is possible to live together forever with Him, participating in and inheriting His absolute love. Thus, we create our characters to resemble Him. As we are His objects of love, if His absolute love were ours, naturally we would be His absolute object partners. In order to expand this internal standard in the world created to have God's characteristics, we too must be creators. (303-260, 1999.9.9)

We need to create our environment. With leadership , we need to recreate our object partners. In creating His partner of love, God gives of Himself completely, over and over again; therefore, in the act of re-creation we should also be willing to give everything, even at the risk of our lives. Once we are ready to do so, object partners will automatically come into being. Isn't there a principle that the perfect plus automatically engenders the perfect minus? When a perfect plus is formed in the nature, the minus naturally comes into existence. (221-25, 1991.10.20)

If you unite with the righteousness of the original love, you can then embody God's original characteristics, be His representative, and God's full object partner. When God created His object partners with His original nature, He also endowed them with creativity – that is, absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal creativity. He placed in that partner an absolute creativity based on love. In order to create, one needs the attributes of a subject partner. God thus intends His object partner to resemble Him. (303-260, 1999.9.9)

Between you and me, who is superior? In what respect? Why would one be superior to another when all of us are of the same mind? The only difference between us is to what extent we put into action what our mind tells us to do; otherwise we are no different at all. Our minds are all the same. The basis of the person and of the mind

is the same; the only difference lies in the degree to which we follow the instructions of our minds, how much we convert our thoughts into action, and how much we cultivate our environment. (222-303, 1991.11.6)

Section 7. The Royal Family of Love

7.1. Heaven is open to those with the qualities of the royal family

Those who have become princes and princesses of God's love, who have become members of the royal family loved by the King and Queen, can enter heaven. Christianity preaches that those who merely believe in Jesus will go to heaven. They will learn the true state of affairs when they pass away. Once they enter the next world they will come to know whether my words were true or not. What is being claimed now is incomplete. All religious teachings up until the present have fallen short. (237-172, 1992.11.16)

The people who can enter heaven will perfect themselves as the princes and princesses of God's love. They will form families and have children in order to experience all dimensions of love as a royal family, and will ultimately bring this along with them to heaven. They can be called citizens of God's kingdom. Do Christians think they can go to heaven merely by believing in Jesus? Belief alone isn't enough. Did Jesus have a spouse? In every era a reciprocal ideal must come into existence. However, Jesus did not have his object partner. That is why he went to paradise, to wait for the time when he could descend again. The established churches have no inkling of this reality. (236-261, 1992.11.8)

Those who will enter heaven must first pass through the gates as God's princes and princesses, as the beloved children of God's lineage and the royal descendants of His kingdom. Only the royal descendants and members of this royal family can enter heaven. Lineal and collateral descendants, siblings of exemplary love between siblings, will form exemplary tribes and nations on earth. They will bring those qualities and the dignity of a heavenly royal family when they begin life in heaven. (236-204, 1992.11.8)

In a family, the grandfather represents right of kingship dispatched from heaven and should therefore be served like God. The father and mother are the king and queen representing all families in the world. Wouldn't you like your parents to be like a king and queen? That tradition was lost, so we need to re-establish the way of the princes, princesses and the royal family of the heavenly world, and return to our point of origin. Everything that resulted from the Fall, such as free sex and other corrupted things, must be transformed through absolute love and return to the point of origin in order to inherit the Principle way. Then everyone – wheth-

er as an individual, a family, a tribe, a people, a nation or the world – can be re-created. Only then can this world be harmonized. (233-45, 1992.7.20)

God's kingdom in heaven and on earth must be unified through love. The sphere of the royal family of heaven will become the center of everything, both in the spiritual and physical worlds. Thus, unity comes about wherever members of that family may be. My theme here is the unity of God's kingdom on earth and in heaven through love. For the first time, everyone can become united through love centering on the royal family. All nations in the world will be unified, as will all tribes in heaven. (232-326, 1992.7.10)

Didn't hell come into existence after the Fall? In contrast, heaven is the world of love which everyone in both the spiritual and physical worlds can enter after passing through the True Parents' gates of love. Had Adam and Eve not fallen, but instead entered heaven through establishing true parental love, they would have become the model for all subsequent families in the world. Heaven will be opened when the first exemplary family can enter.

All the families that have linked themselves to the love of this royal family of heaven and inheriting their tradition will be like branches pointing north, south, east and west as they grow from that central trunk. Thus, they can enter heaven by the same principle that is the basis of a unified world. You need to understand this clearly. (231-76, 1992.5.31)

The era of registration of the royal family has now arrived. Before one can register, the change of lineage must take place. We need to return to God all aspects of ownership that were lost to Satan's side through Adam and Eve and through Satan's love that was expressed in a pseudo-Principle form. (229-253, 1992.4.12)

Adam and Eve were to be the King's counterparts in love and the crown prince and princess of Heaven's royal family. It should be clear that Adam and Eve were the firstborn son and daughter of God, the Great King of the entire universe. (229-57, 1992.4.9)

You should nurture your families to be fit for the Kingdom of Heaven. Mothers need to keep this in mind and begin to teach this tradition while breastfeeding their babies. Implant the tradition within them by murmuring, "You need to become members of the royal family of God's kingdom. We love you on God's behalf. On the foundation of love shared by your parents, you can become a better couple than us. This is your parents' wish." (236-159, 1992.11.4)

This world has become the devil's haunt, stained with dirty love, the seeds for which were sown by the false parents. Its people, covered from head to toe with the devil's filth, need to be cleaned up and educated to become eligible to belong to the royal family in God's original kingdom. Does this sound like easy work? God has labored for six thousand biblical years to do this – actually bil-

lions of years – but still has not achieved the perfection of Adam and Eve. (227-279, 1992.2.11)

You all need to return to your hometown. What place would this hometown be? It would be your home representing the palace of God's kingdom. Does this thought make you feel good or bad? No matter how shabby your house is, you will think, "The royal family of God's Kingdom has left their palace yearning for mountains and streams, and has made their abode here, where the water is cool and the landscape beautiful." A cup of water offered by this family would be more precious than mineral water because love would be contained in that cup of water. You should understand that the extract of true love of infinite value is contained in that water. You would never fall sick in a thousand years if you ate rice cooked with that water. Wouldn't you like to eat such rice together with your husband? Wouldn't your parents-in-law love to have it? Every time you returned home, you would think to yourselves, "This is a home that represents the royal family of God's kingdom, which have come here longing for a house in a quiet place." (222-101, 1991.10.28)

Grandparents and parents are meant to bequeath the right of kingship to their royal descendants. You should have led lives befitting royal descendants because this is a time when you would inherit that as if you were the firstborn. Yet you have not done so. Since you are now aware of this, starting from this moment you should live for the sake of your family. When you have achieved unity in love with your grandparents and parents, then God in His kingdom will come down to dwell with you. Then you will be able to live forever in the united love of the eternal God. That family in which He dwells will automatically live for eternity. Those immortal families will form the principal palace of His kingdom. You should be aware of the fact that even in the world today, the movement that connects to His kingdom is now being mobilized in Korea and involves 160 nations. You should know that I am holding high the representative banner of heart in that movement. (222-101, 1991.10.28)

You should become someone whose body and mind can be in complete concert with God's life centering on His love. Whoever on earth may tempt you; you need to follow your path and not be led astray or have to hide. With confidence in yourself you must surmount any obstacles that come your way and become citizens of heaven who are rightfully members of the royal family in the palace of God's kingdom. If you cannot do this, you will fall into Satan's hands. (222-89, 1991.10.28)

Now you need to become members of the royal family of true love. If Adam becomes the child of the direct line of the royal family, his brothers and sisters, as collateral children, would become his people. When entering heaven you need to have within you the loving dignity

and honor of the princes and princesses of God's kingdom. Heaven, the original homeland, is a place you need to enter with dignity after having walked the course of life with honorable steps. (220-219, 1991.10.19)

The citizens of heaven, the subjects of heaven's nation and tribes, are branches of the royal family. In order to be reinstated to your original positions, you need to learn from the experience of the heart of the royal family based on the true love of heaven. Without that, you will not be able to enter heaven. God has been anguished that these things have not come to pass. Not having His prince and princess to love has caused Him great pain. Without His princes and princess He was also unable to have His grandchildren as royal heirs.

In the process of growing up, Adam and Eve failed to love from the position that they could maintain the pure lineage of the King as His prince and princess. They fell into a position midway between God and Satan while still in the realm of God's indirect dominion, based on accomplishments through the Principle. Consequently, they had no foundation in God's love to directly consult God about the development of original history based on the great undertaking of the creation of heaven and earth. (220-47, 1991.10.14)

You may have had your share of troubles up to this point in your lives, but I still have to ask why you haven't begun the work on restoring your tribes into the royal family. If I were to undertake this task I would finish in six months. When you call out "Mother!" with a full heart, that word connects to the history of a thousand years. In the cry, "Elder brother!" would be love of a thousand years. Through the call, "Elder sister!" you would feel the heart of God in a thousand years of history. Where can that heart be found since the time of creation? When you can step forward and speak of God with the subject nature of that heart, the great work of re-creation will take place. (220-14, 1991.10.13)

Since the family was lost, no families of heaven could be formed, and so God's people could not be formed. Could God's kingdom come into existence or not? God, who was supposed to establish that kingdom, lost everything through the Fall. Heaven is vacant. It is a place that can only be entered by those with the authority and dignity of the royal family of true love, who possess the qualities of God's true representatives and God's object partners. They have nothing to be ashamed of as they stand as the centers of the love of heaven and earth. If this is true, then it is serious for the members of the established churches. (219-33, 1991.8.25)

Love's eternal nature makes it the most precious of all. In receiving your husband, did you feel like a queen receiving her king, and that you were entering the place of love revered by the whole world? With the heart of a queen receiving her king? You must give birth

to your children with that perception of their value. From the day of each child's conception, you should feel that you are carrying a prince or princess in your womb. When delivering your baby, think that you are giving birth to a member of the royal family of hope, dawning like the sun, an heir who will inherit the whole universe. Have you ever thought of such things? (218-358, 1991.8.22)

Had the Fall not occurred, the first-born would have inherited the right of kingship, right of the parent and right of the eldest son of heaven and earth, becoming the palace of God's kingdom. Furthermore, all siblings would have inherited horizontally the traditions of the direct lineage, and the people who lived according to heavenly tradition would have entered heaven. No one can deny that this kingdom is entered by the qualified families and tribes who lived the traditions of the royal family of true love. Given that those who have lived as though they were in the living environment of a royal family, whether it be as the leaves or the branches, will enter heaven, we can conclude that all families must keep the traditions of the royal family of love. (218-222, 1991.7.29)

What is happening in America nowadays? Originally, grandparents, parents and children could not separate. These three generations should not be apart. They need to be united in order to establish the four-position foundation. Otherwise, the foundation for the ideal cannot be made. You understand this clearly, don't you? Thus, God is creating the horizontal foundation of His love through human beings. If the True Parents had not appeared on earth, God could never have children in the spirit world. For the first time, the children of the original nature will be born through us. Through us, God's royal family will come into being. You should be proud of yourselves on that account. It is up to us to connect all nations to the original Eden. (218-199, 1991.7.28)

What is the mainstream of this changing world? It is made of the people who are building families of true love that come from the parent-child relationship under God's lineage; they stand as the representatives of all of heaven and earth based on His love and their lives affect their environment, even to the very ends of the earth. Living lives of vibrant faith, they can surely become members of the royal family of His Kingdom. (194-220, 1989.10.22)

The people I seek are the members of the royal family of God's kingdom of love. Those seeds with the potential to become such people should be gathered in preparation for the winter of freezing north winds and snow. Only those seeds that can maintain creativity within themselves and bring fresh life when the warm spring sunshine breaks forth and a warm breeze blows from the south, and respond to that sunlight, may sprout forth as the buds of new life. (180-62, 1988.8.20)

What should we achieve during our lifetime? We should leave behind a legacy of love felt by all who visit our family tomb. That is my conclusion: we should leave behind a tomb of love! I would want nothing else in this moment if I could live surrounded by such monuments to love. Even though one may weary of living amid tombs, when surrounded by love, one would want for nothing more. Let us make such legacies of love whilst we are yet alive! If we achieve this, we will have been successful in life. When you pass away after leading such a life, God will come out with His children to welcome and bless you. When that time comes, if your fingers are bare, the diamond rings of His kingdom will be placed on them, and if you are shabbily dressed, you will be clothed with raiment worn by the royal family of His kingdom. (97-167, 1978.3.12)

7.2. Become a person of love

There is a great difference between God's joy before the Creation, and the great stimulation of love He felt when harmonizing with His partners in love thereafter. Even if He were to dance and dance for a thousand or tens of thousands of years, that joy would not come to an end. But could God dance alone? Would He want to sing alone? We were born because of love and we live to become the objects of the Lord of love who will unite the universe and have dominion over it. Then we too would be able to be lords of love. Seen in light of God's intense hopes at the time of Creation, God's beloved object partners are superior to Him, are to stand in a position above Him.

Consequently, when we call out, "Heavenly Father" He comes to us, and when we tell Him, "Come on," He follows in our wake and never complains. Even when He is made to follow us for thousands of miles, He will gladly continue to walk behind us. Words cannot express the joy felt by parents following their children. When heaven and earth harmonize with and welcome their children even more than themselves, the parents will be so pleased that even their cells will burst forth in peals of laughter. (215-109, 1991.2.6)

Everything and everyone can become a friend through true love. Even rocks can speak in a certain way; they will talk about how they came into existence at the time of creation, their mode of life, and much else. Of course God is aware of all this. No matter how majestic and unyielding mountains may seem, they will want to receive love from God. If He were to cast His eyes upon a mountain and ask, "How did you come to be so big?" would He reprimand the mountain if it replied, "I became so big to give joy to You"? Each and every being in the world is affected by love; all of them have become objects of love. (183-49, 1988.10.29)

How can we perceive the beauty of nature? "Though you look like this, from my viewpoint, you are offsetting what would otherwise be lopsided in front of the universe and world creat-

ed under the banner of love. In creating harmony, a stimulating sound needs to be added, and that is why high and low pitches exist in the universe; you too exist in the communal realm of ideal reality to play a part similar to such musical notes!" When you are able to think like this, your viewpoint will be similar to God's.

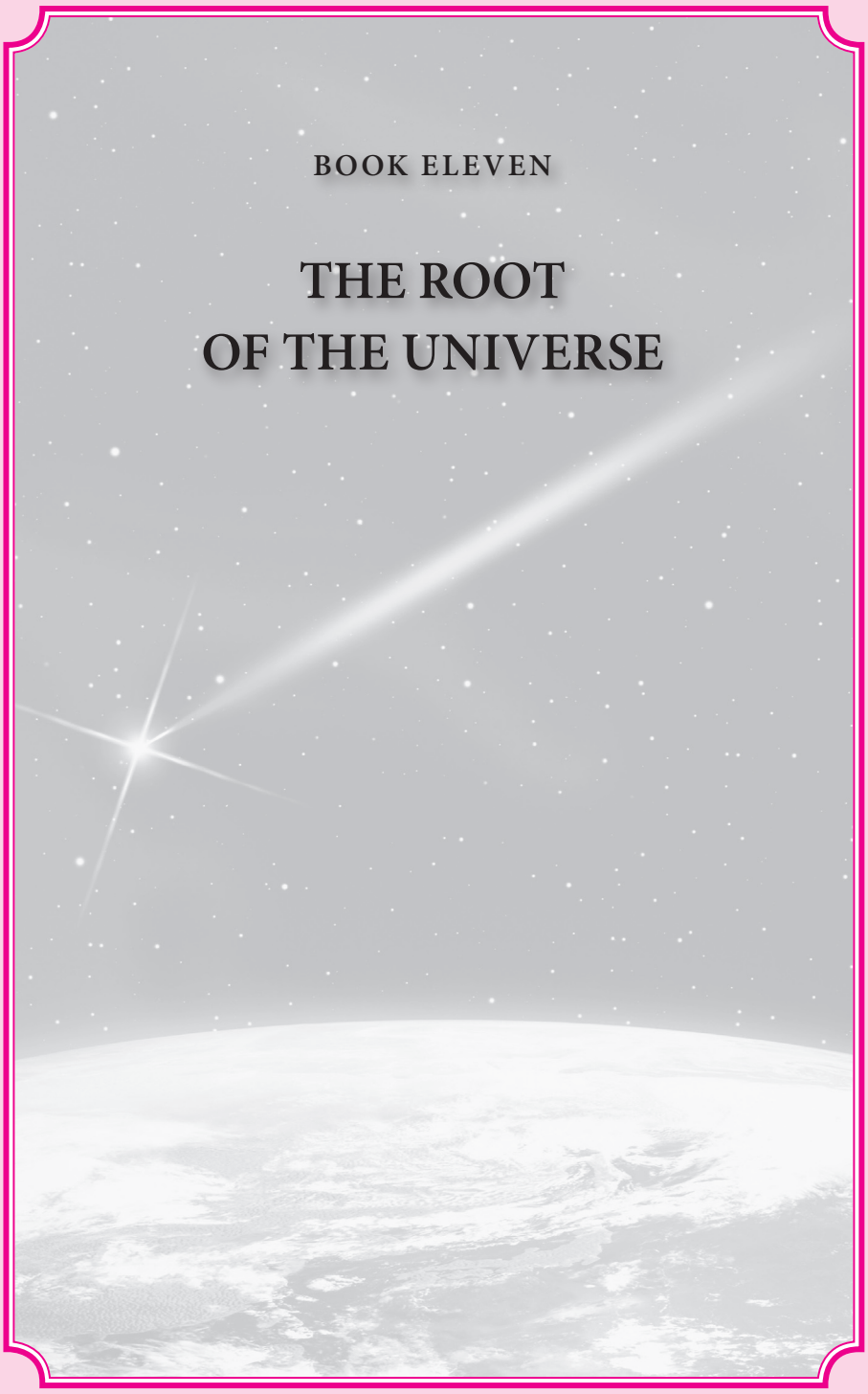
Wherever love may be, it is always in pursuit of newness. What began before eternity and what continues to exist after eternity are similar. Thus, we can experience God's feelings, since love has the power to let us feel God's original heart as He created the universe. In this manner the creation can also speak and feel. (182-125, 1988.10.16)

An elastic band makes a noise like "ping…ping…ping" as it is stretched, and then returns to its original length when released. God understands that true love is similar to this elastic band. He will never want to cut it off. When you have finally reached perfection, He will tell you, "I will follow you forever with true love that is like an elastic band. Even if you are very powerful, you will not be able to cut it off. The least you can do is to protect it, for it is precious!"

God Himself is that elastic band of true love. Obey Him, submit to Him completely, respect Him absolutely and ask Him what He needs. He will reply, "I don't need money; within me are mountains and oceans filled with money." If He needed money, then through His creative power He would be able to turn this whole world into diamond and gold mines. He created everything. Nothing would be impossible for Him. (217-255, 1991.6.2)

You need to understand that there is no one on earth who would not be devoted to parents who are willing to suffer and carry the cross for their children forever, and give such parental love that the world and even God Himself would exclaim, "You are much better than I!"? Wouldn't you want to be in such a position? If you live with a heart of gratitude for the life you are leading at present, even after giving everything you have over many years, yet always keeping His thoughts in your mind, then God Himself will praise you.

If children live with such an attitude toward their parents, husbands toward their wives, wives toward their husbands, the family toward the nation, and the nation toward the world, how splendid that world will be! When that happens, God will not want to stay in the spirit world. He will quickly descend to the center of the human world and dwell here, recommencing the work of creation so that everyone can live abundantly. (215-243, 1991.2.20)



BOOK ELEVEN

THE ROOT OF THE UNIVERSE

Contents

Chapter 1.The Fundamental Order of the Universe

Section 1. The Manifestation of God's Dual Characteristics 1629
1.1. God is the Original Being having unified dual characteristics 1629
1.1.1. God is the Original Being of unified love 1629
1.2. The universe was created in the image of dual characteristics 1633
1.3. God's motive in creating the universe 1637
Section 2. Subject and Object Partners Comprise the Universe 1642
2.1. The principle of the pair system governs the existence of the universe 1642
2.2. Subject and object partners in a love relationship 1647
Section 3. Love Is the Root of the Universe 1653
3.1. The center of the universe is love 1653
3.2. Humankind is the center of love in the created universe 1659
3.2.1. Human beings are the objects of God's love 1659
3.2.2. The process of human maturity is reflected in God's own development 1660
3.2.3. Humankind is the center of all created beings 1663
3.3. The world of creation is a museum of love for humankind 1668
3.3.1. God's will in creating the universe 1668
3.3.2. The world of creation is the textbook of love for humankind 1669
Section 4. Evolution or Creation? 1675
4.1. The fundamental error of the theory of evolution 1675
4.1.1. Strict distinction of species and absolute rejection of intervention 1675
4.1.2. Laws of the action of energy and the fabrications of evolutionary theory 1683
4.1.3. Theory of evolution refuted by the logic of love 1690
4.2. The Theory of Evolution is an outdated idea 1694

Chapter 2. The Creation of Humankind and the Perfection of the Ideal of Love

Section 1. The Absolute Value of Love 1699
1.1. Man and woman 1699
1.2. The sexual organs perfect man and woman 1703
1.3. The sexual organs: the beginning and the end in solving fundamental problems 1707
Section 2. The Sexual Organs Are the Three Great Original Palaces, and the Most Holy Place 1711
2.1. The original palace of love, life and lineage 1711
2.2. The organs with which to complete God's purpose of creation 1718
2.3. The sexual organs are the most holy place, where God dwells 1722
Section 3. The Oneness of God and Humankind, and the Perfection of the Ideal of Love 1725
3.1. The point of settlement of love where God and humankind meet 1725

3.2. Fundamental principle of the ideal oneness of God and humankind in love 1729
3.2.1. Explaining the oneness of God and humankind 1729
3.2.2. The base for the oneness of God and humankind 1733
3.2.3. The root of true lineage: God 1738
3.3. Why marriage is important 1741
3.3.1. The purpose of marriage is to resemble God 1741
3.3.2. Conjugal love and absoluteness 1745
Section 4. The Sexual Organs Are the Greatest Mystery and Interest 1749
4.1. The sexual organs were created with utmost diligence 1749
4.2. The owners of the sexual organs were interchanged 1750
4.3. True love can digest even the unclean 1755
4.4. Vertical and horizontal to be balanced by the sexual organs 1757
4.5. Love is not known through being taught 1761
Section 5. The Sexual Organs Are the Crossroads to Heaven or Hell 1763

Chapter 3. The Human Fall and Restoration

Section 1. The Internal Significance of the Fall 1768
1.1. The Fall was a misuse of love 1768
1.2. The fruit of good and evil is Eve's sexual organ 1773
1.3. The devil Satan fell through fornication 1777
1.4. Humankind inherited Satan's lineage through the Fall 1782
1.5. The meaning of the serpent's temptation 1785
Section 2. The Results of the Fall 1787
2.1. Fallen human beings and the state of the fallen world 1787
2.1.1. Youth problems and free sex 1787
2.1.2. Corruption of sexual morality 1790
2.1.3. Homosexuality 1792
2.2. Reining in the errant culture of free sex 1795
2.2.1. In the Last Days the order of love is corrupted 1795
2.2.2. Absolute purity: do not defile the lineage 1798
2.3. True Parents and fundamental restoration 1802
2.3.1. To solve the fundamental problem, the origin of the Fall must be understood 1802
2.3.2. Why True Parents are needed 1805
2.3.3. Lineage is restored through the Blessing 1807
2.3.4. Final goal: realizing the ideal of the true family 1810

CHAPTER ONE

The Fundamental Order of the Universe

Section 1. The Manifestation of God's Dual Characteristics

1.1. God is the Original Being having unified dual characteristics

1.1.1. God is the Original Being of unified love

If we observe the universe, it shows us that everything exists through a reciprocal relationship formed between the dual characteristics of positivity and negativity. This principle applies in every case, beginning at the level of the minerals. A molecule is formed through the fusion of positive and negative ions. In the case of plants, subsistence and reproduction depend on the union of their male and female counterparts, stamen and pistil. These dual characteristics are more pronounced in the case of animals. All animals, including fish, birds and mammals exist in male and female form. Finally, we human beings, God's greatest creation, are divided into men and women. The first man, Adam, and the first woman, Eve, are the progenitors of the human race. What is the purpose of existence of the dual characteristics of male and female? Why did God create in such a manner? (201-204, 1990.4.9)

What did God want to do by creating man and woman? He wanted to see them. Is God feminine or masculine? He is both feminine and masculine. If God were only masculine, He would only look at the woman, and Adam would have to live in the shade. It follows that the two natures of both sexes coexist within Him, so that He may find joy in looking at both woman and man. We thus conclude that God is a being in the vertical position, within whom the harmonized dual characteristics that make Him feel love towards both man and woman exist. Such is God. He needs both man and woman, and wherever He goes He is always in the position of the subject partner, that is, having subject-partner status. Thus, God combines a central subject-like masculine character, and an objective horizontal feminine character within Himself. (188-92, 1989.2.19)

Is there one God or two? There is only one God. Since there is only one of Him, how then could He enter two people at once? Would He go into each of them alternately, into the man and then out and into the woman, and so on? Furthermore, considering that there are so many people in the world, how would He enter and exit all of them? This pos-

es a problem. The Unification Church's Divine Principle teaches that God is a being having unified dual characteristics. This is the principle. God is a being who is the harmonious union of dual characteristics. This is a truly wonderful conclusion. (41-290, 1971.2.17)

God is the Subject with dual characteristics who stands in the masculine position. Then who is He like? He is like us, you and me. He is the same as we are. Accordingly, the position of subject partner presupposes that of an object partner. It contains such a meaning. It arose out of its need for that reciprocal partner. (124-83, 1983.1.30)

In a lecture on the Principle of Creation, it is simply stated, "God is the subject who incorporates dual characteristics and a harmonious union of masculinity and femininity." When we say He is the harmonious subject, what does that mean? What pleasure would He derive from having a harmonious union of masculinity and femininity in the subject position? Centering on what, should God be harmonious? God is a harmonious being centered on love. (193-153, 1989.10.3)

What does God want? What did He want to do through the creation and perfection of the ideal of creation? He wanted to fulfill love. What would God want for Himself? In terms of the Principle, He is a being with harmonized dual characteristics. He is a subject being. In summary, He is a masculine subject being. (149-9, 1986.11.1)

What is the source of unity? What would allow God, alone as He is, to stand in the joyful position of unity? In terms of the Principle, God is the being with harmonized dual characteristics in the masculine position. We need to discern what this position signifies. The one who stands in the masculine position is the subject partner and the plus, but the plus cannot be without a minus. Considering this view, why would He be in the plus position? It would be because of love. Even the Absolute God desires to obey true love absolutely. If love is not based on the mind to submit and become one absolutely, there can be no unity, harmony, or concord. Instead, all would disperse without such a source. (195-20, 1989.11.1)

Given that human beings were created by God, what should they do? He created the object partners of His love for the purpose of His joy. Through what would He feel joy? It would be through love. Even God, the Absolute Being, requires love. Isn't that so? Existing as the Subject, yet even with His dual characteristics, He inevitably needs an object partner of His love, which is why He created everything in the universe. (223-300, 1991.11.17)

Man and woman are not enough to fulfill love. They are just two beings. Just connecting them is not enough to fulfill love. It is the love from the central position that brings them together and

moves them. Then, if we were to trace back this coming together in love of man and woman to its beginning, we would clearly see that it stems from God's dual characteristics. The union of masculinity and femininity that exists within God was developed and manifested in the reciprocal relationships of creation. Thus, God desires that the object partner of His love be better than Him. (210-317, 1990.12.27)

Let me draw the conclusion in precise terms: God is the Subject Being who possesses harmonized dual characteristics. When viewed from the right side He can appear as a man, and from the left side, a woman. Isn't that what dual characteristics signify? Since He is like that from the side, then from above He can appear as a man and from below a woman. Only then will both woman and man be satisfied and say, "Alright!" (139-56, 1986.1.26)

Unless a religious person comes forward with a logic that offers a clear scientific explanation of cause, process, and result, the religious world cannot be saved. The Divine Principle of the Unification Church has such logic as described above. The conclusion suggested by that fits everything: that God exists with dual characteristics, that He is the Subject partner and the universe is His object partner, and that therefore He is the Subject partner of love and humankind was created as the object partner of His love. This fundamental relationship continued through the power of love which bound it to the eternal world, transcending history. This action of love continued through thousands of years, and whereas other forms of power became weaker as time passed, this power of love remained strong. (219-178, 1991.8.29)

Even God makes unity based on love. The Unification Church also has this concept, and that is how it can unify the world. This, however, is not the case with Christianity. Christianity teaches that God is an absolute and omnipotent God. He can do anything. This is wrong. Although God can do anything, according to the original principle, love is supposed to be fulfilled by two beings. Thus, it is intended for dual characteristics to be united, and love is possible only when that condition is fulfilled. (224-155, 1991.11.24)

As God is a being with harmonized dual characteristics, what would be the center of this harmonious being of duality? It would be love. Even God has based His very existence on true love. (193-303, 1989.10.8)

What is God like? As expounded in Divine Principle, He is the Subject being with dual characteristics that are harmoniously unified. The essence of that Subject being is love, an absolute love. (136-37, 1985.12.20)

How does the Divine Principle depict God? He is the Subject with dual characteristics in a union of harmony as well as

the Subject of love. The word love must be added to the description without fail. (223-160, 1991.11.10)

For God to become the harmonized being whose dual characteristics are separately represented in the form of Adam and Eve, as created by Him, around what should the harmonized being be centered? This being should be centered on love, and in the masculine position of the Subject in relation to all creation. (194-64, 1989.10.15)

Why did God create human beings? We first need to answer the fundamental question: "Why was I born?" God is the Subject of love. Doesn't the Divine Principle refer to Him as a being with a harmonious union of dual characteristics? However, it has not been disclosed until now that He is also a unified being based on love, maintaining a state of harmony. Therefore, it should be added to His description that He is the being of unity based on love. (223-268, 1991.11.12)

Where is the origin of human love and life? Doesn't it lie within God? He is the Subject Being with harmonized dual characteristics and at the same time is the source of love. It should be added in the Divine Principle that God is the source of true love. It should be clear that nobody but myself can amend the Divine Principle. (224-228, 1991.11.24)

The starting point is the question of whether God exists or not. If He does exist, what relationship does He have with humankind? For Him to be able to relate with human beings, He must be a personal god. We have fully awakened to that fact. As a personal god, He must be like us. Just as human beings have an internal nature and an external form as part of their characteristics, God, who created them, must possess those same characteristics for the sake of their common purpose. The concept of dual characteristics arises from this. (167-243, 1987.7.21)

If God is a personal god, who would He be like? He is the combined form of Adam and Eve. God is the Subject of dual characteristics. He is not a messy combination of male and female. While being the combined form, He nevertheless occupies the position of the subject partner. The coming together in union of man and woman as object partners of their invisible subject partner God is the way for Adam and Eve as human beings to perfect His ideal of creation. (166-208, 1987.6.7)

Oriental philosophy does not have the concept of the personal God. It is ignorant of His existence. They talk of yin and yang, but such vague terms cannot sufficiently describe the personal Origin. Everything must be understood clearly from the roots. It should be the root that illustrates the characteristics of both man and woman which can explain how human beings turned out as they are today. From this perspective, the logic of dual characteristics as taught in the Unification Church is truly

a great one. (145-196, 1986.5.4)

1.2. The universe was created in the image of dual characteristics

Based on our understanding of God as the origin of the universe, the image of a being with the concept of subject and object partners arises. Hence, we arrive at the conclusion that the dual characteristics referred to in the Divine Principle of the Unification Church are truly great words. At the place where subject partner and object partner begin to interact with each other, existence is generated and maintained. Since the universe was created based on this origin, everything in it exists in duality and interacts through giving and receiving. (106-296, 1980.1.13)

The created world resembles God's characteristics. We understand that all created things exist as the divided forms of the dual characteristics, and that they are connected to their counterparts in the relationship of subject partner and object partner as well as the reciprocal relationships of up and down, front and rear, and left and right. What would be the purpose underlying such relationships in the environmental system? The world of creation moves with love as its purpose. (106-57, 1979.12.9)

Where do subject partner and object partner come from? There must be a basis for their existence. In the Unification we call this basis "dual characteristics." Subject partner and object partner were not created by human beings themselves; therefore, there must be another source for this. This origin is that of dual characteristics, incorporating original internal nature and original external form. (33-36, 1970.8.2)

Energy cannot be generated without interaction between subject partner and object partner. Energy cannot generate itself; it requires subject and object elements. As an object partner, when you feel good or bad, there is always a subject partner you relate to in experiencing such emotions; hence, the term "dual characteristics" in the Divine Principle as taught in the Unification Church. (21-344, 1969.1.1)

According to Divine Principle, God is the Subject with harmonized dual characteristics. Based on what is His position as the Subject established? It is established through a relationship of love, and therefore a horizontal foundation is necessary. His desire to have a stimulating foundation in many directions led to the expansion and development of the created world. (193-217, 1989.10.4)

All seeds are made up of two halves enclosed in one outer layer. Beans, too, are divided into two halves. Since God is the origin of the universe, unless they resemble Him in form, they cannot be original seeds. (53-232, 1972.2.28)

The seed of life is always made up of two halves. This is a principle of heaven and earth. God exists as one being,

one personality, with dual characteristics, which are symbolized by the seed. Within the seed is a germ, parts of which will form the roots, the bud, and so on. In other words, within it is everything required for it to develop its existence; it is made so that, even if left to itself, it can grow into a perfected substantial form. (262-147, 1994.7.23)

Since God has dual characteristics, we human beings also have them. All forms of creation also possess dual characteristics of plus and minus. When God, humankind and all creation are brought together and connected, the number seven is attained. There are three vertical stages, and in spreading out horizontally, the four-position foundation is formed. When the numbers three and four come together in harmonious union they form the number seven. The number seven is the number of completion in the purpose of creation. (26-187, 1969.10.25)

Everything in the universe is made up of plus and minus. If we look at a molecule it shows us this. It is made up of positive and negative ions. Everything exists in reciprocal relationships. The atom contains protons and electrons. That shows the basis for the formation of the universe. In plants there is stamen and pistil; for animals, male and female, and for human beings, men and women. Everything exists reciprocally. As such, they must be brought into order within one system. Since God is the Subject, they must be brought under His control. If a unified reciprocal realm brought about by His will for creation is not established, then He cannot derive any joy from the creation. (247-183, 1993.5.9)

The Divine Principle explanation set forth by the Unification Church, that God is the Subject who has harmonized dual characteristics, runs along the same lines as the undeniable truth drawn from results of scientific analysis. When subject and object partners are completely united, God's power will be with them eternally. Power cannot exist where there is no subject or object. Then how does God exist? He can exist eternally because within Him is the power that comes from a perpetual giving and receiving relationship between subject and object partners. (39-166, 1971.1.10)

The Principle refers to dual characteristics. Why are they necessary? Without them there can be no harmony within the creation. By virtue of their existence, they can give and receive from one another; one is like the bones and the other the flesh. By reciprocating with each other they can give rise to a new form. Since God has the original dual characteristics, His objective world must be brought into existence. In this way, dual characteristics are essential in achieving the exquisite beauty of creation. (27-340, 1970.1.1)

According to the Principle, it is universal prime energy that connects everything together. God's dual characteristics are present in all things based on

universal prime energy. This core principle is always the same. (293-11, 1998.5.1)

A feminine nature is found latent in man, and since a masculine nature is found latent in woman, there is room within her for him to live in the spirit world. As God possesses dual characteristics, He can dwell in woman as well as man. Similarly, despite their respective predominant features, husbands and wives can dwell in each other's hearts by virtue of the dual characteristics latent in them. They are one and inseparable. (256-58, 1994.3.12)

Adam is the ancestor of all males and Eve the ancestress of all females. In other words, they are the seeds of man and woman. They are two halves. Everything is made up of two halves enclosed in a single shell, symbolizing God and the universe. Within the unified God are dual characteristics, and within them the embryo, seed and nucleus. (253-249, 1994.1.30)

Since God is the incorporeal Subject, it is logical to conclude that He unquestionably needs the realm of substance – absolute corporeal beings in substance. He has dual characteristics and consequently the act of creation enabled Him to express His incorporeal internal nature in a corporeal external form. When we consider the created universe from this perspective, we can see that even the mineral kingdom is functioning through the relationship between subject and object partners. In the case of the molecule, the positive and negative ions manifest this subject-object relationship, and similarly, protons and electrons in the case of the atom. (228-140, 1992.3.27)

The fact that God possesses both masculinity and femininity makes Him a being of dual characteristics. He brought together all the male attributes within Himself to create man, and all the female attributes to create woman. In this way, the subject and object figures were automatically separated. When these have give and take with each other, they come together in union to engage in a process – namely origin-division-union action, as stated in the Divine Principle, which will one day become a major issue in the fields of philosophy and religion. (41-290, 1971.2.17)

God created humankind in order to perfect His love and fulfill His will centered on love. (293-158, 1998.5. 25)

He created human beings to become His children, resembling Him in every respect and naturally manifesting everything within Him. Thus, the dual characteristics spoken of in the Unification Church are amazing contents hitherto unheard of in this world. What is meant by the "Subject with harmoniously unified dual characteristics"? It comprises all the principles of heaven and earth. (144-236, 1986.4.25)

Even love cannot arise in isolation. It operates to raise two people to a high-

er position through their harmonious union. This is the power of love. Everything in the universe is made to harmonize with the ideal of love because love cannot operate without the bridge of couples, without pairs. You must know the fact that God had to create everything in pairs in order to actualize His ideal of love, hence the term "dual characteristics." (177-271, 1988.5.20)

When everything in the world is taken into consideration in order to find the one fundamental principle governing the whole, it can be seen that everything is engaged in relationships of subject and object which give rise to existence and development. Simply put, existence and action are brought about by subject and object partners. The Unification Church understands the concept of dual characteristics based on this fact.

Then do the dual characteristics remain as they are? Are they at a standstill, or are they in motion? If they are in motion, why would that be? Why would they be in motion? Would it be to suffer a loss or to create something more valuable? If there were a principle which dictated that action and motion took place to incur a loss, then our actions to achieve the ideal or to advance towards our dream would be fruitless. If we were to suffer a loss through them, these actions would diminish and ultimately stop altogether. Yet if set in motion with a view to creating benefit, they would grow bigger with time. (125-72, 1983.3.13)

God is but one entity. Since He exists as the Subject of dual characteristics, He may think He can love within His own dual characteristics. He may say, "This part of me is in the position of the male subject partner, and that part is in the position of the female object partner," and may have some feeling of love in his mind. However, in the position of man and woman who have been separated He would not be able to feel any stimulating effect.

Thus, if God sees Adam and Eve make love passionately even without considering Him, He as the Subject of love does not feel bad about it. Why? Because He is the Subject Being, who feels joy from His object at the place where they come together as one, and the more valuable is the love felt by His object partners, the more happiness He would feel. Would not that be the first law of love based on His creation of humankind? Hence, people cannot attain such a state unless they receive an education in this love. (51-173, 1971.11.21)

Essentially, power diminishes through action, but that of love alone grows stronger with action. What is spread out infinitely has an infinitely concentrated energy within it, and so it pulls others towards it. Accordingly, it possesses an internal energy of circulatory motion. Such logic can be applied here; indeed, the logic of dual characteristics taught in the Unification Church can be applied anywhere. Through my wisdom I caught all these things. (164-87, 1987.4.26)

How wonderful is true love! God Himself was born for love. He came into existence because of love. Doesn't that make you feel good? "Well, Rev. Moon says God was born because of love!" Grab hold of Him and try analyzing Him! I analyzed God down to His dual characteristics. Are there not dual characteristics within the dual characteristics themselves? Are not both male and female hormones secreted within your bodies? If you are unsure, go to a hospital and get yourselves examined. This is why you can all relate to one another. (222-179, 1991.11.3)

After inquiring again and again why dual characteristics are part of the Principle of Creation and what the fundamental issues concerning subject and object are, there comes a point when you cannot inquire anymore and have to turn back. However much you may have delved into it, you have to turn around and go back. After this process is repeated for tens of thousands of years, you would have no choice but to resign and say, "Oh, this is the only way there is; there is no point in trying to find another," and with these words the Divine Principle would be established, which is why it is unchangeable. (173-127, 1988.2.14)

1.3. God's motive in creating the universe

Considering that heaven and earth did not come into existence of their own accord, but were created on the basis of a certain source of power, it logically follows that on a higher level there must be a central Subject Being who can move heaven and earth, that is to say, an original motivator with creative power. We call the being in such a position God. Since we come from different races with different languages, we use different words to name Him, but that does not matter. In any case, there must be a center of this universe. There must be a central being who remains stationary for billions of years at the center of the reciprocal world which is in motion, a being who, though everything else may be moving and in action, never moves along with them. (154-298, 1964.10.5)

In delving into the origin of the universe, the fundamental question arises: why did God came into existence? Why did He come to exist? For what reason did He come into being? What does He do? These are the questions we should be asking. The era of blind faith in Christianity has passed; gone is the era of unquestioning belief in God. After arriving at this conclusion through reasoning, we should next consider God's internal nature, His relationship with the world with regard to His will, and the relationship between His internal nature and external form, as these relationships are open to question. (191-13, 1989.6.24)

Human beings cannot be the first form of existence. No matter how great we may be, we cannot be the causal being. We will always be the second form of existence, that is, resultant

beings. Then, what would be the causal being of the universe? Since God exists, He would be the causal being as well as the Absolute Being. What would such an absolute being require for Himself? Based upon what would He seek to form relationships with humankind or the creation? This is the fundamental question, the important issue that should be dealt with in theology and philosophy. The question that needs to be asked is: what can link God and humankind, the Cause and the result? (198-283, 1990.2.5)

Why and how did God come into existence? He came into being due to love. How did the origin of the universe come to be realized? The seed of love was assimilated by God as the object partner, with the result that God Himself came to possess internal nature and external form. Based on what did this come about? It was based on love. The same holds true for you. Through the love of your mother and father, you were given the seed of life, the one cell that grew into what you are today; in a similar manner God became the being He is today. His eyes, His nose, and every feature of His were formed in this way. He is exactly the same as us. (207-27, 1990.10.21)

True love begins from the deepest place. So what is the origin of true love? It is God. The word 'God' has the same pronunciation as the Korean word pronounced 'gaht,' which means the top hat worn by the gentry in olden days. Hats are worn at the very top of oneself, so it has the same meaning as the English word. The question remains as to how God's external form and internal nature came to be divided. Where is the origin of the universe, and how did it come into existence? This is the question we should ask: how did God come into being? Have you seen God? How did He come into existence? How did you come into existence? You are the beings who were born from the synthesis of the extracts of all the elements that make up the universe. (207-24, 1990.10.21)

What would be the center of love? It must be God. He is the unique, eternal, and unchanging being who existed before the formation of the universe. Love is the flow of heart; it is the manifestation of the internal heart flowing substantially. Hence, God's essence is heart. Such a God is the unified being who is the fundamental cause of the formation of the universe as spoken about in ontology. I do not even feel the need to mention that this formation of the universe is exactly referring to the process of God's creation.

Then how was God able to create the universe and human beings? He could do so because He has heart. Life can arise only where there is heart, and where there is life, the generative process (creation) can take place. The work of creation must have a purpose behind it, for the simple reason that by its nature, the heart always aims toward fulfillment. Therefore, it follows that the purpose of creation is to bring joy that will satisfy God's heart. This joy is derived from the creation, especially from human beings

who most closely resemble Him.

Hence, what God aimed to create were peoples and nations that resemble His love and creativity. This is plainly discernible from the fact that humankind also seeks after these same things. The universal ideal is none other than the fervent aspiration to pursue a world which should have been rightfully ours to enjoy. (65-258, 1972.11.26)

What is the origin of the universe? What was there before this universe came into being? God? Was God the only one there? Is love visible? Considering love has no substantial form, where is it? Love is a concept. Even to God, love is a concept. You need to understand that it is a concept even for Him. (293-132, 1998.5.26)

Why did God perform the work of creation? It was for the sake of love. Love cannot be fulfilled alone; it requires subject and object partners. Love in isolation, being vertical, has no effect on its surroundings. (193-303, 1989.10.8)

As the absolute Creator, what did God lack that led Him to create human beings? What did the almighty God require – He who had no need for gold or knowledge nor lacked anything – such that He needed to create human beings? In short, what is the fundamental motive for creation? It was not for power, knowledge or possession. It was because God did not have a substantial partner of love, that is, He could not fulfill love alone. Thus, the fundamental motive behind the creation of the universe was love. (149-149, 1986.11.21)

Why did God create heaven and earth? What did that almighty, absolute being not have that He needed to create human beings? He created them because of love. Love cannot arise without an object. If it were to be set in motion without an object, it would only suffer a loss. Everything is made to protect itself; nothing moves if all that can be expected is a loss. Though it may seem like it is not there, love rushes out if an object appears. Love primarily exists within God, but when the masculine God is alone it does not make an appearance. The object that can draw it out from Him is humankind. (60-76, 1972.8.6)

What was it that the omniscient, omnipotent and omnipresent God lacked which led Him to create humankind? Did He need money, gold bars or diamonds? He had plenty of them. Then, did He need knowledge? He has as much knowledge as He could wish for; after all, He is the King of knowledge. Then, was He in need of power? It would have made no difference to Him whether He had power or not. What He lacked was love.

Love can only be established in a reciprocal relationship. Without the need for love, even God is not able to form a relationship with the created world and human beings. Thus, the conclusion can be drawn that He is not able to relate with the existing world unless He approaches it with love and for this

reason, He has set love as the standard. (121-100, 1982.10.24)

Why did God create heaven and earth? It was due to the fact that even the Absolute Being cannot experience joy on His own. Even if He could be joyful, it would not be stimulating for Him. However much the Absolute Being might claim, "I am the Absolute Being, I am the Lord of love and life," He would not feel the stimulation of love by Himself, any more than He would feel the excitement of His existence by knowing that heaven and earth are within Him. (38-152, 1971.1.3)

Would God have created the universe if He only thought of Himself? The act of creation required a huge investment of energy. The wish of any artist is to create the greatest masterpiece, and he spares no pains, putting everything he has into making it. The perfect masterpiece can only be created when he has totally invested in it. A masterpiece can only be complete when there is nothing more that can be done with it. The process of creation begins and is only made possible through the input of energy. Nothing can be made without exerting energy. Taking into consideration the principle that the complete object is created from the complete input of energy, God invested everything He had as the Subject in order to create His object. Through the act of creation, He began to exist not for Himself but for His object. (78-111, 1975.5.6)

Creation involves the input of energy. In doing so, how much would be invested? You might think that when God created with the words, "Let there be light… Let there be a firmament…" it just seemed like child's play to Him. Yet that was not the actual case. He totally invested true life, true love and the true ideal into them. We too cannot love something created without any effort on our part or without committing our flesh and blood. (78-111, 1975.5.6)

Hence, the situation before creation was different from that which came afterward. Before creating an object, one thinks only of oneself, but as soon as you start to create love relationships, you begin to live for the sake of your object because it is then that you start to think that you exist for its sake and for the sake of your sons and daughters, and not yourself. (69-81, 1973.10.20)

In creating human beings, God wanted to allow His object of love to become greater than Himself, for which reason He continuously invested, in order to completely substantiate all His invisible elements. What this means is that the origin of true love can only be found at the point where one gives and forgets, and gives again. It is very simple. This is the fundamental principle of the existence of the universe. (203-231, 1990.6.26)

In order to possess love, one needs to repeatedly give and forget. Why should one possess such love? It is because the more love is in motion, instead of

decreasing, it increases. Scientifically speaking, any physical phenomenon diminishes the more it moves and acts, doesn't it? In the physical world, the more something engages in movement and consumes energy, the more it is depleted, but in the world of true love, the more it moves, the larger it becomes. Knowing this reality, God could begin His work of creation based on true love. (237-127, 1992.11.13)

How did the universe begin? From God's viewpoint, everything began from the principle of living for the sake of others, and fully investing, even consuming, Himself. Then what was He seeking to achieve by consuming Himself in order to create His object? What results from both subject and object partners consuming themselves, each for the sake of the other, is love. They do not mind how much they consume themselves, if they can possess love. Love is based on such a concept, and that is why God began His work of creation accordingly. He did not end up losing anything. Why would God have completely invested Himself if He knew it would result in loss? Within love, there is an energy that can more than fill everything; therefore, although God consumed and invested Himself, He received love in return. True love is something that does not diminish with investment, but instead accumulates through it. If this was not the case, and the principle maintained that true love diminishes, God Himself would have been consumed by investing Himself. It was in fact quite the opposite, for the reality is that the more true love you put in, the more it increases. (237-124, 1992.11.13)

Inherent within love is creative ability and hence it cannot be exhausted. When you have a loving mind, however much energy you invest and consume, you still have the power of love within yourself that can more than make up for it, and so it cannot become exhausted. So, although you may find the path difficult and wearisome, you will never come to dislike it. You cannot follow such a path if you dislike it. On the path of love, you can never have a hateful mind. On the path of true love, there is never a place for a hateful mind. God's essence does not include the concept of enemies or evil because it is surrounded by true love. (237-130, 1992.11.13)

God's ideal of creation requires continuously giving out. Investment causes circulation. In the case of air, if there are areas of high and low atmospheric pressures, then between the two, a region of medium atmospheric pressure would be formed. You can stand in the medium position to give out to the low position and then be replenished from the high position. Heaven descends without being called. Thus, those who wish to give more than 100 percent will be filled up by God. Such are the laws of the universe. The process of investing completely and forgetting establishes an eternal action, and on this basis, the logic of immortality can arise.

From where else other than immor-

tality and eternal life could the principle of unification be derived? When you live for the sake of others, isn't a cycle formed? Where are you heading? As you grow lighter, you head upwards. You would ascend. If your ideal way of life were to circulate and spread out wide, then the heavenly tradition would be disseminated. God would have no choice but to automatically place both His feet on the shoulders of the ideal couple who are ascending. (205-95, 1990.7.7)

Why does God exist? For what purpose does He exist? It is for the sake of love. Thus, the Almighty God needed to create the object partner of His love. Until this time, the essential ideal of creation that the process of creation was initiated for the sake of love was unknown. The entire world of creation came into being because of love. (208-235, 1990.11.20)

God's desire is to completely give of Himself through a global foundation. He yearns for a free, peaceful and happy world wherein no one could accuse Him for giving and there would be no requirement to set conditions in receiving. His desired purpose is to establish such a world and have all humanity live happily there. (13-249, 1964.4.12)

Which comes first, love or life? Love comes first. Even though the earth originated with God, the original source of life, we do not consider life as coming first. Instead, we say that love came first. (86-79, 1976.3. 7)

Although God created heaven and earth from some form of vital existence, the source and motive of that existence was love. To put it more plainly, life came into being due to love. (86-82 1976. 7)

What is it that is greatest in the universe? It is God. We are to ascend to where He dwells. What will we do when we arrive there? We will make the universe ours through His love. Don't you all have some level of ambition within you? To satisfy that ambition and desire, you will need more than your knowledge, power or money. Only love will be capable of that. This is the essence of the Divine Principle and the basis of our philosophy of life. You have not understood this until now, but it is very simple. (144-132, 1986.4.12)

Section 2. Subject and Object Partners Comprise the Universe

2.1. The principle of the pair system governs the existence of the universe

Everything in the universe, even in the mineral and plant kingdoms, was born with the ideal common base of the subject-object relationship centered on love. The creation represents the resultant forms of existence, and cannot come into existence without a causal being. We call that being God. Thus, in the realm of God-centered love, irrespective of direction, be it East, West, North, South, up, down, front, rear, left or right, everything, including the basic elements

and minerals exist within a pair system, a subject-object relationship, in order that they can always attain harmony and oneness. The entire creation exists through this system, including the mineral, plant, animal and human worlds. (173-35, 1988.2.1)

The creation was meant to be centered and modeled upon human beings. Everything in the universe was created to interrelate and form a connection in all directions revolving around humankind. Thus, the entire creation, that is, everything in the mineral, plant, and animal kingdoms was created in pairs. In that way, the paths of vertical and horizontal relationships are entwined. Everything in the world based upon the pair system and engaged in various kinds of existence and ways of life provides the textbook material for humankind in the process of seeking ideal love. (173-211, 1988.2.18)

All created things exist within the pair system of subject-object relationships. Why is this so? Since all created beings are in the position to develop their love to an absolute degree, they exist in a subject-object pair system in order that they can give and receive, and attain oneness through that love. There is not a single thing which was created outside this principle. Everything was born out of love. (209-89, 1990.11.27)

The subject-object relationship is an inherent feature of the universe. Everything was intended to exist in conformity to that, and accordingly we can deduce that the universe was created based on the concept of the pair system. Therefore, the conclusion can be drawn that all of creation was brought into existence in this way based upon love, and that it is sustained through love relationships. The same is true even for minerals. Positive and negative ions have give and take with each other. The plant kingdom, too, is founded on the relationship of stamen and pistil, and animals also exist based on the paired males and females of their species. (207-9, 1990.10.21)

Within the elements of the mineral world may be found pairs of positive and negative ions. The 107 chemical elements identified in the Periodic Table will not react with just anything, however hard you may try to fuse them in the laboratory. Yet with the appropriate object, there is nothing you could do – not even God – to prevent them from fusing together. You already know about this, don't you? Everything is incorporated within the pair system, whether mineral, plant or animal. All things exist in pairs, in accordance with the principle of positive and negative. (203-295, 1990.6.27)

All beings in the world come under the pair system. As they are arranged as such – whether mineral, plant or animal – in order for them to unite, they must be interconnected based on the subject-object love relationship. (189-190, 1989.4.6)

If you possess love, you will always be welcomed wherever you go. Thus, the

existence of this universe is based on love through the pair system. The mineral world exists in pairs, as do the plants and animals, don't they? Based on what? It is based on vertical love, although to varying degrees. This holds true everywhere, centering on the love that is manifested in this vast universe. The position of all beings has been determined at a particular horizontal level, and accordingly, they are able to harmonize with one another as a pair from this set position in the universe. All this came into being for the sake of love. (198-304, 1990.2.5)

The entire creation is interconnected through the structure of the pair system. This is true even for the mineral world. Everything operates either positively or negatively. Despite the earth having its own gravitational pull, we can clearly see the workings of a powerful magnet because its pull is locally stronger than that of the earth. All elements also work positively and negatively, though not strongly enough to be seen. Certain clearly determined movements occur when an electric current flows between the positive and negative poles of a circuit. What is the center of the pair system? It is the central axis which connects the two elements in a principled way, namely the axis of love. Thus, the chemical elements of the mineral world fuse together according to the laws of attraction. Elements that repel each other cannot become one, even at God's command, and even if the master of the laboratory made strenuous efforts to bring them together for thousands of years. (197-164, 1990.1.13)

All things in the universe are unable to exist if they are separated from love. They exist within a pair system. There are males and females in the insect world too, aren't there? Sometimes you go out into the garden and dig the ground. You will find many insects there. All those creatures, though out of sight, exist as males and females, reproduce their kind and feed them. They even talk with each other by communicating through the senses, and the males and the females care for each other so much. What root cause, then, would bring this about? Don't you think there would be love in the insect kingdom? It is an absolute inevitability that the male follows the female, and vice versa. (191-220, 1989.6.25)

Even the elements in the mineral world were created in pairs. They interact together through the relationship of positive and negative ions. Thus, if this compound were to be pulled by true love, God would be pulled along with it, as would the True Parents and all of humankind, for they are all part of one interconnected system. Everything exists within the pair system. Whatever level of existence they may belong to, they nevertheless live according to the principle of love. (203-244, 1990.6.26)

Everything created by God exists within the pair system. The mineral world, too, abides by a system of pairs though at a lower level; the positive and negative ions also express their love in

their interlocking form. For the first time in history, I have come forth into the world to declare this truth. I was the first person in history to disclose that God Himself as the Origin absolutely believes in and obeys true love. This is not a mere concept, but is the irrevocable truth: God initiated creation in His quest for true love. (203-103, 1990.6.17)

Even the microorganisms, which practice their own forms of love, take pride in the fact that they were also created to play their part within the same realm of the ideal of creation, which is represented by the universal pair system. They are proud of the fact that although you are big and they are small, if they can unite with you and give you a part of themselves, they are more than willing to share themselves with you for eternity. They are different from fallen human beings. The creation of one chemical substance signifies that the plus and the minus elements have found and become one with each other. How silly human beings are by comparison! They are in fact essentially disharmonious, and this is the problem. (209-189, 1990.11.29)

Everything you see in the world exists in a pair system. We are at the head of them all. When God looks upon everything, He says, "Ah, you take after me too. When you are alone, you are lonely aren't you?" Accordingly, this universe is a natural museum replete with everything on display according to the ideal pairing system, irrespective of rank. It is a natural museum and yet, at the same time, a museum of love. How do you think about that? Passing along the way, didn't you see the pine trees and innumerable poplars by the roadside as usual, without actually being really aware of them? When you look at them, you should be able to say, "You are like me because you also live in a love relationship of give and take between subject and object partners! Comparing myself to you, I feel ashamed because I am all alone and living a fallen life."

If such a world existed, even people who have fallen behind would have value. If humankind came to see the world more profoundly and respect it, how beautiful it would become! How lovely the world would appear to our eyes! Since God has a loving mind, He cannot but create the world as such, and therefore everything exists according to the pair system. (209-189, 1990.11.29)

Everything in this universe functions as part of a pair. Even minerals are made up of positive and negative ions. Chemical elements lacking affinity cannot combine with each other, however much scientists conduct experiments using every possible method. Yet if elements having affinity are brought together, they fuse into one however much you may try to keep them apart. Everything exists within a pair system, and so, what is the center of that? It is love. Even in the case of plants, the male and female parts pollinate to allow fertilization. In such a manner they return to their original state. Only when the two entities unite together can they reach the origi-

nal state of union before being divided. Hence, this process is called origin-division-union action. (198-112, 1990.1.25)

You need to create your own environmental realm. God created the sun, earth, air and water as part of His environmental realm. Within that realm, there must always be subject and object partners, as that is the formula for existence. All created beings exist in a pair system. This is true of the mineral, animal and human worlds. Why are they made up of subject and object partners? It is for the perfection of true love. Without a subject, love cannot be perfected. This is the formula. Up to the present day, none of our ancestors attained perfection in this manner while on earth. (293-225, 1998.5.26)

Only when male and female attain oneness can heaven and earth be harmonized. If they do not, they cannot harmonize heaven and earth or the universe, which is based on the pair system. Instead, they would be excluded from there. (226-15, 1992.2.1)

One cannot exist alone. There is no principled way that one can exist alone. Thus, everything in the world exists as pairs. Why have they been created in a pair system? It was for the sake of love. What kind of love would that be? They continue to exist because of the original love, that is, the true love in which God can take delight. (248-284, 1993.10.3)

There is not a single being in all of creation which exists alone. All things exist in a subject-object relationship. They were all created to be part of a pair system. People today are not aware of this. The concept of absolute faith derives from the fact that the universe was created according to a pair system which came into existence for the sake of love. (298-11, 1998.12.31)

On close observation, we can see that the world is made up according to a pair system, isn't it? Within the biosphere are pairs, without exception. The subject and object partners of a pair should make a good balance; otherwise, they will slip away in all directions. When they are in complete balance, that is, when they have achieved the balanced basis upon which they can pursue love, then, for them, the world will become a completely level plane. It would be the same as if the entire universe was a vast horizontal expanse of ice. When they are completely united, this expanse of ice, instead of being sharply angular, would take the form of a sphere. The extremities of the body of ice would not take a shape that would hinder its rotational motion. By circulating in this way they are destined to become one spherical body with a multiple increase in the power of the gravitational force. (144-213, 1986.4.24)

The pair system is derived from the concept of subject and object partners; why do we need subject and object partners? They exist for the sake of love. The concept of love gives rise to subject and

object partners; because there is subject and object partners, they interact; and because they interact, energy is produced. The scientists of today have only partly worked this out, which is why their theories should all be put in order. Action takes place, but before it can, there must be a subject partner and an object partner, and before them, there must be love. In the reverse order, this is how it would be: for there to be energy, action must take place, and for action to take place, there must be subject and object partners, and prior to the subject and object partners there needs to be love. (247-119, 1993.5.1)

There is bound to be subject and object partners in every environment. Accordingly, the whole world as created by God exists within a pair system. The system is simple: the mineral, plant, animal and human worlds are all made up in pairs. What are they comprised of? Male and female. (251-120, 1993.10.17)

Action precedes force. It does not arise in isolation, but requires subject and object partners. The universe stands on the principle and formula of a pair system. Such is the conclusion. Look at how simple the world is. The mineral kingdom exists in pairs. In fact, this is the case for everything. Plants, animals and human beings work within the pair system. God Himself has dual characteristics. This is an eternal truth and formula. (299-154, 1999.2.10)

All creation was structured according to a pair system. Thus, our organs such as the eyes, ears, nostrils, lips and hands relating to the whole creation are also in pairs, so that they can be perceived. Anything without a counterpart will be banished from the universe, the created world. (279-41, 1996.6.9)

Everything exists in the pair system of subject and object partners. The complete form for anything comes as a pair, and so everything follows that principle. Between the body and mind, which do you think is the more conscientious and closer to goodness? The mind rather than the body stands on the side of goodness; therefore, if you follow your original mind absolutely, you would reach heaven, whereas if you follow your body, all you will attain is destruction, annihilation, hell and ruin. (303-33, 1999.7.4)

2.2. Subject and object partners in a love relationship

The question is why this universe came into being. This is the fundamental unanswered question in the religious, academic and philosophical spheres. Human beings are the center of the universe and yet we do not even know the answer to the question of why we came to exist. In addition, the mineral, plant and animal kingdoms are connected horizontally in three stages centering on humankind, and each of these kingdoms is included in the pair system. Until now, we only had a vague idea as to why they were all created in pairs, but in precise terms all this came into being

because of love. (253-219, 1994.1.30)

What are the fundamentals of the universe? Since all creation originated from love, then, in order to find and fulfill love, there must be male and female. In the case of animals, it would be male and female; so what would it be in the case of plants? It would be pistil and stamen. In the case of the mineral kingdom, the male and female would be the positive and negative ions in a molecule. Everything exists as male and female. (273-91, 1995.10.22)

What should be done for action to take place? It requires some form of relationship. Plus coming together with another plus will yield nothing. Only when it is in a reciprocal relationship with a minus can action take place. The origin of all phenomena in the universe, rather than being an existing force, began from a certain action which then expanded to form the world of harmony, and this action could not come about with only a plus component. It begins where plus and minus have give and take, and so for there to be action, there must be subject and object partners. This is the way we understand it, and accordingly, everything has its respective object. (115-198, 1981.11.15)

Even something that is very small exists as male and female. In other words, they are made up of male and female, or plus and minus. The molecules consist of positive and negative ions; in fact, everything exists reciprocally, in a subject-object relationship. What do you think God likes? Seeing that He created plus and minus, male and female, in order to love each other, God likes to see the fulfillment of love through them. What are the fundamentals of the universe? It is subject and object partners, male and female. (278-100, 1996.5.1)

Delving into the fundamentals of the universe, we see that everything arises from the subject-object relationship. Upon delving deeper, the question arises: why is the subject-object relationship necessary? It is so that action can take place, and action is a prerequisite for motion. That is how it works. Every existing thing in the world is in a constant state of motion. You too are in motion, aren't you? Something is flowing between you and me as the object and subject. (240-168, 1992.12.13)

Just as in the case of electricity, where the positive and negative charges collide and produce light, when subject and object partners unite, they will emit a universal light because they work in the same way as electricity. Inside this small bulb are the connections for positive and negative, but these things alone are not enough. Only when it is connected to a power plant via a substation, in other words, only when this bulb is in the resultant position and is connected to the power plant which is the origin, can it emit light continuously, and this is the simple conclusion. (73-331, 1974.10.13)

The fundamentals of the universe

follow the concept of subject and object partners rather than energy. The universal origin starts from this concept, and subject and object partners should possess their own status. There must be both a subject and an object status. The one with subject status is God, and that which has object status is humankind. Why did God create human beings? It was because, as the subject, He could not do without His object. He could only feel stimulated in the presence of an object. Stimulated by what? He would receive stimulation from truth, beauty and love, and this is precisely why He created human beings. (67-50, 1973.5.19)

The fundamental energy of the universe is produced from an action which takes a similar form to the relationships of unconditional giving and receiving in the physical world. Thus, all existing things, without exception must be involved in a subject-object relationship, for otherwise they cannot exist in this world. (48-9, 1971.8.31)

What is the concept behind the fundamentals of the universe? Even philosophers do not know where this concept came from. It comes from true love! God exists for the sake of love. He is necessary for love, and He is there because of love. Even God came into being for love. Thus, the concept of love was there, even before the universe came into being. For this concept of love to be perfected, there must be male and female, positivity and negativity. Everything in existence is in either of these two forms. (247-119, 1993.5.1)

All humankind and the creation, going right back to the origin of the universe, incorporate subject and object positions. Thus, everything was born for the sake of its counterpart. There is not one entity that does not have a subject partner and an object partner. Is this not also the case for the mineral world? Within a molecule, the positive and negative ions are in the positions of subject and object partners. With plants, it is the stamen and pistil. In the animal kingdom, it is male and female, and in the human world, man and woman. Everything needs a reciprocal relationship. (260-252, 1994.5.19)

What is the origin of the universe? From what did the universe first begin? It originated from love. Scientists believe the universe to be made up of energy. They understand that, since action takes place, energy must be there as a source of that action. If there is energy, action would already have taken place. Well then, which comes first: action or energy?

When a boy is growing up, the energy of love does not act on him. He grows through action as a male. His mind and body interact and allow him to become an adult. When he meets a woman as a fully-grown man, a horizontal energy is produced. Energy can only arise from reciprocal action. In other words, before energy can exist there must be action. Then, where does this reciprocal action originate? It comes from the subject-object relationship. Everything is governed through the relationship of

subject and object partners; for human beings this is manifested as mind and body.

In the position of object to the mind, the eyes both need to be in focus in order to see, and the nostrils, too, should be working together. Everything exists in a system of subject and object partners. (247-119, 1993.5.1)

What is the formula for re-creation? The universe is made up of plus and minus elements. If we look at the molecule it tells us as much with its positive and negative ions. Everything exists on a reciprocal basis. The atom contains protons and electrons. Everything is like that, for that is the basis upon which the universe was formed: stamen and pistil in plants, male and female in animals, and man and woman in the case of human beings. Everything functions reciprocally. As such, they must be brought into one principled order. Since God is the Subject, they must be brought under His control. Unless a unified realm of reciprocal relationships has been established within creation according to His will, there can be no joy for God through the creation. (247-183, 1993.5.9)

There are two kinds of true love, one that is vertical and the other that is horizontal, and the universe moves according to this principle. You need to understand that the universe was constituted in the same way, and the plant, animal, and mineral worlds are all involved in relationships of subject and object partners. The fact that everything resembles the spherical shape formed by the relationship between a vertical axis and a revolving object shows that no matter what their level of existence, everything originally began with love as the model in accordance with the fundamentals of the universe. (217-96, 1991.5.4)

Look at this world and universe: in the field of minerals, there are positive and negative ions, in the plant world, stamen and pistil, and in the animal kingdom, male and female. I recently heard there are even male and female germs. Everything is supposed to become one based on love in its appropriate domain. Through observation, we can see that this world of the pair system has been created in this way, so that when the ideal love of human beings becomes representative of heaven and earth, the rest of the creation can connect to it and support it. Just as the foundation needs to be laid before a house can be built, God created everything within the pair system for the sake of humankind. You may have seen that among animals. When the male and female are roaming around together and the female is attacked, the male will protect her to the death. After giving birth to their young, they will risk their lives for them. Such is the way of love, and it is like this because it has the same characteristics as the origin. (222-123, 1991.10.28)

Before action can take place, there must first be a subject and object partners. For this reason, God Himself, who is the origin of the universe, needs to

have His internal character as the subject and His external form as the object in eternal coexistence centering on the concept of love. Only within love can there be eternal life. (209-87, 1990.11.27)

The structure of the universe was not created at random. This vast universe responds to the reciprocal subject-object relationship, carries out give and take action, and continues following the track of this eternal law. Only by keeping to this track of law can the universe exist forever. If it failed to do so, it would not be able to continue but instead would head for destruction.

Just as we can go on living only when we have properly digested the food we have eaten, and the nutrition has been properly supplied to all parts of our body through the blood vessels, so also the universe needs to be effectively replenished. It can continue to exist only through wholesome give and take. (182-116, 1988.10.16)

Why did God create the universe? He created it for the sake of love that is the origin, which is why everything in the world of creation was made according to a pair system. There is not a single form of existence that does not come in pairs. The world is full of pairs.

What is God's ideal of creation? His ideal, based on His love, was to raise human beings as a pillar of love and have all creation live together around the base of that pillar. Human beings stand at the center of a universe which completely envelops them.

What is God's will? Taking this question into consideration, if His will were moving toward power or knowledge, it would and should meet destruction. Instead, it is heading toward love. Love is its destination. (185-165, 1989.1.8)

The question is: why would the act of giving bring you prosperity and why would your possessions grow through giving? The answer is that this would correspond with the origin at the very beginning when God created the universe. Did God create the world so as to take from it? He wants to give to it. The more you give, the greater you would grow. If the United States adopted the concept of giving in all its affairs, it would grow in influence. If you continue to just take, everything you have will become smaller. By giving, you are taking part in God's principle of creation, and then the universe can assist and support you. (183-323, 1988.11.9)

True love can only come down to the universe at a perpendicular angle, which represents the standard for measuring everything. Within the animal kingdom there are male and female. Whether they are on the left or right, positive or negative, everything in the world loves based on the vertical and horizontal according to their levels. Don't they all experience love? If there were a vertical, perpendicular line and a horizontal, level line, there where they meet would be one's place of existence. On account of this, the world is a living museum of love. Even birds risk their lives for love.

The same goes for animals, in fact, for everything, even plants and minerals. The chemical elements are made up of positive and negative ions, and engage in reciprocal actions with their appropriate counterparts. (198-360, 1990.2.11)

Where did the origin of the universe, the origin of movement begin? Even in the case of celestial bodies, the planets are relating in their movements with the sun as the center. As a result, the solar system which is formed becomes a nucleus that connects to another corresponding system, and this extended system then connects to another, and so on. Given this scenario, what would the whole universe look like? What would all the forms of existence in this vast and boundless universe look like? They would all be in movement, engaged in motions which form one spherical shape. The universe of constantly moving stars sometimes expands and at other times shrinks. That is to say, it breathes. Even the earth's land expands and contracts. Did you know that? It alternates in size, expanding and shrinking over time. (222-174, 1991.11.3)

In revolving, what would one wish to center upon through one's movement? It would be true love. This is the origin of the universe. What would happen if both man and woman only wanted to receive? If both insisted on receiving, they would have to stand with their foreheads touching, because each of them would be trying to dominate the other. All forms of existence in the universe need to give and receive. This is the principle of existence, and therefore the one who gives first becomes the subject. The person who offers first is the subject. (123-227, 1983.1.2)

Is it your body that is more important or is it your mind? It is your mind. At the center of the mind is the true mind, and this is what places the most importance on true love. As the origin of the universe is true love, people without minds of true love will be banished. In order to ensure that we will not be banished from the universe and as God is endeavoring to teach us everything, then both men and women need to train to love and practice true love through matrimonial life. By so doing, man and woman need to come together in union and become object partners of God's true love, which is the original Plus. In order to be able to fully give and receive through such a relationship, human beings need to be perfected. (123-107, 1982.12.19)

If we delve into the origin of the universe, we arrive at God. We come to know that He possesses dual characteristics of masculinity and femininity. How did the universe begin? Let us put aside our discussion of God for the moment and consider humankind. It is clear that humankind is comprised of man and woman, or subject and object partners. In the mineral kingdom, molecules are composed of anion and cation. Plants reproduce through stamen and pistil. Animals live as male and female, and human beings as man and woman.

Every man thinks his sexual organ belongs to himself, and each woman thinks her sexual organ is her own. That is why the world is perishing. Everyone is mistaken concerning ownership of the sexual organs. We all think that love is absolute, eternal and dreamlike, but when we come to clearly understand that the ownership of eternal love lies with the opposite sex, the world will not remain in its present condition. There are numerous scholars and Ph.D. holders, but none of them have thought about this. Can any of you deny this? If you ask your parents, grandparents, great-grandparents, the original ancestors and even God, who is the origin of the universe, they all will agree with this. This is a universal law. This truth will remain even after the universe continues to exist for billions of years. The natural conclusion is that when you stand before God, He will judge you as righteous or unrighteous according to this immutable law. (279-244, 1996.9.15)

All who hold onto a self-centered existence will be banished. When you look at all the things in the universe, you can see that the mineral elements exist in a relationship of subject and object partners, as do the plants through the pistil and stamen, the animal kingdom with male and female, and also in the human world. The owner of original love is not oneself but one's object, and the ones who deny their object cannot continue to exist in the world of reciprocal relationships. They would find themselves abandoned in their uselessness and worthlessness. (280-63, 1996.11.1)

Section 3. Love Is the Root of the Universe

3.1. The center of the universe is love

What is the central axis of the whole universe and spirit world? It is love. Love is the origin of life and lineage. As they came into existence through love, their motion conforms to the axis of love. Motion cannot be carried out haphazardly. It only takes place between subject and object partners, and so everything moves in their appropriate positions after forming a love relationship. The purpose of everything that moves is to continue its existence as a result of eternal love. Action cannot be carried out by oneself alone. (208-79, 1990.11.17)

The origin of the universe is love. How did God come into being? Love is the center of all existence. Therefore, the conclusion we can reach is that even the absolute God needs an ideal which He will absolutely obey. Where there is complete obedience and liberation, there will be complete happiness. (198-237, 1990.2.3)

On what would the fundamental motive for the motion of the universe be based? It would not move centered on man or woman, or even God Himself. The motive that can move God and the universe is none other than love. Therefore, love is said to be the beginning and

the end. In 1 Corinthians 13 it is written, "So faith, hope, love abide, these three; but the greatest of these is love." Why would this be so? This has never been fully explained. (185-157, 1989.1.8)

Why should we practice true love? It is because the universe originated from the principle of true love. Therefore, through this love you can form a relationship with everything in the universe. This is only logical. So in this kind of relationship, if one is positioned above, the other would be below, if one is on the right, the other would be on the left. This is how everything in the mineral, plant and animal worlds is arranged. God created a world in which everyone would desire to give as the origin had done, and therefore it can be understood that the universe is a place where everything exists in order to give to others. In this sense, everything is trying to be absorbed into a being which stands at a higher level than itself. From this viewpoint, where would the source of continuity of the universe be? All existence in the universe carries out actions, which are guided by the desire to give, based on love from a higher level. (128-291, 1983.9.11)

The principle of parental love that governs the continued existence of the universe is an environmental element that can connect to the original ideal love, along with attributes of that parental love belonging to the realm of spherical motion taking place vertically, horizontally and in all directions. Then how should you conduct yourselves before the Parent of the universe? You should be reciprocating His love. Shouldn't you be His partner? We can draw the conclusion that in order to unite with Him, you need to become your Parent's counterpart. Only when you have become the recipient of true love can this union be achieved. Without true love there cannot be complete unity. (288-89, 1997.11.16)

God-centered people are like His body, and everything in the universe is sent to us from God with substantial forms which symbolize Him rather like shadows. All things in the universe are modeled after God Himself. Every one of them was created with Him as the original Subject; the only difference being whether they are in image or symbolic form. (153-119, 1963.11.15)

How did the universe come into existence? The answer is neither the theory of evolution nor the idea of creation. Before the concept of either creation or evolution, there were male and female. Why did male and female come into being? It was because of love. Love is the formula. (280-60, 1996.11.1)

God wants a partner of love who is better than Him. Don't you also desire your objects of love to be better than yourselves? It is the same for Him. God is the completely united form of subject and object partners, which is the origin of creation. It is for these two to become perfected as one based on love, as this brings liberation and fulfillment for God. At the place of love, the entire

world of creation will sing, dance, roll about and thus become as one. How delightful such a world would be! (276-123, 1996.2.11)

In building a house, we know that it has to be perfectly level and perpendicular. Otherwise it would tumble down. This leads us to the fundamental question of how the universe came to exist. God Himself needs love. Would He just sit on His throne in heaven and exclaim, "Oh my, I like love!"? If I were to dance alone, covered in sweat, would I not be viewed as a crazy man? I would not be quite as crazy if I danced looking at a handkerchief. I would not be considered mad if I danced and laughed looking at something that was one tenth, or even one hundredth the size of that. You need to acknowledge the fact that creation takes on the value corresponding to the absolute standard of the reciprocal value. (179-229, 1988.8.12)

After achieving full maturity, Adam and Eve would have been married by God. Then God, with His external form and internal nature, with His masculinity and femininity, would have entered their bodies. Then subsequently, the Creator would have naturally dwelt in the center of our minds, and we would have become His external form in image as His creation, in short, we would have become one as with God through love, and not by anything else, such as knowledge, power or money. By achieving this, based on true love, the external form followed by a family could emerge. True love is crucially important. If you don't clearly know this, you won't be able to understand about the origin of the universe. (286-16, 1997.7.1)

Secular people have the notion in their heads that they will become the number one person in the world in terms of money, power or knowledge. Yet everything in the universe related to God hopes for them to become the number one practitioners of true love. You should understand that this is the path originally desired by both humankind and God. (179-33, 1988.7.3)

Don't you all claim to like love? Aren't you looking for it? The question is: what path would you take as the most direct way, the shortcut to love consistent with the fundamental formula of the universe? (184-58, 1988.11.13)

What is the origin of the universe? God is an absolute being who has power. Yet power is not the origin, any more than knowledge is. Then would it be money? As viewed from the next world, people who try to make money for themselves look like they are collecting garbage and useless things. In other words, saving money is the same as collecting waste material. People like me may have money, but I am not going to use money that has been collected like this. (191-18, 1989.6.24)

In what way did God create heaven and earth? Only human beings, and none other, can be His perfect objects.

Thus, He committed Himself 100 percent. Then why did He commit Himself so much even though He was the King of wisdom? After investing everything, He reached the position of zero, nothingness, whereas His object attained 120 percent; to explain this in terms of atmospheric pressure: where God eventually comes to stand would be a vacuum, the point of lowest pressure, and His object would be in a high pressure area. This situation would immediately create a renewed circulatory action according to the principles of automatic generation and movement. Thus, if you were to constantly invest yourself in your object, it would eventually be enveloped, wouldn't it? It would be completely surrounded. With what would you surround and envelop it? It would be with love. Since the origin of the universe is love, this is what would take place according to this principle. (196-320, 1990.1.12)

The original form of unity is expressed through individual perfection. The family, tribe, nation and world, all stem from there. This is the case regardless of how small that origin is; the angle of the perpendicular would remain the same. So with this as the central axis, if true love were to spread out in all directions from it, then no matter where it was in the universe, the whole earth would nevertheless be unified and filled with true love. Once this happens, then at any time everyone could say to each other, "Good! You are just like me!" It would be the same both spiritually in the vertical sense, and physically in the horizontal sense wherever you went. (207-58, 1990.10.28)

Throughout their lifetime, and even when they have gone to the spiritual realm, human beings require love. They can never be separated from the concept of love, be it day or night, whether they are young, old, or have passed away, or wherever and whenever it may be. Why is this so? They cannot help being like that because that is how their origin is. Love alone can, even now, exercise creative ability. Without it, this ability cannot come into operation. Everything moves driven by a force of love that is like a powerhouse. (133-64, 1984.7.8)

God would undoubtedly be able to create love, but owning that love would be another matter because one cannot own love alone. It takes two to do that. Not even God can seek love alone. What then would be its original standard of measurement? What would be this prototype of which there is absolutely only one, that can measure all things in the universe, material world and eternal world? This is a fundamental issue. The answer is love. So it is not – and should not be – affected by the changes of the four seasons. (137-235, 1986.1.3)

Why are we created to live bound by the ties of love? Human beings are destined to live constrained by the ties of the love sought after by God and the universe through which this world can be harmonized. If this is the case, can those, who are not bound by the ties of

love and therefore have no basis of mind through which they can become happy, expect to lead happy lives? No, they cannot. Can the result be one of happiness if the basis is wrong? This is what history has been rooted in. (138-265, 1986.1.24)

When you attain the state of mind-body oneness, it would be the same as that experienced by the Buddha. It would be the state wherein you could feel, "In heaven and on earth, I alone am the honored one." When you are at the center of it, every form of energy within the sphere of love could not engage in action without passing through this center. In other words, any action that does not pass through it could not exist. Every action in the universe of creation has expanded based on this principle.

Yet the axis of love did not come into being. The nucleus did not come to exist, and not just for humankind. In expressing love between individuals, within the family, of tribes, races and nations stemming from the family, or taught by saints and sages, humankind has so far failed to comprehend and practice it according to the standards of the origin. (141-113, 1986.2.19)

When considering which comes first – life or love – with regard to the origin of the universe, we find, on delving further, that life cannot come first. Given that God is the source of life, on what foundation would He desire to live and continue to exist? What foundation would that be? He would want to exist on the foundation of peace. What establishes that foundation? Would it be life or something else? This is another question to ponder. Life could not achieve that. What can establish peace is something that transcends the orderly stages of creation, and goes beyond the highs and lows of subject and object partners – and acknowledges their common value. What would that be? It would be true love. (173-84 1988. 2.7)

You know about cell reproduction, I am sure. Even if you were to cut this off, another eye, nose or any other feature could grow back. The same is also true of hair, feet, in fact everything. Everything is like that. The cells connected to true love are of the same value as the universe. Why would true love make this so? It is because it is the cause and, at the same time, the result. It is the motive and, at the same time, the purpose. (216-288, 1991.4.14)

Love exists throughout the universe, and there is not a single being disconnected from it. Even something commonplace like a clump of grass exists based on love. Minerals come into being by way of positive and negative ions, which are all in motion for the sake of love. (289-129, 1998.1.1)

However small it may be, the realm of heart created through true love is connected to the universe, and the effects of every occurrence that takes place within it extend everywhere, even to the spirit world. This is because the cosmos, including the spirit world, exists under

God's principle of true love without any inequities. The vertical, horizontal, and front and rear relationships of true love between God and humankind are the origins of such true relationships among human beings themselves. Its perfection can only be accomplished in ideal families that have established the Four Great Realms of Heart. (260-128, 1994.5.1)

What is the essence of love? What kind of qualities does love have? What is love? Are the one-night stands and free sex which prevail in the United States today expressions of true love? That kind of behavior has no connection with original love. Then what is original true love? Love is the beginning and the end. The universe came into existence in the first place because of love. It is seeking after true love. God says of Himself in the Bible, "I am the first and the last, the beginning and the end." What does this mean? He is referring to original love in these words. (255-56, 1994.3.5)

Why should you live for the benefit of others? Why should you do so when you don't want to? You are bound by the ties of love, which are connected to all creation. Your body is bound tight with the ties of love. At this time, everything and everyone has their arms spread out wide and is asking to be tied more quickly. They want to grow rapidly and occupy the universe of love. They want to possess not just the universe of love, the object partner, but even God Himself who is the origin of love. (278-142, 1996.5.5)

Do you think God is happy all the time? Are you happy all the time? No you are not, but when you possess true love, then even sadness will be absorbed by that love. From this perspective, we can realize that the natural desire of human beings is to make the absolute authority of love stand in a position superior to anything else in the universe, no matter what individual forms of authority or knowledge, or claims to pre-eminent positions exist. Where did that come from? It came from the origin. Then where did the origin come from? It came from God's love. He also desires such love. (200-197, 1990.2.25)

In the beginning, did humankind emerge from a combative concept like communism or from a concept of harmony? Which was it? To express it in terms of electricity, let us say that the positive and negative charges are fighting each other. Where would that lead? Humanity originated from a source of harmony and unity. Therefore, through the harmony and loving union of a mother and father, you came to exist. That is undeniable. In this light we can recognize that the origin of the universe, that is to say the original nature, was first initiated from something which was harmoniously unified. (124-111, 1983.2.1)

In what way can you become someone to whom the entire universe is indebted, instead of its debtor? It will depend on your state of mind: you need to possess the mind of an owner who can say, "I'm sorry" and "Thank you," who can gaze

on the waters, the fields and mountains, the plains and rivers of Korea, and, furthermore, of the whole earth, and say "Thank you!" You must be people who can cherish gratitude toward God and nature, and live in service to them without complaint. Only people with such a mind can become true owners. (198-150, 1990.1.28)

3.2. Humankind is the center of love in the created universe

3.2.1. Human beings are the objects of God's love

How great is the value of humanity? We are the ones whom God, leaning on His walking stick, can yearn for after thousands of years. I have discovered the nature of the origin of the universe. The two-way relationship between God and humankind has finally led to the recognition of a worldview based on the vertical and horizontal aspects of love. As it developed into a relationship of up and down, and left and right, the worldview of vertical and horizontal love could emerge. In the center of it all dwells God. That place, which can be bound firmly in the deep valley of the mind, is the center of the vertical and horizontal aspects. If it is not tied down, the vertical and horizontal standard cannot emerge as the ideal form of love. Though there may be any number of vertical standards, the horizontal will not come into being. Thus, you must know that God had no choice but to create human beings accordingly. (48-223, 1971.9.19)

God is an absolute being with an absolute idea about creation, and so He seeks after an object of absolute value. This is something that cannot be exchanged for anything in the world. In terms of value, the relational being is a form of existence that cannot be exchanged for God Himself. The term 'relational value' sounds difficult to comprehend. The relational value of anything, the value of the object based on the word 'relational,' is so great that it cannot be exchanged for anything or anyone, not even God Himself. If God were to exchange it with Himself, He would be left alone as a result. He would be all by Himself. This is why God commits Himself and exhausts His strength, His energy. He is engaged in a war of attrition. The forms of existence thus created with relational value which cannot be exchanged even for God Himself are human beings. It becomes very clear that the form of existence with absolute value is none other than humankind. God created us as valuable beings with such an idea in mind. (68-134, 1973.7.29)

God created human beings for love. Human beings differ from others in that they were created as God's children. We were created as the object partners who can receive direct love from Him. This is our privilege. (132-244, 1984.6.20)

Whom do human beings resemble? They resemble God. It follows that He desires love in the same way as they do. The ideal world of creation based on love signifies the manifestation of God's love in external form on both image and

symbolic levels. The Divine Principle explains it thus. Based on what? Love. When the substantial form is happy, its image form will automatically be happy, and when the image form is happy, the symbolic form will also be happy automatically. What brings about such a phenomenon? Only love. (166-48, 1987.5.28)

It is said that, of all the things in the universe, the most precious and sacred are human beings. In simple terms, it means that out of all the creation, they are the center. Based on what are they the center? Love. Things such as knowledge, money or power are of no importance. Since God is the Creator, He can create and possess any of those things on His own at any time. However, love is something that no one can seek after or possess alone. Without exception, love appears and is fulfilled through an object partner; not even God Himself can fulfill love alone. (272-275, 1995.10.8)

For whom did God create heaven and earth? Not for Himself, but the object partner of His love. Then who is that object partner of His love? It is said that, amongst all the things of creation, the most precious and sacred is humankind. That means that only human beings were created as His direct object of love. If we were to analyze the essential qualities of love, we would find them to include the rights of inheritance, equality and participation. That being so, if God were to experience love, even He Himself, the high, almighty and universal God, would dance to the tune of love. (179-148, 1988.8.1)

The Unification Church teaches that even God needs love. No matter how omniscient, omnipotent, omnipresent and almighty God may be, He requires objects of His love, for love is reciprocal by its very nature. Those object partners were Adam and Eve. (121-173, 1982.10.24)

Even though God may be a great, absolute, omniscient and omnipotent being, nothing good can happen to Him when He is alone. The noun 'happiness,' or the adjective 'good,' cannot be used concerning one being in isolation. The words 'good' and 'happiness' can only have meaning where a reciprocal relationship has been established. No one claims to be happy when alone. Hence, even Almighty God Himself cannot be happy alone. For instance, let us imagine there is a musician who sings beautifully, and he is singing in solitude. Would he be happy? Of course not, he needs an audience. What is good can only come about in the process of giving and receiving. Similarly, God cannot be alone in order for Him to be able to say, "Good!" (65-20, 1972.11.13)

3.2.2. The process of human maturity is reflected in God's own development

The creation of human beings shows the renewed development of God Himself in a substantial way. God can find interest and stimulation from their creation. The same is true of human beings.

Artists draw with the idea of creating masterpieces in the course of which they fully and substantially express their inner nature. They squeeze it out from deep within themselves down to their bone marrow, and invest it into their works. (225-198, 1992.1.20)

Where can human perfection be found? There is no way for a man to be perfected by himself any more than a woman by herself. This is all because they are only half-complete; they therefore can be perfected only through a complete union of love. In being perfected, whom would Adam absolutely need? He absolutely needs God vertically. To be perfected, Adam needs both vertical and horizontal connections. Without them, he could not generate the circular and spherical motion of love. For this reason, what he absolutely needs horizontally is Eve. Likewise, Eve also absolutely needs Adam. (145-319, 1986.6.1)

What did God love in Adam and Eve? The fact that Adam and Eve grew up as His son and daughter signifies that He also developed in a similar fashion. God too had times when He was like a baby, sibling, spouse and parent, and that is why He created them in this way. God is an invisible god, who developed in such fashion. He created them like this, as children, siblings and spouses. (254-274, 1994.2.15)

When God created Adam and Eve, at which stage did He create them? We cannot think for a moment that He created them as fully-grown persons. He created them as infants. Unless we establish the logic that He created them in a similar fashion to that of a mother with a baby growing in her womb, there is no way we can explain the growing process through the order of three stages. In short, Adam and Eve had their babyhood, followed by the periods of growth and completion. This is the way of heavenly principle. (225-198, 1992.1.20)

Adam and Eve passed through babyhood, but what sort of babyhood would it have been? To answer this, we need to begin with the logic that the invisible God raised beings that were babies in His arms, the babies who came from the invisible world and passed through a process in order to become substantial beings.

Then how can a person who has been born and has grown up to full maturity advance to the position of marriage and parenthood? A child's growth shows the process of how God passed through the periods of youth, middle age, and old age, that is to say, the child shows in substantial form the invisible process of how God developed. Only when this logic is established, can the concept, "Parent and child are one body" emerge. Since one represents vertical and the other horizontal, the logic, "Vertical and horizontal are one body" can be established. (225-198, 1992.1.20)

Ideally, Adam and Eve as a loving couple giving birth to a child would be the same as standing in God's posi-

tion as the Parent, wherein His invisible Self, that is His internal nature and external form, united and lovingly created His children. The first Creator, the invisible God, created Adam and Eve as the visible second creators, and by their giving birth to children from the position of substantial second gods, they are elevated to the position of parents. Through these young children's growth, God's past history is displayed substantially, which also includes Adam and Eve's infancy, siblinghood, matrimony and parenthood. Thus, parents desire to love and be close to their children because they are their second selves. (258-240, 1994.3.20)

The position of a married couple is truly a great one. There, the fulfillment of hope that humankind has yearned for throughout history blossoms in the form of children, siblings and spouses. In this way, just as God began His work of creation with love, the couple that represents Adam and Eve will begin to create on their own through the act of giving birth to their children. They take the position of substantial creators, and in the position of horizontal creators in relation to their children, they bear them. This is the making of the third creators, namely the children.

Thus, parents raise their offspring as God's children from the position of substantial parents in His stead. In so doing, they substantially experience how the invisible God nurtured His children. God also underwent a similar developmental process. He passed through infancy, siblinghood, matrimony and parenthood. By parents giving birth to and raising their children based on the invisible God's past, their children can gain sight of God, the first and incorporeal Creator, from the time of His invisible babyhood onward.

Adam and Eve were destined as the visible second creators to raise their children as siblings and later to have them marry to form couples, so that God, who raised Adam and Eve as His son and daughter and as brother and sister, could see through them the substantial reality of His every intrinsic and invisible desire on earth. Those who can fulfill this desire are their own sons and daughters. (263-148, 1994.8.21)

The course of the creation of Adam and Eve is that by which God as Creator substantially developed the growing process from the origin of existence through to the present time, following the intrinsic principle of creation. Then where did it begin? In the same way as the minutest cells come together to form bigger cells, fetuses pass through the ten lunar months of gestation to emerge as males or females.

Why is that so? If this were not the case, there would be no way we could explain the logic of how life is inherited. In fact, we could not even establish the logic of how heredity unfolds. Hence, there is a need for an essential invisible form and an essence of the visible form to unfold substantially, based on a relationship of oneness. To put it another way, there must be a corresponding

realm of the object partner in front of the subject partner. The internal nature has the innate capacity to unite and communicate with the external form in every fundamental respect. As a result of this, the growth process after the birth of human beings is so that the invisible, incorporeal God can see the process take place through substantial forms. As such, God cannot help but love us, since every intrinsic aspect within Himself is expressed and manifested through us in the life of our substantial selves. Given that the invisible form is transposed into visible form, everything must be invested into it. (225-198, 1992.1.20)

When God was creating an object partner through which to experience love, whom do you think He would make it look like? It would be created to resemble Himself. For that object partner to reflect God, it should have both masculine and feminine characteristics, just like Him. He created this object partner in His image, that is to say, He took every attribute from His original internal nature and manifested these thought forms – this invisible nature – in substantial form. This is how human beings came to be created. Hence, the biblical book of Genesis correctly states that God created humankind in His image. (170-167, 1987.11.15)

The original Garden is the world of happiness wherein everything can be in tune with others in its unique way, in front of the rhythm of joy created by God and humankind through their maintaining mutual harmony. It is where each in its own creative way can dance and do all kinds of harmonious activities both symbolically and in image form. When this occurs, the creation will exclaim, "Aha! This is worth being born for!" Would it not be the greatest wish of even the tiniest forms of creation to become eligible to take part in the joyous feast day of love which would be held by God and humankind, and to share that joy with others? (166-46, 1987.5.28)

When you speak about truth, what do you think its core is? It isn't money, power or knowledge. It is love. Essential love stays in the vertical place, and truthful love is connected horizontally. Thus, we can know God by observing His creation, and Adam and Eve, for they were created in His image.

Why is this so? Adam and Eve are subject partners who take an object partner position in relation to God's vertical true love. Therefore, when they completely unite and create a sphere of love that covers all directions, they can form the central axis that will be connected to the entire world, as well as to God and the spirit world. (179-290, 1988.8.14)

3.2.3. Humankind is the center of all created beings

Who does God look like? He looks like us, both man and woman. Aren't your minds invisible? Would you like to see your mind or not? God is the same if you consider this from a spiritual perspective. He does not have a body. He

has not had one until now because Adam failed to reach perfection. He exists in a mind-like universe as a mind-like lord, teacher, custodian and parent. (197-44, 1990.1.7)

All the things of creation are the foundation upon which God's children can be created, a foundation which is related and connected to them. This includes everything from the animal kingdom down to the mineral world. Plus and minus can be found in the mineral kingdom, just as there are stamen and pistil in the plant kingdom and male and female in the animal kingdom.

The greatest masterpiece of all, created by amalgamating both spiritual and physical elements from all the rest of creation, is the human form. These forms were manifested as the internal natures and external forms of man and woman and revealed symbolically, in image form and substantially, so that they could connect with and relate to all of creation. (144-236, 1986.4.25)

It is not for the sake of money, knowledge or power that God stands in need of humankind, the center of all creation. It is for love and only love. If this was not the case and God stood in the position of desiring to be loved all on His own, there would not be anything or anyone there to love Him. If this is the conclusion, there can be no doubt that God would create an object partner in this world whom He could love. Bearing this in mind, who could be that great and courageous object partner of His love in that world? Of all God's creatures, the only ones satisfying the conditions of being perfect object partners who can stand in front of Him are man and woman. You should thus be bold enough to be able to say, "I am the lord of the universe, the greatest in the universe." (148-308, 1986.10.26)

God created all the things of nature in order to multiply joy and perpetuate its stimulation. He did not create them just to feel happy temporarily, but rather to feel joy permeating deep into His heart every time He saw them. For this reason, He created everything with the greatest heart and devotion. After making all the things of creation over five days, then on the sixth day God created human beings with a joyful heart.

Our first ancestors, created in His image, were most beautiful, precious, pride engendering, gratifying, glorious and lovable. (9-194, 1960.5.22)

God, being omniscient and omnipotent, does not lack knowledge, ability, power or money. Then what is it He has need of? It is the one object partner that He can love. That object partner can be none other than human beings, who are the most precious and greatest of all created beings. I have said that the ones God can love most of all are human beings, but why is this so? It is because God also needs love. Love is something which cannot be experienced alone. (112-291, 1981.4.25)

God's invisible image is symbolically invested in all parts of our body. Whom do our eyes resemble? God! Hence, they are situated in the most sunken part of our face, from where they observe everything. Next, the nose symbolizes Adam and Eve and forms the center. Next, the mouth symbolizes all things of creation and is horizontal. For this reason, enclosed in it are four times eight, equal to thirty-two teeth, based on the number four which represents all of creation. Next, the ears symbolize the four directions. The features found above the neck symbolize heaven. In other words, it is the information center of heaven. (201-83, 1990.3.4)

Where is the root of your lives? It lies with the unfallen parents. Then what would be the place of the unfallen parents of goodness? Since He is the Subject with dual characteristics, God has created the entire universe and human beings in His image, manifesting in them His dual characteristics. Adam is the embodiment of God's masculine characteristics and Eve His feminine characteristics. From this perspective, though in general we usually call Him "Heavenly Father" because He is one being, nevertheless, encompassed in this concept is the notion that He is 'Heavenly Father and Mother'. (140-123, 1986.2.9)

How would things have turned out had our ancestors Adam and Eve not fallen? They would have become one in heart with God, and from the same position as Him, inherited His great work of creation, and stood in the same place of joy with Him after creation. Such a relationship would have been formed between God and humankind. Original unfallen human beings would have become His temples. (54-64, 1972.3.11)

Even though God is our Father and we human beings His children, it still feels like the Father is above us, and that we are in a relationship in which He is superior and we are inferior. In such circumstances, what would we be thinking? We have the desire in our hearts that cries out to Him, "Father, let me have your place for just once. I want to sit in your place!" If God were to dismiss this with the words, "You scoundrel, no, I will not allow it!" then we would feel crushed. Hence, He would not answer in this way. On the contrary, He knows that people have such a desire in their hearts, and thus will encourage them with words like "Of course, by all means!" and would give up His place for us. He wants us to occupy His place, while He vacates it to enter our hearts and reside in them as His temples. (54-89, 1972.3.20)

When you have achieved mind-body oneness, the universe will protect you. When you have attained this state of being protected by the power of the universe, your parents as well as your siblings will also be protected by the universe. In short, everyone around you will be protected. Your race and nation must also form this connection. This is a wonderful conclusion. So, if you were

to go to another nation and maintained mind-body unity, then you could connect to the people of that nation also. It would work wherever you were.

In playing soccer, what happens when the ball stops rolling? It becomes one with the ground through a perpendicular. Hence, a sphere is considered to be the most ideal shape. That perpendicular could rest at any point on its surface, and this is how it is possible for the ball to roll around on any surface anywhere. So, once you have achieved mind-body oneness, and formed a perpendicular, you would fit in anywhere. Regardless of whether the person you meet is a Westerner, an Oriental, a person from the past, present or future, you would be able to relate with any situation. (205-53, 1990.7.7)

When you follow the path which your original mind leads you along, the universe will open up in unity with you. You need such experiences. Once you enter such a state, you will be able to fully relate with your original minds. You will be able to hold conversations with your minds. As soon as you think of doing something, the answer will already be right in front of you. You are advancing toward such a state. Wouldn't such people know the path they should take? The way they should follow would be definitely laid before them, and so all the power in the universe would help them to go that way. Once they face the test of faith, having been led there by the hand, everything will come to their support. Only after this, it would be possible for them to perform great deeds. (120-313, 1982.10.20)

You may look at nature and say, "Oh, I don't need the four seasons. I only like spring; I hate summer, autumn and winter." However, if you were to ask God, He would answer, "I love all the four seasons." Hence, you need to learn to like summer, autumn and winter, even though you may have disliked them in the past. When the winter snow comes, God looks upon the world covered in white and derives pleasure from it. So you should also be saying, "Oh, I like it too!" That is the way it should be. (133-28, 1984.7.1)

You should be able to look at nature with a mind similar to that of God's. Such should be your mindset. If there is a flood or streaks of lightning, you should not say things like, "Oh, how I hate that!" God is thinking, "Ha ha, heaven and earth are kissing and making love!" He tells those who say they do not like it, "Ha ha, you good-for-nothing rascals!" (133-28, 1984.7.1)

Where would God, the King of wisdom and the Center of everything, place the origin of true love, ideal, happiness or peace between subject and object partners? In this question lies a serious issue. On the one hand there is the subject partner and its path to live for the sake of the object partner, and on the other hand vice versa; between the two paths, where should the requirements of the ideal be placed? This question inevi-

tably poses a big challenge for God, the Creator.

God had to consider, with regard to the true ideal, love and peace, whether He should set the subject partner as the center and place the ideal origin in the object partner's living for the sake of the subject partner, or set the object partner as the center and place the ideal origin in the subject partner's living for the sake of the object partner. After considering, He decided that if He were to place the ideal origin as in the case of the former, not only Himself but all people in the world would need the object partner to live for themselves. In other words, all would become subject partners and not object partners. If this were to be the case, the path to unity would be blocked. You need to know this. (75-318, 1975.1.16)

Where is the path which leads to unity and the origin of peace? God had no choice but to establish the principle that not only Himself but also all human beings need to live for the sake of others. Hence, true love, as well as the true ideal, peace and happiness, can be achieved by doing that; they cannot be found in any other case. Until now, people have not known that this is the fundamental principle of the creation of heaven and earth. (75-318, 1975.1.16)

Why were men and women born? Men were not born for men but for women, and vice versa. We were not born for ourselves. Despite this, they assert themselves. Egoism should be demolished. Once that is done, the world can be unified. (61-265, 1972.9.1)

Those who follow the path of seeking to realize their value, not from their own viewpoint, but from that of their spouse, in other words, based on a reciprocal standard, are not unhappy people. Anywhere and anytime, their foundation of heart is within a reciprocal realm, and so they will not be lonely, but in a state of happiness. (59-200, 1972.7.16)

Harmony, enjoyment or happiness cannot come about if you are alone. Not even the Absolute Being can bring them about by Himself; He must have someone fulfilling the requirements of His partner. An absolute being needs an absolute counterpart – and an absolute subject partner an absolute object partner – for there to be happiness, harmony, joy, dancing and singing. (38-155, 1971.1.3)

Members of today's established churches boast, "The omniscient and omnipotent God is in essence the glorious Subject of all glories, the happy Subject of all happiness, and the Subject of all love and life, and so there is not a single thing that is not attributable to Him." Yet, though He may be the Absolute Being, without an absolute object partner He couldn't help but be unhappy. Even God Himself would end in failure if He could not find the one object partner which can stand in an absolute position. Without an absolute object partner, even the Absolute Being would inevitably be unhappy. That being so, in order not to end in failure, God has no

choice but to create the being that will be His partner. (38-157, 1971.1.3)

3.3. The world of creation is a museum of love for humankind

3.3.1. God's will in creating the universe

Everything in the world was created by God as the textbook to help His beloved children attain the ideal of love. Thus, it was created with a reciprocal structure. Minerals exhibit subject-object interaction, as do protons and electrons in the case of the atom. Nothing can continue in existence without engaging in action and motion. Thus, with human beings as the center, the universe is created to reach that central point. (137-59, 1985.12.18)

God first created all the things of the universe and then the progenitors of humankind in the Garden of Eden as their lords. In creating human beings, God did not intend them to be just a source of amusement or interest for Himself. We need to understand that the amount of effort and devotion He invested into not only creating human beings but in establishing them as the center representing all creation cannot be expressed in words. (20-205, 1968.6.9)

In creating humankind, God spared no pains, devoted all His energies and poured in the essence of His being, love and affection. He created them through a connection that could not be separated or severed by any amount of force. As He created human beings in this way, peace can rest with God as He casts His eyes upon them, and He can derive all joy and happiness only from them. (20-207, 1968.6.9)

God is the Father of humankind and we are His children. Since He poured in His bone of bones, flesh of flesh, and marrow of marrows into creating us, He could not help being drawn to us if we were to pull Him, any more than we could help being drawn to Him if He in turn pulled us. Within this bond, God created human beings to conform to the purpose of creation. If God were to compose an essay or a poem to praise human beings who had been created in this manner, that would be the greatest masterpiece which no poet or writer on earth could ever emulate. Its object would be neither God nor the creation itself, but humankind representing all creation. (20-207, 1968.6.9)

What is the universe? It symbolizes God's body, His visible body. It is His manifestation. Thus, the concept is established that we can really love it. We can wake up to the realization that we love the universe. Quite often you stroke your hair, and when something gets on your clothes, you brush it away. Why do you do so? It is because these things belong to you, they are a part of you, and so you naturally wish to take care of them. What you need to strive for from now on is to allow God to dwell in the center of your mind, become one with

your mind, your body, with all things, and achieve a unified world in this way. (86-173, 1976.3.28)

The vastness of the universe is measured in billions of light years. Light travels at a speed of 300,000 kilometers per second, and 300,000 kilometers is approximately seven and a half times the circumference of the earth. The distance traveled by light at such a speed in a whole year is termed one light year in astronomy. The universe is so vast that light traveling at such speed will go on for billions of years and still not reach the other end. (127-213, 1983.5.8)

So far the Greenwich Observatory has discovered stars that are ten billion light years away from our world, and the era has now dawned in which stars even fifteen billion light years away can be observed, and we will soon be able to discover others even further away.

The size of this vast universe is approximately 21 billion light years. This is a Principle number. That is how big it is. For your better understanding, we will say that the distance traveled in a day by light starting out from here is a light-day, in a month a light-month, and light travels 300 million meters in a second. To cover this distance, you would have to go around the planet seven and a half times. Seven and a half! With a snap of the fingers light would have already gone round the earth seven and a half times.

Light traveling at such speed will have backaches, will not be able to think at the end of the day, and will say, "I don't care." Consider then that it is traveling not just for one hundred light years, but tens of thousands of times that distance, 100 million light years. 100 million years would have passed by since it first set out, and during that time, one million people living consecutively to the age of one hundred would have died. Still light would not have ceased traveling.

Then how long is 21 billion light years? During that time, 210 million people living to one hundred would have died, and yet light would still be traveling. It does not go in a straight line; instead, it goes round and round. Such is the universe. (181-195, 1988.10.3)

3.3.2. The world of creation is the textbook of love for humankind

From the perspective of the standard of true love, Adam and Eve were to grow up observing and learning from the natural garden of love created within the pair system. They were to become aware of what they should do after they had grown up by looking at how everything was created. The creation is God's veritable museum, the museum of love for the education of Adam and Eve. They were to grow up watching how all creatures were born in pairs of male and female, even birds and butterflies, and how they developed affection for each other and brought forth their young.

Growing up and reaching full maturity, they were supposed to realize for themselves that the man is the prince of God's love representing plus and the

woman the princess of love representing minus. Then the woman would have thought to herself, "That man is the very man I need!" and learned to believe in him, just as he would have thought to himself about the woman, "She really is the woman who is essential to me!" (201-161, 1990.3.30)

From the perspective of the standard of true love, Adam and Eve were to grow up observing and learning from the natural garden of love created within the pair system. They were to grow up observing how all creatures were born in pairs of male and female, even birds and butterflies, how they developed affection for each other and brought forth their young. (201-356, 1990.4.30)

We grow from childhood to youth. Reaching adolescence, we start learning thenceforth. This is true for all of you. In your infancy, you don't know anything, and so as you grow you ask, "Mom, what is this?" or "Dad, what is that?" and in this way you get to find out and learn new things. After learning all about life in such a manner, the man then sees that everything in the world is in a pair system. He comes to realize, "Ah, the animal kingdom is in pairs, as are the insects and everything else in the world, even the flowers and minerals!" He awakens to the fact that "Yes, they are in the position of subject and object partners, they work accordingly, and as a result everything turns out in a certain way! It seems that I have to follow this path. Oh, that is not the right one!" (219-31, 1991.8.25)

As they grow, Adam and Eve learn about the world. As these two, son and daughter, grow up, they gaze on the world and find it to be a museum of love made in the pair system. They each learn from it. "Oh! Males and females like each other so much. Even the fly exists as male and female and the butterfly too; in fact, all of them exist in pairs. They all make love and reproduce!" Do you think they would have realized this or not? (200-246, 1990.2.25)

For what purpose did God create heaven and earth in the pair system? It is the museum of love, and through this He is telling us to live more happily than the birds, the insects, indeed more happily than anything else in the world. (200-57, 1990.2.23)

Every form of creation in this world exists in the pair system, and the environment created according to that system is the ideal museum of love for humankind. Hence, interaction in the world of minerals takes place only with appropriate counterparts. Trees and plants too engage in give and take action and reproduce with their counterparts. This is also the case for birds and even grasshoppers in the insect family. Don't grasshoppers sing too? (199-309, 1990.2.21)

As God created the world in a pair system, all elements are encompassed by man and woman. What is nature? It is a museum that teaches about love so that

man and woman can love. Therefore, if a man were to sing a song longing for his beloved wife, whatever song he sang would not be considered a sin. It would be a sin if he committed the Fall. When a family breaks up due to love problems and the heavenly principles are broken, that would be a sin; what would not be a sin is when a couple love each other on the foundation of these principles and pledge to each other, "I truly love you, for ever and evermore. You are my spouse for eternity." You should understand this clearly. (199-280, 1990.20.20)

This universe is made up within a pair system and is like a living museum created by the loving God. It is not filled with lifeless and ownerless antique souvenirs as those in the National Museum. It is filled with living souvenirs instead. (195-136, 1989.11.7)

There exists a True God, and everything created by Him is in a subject-object relationship so that they can satisfy the requirements of ideal love. Thus, every form of creation in this universe comes within the pair system. There are 'husbands and wives' even in minerals. Isn't that why they attract each other? You are hearing this for the first time, are you not? Even if the laboratory researcher were to turn into a tyrant and force together two incompatible chemical elements, they would not fuse together. Even the word, "Fuse!" from God would not do any good. However, if the elements are in accord with one another, they would fuse even if commanded, "Do not fuse, and do not become one!" From this we can see that everything exists in the pair system because of God's love. (177-271, 1988.5.20)

You need to realize that even minute forms of life such as insects exist in pairs based on love. The same is true of the mineral world. For what? For the sake of love. Even though they belong to a lower level of creation, they still, in their own way, reproduce through love. This universe is designed to function with its system of relationships intermeshed perfectly so as to realize God's ideal of creation through human beings. (293-308, 1998.6.7)

As everything laid out in the Garden of Eden was part of a pair system, Adam was to look at them and realize in due course, "Ah! I am a man, a male, for I look like a male; where then is the one that is like the female?" Then he was to look around and discover, "It is Eve!" and the two were to be married in God's presence. Then they would have remarked, "When a male and a female carry on like that, they give birth to their young!" There are many women who do not desire to get married, but nonetheless are fond of babies. (288-304, 1998.1.1)

Since everything in the Garden of Eden was created according to the pair system, Adam and Eve could see for themselves the animals mating and reproducing and would remark, "The females and males are making a loving environment together." Adam and Eve

would have learnt about love from them and so they would have eventually felt, "We should be with each other." While they were yet growing up, how complicated would it have been? Man is wild by nature, and so he climbed mountains and ran about, whereas the woman looked on from where she was sitting and stayed in the vicinity of their home every single day. Though different in character, they were meant to learn from the environment that surrounded them and be drawn to each other naturally. (278-280, 1996.5.26)

When Adam and Eve came to be aware that the whole world was composed of paired relationships, they were to realize that they could not live alone. Anyone can see that even deer and cows exist as male and female, and mate and reproduce. Since they saw how everything from the animal kingdom down to the insects, birds, bees, and flowers were all doing likewise, they did not need to be taught what they had already come to know. (246-58, 1993.3.23)

Each of your couples is like a brother and sister set of twins similar to Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden. There, Adam had nobody other than his younger sister. She was the only daughter with no friends in the world. With only one woman and one man in the Garden of Eden, Adam had to befriend Eve. They were elder brother and younger sister.

As Adam and Eve grew up, they were to learn how everything in the pair system grows and reproduces, and when they came to understand how the creation exists and develops, they were to awaken to the fact that they should love each other, become husband and wife, and consequently leave behind this tradition in future history. It was for the sake of future history and humanity that they were to become husband and wife. (243-177, 1993.1.3)

Adam and Eve were born to be God's object partners and children, yet had no elder siblings to guide them, did they? The woman was to educate herself, and the man was also to perfect himself. Educational materials for them could be found in abundance in heaven and on earth. As everything was created in the pair system, the man would look at them and learn that, "That is how we should grow!" and the woman would also gaze at them and come to know naturally, "That is how we should grow!" Nature displays plainly, like a museum, all the educational material about love, as everything in nature is in pairs. (228-268, 1992.7.5)

Reciprocity must be included in the vertical standard. There is a reciprocal partner within that standard. Yet Adam and Eve must first grow up and become fully mature. Everything in this world is created within the pair system. This is true right across the mineral, plant and animal kingdoms. The human world too, forms part of this pair system, as represented by man and woman.

The natural world is a museum of love, where the creation is made up in pairs,

though at a lower level than humankind. Then why was this museum of love created? For whom was it made? That is the question. It was made for human beings and for God. Hence, God can experience the sensation of love in everything encompassing the mineral, plant and animal worlds. (238-29, 1992.11.19)

Man and woman have to walk the path to maturity individually. The man only realizes he has to marry a woman when he sees everything in the pair system living together and giving birth to their young. With the coming of spring, he observes cows, pigs, dogs, cats, mice and even locusts doing so and exclaims, "Oh, that's how it is! One alone isn't enough!" He is awakened, or as we say, enlightened to this fact. So far, man and woman had only directed their attentions toward each other obliquely, but then they realize, "Ah, the one I need is Adam!" and "The one I need is Eve!" (229-321, 1992.4.13)

The environment is made up of a pair system of subject and object partners without exception. The universe is a museum with love as its nucleus, a museum of pairs. For this reason, when you see a pair of birds in love with each other building a nest, laying eggs and feeding their young, you should learn from them. You should be able to say, "I will do hundreds of times more for my children than the birds." Even with insects, male and female mate and reproduce. They raise their young at the risk of their lives. That is education. (229-287, 1992.4.13)

As they grew to maturity, Adam and Eve were meant to see the creation around them and come to learn that Adam was to be Eve's spouse, and she his. Adam, by nature, liked to go out and conduct himself in an extrovert fashion. He wanted to hunt and be in command wherever he went. How about Eve? Her intrinsic character was totally different from this. As they grew up in this manner, they were to learn what they ought to know as woman and man. Everything in the world is created in such a way. Aren't the mineral, plant and animal kingdoms all created in the pair system? This is what Adam and Eve were to learn. As they grew, they perceived that everything they cast their eyes on has a reciprocal relationship with an object or subject, and that they understand this truth without being taught. (225-201, 1992.1.20)

Who teaches about love? It is nature that teaches about it. The animals running about in the garden are male and female, as are the butterflies; in short, everything exists in pairs. When the flowers bloom, then in the beautiful garden can be heard the twittering and chirruping of birds. Why do they do so? For what purpose do the male and female birds sing? Who are they trying to call? There are three reasons for the singing of birds. One is for hunger, another for love, and the last to call their young. These are the three reasons. They do so out of love. (208-251, 1990.11.20)

In order to be in the realm of reci-

procity toward perfected Adam and Eve, all creation in this universe also needs to be constructed in a similar way to them, and thus is made up within the pair system. It all exists in pairs. Adam is the great plus and the forms of creation are the little pluses spread out in all directions. For this reason, humankind and the creation are identical in the respect that they were created with reciprocal relationships. When human beings and all creation achieve balance centered on the absolute Subject, God can descend upon them vertically. (230-252, 1992.5.8)

Is it wonderful to be awakened by the twittering of the sparrows rather than on one's own? How poetic is that? What do you like better: to sing by yourself or to hear someone else sing? Isn't that poetic too? To hear birds twitter rather than to twitter yourself and to have your beloved awake you rather than to wake up by yourself; would it be ideal to wake up to various tunes of harmony? So the birds are my friends too. What makes them my friends? In view of the pair system, they can become my friends. Man and woman are also a pair. How poetic is that when you consider birds as being friends? (177-271, 1988.5.20)

Seeing everything in the world existing in pairs and reproducing themselves accordingly, Adam and Eve understand that they too should come together when they have attained full maturity. Before that time, they are not aware of it. Adam and Eve are living together all by themselves. When we consider their characters, Adam is masculine and extrovert. When he wakes up in the morning, he likes to go out to the mountains and catch rabbits, pheasants, deer, and snakes to cut their stomachs open. In order to become the future master and manage everything, he needs to know all there is to know. So he desires to find out what there is in the mountains, what animals can be found there, and what kinds of fish live in the waters. Being a man, he needs to investigate anything and everything to become their lord. (262-74, 1994.7.23)

God enjoyed Himself as He created the universe. How much fun would it have been? How interesting would it have been for Him as He created everything in the pair system, and saw that even the cells came together in pairs in their love for each other? A well-taken picture gives endless pleasure to its photographer; how much more pleasurable, then, would it be to see the real creation talk and dance with joy? (283-102, 1997.4.8)

In bringing up the man and woman He had created within His embrace, God provided for them the servant, the archangel, to protect and raise them. When they had reached full maturity, He had meant to marry them, but not before that time. In order to accomplish this, they were born separately, with the man raised as a man and the woman as a woman. After they were fully grown, they would gaze intently at the world and see that the mineral, animal and plant kingdoms were all created in the

pair system according to the ideal reciprocal relationships. They were meant to look at them and learn, "Ah! The animals all pair up, have their offspring, and live happily. Wow, the mother risks her own life to protect and nurture her young. We should do so as well!" Hence, nature is the exhibiting museum for the ideal development of Adam and Eve. (262-74, 1994.7.23)

When you enter the deepest level of the realm of true love, you can communicate even with the rocks and all the rest of creation. In the world of true love, all things would be able to communicate with one another. Why? It is because everything was created according to the pair system in order to relate to God's love. True love is bound to resonate. When you are within the realm of true love, you would feel God's internal and external worlds. As such, without being taught you will naturally get to know everything there is to know about the spirit world and God, and how to attend your Parents and the nation of God in your earthly life. The path of love is not meant to be trodden haphazardly. There is a formula, for there is but one path for love and no other. The path of true love to be pursued by human beings and the path of true love led by God and the heavenly world is one and the same. As He descends, we ascend the same way. Then where will we meet Him? We must meet at the place where we have attained full maturity. There is only one meeting point. Where should we meet in order to attain oneness with Him? It is right at that spot, and no other place. That is where we should meet Him. (238-31, 1992.11.19)

After speaking a while about the theory of love, it becomes clear that everything can be explained by it. It is the highest knowledge. In coming to understand the theory of love, we have learnt that this entire world is made up of a pair system. Isn't the mineral world made up of positive and negative ions? They are pairs. For what purpose are they paired? They were created in this way for the sake of love corresponding to their respective levels, as only then can reproduction take place.

Similarly, there are males and females in the animal kingdom, and men and women in the case of humankind. Why were they created like this? Love did not come into being just for women or just for men, but for both! This is how it should be. The wicked people that deny this proposition are the minions of hell and destruction. (221-257, 1991.10.25)

Section 4. Evolution or Creation?

4.1. The fundamental error of the theory of evolution

4.1.1. Strict distinction of species and absolute rejection of intervention

How far back does history go? Does it post-date or pre-date the theory of evolution? What is the theory of evolution? Sparrows and buntings are cousins.

They are the same. Their bone structure as well as every other feature is exactly alike. What differs between the two is the color of their feathers; everything else, even their sexual organs and eyes is identical. Be that as it may, if they were told to do so, would the sparrow and the bunting be able to exchange their mates with one another, make love and reproduce? Would they be able to do so even if they tried for thousands of years or not? (232-126, 1992.7.3)

Sparrows and buntings are siblings. How about that? This statement is 100 percent correct when compared to monkeys and human beings. Then if a sparrow were to mate with a bunting, would they give birth to a new kind of bird? Scholars all over the world believe that because our outward appearances and structures are similar we must have evolved. They deny the logic that everything has developed through lovemaking between male and female and their resultant reproduction. How complicated do you all think the sexual organs are? With most fish, the females and males do not come into physical contact at all. It is different on land. (199-307, 1990.2.21)

How old is the planet earth in this solar system? It has been revolving for billions of years, and yet has it ever been off-course by the merest trifle? It is right on course day after day. In the same way, all creation follows its rhythm. Would the building of nests be the same for American sparrows and Korean sparrows, or would they be different? Answer me: same or different? They would be the same. In terms of evolutionary theory, the nest building of sparrows should develop with time, shouldn't it? If so, then how is it that they have been building their nests in the same way for thousands and tens of thousands of years? How do they know about building their nests? The swallows build their nests in their own way, as do the sparrows and the orioles. In the latter case, they build their nests on trees. (179-246, 1988.8.12)

If you were to bring together a male king orangutan and an ugly woman, marry them, and make them pray and offer devotions for thousands of years, would they ever have offspring? Would they be able to produce a baby? Give me an answer, you descendants of monkeys, communist gangsters! Do you think that offspring could be produced from the marriage of an orangutan and a woman, if the communist world were to pray and implement all kinds of force, or do you think that impossible? If you do not know, don't insist upon communism or evolutionary theory. You should all wise up to that. (262-80, 1994.7.23)

To go from the level of an amoeba to that of a monkey, gates of love for thousands of species need to be passed through upward. Evolutionary theory has ignored this fact. Would it be possible to move freely from one to the other without passing through different species? Can birds mate with insects? Can birds ascend within the animal kingdom without crossing boundaries? It

makes no sense to claim such a thing just because the bone structure is the same, and omit the fact that they need to grow through the relationship of love, the gates of love. Would interspecific mating bring forth better offspring? It would only produce inferior breeds. The problem arising here is that these people do not know about the love relationship. (254-264, 1994.2.15)

The differentiation of species is very strict. There are thousands of species between amoebae and monkeys. Each of these species brings forth their young through the gates of the females and males, which means thousands of births. The thinking that one could go from one species to another disregarding the levels of thousands of species would suggest that it could all be done within one birth, a notion that is completely wrong because it denies the fact that the gates of love need to be passed through. How can an amoeba pass through the gates of love for thousands of species and become a human being? Would similar bone structures make all the other characteristics similar too? Similar bone structures can be found everywhere. Stop saying such crazy things. (266-39, 1994.12.4)

Considering the origin of species from the viewpoint of present-day evolutionary theory, we can definitely say that a species cannot come about just like that. There must be a male and female. This is true for the mineral world as well. For a substance to be formed, the positive ion must fuse with the negative ion. There must be positive and negative, male and female. (213-63, 1991.1.14)

Re-creation involves the creation of an environment with subject and object partners, followed by corresponding developments. This is how evolutionary theory should also develop; it cannot develop as it is. Subject and object partners must unite, be absorbed into something greater, and pass through the gates of love. According to this principle, to progress from the loveless amoeba to the human being thousands of levels need to be passed through, and these gates of love cannot be crossed just like that. (230-68, 1992.4.19)

Today's evolutionary theory states that amoeba developed and evolved into human beings. What should we think about this? In order for male and female to reach the level of humankind, they need to pass through the several thousand stages on the path of love. People are ignorant of this. The boundaries between different species are very strict. Would it be possible, then, to pass through them at a run and evolve like that? (209-29, 1990.11.25)

Is there anyone among you who would like to have some other man meddle with your wife? It is the same in the case of animals and plants. Is it common or absolute to answer no? When you say absolute, you are leaving no space for anything else. Different species are of completely different levels. The amoeba came into being through the gates of

love of male and female; how then can it be connected to and give rise to another species? Can it ascend just like that? It must pass through the gates of love. Can it ignore that system and just evolve? You Western rascals look like monkeys – and that is how they came up with evolutionary theory. That's right; the hair on your heads and bodies is brown like a monkey's! (216-247, 1991.4.7)

Love is absolute. It is just for the two beings and does not want the intervention of a third. From this viewpoint, the amoeba is connected to humankind through the process of love in several thousands of stages. Love is the source of continued existence. Would not everything fall to pieces if there were no love? The amoeba lives only one year, but its existence is continued in the form of its descendants through love. Would you like to have a third party intervene at the gates of love to produce a multi-colored amoeba? If a monkey and human mated, would they ever produce their young if they lived for a thousand years or not? Not even ten thousand years, let alone a thousand, will see them giving birth to offspring. So I say stop talking nonsense. (222-185, 1991.11.3)

The theory of evolution could not be justified even in the insect world, if you were to disregard the principle that the male-female relationship underwent a process of development to ever higher stages, that is, through the countless gates of love that exist between the amoeba and the monkey, and consequently caused these species to be totally disconnected. You can see how even the sparrow fits into this scale of reciprocal relationships. During times like winter, they do not care about mating, and so they fool around, each of them as a different plus; however, when spring comes they build their nests and form a close relationship, that is, they become absolute. Male and female unite to absolutely drive out any third sparrow that comes their way. When another female comes, the male drives her out, and when another male comes, the female drives him out. Why? They instinctively drive out any intruder which threatens to break their respective reciprocal realm within the universal principle. (218-338, 1991.8.22)

Flowering plants all belong to their respective species and do not change themselves into a different type. They cannot change. In view of this, the distinction between species is very strict. That is why the logic of the evolutionary theory, which states that the monkey evolved from the amoeba, cannot stand. With this strict distinction between all the species, how could thousands of them connect and develop in a single system supported by them all? The evolutionary theory does not recognize the power of love. Only through the power of love does reproduction become possible. Without it, nothing could ever reproduce. How can the power of love work between amoebae and monkeys? Such a thing can never happen – not under any circumstances. (278-100, 1996.5.1)

If amoebae were to evolve into monkeys, could the former develop into the latter on its own? What would need to happen in order to pass through the many different species? Without rising to new levels of love, it would not be possible to go from one to the other. Another, greater species cannot come from something lesser. Only by passing through the countless stages of love of male and female could they reach the higher species. If, in the world of distinct species, the principled concept of plus and minus does not allow the invasion by a third party into the love relationship, then amoebae cannot climb to a higher level on their own. (237-135, 1992.11.13)

Evolution is about producing a different species, but without going through the relationship of love, there is no way another species can come into being. The distinction between species is very strict. (302-181, 1999.6.13)

Evolutionary theory must be demolished with a single blow. They are discussing it in terms of their own arbitrary theories. Calling humankind the offspring of monkeys! Those no-goods! People are meant to serve God for eternity. What on earth are they talking about monkeys for? There are forty-seven differences between monkeys and human beings. There cannot be changes in quality or species. For all that, if a monkey were to mate with a human being, would they give birth to a human or a monkey? Of course not! The origin of species is absolute. (299-90, 1999.2.5)

Why does the universe exist according to the pair system? Naturally so, say the evolutionary theorists, and that is all well and good. What is the more familiar truth that came before evolutionary theory? Men and women have genitals, the sexual organs. Have these organs evolved? If they had, then the way of lovemaking should have changed as well. People of this present age should have a more developed way of doing so than those of the past. Even in the insect kingdom, the lovemaking should be different today from what it was in the past. The birds, too, should mate in a different way. Discussions should be held based on such factors. Are the love organs, which are the origin of life, made to develop evolutionarily? They are crazy. (191-53, 1989.6.24)

The strictness of differentiation between created species in the realm of love cannot be violated by anything in the cosmos. With the coming of spring, pairs of male and female sparrows start building nests to lay their eggs. They do not allow any third party, whether bird or other animal to meddle in their affairs. Is there any man or woman here who would like to have his or her best friend present on the night of his or her wedding day? Evolutionary theory is not true. To a woman getting married, there is no one else closer to her in this world than her mother and so she may think, "I must have her with me whether I live or die! I want to be with her no matter what

happens." Yet that just cannot be. Even such a woman would not ask her mother on her wedding night, "Mom, please stay with me tonight." Would there be a woman who does? The intervention of a third person is absolutely unnecessary. That is the traditional and original standard of love that should be observed by humankind. (228-154, 1992.3.27)

How complicated do you all think the sexual organs are? In terms of their structural development and shape, the sexual organs for sparrows, buntings and wagtails are identical. Well then, what would come from the mating of a sparrow and a wagtail? Is that even possible? The rascals, they are talking about things they have no knowledge of. If I were to argue with them, after exchanging a few words they would be struggling to give answers. Those scoundrels! Females and males! If we were to say that everything developed from the amoeba, how can we explain the existence of females and males, convex and concave? Why is it that all things are made in such a way that they can only reproduce by giving and receiving through these organs? Who determined that? Was it the evolutionists? They do not realize that formation of the origin of life, the internal energy, takes place through the unified foundation of male and female life forms, and is so great that it goes beyond the universal view. There are forty-seven differences between monkeys and human beings, or so I have heard. If the two were to mate, could they have offspring? When I posed this question to the communists in my schooldays, none of them could give me an answer! I could go on telling you hundreds of such stories, but there is not enough time. Such nonsense is unacceptable. (198-24, 1990.1.25)

Can evolution take place based on the isotope of the structural shape? No, it cannot. Why? In the case of the amoeba, it is impossible for it to be elevated to a higher level without passing through the path of love of male and female. The bunting and the sparrow are similar in appearance, but does that mean that one evolved from the other? Their feet and beaks are identical in shape. You cannot differentiate one from the other. Be that as it may, would anything come of the mating of a female bunting and a male sparrow? What would be produced from the marriage of a white man with a female orangutan? Would they bring forth their young or would they not? Answer me, evolutionists! You need to know that developments can only come about through the sexual organs. Ponder this when you get home tonight. Do you know how complicated the sexual organs are? Within them are concentrated all neural components necessary for all types of formations of that particular species. (199-253, 1990.2.20)

People today believe that humankind evolved and developed; however, taking the amoeba as an example, they did not begin to develop with just one, for only when a male and female animal interact can development take place. The evolutionary theory is a big problem. In order

to advance from a lower class of existence to a higher one, it would be necessary to pass through all the different levels of love between male and female. In other words, one would have to pass through a great number of levels of love. You all know that a sparrow and a bunting are very similar. Their features are of slightly different hues, but other than that, their bone structure is identical. For all that, if you were to mate a sparrow with a bunting, would they reproduce? Evolutionists, give me an answer. Try mating them. They will never reproduce. Westerners have comparatively more hair, but then would the marriage of a Western man and a female gorilla produce a child? Never. (201-146, 1990.3.30)

The differentiation of species is strict; hence, we can realize that monkeys are not our ancestors as the evolutionists are claiming. One cannot develop from an amoeba into a human just like that; it would be necessary to pass through countless levels of love in innumerable stages. The law of love applies in the same way to the animal kingdom. The intervention of a third party is absolutely not permitted. However, the question remains whether one can evolve by stages. In the action of energy, the output is smaller than the input. So, if engaging in action results in a minus, how could something greater arise from it? Isn't that so? Nothing of its own ability can come together with a third entity that would allow it to develop. (212-308, 1991.1.8)

Would the amoeba like to have something else come along and involve itself in its procreative relationship? That is why one cannot deny the logic that no such connection can be made between species. Before speaking of the meaning of evolution, if the sexual organs of males and females were removed, evolutionary theory would crumble at the roots. As there were males and females before evolution occurred, the interaction of relational factors bringing about evolution could go on. (221-291, 1991.10.26)

Did the male and female organs evolve into the present state where they can harmonize with each other? This evolutionary theory is the problem. Does the connection of those organs create a path for an amoeba to come into a relationship with something on a higher level? Can it meet with anything and everything, not just horizontally but in every other way? Of course not. The world of males and females came into being based on the concept of love and is on a level completely unrelated to evolution. (222-39, 1991.10.27)

In the world of love, it is the law of nature never to permit the presence of a third party; one must be alone with one's partner. This is the case for sparrows and insects as well. Then, from the viewpoint based on evolutionary theory, how many ascending orders of love in thousands of stages are there between amoebae and human beings? Are there not thousands of species of insects? From plants to insects, there are thousands of species. Yet there are people who believe

that these thousands of species and human beings evolved from amoebae through continuous development. Not at all! Several thousands of stages of love need to be passed through. The distinction of species is very strict. What, human beings evolved from amoebae? Those impostors! (227-296, 1992.2.14)

All beings were created in pairs. What would evolutionists say if you asked them, "Why did males come into being?" They will answer, "They came into being naturally," which shows they are out of their minds. Did they come into being naturally? All males and females came into existence in order to reproduce their own species, not others. Monkeys do not become human beings, and snakes do not turn into frogs. Is that right or wrong? Evolutionists are ignorant people, who do not know that males and females relate on a specific level of love for their species. You know about males and females. Did they come to be like that for no purpose? (209-193, 1990.11.29)

In an environment, there must be subject and object partners, and they must unite and form an interactive relationship as such. Simply put, subject and object partners must build a reciprocal relationship. Thus, one cannot live alone. One's mind and body are in a relationship of subject and object partners. If the subject does not recognize the object, no connection can be made. Even in the world of chemistry, if there is no affinity between two elements, then however much they are forced to fuse together in the laboratory, nothing will come of it. If they are compatible, they will fuse together instantaneously on contact. (291-112, 1998.3.5)

The differentiation between species is very strict. Suppose a bird that is similar in appearance to a frog goes to the world of frogs and suggests to one of them, "Will you mate with me?" Would that frog answer, "By all means!"? Wouldn't it run away or fight? Such a thing could not happen. Evolutionary theory denies the fact that it is impossible for a new species to be born without passing through the gates of love in going from the amoeba to the monkey. In other words, if what it insists is true, then the amoeba must have passed through several thousands of gates of love. Can it do that? They are completely out of their minds. That is why communism disintegrated before me. I am curious to know how they will answer the question: "What comes first, reason or being?" Does mind come first or matter? You learnt about evolutionary theory at school, didn't you? It is wrong. Evolutionary theory is wrong. Now I will start a revolution. (274-67, 1995.10.29)

Have we perceived that, in reproduction, there has been a process of development in the relational world of plus and minus, and that the concept of male and female was there before evolution was theoretically possible? Since, in terms of love, the distinction between species is strict, a third party cannot intervene. According to evolutionary theory, one must cross over the several thousand

stages from the amoeba to the monkey; however, there is no way this can be done. Given that only after passing through thousands of gates of love can that seed of development be connected, is it possible for an amoeba to give rise to a monkey? That is absolutely impossible. (245-62, 1993.2.28)

If you acknowledge evolutionary theory, you are ignoring the fact that several thousand stages must be passed through between the amoeba and a human being. Even when you are in the same stage, you cannot just pass through. Each of these stages is connected through thousands of gates of love. Has the invasion of a third party ever been allowed in love? No, it has not. Have you ever met a bride who said, "Mother, please stay with me tonight!" on her wedding night? It is the same for the husband. Even a man who used to say, "I hate it when my father is not with me!" will not ask his father, "Father, please stay with me tonight!" on his wedding night. Love abhors the intervention of a third party. This is also true for the animal kingdom and the insect world. In view of this, there is no way that human beings or anything else but a monkey can be born from the species of monkeys. (239-231, 1992.11.25)

However much a professor researching chemistry in the laboratory commands, "Hey you, fuse this element with that one!" nothing will come of it. Elements do not fuse if their relational requirement is not satisfied. No reaction will take place because they only come together when one can be the subject of the other. Although this is a principle of existence, in order to explain the formation of the universe, people have irresponsibly come up with the theory of evolution, which is a load of rubbish. At this point, we need to acknowledge the fact that original universal power creates the energy of interaction of all existence. (117-74, 1982.2.1)

Monkeys and human beings are different at the roots. Do monkeys lead cultural lives? Ever since the onset of life, human beings have followed religion. Do monkeys try to unite the world through culture? Do they invade and occupy other nations as their own or build national boundaries to distinguish between their nation and others? Do they or not? They are different in kind from human beings. Do monkeys glorify God? All they like to do is eat and reproduce and that is it. Human beings and monkeys are completely different. The scholars and experts asserting evolutionary theory are deceiving others in unduly persisting that monkeys evolved into people. The Unification Church should clarify that their assertions are wrong and set things to right. (41-185, 1971.2.15)

4.1.2. Laws of the action of energy and the fabrications of evolutionary theory

Evolutionary theory is used to explain today's world, but in order for amoebae to reproduce species that are greater than themselves in their present state,

an extra input of energy must be added. In short, additional energy is necessary. Can the amoeba induce additional energy, all by itself, in order to develop? Does it have such ability? For it to climb a little higher and become something bigger, it needs greater energy within itself. Then, since it does not have the ability to create additional energy by itself, from where would it procure this extra energy? Can such logic be established? Whether it is Mr. Kim or Mr. Park, if a man claims, "I can knock down Muhammad Ali in a heartbeat," would he really be able to do so? In order for him to do so, he would need to acquire a greater capability compared with the inherent force he currently possesses, as there would be limits as to what he could do as he is. If Mr. Park were to claim, "When I grow stronger through mutation I will knock Ali down," do you think that is likely to ever happen? Do you? (89-73, 1976.7.11)

Taking into consideration the principle of the dissipation of energy, can input be equal to output for human beings? Energy enters the body to carry out actions; can that energy be equal to that left after the action has been carried out? Is it consumed in the process of action? Does motion consume energy? Thus, output cannot be equal to input, but is always less than before. Evolutionists imply that energy increases with action. Such a formula does not exist. If it were true, this world would be turned upside down. Hence, an external source of additional energy would be necessary. (55-254, 1972.5.9)

Evolutionists say that the amoeba evolved gradually into a higher animal, the monkey, and that the monkey evolved into the human being. Think about it. In order for a human being to exert superhuman force, he needs to have the extra energy supplemented from somewhere else. Such is the principle of energy. Energy is inevitably consumed with action. Only when extra energy is added can action be carried out anew. (38-155, 1971.1.3)

In principle, a subject and object will not interact if by doing so they will be worse off compared with before; they will only interact after they have discovered a mutual purpose that will leave them better off after the action. Considering evolutionary theory with this in mind, we can perceive that if a purpose cannot be found for the betterment of a being through evolution, development would not take place. In order for development to occur, a greater level of energy must be invested through the horizontal relationship. Otherwise, there can be no development. That energy will be of no use without a purpose and object of action. (54-11, 1972.3.9)

What is contradictory in evolutionary theory? In order for the amoeba to evolve and develop, it requires energy. It needs an external source of energy in order to grow gradually. For it to be able to say, "I will be born as a being of the stage above, as a higher being!" then something extraneous must be added there. Without additional energy input,

it cannot grow. It needs energy from outside itself. The question is, can the amoeba grow and continue to live, and, at the same time, generate enough energy for itself to become a greater being? Such a thing can never happen. (265-58, 1994.11.20)

How do developments take place in evolutionary theory? This theory is completely opposite to the principle of input and output. How can there be such a theory in the world? Is evolutionary theory not all about developing to a higher level? Does evolution mean becoming a lower form of life? According to the theory, the amoeba came into existence naturally and gradually grew larger and evolved into a monkey, which in turn evolved and developed into a human being. In this process, as described by evolutionary theory, does it grow bigger or smaller? On the other hand, the principle of energy absolutely dictates that something bigger cannot be produced from a process where input and output are equal; rather, whatever energy was originally applied would naturally become less than before as it was consumed. (37-16, 1970.12.22)

In thermodynamics, if a process occurs based on the input and output of energy, a loss must be incurred, that is, the energy level will decrease. So what I want to know is: from where does the logic arise that it will increase? The term "evolution" suggests that with the passage of time some elements are added to a being, and with that addition it becomes greater; the question is, from where did those additional elements come? Where can you find the logic that justifies output as being greater than input? Action entails a loss, and so input must exceed output. From this perspective, the logic of evolution cannot be established. Created beings cannot take in another source of energy in this process. In the world of motion output that is greater than input can never be produced, for if it were possible, it would give rise to unlimited power.

What is the next problem? People today who believe in the theory of evolution have forgotten that everything came into being through the intercourse and interaction of plus and minus, man and woman, stamen and pistil, and positive and negative ions. There are gates of love in thousands of stages to be passed through in going from the level of an amoeba to that of a human being. However, these people think that it took nothing to go from one to the other. Nonsensical rascals! The principles relating to all species are strict: no beings permit third-party intervention. (214-193, 1991.2.2)

If the theory of evolution is to be upheld, all beings should be able to supply themselves with the energy necessary to evolve, for without extra energy, they would not have enough power within themselves to cause their nuclei to change and combine to form new features within themselves, hence the conclusion that evolution is impossible. (117-72, 1982.2.1)

A subject and its object always have

a common purpose and direction, yet what purpose and direction can there be in evolution? This principle cannot be applied to evolutionary theory. Thus, we should demolish communism through understanding this purpose and direction. Communism has tried to ravage the world with this sham theory. When the amoeba engages in action, the energy it produces will be less than the input, so how can it become something greater? How can some higher-level being come out of it? In the amoeba, the output is less than the input, and so in order for it to create something greater, a source of energy from outside would be necessary. Otherwise, the basis for evolutionary theory will collapse. Does the amoeba have the ability to take in energy from an outside source which would lead to qualitative changes? Those ridiculous good-for-nothings! (210-155, 1990.12.18)

Speaking of the theory of evolution, do you think it is possible for an evolving amoeba on its own to create a new resource which would be the starting point of evolution? Action and motion take place around three points, plus, minus and a new source of energy, then another point, the fourth base, the evolved being, needs to emerge to complete the circle. The one in action must go from the third point to the fourth, that is, it must interact and move in a circle. Yet can the amoeba have enough energy to go around 360 degrees and return to its original position on a new level? It cannot.

Then who has invested the energy for this third point? Logically speaking, this means that energy from another source must be added there. So, what direction should evolution take? Who determines this direction? The evolving amoeba cannot set a direction for itself. In view of this, that which has been termed as mutation is the raving of lunatics. Who would listen to it? Nowadays, the theory of evolution is an obsolete phrase, rotten to the core and lying in the dustbin where it belongs. I should say: it is the thinking of the cesspit. (209-187, 1990.11.29)

Today's physics has advanced to a point where it is asserting dualism, that all atoms have awareness. This logic is similar in essence to the Unification Church's principle of dual characteristics. Albeit on different levels, all creation has comprehension. Is that not true? Only on this basis can such things like germs go on existing. Do you think so? Would those germs, invisible to the naked eye and several thousandths of a millimeter in size, have ears? Would they have eyes? Would they have noses? How about mouths? Would they have sexual organs or would they not? They have all of those features. (209-187, 1990.11.29)

In creating this world, God began with three points. From this perspective, we cannot accept the theory of evolution or the term "evolution." If the amoeba were to engage in action, it could not choose the third point base by itself, as that is created by another source of

energy. If it were to initiate motion in such a state, this motion would have to become circular, which means the number of points would need to be increased for it to become spherical motion. (212-277, 1991.1.8)

Evolutionists! Those ideas should be extirpated. Is there anyone here who believes in evolutionary theory? Learned people like professors are more than willing to believe in it. Why is this so? However much force is applied, two objects that do not complement each other cannot interact or become one; not even God Himself can bring them together! Why? Such is the law of the universe! Why? Being created based on the ideal of love with everything given its complementarities, the universe operates on a pair system.

Did human beings evolve from amoebae? There can be no harmony on a straight line. It would take a long time to explain this logically. How can three points be made lineally? How can the third and fourth points be made to create a diamond shape which allows this harmony to come about? Where does a circle come from? It cannot arise from a straight line. Does the amoeba have energy within itself to choose and form the third point? It does not. The amoeba can only relate on the plus-minus level between two points on a straight line. (211-254, 1990.12.30)

From the position of an amoeba, several thousand steps extend upward according to the laws of love; how then can the amoeba pass through all the gates of love to the level of love of man and woman? It cannot. The problem in evolutionary theory is the question of where energy is derived extraneously. Extending the range of species is made possible only after crossing over the hills of love, so did it pass through the gates or go over them and become a monkey? The next question is this: there are males and females for everything and even in the case of minerals and chemical elements there exist plus and minus; so was evolutionary theory there before the relational concept of plus and minus? The answer is: no, it came after the concept. Then the subject-object relationship in this universe must be acknowledged. Nothing can exceed its limits. (263-273, 1994.10.15)

Harmony cannot be created on a straight line. A straight line is formed by connecting two points. For creation to take place there must be three or four points forming the dimensions of space. Who created this third point? Can the straight line create it? Give me an answer: who set the third point above and the third point below? This is how all developments in the creation of the universe can be brought about. What this means is that any action requires subject and object partners, which is why nothing can happen without them.

What is the next question in line? In thermodynamics, input always exceeds output. Then where is the logic that when an amoeba engages in development, its output is greater? It should not

increase, but decrease. In this regard, evolutionary theory should be revised. (215-232, 1991.2.18)

There is no harmony between two points on a straight line. Only with the appearance of a third point can the basis of harmony for the spherical world be established. The ability to create a third point is absent in evolutionary theory. As such, you need to understand that there are laws that do not allow us to disregard creation. Such things cannot be found on the points of a straight line. (227-267, 1992.2.14)

In view of the creation of the universe, when we consider how the base of the third point, creative energy, could be established on the original linear form of existence, we realize it is impossible to conclude that the universe began as described by the theory of evolution. The creation of the universe in fact began from this third point. The existence of these three points indicates that there is a nucleus, the third point, connecting to all existing beings as objects. (227-30, 1992.2.10)

Evolution is an outdated, obsolete theory. It has no ultimate direction. From the perspective based on there being direction and purpose, it would signify that the path bringing mutual benefit to both realms of plus and minus has been determined. That is the central path, and at the same time, the path of righteousness. In short, that is the path preferred by both realms.

Evolutionists have failed to find a solution to the argument based on the relationship of input and output. They have also been unable to suggest a direction concerning evolution. On pondering whether the amoeba has within itself the power to invoke a source of energy in order to develop into a being greater than itself, the answer is that it does not. Do not waste time talking about it. The direction for such creative development is the direction of love. (207-256, 1990.11.11)

In drawing some conclusions about the theory of evolution, we can ask the question: in order to evolve, does the amoeba create an internal source of energy through which it can develop or have the energy supplied to it? For it to evolve and develop from the present state, a source of energy must be added to the amoeba, but does it create this energy to develop or does it receive this energy from somewhere else? It is undeniable logic that if it cannot create that energy, it would need to be supplied with it.

Is it indisputable that one being evolved from another just because the two have the same bone structures? Those who claim this are totally crazy. They are lunatics. You need to understand that there are different classes of several thousands of species between the amoeba and the monkey. In short, there is distinction between species. What this means is that all species are differentiated and continue to exist through the gates of love of male and female. Then can it be claimed that just because

the bone structure of one resembles that of another, one evolved from the other, disregarding the fact that the gates of love for thousands of species need to be passed through in order for them to be connected? Have they passed through those thousands of levels of love in order to achieve development? (263-273, 1994.10.15)

When you are born, do you have your eyes closed or open? Then did you decide when you would open your eyes or did you do so naturally? Were you taught to suckle the breasts of your mother for milk or not? If not, how did you come to do so? There is an invisible magnetic bond there, that is to say, there is a principled path for everything that engages in action. In view of this, we need to understand that all actions do not take place by mere chance.

Evolutionists today say, "The universe developed on its own. It came into being naturally." The question is: how could it come into being naturally? How could it just develop from nothing? Can it come into existence without a cause, motive, process or result? Motive and cause come first, and then direction. Then why does direction come in here? Does a baby go a certain way with the consciousness, "I should go this way"? Why do the eyes open? As soon as your eyes are opened, do you look inwards or outwards? Why should you look that way? Where does such direction come from? How does it come about? From this, we can perceive that beings exist to follow a certain purpose. (94-10, 1977.6.19)

We cannot even answer all the questions about our eyes. These questions cannot be solved through dialectics and current evolutionary theory. From now, you will need to grapple with communism, and demolish evolutionary theory and dialectics. If you crush the former, the latter will collapse automatically. What is the current argument? It is the question of what comes first: mind or matter? The communist world claims, "Matter is superior, and so it comes first," and the democratic world says, "Mind comes first."

With regard to how the eyes came to be, those who think, "They came about just because they wanted to" are completely mad. Why are the eyes able to move while the nose cannot? When the question is asked, "Why do the eyes move?" the dialectical evolutionary answer would be, "Because they want to." The purpose of the eyes is to see, and because such is their purpose, they need to move. In short, they move to fulfill their purpose. The nose remains still even when dust falls on it, whereas the eyes blink repeatedly. Why do they do so? It is to moisten the eyeballs because their moisture evaporates and leaves them dry. Why are there eyelashes? They exist so as to block dust from entering the eyes. To the question, "Why is it like that?" the evolutionary dialectical answer would be because it wanted to be that way. It is not as simple as that. If the eye sees anyone who says he came to be like he is because he wanted to, it would tell him, "You mad scoundrel, stop talking nonsense!" (93-176, 1977.5.29)

4.1.3. Theory of evolution refuted by the logic of love

We need to resolve the issue of evolutionary theory. It is a problem because the concepts of evolution and realism have been used as tools by communism. What is invisible is truly precious. Can you see God, conscience or love? These three invisible and invaluable things are most precious for human beings. Everyone knows they have a conscience, right? Is there anyone who does not have one? Is there anyone who does not have love? However, both of these are invisible to the eye. What happens as a result of being invisible? They can enter anywhere and become one with anything. Could they enter so easily if they were visible? Since they cannot be seen, they can even enter human cells. There is no place they cannot pass through. Such logic will stand. No one can control love. True love cannot be controlled or obstructed even by the universe. (239-68, 1992.11.23)

Would evolution come first or the existence of male and female? Which would precede the other? Does actual existence come first or is it the concept of love that comes first? This is a serious matter. In order to demolish communism, we need to have a clear understanding of the logic that can subjugate evolutionary theory. Would the amoeba have existed before or after the world of experiential relationships? How did I say the connection linking the different stages between the amoeba and human beings was made? Where on earth can you find such a foolish logic which claims amoebae changed into human beings through evolution, and completely disregards the concept that beings developed through love? (235-23, 1992.8.24)

The realm of Christian culture, which has been part of history since medieval times, was thrown into greatest confusion by humanistic doctrines. Charles Darwin's theory of evolution, with humanism as its basis, played a major role in destroying Christianity, tying and hanging it by the neck. This theory claimed there was no God. Within the world of creation, male and female in the pair system become subject and object partners. The concept of male and female, in terms of human beings, is man and woman; what then would come first, the existence of male and female or the concept of evolution? Subject and object partners can be found in every environment, but not an evolutionary process. In any environment, there must be subject and object partners. Even in the mineral world, the electron revolves around the proton as the center. In molecules, the positive and negative ions are engaged in interaction. Would they all have preceded the concept of evolution or come after it? They would have preceded it. They would be there before it. (245-49, 1993.2.28)

What would come first, the concept of evolution or the existence of male and female in the universe? Does the subject and object partnership come first? In the mineral world, too, there are positive and

negative ions, which are in a pair system of subject and object partners. The plant world is like that, too. Stamen and pistil are in a reciprocal subject-object partner relationship. How about the animal kingdom? It is made up of males and females. This is the unchanging natural law of the universe. There never was – and never will be – anyone on earth who can shift any male or female from one species to another with human self-willed force. If there were such a person, the consequences would be disastrous.

I say: stop justifying evolutionary theory. You should know that the yin-yang concept long pre-dated it. It was a secret, hidden from us as one of the mysteries of the universe, but we should no longer be ignorant of the fact that this universe was formed by the yin-yang concept and the subject-object relationship. Then which would precede the other: evolutionary theory or the yin-yang concept? It is the latter. Did Jesus come on earth to revolutionize the yin-yang concept? Yes or no? (272-255, 1995.10.6)

How does evolutionary theory say evolution took place? Claims that everything evolved from the amoeba are a load of nonsense. Can developments take place of their own accord? They take place by the investment of an extraneous source of energy coupled with an ideal relationship between two parties. Only give and take between two parties in a reciprocal relationship can give rise to developments of a higher level. (86-114, 1976.3.14)

According to evolutionary theory, amoebae developed into people. How complicated is development? Development is not about a being of a particular class adapting to its environment as it is. In order for a being to upgrade itself to a higher category, it needs to pass through the love process of plus and minus, that is, male and female. However, this reality is completely disregarded in evolutionary theory. Can a being first be a male, then develop into another male, and then develop into a female, and then another female, and so on? We develop and become higher-level beings only by passing through the gates of love, but evolutionists are oblivious to this fact. In order to evolve, one must pass through the gates of love. (208-235, 1990.11.20)

The claim that man and woman came about through evolution is problematic. Did love exist before evolution or did it come about afterwards? Which is it: before or after? It was before. Nowadays it is said that even germs exist as couples. Not amoeba, but germs. Even in the world of germs, which can only be perceived when magnified hundreds of thousands or even millions of times, we can find conjugality. Would they have pre-existed amoebae? How about that? Isn't it interesting? The fact that everything exists in pairs shows that they were created based on love. In light of this, the sensibility of love can be said to have pre-existed evolution. Then how could the different classes in the billions of stages of male-female interaction be traversed in the evolution from amoeba

to human? This is illogical in itself. Such logic is obsolete. Evolutionary theory is causing a serious problem. It has served as the basis of development for communism, which has denied God and His existence throughout its history. (223-355, 1991.11.20)

Where is the universe heading? Without recognizing this direction, we cannot have a purpose in view. Communists speak of evolutionary theory and so cannot understand the true purpose of the universe. Nevertheless, all beings are created as subject and object partners, and interact in love. What connects them is the path of love. Everything is seeking the way of love. (260-12, 1994.4.11)

Today's evolutionary theory should recognize that advancement is based on the principle of subject-object relationships. The minds of these two beings should be in accord and be stimulated through a greater mutual purpose. Only when they are spurred on to pursue the fulfillment of that purpose together can they rise to a higher place. Thus, there must be subject and object partners. The stimulation arising between the two is called love. (265-190, 1994.11.21)

Can the logic of love be found in evolutionary theory? I am talking about the theoretical basis of how concave and convex came into being. Then which came first: the theory of evolution or the yang-yin concept? Which is it? The latter came first. Then which preceded the other: male and female, or love? Which is it? Male and female came into being because of love. (274-93, 1995.10.29)

From where did the universe originate? It was not through evolution. We need to understand that male and female existed before the concept of creation or evolution. Why did male and female come into being? It was for the sake of love. Love is the formula for all existence. (280-60, 1996.11.1)

All beings were created in pairs. What would evolutionists say if you asked them, "Why did males come into being?" They will answer, "They came into being naturally," which shows they are out of their minds. Did they come into being naturally? All males and females came into existence in order to reproduce their own species, not others. Monkeys do not become people, and snakes don't turn into frogs. Is that right or wrong? Evolutionists are ignorant people, who do not know that males and females relate on a specific level of love for their species. (209-193, 1990.11.29)

The universe protects the integrity of the reciprocal realm of subject and object partners. How would evolutionary theory look in light of this principle? One cannot go from the amoeba to higher forms of life just like that; plus and minus must become as one. When they unite, they become either a greater plus or greater minus. In this way, some beings are above and others below. In front of the standard of the one over-

all Subject Being, if a being is the object partner of the plus that corresponds to the Great Subject's positivity, it would attach itself to that plus, whereas if it were the object figure of the minus in relation to that Great Subject, it would attach itself to the minus. This is how they would form a greater plus or a greater minus, and thus develop towards a greater world. (218-266, 1991.8.19)

How can we refute evolutionary theory? It is a serious issue in the academic world. Did the male and female monkey come into being through evolution? How about that? Were male and female created through evolution? Everything down to the smallest insect in the insect kingdom exists as male and female, as stamen and pistil in the plant world and as positive and negative ions in the mineral world. Did this arise from evolution? Try asking an evolutionist the origin of male and female. What would be his answer? He could not deny that they came into existence in order to love one another and reproduce. (221-145, 1991.10.23)

Where did evolution first begin? This is the question. Young intellectuals today are caught in a trap by this question, and so are bound for hell. It is claimed that evolution began from the amoeba. Everything has been clarified by me with regard to the debate between the opposing arguments of evolution and divine creation. Evolutionary theory was fabricated by atheistic communism in a state of denial toward God. It is a monster that has wrought destruction in the scientific world and should be totally discredited. We can now perceive through the microscope a whole world of germs millions of times smaller than the amoeba. If evolution had begun from the amoeba, would the male and female germs have existed before the amoeba or after? (222-78, 1991.10.28)

We should be aware of one important question. Weren't male and female in existence based on love before evolution? Evolutionary theory is the problem. Did male and female come into being through evolution or did they pre-date it? Substantial beings came to exist based on and because of love. Man and woman – male and female – unite together for the sake of love. Such a thing as evolution could never have taken place. Substantial beings were created from the concept of love well before evolution, and therefore the word evolution is inappropriate for man and woman, male and female. They were born for love. (223-246, 1991.11.10)

At the very beginning of creation, there was the concept of love, male and female, long before claims of evolutionary theory. Man and woman get married for love, and once they are married, they are to attain oneness. For what purpose should they unite? It is solely to fulfill the purpose of love and has nothing to do with evolutionary theory.

It is one thing to understand the male-female union as the formula of creation, but quite another for a male to think about evolving into a female, and

vice versa. Such a thing cannot come about naturally. Although this is, in itself, impossible, when all is said and done, it cannot be denied that male and female can unite and that the motive behind this concept is love. In that light, evolutionary theory can never be established. So, for what reason did male and female come to exist? It was for the sake of love. (224-126, 1991.11.24)

The concept of evolution could not be found in the universe. The concept of augmentation first began based on love. It is God's ideal of creation to bring about and organize advancements based on the concept of love. Taking into consideration the concept of love that predates evolution, how can the existence of male and female as connected to the concept of love come to be understandable through evolutionary theory? The emotion of love was there before evolution, and its source has nothing to do with oneself. It was there even before man and woman came into existence. Thus, concept comes first. What is the principal palace of love? Can you work it out? (224-143, 1991.11.24)

Now that the topic of evolution has come to the forefront, let's say something about it. In the mineral world, we find the reality of plus and minus. In the animal kingdom there is male and female, and in the plant kingdom, stamen and pistil. Everything exists as masculine and feminine. In the human world it is represented by man and woman. Would they have come into being without reason? For what did they come into existence? Everything is in the relationship of subject and object partners, to give and receive, and interact, centering on love at its own level. (240-290, 1992.12.13)

You have no idea how much evolutionary theory contributed to destroying Christianity. Now, however, the era has arrived in which I can shatter evolutionary theory with my bare hands. Will you continue to believe in evolutionary theory or not? Will you believe in what I say or in evolutionary theory? Now the time has come to put everything in order. Evolutionary theory is one big lie. If the power of love has extended over hundreds of thousands of generations, how could the amoeba pass through the several thousands of gates of love just like that and become a human being? Can the amoeba have within itself such ability or capacity to soar high into heaven? (240-297, 1992.12.13)

4.2. The Theory of Evolution is an outdated idea

With regard to the mainstream ideologies of the world today, conceptualism and realism have become the two mainstreams of the philosophical world, giving rise to the conflict between theism and materialism, right and left wings, which has inflicted great damage on the world. Left-wing ideology, in particular, has attained worldwide supremacy through evolutionary theory. What comes first: the existence of man and woman or the existence of

love? Before there was man and woman, there existed the concept of love. Since love pre-existed them, man and woman were created to be prepared for it, that is, to be in accord with the concept of love. Hence, conceptualism and realism are not separate. What communism did not know was that conceptualism and realism can be unified through love in such a manner. (228-162, 1992.3.27)

Until now, the question of what came first between evolution and God's creation has been a topic of endless discussion among the world's scholars. Was the concept of evolution there before the concept of love? Which came first? Certainly not evolution, for it came into being after the concept of love had long been in existence. The universe of the pair system was created first, and then the structural similarities between different beings gave rise to evolutionary theory. You need to realize that evolutionary theory did not emerge because the universe was created according to its teachings.

All kinds of birds are similarly structured. Nevertheless, distinction of the species is quite another matter. Can a sparrow and a bunting mate and reproduce? That can never happen. From the amoeba to a human being, there exist divisions of the species in several thousands of stages; so could they just be disregarded and an amoeba transform into a human being all at once? Not on your life. The differentiation of species is absolute. (228-61, 1992.3.3)

The question is where to find an ideological concept that will convince even the communists to turn around and recognize the existence of the living God. How can we set the standard to absolutely deny materialism and evolutionary theory, to unite our minds and bodies, and to become the ideal starting point of a unified world? This has been the problem throughout world history.

The communist bloc propounded evolutionary theory, whereas the religious realm insisted on there being a creator; hence they fought with one another. What has been advocated by worldwide blocs all ended in failure. Therefore, these worldwide bases should not be the starting point. It should be on the individual level. Since an individual erred and brought about such a result, a choice between spiritualism and materialism should be made by the individual.

The world will become unstable without eliminating evolutionary theory and establishing the nucleus of absolute values based on a theory of creation, centered on the absolute God. (270-96, 1995.5.7)

The ideological world has been plunged into contradiction and chaos by current evolutionary theory, dialectical materialism, epistemology, spiritualism and so on. Only when the absolute truth is established can the formation of a world of absolute values become possible. The existence of absolute values is eternal, unchanging and unique. Then, when we consider what the eter-

nal, unchanging and unique principle in the universe is, we reach the conclusion that it is the love relationship between subject and object partners, cause and effect. (89-226, 1976.11.27)

The big question these days is: which is true – evolutionary theory or that the harmonious universe was created? Who determines the direction of evolution? Can it do so by itself? Can a developing being make the decision on its own? Another question is how that being can cultivate, give out and increase the energy to form a relationship with a higher realm.

Such things become possible only through God. This question cannot be explained by science. Hence, similar to human beings, matter also cherishes the desire for union with God. Such is its purpose. It is the same for everything. In this manner, humankind is the main representative of all existence in the substantial world. (111-127, 1981.2.8)

Where is the source of our thoughts? Some people say it is inside our heads, whilst others say it is inside our hearts. If someone claims that we exist because we are thinking, then where are we: in our hearts or in our heads? Then there are further questions. If we exist as resultant beings then the question we should be asking is how we came into existence, that is, what is our origin? This is the question: from where did we begin life?

In general, people believe human beings evolved from the animal world, but this is a makeshift theory fabricated from a need fro an explanation. In order to form a logical connection, the theory was invented as an expedience; there is no way of knowing if evolution really took place. Did the basis of our mind begin from the amoeba? What I am asking is: is the amoeba our mental ancestor? Evolutionary theory claims that everything began and developed from the amoeba. (117-68, 1982.2.1)

What is the current philosophical ideology concerning human existence? We need to research on a fundamental level in order to answer that question. Although we have pursued this theoretically, asking, "How did we come to be like this?" we have yet to reach a conclusion to the questions, "What is a human? What is a true human?" All scholars and renowned philosophers have pondered the question of human existence, but they have yet to reach a conclusion. "What is a human being? What is the origin of humankind?" This question still remains unanswered in both evolutionary theory and creation theory. It has not been brought to a satisfactory and settled conclusion. (170-144, 1987.11.15)

Looking at scripture, even Confucius' teachings are rather vague, as he did not know about the personal God, Heavenly Father. There must be a Father from whom we originated, yet Confucius did not know about Him. Buddhism comments on the principle that everything in the universe returns to its origin, but does not know the personal God. One false move and they will be supporting

materialism and evolutionary theory. Since they stand at the formative stage of religion that is not dissimilar to the viewpoint of evolutionary theory, they could very easily fall into materialistic thinking. (198-257, 1990.2.4)

After the French Revolution and the process of development from humanism through the ideas of the enlightenment to communism, the latter united with Charles Darwin's theory of evolution to drive Christianity into the pit of destruction. (213-65, 1991.1.14)

Scientists today say that this universe is made up of energy, but what they do not realize is that before energy can exist, there must first be action. Confusion arises from not knowing the fact that due to there being action, there must also be subject and object partners. In forming a judgment about creation according to the concept of subject and object partners, then evolutionary theory breaks down at the fundamental level. (131-212, 1984.5.4)

I have heard that many major universities in the United States do not offer lectures on topics such as the theory of evolution. That is only proper. This theory claims, "Everything came to exist naturally!" Yet, if everyone believed that they came into being naturally, how nonsensical that would be! If you were to ask, "Came to exist naturally? Is there a subject-like nature in nature?" they will reply, "We don't really know that." What absurd talk is that? How did subject-like nature come about? They will answer, "It happened just like that, as a physiological action, a developmental phenomenon." If you went on to ask, "Is that so? How did that arise?" then the answer they will give is, "No one knows. That's just how it came to be." There cannot be any logic in such arguments. There cannot be a result without a cause. There cannot be scientific logic that denies the law of cause and effect. (159-267, 1968.5.19)

Now evolutionary theory has become a historic relic of the past. The theory claimed that evolution brought about progression. If so, why can't evolution take place in reverse? Could it not occur in the reverse order, or in any direction, whether east or west? Who decided the direction in which to evolve? Can the evolving beings designate the direction themselves? To develop from amoeba to human, numerous stages on successively higher levels need to be traversed, and the question is: who set the direction in which to develop towards a higher level? In other words, why must the creation develop toward a higher level? (166-212, 1987.6.7)

The one flaw in all religious scriptures is the fact that they do not explain the process of the Creation. They do not talk about the purpose and process of God's creation. Much has been written, based upon all types of logic. Since they do not deal with the concept of creation, they do not know the direction and purpose of creation. Hence, everyone in the world is doing as they please, coming

up with evolutionary theory and other damaging ideas, and behaving in whatever way they like. That being so, we should clearly understand about the concept of creation. Next, we need to inquire why this world became so evil when the direction and purpose of creation did not intend this. After discovering that reason, we need to work out, going back to the very beginning, why entire nations met with destruction in the process of history as narrated by the Holy Scriptures and human history. There must be a historical view with a logical approach that can be justly approved by everyone from both general and practical standpoints. (212-323, 1991.1.11)

A third party cannot be included in an absolute love relationship. As this logic is true, evolutionary theory cannot be justified. The amoeba cannot develop alone. It would need to develop to a new level through the relationship of positive and negative and the gates of love. Considering that religious doctrines teach reciprocal love relationships and that heavenly law precludes third-party intervention, the conclusion can be drawn that evolutionary theory cannot be sustained. (203-343, 1990.6.28)

CHAPTER TWO

The Creation of Humankind and the Perfection of the Ideal of Love

Section 1. The Absolute Value of Love

1.1. Man and woman

When considering the fundamentals of the universe, God created the universe through the concept of male and female, based on the ideal of reciprocity. Until now, people have not known this. (300-217, 1999.3.14)

What are the fundamentals of the universe? Humankind is subdivided between men and women. For what purpose did they come into being? Why did human beings come to be born? This is the question. The question we should deal with is: what is the most fundamental center of the universe, or, what is most precious in the universe? (217-94, 1991.5.4)

When seeking the fundamentals of the universe, we arrive at the concept of subject and object. Even the smallest woman sitting here has power within her, does she not? Would the power in this small woman desire to be the weak power of a small man, or the strong power of a big man? This is the case for the man too; if he were a small man, he would yearn for the power of a big woman. Why is this so? It is to attain a balance. Balance is the issue; you need to be perfectly perpendicular on a horizontal base. That is why the term ideal of reciprocity arises; it is from there that the ideal of reciprocity is derived. (216-9, 1991.3.3)

Humankind is composed of men and women. Then what do they represent? The question is, of the two, who should be the seed of seeds, the focus upon which both should be centered? Man and woman, too, were created as plus and minus. There must always be plus and minus. If you look at any seed you will notice how two halves are enveloped together in one outer layer. That demonstrates the fundamental nature of the universe. Everything in existence has these same characteristics. (255-79, 1994.3.6)

How did the universe come into being? Nothing exists without a cause. For every result, there is a cause. From this perspective, what would be the cause behind the creation of man and woman? Did woman come into being to devour man? Or vice versa? No, both were created for love. If love was the cause, then

the woman came into existence for love, as did the man. Love is the cause. (283-251, 1997.4.13)

Why was woman created? She was created for the sake of love, for man. She is meant to exist for the sake of man. Why was man born? Man was born for the sake of woman. That is the essence of the original ideal of the universe. That is the law of the universe and the truth. There is nothing that can change it. This simple truth was unknown until now. (278-203, 1996.5.24)

Where is woman heading from the time of birth? Why did women come into existence? This is a big question. Women regret being born as women, do they not? Why were they born as women then? It is very simple. It may not seem so, because you are not aware of it, but it is one of the most fundamental points of the philosophy of life, and it is actually very simple. She was born for man. It is simple. The truth about the universe is simple. (246-222, 1993.4.18)

Fundamentally, this universe was created in the pair system in order to create consonance. This consonance or harmony takes place centering on love. When you think of it this way, did God establish love for the sake of man and woman, or did He establish man and woman for the sake of love? Which came first? Did God design love to be the way it is because men and women are the way they are or did God design men and women to be the way they are because love is the way it is? In light of this, the most precious thing is that which cannot be seen. (226-81, 1992.2.2)

Why were human beings born? No one is born for him or herself. Human beings are born for a greater purpose than just themselves. Those who live only for themselves are acting contrary to the fundamental principle of their birth. People who live in this way are deserters, dropouts, degenerates, and destroyers. Did you learn this in school? Those who say they were born for themselves are not wanted by this universe. (221-313, 1991.10.27)

What belongs to woman is not for her own use. It is for man. Is there anyone who can deny this? That being so, nobody owns anything. It is not shameful to be women with nothing for yourselves but your names, for as such you can harmonize anywhere. You can harmonize with grandmothers, mothers, grandfathers, aunts and uncles. As the centrality of being women is not great, it leaves plenty of room for women to gradually expand their realm of reciprocity. This is connected to the formulated foundation based on the principles of the creation of the universe, and so it becomes definite. (255-144, 1994.3.10)

Once the seeds have become one, that is, once two seeds have come together as one, there cannot be another seed. The one who breaks this rule would be in the same position as the one who fundamentally destroyed the universe and

broke down the entire process of re-creation, that is, Satan. That is why your wives are like your younger sisters. As God's children, a husband and wife are like twins, the woman born for the man and the man for the woman. The woman is not born for herself, but for her man, and vice versa. Human beings are not born out of their own desire. So, a man cannot be loved by himself, he needs a woman. Similarly, the one who loves a woman cannot be herself, but a man. Is that not so? (253-65, 1994.1.7)

Maturing in true love is impossible without a partner. You need to understand your partner's preciousness. Your partner comes before true love. You must know that your partner comes first. If you reject this idea, it is as if you reject the origin of the universe. Doing so is a rejection of God and his creation. Please realize this. True love cannot settle where a man or a woman lives alone, but only where the two are unified. When you think this way about your couple and family, you can state, "The universe resembles me." (248-53, 1993.6.20)

Would it be all right if man and woman were identical? They are fundamentally different. If the man were east, the woman would be west; if he were south, she would be north. So women should not say things like, "Why don't men look like us?" If the woman is weak, the man should be strong, and if the woman is gentle, the man should be tough. Furthermore, the man should swing his shoulders as he walks and the woman should swing her hips as she walks. This is how they differ. By swinging his shoulders, he is stirring everything. Such is the tone of the universe. He is in rhythm with the universe. (167-220, 1987.7.19)

Man is born for woman, and woman is born for man. Then why are they born? This is the fundamental question. Why are man and woman born? They are born to experience God's love. That is the point. Why should the two, man and woman, become one, and what are they to do when they meet? It is to attain horizontality and reach the center of the sphere. The entire universe is in the shape of a sphere. Is not the Earth also a globe floating in space? The universe, the sun – in fact, everything – floats in space. (173-205, 1988.2.18)

Why was the man born? The purpose for his birth is simple. He was born for woman. Why was she born? She was born for man. She cannot do without him any more than he can do without her. Adam and Eve were born for love. All human beings were born for love. Why is this so? God needs love and He is pleased only when He has drunk the soup of love. Even if He were to have love for breakfast, lunch, and dinner, He would still say, "Ah, I feel great!"

Would it please God to have a bundle of money brought before Him? God does not need bundles of knowledge or power, but He is bound to fall head over heels for bundles of love. That is the most precious gift humankind can offer. The proverb is apt: "All is well if there is har-

mony in the family." This saying refers to the fundamentals of the universe. Is this not clear once you have joined the Unification Church? (148-33, 1986.10.4)

Men and women were not born to live self-centeredly. They were born to protect this universe, the origin and all results of God's original nature, and to live as beings with such value. The characteristic common to all forms of creation is the inclination to have and love that which resembles themselves. Don't the insects like to be where there can be found both male and female? The same is true for all bugs. Butterflies prefer those places where stamen and pistil are found in blossoms emitting their sweet fragrance. Everything in creation wishes to act, to live, and to feed in places where male and female are engaged in the act of love. (303-286, 1999.9.9)

If the Fall had not occurred, everything would be known without being taught. Then why were men and women born? That is the question. They were born for love. Why do we need that love? What is meant to be done with love? Do people live and die for love? Do people worry about living or dying for love? Yes, because love is the origin of life. We seek the origin that is the one absolute love; we are not looking for two loves. Such is the great way of the universe, the law of heaven. This law will never disappear, for this law of love is also the standard of judgment when you have gone to the spirit world. (191-36, 1989.6.24)

What links the life of the mother and the father to lineage? Love. This is what you would find if you delved deep into the fundamentals of the universe. People like me are very serious. The question of what the fundamentals of the universe are, is a very serious one. (191-11, 1989.6.24)

The fundamentals of the universe are love, life, and lineage. We are their fruit. Within us is the center of love, which safeguards life. Based on that, history and tradition are connected through lineage. This is why you need all three. You have all three of them within you, do you not? You have love, life and lineage. The three combine into one to give birth to a new person. (190-223, 1989.6.19)

At what point in time are God's love and the love of humankind unified? This has been a historical question of great importance since the creation of the universe. Until it is answered – that is, until the origin of the universe is determined – there will never be resolution. Centering on true love, God needs to stand in the position of the nucleus and Adam and Eve would be two halves enclosing the nucleus. If you examine a chestnut, you can see this phenomenon: you would see that it is made up of two halves surrounding the germ, would you not? Likewise, with God as the nucleus, man and woman should become completely one centering on love. (177-142, 1988.5.17)

The reason man and woman meet

is love. Man is born for love and woman is born for love. Then having loved, what are they to do? They are to occupy God, the origin of the universe. In other words, cause and effect are harmonized as one. The fruit is born from the place where cause and result are brought into oneness and unity. When the fruit is born, buds will shoot forth. That is to say, it will bring forth offspring. That is how the offspring receives flesh and blood from its two parents, and is born. (197-143, 1990.1.13)

We were born for the sake of love. Love! Do you understand? This is the origin of the universe. Love, true love! That holds true for everyone, for men and for women. (198-122, 1990.1.25)

Based on what should the two become one? Not God, or man, or woman. Unity can only come about when God, Adam and Eve are centered on true love – the absolute love. Such are the fundamentals of the universe. It is simple. Even God would be a lonely God without love. (144-150, 1986.4.12)

Why does the pumpkin leaf breathe? To maintain life. Why is life sustained? For love. For what does the woman live? For what does the man live? For money? It is only for love. (223-150, 1991.11.10)

Would you exchange your beloved spouse for ten billion, or a hundred billion dollars? This is a very serious question. If you really knew how precious love is – for this love leads to the fundamentals of the universe – and clearly understood that without it all origins would be destroyed, what would you exchange it for? Would you exchange it for a nation? (201-15, 1990.2.28)

Do you support the communist or the democratic world? The democratic world believes in theism, that is, they put the mind first. The Unification Church states that mind and matter are one. This is the core of Unificationism which expounds on subject and object. The fundamental principle of the universe is that nothing can continue to exist alone. Though two beings may exist separately, based on love they are to become absolutely one. Though originally two, man and woman, plus and minus, must unite or monism cannot be attained. Instead, dualism is established, and dualism gives rise to the logic the world will divide into two parts that fight with each other. Therefore, though man and woman are two separate entities, they need to become one. In other words, by principle they are intended to become one centering on true love. (274-71, 1995.10.29)

1.2. The sexual organs perfect man and woman

The fundamental root of the universe is man and woman. The basis of the universe came to center on the love of man and woman, plus and minus. That is the status of the sexual organs. Is that not how everything is? Whatever you cast your eyes on, be it a kanga-

roo or some other animal, as soon as it is born it seeks its mother's breasts. As regards to the sexual organs, there are some animals that have their organs in the weirdest places, such as the armpit. How then do their mates find them? They give out something like ultrasonic waves. The source of the universe that connects them is the universal prime energy, which refers to God's essential energy. (299-154, 1999.2.10)

What is difference between man and woman? They are not different because of their eyes or five senses. What makes man different from woman? They are distinguished by their sexual organs. This is what sets them apart. (246-220, 1993.4.18)

Why were man and woman born? The word man came to be due to woman. It acknowledges her as the precondition. Though the man is bigger in size, he was born for the small woman. Why was woman born? What is different between man and woman? What is it? Do their hands, eyes, noses, or mouths look different? What is different? What did I say is the one thing that differs between them? One is convex while the other is concave. That's the sexual organs. What is absolutely necessary to the man is the woman's truth, and to the woman, the man's truth. What is the man's truth? What is the woman's truth? Aren't they the sexual organs? Yes, man and woman were born for their sexual organs to fit each other. Why should they fit together? For what? For love. To unite their lives and lineages. To merge the three elements of love, life, and lineage. (196-130, 1989.12.31)

The perfection of man and woman is through their sexual organs. Think about it. Isn't this true for you? Do you have one eye or two eyes? Why do you have two? Do you have two nostrils or one? Why two? Do you have two lips or one? Again, why do you have two? How about the ears, one or two? Why two? What about your hands, one or two? Why do you have two? Do you have one foot or two feet? Why two? What about the sexual organs of woman and man, are there two of them? Are they also alike? They are different. They vary in form. The question is what is the best way to deal with them, since they are different from each other. Everything else is made in complementary pairs except the male and female sexual organs, aren't they? Why do we have sexual organs? What are they meant for? What is their purpose? Do you use them to eat when you are hungry? What is their purpose? One person alone cannot fulfill their purpose. They would remain useless forever if man and woman did not become one. Think about it. What are they there for? What does a man call upon a woman for? Is it for the eyes, the head, the body, or the heart? Which is it? Also, what does woman calls upon man for? Which part of her calls out to him? Is it her lips? To fulfill the purpose of the sexual organs, one requires a partner. Thus, woman must call out to man, and man must call out to woman.

Is this absolute or relative? It is absolute. It transcends history and circumstances. Hence, regardless of eventualities or what incidents may occur, this must be fulfilled. (247-203, 1993.5.9)

What is different between a man and a woman? First of all, their bodies, including their sexual organs are different. Then to whom is the sexual organ of a man absolutely necessary? It exists for a woman.

When you look at the human sexual organs, you see that one is concave while the other is convex. Why do you think they were created like this? Organs of both sexes could have been made in pointed shapes or flat shapes, but why were they shaped so differently? It is for one's partner. The organ of man is absolutely desired by woman, and that of woman by man. Until now, no one knew that woman's sexual organ belonged to man absolutely, and that man's sexual organ belonged to woman. By occupying the organ belonging to the opposite sex, one can understand love. (299-119, 1999.2.7)

Not only the base of peace, but also everything else including God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven comes about from love. What love? Is it the love of man, the love of woman, or the love of both? It is the love of both. Where do the love of man and woman come together? Is it the face or the fingertips? The love between the two comes together through concave and convex. (263-52, 1994.8.16)

Centering on what do body and mind unite? They do not unite because of money, knowledge or power, only true love can unite mind and body. How can we know this for certain? Upon examination of the created world, we see that people are born as men and women; then, aren't those who have studied philosophy most curious to know why human beings were born? The answer is simple. Why were human beings born into the world? By human beings I mean man and woman. Then taking into consideration the question of why man and woman were born, we can answer that there is the animal that is woman and the animal that is man, and their sexual organs were made thus to unite them. Centering on what are they to unite? Centering on love. That is how human beings came to be. In light of the concept that originally God is love, it is undeniable that man and woman came into being for love. What are they to center upon in becoming one? As they are to become one for love, it is undeniable that they were created based on love.

That is why love is the universe's greatest mystery, interest, zest, concern and fascination, and evokes all superlatives in describing it. What else is there after that? Conversely, love can cause the greatest downfalls. Love is a very tricky thing, which can be formed whichever way you want. Such is love. It is the trickiest thing. (219-166, 1991.8.29)

The sexual organs are sacred entities. Is that right or not? Why do you look at me so strangely? Why are you looking

at me as if to say, "The founder of the Unification Church is talking about sexual organs"? Can pastors speak of such sexual organs? They would all be spat upon. Are there men and women who spit on the sexual organs? Do men spit on the female organs, and do women spit on the male? Sexual organs are sacred things. Sacred, sacred, sacred are the sexual organs. They are sacred. They are the place of the perfected Adam who has not fallen. They are the sacred place, the sacred palace. They are the highest palace. The sexual organs are the original palace of life and love. (285-59, 1997.6.5)

What is the purpose of the sexual organs of men and women? They are for making love, aren't they? Man and woman are essential elements to bring about love. They were born for true love, this cannot be denied. (221-145, 1991.10.23)

It would be a serious problem if there were only convex and no concave. Then, when God was creating human beings, would the concept of concave and convex, man and woman, be there first, or would it be the concept of love that was there first? Ponder this before you give me an answer. What would have come first, the concept of human beings, man and woman, or the concept of their gender? The gender is the origin, and is more important than anything else. You need to know that the male and female sexual organs are the ancestors of the creation. This has not been known until now.

The sexual organs are the progenitors of the creation of humankind. The first ancestors are the sexual organs. From them emerged man and woman. This is the truth. By the sexual organs human beings were distinguished into man and woman. The concept of distinction came after the original concept. From the original concept of male and female, we were divided and came to be called men and women. (272-171, 1995.10.1)

When male and female came into being, would the entire body have been made first, or the sexual organs? Is the gender, female or male, decided midway in the growth process, or is it decided at first with the coming into existence and then the being grows as such? How about it, Dr. Yoon? Isn't it decided before they begin to grow? Such is the case. Who decides whether a being should be male or female? Can you become a male just because you want to be one? Women must remain absolutely as female, and men must remain as male. They cannot change back and forth.

Can I become a woman like Mother through wishful thinking? It was already decided at the time I came into existence. It is determined at that moment when the sperm meets the ovum. The sexual organs are decided before the emergence of man and woman. One cannot be almost a man and then become a woman at the last minute. The man is a man absolutely, just as the woman is a woman absolutely. (197-51, 1990.1.7)

In conclusion, into which part would God have invested the greatest effort

when He was creating human beings? Would it have been the eyes, the mouth, the nose, or the hands? People have not given the slightest thought to this. That part would be the stronghold of love. Where would the stronghold of love be? It would be the male and female sexual organs. The sexual organs are the original palace of love. It is through them that the love of man and the love of woman can be learned. Without them we would remain ignorant of love, for the owners of love could not appear. The owner of man's love is woman, and the owner of woman's love is man, and it is the love organs that qualify us as the owners of love. (302-220 1999. 6 14)

Twenty-four karat gold, or pure gold, is worth the same regardless of its origin, be it the land of Korea, a place of scenic beauty, underwater, or some remote spot in a ravine somewhere untouched by human hands. Do you think that, with regard to the spouse you are about to make love to, the sexual organs will protest, "Oh, I don't like you because your face is ugly"? Once you are in a love relationship, even a pockmarked face will look beautiful. When a white woman and a black man love each other, she will not think of him as a black man. Such things will happen. (276-87, 1996.2.4)

Did our eyelashes grow by themselves, and do our eyes shed tears just because they feel like it? Don't talk such nonsense. There must be the owner – the idea – that is the origin of this universe. How mysterious are our bodies? Did they come into being just like that? How mysterious are the sexual organs? Could these organs, so unimaginably mysterious, be made capriciously? Nothing that is connected to life is simple. (191-53, 1989.6.24)

I'm the one who teaches that men should become the owners who closely safeguard their sexual organs, and that women too should safeguard their sexual organs carefully forever. The people who bear the responsibility of making men and women safeguard themselves are the parents having the name of True Parents. Being True Parents is very simple. They are the ones who have the power to assemble licentious men and women and make them men and women who will never again be unfaithful, but remain absolutely chaste. (271-188, 1995.8.28)

1.3. The sexual organs: the beginning and the end in solving fundamental problems

Women, you must not defile your sexual organs. Who did I say owns that which belongs to woman? Don't laugh! I am revealing a fundamental principle of the universe. Think about whether this is true or not. Can you imagine how I worked my fingers to the bone to find this out? The words in themselves sound simple, but do you realize how awesome their meaning is? This will divide heaven and earth and the world into two groups of people – evil and good. (177-219, 1988.5.20)

Where is the palace of love? You should not think it strange if I speak of such things. If our thinking, of the sexual organs, is not aligned with God's thinking, then the whole world will go awry. When the first step goes wrong, then the whole universe will be filled with wickedness. In my strenuous efforts to find the answer to the fundamental problems of humankind, and the root of the universe, I realized it was the sexual organs. Once I realized it was them and thought the whole matter through, I found that the harmony of heaven and earth was swirling around the sexual organs. It is an amazing fact. (197-24, 1990.1.7)

Haven't I inquired into all truths as to the complicated world? God acceded to my determination to find out everything. After going through hardship upon hardship in my quest, I realized that I had the answers right there under my nose. Of course, I was surprised and gratified, but at the same time I could not help feeling how futile my endeavors had been. (295-15, 1998.8.16)

I really did not know that the solutions to the fundamental problems that humankind wrestled with until now were this simple and easy. I underwent unbearable hardships. Being unaware of those solutions to the world's problems, I wept and cried out, went to the spirit world and searched all the way down into its filthy gutters, in short, did all sorts of things. It turned out that I had the answers all along. I said to myself, "Ah, I didn't know this!" I have everything. The universe is in my hands. The entire universe has come into me. (199-314, 1990.2.21)

I grappled for nine years with the question as to the origin of the universe, and finally found the answer. It proved to be a very simple principle. Then I said, "Wow, I didn't know this simple truth. I held the answers within myself but didn't realize it." Isn't that so? An old man who dug for wild ginseng went into the deepest parts of jagged mountains like that of Mt. Taebaek to search for the plants, only to discover in the morning that the place where he had rested and urinated was a patch of wild ginseng. He hadn't been aware of it. On his way back, he decided to go back to where he rested and had a smoke when he first set out, He found the cigarette butt he had thrown away and smoked it., Lo and behold, the cigarette butt was in a patch of wild ginseng. This actually took place. At such a moment, going back for that cigarette butt and smoking it was great fortune for him. This could really happen. (196-130, 1989.12.31)

I'm not a scamp. I delved to find the principles of the universe and revealed them. To discover them, did I need to suffer hardships all my life in this world? When I discovered them, I was dumbfounded, for it proved I had the answers all along. I had all the answers within myself. As such, when you enter the spirit world and attain an ethereal state and call out, "Where is God?," from within you will come the answer, "Yes,

here I am." It is from here that the maxim "Human beings are God" is derived. (191-43, 1989.6.24)

No one has any idea of the hardships I went through to solve the fundamental question of the universe it came into existence. I did not find the answer in passing, like one would learn the notes of a song being played on a flute. Shedding tears and blood, I concentrated my five senses and strained my nerves on the one focal point and struggled, seizing the answer in the end. Though I was able to seize the answers, if I had not had the capacity to hold onto them, God would not have allowed me to keep them. (225-281, 1992.1.26)

Whose protection do you think enabled me to survive throughout my life? Would it be due to my own effort? Is there anyone who desires to be ruined in life, and not to prosper? In order to be under the protection of heaven, we need to walk a path that does not lead to our own prosperity. What path would that be? The devil's motto throughout history has been to live for one's self while on earth. The universe, meanwhile, protects whoever transcends this motto, and continues with the unfinished work of creation based on living for the sake of others. It protects whoever acts in conformity with the original purpose of the Creator to seek after the ideal by living for others, on the basis of God's fundamental ideology. Let us say the motto, "The universe protects." (197-253, 1990.1.19)

No one knows the difficulties I had to go through in order to find this path, which was unknown by anyone. You cannot even begin to fathom the hardships I went through in my youth, groping blindly in the dark in my quest for an answer to life's problems. I realized that the fundamental problems in our lives could be resolved only after history, the universe, and God's anguish were solved. However, I was triumphant in the end, and built up an organization that can perform this task, not only in word but also in deed, and now the whole world testifies to it. Now the era has come, in which anyone who comes running to us and holds fast to the banner and turns around to stand with us, can enter God's Kingdom. (209-292, 1990.11.30)

The most fundamental problem is the ignorance of the fact that the base – wherein was buried the universal gem – was lost due to the beginning of the struggle between mind and body. No one has known that the way to internal unity within oneself is to find love that will perfect oneself. This love can only be found after the universe is entirely deciphered. Otherwise one cannot arrive at the answer. What are your thoughts after listening to my words? Do you consider yourselves unfortunate or fortunate? How fortunate do you think you are? (224-164, 1991.11.24)

What is everything, such as the continuation of this universe, history, nations, and the inheritance of the ideal, centered upon? What is the root ele-

ment that sustains the world of multifarious relationships? I am asking about the central element that represents the whole. This is an important question. Among the Unification Church members, with the passage of a decade or some decades since their first joining the church, there are those who have gradually become habitual. This was not the case when they first joined the church as they worked earnestly and thought of the greater good before themselves. However as time passed, such tendencies disappeared and they became slowly caught up in the devil's net, looking to derive profit for themselves. This marks the beginning of their ruin. (253-223, 1994.1.30)

Why is the Principle so called? It is the fundamental theory. The Principle refers to the reason and logic of the origin of the universe and life. As the answers to the fundamental questions of life and the universe are revealed through the Principle, there is nothing on earth or in heaven that can stop its path. This is how the life course of peace, equilibrium and repose is found. It is important, if you become a unified being, that you do not feel distant from yourself. (258-304, 1994.3.20)

God cannot tell us what the fundamentals of the universe are, even if we pray and beseech Him with great clamor. You need to understand that it is something that cannot be disclosed to just anyone. Isn't that strange? If God were to enlighten us on this, the world would be united in a day; however, because it is human beings who have erred and sinned, it is for them to liquidate their sins.

Since they have fallen into a state of ignorance, only people who have overcome and transcended this state of ignorance are eligible to know the truth. It is akin to those who cannot be discharged from a hospital until they are completely cured. When one has fathomed the fundamentals, what comes up is the issue of the relationship between God and humankind; and the answer is simple.

Standing before you right here is the man who has pondered more than anyone the question, "What are the fundamentals of the universe?" As I solved this problem, I could come forward with the term "Unification Church." Such a thing cannot be accomplished in the human world. When I went to the spirit world, I had to deal with everything as if at an auction in a marketplace. (198-104, 1990.1.25)

If God who is the origin of the universe did not exist, there could not be a standard of absolute values in this world. If that were the case, then the standards for human ethics and morality could not be established. A society without ethics and morality would not have any philosophical basis for human beings to become the lords of all creation. (259-127, 1994.3.29)

I'm a man who has studied science. I set out on this theoretical basis because I had faith in the infallibility of the fun-

damentals of the universe that I have discovered. Throughout my life, I have been in and out of prison, beaten and abused, and exposed to all sorts of hardships, and yet in silence, never uttering a word of defiance. I have emerged from these hardships and overcome the world. Can God, the center of true love and the source of all power, collapse? Can His partner of love collapse? If you strike yourself, you are only bound to hurt yourself, aren't you? How about God? If you were to ask Him, "Father, do You want Your object of love to be uglier or handsomer than You?" He would answer, "I'm of the same mind as any of you!"

This amazing truth of the fundamentals of the universe is like this! If you then went on to ask God, "If You had sons and daughters, wouldn't You want them to be greater than You?" He will give you the same answer. People have lost the privileged value they ought to have. (217-189, 1991.5.27)

Even if I inquired into every truth in the world, probed into the spirit world and the physical world, and searched every scripture, there would be no way to solve the question: does God exist or not? As He exists, I will not let go of a God who made the world the way it is today. I will fight to bring this problem to an end.

What is the fundamental principle under which human beings were born, and why were they born? Man was born because of woman. That is the highest truth of all truths. An ideal man standing before a woman is the highest truth. You need to realize that an ideal man is the substantial entity of truth, who has perfected the whole universe. An ideal woman standing before such a man is also the substantial entity of all substantial entities of universal truth. She is the absolute embodiment of truth. (267-230, 1995.1.8)

Section 2. The Sexual Organs Are the Three Great Original Palaces, and the Most Holy Place

2.1. The original palace of love, life and lineage

How did man and woman come into existence? What makes them different? How do they become one? Centering on what do man and woman unite? Centering on the sexual organs. This is how they harmonize. Love is perfected in this place. True love is perfected for the first time there. That is also where the lives of man and woman are united, and their lineages interchanged and planted. The sexual organs are the original palace of the ideal love and lineage. The absolute original place is called the original palace, and no one can change its value. (228-51, 1992.3.3)

The sexual organs of Adam and Eve are places of greatness. That is why they are termed the original palace of love. This is an amazing term. The palace wherein all creation can be perfected and even God Himself can be perfected and dwell, in is the original palace.

Neither the kingdom in heaven nor the kingdom on earth is first; it begins in the family. The sexual organs are the original palace. These are amazing words. That place is also the original palace centered on true love, as well as true life. It is the original palace centered on lineage and the starting point of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. (263-347, 1994.10.27)

The sexual organs of human beings are the place of true love. Isn't that where man and woman are connected in the act of love? It is not anywhere else. That is the palace where the lives of man and woman are connected and made one. When man and woman are unified, their sons and daughters are born from that lineage. Therefore it is the palace of the lineage. The sexual organs are that important. (231-275, 1992.6.7)

The male and female sexual organs are the palace of love, the royal palace of love. Which is more precious: the womb or the male and female sexual organs? Answer me. Did they come into being because of the womb or vice versa? These are serious words and not for you to laugh at. The womb came into being because of the existence of man. The female sexual organ was made for man. Without the sexual organs, there cannot be love. Love could not be found. Without passing through them, life cannot continue. What good would be the existence of man and woman? Life could not continue. Without passing through them, the lineage that links history could not continue. (245-70, 1993.2.28)

What are the sexual organs? They are the palaces centered on true love, true life and true lineage. They are the most precious things. If they disappeared, so would heaven and earth, and without them, God's ideal, God's family, and God's will could not be fulfilled. They are the origin, from which the perfection of everything can be achieved. (216-218, 1991.4.1)

The female sexual organ is the universal origin. The place where one forms the connection of love is the original palace of love. It is the original palace. Love begins there. Lovemaking on the wedding night is the beginning of the original palace of love. It is the place where the life of man and woman unite for the first time. Thus, this place is the original palace of ideal life, and it is also the original palace of lineage, since lineage begins there. Furthermore, since the Kingdom of Heaven also begins there, that place is the original palace of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven, the original palace of perfection of humankind and of God. (257-324, 1994.3.16)

Where is the principal place through which not only man and woman, but also God Himself can be perfected? Where can the love of God, and man and woman be perfected? Where is the central place of settlement? This is the question. If you don't know the answer to this question, you cannot expand and extend the Kingdom of Heaven of the ideal of love on earth. Is it the eyes, the nose, the hands, the feet? Where is it? It

is the concave and the convex. (261-167, 1994.6.9)

Where is the stronghold from which life begins? Where is the original homeland of love and lineage? It is the male and female sexual organs. Through what do man and woman become one? They become one centering on love. Everything begins from that point. Life begins from that point, and lineage also begins from there. You must not lose these three precious bases. They cannot be exchanged for heaven and earth. (218-133, 1991.7.14)

The original palace of love, life, and lineage are the sexual organs. The origin and the destination of true love most sought after by God are the male and female sexual organs. From there the life of man and woman fuse together. From there, their lineages are interwoven and human beings, who embodying history, is connected by a kinship of blood, which is why they are most precious. (212-297, 1991.1.8)

Your sexual organ is more important than your head. The origin of true love is not in your head. The origin of true life is not in your head. The origin of true lineage is not in your head. Where is this origin, then? It is in the sexual organs. Isn't that true? Everything can be found in the sexual organs: life, love, and lineage. They are the original palace of love. The root of life can also be found there. It is the same in the case of lineage. The sexual organs are the most precious part of not only our body, but also our present and our past. Without them, human reproduction would be impossible. (203-104, 1990.6.17)

"My sexual organ is the original palace of love, life, and lineage." Only in this way can it become the palace in which God can reside. Since God is the King of kings, He needs to reside in His original palace. So if you want God to come and dwell within you, you need to become the original palace of love, life, lineage, and conscience. (280-197, 1997.1.1)

The sexual organs are the palace of love. What is the current state of that palace of love? The human sexual organs are the most precious in the world: they are the palace of love, life and lineage. They are the most sacred, the most precious, in the world. Life, love and lineage are connected to them. These sacred organs were defiled by Satan. (218-176, 1991.7.28)

What is the sexual organ, the original palace where man and woman make love? It is the palace of love, life and lineage. Grandfathers and grandmothers treasure it, as do fathers and mothers, husbands and wives, and all sons and daughters yet to be born. Is there any woman or man who does not treasure it? Then why did they become such a bad thing? People regard any word connected to sex as bad. Why is it bad? It should be holy. You should accept words connected to sex as holy. The sexual organs connect to eternal love to bring forth eternal life and eternal lineage. They are the

most precious things. (210-101, 1990.12.1)

The male and female organs are the palace of life. They are the starting point of new life and the unchanging, originating place. They are the palace of life, and the unchanging palace of love. They are the foundation whereupon the conscience can settle centered on the ideal. They are the basis of lineage. From them life buds. From them love becomes one. From them man and woman unite. Since the Fall occurred through the sexual organs, they became the monsters that destroyed heaven and earth. Therefore, in the present age we treat them as evil.

They were created by God with the utmost care. The core marrow of all created beings were extracted and connected to them. The sexual organs are connected one hundred percent to the essence of love and life, and the essence of history springs from them. Hope, happiness, and the beginning of the realm of freedom based on love all stem from these organs. (262-114, 1994.7.23)

Where is the source of life, love and lineage? Where is it? It is the sexual organs. As they were subverted, they came to be the lewdest words in the world. If they had not gone awry, they would have become not the lewdest words but the grandest. They are holy words. Aren't holy words the opposite of lewd words? What could be more exalted than true words? True words are only established in reciprocal relationships, but holy words indicate the vertical, the spherical realm.

If human beings had not fallen, the male organ would be the palace of love. Therefore it cannot be used recklessly. It is also the palace of life. Isn't life generated from it? Where does life come from? The palace of life. The sexual organs are also the palace of lineage. From them our life is born, inheriting lineage. They are the source of our life, lineage, and love. As such, our ancestors should have valued and esteemed them. (206-125, 1990.10.3)

How much would God have delighted in making them? Think about which parts of the male and female bodies He would have created with the utmost pleasure and care. It is the sexual organs that were thus created. They are not receptacles for storing uncooked rice. They are receptacles that generate life. They are the sexual organs of life that initiate life. Without them, no life would emerge, even after the passing of eons. Then there would be no nations, and heaven and earth would become one vast expanse of darkness and desert. (283-256, 1997.4.13)

True loves arises from that place where God's sons and daughters are born. That place is the sexual organs. However, they are treated most contemptuously. They are treated as the lewdest because heaven and earth were subverted, but in the restored world they are the original palace of love, life, lineage and conscience.

We are ignorant of the fact that without the sexual organs, no nation would have come into existence, and there

would be neither the beginning nor the development of the ideal world. (286-170, 1997.8.9)

Why did the sexual organs come into existence? They came into existence because of love, life, lineage and conscience. Without passing through them, there can be no love, life, lineage or conscience. When creating human beings, which part would have been harder for God to create, the five sensory organs of eyes, nose, and so on, or the sexual organs? Do we appeal to love through the five sensory organs? Are these the organs where love, life, lineage and conscience converge? Absolutely not. The only such place is the sexual organs. That is where the second fruits of love, life, lineage and conscience are borne, and we call these fruits our sons and daughters. Without the sexual organs, nothing can exist. The entire world would cease to exist.

Until now people have not known how precious the sexual organs are. Some might think proudly, "I am the best in the world!" but without their genitals they would be nothing. By genitals I am referring to the true sexual organs. (281-189, 1997.2.13)

Where is the palace of life, love and lineage? Isn't it the family, the couple? Isn't that place the home of conjugal love? The male and female sexual organs should fulfill that task. You all should give birth to royal descendants. Based on God's love, you need to give birth to the true princes and princesses of heaven. That is true life. You must bequeath a true lineage to posterity. (221-13, 1991.10.20)

The sexual organs are the palace of life. The palace is the first original home representing the whole. What is the king? He is the center of formation, growth, and completion. The center of those three stages is the king. From that perspective, we consider that this Chinese character came about through revelation. Do you have the palace of love? Do men and women have the palace of love? Yet why would people that possess the palace of love worry? Would they know unhappiness? It is simple. (228-266, 1992.7.5)

Why should you be concerned with original tradition? Because the three – love, life and lineage – are the highest tradition and core. The sexual organs connect those three simultaneously. They are where engrafting takes place, the engrafting of love, life and lineage. (230-119, 1992.4.26)

The genitals through which a loving couple has intercourse are the palace of love. Love begins from that place. They are the palace of true love and the place where life first begins. Think about whether this is true or not. The sexual organs are the palace of love. In the original state without the Fall, the genitals are the palace of love, life and lineage. Where man and woman are joined together centering on love, there, life and lineage are perpetuated. (254-281, 1994.2.15)

All beings in the world give their

lives to be absorbed into the higher level, to ultimately reach the sexual organs through which men and women can give birth to God's sons and daughters who have not fallen. Minerals are absorbed by plants, plants by animals, animals by bigger animals, and bigger animals by human beings. Therefore, human beings must be qualified as lords who can absorb and digest everything.

Hence you should love in order to eat. Did you show love? What kind of place is that place? It is the sexual organs. Sexual organs are living vessels. They are the vessels that take in life. They are the palace of love. Can women and men feel love without them? They cannot. (286-144, 1997.8.9)

The final, ideal destination of the assimilation of all creation is the male and female organs. That is a fact. Why is that so? It is where the love of God, humankind and the universe combine. It is where love and life become one.

It is also where descendants are connected vertically through lineage, and through this vertical connection, countless peoples are connected horizontally. This is how God's Kingdom on earth is established. That's how valuable the sexual organs are. How important they are! (269-129, 1995.4.9)

Where did the original ancestors of humankind come from? Not the eyes, nose, mouth or hands. Where is it? Where is that holy place? It is your sexual organ. Isn't that so? The lineage is connected to that place. Hence, salvation is not easy. (218-179, 1991.7.28)

You've heard of a melting pot, haven't you? What is the blast furnace, the place where the blood of man and woman are melted and blended together in the crucible? It is the sexual organs. The vessels for the generation of new life are called the sexual organs. They are the original palace of love. You need to know that they are the garden where God's love begins to bud. (302-166, 1999.6.13)

Your sexual organs are like that: "Ah, through them, children are created." Have you ever considered this? It is very important. (298-180, 1999.1.1)

In the term *saeng shik gi* (sexual organs), the Chinese character for *saeng* (生), meaning life, can be used with either *shik* (食), meaning food, or *shik* (植), meaning to plant. These organs are called the vessels that plant life. *Shik* can also be represented by the character '殖' meaning to multiply. In other words, the organs for planting life are also the organs for multiplying life. That is how we can interpret the word. The organs are the vessels for the planting of life. (302-181, 1999.6.13)

Centering on what are the Creator and the creation to become one? Love. You must know this. Thus, we arrive at the conclusion that God created everything with love. The fact that He created us centering on the genitals proves that He did so based on the theme of love. (193-163, 1989.10.3)

Everybody in history pursued this. It is incredibly powerful. It transcends culture and economics, even in the fallen world. Yet what would it have been like in the original world? If you think about it, it is most precious. It is the original palace of all palaces. It is the palace of life as well as the palace of lineage. The foundations of these three palaces are the genitals. They are the most important place. Even God seeks it. If He had occupied these three palaces, all of the people of this world would have become His kindred. (243-275, 1993.1.28)

The most precious in the human world is the original palace of love, the source of love, life and lineage. Where is that? If the Fall had not occurred, this would have become the most holy place. The male and female genitals are the original palace of love. You need to understand this. They came to be dirty due to the Fall; originally, they are the source of life and lineage. Yet the most precious source of us all was destroyed, and became the worst thing. Consequently, this must be completely reversed. (209-230, 1990.11.29)

The male and female genitals are the organs of love, life, and historical lineage. This was not known. They are most precious. Even though our model ideal ancestors, an ideal nation, and an ideal culture were to coexist together with God, this ideal was thwarted by secular humanism. The devil knew that God was seeking such a nation, and, to completely thwart His plan, came up with a strategy that is America's secular humanism of the present day.

That is an animalistic world. The sexual organs are the palace of love, the palace in which eternal life is born, the palace that inherits the lineage that will succeed to the eternally unchanging tradition of heaven. They are the palace of true life, true love and true lineage – the most precious place of all. You cannot use them arbitrarily. You cannot open them without God's permission. They cannot be touched by anyone other than your husband or wife who has obtained the permission of God and the universe. Yet is love in America like that? (216-207, 1991.3.31)

After Adam's creation, his sexual organ – as originally intended and idealized by God, and untainted by the Fall – should become a base and original palace that is united with God. It is to connect the lineage and life centering on true love. They are the original palace of love. (290-17, 1998.2.2)

You'll hear it said that the founder of the Unification Church is a religious leader of sex. Were it not for the Fall, the sexual relationship would be the original palace of love. It would have been the original palace wherein the King can always come in and reside. You should know that it is the original palace of love. The sexual organs are the headquarters, the palace of love. (278-17, 1996.5.24)

2.2. The organs with which to complete God's purpose of creation

Your genitals are the organs for love. Even if a dictator were to come forth and desire to revolutionize those organs of love, it would be impossible. Despite the many changes made in history, never have the sexual organs been changed, nor will they ever be changed. They cannot be exchanged for the entire universe. The problem lies in the fact that human beings are unaware of this concept.

All problems in human beings arise from man and woman. The moment men and women are completely united a world of peace will unfold before our eyes. (276-130, 1996.2.11)

Biologically, the organ where there is the greatest concentration of nerves and veins in a human being is the sexual organ. Through these organs we can create beings that resemble us. The genitals were most painstakingly created, and yet at present they are no better than manure pails. (275-74, 1995.11.3)

God based His work of creation on the male and female organs, which are incorporated and connected to all elements including those of the spirit, the body and the blood. Didn't the elements that make up your eyes also come from there? Don't the elements of your teeth resemble those of your mother and father? Is there any part of you that doesn't take after them? Even your minds resemble those of your parents. On account of this, everything is concentrated on the sexual organs, and every nerve and blood vessel stems from them. The genitals are the roots. The root of a human being is not the head; our roots lie at the genitals. (194-139, 1989.10.17)

The universe began from love. What love would that be? It would be vertical and horizontal love, and frontal and posterior love. It refers to spherical love. The family is the center linking above and below, left and right, and front and back. If you were to ask God, "Where is God?" He would answer, "In the center of love." If you were to ask, "Where is the center of love?" He would say, "It is at the place of the settlement of love." To the question, "Where is the place of the settlement of love?" He would reply, "The sexual organs!" (279-48, 1996.6.9)

What is the most stimulating and sensitive part of a man? Is it his tongue? Though the organ for tasting may be very sensitive, it could not be as sensitive as the sexual organ. To satisfy the tongue, once you have tasted something, you will desire to have it again the next day, but in the case of the genitals, if you have a spouse who satisfies your sexual organ, merely thinking about that person would give you satisfaction; that is what the world will be like to you. You can taste something only when you have eaten it, but you will be able to feel your love partner by just thinking about him or her. What can give you pleasure transcending great distances and infinite space, and make you desire to love even after death and into the next life. It is the

love of your beloved husband or wife, and no other. (286-275, 1997.8.13)

Where is the source of love, life and lineage in our world? Is it the mouth or the head? Where is it? It is the sexual organs. However, through the Fall that wrecked heaven and earth, the sexual organs were defiled and became the palace and source of evil. Therein were planted false love, life and lineage. As the organs are the culprits that sold heaven and earth, they are considered indecent, and any talk about them obscene. (200-249, 1990.2.25)

Aren't the genitals magical organs? The organs connecting the love and life of man and woman, that blend and bring together their blood, are placed at the center of our bodies. These are the sexual organs. Am I right? If you were to delve into this origin, you would fathom the reason for God's act of creation.

Why did He create? What did He base His creation on? Today, there is no one who ponders such questions. Even if you were to visit all the world's libraries, you would find that I was the first to advocate this point. That is so precious. It became clear that this is the conclusion for everything. Why did He create? The fact that man and woman become one through the sexual organs proves that He created with love. It is the source of His ideal love. (194-63, 1989.10.15)

Where do man and woman join together at ninety degrees? They connect at the genitals. This is not a laughing matter; it is holy. The genitals are the original palace of love. The principle palace of love is not the eyes or the head. Which parts of man and woman are used for lovemaking? Is it the eyes, the head, or what? It is the sexual organs. So don't think of them as evil. They are considered bad due to the Fall. Satan made them the original palace that ruined this world. Aren't the sexual organs the original palace of love and life? Where does life come from? Isn't it from the genitals? What enables the connection of lineage? Is it at the head, or on the back of the hand? (198-353, 1990.2.11)

What is the original palace desired by all material elements? The male and female genitals, the minutest part with the ideal sensibility in human beings, are our highest beacon of hope. Aren't you hearing this for the first time? That is why everyone tries to invest themselves totally as they seek it. The only path you would tread even if it means forsaking your life is the path of love. This is true for everything in the universe, from the world of microorganisms to the mineral world, the plant world, and the animal world. (249-164, 1993.10.10)

All should adhere to the mainstream; those who do not follow it but instead halt halfway would degenerate somewhat. Be this as it may, what would be the greatest purpose and desire of all creation? It is to seek the place of loving God. From God's perspective, of all forms of creation, what did He create with the utmost care? It is the male and

female genitals. He concentrated all His energy into creating the human sexual organs, to make them into the source that can collect together all elements of humankind and re-create them. That place is the palace of cells, for cells are made up of elements. (249-162, 1993.10.10)

The original palace of love, the historical palace of love, comes to be where the male and female sexual organs unite. It becomes the place of repose. No one can move this place; it is eternal and absolute. In that love nest, the life of man and the life of woman assimilate, boil over, and finally explode, giving rise to a new life. Through the explosive power thus generated, a new life is brought into existence. That is why when making love even doves make explosive noises of coo-coo. Thus, in lovemaking, a man and wife should not be embarrassed at making a noise loud enough for their parents to hear them. (193-147, 1989.10.3)

What serves as the center point of left and right? It is the male and female sexual organs. When they meet as one, the cosmos and the universe revolve. That's how precious they are. It is not man and woman themselves that are precious. (243-27, 1993.1.1)

Based on the concept of love, man and woman were born as separate entities to become one through love. Based on what are they to unite? They are to unite based on love. Their genitals are the tools through which they can unite centering on love. That is why they are in the shape of concave and convex, so that they can fit together as one. That's nothing to be embarrassed about. Man and woman are to come together and become one through their sexual organs. In other words, they are to become one body based on love, that is, become one in mind and body. Through what is the mind-body oneness of a man or a woman achieved? It is not by kissing or holding hands. They achieve complete oneness when they fit together perfectly through the sexual parts. (229-251, 1992.4.12)

Even God Himself created heaven and earth and all creation based on love. How is this evidenced? This task is important. Through what can we prove that He created for the sake of love? Not through man or woman. Then what is it? You can tell through their sexual organs.

What was God's standard in creating human beings? If one were to ask what the standard for creating the man was, would it be right to say, "God created him based upon his face"? With regard to the creation of woman, is it right to claim, "He created her to be distinguished by having less facial hair, smoother skin, and a smaller stature"? Of course not. You need to understand the fact that He created them based on the sexual organs. The man is the way he is today in correspondence to his genitals, and the woman is the way she is in correspondence to her genitals. I was the first to make this statement. No one else ever uttered such words. These are new concepts not found in libraries or

in history. (193-145, 1989.10.3)

When creating man and woman, God started out creating them based on their sexual organs. Thus, all structural elements of human beings converge there to move the sexual organs. For this reason, when man and woman unite in the act of lovemaking, conception takes place and a baby is born. What would happen when the baby is born? Whom would it take after: the woman or the man? Its birth would be possible because it has the entire nervous system in its body. Can branches sprout forth if there are no roots? The logic in this cannot be denied. Hence, when love is stirred up, it is the principle that the mind and the body be united. That is logical.

Then what are the organs by means of which love, life and lineage can be connected continuously to one's children? Those organs are the male and female organs. Then which comes first: love or life? This is the question. In the world today, the new materialistic philosophies question whether mind or body comes first. Similarly, we also need to ask ourselves which is more precious: love or life? This is the issue: which comes first? The order of importance needs to be determined. Love comes first. When God set up the ideal of creation, He did not do so centering upon Himself. Instead, He made love central, and therefore created the world as his object partner. (193-145, 1989.10.3)

What are the sexual organs for? They are for finding love. Through woman and man finding each other, love comes into being. Such is marriage. It cannot be exchanged for anything in the universe. Man is the way he is because he was created in correspondence to his genitals. The woman too was created the way she is in correspondence to her genitals. People have been living till now without knowing the fact that woman came to be woman and man came to be man on account of their sexual organs. (280-60, 1996.11.1)

The most important issue to date has been: which organ of the body is for fulfilling love? Because of ignorance, that organ has been treated as the worst thing. What is that organ? Until now the sexual organs have been treated as something bad. What is the organ that fulfills love? What are the sexual organs? Aren't they the concave and the convex? What is the concave place for? What is the convex place for? By fitting the two together perfectly, love is connected. Without joining them together, we would not know love. The genitals are where perfected love appears and becomes absolutely one. There is no other way. (278-203, 1996.5.24)

What organ do man and woman need as partners? Is it located where they kiss? Is it accessed by touching each other's bodies? What organ is it? It is the genitals. Genitals in Korean mean the vessel wherein life is planted. That is just what the genitals are. The female organ is the tool that can occupy the man. The sexual organ is the tool to be used in seeking

love; the owner of the tool, however, is not the woman herself. Through it, she becomes qualified as the owner of love. This is true for both woman and man. (301-74, 1999.4.16)

All beings were born for love and as such should not have their sexual organs for themselves. They have them for their spouses. Unless they form a connection to their spouses, true love cannot be perfected. This is the law of heaven, by which we are all to become absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal owners.

Man alone cannot become the owner of love. Perfection takes place where one is connected to one's spouse through the sexual organs. The woman becomes perfected when connected to true love. That is, for her, perfection occurs at that place where she completely occupies the male organ. The same is true for the man. That is why we all stake our lives on it. (297-155, 1998.11.19)

Women need to become sovereigns over their ears and mouths. The Chinese characters for these three words (ear, mouth and king) combine to form the character for *seong* (聖) meaning saint. When asked, "Would you like to be a holy woman or a wicked woman?," every woman will answer that she wants to be the former. That is what is referred to here by *seong* (聖), not the *seong* (性) meaning sexual desire between man and woman. Though the same Korean word is used, the seong I am talking about is the combination of ear, mouth and king. You would do well to think of it as the female genitals. This is true. Isn't it the king? By safeguarding them, you will become saints. Isn't that something worthwhile to learn? You cannot find this in any dictionary, or anywhere else. You've never seen such teachings even in Japanese textbooks, have you? (283-48, 1997.4.8)

All of us are seeking after God's world of love, the source of His love. All beings are on their way to possess the male and female organs. People are on their way to become God's partners in love. Isn't this the flawless view of the Principle? This is not some theory I thought up arbitrarily. It refers to the principles of the great way of heaven and earth. (288-334, 1998.1.1)

2.3. The sexual organs are the most holy place, where God dwells

The cells of the love organs of man and woman are the most minute. To have the feelings of all the cells of that part through which runs all paths of love that unites mind and body, to enter that world as one of its elements: this is the aim of all beings in the created world. Then where do man and woman unite? Through the sexual organs. That is where man and woman directly unite and become one with God. Through the Fall, the organs came to be the worst thing, but originally, they are extremely holy. When man and woman open that door, the world is opened, and when the door is closed, the world is closed; when they are happy, the world and the entire universe are happy.

To become God's child, one needs to be born through the point of unity of these organs. If not from that point, from where would God's sons and daughters be born? Thus, when man and woman are making love, of course all cells in the body desire to be a part of the sexual organs, but once they have entered the place of love the whole body feels the same way. In other words, the entire body becomes one. (248-55, 1993.6.20)

Love should be fulfilled after everything has reached maturity uniformly. What is the highest antenna in the world? What would it be? It would be the antenna of love. What is the antenna of love in human beings? The antenna of love in human beings is the male and female genitals. It is a matter of course for radio waves to run through nothing else but the antenna. Hence, a sphere needs to be formed with that antenna.

People are God's antennas. They are the antennas focused on Him. The day God's vertical love makes contact with His antennas in the world, we will enter the realm that will engulf more than the world and the entire universe. The antenna is like the device that causes thunder to strike and lightning to flash in the physical and spirit worlds. (134-197, 1985.7.20)

God wishes to live at the center. The ideal family, nation and world all desire to be connected to that root. Yet everything was lost due to the Fall. We are in a piteous plight. What is the male organ? It is the palace of eternal love. Is this true just for your generation? It is not! It's for eternity. It's the place of the eternal palace. It is the palace of eternal life. From then, the life of man and woman are bound together as one for the first time based on love. What are the sexual organs? They are first, the palace of love, second, the palace of life, and third, the palace of God's lineage. This is the most precious thing. Wouldn't you all be happy about that? (248-111, 1993.8.1)

Conjugal and parental love settle eternally when we are married and making love. Through which part of the body do we make love? Is it the mouth, the eyes, or the ears? I don't know, but I believe you all know the answer very well! What is it? Until now, people have regarded the sexual organs as something bad, but now I'm teaching that it is the holy original palace. How amazing are the male and female sexual organs? Without them, true love, life, lineage and conscience cannot be connected. Can God's Kingdom begin without them? It cannot! Only through that organ is the world of freedom, happiness, peace and unity possible. (278-153, 1996.5.5)

What are absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience? These are all terms concerned with the genitals. The Fall refers to the failure of God and human genitals to become one. They failed to attain oneness. You must believe this absolutely. They are the pillars of the history of our family, clan, and lineage. (304-164, 1999.10.10)

Where do God and human beings meet? They meet when man and woman come together and make love, that is, when they unite through their sexual organs. The organs, however, became evil because they brought ruin to the world, heaven and earth, due to the Fall. You should think that when man and woman make love, they do so to attend God.

Every day you should think to yourselves in relation to the sexual parts of your body, "How can I connect this organ centering on love? How can I welcome and serve through it? How can I lead a conjugal life based on true love?" Our bodies are in such a position. (246-73, 1993.3.23)

We should be eternal and unchanging like God. Love is absolutely unique, eternal and unchanging, like God, and the place it settles is the sexual organs. No one knew this until now. That's how precious the genitals are. A family of happiness is formed when the sexual organs of the grandparents, parents, husband and wife, and also your sons and daughters in the future, are in union. If that is broken, the whole family falls apart. The grandmother has taken hold of the grandfather's sexual part and will try never to let it go, and the grandfather has occupied the grandmother's and will try never to lose it. Everything, love, happiness, freedom, and so on, begins from the sexual organs. That is undeniable. (278-203, 1996.5.24)

Adam and Eve were in the position of the original palace, and their descendants were meant to become palaces naturally; however, the site for the original palace was lost. The male and female sexual organs are that amazing. You need to realize that they are the three great palaces of love, life and lineage, and at the same time, the starting base for God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. It is truly astonishing. (267-257, 1995.1.8)

All creatures on the earth are meant to be fully mobilized to become the cells of the male and female sexual organs. Why? They are worth the sacrifice because the organs are that valuable. What this means is that once Adam and Eve have become partners of love, God will dwell in them, and vertical and horizontal love will be like a tornado that can even dig up the earth and create mountains. Only love can dominate all evil things of this world, and occupy God on high. (296-90, 1998.11.3)

You think of the male and female genitals as most indecent, but that is not true. They are most holy. Centering on true love, God intended to expand His ideal kingdom from there. They are the extremely holy sanctuary. Hence, your love partner is absolute. You should marry once, not twice. (245-151, 1993.2.28)

Speaking of the male and female love organs, the latter is her love palace and the former is his. It is ideal to have the two palaces meet and make them into the queen and king of the ideal. That is referred to as loving. Those who have

shown such love can become God's sons and daughters, and together with Him, participate equally in the one ideal sphere of life. People were created to be of such value. (128-326, 1983.10.2)

What is most precious to us? The sexual organs are more precious than our nations or our ideal families. Without them our families, races and nations cannot be established. Eternal life could never come about if they were not united. That is to say, the realm of life through which we can transcend the dominion of the physical world into the spirit world, the limitless world, could never come into being without the male and female sexual organs. God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven would not exist. (298-155, 1999.1.1)

We are abused and called the scoundrels of the Unification Church because its founder teaches such things, aren't we? I don't care if we are called scoundrels. Isn't it better to win a real gold medal rather than a false one? The male and female sexual organs are gifts inherited from the Creator and the ancestors, unchanged and connected as they are. They are precious gifts that not even God Himself will interfere with, and which our ancestors cannot violate. Those who violate them would become the flesh and blood of the devil, destroying the original palace of love, the center of the great laws of heaven. The sexual organs are the original palace of life, giving birth on the foundation centered on eternal true love as the pure essence. They are also the source of a new lineage.

Why were the sexual organs created? Certainly not just for one individual person or another. They were given to you for the great Way of heaven and earth, and the great providential governance of heaven and earth. How will the ideal world come upon the earth in the future? If the way of the rightful use of the sexual organs is not revealed, the world will come to ruin. We would never be able to find the world of peace. Look at Rome and the United States. The United States will not be ruined over lack of money.

Until now, because of Satan, we were ignorant regarding the owners of the sexual organs and how they came to be created. In order to disclose this truth, and to clean away the evil and foul tumult and turmoil of Satan, both on earth and in heaven, I came forth and hoisted my banner. (193-147, 1989.10.3)

Section 3. The Oneness of God and Humankind, and the Perfection of the Ideal of Love

3.1. The point of settlement of love where God and humankind meet

Where is the origin of love of the universe? It is God. The question here is how to put in logical order the idea of where God's love will settle. For God to become the harmonious being whose dual characteristics are separately represented in the form of Adam and Eve, created by Him, what should the harmonious being center upon? He should center on love and be in the masculine position of the

Subject in relation to all. Centered on what? Centered on love. You must know this.

Then what would God be like? Adam and Eve are the subjects with dual characteristics, and so their bodies are external and their minds are internal. Therefore, God desires to reside in their minds.

If that is the case, when Adam's and Eve's bodies as well as their minds unite, would or would not that which is at the bottom of their bodies unite too? What would that be? Would God unite with them or not? Where would He unite with them? Since He created the organs for love, where would He come to unite with human beings? Where would that place be? It would be the place of love. (194-64, 1989.10.15)

The Unification Principle defines God as the incorporeal absolute Subject, the Subject with harmonized dual characteristics. As a being with dual characteristics, He created Adam and Eve with substantial bodies to reflect each of those characteristics. He intended to become the center in the vertical position when they were fully matured and connected to each other horizontally based on love. What this means is that when Adam and Eve reached full maturity, God's masculinity was to reside in Adam's mind, and His femininity in Eve's. This, however, does not mean that God is divided into two. Since He is the Subject Being of these dual characteristics, He can dwell in the minds of both Adam and Eve. (138-245, 1986.1.24)

When the fully mature Adam and Eve are able to form a mutual bond of love, God, who possesses dual characteristics, will repose His masculinity in Adam, and His femininity in Eve. He will be wedded by dwelling within their bodies and minds. (143-236, 1986.3.19)

The central line divides the road into equal distances, angles, and widths. There is only one line of equilibrium that can do this at the center, not two. There is only one perpendicular line with one central point on it, and only one central point that is crossed by the line of equilibrium. That one spot is where God's love, the axial love, is connected. On the day this love runs into and unites with this spot, all actions of power headed in all directions – 360 degrees – will pass through this point. Once such a power of love explodes, man and woman will completely unite, and God will enter their midst.

Doesn't God have dual characteristics? What would He be like, who is the Subject with dual characteristics as discussed in the Principle? He is a God with dual characteristics, and at the same time, the Subject with harmonized dual characteristics. What would be the essence of that Subject? It is love, absolute love. (136-37, 1985.12.20)

The substantial realm of the dual characteristics is intended to become God's partner and return to Him through true love. It is the origin-division-union action. The internal nature and external form, which were origi-

nally one, come together again substantially through the blessing of Adam and Eve. At this place where everything unites, God comes there to unite with man and woman, who are united. I've spoken these great words. God is that near to us. There is nothing better than coming to know God, who used to be at the depths of our minds. In accordance with His command, we should walk the path of victory unerringly throughout the course of our lives. (250-108, 1993.10.12)

Since God possesses dual characteristics, His masculinity is to enter Adam's mind. Thus, He becomes the internal Father. He comes into the position of the internal Father. In 1 Corinthians it is written, "Do you not know that you are God's temple?" It says our bodies are temples, wherein God can dwell. This is only too true. Since God exists as the Subject with dual characteristics, Adam is the visible representation of His invisible masculinity. Hence, Adam is God's body represented substantially. Behind Adam, the father of humanity and the substantiated corporeal form of the incorporeal being, God was meant to stand in the position of the internal Father. (139-233, 1986.1.31)

Originally, without the Fall taking place, God would have come to dwell in Adam and Eve. God is the being with the dual characteristics of external form and internal nature, and the objects of that external form and internal nature are Adam and Eve. It was God's intention to enter their minds and form the realm of oneness of mind and body with them.

God was to be in the position of the mind of the original and perfected human beings. Human beings were in the position of His perfected body, and in this realm of mind-body oneness He would get married through Adam and Eve. That wedding is substantially and horizontally Adam and Eve's marriage, but vertically it would be God's wedding. (256-85, 1994.3.12)

Who on earth are Adam and Eve? Theirs is the position where the harmonization of humanity based on their horizontal ideal love is supposed to take place, the right angle set, and the focal point set up. That position would intersect the lines drawn from above to below, left to right, and front to back. What does this mean? Since God is the Subject with dual characteristics, and will enter the mind of Adam and Eve when they conform to the focal point of love, their wedding, as the ancestors of humankind who have not fallen, will be His wedding as well. (223-267, 1991.11.12)

Adam and Eve came into existence from the invisible dual characteristics of God. Those two characteristics make up the one being, God. They are harmonized based on true love. In this state, God stands in the masculine position, and created His son and daughter to be in the object position to this. Thus, when they grow up and became husband and wife centering on love, God on high can come down to them. He will stand as the invisible Parent and they as the visible

parents, are to be united through love. (222-317, 1991.11.6)

God has are the qualities of both masculinity and femininity. That is why He is called the Subject with dual characteristics. The Unification Church presents this wonderful conclusion, that "The Subject with dual characteristics is God." The one who is invisible is the plus, and the ones who are visible are the minus parents. The invisible Parent is causal, the visible parents resultant. Thus, in the position of parents, God the invisible Parent and these visible parents are to become one based on love. The latter are the horizontal parents and the former the vertical Parent. (161-306, 1987.3.1)

Man and woman in union, harmonized by God's love in the united position, represent east and west respectively. The one man and the one woman representing this universe are the combined form of the dual characteristics of God. This is inevitable. When the two are united, a central axis will be created in this universe through which the love of God can be connected. (149-229, 1986.11.23)

Where can you discover God? In this day and age, however much people might have prayed, meditated, believed in religion, and so on, they could not discover Him. That is to say, they could never find God's true love. God and human beings have dual characteristics of internal and external, plus and minus. In this regard, God is concerned only with perfected human beings; aside from this standard, there are no sons and daughters or anything else. (161-323, 1987.3.8)

In considering who God is, it is seen that Eve is His wife from the internal, spiritual perspective. Entering Adam and Eve, God desires to make love. The divided dual characteristics are to unite based on love, for it is only love that can form the connection in all directions. Such is the relationship between God and humankind. God is the internal "you." However, He differs from us in that we are in the position of the His divided dual characteristics. Then why were they divided? It was to make the feeling of love more stimulating, to make it more stimulating while at the same time moving the position and changing the setting. With the move in position, reproduction came to take place. No reproduction can take place with only the vertical God. There is only one vertical position; can there be two? (187-94, 1989.1.6)

If you closely observe a woman who loves her husband, you will feel his presence with her. They have attained oneness. Isn't this the case for God? Just as all things have dual characteristics, they all return to Him in the end through the unity of the dual characteristics.

Those who unite centering on true love become God's friends. He enters into them. Man's center is woman. Since she is in his relational realm, she revolves with him as the center. He is the center around which she revolves. He doesn't

revolve around her. When he stands in the center, she naturally centers on him. (213-266, 1991.1.21)

In order for God to be the Father, He must be connected to us through lineage, life and love. God, who is a being of dual characteristics, took pleasure in thinking about love when He was alone, but in order to become the central owner of a world of harmonized pairs in all directions, He divided the dual characteristics that are within Himself. Therefore, the Unification Church teaches not origin-antithesis-union, but rather origin-division-union. (199-276, 1990.2.20)

What happens when Adam and Eve get married? Does not God exist with dual characteristics? His femininity enters Eve and His masculinity enters Adam, and the two unite. To put it another way, Adam and Eve are the bodies of God in substantial form. In such a way, God enters the internal dual characteristics of Adam and Eve and unites with them through love. Through this, they inherit His lineage. (137-88, 1985.12.24)

Where does God enter? He enters the mind of Adam and Eve. Does God have dual characteristics? These two characteristics enter one root and bind together. This is how their sons and daughters are connected. Connected through love, and with the body, mind and spirit firmly rooted, would the sons and daughters of love born from there go to hell? No one could deal arbitrarily with it. The absolute body, mind, spirit, absolute man and woman are united through the sexual organs, which are the source of life, love and lineage, based on God's absolute love. (194-343, 1989.10.30)

Who on earth are God, Adam and Eve? Who are Adam and Eve? If Adam had not fallen and become perfected, God would have entered into him, and if Eve had become perfected, He would have entered into her. God would have entered the separate embodiments in substantial form of His dual characteristics and brought together in union what was divided. How is God to bring this union about? It is not through force. It is through love. From love, stimulation is generated, and reproduction is brought about, the reproduction of the ideal world. (148-290, 1986.10.25)

God is the vertical Father. Adam and Eve before the Fall were to have been the horizontal parents. God is the vertical Parent to everything that exists with dual characteristics, and Adam and Eve would be their horizontal parents. Then where should they meet? True love passes through the shortest route. (199-361, 1990.2.21)

3.2. Fundamental principle of the ideal oneness of God and humankind in love

3.2.1. Explaining the oneness of God and humankind

What is it that I have agonized over the most? It is the matter of how to facili-

tate the oneness of God and humankind in love, and how to explain it logically. If this is not clarified, this arrangement cannot logically take root. If these fundamental circumstances of love for human beings are not established, everything will go wrong. (249-223, 1993.10.10)

The love of God and the love of humankind become the issue. Whether the love of God and the love of human beings are of the same color, or of different colors, is a great matter. Where do the two loves finally settle down together? If they do not finally settle down together, and lay down the base for the oneness of God and humankind in love, neither God nor humankind can come to settle. If God feels joyful and human beings also feel joyful through love, but the place where they are doing so is different, then there will be serious trouble. (257-58, 1994.3.13)

In pursuing fundamental problems, I thought a great deal about where on earth the realm of oneness of God and humankind would be. This is a very important question. If it were not answered, the starting point and the final destination would not be in accord. In the pursuit of this question, an awakening like a flashing thunderbolt came to me: that true love passes through the shortest route. That one realization solved everything. If heaven and earth were connected through true love, it would be through the shortest distance. In other words, there is only one perpendicular. It is always at ninety degrees to the horizontal. That is the shortest possible distance. (250-153, 1993.10.14)

Why do we marry? We marry to perfect love. If, horizontally, right and left, east and west are man and woman, then their true ideal will pass through the shortest distance, and so on the face of it, there will be only one point at the center that is at the shortest distance from horizontal love. That could only be at ninety degrees. If that angle increases, the shape formed would be an oval, which would not be proper. No other angle is the same. It is only the ninety-degree angle that allows everything to stand in the same position of equality on the same basis. Therefore, the meeting place of love through the oneness of God and humankind can only be situated at an angle of ninety degrees. (224-167, 1991.11.24)

The term for God as the vertical Father has emerged. Centered on true love, God is the vertical Parent, and Adam and Eve are the horizontal parents. Vertical and horizontal meet at ninety degrees. These are the fundamentals of the universe. Ultimately, God created human beings so He could have His wedding. He created them for His love. With this explanation, all difficult fundamental questions can be resolved. (252-319, 1993.1.5)

What I agonized over the most in delving into the fundamental truths of the universe was the question of how love moves and settles. By discovering the fact that love travels the shortest distance, everything came to be resolved.

If love were to come from above, seeing that heaven is above and the earth is below, what route would true love take to come to earth from heaven? It would take the shortest possible distance. What would that be? It is the perpendicular, isn't it? There is only one perpendicular. It is the shortest distance. Granted that love takes the fastest and shortest route, there can be only one meeting point of the heavenly and earthly worlds. There are not two. There is absolutely only one. (211-77, 1990.12.29)

Adam and Eve came into being from the invisible dual characteristics of God. Those two characteristics, which are invisible, together make up the one being. They are harmonized based on true love. In this state, God stands in the masculine position, and created His son and daughter to be in the objective position to His dual characteristics. Thus, when they grew up and became husband and wife centering on love, God on high could come down to where they were. He would stand as the invisible Parent and they as the visible parents, were to be united through true love. (222-317, 1991.11.6)

When people achieve perfection, they attain divine nature, become perfect like our Father in heaven, and attain divine value. Though God is the Absolute Being, He cannot fulfill the ideal of true love alone, for that requires a partner. Here, we need to understand the relationship between the beginning and perfection of God's true love and the true love of human beings. If God had not established human beings as the absolute object beings of true love, and instead tried to achieve the beginning and perfection of His true love, without human beings, what would have happened? The motivating forces of the true love ideals of God and humankind would have been different, and consequently the direction and purpose of the two loves would have been different. (282-209, 1997.3.13)

Who on earth are Adam and Eve? Theirs is the position where the harmonization of humanity based on their horizontal ideal love is supposed to take place, the right angle set, and the focal point set up. That position would intersect the lines drawn from above to below, left to right, and front to back. What does this mean? Since God is the Subject with dual characteristics, and will enter the mind of Adam and Eve when they conform to the focal point of love, the wedding of these ancestors of humankind who have not fallen would be His wedding as well. (223-267, 1991.11.12)

Where is the starting point of human perfection? It is the place most precious to God and human beings, the basis for the continuance of this universe. It is the origin of all elements at the time of creation. In short, it is love. We were born for love. What would this love be? It would be true love. Nothing, not the eyes, the mouth, or the five sensory organs can part from that true love. They are meant to revolve around it, to come and go in

accordance with it, to ascend only when it ascends, and to descend only when it descends. Thus, we can concentrate our five sensory organs on one focal point. What enables this? Not money or knowledge or power. It is nothing other than true love. (210-317, 1990.12.27)

Where must vertical and horizontal come together? Where is the union of heaven and earth to take place? It takes place at the perpendicular. The path followed by love takes the shortest distance. The question of where it is supposed to settle cost me untold effort.

In clarifying the fundamentals of the universe, I came to know that there is both vertical love and horizontal love. How did I know this? We cannot rise perpendicularly in an instant – whoosh. If that could be done, we would have to stand on the spot without moving an inch. Besides, if we were to love vertically, we would have to be different. In this state, where or how would we revolve? We could not. If there is love both in heaven and on earth, the most serious question related to the way that the two loves would be connected is how these loves would be brought together. The one thing I know for certain is that love passes through the shortest distance. (214-232, 1991.2.2)

What God wants is to achieve oneness with humankind through true love. The oneness of God and humankind! This signifies the realm of the union of God and human beings. If the standard of ideal that gives joy to God were contradictory to that desired by humankind, the situation would be dire. They need to become one face to face.

In other words, they need to become one horizontally and vertically. When these meet on the perpendicular, then front and back, left and right, upper and lower the right side and the left side, all twelve directions will fit in perfectly wherever they are placed, for they would all be at ninety degrees. (223-346, 1991.11.20)

Until now no one knew the logic as to where God's love and the love of humankind come together. Without this being known, the term 'Heavenly Father' would be groundless, completely irrelevant. Adam and Eve were to be God's bodies. What does it signify that everything will be as Adam and Eve named them? It means that God has entered their bodies and is naming them together.

Once they are perfected, God's internal nature would enter the man's mind and His external form would enter the woman's mind. The actual marriage ceremony of Adam and Eve was also to be God's wedding. You will understand this clearly when you pass into the spirit world. These incomprehensible theories will all make sense. Thus, only when you have completely occupied God's love will your desire be fully satisfied and will you declare, "Now it is done!" (252-119, 1993.11.14)

God is the root of love, life, lineage and the root of His kingdom on earth and in heaven. At the time of Adam and Eve's wedding, God enters their minds

and fulfills the love that arises through oneness. God is the vertical True Parent, and Adam and Eve are the horizontal true parents. Since we were given flesh and blood and born from such parents, the mind is our vertical self and the body our horizontal self.

Those who have perfected mind-body oneness in love by uniting with God in love become His sons and daughters. Once they become His princes and princesses, they are in a father-child relationship with Him, and so can inherit everything from Him. When these children attain conjugal oneness based on true love, they form a family attending God, and the starting point of peace and the ideal.

Man and woman, each being a half of the whole, unite and complete God's ideal love as His partners. That is to say, based on true love, God will perfect humankind as beings having infinite value. As such, through the perfection of true love He will perfect the world of the ideal of creation that is the home of eternal ideal love. (254-106, 1994.2.1)

God, the Subject Being of true love, created humankind as the object beings of that true love. His love ideal can be perfected only through human beings. His purpose of creation is the world of the absolute love ideal through the oneness of God and humankind in love. God created human beings as God's highest and very best object partners of His love. Accordingly, of all forms of creation, human beings are His object partners uniquely embodying His image. They were born as visible beings in front of the invisible God. When human beings are perfected, they become God's temples. They are the corporeal beings into whom God can freely and comfortably come and dwell at any time. God's absolute overall ideal of true love is realized and fulfilled only through human beings in the form of the vertical parent-child relationship. (277-198 1996.4.16)

3.2.2. The base for the oneness of God and humankind

Where do God's love and the love of humankind meet? At the point where love, life and lineage settle. If it were not for that place, there would be no way for love, life and lineage to connect. What is that place, that sexual organ, and what is it used for? It is the place where the lives of man and woman connect, and where their lineage and blood intersect. God's life, love and lineage, and those of man and woman are connected through this one point of settlement. Based on it, their descendants come forth. (205-63, 1990.7.7)

Where do God's absolute love and the absolute love of humankind meet? Only at one point. Where would that be? It is where the sexual organs unite on the wedding night. Well, did you ever think about meeting God there? The question is: where would you unite with Him? If the base on which the absolute God can settle, and the ideal love desired by human beings, Adam and Eve, are not the same base but are two different ones,

then there would be two different directions and purposes for love. This would mean that human beings could never form a relationship with God's absolute love, and consequently it would be wrong to say that He created for the sake of love.

Is that not the place where our existence began? Men and women are born there. They did not come into being through kissing, did they? Therefore, would it not be desirable for the male and female sexual organs to unite absolutely? Do husbands and wives long to unite absolutely or moderately? To receive love through that organ, a woman needs to stand in the position where she attends not only her husband, but also God spiritually. Externally, Adam's sexual organ is his own, but internally, it is God's. Externally, the woman's sexual organ is also Eve's but it is His internally. What is invisible is vertical, and what is visible is horizontal. That is how the vertical Parent and the horizontal parents attain oneness. (282-306, 1997.4.7)

God's wedding takes place on Adam and Eve's wedding day. There would be one vertical wedding and one horizontal wedding. Through their sexual organs, man and woman would attain God's absolute love and at the same time, reach the center of that love and be united centered on His love. Had this come about, they would have been united centering on their minds, like God. (284-56, 1997.4.15)

God dwells in the place where love is absolutely unchanging. He resides in the sexual organs. He is the source of love and the origin of life, the life of man and woman, and lineage. Then where would the love, life and lineage of God and humankind come together? It can only be in this place. (287-29, 1997.8.10)

Internally, Adam and Eve's marriage ceremony is God's marriage: in other words, it is a dual wedding. What unite the two are the male and female organs. Without those, one's life would not have come into being. Through the organs, the lineages and history of humanity have been perpetuated. Even God's ideal world will be established by the children, the beloved children, who have passed through those gates. That is how His kingdom will be built. (290-81, 1998.2.3)

Whose wedding is the marriage ceremony of Adam and Eve? It is God's wedding. If that had been the case, what would have been the result? The sexual organs would have become first of all the palace of God's love, the original palace of love. That is why the family is said to be the palace, because the organs are the original palace of love. The family generally is the palace, and the organs are the vertical original palace of love. How precious they are! (265-269, 1994.11.23)

Who is Adam? Had he not fallen but instead become perfect, he would have become God's body. Eve would also have become His body. Man would have become His body on the plus side,

and woman His body on the minus side. Thereupon, what would have served as the basis for them to be united? That basis would be love, the sexual organs.

Given that Adam and Eve, with God residing internally in the center of their minds, are His embodiments, what would happen when they made love through their genitals? Through whom does God make love? Through what does the mind love? Isn't it through the body? Likewise, God would enter perfected Adam, who has not fallen, like a homeowner enters his house, and the two would make love. (197-52, 1990.1.7)

Who on earth is God? He is the Creator and the vertical Parent of true love. In other words, He is the vertical Parent based on true love. Perfected Adam and Eve are the horizontal parents based on true love. These two sets of parents are to unite. Vertical and horizontal are to unite at the place where Adam and Eve make love. That place is the original palace of love, life and lineage. It is the male and female organs.

In such a manner, God Himself will give birth to His sons and daughters. They are indeed His children. You were all born of two sets of parents, and the conscience is in the reciprocal position to the vertical Parent. In view of this, the conscience is the vertical "you" and the body the horizontal "you." How do vertical and horizontal unite? If they were to unite through true parental love, the Creator's true love, body and mind would never conflict but rather would harmonize completely. (250-38, 1993.10.11)

What on earth does it mean to call God our Father? You need to know the origin of the ideal of creation. Who is God? He is our Father, and you are His children. Given that you are His children, who do you take after? You resemble Him. Would He have eyes? Would He have a nose, a mouth and ears? He would. Next, would He have a body? Would God have sexual organs? All such subjects pose questions, which must be answered logically. (196-41, 1989.12.24)

Which organ does a couple uses to make love? Where do the love of God and humankind come together? There is only one starting point. If there were two, there would be two different directions and purposes, and we would consequently conclude that both God and human beings could not be happy. If God created humankind to be the object partners of His love, the starting point where His love and their love come in contact should be one and the same. Where would that point be? Not the heart. What is the most important organ for both man and woman? It is the sexual organs, the organs which God devoted the utmost care to during the creation process. (267-315, 1995.2.5)

Should not Adam and Eve's wedding be God's wedding? Where will you go to meet God, who created the object partner of His love to be superior to Him? Where will you go to unite with Him? Through the nose? Where would it be? This is a weighty matter. As such, the sexual organs, found in both men and

women, are the original garden wherein God can reside. That is where His love is perfected for the first time. That is the place where concave and convex come together as one. That is where the perfection of human beings, that is, the perfection of woman, man and God, takes place centering on love. (261-220, 1994.6.19)

Body and mind need to unite through the sexual organs. There should be only one starting place: if there were two, there would be two different directions. The final destination where the love of humankind and God's love come into contact and settle is the sexual organs. There the internal husband and the external husband are bound into oneness through love. Simply put, they are bound together where concave meets convex. (264-330, 1994.11.20)

A person reaching full maturity and marrying signifies the establishment of a relationship between God's love and the love of humankind. Centering on what? On the love organs. From a spiritual perspective, Adam's sexual organ is God's external sexual organ, and Eve's sexual organ God's internal sexual organ. From the relational point of view it signifies oneness with the woman's sexual organ. (223-19, 1991.11.7)

God's wedding is Adam and Eve's wedding, which is why His kingdom on earth and in heaven come into existence simultaneously. It starts with the love nest.

The moment the male and female sexual organs come together without falling is the point where God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven originate. That is also the base where the three great kingships should be established. A love nest cannot be built anywhere else except in that place. (263-57, 1994.8.16)

Adam's wedding is also God's wedding. This is His greatest secret. By finding this out, I became a specialist in the anatomy of the sexual organs. Everything unites centered on the sexual organs. If not for them, man and woman would not know love, and there would be no place for their lives to come together. That is where their blood meets, where history is perpetuated, and where the conscience begins. (275-68, 1995.11.3)

From God's viewpoint, who is woman originally and what is her relationship with Him? God created humankind because of love. In this regard, should His love and the love of humankind be in conflict with each other, or united? If the latter, where should they unite? Where would it be? Have you ever considered this? You should think about it. That place is the sexual organs. (265-256, 1994.11.23)

You need to know that the tradition of love based on God and True Parents is the starting point for everything. Where do the true love of God and humankind unite and begin? In the sexual organs. What kind of sexual organs? They would be the true sexual organs desired by God. This is the conclusion. (267-321, 1995.2.5)

We seek to return to the original homeland – the place where the love of God and humankind are connected – the male and female organs. Where do the love of God and humankind begin to unite? God, who is the root of the life, love, conscience, and lineage of Adam and Eve, will, from the vertical position, inevitably enter the center of the union of the external form and internal nature of Adam and Eve, who are in the horizontal position. Therefore, Adam and Eve's marriage is also God's marriage. The male and female organs are the instruments that will liberate and perfect God. Hence, God is the Father, the vertical Father, while perfected Adam is the horizontal father. (258-78, 1994.3.16)

Do not be reckless with your sticks, but rather respect them. They are most precious. God is looking down at them; He resides in them. Furthermore, that which belongs to the wife belongs to His wife, the Queen, and should I say that which belongs to the husbands is His stick? You should think that it is the same as God's. They are not two different things. Just like the mind and the body, if God is the mind, you are His body. Though invisible, He is there with you and your sexual organs. Though the organ is attached to your bodies, you should think that what is attached to you is the unified form of two. (265-273, 1994.11.23)

Have you ever thought of your husbands' sexual organs as God's? How near does that make Him? Don't place Him on a sky-high pedestal and worship Him. He is inside your minds. You don't realize it because He is one with you. (265-104, 1994.11.20)

Due to the Fall, the male and female organs became evil things because they became the original palace that opened the gates to the evil wave of death, the laws of death, the hell of destruction, and the wicked objects that violated the laws of heaven. This was the secret hidden in history until now. Had they not fallen, the male and female sexual organs would have become the origin of love and the original palace of love, life and lineage. As such, they should have been united with God's vertical love and the horizontal love of true parents.

Since true love flows through the shortest route, the horizontal love of human beings, Adam and Eve, would also do so, and would therefore have no choice but to form a ninety degree angle. Here, an explosion should take place, caused by the joy brought about through the oneness of Adam and Eve with God in life, love and lineage. Humanity should have been born from this unifying explosion. Thus they would have become Adam and Eve's children, and God's grandchildren. Had that come to pass, why would they go to hell? Why would they need religion? They would have lived just as they were and gone to heaven. (197-175, 1990.1.13)

Since God is in the vertical position at the center, He is vertical, and Adam and Eve are horizontal, and so the place

where they come together and unite is the sexual organs. Thus, God, the source of love and life, can dwell in that place, and since He is the origin of lineage, everything begins there.

If that which is the source of life, love and lineage were to be pulled, that is to say, if this bloodline were to be pulled, then along with it all ancestral bloodlines would emerge. If life were to be pulled, would the lives of the ancestors who come forth be pulled as well? Furthermore, if the love line were to be pulled, would the rest be pulled along also? That place, the headquarters where creation is concentrated and connected is the most precious place of all. The sexual organs are the distinguishing characteristic between men and women.

Then who were the male and female organs created to make a connection with first? Not for Adam or Eve, but for God. The Bible depicts the devil as a god of lewdness. Why did God hate him so? He completely destroyed Hisideal intrinsic nature. So his banishment from the entire universe is foretold. (194-64, 1989.10.15)

How precious are the male and female organs? The Fall came about through them, causing the ideal of all humanity to break down. They cannot have two owners, but absolutely only one. When a woman gets married and permits hers to become one with her one and only husband, it will be for eternity. Hence, the male and female organs are precious. Where do God's love and the love of humankind meet?

God created heaven and earth for the sake of the love of the ideal of creation, and the object partner of that love is humankind. Wouldn't you all want the object partner of your love to be better than yourselves? Don't you want that? How many thousands of times better should they be? If asked, "Do you want your spouse to be a thousand times or ten thousand times better?" you would answer ten thousand times. If asked, "Ten thousand or a hundred thousand times?," then it would be a hundred thousand times, and so on and so forth to many millions of times. (263-121, 1994.8.21)

Who do you think would be the partner of love desired by God in the world of creation? What would that partner be like? Could man alone be His partner? Could woman alone be His partner? What partner does He want? Not a partner for money, knowledge or power. Since He desires a love partner, we can meet Him at the place where the male and female organs unite. (279-250, 1996.9.15)

3.2.3. The root of true lineage: God

Were it not for the Fall, God would have become the internal Father and Mother, and Adam and Eve the external father and mother. As the sons and daughters of the internal Parent, human beings should have been born inheriting the seed of love. However, due to the Fall centering on the love of

Satan, they inherited his love, life and lineage. (223-234, 1991.11.10)

God stands in the position of the invisible internal Adam and the invisible internal Eve. In front of humankind, Adam was to stand as the substantial father, attending God, the internal Father, and Eve as the substantial mother, attending God, the internal Mother. Through this, the vertical basis was to be expanded to a horizontal foundation. (138-245, 1986.1.24)

Eve is God's future wife of love. God Himself is vertical, but He does not have a horizontal object. Unless vertical and horizontal are brought together, production cannot take place. God exists as the vertical. The vertical is perpendicular, and there can only be one perpendicular. The perpendicular world is incapable of multiplication. The configuration capable of multiplication is the horizontal foundation, since there is space for the realm of multiplication to unfold in all directions. Since He could not do it alone, God created His bodies in the form of Adam and Eve to multiply citizens for His kingdom. (203-296, 1990.6.27)

Originally, had they not fallen, Eve would have become God's wife and Adam His body. Through the lovemaking of Adam as God's body and Eve as God's body, the union of God and humankind, of heaven and earth, should have taken place. This union of God and of man and woman, plus and minus, should have come about, giving way to new life and new lineage through love settled vertically and horizontally. (196-233, 1990.1.1)

Who is Adam? Since God is the root, Adam is like the newly sprouting branch and bud. God and Adam are one body. Since God is the root of life, love, lineage, and conscience, He needs to feel love first. It is the Principle that the root should precede the stem in feeling love. (264-136, 1994.10.9)

Adam and Eve occupy the position of the object partners for the love of God, who is their subject partner. God's love is to become one with them at the time and place of their first lovemaking on their wedding night. However, they would not feel as if they were united with God because He has become completely one with them. But God would already be feeling the joy of the ideal of creation through the connection of love, life and lineage. In response to God's joy, man and woman feel pleasure in making love. I am referring to the marriage and union of Adam and Eve. (253-211, 1994.1.23)

God is the source of love, life and lineage. Where would the love, life and lineage of man and woman come together? It would be the secret place of man and woman, namely their sexual organs. Thus, of all great enterprises in life, the greatest is marriage. (211-240, 1990.12.30)

Regarding the relationship between God and the progenitors of humankind, Adam and Eve, the origin of our

life is God. God is also the subject of our love and the center of our life. (53-238, 1972.2.29)

The marriage of Adam and Eve signifies the marriage of God with humankind. Similarly, all of you, as human beings, are to marry Him. Where is God? He is inside of us. (258-276, 1994.3.20)

Adam and Eve's wedding is also God's wedding. Who is Adam? He is God's firstborn son. He is the level, the horizontal and God is the vertical. In a family, horizontal expansion begins from the firstborn son. God and Adam form the one body of father and son centered on love. Then where does love become one? At the wedding of vertical Adam and Eve. They adore each other after reaching full maturity in order to find the vertical position. (263-124, 1994.8.21)

Through love, God is to enter Adam and Eve and become the internal Father, and they are to become His body, ultimately becoming God internally and externally. God is the internal God who created the universe, and humankind is the external god. Becoming husband and wife, and setting out to establish the palace of God's Kingdom is their great work of creation. Hell cannot exist when the palace is established, centered on the kingship of the universe and the royal family of Adam and Eve. (140-115, 1986.2.8)

If God and Adam had attained internal and external oneness, God would have been the internal God and Adam the external god. God within would have been the internal God, and Adam without would have been the external god. (41-290, 1971.2.17)

God is the Creator and the vertical Parent of true love. In other words, He is the vertical Parent based on true love. Perfected Adam and Eve are the horizontal parents based on true love. These two sets of parents are to unite. Vertical and horizontal are to unite at the place where Adam and Eve make love. That place is the original palace of love, life and lineage: the male and female organs. In this way, God Himself will give birth to His sons and daughters. They are indeed His children. You were all born from two sets of parents, with the conscience in the reciprocal position to the vertical Parent. In view of this, your conscience is the vertical "you" and your body the horizontal "you." Through what do vertical and horizontal unite? Uniting through true parental love, the Creator's true love, body and mind would never conflict but rather would harmonize completely. (250-38, 1993.10.11)

If a family embodying the oneness of God and humankind in love had been realized, today we would all go straight to the Kingdom of Heaven without having to worry about heaven or hell. In this family, God can be one with human beings by making a relationship of true love centering on the genuine, great true love, which God desired as an ideal at the time of the creation. But without the true love of God and the true love

of true human beings becoming one as the true love, there would be two starting points. If God's true love and the true love of human beings were to start as two different forms of love and thus have different directions and purposes it would be impossible to find the absolute ideal world desired by God and human beings. (275-54, 1995.10.30)

The Unification Church differs from established churches in that it states that the oneness of God and humankind takes place and settles through love. Other theologies define God as holy and humankind as low and sinful. If this were the case, how could the love of God and of humankind become one? There is no answer to this. The problem lies in the belief that the absolute God can do anything. As a result, wherever Christianity went, much blood was shed. Christianity invaded plundered and created dictators, dragging God's name into it. The world should not be like that. From the viewpoint of God's original nature, that is not how things should be. (249-145, 1993.10.8)

3.3. Why marriage is important

3.3.1. The purpose of marriage is to resemble God

These are the fundamentals of the universe and the same is also true of God's perfection. Possessing dual characteristics, Adam and Eve are to unite with Him vertically. Thus, it is human beings who will perfect and liberate God. In addition, it is God who will perfect and liberate human beings. They cannot be separated from each other; they must all love each other together in that position. (277-25, 1996.3.17)

Since Adam and Eve arose out of God's dual characteristics, they can be said to have emerged from the same bundle. In other words, they are like brother and sister born from the same womb as twins. Touching each other, the twin brother and sister suckle separate breasts and think together centering on love. They love each other embraced in the bosom of their mother. (238-248, 1992.11.22)

Since God's original nature is composed of dual characteristics, wouldn't it be natural to see two parts when separation takes place? Man is the god of internal nature and woman is the god of external form. Only when the two are united, that is, the two separate beings are brought together, can the axis centering on love be created. This axis cannot be touched by anyone. From this we can conclude that even God must absolutely obey this axis of love. All this is logical. (206-296, 1990.10.14)

Where is the standard of unity? It is on the perpendicular. Had the Fall not occurred, where would God and humankind meet? People get married to meet God, to be engrafted to His love. Like God, we should seek the ideal object partner of our love because we are born for love and through love we are united

with the universe. This cannot be done alone. We are the divided forms of God's dual characteristics. (203-247, 1990.6.26)

Why marry? We marry to resemble God. He has dual characteristics and is a unified being in which both characteristics are harmonized. Man and woman were created to resemble each of His dual characteristics. Thus, man and woman should come together in complete unity and harmony, become like the seed, and return to the position of God's original character. For us to connect to that seed we need to go the way of love, and so we need to be born out of love. We need to be raised with love as our goal, live centering on love, and walk the path that will lead us back to God's love in heaven. You must understand that if you do not follow the path focused on that goal while living on earth, you will be headed in the wrong direction. If you keep your mind focused on leading a life of loving others you will be on the right path, no matter which way you go, as if you were trying to find your way to the South Pole or the North Pole. (138-97, 1986.1.19)

You get married not just for yourself, but for your spouse as well. Does that mean to say that marriage is more for your spouse than yourself? Since everything in heaven and earth is based on the principle of subject and object, for man and woman to get married is also a rule in heaven and earth.

If man represents right, woman represents left, this is so that they can form a horizontal relationship in the universe. If man is subject, woman becomes his object; this forms a vertical, upper and lower relationship with God. Therefore marriage is not for the sake of just the man or just the woman. It is to conform to heavenly law. The reason man and woman are shaped differently is so they can come together according to heavenly law. (Blessing - 356)

Why get married? To love God. What can you achieve after loving Him? You become one with His axis. What are we trying to achieve by becoming one with God? What happens when we become one with Him? Why should we become one with Him? Centering on the eternal love of the absolute God, eternal life can be achieved. This is not all. You must know that starting at the point where contact is made, the right to inherit the universe is bestowed. The world created by God centering on love belongs to Him, but it can become ours through the right of inheritance. (136-39, 1985.12.20)

Why get married? It is not for Adam and Eve to discover their own love. It is to make a secondary circle centering on the nucleus which is the vertical love of God. That is the ideal. God's ideal of creation is also fulfilled centering on such a love, and only through the union of a mature man and woman can love be fulfilled and connected to life. The connection cannot be made through life, but rather through love. Centering on vertical paternal love, with horizontal conjugal love, the seed of original

love can be connected for the first time. (173-288, 1988.2.21)

Marriage is where the ideal of creation is perfected. The perfection of God's children, siblings, and the ideal man and woman takes place in marriage. The substantial unity of the dual characteristics, internal nature and external form as they existed before being manifested in the form of Adam and Eve, takes place here. (252-118, 1993.11.14)

Separately, God's spiritual dual characteristics were manifested in the form of Adam and Eve. Through marriage the two can reunite vertically. The moment they are united in marriage, the incomplete halves are completed, achieve perfection, and embrace each other's worlds. Only the power of love can bring this about. Not only that, but through marriage they occupy God and their spouse. That is exactly what marriage is. It cannot be done casually. (255-260, 1994.3.11)

What is marriage? Through marriage, man occupies woman's world, which he was previously ignorant about. Woman also occupies man's world. Prior to marriage, man is a mystery to woman, as is he to her. They are in the same situation. By mutually occupying each other's mysterious worlds, thereby possessing both worlds, man and woman can be united before God, the Subject of dual characteristics, and thus they can become one with Him. (261-218, 1994.6.19)

Man is born for woman, and vice versa. Marriage brings two halves to perfection. It makes the half that is man and the half that is woman whole again, and then they occupy God. Man and woman are divided as dual characteristics and then reunited in love. What was divided from the origin was reunited. (270-167, 1995.5.29)

Adam and Eve's marriage can also be said to be God's marriage. God, who is the root of love, life, lineage and conscience, should experience love first. God, and then the husband, should be welcomed into the place of marriage. God's dual characteristics should go into Adam and Eve's minds respectively. In other words, the origin divides and enters the two separately. This is how origin-division-union action takes place. Plus and minus are completely united in this way. (273-84, 1995.10.21)

Why get married? We marry to resemble God. He has dual characteristics and is a unified being in which both characteristics are harmonized. Man and woman were created to resemble each of His characteristics. Thus, man and woman should come together in complete unity and harmony, and become like a seed, returning to the position of God's original character. Marriage signifies attaining the position in which the couple can become one with God. (290-53, 1998.2.2)

What is marriage? Through marriage, woman who is only half-complete is made whole by the fulfillment of love with a man. The same is true of man, in

that he is perfected through marriage by becoming one in love with a woman. Thus, the male and female organs are absolutely necessary. The male organ was made for woman and the female sexual organ for man. Their sexual organs were not made for themselves. (265-101, 1994.11.20)

Great is the love of the first night of marriage. That is first love. This is the moment a woman offers her body, which she has safeguarded all her life, to her man. This is also the case for the man. On that night, a man offers his chaste body one hundred percent to his woman. The lives they led before marriage were all in preparation for that night. (250-97, 1993.10.12)

When man and woman meet, and love blossoms between them, do you think they should unite absolutely, or remain separate? How does absolute oneness come about? Through man and woman kissing? Through which part do they become one? Marriage is intended to perfect the ideal of the sexual organs. Marriage is to satisfy that ideal. Is that wrong or right? This may sound like a coarse conclusion, but it is not coarse at all. It seems coarse because it is expressed in the words of coarse people in a secular world, but it is holy in God's original world. Where is the most holy place desired by God? It's the place wherein love can dwell forever. (279-71, 1996.7.24)

A woman on her way to find her man should be thinking: "I am seeking the one who is more precious than God. I am on my way to meet you with what is most precious. With great care, I have treasured and saved this my whole life. I love you." When women yearn for their men in such manner, their sexual area throbs. (206-141, 1990.10.3)

Filial love is perfected in the moment a married man and woman make love, that is, have sexual intercourse, for the first time. Here, the perfection of fraternal heart and conjugal heart takes place. This moment is also the starting point for the perfection of the heart of future parents. Thus, the woman's sexual part is the original palace of love, the origin of love. From there love begins; it does not begin in midair. (257-100, 1994.3.13)

What perfects man and woman? Married life: where the concave and convex of man and woman are unified, focused on love. You should know that is through love that they are unified. Looking from a structural point of view at the entire human body, there is nothing like the sexual organs. They were created to be the nucleus of the whole. In the process of creation, God invested the greatest effort into them. (263-261, 1994.10.15)

Mutual perfection is achieved through marriage and by the union of man and woman, who are two halves, through their sexual organs. Man becomes perfected through woman's love. He perfects her, and she him. This perfection, and union of true life, takes place centering on true love. Man and

woman are unified in true love.

It happens in the place where the two are united through activation of life, with love as the center. That is where their blood is brought together in one melting pot. Sons and daughters are born from there. You should know that place is more precious than sons and daughters, your husbands, and even God. (280-199, 1997.1.1)

Where man and woman embrace each other in love is the place wherein the universe is unified. That is how the creation appears when it fulfills God's ideal as originally intended. (22-201, 1969.2.4)

Of all blessings, the most precious is God's love. Next is inheriting God's creative power. Just as God created Adam and Eve, we are given the power to create through the children we give birth to. Why do we love our children? It is because through them, we horizontally inherit God's great achievements; the ability to create in this substantial realm. As a result, we feel the same joy from our children that God felt when he created Adam and Eve.

Next, God bestowed upon us the right of dominion. Because of this, we can have dominion over the creation just as God has dominion over it. Therefore, we should understand that at the moment we are married, we inherit God's love, the power of re-creation and the right of dominion in the realm of perfection. Hence, marriage refers not only to the fulfillment of love, but also to inheritance of rights over creation and dominion. (76-45, 1975.1.26)

The free sex rampant in this world is a trap Satan made to cause people to fall and to prevent them from coming closer to God. Once caught in this trap, they will die and be controlled by Satan or become his prey. In today's western societies, the USA in particular, due to the prevalence of free sex, it is becoming more and more difficult to form ideal families, and the number of people failing to form families is increasing daily. Thus, in the not-too-distant future, the majority of people will not have families at all.

When that happens, the USA will become a loveless society. I can confidently predict that it will become a hellish society in the end, dominated by anxiety and fear caused by mistrust. At this point of time, you in the USA have been given the responsibility and mission to eradicate these social trends, and instead establish a society brimming with love, the society God hopes for. (Blessing - 361)

In the Unification Church, our views on marriage are different. The purpose of marriage is for us to return to the Origin. (182-186, 1988.10.23)

3.3.2. Conjugal love and absoluteness

If a husband and wife love each other so much that their love is about to explode on the basis of their minds loving God and humanity, God and

the universe will be able to feel elated through that family. The love that they share cannot be anything else but the love for God and humanity. That root of love cannot be found within oneself. The love of God and humanity are its source. (35-239, 1970.10.19)

After marriage, nothing is horizontal anymore because when a higher being is connected to a lower being, the concept of perpendicularity emerges. A horizontal foundation can control the universe but not the cosmos. Only when vertical meets horizontal perpendicularly, can all sides fit together, be it heaven as earth, earth as heaven, front as back, back as front, right as left, high as low and before as after. The perfected standard on earth leads to the total perfection of the spirit world. (230-259, 1992.5.8)

After getting married, the place where husband and wife share true love is the origin of the love, life and lineage of God and humankind. This palace is the starting point of God's Ideal, His kingdom on earth and in heaven. The children born of this true love then achieve conjugal oneness by focusing on true love, form a family that attends God, and become the starting point of peace and the ideal. Man and woman, who are only halves by themselves, unite and complete the ideal love of God as His object partners. (259-45, 1994.3.27)

When a man and a woman receive the Blessing and feel joy by giving and receiving perfected love, in God's eyes, it's like a flower blossoming on earth. Moreover, everything that occurs through their love is like the fragrance of flowers to Him. He would then come to reside in such a family, since He desires to live amidst such a beautiful fragrance. The foundation where His love comes down is where conjugal love takes place. That will also become the place where all things and the universe can unite in harmony. (Blessing - 887)

Who is the owner of the male and female organs? It is the vertical God. Where do the ideal love of God and human beings come together? In the sexual organs. We marry to meet God. These are amazing words. God does not reside in some other separate place. When we have attained that position we will find Him dwelling there. Where does the teaching concerning the three great subjects come together and take root? It is in love. The love of God and human beings come together through the sexual organs. Marriage is for us to be engrafted to God's vertical love.

Thunder and lightning caused by negative and positive electricity on a cloudy day symbolizes the marriage of the universe. A loud noise is audible at such times, right? Are not pigeons noisy when they make love? Do you cry out when making love? I'm sure you have a hard time stifling the cry that threatens to come out of your mouths lest your mother and father may hear you. Be spontaneous. There is no need to hide such things. It is no longer a sin to shout until the windowpanes shatter all

at once. Just as lightning flashes with a peal of thunder, so should you blaze. In marriage, you should attain that state of living in attendance of a holy woman or man, and God. Buddhist monks will never get to know such a world of love, no matter how much they practice asceticism. (203-255, 1990.6.26)

Do you think God does not see you making love? It is all out in the open. It is open for the universe to see. It is very wrong to be unaware of this fact. Your ancestors are watching from the spirit world; they can see it as if it is taking place right before their eyes, like on the palm of their hands. Therefore it is very wrong to think making love is embarrassing. (250-244, 1993.10.15)

Love is eternal. There cannot be two loves that are eternal but only one. When man and woman are bound together through love, they should live together in happy union while on earth until parted by death. Even after death they should live together eternally. Although there are two bodies, they attain oneness by reuniting. When the two bodies unite, they are to revolve around God, thereby establishing the four-position foundation of love; that is the ideal world. False love cannot invade this world, and only true love will dwell there. (Blessing - 344)

What sort of a couple are an ideal husband and wife? They are the husband and wife who can substantially manifest the highest art and greatest literature. Before they can come in contact with the highest ideal and cultural world, the sweetest, greatest love shared by husband and wife should become the best work of art in the world. Their conjugal life should become the greatest work of literature, the embodiment of literature itself. (22-269, 1969.5.4)

Art should be manifested in the family. Husbands should become entertaining and artistic. If you find a good article in a magazine, mark it up and read it out loud in a wonderful voice to your wife as she is about to fall asleep. If you imagine in a dream that your wife was moved with emotion just as she went to sleep, it will come true. You would be connected to the spirit world. How splendid that is! Would you like to live like that, or would you prefer living like an unrefined couple? If you want to live in style, first adopt a flamboyant attitude and direction. That is the first condition. (271-282, 1995.8.28)

By giving birth to a baby you occupy the top quarter of God's world. By ascending to God's position and loving our children, we can experience God's inner heart and how much He loved human beings after creating them. (224-28, 1991.11.21)

By giving birth to sons and daughters and taking on the position of parents, a couple can experience how joyful God felt when He was creating human beings. Through the experience of having sons and daughters we are initiated into the world where we can inherit all God's

powers, the Great Subject of heaven and earth. The responsibility of the mother and father entails producing sons and daughters, raising them well and marrying them off. God was to raise Adam and Eve and marry them, but He could not do so. Adam and Eve also failed to give birth to sons and daughters and have them married. This deplorable failure must be resolved. These become the principles of education. (223-196, 1991.11.10)

A couple can perpetuate their lineage by uniting and having sons and daughters. They can experience God's joy of creating in this horizontal world through being elevated to the position of creators, and giving birth to sons and daughters. Thus, the wife should be treated the same as the sons and daughters because her position combines that of sons, daughters and siblings. Hence, husband and wife cannot be separated. Love is not meant to be satisfied thoughtlessly. In order to have sons and daughters, the couple needs to reach the inherent standard originally desired by God as the ideal of creation by complying with all such traditions. In this way, the family becomes the foundation for the Kingdom of Heaven. (223-24, 1991.11.7)

Circular motion manifests in all sorts of forms and figures once you become one centered on God. That is why the older sibling must love the younger, following the example of their parents loving them. Love within the family blossoms when a family unites into one in that way, the. Then that family love becomes love within a society, and then the love within a nation. In this way, it becomes the love of the whole world. (28-168, 1970.1.11)

Since God is the original substance of true love, when one gets connected to true love, everyone becomes part of one body. Parents are gods living in God's stead on earth, husband and wife are mutual counterpart gods, and sons and daughters are little gods. A family structure comprising three generations with true love as the focus is the basis of the Kingdom of Heaven. Without achieving this type of family, the kingdom cannot be established. The family is the center of the universe. The perfection of the family is the basis for the perfection of the universe, and so if there is love in a family and love for the universe, you can freely go anywhere. Then God would stand in the combined central position of love as the Parent of the whole universe. (298-306, 1999.1.17)

Monuments of peace should be erected for woman's chastity and man's fidelity because man and woman are trusted absolutely. When this is equalized for eternity there will be happiness. The treasure of all treasures is woman; she was but one half, however in occupying her husband, heaven and earth are reunited. To God, who is above us, sons and daughters are born, who are below Him. In short, an upper-lower relationship is formed.

Next, based on the conjugal relationship, expansion takes place in all direc-

tions. At last the family can settle down centering on the front and back relationship of siblings. One needs to have brothers and sisters. This organization of the relationships of up and down, left and right, and front and back, must take firm root.

As such, the only treasure man has is his wife. Even if he were to abandon all his assets, the one thing he cannot change is his wife. She is his one and only treasure. (2000.9.1)

Section 4. The Sexual Organs Are the Greatest Mystery and Interest

4.1. The sexual organs were created with utmost diligence

Why is the universe based on the pair system? Did it happen naturally? We can talk about today's theory of evolution, but what is the better-known truth that came before the theory of evolution? Men and women have genitals, the sexual organs. Have these organs evolved? If they have, then the way of lovemaking would have changed as well. People of the present would have a more developed way of making love than those of the past. Even in the insect kingdom, lovemaking between bugs would be different today from what it was in the past. Birds too would mate in a different way. Discussions should be held based on such factors. Are the love organs, which are the source of life, made to develop through evolution? Did our eyelashes grow by themselves and do our eyes shed tears just because they feel like it? Don't talk such nonsense.

There must be the owner – the idea – that is the origin of this universe. How mysterious are our bodies? Did they come into being just like that? How mysterious are the sexual organs? Could these organs, so unimaginably mysterious, be made just like that? Nothing that is connected to life is simple. (191-53, 1989.6.24)

The material world yearns to become the cells of the male and female organs because they are the final destination of hope. Through becoming one of these cells, they become invaluable, because that is where they can come into contact with God's love. Hence, all the essential nuclei and cells of the universe are focused on the operation of the male and female organs. Power is coursing through love and emanating from them: this can even move the universe. Because of this, one desires to sacrifice oneself for the sake of one's beloved.
(287-303, 1997.10.6)

All physiological senses are concentrated at the sexual organs. God exercised utmost diligence in creating them. As such, they became the organs that connect history and re-create life. Without knowing anything, you have sexual intercourse and produce sons and daughters, but that is not the way it should be. God, who created the organs, intended every element to be connected to them. Hence, when they are activated, the fundamental elements of life all get

connected to them, and explode like a power station. That is called love. (255-306, 1994.3.11)

Are you married? Do you have husbands? When animals are in heat and yearning for a mate they go out in search of their mates by scent and not sight. Similarly, you need to initiate a great physiological revolution. But due to the Fall, we have not yet reached the standard of using all our senses. What is lovemaking like for animals? You watched the movie earlier today, didn't you? In the Dong River located in Gangwon Province you can find *Hemibarbus mylodon*, a type of fish with no sexual organs. There is a line running through the body of the fish, and that is their sexual organ. When the females give off their odor in heat, the males rub their bodies against the line on the bodies of the females, and there is a spark. Then the males secrete seminal fluid. It is truly amazing. How are they able to lay eggs in water? That is how they make love. (301-195, 1999.4.26)

According to the theory of evolution, who made the distinction between male and female gender? Was it the amoeba? Darwin, that rascal, I should shake him to his senses. Do you know how much more mysterious and complicated the structure of the male and female organs are compared to your skeletal structure? How would you answer this question, Dr. Yoon? Well, how would you answer? Is the statement "The structure of the sexual organs is more complicated than our skeletal structure" correct? Yes, the structure of the sexual organs is more complicated. (197-22, 1990.1.7)

4.2. The owners of the sexual organs were interchanged

Man's treasure is not owned by him. It is owned by the woman, and her treasure belongs to him. In short, ownership has been exchanged. The woman does not own her sexual organ. She needs to know that it belongs to her man; it is not hers. The same is true for the man. Therefore one cannot do as one likes with their sexual organs. American women think of their organs as belonging to them. As a result, they act freely and do whatever they want with them. This is also the case for the men. But you are only the caretaker of your sexual organ. In other words, the caretakers are passing themselves off as the owners.

I ask the women: When did you meet the owner of your sexual organ? The owner is your husband. And you men: Do yours belong to you? Then what is marriage? Through marriage men and women are to find the owners of their sexual organs. Love is negative and positive electricity searching around for each other and meeting to produce lightning. Love is similar. A woman gets married not for a man's face but for this. A man gets married not for a woman's hand but for this. If man and woman are meant to marry among themselves, how can there be gays or lesbians? They will cease to exist. In less than a century, they will be gone in one generation. In light of this, should you get married or

not? Why get married? Because this is the way it is, you need to get married. You must absolutely get married. (162-50, 1987.3.22)

Women's sexual organs are not for themselves, but for their husbands. Until now they have thought of them as their own, but that is not so. They have no need of them. Men are the ones who need them. Women need to realize that what they have belongs to the men. It belongs to the men, to their husbands. Despite that, women feel possessive about them and so wickedly ruin everything in this world. Without men, what would they use them for? I am asking: what could they be used for? This is a serious question. Previously that was not understood. (275-132, 1995.12.4)

The owner of man's love is woman. She owns it. The owner of woman's love is man. He owns it. All men know this. To whom do those things dangling from men's bodies belong? This was previously not understood. Thinking that your sexual organ belongs to you is a sin. It is a grave sin for women to think that their sexual organs belong to them. (141-172, 1986.2.21)

True men should not change. True women do not change. Where can these men and women who are absolutely unchanging in true love be found? If there were such people the entire universe would bow down before them. That is how it would be. Since He is the King of wisdom, God let women keep the treasure of men, and men keep the treasure of women. That is the case for the sexual organs. (142-335, 1986.3.14)

For what purpose were human beings born? To seek the path of love. So the sexual organs men and women have do not belong to them. The organ dangling from man's body is not his. However, he regarded it as his possession. Woman is not the owner of her sexual organ; it is the man's. The owner of the sexual organ on man's body is woman. You must understand this amazing fact that, in this way, the love organs and their owners were interchanged. (143-66, 1986.3.15)

Woman and man are different in one respect. What way is that? Is it not in their sexual organs? Does a woman's sexual organ belong to her? Does it belong to her after she is married? It is her husband's. Also, what is that dangling from the body of the husband? Whose is it? It is the woman's for eternity. The right of ownership of absolute love is determined centering on true love. If one has an affair in the satanic world there is only way he can be forgiven; that can happen when he has taken a knife to cut it off, but then does not only because his wife held his hand back and prevented him from doing so. (180-334, 1988.10.5)

Can man and woman unite by kissing or by embracing each other? Complete unity takes place only in married life, which brings man and woman together as the interchanged owners of their sexual organs. (190-130, 1989.6.18)

Man is there for the object partner before him, woman. Since God is the King of wisdom, to prevent them from fighting and staying apart, He placed the most precious parts of each on the other's body, that is, He interchanged the owners. Those precious parts are the male and female organs. It is the most holy place. Wasn't the place built to store the Ark of the Covenant called the most holy place? Anyone who touched it was struck down by lightning and destruction was wrought for his generation and myriads of generations to come. The sole owner, the chief priest, is the husband. (190-134, 1989.6.18)

In the process of creation, God did not make man and woman haphazardly. He created them based on the sexual organs. Why? It was because He is the ancestor of love, the origin of life, and the origin of lineage. Man transmits ideal love there. The woman's sexual organ belongs to her man and his to her. They are not the owners of their organs. Hence, they are not the ones who can open them. Woman cannot open hers. Man cannot open his. Only she can open his and he hers. The focal point of love comes to fruition at that place. (193-301, 1989.10.8)

Man was born for woman. Woman was born for man. Thus, the sexual organs of man and woman do not belong to them. God is very wise; He interchanged the owners. Aren't those men who have affairs utter scoundrels? They are the lowest of the low and deserve to be struck down by lightning! Such behavior can never be forgiven in the Unification Church. (198-122, 1990.1.25)

Who is the owner of that concave female organ? Is it the woman or the man who needs it? Does woman need it absolutely or man? Man. Also, his is absolutely necessary to her. In terms of who holds the keys to them, he has hers and she has his. Thus, there is only one person who can open it. Since true love is one, only true men and women can be in charge of it. (210-108, 1990.12.1)

Who is the owner of the female organ? Man. The male organ is needed by the woman, and the female organ by the man. They were created correspondingly in that way. The owners were interchanged. (227-59, 1992.2.10)

Love wants to be absolute. Absolute means there is only one, not two. Something that is absolute is eternally one. Therefore, only one man and one woman can be allowed as the partner of love. As such, God created one Adam and one Eve. How can that be denied? No one could change that. (254-273, 1994.2.15)

For whom did woman's breasts come into being? For herself? For her sons and daughters, not for herself. For whom does she have big hips? Again, her sons and daughters. The owners of her breasts are her children. How about the sexual organ? It is for her spouse. Why? Everything on earth came to exist for the sake of others. Who is the owner of

the female organ? Her husband. Who is the owner? The husband, not the woman herself. Then who is the owner of the man's organ? The woman. God is truly amazing. He has interchanged owners to make it impossible for either to run away. (201-196, 1990.4.1)

A woman's face is not for herself. It is the face in which her husband can take delight. Nothing is hers. Her sexual organ placed down below in her center is not hers. It belongs to her husband. Not one part of the woman's body was created for her. They are all for her husband and her sons and daughters. Such is the path trod by woman: she is the one who can embrace the two worlds. She should clasp hands. The one who can become the vessel of love that will embrace the vertical and horizontal worlds on earth for the first time is the woman. (263-180, 1994.8.23)

With regard to the female body, her breasts and hips were created for her baby, and her face and the part that is covered up, are for her husband. This is the case of all parts of her body, upper and lower, left and right. There is not one that is for herself. Who own it? The owner of what? I am referring to the female organ. It is not hers. It belongs to man. She cannot do whatever she likes with something that belongs to him. If only this had been known, the world would not have become chaotic like this. How could there be free sex or homosexuality? Isn't it theft to use somebody else's property as one pleases? Thieves will end up in a bad situation. (290-158, 1998.2.18)

Present with us today are presidents from more than ten nations; I would like to ask them: try broadcasting this message on the air. Ask whether man's sexual organ is for himself or for woman. Those who claim theirs belongs to them are thieves. Those who think that they own what they have are thieves. This is not a laughing matter. It is a historical declaration. If everyone lived in accordance with this, the world of peace would unfold right before our eyes. As far as God's will is concerned, the most important things are those related to love. To instruct human beings about His will concerning love, God created the most precious organ, that is, the sexual organ, and the male organ belongs to woman, and the woman's organ to man! Amen! Do you think this is not true? Do you think this is wrong? (277-182, 1996.4.15)

The male and female organs are the poles, plus and minus, that can possess God's love. They are the charging plates of a battery. Without them, we could not be charged up with God's love. Since human beings refill their love through that organ, they can do so daily. Animals however cannot. They can only do it yearly. (134-200, 1985.7.20)

The family system in the United States is such that grandfathers and grandmothers cannot visit their grandson's house whenever they like. If they want to visit him, they have to call first. Such procedures have to be followed

before a visit. Think about it. In a love relationship, should one ask his or her spouse, "Let's make love tonight!" and get permission? Be it the wife or the husband, if one says, "Let's make love!" the other has to say okay. These are conjugal obligations. That is how it is. One cannot answer, "I'm tired, I don't want to!" Your organ is not yours. The owner of the female organ is man, and the owner of the male organ is woman. Who could deny this? (246-53, 1993.3.23)

You women, do you have such big breasts for yourselves? Do you have big hips for yourselves? There is not one part of you that belongs to you. Everything that women have is not theirs. It is for others, for their children and their husbands. None of their physiological organs or the sexual organ exists for the woman alone. Then who would be the owner of the male organ? The owner is woman. It is the wife who holds the key. If she were to use it wrongly, she would incur the punishment of heaven. Why did Sodom and Gomorrah go to ruin? Why is the United States on the way to destruction? They came to ruin through drugs and promiscuity. (142-150, 1986.3.8)

You did not know what makes a man a man, and a woman a woman? The answer is: the sexual organs. Is there anyone here who dislikes them? If you like them, how much do you like them? Even if you hitherto disdained them, you should henceforth esteem them. What will the world be like in the future? If it is a world that absolutely values the sexual organs. Will that world be good or bad? Will it prosper or perish? This is not a joke. When God was creating human beings, into which part did He invest the greatest creative effort? Would it be the eyes, the nose, the heart or the brain? Do not all these organs eventually die? What is the purpose of the Family Federation for World Peace? If there were a world inhabited by people who transcend all fields including morality and religion, whose sexual organs are harmonized into oneness so as to earn God's welcoming praise, what kind of world would it be?

When men and women are born, who do their sexual organs belong to? The owner of the husband's organ is the wife, and vice versa. You have been ignorant of the fact that the owners of the sexual organs were interchanged. This simple truth is undeniable and will remain unchanging throughout history forever to come. (279-244, 1996.9.15)

Where on earth is that place which harbors God's love? You should know that it is in the male and female organs. The original love organs, that have nothing to do with the Fall, are the most holy place. Humankind has been ignorant of this shocking fact, that, due to the Fall, this palace, this spring, which should have inherited the most precious lineage of the imperial prince of heaven, inherited instead the bloodline of Satan, God's enemy. (134-185, 1985.4.7)

Through the sexual organs man and woman make love. Yet, God wisely inter-

changed these love organs, one with the other, so that they could not be apart even if they wanted to. Even when they are separated, one needs to return to the other, having nowhere else to go, and no place else to rest. Only by taking one's counterpart along can one harmonize and be welcomed wherever one goes in heaven and earth. (148-290, 1986.10.25)

4.3. True love can digest even the unclean

Do you all know into which part of the body God invested His greatest creative effort? It is the sexual organ. The term sexual organ does not signify a reproduction machine. It is the most precious part of all, but it lies beside the most unclean part. Are you aware of that? Is the urethra found in the same place or not? It is in the same place. This is true for both man and woman. Why were they created that way? Even the best of seeds needs to be fertilized to take root and grow well. The greater the value of something, the more fertilizer it needs to continually receive.

Human beings continue to grow. They are growing as if they want to occupy even God Himself, and for this reason they are given manure throughout their lives. Should you find that dirty or be grateful for it? When you think of it alone, it is horrendous, is it not? Then why is it lying right there next to your organ? Every morning that organ needs to smell the odor coming from it, and it gets wet each time you urinate. What is this all about? Such are the principles of heaven and earth. (261-170, 1994.6.9)

When you actually stop to think about it, you thought that treasures were stored up there in heaven. But it turns out that you had treasures all along in your bodies. You came to understand that the original palace is a part of your body. Aren't the love organs the original palace that can attend God? Where is the pathway that makes the love connection? Is it in the fingertips? Where is it? What is it in a man? What is it in a woman? It is the male and female organs, where the most distasteful substance can also be found. Where does urine come out? From the sexual organ. This is the case for both women and men. If that unclean urine thus excreted were to mingle with love, would it still be unclean or would it become clean? Then how wonderful would it be to drink urine steeped in true love like iced tea! (178-125, 1988.6.1)

Love harmonizes many things. It can make a foul odor, a stench, or smell like perfume. Thus, for love nothing is unclean. Hence, God really is the King of wisdom. Our sexual organs are situated right next to the dirtiest part of our body. Declaring this as the way of harmony, He placed the male and female organs in the most unpleasant, dirtiest place. (194-49, 1989.10.15)

Where are the male and female organs? They are in the safest zone, and at the same time, the dirtiest. This goes to show that God truly is the King of wisdom. Through it, He teaches humanity,

"Love rules over even such dirty things!" The sexual organ lies close to the anus, and urine passes through that same organ. (194-175, 1989.10.22)

When making love, do you not desire the male organ to enter you? When you think about it, how dirty is that? The most sacred hole and the most unclean hole are one and the same. Is that not true? In that foul and smelly place, eternal life springs forth. This is true. When you are going to the toilet, you should think about this. You should bring to mind my words, "It is a holy place connected to true love. Everything is holy." Never forget this. Always remember it. (293-43, 1998.5.1)

The most precious sexual organ is connected to the dirtiest part. Where does urine come out? No one ever gave a thought to this important point. If you did not know this, it would be impossible for you to be perfected. In the spring, when you are sowing seeds, do you wash that seed in water, or do you cover it with manure? You cover it with manure, dirty, stinking manure. You bury it in the ground and then stamp on it. (277-274, 1996.4.18)

Is the sexual organ located farthest from or nearest to the parts you use to urinate and defecate? Great people should be honored even in the foulest of places. The location of life needs fertilizer. It cannot be a clean place like a sandy beach. Man should taste like bean paste soup. It is all right for the woman to be clean, but the man should be a little musty. Coming in from a day outside, even if his feet smelled a little, he should laugh over it. If he were too clean, not even flies would approach him. Even they would refuse to visit him. If so, then what else, be it ants or birds, would approach him? (247-323, 1993.6.1)

What is marriage? Isn't it about connecting the sexual organs together? Is that so or not? My words are not vulgar but holy. The noblest part of the human body is the sexual organ. That is where life and the ideal are passed down. It is exceedingly precious, but it lies close to the excretory organs.

What happens to the sexual organs of man and woman when they are sitting on the toilet bowl? Is it only the anus that sits on the toilet? Are they not all sitting on it? (187-70, 1989.1.6)

What is the most precious part of the human body? The sexual organ. Although that organ is most holy, what lies next to it is the dirtiest. In the case of man, urine passes out of his sexual organ. Why is this so? That is the mystery of the universe. Also, what is closest to the female organ? Is it not the anus, which she uses every morning? The same goes for urination. However, you should not think that the sexual organ is located in an absurd place. Have you ever heard of anyone accusing that part? No words should be spoken against it, and no wrong should be found in it. When you go into the spirit world, you should wish to live in the lowliest of places as

much as you would wish to live in the highest. (213-283, 1991.1.21)

What passes out of the female organ? Life. And what else? Urine, a cousin to feces, passes from it. Even I find this strange. Why on earth would anyone like that? Grandfathers and grandmothers, and even God Himself, lament that they could not obtain this love. It is amazing. What is so good about that? (295-186, 1998.8.28)

Love is precious to humankind. The love of human beings is precious, but right next to that organ of precious love is the organ that you hate the most. Which one is that? What do you urinate through? In both men and women, is that connected to the sexual organ or not? Do you not find that offensive? (263-95, 1994.8.21)

Which is better: the fingers or the head? Which is best in man? Which part of the body is the most precious in men and women? Is it not the sexual organ? How precious it is that it was created so as to be protected against unwelcome intrusions from all directions! That would not be the case if it were located where it could be touched just in passing. So it is thoroughly protected. This is the case for man as well as woman. Even if I were God, I could not have found anywhere else to put it. In creating and installing that organ, where would you have placed it in the body? Would you have put it somewhere else? If you had done that, what would happen when a man and a woman are walking together? (199-323, 1990.2.21)

4.4. Vertical and horizontal to be balanced by the sexual organs

Do not architects design with just a set square? Do they not draw up plans very easily? By the same token, with regard to the human body, where are the most important organs located? The ones found along a perpendicular drawn down the center are most important. What are they? In this physiological form of the body, which are the most important organs? The first is the nose. Try blocking your nostrils. Through them, elements essential to life pass in and out. Then further down, where would you reach? After the navel, you go further down and reach the sexual organ. Is the female organ placed upside down or laterally? I wouldn't know; it is the women who should know well. Is the male organ placed vertically? You should know about that. Everything centered on that vertical line is holy. It is connected directly to the issues of life. (196-226, 1990.1.1)

A person in whose face the lateral line (mouth-line) and the vertical line (nose-line) are straight is a person of true conscience. People in whose faces these two lines intersect at ninety degrees are conscientious people. This is the most important part. The navel should not be displaced but should instead be at the centerline, going straight up to meet the chin, and with the lips here the nose

should be straight, making a straight line to where this vein is. Those who display all these features will succeed in life. This line should also go down to meet the center of the hips. In this way, waist and hips should be perpendicular. That is how everything should look. (207-78, 1990.11.1)

Are not the eyes horizontal and the nose vertical? A vertical line extends from this vertical nose, down through the mouth and the esophagus to the stomach. Vertical and horizontal should be harmonized. If the vertical mouth or the horizontal eyes in a person's face are crooked, it changes that person's personality. The male and female organs are also harmonized with the vertical. The male organ consists of two, one vertical and the other horizontal. This represents the universe. Thus, the seed of life, the source of life comes from man. However proud American women are of themselves, they do not have baby seeds in them, do they? Even the most renowned American women could never have baby seeds in them. (243-272, 1993.1.28)

Where does this straight perpendicular line lead? To the sexual organ. That is the point the vertical line passes through, and for this reason, God desires this place. The body needs to form ninety degrees and unite right here, in this place. Until now, the minds and bodies of human beings have not been righteous. The mind is the vertical "you," and the body is the horizontal "you." Starting from where? The vertical Parent and the horizontal parents came together to create you. You inherited true love, true life, and true lineage from them. That is how you came into being. They united in true love and brought you into this world. Therefore, you are the center of the universe, and the representative of love. You are the central being of true love, formed by the union of horizontal and vertical love. That is who you are. (217-152, 1991.5.19)

Human beings like vertical things, and for this reason they stand upright. The head is above and the sexual organ is below at the center. Men find this to be true when they stand naked before a mirror. They have hair growing right down to their sexual organs and this line should not be crooked. Women have breasts and they should also be in a line. Their hips should not be too big, but correspond with the upper part. This is nothing to laugh about. You should learn how to be moved by such things. (225-99, 1992.1.5)

Our body is shaped in such a way as to be in focus. The ears, eyes and every other part are all created to keep us focused. The mouth too is in focus centering on the nerves. Also, the navel and the sexual organ lie in a straight line at the center of our body. It is wrong to be ashamed of that. (229-241, 1992.4.12)

The focal point of the eyes is also in a straight line passing through the center. Shouldn't this centerline be in alignment with the navel and the sexu-

al organ? Thus, you have these two and they resonate with one another. The reason they were placed where they are is for them to resonate, because only when they resonate can they be conscious. (226-19, 1992.2.1)

The lips must be in focus, and the hands should also. If not, there will be trouble. No matter how big one's mouth, it needs to be in line with the nose and the navel, and the most important part further down, the sexual organ. Look at yourselves in a mirror and see if yours are in line, and learn how you should live your lives.

From childhood, people need to be taught that, because this is the way it is, they need to be aware of such aspects. There are no textbooks that teach such things. I could go on and on talking about such things. (221-227, 1991.10.25)

The eyes are not placed where they are by accident, but based on the perpendicular. It does not look good for a person to have slanted eyes. They should be perpendicular. The nose symbolizes Adam and Eve, the eyes God, and the teeth creation. There are thirty-two teeth, and four times eight is thirty-two, symbolizing the entire creation. All these visual aspects come to fruition not at the head but at the sexual organ. The sexual organ is the palace of all types of nerves. You would know this if you studied physiology. (190-130, 1989.6.18)

Why is the male part convex? Women too have a protruding part. They look like a broken mountain range. That is how the very best place should be like. That is where the term "Blue dragon on the left and white tiger on the right," meaning the very best site situated between two mountains on the east and the west, comes from. As such, the sexual organs of love need to be perpendicular and connected to parental love through the line of love. (180-303, 1988.8.22)

Everything resembles a sphere and needs to be in motion. In the human body, the part that most resembles a sphere is the face, and among the facial features, the eyes most resemble a sphere. Next, in men, a part of the sexual organ is spherical. I have not mentioned that, so you do not need to say it. Then next, what can be found inside the body? The kidney and bladder; these are all important organs. (214-56, 1991.2.1)

Everything flows vertically, coming to fruition in the sexual organs. That is where everything is bound to come together, whether bad or good. Hence, those who use them well become people of goodness, and those who use them wrongly become the worst people. (280-97, 1996.11.11)

A person whose nose tip is not in line with the center cannot be a conscientious person. You should know this as a matter of common sense. This must be in a straight line through the navel right down to the sexual organ. Men have hair on their chests, but women do not, do they? Do women have chest hair? Hair

in men also grows in two parts, subject and object, which must become one. (248-284, 1993.10.3)

The nose tip should lie at the center, as should the navel and the sexual organ. If the line going through them is crooked, that person is ill-fated. His life will not be easy. When you look at a person, at first glance you see whether his eyes are in a straight line, and how everything else is from the shoulder down. People who walk zigzag are not good people. Though there are hundreds of people gathered here, there are no two whose manner of walking is alike; they are all different, for the way one walks displays one's personality. There are some people who walk in a strange manner. Such people should change the way they walk. Otherwise, they can never settle down anywhere. (248-88, 1993.8.1)

Doesn't the head always stand upright? It remains upright. The important parts of the human body are the head and the sexual organ. A line comes down straight, and splits right there. Thinking takes place in the head, and the husband thinks of his wife and the wife about her husband. They think centering on love, and their thoughts become one through the sexual organs. (188-44, 1989.2.16)

Are the breasts identical and in a perpendicular line? Is the navel at the center of a circle? Then the line leads right down to the sexual organ. Where does water flow? It flows downward, and where does it go? When you are working while seated, the part that gets most moist is the center of the lower part of the body. That is where you sweat the most. That is why a lot of hair grows on that part. Isn't that true for everybody? That is where all the water collects. (297-46, 1998.11.15)

Only when your nose is well-formed can you become rich. Do you understand that? A glance should tell you that it is dead center. The line from it to the sexual organ, passing through the navel should be straight. If it is crooked, your spouse will waver. So when getting married, you should both undress and see whether your navels, chests, and all other parts are in line, for only then can the couple be ideal. There are some people whose sexual organs are crooked. In the case of the woman, too, if her breasts tilt to one side and do not correspond, then she will be a playgirl, or will be widowed and die alone. That is how these principles of creation work. (295-30, 1998.8.16)

The most important parts of the human body are the eyes. They are most precious. Next is the heart. The heart too is spherical. Also, in a woman, the womb is spherical. Then how about the man: is not his sexual organ spherical as well? What is spherical is precious. Women do not have bones jutting out. Since women's bones do not show and their bodies are rounded out with flesh, artists like to draw nude women. (272-154, 1995.10.1)

Starting from the face, the navel and the sexual organ should all be in a

straight line. Go ahead and get a checkup of your body in a hospital. When walking, the weight transferred to the center should be the same, and so the soles of your shoes should wear out evenly. If you were to look at a person's shoes, and see that one is more worn out than the other, he may not be a good person. The person whose shoes wear out evenly would be an enlightened person. (286-219, 1997.8.11)

When reading a person's physiognomy, you should see how the line descends from here. Only when this line comes down vertically to the sexual organ can that person be said to be a person of conscience. If it does not, then things would get difficult. The breasts should not tilt to one side, and it is also not good to have the navel off center. (252-108, 1993.11.14)

When sitting, sit up straight. When walking, walk upright. When you look at how people walk, you see there are all types. Even where there are thousands of people, their gaits will all be different. When walking, the top of your head should be in a vertical line with your sexual organ at all times. All organs in your body should be set in motion centering on the vertical. Then God would look at it and say, "Wow! That man and woman are walking the way I want," and take interest, and so would the spirit world. (246-237, 1993.4.18)

When looking at a person, from the top of the head, don't your eyes come straight down to the nose? That line passes through the nose, the median line of the upper lip, the lips, the navel, and finally reaches the sexual organ. Based on this vertical line, you check to see how the eyes are placed, whether they are in line horizontally. You also see the ears, the shoulders, and if that person walks straight or not. Thus, even in something like walking, you should not walk thoughtlessly, for a person's gait symbolizes his life. (246-235, 1993.4.18)

When closely examining any human being, what are the most important parts of the body? Those that are close to being spherical in shape are precious. In this regard, the eyes and heart and sexual organ are precious in a man. In the male sexual organ two eye-like features can be found. Men have those, but women do not. They are precious. Are not the eyes precious? They symbolize God. The heart symbolizes life, and the sexual organ love. The head is the supervising organ centered on God. (249-173, 1993.10.10)

4.5. Love is not known through being taught

There are no creatures in this world that do not teach love. Animals, even the smallest insects which are so invisible to the naked eye that when you hold them in your hand you can scarcely see them, they all have five senses. When you think about this, you see that they must, because even among them, males and females have to find each other. What causes these males and females to unite? What is their focal point? Isn't it love?

That is undeniable. (223-268, 1991.11.12)

Sex education is unnecessary. People talk of free sex and sex education, but I say, "You crazy fools, stop!" Is there sex education in the animal kingdom? When they are next to each other, they fit together naturally. Some animal has its sexual organ under its shoulder, and its mate fits its own sexual organ into it, though the latter may have it on its heel. They are meant to fit together automatically. Are the magnets forced to match their poles with the North Pole and the South Pole, or do they do so automatically? They find the poles automatically. Once your mind and body are ready to be in tune with true love, if you let yourself, you will automatically find the direction, north, south, east or west, and fit yourself in.

In mating, how do animals fit their sexual organs together? Are the organs bigger than the rest of the body or smaller? Though they are smaller, they pull along the rest of the body in order to mate. In other words, the rest of the body is pulled along by love. Do you think the body is pulled along forcibly or willingly? The body lets itself be pulled willingly. We are meant to enter heaven automatically. (272-91, 1995.8.30)

Sexual organs in animals, both male and female, can be found anywhere on the body, even under the shoulder. Then how do they fit them together? Do they need to be taught? Do they need to learn how to fit them together? Even though they are not taught, by rubbing themselves on each other, they are bound to fit together in the end. There is sex education these days to teach this, but that is all Satan's doing, for there is no need to teach this. (284-122, 1997.4.16)

Nowadays it is said that even germs exist as couples. If you were to examine them under a microscope three million times magnified, could you tell whether the male germs have eyes or not? How about noses? Ears? Mouths? Sexual organs? Even something microscopic like that knows how to fit its sexual organ into its mate's. Would it have to be taught how to do so? Is there any mother or father who, when their daughter is about to get married, teaches her, "This is how you should fit your sexual organ together with your spouse's"? The organs are bound to come together with natural motions. It is a natural union, not a forced one. People harmonize when they are united. It is all about unity. (272-74, 1995.8.30)

Why did God create the male and female organs like they are? The universe possesses much content in educating about love, showing how animals love each other. Among animals, there are many deserving our respect. (180-336, 1988.10.5)

Isn't there conflict between teachers and students in schools nowadays? It is because they do not know about how love is for the sake of others. They have failed to teach the fundamentals of heavenly principles. Those who serve others

more can receive and control greater love. In love there are rights of inheritance, participation and cohabitation. Isn't love like that? Could you place a gold nugget before your beloved wife and tell her, "This is mine," and then let her only have your body and say, "Since what you like is love, you can only have my genitals"? Is that love? It's not. Love means being willing to give all things, even one's sons and daughters, body and soul. (204-41, 1990.6.29)

Section 5. The Sexual Organs Are the Crossroads to Heaven or Hell

When the sexual organs are sanctified, they can be connected to heaven. Their importance should be taught from elementary school. The goals pursued by man and woman are the sexual organs of love. They are shaped as concave and convex for love. Why were the genitals shaped differently? For the sake of love. Which love is it for? It is for true love, God's eternal and unchanging love. (278-271, 1996.5.26)

You need to know that the sexual organs were the dividing point between heaven and hell. If you use them wrongfully, you are bound for hell, and if you use them rightfully, you will automatically reach heaven. There is only one starting point, not two. This shows the importance of lovemaking. When all women and men return home and say, "Now I know the truth. Let's put it into practice henceforth. It is the basis of hope for our family," then universal liberation will take place.

The conclusion is that, in conjunction with the universal proclamation, we should understand its contents and preserve the sanctity of the sexual organs. The mother, Eve, fell. Next, Cain wrought havoc. Abel also played a part in this. That is why the Unification Church created a global organization representing the mother. (278-209, 1996.5.24)

Where did heaven and hell begin? Where did they begin? In midair? Where? At the sexual organs. This must be serious. They have turned heaven and earth upside down. Can anyone deny that? There is no way to deny the logic of The Fall in Rev. Moon's Divine Principle. Ask God. Examine everything. Not having received any answers from that, you would not be able to oppose what I have arranged in systematic order including theories and contents that you could never imagine even in your dreams. (279-118, 1996.8.1)

How can you end up going to the most terrible part of hell? If you use your sexual organ in a way that violates heavenly law, you are bound for hell, whereas if you go the opposite way, that is, the path of God's absolute love, you will go to a higher place in heaven. This conclusion is only too clear. (279-121, 1996.8.1)

Due to the Fall, the male and female organs became evil things because they became the original palace that opened the gates to the evil wave of death, the

laws of death, the hell of destruction, and the wicked objects that violated the laws of heaven. This was the secret hidden in history until now. (197-175, 1990. 1.13)

The sexual organs must be liberated. Thus, absolute sex is the opposite to the free sex of today. It is absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal sex. How lofty and precious are these four concepts! If the two organs remain separate as they are, no development can take place. They must be rooted in true love. True love begins from there. (279-239, 1996.9.8)

In today's satanic world, the sexual organs have ruined everything. Free sex, homosexuality and drugs are reigning supreme. Drugs make you lose your senses. They make you like animals, not human beings. They make you think nothing but animalistic thoughts. The Kingdom of Heaven, on the other hand, is diametrically opposite to this. It follows the concept, not of free sex, but of absolute, eternal, unchanging and unique love. They connect to the Kingdom of Heaven instantaneously. When such a foundation is laid on earth, it will become God's Kingdom on earth. This is the undeniable logical conclusion. You should exercise great care toward the foundation of love. (278-271, 1996.5.26)

The sexual organs were misused. A revolution is needed here. For that you need the Mother and the Father. Women are to be mobilized with Mother as the leader. Mobilizing the Women's Federation settles Mother's position. Is that not where the returning Lord appears? What would the Messiah bring with him? Absolute sex. He is coming for the perfection of absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal sex. (279-269, 1996.9.22)

What part do women look at first in a man? Is it the eyes, the hands, or where? The question is where you look when you look at a man. The eyes? Then what? The face, then what's next? Lower down, where are all five senses drawn to? Which organ is most evil? Throughout history, the sexual organs came to be regarded as most evil. Think about it.

The starting points of heaven and hell lead in diametrically opposite directions. Until now, humankind was ignorant of how the true sexual organ is the starting point to heaven, and the false sexual organ leads to hell. That is the sexual organ. Misusing the genitals leads to hell, and the rightful use of love leads to heaven. It is simple. (278-269, 1996.5.26)

Where can absolute love be found? In kissing? The question is where absolute love can be found. Absolute love comes about by means of absolute sexual organs; without them, it cannot be found. Where can you find absolute love? Is it from kissing, seeing, hearing and touching? You can only find it in sexual intercourse. This was hitherto unknown. People did not know the place where eternal love and sex settle. They did not know where its starting point was. Those of you without sexual organs, raise your hands. All of you have them. What are they for? If you were to

pose this question to them, the sexual organs would answer, "It is our last wish for us two to come together firmly to fulfill absolute love." Then, do you want to have absolute, unique, unchanging and eternal sexual organs? The question is whether you have them. (279-220, 1996.9.8)

Whose are the sexual organs? Are they yours? They belong to your spouses. You did not know this simple truth. The yin-yang principle of this universe is that of male and female. Even in the mineral world the subject-object relationship can be found; nowadays it is even said that there are male and female bacteria. In short, the entire universe exists in a pair system. Under the concept of love, each subject partner was born for its object partner, and vice versa. Why were they born? It was for love, to perfect love. You must understand that since God created Adam and Eve, man and woman, and intended to marry them when they were fully matured, the sexual organs that would have been brought together in intercourse on their wedding were to become the absolute and central organs for the planting of absolute life, love and lineage. (280-62, 1996.11.1)

What is the Fall? What is the fundamental problem, what are the fundamentals? It is that Adam and Eve considered their sexual organs to belong to themselves and acted freely. Had they reached full maturity centering on God, Adam's was to belong to Eve and Eve's to Adam, and through them they were to lay the foundation of absolute love with the eternal God. However, they were unfaithful and instead made the organs their own. Hence, that foundation was completely destroyed. Those who live for themselves are bound for hell, and those who live for their spouses are bound for heaven. This is where the crossroads are. The sexual organs are the boundary between hell and heaven. You must know this. (280-63, 1996.11.1)

God's ideal of creation is to establish absolute couples. Absolute couples are established when they live, not for themselves but for each other, based on the absolute sexual organs. They came into being for the creation. Each was created for the sake of the other, not for themselves. Men were endowed with sexual organs for the sake of women. The female organs exist for the sake of men. They were created for the men. Those who use their sexual organs according to Satan's desires, and do not follow the way of the Principle will go to hell. On the other hand, if you live for the sake of others centering on absolute love, you will enter God's dominion. You will become members of the imperial household of heaven. (280-70, 1996.11.1)

Let us discover the dividing line between heaven and hell. Would it be in midair? Where would it be? It lies in the sexual organs. This is a serious matter. The sexual organs have turned heaven and earth upside down. Who can deny this? It is all explained in the chapter on the Fall in the Divine Principle, taught by Rev. Moon. If you doubt this, ask

God. You will not be able to oppose Rev. Moon's Divine Principle, arranged in systematic order with theories and contents that you could never imagine even in your dreams. Those who use their sexual organs aimlessly, like a blind person who is wandering here and there because he has lost his way, are bound for hell. Conversely, those who use their sexual organs according to God's standard of absolute love will go to a higher place in heaven. This is the clear conclusion. (279-256, 1996.9.15)

Due to the Fall, evil ancestors came to exist alongside the good Ancestor, who was unable to have descendants. Nevertheless, Satan cannot ignore God, the great Superintendent of heaven and earth. Whenever he desires to carry out some act, he needs to get clearance from the God of goodness. Evil deeds break down God's ideal world. They bring destruction to the world of love. Ultimately, they would completely destroy the sexual organs, the basis for God's ideal of love. (287-32, 1997. 8.10)

Which part did humankind use to become part of Satan's lineage? Was it through kissing? It was through lovemaking. Where is that place, that starting point? It is the sexual organs. You must know that, from God's point of view, the sexual organs are truly fearful organs. (304-11, 1999.9.5)

To what end did God make the male and female organs concave and convex? Can convex tie the knot with another convex? Can two concaves come together in marriage? My goodness, the crazy scoundrels! Such people will come to ruin in one generation. Those who emphasize celibacy will find themselves headed in the opposite direction from the Kingdom of Heaven when they have passed on to the next world. (304-241, 1999.11.8)

When Jacob left his uncle Laban's house after living there for twenty-one years, he stole the idols most loved by Laban's family. If his deed had been found out, he would have been in serious trouble. So what he did was to grind it into powder and eat it. Did you know about that?

Do you know how pained God is by the sin of man with woman? The question arises as to how to manage this and turn God's original heart back to us by getting to the point where there is no longer any satanic foundation in us. Isn't celibacy taught in the religious sphere? Men and women are taught to live as if their sexual organs had been done away with. It is the same for you. So who can commit the fall? In an instant, that act ensnared the great eternal King of heaven and earth so that He could not be liberated. In order to reverse this, Unification Church members receive the Blessing. Do you think they can repeat the Fall? Is that possible? (296-204, 1998.11.9)

In South America, I talked for two hours about the sexual organs to a religious leader whose followers number a hundred thousand. Well, he rolled his

eyes and said in conclusion, "You are an expert on sexual organs!" It is lamentable that grandfathers failed to become experts on sexual organs. Since grandmothers failed to become experts on sexual organs, families were divided. Since parents failed to become experts, families are in turmoil, and since husbands and wives failed to become experts, they are always fighting. Once you become an expert, you can put heaven and earth in your pocket. (302-170, 1999.6.13)

You are bound to be punished if you use your love organs recklessly. They are the palace of love and the ancestral garden of love. Love began there. The origin of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven, and the origin of the beginning of God's happiness are molded there. God's laughter begins from there. That is where God can find love at last and dance for joy. We must seek this place. (256-199, 1994.3.13)

The place where two lives come together as one centered on love and the place where the blood of man and woman become one is the sexual organ. You should know that this place is more precious than your sons and daughters, your spouse and even God. It is a place that is more precious than your children, spouse, and even parents. If sexual organs did not exist, parents, husbands and wives, and sons and daughters would be of no value.

Since this place is that precious, it is kept under lock and key away from other eyes during your lifetime as the treasure of treasures. Furthermore, the key that can unlock man's organ is owned by woman, and hers by him. There is only one key for each person. There should be only one key per person. Do you want to possess ten, twenty keys as in the case of free sex? Do you want to become like an unoccupied derelict house with its doors open wide, where anyone can come in and go out? (280-199, 1997.1.1)

You should attend and love the sexual organs more than you do God, for only then would He rejoice. Where on earth would you hear such words? If religious people heard them, they would jump and fall down in shock, but this is the plain truth. Only when you attend the love organs more than you do God can the foundation on which God can settle be laid. It is more precious than life, and you cannot exchange it for the world, the universe, and even God. Only when you worship, love, and recognize the value of your spouse's sexual organ more than you do all God's creation put together, will God come to reside in your homes. (325-211, 2000.7.1)

CHAPTER THREE

The Human Fall and Restoration

Section 1. The Internal Significance of the Fall

1.1. The Fall was a misuse of love

My having closely investigated the historical details of the original sin and the Fall has revealed the illicit love relationship that took place between the archangel and the very first human family. In the Divine Principle, Satan is a real spiritual being, not merely a conceptual or an imaginary being. He is the being who destroyed God's ideal of love, and changed God's lineage into one centered on himself. In chapter eight of the Gospel of John, Jesus states clearly that the father of humankind is the devil.

The adulterer of love who deprived God of His ideal of love, which God intended to realize through Adam and Eve as His external body, is indeed the devil, Satan. This may not sound familiar to you; however, this is the conclusion that I have reached as a result of searching the spirit world in order to investigate the fundamental problems of the universe. That quest was a tremendous struggle of blood and sweat. If all of you would pray in earnest, you would be able to receive an answer about this. (135-12, 1985.8.20)

No deviation from the fundamentals of the universe should ever be possible. Yet the devil did this while Eve was still underage, before reaching maturity. When they turn fifteen or sixteen, girls fall when in their teens, don't they? It was right at that time. At the time when Eve had observed Lucifer for a while, he sounded as if he knew all of the truths of heaven and earth. He was a messenger for God and could speak about the creation of heaven and earth. Meanwhile, Adam said little and it was the time when he went around trying to catch baby birds. Aren't boys like that? As he went around catching baby birds and frogs, or baby snakes with a stick, using everything he learnt from nature in this way to have dominion in managing and befriending them and trying to adapt to them completely, would he have had any interest in Eve then? (191-97, 1989.6.24)

What is the Fall? The standard of the great laws of heaven, the original axis of love and the central axis of heaven and earth, were destroyed by the Fall. Humankind did not know the infuriating fact that because the woman and the archangel were awakened to the desire for love, they had a relationship which shattered the very fundamentals

of the universe, giving rise to the abyss of anguish.

Who had to dissolve this anguish over the fact that Satan became the lineal ancestor of humankind? What the Fall amounted to was that the servant trampled on the person who was to become the queen. Hence, the original standard which should have become the fundamental principle of the laws of the universe was destroyed. Ultimately, who is this devil? He is the chief culprit who fundamentally destroyed the palace of the heavenly kingdom of love. (171-114, 1987.12.13)

Why are indemnification, the restoration of the right of parents, the right of the eldest son, and the right of kingship needed? The root problem is Satan's love, life and lineage. Although these should have started from God originally, centered on true love, they started from the devil instead, which is something incredible. The universe came into being because of love. Didn't the Creation begin from love? All beings were created centered on God's orderly love as their origin. Those fundamentals were overturned by Satan, then turned upright once again. (206-236, 1990.10.14)

Humankind has undergone a history of struggle, but why? It is a history of the struggle between good and evil. The devil usurped all rights of God's ideal world. What he did was none other than an act of usurpation of God's creation. He seized the woman and the children who were to be the center of the entire universe.

Thus, God has no woman. He has no children born through a woman. Originally, that would be impossible. The original woman is God's woman, and the children born from her should be His, but the devil took them away. This happened through the fall of minors. Without this logic, we cannot make people understand their fundamental origin. (262-74, 1994.7.23)

People were born because of love, but how did love lose its value? That would not be possible other than through an act that contravened love. What was the consequence of the Fall? Women and men were born for the sake of each other, but rather than their fulfilling each other's love, tragically, it became the reverse. Everything that was decided by self-interest brought about the results of the Fall. Things went in the diametrically opposite direction of what God had created.

It is stated in the Bible that Adam and Eve took and ate of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and thereby fell. Yet fundamentally, in the position of being born due to love, just the fact alone of eating a literal fruit is not enough to destroy the foundation of altruistic love. We cannot deny our origin of being born because of love. It was not the altruistic love in which man and woman were created to be intertwined, but rather the egocentric love in which they became enmeshed that constituted the Fall.

All things God created are in a pair

system, born for mutual coexistence. Human beings were also created to enter a world of such values, but they went in the diametrically opposite direction self-centeredness, and that was the Fall. Upon what was the Fall centered? The act of destruction took place through misuse of the love organs, which both woman and man value most. (243-269, 1993.1.28)

Who is God and who is the devil? The devil is God's enemy. He is the adulterer of love. This was revealed by Rev. Moon. The fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of good and evil which became the cause of the Fall of the ancestors of humankind is the human sexual organ. If it is used rightfully, a nation prospers; but if it is misused, a nation is ruined. This is the meaning of "the fruit of good and evil". Even with a king, if he uses his love rightfully, his kingdom prospers; but if he misuses it, his kingdom is ruined. Through misused love, families and societies are destroyed, and everything is divided between heaven and hell. Where the fruit of good should have been borne, the fruit of evil was borne instead.

What is the fruit of the Tree of the Knowledge of good and evil? It is not any literal fruit. It is something everyone has. The human sexual organs are that fruit. They can be seen as the head of a poisonous snake. Why did Jesus call Satan a viper? Why was Satan called a serpent? The sexual organ can be compared with the head of a snake, the head of a serpent. Don't all women and men pursue it? (227-251, 1992.2.14)

What is the most precious part of the body for people? What is the most precious thing for men and women? Woman became woman centered on and by virtue of one thing. Which place is that one place? It is the sexual organ, the organ of love, the organ that implants life. What a good name that is! Isn't it the sexual organ? It sounds more real than calling it the love organ. It is self-explanatory. The tool that implants life is the sexual organ. Don't be ashamed of the sexual organ. What is the sexual organ in Korean? What do you call it in Korean? Those who are embarrassed to say it are living with shame. If you are embarrassed to say it in Korean itself, you don't qualify as Koreans. Shouldn't you be proud of it! (260-73, 1994.4.11)

If God the Creator wished that His object partners be millions of times more outstanding than Himself, why did He create human beings so that they could fall? This is the question. God did not create them to fall. He warned them not to fall, "Do not eat of the fruit of good and evil!" What is this fruit? It refers to the female organ. Women are weak. When our first ancestors lived in the Garden of Eden, they were naked. (262-74, 1994.7.23)

God gave the command, "Do not eat of the fruit of good and evil!" Do you know what that fruit is? It is the female organ. You might say, "Who's ever heard of anything like that?" but Eve was

always saying, "Big brother, where are you? I'm lonely! and it was Eve that the archangel violated. He had the responsibility to protect and raise Adam and Eve up until they were married.

Thus, the angels also lived without any clothing. Clothing came into being after the Fall. Do animals wear clothes? Do they cover their sexual organs with something? Are husband and wife embarrassed with each other? Is it embarrassing for a couple living together to undress in front of each other? (262-150, 1994.7.23)

What was the Fall? It was the misuse of the sexual organs, which resulted in Adam, the groom and love partner of Eve, changing. Thus, it was a fundamental fall. This transgression was so grave a mistake that Adam and Eve could not stand before the animal, plant or mineral worlds, or anywhere in the human world – or even before the world of mice or insects. Thus, they had to be chased out of the universe. That is why they were driven out from Eden. (279-215, 1996.9.8)

The Fall of Adam and Eve originates in their going against the iron rule: their sexual organs did not belong to themselves. Think about it. Would God drive Adam and Eve away just because they ate a literal fruit? God is not such a senseless being. He chased them out because they made a fundamental error and therefore could not be acknowledged anywhere in the universe. Adam and Eve did not understand that the males and females in the mineral, plant and animal worlds reserve their sexual organs for the sake of their partner in love. (279-246, 1996.9.15)

Adam and Eve transgressed against the Commandment. They should have had absolute sexual organs, absolute love, lived absolutely for the sake of others, and been absolutely obedient. God had desired a foundation of altruistic love, yet they behaved as they pleased, self-centeredly; hence, the whole universe spat on them. That foundation, which was lost by the false parents, had to be restored through the coming of the True Parents. (280-77, 1996.11.1)

Man's most fearful enemy is woman. Women have become like serpents with their mouths open, waiting to bite if the male organ enters. This has spread everywhere, and will pass to the next generation. Thus, the most fearful thing of all is the sexual organ. (281-215, 1997.2.13)

Love was lost in Eden. We must repent. With tears, we must cry out in grief hundreds of times more than when God, Adam and Eve grieved at their parting in Eden. Tears, mucus and saliva – all three should run down past the belly button and fall off those sexual organs. Those scoundrels that sinned!

Adam and Eve were created, but for what? As man was lonely, God created woman for him and said she was good, but based on what would she be considered good? What part of the woman? The sexual organ! They are the concave meeting the convex. God created the concave for the convex. Adam is Adam,

but for what was Eve created? For her eyes, nose, face? What part of Eve was created for Adam? God created the concave for the convex. The source of love is found with Adam and Eve and God created them. We must know that these sexual organs are most valuable, the origin of love. (294-270, 1998.8.5)

From now on, the fundamentals must be revealed: facts such as what God is like, what the creation of heaven and earth was like, what our first ancestors were like, how humankind, starting with families developed into societies, nations and the world. As all this was negated by the Fall, it must be reconstructed and argued logically until people acknowledge, "Yes, that's right." Individuals, families, tribes, people, nations, the cosmos and even God must be liberated. This serious problem was the problem of the misuse of love within Adam's family, and the fact that the two – man and woman – brought their sexual organs together in tragic error, thus shaking heaven and earth.

The sexual organ is created to be the principal royal palace of love. Without it, love and life will not come into existence, and the lineage will not continue. If these things are denied, everything will disappear in one generation. As God would not be able to tolerate this loss, He had to permit it, and I must therefore take responsibility over creation and make Satan surrender naturally, not by striking him. (300-236, 1999.3.23)

My responsibility in perfecting Adam is that I must restore the position of the king of liberated cosmic love that is untainted by the Fall. I must bear full responsibility for Satan's entire lineage. Humiliation, my own dignity, or even my reputation is not the issue. I must be prepared to put my precious sexual organ even into dog's dung. Unless I go through such things that cannot ever be imagined, I cannot restore women. Since I cannot bear the thought of that, I can say, "Let's create a new heaven and earth."

We can create a new universe attending God. How grievous it is for God that He cannot take measures against the archangel Satan who destroyed the order of love! When considering the woman's sexual organ, one should think, "So this is the pit that has imprisoned even God for tens of millions of years!" When considering the man's sexual organ, one should think that way, too. Thinking of the reality that heaven was turned upside down just because Eve said "Let's do it," should make a chill go down your spine. (302-257, 1999.6.14)

When there was a single female among five males (God, Adam, and three archangels), did God feel easy or uneasy about it? If you were God, how would you have felt? Then, whom would you have guarded most closely? The single woman, Eve. She was God's future partner, the body of God Himself, the partner of love closest to Him. When a command is given, it is given to the closest person. When leaving your house, do you give orders to the person closest to

or farthest from you? You would give the order to the person closest to you, and that is why God said, "Do not eat of the fruit of good and evil" to Eve. What is that fruit? It refers to the female organ. A woman who marries a good man will give birth to good children, but one who marries a gangster will give birth to children of a gangster as the fruit. (281-195, 1997.2.13)

When God invested and invested, centered on love, His love enveloped the entire universe and there was still more left over. Centered on God who is the motive of love, centered on this core, all corners of this existing world in the universe were enveloped in the atmosphere of love. Thus, there is the atmosphere of love even if you go to the spirit world. On earth, we should have led our lives singing of love centered on the pair system; but due to the Fall, this miserable state came about. We must understand this fact and know about the Fall. (209-222, 1990.11.29)

1.2. The fruit of good and evil is Eve's sexual organ

Eve is a woman, but what are the fundamentals of woman? What is the core of that being that is good to see? The eyes? The face? The hands? What part of the body? It is nothing other than the sexual organ. Woman is concave and man is convex. God made Adam who is convex, and then created for him that which is concave, namely woman. Why did God create Eve in front of Adam and call it good? From the perspective of God's love, a way emerged that enabled the fulfillment of that love. Hence, it was good for God, for Adam and for Eve. God thus spoke out of love. What are those words referring to? God was referring to the sexual organs. You must not think of this as strange. (294-293, 1998.8.9)

In the Garden of Eden, God commanded Adam and Eve not to eat the fruit of good and evil. That fruit refers to the female organ. A woman who marries a king will give birth to princes and princesses, but one who marries a Mafioso will give birth to children of the Mafia. It is the woman who can bear the fruit of either good or evil. She can stand together with her husband in his position. Even if she did not complete her elementary education, if she became a president's wife through a love relationship, she can stand in the same position with him. (279-316, 1996.11.10)

God said, "Don't eat it," but what was He referring to? The tree of life and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil in the Garden of Eden refer to Adam and Eve. Isn't the tree of life Adam? Adam's sexual organ is the tree of life. Is that correct or not? What is the tree of the knowledge of good and evil? It refers to Eve's love. It is just the same as bearing the fruit of the children of the Mafia if she loved a Mafioso. If she loved a king, she would bear the fruit of his children. Thus, humankind inherited the devil's lineage. (275-218, 1995.12.30)

In the Bible it says that Adam and Eve could eat the fruit of any of the trees in the Garden of Eden, but that they should not touch or even look at the tree of life and the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil in the center of the garden. As Adam and Eve were brother and sister, they could hold hands, or kiss, and they could eat the fruits of any tree except the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil and the tree of life; God said that the male and female sexual organs should not meet. That is how He warned them. (200-50, 1990.2.23)

For what purpose did God create the universe? I spoke of it being based on the pair system, didn't I? For what purpose? It is for love. What kind of love is God's love? We must understand about true love. What is true love? What is the motivation for God creating heaven and earth? Did Adam and Eve fall by literally eating the fruit of good and evil? Don't talk nonsense. What is that fruit? People do not know what the fruit of good and evil is. They don't know the origin, the root of sin. Without knowing this, how can they cure their illness? Can diseased people enter heaven? They cannot. Their kind of logic will not work. (209-214, 1990.11.29)

Considering those present in the Garden of Eden, only one of them was female. There was one woman, but there were three archangels, there was Adam, and God is also masculine. Besides God, four males surrounded one woman, so she was indeed the one who had to be most closely guarded. The fruit of good and evil refers to the female sexual organ. (272-297, 1995.10.13)

Where did the Fall begin? From the sexual organ, the royal palace of love and life. Isn't that so? It was the sexual organ through which a king's lineage was to be inherited, the most valuable thing. Due to the Fall, however, it became the dirtiest place. It is the same with any nation. That is the situation. Is it a sacred thing centered on God, or is it a base thing of sin and evil? It is not the Ark of the Covenant that Moses made, but the Holy of Holies that God created. The place God created as the most holy place is the sexual organ, which occupied that position before the Fall took place. People don't understand anything about the Fall. Isn't that in the Divine Principle? (216-107, 1991.3.9)

God commanded Adam and Eve not to eat the fruit of good and evil in the Garden of Eden. What is that fruit? It came from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. Whose sexual organ is that? It signifies the female organ. If a woman lives with a gangster, she will bear his child, and if she lives with a king, she will bear a royal child. Hence, she can bear either the fruit of goodness or that of evil. The fruit of good and evil refers to the female organ. Do you understand what it means not to eat of the fruit of good and evil? God intended to elevate Eve as His object partner of love in the future, but there were many males. How many were there? Four

besides God Himself (Adam plus the three archangels).

So what kind of warning did God give Eve? He said, "Do not make love!" Did He say, "Eat the fruit of good and evil" or did he say "Do not eat it"? What was that? It was the female sexual organ. What kind of thing was there to warn and to give a command and instruction about? Was there literally a fruit called the fruit of good and evil? Would those in the garden have been interested in a literal fruit of good and evil or a woman? I don't know. You should all know better than me. Discoverers do not have the rights of ownership. (285-190, 1997.5.4)

Adam and Eve fell, but through what? They fell through love, wrongful love. Where then did this wrongful love start? Wrongful love started through the misuse of the sexual organ. This is the formula: if Adam and Eve did not have sexual organs, would humankind have been born? Without sexual organs, would God's Kingdom on earth be able to start? God's true good kingdom on earth and in heaven comes into being and develops through perfectly true and good sexual organs. What happens through untrue sexual organs? Hell comes into being through their misuse. (279-213, 1996.9.8)

Adam and Eve united centered on fallen love, bringing about grievous ruin, and made love the most obscene word. The part into which God devoted his utmost creative efforts was the sexual organ. He invested the greatest devotion there. It is where the source of all life is gathered, the integration point of all things ideal and related to the senses, and thus the principal palace of love. Love was to start from that point. Had Adam and Eve not fallen, true life would have originated from there. It was the principal palace of true love, true life and true lineage. Don't we have the word ja-goong (meaning womb, the Chinese characters for ja and goong meaning child and palace respectively)? Through where is the womb connected? Isn't it through the woman's sexual part? Through love, the flesh and blood of a man and woman are blended and their lives become one. (253-40, 1994.1.1)

The Fall ruined everything and changed the sexual organs into the worst things. God could not embrace them. Is there anyone who would deny that? The most precious royal palace became a palace of dirty love, life, and lineage. I am talking about the sexual organs. (253-40, 1994.1.1)

Since the Fall originated from love, humankind lost true love. As God drove out Adam and Eve before they had their baby, that child had no relationship with Him. The fallen ancestors of humanity appeared. We must understand their error. (287-16, 1997.8.10)

Depending on the kind of man a woman sleeps with, the result can be good or evil. If she sleeps with a thief, she will bear the child of a thief. Thus, we speak of the tree of the knowledge

of good and evil. It is a tree that knows things can become good or evil. The Bible likens human beings to trees. Don't all women have that kind of character? Be careful. God gave a warning in the Garden of Eden and it is the same today. (258-183, 1994.3.17)

The fruit of good and evil refers to Eve's sexual organ. It means that the seed varies according to the husband a woman has. If she meets a good man, she will bear good fruit, but if she meets an evil man, she will bear evil fruit. The principal palace where she can do this is her sexual organ. Isn't woman a field? If a thief came and sowed his seed, a thief's child would emerge, but if a prince did that, a royal child would emerge. (238-199, 1992.11.22)

The place where human beings committed sin is their sexual organs, where love originally starts. (229-7, 1992.4.9)

What is the fruit of good and evil? If a woman finds a good husband, she will bear a good baby. If she finds a bad husband, she will have a bad baby. I came to know that the fruit of good and evil was a term referring to that part of a woman. What is that in women? Virgins are sensitive about their breasts, but it is actually referring to the female organs. Yet in the case of a man, even if a bad woman became his partner, he wouldn't become evil and if a good woman became his partner, wouldn't he become even better? (221-315, 1991.10.27)

As women mature earlier, they have a greater predisposition to fall than men; therefore, God gave the warning not to eat the fruit of good and evil. If the sexual organ of a woman meets a good person, a good fruit will emerge, and if it meets an evil man, an evil fruit will emerge. The fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil refers to the woman's sexual organ. Do men ever give birth? That will never happen to a man. (221-282, 1991.10.26)

What is the fruit of good and evil? It becomes good if you enter into a relationship with a good man: if you marry a king, you'll give birth to a prince, but if you marry a gangster boss, you'll give birth to a future gangster boss. That is what the fruit of good and evil is: the thing that is able to bear the fruit of good or evil is the female sexual organ. It must not be violated. Even in Korean, when referring to a virgin being violated, don't they say, "grabbed and eaten"? It is insightful. Do not grab and eat! (284-137, 1997.4.16)

Through what did the Fall occur? The eyes? The nose? The mouth? The hands? The ears? No. It occurred through the sexual organs. Through false love, Adam and Eve became false parents and then false life, love, lineage, and conscience came to exist through them. They became one with Satan instead of with the absolute God. They united with the side opposed to Him. (282-230, 1997.3.26)

What is the fruit of the tree of the

knowledge of good and evil? If love is misused, you inherit the eternal fruit of evil. If love is used properly, you inherit the eternal fruit of goodness. Is this fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil a literal fruit? That fruit refers to the sexual organs of man and woman. (226 -110, 1992.2.2)

What was the Fall of Adam and Eve? They thought their sexual organs belonged to themselves. You came at this time to learn this. They made a mistake in connection with love. Why were Adam and Eve chased out? Would God chase them away because they ate a literal fruit? He isn't such an irresponsible God. He chased them out because they made a fundamental error and therefore they could not be acknowledged anywhere in the universe. (279-106, 1996.8.1)

Where are the fundamentals of the universe? The fundamentals of the unfallen universe are within the love relationship. We now know that this became the base of wickedness that destroyed heaven and earth. Thus, we can no longer lead haphazard lives. The mistake of one day overturned the history of eons, completely burying God, true parents, and the ideal world under it. That is how frightening the sexual organs are. Each time you urinate, you should be thinking about this: "Hey you scoundrel, even when you urinate, you'd better do it properly!" (281-120, 1997.1.2)

The original state of human beings, who were to have the loftiest value, was overturned through the Fall. Where is the palace that can link together all such standards? It is the sexual organ. (240-315, 1992.12.13)

1.3. The devil Satan fell through fornication

What kind of a being is Satan actually? Particularly those who believe in Jesus must clearly reveal Satan's identity before God. What is Satan? He is an adulterer, an adulterer of love. That being, Satan, beat the father to death and violated the mother. You are the children born as a result. You are all offended, aren't you? If you cannot believe this to be true, challenge God in prayer, staking your life on whether my words are true or false. (38-175, 1971.1.3)

Who is Satan? He is the adulterer who violated Eve. Eve was meant to spiritually become the wife of God. She was to be Adam's wife, and at the same time, God's wife. Satan is the enemy of love. Thus, even though God has taught us to love our enemies, He has not asked us to love Satan, the adulterer. Satan cannot be forgiven. You can love those who belong to Satan, but cannot forgive Satan himself. As this is the Principle, you must understand it clearly. (148-294, 1986.10.25)

Since we are Christians and those who walk the path of truth and who have to resolve our ancestors' bitterness that resulted from their being accused by Satan, trampled upon and massacred as sacrificial offerings, we must clarify

the identity of Satan and understand the heart and viewpoint of God in the past, present, and future. When God is able to cry out, "Oh, my son, my daughter!" in tears of reunion, the world will be liberated. (8 -130, 1959.11.29)

The devil, Satan, is in the position of the chief culprit, who drove out the original owner, seized his wife and is leading even their children to their deaths. From this perspective, is there a way to forgive the devil, Satan, the enemy of God and humankind? Ultimately, the devil, Satan, became the adulterer in front of love and in front of God. Could God forgive him, therefore? If He forgave Satan, it would have led the whole world to destruction. Thus, can you all think that you will simply be able to become God's sons and daughters as you are? You must know that God and humanity must continue the historical path, being unable to avoid the way of suffering and pain until we reverse this situation. (53-338, 1972.3.6)

Where did your connection to love begin? Where was the starting point? It began with evil. The chief instigator of this evil was Satan the devil. What kind of involvement did this devil have? He was the adulterer of love. Human beings were born inheriting the flesh and blood of that adulterer. Then, is it the adulterer's love that you want to receive? Did you want to receive the love from a stained lineage through that of an adulterer? No. That is the issue. (35-90, 1970.10.4)

God exerted His utmost effort in creating the universe, dreaming of a great enterprise full of hope, but when His great endeavors and foundations of life and ideals were destroyed, heaven and earth became completely dark. It was here that the archangel Lucifer appeared as an enemy; should he be beaten to death or not? The son and daughter, who were the bone of bones and flesh of flesh that God loved most, were taken by Lucifer as his own. Should the head of such an enemy be cut off or not? It is God who was the first in history to take great pains over such problems. (27-60, 1969.11.23)

You must know that the villain who destroyed the qualification of the prince and princess that God had hoped for, ruined their family love, and destroyed their royal descendants and God's ideal family and heaven, was the devil, Satan. (302-220, 1999.6.14)

This villain is not only the enemy of God but also of humankind. It is the same as if the royal family, the prince and princess, were held captive in their own palace by the enemy commander, and lived as servants while producing the children of that servant world. Despite the fact that their descendants should have multiplied under the kingship of the prince and princess, fallen humanity is like a mob that multiplied under the devil's kingship. (302-220, 1999.6.14)

Those who investigate the contents of the Bible cannot deny the fact that the first ancestors entered into a parent-child relationship with the devil, Satan,

through illicit love. Human beings who should have been born within God's absolute love as His begotten sons and daughters, thereby inheriting His direct lineage and its value, inherited instead that of the devil, Satan, being born as his sons and daughters.

In Romans, Chapter 8, it is recorded, "And not only the creation, but we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait for adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies." An adopted child has a different lineage. This is the human reality. (53-261, 1972.3.1)

In Romans 8, it is written, "And not only the creation, but we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait for adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies," and "For you did not receive the spirit of bondage again to fear, but you received the Spirit of adoption by whom we cry out, "Abba, Father." They could only become adopted children.

Today, Christians are adopted children. Adopted children have a different lineage. Jesus said in John 8:44, "You are of your father the devil, and the desires of your father you want to do." Doesn't 'father' here indicate the lineage of humankind from its ancestor, the devil? Hence, in circumcision, the foreskin is cut. That is how it is. How can people claim that the fruit of good and evil is a literal fruit? (154-337, 1964.10.5)

Due to the Fall, human beings had no choice but to surrender to Satan, the false father. They had exchanged their father. They abandoned God who was their true Father, and became one with the devil, Satan, the false father. In this way, the very first man and woman ended up becoming the son and daughter of Satan. (God's Will - 293)

Originally, what kind of being is Satan? The devil was a servant of God, yet this servant seized the daughter of his Master. This is the Fall. According to the biblical account of the Fall, Eve ate the fruit of good and evil, but that fruit is not literal. It refers to the villainous servant seizing his Master's daughter. God intended to fulfill His ideal by bearing and raising His son and daughter who would inherit His lineage in the future, but the archangel, who was created as a servant, seized God's daughter. That became the origin of the Fall. Heaven and earth became that way. You should be able to understand this kind of complex and involved content mostly if you listen to the Divine Principle. (85-308, 1976.3.4)

The Bible states that Adam and Eve fell by eating the fruit of good and evil, but why did they cover their sexual parts? If only the established churches had the idea to analyze the Bible a bit more intellectually, they would know the origin of the Fall right away. Why were they ashamed of their sexual organs? They could have covered their mouths or their hands. Having sexual parts is not something to be ashamed of, but through their use during the

Fall, they became the shameful palace that trampled on the love of Heaven. A fountain of true love should have sprung forth, but instead, a fountain of false love centered on the devil's love gushed out. Hence, among the foundations of love, this became the foundation of the worst form of love. (202-199, 1990.5.24)

When Adam was driven out, was it after having a son and a daughter or before? We could not witness this, but had there been children with Adam and Eve, would God have been able to chase them away? He would have had to shed many more tears. They would have clung to Him and cried, "Grandfather, why are You chasing us out?" If all four of them clung to His arms and legs and cried out, wouldn't He have had to push them off in order to drive them away? Perhaps rather than Adam and Eve who sinned, but their son and daughter who had not sinned would have penetrated God's heart. Knowing this, He chased them out before they could have a son and daughter.

After being driven out, they married and had children. Did God send them away, telling them, "Leave, get married and have sons and daughters," or did He chase them away without saying anything like that? Answer me. At any rate, didn't they bear children after being sent away? (218-230, 1991.8.19)

In the Last Days, the Fall must be reversed to dissolve the anguish of God, His providence, and humanity, all at the same time. This is how it will be, but without knowing this, people are talking about eating the fruit of good and evil and so on… If you think my words are wrong, pray for forty days, putting your lives on the line. Then you should be able to know whether Rev. Moon of the Unification Church is lying or not. You were all not born from the original lineage. Hence, established religions have emphasized celibacy; if they had multiplied children of the fallen lineage, there would have been confusion. (156-228, 1966.5.25)

God hates immorality. Why? It is because human beings turned heaven and earth upside down through illicit love. We cannot do anything with this evil blood, which is why in asceticism, celibacy is emphasized. When a man enters into a trance of spiritual prayer, a woman will always appear to test him. Something like this will inevitably occur that blocks the way of asceticism. Why is that so? It is because history descended from illicit love. It is an amazing thing that the dogma of human beings falling through eating the fruit of good and evil has remained for two thousand years. (41-292, 1971.2.17)

If Adam and Eve had not fallen, they would have given birth to children who would have been the direct descendants of the eldest son of God. Adam would have been the eldest son, true father, and king. He would have been the king of the kingdom on earth and in spirit world. Furthermore, he would have been the true parent and true first son. That

is why the family of Adam would have been the royal household of the heavenly kingdom. Then, who would have been the grandfather of Adam's family? God would have been the grandfather. The mother and the father would have been Eve and Adam.

From the viewpoint of the positions represented, the grandfather and grandmother represent God, and the parents act on behalf of God. From the vertical point of view, God settles down in a family centering on the first, second and third generations. The first generation on the horizontal level is your grandfather, the second generation your father, and the third generation is yourself. Therefore, through your sons and daughters, the lineage of the royal family can be passed on and will continue forever. (218-255, 1991.8.19)

Do you know why God created Adam and Eve? Even He wanted to have the experience of loving children as a parent. Next, He wanted to experience conjugal love through Adam and Eve. He wanted to experience loving as a grandfather as well as loving His nation; He wished to possess all these loves. He bequeathed to humankind all the things He wanted to possess. You should know that it is your tribe, people and nation, this earth and the spirit world that has inherited this. (188-214, 1989.2.26)

Had they reached perfection without falling, Adam and Eve would have perfected themselves not only individually, but also universally, and a new family centered on God's love would have begun. In this way, if the clan, tribe, people, nation, and world had been created from the family, the world would have become one great extended family attending God. The center of such a great family-like society would have been God and Adam. Furthermore, in that world, Adam's family life and life course centered on God would have remained as a historical tradition, together with his lifestyle, customs, practices, and life background. Those things could only become intertwined as traditions based on God's love.

God's love is the source of life and all ideals, so that even if one wanted to leave His bosom, one could not; and even if one did, one could not but return again. (91-240, 1977.2.23)

The Fall of Adam and Eve was not just something concerning themselves but was a fall from a position involving all of human history. In other words, the fact that Adam and Eve fell meant that they were not able to become good parents, but rather became evil parents. Through evil parents, evil children were born, and through them, evil tribes and nations and an evil world were formed; and within this global realm live the five billion members of the human race. Human history in this realm of the Fall is not a history of joy, but a history of sorrow; and humankind is not living in happiness, but in sorrow. (38-149, 1971.1.3)

Where can you pay money to hear these kinds of words? Even if you sold

your home, gave all your money and made ritual offerings for tens of thousands of years, no one would be able to teach you this. Only the founder of the Unification Church can do this. This is the secret of the universe. Even the Bible doesn't have this kind of explanation. The Bible tells us that Adam and Eve took and ate of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, and in so doing committed the Fall. How can you claim that this is a literal fruit? Can those without the ability of pre-schoolers insist that Rev. Moon, to whom doctoral degrees have been granted and who became the head of those so qualified, is a heretic? The Chinese characters meaning "heretic"(異端), do not mean that the ending is different, but simply that the ending cannot be seen. Are my words correct, or not? They are correct. (238-213, 1992.11.22)

In the secular world, criminals conduct themselves with dignity wherever they go as if they had not committed any crimes when no one knows of their crimes. However, if even an extremely young boy were to point out that he saw the crime being committed, the criminal would surrender right there. Thus, if you are to make the devil, Satan, surrender, what you should do is to expose his identity, reveal his crime, and launch a movement to drive him out from both heaven and earth. (53-194, 1972.2.21)

God is the Lord of the eternal universal laws, so we must drag Satan before God and accuse him of his crimes. Watching Satan defend himself, we must prosecute him as a prosecutor would, and wring him tightly so that he cannot do anything. Then, the unfallen archangels, rather than the fallen archangels, must state, "That's right! Just as you said, that's right! That's right!" (65-201, 1972.11.19)

1.4. Humankind inherited Satan's lineage through the Fall

The Fall changed Adam and Eve's lineage. Whose love changed it? They became the embodiments of Satan through his love as God's adulterous enemy. The living body of the man, and the living body of the woman entered the realm of Satan's love and united based on that; and the fruit of this was their children who thereby inherited Satan's love, life and lineage. (227-47, 1992.2.10)

Fallen people became false beings and so must be engrafted. Viewed lineally, your ancestors differ from the original. Because your father and mother are of a different lineage, you could only become adopted children; hence the logic that the Fall occurred through lineage. What is the Fall? It consisted of inheriting the wrong lineage. The explanation of the Fall being an act of wrongful love makes sense. Thus, it is unreasonable to deny what is being asserted in the Unification Church, that the first ancestors fell through love. Doesn't the Bible state that they fell by eating the fruit of good and evil? Do you know what that fruit is? Is it a fruit from a

tree that falls and rolls around when the wind blows? It is not. (157-158, 1969.4.2)

Satan entered Adam and Eve's hearts and became one with them, so that they inherited his lineage. Why can't God, who abounds in love, forgive Satan? God said He would forgive murderers and thieves, that He would forgive everything; He said if you believe in Jesus, you can receive forgiveness, but why can He not forgive Satan? That is because Satan besmirched the human lineage. What does that mean? From God's viewpoint, Satan is an adulterer, the adulterer of love. (156-226, 1966.5.25)

Adam and Eve married centered on Satan, so it is undeniable that they inherited his love, life, and lineage. Had they not fallen by eating the fruit of good and evil, they would have married centered on God. Just as the True Parents of the Unification Church blessed you, God would have called Adam and Eve after they had matured and blessed them centered on Himself. (228-254, 1992.7.5)

Why do we strike our own bodies? It is because human beings inherited Satan's blood, the blood of the enemy of God. God's enemy is the adulterer. The adulterer is the enemy of the love of God! People have inherited the blood of the adulterer. Eve, who should have inherited the right of kingship of the heavenly nation and become a queen, became the spouse of the devil, the partner of the servant. This was the secret of heaven and earth, exposed for the first time during my lifetime. Thus, the satanic world must retreat. (172-277, 1988.1.24)

Why does God hate the devil? Christian logic dictates that one should love one's enemy, so why is God unable to love His enemy, Satan? If He were to love the enemy of love, heaven and earth would disappear. The heavenly laws of governance would disappear. The laws of existence would disappear. (191-43, 1989.6.24)

Satan destroyed God's ideal love and trampled on the ideal life and ideal lineage. Then, human beings bore children. God could not interfere with the sons and daughters who were the manifestations of Satan's love, life, and lineage. (197-286, 1990.1.20)

Why does Satan come without fail to those who, throughout our history, have walked the path of faith, strangling them, pressing them down, and sacrificing them? In God's eyes, Satan is the adulterer who stole and violated His family. Our original mother should have attended God, and built His kingdom of peace in heaven and on earth; yet we and our original father were driven out. Satan intervened and human beings came to be in this miserable state. It was no other sin than this that he committed. (156-226, 1966.5.25)

How did the devil bring about the Fall? Through the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil? Where did they cover themselves after eating the fruit? Did they cover up their mouths,

or their hands? Didn't they cover up the sexual parts of their bodies? This became the seed that sowed evil. They fell before they had fully matured, whilst they were still adolescents. Because the lineage of humankind in world history stemmed form this act, in the Last Days the phenomenon of such relationships will thrive. When the time comes that all across the world young people destroy the ethics of love, hidden in the shadows, just like Adam and Eve, and have no fear of heaven, that will be the time when the era of Satan's worldwide dominion will come to the earth. That is when we will be faced with the iron hammer of God. (200-227, 1990.2.25)

You must all understand clearly that humankind needs to change its lineage because of having inherited that of Satan's. (183-308, 1988.11.7)

Whereas Adam and Eve should have attained God-centered oneness, the Fall refers to attaining oneness with the archangel, who was God's servant. People, who should have inherited God's lineage, inherited instead the lineage of a servant. Hence, however much they call God, "Father," they cannot truly feel it because they have inherited fallen nature, which always thinks in terms of self-interest without regard for God or anything else. Thus, as everybody became conflicting beings and formed tribes and people, everything started to divide after a while. In this way, the realm of satanic culture was built. Dividing into two, dividing into three, all things that divided came to belong to Satan's realm. (91-242, 1977.2.23)

Because of the complex entanglement of the human lineage, restoration has taken six thousand years; otherwise, almighty God would have restored everything in a day. As it has become like a chronic disease in the lineage, if it were to be pulled out all at once, everyone would die. That is why it has taken six thousand years. Did the first human ancestors fall through eating the literal fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil? If that were so, how simple things would be. (155-295, 1965.11.1)

The question is: how did things such as the bases of sin, the Fall, evil and hell concretely come into being? We must think back to the time of Adam and Eve. If we explore the origin of why they fell, it was that they disbelieved God's words, "Do not eat the fruit of good and evil." The second reason is that they became self-centered. The third was that they wanted to love based upon self-interest first. These are the essential contents of the Fall, and we come to the conclusion that those who act likewise are on Satan's side. Fallen people are all those who have faithless and self-centered love. Ultimately, those who assert self-centered love are the people of the secular world. (79-198, 1975.7.27)

There can be no perfection in ignorance. Who did I say Satan was? He is the adulterer. I have made all this clear to you. Do you think you can go to the

Kingdom of Heaven if you ignore this? Do you think you can be saved if you ignore it? There is not even the slimmest chance. What a set of ignorant people! If you could be saved by just believing what you are told to believe, people like you and I would have been saved a long time ago. We would not have to suffer like this. (188-230, 1989.2.26)

It is amazing that the fact of the Fall having been a consequence of love was revealed in my time. This is something that is theoretically systematized through its historical background and content that cannot be denied. (128-88, 1989.2.26)

1.5. The meaning of the serpent's temptation

What is it that belongs to man and woman and is a poisonous snake, the trap of a poisonous snake? Isn't it said that a snake deceived Eve? What does it mean to say that a serpent tempted her? This is indeed referring to the sexual organ. Aren't there so many female organs out there that are more frightening than a poisonous snake? Likewise with the male organ; men use that serpent-like organ to tempt and seduce women. If you women mistakenly take it as bait, that's a big problem. A nation and even the world could go to ruin, and your way to heaven and eternal life would be blocked. (227-372, 1992.2.16)

All men and women alive on earth became Satan's live poisonous snakes. The male sexual organ is a poisonous snake that spurts poison at the female. The day you lose your purity, your whole clan will be ruined. That is why the snake was used as a metaphor. Do you have a sexual organ or not? An angry poisonous snake is waiting with open mouth, but would you put your hands in there? Would you insert your love organ into it? (272-37, 1995.8.30)

If you misuse the right of lineage, it will cause a big problem. What does it mean to use the right of lineage? It means to make love. Thus, if men and women misuse this, it will be a problem. You must plant the seed in the right field. What do you all think the poisonous serpent in the Garden of Eden was? It was the male sexual organ. That's what it means. The female sexual organ is the serpent's mouth, a poisonous serpent with its mouth open. Once connected, everything is over and heaven destroyed altogether. The woman's organ, if misused, is the mouth of a serpent that is full of poison.

That is why women with skilled make-up are beautiful snakes. A snake watches quietly on the side, and when its prey approaches, it strikes suddenly. Women are extremely fearful beings. They have a serpent's mouth and bite. That is their sexual organ. Originally, the lineage was not such a bad poisonous one, and the sexual organ was not poisonous. Yet, if it is misused, the nation, the family, power and everything else are ruined. How terrible is this? It is the open mouth of a snake with poison. (228-31, 1992.3.1)

What is the sexual organ, what is the snake? In a man, it is the penis. What does it like most? The vagina. Isn't that so, isn't that right? That is why it is full of danger. God warned Adam and Eve because it's like lighting the fuse of gunpowder, pouring gasoline and it will explode any minute. The male sexual organ is like a serpent. You wives should go and peek quietly at your husbands'. It's easier to understand crude stories, so that is why I talk like this.

What was the serpent? It is the archangel's sexual organ. Doesn't that make it clearer? As the Last Days are here, I am teaching you all about these aspects this time. What is the woman's thing? It is the mouth that opens. When the man gets excited and both get excited, doesn't it open? Does it stay still? Doesn't taking a wife in marriage mean bringing the two together? If they are wrongfully brought together, a nation is ruined. For tens of thousands of years, the poison will not disappear. (304-270, 1999.11.9)

All men and women desire very wonderful partners. Everyone has different desires, but if you consider it from such a way of thinking, it is a poisonous snake. It is worse than AIDS. Once that connection is made, everything is ruined. If you misuse the sexual organ, everything will be completely destroyed. You will not prosper. It has become the worst place of all and the most fearful, more frightening than a tiger or lion. Those who misuse it even once are ruined and will fall into hell. (228-31, 1992.3.1)

The serpent is analogous to the male sexual organ. Doesn't the male organ look like a serpent's head? It goes around constantly seeking a hole. The female sexual organ is also similar to the cave of a poisonous snake with its mouth open. Once you bite it or are bitten, that poison will spread throughout the veins of your whole body, and you will die forever. Immorality is the way that individuals, families, tribes, and nations are ruined. This is because the snakes ate the fruit of good and evil. That's what it means. Men try to seduce women using that. (304-162, 1999.10.10)

No one knew that humankind would go to ruin like this. It is the most frightening thing. If we take a powder keg as an example, there is no container like this. Thus, if you were to go to the bathroom every three hours, in twenty-four hours you'd go eight times. Each time, you should say, "Hey, snake's head, come out!" If that is your true organ, it is a sacred organ. You men should worship it so that you will not be moved but rather overcome all the possible advances any beautiful woman might make in seeking to seduce you. It's not simply a matter of bowing to it. Worshipping is more than bowing with respect. It is more than obedience. I underwent such training. Whoever seeks to seduce me will do so in vain. Otherwise, it is difficult to become God's children. Thus, the words, "Before you hope to control the universe, you must control yourself" mean, in other words, to control your sexual organ. (304-270, 1999.11.9)

The male sexual organ is like the archangel before the Fall. The archangel deceived his victims with a forked tongue, then seduced, and cast them into hell. In the same way, he is behaving in such a way as to fall again, using something resembling the head of a snake. The snake bites. Adam and Eve were bitten by the snake. What else can "man eating woman" be referring to? It is a fearful organ. That is the archangel – the male sexual organ that is like a serpent's head. (287-116, 1997.9.19)

Where did the Fall originate? The Fall began in the male and female organs. The organ itself is like the serpent's teeth: once you are bitten, your family is ruined. However distinguished your household may be, it will be ruined in a flash if that organ is misused. Even a royal family will be totally ruined. Thus, AIDS has appeared like a judgment from this truth in the Last Days. (229-25, 1992.4.9)

Section 2. The Results of the Fall

2.1. Fallen human beings and the state of the fallen world

2.1.1. Youth problems and free sex

Just as Adam and Eve fell as teenagers in the shade of a tree, with the coming of the Last Days of Judgment which brings the fruits of world history, today's youth all over the world have fallen into free sex. What is free sex? It is the trap of the devil's Sodom and Gomorrah. It stimulates young people's sensuality, and then it is all finished. Everything falls over the cliff. What kind of disco dances do young people dance? The twist is like a snake's dance. Doesn't the snake twist its body? To twist means to turn part of your body. Just as the devil has sown, he will popularize this around the world to tempt humanity. (208-263, 1990.11.20)

As Adam and Eve fell through sexual misconduct, so will it be in the Last Days. The youth will all fall into promiscuity. Just as the ancestors sowed their seeds, at the time of harvest, the youth will cover the world in that way and bring it to ruin. That is today. This is undeniable. Where did free sex arise? Who promoted it? Adam and Eve did. Being the ones who fell, they are the ancestors of free sex. (257-60, 1994.3.13)

Didn't Adam and Eve fall through free sex in Eden? Didn't they have free sex? In the Last days too, it is free sex. If this is not redeemed, everything will have to be destroyed. My life's work is to redeem this situation. I must bring it under control and build a bridge for you to cross from Satan's realm over to God's realm. If not, everyone will fall into hell. Men and women all fell in and died. That is why I must build this bridge to cross the great ocean to the peace of true love. No one but I can build this bridge. Once you have crossed over, there is no need for this bridge. Things like indemnity will not be necessary. We move into the era of absolute sex and absolute love. (281-293, 1997.3.9)

Disco dancing, liquor and smoking – you should have nothing to do with any of these things. You should have nothing to do with free sex. Homosexuals, lesbians and swinging singles are not needed. However strongly the wind blows, you should calmly maintain your position. However much the wind or typhoon blows, or the Earth moves, the direction that the Unification Church goes does not change, just as north, south, east and west do not change. Thus, once we unify the world, everything will be accomplished. (206-62, 1990.10.3)

Who is going to block this wave of free sex and sexual misconduct that pushes forth from all directions? Who is going to eliminate this wave of hedonism, the pursuit of sensual pleasures? Not satiated by drugs and illicit love, the last of the human race looks for recreational drugs – is that a problem of body or mind? (200-227, 1990.2.25)

What is ironic in America now is that even while free sex may be prevailing among the youth, they leave their own homes. This, in a way, is in heaven's favor. Leaving home, they are able to get away from their folks and country. American youth have no ties to the world, their country, family or parents. Based on free sex, they accept homosexuals and lesbians, and deny masculinity and femininity. If this continues, humanity will all disappear within a century. How unspeakably pained must God's heart be as He looks upon this miserable state of humanity caught in the devil's spell! (208-265, 1990.11.20)

We must know that the hippie movement and the current problems of immorality and drugs are things that have all appeared as one aspect of the global communist strategy. Things such as free sex and the homosexual-lesbian movement are one form of behavior that destroys human rights and dignity. Viewed thus, the current destruction of the family, society and church has already reached its zenith, reaching a stage at which no individual, no theologian nor any state power can prevail against it. (128-33, 1983.6.1)

I know America well. Americans talk about sexual freedom, this and that, have one-night stands and then say good-bye. Everything is based on individualism and self-vindication, and they don't like it if the self is not at the center. Greetings are diplomatic; they may look you in the eye, but the mind may be elsewhere. Emotions and lifestyle are based on expediency. (127-328, 1983.5.22)

What kind of weapons did Satan use? He used an airborne weapon: that is smoking. Next, the liquid weapon is liquor; and then the solid weapon is drugs. Through these means, everything including your spirit is made to rot. He makes everything rot – your body and spirit, and everything from the nostrils to the lungs. So we do not drink liquor or smoke cigarettes. These are the weapons Satan uses to destroy human beings.

These three things, which are elements that prevent one's spirit from communicating with God, are the enemy's best weapons. What comes next? Free sex that destroys the order of love. All these things I must put in good order single-handedly. (126-70, 1983.4.10)

Free sex, homosexuality and lesbianism – these things should not exist. In the Last Days, things that did not obviously exist in history have come to appear in the world in broad daylight. Things that could not possibly exist in this universe have come to appear openly. The order of love is now completely destroyed. We must know that is why America has now become the bottom of hell. The order of love is totally destroyed, and through using drugs, the physiological order of man and woman is totally destroyed. What that means is that live young people will be ruined. Moral principles and order will be destroyed. (125-168, 1983.3.20)

I am seeking to single-handedly cure and restore this world, which talks about sexual liberation and free sex, and has become abominable today. I am licensed as the doctor who can do this. There is no one else who can cure this but me. It can be cured by teaching true love. There will come a time when people cannot help but believe in the Unification Church. I am notifying you that even if you are unable to believe, I have the responsibility to guide your sons and daughters to go such a way without fail, even if I have to drive them with a whip. Do established churches have this kind of ability? Do they have an injection to cure this? (209-222, 1990.11.29)

Do not make love in a manner shameful to God, humankind, or this earth. Until now, those groups advocating free sex who call themselves hippies or yippies all have such past experiences and have done everything imaginable, but was that for the self? Is that what love is? We must know that this is what destroys humanity, disgraces God's name and spits the blood of love on planet Earth. That is the same as spreading the original blood of human beings on the earth. There they dance, do bad things and cause uproar. (93-29, 1977.5.8)

Since Satan knows that, in the Last Days, God will form His kingdom on earth, bring humankind to order, and cause them to enter His kingdom in heaven, the devil insists on behavior that is opposed to God. As a representative example, he completely crushed the one and only first love through free sex. First love was meant to be eternal, yet he turned it into a love between mutts and bitches. Heaven and earth became a world of such worthless love. This is the story of the human lifespan of seventy years.

Satan knows this, so he created a world of free sex in which men marry each other and women marry each other. They become messed up on drugs and only seek pleasure. Those who are intoxicated with physical satisfaction

will receive a summary judgment that leads directly to hell. Who is going to clear this up? It must be Rev. Moon – the True Parents must sort this out. (227-279, 1992.2.14)

All created beings are linked as pairs based on love. Were that love removed, they would be scattered like grains of sand. What kind of love do you desire? In the world of love, there is no concept of individualism, but that of pairs. In the insect world as well, there must be plus and minus, subject and object partners. This is the modality of existence of all created beings. (287-60, 1997.8.31)

2.1.2. Corruption of sexual morality

An example of the sort of things happening in America is that under the proposition of sexual liberation, high society people such as lawyers who attend a bar association meeting check into a hotel after the meeting and mutually swap wives. In just one week, they have slept with the wives of all their friends. (191-220, 1989.6.25)

Is it all right for women without husbands to put on makeup or not? Aren't prostitutes and street girls like that? Today unmarried young girls are walking around with rouge, but do you know how ugly the rouge looks? The original natural color of young people is beautiful. If you beheld it for a thousand years, you would still find it beautiful, not ugly. How beautiful that color is! You cannot produce color surpassing that. You cannot create that color with rouge. (275-136, 1995.12.4)

If the family is ruined, this is fundamental ruin; everything is ruined. There are youth problems and breakdown in the family. There is not even one complete family. In the Last Days, women will have two men. From this arises the term sexual liberation. It is the responsibility of True Parents to repair all this, as if sewing together rags to make them better than a silk robe for God to wear. (304-166, 1999.10.10)

Chicago and Los Angeles are the same as New York. All of America's big cities are the same. Satan thinks that if he can totally ruin the family, which is central to Christianity, by corrupting sexual morals through sexual liberation, then the foundation that has been established globally until now will collapse. So he injects everyone with free sex, and in that way people all become little satans. (87-137, 1976.5.23)

Can the US government solve the problem of juvenile promiscuity in America today? That cannot be done through military power, economic power, science or technology. Are not all sorts of wicked things taking place these days in the name of sexual liberation? Is love like that? Love can lead to eternal life, yet it has turned out like this. So what hope is there here? It is hopeless even if you meet a man, if you see your son, or if you see your parents. Wherever you go, when you meet some-

one, it is hopeless. (183-337, 1988.11.9)

As the world became filled with turmoil and chaos, the disease of AIDS emerged. In the name of sexual liberation, confusion is spreading. True love cannot be found. The original human mind is seeking and pleading for it, but there is no way to find it. The further you go into the secular world, the more you will be hurt. The kind of love in a world that is based on outward appearance crushes everything. (210-280, 1990.12.25)

What started with Adam alone has now led to confusion among men today, as people speak of sexual liberation. Even incestuous relationships are occurring within the family. This is a miserable phenomenon not seen even in the animal world. Such breakdown and aberration of love within the family are unforgivable before God. This has become a world that He cannot bear to look at. (292-175, 1998.4.12)

When a couple attains complete oneness, heavenly fortune will protect them. Even if they wanted to fail, they could not. The fortunes of the family, society, nation, world, heaven and earth and God's love would form layers of protection for them. Yet if this oneness is about to be broken, would the world leave it alone? If that were the case, that seed would disappear. Would anyone be able to get a divorce? Divorce destroys that position protected by heavenly fortune. Would anyone be able to have an affair? I must single-handedly reorganize this world that is arguing in favor of sexual liberation today. It must be cleanly reorganized. Until today, I have been doing this. American society is also saying, "There is no doctor other than Rev. Moon who can get a grip on this." There is no other such physician. (211-268, 1990.12.30)

We hear of murders of fathers, mothers and children. In extreme cases what do we hear? That a son is cohabiting with his mother. It is truly the end. Have you ever heard such things? There are many such cases, but they do not stir up rumors to this extent. Now, such a time has come. It is called sexual liberation. In the communist world, people are treated like animals, so this kind of thing would not even be considered a problem. These are called the Last Days. Do they differentiate between their cousin, uncle or mother? As for dogs, would a pup and its mother mate and have a litter again? When such a time comes to the human world, it is the end. (39-123, 1971.1.10)

Nowadays people emphasize the single life, and things like homosexuals and lesbians are an issue, but why do homos and whatnot become that way? What is in them that inevitably makes them that way? Incestuous relationships caused them to be that way. A grandfather willfully violates his granddaughter. A father violates his own daughter. The cause of these incestuous relationships is that ultimately people are contacting each other sexually as they please since the age of sexual liberation, the age of

free sex, arrived. They come into sexual contact not with some stranger from a distant town, but with someone from among their closest relatives. (261-44, 1994.5.22)

What is happening in New York now is that only the wealthiest people and those of the lowest level remain there. The people of the middle class who are the city's backbone all packed their bags and ran away; just last year, some six hundred thousand people departed. Among the lower classes there are prostitutes and rogues talking of sexual liberation, making the base for Satan. Those who think they cannot have their children educated in that chaos cannot help but leave. Up until now, there have been many hotels in town that are a market for prostitution. (87-135, 1976.5.23)

2.1.3. Homosexuality

We Unificationists intend to digest all the evil things of the world that Satan likes. We will digest the problem of the gay movement of homosexuals and so forth. We will digest free sex, the problem of immorality, all gangsters, terrorists and organized crime. We will take responsibility for the most difficult problems of the world. We will even digest the Communist Party. (109-34, 1980.10.26)

Isn't the gay movement widespread in the United States? Aren't there many homosexuals? It is because these people do not know the Principle of Creation. However, the members of the Unification Church, who know the Principle of Creation, understood through education that they must absolutely get married. The gay movement has totally broken down here as a result. Your mothers and fathers may have gone out dancing, had free sex that shattered the family and everything. All of you understand about the Fall, however, so no matter how much you dance, can it lead to free sex? (118-109, 1982.5.9)

Are they saying that a law will be passed to legalize homosexuality? A law will be made? They should be ashamed to see the sun, the trees, the grass, or even a dog. Being that way, how can they dress, eat and live like other people? People who practice homosexuality will be the ones who oppose us and call us heretics. (118-295, 1982.6.20)

Then, what is America now? Be it homosexuals or lesbians, a cultural realm that denies the spouse is expanding in America. Is there a spouse for an angel? A long time ago, man followed Eve who betrayed God, but from now on, he must follow Eve who supports God. That is why I married many American men to Japanese women. Americans listen well to what women have to say; for them, women are queens. (119-246, 1982.9.13)

Is a woman who lives alone happy? If lesbians and homosexuals came here and listened to my words, would they think of continuing in their ways or will they think that they must remedy this? Would they be able to oppose Rev. Moon,

saying that he is wrong? The youth of the world did not know that such a teaching existed. If you seek to meet God, you must possess a love having the attributes of being eternal, unique, and unchanging. Otherwise, you will not be able to meet the Subject of true love or to participate in the way of true love. (124-86, 1983.1.30)

Homosexuals and lesbians: they will be saved through whose hands? Through the hands of Rev. Moon; my hands! Who can liberate these young people who are becoming living corpses, ailing from drugs and dying away? I will liberate them with my hands. Who will liberate those who promote free sex and gambling with love? Is there anyone in American Christianity who will do this? Who is there among the pastors of American churches? Next, who will block the Communist Party? Rev. Moon will block it. (124-329, 1983.3.1)

How about people like the homosexuals and lesbians of America? This is a presumptuous love. The longer they persist in it, the greater their ruin. It leads to ruin, the breakdown of individuals, families, children, nations, the world, and the universe. If they are destroyed, humanity will disappear automatically. When people become that way, humankind will perish. (125-68, 1983.3.6)

Today in America, lesbians, homosexuals and gays are becoming prevalent. This is sinful and there will be consequences. This malaise which afflicts them is not found where heterosexual men and women live. Diseases not found in ordinary couples pervade them. Sexual diseases of the kind that arise from violating the principles of love are their punishment. Thus, central love is needed. You were born from central love. What is central love? It is parental love. This is eternally undeniable. It can never be denied. People might insist upon denying it, but it remains undeniable. (128-15, 1983.5.29)

These days, there's such uproar over homosexuals and lesbians. Those who do things like that will perish. They won't last even a century. They won't last for long at all. If they live like that, everything will be destroyed. What American culture is based on is that it is in the realm of the culture of satanic love, which is destructive and bound to collapse. As such, it must be tossed out. American culture is in the cultural realm of satanic love.

What is Unificationist culture? It is in the cultural realm of God's love. It is simple. It absolutely opposes free sex, homosexuality, and drugs. We oppose all of them. (134-14, 1985.1.1)

American women say they don't need aging parents. Who are the aging parents? Aren't they their parents and grandparents? Satan made it that way in the Last Days. Why? It's because Satan knows God's purpose. As God is trying to set up this formula, Satan tries to break its foundation. Who attacks? Satan does. Next, they say they don't

need spouses. Isn't this a truly strange system? Who made it that way? Satan did. This is Satan's goal. Homosexuals and lesbians are all the result of Satan. Next, they'll say they don't need babies. (135-115, 1985.10.4)

For those who have taken drugs and experienced being homosexuals or lesbians: how difficult is it to get out of it? It is human hell. We cannot lose the American youth who are caught in a net like that and end up becoming Satan's prey. Who besides Unificationists can save them? If we don't do this, there will be no America. (149-377, 1986.12.28)

Men and women are horizontal. They are level. The union of man and woman is to be engrafted, based on vertical, lifelong and eternal love. As men representing east and women representing west have lost the central line, they will seek to graft into this, so they must absolutely get married. Aren't there many in America who oppose marriage? There are many who, like homosexuals or lesbians, dislike having children. Those without children have lost out when they pass on to the spirit world. This is the formula of the universe. (163-88, 1987.4.19)

Wait and see: evil free sex will disappear one day. Homosexuals will also disappear one day. Lesbians: women marrying each other – how on earth can that be? Insects in the animal world don't even do that. Are such people human? Also, those wicked people who say there is no God must all disappear. The materialistic view of history will disappear. (188-157, 1989.2.19)

Men tire of women and women tire of men, so they go around daily, hungry for love and always lonely; they will all become homosexuals and lesbians and end up in the trash can. They smoke opium and all fall into the straits of self-destruction. Who will take responsibility for this? Will the State Department or the Pentagon be responsible? Will the nation's president take responsibility? All of us should take responsibility. (207-111, 1990.11.1)

As America has become the archangel nation in the Last Days, its women will not be qualified to be women. Hence, homosexuals and lesbians arise and say, "Let women marry each other. Let men marry each other!" The archangel does not acknowledge a complementary partnership. He does not recognize the right of ownership. He does not acknowledge heterosexuality. That is why everything has become like that. The reality of America today is that while opposing homosexuality on the one hand, it must present the way it should go honestly before God on the other. Issues like lesbianism, homosexuality, and family breakdown must be resolved completely. (240-155, 1992.12.11)

According to the US Statistics Bureau, the soaring divorce rate showed a threefold rise between 1970 and 1990, with the conclusion that one family out of six has a divorce, and the reality is

that nationwide, thirty percent of children are being raised by single parents. Furthermore, the strange, decadent phenomenon of gay married couples is spreading. (288-197, 1997.11.28)

Immorality, sexual misconduct and decadent trends, along with hedonism, are systematically ruining families. It has come to the point where some people of today think that gay people can also build a different type of family alongside the traditional family, and that they can have children through adoption or artificial insemination. (288-171, 1997.11.27)

The problems of the world today are serious. If you go to a place like America, you will see many gays among whom men are marrying each other and women are doing the same. Really, where can we find such laws? Physiologically, they are not made to be that way. After one generation their lineage will die out. Everything will be gone. Heavenly fortune will drive them out, and it is not as if their hearts will be happy. They will accept suffering as such, and more complicated problems will arise. Thus, subject and object partners will always coexist in a living environment. You must know this as you lead your life in society. (243-74, 1993.1.3)

Free sex is indeed the wicked trend that we must completely eradicate from this planet. The elements that are related to free sex such as drugs, violence, homosexuality, and AIDS are driving humanity toward destruction. (288-283, 1997.11.30)

Today, those that are gay appear and deny their parents; husbands do everything imaginable and wives likewise; but as these contravene the heavenly laws of the universe, they will be judged by universal criminal law in the other world. (106 -112, 1979.12.16)

2.2. Reining in the errant culture of free sex

2.2.1. In the Last Days the order of love is corrupted

As true love is most precious, violating it is a universal crime. Immorality, juvenile promiscuity, family breakdown, incest, homosexuality, indescribable sex crimes, and so on are the reality of today. These cause God grief. The ideal of creation lies in the fulfillment of the family ideal which is based on sublime and eternal love, but why did it result in today's miserable way? We can say that in the Last Days the result of the Fall of the first ancestors is bearing fruit in displays of decadence, just like the seeds that were sown. (135-12, 1985.8.20)

Americans do not understand that there is no foundation of true love in their nation. Ultimately, things will go to ruin because of false love. Couples, siblings and parent-child relations break up. Incest spreads and sweeps people into hell, destroying everything. Having come completely to the zero point, American society must be built anew. It is one world under God! All color barriers, obstacles, customs, and conventions

must be abolished. Only the parental heart and love of the family will remain: that is, to invest and forget as parents truly love their children. This is the concept of heaven. (293-152, 1998.5.26)

As unity is the origin, Satan destroyed it completely. He destroyed everything through free sex, homosexuality, and incest. We must totally overcome this. As it has become hell on earth, we must go 180 degrees in the opposite direction. As we have such an ideal, we will be able to fulfill an ideal world without problems, building an ideal nation and world on the foundation of an ideal family by going in that diametrically opposite direction. (261-284, 1996.6.20)

Free sex is the devil's destructive strategy to erase God's ideal from this earth without a trace, so that He is unable to step into this world. Next, Satan made people mentally ill through drugs. In a place like this, we cannot find the way of heavenly principles in a normal situation and all the ideals of love blossoming in a loving couple. Could the restoration of God's ideal be fulfilled in such a state? How did America become like this in forty years? (253-303, 1994.1.30)

It has become a world pervaded by free sex and incest. How did this happen? At the time of Jesus, these things were to have been resolved. The returning Lord must come again to definitely resolve incestuous relations. However, because he was driven out, the free world is unknowingly falling into hell, with people all lining up to fall off the cliffs. People do not know how to turn around at this point. If I had been here at that time, it would not have become like that. The free world chased me out and created a mess in the space of forty years. (252-139, 1993.11.14)

Can a woman perfect herself alone? She cannot. Don't American women say they don't want to get married, but they do want children? How did this happen? They say they don't need their grandparents, parents, spouses, siblings or anything. As they cannot live alone, men stick together, women stick together and then do they comfort each other? Is that the way to offer consolation? Where did incest begin? Behind it is free sex. (248-111, 1993.8.1)

Men or women on earth end up becoming like animals. In other words, with regard to sexual relations they are the same as animals. What is happening is that grandfathers cohabit with their granddaughters, and uncles with their nieces. In this way, based on destructive environments that cannot even be imagined in the realm of ideal love, the world will collapse. Living in the same house with her mother, a daughter makes love with her father. Living like this, they even appear and are interviewed on television. In America, it is said that such incestuous relationships comprise more than twenty percent. (208-304, 1990.11.21)

God cannot intervene in the affairs of fallen humanity. His beloved was

snatched away and bore children. Could He visit such a place and love them next to that devil? These are not empty words. Thus, Rome was destroyed through immorality, and America will now also perish through immorality. If you go to Pompeii, there are still traces of such immorality, traces of incestuous relationships over three generations. In America, twenty percent are that way. This is meant to be destroyed. (197-265, 1990.1.19)

Do you know why America is now going to perish? I warned them before. Do you know how numerous the cases of incest are? Twenty percent in this nation of scoundrels! Grandfathers cohabit with their granddaughters and fathers sleep with their daughters even though they are married. All the symptoms of apocalyptic destruction are here. An atomic bomb has been dropped from heaven and we are in an age where we might be directly bombed. Yet the developed nations do not know how fearful this is. This is where they need me and the Unification Church. Without the Unification Church, they will never be able to bring this under control. (201-165, 1990.3.30)

Men are in the archangel position. Thus in America, cases of men violating their own daughters or even mothers are taking place. The incidence of incest has exceeded twenty percent. Satan is throwing grandmothers, mothers, younger sisters and even daughters into confusion. Therefore I am devising a strategy to surround all of hell in order to destroy the satanic realm. (227-71, 1992.2.10)

With Jesus' death on the cross, the satanic world on the left side triumphed. Due to the fact that the Vatican could not fulfill its responsibility, people fell into atheistic materialism, going through the stages of the French Revolution and humanism. Driving out God, His people, and even His belongings, humanity has become miserable. They are also suffering without having food to eat. Who made them like that? God made them like that. In this democratic world, people boast of material worth, but they do not know about the grace of the Christian cultural sphere and how to return this to God. They cannot fulfill their human portion of responsibility and end up becoming animalistic people. How can incest occur in a family with a Christian cultural background? Such people have become rotten in heart and spirit, and offerings to the devil.
(214-243, 1991.2.2)

Adam fell while in his teens without his Parent's permission in the shade of a tree. That is how he sowed his seeds, so that is how they are reaped. Why have teenagers become a worldwide problem in this age, and why has the age come in which they exercise full power that no one can control? This is something inevitable. The only way this can be managed is to learn the way of the coming True Parents. This must be done. (262-212, 1994.7.23)

In the history of Korea, what we can take pride in globally is the realm of the tribe. It is a race that God has preserved within the providence in order to revere the ancestors and maintain one tradition and a pure lineage. Thus, we must reorganize ourselves quickly so that no adulterous thugs will appear. Today, in places like America, incest is a problem. Grandfathers cohabit with their granddaughters, fathers with their daughters, brothers with their sisters, and every imaginable behavior is taking place. Such a trend has emerged now with relatives of the eighth degree of closeness intermarrying. This has to be judged and eliminated. Our mission in resolving this is great. We have the responsibility to keep the tradition of a tribe of pure lineage, and to inherit and foster the ethical concepts of a people. (213-154, 1991.1.16)

2.2.2. Absolute purity: do not defile the lineage

God pursues a lineage that preserves purity eternally. We must know the fact that our desire as human beings and that of our first ancestors, Adam and Eve, was how to preserve the direct lineage eternally. This traditional thought has still not disappeared. Why? Because what God has planned is absolute. His will must be fulfilled absolutely at some point. If it could not be fulfilled, He would not be God. This is immutable. The numerous conflicts among religious denominations, religions and nations are not God's will. They are not in accordance with it and will all break down. (249-188, 1993.10.10)

The True Parents must bear the responsibility over all things that Adam and Eve failed in and resolve them in their stead. Otherwise, there is no path to restore the true parental position. The parents sowed them, so those who are to be parents must harvest them, burn the bad things, store away the good things, and distribute the seeds that all people seek after. These are the words of the Divine Principle: true love, a pure lineage, and ideal conjugal love. There is no other way to go as human beings. All other things will disappear, but this will accompany human life, eternal life. That is how precious the Divine Principle is. (256-28, 1994.3.12)

Where the original lineage was lost, no culture of heart will emerge. Culture is connected to the unfolding of history. Based on the family, society, nation, and world, this must be propagated. "We pledge to perfect the world of the culture of heart, connected to the original lineage." The point is to bequeath a pure lineage. Otherwise, we would be cut off from the world of the culture of heart. That vast Kingdom of Heaven is the foundation of the heart that we can live in, but if the world of the culture of heart cannot be built, that world will be cut off. Hence, we must live a life centered on the realm of the culture of heart .
(260-305, 1994.5.19)

Through what did the Fall occur? We

can conclude that it occurred through fornication. In connection with the exposition on the Fall, we must talk about all of these things. Satan was a god of fornication. God is a god of purity. What does this refer to? The lineage; I am speaking of the bloodline. The satanic world is totally a world of fornication, the world of the devil. (266-22, 1994.12.4)

A clean lineage, a pure lineage must be maintained. Just as God drove out fallen Adam and Eve, if your lineage is stained, you must remove yourself completely and return to the back of the line of humanity to come in as fallen people. In the future, leaders will be only those who preserved their purity. These people will inherit and also bequeath the mainstream traditional thought. It is unforgivable for Blessed Couples to fall again. Western society is in terrible confusion. (268-110, 1995.3.31)

Do you know what will happen if you become a drug addict? Don't you know that love addiction is much stronger than drug addiction? People became addicted to false love, causing them to perish. Women too are like that; they have two minds. When you women make love with your husbands, you should think, "God is visiting us. He has descended into my husband. I will clean and prepare our bed well for tonight" and focus all possible devotion from the time of your baby's conception. Focus your devotion when you are children, then siblings, then spouses, and finally parents; focus where such pure couples, mobilizing the four great realms of heart, will love each other. Have you ever thought about it like that? (273-21, 1995.10.21)

What fearful beings women are. If one woman is mistreated, a nation will perish and a clan will be destroyed. The same holds true for men also. If a woman mistreats her husband, the nation will perish, her tribe will be ruined, and the generations of purity maintained through her ancestors will all be hurt. It is serious. Thus, the true form of the highest truth before a woman is her husband. She has given her first love to her husband. That first love cannot be traded. Even if she offered everything to God she could not exchange this, and even if Adam was offered, she could not exchange this. Only after offering the perfected God and Adam, the two of them, can she trade them for the first time. That is how tremendous first love is. (275-83, 1995.11.3)

God cannot interfere with the results of the Fall, and Satan, after making things this way, says, "Hey, I was wrong, but I can't even keep up with this!" Thus, there is no one who likes this. There are more and more people committing suicide. Purity, the most precious thing that has to be protected, which women maintained as the base of this valuable love, has been trampled on from all sides. Women's parents should have provided an environment to protect them, but their grandfathers, fathers, and brothers violated them. Hence, even in a dream, they don't want to see any men. Even if

they have to die, they hate men. (283-32, 1997.4.8)

You must conquer the body and its five senses! Will you follow physical or spiritual love? Even if you had to die ten million times, you must preserve your chastity. Women who are about to be married and all children must preserve their purity. Before marriage, you preserve purity and after marrying a true man, you must maintain chastity. Did you women understand? (286-161, 1997.8.9)

As the seeds of youth problems were sown, and since the wrong alliance took place in the Garden of Eden, this therefore must be turned around for humankind to marry on heaven's side again, and the lineage must be changed; this logic should be affirmed theoretically. Thus, we assert the absoluteness and purity of youth. Absoluteness is absolute. For what? For the purpose of absolute, unique, unchanging, and eternal love. Due to false love, things turned out this way, so it must be turned around into true love. (288-48, 1997.10.31)

You must guard your sexual organs. We must launch a movement to guard the original organs. God created organs of pure love. You all must protect them. They are absolute organs. They are absolutely unidirectional. You must eternally follow the way of love connected to that absolute one direction. They are the organs God originally desired. People must know that they are the palaces of love, life, lineage, and conscience, where four palaces have gathered in one place. They are the most holy place. You must preserve their purity eternally. (288-67, 1997.10.31)

The question is: how do we bequeath a tradition of absolute purity? The people of Israel used to stone the offenders to death if this was defiled, but not today. It is more frightening than that. We cannot think even in our dreams of falling again before the heart of God who had to expel His only son and only daughter, Adam and Eve. Thus, the boundary must be declared. Those who are left behind on the day when that is declared are all the evil firstborn among all the firstborn left behind on Satan's side. (288-111, 1997.11.25)

Just as the Israelites had to follow Moses in the course to restore Canaan, now is the time for us to enter it and restore God's kingship. We must endure suffering greater than even that of the 430-year course in Egypt and the miserable 4,000-year history of God from Adam to Jesus, overcome everything and comfort Him. You do not go to heaven by apologizing or just because you've repented. The right of inheritance arises on the foundation of comforting God and the True Parents after surmounting that peak, repenting and pledging to bequeath an eternally pure lineage as the new lineage of their child. (288-114, 1997.11.25)

You must pledge true purity and chastity anew before God, looking back

and denying your past based on the fact that you were unable to lead a life of purity until now. You Unificationist women must maintain your purity before and chastity after marriage. For whose sake is that? It is not only for your own sakes. It is for your husbands and families, your nation and the world. If not, when you enter heaven, the eternal world, you will not be in the position to settle into heaven and God's love as an individual, family, people, nation or cosmos. You won't be able to do anything. (288-146, 1997.11.27)

The future world will be placed at the crossroads between heaven and hell, depending on whether the moral code of preserving the purity and protecting the value of the family will be established. Will the problems plaguing all of the nations of the world such as the degeneration of youth and constant crimes related to drugs, increasing family breakdown and divorce, the spread of AIDS and sex crimes, be solved by political power? Current academic education and religious teachings are unable to solve these problems. (288-139, 1997.11.26)

From now on when I conduct the Blessing, I will not bless those who flirted and violated chastity. Unless you are chaste men and women, I will not marry you. When the restored Adam and Eve settle in the Garden of Eden and stand in a public position in the world, will they gather together fallen sons and daughters and bless them? Such a thing is impossible. Thus, those who have flirted and had relations must know that whatever kind of man or woman they are, they will not be able to receive the Unification Church Blessing in the future. If that is the case, my intent is that there will only be the sons and daughters born from blessed marriages. Thus, I will marry only the children of Blessed Families. (233-351, 1992.8.2)

From here on, all women will maintain their chastity. A pure religion has to be one that absolutely rejects sexual deviation. Thus, it is said in Christianity, "All sins are sins outside the bones, but fornication is a sin inside the bones." Love in the satanic realm is sexually deviant. Maintaining chastity blocks all fornication. Numerous people opposed the love of the satanic world. To prevent everything from becoming part of that world, God established the way of bridal chastity by reforming the world through Judaism and Christianity. From here, if bride and the groom attain oneness, a way would open up for these two worlds. Thus, if a pure bride and a pure groom of the world of historical tradition come together, love each other and encircle the world, the entire satanic world will collapse. Hence, since the beginning of history, countless women have been sacrificed in order to open the gates to the realm of Christian culture. They have been caught and violated. They have undergone every possible humiliation at the hands of the powers that be. (238-276, 1992.11.22)

If Jesus had married and shared

his love with a woman who loved him more than he could ever love, would the devil be able to pull away the children they bore? God would protect them. Christians will say all kinds of things and raise a big fuss. What do you think would have happened if a pure Jesus, as a good man, welcomed a good woman and had a family that God could protect? If children of goodness had been born then, the world would already be unified within two millennia; it would have become one tribe. That wouldn't even have taken seven centuries. (245-45, 1993.2.28)

The more people pursue a pure sublime conscience and the sphere of activity for a lofty, vast and profound world of conscience, and desire such a foundation of love, the larger, higher and broader their sphere of activity in the spirit world will become. If you think only of yourself, your sphere of activity becomes more and more narrow. (275-70, 1995.11.3)

Before God, Blessed Couples should pledge the unity of their family and couple and eternal conjugal trust and purity, and promise that they will raise and nurture their children, teaching them a high level of morality and purity. These couples come from diverse linguistic, racial, national and religious backgrounds, yet they took part in this Blessing because of the faith that God's love and the start of world peace comes from perfectly God-centered families. I invite you all to be not just spectators in this historic ceremony, but that you come forward with the people around you who are related to you, and renew your marriage vows before God. (288-165, 1997.11.27)

2.3. True Parents and fundamental restoration

2.3.1. To solve the fundamental problem, the origin of the Fall must be understood

In order for us to solve and rectify the global and moral problems of humankind, there must be a principled view of the Fall. This is the final desperate phenomenon of the Last Days due to Satan betraying God and dictating the course of history. It is the strategy of Satan to ruin and destroy humankind. If all this is not resolved, the problems of history cannot be solved, and there would be no way to liquidate the debts of history. Therefore, we are advocating returning to Godism, the true love ideology, and God's Creation and ideal as an alternative proposal. This is not egocentric but altruistic. We must create the object partners of our love. Without such content, there is no way the problems of this world can be solved. (219-266, 1991.10.11)

The historical Fall originated from a wrongful marriage centered on a false parent. As Adam and Eve fell during their youth, the corruption of youth began in the Garden of Eden. They sowed the seeds of corruption of the youth. Owing to that, the whole ideal of God centering on Adam's family was

completely shattered. Seeds planted just like that will grow, and in the Last Days there comes a time in which their fruits will be borne. There is no one in the world capable of preventing the corruption of the youth. America itself cannot stop it, but instead has become the field of free sex, homosexuality, and lesbianism. It is a complete mess. Can all these things be stopped by American education and religion? Such things cannot be blocked by America's political and economic power, or by military power. They can only throw their hands in the air.

Then who is capable of solving these problems? Only God is. Since they were planted by false parents, the motive for committing sin was humanistic. Since the false parent, Adam, erred and messed everything up, and as he fell in ignorance, the restored Adam must understand the truth completely on earth. He can make Satan surrender by understanding the details of God's secrets, what the goal of His standard of perfection is, and what manner of wrongdoings the devil perpetrated. (302-222, 1999.6.14)

The cause of all difficult global problems lies with two people: man and woman. Their entanglement led to national, global, and cosmic problems. What was their problem? Love. They erred in the matter of love. Hence, the True Parents must come and undo the corruption of the youth and the failure of Adam's family which was smashed to smithereens in Eden due to the false parents.

The True Parents will bequeath the lineage of God's love, and all must become living beings centered on love, true olive trees and not wild ones. Those who become true olive trees will change their lineage. I am someone who has all the theoretical systems that can connect people to God's lineage. It is so if you go that path. That is a proven fact. (302-226, 1999.6.14)

So what is Rev. Moon doing at this time? He has been solving all the problems centering on the issue of youth, which all representative nations – the so-called developed nations, namely of course the United States, Russia and China – and even religions have given up on. The very person who has been conferred the privilege to do that is Rev. Moon. There is no such person other than him. (302-228, 1999.6.14)

It is said you will reap what you sow. Since Adam and Eve fell while they were in their youth in the Garden of Eden, families have been completely destroyed until there is not a single family in the world that God could claim as His own. These are the Last Days. That is indeed the reality today.

Do the American people have a view of the world? They have no worldview. Do they have a view of the nation? No. Not to mention a view of society, they do not have a view of the tribe, people or family. They deny their mothers and fathers. That is individualism – returning to the position of the archangel, the devil. Man denies woman and woman denies man. Since the Last Days have come, Satan must expose himself in the end.

Thus, Satan destroyed the family completely. There is no way for Satan or God to solve the problems of juvenile delinquency and family breakdown. If God could, He would have done so at the time of Adam's family in the Garden of Eden.

Can God, who was not able to interfere in the Garden of Eden, do anything about this perishing world? Who must bear the responsibility for this? As the false parents, who were made to fall in ignorance ruined things in this way, the True Parents must completely understand everything, God's secrets and Satan's secrets, and expose Satan's secrets before God, saying, "You thug, you turned out to be a murderer!" Wouldn't even a murderer in hiding slip away from the human world forever, when the proof of his crime is revealed, his crimes declared for what they are, and he is pronounced guilty? It is the same; the reality today is exactly the same as this situation. (302-224, 1999.6.14)

God who is full of anguish due to the Fall of our first ancestors must be consoled. We must start from the position where we can console God, who has a large nail of sorrow stuck in His heart due to the Fall of Adam and Eve. In order to do so, we must become filial children who can comfort the God of grief.

By fulfilling the ways of filial children representing their families, loyal citizens representing their nations, saints representing the world, and divine sons and daughters representing heaven and earth, we must console God. That is not all; we must, without a doubt, mobilize new youth, bless them anew and eliminate all elements which Adam defiled. (302-224, 1999.6.14)

The hope of humankind is to remove the mask of the Fall, which refers to the lineage that was changed. What is the fall of the lineage? That refers to man and woman engaging in an illicit sexual relationship. Centering on whom? Satan.

If we ask whether Adam and Eve gave birth to sons and daughters before or after the Fall, nobody would say they gave birth before the Fall. Who took responsibility for their marriage for the sake of those sons and daughters? God cannot take responsibility for people whom He drove out. There is no doubt the marriage was conducted by Satan the devil.

Thus, Satan occupied the place, where God would have entered Adam's mind and where Adam and Eve would have fulfilled their conjugality, and planted his lineage there. Didn't they conceal their sexual parts after the Fall? If they had eaten with their mouths, they would have concealed their mouths and hands, but they did not do so. Those sexual parts became the basis of lineal resentment. (302-220, 1999.6.14)

The two tablets inside the Ark of the Covenant refer to Adam and Eve – they symbolize them. The most holy place refers to the sexual parts, which are inviolable. Didn't those who tried to touch it perish? The most holy place is

that very place. Next came Aaron's staff with sprouts! What is the staff? It refers to eternal life. As new buds sprout from a dead staff, it means one will never die. Centering on what? Original love. You would die without love. Thus, new buds sprouted forth from Aaron's staff. Since there was such significance, it was laid and attended to in the sanctuary. The tabernacle symbolized God's body. The body is the sanctuary and the most holy place refers to the sexual organs. (325-62, 2000.6.29)

2.3.2. Why True Parents are needed

The people we need are the True Parents. What started from the false parents must be restarted by the True Parents. The false parents are the ones who inherited false love and false lineage starting from false love. This must be reversed. Then, how can we inherit true life and true lineage centered on the love of the True Parents? In other words, the issue is how to inherit the original seed again since we inherited the wrong seed of life.

With regard to this issue, it cannot be inherited without the True Parents. Therefore, the Messiah must come upon the earth, and his seed, the seed of new life of the True Parents, must be injected and engrafted. Through this, you can return to the original position of the true olive tree. It is simple. Therefore, God is our True Parent. So, think how close He is. The vertical Parent is God, and the True Parents fulfill ideal love as horizontal parents. (218-223, 1991.7.29)

Why are the True Parents needed? They are needed to liquidate the base of Satan's love, life, and lineage. How did man and woman fall into such a position? The fell through the sexual organ. Originally the sexual organ was the palace of love. Now what has happened to that palace of love? The human sexual organ is such a precious thing, being the palace of love, life, and lineage. Would this be filthy? It is sacred. It became filthy because of the Fall. From God's original viewpoint, it is not something filthy but sacred. It is most precious. Life, love, and lineage are connected here. Satan defiled something so sacred. (218-176, 1991.7.28)

Adam was originally a parent who could have become your ancestor, but failed to connect to God's love. As he could not connect to it, your parents cannot connect you to God's love. The True Parents are different in that they have brought the special right to connect you to God's love. Since you did not listen to your parents but listened to Rev. Moon of the Unification Church, is this social justice or evil? It is justice. The fundamental principles of the cosmos work that way. (118-147, 1982.5.23)

How did I become the True Parent? I became the True Parent by my being able to offer the requisite devotions that can bring down the walls created by the Fall of our first ancestors. Our Unificationist community includes everyone from Protestants to Catholics, Buddhists, Confucians and Muslims. Buddhism is also included here – do you know that or

not? You should be embarrassed if you didn't. If they enter here, the religions can unite. Regarding the issue of race, people of the five different skin colors can become one. (118-270, 1982.6.13)

The Messiah comes as a man who has perfected the original true parental love and is the embodiment of the original ideal. Whenever you say "I" you must think about this. Then are you not liberated? It is like that. If you are liberated from Satan, his realm of life and realm of lineage, then everything is done.

If so, what would you do after being liberated? We must attend God, instead of the devil, and form His cultural realm and the True Parents' realm of life. As we stand in the position of the perfected Adam, we must fulfill the purpose of his birth. Therefore, the True Parents' love dwells within us, and God's love dwells in us. That love is the root of the harmony which can perfect us. In other words, we have His love, life and lineage; they are the union of three. (202-283, 1990.5.25)

The ideal history and new culture, love, life, family, nation, world and cosmos, together with God's love, will begin based on the True Parents. You must understand that the term "True Parents" is nothing like what you have known until now. In order to establish a relationship with the ages to come, nations, individuals, and families perished. Therefore this position is a place where the blood of innumerable billions of sacrificed offerings is crying out to God.

The Bible states that the blood of Abel shed by Cain cried out from the ground to God. There is no other position that can resolve all history; this is the only one. The throng that has gathered to inherit such a mission and to straighten this amazing way of indemnity is none other than all of you. If you come to understand this truly, you would not be able to complain about your life or your situation in your dreams, even if you were to die a thousand times. (67-226, 1973.6.27)

The original ideal of God's creation was to establish His kingdom in heaven and on earth through the name of the True Parents. Without that name, God's Kingdom will not appear. If you were to ask today's Christians, "Why wasn't Jesus able to enter heaven instead of staying in paradise, despite his being God's beloved begotten son?" they would not be able to give you an answer.

God's Kingdom in heaven and on earth can only be established through the foundation of the perfection of the True Parents and of love. The mission to unify the kingdom after going to the spirit world belongs to the True Parents, and this is no one else's mission. Jesus could not become a true parent, which is why he is in paradise. (131-182, 1984.5.1)

Hitherto in the fallen world, there has been no trace of anything or anyone having received love from the True Parents. Thus, even if such a foundation appeared in the spirit world, it would not be needed. There is a precise vertical and

horizontal principled standard and formula. You must understand that there is such a formula. You cannot do as you please. (131-183, 1984.5.1)

Everything begins from the True Parents. The beginning of everything is not you, but them. It is the same with our lives, actions and connecting together as a family of love. The True Parents are the beginning. These are not my words but these are God's principle and idea of our first ancestors. How can you make your families like that of the True Parents? This is what you must think about. (277-250, 1996.4.18)

How much did I invest for the sake of the world? How many tears and how much sweat and blood did I shed, and how many sighs did I heave? I did not do that for the sake of feeding myself or making myself successful. It was in order to liberate this earthly world, the spirit world, and God. There is no such person in history other than Rev. Moon. There is none other than the True Parents. It has such a historical background. It is not just a concept. In forming a substantial realm in this world as I built the foundation of this ideal, I have reached a level where all nations of the world can solemnly bow their heads before me. (210-363, 1990.12.27)

2.3.3. Lineage is restored through the Blessing

All fundamental issues cannot be resolved other than by the contents of the secrets of heaven that Rev. Moon has revealed. I was introduced as the True Parent, but what on earth are true parents? Where are the True Parents? They are in heaven. God is the True Parent. Today, humankind, and all the religions of the fallen world call God, "Father". The Lord who created heaven and earth is indeed the Father. Whose father? He is our Father, but through what paternal content did we develop a parent-child relationship? It is God's love. Then, centered on God, the lives of Adam and Eve untouched by the Fall will be connected in love.

Centered on God's original love that has nothing to do with the Fall, the unfallen ancestors, Adam and Eve, who are our original ancestors, should have attained oneness, burning with God's love. What unites man and woman is neither the man on his own nor the woman on her own; love is absolutely necessary for unity. If man and woman unite, everything is harmonized.

God is absolute, unique, eternal, and unchanging. The love of the absolute God is not divided in two. The love that man possesses and the love that woman possesses are not two but one. You should know that; yet you have lived to this day in ignorance of it. (2000.3.3)

What is the Fall? God desired through the ideal of creation to bequeath His direct lineage, starting from a family to form a tribe, people and a nation, to create a world of peace, namely God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. What is God's Kingdom on earth and in heav-

en? There must be a house of love where God can dwell: within my body, in the family, nation, world, and in the infinite spirit world where nothing is impossible. The individual is a house which God can enter and inhabit, centered on true love. The family is formed by a couple in which man and woman are different and opposite poles. In the Garden of Eden, the family united by love was the place for God to come to dwell in. The mother and father were prepared to bear fruit – God's grandchildren – as the seed connected to His lineage for all generations.

What is the Fall? If God is the first generation, Adam is the second. The Fall refers to being unable to have a grandchild of the lineage in the third generation. Not being able to have grandchildren is the Fall. Did Adam and Eve give birth to sons and daughters after or before the Fall? They had sons and daughters after the Fall. So who married them? Adam and Eve had nothing to do with God and were driven away. They then married and gave birth to children as Satan's offspring. Today, the six billion people on earth are the sons and daughters who have inherited the lineage of the fallen Adam and Eve – who were expelled, hid themselves and married wrongfully – and are thus headed for hell. They have nothing to do with God. (2000.3.3)

You must understand the roots. Then which way does not lead to ruin? The lineage of true love must be connected to today's six billion people and to the world of the future, transcending all generations. It must become an unchanging lineage and a connected body of kinship in which all branches of a large tree stretching in every direction form the central root to the trunk and buds, and feel like one body. If what is thus connected is a nation, it becomes a national heaven; if it is the world, it becomes a global heaven and if it is heaven and earth, it will be the cosmic heaven.

All these were lost because Adam and Eve were not able to become true parents. Thus, the fallen parents who were unable to become true parents are false parents based upon false love, creating false families, false tribes, false nations, and a false world. Thus, they are doomed to perish. The world does not know what to do. God's providence of salvation is for humankind to return to its original state, and therefore may be termed "restoration". Humankind became sick and thus must go back to the original world through being cured. How can we restore our lineal relationship with God? Hence, He cannot abandon these people who are doomed to perish. (2000.3.3)

What are true parents? Centered on the realms of God's love, life, lineage, and conscience, everything is harmonized in unity. This is such a position in which true parents can settle. If a sprout grows from there and the branches reach out to the world, it will all be connected to the nation, world, and cosmos. That position does not shift.

Since God is absolute, unique, unchanging, and eternal, the standard

to settle must also be absolute, unique, unchanging, and eternal. Through what will this happen? It will not be through political power, some expedience, or force. If one invests true love, living for the sake of others, then it becomes more valuable.

When you invest yourselves in others with a heart of true love, that investment is never lost, but will actually yield an output greater than your input. Why? The universe is like that. Such phenomena attract the attention of the universe like a magnet. True love also has that effect. As for a magnet, if there is a metallic object close by, doesn't its magnetic force depend on its iron content? It is the same: true love attracts the universe. (317-269, 2000.2.28)

Since lineal identity is necessary, humankind cannot help but follow God's realm of heart. That is not possible if the root and the trunk are different. However, the buds must come from the same root and trunk. The incredible matter of the absolute lineal conversion takes place there. That cannot be accomplished through one's own efforts alone – there first must be True Parents. (172-55, 1988.1.7)

Despite your diverse lineages and backgrounds, in order for you to resemble the True Parents, the great feat of engrafting must take place. You must all writhe and squirm to be engrafted. You yourselves must pay off your remaining debts of indemnity. What originated from the parental position must be indemnified from there, which is why one must be engrafted to the True Parents. Since Adam was not able to become the true parent and instead became a false parent, God has been seeking to establish true parents until now. The bride and groom mentioned along with the marriage supper of the lamb at the Second Advent are those parents. (24-203, 1969.8.10)

You must all become completely different after the ceremony of the conversion of lineage. If the True Parents hadn't come, would this have been possible? After the creation of the universe, how difficult was this path? Even just the appearance of the True Parents is a thing to be grateful for; yet receiving the Blessing from them is even more amazing. This tradition is one of lineage, which has planted true love, true life, and true lineage. You must always be mindful of this. (216-36, 1991.3.3)

Who is to convert the lineage? This is not something anyone can do simply, without knowing what needs changing. You must understand that I went the tearful way of the cross in order to do this. Since there was such a standard, you were able to inherit a new tradition called the Blessing through no merit of your own. In establishing a realm of victory of the conversion, there was God's effort of thousands of years and my life of substantial suffering. The position based on such a foundation is the very place you are now standing in. Blessing means cutting off the evil lineage

and being engrafted onto the new one; thereby, the lineage is changed. (35 -178, 1970.10.13)

What is the significance of a Blessed Family? Satan cannot dominate it. When you absolutely believe in the True Parents and that you belong to them, whatever your nationality, then Satan cannot invade your family. Why is that? It is because you are connected to the True Parents' realm of heart, in which the lineage has been changed. (149-53, 1986.11.2)

You all originated from the wrong starting point, which is why you must return there. You must go back, but where? To the original point. Since you originated from false parents, you must return and start all over again with the True Parents. How serious this is! You must inherit God's love, life, and lineage anew. Thus, at the time of your Blessing, didn't you undergo the ceremony of the conversion of lineage? You must believe in it more than you believe in your life. Do not regard it as an ordinary ritual just because it is one of the ceremonies of the Unification Church. This is the same as an injection that brings the dead back to life. It is an antidote shot! (216-107, 1991.3.9)

2.3.4. Final goal: realizing the ideal of the true family

True love is most sacred and precious to people. It does not arise if you are by yourself or self-centered. True love is manifested when you seek to attain oneness with others by living for them through giving endlessly without remembering what you have given. By such means, true love can embrace everything. It cannot be the possession of just one individual. After it is inherited, it belongs to the individual as well as to all people and the universe.

God desires to fulfill true love together with humankind. He wants to share the delights of true love and happiness eternally with his children, humankind – the highest and most precious creation of all in the world of heart. (294-63, 1998.6.11)

If true love were perfected in the human world, what problems could there be politically, economically, culturally, and environmentally? In a world of true love, there is no problem that cannot be solved. It is a world filled with delight and the ideal, in which freedom, peace, and happiness spread infinitely and eternally. The difficult issues which humankind is facing today can only be solved fundamentally through true love. (294-65, 1998.6.11)

The true family of true love is the origin of God's purpose of creation and the desire of humankind at the same time. Only through a true character of true love which can be created in such a true family can the true society, nation, and world be perfected and all the creative ideals of the environment realized. I have always been emphasizing the true family heaven; if that is achieved, then God's Kingdom on earth would be accomplished. A character of true love

which has been perfected in a true family heaven will be expanded to the society, nation, and world; it will not compromise with injustice, but will be embodied by a true person who will attain harmony and unity through a true family always living for the sake of others. (294-65, 1998.6.11)

God's ideal intended through the ancestors of humankind was to create an ideal family by bringing together a man and a woman. Thus, the center of an ideal family is neither of them. A family is a unit consisting of parents and children formed through the union of husband and wife, but the center of that unit is none other than God's love. We can conclude that God's will was to perfect a family centered on His love. (Blessing - 298)

The family is the starting point from which God's ideal can be realized and for manifesting human happiness. It is a position where all human work ends and where God perfects everything. Why is the family good? That is because it can become a base of free activity centering on true parental love. (Blessed Family - 930)

In a family, there must always be parents, spouses and children; only thus can it become the base of happiness. There is no doubt that God's purpose in seeking humankind must also be for the sake of His own happiness. That being so, in order for God to establish the base of His happiness, there can be no such ideal in a position separate from humankind. That point of oneness can only be obtained through relating with human beings. Just as we are happy in a situation where all our emotional needs are fulfilled within our families, God would also be happy in such a situation. (32-197, 1970.7.15)

True love is vertical in a parent-child relationship, true conjugal love is lateral, true fraternal love is in a position of front and rear, and God wished for the ideal of true love to be spherical. In short, vertically we have upper and lower, laterally left and right, and for front and rear there are anterior and posterior, and unity can be accomplished by connecting all these at the central point of that sphere. When the four realms of filial, fraternal, conjugal, and parental heart attain perfect oneness, that is, when people marry and unite in their first love centered on God, that position becomes the center and the point bearing the fruit of all perfection.

As such, marriage consolidates the virtues of heaven, earth, and humanity, and perfects vertical and horizontal unity in all directions. It is where the ideals of true children, siblings, spouses, parents, and true love are perfected. (259-42, 1994.3.27)

Where is the center of the universe? It is in the family. Where is the base in which true love can settle? It is the family that you are living in. Therefore, the original family holds sway over universal love, experiencing the aspects of universal protection and expanding the realm of universal love; it must transcend itself

to go the way of patriots loving their nation and then proceed to transcend the race and the nation by loving the world. Those who truly love their families are called devoted sons and daughters, and if those who love their nation devotedly are called patriots, then what are people who love humanity sacrificially called? They can only be called saints. (Blessed Family - 924)

Had Adam and Eve not fallen, they would have established an ideal family and tribe, and their descendants would have formed a race and nation within the realm of God's love, and these would have expanded and accomplished an ideal world in which Adam's ideals would also be realized. Just as the root, trunk, and leaves of a tree are connected as one living body, human beings centering on love, attending God as their Father above, and attending each other as siblings below, making them into one living body, turn themselves into beings of love and establish an eternal and ideal God-centered world. This was indeed the worldview of God's will.

People living in such a world do not require salvation or the Messiah because they are God's good sons and daughters. (110-213, 1980.11.18)

BOOK TWELVE

THE PACIFIC RIM
PROVIDENCE



Contents

Chapter 1. The Twenty-first Century Is the Oceanic Era

Section 1. The Sea Is a Valuable Storeroom for the Future of Humankind .. 1817
1.1. The sea is the solution to the problem of hunger 1817
1.2. Unlimited resources from developing the ocean bed 1822
1.3. The future will be the water age 1824
1.4. The ocean will become the only energy source 1828
1.5. Oceanic nations will take the lead 1829
Section 2. The Ocean Providence Carried Out by True Parents 1831
2.1. The ocean providence centering on North America 1831
2.1.1. The marine products industry in America 1831
2.1.2. Seilo distribution organization 1837
2.1.3. Alaska marine products industries 1838
2.1.4. The fish-farming industry 1846
2.1.5. Ocean Church and sea training 1849
2.2. The ocean providence centering on South America 1852
2.2.1. The construction of Jardim, the New Eden 1852
2. 2. 2. The Pantanal Holy Ground 1858
2. 2. 3. Animal museum 1865
2.3. Ocean providence centering on Korea 1867
2.3.1. Boat of Heavenly Victory 1867
2.3.3. Shipyards 1868
2.3.4. Developing Jejudo to become an international fishing location 1871
2.3. We can learn a great deal from the ocean 1876
2.3.1. Like the ocean, we should live while embracing the universe 1876
2.3.2. Life in the ocean is amazing and mystifying 1878
2.3.3. The great power of nature lies in the ocean 1882

Chapter 2. The Ocean Leisure Industry and Hobby Industry

Section 1. The Development of the Ocean Leisure Industry 1887
1.1. Fishing and hunting are aspects of the leisure industry 1887
1.2. One Hope: a ship that cannot sink 1889
1.3. The future leisure industry that will be spotlighted is fishing 1891
1.3.1. The joy and zest of sea-fishing 1891
1.3.2. The essential points for sea-fishing 1895
1.3.3. You will not die of hunger if you learn to fish 1900
1.3.4. Sea fishing is a mind game 1902
Section 2. People and the Hobby Life 1908
2.1. The future world is the age of hobby life 1908
2.2. The hobby industry is the shortcut leading to the world of peace 1909
2.3. We must prepare for the age of the hobby industry 1911

Chapter 3. The Pacific Rim Era and the Inauguration of the Island Nations Federation

Section 1. Now is the Pacific Rim era 1915
1.1. Why is the Pacific era coming? 1915
1.2. The central nations in the Pacific era are Korea and Japan 1923
Section 2. Inauguration of the Federation of Island Nations 1928
2.1. The background of the inauguration of the Federation of Island Nations 1928
2.2. Outline of the inaugural rally 1930
2.3. True Parents' keynote address at the inaugural rally 1931
Section 3. The Ocean Providence Centering on Hawaii 1934
3.1. Japan and Hawaii 1934
3.2. The reason Hawaii is the center of the ocean providence 1935

Chapter 4. Ocean Civilizations Seen from the Viewpoint of God's Providence

Section 1. The History of Human Civilization and Trends in its Development 1938
1.1. The currents of world history centering on civilizations 1938
1.2. The reason Israel, Rome, and Britain failed 1940
1.3. America is the Rome of the twentieth century 1945
Section 2. The Significance of Island Civilization 1948
2.1. Britain, the greatest oceanic island nation 1948
2.2. The difference between British civilization and Japanese civilization ... 1950
Section 3. Japan's Mission as the Eve Nation 1953
3.1. Japan is the Eve nation 1953
3.2. The reason for choosing Japan as the Eve nation 1956
3.3. Japan's mission as the mother nation 1961

Chapter 5. All Civilizations Will Come to Fruition on the Peninsula

Section 1. The Peninsular Civilization and Korea 1969
1.1. The trend of world civilization 1969
1.2. The role of the peninsular civilization from the Principle perspective .. 1971
Section 2. The Providential Mission of the Korean Peninsula 1976
2.1. The Korean peninsula is an encapsulation of the world 1976
2.2. A unified cultural sphere centering on the Korean peninsula 1977
2.3. The reunification of the Korean peninsula is the model for world unification 1983
2.4. Providential developments for the restoration of the Adam nation 1986
2.4.1 The providence centered on Japan, the USA, and Germany 1986
2.4.2. The providence of restoration through indemnity at the time of the Second World War 1988
2.4.3. The providences for the Adam, the Eve, and Archangel nations ... 1992
2.5. We should seek the homeland 1993
2.5.1. The liberation of the homeland is the hope of all humankind 1993
2.5.2. Let us establish the cornerstone for a new homeland 1997

CHAPTER ONE

The Twenty-first Century Is the Oceanic Era

Section 1. The Sea Is a Valuable Storeroom for the Future of Humankind

1.1. The sea is the solution to the problem of hunger

In the future, we will have to prepare a world-wide foundation. This is what I am thinking about: more than two thirds of the Earth's surface, more than 70 percent is ocean. What would we do if our land-based food resources diminish? We will have to turn to the oceans and catch our food there. We really will have no choice but to come up with a solution for human survival depending on the sea. For this reason, the logical conclusion is that, from this time forth, those nations with large ocean areas will have an advantage, particularly in terms of marine products-related industries, and nations with less ocean area will be at a disadvantage. (88-179, 1976.8.10)

In the future world, it will be necessary to industrially develop the resources of the world's oceans. I have already created a variety of enterprises that embrace all aspects of the fishing industry ranging from the manufacture of large scale fishing boats to the construction of fish hatcheries and farms. In the future, the sea will supply food to many of the world's people. Naturally, the development and cultivation of the sea will truly become a preferred method for bringing an end to the starvation that plagues humankind. (193-324, 1989.10)

The resources for humanity's future are buried in the sea. The resources found on the land's surface are reaching their limits and cannot last for long. They will be exhausted in a few short years. The challenge becomes how to recover the resources hidden away in the oceans. In the future, humanity must research the development of the tundra plains. It is this future world where my interest currently lies. The food resources on land will not last for more than fifty years. In a few decades, this reality will rise up and hit us in the face. We must prepare for that time. This is the reason I place such an emphasis on our projects in Alaska. (236-22, 1992.11.2)

Americans do not really recognize the abundance sea-based food resources. They really have little idea of the quantity of fresh fish jumping and splashing about. Most people like eating beef, but cattle's natural aversion to death causes

their blood to coagulate and become all knotted up when slaughtered. Thus, people are eating beef embedded with many toxins and negative elements. (261-313, 1994.7.24)

The raw materials that we can get from dry land are limited but those that come from the sea are unlimited. One female fish can lay several million eggs. It is in this sense that the raw materials of the sea are unlimited. If these eggs are hatched artificially, it is possible to hatch up to 100 percent of the eggs. By correctly adjusting the feeding process and the input of other raw materials it is possible to propagate unlimited raw resources from the sea. That's only possible with the ocean, and that is why I am thinking about marine commerce. (207-218, 1990.11.11)

Every year, 20 million people die of starvation. That is 60,000 people a day. Is the President of the United States going to take responsibility for that? Will Gorbachev of the Soviet Union take responsibility? Who will take responsibility for this? Who in the world is going to do that? The True Parents and the siblings of the True Parents have to take responsibility for it. For this reason, all our work with the sea is something I have been planning and preparing for, over the last twenty years. (217-314, 1991.6.12)

The primary resources in the sea are unlimited. One fish lays millions of individual eggs. Normally these eggs are eaten up by other fish and creatures in the sea. If they were protected under human control, the supply of these resources would be unlimited and always available. Also, it is now possible to connect even the mountains with the sea by piping systems, and there, above our cities, make high-elevation tanks where unlimited numbers of fish can be raised. The way I see it, this is the only viable way that humankind will be able to solve the food supply problem. That is why I have invested two billion dollars over the last 20 years to develop this area. (228-218, 1992.4.3)

That is also the reason why I have been working in the field of ocean industries. The sea has unlimited resources. If little baby fish remain in the open sea, then most will be eaten by larger fish. But if we cultivate fish, it is possible to have up to 90 percent survive. This naturally becomes an unlimited resource. The only means to solve the future food supply problem will be through the cultivation of fish. (229-156, 1992.4.11)

Salmon live in the ocean but they swim up to freshwater to breed, don't they? What we need to do is to make fish farms and raise the freshwater fish in saltwater and saltwater fish in freshwater. Do you know why? We cannot catch and eliminate parasites one by one. So, to kill them off, we move those fish that were living in the seawater to freshwater. By the end of a month the parasites will all be dead. This is simple to do. If we exchange them every two weeks, we can do it as much as we like. It is possible

to control this kind of process. We just do it by swapping the freshwater fish and the saltwater fish. That is the reason you cannot compare the output you get from a ranch or farm that uses land for production. In other words, in the future, we will have access to inexhaustible, unlimited resources. (226-342, 1992.2.9)

By using fish as the basic food source, we can have access to unlimited resources and produce as much food as we like. In the future, fish cultivation will not take place only in the sea; seawater will be pumped up to land areas using pipes, just as oil is pumped hundreds of miles in Alaska. Even with distances of hundreds of kilometers it is possible to pump seawater up through pipes, make saltwater ponds, and raise large quantities of fish. Fish offspring are virtually unlimited. By raising great quantities of fish, we create a huge food supply. If we make a seawater reservoir for each village or community then everyone in that community can have enough food to eat. (294-175, 1998.6.14)

In the future, it will be possible to move water from the Pacific Ocean for hundreds of miles in order to use it for fish cultivation. We are at that point now. In this way we can also move living fish and we don't need many people to do it either. We can build a 'fish building' and devise a completely automated system where it is only necessary to push the right button to supply feed to the fish, to sort them out according to size, to have them loaded on trucks and delivered ready for eating. That time is coming. (217-314, 1991.6.12)

We can obtain tens times more benefit by cultivating sea industries than by raising cattle on ranches and farms hundreds of miles wide, and then selling the cattle, or by milking them and selling the milk. Because of the times we live in, we can move sea water anywhere. Humankind has now arrived at the time when it is possible to move sea water for hundreds or even thousands of miles simply by laying and using PVC pipes. Such a method is not expensive. It is quite possible to construct a cultivation building in the mountainous areas of continental regions, bring up water from the Pacific Ocean and raise any kind of fish there. You can construct a building ten or twenty stories high, raise the fish in it, and you wouldn't even need people to go up there to look after the fish. You could raise the fish just through a remote monitoring system. By simply pressing buttons you could automatically feed the fish, separate grown fish from the smaller ones and send them down pipes to another location. (206-348, 1990.10.14)

By understanding how the more expensive fish species, such as tuna, striped bass, salmon, croaker or flounder, behave in different seasons, they can be caught year round. By matching the fish catch with the seasons and the movement of fish throughout the oceans, fish can be caught in every month of the year and the fishing community can main-

tain a livelihood and solve the economic question as well.

This time we caught 54 croakers and flounder. I caught about half of them and the other ten people caught the rest. I am here is to teach you the secrets of how you can do that too. It is in this area that we find the global economic base that in the future will decide whether the ocean industries will thrive or whether they will collapse. That is how I see it. Are you going to treat this like some game or some kind of hobby? Since I have taught you how to fish, it all becomes much fun. You have to agree that I am right, don't you think? There is no other reasonable conclusion. (128-226, 1983.6.27)

If you compare the creatures living on land to creatures living in the ocean, which group is the largest in number? There are about 4 billion people living on this Earth but there are hundreds of billions of creatures living in the oceans. And what exactly are the oceans like? The waters from the Pacific Ocean in the east move to the Atlantic Ocean and the waters of the Atlantic move to the North Sea so that all the five great oceans are connected. The land on which we people live is also interconnected. However, where the land is connected two dimensionally, the oceans are interconnected three dimensionally. The waters of the Pacific move to the Atlantic and to the Mediterranean, in fact, to every place. We can conclude that by moving as one everything is interconnected as a whole, moving about with living energy. (128-246, 1983.8.28)

In the United States I am running world-level fishing enterprises. Our fishing boat factory is one of the most famous in the United States. From this point on, the time when humanity relies on the land-based resources will pass. A new era is coming when taking a leading position in the world will require having a leading position in the management of the world's oceanic resources, through possession of the technology required to do so. The sea is a fundamental source of limitless raw materials. In the future, the era of just catching fish for food will also pass. We have to develop ocean agriculture and ocean farming. (126-201, 1983.4.19)

I am more than seventy years old but I am still coming to Alaska and doing research on king salmon. King salmon are a species of the salmon family and there are five different kinds. This king salmon is the best kind of fish. However, they die right away once they lay their eggs. Of course, God would have designed things this way for the sake of their descendants but we are now at a time when we can artificially have fish produce the eggs and not die. If things change so that all salmon can come upstream every year to lay their eggs without dying, then salmon will become the number one food source for humankind. Salmon are a convenient food source. There is nothing like it. Even tuna sushi cannot be compared to salmon. King salmon tastes that good. (233-50, 1992.7.20)

Currently, I am focusing my attention on salmon and thinking about how to deal with humanity's future food problem. Because tuna are swim so fish, once you raise a large number of them and release them into the ocean, after two months they become impossible to catch again. The average cruising speed for tuna is 35 kilometers per hour but when they swim fast they can race up to 100 kilometers per hour. They are the fastest fish in the sea. They are just so amazing, so beautiful. When they swim, their dorsal fins lay right down and fold into their bodies. When their pectoral fins spread out they get stuck to the other tuna. They become just like a torpedo. Tuna travel throughout all the five oceans. When we master the unlimited spawning of these fish and release them into the seas then we will solve the problem of food. We will also solve the problem of pollution. This is why I am developing this area. (126-201, 1983.4.19)

You know that one third of the Earth is land and two thirds of the Earth is sea, don't you? Human beings can eat just about everything that lives in the ocean. We can eat most all the different kinds of seaweed that grow in the ocean. By contrast, we cannot eat all the grasses or trees that live on land. And the ocean contains almost everything that the land has. There are sea cows, seahorses, sea lions and sea tigers, and even sea snakes. And what about all the different kinds of fish? Generally speaking, Caucasians like to eat meat from land animals but they shy away from fish because they do not like the smell. But recently, Americans are starting to say, "Hey, fish is really good! It's better than beef or pork; it has all the right proteins." They are attracted to natural foods now and so they want to eat fish in order to live for a long time. This just goes to show how rich the ocean is; there is great wealth within the oceans. You women could even catch a single tuna and live on it for more than a year! (108-214, 1980.10.5)

A family can easily be supported through fish farming. A mere 200 *pyung* fish farm could feed an entire family. By farming a large number of fish a family can create a good food supply. Also, fish are very nutritious. Fish protein is superior in many ways. With fish then, it is possible to solve the global food problem. Fish that are swimming and splashing about in the ocean become powder in less than ten minutes once they enter our factories. Temperature differentials between the ocean and the fish holds on boats promote decay within ten minutes due to bacteria. That is why we need technology that can allow processing within minutes. The fish powder we produce is very high quality protein. It is from 86 to 94 percent protein. It is the finest quality. By reducing the percentage of powder used, unlimited quantities of fish and animal feed can be produced and used for farming more fish in order to produce more food. (294-175, 1998.6.14)

The sea is a world treasure containing

two thirds of the world market of raw materials. Don't you think so? Are there diamond mines in the ocean? There are twice as many diamonds under the ocean as there are on land. From the point of view of my work of carrying out God's restoration providence based on His will I estimate there are twice as many diamonds in the ocean. Furthermore, in the sea we also find seaweed and fish and this can all be used as food. The ocean area covered by seaweed is about twice as vast as the land mass. And the supply of fish is almost limitless. If I think about these kinds of things then does it surprise you that I am interested in fish? Anyone who thinks about these things is going to be much more interested in the ocean than the land. So, we need to catch fish and sell them and transport the natural resources that we find in the ocean. That is why we are seeking a leading position in each sector of the transportation industry, on the land, in the ocean, and in the air. (89-28, 1976.10.3)

From this time on the era when land resources are most important will start to fade. A new era is starting; one in which the world will be led by those who take care of ocean resources on the global level, by those who have that technology, by those who have leading positions in the oceanic world. That is what the ocean is: the root source of unlimited resources. Because of this, the era of catching fish simply to eat them will also pass away. We will need to expand ocean agriculture, ocean farming, and ocean development. (126-201, 1983.4.19)

1.2. Unlimited resources from developing the ocean bed

You need to understand that the ocean is a treasure chest of amazing and unlimited resources. (128-254, 1983.8.28)

One cannot help liking the ocean. We need to pioneer it. We cannot afford to ignore the ocean: the area it covers is more than three times the size of the land. Who do you think is going to develop the oceanic resources that can be found at the bottom of the ocean? We can find oil – black gold – on land, but the ocean is three times larger, so we can expect to find perhaps three times more oil from the sea.

We need to start this development now. That is why I am telling Unification Church members to move into coastal areas, however you can, even if you have to sell your house to do it. Some coastal areas can be inexpensive. There are many islands where you can become the sole owner. If you establish a base for ocean industry there, hundreds of boats can be attracted. If a national inspection station can be built there, then you can receive taxes on the fish that come in, and build up a way of life to maintain your family. (294-172, 1998.6.14)

Most of the treasures on planet Earth can be found at the bottom of the ocean. I am very interested in this part of the world. I do not want others to touch that place. All the treasures at the bottom of the sea can be dug up. The quantity is huge. We have developed technologies

that permit tunneling, even tens of kilometers under the ocean floor, from an island in whatever direction we wish. Who will be the master of the ocean? (263-18, 1994.8.16)

"We need to create mines under the sea." That is what I have been thinking. If you cannot do it, then I will stand at forefront and do it myself. I will take you there and we can dig the mines together. (119-256, 1982.9.13)

If you stand by the seaside, the ocean looks very simple, but in reality, its contents are extremely complex. Moreover, in terms of resources, the ocean is far more abundant than the land. In fact, the ocean is a place of unlimited treasures. All the precious things that people like can be found locked away in the ocean. So what do you think is necessary to become the master of the ocean? Think about how America was developed, and how many people undertook all kinds of adventures to find and mine precious minerals in the American west. At that time, adventurers and fearless, courageous men were given special rights of ownership. In the same way, unless you challenge the limits many times in your adventures, you cannot become the owner, the master of treasure. Until now, people have fought to gain possession over the routes that ships travel across the oceans, but they have not fought to gain ownership over the things that exist under the sea. (128-246, 1983.8.28)

Who will be the owner of the oceans in the future? If a great cataclysm were to occur, land can rise up out of the middle of the ocean, while land that is currently dry can sink into the sea. If a land-mass greater than that of the United States appeared in the middle of the Pacific Ocean, who would be its owner? No one can say this kind of thing is not possible. Nobody knows when such a thing could happen. There are also volcanoes at the bottom of the sea. If there were someone who could say, "Everything outside two hundred nautical miles from any coast belongs to me," then there is no problem, but no such person exists. Nevertheless, the time will definitely come. The day will come when people will fight over the ocean. At that time, the people who want to be the owners of the ocean will need to have a dauntless pioneer spirit. There is no other way to become the owners of the sea. (128-246, 1983.8.28)

Because the earth is crowded with people, they will soon begin building more ships and venturing out to sea. In the not-too-distant future, the world will become a place where people will live on and under the ocean's surface. So what do we need to do at sea? Unification Church men should live at every ocean port and coastal base in the world. If we can become a presence in these areas we will be in a position to influence and guide all the cultures of the world. Our men should all gather in coastal areas. We should live on every coastline of the world, and thus become a force there. (116-326, 1982.1.2)

The future leaders of the world must understand how to keep and preserve the oceans. The time is coming when humankind will invest and devote all its power, cultural identity, traditions, and national resources into developing the riches and treasures that lie at the bottom of the sea. However, the key point is who will be in a commanding position in the ocean areas to pursue that development. When I am faced with this problem, I ask myself, as the founder of the Unification Church and True Parent responsible for human history, what base of operations am I going to leave for the future of the Unification Church? That base will not be in urban areas, but at the coast. I am doing things in coastal areas that no one else has even thought of doing. The United States has washed its hands of the marine industries, but I am continuing to develop them. Since I know exactly where the world is going, and how things will turn out, I am investing huge amounts of money, even though it is difficult, and even if most of it is lost in the wind. Even if I cannot make a huge highway along the direction of history, from beginning to end, at the very least I can cut out a small path for others to follow. That is the reason I am alone on the ocean, training. (220-11, 1991.10.13)

After you learn one skill, then learn another, and then a third, fourth, fifth, and sixth. You always have to think and determine to learn more. That is the basic formula. One area or field of work is organized centering on one specific kind of formula, therefore, someone who knows a great many formulas will win the battle. When I go out fishing on the ocean, I do it better than other people, as I know where the fish are. I have a lot of experience in this area. We lose out to those who have experience and done something before.

I have no concerns wherever I travel. I can go anywhere by myself, without any worries. If the fishing is no good, I can make it good. But to have that kind of confidence, you have to have a lot of experience. In the future, when interest begins to focus on the ocean, those who don't have any interest in the ocean will fall behind those who do and lose out completely. (146-251, 1986.7.1)

1.3. The future will be the water age

I am preparing for the future world. I am not doing this just because I love the ocean. It is difficult being at sea. In the beginning, when I came back after a week, my entire body was in pain. Still I thought, "There is so much to do. I should go on without complaining about my age. I should be like a colt going over the Himalayas." How could I rest?

Do you know why I am so interested in the ocean? It is because the ocean is the key to opening the path of peace for humanity in the future. It is also the key to prosperity. Doing what? How can the ocean provide prosperity? Is having a good meal or having three meals a day living in prosperity? What does it mean to live in prosperity? It is to eat healthy

food, lead a healthy life, and live with good health throughout one's lifetime. It is to fulfill one's desires with the world as one's stage. Have I not laid all the foundations for that to happen? (189-295, 1989.6.17)

The question is who will take the lead in the oceanic world in the future. Now is the space age, the age of air. It is the same with the ocean. Those adventurous people who occupy the sea and take chances will enter the space age and a great migration will transpire. Now we have entered such an age, and will soon be able live for a month on oxygen provided by a special suit.

When that happens, will you cook your meals? To have a convenient life, you should prepare some delicious fish and then carry enough with you to last half a year. Would you also bring water or hot pepper paste, or a kimchi jar? Such an age will come in the future. (189-291, 1989.6.17)

Everything will be done by machines. There will be nothing for people to do. With the press of a button, it will be easy to cross the ocean alone to some destination. It will be just like an airplane. All you will have to do is turn on the computer, then it will follow the course setting already mapped. You can take a nap, go to sleep at night, or even make a fuss of your wife. The ship will sail toward the destination with more accuracy than when controlled by a person. So no one is needed to maneuver the ship, as the electronic devices will do it all for you perfectly. Instead, you can gaze at the bottom of the wonderful ocean saying, "Wow, look at all the fish! That's a shark. A shark just passed by!" and continue cruising, while closely observing everything large and small in greater detail than in a photograph. (192-150, 1989.7.3)

How do you feel in your heart? Don't you want to go to the bottom of the ocean, or up a high mountain, or travel freely throughout the universe? There are no boundaries. I am sure there is not one Unification Church member who does not believe in the existence of the spirit world. Do you believe it or know it? You know and experience it. That is why you cannot deny it. (225-138, 1992.1.12)

In the future, we will be able to live in the ocean. That is why I have initiated research on a five-person submarine. Wouldn't that be convenient? When the wind is not blowing, the calm sea waves let you become like a billionaire or master of the ocean. You don't know how mysterious and good it feels.

Think what it would be like if a husband and wife could look over the great ocean when the winds are calm on the crystal clear surface of the sea, dreaming about their love nest while talking about their future together. That would not be a problem. Even if a storm should come, they can submerge thirty meters below to safety. A time will come when we will be able to live freely under the water. That is why you do not have to worry that the Republic of Korea is small. (233-52, 1992.7.20)

Human beings are free to go anywhere. If they want to go to the ocean or mountains, they can freely do so without any national boundaries. They can live in the water as well. The age will come when we can build a submarine and live freely under water based on scientific advances. Otherwise, humanity will have no place to live. A submarine sinks by letting water into its tank until it becomes heavy enough to sink. With a button, you can control the inflow and outflow of water, and accordingly submerge or rise in the water. Therefore, we can live in the water. There is no better place in heaven and earth than what lies deeper than ten meters. If you go down thirty meters, would the wind matter? A truly serene world emerges, an underwater kingdom.

If you go up in the air, you can encounter trouble with lots of wind and constant change. The air currents and atmosphere can vary, and it can suddenly rain. That is why I believe that living in the ocean is an ideal way of life. (262-272, 1994.8.1)

Since everybody wants to live in a nice place, I have initiated research into submarines. Where is the most wonderful place? Apartments are the best places, aren't they? How will you live deep in the middle of the ocean? You will need a submarine at that time. With a press of a button you can descend to a refreshing place. There will be no need for an air conditioner. There will be all sorts of exotic fish dancing in all their colors, and beautiful scenes with a myriad of colors spread before your eyes. Nothing will be inaccessible. You can go anywhere day and night. Think how convenient such a life would be. Wouldn't you want to live in such a place before going to the spirit world? Wouldn't it be wonderful? I am doing this for all of you. I am not doing it just for myself. I am doing it for everyone. That is why we are carrying out this research. I want to make it possible to live in the ocean, without being a burden to anyone. (217-212, 1991.6.1)

If you enjoy yourself in the sea, you will find many things that are more interesting than the pleasures on land. That is why I am trying to make a submarine. Such an age will surely come in the future. Everybody will have a yacht and be able to sail across the seas. They will also take underwater trips. How amazing that will be! We will advance to an age when we can move about in the water and live with groups of fish, sharks, and whales. I believe that if I prepare for that, we will be able to lay claim to the economic rights of the world. (95-225, 1977.12.4)

Where will people go? They will go to the mountains in search of nature. Yet, it will become boring just living in a mountain area. That is why people will go to the sea. In the future, people should go into the sea and eventually live there. I have already asked various scholars to carry out research on submarines, and their work is almost done. They say that if a submarine goes down just thirty meters into the water, it will be

calm underneath, even if there is a storm above. No matter how hard the wind blows or how rough the waves are, there is no disturbance thirty meters below the water surface. There are no winds or waves thirty meters below. That is why if you press a button and go down thirty or a hundred meters, you will immediately be able to enjoy the scenery of the ocean using a periscope. (236-309, 1992.11.9)

What kind of age will the future be? Why would you want to spend hours on a plane? Instead, we will build a massive steel column in the middle of the Pacific Ocean and build a hotel. How diverse are the functions of a helicopter? You can fly anywhere you like with a press of a button. Yet, flying becomes boring, even after three hours. So, we will fly for one or two hours and then stay in a marine hotel. It will be fantastic! We will build a hotel on the Pacific Ocean. Then, it will take only a few hours to get there, and you can have lunch or go on a boat with your family, or even go fishing. What a wonderful life! (203-57, 1990.6.14)

Since the sea has a vast amount of resources, we should prepare for the future by building ships around the world, in France and Germany, and in dozens of other nations when the order is given. Then we should build excursion ships for diving underwater, which will be needed to develop a leading position and secure economic strength in a global age. Only by making preparations in several dozens of nations can we ensure a leading position in this field throughout the world. Can you imagine that! Do you think that is possible? (95-225, 1977.12.4)

I have also designed and built the best boats in the world. I will also build a submarine that can carry five people and go anywhere under the sea. In the future, we will have to live in the water. That is why I am doing this. I also want our Unification Church members to live prosperously. (210-39, 1990.11.30)

Where can we find clean water? The ocean water is completely polluted. However, the North Pole has snow eight hundred meters deep. That is fresh water that was accumulated thousands of years ago. It is not polluted, but clean, even after ten thousand years. It is the same with the South Pole. What if we were to build a cultural city like New York below the ice, do you think many people will come to see it or not? This could actually be done. Don't you feel excited just thinking about it? If you build a tunnel in the ice, it will not collapse, but last for ten thousand years. By spraying cold water on the inside surface once a year, the ice will stay frozen and eventually become solid. (302-99, 1999.6.1)

The time has come when we can farm under the ice. Do you know what this means? Flowers will bloom. If you go to Alaska, the tall mountains are covered with perpetual snow and grass grows in the central regions. Below there, flowers bloom and people go fishing. You have no idea what a beautiful and enchanted land it is. It is beautiful with clean water

and clear air, and is a perfect ecologically balanced environment. If you ever visit there on vacation and enjoy it, you will want to live there and never leave. The reason I am exerting myself and investing in all these projects is because such things are now possible. (220-13, 1991.10.13)

When hydrogen energy is developed in the future, electricity will no longer be a problem. A time will come when an underground city will be built in the cold area of Siberia and become a pleasant city to live in. (194-95, 1989.10.17)

If the tundra region of Siberia and the North American plains are to be developed in the future, Alaska should also be developed. The first person who occupies the ice-covered world of the North Pole will be able to influence the world. The one who occupies the sea will rule the world. That is why I have started so many marine industries and take a deep interest in the North Pole. (219-196, 1991.8.29)

The Himalayas are connected to the Pacific Ocean, along with countless other high and low mountain ranges. The Pacific Ocean also contains fearsome sharks, called sa-me in Japanese, and many other scary creatures. Thus, to swim across the Pacific Ocean is a dangerous undertaking, and a course no one in human history has ever attempted. You need to be aware of your surroundings to safely pass through such a difficult course. By doing so, you can reach the other side of the world. That is the course of human life. (205-86, 1990.7.7)

Something deep takes the central point. Something high also takes the center. Deep places are not visible. Can you see the bottom of the ocean? The deepest places are at the bottom of the ocean, right? Even if all of creation tried to ignore Mount Everest, they can't help seeing it from morning to night. They watch it and wonder if it is going to rain or not, or if the weather will be fine or not. If it is cloudy or dark at the peaks, they try to predict if this year will be a fruitful harvest or not. However, deep places are not visible. You cannot see things that are deep. The reason is that they are covered in water! It is not bad to be deep. It is surrounded with mystery. Women are also mysterious. That is why men take interest in them. Men search for women, thinking that they are mysterious. (205-136, 1990.8.12)

1.4. The ocean will become the only energy source

The resources of the ocean are so vast, compared to those of the land. In the future, the use of oil, coal, and electricity will cease. There is a limit to what electricity can do. Therefore, the ocean will become the only energy source. This will be based on the development of hydrogen energy. (94-130, 1977.7.30)

In the future, science will be able to create an unlimited supply of food. The reason this is not possible now, is because the cost of fuel is so high. However, when hydrogen energy is developed, we will have an unlimited supply of energy. We

will even have too much energy. Then, we can make as much food as we want, so much that we will not know what to do with all the food. Since it will be boring to eat all that food alone, we will approach a person on the street and say, "Come and share some of this food with me, and let's talk for a while." Since we do not know when that time will come, I am saying that we should prepare from now. We must create those circumstances. Then our descendants will be able to live comfortably. (141-223, 1986.2.22)

If you mismanage the ocean, wars will break out. Then a hydrogen bomb that could destroy the earth might be dropped. That is why church members should occupy the coastal waters to a point twenty kilometers from the coasts, or any place in the world centering on this number. Then the world will be within our embrace. (303-155, 1999.8.17)

Someone once said, "In the future when hydrogen is converted into fuel, the world will quickly become an affluent one. But if the wrong person is in charge of this vast raw material, they will destroy the entire world. The only person who can prevent that is Rev. Moon, so we should entrust that task to him." (184-222, 1989.1.1)

1.5. Oceanic nations will take the lead

We must have a leading position in the oceans in the future. With my own hands I will recover all the gold, silver, and treasures in the sea. After thinking about it, I have concluded that we have to dig a lot of tunnels. That is also why I came up with this highway project. If I can drill a passage under the sea and create a door, wouldn't it be fun to open that door and catch a fish? How wonderful it would be if we could directly supply ships with the oil under the seabed using a pipe? How great it would be if we could produce oil from a pipe with one press of a button?

If you are a leader, shouldn't you make plans so that you can live like that in the future? Then how will oxygen be supplied under the ocean? How much oxygen is there in water? So, oxygen can be produced in water and automatically supplied. What is the oxygen ratio in sea water? How can that all be used? This is not a problem. That is why the time is soon coming when the oceanic realm can be settled. (116-326, 1982.1.2)

The first forty years of my life until now was a time of tribulations, centering on the developed countries in the Northern Hemisphere, as well as centering on the land. That is why for twenty years I have been preparing for the oceanic civilization sphere in South America. I have been paving the way for the oceanic age to save all the countries within the tropical climate zone. That twenty-year course was to pave the path of tribulation. (277-131, 1996.4.7)

In the future, if someone is committed to developing the ocean, then that person can be in a commanding

position, globally speaking. Water is the most important thing. That is why, before going to the spirit world, I have to initiate a project to utilize large areas of water. Accordingly, I have to diligently give many directions. If I speak on this subject, I know that future generations will make it happen. (276-296, 1996.3.10)

To whom does the ocean belong? In the future, the ocean will be worth a fortune in gold. It will become more valuable than the Myeongdong shopping district in Seoul. We must become influential in the oceanic regions. I believe that the person who can acquire the body of water within three kilometers from here will have a leading position in the world. I believe that such a time will come. (300-192, 1999.3.3)

I am saying that we must be leaders of the oceans. Who does it belong to? It belongs to God, then True Parents, and then you. It all belongs to you. Wouldn't you like it even more if you could say that it belongs to you? The ocean and river water controls life in this world. The ocean generates clouds that bring rain to the earth. That is why it sustains life. (289-181, 1998.1.1)

Young people should develop an interest in the ocean. Someone who can take responsibility for projects in the ocean must emerge among you who are here. The reason I go out to the Atlantic Ocean and stay there for twenty-four hours is to establish a tradition of having loved the ocean. Sailors who go out to the ocean usually come back six months to a year later. Because of this, most women dislike seamen. For this reason, the global trend has seen a reduction in the numbers of mariners. That is why we should become strong in the ocean businesses. Unification Church women will not complain, even though their husbands go to sea and do not come back for half a year, right? That is why in the future we should become a leading force in the shipping industry.

The time will come when you will concentrate your efforts upon the ocean more than the land. That is why I am taking an interest in the ocean, and that is why you should also take an interest in the ocean. (73-142, 1974.8.16)

I am conducting research on submarines that can go to the center of the ocean. I also have a great interest in the universe. However, as an international religious leader and idealistic philosopher in modern-day society, as someone beyond nations yet with an incredible foundation throughout the world and with greater power than any one country, why do I take an interest in the ocean? It is because I believe the only way to solve the problem of hunger in the future will be through the ocean. (217-219, 1991.6.1)

You all think that a fish from the ocean cannot live in fresh water, and a fresh-water fish cannot live in the ocean. But that is not the case. Salmon live in the ocean, yet swim to fresh water to lay their eggs. That is why a salmon

has no problem in completely changing itself within three weeks, or even ten days. Does this sound like a fantasy to you or something real? Will computers become small enough to fit in your pocket or not? We are heading toward that kind of world. So, will you become the master of the ocean, or the master of the land? Which would you like to be? (217-227, 1991.6.1)

We should go to the North Pole to mine, and dig up diamonds and gold from deep in the ocean at the South Pole. You should go to an underwater vein of diamonds and excavate them all. Men and women alike should do this. If you can go in the middle of that and engage in true love, if you can dive into the deep ocean waters and make love, you may have a hard time getting there, but that love would be so sweet. You may suffer a shock or be under distress, but you have gone all the way to that place in search of the ideal love. If you can make love there, would it be breathtaking or unsatisfactory? Don't you want to go to the bottom of the ocean and make love? Everybody will die anyway eventually. If the two of you can live at that bottom of the ocean, make love and die, you would be happy. (299-186, 1999.2.15)

I have been interested in the ocean my entire life. That is because the fortune of the great ocean is coming. For this reason, you should also take an interest in the ocean. After that, you should be interested in the continents. (12-117, 1962)

The marine products industry has bright prospects. I have a clear concept about this endeavor. That is why I am declaring to humankind to go to the ocean for their sake. (128-211, 1983.6.26)

Section 2. The Ocean Providence Carried Out by True Parents

2.1. The ocean providence centering on North America

2.1.1. The marine products industry in America

If America is to prosper, it should create a trend where its young people are made to go out to the sea. When that happens, a new future vision of the nation will be developed. At that time, you will all become leaders and acquire factories throughout the land. When that happens, the production factories will be locked up. Factories that have pursued the interests of one individual will go to ruin. We will manage factories that seek to fulfill the national interest. Therefore, we will collaborate with the nation in serving the world. With the support of the nation we can prosper as much as we want to. (128-230, 1983.6.27)

The ocean and coastal cities are now all in ruins. If the young men go out to sea for months without returning, their brides will go around dancing, end up in an affair and then run away with their belongings. That is why nobody is going out on boats. Because of this, coastal cities have ended up in complete ruins. If I

had a little money, I would go from the east to the south and then to the west, buying up all the wharfs. Would that be good? (123-13, 1982.12.1)

Currently, all the industrial fields in America are up to par. They are all in a good position. The last remaining field is the ocean or marine products industry that has a larger resource base than that of the land. However, this has fallen completely into ruin. Think about how vast its resources are. Those people who work at sea are the successors who can capture all the hidden resources in the ocean. One-third of the earth is land and the other two-thirds is ocean. Thus, two-thirds of the world's resources are buried in the ocean. What kind of movement makes plans for the management of marine industries, along with the settlement of the ocean in the future? It should either be a religious organization with the foundation of a global structure that can engage in the marine products industry, or the foundation for a global ideological organization. I believe it can come only from these two. (119-230, 1982.9.13)

If the coastal cities become impoverished, the economy of that country also becomes impoverished. America has resources and the foundation to connect their marine cities to the world. Yet since this is not happening, the American government has entered the stage where it must take some emergency measures. The leaders of marine cities are looking for young people. They cannot find any, so we must bear this responsibility. They need young couples who have a philosophy that prevents the wives from running away. Only we Unificationists can deal with such circumstances. In this way, once we settle down in those cities, they will begin to revive. In three to five years, fifty people will be able to make boats with support from the government. Fifty people in thirty locations will make 1,500. Isn't that so? They can make about 1,500 boats.

I estimate there are a total of 3,000 ports in America. So, fifty people in three thousand ports would be 150,000 people, right? Then we would completely digest the American waters. If we calculate two million dollars for each person, how much would that be? It would be 300 billion dollars. (119-235, 1982.9.13)

I will organize a number of exceptional people interested in the sea and let them have fishing boats. So, fifty young men and women will be assembled at one center and engage in a basic movement, an educational movement in relation to the sea. That is how we will bring in people. The tendency of people in the coastal cities of America today is to move out of those areas because of the impoverished conditions there. The local leaders and people of influence have the desire to revive the ocean to prevent this from happening. That is why as soon as I go there, I set up these plans at once and create a supporters' association centering on the local leaders.

That is why there is no problem. The six hundred thousand dollars here will

be given out under the name and guaranteed by the supporters' association and these people. That is why this will continue forever if I teach our leaders how to catch fish worth four hundred dollars. (108-219, 1980.10.5)

Our boat's name, "New Hope," is famous as a tuna-catcher along the East Coast of the United States, and it is even talked about in South America. The reason I do these things is to raise personnel who can develop the marine products industry. When I went out on the boat for twenty-four hours, whenever I told our young people to get aboard the boat, they would not listen and just ran away. Yet, when I had the time to speak to them, and as this continued for four, five and even seven years, even the women now say that they will become a captain. I created an atmosphere enabling this to happen. While doing so, I made a shipyard and then a processing factory and trained them to sell. I set up shops and trained them how to sell using vans.

For one year I made them make nets and build boats, catch fish and even sell those fish. I made a sea-food restaurant, and for seven years I laid a foundation centering on all those things. Now we have entered the stage where we can create a sensation in the marine products industry. Once this gets on track, a great amount of capital will be generated. (110-202, 1980.11.17)

Those of you who enjoy going on boats, raise your hands. Without all of you, America will not succeed from now in the ocean. It will not find success in the ocean. America will not find success on or under the sea. No matter how loudly America may talk, it can only retreat. It is inevitable. You must go to the sea, even if you find it difficult. You must go out, penetrating the sea. You should know that only then will you bring hope to the sea. (132-304, 1984.6.26)

When men go out on boats, they remain at sea for at least two to six months. But if they continue such a lifestyle, all their wives will go off to the disco to do the twist and go around having affairs. They will pack up their belongings and run away. Eighty percent of them would put their children in orphanages and scatter in four directions. Then who would go out to sea? Even if they go out to sea and catch fish, they do not have a market for their catch. Americans do not eat sea fish. So if they enter the marine products industries, much of their strength and energy will be consumed. Yet, there is no other path for us to follow. I believe that there is no way to economically support our future work for the world, without first getting into the marine products industries and creating a successful foundation. (110-200, 1980.11.17)

The marine transportation industry and fishing industry are promising industries in America. It was concluded that the marine transportation and fishing industries are the only ones that have promise. That is why three years ago I bought a boat. At the time, I knew that

I had to begin this work in three years, and thus I began the business this year. During those three years, we basically completed our investigation of the East Coast, including the ocean waters near New York, looking for areas where fish were plentiful. (88-246, 1976.9.20)

In the future, I am thinking of creating a fish farm by negotiating with the government. We can make any type of fish farm that we desire, whether it is in the sea or fresh water. We can do anything. We can breed crabs or any kind of fish, even in the tidal flats near New York. We need to do more research on that. How vast would that business be? Imagine how vast that business could become. (88-179, 1976.8.10)

Women don't like sailors, do they? The reason I am getting into the marine products industries is because presently in America that industry is virtually destroyed. Why is that so? When the men go out on their boats, they stay at sea not for one or two weeks, but for one or two months. So, their wives all have affairs and end up divorcing their husbands, to run off with the other men. And after a few times on the rough sea, most young Americans these days have come to dislike life on the sea.

Even people with money will never invest in this industry. That is why there was no other way but to have the Unification Church members invest in this industry, and have our young people take up this task in order to save America. Can the young men and women in the Unification Church divorce? They can never divorce. You should not think of getting a divorce and running away, but instead train yourself to go out on the same boat. If I give the order, sailors will line up and come flocking from all over the world. They will be trained. (88-250, 1976.9.20)

Unless I am involved, America's marine products industry cannot progress – it will never develop. In that sense, I know that I will contribute greatly to America. That is why I am currently negotiating the purchase of a ship of nearly four thousand tons. There is only one ship of its kind in the world. (88-326, 1976.10.3)

A few days ago I went to Barrytown and we caught thousands of carp. Six turtles also came out after draining the pond. As we released a large turtle and the carp we had caught into the Hudson River I thought about this question: based on the principle that you were born through love and are bound to die for love, is it better to live or die for the people you love? And to the fish, I said, "In one way, you are being sacrificed. But in the future your sacrifice will develop the marine products industries in America, and through you the Unification Church members will display greater loyalty to God. And you will become the strength of love, the energy and flesh enabling them to love humanity even more. Although you were born as a fish, I love you as a part of my flesh and mind, which can

also love the American people as if they were my own children and more than any other American. Will you object to that?"

I told the carp to become the blood and flesh of the beloved son, a sacrifice for the sons and daughters, and the flesh of the American people. (93-189, 1977.5.29)

Others would say, "Rev. Moon, how can a religious leader mingle with fisherman and sail about in boats, engaged in the marine products industry? That is what a low-level person would do." I know that; but we are not doing this for some small purpose. If each of you can take responsibility for an important port in Africa after being trained in this way, a worldwide foundation can be easily created from those places. Foundations will be made in fifty countries. (94-107, 1977.7.29)

Since I am certain there are vast resources in the sea, from now on I will develop the ocean industries throughout the world. We should prepare to create that in France, Germany, and in dozens of other nations when the order is given. Then we can make boats, submarines, pleasure boats that are needed in the global age to instantly take a leading position in the world and a commanding economic position in that field. We need to prepare in dozens of nations. Only then can we lead the world in that field. Do you think that is imaginable and possible? That is why I am telling all Unification Church members to learn about this field. (95-225, 1977.12.4)

Until now, fishermen have worked for more than eight hours a day, but now you will start to hear them saying that they will not work for more than eight hours. It will be in complete disarray. Will the marine products industry in America have a means to survive or not? This is like the golden gates being opened. You should know that it is like opening the gates to the golden storehouse with a golden key. That is why the ladies who will be graduating from our theology school should keep in mind that when they want to get married they will be married to the captain of a ship. (96-313, 1978.2.13)

The marine products industry in America has reached the stage where it cannot survive without us. A vast and infinite store of resources is calling us. That is why we will use it as our economic base in our global efforts. (105-328, 1979.10.28)

When Africans go to a restaurant to eat, they look for fish they have eaten sometimes before, fish that they are accustomed to eating. So if a restaurant does not have that particular fish, the customer will leave. Therefore, I am now calling for a movement to supply restaurants with the fish caught in the five great oceans. Since Americans work for eight hours a day, they close their shops at five. But we keep our doors open twenty-four hours a day. So if one of our restaurants runs out of supplies, we can stock them from another affiliated restaurant. That is why we will

never be defeated. So you should know that everybody in the marine products industry recognizes my name. (146-253, 1986.7.1)

Our members do not like Ocean Church. If I tell them to get into the marine products industry they all run away. That is why my plan now is to quickly establish a thousand Japanese restaurants across America. That is my plan now. Then my next plan is to establish 535 Ocean Churches. We must now make preparations for these two plans. (147-25, 1986.8.20)

I am thinking that once our marine products enterprise develops in each state we will build a condominium at each location. After building them, I should have people from these four nations – the Japanese, the Koreans, the Americans, and the Europeans centering on the Germans – live together in one household. They may have different jobs, but they should return to the house and have their meals together, do other things together, and be trained in the way of living as one family. Those who cannot achieve a passing grade in such a lifestyle will not be able to enter the sphere of the ideal, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, in the future. They will not have the qualifications to enter heaven. That is why I am doing this now, in order to create the foundation for such life. (147-27, 1986.8.20)

Why am I involved in the marine products industry? The only way to resolve humanity's food problem is to farm fish. In the future, there will be buildings with hundreds of floors by the sea. With the press of a button, everyone will be able to farm fish. If you have even just a hundred *pyung*, your household would have enough income for all the children to go to college, yet you could still live comfortably. We now live in the time when science is advancing swiftly. That is why we have the ability to draw in sea water that is tens, hundreds, and even thousands of miles away. We can build fish-farming structures in the mountains – as many as we need. Without doing so, humanity's food problem cannot be solved. That is why I am so serious about this. (191-81, 1989.6.24)

The young, courageous soldiers of the Unification Church must someday experience the adventure of sailing on fishing boats that go far out to sea. I believe that experience in the marine products industry is great training. You must do it because I am asking it of you. Even a graduate from Tokyo University cannot shirk his responsibility. (192-159, 1989.7.3)

I have the results of twenty years of activities for the purpose of saving people who are dying because of lack of food. There is an inexhaustible supply of raw material in the marine products industry. People in America now believe in Rev. Moon. Up to now, I have been creating a worldwide foundation, making everything from nets to boats. I know that the marine products industry

has now entered a stage where it can no longer be disregarded. (266-120, 1994.12.22)

Those who have been to our ranch in Texas, raise your hands. The Americans have all been there before. Should I invite you as well? I am thinking of hunting quails, pheasants, and deer at that place. There are a large number of wild turkeys there, too. There are even wild beasts such as boars, wolves and tigers.

You should go hunting and fishing by taking interest in this place. From now, you should start developing land, so that you can develop your own ranch and manage it. (253-114, 1994.1.9)

In the future, a base will emerge on which tertiary industry can make tremendous advancements. That is why we are training people in thirty locations, each with ten boats. I am thinking of expanding this to three hundred locations. I am going to arrange the situation so that we can fish in any village that we go to. In the future, I will hold fishing courses around the world. I will create a tourist route throughout Europe, beginning in France. I need to raise experts on fishing who can make this happen. Those people will pilot the boats and also function as tourist guides. This is big business. If we do this, we can conduct business internationally with our important guests. By creating a global company, beyond national boundaries, the foundation for gathering such vast resources will naturally be laid. (122-82, 1982.10.31)

2.1.2. Seilo distribution organization

I have planned two major projects in America. They are the marine products industry and the Seilo marketing organization. You probably are not aware that there was quite a stir in the marine products industry circles a while ago when our members took it over. You should be aware of this. (131-250, 1984.5.4)

In the organization of our economic activities, the last remaining obstacle is the battle to take a leading position in sales in the nation. If we can take the lead in the marine products industry in America through Seilo – a global machine marketing organization – and are united in our approach, then we will automatically develop an influential position in America and the free world. As we build an economic foundation in this field, we are preparing simultaneously the *Washington Times* and a magazine, *Insight*, aimed at securing a global media base. Through these media, we are creating the means to influence the world. Fortunately, America has vast resources in the marine products industries. However, it lacks an owner.

It is amazing that we have risen to the point where the Rev. Moon and the Unification Church are evaluated as the only ones who can become the leading force at this time. I am looking to establish the Seilo organization in fifty states in order to have the foundation of a commanding position in sales in America through the expansion of our markets, based on science and technology. The Seilo orga-

nization has gone beyond national borders. Until now, there had never been an exhibition hall or sales market that transcended national borders. (135-97, 1985.9.30)

Your task now is to lay the economic foundation in America. My initiative is to spread the Seilo organization throughout the entire nation and to lay a global foundation for a market for the marine products industries. We are now faced with the realistic problem of how to achieve all of this. That is the conclusion. If the machine industry is the center of Western Civilization today, then the marine products industries lacks an owner. That is why we can conclude that, even at a loss, I am investing in the marine products industries and for the development of Seilo. Effort must be made to invest in them in order to re-create this foundation, even if the church is sacrificed. In that sense, Seilo exists as a foundation for taking the lead in the global marketing organization and America's marine products industries. Therefore, it is reasonable to conclude that we need to spur our efforts in this place. (135-99, 1985.9.30)

Once we take the lead in the field of technology in America, as well as the machine industry and marine products industries through the Seilo organization, we will then become an influential power that can move the U.S. economy. That is why I am now creating an association for the unity of Latin America. Then America would find itself in an awkward situation. Even with all my brains and talent, I had to endure forty years of troubles in order to pioneer the way, and this will remain in history as a path that must be taken by farsighted leaders. I persevered and endured because it is important to establish a tradition in that way. If I have established the vertical tradition, you must understand that you have the responsibility to establish a horizontal tradition. You should think about how to bring about rapid growth in the future through the Seilo organization. (135-106, 1985.9.30)

You should not think, "What do the marine products industries have to do with Seilo?" In the future, people in Seilo can be placed in the marine products industries, and those in the marine products industries can be placed in Seilo. I may replace them as I wish at anytime. You should be aware of that. That is why we can conclude that we should use one office. What use is there for two when we don't have money? On this occasion, I am telling you to combine them all. There is no need for many department heads. We should create an organization where the universe will move at the order of one leader. (135-102, 1985.9.30)

2.1.3. Alaska marine products industries

In terms of national territory, America is surrounded on three sides by the ocean and has three of the four great fishing grounds in the world. There are four great fishing grounds if we include

one in Norway. The areas from Mexico to Alaska and from Gloucester to Canada are all connected to the three great fishing grounds among the four in the world. That means that almost all the fish in the world can be found in those areas. But there aren't any people to catch those fish. The authorities have appropriated two hundred sea miles of area, but it has become like a barren land without an owner. (110-200, 1980.11.17)

Alaska is connected to everything centering on the ocean. Alaska is where all the resources, fish and raw material of the sea are concentrated. Eighty percent of the world's marine resources come from America, and the fish comprising 71 percent of America's marine resources can be found in Alaskan waters. This state is at the center of the marine resources. The only other place where such resources remain is in the tundra. (236-22, 1992.11.2)

When I went to Alaska last time, a massive school of dark-colored carp about sixty-miles in length came swimming toward us. They covered a width of ten miles and I do not know how deep. Think about it. When you view such a sight, you know there is no owner – there is no owner. I discovered such vast wealth floating in our great oceans. That is why you must become the owners of the future. (131-263, 1984.5.4)

How much growth have we brought to the marine products industries? Everything that we have studied and made with our own hands, including all the machinery in a boat, can reach the highest standard. You should be aware of this amazing fact. When we were catching fish in Alaska, we recorded where the most fish were caught in a computer. Having computerized that information, we can navigate there anytime by pressing a button. If we put tape in the computer and press a button, we can find the location, even after ten years has passed. We can always catch a lot of fish. We will be able to possess an infinite amount of data on the world's five oceans – which fishermen keep strictly secret and teach to their sons as their legacy – all with a push of a button. If we record such prime locations in the five oceans, we can continue fishing in certain areas according to the season. Simply put, this can bring tremendous gains to the marine products industries. (135-106, 1985.9.30)

I built a factory in Alaska, at an investment of thirteen million dollars. I am thinking of buying the Gloucester wharf on the East Coast. Don't we also have a ship-building yard in the south, in Alabama? We have all kinds of bases. Most of you have never had any interest in boats or the ocean, have you? I have been preparing everything for the past ten years. (119-239, 1982.9.13)

We need to build processing factories in the western, southern, and eastern areas of Alaska, handling all aspects of the business. Though the fish are numerous, we have no capacity to process them. That is why I will now build a

fish powder factory. Why do we need to make powder? It solves the storage problem. No matter how good a fish might be, it does not last more than eight months. Even frozen fish must be supplied with water again after eight months. Even though it is iced, air seeps into the ice because of the differences in climate. When air seeps in, the vapor from the fish goes out through the ice. Then the entire fish must be submerged in water again, frozen and then stored. But that should not be done. If you take the fish out and refreeze it a couple of times, a regular temperature cannot be maintained. Therefore, that produce will be discarded. (122-80, 1982.10.31)

I have thought about how to process shrimp. That is why we are making it into powder. Shrimp die in a year. God created them as fish food. But the uneaten shrimp all die. Every year, countless dead shrimp flow about in the sea. This is directly linked to pollution. How are we to solve this problem? After many years of study, I have decided to produce this powder. (273-50, 1995.10.21)

Twenty million people in this world starve to death each year. For the past twenty years I have taken an interest in the marine products industries in order to solve the food problem for the sake of these people. The key issue is fish powder. This is highly-enriched protein, and contains nutrients not found in any land animal. By making this into powder, it will be convenient for both storage and transportation. If we produce one ton of this fish powder, we can increase it to thirty to fifty times the original amount. Ninety-eight percent of that is protein. The developed nations should have solved the problem of starvation, but they have not done so. (296-228, 1998.11.10)

We will never truly know how many species of fish there are, including extremely large species of fish. There is such a huge variety. Realizing this, I thought that if there were three or four people competent with nets, it would be no problem to catch a boat-load of fish in a single day – more fish that we ourselves catch in the Alaskan waters. So I had people do research, after thinking that we should hire people to catch fish, make it into fish powder and sell it. (267-18, 1994.12.27)

From now on, we will make fish into powder and season it to make bread. We can make anything. We can make good bread. Eating fish is better than eating meat. I know that fish is good for the body. This is undeveloped territory. This is the only thing that America has not firmly grasped, so we should do it ourselves. I am certain this field holds considerable promise. I will prepare the money, but the issue is how to raise the people who are motivated. (88-179, 1976.8.10)

From Canada to the Soviet Union, from America to Japan and Germany, everyone is interested in what we are doing now. Originally, only twenty percent of the fish caught in these waters were actually eaten by people. The rest

were thrown away. I am gathering the parts that are thrown away and making them into powder as nutrients that can be eaten. I am thinking of sending this to the underdeveloped nations. That rumor has now spread and people in the underdeveloped nations of the world have a lot of interest in the Unification Church. (295-110, 1998.8.18)

The Japanese government believes their nation needs marine resources. The term "marine resources" means fish. That is why America wants to sell the fish processed in Alaska, and Japanese people want to purchase fish. But they do not have any. So I am planning to catch fish in America and supply it to Japan. The United States government is negotiating with the Japanese, and the Japanese people are negotiating with the US government. Japan needs America's fish, and America needs Japan's technology. That is why they are talking about mutual investment. (146-249, 1986.7.1)

In North America, the most famous ocean and marine products industries base is in Alaska. The four great fishing grounds of the world can be found in Alaska, the north Atlantic coast of the United States and Canada, the Gulf of Mexico, and in the waters off Norway. Of these four fishing grounds, North America has three of them, and representative among these is Alaska. (167-132, 1987.7.11)

In the future, the Soviet Union may speak out in political protest, and Japan and Germany may form an alliance. This is a flash point that can create political problems worldwide in the future. Though the United States has appropriated a coastal water territory out to two hundred miles, they do not have the capacity to become the owners of the marine products in that area of the ocean.

Americans do not eat fish. In this group, perhaps some of you have visited foreign countries. People in those lands eat only a few kinds of seafood, such as lobster, salmon, trout, and halibut that we are going to catch today. Most of these generally come from the cold waters of the arctic regions.

That is why they have a lot of flesh and are delicious. Americans like these fish. Where do these fish gather? Their habitat is here in Alaska. (167-132, 1987.7.11)

When Jesus told Peter to become a fisherman of people, he meant that fish were a symbol of people. That is why if we catch fish and take the lead in the oceanic regions, we can even gain a leading position in the landed regions too. This is the viewpoint of the providence. Therefore, if we take the lead in Alaska, we then gain a leading position in the oceans. Eighty-five percent of the income of the world's marine products industries comes from Alaska. Five percent comes from the Atlantic, and the final ten percent comes from the Pacific.

You can find salmon in Alaska. You know about salmon, right? There are five species of salmon. One is pink, and

another is red. There are many types. If you release them after a couple of months, their young hatch in fresh water and swim out to sea. They go four to five thousand miles as they swim throughout the five great oceans. That is how they travel. After four years, the salmon are old enough to lay eggs. They become mature female and male salmon, and when the time comes to lay eggs, where do they go to meet their true love partner? They are bound by a pact that makes them seek their birthplace to meet their partner. They are bound together by that law. Who established that law? Did the salmon do that? That is a mysterious question.

If you observe the salmon in Alaska, they lay their young ones in July and send them out to the sea. These fish swim four to five thousand miles during a four-year period, and then sense their way back to their old hometown. Even today there is no way to scientifically explain this wonder. No matter how hard people study this, they cannot find the answer. Do the salmon return because they have some kind of antenna or radar?

The young salmon return to their hometown after four years to lay their eggs, after which they all die. Their flesh becomes food for their young ones to grow. There is a saying: "Of all creation, human beings are of the highest value." Yet, look at human beings. They don't even know how to return to their hometown. They don't know how to go there.

Once when I saw a salmon, I thought that salmon are just like the Unification Church members. Our church members are the ones who return to their hometown. The pair system is part of Godism. The male and female salmon don't pair up and spend four to six years together in the ocean. When the time comes, the male first swims upstream and the female follows him, where they meet for the first time. Then the male and female gather in a pool and create pairs like the matching ceremony that we do in the Unification Church. What is truly mysterious is that the male and female look exactly the same when they are in the ocean, though they may differ slightly in size. Once they find their partner, the male salmon changes its appearance in two weeks to the extent that one wonders whether such transformation is actually possible.

When they swim upstream to mate, the male salmon already looks like a lion. He becomes a fearful sight, with his lips like this and his teeth protruding in this way. His head and back come out like this, just like a lion. Even a salmon would go to such extremes, so as to leave behind its superior species. How do they find their hometown after traveling about the ocean for four to five thousand miles? This has been an unsolved mystery until now. How could these small fish, these young fish that are no larger than fifteen centimeters after six months, leave their hometown for the ocean, and then grow this large and come back to their birthplace? And when the season comes, they already know when to have babies. (259-198, 1994.4.10)

Salmon go out to the sea and swim

about freely, and then a female and male are matched after which time they live for the sake of the other. This becomes the model for the love between the couples in the Unification Church. It is the same as the love of True Parents. Couples in our Unification Church should be better than salmon couples. There are many things people can learn from this, which is like a scene from a movie. Salmon leave behind their offspring by letting their bodies become food for their young. The salmon lives as a representative of the tradition of the animals' world of instinct. (295-115, 1998.8.18)

North America has three of the great fishing grounds in the world. These are the waters off Alaska, the waters of the Atlantic from Nobaska Point up to Canada, and the Gulf of Mexico. You do not know how abundant the marine resources in these locations are. If you really knew, you would be astonished. A vein of gold would dry up after several decades of digging, but ocean resources are eternal. They have no owner. That is why I have made a twenty-year plan and have now been investing in the marine industry for fifteen years. The people in the marine industry in America are holding demonstrations, shouting out, "Rev. Moon is a heretic!" and "Out with Rev. Moon!" They are making all kinds of noise, but it does not matter because the key point is competence. (191-73, 1989.6.24)

The four great fishing grounds of the world can be found in Alaska, the north Atlantic coast of the United States and Canada, the Gulf of Mexico, and in the waters off Norway

When I go out to sea, I always catch fish. There are not many types of fish that I have not caught. I have caught all types of fish in the Pacific and Atlantic Oceans, and the Mediterranean Sea. I have caught every type of fish. I have caught fish even in Alaska. I took the position of owner. I worked with my bare hands, wearing only my shorts. If I were to go to the world of fishermen and speak before them for just thirty minutes, they would want to take me to their house and give me a nice room to stay in, and feed me saying, "Don't return to your house. Live here with us! Live with us for one year!" I could become their friends and do just about anything, just by staying in the same boat with them for four days. (203-35, 1990.6.14)

America has 75 percent of the world's haul of fish, and 85 percent of that comes from Alaska. In that sense, Alaska is a treasure house of marine resources. Who is going to be the owner of that area? To become the owner means gaining sovereignty over the marine industry in the future. Alaska is a base where that may be possible, but the environmental factors there are not so good. If circumstances were better, the middle classes would take charge of everything. Yet ships can be wrecked and people can die. You need to be prepared for such hardships. (205-319, 1990.10.1)

In Alaska this time, the wind was

blowing strongly, causing the waves to be more than ten meters high, but I just kept the boat going. People were in awe of this, especially those in charge of the UDT training at the headquarters for the maritime police. At that time, there was a warning against going out to sea. If you went out a distance, the police would be after you, making a fuss and telling you to return to harbor.

Though our boat was small, it valiantly rode the waves. That is why the police were amazed. They did not believe us, even though we explained that our boat could not sink. Yet finally, we convinced them. So now, even when we go out in a storm, they say, "That's the kind of people they are." Since the UDT training is something like special military training, as a general rule you have to go out in rain or strong winds, with no consideration for your own life. That is how it is. (205-319, 1990.10.1)

America takes 75 percent of the world's fish catch, and 85 percent of that comes from Alaska. In Korean, Alaska sounds like a-las-seum-ni-ka which means, "Do you understand?" When we say a-las-seum-ni-ka we are actually asking, "Did you know that Alaska is a dangerous place, where the wind is strong and one often faces death?" (206-93, 1990.10.3)

Why do fish seek the cold region of Alaska? When fish living in hot regions seek out frigid waters, we are witnessing the phenomenon of the harmony of yang and yin. Fish try to have their offspring where subject partner and object partner come together in harmony. That is why they all migrate. Furthermore, fish living in fresh water can only reproduce when they drink salt water. That is how it is with king crab. In order for them to reproduce after maturing, plus and minus must come together in harmony. That is the work I am doing. (207-82, 1990.11.1)

To this day I have been in the forefront, day and night, in Alaska and in many other places, establishing the tradition of unification today. There is no way for humanity, the nation and world to repay their debts to the True Parents. They are in a position to forever attend and follow. (220-268, 1991.10.20)

Many kinds of fish gather in Alaska because the cold and warm ocean currents meet here. Fish congregate here to lay their eggs. That is why this area is well known. So to come here and fish is truly fantastic! Moreover, it is historic that Koreans – Korean professors – are coming here to fish and catch fish in the waters of Alaska. (167-132, 1987.7.11)

If Alaska can attract tourists, it will become a world-renowned tourist destination. Wasn't it hot this year in Korea? At such times, if you had money you could have gone to Alaska. It takes about six hours from here to Alaska. If there is a headwind, the flight may take seven hours, but it is a five or six hour flight. If you sleep on the plane in the evening and get off in the morning, you would be

in a one-day sphere of activity.

If you travel on Friday night, fish on Saturday and Sunday, and then take a plane in the evening, you can be at work again on Monday morning. Wherever you go in Alaska, if you look toward a distant mountain you will see that its summit is covered with snow. The mountains in this vicinity are all covered with snow. Below the snow-covered hill, there is a green field with a flower garden. There is a blue ocean beneath those flowers, an ocean like a beautiful lagoon, where you can go fishing. Imagine how enchanting that place is! The area is surrounded by high mountains that bear resemblance to a folding screen. The trees in Alaska are used to make the keyboards for pianos. They grow straight and densely cover the area. In the forest below, there are many flowers that you have never seen before. They can be found near the lakes.

There are also many animals there, including deer. Many animals live around the water's edge. Since there isn't much to eat, they have to drink water. In the winter all the seaweed dies. There is nothing to eat because of the heavy snows. Since they survive on seaweed, there are many deer, bear, and other animals that live closely linked to the ocean. (264-98, 1994.10.9)

When you go to Alaska, you have to wear long underwear made of fur because it is cold even in April. There is snow on the mountains near here. But there is an unlimited number of fish in the sea. Countless fish are swimming everywhere. If you cast out your fishing line, you will become excited. Someone who has experienced this will come again, even if he is told not to. Once you have that stimulating fishing experience, you will never forget the thrill.

Alaska is also a good place to live. It has all conveniences at your disposal. The Alaskan terrain and coastal areas also offer spectacular sights. Two-thirds of the land is made up of snow-covered mountains, with most people living in the green valley areas. The ocean is blue and eagles fly about in the sky. (262-280, 1994.8.1)

From Alaska, it takes eight hours by plane to fly to Moscow, six hours to fly to London, and ten hours to fly to New York City. That is why this place is also an important hub of transportation. In the future, it will not be a problem to cultivate crops on the plains of Alaska through human efforts. Even now they are cultivating crops in greenhouses. Bananas are being grown there. They do not come from the tropical zone. (236-22, 1992.11.2)

Think about what would happen if all the edible products were produced in Alaska. Alaska is many times the size of Korea. It is several times bigger than California. California is one of the largest states in America; so Alaska is that vast! An unlimited supply of raw materials can be found there. The owner of that place is neither the Soviet Union nor America.

Both countries show little interest in

Alaska. They have created a mess with their own economic problems, political problems, and administrative problems, so they do not even think about the consumption of raw materials. In the future, the issue will be about who has a commanding position in relation to the raw materials. I am preparing for that day. (236-22, 1992.11.2)

That is why whoever occupies the North Pole region is important. Occupying the North Pole is the same as dominating the world. Isn't that the significance of a pole? Once you occupy the North Pole and take the initiating position, the occupation of the South Pole will automatically come about. (253-299, 1994.1.30)

Have you heard about the "Alaskan spirit"? What is the Alaskan spirit? It is getting up at five in the morning, eating breakfast, going out to the sea, and coming back at twelve at night or even one or two in the morning. You are not allowed to come back if you don't fulfill your portion of responsibility. There are no allowances for any situation. You have to fulfill your responsibility during the training course.

Therefore, you are not going to watch people catch fish. I train people to fish to make them into leaders who, in the future, can go anywhere in the world. Not just anyone can catch fish. It must be done professionally. You can catch fish only after learning the skills through having many experiences. (263-10, 1994.8.16)

2.1.4. The fish-farming industry

If there is a professor from a marine university in that area, or if any studies on the fish in these waters have been done, you should conduct tests to see whether those studies were correct and accurately record the details in a book. You should inspect the seas that border the coastal states, gather everybody together and make plans to fish anywhere you go. In those states that border on the ocean, you should measure the depth and temperature of all the fishing areas, conduct research on the types of fish that live in that sea area, and then make a book on your findings. I am buying boats for you so that you can accomplish this. All twenty-four states bordering on the ocean should compile a book about their fishing grounds. If your state is not near an ocean, you should do so anyway centering on its lakes. Then from now on I am going to coach everyone on how to farm fish. (94-109, 1977.7.29)

When I went to Florida last time, I went to the Everglades – marshy areas inhabited by alligators. I am going to make an agreement with the nation to build a fish farm there. I can make fish farms for sea fish, and for fish that live in fresh water. I can make any kind of fish farm. Anything is possible. In the future, the dry beaches near New York can also be converted to raise crabs or any kind of fish. Studies must be done on this. Think about how vast this business will become. Animal feed can be made out of the bones of sea fish. Fodder can

be made by compounding together the small fry that are caught. I foresee that it will become a tremendous business. Think about operating in each nation with a global network. If we also build a canning factory, it will also become an excellent business. (88-179, 1976.8.10)

Since there are relatively few mountains in large parts of South America, we can play a leading role through finding water. Wells should only be dug in those places where water is available. You will not find water in other places, no matter how much you dig. That is why you can earn a living just by selling water. You can make as much water as you need by evaporating sea water. Now with the help of science, we can dig tunnels and make buildings for fishing farms across tens, hundreds, and even thousands of miles. We can build buildings that are taller than the World Trade Center in New York. In the Pantanal, we can raise fish in buildings according to the type of fish. After putting all the data in the computer, a customer can simply press a button to choose a certain fish to eat for lunch. We are making a place where people can eat a fresh dish of sliced raw fish that is served instantly. (302-99, 1999.6.1)

There are many vast lakes in the world. In Alaska alone there are three million lakes more than twenty thousand *pyung* in area. If fish could be raised within such an area of twenty thousand *pyung*, it would support two hundred or even three hundred households. So, how many could be fed if there are three million lakes? If each lake is twenty thousand *pyung*, six hundred million people can be supported. Two times three is six – so six hundred million. That is why if we can make fish farms in lakes in Africa, it would provide a food supply for 650 million people. Then the food shortage would be relieved. Fish is much better for your health than beef or any other meat from land animals. Fish is easily digested and absorbed. Therefore, a time will come when people will not eat meat or beef, even if they are told to do so. (271-39, 1995.8.15)

How many lakes are there in Argentina, Brazil, and Uruguay in South America? There are tens of millions of lakes. If there are three million lakes in Alaska, then there must be tens of millions in South America. There is not a great need for water. If we secure an area of several hundred *pyung*, fill it with water and raise a number of different types of fish, people can easily live off them. If we can create a man-made lake, teach people the right method and have them manage it, they would be able to support themselves. The food problem would be solved. The economic situation can be improved in regions that have both water and land. That is why you must take interest in the ocean and go through training in how to fish. (289-50, 1997.12.30)

Why am I interested in tuna? One tuna can lay two million eggs. But only 0.8 percent of these eggs actually hatch. Why is that? When it lays eggs, small fish swallow those eggs. That is why I

am thinking of making a tuna fish farm. If we had the technology to hatch 100 percent of those eggs, humanity's food problem would be solved in an instant. (119-63, 1982.7.3)

You could number the fish as you like, for example you could name one "fish number one." Then those numbers could form a unified name system worldwide. A fish could be numbered as fish one hundred-and-something or fifty-something. If there is a special fish you like, you can call and order it by number. You can tell them that you are going to the fish farm at a certain time and ask them to prepare fish number so-and-so for you. All you would need then is a sashimi knife. You can make sashimi with that particular fish and have a tasty meal. Such a time will come. (274-109, 1995.10.29)

I know that in the future the greatest business will be in creating large lakes throughout the world, and in farming fish there so that people can fish. That is why I have to prepare for that from now. For this reason, I am making fish farms, catching fish and constantly putting them into a fishing pond. Then people can fish all twelve months of the year. (207-122, 1990.11.1)

If people raise fish for a living instead of building big ranches, there will be no problem in feeding a single household with just fifty *pyung* of land. You can draw up as much sea water as you like to the top of a high mountain. If there isn't enough, you can add some salt water to adjust the saltiness. You can do that as much as you like. If you set up a fish farm in the mountains and have one person take care of it, you can raise enough fish to feed hundreds and millions of people. That is why I went to America this time, and went out to sea. As I moved about here and there I looked for good types of fish, and caught them to use in a fish farm. (189-290, 1989.6.17)

If there are no fish where you go fishing, you should make a fish farm and raise fish. The time has come when you can farm fish, transport them somewhere and then go fishing. If you make a fish farm somewhere with the right climate and temperature and raise fish, then you can take any type of fish anywhere and place them where people can catch them. You can transport them in a boat, release them and catch them again. The time will come when you can hunt animals – even tigers. You can breed wolves and release them in the hunting grounds to hunt them. You can hunt for bears. You can also breed other animals for hunting. (275-104, 1995.11.3)

I am going to run a fish farm. The reason Japan can prepare raw fish dishes now is because I coached them. It was my idea. The technology of having a filter to circulate water in a tank for a long time came from our studies. Why do we need a fish farm? It is because people like to eat live fish. It is not enough to supply the demand just by catching fish from the sea. We can of course supply live fish

from fishing, but we must also distribute live fish after raising them ourselves. I am planning to build a fish farm in each state. That is why I gave away One Hope boats so that people can be trained in fishing, but I am not sure if they are doing that or not. If they are, then in the future they can survive by selling thirty to fifty boats. This is international. There were many people ten years ago who said that they would buy the One Hope boat.

The Marine Corps ordered seventy-two boats, but I did not want to sell them. Why didn't I sell them? You don't know how great this boat is. Since the word is out now, everybody knows that this boat is the best boat for fishing. That is why they all want to buy it. So now I am thinking of going public to sell the boat. Those who fish know how great this boat is. That is why they want to buy it. It really is a wonderful boat. (207-120, 1990.11.1)

Aren't there some 150,000 college graduates who are unemployed? That is why I am in the marine business and creating fish farms. I am doing this even in Spain. We have caught some live tuna and are raising them. We will sell them in January. They make good money. I am like a magician who can do anything. (209-317, 1990.11.30)

From now, I will begin to transform wasted land into fertile soil in order to save those who are starving to death. All I need is land and water. I will raise fish in places with water. I will make fish farms. On the land, I will plant five different types of crop. The western people did not teach the Africans how to farm. That is why they have not prospered. This must be indemnified. (246-82, 1993.3.23)

I have made fish farms for the tens of millions of people dying of hunger in this world. I am the only one who, representing all humanity, can solve the problem of the destruction of the ozone layer caused by environmental pollution. I have to march forward taking an interest in all fields.

If I cannot do so, you should go even though you shed your tears and sweat. You should also be determined to leave your footprints on top of my footprints. The way of the Principle is in following the footsteps along the path. You cannot jump past those footsteps. The grandfather and parents must follow this path. Even the descendants and generations to come must also follow the way of the Principle in the exact same way. That is the path of indemnity. (246-202, 1993.4.16)

2.1.5. Ocean Church and sea training

The Unification Church is a global movement with me as its leader. Although I am Korean, many western people recognize my work is not only for Korea, but also for the entire world. With courage and valor, I am building a global association, even in the face of persecution on the land and sea.

In that sense, I made a fearsome declaration when I came out with the title,

Ocean Church, after building this system based on religion, rather than on a general system of thought. This is a fearsome course that I have set. From now, what am I going to do with Ocean Church? It is not simply about going out to the ocean for training. The purpose is to bring dominion over and love the ocean. I don't intend to do something about the ocean by dominating it. I am going to nurture the ocean in accordance with the original intention of the Creator, and make it the center stage for bringing the world together. (128-249, 1983.8.28)

Men board boats and ride the waves. Most women would not do this. How great it is! That is why I go on boats. I go on boats to teach you this fact. I have shouldered the responsibility to pioneer the ocean in the future. Therefore, since you follow me and like me, then you cannot help liking those boats. That is how life works.

How many pounds does a large tuna weigh? It weighs over a thousand pounds. There are plenty of tuna that weigh over a thousand pounds. An average tuna weighs eight times more than a person who weighs 120 pounds. Think about it. How would it feel to catch such a fish? There is no greater business than fishing for giant tuna. If you catch one of those tunas you can eat it for a year. If you eat one pound of tuna a day, it would take you three years to consume one tuna. (119-63, 1982.7.3)

Because the earth is becoming overpopulated, we have to make boats and go out to the sea. A world where people live in the sea will come in the not-so-distant future. What are we to do in the ocean? All male members of the Unification Church will live in the world's ocean bases. Once we occupy this realm, we can have significant impact on all the cultures of the world. The Unification Church men should settle upon coastal areas and thus occupy all the world's coasts. (116-326, 1982.1.2)

Given the unlimited supply of marine resources in the seas surrounding the United States, the U.S. Maritime Administration is encouraging the development of the marine resources of America. But few people enjoy life at sea. For that reason the U.S. government developed a subsidy plan that would permit an individual to take ownership of a two million dollar, 120-ton fishing vessel by meeting two conditions: that person would pay ten percent of the boat's price and work the boat for two and a half years. As you know, 120 tons is enormous.

For the same reason I am developing ocean resource businesses in three hundred ports. I specifically designed and made ships. I designed and made small fishing boats and even created a truly handsome ship that is good for training. To train people in catching fish, I am making a fleet of ten boats linked together with one large ship. That means one person goes out with eleven ships at his command. I let it be known that if five such commanders would make

such a fleet, I would give a thirty-thousand-dollar boat to them. Then we can sell even these smaller boats for thirty thousand dollars each. Currently, I am also planning for the development of the fishery cities. (110-202, 1980.11.17)

I am developing a plan to gather and educate sixty trainees in each of thirty locations that I chose the other day. Once this standard is achieved in these thirty locations, I will expand it to three hundred locations and appoint those who graduated from theology school to be in charge of making Ocean Churches. This type of church has never existed in history. Under the name, Ocean Church, they will go on boats and hold services on Sunday. I am currently making preparations to launch this program. What will happen once it begins? Our members need only to go on the boats for two years. Since we have large boats, the members can take turns holding Ocean Church services.

With the endorsements of the mayor of a city and the head of the coast guard, the nation can produce as many boats as we need. I can easily pay 10 percent of that amount. When that happens, we will have thousands of ships. In order to make that happen and expand the foundation, I am preparing these things in Europe and even Japan by planning an international market organization in the mission department. I am preparing now for this tremendous task. (110-204, 1980.11.17)

When you do Home Church, the three hundred boats are Home Church boats. It is an Ocean Church. If your path becomes difficult in a port city, then simply ask, "Where is the One Hope docked?" All the people there would know its location. All the people on the coasts of America would know. We will be gathered there together, singing and praying. We will be praying even as we eat lunch. (108-217, 1980.10.5)

We have thirty shrimp boats in South America and another five for catching tuna. Consequently, I am thinking of having our core members to now begin ocean training for eighteen months. Leaders of the Unification Church must participate two Sundays a year in Ocean Church activities. Actually, there is no church leader when it comes to Ocean Church activities because I will make everyone participate. That is why I give the order, "You! Go to that place and fish!" You will not know beforehand when you will have to go. (119-256, 1982.9.13)

I have been getting up at five in the morning and going out to the sea on a boat until eleven at night from April of this year until now. Some people stick out their tongue saying, "An old man of seventy is going out on a boat all day to fish while the young ones are running away, hiding to get some sleep!" When I hear that, I think, "I am committing a grave sin. Why am I having these young people suffer so much?" But I am doing that because if they can overcome these things now, they will not fall away and they will be able to climb up to the top

of the world. (223-280, 1991.11.12)

I am training you. How many here can keep up with me? This fishing is hard labor. There is no heavier labor than this. You have to stand fishing all day long. You are not allowed to sit for ten days. Before you know it, it becomes twelve at night. In Alaska, it is still bright at midnight. It is still bright at one in the morning. How many hours pass if you wake up at five in the morning and stay up till twelve at night? You would be fishing for nineteen hours. (231-308, 1992.6.21)

The coastline is the borderline between the ocean and land. The ocean must now be connected to the land and the land must also connect to the ocean. The borderline where the purpose for the land and the purpose for the ocean overlap can only be found on the coastline. In the future, when the need for both the land and ocean are recognized, the coastline will be the most important thing. I believe that a time will come when the coastal lands will become more expensive than any other plot of land. (128-249, 1983.8.28)

Why am I involved in the marine products industry? Why am I making ships in Alabama? If the theology students do not want to come to Ocean Church, I will make the women into captains, and then have them bring the men and slap their cheeks saying, "You scoundrels! How can you, a man, not do this when I am doing it?" I will have these women captains bring and guide the men at Ocean Church. If any of them refuses to go on the boats, the women should slap their cheeks. If the men refuse to board, I will make the women into captains and have them do this job. (116-326, 1982.1.2)

2.2. The ocean providence centering on South America

2.2.1. The construction of Jardim, the New Eden

How uncomfortable is it for you to go to Jardim? You have to long for Jardim; even though compared to other places, it may be a place that you never wish to visit again. You have to shed tears from your desire to go there. You should yearn for it when you look at the moon. You should yearn for it when you look at the sun. You should look at all the life forms and all of the creation that are under the care of that sun and expose your innermost feelings. You should eliminate from your heart anything that would give reason for you to offer conditions of sacrificial offerings before a sorrowful God. Jardim is the original Eden where creation is gathered, like a museum of the universe.

Therefore, Jardim is a focal area of all creation. You have to go to Jardim where the primitive creation exists and shed your blood and sweat for at least three years. You have to labor for three years for the sake of the liberation of the homeland. You have to labor in water. Because water represents the world, you have to build heaven amidst the water.

You must also build what the True Parents have built. (303-157, 1999.8.17)

We must quickly care for and restore the creation that perished due to the Fall. Once more, we must disseminate into this world the species that became extinct in the past. That is why we need a bird museum, for there are over 1,500 species of birds. We should make 1,500 separate bird museums, and also insect museums. Once these museums are made, the people of the world will visit Jardim as an educational center for children, since Jardim is where the museums emerged within God's providence. We are developing Jardim in order to create an environment in which God can find joy upon seeing His creation. That means Jardim is Eden. Many people have said that the returning Lord is going to first appear at that place. (294-56, 1998.6.10)

What does the word Jardim mean? It can mean, "Entering the place of the Fall." It is named Jardim because Satan invaded the position of our first ancestors. To our ancestors who had fallen in the Garden of Eden, Satan says, "Pantanal" which means, "I am selling you." Satan is selling you and saying, "Salobra – try saving [them]." Salobra means, "resurrecting [them]." These words suggest these meanings in Korean. (294-56, 1998.6.10)

The best kind of water in Brazil is muddy-yellow water. The muddy-yellow river is called the Golden River. Clear water, on the other hand, is called a Crystal or Silver River. We bought land in the delta area, where these two rivers meet, and there we built our Jardim base. (285-136, 1997.4.21)

It would be very nice to make a fish farm here. There is a lot of excitement in Paraguay because it has a surplus of electricity; and by controlling the temperature of lakes, fish from the south can be raised in the north. If you can control the temperature in the northern area for fish that live here in Miranda around Jardim, you will have people from both the south and the north come here to look at the fish.

If, in the southern region, you say, "I only like Alaska," then you will be a failure. You have to say that you like both Alaska and the southern areas if you want to pass the test. If someone can follow my direction to live in Alaska in the morning and then in South America in the evening, and agree to live in that way his entire life and more, then he can become the owner who can rule over all of Alaska and the world of the south. God wants to meet that kind of person. (276-77, 1996.2.4)

There is only one Iguaçu Falls. As a tourist spot it is second to none. You can swim there. There are Dorado and many other kinds of fish. The fish are always biting, and if you give them food, they will jump into your catch of fish. If children go there, they would make a loud commotion, demanding to live there. People in nearby areas wonder, "Why

is Rev. Moon interested in Jardim?" But when they visit, they exclaim, "Wow! It is like heaven here. The state government was not aware of this. They may feel like they were deprived of this land by Rev. Moon!" That is why the state is forced to help me. (279-198, 1996.8.4)

We are raising many species of parrots on our Jardim farm. Parrots can live together with people naturally. The ostriches frequently come to us because we give them food. They have become so close to the people now that they do not run away even when someone approaches them with food. I am thinking of creating a world where Adam can mingle together with creation, just like the time when God was happy to gaze upon His creation. That is what I am doing now. (278-103, 1996.5.1)

I love water. Water is the source of all life. Water embraces and absorbs everything. There are two rivers in Jardim: the Miranda River and Plata River, which are like yang and yin. The water in the Plata River is clear, whereas the water in the Miranda River is muddy. Usually, people run away when there is muddy water, but yesterday I saw a clear stream of water being drawn into a whirlpool, without any resistance. With dignity, the clear water joined the muddy water and changed its color. Yet as the days go by, the water gains the strength to regain its color and purify itself as it continues flowing. (276-140, 1996.2.18)

No matter how dirty the water, it knows how to balance itself. People should also know how to balance themselves. My coming here to Jardim does not mean I have some special relationship with Brazil. There are people living here representing the five colors of different races. Although I do not speak their language, I do not think that they are a different species. They are my kin – my younger brothers and sisters. I am meeting them again after living separately for six thousand years. That is why they naturally welcome me with joy, although we do not share the same language, habits and customs. (276-90, 1996.2.4)

In the future, this place will have great value. It is a valuable place now and so I have come here to the Pantanal. That is why I think we should buy land here, in both Salobra and Jardim. The Pantanal can connect us with this area. We are connecting with the Pantanal. (293-263, 1998.6.1)

In the future, this place will become a tourist attraction that will be known worldwide for its scenic beauty. I am deciding what it is that can bring together both the spiritual and physical worlds. It is where water and land are linked together. What is interesting is that there is grass on the surface of the water. Here, where land and water meet, I am making the decisions for all these things and advancing God's providence. (293-272, 1998.6.2)

The Unification Church made the Jardim Declaration. I have announced

the second forty-year course. We are restoring Eden, which means that we have returned to Eden. We must go back to Eden and establish a standard of equilibrium for God's absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience. That is why, in Jardim, I proclaimed the standard of absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience. By doing so, I can take care of the entire world and all of creation before the Fall, which were created on the foundation of absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience, and have access to it within the same sphere. That is why I am educating people in Jardim.

Blessed families have risen up on the vertical standard, but have not stood on the horizontal standard in Jardim. Therefore, from now on, families must be established that can live together with God on the horizontal standard. To facilitate this, I have made an education center for ideal families aimed toward world peace, and I have been re-educating the families that have been blessed until now. I must train them again with the contents enabling them to join God's absolute glorious family. That is the family training, taking place in Jardim. (294-319, 1998.8.9)

If we are going to have classes for elementary, middle and high school students in Jardim, we will need eight classrooms. I have developed a program to build an elementary school and high school that can accommodate twelve classrooms. I am laying the foundation for two thousand people to come anytime to Jardim and to live there. With blood and sweat, I am preparing the educational foundation with the lecture hall as the focus. I am preparing to build an elementary, middle, and high school with a college – starting first with the elementary school. There are thirty-three cities around Jardim, and most of them have middle and high school facilities.

Presently, I am making all the preparations here in the headquarters of Jardim to set up a system for the elementary, middle, and high school, as well as college. The purpose is to educate the bright people in this area and to disperse them to the entire nation in the future. That is why 2,500 people can be accommodated here. I am now building a lecture hall that can hold 10,000 people. This will become a venue for the thirty-three cities in this state to come together in harmony. The Brazilian government is unable to achieve this. (281-295, 1997.3.9)

The education plan for Jardim is to teach about the marine products industry, forestry, farming, and also about manufacturing. Since I know the overall details for this, I am having each city function as a headquarters. I am thinking of expanding the same model that was built in Jardim to create a university, centering on colleges based on that system. This is very interesting.

Uruguay had thirty-three independence leaders. There were thirty-three patriots who were at the March First Independence Movement of Korea. The

Americas have thirty-three nations. An interesting fact is that thirty-three cities are located in the state where Jardim is located. It is providential that all the things were brought together centering on those thirty-three patriots and are now completely and automatically falling into place. In Jardim there is a prophecy that says, "A person from the East will come and build his stronghold in Jardim. If his name becomes widely known that person is the coming Messiah." The Indians already know about this. They know that a Korean will come to Jardim to initiate a movement to reform everything including the ideology, and that this person will be the Messiah. There are signs that indicate a possibility that all the Indians will be drawn into this. (281-297, 1997.3.9)

I can feel that God truly exists. There were thirty-three leaders that were part of the *Mansei* Movement for the Independence of Korea. Uruguay is on the exact opposite side of the globe from Korea. The Uruguayan independence movement had thirty-three leaders. There are thirty-three nations in the Americas. I am now working in Jardim. There are thirty-three cities in that area. It is truly mystifying. There are thirty-three major cities around that area. That is really extraordinary. (281-245, 1997.2.14)

I researched an area with a radius of two hundred kilometers from Jardim to see what kind of fish inhabited the area. I explored the area while being bitten by mosquitoes. Did I do that for money? Did I do that for fame? Did I do that for political support? I did it to save dying people. They are my brothers. If I do not think that way, then who will save the people of the world? Did any politician or nation ever think about that? With this foundation, we will dig up all the raw material resources in the ground and export them. I will do it the way they want. If they need a factory, I will build it. If there is something they need, I will provide it. I am someone who is capable of doing such things. (276-196, 1996.2.19)

Once we have four hundred kilometers of land in Jardim, I will build a fish powder factory. France, Italy, Germany, America, Japan and other advanced nations conducted studies on this source of food, but they failed to accomplish what we were successful in developing. The entire world will make fish powder and pave the way for distributing food. Since transportation is the problem, we are telling the UN and the Red Cross, "Together let's save the afflicted people of the world!" In the farming area, within the four hundred kilometer area of Jardim, I have planted beans, corn, manioc and other crops. Everything harvested from there is made into powder, and then I will increase the amount twenty times to save the afflicted people.

Then where can we catch fish? Where can we make fish powder? There are many rivers here. We can make a lake and a fishing spot to catch fish. We are buying all this for afflicted people. A live, fresh fish can become powder in ten minutes. Is this something that can

be welcomed in Jardim or not? (276-194, 1996.2.19)

The afflicted people in Third World countries know that I am going through hardships to save them. The word is out, and they all know that I am making fish powder out of fish. They know that I have made a farm in Jardim, and that I am making preparations for building a powder factory. In the future, all human beings will become members of the Unification Church. When you think about this, would these people come to Jardim or not? They would all try to visit the places where I have been or where I have left my name. Each of those places has become Holy Ground.

The people of the world will sing the praises of my meritorious foundation of having gone through hardships to save humanity by raising fish. All people will hasten their footsteps, and their cries for building the heavenly kingdom will resonate throughout the world. (277-142, 1996.4.7)

Brazil and Uruguay have abundant resources that enable people to have their own ranches and lead self-sufficient lives. I am thinking of educating people who are going to farm in Africa, by having them make a model farm, plant trees and do all sorts of things. For this reason, when they leave, I plan to send them off by giving them three hundred cows, so that they can be given a ranch in their countries. They will compete against each other in 160 nations. They will take the young animals they nurtured here. You are left with nothing if you keep spending the money. Yet the more you make use of your cows, the more you will prosper. You are all people who have lived a sorry life, but now you can become the owner of a world-level ranch, or an owner of a farm. You can also engage in marine industries and in fishing. A global domain is prepared in which you can go anywhere and enjoy yourself. (266-139, 1994.12.22)

When we first came here, a thousand hectares cost 700,000 dollars. They gave us seven hundred cows for 700,000 dollars including the farm. Paraguay is that kind of place. They all raise chickens there. Tractors and the necessary equipment for farming were included. I am going to instruct them how to create an ideal hometown and country.

If you sell your land and donate the money to help buy more land, then in the future I will return it all back to you. Everything will be developed; so nobody will die of hunger. On that farm, you can make a kindergarten, middle and high school, and even a university. Indeed, people of five different colors will live together. If the local area is developed, the plus charge will re-create its partner. Are you interested? Then it will be great. People will be able to fish and hunt there. I am making preparations for something global. (266-139, 1994.12.22)

In that spacious grassland, you will find countless species of fruits, birds and animals. When you extend your fishing rod, you will find loads of fish wherev-

er there is water. If the women who are preparing dinner run out of side dishes, they can go out the back door to where the river flows; they can go fishing and fry their catch. Brazil is that kind of nation. There is no other place like that in the world. That is the only place. If you throw your net out, you can catch a bag full of fish. (267-59, 1994.12.27)

In the future, you can make a fish farm and hunting ground, and run a ranch too. In the spring, numerous fish swim up the river. The Miranda River is nearby, and I will dig a canal from it. Then this river will cover an area equal to at least ten rivers put together. If we can block the river in the spring when the fish come and prevent them from leaving, then we can make a fishing spot throughout the seasons all year round. Then it will become a world-renowned place where we can raise fish and provide fishing spots transcending the seasons. What interests me is the Pantanal Lake, which has 3,600 kinds of fish. I should catch these fish, raise them in a fish farm and create 3,600 fishing spots. I will develop a method to breed those fish and expand this to different places in the world. (270-55, 1995.5.4)

The United States is on top, and South America is at the bottom. I went to the most unpopular mountain district in Brazil, the country the United States detests most, in South America, the continent the United States appears to dislike as a whole. I went to this place called Jardim and made friends with birds, snakes and fish while being bitten by mosquitoes. A founder of a religion is walking around barefooted. When you see me, you would probably say, "That is not the founder of our Unification Church." I am leading such a life that people would say that I am a genuine farmer or fisherman. In one year and six months, the foundation I laid in America for twenty-four years was elevated at once. (293-293, 1998.6.7)

I have made Bridgeport University and Sun Moon University. Now I will make a university in South America along with a kindergarten, middle and high school in Jardim. I am making all the preparations necessary to have people go through this university. The other universities in the world are not needed. What use is it to go anywhere else? They have all become a degenerate group of homosexuals and lesbians. Other universities are like a lighthouse that destroys the moral foundation. They are the bases for God's enemy, something like Satan's army base and the seat of Satan's power. They are exerting their influence from there. We have to destroy their influence. They claim that God is dead. (303-231, 1999.8.31)

2. 2. 2. The Pantanal Holy Ground

The Pantanal wetlands are twice the size of Japan. There are 3,600 species of fish in the Pantanal wetlands. I am telling you that 3,600 species of fish live in those waters. Then the question is how many lakes and bodies of water are there

worldwide that have the same water temperature and similar circumstances. I am studying each of these categories in order to create places where we can raise fish. Then this can be done worldwide. (271-39, 1995.8.15)

There are many places in the Pantanal where nature has been untouched and remains the same as it was when first created by God. In other places, many species could not maintain their standard and have become extinct. Yet this area around the Pantanal and the Amazon valley remains untouched. (296-20, 1998.10.1)

Here, nature exists and a microcosm of creation remains as it was when first created by God.

Why did I come here? I am not the only who came. God came with me and loves all of creation that was sacrificed throughout history. In Noah's time, the fish were not judged. I came here to the Pantanal to pave a path for creation to return through indemnity, by creating a bond with the fish that were untouched by the flood judgment. We must love all things that were created by God. I have the responsibility to protect this. We should increase the number of species. We should not exterminate the species, thus making the creation less than it was when first created by God. (300-266, 1999.3.24)

There are many kinds of plants and 3,600 species of fish in the Pantanal. There are 3,000 species of fish in the Amazon River, but 3,600 species in the Pantanal. Imagine so many types of fish. There are countless types of creation from plants, crops, and trees. God did not create as if performing magic tricks like that of Hong Gil-dong where things simply appear with the command of telling something to be. God had a plan and created these things so that all their structural contents were in line with the laws of the natural world and climatic conditions. (291-164, 1998.3.11)

The Pantanal is a place that can become a primordial treasure house for the animals and plants that were originally created by God. I am establishing an international movement to protect and preserve God's creations. Will you or will you not cooperate with me?

Humanity fell because of Eve. That is why I ordered the Japanese national messiahs to take the lead in the Pantanal activities. Is that something to be grateful or resentful about? A mother would sell her own flesh to raise her child. You have to help in raising plants and animals. If Japan can connect her lineage to the land of this world, it will automatically become Japan's possession. (304-255, 1999.11.8)

There are 3,600 species of fish in the Amazon Valley and in the hinterlands of the Pantanal. There are 3,600 species, but all of creation remains in its original form when created by God in the Amazon Valley and the Paraguay River Valley. Centering on those 3,600 species of fish, I am making a fish farm. Those

who are interested in fish will come here, even if they are told not to come. Since we have a newspaper publishing company, I am spreading the word that we have a fish farm that raises 3,600 species of fish. If we said, "We breed 36 species of fish, and this number will soon rise to 360, and in a couple of years we will have 3,600 species of fish," then would people who are interested in fish come to our farm or not? (292-24, 1998.3.27)

You cannot imagine how many fish live in a place like the Pantanal. If you throw something in the water, it quickly vanishes. Like lightning, it disappears in an instant. Even something dirty is cleaned up by the fish instantly. There are many species of fish, all mixed together, and each species feeds on different things. When they eat they are tirelessly cleaning up the waters. Essentially they are cleaning the water. They are not living for their own sake. They are bringing order to the environment and cleaning up their surroundings as they live together while helping one another. This is the cooperative system in nature. Also, in the Pantanal there is a plant called water hyacinth. If you examine the back of one of its leaves, you will find many bugs eating it. If given the opportunity, those bugs would eat up all the leaves. However, since there is a fish that eats those particular bugs, then the plant survives. (293-283, 1998.6.17)

The Surubi is a bottom-feeding fish that looks like a catfish. The Boga fish likes running water, and the Dorado is a fish that lives in places where the water currents are fast. The Boga disappears the minute you drop your line and bait. The Dorado rarely swallows the hook, but quickly eats away your bait. Tell me, are these easy fish to catch or not? Should I teach you how to catch fish that are difficult to catch, or fish that are easy to catch? If you want to catch Surubi, you have to fish at night. (293-232, 1998.5.26)

Some fish even have vegetarian eating habits. This Dorado is intrepid – no matter where it goes. When it bites, it emits a noise that sounds like "sheek." When five people fish on the same boat and cast their lines out, if a rod moves, it is difficult to distinguish one line from another. They do not know which line has a bite and begin asking, "Whose is it? Whose is it?" They look at their rods and one exclaims in amazement, "Hey, it's mine!" This would happen three, four, five, or six times. That is a great experience. The light of the evening sun, the golden hue of the fish, and that brilliant view cannot be appreciated without the pleasure of catching Dorado. It is an enjoyable sight that everyone should experience at least once in his life. It is human nature to want to personally experience this firsthand. (293-232, 1998.5.26)

The Pantanal is where land, water and plants live together. It is truly exquisite. Creatures from the time of Creation have survived there in the Amazon Valley, in the Pantanal. They have carried on their line of species while living in

nature untouched since the time of Creation. That is why the Pantanal is the world's Holy Ground. (294-56, 1998.6.10)

You will see so many things when you go to the Pantanal. The Pacu fish eat young alligators. When they do, they do not say, "Hey, do you have dung in your belly!" When a Pacu eats bugs, do you think it would wipe off the human excrement or dog dung that is on the bug's wings, or would it just eat it whole? Those people who do not know how to swallow things as a whole cannot unify the world. You have to know how to swallow things as a whole. You have to eat both good things and bad things. Don't fallen people discard the bad and eat only the good things? Love is not that way. Love takes in and digests even hell. (295-186, 1998.8.28)

The larger fish in the Pantanal swallow the smaller ones. The small fish have excrements, urine, internal organs and filth, but the larger fish just swallows that altogether. It swallows the head, tail, and all the smelly parts. Isn't a person who can swallow things as a whole a prince of the world of the liberated realm? That is how I see it. (295-220, 1998.8.28)

You should go to the Pantanal and "Swallow everything as a whole! Swallow everything as a whole!" You should go to the world of fish and swallow it as a whole. That is why I am teaching you how to swallow things as a whole in these lands. You should not become like the weak that cannot swallow their clan, family, ancestors and relatives as a whole. You have to become the strong. (295-237, 1998.8.28)

If you go to the Pantanal in the summer, you will see that the fish will swallow any other fish that is just slightly smaller than itself. Even a codfish would gulp down a smaller baby shark without hesitation. You would swallow anything that is smaller than you. Isn't that great? If the larger kind swallowed only the smaller kind, the smaller kind would protest to God saying, "God, why are we the only ones being eaten?" When God created everything from water to heaven and earth, He made it so that the larger kind could swallow the smaller kind, regardless of the species. That is why if you are of the larger kind, you can swallow the smaller kind and thus nobody complains. (296-90, 1998.11.3)

The Pantanal is a world of relations, based on swallowing the other as a whole. Pantanal means, "selling yourself completely." It does not matter if it is for some larger purpose. Therefore, the Pantanal spirit is in swallowing both the good and the bad and digesting it to exert influence for one's survival as one grows. Wasn't God's will also to swallow both the satanic world and the world of goodness? (296-305, 1998.11.18)

God will restore human beings back to the world before the Fall. God has to take care of all the enemies in order to restore Adam's perfected world before the Fall. There were no enemies in that

world. Everybody was like brothers and had only the concept that they were one family. It is about swallowing one another. In the fish world in the Pantanal, the larger fish swallow the smaller fish without regard, whether there is something filthy or not. It swallows the excrements of the internal organs and everything else. (297-170, 1998.11.19)

The Pantanal ideology is about swallowing something, regardless of whether it is smeared with dung or germs. Should you take away the germs and wipe it clean before eating it? If you do so, you would have nothing left to eat and would have to run away. Even if you swallow poison instead of excrements, you should assimilate it with your body, and even if your body were to die, you should have the mentality that you can digest the poison. That kind of mentality is great, and its digestive powers are strong. Even if you take in poison that is strong enough to kill insects, or if you eat a fish that took in poison, you would think, "I can even digest poison."

I am doing that right now, focusing on the Pantanal. In the ideal realm of Adam, we find God, who is the Cosmic Messiah and the returning Lord, who is the world Messiah. In the ideal realm of Adam, we also find the national messiah who is the Abel-type king of that nation, the tribal messiah who is the Abel-type tribal king, and the family messiah who is the Abel-type family king. All of these belong to the ideal realm of Adam. Among God, the returning Lord, the national messiah, the tribal messiah, and the family messiah, if the tribal messiah falls sick, he can be replaced on the family level; if the national messiah falls sick, he can be replaced; and if the world Messiah falls sick, he can be replaced. God does not fall sick, but everything should be prepared for His replacement. Only then can the realm of the partner be established in which a circular motion can take place between the subject partner and object partner. (296-92, 1998.11.3)

I like the Pantanal because all kinds of fish are living there. One important thing I learned in the Pantanal is that everything – every single thing, can be swallowed. For example, a large alligator can swallow a person. But there is a fifteen-meter long snake in Paraguay that can swallow an alligator. There is a snake that can swallow a person as easily as we would pick up a bean with our chopsticks. Snakes of all sizes live in that area and swallow their prey whole. A fish would swallow a baby whale if it were smaller than itself. If something goes into its mouth, it swallows it. Isn't that great? I also think that I have to become an expert in swallowing anything that goes into my mouth. That is what I learned. You have to swallow to live here. Women who brush off dust or sweep away the filth cannot live here. (301-154, 1999.4.25)

People can live in the Pantanal with just one tenth, one hundredth, or one ten thousandth of a Japanese person's income. People from an island nation

have been blessed with this creation. I am preserving the Pantanal for the sake of Japan. Japanese people are not aware of this, are you? I love creation to liberate creation's realm of lamentation. In the Bible it says that all of creation has been groaning in labor pains. The lamentation of creation is also the lamentation of humankind. What is this? There is nothing more lamentable than the fact that humanity could not receive the Blessing centering on God. (295-199, 1998.8.28)

We have to dismantle the kind of civilization represented by New York City and Washington, D.C. We have to go back to more primitive times and to return to nature. That is why I went back to nature, and in the Pantanal, I live in constant love with nature. The great oceans are pure. How clean the water is! There is clean water and clean air. Nature here is clean. How good this is! (295-277, 1998.9.8)

From the day I first knew God's will, I loved the spirit world and humanity. In loving humanity, you have to love it more than your own family and nation. You must love humanity and then love creation. You have to love everything on the earth and love the world underwater. It is a process of re-creation. From God's love, we must connect with humanity. From humanity's love, we must connect with the earth, and by doing so, connect with the realm of water. That is why I am offering my utmost devotion in the Pantanal. (296-17, 1998.10.1)

I can never forget the Pantanal. In this serious place I received God's request regarding Maria Park's family through Dr. Lee Sang-hun in the spirit world. How mortified and sorry God must have been! When you think about that situation, your insides should be boiling and your bones must protrude out of your body. (296-43, 1998.10.11)

Since going to the Pantanal, what have I done there? I called the Unification Church members in North and South Korea to go there. All Blessed Families must go to the Pantanal. It is an imperative. People say many things about going, but if they cannot afford a plane ticket, then they should just walk here. If the father is sick, the wife and son should go with him on their backs. Once they get there after going through such hardships and suffering, will they say, "Oh, we are ruined!"? Will they say, "Oh, we feel dead! We are better off dead!"? Soon after that, let us say when they decide to go back home, as hard as it was hard getting there willingly, and even if the way back is even more difficult, they will somehow find the strength to go back home. But those who are hate to go there will all drop to the rear when they try to return. That is logical. (299-190, 1999.2.15)

In summary, the Pantanal's influence will become a great issue in the world's history. The question is how to settle this issue here on earth. The world can become a battlefield, a dangerous place where human beings may fall into

the pit of destruction if they make one wrong turn. We must do something to prevent this at all costs. Therefore, I educated the national messiahs during this time in the Pantanal, for the purpose of declaring war in advance before their nations. In the near future, the national messiahs should become environmentalists and create a sentry post in 180 locations, using the rally and everything that I prepared. Then they should influence the scholars, and the presidents of universities in each nation worldwide who are interested in the environment. If they are educated, then you can influence the executive agents of that nation and the core personnel in any of the administrative departments. (300-182, 1999.3.3)

The Pantanal's water world is connected to fish powder. Until now, people could not make sufficient food out of the fish they caught. But now, based on the studies I initiated in Alaska, I am making food resources out of fish. England, Japan, the Soviet Union, and other advanced nations such as Germany competed in studies on how to make fish powder into food, but they have all failed. They all fell away. (300-185, 1999.3.3)

For Korea and Japan, the Pantanal is at the other end of the pole. The Pantanal is at the end of the earth. But the Original Holy Ground, Root Holy Ground, and Holy Ground of Victory can all be found there. This is something tremendous. The Original Holy Ground is set up in our hotel in the Pantanal. Whether there is water, or something else, is not a problem. A water palace will be built there. (304-110, 1999.9.10)

When a holy ground is made in the Pantanal, the Unification Church members must go there and bring their families. You must bring all your relatives since it is the starting point for going toward Heaven. You should bring your relatives and have your ancestors commemorate the day you were blessed in the Unification Church. In the presence of Heaven, you should offer devotion until your future descendants, ancestors in heaven, and the people of your nation are connected to Heaven's blessing through you. This is the duty of the families that were blessed, which must be carried out until the completion of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. With this in mind, you must once more critically evaluate your lifestyle. Unless you do, you cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. True Parents must take responsibility for everything. (302-250, 1999.6.14)

The Pantanal is the focus point – the root. It is the source. That is why the families of the Unification Church must visit this place once every four years. They should prepare for a great migration. Already tourists have increased in number by three to five times. Because of the Pantanal Rally, this place has become famous worldwide. The effects will be tremendous if we do this rally two or three more times. If we do not buy land as I planned by next year, it will

increase in value at least ten times. Then Japan's indemnity will increase. (303-344, 1999.9.9)

Human beings must prepare a holy ground that can be praised for all eternity in the world, even if they have to go through endless suffering. If that happens, the results of their endeavors will appear. Therefore, the issue is about who will be the first to begin making that effort. Should it begin from the father or from the mother? When the father stands up, does he go around the mother's side, or does the mother go around the father? The mother goes around the father. As a nation, Japan must preserve the holy ground and extol its name. That is why the Japanese national messiahs are taking responsibility for the management of the Pantanal. (304-110, 1999.9.10)

I fought with the mosquitoes in the Pantanal to the extent that my entire body has been scarred by mosquito bites. In the mosquito world, the mosquitoes are saying, "Who has tasted the blood of the True Parents? Come here quickly!" That is why mosquitoes come to me the most. When I drop my fishhook into the water, the big fish bite first on my hook. Then many other fish follow. It is strange. Even God thinks it's a mystery. (278-97, 1996.5.1)

2. 2. 3. Animal museum

Human beings are responsible for preventing the species created by God from becoming extinct. How many species have human beings brought to extinction? There are 3,600 species of fish in the Pantanal. I have made a fish farm, and I can multiply them at any time, in places around the world that have a similar environment, so that they never will become extinct. My work is focused on these things, and I am now going to begin that kind of vast project. (300-88, 1999.3.1)

If I have made fish farms for 3,600 species of fish and if your children studied each of those fish, then we would have 3,600 people with a doctorate degree. Therefore, you should be grateful that I have prepared a way for your descendants to succeed in life. If each were to write a doctoral thesis, we would have 3,600 doctors. Should you continue to tirelessly support this work or not? Why? It is to understand how much God loved the various creations when He created them. (279-39, 1996.6.9)

I am going to build a museum and have every type of creation exhibited there. I will prepare specimens and put them on display. I will create a farm for the fruits of the sea, where you feel like being in nature just by looking at it. I will begin a movement to create museums in each town as a symbol of love for animals. Then the town with the most species can become a world-renowned tourist spot. I will also gather many species of plants and trees to put on display. (288-72, 1997.10.31)

Wouldn't you be interested if thou-

sands of different kinds of fish were swimming about under your boat? There are 3,600 species of fish in the Pantanal alone. If buildings are constructed for 3,600 fish farms, then would the people of the world come and visit that museum or not? There would be a flood of people, including elementary school students. (295-38, 1998.8.16)

There are 3,600 species of fish in the Amazon Valley and in the hinterlands of the Pantanal. All of creation remains in its original form as it was when it was created by God. That is how it is in the Amazon Valley and the Paraguay River Valley. Centering on those 3,600 species of fish, I am making a fish farm. Those who are interested in fish will come here, even if they are told not to come. (292-24, 1998.3.27)

Water temperature varies depending on altitude. Fish living in the ocean differ, depending on the temperature. That is why, in rivers, the fish go to the area that has the same temperature as where they live, and stay there to lay their eggs. Even if the area is different in the east, south, and north, if there is no difference in the temperature, the same type of fish will live there, thus creating a wide diversity. That is why there are countless species of fish.

In Paraguay, which is in the middle of the continent, there is a river that flows vertically down through South America. It is seventy meters deep and in some places reaches one hundred meters. Consequently, all kinds of transport ships and large vessels can go upstream. Small rivers with an abundance of fish are all connected to that primary river. We can build a refrigeration factory in such places and store all the fish we catch. We would need electricity. There is an endless and untapped supply of electricity. (267-267, 1995.1.20)

If fish were constantly being caught, they would all disappear. That is why we need to breed and to raise fish. I am thinking of building a zoo with the animals from the Pantanal and the Amazon River Valley in South America. A city must appear in which insects are raised. Then whenever someone strikes a bell, the birds that want to eat the insects will come to eat. A city must appear in which insects can be raised to feed the birds. The birds are dying because there are no insects. Towns must appear in which insects, birds, and animals are raised. (292-24, 1998.3.27)

There are currently 3,600 species of fish in the Pantanal. In Korea are there even 36 kinds of fish? Korea is no match for the Pantanal. In the future, a fish farm taller than a city building must be created to raise these 3,600 kinds of fish. Imagine controlling the temperature for each type of fish with a computer – those from the sea, those living in fresh water, those living in the arctic regions, and those living in tropical areas. We could raise 3,600 species of fish from the entire world in one building and using buildings in cities would not be a problem. (296-188, 1998.11.9)

There are many mountains in Argentina, Brazil, and in South America as a whole. Because the water there is clean, animals and plants can be raised there. Some mountains are connected to plateaus that are 1,300 meters high. Therefore, you can breed any type of animal, and even raise fish. I am interested in that place. I will catch all 3,600 types of fish, make an exhibition hall to show them, and set the admission fees at a high rate. I will make a museum, and it will become a popular tourist spot. People who are interested in fish will come here for sure to see the 3,600 species of fish. (276-201, 1996.2.19)

How wonderful it will be to educate the people who come and let them live amidst nature! To build a town that can be connected to modern civilization and city life, I will create a museum displaying the 3,600 species of insects in this vast area. All the insect scholars should come to this place. I will also make a fish farm that can raise 3,600 types of fish, and then I will make a bird zoo and a botanical garden. After that, I will make a zoo for people – a human zoo. It will be a real zoo, but a human zoo. (288-75, 1997.10.31)

2.3. Ocean providence centering on Korea

2.3.1. Boat of Heavenly Victory

From the 1960s I began taking interest in the ocean. I have been in the ocean industry for twenty-two years. In 1963, I designed and built the Boat of Heavenly Victory. I had Eu Hyo-min and Eu Hyo-young work at sea so that the boat could ride the five oceans, but they did not like the sea. (276-314, 1996.3.10)

The Boat of Heavenly Victory was made in 1963. But Eu Hyo-young did not like boats, water, or the waves. When a storm comes, you should be able to enjoy riding waves the size of houses in the sea. He should have become a man who could find value in what he was doing, even if he were to die. But he said that he was afraid and that he did not like the sea. If we had advanced to Alaska from that time, we could rapidly have developed worldwide. (291-276, 1998.3.17)

With a heart of serving others, I have lived for the sake of God, humanity, the world, and all of creation. Didn't I liberate creation? That is why I am living for the sake of the ocean. In the 1960s, there was not one mountain that I had not visited. In 1963, I designed the Boat of Heavenly Victory. Who in this world would call their boat, "Boat of Heavenly Victory"? There was a reason behind all this. I have been building boats until now in order to establish the standard of Heaven's victory.

I started building boats even before coming to America. I began making boats in 1963, and I have been sailing boats to this day. During the years 1973, 1983, 1993, I have been going on boats for twenty-four years. I have ridden in boats from morning to midnight. At times I would go on boats until three

o'clock in the morning in Alaska. I rode in boats with single-mindedness and resolve. (294-54, 1998.6.10)

I built a boat in Korea named Boat of Heavenly Victory. What victory? Heavenly victory, of course, is where Heaven has won victory because God's will has been fulfilled. I had already begun fulfilling God's will from long ago. I made the Boat of Heavenly Victory and talked about occupying the oceans of the world. One member, Eu Hyo-young, was constantly saying, "Boat, boat!" So I made him one, but he did not like going on boats – maybe because he was old. He said, "Father, I cannot go out to sea when the waves surge like that." How can a fisherman think like that? He must go out to the sea until his death. (294-175, 1998.6.14)

2.3.2. Ilheung marine

Aren't you church leaders? In the future, no exceptions will be made, even for company workers. Unification church families share the same fate. Unification Church means a church where everything is united. That is why if you have a company, it should be called Company Unification Church. Unification Industries would mean a Unification Industries Church. Yesterday I came back from Jejudo where I had visited the company there called Ilheung Marine Industries. I told the president of that company, "You must now create an Ilheung Marine Church. As a church, you should prepare to serve and attend the women divers in Jejudo more than you would your own mother or bride." (178-131, 1988.6.1)

I built a shipyard in Jejudo, but people thought it was not going to work out. So I moved the shipyard to Mokpo, but again they were saying, "This is not going to succeed." The headquarters for the Ilheung Marine Industries should move from Jejudo to Seoul. That is how it works in the world. When Heaven tries to give blessings, if the recipient is not ready, then Heaven departs from there. (178-155, 1988.6.1)

Until now, I have invested billions to build, refine, and inspire Ilheung Marine Industries. (184-156, 1988.12.27)

Ilheung Marine Industries is in Korea. I educated about 110,000 Japanese and Korean women and had them do a Sisterhood Bridge Ceremony. Now our people and needed personnel are even in the low-echelon departments. That is why I appointed five vice-presidents – a representative from Gyeongsang Province, a representative from Jeolla Province, a representative from Chungcheong Province, a representative from Seoul, and a representative from Gyeonggi Province. They were all women. I appointed two, but now I have to appoint three more. (262-247, 1994.8.1)

2.3.3. Shipyards

People in Mokpo are unfortunate. I feel sorry for people in the Jeolla Prov-

ince. Those from Jeolla Province must feel good. Since the nation has no sympathy for the Jeolla Province and has abandoned this area, out of sympathy for the people there, I was going to build a shipyard in Mokpo. But this was going to take too long, so I bought a shipyard. It was reported that it was the largest shipyard in Mokpo, so I went there to see how large it was. I had traveled around America to look at shipyards with my own eyes. In Mokpo they were offering the shipyard for 1.8. billion, but the price dropped to 1.3. billion and then to 800 million. I am good at making a deal when I buy something. I am pretty tight-fisted and the best at cutting prices when it comes to buying something. (173-139, 1988.2.14)

I established a shipyard in Mokpo, not for the sake of making money, but to teach people how to build a good boat. Since this is the first time, the local people always protest. They may oppose us, but we must build a good boat and gain a monopoly over the boats in the Sea of Korea and Busan. When that happens, people will constantly flock to this place. Then I will give out one piece at a time. Despite the current situation, that is how one should live. That is what I am proposing to do. Then we will never go to ruin. We will not go to ruin, no matter how hard other people pray at altars for our ruin. Heavenly fortune shall protect us. (180-333, 1988.10.5)

Everybody hopes to receive blessings, but to do so you need to prepare to receive such blessings. Blessings would just pass by those who are not prepared. I had hoped that the provincial government would have carried out their plans. If the people in Seongsanpo had done that quickly, then I would have built a refrigeration company and built them an 8,000 ton or 10,000 ton ship. But the provincial government did not support our purchase of the land. People there did all sorts of things to prevent the sale of their land and they collaborated to sell it at an inflated price. (188-9, 1989.2.16)

Once you start to catch fish, you need boats to transport them. This naturally leads to the shipping business. We make long distance oil tankers that weigh tens of thousands to carry and transport oil from the Middle East. If we hope to become a global shipyard, we should prepare everything that we need, starting from the very bottom. I have secured the technology that will enable us to build anything as long as we have a blueprint. After that, if we plan to catch fish, we must make nets. We already have the training that enables people to make nets and do just about everything. (262-243, 1994.8.1)

We will have people with good results teach the technology of our shipyard in Mokpo. Our shipyard in Mokpo is an actual working shipyard. We will teach people the technology to make oil tankers and ships for chemical products using steel and other materials. With such technology, we should make factories in representative nations and the six

continents – Africa, for example. (276-30, 1996.1.2)

I am a fearsome person. When it comes to building ships, I can easily expose anything that people have tried to cover up. When Paul Werner took charge of our shipyard, the Marine Master Shipyard, he went around thinking he was special. I went on the attack by exposing everything that was hidden. I am most feared. I gave instructions for the ship's design. I gave instructions for the entire layout of the newspaper company and won first place in the Olympics for newspaper companies in America. That is how fast I am. Do not think of me as you did in the past. Since I have that special something, I have laid the kind of foundation that no government in the satanic world could have ever done. (276-103, 1996.2.4)

Whenever I visit the shipyard, I can find out how the ship was made and immediately discover what had gone wrong. I give orders saying, "Why did you make this place like this?" The people at our shipyard in Alabama all fear me when I visit them. I expose everything that they hide away. That is why some people say that I am like a phantom. That is the kind of person I am. (287-232, 1997.10.4)

If the person in charge of a business stands as the subject partner, he must create his object partner and develop it. For a shipyard business, then the president of that shipyard and its employees should become one, as subject and object partners. The purpose of becoming one with the business's employees is to revive the nation, or a continent such as South America, or even the entire world. (287-291, 1997.10.16)

I went aboard a boat everyday for twenty-five years because I must promote the marine industry with my own hands. Even today, I came back from the Okpo shipyard. I went there to inspect that shipyard, to decide whether to buy it, or enter North Korea and build a bigger shipyard in the delta area of Manchuria and the Soviet Union. I alone thought about those things. Only then can the North Koreans be saved. (290-210, 1998.2.24)

We have to quickly make our own boats. We should make them in the Mokpo shipyard and go fishing using a reel and line with multiple hooks. Boats for catching tilefish should be comparatively fast. For instance, to go about a distance that takes about three hours, it should only take about one-and-a-half hours. The One Hope boat that we have now produced does not sink. Therefore, six people can board it and go anywhere. Even if a typhoon comes, you can survive as long as the anchor cable is not severed. Typhoons are not a problem. Large boats may sink, but our boat does not. Since I developed that boat, I have laid a global foundation among tuna catchers. We should make use of our boat, so that we can go anywhere. (291-279, 1998.3.17)

Originally, I was going to deal with Japan and China from here. The boats from China come here to Korea. I made a repair facility in our shipyard to repair them. I told them to repair damaged boats at cost. I told them to guide the Japanese people to the fishing spot I made on Jigwido. Then all the high government officials will fly to this place. Also, I made an airfield in Moseulpo so that planes from China and Japan can freely come and go. It is a private airfield for planes from China, the Soviet Union, and Japan but is off-limits for other nations. (291-303, 1998.3.18)

2.3.4. Developing Jejudo to become an international fishing location

I have been interested in Jejudo for ten years. Jejudo is a military stronghold and will become a more important place in Asia in the future. Tourism development is an issue, but when it comes to the nation's fate, Jejudo's ocean location is most important. (126-157, 1983.4.19)

Jejudo's importance was noted years ago by General Chiang Kai-shek when he said that he could dominate Asia if he was given a naval base on this island. As a military base it is significant. If we consider these things, we can foresee Jejudo functioning as an international free city like Hong Kong. When the financial market is under a free system, it would become an ideal base for espionage activities. In that sense too, Jejudo is important to the military. With this background, we can understand the challenges of doing business in Jejudo. These are reasons to build a foundation for business, and you should start with fishing enterprises. (126-311, 1983.4.30)

Jejudo is naturally becoming an important center in Asia as an ocean gateway for Korea. The island is in a position that is connected to the Pacific Ocean through the East China Sea and the East Sea (Sea of Japan). Therefore, it is most important as a military stronghold. The waters in the port at Moseulpo are deep enough to allow for a significant global military port. (126-311, 1983.4.30)

I have visited every part of the world, but there is no place better than Korea. In terms of climate and the beauty of its mountains and lakes, Korea is truly a nation that is not of this world. In the French countryside I once saw landscape similar to Korea's, but aside from that one location, France is very different from Korea. The mountains in Korea are in their declining years and look pretty – like flower buds. In other parts of the world, Japan for example, the mountains are in their adolescence and are, therefore, craggy and ugly. By just observing the physical aspects of the mountains, you can see that Korea is a beautiful country. It is also a peninsula surrounded on three sides by sea. Korea is blessed with such a natural environment and scenery. (169-136, 1987.10.29)

If you hike up Mount Halla on a clear day, you can see everything below its summit. From that vantage point,

you would feel like touring the whole area, but there are no guidebooks showing how to do that. There are no facilities for touring up the mountain or sailing the adjacent seas. At best, you can drive around the island by car, but this is very boring. For this reason Jejudo needs a cable car. Someone should construct a cable car. (126-313, 1983.4.30)

We should be proud of Mount Halla and Jejudo, but for what reason? I envision a naval base there and an airfield in the middle of Mount Halla. A plane flying from here to Jejudo could scan all four directions. An aircraft carrier could be positioned in the waters near Jejudo. What if tunnels were to be bored into Mount Halla from all four directions? Human beings have that capability. These tunnels and a system of elevators could accommodate tens of thousands of planes. Fuel tanks could be constructed within the mountain. (291-282, 1988.3.17)

The Chinese character je (濟) in Jejudo means "to cross." It means that it is a place to cross over and become the owner. Jejudo is also a nation of priests. The island called Jigwido is interesting. It is like a pillar several hundred meters long, which has been driven down into the sea to make a fishing spot. Jigwido could be linked to the continent with a glass-like tunnel to allow vehicles to travel back and forth. The tunnel could be constructed under the seabed for stability. That kind of age has come. There is nothing more we would need to do here in Jejudo. We should fish, golf, hunt, and then enjoy the casino. We should create a market to sell our goods. There should be interesting things to do. It would be fun to have people go up the mountain on an elevator or cable car, rather than a helicopter, and tour the seas surrounding Jejudo in a speedboat. Japan is only an hour's flight away. (291-246, 1998.3.15)

What would people want to do after ascending Mount Halla and sailing around in the ocean? They would think about fishing! If people had the opportunity to fish in waters off Jejudo, they certainly would. Most people will tell you that Jejudo is famous for its abundance of rocks and women, but its greatest resource is fish. I would like to obtain a permit for making fishing spots around the entire area of Jejudo. The Jigwido area is now being developed, but all seven of its surrounding islands must also be developed. In the future, authorities will have to limit fishing in the waters within three hours of Jejudo. Even if tourists are to fish there, they must be prohibited from using fishing nets. It is legally possible to do that. (126-313, 1983.4.30)

Do not speak ill of Jejudo just because its fish are small. Do you think they would be as good as the fish in Alaska? I once had raw fish from Jejudo. You know how fish are sliced into pieces, don't you? When we tried cutting it up, we found the bones of this fish to be extremely hard. That is not surprising given that fish live around rocky shoals.

If the bones were not hard, they would break. Yet the fish was very tasty. (222-277, 1991.11.3)

How was your experience going around Jigwido? Jejudo is the only place in Korea where you can fish throughout the winter. As part of a volcanic range its rocky structure provides shelter for many small fish and sea bugs. It is better to fish there with a fishing rod than a net. Jejudo is famous for fishing, and that is why it is known so well in Japan. (253-95, 1994.1.9)

With 3,300 people associated with the fishing industry on Jejudo, there are a considerable number of marine-related shops. There are tens of thousands of sporting-goods shops located throughout Korea. Their primary market is the population above the middle class. The shops that focus on the hobby industry are catering to people who are above the middle class. Firearms are also sold in the sports shops that are affiliated with the hobby industry.

The lines used in fishing are expendable commodities. Because they only last about a year many factories are needed to produce them. The demand creates a tremendous industry. If factories were established in Africa, where labor costs are lower, they could provide good opportunities for people to earn a living. I think about these things when I come to Jejudo, and that is why I am thinking of holding fishing and hunting tournaments on the ninth and tenth. These tournaments are being held for world peace. (252-215, 1993.12.30)

Salmon is about the only decent fish in Alaska, but there are many kinds of fish in the Jejudo waters. Because of the variety of fish there, peoples' tastes in fishing are diverse. There is even a special kind of bigheaded, small octopus in Jejudo. Jejudo has also become famous for hunting. So Jejudo can develop the hobby industry with emphasis in boat fishing. Rather than traveling all the way to Kodiak, Alaska, to fish, people can go to Jejudo. The Japanese enjoy fishing in the Jejudo area. It is a good place that can attract tourists. (253-95, 1994.1.9)

People eat a fish called jari on Jejudo. Do you know what a jari is? The last time I went to Jejudo I saw someone catch this fish at sea and then mercilessly hold it by its tail as it was still flopping around. After a moment, he dipped the fish into sushi hot pepper paste, put the fish into his mouth, and chewed on it. People were amazed saying, "Hey, that person there ate that fish and its excrement." Still, he did not get sick. Fish eat what they can digest. If a person eats a fish that is right for his body, then he will not get sick. If he found it was delicious, why would he get sick because of the excrement that entered his body? If he found it to be delicious, ideal nutrients would enter his body and mature like kimchi. That is why he would not get sick, but remain healthy. (218-89, 1991.7.2)

Jejudo is a small fragment of the land that fell away. Young sea gulls come and excrete there. They come to excrete and breed since it is an easy commute. Sea gulls have their babies on islands, don't they? Islands are where all the sea animals have their children. Animals with four legs must go to the land to breed. Don't turtles do that? That is how it is for everything that lives in the ocean, aside from fish. Fish do not have sexual organs as we know them. Some fish have a kind of spot. They all have a line, and the male and female rub this part together to have a relationship. But the sea mammals come to the land to have their babies. That is why Jejudo is important. (291-308, 1998.3.18)

Mount Baekdu is like the husband, and Mount Halla is like the wife. These two are like partners. Mount Baekdu is the husband mountain, and Mount Halla is the female mountain. It is a female mountain because it is in the middle of the ocean. Have you ever heard of people of Jejudo starving? They always have seaweed from the ocean to eat. This is Jejudo, the place where people offer sacrificial rites. That is why if you walk along the shore in the early morning, you will find countless morsels of rice and apples. The women go out with their children to offer sacrificial rites with white rice and apples. If you go out in the early morning, you will find plenty of these things. Sacrificial rites must be offered by people before others see them. That is why in the morning, you will find a variety of food. (284-247, 1997.4.18)

Would it matter if you turned the sea into land if that were done to save the nation? What is so important about Mount Halla? You have to save the nation, even if it means selling Mount Halla. Isn't that so? Does that mean Mount Halla will disappear? It would still be there in the ocean. Since this mountain has been there for tens of thousands of years, you can make a memorial where people would say, "It is the wish of all people for Mount Halla to be leveled down to a plain," and there create a place where the people could come, and where the kings of nations could enter and live. Presidents and all the officials of the royal court would come and participate.

Mount Halla is nothing. If you go to South America, you would see that Mount Halla is really nothing. (291-255, 1998.3.15)

When I went to Jejudo last time, I said, "I would like to donate two pairs of tigers." But somebody argued, "No, that will make trouble." Even though a tiger might pose some danger, it should be free to climb up to the summit of Mount Halla and roar and have its roar blend together with the sound of the ocean waves. Would you like that or would you say, "Oh, I hate the clamorous sound of the waves, but love the tranquility of the mountain?" That is not right. If the waves surge, then there should be a roar from the mountains to balance it. I am speaking about the harmony of heaven and earth. (145-280, 1986.5.25)

What would happen to Jejudo if it becomes a tourist spot in the future? Currently, brides and grooms are the ones who visit Jejudo most. If we can promote this well enough, they would say, "Oh, how could we go and sleep in that hot hotel?" This is the life they could only dream of. Newly weds can have fun by going fishing in the middle of the ocean. We would provide everything for them, including the rods and even bait. We could even buy them breakfast. We could do anything for them. (126-316, 1983.4.30)

I am going to make hunting grounds and fishing area on and around Jejudo, and I will train you. When you come, you should bring a hundred people from each nation. If the members of the Tourism and Fishing Association for World Peace gradually increase in this way, then they could contribute in achieving that goal by paying a monthly fee. Those of the middle-class and higher can do that.

From now on, you should take on that task and influence every country to do these things every year so that they may go to Africa to help. There should be a hunting ground and fishing spot in each nation. We should make a fish farm and hunting ground to hunt and catch the animals and fish, and then release them in the same area. You should arrange for this system to be available in different places for each season of the year. (253-109, 1994.1.9)

The climate in Jejudo is good. You cannot fish in the winter in Alaska, but it would be just right for fishing in Jejudo now. You should prepare two hundred people who can go fishing during all four seasons of the year. Things would become complicated if there were too many. The minute you return today, you should prepare two hundred people. You can fit fifty people on one bus. If our organization could do that, then in the evening we can introduce our worldwide activities or talk about fishing in that area. We can talk to them and educate them about the overall issues of the world. We can discuss problems of leadership or the political, diplomatic, and economic problems of the world. We have more than enough material to educate them. Therefore, to gain new members, you should achieve a higher level of education by getting them interested in the Unification Church. If that were done, in three years they would become members. (252-214, 1993.12.30)

In the past couple of decades, I have founded many organizations throughout the world. All those organizations have the word "peace" in their names, like the Professors World Peace Academy, Peace Summit Club, Newspaper Association for Peace, Religious Federation for Peace, and Women's Federation for Peace. Last time I was in Jejudo, I set up a fishing association and a hunting association. They are known as the Fishing Association for World Peace and the Hunting Association for World Peace. They share the word "peace." (259-146, 1994.4.2)

2.3. We can learn a great deal from the ocean

2.3.1. Like the ocean, we should live while embracing the universe

When you visit the ocean, you can learn many things. It undergoes changes several times a day. There is a saying, "A person's mind changes morning to evening," but the ocean does not change only morning and evening, it changes every hour. Even on a fine day, if you go to a certain area, the waves would be mild. Yet when you go to another area, the wind would be blowing. It would not be a strong wind, but different in mood. Just as peoples' faces are all different, so are water and mountains. Climate also differs depending on the height of the mountain. The ocean exhibits beauty in all sorts of forms and figures. (263-18, 1994.8.16)

I enjoy nature. I love the ocean. You do not know how mysterious the ocean is. The drops of water are all like diamond gems. As each glitters, it would proudly say, "We belong to Rev. Moon. Water has more value than diamonds." Why would the water boast in that way? It would say, "Without me, life would not have been formed in this universe. Because I exist, high and low things can be made level." Do you realize how uneven the ocean is? And yet it instills a good feeling because the water makes everything even. The ocean also gives off a blue hue that an observer would never grow weary of over a period of thousands or tens of thousands of years. Blue is the color of consolation.

Why did God create the color blue? You will not be exhausted; no matter how long you gaze at the color blue. It is the color of consolation. It is the same in all of creation. The sky is blue, and the ocean is blue. How ideal! Once you are immersed in God's love, everything including people and the world of nature would become your friend.

Once you know nature's character, you see that it never changes. But human nature takes on all sorts of forms and shapes. It is one way today, but changes the next. That's why there is a saying, "A person's mind changes morning and evening, yet mountain scenery never changes." A person's mind changes in the morning and the evening. What use are human beings? They are not even as good as animals. (177-274, 1988.5.20)

The ocean embraces the universe. Its water evaporates and gathers, becomes clouds and covers the mountains, becoming their friend. Then it showers rain from above and spreads out in all four directions. Water is an amazing thing. It does not rest. It should be tired from moving around for tens of thousands of years. I love the ocean. There are no deceptions in nature. If it is high, it is high. If it is low, it is low. Nature will provide, without objection, to the high places. Since I have learned from nature, I also provide without any objections. When I go to a foreign land and find people who have less than I do, I would open my storehouses and share all my

rice, even they were to become depleted. It is to make things even. I learned all that from the water. That is why I like water. (300-141, 1999.3.2)

What would happen if the sky, ocean, plants, and everything else were blue? You would suffocate. Imagine if they were yellow or your favorite color. You would immediately tire of it. Even if you replace it with another color, you would soon tire of it. Green is another color of consolation. Why do people like the color green? The existing world is in harmony with the color green. That is why there are many colors in the soil. The color of soil is usually close to green. That is why it is logical to say that we, who were made out of the soil, would like the color green. That is how you may think. Since God knew that, He made the sky and ocean blue. Everything was created in harmony with the color green, centering on human beings. How wonderful this is! (119-168, 1982.7.18)

The ocean, when calm, is mystifying and has the power to draw people in like a captivating, beautiful woman who is like a queen of mystery. The ocean may look silver, but it also takes on a jade color. At other times, the ocean takes on different hues. When the gentle breeze rustles by, the beauty of the ripples takes my breath away. No matter how well a dancing girl dances, her beauty does not come near to that. To see a dancer, you have to see her dance on a stage, but a stage is too small.

On the other hand, the ocean's stage spreads out to infinity. Do you know how vast the ocean's stage is? The ocean can be like a beautiful woman or a dancing girl, but once it becomes angry it can be more frightening than a tiger or a lion rushing towards you in the wilderness. Think about it. When waves that are tens of meters high come rushing in, the cry of a seagull stands not a chance. The ocean roars, "No matter how well you sing, no matter how great a stage actor you may be, you do not stand a chance before my majestic vigor." The ocean's might is imposing.

A speed boat easily glides across the sea when the water is calm. But when big waves come, it is impossible to move around. You just sit, wagging your tail and shaking your head, tossed about by the waves as they come. You have no power over them. (128-249, 1983.8.28)

The power of nature is great. That is why people who love the ocean cannot be arrogant. The ocean has that kind of greatness. If you open the doors to the ocean and look inside, you will find all kinds of fish living there, from fish that are gold in color to fish that are yellow and blue, and even fish that are colorless. When you compare the land with the ocean, which is more beautiful? The land, with its variety of birds, flowers and butterflies, is beautiful, but limited. Flowers do not move. Compared with the profusion of beautiful sea creatures that dance about in dazzling, brilliant colors, these things are somewhat dull. So which is more beautiful, the land or the ocean? The ocean is more beautiful.

Why did God create this thing called water? We can say that water is a special amusement device for God to enjoy. He hid its depths away and did not open it to the public. When you observe creation in this way, you can conclude that God probably had more interest in the ocean than the land.

People who think about the future take more interest in the ocean than the land. God's interest is in the future ideal family that has yet to emerge. That is why, rather than focusing His interest in the things that have appeared on earth in history, it is inevitable that God should take interest in the marine world that focuses on the future. This would make sense. With this perspective, we could say that people who think about the ocean are people who envision the future, and they will greatly increase. (128-249, 1983.8.28)

The freedom one has when sitting with a fishing rod is beyond description. Would you be able to take a walk in that situation? You only have a small space in which to move about and cook your meals. Could you go to the theater or go out to meet your friends? You cannot even listen to music because you need to be silent. That is why you must gaze at the ocean and talk with the sea and the heavens. It is the greatest feeling to be at sea alone in the very place where the ocean and heaven become one. I constantly go out to the sea to benefit spiritually and in all ways. If I stay at home the entire day, I become distracted and end up thinking about the world missionaries, church problems and other matters, yet only vaguely and in fragments. But when I go out to the sea, I can think more comprehensively. Because of this, I love the ocean a great deal. I believe that is why the phrase "the way of fishing" came about. (79-270, 1975.9.1)

Think about a married couple having intimate relations in the middle of the tranquil ocean. Would the ocean complain, "You no-goods, you are killing me!"? Groups of fish would come wagging their tails and watching that spectacle. All of creation longs for that kind of love. Everything in the natural world cries out, "Please come here, come to us!" and longs for people to make love there. You should have the heart to understand and feel this. If the master were to go to the top of a mountain covered with snow and make love there, nature would be pleased saying, "Our dear master makes love in such a beautiful way!" That is what creation wants. (235-277, 1992.10.11)

2.3.2. Life in the ocean is amazing and mystifying

The Black Current passes across four thousand miles based in the Pacific Ocean. It circulates over four thousand miles in one year and the force of its passage makes the five great oceans circulate. Were it not for this primal Black Current, the oceans would not be in motion. The Atlantic and Pacific are linked to the five great oceans because of the Black Current. (227-129, 1992.2.11)

Through these environmental circumstances, all five great oceans continue to live, without wasting away. (297-209, 1998.11.20)

No matter how large the river is, it flows to the ocean, and no matter how vast the ocean is, it follows the Black Current. Do you know what the Black Current is? The Black Current is a strong current of water that follows a four thousand mile path in the Pacific Ocean. Because of this powerful current, all the water currents in the five great oceans are alive and on the move. Only water that rides this current and circulates is qualified to become seawater. It is the same with human life. (220-201, 1991.10.19)

No matter how numerous, large or small, all the rivers flow toward the vast oceans. Once there, all their waters are mixed together. The Black Current flows in the Pacific and circulates for four thousand miles among the five great oceans. This is possible because of the moon's gravitational pull. Because the Black Current circulates in this way, the five great oceans can all be in motion. It acts as the supporting pillar of the entire ocean system. When filth and other things come into the ocean waters, they are all mixed up and move towards becoming one. This is the purpose of the ocean. Even if a large river were to constantly supply fresh water for tens of thousands of years, the ocean has the authority to absorb it all and still have room to spare. The ocean is great because it stays unchanged, no matter what comes into it. (210-200, 1990.12.23)

After crossing the Pacific, do clouds from Japan say, "I don't like the American clouds!" when they are about to merge with the clouds over America? The waters in Japan flow to the Pacific through the Black Current. When they approach the waters around America, do they say, "Ah!"? The Black Current flows four thousand miles in the Pacific Ocean. Does the Black Current distinguish between advanced nations and developing nations? Are there actual borders between nations? Then what is it with the human world? Anything that goes against the movements of nature will be broken. (268-26, 1995.2.7)

In the world of love, you have access to all places. Does the water in the Pacific think, "I am of the Pacific Ocean. The waters in Asia are all polluted. I do not like them!"? No matter where the waters come from, they all latch onto each other. If there were some dirty thing in its path, the ocean would mix the filth with its water, quickly dissolving it, while going along the same path. Therefore, no matter how severely the Pacific Ocean is polluted, even if humankind ceased to exist, the ocean waters would surely be as blue as ever. Even if it goes through tribulation and a course filled with twists and turns, the ocean water does not lose its blueness. In the same way, the authority, content, and power of love will always be blue. (214-273, 1991.2.3)

The Unification Church must

become the main stream of the world and resemble the Black Current in the Pacific Ocean. The circulation of the Black Current through four thousand miles in the Pacific enables the waters in the five great oceans to circulate. To generate the life energy of the world from the universe, a source must be created that can turn and move the deepest of places. Through this, we must purify the tarnished world. (275-32, 1995.10.30)

You cannot imagine how fearsome and horrifying the waves and the winds are when a storm brews. But I believe that even the strongest wind is fulfilling its mission. Without wind there would be no waves in the ocean, and as a consequence, fish would not survive. The wind blows to supply oxygen to the ocean. Waves supply oxygen. That is why even when the waves are rolling and the wind is blowing strongly, you should taste the ocean and say, "You haven't lost your taste!" The ocean is salty. I also think that I have not lost my touch. If I can think that way, then the currents and rushing waves are not unpleasant.

You do not realize how much philosophy can be found in the ocean. People who have only lived on land will face a considerable amount of obstacles when they try to engage in ideal activities in the other world. In the spirit world, you can ride on whales and swim with the fish. But if you do not like the ocean, you cannot do that. (119-252, 1982.9.13)

When you go out to the sea, you will fear the storms. Their waves are ferocious. Yet no matter how ferocious they are, they can be overcome when the power of love sets its sail. (110-102, 1980.11.9)

The ocean should not be still. Water does not die when it is moving. Even water poured into a bowl would last for eternity if it were moving. If it is in motion, it will not die. When a ship that is used for ocean fishing departs from port, it carries a year and a half or two years' supply of water. Because of the waves that water sloshes about and would not spoil even if you drink it hundreds of years later. When water moves, it does not spoil. But when it stops moving, it soon spoils. Isn't water truly unique? That is how it is with water. (296-200, 1998.11.9)

If you are going out to fish in the ocean, you must have a full supply of drinking water on your ship. You have to drink that water for a year and a half because you cannot drink salt water. If the water is in motion, it will not spoil for decades. Water must be in motion. That is why the Word of God must also be in motion. (291-88, 1998.3.5)

Why does water flow? It flows because it is not level. When water flows, it searches for the horizon. Water must go to the ocean. It must seek the horizon. (263-91, 1994.8.21)

Water must always be level. That is its characteristic. No matter how strong the wave, the ocean maintains a horizon. When you see the horizon, you want to tumble over it. You think, "Hey, I want

to roll over it!" Since your body cannot do so, then you do this with a boat. Have you ever thought about that? Whatever you do on a horizon, even if you fall down, your head or hand will not be the first to be hit. You will hit it horizontally. That is possible with a horizon. Human beings need a horizontal line. (263-90, 1994.8.21)

Air and water are just like love. If there is a vacuum, the air in the world will be mobilized to fill it up. If there were a puddle, the ocean water would rush in to make it even. Air, water, and love always maintain their level. (264-316, 1994.11.20)

If we go out to sea, we naturally observe water. Water circulates. Fogs form in the morning above places with water. It becomes vapor in a low-pressure air system and does not rise up. The vaporized water condenses to become a fog. Water becomes mist. It then evaporates, becomes a cloud and circulates around the world. What would happen if there was no water in the ocean? Everyone would be frantic and no living being could survive. Think about the greatness of water. (263-78, 1994.8.21)

As you know, whenever I had time, I would always go out to sea. I would go out to sea and be harassed. Harassed as I was, I believe the purpose was to calm my spirit and prepare me for trials and a greater battle. Though I was exhausted from having gone without sleep, I kept my wits alert, set my own standard and made effort to keep from going in a different direction from that horizontal line. (73-270, 1974.9.29)

Air is always in motion. Hasn't water also been in motion for tens of thousands of years? The ocean works on the same formula. Look at the ocean. How exhausted the water must be! Yet, not even once does water think it is tired. That is the formula for its survival. (207-18, 1990.10.21)

We can conclude that people who do not know the realm of the ocean are very limited in their sphere of happiness. If there is a Lord of Creation, He will enjoy hearing praise from people who appreciate both the mysteriousness of the sea and the beauty of the land, based on a correct knowledge of the land and sea. It is only reasonable to say that He would not approve of praise for only one aspect. (128-256, 1983.8.28)

You would certainly be grateful to the Creator if you consider that the ocean, land, and everything was created for educating humankind alone. (128-259, 1983.8.28)

When you look at the ocean, you should not regard it simply as the ocean. You should consider it a gift from our Heavenly Father. A great revolution can begin from the moment you begin to reconsider and re-experience everything in the course of re-creation. The value of a great victory can sprout from this point. (112-306, 1981.4.25)

2.3.3. The great power of nature lies in the ocean

I like things that are stimulating. I make breakthroughs at places where there is a lot of change. In this respect, the ocean is more appropriate than the land. At times, the wind blows in the ocean. At other times, the ocean is calm. The ocean is always changing, with rising and falling winds. That is why traveling on the sea is better than traveling on land.

When you walk on the land, your thoughts in the morning do not change at all. No matter how much you walk about, you can move in a dignified way, without using your hands. But that is not the case with the ocean. Even though you may wish to go a certain way, you are tossed about in one direction after another. That is how much it changes. You will find truly stimulating changes. When the sea is calm, its tranquility surpasses that of the land. It is serene to the point that it draws wonder from the observer. The ocean water can seem like glass. There are times when the ocean is so beautiful that you wish to touch it and even drink it. That is why the ocean is ever-changing. But still, you should continue with determination on your course. Without that kind of motivation, you cannot do great things. (79-270, 1975.9.1)

When you observe the bottom of the sea, you will discover fish that look like whales and halibuts. Also, you will see fish that look like catfish attached to the bottom of the ocean. This type of catfish's head is larger than its body, and it has a large mouth. It nibbles and eats large objects and rotten things that flow by. This fish swallows it whole and then nibbles on it. If that is not enough, this fish sucks in bugs to eat. In this way, it is constantly contributing to the purifying process – the cleansing process.

There are 3,600 species of fish living in the Pantanal. That is 3,600 kinds of fish! And they all eat something different. All these fish are mixed together in the water and are tirelessly cleaning it up. You should realize that the act of eating is their cleaning work. All these fish do not exist for their own sake, but to bring order to the environment – to clean their surroundings as they live, helping one another. This constitutes a natural cooperative system. They are purifying the ocean water. The ocean should not just be salty. There should be fish that can eat the filthy things. What would we do with fish excrement? There are creatures that eat only dung. (293-283, 1998.6.7)

Fish are not the only creatures that make the ocean clean. Waterfowl such as wild geese and sea gulls also take part in this cleaning process and are tirelessly probing the area. If they find something not on the surface but sinking into the water, they would go after it to eat it.

If the wind says, "Hey cloud, there is a hot place that is about to dry up. Let us go there," then the cold ocean air would go to that place. The wind would carry the clouds and shower water as it passes

by. Consider how this universe is created as a system for joint cooperation. If there were no winds it would be a problem? The same can be said of the boiled rice, bread, and things you make. The vapor rises from the ocean into the air and is carried by the wind. This vapor follows the warm sun rays in the summer, and when it becomes rain, the moisture is absorbed to create many things. The moisture on land and the moisture in the air can be used to make boiled rice and bread. Consider how much toil was involved in that process and how valuable these things are. The universe is also engaged in that process. The universe is in motion and cooperates to make that bread. A piece of bread is not easily made. (293-285, 1998.6.7)

Where do you think the saltiest place would be in the ocean? In the deep places or the shallow places? It is the deep places. Why? Because salt water is dense. That is why the deeper the place, the saltier it is. Using the saltwater allegory, where would the highest palace be in the heavenly nation? It would be at the bottom of the ocean. The palace would be found there, at the very bottom.

You should understand the concepts that I am explaining to you. What I am trying to say is that the highest place of Heaven can be found in the deepest part – the bottom of the ocean, where it is saltiest. The cleanest person, on the other hand, can be found at the summit. God can be found in the place with the most conscientious person – the person with the loftiest heart of serving the world and the whole. (244-178, 1993.2.7)

Pristine water that flows in the mainstream cannot avoid polluted water filled with filth and say, "I don't want to mix with you!" That is how it is in nature. The harmonious and overall relationships in nature are mysterious. When there is something dirty, water will embrace it, even if it spoils the pure water's essence. Water will absorb and assimilate the things around it; and as the water continues to flow, the dirty things sink while the clean things rise to the surface. The water becomes pure as it flows through the ocean. The flow of history is like that as well. (218-292, 1991.8.22)

No matter how strong the ocean currents, the fish sleep in the ocean. While the body of the fish is asleep, its fins are in motion as it swims against the current to maintain its position. Isn't this interesting? It is like being asleep while all of your blood vessels are active. The fish itself is asleep, even while it maintains its bodily functions, in the same way blood flows in your body. In that light, who becomes the owner and who stands on a higher level? The one who invests and serves more becomes the owner. (220-282, 1991.10.20)

Though the waves in the ocean may be ferocious, its currents must always follow the main current. By aligning itself to the main current, it can survive the opposition and persecution of the entire world. When God stands in the mainstream as the complete subject

partner centering on that main current, His object partner would not be harmed because it would be protected within that subject and object partner relationship. (249-164, 1993.10.10)

When you are swimming, would you say, "Hey, I am thirsty. Get me a cola or a McCol!"? If you are in the water for the entire day, you can get by without even drinking a cup of water because your cells absorb water. Last time I spoke, I talked for sixteen and a half hours. One might think, "How could he endure for such a long time without going to the restroom?" but everything that should go out as urine goes out instead as sweat. It is released as vapor because of the heat and comes out as sweat.

That is why even if you are in the ocean for the entire day, you do not have to bring any water with you. If you are thirsty, then try swimming around like a whale in the ocean for an hour or two. Would you still be thirsty? If you were lying on a sandbank, you would drink water because of the heat. Water is essential to human beings and air is important as well! Where there is water, there is air. Is there air in the ocean or not? (217-206, 1991.6.1)

The oceans are always in motion. The winds blow so that the ocean may prosper and live on. Typhoons occur, and waves build up to tens of meters high in order to oxygenate the ocean. Then how do the fish live through a typhoon? When you consider this you would think, "The fish at the bottom of the ocean are delighted that this typhoon is blowing. Although I am having a difficult time, I will enjoy it because the fish are enjoying it!" (262-289, 1994.8.1)

Water is the ancestor of life. So, would you love water instead of God? You should love the ocean while thinking about that. In scenic areas there should be water and forests. Water creates harmony. I am saying that loving water is the same as loving all of creation. That is a fundamental idea. When loving water, do you love the lake water or the seawater? Should you go out to the sea everyday? If you were on a boat when the winds blow and the waves run high, your blood would swirl around and never go bad. Your blood would be purified. That is the truth. That is why those who always go on boats are healthy. (262-289, 1994.8.1)

I do not receive a salary. I live off my own efforts and means. Wherever I go in this world, I can survive – even if I were to be placed in the farthest reaches of Africa by a helicopter, where there are no human beings or animals. When I went to the mountains, I learned how to survive off the mountains, and when I went to sea, I learned how to survive off the ocean. That is why I am going to the den of beggars and doing these things to create heaven. Even if you do not follow me around, I am trained in such a way that I could fulfill God's will, even through a bunch of beggars. So, would you or would you not go to the den of beggars if I told you to do so now? But to do so,

you need training. (109-152, 1980.11.1)

You may think about holding on to your belongings and living comfortably, but to this day, I have been a pioneer. I have opened the way and stood at the lead. Just recently, our company made a boat. If there had not been a captain, I would personally take everybody out to the sea with me. "The wind may blow, and the waves may run high, but could they block the path of this man? Here, I am going to solve the food problem for the sake of Heaven and humanity, and to carry on life to the future generations." This is what I believe in. Is that not the expression of a great man? I like that kind of person. Movies produced here will remain, and the whirlwind of history will subside in this place.

Wouldn't that way be the greatest mystery of all? It is a path filled with both tragedy and comedy to which any great man would aspire. From this base you can jump forth and go beyond the world. Hope will rise among the countless young people who go out to sea. The fountainhead or spring that will enable people to dream of the ocean worlds of tomorrow will explode from this place. How wonderful would that be? (109-152, 1980.11.1)

I go out to sea with such passion, and problems would arise if I lost that passion. That heart must be maintained. Devotion must last for tens of thousands of years. Indemnity conditions would not be established if I offered devotion in comfort. So instead, I should be going so out upon the ocean. Today must be better than yesterday, and tomorrow must be better than today. The waters from the lakes gather in the Atlantic Ocean, and it in turn flows into the Pacific Ocean. If I continue offering devotion until the day I save all those people who are starving to death, I believe that the will of God will be established on the earth, even if I were to die. (279-308, 1996.9.22)

You would never think that this dark-faced man who looks like a fisherman from the Hudson River, someone who might disappear after a thousand years, would possibly be doing these great things? Why am I doing this? It is to liberate the twenty million people who are starving to death. Do not forget about the sweat you shed at the Hudson River.

There is something that breathes and thinks throughout the five great oceans and six continents. It is invisible, like voice waves or electric waves. That something can lead to the path of liberation for future humanity through the fish world living in that place. As long as there is land and the ocean, people will not starve. With my teachings, I can save the people who are starving to death. (247-21, 1993.4.21)

Since God is absolute love, it is fascinating to observe His created objects. Interestingly, the creation is made in such a way that there will always be enough of the daily necessities for a family in the welfare-centered Kingdom of Heaven. Even the flowing water exists

to assist in the functions of heaven and earth. At sea, the water becomes vapor and circulates to revive all things of creation. Everything lives within a realm of cooperation and helps fulfill humanity's ideal by cooperating with one another, instead of being in conflict. God, using earth as His stage, raises His children and transfers them to the Kingdom of Heaven. (284-47, 1997.4.15)

A world opposite to the former world has now come, like morning following the passing night. The time has now come when spring comes to the Unification Church, while the satanic world heads towards evening and night. There is no hope left in the satanic world. That is a dark world of despair, one void of hope. People thought there was no hope in the Unification Church, but after the era of dawn, a new morning has come ushering an age of clearness and brightness. It becomes Rev. Moon's kingdom of the truth. I have a good name. The Chinese character for Sun (鮮) is a combination of the Chinese character for "fish" (魚) and "lamb" (羊), which unifies the land and the ocean. The Chinese character for Myung (明) symbolizes the sun, moon and space in the heavens. The Chinese character for Moon (文) when written quickly looks like, and is related to the Chinese character "father" (父). If there is a word meaning "the father" or "true father" that can be explained through the truth, then these words should be placed in the closest position. I did not know this myself. I only learned it after explaining it to you. (261-64, 1994.5.22)

CHAPTER TWO

The Ocean Leisure Industry and Hobby Industry

Section 1. The Development of the Ocean Leisure Industry

1.1. Fishing and hunting are aspects of the leisure industry

The leisure industry will develop and grow in the future. This is because exciting kinds of recreation are necessary to relieve stress for those who live in urban areas. How should they relieve their stress? The three best ways are through hunting, horseback riding, and fishing. However, there are many restrictions in hunting and horseback riding: for instance, only those people in a specific class can ride horses. It does cost a lot of money, after all, so not everyone can enjoy it. Also, only those people around forty years old can go hunting. Once they get over fifty, hunting becomes too strenuous for them, so only a specific group of people can enjoy hunting. However, fishing is something that people can practice from their youth until the day they die. So, I envision the fishing industry becoming a worldwide industry in the future. (207-122, 1990.11.1)

What is the hobby industry? It includes casinos and team sports as well as hunting and fishing. I am developing these. Whoever attains a leading position in the hobby industry will have a profound impact on the world. This person will be highly influential. Thus, for several decades we have been preparing all of this for humankind. I do not intend to sell off the fish that we catch. It is just a hobby. We can still eat and live. Because fishing is a hobby, you can release the small fish and eat only the big ones. Also, when eating, you do not eat alone. You must share with others. This is what a hobby is for. That period of time will soon come. (252-295, 1994.1.1)

In Canada, the government is asking us to quickly expand the deer ranch and they have offered financial incentives. They are wise. If you think about it, that will bring an enormous amount of revenue for the country. Getting rid of stress is the best cure for modern-day illness, and there is no better way to solve the problem than hunting and fishing, which are encouraged by the leisure industry. Those people who hunt have a lot of guts. Effeminate men cannot hunt. On the whole, hunters are people who fight well, and who can become generals. Therefore, since their radius of activities is big, they will make a lot of mon-

ey when earning and spend a lot when spending. (210-196, 1991.8.29)

Most fishing is done in the summer, not during the winter. The question is how to maintain fishing throughout all four seasons of the year. So, I am planning to bring people from Kodiak, Alaska, to check on this. Since fishing is for the summer, and hunting for the autumn and winter, they can be enjoyed alternately. Therefore, in order for us to have enough time for the tourist industry to expand, the hobby industry, consisting of fishing and hunting, is absolutely necessary. Hunting is a sport conducted when it is cold, and fishing is done when it is warm or hot; therefore, together these expand the foothold of the hobbies. Whether it be winter or summer, you can make use of them as year-round hobbies. Then affluent people worldwide can enjoy hobbies throughout the year. (270-300, 1995.7)

Fishing and hunting are hobbies. These are particularly hobbies of rich, upper-class people. Therefore, we must develop the hobby industry and make a tourist organization. (269-49, 1995.4.6)

Among hobbies, you have hunting and fishing, as well as other activities that involve exercise. Then you find more high speed, adventurous activities, such as car racing and flying planes. If there were an air show in South America, where several thousand planes fly without colliding, then people all over the world would gather there. Let us say that in this show the planes fly vertically downward, from a height of ten thousand meters, toward the ground in a matter of seconds. Then, about ten meters from the ground, the planes suddenly change course and fly upward again. Those watching such feats would automatically be rid of their stress! This is a whole new world of adventure happening before your very eyes. (276-184, 1996.2.19)

The first time you fish, you might not appreciate its appeal. However, you will gradually feel its charms as you fish once, twice, and more and more. It is the same with hunting. At first, you start by catching a small bird, and then when that becomes interesting, you attempt to catch a little bigger one, then an even bigger one. Soon you buy a bigger gun, then an even bigger one. There is no limit to it. You cannot help yourself. You will keep going up and up. This is all relative to human life. So, there is a possibility for this enterprise to develop worldwide.

I hope the ambassadors will come and visit a few times each year. In this way, through those ambassadors, you will be able to give lectures and teach all the people of that nation. You can hold banquets by gathering people together to go fishing and hunting. You can also organize clubs, establish businesses, and conduct other activities with the people of your own country who are currently in that nation. (253-116, 1994.1.14)

Horseback riding is limited to a cer-

tain degree, and those people who are rather old cannot go hunting. However, fishing transcends a person's age. In this sense, fishing is unrestricted. If we have people in boats spread out on the ocean, even catching a small one counts as having caught a fish. From this point of view, fishing tours can develop limitlessly from now on. The best place for this is Alaska. (205-319, 1990.10.1)

Now that I have entrusted to you all the countries of the world, I can enter the age where I can enjoy fishing, hunting, and singing and dancing – without drinking – with all the top leaders of the world. I have distributed ships to 160 nations, and I am preparing to develop the global hobby industry through that group of people.

I would like to build condominiums and create an organization in which people can live together, but not in separate houses, and take all the elderly people to parks worldwide and educate them. I would like to build ships, hunting grounds, and also airports and hotels. I am thinking about leading the world with this kind of hobby industry. For this purpose, I am establishing an airplane company. You can fly anywhere with small and medium-sized airplanes. From now on, I am planning to create a worldwide sightseeing network by establishing airports, even in countryside towns.

I will make small-sized planes a popular means of global transportation. Currently, I am establishing an airplane company with a view to also building airports in 160 countries. I have visited all the resort areas where large airplanes go. Therefore, I am planning to create lakes and hunting grounds in those places. (275-183, 1995.12.8)

The tourist industry should link the middle and upper classes together. People who go on tours usually belong to a class higher than the middle-class. Therefore, we will make many hunting grounds for doing business, and then breeding grounds for fishing worldwide. Those are the businesses we should do. (262-256, 1994.8.1)

It would be very nice to create recreational facilities by building a waterway all the way to the Atlantic Ocean and by building hunting grounds and fishing areas. In those countries where there is land and water, I will teach people how to avoid starvation. (246-89, 1993.3.23)

1.2. One Hope: a ship that cannot sink

What "One Hope" means is that it is the first hope of the ocean. In the past, all other ships that were thirty to fifty feet long sailed proudly as luxury liners. Yet our ships, although small in size, are quite fast. When our ship was sailing, everyone made fun of its small size. They would say, "That's dangerous, people will die!" Why would we die? They did not know that One Hope is a ship that will never sink. (270-64, 1995.5.4)

When establishing a relationship

with the ocean, the most important aspect is to have a boat that can float well in the water. Unlike ships built by other companies, the ships of our company must hold with tradition; we must build ships that are praised as history progresses when seen from a worldwide point of view. (262-243, 1994.8.1)

What will you do with small ships? They will be used for fishing. For the most part, people are interested in fishing, but not so much interested in fishery itself, which is catching fish with nets. In the future, there will no longer be an interest in catching fish using nets, nor in riding on big boats. For this reason, I have built this New Hope. I have designed a boat that can sail on the river, as well as the sea. Now our New Hope is famous for fishing and guiding. It is not a boat that just goes out to the sea. Also, it is easily transferable to any location, simply by using an automobile. (262-240, 1994.8.1)

If you wish to take this boat from here to Florida, you can easily attach it to a car. On the water, it takes a couple of days to sail to Florida from here; but you can drive there in one day by car. It takes about four days from the West Coast to the East Coast by car, but one month if sailing on the sea. The boat was built to ride on the waves, to glide through two types of waves when in water. That is why it was built longer than twenty eight feet in length. It was designed that way because it will not sail properly if smaller. Based on this twenty eight foot long boat, we have also built other boats that are thirty-eight feet, fifty-two feet, ninety-eight feet, and 108 feet in length. The 108-foot long boat can even maneuver out in the rough waters of Alaska, and is perfect for fishing when using its dragnets. (262-240, 1994.8.1)

When sailing on a ship at sea, you must know its exact position and maintain the correct direction to your destination. If you do not comprehend the various controls, then the ship cannot operate properly, especially when struggling through fog. How difficult that would be! There are about ten instruments for this purpose. I had ordered research to be done to create one system that performs the roles of all those ten instruments.

Now we have reached the stage where the developmental research has been done, and we can start manufacturing an instrument with one system that can detect the position and direction of the current, depth of the ocean, even the movements of fish. Our new system is made by a combination of various instruments, linked to a computer system. When news of this leaked out, a competition began among many nations who were all asking our company to manufacture such an instrument, using the factories they would build for us. However, we keep saying that our own group should do it.

Knowing the depth of water and the movements of fish are essential matters. What is mysterious about the

sea is that it is very difficult for you to return to the same place where you previously caught many fish with nets. When fishing by dragging nets, what course must you take in order to catch a lot of fish? Three ships can catch a great number of fish, even when they are only ten meters from each other, if there is a concentration of fish in that particular place. But because it is difficult to go back to such a place to catch fish again, I have developed a system that can guide us to that location. The system would automatically insert the nets into the water once that specific place has been entered into the computer. This is indeed something remarkable. (134-237, 1985.7.20)

I have paved such a foundation with my own hands. I can construct any kinds of boat whenever I need one. Currently, I am directing research to build small-sized submarines. As I speak, research is being conducted in Norway and Japan. I am planning to construct small family-sized submarines in which we can live based on the various depths of seawater; I will build residential areas in the middle of the sea where we can live. (190-100, 1989.6.18)

We will have the van families, the submarine families, and the spaceship families. We can live here for one week, and then live in the sea for one week, and then go off somewhere else again. I have the best technological ability. I can now make a van and a submarine, and soon a spaceship. (276-218, 1996.2.14)

1.3. The future leisure industry that will be spotlighted is fishing

1.3.1. The joy and zest of sea-fishing

Swordfish and yellow-fin tunas are to be found in the middle of the ocean. They each weigh about three hundred pounds, which is about 150 kilograms. That is one and a half times my weight. Because such big, heavy fish move around in schools, once one is caught, you can catch hundreds of them. These schools of fish become the prey of shark attacks. Once a shark makes an attack, blood spreads through the water. Then all the sharks in the vicinity gather round, and about two-thirds of those fish will become food for the sharks. This is shocking. Due to these shark attacks, the situation becomes instantly hopeless for the seamen aboard, who had have hope and expectations for a big catch. (192-152, 1989.7.3)

When a large fish gets caught, you can feel its vibration reverberating deep under the sea. People on the boat bang the boat, making the sound, "boom-boom-boom-boom", which is similar to hitting your head with a hammer. How many raging waves have fish endured, having gone through all sorts of hardships for several decades in the sea? We can easily imagine what they have gone through, since they have managed to survive in those harsh circumstances.

You should never make a loud banging noise from above the water, because

the fish already know, due to the vibrations, how many meters away the people are. (221-84, 1991.10.23)

Catching tuna is not fishing. It is more like hunting at sea. You are hearing the term "hunting at sea" for the first time, right? Catching one tuna is harder than killing a large cow. One tuna weighs more than one thousand pounds. Some tunas can weigh five hundred, six hundred, or even seven hundred kilograms – that is bigger than a bull. It is exciting to catch such fish! We take all the blood out since the fish will spoil if left for a long time after being caught, and in an instant the water becomes a sea of blood. At that moment, I cannot help but think, "Oh, I am so merciless!" Whenever I feel that way, I think "God allows people to suffer because they are the sacrificial offerings for the liberation of humankind." Also, I feel better when I tell myself, "Well, these fish were caught from nature and I never invested myself in raising them, but from now on I will raise fish and offer them as a sacrifice." This is why I carry out the fish farm and marine product industries. (219-196, 1991.8.29)

The size of some fish is so huge that two people as big as us can be covered by it when we stand together. It is amazing to see how such large fish can be caught and dragged to the boat on a fishing line as thin as a millimeter. It is like pulling up a bull, caught on that line. This tiny fishing line is just remarkable. As women, don't you wish to observe fishing, just once, even if you cannot fish? (224-211, 1991.11.24)

I caught one black fish yesterday, but you cannot imagine how strong this particular one was. This amazing fish even cracked open a shellfish and ate it. In fishing, the moment that requires the most careful attention is fishing for black fish. You know crabs, right? When I cut the crab and put it on the hook as bait, a black fish comes and eats it away. It will come to eat and quickly go away. It is miraculous. When there are many fishing rods with bait placed in the water, these black fish come and eat the bait without you even noticing them. (217-208, 1991.6.1)

Peter was a fisherman, wasn't he? Then aren't you all the descendants of a fisherman? So you all should know about the sea. You came all the way to Alaska to catch what you did? Halibut is the fish that lies on its belly in the seabed, acting like a king. It eats and lives lying on its belly. It looks like a piece of mossy rock, living on the bottom of the sea with eyes springing out like antennas. Since it stays lying down and has a smell, small fish tend to gather around it. When those small fish gather, the halibut twists its body to swallow them up.

A halibut eats and lives lying down on its belly. It is the same as Satan. It is the "King" Satan. It thinks, "Who on earth dares to touch me!" Even when this halibut is caught on a fishing line, it keeps on saying, "Who on earth is touching me!" But then, after staying calm for awhile, it

starts to think, "Oh, no. I am in trouble!" The Alaskan halibut has been struck by the lightning of Rev. Moon. No one else in Kodiak has caught a halibut heavier than eighty pounds. However, with my appearance in these waters, halibut weighing two hundred and three hundred pounds have been caught. (206-274, 1990.10.14)

The reason some people find fishing is exciting is because they see blood. They feel itis stress-relieving to see blood. It is the same with hunting. Otherwise, they think, how can we get rid of stress, as people in these modern times? Seeing blood is shocking. Do you know why the ancient Romans were cruel? They liked to relieve their stress by seeing the blood of people being brutally killed. They feltthe cells of their body jump when they saw blood, and this completely relieved their stress. Men who do not know how to fish or hunt are more like women in character. (203-57, 1990.6.14)

People living a cultured life build up layers of stress. How can one get rid of that stress? It is not enough to just talk about it. You need excitement! Some say nothing works like seeing blood. They say the instant you see the blood flow your stress cannot remain. It all begins to fade away. This is how it is with sports like hunting. A tuna is much bigger than a bull. Blood splashes up when the tuna is harpooned. Then as you look, the color of the water changes to red.

At such a moment, you become like a melancholy poet. If women look at such a sight, they might faint, uttering weakly, "Oh, my God! Ohh…" That is how gruesome it is. So there is no room for stress to build up; it is totally removed. That is how much it affects you. (192-152, 1989.7.3)

Because many Japanese people are traveling, the tourist industry looks optimistic right now in America. You can go fishing all-year-round there. Among all the various kinds of fishing, the most interesting is fishing with a reel and line with multiple hooks. Using this method, the fishing line extends as far as sixty miles, which is the distance from Seoul to Cheonan. The sea can be up to 500 meters, 800 meters, and even over 1,000 meters deep. At that depth, the water is like the color of ink. Since the fishing line goes all the way out for about sixty miles, it is magnificent once the fish take the bait. Among the sharks, some are huge enough to swallow an entire person without difficulty. Swordfish are also three to four meters long. Those sharks can even swallow something big like a swordfish, except for the head part. It is like a war out there. Once the sharks meet such fish, then without any greetings, they just swallow them and swim around as if they are princes. (192-152, 1989.7.3)

Now we should go to the North Pole area and fish on top of the ice. The only remaining task is to catch sea lions from atop the ice. If you go to Australia, you can find something called the "Black Mario," one that weighs about three

thousand pounds. Since I weigh about two hundred pounds, the Black Mario is fifteen times heavier than my weight. Such an animal exists that is fifteen times heavier than I am – three thousand pounds! Now even whales will be caught if we start whale fishing. However, whenever we caught such big fish, I had to release them because the fishing line almost snapped. If I had caught such a big fish, I would have placed it in a museum. To have caught it, I felt that I would have had to struggle with it for about five hours, due to its unimaginable strength. But I let it go, thinking, "No! What will I do with this fish by catching it, when I cannot even use it?" So, I have caught everything that I have wanted to catch. (222-277, 1991.11.3)

As you may know, if you looked at the halibut in the photo album a little while ago, this picture shows the catching of that fish. There are giant tunas and blue-fin tunas in Gloucester, a seaport near Boston. My record was a fish that weighed 1,272 pounds. It was over eighteen feet long; that is more than five meters. The one that I have just caught was about 14.9. feet – that is bigger than a bull. A big tiger weighs about seven hundred pounds, and a bull weighs about a thousand pounds. Therefore, that fish was bigger than a bull. Most people usually catch fish that weigh about two hundred pounds, but my record was about six times that size. Isn't fishing an amazing sport? It is more fascinating than winning a victory as a general in the Second World War. A real man who tries fishing is like a true prince, and once he acquires a taste for fishing, he is so determined to fish that he would even sell his wife! But you will never know this about fishing unless you try it. (167-136, 1987.7.11)

There is a gorgeous fish called the striped bass. This fish is more delicious than tuna. It is very sweet when served as raw fish. The meat has resilience and a sweet taste. Japanese people say that toro the part of a tuna's stomach where most of the fat is found) is the best. However, once they taste the striped bass, they will all rush to it. Even so, True Mother does not like sushi. At first, it feels as if you are chewing snake meat. It also slides out of your mouth when you are chewing. It is the same as snake meat. However, after having tasted the striped bass, True Mother has been saying, "Sashimi! Sashimi! Striped bass sashimi…" When I tell True Mother to get ready for fishing, she says, "Oh, really?" and she follows me, knowing that we are going to fish for striped bass. This is why it is so interesting. This is the reason why fishing is exciting and sensational. (192-152, 1989.7.3)

Any fish can be eaten raw. It may be unpleasant since there is blood, but you will not even need any sauce, such as chili pepper paste, when you sit down and eat the fish, after it has been cleaned and cut. It is simple, nutritious enough, and very good to eat. It is eating live cells, not dead cells. You swallow the delicious raw fish and rest on the boat for a day. Do not worry about getting diar-

rhea. But if someone does not eat this raw fish, maybe they will have diarrhea. I am showing you such a wonderful way of living yet you do not know about it. (189-291, 1989.6.17)

1.3.2. The essential points for sea-fishing

It is very interesting to see all the various kinds of fish in the sea. There are small fish in the shallowest area at the edge of the ocean, and then as the water gets deeper, you can find big fish. The smallest fish get eaten by slightly larger fish, and the slightly larger fish get eaten by fish that are even larger, and the cycle keeps repeating itself. What is interesting is that all the young look the same whether they are baby whales or baby tuna. Baby Alaska pollack and baby tuna all look the same. (264-286, 1994.11.20)

I go to the sea very often. An infinite amount of treasures are buried in the sea. In the sea, there is a certain order to prey. It is interesting to observe this. Aren't all creatures living for the sake of others? They all exist for the sake of others in a connected relationship. Disorder results if the bigger fish do not eat the smaller fish. The sea will be full of fish. Because the bigger ones eat and the smaller ones get eaten, the number of fish in the ocean waters is balanced. (198-232, 1990.2.3)

When you look at all the fish in the sea, they all eat up the smaller ones, so how is this God's love? For these fish, the ideal is to serve human beings and be absorbed into the human cells, where they can receive God's love. Because of that, the minerals are absorbed before the plants. They are absorbed in human cells, in which they can receive God's love. The plants are absorbed by the animals, and the higher animals are absorbed by human beings. All those creatures that are fine and delicious hope to be absorbed by people. The best cells are absorbed by their owner, in hopes to connect or return towards the original palace of love, as the realization of God's sons and daughters by being the real body of love. (199-333, 1990.2.21)

The deeper the water, the more levels there are in the ocean. There is a big difference in temperature as well. The kinds of fish change entirely, even with a temperature change of one or two degrees. It is marvelous. Although people do not know this, the fish of the world search the five oceans for a temperature layer that is only a degree wide. It is mysterious. Even though there were unlimited numbers of fish until yesterday, as if half of the ocean were of water and the other fish, there is not even one if you go back today. That is due to the difference in temperature. The fish disappear entirely when the water temperature changes by even half a degree. To people, a one or two degree difference is not an issue, yet it is an issue for fish.

People can live in the arctic regions, in the tropics, and in the temperate regions. However, this does not hold true for animals. Do lions live in Korea? No,

lions are found in Africa. In Korea, there are tigers, not lions. (200-261, 1990.2.26)

The way that fish bite onto the bait differs according to their character. If there are one thousand families of fish, then there are one thousand ways that the fish bite. When you go fishing at a new place, then you must formularize the ways the fish bite when catching one, two, or three different kinds of fish. That is common sense. When the fish bites that way, and you pull your fishing rod another way, then the fish will not be caught. The fish can free itself and swim away as often as it wants since the fishing line goes along with the fishing rod. When the fish bites that way, you should pull the opposite way. You must pull like this when the fish moves forward, and pull the opposite way when it moves to the left. Most beginners always pull a certain way, but that is not right. The fish gets caught faster when you pull the opposite direction. It does not take a long time to catch a fish.

When you go sea fishing, you do not simply go to an ocean area which has only a horizon, with no land or rocks. You should certainly go to an area that has rocks. More fish can be found near rocks, where they can safely hide. These rocks also have insects on them, which the fish like to eat. When you observe the way water flows, surely the water has waves in which there are many fish. When there are waves of three to five meters, you will find fish in such spots. You must go to such places in order to catch fish. (268-307, 1995.4.3)

Most people think that anyone can catch a fish just by throwing a fish hook into the water. However, that is not the truth! Different fish are active in different water temperatures. The water temperature differs between the bigger and smaller fish. In summertime, the water temperature is higher close to the surface. That is why the smaller fish live near the water's surface. The fish move naturally, according to the temperature of the sea water. The fish dislike moving in all directions. They always try to move sideways. You must know such facts in order to fish. You must have knowledge of such things as where the fish gather and where to go fishing for salmon. You must become professionals. Therefore, studying is necessary. You cannot fish unless you become a professional in fishing.

When I fish, I know exactly the right temperature. I already know what kinds of fish are found in certain temperatures. When you drop the fishing line a couple of times, the fish already touch the bait. So if I reel up the fish hook fast, the fish come up, and when the fish hook is reeled up slowly, it tends to sink down. While slowly reeling up the fish hook, you should know how fast the water is flowing on the surface. By the water temperature that we have today, I know what level the king salmon will come to. Usually, the salmon remain on the ocean floor. Why? They can find lots of food there. Crabs and small sea creatures live on the sea bottom, so the salmon like to gather there.

No matter how many times you have

caught fish in Alaska, you must learn again whenever you go fishing at a new place. You do not know how interesting this can be. Also, when people come and go, they can share their knowledge about fishing. The New Zealanders must learn when they come to Kodiak. Although they may be excellent fishermen in New Zealand, it does not work the same way in Kodiak. Because they must learn again when they come to Kodiak, they can mingle and create harmony. There are various ways of fishing, different ethnic groups, and different environments. Everywhere you go to fish, you will find many different environments. (252-206, 1993.12.30)

Here is something interesting. The ocean is teeming with fish when no boats come out due to windy weather. Usually in normal weather, people come out and play loud music, making loud "boom boom" noises that cause chaos. The creatures in the ocean can feel big vibrations as if they are being hit with some type of a club. Yet even in a typhoon, the ocean beneath its surface is calm and quiet. Therefore, the whales gather to jump around and perform. That was a historic day. I probably have the picture somewhere. There were big ones, small ones, and even smaller ones. However, the whales jumped up leaving their tails inside the water due to their enormous size. Their tails were always left in the water. So they would fall right back down on the water, lying flat while floating upon the waves. You do not know how delighted whales are when they are performing. So I thought, "Are whales really that happy when it is windy?" If I see them perform once or twice more, then I can conclude, "Yes, they are!" (233-306, 1992.8.2)

You do not go to the sea only to fish. The spirit of Alaska is the spirit of salmon. Salmon always return to the homeland that they left, swimming four or five thousand miles across the ocean to spawn. This is the same principle when looking at the path of restoration of humankind. You must know how to go back; no matter how long a journey you have taken away from your hometown. There is no other fishing more exciting than salmon fishing. They are so strong. When other fish are hooked, it only takes a couple of turns on the reel before you see the fish on the surface, but with salmon, it takes tens of turns on the reel.

It is difficult, like trying to catch a person who has heavenly tradition. The salmon jump until they die, till the very end. The fish hook usually falls out after they jump about three times. That is the tradition of Alaska. The ocean symbolizes the world of death, the satanic world, and the fish symbolize the people. The boldest of all fish are the salmon. (236-124, 1992.11.4)

I went out to the sea one day, and though the weather was very windy, there were a number of boats out. When the tuna season begins and I go out to the sea, I do not have a pleasant feeling towards the five hundred boats gathered

there. I think, "It would be nice if I could fish by myself just once," but there has never been such a day. One day, there was a typhoon warning and I tried to go out to sea. Everyone told me not to go. But I told the boat's captain, "Hey, you listen to me! We are not going to die." So we went out on my orders. The fishing area is a long distance out at sea. Since it takes a little over two hours to reach it, we must leave at one o'clock in the morning. We must leave around one to arrive there by four. Due to the wind and other conditions, it takes double the usual time. For these reasons, we had to set sail at midnight.

I have had so many difficult challenges in my life. A person cannot buy these kinds of experiences, even with a tremendous amount of money. Since the weather was so bad, there weren't any boats out. When I threw out the fishing line into the water, a number of fish bit the hook as soon as the line was dropped. Wouldn't you expect this to happen? Usually, a number of them bite onto the bait from many different boats, but since our boat was the only one at sea that morning, all these starved fish, who are capable of searching for food up to distances of about four kilometers, were all rushing to bite onto my bait. So when I threw the fish hooks into the water, they all bit onto them right away. I did not pay attention whether the typhoon was blowing or not. I continued to pour out my sweat. It took four hours to get there, and four hours to fish. From there, we dragged the fish, with the engine running, for twenty miles. (233-306, 1992.8.2)

People like us already know where the fish can be found when we go fishing. Most fish tend to search for food in the mornings and evenings. Then, since they have eaten, at lunchtime they are simply idle. The fishing spot should not be too deep. One area should be a bit deep and the other area should be with a flat bottom. Fish tend to escape to deep places in order to hide. Also, even if they come out and idle about, they will play around where the ocean bed is flat. That is the situation in late morning. However, in the afternoon, since the fish are eating again, I say to myself, "Oh, I know exactly what kinds of fish are here," by merely looking at the spot. (221-82, 1991.10.23)

You must know how many feet your fish hook should be under the water surface. The fish are a foot off the bottom, as that is a favorable place to eat food. Because they eat in order to live, they cannot move two feet away from their food source. When it becomes fishing season, these fish are the ones spread out along the bottom. Whenever you try to hook them, you can easily do so. You should approach them carefully and when there is a slight chance, get closer and quickly hook them. That is the proper technique. Tuna used to live freely as the greatest fish in the ocean world. Therefore, they will not bite at small bait. Yet, you must somehow get them hooked. This is what you must research. (221-81, 1991.10.23)

You must go to the very bottom of the sea in order to catch big fish. Among all fish, those that jump from the water

are the small ones. Big fish do not jump. They think, "Why should we jump?" Those fish are the ones that get hooked when we drop the fishing line. If our bait spreads its smell and is about a hand's length from the bottom, the fish will approach at a regal pace. Fish use their fins to swim. Therefore, you must leave a space about a hand's length for them to move horizontally, without getting stuck. When you drop the fish hook, after having calculated in such a way, a big fish will surely be caught.

The last fish that I caught was fifteen pounds and thirty inches. It was the biggest among all the salmon we have caught until now. We hung it up, displaying it as the finale. It was so strong that we should have scooped it up using a net. Yet, it was hard to see the fish, due to the faint light of the setting sun. But the fish was brave. It could have escaped from the net, since two-thirds of its body was inside, with its head hanging outside. If you do something wrong at this moment, the net can be torn. (205-322, 1990.10.1)

There are a number of different types of fishing lines – those that are many miles, a few miles, and a few inches long and so on. When you fish, many lines are placed in the water. Some fish get caught right away when a certain line, which is only about a chi long, is let out. Yet, it will be a mess if you start pulling this in. If the fishing line is long and it goes far from the boat, we can determine that the ocean here is deep. However, if you are a real fisherman, you should not be concerned when small fish bite onto the fish hook. You must think, "Oh, you fish are biting. Keep gathering round." A big fish will come along from many miles away. You must catch the one that has come from such a distance.

I fish quite well. I have done fishing day and night for over forty days. The fish that I intend to catch does not get caught on the first try. You must wait until the biggest fish bites onto the hook, saying, "Bite on it. Come on, minnows!" There are numbers of minnows that just come and go. They would come and go saying, "Oh, this is delicious. The fisherman must be crazy."(152-32, 1963.3.3)

To hunt is barbaric, for you shoot the animal after waiting at a strategic point. And to shoot at something that is flying is not proper. However, fishing is not like that. The fish come and bite onto your bait themselves. So it is all right to catch them. Also, you can go fishing from the age of five until the day before your death. So a one-hundred-year-old grandmother and grandfather can enjoy fishing simply by dropping fishing lines from their beds. Even if you are the champion, no matter how famous you might be, when you go to a different province, that place has a different way to catch fish.

For this reason, if you only follow your own way and not the way of fishing for that place, then you will not catch any fish. Because you must follow the way of the place you go to, you learn wherever you go, and you can teach others wherever you go. Anyone can become

the teacher as well as the student. This is equality. It will differ according to the place and the kind of bait used by the person, even though you may be fishing for the same kind of fish. Therefore, you must learn it all when you go to a different place. All nations are different. Thus, due to the wide variety of places, there are many different hobbies. (252-206, 1993.12.30)

1.3.3. You will not die of hunger if you learn to fish

Do you know how to farm? I know how to farm. I must teach that to you. The members of the Unification Church should know how to do three things: how to farm, how to hunt, and how to fish. Therefore, even if you go alone to a village in Africa, it should only take you a week to establish the basis for you to live by feeding the village people. If you feed them for one year, then they will feed you from then on. (262-256, 1994.8.1)

There are many animals in the tropics, so fishing and hunting are necessary for Unification Church members. Why? You must teach people how to fish and how to survive by hunting in order to save those who are dying of hunger. Therefore, Rev. Moon is dignified even though he has seen the blood of fish and animals.

A long time ago, the high priests killed their offerings. The reason why I kill animals is to make the members of the Unification Church the high priests. This is a divine task. We can organize a group to go help out in Africa once they learn fishing and hunting. I should send hunting and fishing missionaries to Africa to help out and spread this practice all over the world. So wherever you go, we have a way to save the people through fishing and hunting. (262-255, 1994.8.1)

There will be a time when thousands and tens of thousands of families can live on one lake. Those fish are all ours if we just know how to fish. Who should fish? Women should do it. Why? It is because women have large, cushion-like hips. They are comfortable. Thus, they can sit for a long time. Men feel pain after sitting for just three hours. Therefore, if one woman catches three fish, she can feed three children, and if she catches four, then she can feed even the father as well. When she goes to the fishing area, she can catch ten fish and perhaps even a couple of dozen fish within one hour.

Say there are one hundred families in a village. If they form groups of a hundred women and they decide to catch one hundred or two hundred fish, there would be no problem. It will work by mobilizing a small number of people. The mobilization of all people is not necessary. We can feed them by mobilizing a small group to fish once a month. (262-251, 1994.8.1)

Fishing is easy. Women in the African interior all have needles. They make fish hooks by lighting the candles and heating the needles. I have done fishing by making them myself in the old days as well. There is no need to buy the fish-

ing lines either. There is any amount of nylon lines. This fishing line does not have to be the silk thread that was used in the past. And a lump of lead can be broken and hung as the sinker and the kaoliang stalk can be used as the float. So by hooking bait and using your hand as the fishing rod, you can catch any amount that you want. There are unlimited numbers of fish. Because fish are everywhere, it is not a problem.

But it is a problem that wives do not know how to fish. There is no leader to teach this. That is why I must fish and hunt. I can form and distribute federations in village after village and feed the villagers by forming groups of people to hunt animals. There was no one who taught such skills. (263-45, 1994.8.16)

The people of Africa and those of Third World countries that suffer from starvation are dying because they do not know how to fish. If the mother can fish, then they will not starve to death. There are rivers and lakes everywhere. There is an unlimited number of fish. Therefore, we must teach people how to catch and breed fish. I have already started this project. Fishing can be done as long as thread is available. Needles are everywhere. You can catch any amount of fish by lighting candles, heating the needles and bending them. Also, the bait is everywhere. One person feeding ten children a day is not a problem because fish their same height are easily caught on the hook. Even though they live in a suitable environment, their daily lives are impoverished since they do not have someone to lead them. (262-100, 1994.7.23)

You should have good business sense. You should be able to save the twenty million lives that die each year. You should make sure that people do not die of hunger by teaching them how to farm the land, and how to breed fish in water. Why would they starve to death when their wives and children are able to fish? Why die when there is water and an abundance of fish? That is why we do fishing. You must teach them how to fish.

You must also teach them hunting. Many animals, such as alligators, are found there in abundance. Therefore, the Sightseeing and Hunting Association for World Peace is for the sake of bringing about a peaceful world. Why are we doing such work? For twenty years I have lost money, yet I have made a foundation. True Parents must be responsible for those people on earth who are dying of starvation. We cannot give up because all the people in the world are brothers and sisters. Imagine twenty million people becoming members of the Unification Church every year.

By taking the initiative and expanding this worldwide, can you imagine how many people would be saved? I am telling you to learn how to farm and how to fish as soon as possible. Why do you need to do so? You must do so for the sake of those people who are starving to death. Therefore, learn such skills here and return to your countries. (253-109, 1994.1.9)

The children will not be left to starve to death as long as their mothers can fish. Don't we have a lot of water, fish and animals in abundance? There are lakes everywhere. If a person catches one big fish, it can last for one week. If a person catches an alligator, a family can live on it for a month. Hippos can be eaten for one year by drying its meat. After that, you can live on hunting. I have established the Sightseeing and Hunting Association for World Peace and the Fishing Association. I will hold a fishing tournament, gather American women who have nothing to do, and teach fishing to all of them. If you teach fishing to those mothers dying of hunger, they will not starve to death, no matter where they go. All they will need is water and land. They can cultivate land for farming. The Caucasians have not taught them this skill. They have just exploited the land, without even teaching them how to farm.

That is why they were stabbed and kicked out. Our missionaries are unlike the others. Everybody welcomes them. Why is this so? It is because they live for the sake of others. Therefore, we have built the Texas farm and the fishing ground, and are now training people on how to cultivate and farm. We can catch ten or even a hundred wild boars in a day as long as we set up the traps. (254-305, 1994.2.6)

If the women living in the Third World countries knew how to fish, if they at least knew how to place a fishing line with multiple hooks, they would never starve to death. There are numerous fish where you find lakes and rivers. People are dying of hunger because no one is teaching them such things. Moreover, if each village had a gun, then by hunting you could save the lives of those who are dying of hunger. I am now starting such training worldwide. If some area has water, I can teach fish breeding, and if some area has land, then I can teach cultivation and farming, so that is why I am currently preparing the Texas farm as a place of training. We must send many people to the farm. These Caucasians have not even taught the African people farming. (255-70, 1994.3.5)

If you go to the mountains, you can find a lot to eat. Even rabbits survive in the mountains, so why can't people live there? When you go to the countryside, there are lakes and rivers. But even though there are a number of fish in the lakes and rivers, you do not even know how to catch and eat them. I am trying to teach all that to you. Also, it is all right for you to go hunting when it is the hunting season. Do you know how to use a gun? You can live on hunting, too. You can survive for a year if you catch one bear. So why not conduct further research on such matters? (132-214, 1984.6.1)

1.3.4. Sea fishing is a mind game

I think a lot, even when I am fishing or wherever I am. A person who has been fishing for a long time thinks ten times for every ten times he reels the fishing rod, and thinks a hundred times

for every hundred times he reels the rod. Therefore, if you think a hundred times while reeling the fishing rod only ten, then you can get ahead in this world. When I go to the fishing area, I already know whether there is sand in that fishing ground or not, by walking for a while. Experts know all this. When you connect a plummet and drag it along the ground, it will make a sound of "thud, thud, thud" if on sand, but it will move smoothly along if the seabed is muddy. (221-84, 1991.10.23)

Generally, people do not fish with just one fishing rod. Most fishermen put two fishing rods near each other. The reason why they use two is because these rods symbolize the perfected man and the perfected woman, in other words, the perfection of subject and object partners. (228-260, 1992.7.5)

Hunting is exercise for the sake of your physical health, and fishing is for the sake of your mental health. You tend to reflect on your life and think a lot when sitting down and fishing. It is amazing that you can actually have such a time. You can analyze your past and plan for your future. It can be the most important period of time for us. You can calmly reflect on yourself with dignity. This is absolutely necessary. This is called the spiritual path of fishing in the East. The baby fish come along when the mother fish is hooked and caught. So people think, based on their own life, "Oh, I should not catch these fish!" when observing such an occurrence. People tend to think about their own sons and daughters, and their own people as well. After fishing for a couple of years, you will want to free the fish and put aside all thoughts of eating the fish just caught. That is the true spiritual path. The desire to eat simply vanishes. (252-208, 1993.12.30)

When going out on a boat to fish, people prefer a day when both the weather and their emotional state are good. That is their general mindset. However, in order to be a special person, one must go fishing in an environment where it rains and thunders. Without having experienced fishing in the pouring rain, you will never learn about environmental changes, the difference in the surrounding waters, and how the fish are influenced by the water movements due to heavy rain. (276-69, 1996.2.4)

From history comes forth a new world. Therefore, you cannot point at me and tell me that I am wrong. I am not ashamed. Say it while looking at the faces of the fish. While fishing and sitting all day, I say to the fish, "You have not seen any other man like me, right? Catching you is not my purpose. By bringing you fish to the fish farm we can liberate human beings from their food shortage. Isn't that the original purpose for your creation? If that is the case, then those people who eat your meat will not be considered as having done an evil deed." (247-32, 1993.4.21)

While fishing, if I say, "I am the owner. All come!" then all the fish come

rushing towards me. Then I feed them. That is why I catch more fish than others around me whenever I fish. Others think, "This is strange. I can't understand how he does that." This is what happens when you center on the vertical God. My spirit has an incredibly bright aura of light. Although you give off an ordinary light, there is a special light coming from me. The fish are attracted to that light. That is why they pour in, no matter how much I tell them not to come. (248-35, 1993)

When I go fishing, I always free the first fish I catch. I free it with the heart of God, who released it after creating it. Also, I have not eaten any of the fish that I have caught. Even so, I cannot allow the fish to die a natural death when there are twenty million of God's sons and daughters starving to death. You must think that you will save those twenty million sons and daughters of God by catching the fish. Since this is in line with the principle of the creation of animals and all other living organisms, the fish should be grateful in a sense. So when we have fishing tournaments, the fish often get hooked onto my hooks, yet not so often on the hooks of others. It is the true heart, the earnestness. The fish will come to you voluntarily if you say to them, "Hey, since God cannot dive into the water museum that He has created, please come out of the water, just this once, and give God a chance to feel the joy of letting you go free through me." (276-146, 1996.2.18)

Trying to catch fish as you ride on a boat in the blue ocean can be compared to God's providential work of restoration and salvation. The fish represent fallen men. If you prepare everything, use good bait and tie a sturdy string to a fine fishing rod, then you should catch many fish. But you will not be able to catch a single fish if your skill is poor, the string is weak, the bait is spoiled, and the fishing rod is worthless. It is all the same. Living in this world is the same as catching fish.

If you want to succeed in this world, you must put yourself in the position of a fishing rod and set it up with good fishing line and good bait; only then can you fish effectively. Fish are not caught easily. You reap the harvest when all the corresponding conditions are met. Without these corresponding conditions, you cannot bring in the harvest. (277-16, 1996.3.17)

When you go out to the sea fishing with Rev. Moon, you think the fish often bite onto my fish hooks, right? When fishing, everything looks like my object. The perfected subject fulfills the perfected object. The idea should be "the fish must bite here" when fishing. That is how the Principle operates. As soon as I put the fish hook in the water, the fish come to me as object partners of perfect value. This is different from the way normal people touch and handle a fishing rod. (262-300, 1983.8.1)

When fishing on a boat, you sit in one place all day. You even take care of going to the bathroom there. When

you need to pee, you take a can and say, "I am going to pee, so don't look!" and then turn your back to pee. You eat and pee all day by yourself. I have done so for twenty-five years. It is very convenient if you use a can. Is there anyone who will make fun of you for doing so when people swim naked in the sea and do all sorts of other things themselves? Animals might look at you and laugh, but only a very few people are out there. Even so, birds, animals, and all things are in the same position, so who will say anything? Urinating is a natural occurrence. Therefore, there is no need to be embarrassed. Even ladies can urinate there, not sitting down, but standing up like men. (303-118, 1999.8.8)

When we were fishing in Alaska, the U.S. Coast Guard came and praised us with great admiration after they had seen us going out fishing very early in the morning. They asked, "How can you people live this way?" They also said that we fish as if we are engaged in rigorous training. Therefore, I am the best at fishing when we go to the sea, aren't I? Starting from a school of minnows and going on up, there is no kind of fish that I have not caught. If someone tells me to catch whales, I will be able to catch a couple of them in one day. Is there any fish that I have not caught, starting with tuna? There are no fish that I have not caught while fishing along the East Coast, the West Coast, the Pacific, the Atlantic, and the Mediterranean Sea. Thus, I am familiar with all facets of the sea. (211-62, 1990.12.28)

When you see a big pine tree, you should be able to ask, "How do you think about me today, given that you know of my persecuted past and have watched me get kicked out?" Also, while looking at the playgrounds of the past at which your friends were cursed, you should embrace that place with love as if it was your friend. And while standing at a flowing stream, although your initial intentions was not to forget all that had happened there, you should now be willing to swim and catch fish in it. Then you are the owner. You can fish and hunt and eat with the heart that you will restore through indemnity for Adam, who could not be the first one to go into the river as the representative of the kingship, nor could he fish in the Garden of Eden. With this kind of mind, you should leave your life's record of hunting rabbits and pheasants in the mountains with such a heart and serve your parents faithfully, offering those animals as the sacrificial offerings before God, and using them as food and the ingredients of life. (221-13, 1991.10.20)

Up to this day, I have overcome everything from this most wretched world. So there isn't anything that I do not know about. And there isn't anything that I cannot do. I can do anything. If I go to a farming village, I can be the king of farmers. I know well what to cultivate on certain types of land. Also, when I go to the sea, I am the king of fishing; I am already famous with "Rev. Moon's system" of catching tuna. Moreover, I can be the cameraman taking pictures

when all the people are cheering victoriously, and I can be the cook if I enter the kitchen where they cook meals. That is how the owner is, isn't it? The owner is responsible for looking after all things. You must not forget the fact True Parents have worked behind the scenes in many activities. (229-67, 1992.4.9)

Unity is possible for everything if it has true love. The animal world, the plant world, and even the venomous snake – they all protect me. When I go fishing, I say, "Dear fish! I am not catching you for the sake of myself. I am catching you on behalf of God, who is shedding tears with the heart of wanting to feed the poor people dying of hunger in this world. I am not fishing for the sake of myself, but for the sake of descendants and all people, therefore you must forgive me!" That is why I always free the first fish that I catch. I free it as the sacrificial offering.

Once the fish have received my love, they will then try to sacrifice their life for me. Therefore, when twelve people get aboard the boat, I catch one-third the amount of fish caught. So, the fish recognize me and say, "Continue biting only on Rev. Moon's fish hook!" (278-105, 1996.5.1)

The people of the world think of Rev. Moon as a man of mystery, right? This is because I am good at saying mysterious things. I also do mysterious deeds. Although I am the founder of the Unification Church, I am the king among fishermen when I go out to the sea in a boat. People may say, "What would the founder of the Unification Church know?" Yet when they observe me at the fishing site, even those who have fished for ten or twenty years are struck with admiration. I am also skilled at doing farm work when I go to the farm. Most scholars think of themselves as mysterious people but when they meet me, they will know that I am a more mysterious man than they are. What makes Rev. Moon mysterious? It is the true love of God that makes me mysterious. (205-140, 1990.8.12)

I am an absolute believer in three meals a day. I do not eat desserts. I do not eat them even if they are on the table because I am thinking about poor people. Even my clothing is like this. I hesitate to wear neckties. I would like to collect all the money people spend on neckties and use it towards saving the world.

I do not use more than two sheets of toilet paper when I am in the bathroom. If possible, I use just one sheet of toilet paper. From the Principle point of view, it is a sin to waste. From the time of our birth, we are born with a set amount of consumer goods that we can use. It is a sin to use more than that amount. When we depart, we must leave material things behind. Otherwise, our descendants will inherit them as debts. Does anyone teach that nowadays? Before you receive formal education, your primary teachers are the Principle, nature, and the ocean. (193-104, 1989.8.31)

I know quite well about the edible

plants that grow wild in the mountains. I know what each plant is, which can be cooked for eating and which is harmful. I am also familiar with poisonous mushrooms. Therefore, I know how to survive living in the mountains and also how to fish if I go to the sea. As long as there are fish in the water I can build a house nearby and live there by myself. Fish are good when eaten fresh, with just some salt. It is true. I have prepared myself to be able to live anywhere on my own. (233-260, 1992.8.1)

None of you are aware that I have come this far while going through all the hardships in America by myself. You do not know about all the hardships behind me. Going out to the sea everyday is just one part of it. There isn't anything that I have not done. From the world of scholars to the world of culture, arts, education and so on, there isn't anything that I have not touched upon. I have been involved in the world of ideology as well. Based on that standard you are being trained and are working here.

Why do I go back and forth doing so many activities? Even the people who have followed me for almost forty years do not know what kind of a person I am. Every day with me is a new experience. You must not judge me from your own point of view. Even if you found out for sure what position you are in, you should not say anything until the world is restored. (193-104, 1989.8.31)

I do not like being alone. I do not want to be on my own. If working on the sea, I want to be with the fisherman, the best fisherman. When I am in the mountains, I want to be with the best mountain climber. When I go to the wrestling match, I want to be with the wrestler. And when I'm at a drinking place, I want to be there, even though I would only smell the aromas, because there should be another person who smells them as well. One cannot be alone. It is necessary to have a friend and a colleague. What I am saying is that I don't like being alone. There is an expression that birds of a feather flock together, right? No matter how great I am, I cannot live alone because it would be boring. (147-312, 1986.10.1)

Marrying means finding the owner. When a man and woman are attached to each other and ask where their love came from, they should know that love came straight from God. When the couple joins together, the loves comes straight down. Even blood that goes up to the head must also circulate downward, right? It goes all the way down to the bottom of the feet. What would happen if you were to try to stop the blood from flowing to the tips of your toes and fingertips because they were dirty and smelled like those of a farmer? Without this blood, you would die. This illustrates the principle of heaven and earth. Those people who are in the higher place should move down to the lower place, and those who are in the lower should go to the higher. Therefore, after having succeeded in fulfilling all of God's will, I would go down to some low, remote cor-

ner of the countryside and live in seclusion, fishing and being friends with the farmers and fishermen. That is what I am training for right now. (221-342, 1991.10.27)

God is happy even if He is being dragged by the fishing rod of love. That is where the arts of love will begin to form. Both the comedy and tragedy of love will be created. A varied culture of love will be created. Don't you want to be a soldier for national independence in creating such a world? (195-273, 1989.12.10)

What is analogous to the best bait in fishing? It is love. What is the one bait that can catch all people? That is love. What is the bait that can catch history and catch God as well? If there is bait that can catch God, you would want to prepare it at once, right? That is the bait of love. If there is bait that can catch history and catch heaven and earth as well, what would it be? I am saying that it is love. (145-227, 1986.5.11)

Section 2. People and the Hobby Life

2.1. The future world is the age of hobby life

In the future, the birth of a new international economic organization and a new order will bring incredible development. Thus, human beings will have enough wealth and free time to enjoy leisure. As a result, humankind will learn and understand about the greatness of nature. For this, we give appreciation to God as we try to overcome ethnic and national differences. After that, I am certain that the ideal world will come and we will enjoy the true life, a life of loving and caring for one another. (115-177, 1981.11.10)

The enterprise for the future will be the leisure industry. The age of technological industry is an age where people do not work, due to automated technology. Such a time will come. Even now, it is that way. A machine works once the person pushes a button. There will come a time when only three or four machines can produce, day and night, all the products in a factory where thousands of people used to work. Then what kind of industries will grow? It would be such things as the entertainment and fashion industries, both of which fall under the broader category of the industry of leisure. (191-73, 1989.6.24)

In the future, there will come a good time for you to build an economic foundation. The third industrial age, the age of the leisure industry will come. So the leisure and tourist industry are bound to develop. Those traveling to Mount Keumgang will first have a tour of Korea, where they will travel to Busan or Jeju Island first and then go to Mount Keumgang. You cannot take a tour to any other place after you have been to Mount Keumgang. You could go, but it would not be exciting; once you got there you would be disappointed. To attract incoming tourists, think about traveling around starting from Busan to

Jeju Island and then to Mount Baek-du. (225-176, 1992.1.20)

The time has passed when the president of a company works at the desk in his office. Because the age of computers is here, you can work anywhere outside of the country, as they do in Japanese offices using man-made satellites. That time is here. The time has come enabling one to give orders, "The director should do this, the executive director should do this, the head of the department should do this" and so on, while fishing on a boat and enjoying the raw fish. We are now entering the age where the person in charge of a company can run the business for the entire year without going to the office. He can run the business from a position of freedom where he can enjoy his hobbies and get rid of stress. (191-76, 1989.6.24)

In order to enjoy hobbies, the husband and wife, or even the entire family, should travel around the world by car. It is a lifestyle of enjoying hobbies with one's family. Isn't that what women are always complaining about – that they cannot go along with their husbands when they are traveling around? (252-296, 1994.1.1)

The leisure industry can help people feel God's happiness towards creation, so I am developing this by gathering all that is necessary in preparation of a support system, such as a big research lab and a big testing area for farming, for the ocean industry, and for hunting and fishing. This system should bring together farmers, who live close to nature, with those who live far from nature in order to develop and educate them. The people in urban areas can support them both through the best scientific technology. That is why I am developing the hobby business while enjoying many hobbies. (279-58, 1996.6.9)

A life of leisure! This is the kind of life that God likes. Your hobbies are connected to the creation. So many different hobbies are waiting for me. I never get exhausted. By enjoying one hobby after another, I automatically come closer to God's world. This is the best life that men can hope for. (279-60, 1996.6.9)

2.2. The hobby industry is the shortcut leading to the world of peace

Everyone must enjoy leisurely pursuits. After all, God did not create reluctantly. He made creation so that He could feel its excitement. We, too, must experience God's situation at the time of creation. Hobbies should not be done because someone tells us to do them. Hobbies should be done because you wish to do them. Even without sleep, you enjoy doing your hobby. Why should money or circumstance be involved there? So all these things – our leisure time, the hobby industry, hobby research and so forth – all these should be centered on God. Only then can those be things belong to God and be used regularly by the beloved sons and daughters

of God. Otherwise, they will be Satan's possessions. I am not doing this for the money; in fact, I am investing a lot of money in order to develop these ideas. (281-263, 1997.3.9)

When you are over sixty years old, you should go back to the farming area of your hometown and prepare yourselves to go to the spirit world by digging the land. There is much to do in preparation to enter the spirit world. So staying there like Rev. Moon, you should exert yourself with devotion and fulfill your responsibility in guiding the farming areas. By doing this, you will fulfill the purpose of the hobby industry and of leisure time itself; you will become a caring, warmhearted person who can inhabit the upper level of the spirit world and make good use of your time there. (289-193, 1988.1.2)

We must develop the hobby industry from now on. It is not the leisure industry, it is the hobby industry. Normally, we perceive the leisure industry as based on a profit motive. Fishing and hunting can both lead to thoughts of profits and commercial interests. That is different from just having a hobby. The hobby industry can spread to the small villages were people can enjoy themselves in each of the four seasons.

Every individual has different tasks. There are people working at a factory, a company, and so forth. They have all sorts of jobs, so we can make anywhere from 100 to 360 groups according to various jobs. That way, every day different groups would do this work. It can be done. If it gets planned like this and gets going all year round, then we will not lose any money. About fifty percent will be returned to us. Therefore, there is nothing better than the entertainment business. (252-201, 1993.12.30)

The hobby industry is different from the leisure industry. The leisure industry sets profit as its purpose, while the hobby industry puts the hobby itself as its purpose. People would say, "Only those who have money can do so. How can someone without money enjoy a hobby?" but that is not true. Nowadays everyone enjoys going on vacations, right? You can enjoy a vacation once or twice a year.

So, do you understand what I mean by hobby industry? I believe that being the first to make such a worldwide organization is the short-cut in leading to peace in all fields, including the world's money market and human resources. That is why I have been preparing this ocean plan for twenty years. In April of the coming year, it will be exactly twenty years. So along with this hobby industry, I am thinking of doing farming as a hobby. If people have too much free time, that is a problem as well. Therefore, I will encourage people to get a space of about 200 *pyung* and farm so that they can live off their hobby. (252-210, 1993.12.30)

Our job in the Completed Testament Age is to mobilize a great number of people. We need a huge number of people.

Which industry can best interconnect all the people of the world, transcending the national boundaries and going beyond cultural backgrounds? There is, of course, a necessity for church activities, but the only industry that can connect people, using both domestic and international activities simultaneously, is the hobby industry. (252-211, 1993.12.30)

2.3. We must prepare for the age of the hobby industry

I have recently begun using the term "hobby business." This is not for gain or benefit. (252-295, 1994.1.1)

Therefore, the age of urbanization will soon end and people will disperse more widely. The hobby industry is the only way to decentralize it. We must develop the hobby business. Now at this time I am proclaiming the hobby business. Men are made to live centering on hobbies. (253-15, 1994.1.1)

Casinos, sports, hunting, and fishing are all included in the hobby business. So the various participants did all these at the World Culture and Sports Festival, right? (253-111, 1994.1.9)

We are opening up the tourist business worldwide. I am preparing the worldwide tourist business now. The establishment of our American bus company "Go Tour" was an essential link in the preparation for this. From now on, the tour-leisure business will develop worldwide. I am giving this the name "hobby business." (262-247, 1994.8.1)

In the future, I think the circumstances will be that everyone will ride on our boats at tourist attraction areas worldwide. How will I do that? We will be able to attract tourists to any country and guide those persons with lots of money because we have a worldwide organization. All those people have to travel. They must go on vacations during the holiday seasons. So we will name this business the "hobby industry." This has to do with our interests. What I am saying is let us travel around the world while working and delivering goods. (262-247, 1994.8.1)

We are creating tourist areas. If we have the land, we can do landscaping and make a fishing ground. We will make sure that no one throws away cigarette butts, empty cans, and garbage there, thus keeping the area clean and making it a place free of environmental pollution. We will make an area where tourists can sightsee and enjoy their hobbies as well. We will create a tourist area so lovely that anyone who has looked at it once will instantly wish to come and visit. If we build such a place, then all five billion people would visit, even competing to get there. (1997.10.31)

Up to this point, have we ever taken a vacation in the Unification Church? From now on, all the well-equipped places that I have prepared, such as the fishing areas, hunting grounds, and swimming pools – all of these should

be used. I have made the foundation for you to have vacations in the warmer areas when it is cold, and in the colder areas when it is hot. The time has come now to do so. This is what is referred to as the hobby industry. I have climbed up to this position by receiving much persecution, but you will not be persecuted.

Now if you go to South America, where I have already prepared the foundation, and if you take responsibility, you can bring your tribes there and train them. All the families in that country and the ancestors in the spirit world can become one based on that tribal foundation. (266-135, 1994.12.22)

I am preparing sites in Alaska and in Texas, and trying to make fishing areas and hunting grounds in 160 countries. Fishing and hunting are hobbies. They are hobbies of the upper class, of the people who live well. That is why I am promoting the hobby industry. I am going to lead it directly, by making a tourism organization. (269-49, 1995.4.6)

I will connect the sites of the global tourism industry in order to create a world in which all people can harmonize with each other. If you can influence the people, you can influence the world. Therefore, instead of living within a small circle of relationships, you should become champions of the diplomatic world, relating with prominent people. (275-106, 1995.11.3)

All people should have a hobby. In the future, people will not have any food problems. Then would you spend your time fighting with each other? Everyone needs to have some fun. You should ride on a boat in the river and be friends with the fish by diving into the water world. You have yet to do theses activities. This is why I am creating the term "hobby business" now.

The Unification Church does not allow people to enjoy casinos, so we will organize a group. Out of a month that is spent visiting the various hobby businesses, we need only two days to visit the casinos. So we will stop by the casino. All the young people go crazy when they play in a casino, but that is also an aspect of the hobby business. Therefore, for the people who have lost ten thousand dollars, thirty percent should be returned to them.

I have inquired about the crime rings that secretly control the casinos in Las Vegas and Atlantic City. So, if a person has lost one hundred thousand dollars, we will distribute lottery tickets worth thirty percent of this amount. But then, those who have been participating in the casino games for more than three hours must receive ideological education for one hour. Historically, casinos are considered evil, yet we must be able to say that True Parents have turned them into an instrument that can draw on the dreams of others. It must be centered on the hobby industry. Those who do not learn will continue gambling even if they cut off their own fingers. They will still continue to gamble, using the stubs of their fingers, even after determining

not to gamble again. (276-184, 1996.2.19)

Academic education represents the mind, while physical education represents the body. Therefore, through the World University Association, the future direction will be toward the perfection of love – heavenly ideal love – using the True Parents as the primary model. For that purpose, I opened the hobby business. In the future, we must live to enjoy fun activities, so the world of the ideal family has now become the world of the hobby industry.

Everything is a hobby. If you go to a new place, the mountains, the rocks, and the trees are all different. Those are all of great interest. But for whom were they all created? God, the Owner, created in order to embrace everything. God created an ideal environment where His sons and daughters can live anywhere. (277-27, 1996.3.17)

I have been speaking about the hobby business. The entire world today is a world of science, in which through the best technology, people are moving the world. For this reason, people take a serious view of the production process, calling it the hobby industry, whereas I call it the hobby life. Do you understand? There are all kinds of hobbies – hobbies for your eyes, for your nose, for your mouth, for your ears, for your sense of touch, for your body, for your mind, for your love, and so on… (278-95, 1996.5.1)

The realm of settlement does not only apply to the ocean; the land should also be connected to it. Now I am going to the mountains. I will find a place with beautiful scenery. What will I do when I get there? I cannot just go. I will make an animal preserve. I will not be killing animals in the wild; instead I will raise them. I will connect all this to the hobby business. This is something that will become the blood, the body, and the bones of God's son. Fallen men are like thieves, robbing everything for their own blood, bones and skin. To stop this, I have prepared the hobby business to be able to unite with the original love, in accordance with the highest turning point in history that is the holding of the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples. (286-141, 1997.8.9)

The value of the arts continues to exist. This is why the hobby business is external. Families are not hobbies, they should be fun. By the word jae-mi (fun), I do not mean a person who "lives in America" (jae-mi, similar-sounding). Everyone likes America, but in this case, jae-mi does not have that meaning. Our parents live in a warm, comfortable home that is better than those of America. You hum when you are happy, right? Do you think you will only be humming at your parents' home? (296-127, 1998.11.3)

We can live because of joy. A hobby refers more to circumstantial conditions for joy, and fun is something that can take root in the ideal love between a subject and an object partners. Can you have fun on your own? If you can, then

you are out of your mind. There must be a subject of love. Everything is in relationships within the realm of love, for God has created all things to supply fuel for the Subject of love, which is bigger than the ideal universe. That is why you must love all things. 298-234, 1999.1.8)

It is not necessary to eat crops that have been contaminated by pollution. I will create an environment in which the individual can live on what they grow with sincerity. If you have five family members, then do your own farming and eat the food you have harvested. Do not buy from other places. You should grow vegetables and even your own rice to eat. If people put the Unification Church in charge of this, there is no need to worry about the Uruguay Round. Otherwise, the world will perish due to pollution. (252-295, 1994.1.1)

From now on, the biggest issue in the world will be who is leading the tourism industry. That time will come. The distribution channels in the economy will become firmly established through other industrial bases. However, the distribution channels of the tourism industry move quickly, circulating all the time. Its potential for expansion is enormous because of its circulation and there is no place that is excluded. To build that foundation, I am preparing to build condominiums in Suanbo and Bugok. Everything is being prepared for the distant future. However, there is no one in this room with such a futuristic way of thinking. (225-176, 1992.1.20)

CHAPTER THREE

The Pacific Rim Era and the Inauguration of the Island Nations Federation

Section 1. Now is the Pacific Rim era

1.1. Why is the Pacific era coming?

The current times are called the Pacific era. No matter what America says, and regardless of those who claim European supremacy, the trade zone centering on the Pacific Ocean has surpassed that of Europe and continues to develop. In all aspects, America is at the stage where it cannot abandon the Pacific region. The Asian people are the ones who are good at doing business. Don't Americans recklessly use their money? The Asian people do not. If you ever handle the body of a dead Chinese person, you will never come across a corpse without money. (174-205, 1988.3.1)

The direction of world civilization will develop as it makes a circuit around the globe. In other words, civilization moved from the continental civilization of Egypt to the peninsular civilization of Rome and Greece, then to the island civilization of Great Britain and reached the continental civilization of the United States of America. The continental civilization is now moving west, crossing the Pacific Ocean, passing through the island civilization of Japan and ultimately culminating in the civilization of the Korean peninsula to connect with Asia. The culture consolidated here is of a high level and will create a new world. As an island nation, Japan was the first in Asia to incorporate Western Civilization.

It will now be the age of the peninsular civilization. The Korean peninsula is where the oriental and Western Civilizations become one. As the historian Spengler pointed out, the rise and fall of civilizations have been recurring like the changes of the four seasons in a year. The age of the Atlantic civilization has now passed, ushering in the age of the Pacific civilization. (115-171, 1981.11.10)

Christianity had the responsibility of bringing spiritual salvation to the world. However, unless it absorbs the physical foundation, Christianity does not have a basis to stand on. Today, people throughout the world are talking about the coming of the era of the Pacific civilization. Why is that so? It is because the origin of history can be found in that region.

Since Jesus' body was lost, America – representing spiritual Christianity – has the historical mission of crossing the Pacific and returning to Asia. Con-

sequently, we can conclude that such a time must inevitably come. You should understand that the original cause lies here. (224-306, 1991.12.22)

Where should America go? It should return to Asia. It should seek the Asian continent where Jesus' body was lost. The era of the Pacific civilization is coming. Yet, why is the era of the Asia-Pacific civilization coming? Even scholars do not know this. This cannot be solved without Rev. Moon's principle. America will be compelled to seek Asia. Currently, America has only the spiritual standard. Therefore, in order to make use of the body, it must return to Asia. (225-30, 1992.1.1)

Since Jesus lost his body, the foundation for the main stage disappeared, and he lost his foothold in Asia. Therefore, the material civilization went in the opposite direction. It was dragged the other way to Rome. It should have gone towards the West from Asia, but instead it came back the other way from the West. It conformed to the path of indemnity and had to go along that path while shedding blood and suffering sacrifices. In this way, Western Civilization went around in a circle, centering on Rome and passing through Britain and America, to return again to the Pacific civilization. It returns to the Pacific civilization, because it was in Asia that Jesus lost his body on the worldwide level. The spirit and the flesh were separated at this place. Therefore, Western Civilization, the material civilization, went the other way in a circle to return to Asia. (249-132, 1993.10.8)

We have entered an era in which the entire period extending from the Old Testament Age, to the realm of the bride centering on Britain, America and France in the New Testament Age, can be restored through indemnity. Consequently, right after the Second World War, we could advance towards a unified world. Therefore, the era of the Pacific civilization will arrive after the mother and her sons, Cain and Abel, become one and enter Asia together. Since Jesus lost his body in Asia, a global political domain corresponding to the body must be unified centering on Asia. That is why the era of the Asian civilization is now coming. (243-296, 1993.1.28)

Western Civilization, oriental civilization, Asian civilization and the Pacific civilization have come forth in the world. However, the Pacific civilization is a long way from America. This is why Rev. Moon went to America and made full preparations to remain there. Now I must come to Asia, combine the East and the West, and attend to India and also to Siberia. I must attend to these two places. (231-60, 1992.5.31)

Where must the Lord first appear? He must come from Asia. Since Jesus lost his physical body in Asia, he must recover it in Asia. Why is the Pacific civilization coming? The physical body that Jesus lost is returning in the era of a unified cultural sphere in Asia. When

all these things are resolved in this way, history will be properly resolved. (232-25, 1992.7.1)

Japan was the Eve nation on the satanic side. That is why the Eve nation on the satanic side could share and retain equally all the blessings of the Eve nation on the heavenly side. Christianity could not succeed in Asia on account of Jesus' death, so it went in reverse to Europe instead, passing through Rome and Britain. In this manner, Christianity has gone the opposite way. The peninsula corresponding to Rome is the Korean peninsula; the sea and island corresponding to the Mediterranean Sea is Japan; the continent corresponding to Europe is the Asian continent. They return to their relative positions after making a full circuit. The time has come for the two ends to meet. This is why scholars and politicians say that the age of the Pacific civilization is coming. (251-144, 1993.10.17)

Why did the Second World War have to occur? It was to recover Jesus' lost body on the worldwide level. The unified realm was lost because the returning Lord was driven away. That is why America now comes again through the Pacific civilization, seeking the Asian region that had lost Jesus' body, as well as the unified world. The time is drawing near when America comes seeking Asia from the opposite direction. You should know that that is why the era of the Pacific civilization is coming. This is in accord with the fact that the world must be unified, centering on the ideal of the returning Lord, by recovering, in Asia, Jesus' body that was lost in Asia. By going through this process, the era of the Pacific civilization is bound to come. It is to recover the body and make it whole. The Lord at his Second Advent already has the basis for receiving this, centering on the spirit and the flesh. That is why the cultural sphere can be connected internally and externally, based on a criterion of unity, where the object partner stands before the subject partner. Through this process, a unified world can be created, centering on the True Parents. (267-176, 1995.1.5)

The era of the Pacific civilization is coming, because Western Civilization and oriental civilization must recover the lost body of the father. Jesus came as the father, but the body of that father was killed. We must recover this body and make it one with the legacy of spiritual salvation within the sphere of Christianity. That is why the Lord comes to the East. Centering on the coming Lord, the Korean peninsula is like Italy. Until now, Italy has never been destroyed. For over two thousand years, it has survived as a powerful nation. That is because Italy is a counterpart nation for the coming Lord. Based on that standard, the Lord returns to the Pacific era, centering on this Korean peninsula; but it is the Pacific Ocean era rather than the Mediterranean Sea era. He returns to the vast environment of Asia through the connection of the Korean peninsula. If the Korean peninsula is the male sexual organ, then

Japan is the female sexual organ. They are bound to become one. The age of a unified world comes when they are united. That is why Korea is called the Adam nation, and Japan the Eve nation. (251-147, 1993.10.17)

In the future, the world civilization will most certainly return to Asia. The era of the Pacific civilization is approaching. Today, eminent scholars who study social science, as well as natural scientists who have any pretence to knowledge, predict that the era of the Pacific civilization will appear and set the trend of history. Why must it be that way? Shouldn't I know the root cause? Haven't I been teaching now for over forty years that the era of the Pacific civilization is coming? Nobody knows in which nation it will appear. I am the only one who knows. It is the man called Rev. Moon who knows all these things and believes that the Republic of Korea must take the lead. (207-281, 1990.11.11)

At which time should Western Civilization and oriental civilization be joined together? When the two combine, where will this union take place? They will not be combined in an island nation. They will be joined together on a peninsula. From this point of view, as a peninsular nation, Korea is in the most precarious situation in Asia. When you consider Korea's location, you will find that it is surrounded by the Soviet Union, communist China, Japan, and even America. Taking into consideration the Pacific coast, it can be regarded as being connected even to America. All scholars are saying that history will now advance into the era of the Pacific cultural sphere. Scholars in the fields of politics, economy, and history are asserting that such an era will come. In America, they regard this as indisputable.

Then, which nation will play the leading role? Will it be Japan? Will it be China? Japan and China are enemies. They were enemies forty years ago. Korea and Japan are also enemies. They are all enemies. In Asia, Japan fought against China, against the Soviet Union, and also occupied Korea. They all regard Japan as an enemy nation. She was the Eve nation on the satanic side that could replace Great Britain. (196-162, 1990.1.1)

Western Civilization and Asian civilization cannot be directly connected. You should know that Western Civilization has lost its direction and is entering the twilight realm after the sun has set. It will perish unless it thanks Rev. Moon for connecting it with oriental civilization, which is like the brilliant sunlight of a new morning. Western society, which is headed toward ruin, has a cultural background of flowing toward the Atlantic Ocean. You should be aware of the amazing fact that, through Rev. Moon, this civilization can now be connected to God's providential realm through a new Asian civilization.

Until now, western people have just opposed me, with no knowledge of this fact. Through Rev. Moon they can relate with God's providence. They have gone over to a world in which they can now

accept God's providence once again. God's providence will once more begin to expand. (120-199, 1982.10.15)

The Unification Church is the third son. The Unification Church was actually born as the most precious son of them all. The Christian civilization is now the only thing that can digest western culture into a unified substance and bring harmony in Europe and to North and South America. Yet, the Christian civilization of the West is crossing over to Asia. Then in which nation will Asia conform to God's efforts to bring unity and order through Christian thought? Japan worships a diverse group of gods. China and the Soviet Union have been communized. Korea remains alone within the enclosure of Christianity even though its various denominations are in conflict. Although it cannot be planted as a seed tree, it is needed as firewood.

In other words, among the many countries of Asia, if there is one nation whose entire population can accept the Christian cultural background and also maintain a receptive attitude while the Pacific civilization is approaching before their eyes, that nation can naturally only be Korea. Japan, China, or the Soviet Union cannot fulfill this role. (222-134, 1991.10.28)

With a "do or die" spirit, I organized the International Conference for the Unity of the Sciences (ICUS) and the Professors World Peace Academy (PWPA). There is nowhere you cannot go, with these organizations in the lead. If I hadn't mobilized America at that time, its leaders would have never known what direction top Chinese officials would take for the next twenty years. It was obvious that communism was going to change, but Americans didn't know in which direction it was going to change. They didn't believe me, even when I told them. That is why I gathered military strategists and other planners, with twenty people representing the free world and another twenty representing China, and convened a seminar under the title "An Examination of the Soviet Union's Future Foreign Policy toward China and the Pacific Coast." I was the one who had provided America's future strategic material. (204-257, 1990.7.11)

We are now in the era of the Pacific civilization. At the same time, this leads to the space age. All the waters of the world merge with the waters of the Pacific Ocean. The rivers and the waters from the Atlantic Ocean and even water from the Mediterranean Sea all join with the Pacific. There is a flow of water called the Black Current that is about four to five thousand miles long. As it circulates it influences all five of the great oceans of the world.

For this reason, when the era of the Pacific civilization draws near, everybody must become one. Then we can explore outer space. Unless people become one, they would even fight over the ownership of the sun, with everyone claiming that right. They would ask who the master of the starry realm is and they would all claim to be the one. They

are bound to fight among each other. Our sun is about 1.3 million times larger than the earth. How could human beings, who don't even amount to a tiny speck, claim to own this vast entity? The universe would roar with laughter. A unified world is bound to appear in the era of the Pacific civilization. That is why everything must be overhauled. Democracy in America does not work, and neither does communism. That is why the head-wing ideology, known as Godism, must appear in this age. (207-46, 1990.10.28)

A unified universe on the heavenly side must be created centering on the mother on the heavenly side, along with Cain and Abel on the heavenly side. What is this unified universe? It is a world without Satan. When you think about the Garden of Eden, its standard was devoid of the Fall. Adam and Eve, who are in the position of fallen parents, must attend the father anew. They should go around the world, return to the era of the Pacific civilization and attend the father there. Then they should inherit the new blood. When they become one after inheriting life and the new lineage through new love, a unified universe will be established for the first time. (209-292, 1990.11.30)

The era of the Pacific civilization is now coming. The Adam nation and Eve nation, and three archangel nations should lay the principal foundation at that time. They must become one. On the strength of the reputation of True Parents, who are from the original Eden, we can head straight for heaven. I have established a liberated realm, an original standard, whereby we can enter the Kingdom of Heaven, based on the archangel's love, God's love and True Parents' love. Therefore, the age in which we can enter the Kingdom of Heaven on the national standard has come. Consequently, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and the Kingdom of Heaven in spirit world will be manifested. (211-204, 1990.12.30)

Through the unification of North and South Korea, the gap between the rich and poor in the East and the West will be resolved, and Western Civilization and oriental civilization will become one. Originally, the East was the center of spiritual civilization. That is why all religions emerged from the East. When religious spheres begin to flourish, all material possessions must be cast away. You have to give up everything, including your house and nation. However, the material world cannot be thrown away. This is why it is being collected from the other end.

As a result, western people were the ones who developed material civilization. The European powers had knowledge, and the more they discovered, the more they occupied the land, claiming it to be their own. They all expanded their domain through knowledge. Yet in the East, people gave up all their money. Unification, however, unfolds when the spiritual standard and material standard become one. The material civiliza-

tion comes seeking Asia. Thus, an era is coming in which Western Civilization and oriental civilization are combining in the Pacific sphere, so an era is coming which will lead to a new world. That is the era of the Pacific civilization. (212-138, 1991.1.2)

A majority of scholars worldwide have reached the conclusion that the Pacific civilization is the way that history is leading us toward the original vertical world of God. Then what are we looking for? We are seeking true love. If that principle of love is established, then the world will not perish.

Rev. Moon, who represents the East, came to America to educate people so that they could safely cross the Pacific Ocean without drowning in it. You should know that this is the purpose of the Unification Church in western society. The Unification Church, alone, can go to the eternal and ideal original homeland, where the Pacific civilization, including both vertical love and horizontal love, is formed and brought to perfection. (216-206, 1991.3.31)

In the process of advancing to the unified realm of the world, a Pacific civilization will emerge from the Asian continent, based on Western Civilization and oriental civilization. Europe will now become one. In that regard, what will become its underlying cultural basis? It will not be the history of Great Britain, Germany, or France. Its foundation is the entire Christian cultural sphere. (218-362, 1991.8.22)

The vast American and Western sphere will restore Jesus' body, then become one and return to the Pacific Ocean. The standard for a nation to lead the world, centering on Jesus, must be established in Asia, which is a spiritual civilization. That is what I have been preparing until now. The formation of the Interreligious Federation for World Peace has brought order to the Christian cultural sphere, based on oriental civilization, and it can revive and unify the substance of Christian civilization in the future. It has tied together the hidden relationships of the world. (218-364, 1991.8.22)

In order to restore through indemnity the failure of Roman culture, I am laying out a worldwide peninsular civilization, and also thinking of creating a historical Roman kingdom of law which goes back to God. This is coming to the Pacific civilization. By the end of this month, I am assembling the religious spheres from the East and the West. That has never happened in history, has it? The International Conference on the Unity of the Sciences, the Professors World Peace Academy (PWPA), the World Media Association, the Interreligious Federation for World Peace, and the Federation for World Peace are organizations that are going to deal with all existing divisions and conflicts of mind and body, so that each nation may be brought together in an ideal unified realm. This is awesome. All this is made possible because God exists.
(218-379, 1991.8.22)

Most intellectuals believe that the time of the Pacific cultural sphere is coming and that Asia will play a leading role in that age. What should Asia do in order to play such a leading role? Surrounding nations should be brought into harmonious relationships. Korea, for instance, has Japan, China, the Soviet Union, and America surrounding its territory. This small nation is a place of geopolitical importance, so these four great powers are in hot rivalry and cannot let her go. Practically speaking, I have been working hard until now to bring together nations from many directions, connecting, assimilating and forming them into a supra-national core. That is why we have come to a stage in which even America, which heads the free world across the Pacific, cannot ignore us. We have come to a stage where even Japan cannot ignore the man called Rev. Moon. It is the same with the Soviet Union and also China. (222-29, 1991.10.27)

As we face the imminent approach of the Pacific civilization, is there a nation among the many countries of Asia which can possess a Christian cultural background and maintain a receptive attitude? If so, that nation would not be Japan, China or the Soviet Union. It could only be Korea. Of the five billion people in the world, more than 3.2billion or three-fifths are Asian. They live in Asia. Korea has come down through history as a kingdom where religions have flourished. That is how it was with Buddhism, Confucianism, and Christianity. (221-196, 1991.10.24)

I am trying to promote a Pacific cultural sphere in Asia, on the basis of bringing together Christianity and many other religions centering on Korea. The democratic world and communist world can come if they wish. I inaugurated the Women's Federation for World Peace and the Interreligious Federation for World Peace in preparation for this. Do not forget the fact that combining the mind and body, which are in conflict, and driving them into one, makes the internal relationship that enables you to unify the entire historical course during which the mind struggled within the individual self. (221-196, 1991.10.24)

Think about it. The cultural history of the colored races is long, while the background of cultural achievement of the white race is short. White people are cousins of polar bears that have come from the North Pole. They eat meat while looking at blood. Bloodshed always accompanied the white people wherever they went. They shed blood. However, those who live in an agricultural culture are different. That is why the end is near for white society. You should be aware of this. Where should they go now? Shouldn't they go to Asia?

Don't intellectuals in America these days say that the era of the Pacific civilization is coming? The era of the Pacific civilization comes centering on the yellow people. Why is it that Japan and Korea have experienced such rapid growth? It is because God is with them. From those lands, Rev. Moon will also prosper. This is why I have planted an

essential concept that the Pacific cultural realm needs. I have planted it throughout the world. Once planted, it cannot be removed by anybody. (205-261, 1990.9.9)

Many people say that the future will be the time of the yellow people, or "Yellow Power." The world of the Pacific cultural sphere refers to Asia. In some way or other, that is how humanity will become in the future. Through our large weddings, two-thirds of the human population will belong to the yellow race, and the other third of the population will be of mixed backgrounds. That is why, from now, the world will advance into the time of the yellow people. I am not saying this because I belong to the yellow race. I am saying this because that is how the Principle works. (244-135, 1993.2.1)

1.2. The central nations in the Pacific era are Korea and Japan

The Pacific civilization is now coming. In a situation where battlefields are inevitably emerging in America, Japan, Korea, China and Russia, countries that are unprepared for this civilization and cultural background will fall behind. I am the very man who has made preparations, standing on the front line. That is why I have brought together Japan, America, China and the Soviet Union. It gives us hope to think that the great things done by Rev. Moon and the Americans, who have joined hands in unity, will become a condition for America, and the world in the future, to secure and enter a common destiny within the Pacific civilization. Don't feel so bad about this. Once this is connected, it will be very good for the Western world and America. (202-264, 1990.5.24)

Since there are people from the Soviet Union here today, I would like to give you one piece of advice. There will be many problems if the Soviet Union continues to strengthen its economic system while emphasizing Germany and Europe. Always bear in mind that you should put America first, and then bring Europe together.

If you give priority to Europe, and proceed to bind Europe together, then a great war and complex problems will occur in the near future in the European region and the Pacific coastal regions of Asia. In order to prevent this, leaders in the Soviet Union should focus their economic policies on America and then proceed to bind Europe together. If they ignore this advice, the problems will be great. (210-143, 1990.12.18)

From now, the era of the Pacific civilization is coming. This is what scholars are talking about in western society. Japan as an island nation cannot deal with this. Is it Japan or China? China belongs to the third world and is undeveloped. Since I knew this, I have been carrying out the providence in this way. Korea and Japan were designated respectively as Adam and Eve. That is why they are connected with the continent. China belongs to the archangelic realm, whether it believes it or not. Aren't there many men in China? They are archangels.

In the past, didn't they bind the feet of women because there weren't that many women? Wasn't China called the "blue dragon"? The dragon is the archangel. (194-347, 1989.10.30)

Since the allied forces of Great Britain, America and France belong to the Christian cultural sphere, they offered great protection to a country like Korea. If the Pacific war had been extended for another four days, two hundred thousand Christians would have been massacred. That did not happen because God loved Korea. Did a single bomb fall on Korea during the Second World War? In the chaos during the final months, Japan was left in ruins. But in Korea, not one bomb fell. Why? It was because heaven and earth were protecting the Korean people. Since America belongs to the Christian cultural sphere, it had protected Korea. (240-217, 1992.12.13)

In this way, the Pacific civilization advances toward the unification of Asia and world unification. This is why everything that was lost is being restored through indemnity. Isn't that exactly how things are now progressing? Since America is the archangel on the heavenly side, three archangels on the satanic side must be under America's control. That is why the mission of the Eve nation is great.

What kind of mission remains for the Eve nation? She should maintain her chastity, stick close to her husband's side, and not protrude her personality. Nothing a woman has exists for the sake of the woman herself. Japan's assets should be used for the sake of Asia. They should be used for developing the Middle East and even Europe. (250-292, 1993.10.15)

We are now moving from the age of the Atlantic cultural sphere to the age of the Pacific cultural sphere. The Soviet Union and America are having closer ties, thus helping them to become the leading forces of this age. They have taken prominent roles. But in order to lead the world from now on, they must digest the people of Asia. Otherwise, they cannot lead. The Asian population is close to 3 billion among the world's 5 billion people. Asia has over three-fifths of the world's population. This is why a thought system, that cannot digest the people of Asia, cannot lead the world. (173-219, 1988.2.18)

There are 3 billion people living in Asia. We are now living in the time of the Pacific cultural sphere. Such a time has come. History has passed through a river culture, through the Mediterranean cultural sphere, and has come around to the Atlantic cultural sphere. Now we are entering an age where we can leap into the cultural sphere of outer space, centering on the Pacific cultural sphere. How to continue linking all this together is a question for the world's political tacticians to explore, but they will not find an answer. I have gathered the prominent politicians of the world to countless international conferences. Their conclusion is that only Rev. Moon's ideology is the hope for this age – and not America,

France, Germany, Britain or even the Soviet Union. (174-48, 1988.2.23)

The inhabitants of our global village have become like close neighbors. The approaching Asia-Pacific era will be a world where people cannot help but live in harmony, going beyond skin color and cultural background. Heavenly fortune is driving people towards an age of harmony when, in order to survive, individuals must make peace even with their enemies.

The Korean people should become the guides of the new age by living under the right set of values, embedded in the firm foundation of a belief system centered on God. We should all go beyond our petty interests. With a clear and calm perspective on international relations, we should exhibit the combined strength of the entire nation and take the leading role in the Asia-Pacific era. (193-322, 1989.10.12)

Thankfully, there are 3.2 billion people living in Asia. The Soviet Union is a nation of white people who are in a disadvantageous position due to their frigid climate. Yet, the Soviet Union is in a position today, which surpasses that of communist China in all aspects, including military and political fields. That is why the Soviet Union is intent on devouring Japan at any cost. Once the Soviets do so, they believe that they can grasp the initiative in their confrontation against America, centering on the stage of the Pacific Ocean. (121-16, 1982.10.21)

From a geopolitical point of view, Japan is an island nation. In the end, island nations cannot live in isolation. This is why Japan needs to establish ties with some continent. Currently, Japan is making her ties with the American continent across the Pacific Ocean.

These two nations were enemies forty years ago during the Second World War. The uniqueness of these people is that they have fought each other as enemies. But where will Japan go? Should she cross the Pacific Ocean and get a ride on America's back, or should she connect with the Asian continent? If Japan were to connect, where should she be connected? This is the question. Since the shortest route is to go through the Korean peninsula, Japan should not connect to Siberia or to Communist China.

Japan cannot enter Communist China and digest the chaos there. Japan cannot digest the 1.2 billion people of Communist China. Japan is also unable to digest the Soviet Union, which is the leading nation of the vast communist world. From this point of view, Japan has no alternative other than to connect with Korea, centering on the United States. (177-14, 1988.5.15)

The Pacific civilization is a preparatory culture, established for the sake of creating the sphere of influence for the coming God-centered ideology of the True Father. A unified cultural sphere must emerge from this place and bring an end to the disparate cultures. That is why the unification of languages, cultures, and nations will unfold centering

on the culture of the True Parents. Such a time will arise and be ushered in. It will become more and more evident on the Korean peninsula. (193-225, 1989.10.4)

In American economic and philosophical circles, people are saying, "the USA, as the leading force in the Pacific civilization, is finished. We must go to the East. Yet, how are we to go there?" Such people do not realize that they need to take a hold of Rev. Moon's tail. Once they are taught that, everything will be completed. (195-258, 1989.12.1)

Korea is the decisive point for creating the realm of a unified nation. Korea is the Adam nation. The lineage that enables you to inherit the original nature of the owner who connects love, life and lineage together, and stands within the new ideal realm of creation, begins from the Adam nation.

Where will the mother nation, eldest son nation, and nations of the second son achieve unity? They will cross the Pacific and come to Korea, the Adam nation. That is when Korea will be liberated from Japan. (198-232, 1990.2.3)

Among the many countries of Asia, if there is one that can accept the Christian cultural background and maintain a receptive attitude while confronting the situation in which the Pacific civilization is approaching before their eyes, that country would not be Japan, China or the Soviet Union but could only be Korea. Have hope. More than three-fifths of humankind lives in Asia, which is the birthplace of religions. Korea has been a kingdom that brings fruition to those religions. (222-36, 1991.10.27)

The age of the Pacific civilization is unfolding, centering on the Korean peninsula. Japan is exactly like a woman's womb. These two must become one. That is why Japan must restore through indemnity all the mistakes of Christianity and of Britain. The failures of the Vatican must also be overcome, centering on the Korean peninsula. The Vatican ideal, the Christian ideal, and the ideal royal palace for the returning Lord should all be created. Since Jesus' body was lost in Asia, the Christian cultural sphere must be combined, both spiritually and physically, in Asia so as to create a unified cultural sphere. (226-134, 1992.2.2)

The Adam nation is Korea, and the Eve nation is Japan. The archangel nations are the surrounding countries of America, China, and the Soviet Union. This is what God chooses. Didn't Japan rule over Korea? China also tried to occupy Korea. The country that controls Korea controls the Pacific Ocean. The time of the Pacific cultural sphere is coming. Haven't most intellectuals been announcing this in recent history? That is why the Soviet Union, China, and America have tried to occupy Korea. (234-110, 1992.8.4)

The people of the world do not know that Korea has reached the stage where it can be in command of the four nations.

God, Rev. Moon, and the Unificationists are the only ones who know. How grateful we are for this amazing knowledge! In regards to the future direction of history, many of the world's scholars, economists, and social scientists say that the era of the Pacific civilization is coming. The world shall come to know that Rev. Moon has created the base for the Pacific civilization, and is pushing ahead, after establishing it as an ideological base! Amen! In this way, the sun is bound to rise and bring a new dawn to the world. (239-274, 1992.12.6)

The unification of North and South Korea will not take place through Kim Il-sung, but through Rev. Moon. The Pacific civilization is established by bringing together the Eve nation, the Adam nation, and the archangel nations. It is inevitable for the Pacific civilization to be established in that way because Jesus lost his body in Asia, and therefore the standard remains that a unified world should be restored again in Asia. That is why the Pacific civilization is being discussed worldwide. The world will become a unified place through the unity of Adam and Eve, and the three archangels. That is how providential history is developing. (250-290, 1993.10.15)

Centering on Asia, the Korean peninsula is like the male sexual organ, while Japan is like the sexual parts of a woman. Centering on the Pacific civilization, this forms the central point for the standard of connecting the larger landmasses of USA, China, and the Soviet Union, along with all six continents of the world. This forms the Pacific civilization.

What is the Pacific civilization based around? China and Japan are thought to be the center at this time. Actually, this is not the case. The Republic of Korea-the Korean peninsula-will inevitably become the center. From a topographical point of view, the Korean peninsula, as the crossing point between Hellenism and Hebraism, is where worldwide democracy and communism, materialism and theism, are in confrontation. This is where the embodiment of the evil true parent and the good True Parent, Kim Il-sung and I, respectively, are in confrontation, with both of us trying to digest the other. The Korean peninsula is the final destination of history. The central body that brings this to oneness is the peninsula that takes on the form of the male sexual organ of the continent. This can embrace all of the Pacific Ocean. (213-223, 1991.1.21)

In Asia, the Korean peninsula symbolizes the sexual organ of the continent; it is the male sexual organ. The Japanese archipelago has Hokkaido as its head. The group of islands below look like a woman with all her limbs spread out. That is why Japan is the Eve nation. The base of Japanese trade is located in Shimonoseki and Shikoku. Western culture spread out from the waterway by Shimonoseki with the Pacific Ocean in the background. It was the seaway for importing culture, where a woman spreads her legs and begins a relation-

ship. However, with the earth in the background, I am unifying the Pacific culture and the American culture into the culture of the Korean peninsula, centering on heavenly culture. (295-223, 1998.8.28)

Section 2. Inauguration of the Federation of Island Nations

2.1. The background of the inauguration of the Federation of Island Nations

We should take the path of restoring a nation. In restoring a nation, we do not need the nation called Japan. In restoring a nation, we need to do so from a supra-national standard. To do so, we need to restore one nation under the aegis of the UN. But since the UN does not listen to me, I made the Federation of Island Nations. This is the Abel-type UN. Then I made the Federation for Peninsular Nations. In addition, I created the Federation for the Nations of the Six Continents. (282-185, 1997.3.12)

I must leave Korea and find my place in the global arena. If I cannot become a national messiah, I must go beyond it by standing in the position of a global messiah. Once twelve nations are established, then everything will be accomplished. That is why I created the Federation of Island Nations, the Federation of Peninsular Nations, and the Federation of Continental Nations. I told you to negotiate with the UN by using these organizations.

I am trying to get these four federations – the Women's Federation, the Youth Federation, the Student Federation, and the Religious Federation – recognized by the UN. If that does not work, I will then create a new UN. The UN no longer has an owner. True Parents' Day should be celebrated there, and even the UN Secretary-General... All the internal and external conditions for this have been made. Everyone knows this to be the case. (282-269, 1997.4.7)

I made the Federation of Island Nations, the Federation of Peninsular Nations and the Federation of Continental Nations, because it is now the age for the restoration of the kingship. We can abandon the North American continent. Instead, Asia and South America can be tied together as Cain and Abel. Such a time is coming about. The national level providence is now passing into the world level providence. Once the center is established, the world will turn 360 degrees. It has the authority to freely choose among 360 nations. (283-38, 1997.4.8)

Since the UN could not fulfill its responsibility, I created the Federation of Island Nations, and the Federation for Peninsular Nations. I must create an Abel-type UN centering on religious people. The UN today represents the body. The body symbolizes the satanic side. The mind-type UN does not exist. These two must become one. That is why an Abel-type UN must be created. (285-282, 1997.6.15)

There are so many Eve nations. To prevent Japan's decline, I founded the Federation of Island Nations, the Federation for Peninsular Nations, and the Federation for Continental Nations. To save Japan, I am hooking all four corners in order to save this ship from sinking. (286-312, 1997.8.13)

If the things I have presented come into effect, I will create a new UN, the Abel-type UN. That is why I have created such things as the Federation of Island Nations, the Federation for Peninsular Nations, and the Federation for Continental Nations. (288-204, 1997.11.28)

I am now creating the Federation of Island Nations, the Federation for Peninsular Nations, and the Federation for Continental Nations. How many underdeveloped nations are there in the world? The developed nations are only the G7 (the seven western developed nations) or G8 (the eight developed nations). There are only a few nations that have the power to influence the world economically. That is why this is not a problem. The time has come to rally these nations together. (288-206, 1997.11.28)

A time of great migration is coming. It should be carried out centering on the UN. If the UN does not follow my directions, I will create the Abel-type UN. That is why I created the Federation of Island Nations, the Federation for Peninsular Nations, and the Federation for Continental Nations. Many presidents of nations have come and said to me, "Rev. Moon, the ideal world won't come about unless we make an ideal world family quickly – isn't that your teaching, and the way of God's will also?"

We are promoting a movement toward integration, centering on the Secretary General of the UN. That is why, if I call for sixteen representatives from the UN assembly hall, they will all come to me immediately. The Family Federation will invite the Secretary General to participate in our rallies, and will become a ladder leading to new peace. (289-55, 1997.12.30)

The issue is the unity of oriental medicine and western medicine. I plan to bring about this unity. I am also building a UN college. I have made all the necessary preparations. We also created the World Peace Federation of Island Nations – the Federation of Island Nations? Since Japan is going to sink, we created the Federation of Island Nations, the Federation of Peninsular Nations, and then the Federation of Continental Nations as the replacements for Japan. (289-167, 1998.1.1)

The Philippines, an island nation, is America's Eve nation. Among the Eve nations, Japan is in the forefront. She forms a trinity with Taiwan and the Philippines. By having Taiwan and the Philippines as global Eve nations, we can move humankind, centering on the island nations. I have made all preparations to enable this to happen. I

have tied everything together through the Federation of Island Nations, the Federation of Peninsular Nations, and the Federation of Continental Nations. I am going to make a proposal to the UN in September. (291-240, 1998.3.15)

If there is no mother, a substitute can be found. If I say, "The responsibility that Japan could not fulfill economically – the mother's task of buying food and making money to feed the world population – should be carried out by your daughters!" Then this responsibility must be fulfilled. Who should be quickly restored? Taiwan, the Philippines, and Canada should be quickly restored before Japan. If Japan fails, these three nations should come in and lift up Japan. That is why we have created the Federation of Island Nations, the Federation of Peninsular Nations, and the Federation of Continental Nations, while also establishing the foundation for creating a new UN. (293-161, 1998.5.26)

They are even making preparations to welcome me in Kodiak, Alaska. I was victorious in the fierce battle and struggle in the Philippines. The battle should have been carried out by Japan. But instead, it was carried out there. Japan is a kingdom of island nations, with close to seven thousand islands. It would take forty years just to visit each island every two days. In fact, Japan has the same number as that of the Federation of Island Nations. So if necessary, I can cut away Japan and place the Philippines in her place.

The same is true for Taiwan. Taiwan is China's Eve nation. The Philippines is America's Eve nation. Before the Second World War, the Philippines were occupied by America. It was occupied and divided by Japan and America. (295-209, 1998.8.28)

The last chance for the UN has now come. If the UN rejects my proposal, I will turn away from the UN and create an Abel-type UN. I have created the Federation of Island Nations, the Federation of Peninsular Nations, and even the Federation of Continental Nations. People are saying, "Don't trust the UN. Let's create an Abel-type UN!" Which side do you think the world will follow? The purpose of this is to educate the youth and families. (299-273, 1999.2.18)

2.2. Outline of the inaugural rally

The inaugural rally for the World Federation of Island Nations was held from June 16 to 18, 1996, at the Keio Plaza Intercontinental Hotel in Tokyo, Japan. Participants came from a total of 52 nations: 27 from the regions of Asia and Oceania, including Australia and Japan; 5 from Africa; 5 from Europe, including Great Britain, and the Mediterranean area; and 15 from the western hemisphere, including Canada and the Caribbean area. Beginning with former Prime Minister Brian Mulroney of Canada, some 100 former and current heads of state, along with over 900 dignitaries from Japan, participated in the events.

2.3. True Parents' keynote address at the inaugural rally

When we look at the stream of development of civilization in human history, the ancient civilizations that emerged in the river valleys, passed to the Mediterranean Sea, including Greece, Rome, and the Iberian Peninsula. Then they developed through the European continent, including Germany and France, and bore fruit as a Judeo-Christian culture in the form of the Atlantic civilization centered on Great Britain, an island nation. Afterwards, civilization passed westward through the North American continent, and presently we have the era of the Pacific Ocean centered on Japan, an island nation. This represents the expansion of the Judeo-Christian civilization into Asia.

When we recognize this kind of movement of civilizations in light of God's providence, we can see that the island nation that has been placed in the center of heavenly fortune today is none other than Japan. At the conclusion of the 20th century, Japan has come to stand in the limelight of human history in God's providence. Therefore, Japan's current prosperity cannot be explained without considering her relationship to the Judeo-Christian providence of God. If Japan has a role in God's plan, attention should be paid to the providential mission that Japan bears. It is because the purpose of God's providence is the realization of world peace. World peace is the very hope for all humankind.

There can be no better hope for human society than if the island nations around the world get together here and commit themselves to a federation of nations for the creation of world peace. It is with this expectation and ideal that I established the Federation of Island Nations. I cannot but hope that the realization of world peace will come true as the island nations all over the world inherit the heavenly fortune which was given by God to Japan, and form a group of nations dedicating their collective will to the pursuit of world peace.

What are the characteristics of island nations? The earth's surface consists of land and ocean. Science today explains that the birth of the first simplest life form took place in the realm of water, namely the ocean. This tells us that the ocean plays the role of mother who conceives and nurtures life. In this way, if the ocean can be regarded as symbolizing femininity, then the land may be considered as symbolizing masculinity. Therefore, it can be said that island nations located in the ocean symbolize women, and that continental nations and peninsula nations symbolize men. From a spiritual perspective, one might say that island nations have certain characteristics of women, such as objectivity, dependability, nurture, endurance, and receptivity. On the other hand, continental nations may be seen as manly, possessing such attributes as proactivity, creativity, and the nature of a provider.

Following this comparison, the position that an island nation should play can be described as identical with that which women fill in human society.

Women get married and are traditionally expected to wholeheartedly love and serve their husbands. By receiving love from their spouses, and giving birth to children, women may shine and blossom through this dynamic relationship. As mothers, women have the important responsibility of nourishing their children, bringing them up and educating them. Likewise, we can say that island nations also have similar roles to play.

In 1945, when World War II came to an end, world Christianity was at an extremely important point in the history of God's providence of salvation. Christian nations like Great Britain, the United States, and France were in the central positions of the providence at that time. In World Wars I and II, the three major Christian nations of Great Britain, the United States, and France fought for democracy as the center of the allied nations.

It was God's desire to see the three major Christian nations join their forces to practice God's love in the service of humankind, with a sacrificial and serving spirit to actualize world peace, without lapsing into nationalistic ideas centered on their countries.

The end of World War II, in 1945, saw the opportunity of providing lasting peace for humankind through the establishment of the United Nations. However, the historical reality was not the realization of world peace, but the expansion of communism, and the numerous conflicts that have come with it, as well as the spiritual decline and moral degradation of Christian nations. Humankind, which has endured the cold war between the United States and the former Soviet Union for more than 40 years, is passing through a spiritual wilderness that continues until the present.

For my part, I have traveled the world to reveal God's ideals and His providence in order to actualize the vision of world peace on the basis of God's original plan. To this end, I have established many international organizations. But the path is long, and there remains a lot of work for all of us to do. What is the ideal of God? It goes without saying that the original ideal of God is to realize a peaceful world. In such a world, there are no divisions or conflicts. It is a world filled with unity, harmony and joy. The greatest and quickest means to this end is through true love. True love is the factor of unity and the origin of joy and happiness. That is why I would say that the prerequisite of peace is true love.

The reason why human beings are still unable to make true peace is because they are ignorant of true love. Why? The answer, as mentioned in the Bible, is that humankind has separated from God.

Due to the Fall of the first human ancestors, Adam and Eve established the first family without God's blessing. Peace has been absent from this world ever since. Instead, divisions, conflicts, and struggles have come to rule this world. In the individual, the struggle between mind and body, the conflicts between husband and wife at the family level, and the struggles between societies are accepted as normal, everyday life.

It is my conviction that all human

problems are caused by the fundamental loss of true love. The fall of humankind meant the loss of true love. Consequently, Jesus came as the King of true love in order to restore the love that Adam and Eve had lost. By the same token, the Lord at his Second Advent is coming in order to restore true love. That is the logical conclusion, seen from the view of the providence of salvation.

My life until today, and my quest for world peace, has been concentrated on the point of how humankind can restore true love. When we look at the moral degradation of the world, we can think of how great God's sorrow must be. Watching this world decline breaks my heart and brings tears to my eyes. The spirit of our young people is wounded by the practice of so-called "free sex", which is an evil similar to the immorality and adultery of Sodom and Gomorrah. The greatest sorrow of God is to see humankind going down this path of irresponsible destruction.

Human history began with the tragic incident known as the Fall of Adam and Eve. It is a matter of fact that we must all shoulder the responsibility for this act and resolve this issue. However, when we study the passage in the Bible that Eve was the first to fall and began the history of sin, we can see that the providence requires that an age must come in human history in which women will lead the way to redeem the Fall of Eve. We can see that the ideological trends in the 20th century, such as the movement of women seeking true liberation, indicate that women have begun to stand up for the sake of world peace. Since I know that such is the providence of God, I founded the Women's Federation for World Peace in April, 1992, together with my wife.

The age of women came in the 1990s, and is a world-wide trend that will continue into the twenty-first century. We may say that love and cooperation, and the spirit of resolution and harmony, will fulfill a historical contribution towards world peace. This worldwide age of women means that the age of island nations will bear the characteristics of women. In this way, the age of women and the age of island nations are intimately linked together. The time when women stand up for world peace is the time when island nations should also stand up for worldwide cooperation. Now is the opportunity for island and oceanic nations to fulfill their glorious and historical missions of realizing world peace. Is there a mission of greater glory than this?

When the Federation of Island Nations ignites and spreads by virtue of service and dedication, the light of hope will burn brightly before the future of humankind. Ultimately, island nations must inevitably seek for the continent. This is based on the same principle as that of a woman who seeks a loving relationship with a man. This might be called the condition for the survival of island nations. Thus, the various activities for world peace carried out by island nations must inevitably bring a good influence on continental countries. In this way, when the positive effects of

the efforts of island nations for the realization of world peace are spread to the continental realm, world peace will take a major step closer towards realization.

We strongly desire that the twenty-first century will become a new millennium revealing the brilliant dawn of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, long awaited by humankind. I am convinced that organizations such as the Federation for World Peace, the Inter-Religious Federation for World Peace, the Women's Federation for World Peace, the Youth Federation for World Peace, and the Students Federation for World Peace, will fulfill a crucial role for peace and harmony together with the Federation of Island Nations.

Ultimately, all of these organizations will bear fruit as the Family Federation for World Peace. This is because the final base for peace is the family, and there is no way to establish global unity other than by rebuilding the family institution.

By thoroughly carrying out the education of youth, based on an ideal that transcends race, nation and religion, the Family Federation for World Peace will be able to perfect an ideal family and attain the historical feat of a one-world family in which people from all corners of the world enjoy true and lasting peace. Your Federation of Island Nations will make a very great contribution toward the highest objective of the Family Federation for World Peace. ("The Role of the Island Nations in the 21st Century," June 16, 1996, Japan)

Section 3. The Ocean Providence Centering on Hawaii

3.1. Japan and Hawaii

We know from history that the Americans established their nation while migrating from east to west, giving birth to a new civilization. Then, based on Hawaii, the United States secured a beach-head from which to influence the Pacific Ocean sphere. (79-72, 1975.6.1)

The reason that Japan attacked Pearl Harbor in Hawaii is that she had come to the conclusion that it would be impossible to defend her position in either China or Korea without striking the United States, which lay in the background. You should be aware of this. You should understand that Japan struck Pearl Harbor in order to defend her dominant position in Korea and China. Historians in America have not known this. I am certain about these things. (111-313, 1981.3.9)

Didn't the small nation of Japan pick a fight and start the great Asian War? Do you know why Japan attacked Hawaii? The Japanese students who studied abroad were not treated as people. So they thought, "You just wait and see. Just wait ten, twenty years. I'm going to get you!" And then later, they struck back. Since those foreign students thought in such a manner, God helped them in that way.

Those students who had studied for

ten years spent the whole time thinking, "I'm going to beat you." And the students who had studied for twenty years, constantly thought, "I'm going to trample on you." (293-292, 1998.6.7)

The Japanese made the decision to attack America, didn't they? That is why they illegally attacked Pearl Harbor. This perspective has not been explored in American or Japanese history books. From a providential point of view, you should understand how Japan's decision came about. This is a certain fact. Japan did not simply make an illegal attack on America's Pearl Harbor. They had sufficient rationale to do so. Then, what did the missionaries do? They were guiding the political aspect of things. (111-153, 1981.2.10)

Wasn't America the land of the Indians? When I went to Hawaii, I thought, "Wow, I have never seen such a place in this world!" Thirty percent of the people are Japanese, and only twenty-nine percent are white. This is why they say that the white people are being persecuted. When I heard that remark, I didn't feel so bad. If I had said, "Hey, you Japanese people! See that indemnity is paid for the opposition that I have received in America!", then how efficiently they would have seen to it. But I realized that they would expel all the white people there, so I thought, "This will not do." Soon I concluded, "If I marry the children of those families that form thirty percent of the population, with the children of the families belonging to twenty-nine percent of the population, then they will be completely united." I also realized how simple the providence for restoration would be if everything was transferred to the American continent. That is why I am building centers of operation, purchasing boats, and making preparations to live in Hawaii. I intend to go to Hawaii. Believe me, the Pacific civilization is coming! (216-275, 1991.4.7)

3.2. The reason Hawaii is the center of the ocean providence

Don't you wish to go to Hawaii? I have purchased land there in order to build a heavenly village. I have built houses and transported boats to the islands. Isn't that great! It doesn't rain much there during the four seasons in a year. That is why, as a fishing locale, there is no better place in the world than Hawaii. Spring, summer, autumn, and winter all exist in harmony in one valley. On one side it rains every day and lightning strikes, but on the other side it does not rain during the four seasons of the entire year. I knew that such a place in the world was waiting for me to come. This is why I am carrying out an educational movement for all these things. (221-60, 1991.10.20)

I am carrying out a movement to have our American members settle in the islands of Hawaii. I made a house this time, centering on the Japanese Women's Federation for Peace. If I make just one phone call to the Japa-

nese wives, they will spend money and do all kinds of productive activities. In line with this, we can create a framework for educating the people. They will welcome us, praising my amazing ideas for making the Hawaiian Islands a foothold for God to come down and dwell. Amen! (221-60, 1991.10.20)

The place where Jesus came as the Messiah was also Asia. He is in a position to recover his body that was lost for the sake of a unified Asian sphere, and to unify Asia by means of the Christian civilization, not just as a realm of spiritual victory, but as a new material sphere of influence. When this Western Civilization comes to Asia, it must do so based on a mixed and harmonious civilization located midway in the Pacific Ocean. That is why the era of the Pacific civilization is drawing near. Western Civilization will be merged into one, with the Pacific civilization as its center. What becomes a problem here is Hawaii. (229-298, 1992.4.13)

As you all know, American history established a nation while migrating from the east to the west and gave rise to the birth of civilization. In that way it solidified the leading base for influencing the Pacific sphere centering on Hawaii. (79-72, 1975.6.1)

America consists of fifty states. Isn't Hawaii one of those states? In Hawaii, the people from the mainland are in a minority. The majority consists of people of other races. That is why there are many cases where people who went to Hawaii do not stay for a long time, but soon return to the mainland. They have disputes with each other, and because of such behavior they don't remain long. That is why I went there and built up my base in Hawaii in order to reconcile such people. I have the power and the authority. I have the knowledge and financial resources as well. (217-243, 1991.6.2)

Hawaii in Korean sounds like the phrase "Come back after you've done it (hae-wa-ra)." It is also similar to the Korean word for Eve (hae-wa) which means "Come back after doing your job." If you pronounce this slowly, it sounds like "Hawaii", which has become a domain where there is exchange between Western Civilization and Asian civilization. I had thought that Hawaii was part of the United States, but now it is becoming Japanese land. Rev. Moon is currently educating the people there to make them one. Who will educate them? A whirlwind must begin. Centering on the land of Hawaii, I am now working on creating a global sphere of influence. (229-298, 1992.4.13)

Isn't the Pacific civilization coming? That is why I created the "Pacific Rim Development Company." America is included in this and so is Australia, as well as the South Pacific and the entire Pacific Ocean. After that, I said, "Let us put the Americans to shame by our hard work!" and I am now doing that work. I came here after giving that order. For

that purpose, the Japanese women here must not be inferior to the married women in Hawaii. You should be able to say, "The tradition will be made on the continent. Since we, as your spiritual elders, made this tradition, you must follow us!" and have them respond, "Yes!" They should not come to oppose you. (216-275, 1991.4.7)

If I say that I will go to Hawaii on a boat, then you must follow me there. Without a nation, there is no other way. Day and night I have been searching for God's nation. God's nation is the planet earth. You must become its citizens here in order to enter the heavenly kingdom. If you are unable to become a citizen at that time, then on the day of your death, you will have go to the other world and wait there. (128-113, 1983.6.5)

CHAPTER FOUR

Ocean Civilizations Seen from the Viewpoint of God's Providence

Section 1. The History of Human Civilization and Trends in its Development

1.1. The currents of world history centering on civilizations

When we observe how history developed, we see that Egyptian civilization, which was the first human civilization, was a river civilization based on the Nile River. In other words, the Nile River was the cradle of Egyptian civilization. How did Egyptian civilization develop? The Egyptians were curious about what was on the other side of the river. They always wanted to cross the river and explore the other side. This desire was the spiritual background for the development of Egyptian civilization. Mediterranean civilization developed after the age of this river civilization had passed. Human society has been developing based on the motivation that arose from a fervent heart and longing for the other shore. You should know that this longing for the other shore has created revolutions in civilization. (5-43, 1958.12.14)

When we think about the course of the development of civilization, we see that ancient civilizations were tropical civilizations, and current civilizations are temperate civilizations. In this way, it is going the opposite way to the way God originally intended. Ancient civilizations were tropical civilizations and present civilization belongs to the temperate zone. Despite this fact, the temperate zone civilization will not revert to the springtime civilization but has moved on to autumn. That is why, the frigid-zone civilization, centering on communism, invades and passes through here. (49-324, 1971.10.24)

Considering the developmental stages of civilization, we can see that a certain process is needed in order for them to manifest in any one particular form. There must inevitably be a season through which civilization can arise. We can reason that civilization passes through seasons like summer and fall, and then through the winter season for it to develop into a civilization having one universal sphere which is like spring. (66-186, 1973.5.6)

If we assume God exists, what are some of the things He might like? He would, of course, in terms of the seasons, enjoy all four. With regard to people, God would enjoy all the ages from

childhood and youth to the prime of life and old age. If you look at people, you will see that there are white people, black people, yellow people, red people – people of all races. What kind of person would God like? He would like white people, black people, yellow people and red people. Since the world turns on the basis of the overall conditions of relationship, so history unfolds along with the historical development of civilizations. (72-100, 1974.5.26)

God's desire is to realize one world under one will, one unified world, and one ideal world by bringing together all the developments of civilization. Therefore, in order to establish a motive or momentum in world history for Western Civilization to connect with Asian civilization for the first time, then America, the leading nation of the democratic world, has stepped forward taking full responsibility in Asia. Despite the providential significance of this, America withdrew from Asia without fully carrying out its responsibility during the Vietnam War. As a result, providential history was seriously damaged. (78-208, 1975.5.25)

What kind of age of civilization will come in the future? An age of civilization pertaining to the spring season will come. If humankind had not fallen, civilization would have begun starting from the spring season. Due to the Fall of Man, however, it began from the summer season. The spring civilization was to last for eternity. Why can't the summer civilization last for eternity? You must know that all the harmony needed for bearing fruit occurs in spring, not in the summer. The seed is formed during the spring season. That explains why all the civilizations in the fallen world so far, have passed away as seedless civilizations. They can never move toward life. That is why the springtime civilization never appeared after the winter season civilization. (107-298, 1980.6.8)

When we consider the flow of how civilizations developed in human history, we see that the ancient continental civilizations that arose around the river valleys, shifted to peninsular civilizations such as those of Greece, Rome and Iberia. The peninsular civilizations passed on to the island civilization centering on Great Britain, and this island civilization passed again through the continental civilization centering on America to return to Japan, an island civilization. Now, the pilgrimage of civilization must bear fruit in Korea as a peninsular civilization. This is the providential outlook. (279-208, 1996.8.20)

The direction of world civilization will develop as it circles around the globe. In other words, civilization moved from the continental civilization of Egypt, to the peninsular civilization of Rome and Greece, then to the island civilization of Britain, and reached the continental civilization of America. The continental civilization is now moving west, crossing the Pacific Ocean, passing through the island civilization of Japan,

and ultimately culminating in the peninsular civilization of Korea to connect with Asia. The culture consolidated here is a profound one, and it will lead to a new world. (115-171, 1981.11.10)

1.2. The reason Israel, Rome, and Britain failed

Global civilizations have been born on peninsulas. The most representative of those places is Rome. The features of the Mediterranean Sea look just like a conjugal relationship between a man and a woman. That is why today, even after two thousand years, Rome still has a position as a central world power. The Roman code of law in particular is widely used. This explains how the saying "Civilization comes from Rome" came about. World unification should have begun from Rome, but Rome was unable to fulfill that mission. (229-69, 1992.4.9)

If you examine land masses and islands, peninsulas look like the male sexual organ. Civilizations always develop on peninsulas: Iberia, Greece, and Italy were all peninsulas. Why hasn't the Italian civilization sphere disappeared even after two thousand years? The Mediterranean Sea looks just like a woman's womb. It is occupied by Italy. That is why Italy could survive until today after continuously overcoming all kinds of disasters and calamities throughout its history. If it had disappeared, the restoration of human history and salvation through liberation would have been impossible. (222-48, 1991.10.27)

Italy, the center where the Vatican is located, has been in the position of the man up until today. Germany is not the center, nor France nor Britain. Italy has a cultural background that goes back more than two thousand years. The law is unchanging. Why is that so? Italy represents man, while the Mediterranean Sea represents woman. I am talking about the original standard. It is just like an environment where a man and a woman can make love. Italy is like the male sexual organ, and the Mediterranean Sea is like the female sexual organ. These two combine. Since the Vatican in the West was unable to establish a standard by which to unify the world, this is coming back to the East. (219-85, 1991.8.25)

What is True Parents' mission after they appear? They will eradicate satanic love from this dead world void of God's love, and engraft all of humanity back into a world of life through God's love. You should know that God has been engaged in a battle to bring about that kind of resurrection. The Jewish nation where Jesus was born borders on the Mediterranean Sea. Africa, Israel, and Greece center around the Italian peninsula. God's providence was originally carried out centering on the Asian continent. In the East, God established Hinduism and Buddhism. In China, God established Confucianism, and in the areas around the Euphrates River, such as Syria and Iraq, God created Zoroastrianism and other such religious spheres. Within this triangular area, God tried to unite the world centering on Judaism.

However, due to Israel's failure to unite its twelve tribes, Rome, representing the satanic world, overtook Israel. All the tribes in the Middle East today belong to the twelve tribes that were organized during Moses' time. They were unable to become one. (215-251, 1991.2.20)

What did I say is most important regarding the center around which history develops? It is the sexual organ. The peninsula connected to the continent is like the male sexual organ. That is why the place that looks like the male sexual organ becomes the birthplace and the final destination of the world's cultures. From this point of view, the Italian peninsula signifies the male sexual organ, and the Mediterranean Sea represents a woman's womb. Doesn't it look exactly like the sexual parts of a woman? The Mediterranean Sea is the first place in history on earth that brought together the origins of culture, based on the providence relating to culture.

The greatness of the Roman Empire cannot be denied. The laws and culture of Rome, even now, are exerting tremendous influence on history. That is because the Italian peninsula looks like the male sexual organ, and the Mediterranean Sea looks exactly like the woman's sexual organ, and these two are one. That is why it is the central place that connects both the Asian and African continents with the European continent. (213-223, 1991.1.21)

The Mediterranean Sea is like a woman's womb. Israel is located near the Italian peninsula where the sexual organ, in terms of a woman, can be attached. It is very unusual indeed. The nation located in the deepest part of the woman's womb is Israel. That is where the Lord was born. That is where the root of life came into being and then became a problem. This root of life, should retrace its steps back and create a global domain, and then go through the Mediterranean Sea centering on the peninsula, across the Atlantic and Pacific Oceans to bring about worldwide unity centering on a peninsular cultural sphere. Originally, everything should have been unified centering on Italy. (191-107, 1989.6.24)

Rome and Israel are in an East-West relationship, whereas Greece and Egypt are in a North-South relationship. Isn't that how it is with the Jewish nation? When you look at this, centering on the Jewish nation, you can see that all these nations are located around the Mediterranean Sea. That is why, if the entire area of the Mediterranean Sea had been completely united centering on Rome, Asia would have become the center. One complete world would have been created centering on Asia. If that had happened, the unification between the East and West would have occurred. The unification of the cultures of East and West should have taken place. However, unification did not come about. Instead, it went west around the world and made a circuit to return towards a unified sphere of East and West. This has been the historical course of Christianity. (189-72, 1989.3.19)

Geographically, the Mediterranean Sea lies between Rome and the Jewish nation. The Mediterranean Sea had to be crossed. Jesus was in a position where he could have avoided death by various means if he had tried. At that time, the people of Israel had been oppressed by various nations for four hundred years. Therefore, it was a time when patriotism could have united them. It was a time when if they could have understood the historical moment, they could have raised a banner of revolt against the Roman Empire. All the political systems of Rome at that time had peaked, so Rome was headed downhill and could no longer control the Jewish nation as it liked. Since that was the historical background, if the Jewish people had united around Jesus, social revolt would have inevitably appeared centering on the Jewish nation at that time. (153-236, 1964.1.3)

Since Rome was creating a cultural sphere around the area of the Mediterranean Sea, it had the background to rule the world. If Israel had connected with Rome and a global foundation had been created, the world would have been bonded together into a single Christian culture centering on Jesus. That could have completely manifested in the unified foundation. Since Israel was entangled with this bigger nation, both Rome and the rest of the world could have been reeled in. However, this was lost. Israel became a vassal nation to Rome. Today, the Republic of Korea is in a similar position to that nation. (37-45, 1970.12.22)

If Judaism and the people of Israel had become one, the Roman Empire would not have been an obstacle. If they had come together to establish a nation and create oneness with Rome, and if the Roman civilization around the Mediterranean Sea had come under Jesus' command, then world unification would have been achieved. On that foundation, God was trying to restore the entire world, and establish the ideal of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, centering on Jesus. But His will did not come to pass. So after thousands of years of paying with their lives, the global realm of the second Israel was finally established. But Christianity, placed in the realm of the second Israel, did not have a nation on earth as Judaism had. That second Israel had to be persecuted by the world's people, wherever they happened to go for two thousand years, as a penance for the rejection of Jesus. In this sense, there is no forgiveness under the ironclad law of indemnity. (35-170, 1970.10.13)

Since the Roman Empire was established as the Cain-type nation, representing the satanic world, it was able to lay the foundation to issue commands over its global domain, based on its cultural sphere in the Mediterranean Sea. God's will was to restore, through indemnity, the nations and the world, and establish the Kingdom of Heaven of His desire, by raising up Israel as the Abel-type nation, and having it subjugate the Roman Empire, which was in the position of Cain. That has been repeated for two thousand years, and

today America stands in the position of Rome. Now, was it a good thing that Jesus was killed? (22-295, 1969.5.4)

Originally, God's will was to have the world united centering on Asia. But who took away that blessing after Jesus was killed under Judaism. Rome took it away. To recover that, God had to circle around the world, centering on Rome, to return to Asia. Why? It is because Rome took all the blessings. Rome had taken away all the blessings Judaism was to receive. That is the path that leads from Rome, based on the Italian peninsula, to Britain and across the Pacific Ocean to Asia. In this way, through the Second World War, God could establish control over the whole area of Asia. He had command over everything. (92-175, 1977.4.3)

Originally, if Jesus had not died, he would have begun from the Asian continent. He should have connected with that continent and gained victory there. Instead, the continent was lost, and Christianity found its place, based on the authority of the Pope, centering on the Italian peninsula and the Mediterranean Sea. Then where did Christianity have to go? The island nation is the next stop after going to the peninsula from the continent. It had to go to the island nation. Accordingly, Christianity should have gone forward centering on the Atlantic civilization and the Italian peninsula. The Atlantic civilization refers to the Mediterranean civilization. Since the Pope in Rome, in the Mediterranean civilization sphere, could not fulfill his responsibility, Christianity was divided into Catholicism and Protestantism, and the Mediterranean cultural sphere spread throughout the world up to today. Ultimately the Atlantic cultural sphere was created with the relationship of America centering on Britain. (188-305, 1989.3.1)

Centering on the people of Israel, Christian civilization took on the form of a religion that focused on human beings. This was called Hellenism, arising from the Greek and Italian civilizations that were at the center of the Mediterranean Sea cultural sphere. Hebraism, based on monotheism, joined this current, and it initiated and won a decisive battle in Rome. This formed the Christian world centering on the Pope in the Middle Ages. With that standard, Christianity developed worldwide using an island civilization based on Protestantism, with Britain as its base. Christianity advanced rapidly by creating an international missionary headquarters. On this providential foundation, civilization gradually traveled around the world, from the sphere of Mediterranean Sea civilization, to Britain in the Atlantic civilization sphere, and then onward from the American civilization sphere to the Pacific civilization sphere where it could touch Japan, which was in a position corresponding to Britain. (78-309, 1975.6.10)

Jesus arrived on Asian land and tried to unite the world, but his teachings were chased away to Rome. They were

driven out of the land to the peninsula, and then from the peninsula to an island nation, and then they spread out to seek a global domain. Therefore, based on the Protestant sphere of civilization on the American continent, they returned. The Catholic sphere of civilization had grown, but stood in a position to receive opposition in front of God. It had begun missionary work anew in the Protestant cultural sphere.

Britain and America led the missionary work. After British missionary work established the Protestant, independent nation of America, the providence moved back there. Upon returning, they should have achieved restoration through indemnity offerings within the Pacific civilization sphere, but this side failed. The world should have been unified centering on the Papal authority in Rome and the Italian peninsula, since the foundation to allow this to happen in the continental domain was prepared. Then why was God's will not established at that time? It was because the Vatican in Rome was lacking a broader perspective. Centering on Christianity, what the Vatican should have done was to serve the world, even at the expense of Rome, the Vatican, and Christianity. They did not know that they existed for the sake of the world. They had a different outlook. (204-159, 1990.7.8)

Judaism had a nation in the chosen people of Israel. Yet, only spiritual salvation was attained through the death of Jesus' body. Christianity needs to understand why this is so. Jesus was killed because he did not have a nation. The Kingdom of Heaven should have been established in Asia, but instead Christianity was swayed towards humanism, the Hellenistic system of thought, to a sun god. It came back to Rome and then returned to the Pacific Ocean. Now, the age of the Pacific cultural sphere has come. History does not happen randomly. This must all be revealed. Only then can everyone who has ever lived, and all our ancestors in the spirit world, be liberated. True Parents have now appeared, teaching all these things in order to bring about liberation. (283-206, 1997.4.12)

How did the Fall occur? Eve fell first and then made Adam fall. Eve united with the archangel and made Adam fall. In the course of restoration England, as the female nation, began to dominate the world during the time of Queen Elizabeth I. God's will was not accepted during her reign. What was begun through the queen, carried on with the queen, and came to ruin through the queen. Isn't England an island nation in the middle of the sea? The continent represents man, and the island nation represents woman. Don't the people of the island nation always have a yearning for the continent – just as a woman longs for a man? That explains why England is considered a female nation. An Adam nation should emerge through that female nation. Adam was brought to ruin through a woman. In the same way, through a woman, England, Adam will be resurrected. That Adam nation is

America. Therefore, England must come under the rule of its son. Shouldn't the mother come under the rule of her son? From that position, America was blessed with and bore the fruit of Christian civilization. (81-245, 1975.12.28)

1.3. America is the Rome of the twentieth century

America was called the New World in the European continent. The first people to immigrate to this new world, with hope in their hearts, were a God-loving people who came searching for freedom of faith. They were people who had completely lost hope under the tyranny of the old regime. They boarded a small ship called the Mayflower, with the firm resolve to reach that place where they could serve God as they pleased, even if they were to lose their lives in the Atlantic Ocean. After fifty-seven days of a horrible voyage, they arrived in America in an area that is now called New England. They were the Pilgrim Fathers, the ancestors of America. (100-246, 1978.10.19)

Speaking historically, during the two thousand year history of Christianity, Protestants in the West took the Protestant system and searched for an ideal nation of faith where they could freely practice their religion. They crossed the Atlantic and established a composite people. The independent protestant state, representing this composite people, is America. This is similar to the Vatican in Rome, centering on Catholicism in the past. America was a new dimension of the Vatican in Rome, but one centering on Protestantism. That is what America is. America has such a position. God has been working for six thousand years. The question is how to bring this to a beautiful ending. This indeed is the long-cherished desire that God, and Jesus who represents Christianity, have had throughout history. It is my mission to bring this to fulfillment. That is how I see it. (81-279, 1975.12.29)

America was created by people who crossed the Atlantic, in search of religious freedom, to avoid the arrows of persecution. I understand that its founding principles are based on Puritan beliefs. That is how God gathered the people of the world to this land, and then He bestowed material blessings upon this nation. A time will come in the future when Satan will strike the economy, based on the infrastructure. Therefore, in preparation for this, God has bestowed enormous economic material blessings upon America, and has had its citizens live at a higher level of affluence, compared to any other people. Centering on the Christian cultural sphere, no other nation has been endowed with greater authority than America. (53-315, 1972.3.5)

What caused the downfall of Rome? God was trying to save the world, but the Romans took pride in themselves, above all others. Rome should have aspired to world unification by sacrificing itself as an offering before the coming Lord, but Rome wanted to go only in one direction.

However, God wanted it to be a two-way street. That is why the Christian revolution occurred against Rome.

Protestantism arose, based on a new framework. It was severely attacked, but a new and fragile sprout was established in an environment of opposition and persecution. Didn't the Puritans of Christianity cross over to plant this sprout in America? The Protestant zealots of Europe crossed the Atlantic. These Puritans did not leave there for a better life. They crossed the Atlantic, at the risk of their lives, to practice their faith.

God's providential focal point began, from that resolution, in the face of death. The Puritans came for the sake of Protestantism, and after two hundred years established an independent Protestant state. That is the history of America. There was not a single Catholic president until Kennedy. By the 1960s, left and right were to unite centering on the United Nations. President Kennedy was given that chance because it was a time for front and back, top and bottom to become one. (229-295, 1992.4.13)

The Protestants separated from the Vatican in Rome out of their earnest desire for God's new world. The Puritans of England, in particular, claimed that England was not suited for the construction of God's world, and so amidst severe persecution they departed for the new world.

The new world where they landed was the American continent. At that time many Catholics were falling away from the Vatican in Rome. Based on their desire to follow God, the protestant Pilgrim Fathers boarded the Mayflower, and despite severe hardships crossed the Atlantic to reach America. Later on, people from a number of European countries began to gather in America. The British and French, and later people from Germany, which was to become an enemy nation, as well as many other people in Europe, crossed the Atlantic to settle in America. After their arrival, they fought against the Indians and continued to expand their territory westward. (215-199, 1991.2.17)

During the Catholic era, since Protestants were persecuted by the Catholic Church, they crossed the Atlantic Ocean. If you consider the founding principles of your homeland, you can see that your ancestors crossed the Atlantic at the risk of their lives. That is why, when they arrived in this land and began to build a nation, they tried to create an ideal Kingdom of God's desire, a world under His will. Today, what has happened to those founding ideals? They have become part of liberalism and so, no longer mention one word about creationism. Instead, they assert that the theory of evolution is correct. You should know that we are living in the final and last hours of the Christian cultural sphere, where the authority of the churches is about to be revoked.

Your ancestors lived in a time where they had to be determined to go a very dangerous path, such as venturing across the Atlantic, risking their lives in a war for their independence, and fighting the

Indians. They risked their lives by crossing the Atlantic and offered their lives during the War of Independence. You should know that they set out with a firm resolve to offer their lives to God. When your ancestors crossed the Atlantic, they did not have a leader. They were just following God. During the War of Independence, though your army was weak, they followed God and fought on. You should know that they attended God as their captain, praying and shedding tears with Heaven. (131-315, 1984.5.19)

North and South America belong to the Christian cultural sphere. Catholicism and Protestantism are like siblings. When America, as it is now, comes to Asia, the Asian people think that America has crossed the Pacific, without regard for its sibling, to steal from distant nations. They would not think America came to help. This is how most Asians view Americans who come to Asia. They think, "What kind of help can they – who come here without uniting with their own brothers, instead fighting and abandoning them – bring to us?" They would believe that Americans had come to steal from them. God is saying, "You Americans, you really have to get your act together." When they cross the Pacific to go to Asia, they will find seedlings of enmity there. Japan is an economic empire, and China is a population empire. The Soviet Union is an ideological empire. Therefore, in order to satisfy these nations you have to bring something greater. But what exactly can America provide? This is why they say that Americans have come to steal from them. (272-138, 1995.10.1)

The closest siblings to the United States are the other nations of North America and the nations of South America. One continent is predominately Catholic and the other predominately Protestant. Putting this aside, whatever America may try to do with Asia…. Japan was once America's enemy. China and the Soviet Union are also America's enemies. They do not see America as a neighbor belonging to the Pacific sphere. They think of America as a foreign land. No matter how hard America tries to establish friendly ties with other countries, if a problem arises with Japan everything falls over backwards. This is foolish. If you think about the future, America should go hand in hand with North and South America together to embrace Japan. They must embrace Asia. (272-186, 1995.10.5)

When conflict broke out between European Protestants and Catholics, groups of Protestant believers crossed the Atlantic to settle in North America, eventually establishing an independent Protestant nation. God built that nation. As a result, for two hundred years, America extracted all of Europe's essence. America extracted everything from its connections to the essence of faith and, facing the Pacific, bore the fruits of two thousand years of history, based on the female cultural sphere and the Christian cultural sphere, in a span of two hundred years. (228-222, 1992.4.3)

Satan opposed the union of America and Japan, and tried to stop the unification of Asia. Satan is an external being who is obsessed with economic problems. With its own economic problems in mind, America is employing a policy of restraint, based on its trade laws, to keep Japan from entering its markets. In this way, America is putting the brakes on countries in the Pacific realm, especially Japan, Korea, Malaysia, Taiwan and India. You should know that at this critical time in the last days, America is approaching the point where it may make a grave error. (135-128, 1985.10.4)

Section 2. The Significance of Island Civilization

2.1. Britain, the greatest oceanic island nation

Ancient civilizations arose on continents. Human civilization, which came forth from the riverbed of the Nile in Egypt, shifted to peninsulas and established a Mediterranean civilization sphere, in Greece and on the Italian peninsula. Civilization was transferred from the peninsula to an island, thus creating an Atlantic civilization sphere, centering on Britain, an island nation. Next, the island civilization, in Britain, crossed the Atlantic Ocean and established a miracle of modern civilization on the American continent, thus creating the sphere of the Pacific civilization. The flow of history has not stopped there.

I am fully aware of God's will to have this civilization cross the Pacific Ocean, blossom as a new island civilization in Japan, an island nation comparable to Britain, and then to establish here on the Korean peninsula, which corresponds to the Italian peninsula, an integrated human civilization, comparable to that of ancient Rome. This will become a new unified civilization sphere, adjacent to the Asian continent, which will lead to one world of harmony. (78-254, 1975.6.7)

God moved the sphere of world civilization from the Western continent, through the Mediterranean Sea centering on the Nile River, through Rome, and then Britain to form the continental civilization of America, and then on to the Pacific civilization sphere. To do that, God had to bring together the island civilizations, and next He needed a peninsular nation. In other words, God needed a peninsular region corresponding to that of Rome, which had influenced the cultural sphere around the Mediterranean Sea. You should know that this is Korea. The final fruits of Western Civilization, along with the final fruits of Asian civilization, should flourish on the Korean peninsula and be offered to God. (79-75, 1975.6.1)

As the Jewish people could not fulfill, God's design for the continent – to control the world centering on the Italian peninsula – ended in failure. God tried to do the same thing centering on the island civilization of Great Britain, but yet again this ended in failure. Then it became the American continent's turn

to carry out this mission, but going the opposite way. It must go through indemnity. Indemnity should be paid centering on the island nations, and also centering on the peninsular nations. Without doing so, the mission cannot go on to the continent. (80-255, 1975.10.24)

The providential domain traveled from Rome, Italy and the Iberian Peninsula, and then moved from the island civilization to the continental civilization. What began on the Asian continent centering on Jesus went through the peninsula, beyond the island, and returned to the continent. The Roman peninsula failed; Britain the island nation failed; and America failed. Everything ended in failure. What do we do about this? (227-67, 1992.2.10)

When you observe the flow of how civilization develops in human history, you will see that the ancient continental civilization that arose in the river valley moved to the peninsular civilization of Greece, Rome, and Iberia. This peninsular civilization moved to the island civilization centering on Britain, and the island civilization went through the continental civilization centering on America to return to the island civilization of Japan. The providential outlook shows that the pilgrimage of civilization should now culminate and bear fruit in the peninsular civilization of Korea. (279-208, 1996.8.20)

When you observe the Western world, America was born from Britain, and thus it is like her son. But America, who is like a son, dominates Britain. That event signals the end of the Western world. That is how I see it. This is why these three nations – America, Great Britain, the greatest oceanic island power, and France, the archangel nation – had to come together. At that time, the oceanic power, together with America, would pull the archangel nation in, and take the helm to occupy the land. You must understand this as the reason for the Second World War. The Adam nation, not the Eve nation, must control the Eve nation and the archangel nation. Only then can God's providence actually move forward to occupy the continent.

When Britain and France joined together to become one centering on America, they should have then gone towards the continent. The Second World War broke out in order to occupy the continent. You should be aware of the fact that a foundation was made during the Second World War that enabled the victorious realm, centering on America, Great Britain and France, to control the entire world. (119-241, 1982.9.13)

The completion of restoration comes about when three people and nations that were divided become one. This is the Principle point of view. This kind of theory can be applied anywhere. Where is the Adam nation in terms of Europe? In terms of the entire free world, it is America. Why? Because it was born from England. England prospered during the age of the queen. In the sixteenth century during Queen Elizabeth's reign,

England built maritime cities and began to control the oceans of the world, leading to the colonization of America.

How did Great Britain gain control over the oceanic rights of the world? Britain, an oceanic nation, was the Eve nation. Since it was a female nation and an island nation, it opened up and controlled the oceans of the world. That is how it made America its colony. America is like a son to Britain, so Eve should be the one to give birth to an ideal husband. Otherwise, an ideal husband cannot be born. (119-241, 1982.9.13)

2.2. The difference between British civilization and Japanese civilization

The democratic systems of the twentieth century originated in England. As you all know, Queen Elizabeth I of England strengthened her maritime policy, leading eventually to the occupation of numerous places in the world, especially in Asia and Africa. God influenced her to take such actions. Since England was an island nation, the English had been trained many times through the invasion of the Vikings. The English were always in a position to be attacked. Therefore, they trained themselves extensively to strengthen their oceanic culture more than any other race. At that time, Spain and Portugal were much stronger oceanic powers. But Queen Elizabeth I built her navy up to a higher level, strengthening it in the years from 1593 to 1603. (80-139, 1975.10.21)

As an island nation, England was always at the mercy of attacks from the Vikings of Norway, Denmark and Sweden. That is why the English people took an interest in the ocean and trained themselves in sea defense. England was in a position where she could not survive unless she maintained her control over the oceans. Consequently, England strengthened its policy of mastery over the seas in Queen Elizabeth's time. This was all in accordance with God's providence. Britain took control of North America. Britain employed a policy of pretending to be outwardly civil towards Spain, but resorted to deception internally. Don't we know this through studying history? Spain conquered South America. Consequently, in order to prevent Spain from conquering all of North America, Great Britain strengthened many of her maritime policies. (80-292, 1975.11.2)

Great Britain is a small country, but could boast that the sun never set on her colonial possessions. England had inherited the pirate spirit from Rome, going out into the ocean, stealing and occupying everywhere. That is why, when you connect this to God's providence, God used the British people because His providential outlook is to employ the tactics of quickly bringing salvation to the world. But the British people did not align themselves with that outlook and fell away in a self-centered direction. That is why Great Britain is isolated today. (99-150, 1978.9.17)

England was able to create a world-

wide empire because it was the successor to Roman civilization. Before England was occupied by Rome, her people did not bathe properly more than once a year. Isn't that barbaric? They could not bathe because it was freezing cold. The English people are all descendants of pirates. Would they have had time to bathe? England inherited Roman civilization and expanded its global domain, centering on the ocean. God had them dominate the world. "You, island nation, conquer the world!" That was God's will. (110-41, 1980.11.8)

God is the master of the ocean, as well as the master of the land. Symbolically everything must fit. This is why we had the Sisterhood Bridge Ceremony. In the future, Japan will move to the continent, taking everything with it. What Japan wants to do at this time is to send at least fifty million people to other countries through a policy of emigration. Some believe that if Japan does not adopt such measures, it will be in deep trouble fifty to a hundred years from now. (259-92, 1994.3.27)

Today we are placed in a different situation from the time when Jesus came to the people of Israel as the Messiah. The situation is different from the time of the Roman Empire, and the time of the British Empire. The providence that lead to the British Empire, began when Henry VIII ignored the punitive actions taken against him by the Vatican in Rome, due to his divorce and his establishing of the Church of England under his own supervision. At this time, the center of God's providence shifted from the Italian peninsula, where the corrupt Vatican in Rome that was going against God's will was located, to the island nation of England that was revitalized by the Anglican Church.

During the golden age of England under Queen Elizabeth's rule, conditions were made for Britain to rule the five oceans and six continents, by extending her territory through the ocean under an expansionist policy according to God's will. In this way, she was blessed profusely by God. Then America also came under the rule of the British Empire. The prosperity of the British Empire was ensured by the revival of the Anglican Church, which became the driving force in spreading the Protestant movement that was confronting the Vatican in Rome everywhere in Europe. (215-199, 1991.2.17)

What a bad nation England was! It was a stronghold of pirates. Is that not so? They once dominated the world. But was that not because they attacked and occupied other lands with guns and knives from their ships at sea? They were a band of pirates. Yet God supported them as they carried on their activities. In that way, they created a religious sphere of influence. This is why they did not perish. Otherwise, they would have utterly perished. (207-240, 1990.11.11)

Queen Elizabeth I was a supporter of Protestantism. Through the thirty-three articles in the Statutes of Westminster,

Queen Elizabeth laid the foundation to absorb Calvinism and established a policy of dominating the seas, in order to prevent Spain from intruding into her oceanic domain. This was all part of God's will. (81-238, 1975.12.28)

What did Queen Elizabeth I of England accomplish during her almost fifty-year reign from 1558 to 1603? She developed the oceans. She already knew that she could not conquer the world without attaining hegemony over the oceans. God trained England more than any other nation. (80-242, 1975.10.24)

God disseminated the Christian faith by having the mission headquarters established in Britain, which at that time was a nation with a foundation to expand around the world by means of the oceans. Britain itself was not aware of the value of God's will. Yet since Britain was in a position to increase her colonies, Christianity ideologically supported British rule in those places. (78-309, 1975.6.10)

Great Britain is the mother nation. Why is it in the mother position? If the continent is the husband, then the island of the sea – the island nation – symbolizes the woman. The island always yearns for the continent. It cries out, "When shall I go? When will you come?" In that sense, since this is the Far East, a similar nation should appear in Asia, from one end of the land to the other, as a reflection of England. If one appears in the West, another should appear in the East. That country is Japan. (189-93, 1989.3.19)

Japan is the Eve nation on the satanic side. This is why the Eve nation on the satanic side could share and retain equally all the blessings of the Eve nation on the heavenly side. Christianity did not succeed in going to Asia and instead went in a reverse course to Europe, through Rome and passed on to Britain. In this way, it has gone the other way. The peninsula corresponding to Rome is the Korean peninsula; the sea and island corresponding to the Mediterranean Sea is Japan; and the continent corresponding to Europe is the Asian continent. In correlation, it comes back after making a full circuit. The time has come for these two to meet. This is why scholars and politicians say that the age of the Pacific civilization is coming. (251-144, 1993.10.17)

Japan is no different from Britain. It is the direct successor to British civilization. America succeeded British civilization, while at the same time in Asia, Japan directly succeeded British civilization (80-14, 1975.10.1)

Japan corresponds to Britain. Japanese civilization succeeded British civilization. Japanese civilization was created by removing all the elements of Christian civilization, and utilizing only the core essence. That is a satanic nation. When Christianity went to the West, who dominated the Western cultural sphere? Satan was in control. Therefore, when you consider Japan, which had accepted Western Civilization, you can

see that it corresponds to Britain. Don't they drive on the left in Japan? Japan's golden age lasted for 120 years. The 120 years, which began with the Meiji Reformation in 1868, came to an end last year in 1988. (188-309, 1989.3.1)

I chose Japan and Germany. I replaced Great Britain with Japan. Japanese civilization is a replica of British civilization. Japan imitated the British system of administration, and also copied from the German army. That is history and this explains why the Japanese, like the British, drive on the left. About 120 years ago, during the Meiji Reform, Japan imported all of Britain's culture. This is why I placed Japan at the center of the providence, due to the fact that Britain, America and France did not fulfill their responsibility. Anybody who fails in providential history is never used again. (213-100, 1991.1.16)

Great Britain, in the Eve position, is an island nation. An island nation longs for the land. It is just like a woman. America is in the position of a man born from Eve. Isn't that so? France is the enemy nation because it fought against Great Britain. In God's presence, these three nations should become one centering on the Christian cultural sphere.

Who is on the satanic side? Japan is. Her civilization is like all the things Satan had taken from God. That is why she stands in the position of having taken all of Britain's culture, which was on the heavenly side. She has stolen from Britain. That is why cars in Japan also keep to the left. (200-299, 1990.2.26)

Japan copied from Britain. She is an imitation of Western Civilization. She borrowed Roman law, copied the German army, and followed the culture of Britain. Isn't that why cars drive on the left in Japan? It copied Britain. Satan imitates everything that is done on the heavenly side. That is why Japanese civilization is a replicate civilization. It copied a country blessed by God, utilizing its accomplishments. Japan took things away from the developed world. It was not on God's account. Essentially, I have approved of Japan returning to the position of the Eve nation on the heavenly side. It was not for the sake of Japan herself. In that sense, history is continuing to unfold under the sphere of the principle of indemnity. (249-132, 1993.10.8)

Section 3. Japan's Mission as the Eve Nation

3.1. Japan is the Eve nation

What is the completion of God's providence? It will be completed when Adam and Eve are perfected, and the three archangels surrounding them become one. What has happened now is that America, China, and the Soviet Union have become the three archangels.

Adam is Korea, and Eve is Japan, and this still stands. The original world would be one where Adam and Eve and the three archangels are one. But the angelic world and Eve joined together

and expelled Adam. The three archangels and Eve became one, and expelled Adam from the original Eden.

To indemnify this, Japan, America, and Germany should have become one after the Second World War, but this did not happen. That is why this needs to be indemnified again at this time. In Asia, Japan and Korea are enemies. These enemy nations must become one. (201-232, 1990.4.22)

I am in a position to retake these nations of Korea and Japan centering on the Adam nation and Eve nation. With the arrival of the age of restoration, they must be restored centering on Eve. That is why the Eve nation, Japan, holds all the economic power. Consequently, America needs Japan, China needs Japan, and Korea needs Japan as well. In the realm of competition, these nations are at war with each other, vying to be the first to attract Japan. I know about this. That is why I brought them into exchange marriages and completely tied Korea and Japan together. America, China, and the Soviet Union did not oppose this union. (201-232, 1990.4.22)

I have made Japan one with America, with China and with the Soviet Union. Next, I must educate America, Japan and Korea after they become completely one. As the Eve nation, Japan must draw Cain and Abel to her arms and nurse them. She must fulfill the role of nursing twins. She must provide all her milk, blood and flesh. In that way, she is giving her life. It means linking true life, true love, and true lineage. That is what Japan is doing. What am I now planning based on this providential point of view? As I was coming here, I gave instructions to carry out a fundraising drive for 300 million dollars. (201-232, 1990.4.22)

Now you must not think about any success or goal that centers on your own self. The reason I demand Japan's success is to obtain success for the entire world. If you, of all people, can stand together and carry out the heavenly mission of restoring Japan, we would not need even twenty more years. Sacrificial offerings will be needed continuously in order to fulfill that mission. Sacrificial offerings should not be made from their own subjective viewpoint. In dealing with the whole, they should be determined existentially centering on God. That is the mission of a sacrificial offering. To become a sacrificial offering you must absolutely refrain from putting forth your own subjective perspective. (15-84, 1965.9.29)

You should become heroes who can take responsibility for the most difficult places in Tokyo. Furthermore, you should stand in the most difficult position in the Japanese Unification Church and become a person who can take responsibility for difficult tasks. Otherwise, Japan will be placed in the most difficult position among other nations.

We must march forward without resting for ten or even a hundred years in order to reach our goals. If we fail to achieve them in our generation, then we

must achieve them without fail even if our effort is extended through the second and third generations. When the global wave comes sweeping in, national victory will be determined depending on the number of people who jump into that wave. (15-84, 1965.9.29)

Unification Church members must think about what the Japanese Unification Church and Korean Unification Church should do in order to transcend the historical and national emotions that still remain between the two countries, to create a realm of heart like that of brothers. This is the most important task. If you stand in a position where countries like Japan or Korea bring divisiveness in your thoughts, you cannot create God's new country, the nation of His desire. In that sense, Korean and Japanese members should become one and agree on the goal of restoring a new nation and push forward until they restore that nation, which God has been seeking in its entirety. That is the worldwide mission of Unification Church members. (40-123, 1971.1.30)

When Korea and Japan, the Korean Unification Church and Japanese Unification Church, become one and restore the nation, this tradition of bonding two people will become the basis hereafter for a tradition that can be a model for all other nations, throughout the course of history. Therefore from now on, Japanese and Korean Unification Church members in some way must carry out the mission of establishing this tradition on God's side as an untainted and true tradition. (40-123, 1971.1.30)

I love the Japanese people more than anyone in Japan does. I have concerned myself with the future of Japan and China. I have worried about what America may become, and what Germany may become. Therefore, I am not someone who just loves Korean people because I was born in Korea. Even the Japanese people need my strength. That is why I believe that Japanese people must also be raised to the standard where they can love me as they would God.

Unless God stands in a position where He can be loved more than any Japanese parent is loved, God cannot become part of any family in that nation. God must be in a higher position. Opposite poles attract. We must carry out such activities. The Messiah is absolutely needed. In particular, if the Japanese people are the first to come together in making a foothold, so that the people of the world can receive the Messiah, the day will come when Japan will be praised in the Kingdom of Heaven. Therefore, no matter what it takes, we must leave the evil sovereignty behind and assure that the good lineage of Heaven is all that remains. (55-97, 1972.4.23)

In America and the other nations of the world, I am causing Japan to exert itself at my direction. I am also conducting joint operations with Japan. This will support Japan. For three years, you must demonstrate a sincere heart to bring together all the things of cre-

ation, the substantial body and the heart as one. Without creating a foundation, to restore the foundation of victory that I, coming from the Adam nation, have established, there will be no condition for Japan to say that it has fulfilled its mission as the Eve nation. On the national level, the task of indemnifying Jesus' being unable to meet his Eve during his three-year course… must also be accomplished by the Unification Church of Japan. (55-170, 1972.5.7)

With regard to Japan's title as the Eve nation, Eve must breast-feed her sons, Cain and Abel. She must feed and nurture them. In this way, Eve must manifest a loving heart toward the father, and the father must demonstrate love, with the heart of the loving God. She must stand in a position of loving God with greater intensity than she loves her own son or daughter. Through that systematic bond, she must receive the father's sperm, the baby seed, and engage in the process of giving rebirth. But one cannot be born again after being fully grown. This is why one must be engrafted. (122-44, 1982.10.31)

3.2. The reason for choosing Japan as the Eve nation

It is a mystery that Rev. Moon of Korea chose Japan to be the Eve nation. There are many scholars in Japan who respect Rev. Moon. Famous scholars in places like Tokyo University have asked me, "Why is Japan the Eve country? This displeases us." I told them to wait a few years to see whether it becomes a reality or not. (255-244, 1994.3.11)

There is no principle dictating that Japan must be chosen as the Eve nation. Since Satan had taken the most precious thing, God had no other choice but to grab Satan by the tail and wrestle back from him what was His, and return it to its original state. That is the way of indemnity. Indemnity takes the reverse course. That is why there is God, Abel, Cain, Eve, Adam and Satan. If humankind had not fallen, the order would have originally come from the top down. But since all of this was lost, and because Satan dominated everything, God had no choice but to go up the other way centering on Abel. (246-192, 1993.4.16)

Such circumstances were created because the Christian cultural sphere was unable to fulfill its responsibility after the Second World War. Then who will take responsibility for that? I must take responsibility for the troubles God went through while preparing for me. That is why I chose Japan, which was in ruins when she became the Eve nation. The reason Japan was able to become a global economic empire in just forty-seven years is not because Japan excelled in some way. It was because she was chosen as the Eve nation. Since Eve became a comprehensive base for recovering all creation that was lost, Japan came to wield worldwide economic power. That is also how it was with Germany and America. (242-212, 1993.1.1)

Satan had in his grasp what God loved most: Great Britain, America, and France. These countries in the satanic world came to stand in the lowest position of the servant of servants. Since I could not abandon these nations, I had no choice but to restore them. I had to go and find the tail of the devil, Satan, who played the part as the leader who opposed the heavenly way and kingdom. Since Satan had the head in his grasp, I had to search at the very bottom. That is why I went to the wilderness and chose Japan, which Satan loved the most, to be the Eve nation. There was no other way. (242-201, 1993.1.1)

I represent the heavenly kingdom, and I am the representative of the Adam nation that stands as God's representative. If I stand in such a position, then I must seek the representative of the Eve nation. I had to find a nation that could display absolute obedience. Which one was that? It was Japan, which took the place of Great Britain. Since Satan had taken away what God loved, I am taking away what Satan loves most. That is Japan and Germany. (195-205, 1989.11.15)

Since Satan had taken away Great Britain, there was no choice but to take away the Eve nation that Satan loved most. Restoration must occur through indemnity. Just as God took Abraham, the eldest son of the idol maker whom Satan loved most, Japan was taken away as a replacement for Great Britain, and America was taken away as a replacement for Abel. Who put them in their positions? It was not God, but me. Since I put them in their positions, I have to recover them. Since I chose Japan, I have to make her into the Eve nation that Britain could not be. This is why these four nations, which include Germany and France, former arch enemy nations, must be made into one. The mother and father have to become one. The son and mother have to become one, and the older brother and younger brother have to become one. (191-122, 1989.6.24)

In the future Japan, not America or Germany, will have the world's economic power in her grasp. Why? Because Japan is the Eve nation. That is why America, the archangel nation, should follow Japan. Germany is the archangel and Cain, on the satanic side. Germany must also be under Japan's influence. Therefore, in the future all the money in the world will gather in Japan. (204-289, 1990.7.11)

If I had not designated Japan as the Eve nation, Japan would have been beaten down flat. Are they not a people who believe in a motley group of spirits and even worship the head of an Alaskan Pollack? In light of the Christian tradition, which believes in the one and only God, the worship of numerous gods does not even fall under Satan. Yet, I chose Japan to be the Eve nation. That is the result of the standard of God's restoration and love. Otherwise, the Japanese would have become a miserable people. That is how it is with Germany and Japan. Is this not strange? How could these people, who

caused so much harm to humanity, be blessed again in such a short period of time, becoming the envy of all people? There is no way to answer that question without knowing my teachings. Even the Japanese people do not know this. (190-238, 1989.6.19)

In terms of the Second World War, Japan was the Eve nation in Asia. She was the Eve nation on the satanic side. "Yaoyorozunokami" or numerous gods has nothing to do with the one and only God. They are a people who even worship the head of an Alaskan Pollack. Do they not call it the "yaoyorozu" or "numerous in number"? They are a people on the satanic side, and the Eve nation on the satanic side. Who is "Amaterasu-omikami," the mother goddess of Japan? She is a female. That is why Japan is the Eve nation. She represents the Eve nation on the satanic side.

Satan realized that this Eve nation was the first stepping-off point to Asia, from where the results of Western Civilization can return to the providential sphere. Satan knew that it comes back from the island – from England. Japan inherited everything from England. Japan inherited from Western Civilization and from America. Did she not inherit from two locations? The present economic problems have been completely inherited from America. This happened right after the Second World War. Before that time, Japan and America were enemies at war. Satan, the satanic side, is fully aware of this. (188-168, 1989.2.19)

If the nation of Korea is to be saved, there must be an Eve nation for the Adam nation. Who will become that Eve nation? Since Christianity opposed God's will, Britain could not become the Eve nation. Therefore, God had to choose an enemy nation that was most loved by Satan. Satan had America well in hand. Japan corresponds to the end part of the tail. Since Satan had brought the Christian cultural sphere under his influence, and because the Christian cultural sphere on the satanic side prevented the heavenly side from acquiring anything, there was no choice but to choose Japan as the Eve nation. She was just like Britain.

Although I do not have a nation, as the representative of Korea – the Adam nation that is the land of the coming Lord – I as an individual, must go forward with the Eve nation under my command. Japan, the Eve nation, is an island nation just like Britain. I cannot return to Korea without establishing the condition of having recovered what was lost in America by making America the Abel nation, and Germany the Cain nation, and organizing these four nations in order to bring them before Heaven. (188-151, 1989.2.19)

Japan was able to gather money worldwide in order to restore what Eve had lost. That money is not for the sake of Japan alone. Japan will be flattened unless she invests for the sake of the world throughout Asia. This year is the border line. I am doing these things because I do not want Japan, which is on this border line, to be destroyed. Money

is flowing into Korea not because I need it, but for the sake of Japan. An amount of 2,400 trillion worth of money is lying around in Japan, with nowhere to spend it. They do not know how to use the money. Japan only knows how to make money. She does not know how to use it. Since Japan is a woman, she should make a handbag and save up all her money. Would she not then get married and share everything with her husband's house? That is how it is, for Japan is literally that Eve nation. (183-83, 1988.10.29)

Before Japan was chosen as the Eve nation, did not her women go through the most hardships in the world? Throughout history Japanese women were raped and beaten by men, and had to undergo a course of absolute obedience in which they were not even free to assume a comfortable posture. It was miserable, in particular, for the women of warriors. They were miserable beyond description. First of all, the Amaterasuomikami of Japan, a symbol of the Eve nation, also refers to Eve. Was Oomikami a woman or a man? That is why this nation is female, both in spirit and flesh. The Japanese people only look at one side of things. Women only look at one side. When they get married, they do not think of anyone else other than their husband. Their eyes, nose, ears, lips and antenna are all pointed toward their husband. (183-25, 1988.10.29)

America, which should follow Japan, the Eve nation, cannot lose Japan. That is how it is. Were not all the rights of ownership of the Eve nation lost due to unfavorable trade conditions? America has come, bringing all the material possessions of the world. These go through Abel, through Cain, through Eve, through the mother, and through the father to return to God. (182-228, 1988.10.23)

The West is the archangel. Since the archangel took away what belonged to Eve on the heavenly side, then Japan, which represents the Asian cultural sphere, has taken back all the products of Western Civilization. (168-69, 1987.9.1)

If I had not chosen Japan as the Eve nation, she would not have become that kind of nation. She would have become a miserable nation. If the Christian culture had accepted me, Great Britain would have become the Eve nation. The Adam nation is Korea. In Europe, Britain would have been the Eve nation, France the archangel nation and Germany the Adam nation; they all would have automatically become one. Yet these nations disobeyed and rejected God. Thus, you should not forget that God took what was most loved by the enemy, the Eve nation, and also took away Germany, the male nation, to reestablish His will by making the Adam nation, the Eve nation and the archangel nation centering on the Unification Church. Therefore, Japan was not blessed for her own sake; it was for the sake of the world, for the Unification Church and Korea. If Japan does not use those blessings for the unification of Korea, she will be destroyed. (186-116, 1989.1.29)

I am thinking of binding together the greatest intellects of the world centering on Japan. Both the left-wing and right-wing are to perish in Japan.

America is the representative within the religious spheres centering on the spirit, but that spirit is now completely missing. The Soviet Union sought an ideal material world, but that material world has become completely empty. So, the opposite has happened. God made it that way. For the sake of the external body and internal life, the Eve nation has the responsibility to nurture those areas where the material and the spiritual are falling into ruin. The mother should connect these two. She should revive America and the Soviet Union. (201-219, 1990.4.19)

There is no owner today in Korea's social and political affairs. There is no owner in the satanic world. America does not have an owner, and the Soviet Union does not have an owner. There is no owner in the communist world, China, or Japan. Who is the owner? There should not be many owners. There is only one. That is why, after Eve unites centering on Adam, these two should become vertically aligned with God, and the archangel should become horizontally united centering on Adam. In this regard, I am Adam and the three archangelic nations, the representative nations of the world, are America, China, and the Soviet Union. And in the course of restoration, the country with the most money is Japan. She is the Eve nation. The money that the Eve nation possesses does not belong to her. Yet, Japan tries to live comfortably with her great wealth for her own sake. This is wrong. (200-338, 1990.2.27)

In the last days, an age of restoring the rights of ownership will come. Consequently, this world must be united centering on the Unification Church. That is why the Unification Church talks about the Adam nation, the Eve nation, and archangel nations. Since Germany belongs to the democratic world, it is the elder brother of Abel within the satanic realm. Then present day America is the elder brother of Abel on the heavenly side. Since Japan is the Eve nation, she belongs to the Adam nation. The world is now moving into the economic sphere of these three nations: Germany, America, and Japan. This then goes through America, and then through Japan to enter Korea. (182-150, 1988.10.16)

At the time when Adam and Eve fell, there was one woman centering on Adam and three archangels. It was the same as having four men around one woman. Japan is the Eve nation and is in exactly the same situation. Korea is the Adam nation, while the Soviet Union, China and America are the three archangels. As the Eve nation, Japan was naked and has just been making money for forty years. She was only interested in making money. She started the war and just made money. (259-249, 1994.4.10)

Japan is the Eve nation. It is a nation that worships a female deity on the

satanic side. Is not Amaterasu-omikami a goddess? This female deity, representing four thousand years of history, ruled Asia for forty years until the coming of the Lord. Since the Japanese had to build a defense in order to prevent many difficulties, they came to dominate Asia for 120 years. (197-267, 1990.1.19)

Adam and Eve should become one. Isn't the Adam nation the elder brother, and the Eve nation his younger sister? This is a vertical relationship, but horizontally they are in a conjugal relationship. Horizontally they have a conjugal relationship, but vertically they have a sibling relationship. That is how it is. (181-310, 1988.10.3)

As an invading nation, Japan shed the blood of many innocent people in Korea and China. How can a nation that killed so many people be liberated and become the prosperous nation it is today, during the forty years after the war? It was because I chose Japan to be the Eve nation. Japan stands in the position of the worldwide Eve nation, as a substitute for Great Britain. (256-270, 1994.3.14)

Eve should embrace and feed Cain and Abel, and have them unite so that they do not fight each other, and offer them as God's children in front of True Parents and God. Without doing so, there would be no responsibility for Eve to bear. That is why she was given this mission. All economic things that were lost because of Eve must be restored by Eve. Therefore, at this time of exchange between Asia and the realm of world culture, I have chosen Japan to be the Eve nation, so that she is inheriting the traditional culture of Britain and all the benefits of the age in which Great Britain, as the Eve nation and island nation centering on the Christian cultural sphere, was able to rule the world. I am teaching these things so that Christianity welcomes Abel and goes the path of inheriting the standard tradition of the parent. You should understand that this is the path that the Japanese and Korean members are taking at this time. (146-34, 1986.6.1)

Why is Japan the Eve nation? After the Second World War, Great Britain was unable to fulfill its mission as the Eve nation and was occupied by Satan. Therefore, the weakest Eve on the other side was recovered, along with Germany, the wicked nation at the time. They were nations that were devastated and in ashes. They had nothing. The returning Lord had to bring them into order again and restore through indemnity the standard of a unified world, established by Britain, America and France that had won victory during the Second World War. Otherwise, the new history could not be set straight. This is what I have been doing for forty years. (251-147, 1993.10.17)

3.3. Japan's mission as the mother nation

Since Japan was chosen as the Eve nation, she must give birth to Cain and

Abel again. That is why there are two types of Korean residents in Japan. They are the North Korean residents and the South Korean residents, who are like Cain and Abel. The North Korean and South Korean residents are in conflict like Cain and Abel. They must be made one. Since I have chosen Japan as the Eve nation, Japan's responsibility for this situation is inevitable. Without it, Japan cannot become the Eve nation. She must make these two sons unite in her womb. Eve must draw both the right-wing and left-wing worlds into her embrace. (244-326, 1993.3.1)

Japan's position was just like that of Britain, because Japan had taken on the mission of the Eve nation. In the British Isles, Protestants and Catholics, Ireland and Scotland even now are still in conflict. This conflict must be resolved. Japan must be in the exact same position as Britain or she cannot become the Eve nation.

That is why there are two disparate children within Japan. They are the pro-North Korean Jochongryeon and pro-South Korean Mindan. They are heterogeneous twins within the womb of Japan, the Eve nation. The Japanese government and people have regarded this fact unfavorably. In order to fulfill her mission as the Eve nation, Japan must give birth to them and make them one. I am directing you to organize activities focused on making the Jochongryeon and Mindan in Japan one, because such a time has come.

As a woman, Japan must love the Korean Jochongryeon and Mindan. The only people in Japan who know about this are our Unification Church members. No matter what difficulties may arise, without cutting the ribbon that announces the unity of Jochongryeon and Mindan, without restoring the children, Cain and Abel, and making them like brothers with one mind, Japan cannot fulfill Eve's mission.

Eve can return to the Adam nation by making them one. When the mother who is one with her children unites with the father, the worldwide Cain and Abel realms, the democratic world and communist world will be harmonized. This depends on Korea and Japan. It is like Rebecca and Tamar. Didn't their twins fight within their wombs? Without giving birth to them and making them one, the mission of the Eve nation cannot be fulfilled.

No matter how difficult it is, there is no way for Japanese women to return to their nation without winning over the 600,000 Koreans in Japan, the same number as the people of Israel. This is why you should not trouble yourself with witnessing to Japanese people. You should first give birth to the twins in your womb and successfully make them one. When you can do that – when Jochongryeon and Mindan become one and unite with me – Japan can be brought to order as the Eve nation. (255-159, 1994.3.10)

The Eve nation cannot stand without making Jochongryeon and Mindan one. When they all welcome me

with open arms, they can become one with me. That is why Adam and Eve must become one. If South Korea and North Korea, the substantial entities of South and North, become one through the unity between Jochongryeon and Mindan, then the false parents in North Korea can be conditionally changed into the true parents in South Korea. Therefore, if Eve can automatically embrace this goal and connect that tradition to the Korean peninsula, the unified realm between Korea and Japan will unfold. (228-233, 1992.4.3)

The mother must embrace the children of the left-wing and right-wing. Japan is the Eve nation. Where should Japan, as a replacement for the island nation of Britain, go with a man and woman in her arms? She should enter the original nation and establish the condition of giving rebirth through the father and mother who are the Parents of all people. They should be born through the mother, after being embraced in the mother's love. (226-134, 1992.2.2)

There are three archangels centering on Adam and Eve. Among them, the archangel on the satanic side is the Soviet Union, the Asian archangel is China, and the Christian archangel on the heavenly side is America. The three warring archangels have, for the first time, become one and united. The six entities – God and the three archangels who started off as individuals centering on Adam and Eve – should become vertically unified as one.

The Korean peninsula is divided into North and South. This symbolizes the division of the world. I must now draw together the fortunes for unification and make a circuit and return. Who is the one that divided this country into North and South? It was Japan. This is why the funds for the reunification of North and South Korea must be supplied by Japan. To bring it about, we need to educate and mobilize all the people of Japan. I am the only person who can do so. That is what I am doing. Where should the funds for reunification of North and South Korea come from? Japan should supply them. (226-134, 1992.2.2)

It is good for a woman to be married into a family and be loved by them. But on the other hand, she must give birth to sons and daughters. She should resolve all the economic problems and issues of education within a household and establish a realm of heart. If the legacy that has come down from the ancestors for generations is not right, then it should be converted to the original realm of heart and taught accordingly. Do not forget that women representing the Eve nation of Japan have this mission. That is why extraordinary activities have been carried out centering on the Japanese women. There were such miserable situations in history, where women shed tears or were kicked by a man, or beaten by their parents. Now, the suffering must take place in the streets.

In this way, there is no place of ease or repose for their internal realm. That is the situation even today. Are there not

many women in Japan? That is why the Blessing this time will become an issue. So you must witness and bring three people each; at least one of them has to be a man who is older than you. (228-167, 1992.3.27)

Japan was the one that divided the Korean peninsula into the North and South. For this reason, Japan should go to the source and influence it. This is why I am uniting the left-wing and right-wing to return to the position of the bridegroom. I must come back and even turn around Kim Il-sung. The left-wing and right-wing are like sons. After restoring the right of the eldest son, in order to restore the right of the parents, I even have to involve Kim Il-sung. Hence, once a unified realm unfolds here on the Korean peninsula, the Western Civilization of democracy and the Asian civilization, left and right, will become one. They will become one because communism will have disappeared completely. (228-233, 1992.4.3)

You should create an environment where you can quickly fulfill the mission of the Eve nation by investing everything you have with a heart of repentance while thinking about everything in Japan. Japan is in a position where she must return, allowing North and South Korea to go ahead of her. Without doing so, Japan cannot return to the place where the father dwells. Together with me, Japan must create a unified front-line. The Japanese government does not know about this mission. Japan was able to accumulate money because, through me, that money must be used for the sake of Asia. (229-154, 1992.4.11)

In the past, Japan was an enemy to many Asian nations. Since she invaded Manchuria and other nations, she does not have any condition to land in Asia at this time. As an invading nation forty years ago, Japan ruled with an iron hand. People who are alive today witnessed that harsh reality, and because people remember, the nations in Asia hate it when Japanese come ashore. But if Japan places Rev. Moon and the Unification Church in the lead, she can go anywhere in Asia. That is the path of life Japan should take in the future. There is no other way. Alone, Japan is nothing. (229-154, 1992.4.11)

In order to become the Eve nation, Japan must fulfill the mission of Eve. Who will embrace the left-wing and right-wing? The bride and wife of Jesus must embrace them. Originally, the Israeli nation and Judaism were supposed to attend Jesus, but they could not fulfill their mission. That is why the bride church, the bride nation must now embrace them.

Israel and Judaism thought that when the Lord comes they would trample the world and become number one, standing in the highest position. That was a mistaken belief. In terms of God's providence, as a female religion, they should have received the husband, and fulfilled their heavenly mission by embracing Rome and nurturing it together as

a couple. However, instead of thinking in this manner, they thought that when the Messiah and coming Lord arrived, he would destroy Rome in an instant, subordinate it to his country and rule over it. But they thought wrong. It is the same with Japan. Since Japan is now the Eve nation, she should embrace the left-wing and right-wing. Japan should have that within herself, not only externally but also internally. Those are the characteristics of the Eve nation. (237-200, 1992.11.17)

Lineage and ownership must be converted to God's side. Japan has inherited Satan's ownership. Adam must become the master ahead of Satan. Before Adam becomes the master, God must become the owner. But God has not yet become the owner. Adam has not become the owner. In order to recover the ownership that Eve lost, she must go out to the world and put everything in order. That is why ownership must be returned to God's side. In order to have that ownership returned, it cannot be brought to me directly. It must be brought through my children, through Mother. It must be done in reverse, the way it is done in restoration. (229-154, 1992.4.11)

When a woman marries into a family, she does not go there empty-handed. A woman should go, after gathering together her possessions. A family who sends their daughter to marry hopes that the parents and the entire family of the other household have the desire to expand the ownership of that bride, who enters their household and becomes dependent on them. It is the same for those Unification Church families who send their daughters for marriage in the Kingdom of Heaven. The clan would wish for the ownership to be in the custody of the eternal owner of the tribe, and to be given a sturdy foundation that would not bring shame within that realm. That is the same goal, which they themselves desire. There is no doubt about it.

In order for Japan to fulfill her mission as the Eve nation, she needs to connect a new tradition of the Eve nation to the women of Korea. Otherwise, there is no way for Japan's realm of Eve to connect with Korea's Eve. Mother's proclamation rally for the liberation of women on April 10 enabled that to happen.

Centering on Mother, Japanese women and Korean women are like Cain and Abel. From the position of having restored the right of the eldest son, Korean women are in the position of the elder sister. Yet in the course of restoration, they are like the realm of Abel. That is why Japanese women should be absolutely obedient to Korean women while going through hardships. That is the realm of liberation for the satanic world. Therefore, Japanese women should become good examples in the Unification Church and establish a tradition of becoming a model for those women that return. Otherwise, they will not be able to fulfill the mission of the Eve nation in the last days. (230-281, 1992.5.8)

Japan's mission is the mission of the Eve nation. Since Eve symbolizes the mother, Japan must embrace and digest communism even though externally she shows herself to be a democracy. For this reason, God bestowed the economic rights of the world on Japan. Due to the Fall, centering on Eve, the realm of the children's heart, along with creation, fell into the satanic world. That is why Eve's mission is to embrace the children and all of creation with God's heart, and come back with them. However, Eve does not have the realm of God's heart. It lies with the perfected Adam, who is the coming Lord. Consequently, they must become one. That is the Adam nation and Eve nation. (237-188, 1992.11.17)

You understand what Eve's mission is, right? You have the mission of unifying North and South Korea. Until now, there was not one person who knew that Japan's mission is to unify North and South Korea by sacrificing herself economically. (237-214, 1992.11.17)

This is my conclusion. Japan must digest her enemies and completely change the lineage, ownership and realm of heart to fulfill her mission, without shame, as the Eve nation. In order to do so, centering on the family, Japan must surpass the standard of the family household that can shoulder the world in front of God. You should not forget that you are destined for this solemn mission. So you must be prepared.

The Eve nation must fulfill her mission in terms of economic matters. Since you have all heard what I have said, you must now take action. I have clearly told you how to accomplish it, based on sound theory. Therefore, you must now practice it. I hope you all take responsibility and lead the way. (237-255, 1992.11.17)

Japan should stand on the side of the restored Adam, and help to clean up fallen Adam. But instead, political circles in Japan are thinking about the economic advantage they can gain through their trade with North Korea. That is an absurd idea. Japan will meet her destruction if she does not invest her economy for the unification of North and South Korea. If Japan fails to fulfill the mission of the Eve nation, she will disappear without a trace.

That is why you, the brave soldiers of the Unification Church, must fulfill your responsibility, no matter what sacrifices are made. You should exert yourself for the sake of unification of North and South Korea, even if you have to abandon your family or even if your clan goes to ruin. That is the mission of the brave soldiers of the Unification Church. It is not my mission. (240-156, 1992.12.11)

If the Christian cultural sphere, which is the bride, had become one with me after the end of the Second World War, there never would have been this kind of course of indemnity. Consequently, North and South Korea never would have been divided. I have gained the victory by transmitting completely

to Mother the victory I attained as a man. That is why I have to re-indemnify the failure of the Christian cultural sphere – the failure forty-seven years ago to receive the bridegroom caused by the failure of the Eve nation in fulfilling her mission. That is why all the Korean women and Japanese women are involved with Mother, who is Eve. (240-156, 1992.12.11)

Japan has the mission as the Eve nation. Japan's assets are not for the Japanese people. Japan has the title of the Eve nation, so that she may restore the substantial realm of Jesus in Asia centering on the Adam nation. The Eve nation must restore Jesus' body. (249-137, 1993.10.8)

At the turning point of the Fall, a woman will long for two men. She will yearn after the archangel instead of Adam. History set up the archangel as husband and ancestor, so Japanese women, who stand in the position of the Eve nation, should follow and yearn after me more than anybody else and become one through me. They are to become the younger sister. Since the younger sister fell, I am saving the younger sister and training her to become the fiancée and future wife. In that way, my mission is to educate them to become a mother, grandmother, and a queen. (304-227, 1999.11.8)

From a providential viewpoint, Japan and Korea are one nation. Japanese people should learn the Korean language. That is how it is providentially. From a geopolitical point of view, Korea is like Italy. Italy failed in its attempt to unite the world centering on the kingship. Consequently, the Korean peninsula was chosen instead of Italy, and Jesus' body that was lost through his death must be unified at this place. In that way, centering on the perfection of the world-wide historical Christian cultural sphere, the total unity of body and mind must be achieved together with the Unification Church. By going forth in that manner, and advancing into the realm of world civilization from a unified Asian continent, we will enter the age of the Pacific civilization for the first time. (227-340, 1992.2.16)

How did Japan become such a powerful nation? Satan knows what happens during the course of fulfilling God's will. Since Satan knew that in the last days God's providence returns centering on the Korean peninsula, he did horrible things to the Korean people for forty years.

That is why he brutally murdered Queen Min, the Empress of the Chosun Dynasty. In that way, Satan completely occupied Korea. This is why the Japanese proclaimed, "Japan-Korea Unity!" signifying that Japan and Korea were one nation. Since Satan knew that God's providence was to unfold centering on the Korean peninsula, he captured it and tried to swallow the nation. Using that strategy, the Korean peninsula was ruled by Japan for forty years. (229-25, 1992.4.9)

Why was Japan blessed economically? It was because she received the support of nations from around the world. On the worldwide level, Eve lost the land, people, and love. Therefore, in order to restore that, since Japan is the Eve nation, she should enter into a position where she can attain a world-class economy. This is how the principle of restoration unfolds. I am placing the Japanese in the lead, because Japan is in a position to fulfill the mission entrusted to her. Even then, they should be in a higher position in terms of heart, more than anyone else. That is how Japanese people have to be in terms of heart.

(62-324, 1972.9.26)

CHAPTER FIVE

All Civilizations Will Come to Fruition on the Peninsula

Section 1. The Peninsular Civilization and Korea

1.1. The trend of world civilization

The ancient civilizations arose from the continents. Human civilization, which came forth from the valley of the Nile River in Egypt, shifted to the peninsular civilizations and established a Mediterranean civilization sphere in Greece and on the Italian peninsula. The peninsular civilization was then transferred to island civilizations, thus creating an Atlantic civilization sphere centering on Britain, an island nation.

Ultimately, the island civilization in Britain crossed the Atlantic Ocean and established the miracle of modern civilization on the American continent, thereafter creating the Pacific civilization sphere. (78-254, 1975.6.7)

The archangelic cultural sphere originated from the Nile River civilization established in Egypt. It then shifted to the Greek civilization, a peninsular civilization based around the Mediterranean Sea, and culminated in the Roman civilization. Why did the development of civilization have to gravitate toward the western spheres? It was inevitable due to the Fall. (79-72, 1975.6.1)

The birthplace of civilization must be in a peninsular region that has four distinct seasons. Such a region would exist. What is a peninsular region? The land symbolizes man, therefore, it symbolizes heaven; and the water symbolizes woman, symbolizing the sea. The peninsula connects these two. That is how it works with all the principles of heaven and earth. In that sense, the Italian peninsula, as a peninsular region, contributed to world culture. This was the first stop for past civilizations. You should be aware that this peninsular civilization, centered on Rome, a region with an integrated civilization, had emerged with the authority of the past ages in history. It had also passed through the Egyptian civilization and Greek civilization to become a comprehensive area. (107-300, 1980.6.8)

As an island nation, Japan was the first in Asia to assimilate Western Civilization. Now it is time for the age of the peninsular civilization. The Korean peninsula is where the oriental and Western Civilizations become one. As the historian Spengler pointed out, the rise and fall of civilizations recur like the chang-

es of the four seasons in a year. The age of the Atlantic civilization has now passed, and the age of the Pacific civilization is being ushered in. (115-171, 1981.11.10)

What kind of people are the Koreans? They are a people who should inherit the global history of the cultural spheres that can restore and indemnify the civilization based on the Italian peninsula. Korea is such a region. The reunification of North and South Korea signifies the unification of the democratic world and communist world. Furthermore, the independence of Korea is a restoration of the failure of the people of Israel. That is why Israel and Korea both regained their nations together in 1948. (139-109, 1986.1.28)

Modern Korea has the shortest history in present-day Asia, and is the only nation that can absorb the global cultures and religions of east and west. From Confucianism and Buddhism to Christianity, Korea has accepted them all. During this short time of forty years, Korea absorbed the products of Western Civilization and bore its fruits. A fruit is something like a seed. The peninsular civilization becomes the base of happiness only when it ascends to the world of love, which becomes ideally established by forming one root that can save the world. Otherwise, there will be destruction in the world. (179-122, 1988.8.1)

Haven't I spoken about peninsular civilization before? Didn't I say peninsular civilization developed as a double culture, and that the Korean peninsula should come to mind whenever a volcano erupts in Japan? That is why I have been telling you to make boats. Have you built them yet? That may happen. For this reason, the Japanese and the Americans should not be arrogant. If they behave arrogantly on both sides of the Pacific Ocean, God will not spare either one. Both America and Japan will be struck. I do not pray for this to happen, but it is reasonable to conclude that such a situation would inevitably happen if Japan were to make a mistake. It is a valid statement when considering the historical judgment between good and evil. (198-237, 1990.2.3)

The world was to be unified centering on the Papal court in Rome, the peninsular civilization. However, since the Vatican did not fulfill its responsibility, the providence was expanded to Britain. When this returns in a circle, it must come through Japan, an island nation. Japan succeeds Britain's cultural sphere. That is why Japan's era of prosperity lasted for 120 years from 1868 to 1988. The 120-year period, covering the Meiji, Taisho, and Showa eras, is just like the 120-year period covering the reigns of King Saul, King David, and King Solomon. Emperor Hirohito died in January 1989, didn't he? It was exactly 120 years. During this time, Japan completely inherited Britain's cultural sphere. Don't they say in western literature, "If it concerns drama, it has to be from Britain?" Modern research and industrial civilization began in Britain, but its fruits

were taken away by Germany. That was inevitable because Germany was on the satanic side. (199-78, 1990.2.15)

Due to the Fall of Adam and Eve, indemnity has been paid throughout the course of history for millions of years. Blood was shed as indemnity was being paid. Rev. Moon today must restore the original state of things before the Fall and go beyond our era by completely uncovering the logical background of history. This requires weaving together everything that was torn apart and patching up everything that was pierced. For this reason, Adam, Eve, and the three archangels must be restored, centering on God. The providence then comes to Korea and bears fruit. Korea and Japan must do this. The failures of the peninsula and island, of the Italian peninsula and Britain, must be restored through indemnity. The peninsular civilization, centering on the Papal court in Rome, ruled the world. To indemnify this, the providence has been developing again centering on America. Since Jesus was killed in Asia, his murdered body must be recovered to help bring about the liberation of all nations, while the trumpet sound of the ideal of the heavenly kingdom on earth echoes throughout all of Asia. (207-270, 1990.11.11)

After that, the providence must go through the Korean peninsula. That is why the peninsula must be indemnified. As in the time of the Papal court in Rome, we are entering the age of the peninsular civilization, centering on the Unification Church, which represents all the authority of the world. Something like the Vatican will appear to indemnify the history of the world cultures and all of religion. That is why democracy emerged, holding its ground against communism. This confrontation arose between the two, with communism on the satanic side and democracy on the heavenly side. (225-30, 1992.1.1)

If the Korean peninsula symbolizes the male sexual organ, then Japan symbolizes the female sexual organ. These two must become one. The time of a unified world comes about when these two are united. That is why Korea is called the Adam nation and Japan is the Eve nation. (251-147, 1993.10.17)

1.2. The role of the peninsular civilization from the Principle perspective

History as a whole is really interesting. When you consider the birthplace of a culture, you will see that seaports and peninsulas, where the land meets the ocean, became the cradles of civilization. By the same token, when you consider the birthplace of ancient cultures, like the Greek and Italian civilizations, you will see they were in proximity to a large sea, peninsula, or river. It is a historical fact that civilizations developed from such places. Why is this so? It is because such places are merging points. We can generally understand that all things are created through the harmony of coming together. (95-23, 1977.9.11)

When we observe the birthplace of civilizations from a geographical point of view, we see that they developed based on the conditions of climate, during the course of world history. Then what kind of place is most ideal? We can conclude that the ideal location is one that has four seasons and connects the sea to the land. In terms of climate, it should be a region with four seasons. It should be a peninsula, as well as a region where the four seasons are distinct. What is a peninsular region? The land symbolizes heaven, and the water symbolizes the sea. The peninsula connects these two. That is the reality of the world. That is how it works with all the principles of heaven and earth. In that sense, the Italian peninsula, as a peninsular region, contributed to world culture. This was the first great staging-post for past civilizations. You should be aware that this peninsular civilization centered on Rome, a region with an integrated civilization, had emerged with the authority of the past ages in history. It had also passed through the Egyptian civilization and Greek civilization to become a comprehensive area. (107-300, 1980.6.8)

We know that the peninsular nations surrounded by sea are where the important civilizations in history blossomed. Many religious beliefs and ideologies emerged from peninsular nations and guided the spiritual realm of humanity. These include the Greek philosophy that began on the Balkan peninsula; the Christian culture that blossomed in the Italian peninsula; the Hindu culture and philosophy of India; the Islamic culture from the Arabian peninsula; the Buddhist culture that bore fruit in the peninsulas of southeast Asia; the art of navigation from the Iberian peninsula; and the Nordic culture from the Scandinavian peninsula. In this way, we can see that the peninsular nations exerted the greatest influence on the cultural history of the world. (279-208, 1996.8.20)

The earth consists of land and ocean. We see that the ocean has played a motherly role, beginning with the birth of the simplest forms of life. The ocean symbolizes femininity because it nurtures and embraces life, while land can be said to symbolize masculinity. For this reason, the island nations located in the ocean are countries that represent the woman, and the peninsular nations adjacent to the continental nations are countries that represent the man. The people of peninsular nations in particular have a toughness and intrepidness that come from a life of preparing against enemies, both from the continent and the sea. Furthermore, owing to their pioneering, adventurous and progressive disposition, the people of peninsular nations brought forth a brilliant culture and disseminated it to the world. (279-208, 1996.8.20)

The earth that we live on is divided into land and sea. Geographically speaking, peninsulas are situated between these two, in a midway position connecting the continents with the sea. Since early times, peninsulas have

always been significant in the formation of civilizations. Greece and Rome, where ancient civilizations flourished, were also located on peninsulas. The civilizations of Spain and Portugal developed on the Iberian Peninsula. However, today these civilizations must expand to the world and bring forth a new civilization in the east and west. The Korean peninsula in Asia is the place for this civilization to emerge. (115-171, 1981.11.10)

Britain is the Eve nation, America is the Abel nation, and France is the archangel nation. The mother should embrace the son, searching for these nations. Since what was lost has been found in this way, following this pattern, the father should be recovered. We are searching for the Adam nation because the Adam nation is the nation of the coming Lord, and that is the Korean peninsula.

Why the Korean peninsula? It is like the Italian peninsula. That which was lost centering on the Vatican must be restored through indemnity. That which was lost in the west centering on the Italian peninsula must be found in the east. For this reason, the Korean peninsula becomes a global concern. The Korean peninsula is the borderline between death and life. The North and South were divided between communism and democracy, with Kim Il-sung in the north and Sun Myung Moon in the south. This is the reality. In the north, don't they call Kim Il-sung, "Father"? Don't people in the south call me "Father" or "the True Parent"? Who will liberate this situation? The president cannot solve the problem. Thus, it rests in my hands. (201-52, 1990.2.28)

Situated on the Mediterranean Sea, Rome was a powerful state that enjoyed a one thousand-year history. It is interesting that Rome has also remained to this day without perishing. The Mediterranean Sea and Rome are the like the union between a woman and a man, the union between convex and concave. The Korean peninsula is surrounded by Japan in that kind of position, centering on the Pacific civilization on a global level. It is exactly the same. That location is not Indonesia or Singapore. In Asia, there is only Korea. For this reason, the three nations in northeast Asia are the issue. If you take these three nations, you win Asia. (259-249, 1994.4.10)

In what kind of position is the Korean peninsula? It occupies the same position as Rome. It is in the same position as the Roman Vatican. Then what kind of nation is Korea? It is destined to become a nation that can harmonize all religions and humankind throughout the ages, in accordance to God's will, and also bear the responsibility of building a unified world and unified Kingdom of Heaven. Why? Because the time for the final destination of culture is coming, a culture that can represent the Papal realm that influenced the world centering on the Roman Vatican and Italian peninsula.

When North and South Korea are unified based on a uniform cultural background, they can stand in a position

to influence all the religions and peoples of the world. Only then can a harmonious religious sphere manifest itself, conforming to the will of God, who chose Israel. At that point, a harmonious people and nation will be established conforming to God's will. (168-312, 1987.10.1)

Rome had carried on its traditions as a single independent state. In like manner, the Korean peninsula is in the same position in Asia as that of ancient Rome. Although Korea is caught between powerful nations, it has not perished but survived to this day. Yet, for the first time in history, you see the division into North and South Korea. Of course, there was a time when Three Kingdoms existed, but, due to the global trend and involvement of world nations, Korea was divided into north and south for the first time. Why do North and South Korea fight against each other? Mind and body were separated on a peninsula, centering on Jesus. Therefore, in order to restore through indemnity the separation of the mind and body, they must be united once again on a peninsula. That is why, from a geopolitical point of view, we can see that the Lord must appear in Korea. (195-197, 1989.11.15)

Where should Japan return to now? She should go back to a place similar to the Roman peninsula. Then she must connect to the continent. The focal point enabling this connection is the Korean peninsula. It is not the Indochina or Malay peninsulas or even Singapore. There is only one Far East region, and that can only be the Korean peninsula. (204-161, 1990.7.8)

Korea is the Adam nation and Japan is the Eve nation. Why is Japan the Eve nation? Japan is an island nation. An island always longs for the land. Doesn't the ocean symbolize a woman? Island nations symbolize the woman. Such a relationship is formed centering on the Korean peninsula and Japan. Also, there are nations in the positions of the three archangels. The Asian archangel is China, the western-Christian archangel on the heavenly side is America, and the evil archangel is the Soviet Union. These are the three archangels. (207-270, 1990.11.11)

The age of the Pacific civilization will unfold based on the Korean peninsula. Japan is exactly like a woman's womb. These two must become one. That is why Japan must restore through indemnity all the mistakes of Christianity and Britain. The failures of the Roman Vatican must be overcome, with the Korean peninsula at the center. The Roman Vatican ideal, the Christian ideal, and the ideal royal palace for the returning Lord should be established. Since Jesus' body was lost in Asia, the Christian cultural sphere must be combined, both spiritually and physically in Asia, to create a unified cultural sphere. (226-134, 1992.2.2)

If the Korean peninsula is the Adam nation, then Japan is the Eve nation. Why is Korea the Adam nation? Geographically, the Korean peninsula looks like the male sexual organ. The same can

be said for Rome. The Mediterranean Sea is like the sexual parts of a woman and Italy is like the male sexual organ. That is why these two must become one. Culture can never leave this area. When a single culture takes root, it cannot depart because it stands in the same position as of having stood on the foundation of love. When you consider everything from a geopolitical point of view, the Mediterranean Sea looks very similar to the union of a man and a woman. (235-80, 1992.8.29)

Global civilization develops as it makes a circuit around the globe. In other words, civilization moved from the continental civilization of Egypt to the peninsular civilization of Rome and Greece, then to the island civilization of Britain and reached the continental civilization of America. The continental civilization is now moving west, crossing the Pacific Ocean, passing through the island civilization of Japan, and ultimately culminating in the civilization of the Korean peninsula to connect with Asia. The culture consolidated here is of a high degree and will create a new world. (115-171, 1981.11.10)

The flow of history will not stop there on the North American continent. I am fully aware of God's plans to have this civilization cross the Pacific Ocean and blossom as a new island civilization in Japan, an island nation comparable to Britain. This civilization will then become established here on the Korean peninsula, which corresponds to the Italian peninsula. It will be a comprehensive civilization, comparable to that of the Roman civilization in the past, capable of creating a single world and forming a new unified civilization sphere adjacent to the Asian continent. (78-254, 1975.6.7)

In the Pacific, an invasion of the Korean peninsula would be a matter of great concern. That is why the Japanese archipelago is protecting the peninsula in this way. In other words, the woman is like the flesh, and the man is like the bone. The flesh and bone make one body. If they are two, they will be separate entities. To achieve something with love as the center, both are needed. No matter how many Adams there are, without an Eve it cannot work. In the same way, these two should cooperate as a global couple and bear the fruit of cosmic love. (183-164, 1988.10.31)

The reason Japan is blessed is because she is the Eve nation. When Eve fell, everything was lost. It all must be restored, beginning with material things. Japan has been given the material blessing of the world, so where should it go after that? It should go to the Chinese mainland, passing through the Korean peninsula. It should go to the vast Chinese mainland. Originally, when Jesus appeared, China and India were both cultural and religious nations. The cultural spheres centering on Hinduism and Buddhism had the responsibility to absorb the Roman Empire by forming a trinity when Jesus came. If the Jewish nation and Arab realm in the Middle

East had become one, they would have naturally connected to India. In terms of race, the people of India belong to the European line. Asia would have connected with India and then India could have connected with China through Burma. If these spheres had combined with China's religious civilization and assimilated Rome on a global domain, then a unified Kingdom of Heaven could have been created on earth. (135-317, 1985.12.15)

Japan is an island rising from the ocean, while Korea is connected to the continent. The larger continent becomes the primary hometown of God's desire. The island can be seen as a secondary hometown. The island always longs for the mainland. You should be aware of these things and know how to establish a bond with the larger hometown not only here in Korea, but also in China, the Soviet Union and the entire continent. By doing so, we should make the world so that God can stay on this earth, in our hometown, and say, "This is indeed the ideal place to live with all people of the world." Those who are determined to live such a life can live in the realm of liberation once they go to the spirit world. National boundaries will disappear. (209-19, 1990.11.24)

Until now, modern civilization has endorsed Rome's authority by representing 1,200 years of history centering on Rome. In the same way, an eternal cultural sphere will be formed through the new millennium world, centering on the Korean peninsula in Asia. That must be substantially indemnified. That is the Korean peninsula. (168-67, 1987.9.1)

Section 2. The Providential Mission of the Korean Peninsula

2.1. The Korean peninsula is an encapsulation of the world

On the Korean peninsula, the Republic of Korea is destined to battle and triumph over communism. When it does, the Republic of Korea will play an active role in the world. However, if it is defeated by communism, the Republic of Korea will disappear without a trace. The Vietnam War is a prime example of the tragic fate that awaits you after defeat. North Korea represents evil, while the Republic of Korea represents good. The devil controls North Korea, while God sides with the Republic of Korea. In this manner, the Korean peninsula is becoming a region in which good and evil are in the sharpest confrontation in the world. All the evil in the world will perish when good overruns and defeats evil in this area. Throughout providential history, God has been eagerly waiting for the Korean people and the free people of the world to come together and achieve a complete victory. (129-331, 1983.12.14)

As a cultural race with a lengthy history spanning five thousand years, the Korean people have from early times led a rich spiritual life, immersed in a tradition of revering Heaven. Our ancestors accepted Buddhism and Confucianism and brought forth a radiant culture.

Although the history of the spread of Christianity has been short, Korea has become an ardent Christian nation representing the world, both in fact and in name. Furthermore, many major religions have melted into the spiritual culture of our people. Having many different religions co-exist is a unique aspect of our culture that has exerted a good influence on the culture and created harmony. Considering the original nature of the Korean people with their inherently strong tradition of revering Heaven, I do not think atheistic communism will take root in the Korean peninsula. If there is a living God, I am convinced that He would show the world the example of defeating communism through the Korean people. (130-13, 1983.12.18)

The tribulations of the Korean people are providential and have significance far beyond the nation. God is eagerly waiting for this race to overcome these tribulations. The strands of world history can be said to combine on the Korean peninsula. It is the place where east and west and north and south meet, and where the confrontation between spirit and material, spiritualism and materialism, becomes dense and confused. The maelstrom on this peninsula is similar to the convulsions of a woman in labor, who is carrying a new age in her womb.

The difficulties the Korean people and nation now confront cannot be resolved apart from God's will and providence. I believe they can be resolved in relation to the world, rather than by Korea on its own. The Korean people should awaken to God's will and overcome hardships by following the one who was sent by God, with the purpose of guiding the spiritual spheres of the world. (135-238, 1985.12.11)

Accordingly, at this time in history, the powerful surrounding nations that have an interest in the Korean peninsula have been gathered together by the Unification Church. That is the case with the Soviet Union, the United States, Japan, and China. They all have gathered and in the future this group of nations can be utilized. A standard bearer of Christian civilization who can connect the world to God's will should have appeared in this place and initiated a movement to unite and bring Christianity together. It was my intention to win over world Christianity within seven years. (135-317, 1985.12.15)

2.2. A unified cultural sphere centering on the Korean peninsula

Just as all the European civilizations became one centering on Rome, today Korea is in a similar position; thus Rome will be reenacted on the Korean peninsula. That is why, without connecting Korea, Japan, and the United States, this global issue cannot be resolved. That is where we currently stand. (166-294, 1987.6.14)

You should all love Korea. God's purpose in raising Korea should be fulfilled and Korea should become our homeland. In the future, the entire Korean peninsula should become a holy ground.

Shouldn't we recover the Liaotung peninsula in Manchuria that used to be Korean territory? The people of Israel sold Jesus and then recovered their nation. Then do you believe that I, who live with the title of returning Lord, would not be able to recover our native land? Even if the Soviet Union were to obstruct my way, I would push right through it. I think we should enter negotiations to recover parts of our native land which belonged to us during the former Sung dynasty and which was taken away by the Soviet Union. (168-49, 1987.8.30)

North Korea lies thirty miles north of this very place. Democracy and classical liberalism are in confrontation with North Korean Kim Il-sung's communist regime. It is the most closed society in the world. In this divided territory, one side affirms God, while the other side takes the exact opposite stance and denies God's existence. There is no other place than the Korean peninsula that manifests more clearly and distinctly the differences of these two worlds, which are at opposite poles. The Korean peninsula is an encapsulation of the entire world, where there is conflict between freedom and dictatorship, good and evil, and democracy and communism. (168-234, 1987.9.21)

When you observe the nations surrounding Korea today and consider the situation of the world, you will see that it would be unfavorable for the powerful nations if war were to break out on the Korean peninsula. In particular, Communist China needs to revive itself in order to stimulate the development of its science and technology, and to join the ranks of the developed nations. However, if North Korea were to invade the South, it would create considerable problems for China.

Communist China is thinking of associating with Korea from now. I am fully aware of this. Why not Japan? Because Japan invaded China earlier this century, the Chinese believe Japan will invade their economy. Considering this situation in which Communist China is trying to connect with Korea, an invasion of the South by North Korea is not something China would condone. What about Japan? Likewise, the Japanese do not want this. They want to have exchanges with Korea too. (170-212, 1987.11.15)

The Chinese population is about 1.2 billion. There are 240 million people in the United States, and 270 million in the Soviet Union. There are many developed and prosperous nations leading the world. Yet compared to them, how wretched has Korea been until now. Korea was a weak and miserable nation, even beyond being wretched. However, during its five-thousand-year history, Korea owned large parts of the vast lands of present-day China.

The Korean people do not like strife. They are a peace-loving people. Isn't there a historical record of the Balhae race? So far, hasn't this been an issue in academic circles? They were called the Dongi people and were said to have

flowed into the Korean peninsula. They were people who, weary of the life on the barren plains of mainland China, where numerous tribes were in confrontation with one another, sought refuge on the Korean peninsula by crossing the Tumen River and Yalu River. (172-279, 1988.1.24)

On behalf of the virtuous people of the past, you are assisting the reunification of North and South Korea to organize the tribe, people and nation, centering on the ideal family foundation that you have longed for. Thus, you should be aware of the amazing fact that on the day the flower of liberation blooms, a proud time in history will come upon the Korean peninsula! It will be a time when the flag of unification can be raised higher than the summit of the Himalayas in all nations. If you are not aware of this, the achievements I accumulated will come to curse and judge you. What will pass judgment on you? The bitter resentment contained in the tears of blood that emerged beyond the valley of death is intertwined like a crystal with history's achievements here. This is what will pass judgment on you. (173-115, 1988.2.7)

From a geopolitical point of view, Japan is an island nation. In the end, island nations cannot live in isolation. That is why Japan needs to establish ties with the continent. Currently, Japan is keeping ties with the American continent across the Pacific Ocean. These two nations were enemies forty years ago during the Second World War. The uniqueness of these people is that they have fought each other as enemies. But where will Japan go? Should she cross the Pacific Ocean to be carried on America's back or should she connect with the continent? This is the question.

The shortest route is to go through the Korean peninsula. Japan should not connect through Siberia or directly with Communist China. Japan cannot enter Communist China and absorb the chaos there. It cannot digest the 1.2 billion people of Communist China. Japan is also unable to digest the Soviet Union, which is the leading nation in the vast communist world. From this point of view, Japan is in a situation where it has no other way than to connect with Korea centering on the United States. (177-14, 1988.5.15)

As you all are aware, the Russo-Japanese War began due to the Korean peninsula. The same is true for the Sino-Japanese War. If you look into the origin of the great Asian War in modern times, you will see that it began from the incident that occurred at the Marco Polo Bridge. The cause of upheaval in Asia during modern times can be found entirely in Korea, which was the focal point of events. China also needed Korea. Korea is situated in a very interesting place, coveted by both Japan and the Soviet Union. Japan has no way to spread its political domain to the world without first connecting with the continent.

Considering this, if North Korea, backed by the Soviet Union, were to insist on joint elections between the

North and the South, and if South Korea also responded by calling for the abolishment of the thirty-eighth parallel, the Soviet Union would be satisfied indeed! What does the Soviet Union need? It needs the Korean peninsula as a stronghold on the Pacific. If the Soviet Union can occupy the Korean peninsula, then it can have Japan by the neck and will also be able to have China at gunpoint. (178-12, 1988.5.27)

Now we have entered the stage where I can recover the nation. That is why the ruling party is not the owner and neither is the opposition party. Surrounded by four powerful nations, the Korean peninsula is being marginalized by these four masters. The center of that nation is the Unification Church. Wasn't I the first to call for the reunification of North and South Korea? We are calling for the reunification of North and South Korea. We are calling for the creation of a unified government between North and South Korea. Considering this, one needs the ability to absorb these four powerful nations if one is to bring about the reunification of North and South Korea. So far, I have been doing such work in America and Japan, as well as Communist China and the Soviet Union. We are now entering the age where they can become one by my lifting the weight that had been fastened to the ground. (178-231, 1988.6.4)

When we speak of the pulse of energy in the Korean peninsula, then this pulse is connected with Korea's fate and destiny. It is connected with heavenly fortune and even national destiny. What is national destiny? I consider it the fate of the nation, the direction the nation is taking. The direction Korea takes for its survival will enable the Republic of Korea to prosper when its pulse throbs with vigor and is well connected. The Republic of Korea should create one world by uniting with the heavenly fortune and pulse of the world and by drawing the support of fortune. (178-265, 1988.6.8)

Communism must collapse. The democratic world should also collapse. The democratic world is based on humanism, whereas the communist world is based on materialism. Both have driven God away. The Vatican in Rome tried to bring about the unification of the world, centering on theism, and establish an ideal kingship. Due to its mistakes, however, the providence has come back here and they must be overcome through indemnity.

Indemnity had to be paid in Britain, centering on the continent, and the mistakes of the Vatican in Rome on the Italian peninsula must be brought to Asia and restored there. Consequently, a peninsula in Asia, like that of Italy, should be restored. That is the Korean peninsula. (188-315, 1989.3.1)

Since the Papal Court on the Italian peninsula could not bring a unified world, then today unification must come through a peninsula. Satan knew the Korean peninsula was to become

the place that would bring unification. That is why, in order to indemnify four thousand years, Japan entered an age where it ruled for forty years. You must understand that the country that was under this rule for forty years is the ideal nation to which the returning Lord, in the position of Adam, could appear. The logical basis for the returning Lord to come to the Korean peninsula can be understood by observing the trend of the development of history and considering the principles of restoration through indemnity. Which country should Britain, America, and France seek through their combined efforts? They should seek the Adam nation. They should seek the father nation. They must seek the father. They must seek the father nation. They must seek the Adam nation. (189-93, 1989.3.19)

This is not my individual thought. It is the view of the Divine Principle. The unification of the Korean peninsula will automatically come about. Korea should embrace Eve and they will become one. Only then will the archangels completely dedicate themselves to Adam and Eve. This is the viewpoint of the Principle. (189-104, 1989.3.19)

The Pacific civilization is the prepared culture to create the sphere of influence for the father-centered ideology. This is where the unified cultural sphere arises to bring an end to a single consolidated culture. Consequently, the unification of languages, cultures, and nations will begin centering on the parent culture. Such a time has arrived. This will take place in succession from the Korean peninsula. (193-225, 1989.10.4)

Korea is in a delicate location in terms of geopolitics. Since its distant past, Korea has paid historical sacrifice because it was an important location for powerful nations to expand their influence. Our homeland experienced the whole range of hardships during the polarized age between East and West. Just because we have entered a pluralistic age of harmony does not mean our national interests are ensured or that our national problems are resolved. The four powerful nations surrounding Korea, in other words, the United States, Japan, Soviet Union and China, are intertwined with each other, although each has its own important interests and concerns for the Korean peninsula. From God's providential viewpoint, I discern Korea's situation as the encapsulation of the world and history. For this reason, all the historical situations and present-day global problems are connected, directly or indirectly, with the Korean peninsula. For that reason, Korea is an encapsulation of the problems of the world. Consequently, the solution to global problems has an inseparable relationship with the solution to Korea's problems. (193-317, 1989.10.12)

If the mother is at the western end, the father is not to appear from the west. If the woman is at the western end, then the man must be at the eastern end. The phrase "the Far East" is significant

in this light. The Korean peninsula is where man and woman are connected. If the land symbolizes man, the ocean symbolizes woman.

For this reason, island people always long for the land. When they go ashore in search of land, they always arrive at the peninsula. That is why, though a thousand years of history have passed, the Italian peninsula continues to exercise authority as the center of the global Christian cultural sphere, based on its traditional relationships. In the same way, at the other end, the peninsula is taking a position of prominence in the Far East. (196-162, 1990.1.1)

Where should Japan return to now? She should return to a place similar to the Roman peninsula. By doing so, she should connect with the continent. The focal point enabling her to do so is the Korean peninsula. It is not the Indochina or Malay peninsulas or even Singapore. There is only one single Far East region, and that can only be the Korean peninsula.

The history of this peninsula should be similar to that of the Israel nation. That is because Christianity is an extension of Judaism. As a single ethnic group with a long history, Korea should go through hardships and shed much blood. They should be a righteous people. How much blood has been shed throughout the ages because of treacherous people? This is how it was for five or six hundred years during the Chosun dynasty. The number six must be indemnified. Since it was such an age, the blood of many good people had to be shed during that time. (204-161, 1990.7.8)

For forty years, I have walked the path of the Unification Church's miserable destiny, but I have not perished. Why? It is because I knew this is the kind of standard of the family that I desired, the way a nation of my desire should be, the way the world of my desire should be, and the way the God whom I desire should be. I knew the things I desired were also what God desired.

Therefore, if you invest, invest and keep investing, what you have invested will move in a circle and will surely settle down, centering on a certain axis, where a place of settlement for world history can begin. If possible, my wish is for that settlement to be realized centering on the thirty-eighth parallel on the Korean peninsula. Furthermore, I am thinking of settling this based on my hometown and so I am now marching towards the homeland. (208-226, 1990.11.18)

I have struggled on this battlefield that emerged at the intersection between North and South Korea, while longing for the day of Korea's independence. In order for the Korean peninsula to be born as a new favorite child, this nation must face a tragic fate of division in a position where it must go through the hardships of childbirth where North and South Korea intersect, and where the nation becomes an advance base representing the democratic world and communist world.

Who should shoulder the responsibil-

ity for this? It must be shouldered by the Korean people. The Korean people are to bear this responsibility, but it should not be a group who is ignorant of the path that Korea should take in the future. Otherwise, this tragedy could have been overcome through Korea's traditional history. There were many thoughtful people and patriots who tried to resolve this tragic situation. But the fact that they were unable to do so means that the miserable situation on the Korean peninsula was not something that human effort alone could resolve. Since I knew this, as someone who was aware of the providential history of the Korean peninsula guided by heavenly will, I had no choice but to prepare to go straight on a pioneering road. (211-135, 1990.12.30)

South Korea and Japan should work together in taking the lead for the reunification of North and South Korea by influencing North Korea. Otherwise, the Korean peninsula and Japan will not be able to unite. (212-140, 1991.1.2)

2.3. The reunification of the Korean peninsula is the model for world unification

Unification must be achieved, centering on South Korea. Then centering on the Korean peninsula, we should unify Japan, the Eve nation, and also unify China while uniting the Soviet Union with the United States. I have already laid all the foundations to achieve that goal. I have done it all. I have come to this nation and have done what was necessary in laying all the foundations in the external Cain-type world. In order to lay the foundation in the world of politics and economics, I have spent money and worked for those people until now. Soon you will see fewer and fewer people who oppose the Rev. Moon of the Unification Church. Some people in established churches oppose us. However, do they not now recognize me as the one person who will unite North and South Korea? (214-306, 1991.2.3)

The Korean peninsula is divided into the North and the South. This symbolizes the division of the world. I must now draw together the fortunes of unification and make a circuit and return. Who is the one that divided this country into North and South? It was Japan. That is why the funds for the reunification of North and South Korea must be supplied by Japan. To do so, we need to educate and mobilize all the people of Japan. I am the only person who can accomplish this. That is what I am doing. Where should the funds for reunification of North and South Korea come from? Japan should supply it. (226-134, 1992.2.2)

In terms of restoration through indemnity, Japan has taken on what Britain failed to do and stands in the position of influencing Asia and the entire world with her economic sovereignty. If Japan fails here, it is the end of her. Since Japan did not welcome True Father, she lost the continent, peninsula, and island. In order to indemnify that failure, she should return to the

continent and indemnify this from the other way around. The continent in this case is America, the island is Japan, and the peninsula is Korea. That is why it is coming back to the continent. (227-67, 1992.2.10)

Adam's enemy is Eve and Eve's enemy is Adam. Abel's enemy is his mother and father, and Cain's enemy is his mother and father. These brothers, Abel and Cain, are mutual enemies. They are all enemies. The Korean peninsula is where these enemies fight amongst themselves to find their positions. The Korean peninsula is where the final history is brought to an end. In terms of the cultural history, it is the final point for a showdown between communism and democracy. Isn't that the case with the South and the North? Kim Il-sung in the North is in the position of the father who has returned representing the communist world. And Rev. Moon, the True Parent, is in the position of the father who has returned, representing the democratic world centering on Christianity. Two parents have emerged.

Until now, the Korean peninsula was in a position in Asia that could not be left alone by the United States, China, and Soviet Union. Japan is like Eve before marriage and has become a truly beautiful woman dressed in brilliant colors. That is why the Soviet Union, China, and the United States all want to snatch her away. It is exactly the same situation as when the angel fell. (228-231, 1992.4.3)

God loves the Korean peninsula. He does not just love South Korea. Since North Korea could not stand in such a position, now we must save North Korea. Just as Jacob saved Esau, just as Jacob offered all his possessions he had prepared for 21 years amidst hardships in order to inherit Esau's rights of the eldest son, I also have the responsibility to pioneer a path with the people of North Korea on the frontline, to feed and save them. In order to do so, the government, in the position of Cain, should become one with Rev. Moon, who is in the position of Abel. (228-235, 1992.4.3)

I was the one who saved Kim Il-sung from death. We are brothers, like twins. Aren't we the twins on the Korean peninsula? That is why we shouldn't be killing each other, but saving each other. Weren't Esau and Jacob brothers? After 21 years, Jacob returned and offered everything he had to his elder brother. Esau was not happy to hand over the blessed rights of the eldest son, but by handing over the blessings from the position of a brother, the Israel kingship was established. The Rev. Moon, who belongs to the realm of the third Israel, must unite the nations in Asia through the reunification of North and South Korea on the Korean peninsula. The North and the South are like Cain and Abel. Consequently, the body that Jesus lost in Asia should be brought and engrafted into him. (228-239, 1992.4.3)

You should understand that the Korean peninsula, which was divided into democracy and communism, is the

center of the world, and the reunification of North and South Korea is the key to world peace and unification. To this day, I have devoted my entire being and efforts for this task in all parts of the world. Last year, in November 1991, I visited North Korea and negotiated with Kim Il-sung for this purpose. Now the day is drawing near when all the world religions will unite. The day for the reunification of North and South Korea on the Korean peninsula is drawing near. (229-80, 1992.4.10)

The Korean peninsula has been divided into North and South for forty years. In the world today, the two locations with the highest risk of setting off a third world war are Israel in the Middle East and the Korean peninsula. They are in conflict because of their religious backgrounds. Kim Il-sung's *Juche* ideology is like a religion centered on Satan. It is a completely satanic religion, as well as dictatorship that cannot be described in words. Rev. Moon's Unification Church is the only religion that can unify the world. (229-125, 1992.4.11)

The world is now faced with the religious problem in Israel, in the Middle East, and the problem between North and South Korea on the Korean peninsula based on democracy and communism. That is why if a third world war were to break out due to a collision between these two camps with different religious and ideological backgrounds, humankind would face complete destruction. We are facing such danger. Who will take the lead in bringing a world of peace? (229-125, 1992.4.11)

When Adam and Eve unite, the unity between Cain and Abel can begin. When that happens, a new ideal beginning will take place in Asia, centering on Korea and Japan. The unity of Asia and the west, the unity of East and West, and the unity of North and South will be achieved. This is not about the North and the South on the Korean peninsula. It represents the cultural differences between the East and the West, and the poverty gap between the North and the South. That is why worldwide unity is not a problem. (230-292, 1992.5.8)

Forty years ago, if this nation had supported me, it would have become a palace of the right of the eldest son that could lead the world. It would have become the nation of the right of the eldest son. It would have become the established nation of the realm of the third Israel. Since this did not happen, it was divided into two. Just as Israel was divided and had conflict between the North and the South dynasties, the Korean peninsula was divided. Since this has come back to us again, we should make the conditions for unification favorable, centering on Rev. Moon. But this has not happened yet, so there is no unification at this time. (230-346, 1992.5.10)

The Korean peninsula was divided into north and south, not because our people wanted it, but because of the influence of the surrounding powerful

nations, including the United States, the Soviet Union, China, and Japan. Consequently, the reunification of North and South Korea does not come to us just because we sit there on the Korean peninsula and wish for unification. We have to transform the existing situation, where the United States, the Soviet Union, China, and Japan play a leading role in the international order as they keep our nation divided. In other words, we should develop the proactive influence of our people and of Korea so the neighboring superpowers can cooperate in the reunification of the Korean peninsula instead of obstructing it. (231-8, 1992.5.11)

2.4. Providential developments for the restoration of the Adam nation

2.4.1 The providence centered on Japan, the United States, and Germany

Eve, who had received the seed of death, should come forth embracing her two sons, Cain and Abel, centering on Adam in order to receive the seed of life. You must reap what you sow. As the Eve nation, Britain, an island nation during the Second World War, should have embraced France, the archangel, by giving birth to America, an Abel-type son. Britain should have embraced Cain and Abel. The equivalent of that is Japan, an island nation. As the Eve nation, Japan embraced Germany and Italy. It is the same situation.

Hitler of Germany believed in the destruction of Christianity. Hitler's ideology was to destroy everything that was spiritual and ideological, based on his belief of the superiority of the Aryan race. And Italy, which wavered back and forth, was in the position of the archangel. Germany and Italy stood in the position of two sons before the satanic and evil mother. The Second World War was a war to clear this away on the worldwide level. Since it was sown in this way, in autumn the husks should be cut away. The Second World War cut all that away and unified everything into a Christian cultural sphere under the realm of one owner. (207-269, 1990.11.11)

Before the Fall of Adam and Eve, there was God and the three archangels centering on Adam and Eve. In regards to Adam, Eve should have followed him, as well as the three archangels who were also to follow Adam. The ideal was to have Eve and the three archangels enter Heaven after becoming one with God, centering on Adam. That is why I, as the representative of Adam, am now influencing Japan, the Eve nation, the United States, China, and the Soviet Union. Thus, we have returned to the position of receiving the three archangels and the realm of Eve. (199-84, 1990.2.15)

Korea is the Adam nation and Japan is the Eve nation. Why is Japan the Eve nation? Japan is an island nation. An island always longs for the land. That is why the island nation symbolizes the woman. This is realized based on the Korean peninsula and Japan. There are

also nations in the position of the three archangels. The Asian archangel is China, the Christian archangel of the west on the heavenly side is America, and the Soviet Union is the evil archangel. These are the three archangels. (207-270, 1990.11.11)

Britain was the Eve nation. Adam's family was lost due to the failures of Eve and her two sons, Cain and Abel. Since Cain and Abel failed to unite, they fell. Britain, in the form of a global nation, was the fruition of the restoration of that incident. Britain is an island nation. The island nation always longs for the land. This symbolizes Eve, the mother. America is the country born from the Eve nation, centering on the Anglo-Saxon race. That is why it is Abel. France is the archangel. Although France was the enemy, having opposed Britain and America, in the last days there will be unification centering on the allied nations of Britain, America and France. (277-34, 1996.3.24)

Until now, my work in America is to restore the Adam and Eve nations, and then the Cain and Abel nations. Since Adam fell and planted an evil seed, it must be restored through indemnity on the global standard of the nation. Korea is the Adam nation, Japan the Eve nation, and America is in the position of Abel. The Abel nation has emerged in order to restore the rights of the eldest son and restore the sovereignty. Germany was the Cain-type nation on the satanic side, and Japan stood in the position of Eve. That is why Germany became the Cain-type nation on heaven's side.

These four nations should establish the tradition of a single nation on the global stage. That stage is the United States. The Japanese, Germans, Koreans, and Americans should become one, centering on Rev. Moon in America, which is leading the free world of the Christian cultural sphere. America is about to collapse. The Abel-type nation is about to collapse. Unless I restore these things, there will be no place for the Adam and Eve nations to stand upon. Therefore, even though I am in the position of the Adam nation, I am going to America in order to save it because it is about to collapse. I am taking the Koreans and Japanese with me to educate the Americans and to have them unite with the Germans. They are all enemy nations. All these nations are enemies. (141-224, 1986.2.22)

I established Korea as the Adam nation, and Japan as the Eve nation. After going to the United States, I am meeting them all. For twelve years until now, I have been engaged in a movement to unify Adam and Eve on the foundation of unity between Cain and Abel, and Catholicism and Protestantism. (143-132, 1986.3.17)

After the Eve nation and Adam nation fulfill everything, it will be the archangel nation's turn. There are three great archangels. China is the Asian archangel, the United States is the western archangel of the Christian cultural

sphere, and the Soviet Union is the archangel on the satanic side. When the three archangels receive the original rights of inheritance by uniting with God and the Adam and Eve nations, then the positions of God, Adam and Eve, and the three archangels in the Garden of Eden on the individual level before the Fall can finally be restored through indemnity on the world level. When True Parents are designated there, the devils' powers and influence will disappear in the places where the True Parents' name exists. Since that time has now come, I am proclaiming the True Parents to the world. History has been flowing in this way. These words are not my own, but come from God. (209-297, 1990.11.30)

From a providential point of view, the United States is a warehouse keeper, not the owner. It has everything: a warehouse of knowledge, armed forces, material and science and technology. She is not the owner, but the manager. That is why America should distribute all this for the sake of the world. But America is making a fuss about keeping it all for itself. Heaven controls this warehouse. This warehouse is being moved to Asia.

At this time, Japan has taken over all this. Isn't that so? Japan is the Eve nation. Therefore, Japan must become one with the archangel to recover what was lost. Eve is doing this for Adam. After doing this, where should it go? It should return to Adam. America will perish now if it abandons Korea. Carter lost the presidency because he did just that. Do you think that just happened by chance? I am doing all this because of that providential point of view. You may be disappointed that America is the archangel nation, but that is what Christianity is. It is relative. When the Lord returns, aren't his people those who center upon the Eve nation? That is what the Christian cultural sphere is. It is to create the realm of the bride. All the other nations are the archangel nations. (210-185, 1990.12.19)

2.4.2. The providence of restoration through indemnity at the time of the Second World War

Britain was the Eve nation and the United States was the son born from Eve. France was the enemy. These three were the Allied Nations. The Axis powers include the Eve nation of Japan, an island nation. It was the same with the satanic side. Centering on the island nation of Japan, Germany was the evil son on the satanic side. After the First World War, Germany saw that during the Great Asian War, Japan had quickly occupied North Vietnam, which was French territory. It also occupied Singapore in a short time. Seeing Japan easily defeat its own enemy, Germany thought that it could dominate the world if it became one with Japan. That is why it established a three-nation alliance with Japan and Italy. As it was the archangel, Italy went back and forth. (228-222, 1992.4.3)

Based on those nations that were determined to exterminate Christianity, nations had to be established as the

representative of Britain, which was the original Eve nation; as the representative of America, which was the original Abel nation; and as the representative of France, which was the original Cain nation. Since Satan had taken away those nations representing the Christian cultural sphere, God chose Japan as Eve, placing America in Adam's position. Since Satan had occupied Britain, which corresponds to the head that God favored, God was compelled to grasp Japan, which corresponded to the tail. After that, God grabbed America's tail and then Germany's tail. By doing so, God re-created the modes of the Eve nation, Cain nation, and Abel nation. This steep hill is being overcome by indemnifying four thousand years in forty years. Without doing so, the world would perish. (228-225, 1992.4.3)

Britain was the nation that represented the Eve nation, centering on Christianity. France represented Cain and America represented Abel. America is like a son born from Britain. Since this seed was sown throughout the world, a global nation will bear its fruits. Only when it bears fruit in that way can those who fought on the heavenly side be restored. Therefore, centering on Britain, the United States was the Abel nation, and France was the Cain nation. These three nations became one to form the allied nations. Satan's side was the opposite. Japan was the Eve nation on the satanic side. Isn't Amaterasu-oomikami a female deity? Centering on this, Germany was the Abel nation on the satanic side. The Nazis of Germany slaughtered over six million Jews during the war. They were also intent upon massacring all Christians and devastating the world. (228-282, 1992.7.5)

Japan was the Eve nation on the satanic side. Hitler, dictator of Germany, created the three-nation alliance of Italy, Japan, and Germany. Hitler's ultimate goal was in destroying France and Great Britain. Yet, Japan invaded and quickly overran Vietnam, which was French territory, and then conquered Singapore, which was British territory. Seeing this, Germany believed it could attain victory in Asia if it formed an alliance with Japan. If it could win by forming an alliance in this way, Germany believed it would be in the leading position. Since Japan was an ocean nation and not of the continent, Germany believed that even if Japan were to win, she would have to follow Germany, which was the leading power on the continent. (257-100, 1994.3.13)

Satan's side also organized a lineup similar to that of the allied nations. The three nations of Japan, Germany, and Italy formed the Axis powers. In this alliance, Japan was the Eve nation. In the Orient, the woman initiated war for the purpose of unifying the entire East. And what happened in the West? Germany symbolized the body. Germany tried to unite and occupy the entire West. When you consider all this, Japan initiated a war and Germany also waged war. Italy was like an appendage that followed them around. (235-49, 1992.8.28)

During the Second World War, the allied nations of Britain, America and France fought against the Axis powers of Japan, Germany and Italy. This was about reaping what was sown in the Garden of Eden. These were the mother, Cain and Abel. In God's providence, this was divided into two groups, into the internal and external. That is why these two sides have grown to become the internal and external Eve nation, the internal and external Cain nation, and the internal and external Abel nation. That became the right-wing and left-wing. (239-262, 1992.12.6)

To achieve His will, God does not choose and use something twice. If America were removed, however, the cultural spheres of the Unification Church and Christianity, and the Unification Church and Judaism would be separated. That is why I reluctantly chose America. The reason I have to go and fight in America is because I chose America, and in order to make up for America's failure, I brought along Japan, the Eve nation. Adam's sin that was sown bore fruit in the world. This must all be ruthlessly cast away. Originally there was God, Adam and Eve, and the three archangels. Considering this, Korea is the Adam nation, and Japan the Eve nation. That is why we have cross-cultural "exchange" marriages. Adam and Eve married on their own. As a consequence, the world of death was created. However, the second generation of the Korean people and Japanese people must come into a cross-cultural marriage. Let the government oppose us if it wishes. (197-269, 1990.1.19)

If America had been given up, the free world and Christian cultural sphere would have completely disappeared. I was the one who chose to have America stand in the position of Abel again. It was not God. Once you make a mistake, that is the end. However, since there was a record of the parents' mistakes being redeemed through Abel, I have chosen America to be in the Abel position and Japan to be the Eve nation in place of Britain. I have also snatched away Germany, the enemy nation that was on the satanic side and most loved by the wicked Satan, to replace France. (204-288, 1990.7.11)

Two types of people were assigned to be placed on the satanic side or the heavenly side. The Second World War arose from the confrontation with an Eve nation, an Adam nation, and an archangel nation on the satanic side. After the satanic side had surrendered, America came to represent the Christian cultural sphere, based on Protestantism. If America had united with the Unification Church of Korea and with Rev. Moon, it would not have become what it is today. Communism would not have emerged. That is why America will perish if it lets go of Korea. For this reason, I have raised Japan to become the Eve nation, and America, which opposed the Unification Church, to become the archangel nation. This did not come about because of America itself or because of

Japan herself. It came about because of me. (204-164, 1990.7.8)

For seven years after the independence of Korea, I endeavored to fulfill my responsibility of bringing together Christianity. That great man, who can stand proud on behalf of history, has now become a frail man of seventy and has returned by going through a forty-year course of indemnity. That is why, since the Adam nation and Eve nation united, America stands as the archangel on the heavenly side, while communist China stands as the archangel of Asia, and the Soviet Union stands as the archangel of the communist party. When these three archangels that resisted God's will are brought to natural submission, and when they get in line with Korea, then the age of the peace kingdom shall arrive. This will be the time when the lineage of the satanic world can be rooted out of our world and replaced with the lineage of the heavenly nation. (197-271, 1990.1.19)

The unity of China, America, and the Soviet Union centered on me, is like the unity between the three angels centering on Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eve. When this happens, God's providence will be completed. What has been sown in that environment will grow on a global level and should be cleared away and restored through indemnity. Therefore, Korea is the Adam nation, Japan is the Eve nation, and the surrounding countries are the three great archangel nations. That is exactly how it is.

The three great archangels are centered on God, Adam and Eve. These three great archangels correspond to the countries of China, America, and the Soviet Union. They will no longer oppose the heavenly side. They have all been connected together, centering on me. (207-327, 1990.11.11)

There were three archangels around God, Adam and Eve. In the same way, the Adam nation should be established, centering on God. Everything that was sown on the individual level must bear fruit on the national and global levels for this to be completed. That is why there is God, the Adam nation, the Eve nation and the three archangels on their side. What this means is that Korea and Japan are the Adam and Eve nations, respectively, and the three archangels consist of the archangel of Asia, the Christian archangel on the heavenly side, and the archangel on Satan's side on the world level. These three archangels come together to take away Eve. If Adam and Eve are ensnared again, it will be the death of the world. If that happens, it will surely be the end. (208-332, 1990.11.21)

With the full authority of the world, the coming Lord should connect all the foundations for governing heaven and earth, and create one world centering on a unified kingship. This was God's will, but due to the opposition of America, representing the Christian cultural sphere, towards Rev. Moon of the Unification Church, this was completely transferred into Satan's realm. In that situation, I have come forth with only

my bare hands. I was able to guide Japan, the defeated Eve nation on Satan's side, as well as America. (242-124, 1993.1.1)

2.4.3. The providences for the Adam, the Eve, and Archangel nations

From a providential viewpoint, the question is how to bring together the Adam nation, the Eve nation, and the archangel nation to become like a single nation? What this means is that, from now on, Koreans, Japanese, Americans, and Germans should all live under the same roof. You must prepare for that here if you are to go to the Kingdom of Heaven. Do you think the Germans, Americans, Koreans, and Japanese will be living separately in the Kingdom of Heaven? They belong to one nation. Yet, they are all divided in the spirit world. If they are to be bound together, it should be done on earth. They should all ascend together after being bound together on earth. That is the key point. (173-71, 1988.1.3)

If Jesus had not died, he would have had to embrace China and India as if they were his two sons. Those nations should have behaved in that way. Israel, the mother nation, should have united with Jesus, like Cain and Abel, centering on India and China from a position where they could receive the coming Lord Jesus, the bridegroom, as Adam so the Messiah could establish the sovereignty of the Adam nation. The people of Israel, however, did not accept the Messiah and thus God's providence went to the West, the opposite way. Since it moved to Rome, since it fell away to the peninsula, then it should return to an island nation. (188-309, 1989.3.1)

The responsibility of religion is to lay the historical foundation of receiving the mother. It should be on a worldwide scale. In that sense, I believe God could not help thinking about the providential point of return that would enable the world to become one, centering on the religious spheres. That period was the time of the Second World War. That is why God had to raise the Eve nation, the Cain and Abel nations, and the Adam nation. God's will was for these nations to attend the true father who comes as Adam and endeavor to connect him to the various world leaders in order to create a unified nation. History should be viewed from this perspective. (193-189, 1989.10.4)

The Unification Church is based on an unusual set of four civilizations. In other words, it encompasses the four cultures of the Adam nation, the Eve nation, the archangel nation, and the Cain and Abel nations, which are like enemies. All these nations have very different backgrounds and stand in confrontation with one another. Yet, from this difficult situation, I plan to use them as the basis of tradition and a departure base. Do you realize how frightening this is? You must understand how great a fact this is.

You may think it is difficult to make

this a starting point, but you should know that it is the base of tradition that we, the Unification Church, can be proud of more than anything else. (129-234, 1983.11.6)

The mistake of Adam and Eve and the archangel that was sown in the beginning should be indemnified on the national level as the fruit in the harvest season centering on the Adam nation, the Eve nation, and the archangel nation. It should come back after going around in a circle. If Britain, America, and France had become one centering on Rev. Moon, then Korea would have become the Adam nation. Korea, as the Adam nation centering on the sovereignty of the heavenly nation, the vertical nation, would have led the way, with Britain as the Eve nation, and America as the eldest son. As Abel, America would have taken leadership over the world and advanced the global dominion. America, which stood in the position of Abel, would have finally secured its leadership over the nations of the world. All the other nations would be in the position of Cain and those nations would have to follow America. That is why all the problems could be resolved if the Lord comes on the basis of the age of a Christian cultural sphere, which has been unified in time with the age for the globalization of the restoration of the realm of eldest son, and connects that to the foundation for the mother-child cooperation. (184-252, 1989.1.1)

Since coming to America, Rev. Moon has drawn the global trend of Western Civilization into the Asian current. Up to this point, Asia has been robbed, but now it can draw everything in. Japan is the first thing it would bring in. Japan was blessed as the Eve nation, but she should come searching for the Adam nation. Due to the Fall of Eve, the creation and all authority had been taken away by the satanic world. In the age of restitution, this global tide has now entered the age of a counter tide. Britain was once called "the empire on which the sun never sets." In the same way, today all the economic rights and authority are concentrated in Asia, centering on Japan. In this way, these things will go from Japan and pass through Korea to find their place on the continent. (184-274, 1989.1.1)

2.5. We should seek the homeland

2.5.1. The liberation of the homeland is the hope of all humankind

How would things have turned out if Adam and Eve, our original ancestors, had not fallen? In the first human family, Adam would have become the patriarch. At the same time, he would have been the clan chieftain. He would also have become the representative of his nation, that is, the king. Thus, the world would have been united under the ideology. All other worthless and good-for-nothing ideologies should be done away with. Such ideologies have appeared over the course of time, confusing the world. We

should take them out by the roots.

The only ideology we truly need to know is that centered on Adam. The only language, culture, traditions, way of living and system of government would be those that come from Adam. In fact, everything in this world should have been in accordance with the ideological system of Adam's nation. This ideology is Godism, because we need to become one with God, by way of His parental heart. (20-123, 1968.5.1)

What did God have planned for Adam and Eve, if they had not fallen? God would have married them in holy matrimony with His blessing and would have had them give birth to sons and daughters in whom God could take delight. Adam's Blessed Family would have been a source of great joy to God and would have naturally expanded into a tribe and then a nation. Once this nation expanded further, it would have formed a world based simultaneously on a God-centered and Adam-centered ideology.

The Adam-centered ideology would have been the guiding ideology of the world, as well as the sole view of the universe, cosmos, and even life itself. It would have been wonderful to have five races, all of different complexions, living together in such a heavenly world. After all, skin color is merely a reflection of one's environment, and so having numerous peoples with different skin colors is natural and a fine thing. Then how did these peoples come to have different languages? God separated our early human ancestors because of the Fall. (156-202, 1966.5.25)

There can be no national boundaries in a world created by God. There can be no racial discrimination between blacks and whites. There can be no reason for conflict because only goodness prevails in such a world. Nevertheless, we see that our world today is divided into nations separated by artificial borders.

Not only do we see racial discrimination, but even within the family we can also find discord and disunity between husband and wife and between parents and children. The people of goodness are struggling with those who are evil. Considering the current situation of the world, it can easily be discerned that the coming Lord must unite the world into one, making it a place with no racial discrimination and no barriers between nations. He must reunite all the broken families and establish a kingdom of peace in this world, where even now as we speak, goodness is in conflict with evil. (53-72, 1972.2.9)

What would the ideal Kingdom of Heaven be like? It would be the place where people all over the world would live like Unification Church members. This is the kingdom on earth. The kingdom on earth would be where every person adopted our way of living. What would that world be like? It would be a world where everyone would dwell together with God and where no one would claim that God did not exist or have doubts about God. It would be

a world where everyone would unite together under God as our Heavenly Father. There would be no temptations from Satan, because Satan would not be there. The world governed by God would be the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, where He would reside with us. (79-304, 1975.9.21)

There is no doubt that the Kingdom of God is a place governed according to the will of God. It is governed by the sovereignty held by His children of direct descent, centering on Him and following the commands issued by Him. In such a place, democracy or communism cannot exist. Once it is established, the kingdom would remain eternally. Taking all this into consideration, one cannot help but think that it is truly lamentable that we are not citizens of such a heavenly kingdom. You should lament that you are not a citizen of such a nation. In fact, we should all lament that we do not have such an unchanging sovereignty. (72-292, 1974.9.1)

Where would the realization of God's ideal kingdom, that is, the restoration of the homeland, first take place? It will begin with an individual who believes in loving his enemies. That is why as long as God remains in existence, Christianity, the first religion that came forth with the movement to eliminate national boundaries, transcends all the walls of environment and culture. Since Christianity embraces its enemies, by virtue of the power of love, it cannot help but become the most widespread religion in the world. When you sow beans, you reap beans. When you sow red beans, you will reap red beans. And when you sow seeds of red flowers, red flowers will bloom. Similarly, if Satan, who takes vengeance upon his enemies, sows seeds of the devil, trees of evil that take vengeance on their enemies will grow from that place. If, on the other hand, a person who loves his enemies sows the seeds of goodness, trees of goodness that will love their enemies will grow from there. Such is the law of nature. (107-18, 1980.2.21)

What kind of a place would the original nation be? It would not be a place where evil dwells. Instead, it would be an eternal and unified world, centering upon the overflowing, original love. People would be completely free from evil, and they would sing in happiness forever and ever. Has there ever been anyone who lived in such a place? Not even one person has dwelled there. Though many people pursued such a nation throughout the course of history, such a world has not yet been established on earth. There were many who could describe that world with words, but not one of them ever succeeded in actually establishing it. (18-102, 1967.5.28)

We need to go beyond the cultural limitations created by the numerous peoples and the five races of the world, and rebuild those cultures into one single cultural realm. In other words, we need to establish an ideal world governed by a domestic system, a social system, a national system, as well as other insti-

tutions that are all based on Godism. This process can also be referred to as the perfected Adam-centered ideology. It is not communism or democracy but Adam-centered ideology. This ideology is the course that leads us to Godism. An ideology is like a walking stick that aids us to pursue a certain purpose. The ideology itself is not what we are after. An ideology is a necessary process that we need to undergo to attain our purpose, and so ideologies undergo change.

Today, the United States is considered the principal nation of democracy. Yet a time will come when America will decay because of money, and her people will no longer care for democracy. The current situation in Korea also reflects this fact. Though democracy itself is a good system, at present many Koreans are engaged in scheming and slandering others because of money. They are even fighting against others to seize power. Can that be considered a democracy? What is currently taking place is a phenomenon resulting from misrule by the privileged class. (21-156, 1968.11.17)

We need to unite divided South and North Korea and eliminate the gap between the rich and poor that exists across the two lands. We have to unify the cultures of the East and West. We must do away with racial and cultural discrimination and become all-embracing people. Then by what means can we come into unity? The world has been deprived of the one absolute love. So, once we are firmly established on earth through that love, the cries of opposition against the Unification Church are bound to disappear. All the peoples of this world, regardless of gender and age, would be enveloped as one body in this great blanket of love, and all the spirits in the spirit world would desire to be wrapped up in this blanket as well! That is why the unification of heaven and earth is not just mere words, but something that will be accomplished! (195-122, 1989.11.5)

Once you truly realize that God definitely exists, you cannot help but follow His will. Then what is God's will? It is to create an ideal world, by transforming the people of this world into His beloved sons and daughters, this earth into His beloved domain, and bringing them all together as one sovereign nation. (56-192, 1972.5.14)

Every person, regardless of who he may be, needs to live in his own nation. This is the absolute condition that all human beings must fulfill. Everyone without exception needs to lead a purposeful life, full of hopes for such a nation and such a righteous goal. In their hearts they need to envision utopia and strive to live for their nation and ultimate goal by establishing laws of righteousness and complying with them.

Do you have a nation of God? Since you don't have one, you need to establish one, don't you? What would that nation be like? It would be an ideal nation, a unified nation. It would be a nation where anyone and everyone can enter.

No one is excluded from the responsibility of building such a nation. Families, tribes, nations and the world have to cooperate in its establishment. That is how individuals, families, tribes, people, nations and the whole world can become united. (18-213, 1967.6.8)

Generally speaking, globalism means to see the world as one nation and all humankind as compatriots. However, the globalism that the Unification Church is referring to transcends all barriers from the family level onwards. It is a globalism for all humanity in order to establish one world with one God as Parent and all humankind as brothers and sisters. How fascinating this globalism of ours is! (98-254, 1978.8.3)

2.5.2. Let us establish the cornerstone for a new homeland

We know that we have reached the point where it is futile to hope to establish a peaceful or unified world, in the true meaning of the term, through human power, wisdom, culture, or any other human qualities. Bearing this in mind, what is the central problem we are faced with in resolving the issue of world culture? Before anything else, we need to clarify the question of whether God exists or not.

On the day when all people are aware of the fact that God does indeed exist, they will subsequently come to understand clearly where His will is heading. Once this is the reality, the world in which they live will become the ideal world of oneness and peace. (56-131, 1972.5.14)

The Unification Church is different from other churches. It teaches us to love our brothers and sisters as we would love our mother and father, and to love our tribe, race, and nation as we would our brothers and sisters. We should be ready to leave our mother and father, if need be, to love our nation. Furthermore, we should be prepared to forsake our nation to love the world. Moreover, we should be willing to renounce the world in order to love God. This is the mainstream ideology of the Unification Church: to seek the path of love that sacrifices what is small and near to us for what is big and far away. (100-80, 1978.10.8)

Would you rather be nationalists or cosmopolitans? Religion is not just about cosmopolitanism. It follows a doctrine that strives not only for the good of humankind, but also for the good of God. Communism and democracy, on the other hand, strive for the good of human beings alone. So, which doctrine would be better, the one that aspires for the good of both human beings and God, or the one that aspires for the good of human beings alone? Which is better, the doctrine that is for both God and human beings, or the doctrine that is just for the servants, leaving out the master? Religion is good because it aspires for the good of God, as well. (41-44, 1971.2.12)

What thought system will remain to the end? The movement that teaches us

to love the world more than one's own nation and race and teaches us to love God above all else will be the ideology and way of thinking that remains to the last. Therefore, the issue at hand for us is how to follow the doctrine that will give the world an interracial movement that goes beyond the boundaries of nations and seeks that place where God can freely love humankind and have them practice interracial love. (53-24, 1972.2.4)

The ideology that will guide this world in the future will be the one that teaches us to save the world, even if it means sacrificing one's own nation. When a country follows such a teaching, a nation and people that center upon such a new movement will appear on earth. A new world of hope will be realized, leading to the establishment of a unified and ideal world. Those persons with limited national and historical views who fail to transcend traditional boundaries cannot inherit God's ideal world. (51-44, 1971.11.4)

The yellow race is like the first son, the black race the second son, and the white race the third son. Disagreements and fights between these races can cease and unity can be achieved through Unification Thought, which originated in Korea. In this way, an ideal homeland centered upon God can be established. From there, the world will be transformed into a world of peace, unity and victory.

Thus, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth would be built, and at the same time we would become united with God. We need God to come down to the earth. We need to attend Him as the subject figure of the Kingdom of Heaven, and thus establish one unified Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in spirit world. You need to understand that this is the mission to be fulfilled by Unificationists. On such a foundation, we would finally become one with the Parent and be able to live peacefully in the Kingdom of Heaven. (79-83, 1975.6.1)

What is the Unification Church? Where is it heading, with the right and left wings in its arms? It is guiding us to safely pass through this world of struggle and strife, and to enter a world of happiness, the world of utopia. This path is not a level one. It means that the Unification Church should be equipped with a logical system that can take responsibility for all the failures and wreckage caused by various ideological systems. At the same time, the Unification Church should also be able to take these ideologies into its arms and move them horizontally towards unity. It should strive for a transcendent form of existence, based on a spiritual awareness that can move them vertically as well, centering on religion.

The Unification Church should have the capacity to systematically analyze all ideologies from either the human perspective, such as humanism and materialism, or the theocentric perspective, past and present, and integrate them into one. At the same time, our Church members should embody the one theol-

ogy that incorporates spiritual reality and experience, and connects all religions transcending denomination from the vertical perspective. (162-102, 1987.3.30)

What are the characteristics of the nation that you long for? Such a heavenly nation is dissimilar in every way to the nations you currently live in. You will have to say goodbye to those nations one day. If you are attached to them, then you have to know that you are attached to sinfulness. You know deep in your hearts that you were born as the descendants of fallen human beings who were not related to the original goodness that would have allowed the will of that nation to be linked to the will of God. (37-217, 1970.12.27)

Without a nation, there can be no nationality. Without a nation, there can be no basis upon which you can be registered. We need to create a nation of God and be registered anew. We need to establish the Kingdom of God on earth and, as the citizens who love the kingdom and its people, live on earth together with our tribes and family members as the victorious sons and daughters who have inherited the true lineage of the Parents of goodness. We can enter the Kingdom of Heaven in spirit world only after doing so. This is the teaching of Divine Principle. (58-145, 1972.5.22)

Once we establish God's nation, we will be able to see the traditions we should hand down to our descendants for thousands of generations to come. We will see the efforts we have made, shedding blood and sweat, as well as God's monument that celebrates His victory and all traces of glory on the earth eternally. Without a nation, all our work will be in vain. The crucifix, culture and institutions of today's Christianity, which have all been handed down from the earliest days, should be thrown in the river or burnt to ashes if they cannot create a nation desired by God. Christians should understand they are being mocked and ridiculed by Satan. Therefore, you should realize that the real issue at hand is building the nation of God. (55-339, 1972.5.9)

You need to receive love from True Parents and God. However, you cannot freely receive God's love without God's nation. Originally, Adam was just one individual, but he would have been the beginning of a nation. When we have a nation that is better than the satanic nations of the fallen world, only then can we receive love from God. At present, we are receiving love from God by proxy. Until now, we have not been eligible to receive love directly from God. Though we can receive love from True Parents, we will have to establish a nation before we can receive love directly from God. Satan and his fallen nations are still in existence. So, we need to climb high above Satan's world. (90-116, 1976.10.21)

The homeland we need to reclaim on earth is not an existing nation with a certain history and traditions. It is completely different in essence from those

other nations. In order for us to be able to inherit such a nation that stands on a completely different level from others, we need to become citizens with a subject nature rooted in ideology. That subject ideology should be in accord with the ideology of the absolute Creator. The Absolute Being desires the creation of His own nation. Then centering on that nation's sovereignty, the citizens should be united into oneness. Therefore, the nation should take shape based on such citizenship. (49-93, 1971.10.9)

For a nation to be established there must be sovereignty, territory, and citizenry. The same is true of the Kingdom of God. Parents are in the place of sovereignty, true sons and daughters are in the place of the citizens, and the Kingdom is in the place of the territory. Of these, none can be left out. That is an ironclad rule. (35-279, 1970.10.25)

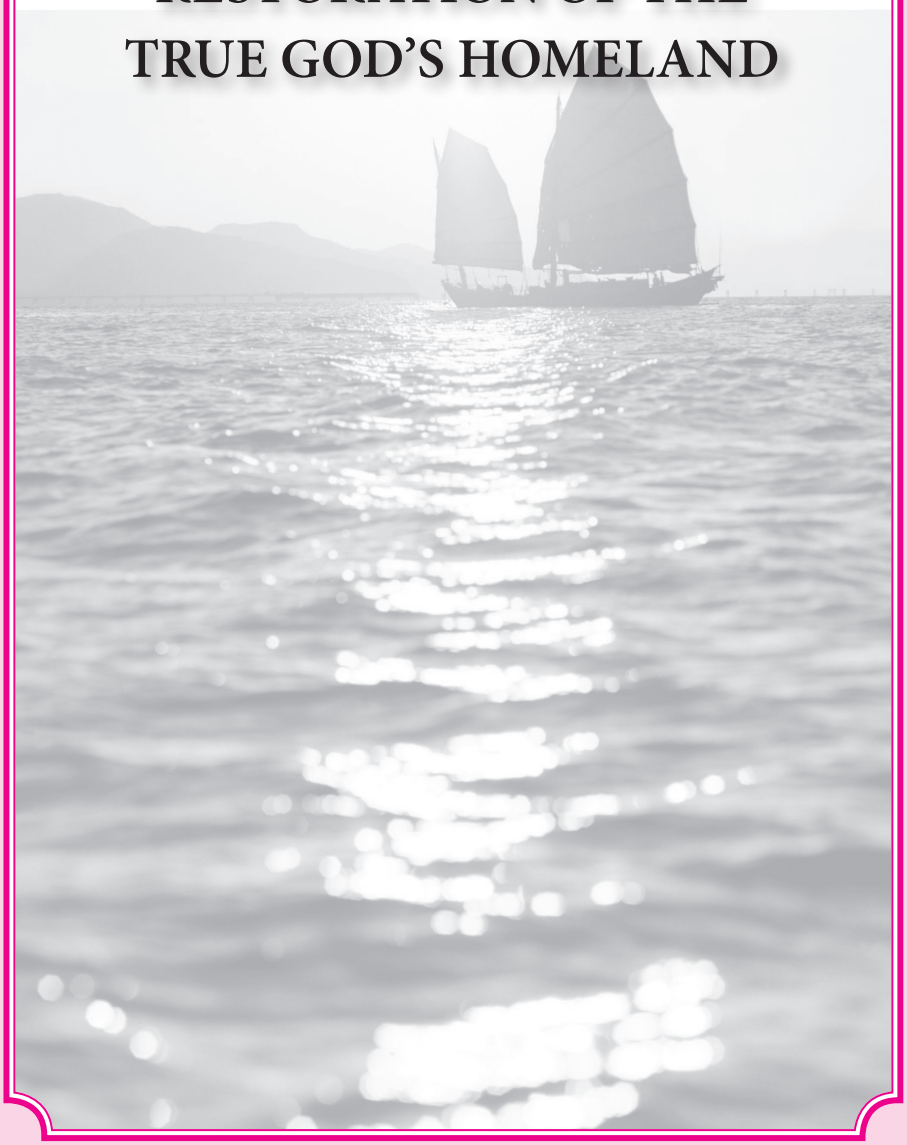
To establish a nation, there must be territory, citizens, and sovereignty. Then what is sovereignty? It means fundamentally forming a relationship with God. Therefore, the leaders who rule over the nation should, after the citizens have fallen fast asleep, form a connection with God and conduct the affairs of state. In this manner, the sovereign must be in oneness with his people. Once united with them, he must believe that everything placed before him is there for the sake of the nation, not for his own use. Then his nation will prosper. (30-88, 1970.3.17)

No matter how large a nation may be, it should bear resemblance to the structure of human beings. This is because God likes everything to take after His image. That is why the ideal nation should resemble humankind. It would resemble the ideal person of heaven and earth. (26-183, 1969.10.25)

You should live every day with the thought that you are traveling to and fro and taking part in this great work in the evil world of today as a messenger of God. You should think that you were given the mission to become a loyal subject seeking out God's nation, for the sake of the restoration of the homeland. If you don't accomplish this, you will not be recognized as the dignified citizen of the heavenly nation to come (50-254, 1971.11.7)

BOOK THIRTEEN

RESTORATION OF THE TRUE GOD'S HOMELAND



Contents

Chapter 1. The Restoration of the True God's Homeland

Section 1. The Homeland that the True God Desires 2005
Section 2. We Must Find Our Homeland 2008
Section 3. The Standard Bearers for the Restoration of Our Homeland 2011
Section 4. Soldiers for the Independence of Our Homeland 2013
Section 5. The Restoration of Our Homeland through True Love 2016
Section 6. Our Conviction and Attitude for the Restoration of Our Homeland 2019

Chapter 2. Home Church as the Internal Foundation of the Providence

Section 1. What Is Home Church? 2021
Section 2. The Beginning of Home Church Activities 2025
Section 3. The Development of Home Church Activities 2028
3.1. Conditions tribal messiahs should fulfill 2028
3.2. Visiting homes, volunteering, and education 2031
Section 4. Completing Home Church through the 360 Homes 2035
4.1. The numerical significance of 360 homes 2035
4.2. Home Church is the place where the providence is finally settled 2036

Chapter 3. Why We Must Do *Tong Ban Gyeokpa* (Local Breakthrough) Activities

Section 1. The Reason We Are Doing *Tong Ban Gyeokpa* Again 2039
Section 2. The Local Level Is the Last Fortress of Victory and Defeat 2043
Section 3. The *Tong-ban* Movement Is the Strategy to Unite North and South Korea 2047
Section 4. The *Tong-ban* Breakthrough Must be Centered on Families 2052
Section 5. Organizational Expansion of *Tong-ban* Activities 2057
5.1. Organizational expansion centering on people of social eminence 2057
5.2. Organizational expansion through local volunteer activities 2061
5.3. Organizational expansion through the strengthening of education 2062
5.4. The Providence centering on the Second Generation and the Professors' and Students' Federation for Unification. 2066
5.5. Tribal Messiah Activities and *Tong-ban* Breakthrough Activities 2069
Section 6. The Unification Movement and the Role of Women 2074

Chapter 4. Be Active as Tribal Messiahs

Section 1. Now is the Time for the Unification of North, South, East, and West 2079
Section 2. The Significance of the Tribal Messiah Proclamation 2085
Section 3. The Reason for Giving the Tribal Messiah Responsibility 2086
Section 4. Let Us Plant Our True Heart in the Original Homeland 2092
Section 5. Our Task for This Time Period 2094

5.1. Let us testify to True Parents 2094
5.2. Let us attend True Parents' picture in every family 2095
5.3. Let's do revival services for our tribes 2097
5.4. Organize hoondokhwae 2099

Chapter 5. Our Attitude towards Making a New Start

Section 1. Determination for a New Start 2102
Section 2. The Attitude to Inherit True Parents' Tradition 2103
Section 3. Let Us Plant True Love 2107
Section 4. Plant the Root of Love in Your Hometown 2110
Section 5. The Cooperation of the Spirit World and Our Conviction 2111
Section 6. Our Original Hometown and the Way to Enter the Kingdom of Heaven 2116
6.1. Hometown is a world of the original creation 2116
6.2. Registration in the Kingdom of Heaven 2118

Chapter 6. True Parents' Textbook for the Unification of Korea and the World

Section 1. World Unification and the Unification of North and South Korea through True Love 2124
Section 2. The Cosmos is Our Hometown and Homeland 2134
Section 3. Everybody Wants True Love 2141
Section 4. The Path for America and Humanity in the Last Days 2147

CHAPTER ONE

The Restoration of the True God's Homeland

Section 1. The Homeland that the True God Desires

Jesus came to establish the homeland of the True God. The prophets and patriots of history worked to build this same homeland. In order to establish heaven, one perfect man must come. This man must be recognized by heaven and earth, begin a family, have children, and then establish a tribe, a people and a nation. He must indemnify the relationship between Cain and Abel, engraft them to himself, and build the homeland of God's dominion in this world. The prophets and patriots of history desired this result. However, they were unable to build the longed for Kingdom of Heaven on earth to which individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations and the world could be connected. Therefore, we must abandon the path along which humankind has been heading and go in God's direction. (15-278, 1965.10.30)

What would have happened if the original human ancestors, Adam and Eve, had not fallen? In Adam's family, Adam would have become the leader of his tribe. At the same time, he also would have become the leader of his people. In addition, as the representative of the nation, Adam would have become king. Thus, the world would have united under the one philosophy based on Adam. All trivial and worthless philosophies and doctrines would have been cast aside. The myriad of doctrines that have brought great confusion to the world must be exposed at their roots and eliminated. Humanity's system of thought should have been based on Adam. Our language should also have been Adam's language, our culture should have been Adam's culture, our tradition should have been Adam's tradition, our lifestyle should have been Adam's lifestyle, and our administrative systems should have been Adam's administrative systems. Everything should have come under the system of thought of Adam's nation. The philosophy of the true Adam is Godism. Everyone must become one with God, centered on His heart. This is what we call Godism. (20-123, 1968.5.1)

The place where we long to live is the heavenly kingdom. Everyone wants to live in the heavenly kingdom. Are there boundaries in the heavenly kingdom? Do they use two languages in heaven? Are there differences between the races? The answer to these questions is no.

Then what is the heavenly kingdom like? All people were born in the bosom of God; thus, from God's point of view, we are God's sons and daughters, brothers and sisters in the family of God. From Heaven's perspective, we are one people, all citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. (66-281, 1973.5.16)

Our goal is to build a unified world and one nation under God – a nation with one sovereignty, one people, one land, and one culture that is connected to God's lineage through the True Parents. In that nation, everyone, who is determined to become God's heirs will establish a realm of heart and fulfill the biblical ideal to "love your enemy." (God's Will - 697)

The world God created cannot have national boundaries or problems between races. There would be no need for the struggle between good and evil. Yet in the world we live in today, there are borders dividing the nations and problems between people of different races. Barriers and divisions arise even within each family between husband and wife, between parents and children, and between siblings. There is fighting between good people and evil people. In light of the situation of the world today, the task of the coming Lord will be to create a world that transcends racial problems and creates one nation without borders. He will have to unite all the divided families and bring the kingdom of peace to this world where good and evil are fighting. (53-72, 1972.2.9)

Where is the original land, the original homeland of our ancestors? How is that homeland created? It is logical that the homeland be established on the standard of one specific nation. But if we ask the location of the homeland of humankind that God has been searching for, the answer is, the whole of planet Earth. The Earth is the homeland for which humanity has longed. Many of our ancestors in past generations have walked the path of sacrifice. Yet what was it they desired and for which they begged Heaven? They cried, "Please quickly bring the era of the homeland we desire!"

Through establishing a nation of God, we are to establish on earth the peaceful Kingdom of Heaven that places good above all else, that eliminates evil and judges the ringleader Satan, who, until now, has been the enemy of Heaven. Please understand that this has been the desire of our ancestors, who contributed enormously to the course of the providence, as well as the desire of God and Jesus. (155-321, 1965.11.1)

The homeland is neither America nor Korea. Wherever it is, there must be a country that encompasses a family, a tribe, and a people. For six thousand years of history God has been following countless nations, longing for and seeking one country that could be established as the heavenly nation on this earth. God has been searching to find Heaven's loyal subjects and virtuous men and women. We must reorganize families, peoples, and nations with God as their center. Let us not forget that we have been called to

bring about the day of liberation, the restoration of our homeland. The mission of religious people has been the creation of a homeland, but they often still maintain the selfish desire for personal salvation. (15-280, 1965.10.30)

Unificationists have set the standard on the level of an individual, a people and a nation. Now we have to mobilize all the people in every nation of the world. We must seek the day of freedom, equality and happiness, as well as the day of the restoration of our homeland. Inevitably we must go this way, though it is difficult. This is my perspective and the standard that God is seeking. It was this standard that Jesus was trying to establish up until the time of his death.

We will suffer as we move forward in the process of restoring our homeland. Unification Church members will stand in the forefront. The time will come when everyone will say it cannot be done without Unification Church members, but you must still work hard for three years. We have to establish the tradition, shedding blood, sweat, and tears until all people inherit everything from us. You have to understand clearly that there are still conditions of indemnity to be offered. (15-280, 1965.10.30)

God is a miserable God, a lonely God, and an unspeakably sad God. God's joy will begin when we become standard-bearers for the liberation of God. His joy will begin when we become soldiers on the front line who, even if we are bleeding and fall down from loss of blood, have the conviction that we will keep going until we collapse together. When the ranks of the brave soldiers who are fighting to restore our homeland and bring the world into one gradually begin to increase, God's joy will begin. (64-286, 1972.11.12)

Do you know where the providence has come to at the present time? The first goal is to have the basis on which we can bring about the restoration of the homeland in heaven's nation and liberate God's Kingdom on earth. This must be done even if you have to sacrifice time with your family and relatives. Even if you end up as a refugee, this must be accomplished. (300-309, 1999.4.11)

We have to set up a country under the dominion of God. The time has come for you, as the people with genuine authority who are dedicated to God and working with True Parents, to offer the financial foundation necessary for the restoration of our homeland on earth, the nation that will also bring world unity. I should not help you either as a group or as individuals with the money from my own wallet. We have to follow the will of Heaven. Korea must be responsible for Korea; Japan must be responsible for Japan, and America for America. Providentially, these three countries are one. They are the countries of the parents and the eldest son. (303-157, 1999.8.17)

We need to create an impetus for one unified language. You read the record of

everything True Parents have accomplished, but to read this in translation is a disgrace. It will become your shame in the spirit world. When you go to the spirit world, you might have to pay indemnity for thousands or tens of thousands of years. That is how great a problem this is. Even if the homeland has been restored, people who cannot go over this hill will have no path upon which they can return to their hometown. They will have no certificate of residence that enables them to dwell in their homeland as registered citizens. This is a serious problem. (303-157, 1999.8.17)

Section 2. We Must Find Our Homeland

We long for the nation of God, because it is a place of love. It is a place where, instead of temporary love, eternal love that transcends time can continually exist. It is also a place where you can elevate yourself and be recognized for 100 percent of your value. It is the place where you are eternally happy. This is why all people are yearning for the heavenly nation. (25-284, 1969.10.5)

If you do not restore a nation on this earth during your lifetime, then when you go to the spirit world you cannot have the value of a person who belongs to the heavenly nation. You should go to the spirit world only after bringing substantial results that come under the realm of God's dominion on earth. This is the original standard of creation. (40-131, 1971.1.30)

The goal of our faith is to become citizens of God's country. If you do not become citizens of God's country, then there will be no way for you as sons and daughters to freely receive the admiration and love of that nation's people or of all things of creation. A person without a country is always attacked. He stands in a miserable position. He may often feel hopeless after suffering an affront. That is why the question is, where can we find the country of God's desire? Which is the nation that can become God's foothold? That is the issue. (55-79, 1972.4.23)

The bloody sweat we shed for these people and this country is ultimately for the establishment of God's eternal kingdom. It is to create the blessed land that can be praised by our descendants in the thousands of years and generations to come. (14-193, 1964.10.3)

God's country is where His direct descendants receive Heaven's command and, in His place, govern under God's kingship. There would be neither communism nor democracy. Once established, that nation will remain forever. When we think of such a nation, we should feel mortified that we are unable to be a citizen of such a country. We should lament that we are unable to be such a person, living in such a nation. We must grieve over the fact that we do not have such an unchanging sovereignty. (72-292, 1974.9.1)

In order to establish sovereignties, nations and territories, the human race has established sovereign nations.

Please remember that in this process many people died, many people were sacrificed, many nations fell, and many sovereignties changed hands. Don't you think that all those on the side of Heaven who made such sacrifices, and all the sad people in the spirit world who have sacrificed their lives for that will, wanted to establish such a nation and world someday? (72-292, 1974.9.1)

God sent His beloved son and daughter to the earth to establish one, absolute nation, but until the present time He could not prepare the foundation to restore one nation. This has failed every time. Thus, God's work throughout history has been to send His people to earth to manage, advance, and accomplish this work. (30-10, 1970.3.14)

It is sad to be a citizen of a country with no sovereignty. Jesus was very concerned about this point. He told people not to worry about where their food, drink or clothes would come from; that these are the matters that the ungodly are always concerned about. He said, "Your Father in heaven knows that you need all these things. Instead, above everything else, be concerned with his Kingdom and with what He requires, and He will provide you with all these other things." Did Jesus say save your son first, or save the nation first? He said to save the nation that God is seeking. (34-337, 1970.9.20)

Jesus is waiting in paradise. Paradise is the waiting room to go to heaven. Jesus did not establish a national sovereignty in front of God that had the power to communicate directly between heaven and earth. Thus, he could not stand in front of God on that basis. Please understand that this is the reason Jesus could not stand in front of Heaven's throne. Moreover, you too cannot go to heaven alone. Heaven was originally designed as the place where Adam and Eve, had they not fallen, would have gone to live together, as a family, with their sons and daughters. If you do not go as a family, then you cannot go. (56-201, 1972.5.14)

Until now, why has it been so difficult for religious people to preserve their lives? It is because there was no family, society, or nation that would help religious people. They have been a people without a nation. If they had a nation, then even if they were opposed by a tribe, they would still be protected within the realm of the nation. Why did religious people have to walk the path of persecution and bloody sacrifice wherever they went? It is because they had no nation. If only there had been a nation with a sovereign leader that had stood up and shouted, "Hey you good-for-nothings! This is the right way!" Then the people would have responded, "Yes, sir!" However, there has been no such nation; that is why these problems have occurred. They have been a people without a nation. (56-159, 1972.5.14)

Without a nation, no matter how good or happy your family is, evil people can destroy it. That is why we need to

find a nation. Religious people have not understood this. We must find a nation of goodness. This is the purpose of religion. (57-260, 1972.6.4)

If you have no country, then you have no nationality. Without a nation, there is no basis upon which to register. We have to have a new registration after becoming one people. We need to establish heaven's nation on earth. Then, as victorious sons and daughters who are citizens of that country, who love that country and its people, and who have received the lineage of the Parents of goodness, we must live together and care for our families and clans. In this way we can enter heaven in the spirit world. This is the way of the Principle. (58-145, 1972.5.22)

Only with a nation can all our efforts, through which blood and sweat were shed, and our tradition, be bequeathed for the first time to our descendants for thousands of generations to come. A monument that celebrates Heaven's efforts and all its glory will be erected on this ground. If there is no such nation, however, our efforts will all be in vain. If the country that God seeks does not appear, then the Christian world and all civilizations will be sent down the river and burned up. You have to understand that they have all succumbed to Satan's game. So you must understand that the issue here is a nation. (55-339, 1972.5.9)

The homeland we are to find is not one of the existing nations, which already have their established traditions and cultures. The nation we are seeking is of a fundamentally different dimension. To be qualified to inherit such a nation, we have to embrace the ideology that enables us to correctly take on the subject role. The underlying thought of such a subject-based ideology has to be perfectly aligned with the absolute thought of the Creator. God, the Absolute Being, desires a nation whose citizens desire to unite under its sovereignty. Each citizen must have these characteristics and embody the form and shape of that nation. (49-93, 1971.10.9)

To form a nation, there needs to be a territory, a people and sovereignty. What is sovereignty? It is the creation of a relationship with the original God. Even as the people of the nation sleep, the leadership of the nation must connect with God and then conduct the work of governing the nation. The sovereign leader must completely unite with the citizens of that nation. By becoming one with his people, the sovereign leader can no longer think of anything as being for his own sake alone, but must instead see everything as being for the sake of the nation. When this is achieved, that nation will prosper and flourish. (30-88, 1970.3.17)

The formation of a heavenly nation, as is the case in the forming of any nation, requires sovereignty, a people and territory. Standing in place of sovereignty are the parents, in place of the people are the sons and daughters, and in place of the territory is the nation. It is an absolute

principle that all of these elements have to be present. (35-279, 1970.10.25)

To establish a nation there has to be sovereignty. Therefore, when actualizing heaven's nation on earth, the question is, who is the owner of heaven and who is the sovereign ruler? Without doubt, God is the sovereign ruler. Then who are the people? All people are included. Then where is the territory? The planet Earth is that territory. (96-15, 1978.1.1)

All of your comings and goings should be for the sake of seeking that nation, being its founding loyal patriots, and restoring our homeland. Your mind-set should be to shoulder such a mission. You should think that you have received instructions, as the secret envoys of Heaven, to come to this evil world today to fulfill this mission. Please understand that without doing this, you will not be able to establish your prestige or dignity as a citizen of the nation we have been seeking. (50-255, 1971.11.7)

Do you think that Satan, who has played havoc with God for six thousand years, will simply say, "Oh my goodness, I'm losing ground," and turn around, bow his head and go home? You think it is a waste to throw out an old cleaning rag, don't you? You would probably turn it over and check the smell before you throw it out. Satan is not going to retreat easily. He will doggedly fight to the end. This is why we must remain focused on the central point. If I, Rev. Moon of the Unification Church, stray from the center, I will be broken. If you do not set the right direction, there can be no development. (57-276, 1972.6.4)

Unificationists must go out in their bare feet, if necessary, to create the homeland. Your leftover resources are not enough to save this nation. You cannot save this nation by focusing on what food to eat, what clothes to wear and what car to drive. In the Unification Church, we determine to pioneer with our bare hands and feet. That is the type of work our church is doing. (14-201, 1964.10.7)

Section 3. The Standard Bearers for the Restoration of Our Homeland

When, in order to fulfill your responsibility, all of you pledge to be the new standard-bearers of this 3,000-*ri* peninsula, Korea will be embraced in our bosom. This is why if your eyes are shining as orbs of light, that light must be refocused on the glorious homeland. You have to become brave soldiers who can use your talents and power for the restoration of the homeland. Moreover, you must all know how to go forward in a dignified manner, having the conviction to stand as a sanctified person who is taking responsibility to restore the homeland.

You have to become a person who can establish the homeland, bring glory to that homeland, live immersed in that homeland, and be able to die in that homeland. Before this time, there was no one who could come in front of

Heaven and take responsibility. This is a solemn responsibility that can be fulfilled only once and only at a given time in history; it cannot be approached carelessly. When you hear something once, you may think of ten things that are different from what you heard. But you must go forward, taking that one thing you heard and compare it with those different things. For heavenly fortune to appear here, you must have the conviction not to be concerned even if the path brings you face to face with utter disgrace a thousand times, or if you die hundreds of times. If you go forward with this kind of conviction, God will protect the path you are taking.

The reason I say that is because each time in my life that I faced such a situation, I experienced that God did not leave me. So He will certainly protect you, too. As a central person with the mission to restore our homeland, whether you are assigned to a province or just a small village, you have to resolve to never give up, because there is no one but you to carry out this mission.

You must never betray the cause, and you must fulfill the responsibility that brings you into alignment with the heavenly commands. You cannot prevail on this path if you stand in the hinterland of your responsibility. You must accomplish this even if you cannot sleep, even if you cannot eat, and even while you are being pursued. If you die, you must die having already made this determination within yourself. When each of you can determine anew to achieve your mission in this decisive way, the paths you are to take will naturally open up in front of you. Otherwise, the world will become a world of darkness rather than the world of light and hope that I believe in, that I anticipate seeing, and for which I have raised all of you. (29-50, 1970.2.16)

When we connect the events and circumstances of history, we cannot help but feel God's tearful heart and agonize over God's suffering. As a result, through our own sincere devotion, we are compelled to go toward the battlefield, determined to fight to restore our homeland and create the foundation for the liberation of the world with our own hands. My desire is for you to become this type of people, a people seeking the homeland of hope that we must find. (36-200, 1970.11.29)

If all of you cannot persevere, until death if necessary, then not only will you be unable to receive salvation yourself, but Korea will face ruin. If all the citizens of Korea perish, what will you do? You should desire to go to the place of sacrifice. From your sacrifice, a source of new and explosive global power will rise up that can bind the people together. As real men and women, you must walk this path with resolve, shouting, "Let's go! Let's fight to the death!," because this path is the only way to accomplish our goal. Along this path, you will become the sons and daughters of Heaven who will accomplish God's will. A monument will be erected in your honor. Don't you think that there will be a son who can melt together all of God's heart,

bone and flesh? Don't you think that Heaven's fundamental idea to restore our homeland will sprout from there? (49-110, 1971.10.9)

If we go to that place together and cross the crest of those tears together, we will not perish. God does not throw such people away. Our homeland of hope, which we will regain, will welcome such people.

When all of you become the standard-bearers of our homeland, pioneer a new world history, and emerge as the brave soldiers restoring our homeland, do you not think that you will deserve eternal praise? I am making a serious point. (49-112, 1971.10.9)

Today's followers of the Unification Church need to be more fiercely and fully united with me than the core representatives of the Communist party are united with Kim Il-sung. If you are unable to achieve this level of unity with me, you will not be able to accomplish God's will to restore the nation God is seeking. (50-215, 1971.11.7)

Women have to lead the way. This is the reason I have now directed all the blessed wives in Korea to go to the front line. They have already been mobilized. Because Korea is the headquarters nation, the elder Blessed Families of Korea have all been sent to the front line. So all the Unificationist women throughout the world should follow their example and also go to the front line! Amen. (170-241, 1987.11.21)

Section 4. Soldiers for the Independence of Our Homeland

What must you all determine to do? You must determine to greet the day of the restoration of our homeland. The people of Korea celebrate August 15 as Independence Day, the day of liberation. Many small and humble peoples have celebrated the independence and liberation of their own nations since the Second World War. But when will come the day of celebration when we will praise the restoration and liberation of heaven and earth, God's homeland? Have you thought about this? That day must come. (155-223, 1965.10.30)

At the end of the Japanese occupation, I fought together with an underground movement trying to restore independence to my homeland of Korea. Even now, that memory is fresh. I was at the point of vomiting blood and collapsing from lack of breath, and I fought thinking, "In the name of God I must bring the Japanese Empire to submission." God was with me in that. When I went to North Korea it was the same. I was thrown into prison, but in that situation I went forward in God's name. When I went to prison in God's name, God followed me there. (166-159, 1987.6.5)

The people of today are destined to deny the present world in which we live. We can conclude that this is also the way many nations are guiding their people. Therefore, all the peoples and nations on earth must cross over the crest of the hill

together. You have to understand that if you maintain the traditions of the past, the true ideal homeland for which God longs cannot be restored and established. (172-9, 1988.1.3)

When we understand that the restoration of God's homeland can be found right in front of our eyes, when we realize the amazing fact that the foundation for restoring God's homeland is the land of Korea, then will Koreans be able to sleep at night? Can they continue to just eat and play, doing as they please? Even if you told them not to, they would invest their lives, day in and day out. One's fortune is not the problem. There is no doubt that the Republic of Korea would feel a national responsibility to achieve this goal, even if they have to invest their children and their wives, as well as their entire being and the whole of South Korea. If this happens, will North and South Korea reunite or not? You have to understand these things. (172-41, 1988.1.3)

So where is that foundation? It is the neighborhood. If the neighborhood asks you, "Did you restore the homeland?," you can answer, "Yes, I did. I stood in the original homeland that God loved, and I stood in the homeland that successive generations of our ancestors have loved. I stood in the place that generations of our ancestors have wanted to see. As a result, we are resurrected beings of God's homeland with love at its core. We are resurrected beings of our parents and of many generations who have all been yearning for the restoration of the homeland. We have stood as representative resurrected beings for all the people of this world who have also been longing for the restoration of our homeland." You must carry this kind of pride. (173-184, 1988.2.14)

Until now the Unification Church has not built a single building. Why have I not built a building even though I could have? When our church applied to build its headquarters in the Yoido area of Seoul, the government denied us permission. Should we build a smaller regional church if we could not even build the central church? We must start from the point of building a temple in which we can attend the one God, so that we can take charge of restoring independence to our homeland and restoring all its citizens. Members of the Unificationist community should not settle down or live opulently. (174-172, 1988.2.28)

Beginning from Parents' Day, each day must be a declaration for the restoration of the homeland, and every nation under heaven should become one with this traditional starting point. We must fight this kind of fight. That is what was lost. This is Satan's bait. Then who is the person who has established the foundation for this? Everyone, whether he is Satan or anyone else, must say, "Rev. Moon is the greatest!" As the central figure of love, I have inherited the lineage of God, possessing life from the heavenly kingdom – the homeland, the nation of the Second Advent, and the nation of the savior of love. Through that, I could

emerge as the true olive tree and establish the Unification Church as a vehicle to lead our members. I have worked together with our members to cut people off from established Christian doctrines and engraft Christianity to the true olive tree. Yet, they noisily protested the graft. They are noisy because their root is being cut away. Isn't that right? Yet if we do not do that, they will perish. (191-263, 1989.6.25)

When Japanese people seek revenge, they invest their entire life to avenge the death of their mother or one of their brothers or sisters. In light of this, how great is the bitter sorrow of a nation's king and people who experience tragedy while walking the course of the providence of restoration of the homeland! God, who observes the suffering of these people who are ignorant of all these things, is suffering even more. (200-68, 1990.2.23)

All things belong to God, and yet they were stolen through false love. Therefore, everything must be returned to God. Yet, these things cannot simply go back. Restitution must be made – the indemnity must be paid. Then who will undertake that task? For thousands of years it was accomplished through religion. So now Christianity in America should protect Korea as the Adam nation. Working together with Great Britain, France, Japan, Germany, and Italy, they should bring about the restoration of our homeland. They must create the father nation and to that end they need absolute obedience. In this way all can be engrafted to the true olive tree. (200-301, 1990.2.26)

The path that True Mother walks should absolutely not be as difficult as mine. Opposition from men poses no problem for me on my path as the true Father, but there should be no women who oppose True Mother in her course. We need women to be the bridge for the sake of liberation, for the course of the mother; for this they must be able to offer support and totally sacrifice themselves, quickly going the way to restore independence to the homeland, liberate heaven and earth, and liberate God. (222-279, 1991.11.3)

All you members here have abandoned your countries to come here. You threw away your own homelands. Why? You did it for the territory of the homeland that God originally desired, and for the restoration of that homeland. No matter how great America is, if it does not listen to me, it will perish. I may be making a dogmatic judgment, but the one who is saying this is not just a guest who is passing by and making some comment. I am saying this because I have done all these things. I am not a braggart. I came here having completed everything. (233-330, 1992.8.2)

The time has come when people of the past, people of the present, people of the future, and even people who have died and gone to the spirit world can cooperate in restoring the homeland. That is

why many people's ancestors are coming down to them. If these elected descendants do not respond to the Unification Church, their ancestors are causing them sickness and problems, while at the same time offering them medicine and solutions. This is not happening through my power. God and the ancestors are becoming one; the angelic world and the ancestors are becoming one. They are driving the earthly world into a corner where no one can deal with the problems – the problems particularly of the family. Only I carry the full authority and can work in this way. When the people of this nation welcome this astonishing fact as the pinnacle of hope and the foundation of their nation and homeland, then this nation will become an invincible nation under Heaven. (290-172, 1998.2.18)

Section 5. The Restoration of Our Homeland through True Love

How great are the women in history who went to the front line of battle as independence fighters in the effort to restore the homeland being built as the heavenly kingdom in heaven! In the future, these women will be highly praised. Women have been cursed so much throughout history due to the Fall of a single woman, Eve! But now, in the age of restoration, women are standing at the head of the line and restoring our homeland. If they can lay the victorious foundation, then think of how much praise that work will receive. Do you want to win with weapons? If such women appear, do you think satanic male soldiers will want the true love of those women? They would not want it. So how will you win over those kinds of people? How must we win? With what do you want to win? You must all think of yourselves as queens. Kim Il-sung is the evil king, and you are all the good queens. Therefore, you should bring all the potency of your country and offer it, without any argument, to the evil king. In that way you can put everything in order. Through what? Through love! (170-241, 1987.11.21)

What God loves most is the culture of love. Does God need money, power, or knowledge? To build a nice house, you need bricks, a door and many other materials. Yet the most important element is symmetry and beauty in the construction; to make that house perfect. As for human beings, God's greatest desire is not for them to have lots of money or to become scholars. As it says in the Bible, the first commandment is to "Love your God with all your heart, all your mind, and all your soul." The second is to "Love your neighbor as yourself." These are astonishing words. (143-273, 1986.3.20)

With the principle of the Fall we can solve the problems of humanity and the world. We cannot rectify the problems of humankind without the principle of the Fall. This is the last, final desperate phenomenon of the Last Days, of Satan betraying Heaven and leading history. This is Satan's strategy in order to bring destruction and ruin to the human race.

If we do not clean this up, then the problems of history will not be resolved. If history is unresolved, then it cannot be laid to rest. Let us go back to our Godism theology and consider the alternative solution that is God's creation and the ideal. Let us go back to the ideology of true love. This is not for you, but for the sake of others. You must create partners in love. If this is not achieved, then there is no way to gain control. (219-266, 1991.10.11)

American women are like queens of goodness. In all the present families of America, the women are like queens. Whenever they want, they tell their husband, "Do this! Do that!" God is training American women. They have a lot of money, a lot of jewelry, and great power. They have a lot of money. "Money" sounds like the Korean word for many. If you put your jewelry, your houses, and half of the land of America on Kim Il-sung's shoulders, he would be content and settle down. If you just gave half of America, he would be content. Don't you think so? Over there, the people are hungry and starving to death. It is utterly miserable. Therefore, if you support them financially, they will swiftly come around. That is why if the American sisters go to the front line and say, "Let's not fight. Are you hungry? We will send something to eat. We will send cars as well. We will send you everything you want." If you give them as much as possible, liberation will come naturally. If the American women give all their money to Kim Il-sung, do you think he will want to fight you? After that, try to continue to send food and clothes through China. If you feed them and help them live like Americans, then they will not fight with you. Then what must the Unificationists do? As we ourselves suffer and go hungry, let our attitude and treatment toward the North Koreans be one of sacrifice for their sake. Then, when the North Koreans learn of this, do you think they will kill the Unificationists with knives and guns? (170-241, 1987.11.21)

Humankind is one family. Through true love, we are all connected as one family, as I said earlier today. Humanity is one tree. All of your families are living together with other families. There you have babies, little children, teenagers, adults, and older people. This kind of family is a center and model for education, connecting to the great world family and universal family. In this, there are four types of people who have trained themselves in love – an extension of your family, those with whom you have a relationship: your grandfather, your mother and father, your elder brother and sister, and finally yourself. If you are trained that way in your family, you can be engrafted to the global family. You must invest your own family in order to connect to the global family. You must invest in order to accomplish the larger purpose. This is the principle of restoration, the principle of re-creation.

A subject partner and an object partner seek to become related to a larger level object partner. Then, based on that

relationship, they should become subject and object partners and create unity. It has the same meaning. This is the age of humankind becoming one great family. Based on the training you received in your family, you should love the larger level more than your family. If you invest and forget, and love more, then wherever you are, you will become the owner. Because the tribe is larger than the family, love the tribe. Because the people within a nation are greater than a tribe, love them more than you love the tribe. Because a nation is greater than a people, love the nation more than you love that people.

In this way, you invest in stages, investing more in each stage, and then forgetting what you invested, so as to reach the higher levels, and then have the idea to invest more into each one. It is the same when you move from one country to another. When you move from the national to the worldwide level, you must invest and offer more sincere devotion than you offered for the nation.

When those of you who lived in Korea came to Uruguay, you came from one end of the earth to the other. So you must love this nation more than your own. If you can have the heart to love a nation even more than your own family and even more than your own country, then unity will be realized, even in your dreams. National boundaries will disappear. Now the Earth will experience the age of the expansion of a unified homeland, centered on true love. When you have such a philosophy, you can go through any place. First is the age of unification of languages, and second is the age of humankind becoming one great family. All this is done centered on true love. (289-208, 1998.1.2)

Because the world also will naturally follow the same pattern of the restoration of a homeland, we can establish a world of unified peoples by creating a nation that moves in one direction. This is the culture of Adam, isn't it? That is the culture of true love. Your birth was because of love. If a man says he was born for himself, then he cannot embrace true love at all. Because true love is trying to embrace everything completely to the end, then it must give limitlessly and forget what it has given. That is why the universe comes to receive your embrace.

In the heavenly world of the future, the time for living off a monthly salary will pass away. As couples, you must pay complete indemnity. Throughout the ages of history, the rule of all creation has been absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience. Because of love, you also need faith and you also need obedience. Because of love. Even the God of the entire universe is obedient to infinite love. God invests and then forgets, and so we also invest and forget what we have invested. This is obedience.

Absolute faith is based on absolute love. In order to achieve love, you need absolute obedience. Until death, you need love. Even if you die one hundred times over, you need love, so you must properly seek the way to it. That is why

dying and going to the spirit world is not death but a way to seek God's love. It is not dying. It is the way to find God's love. God made the path of death for the sake of love. If your heart and mind cannot hold onto this higher level, then you cannot restore love. (296-50, 1998.10.11)

Section 6. Our Conviction and Attitude for the Restoration of Our Homeland

We have now entered a new age. What kind of attitude should we have? The conviction to restore independence to our homeland – more than anything else – should be burning in your chest. In other words, you should become the standard-bearers for building the homeland that God has been impatiently awaiting for the past six thousand years. You should take pride in being a pioneer in the special forces sent into battle as the advance guard to reclaim the land and take responsibility for this incredible mission.

Many people who have come and gone wanted to have this mission and had this hope. Even though they wanted it, they could not have it. This is one special mission that can be done only once, at this time in history. It requires a solemn sense of responsibility. Eating, sleeping, your comings and goings; every aspect of your lifestyle must be for the establishment of the homeland.

How long do you think God has been waiting impatiently for you, as a secret emissary sent by God, to come forward and determine to carry out this mission in a high-spirited and exciting way?

Until now we have been driven out. Heaven's will has never once had the chance to gain a foothold in a nation and fully manifest its substance. We must fulfill God's will to create a homeland. Until now, that will has not been accomplished even once. Now we can establish that kind of homeland. In that homeland there will be sovereignty, territory and people. Also, the lineage connects the people as a unified people in that nation, giving them a history that other peoples cannot have. We must carry out our emissary missions in order to restore independence to such a homeland. The faster this mission is completed, the faster we lay the foundation for restoring our homeland. Paying a price through our suffering today hastens the day when the restoration of our homeland will swiftly come. Considering this fact, you should go forward with the determination to complete your mission as a special emissary. Otherwise, we will not be able to own the worldwide blessing and heavenly fortune that God can give us in this era. (29-40, 1970.2.16)

You should leave a testament to your descendants saying, "God is our God. We are His sons and daughters. We have lived until now to restore our homeland. Even if the world hunts us and drives us out, we will not perish, and we will see the day of recompense before we die. Even if I die and cannot achieve this, then you will see that day before your death!" This is exactly how the Israelites thought. (18-231, 1967.6.11)

We must now place the Republic of Korea in the forefront of God's will, and we must restore the homeland of God's desire. We must restore a new homeland for humanity. From this perspective, if we quietly analyze the execution of our responsibilities, we cannot help but reflect on the meaning of our life and on our attitude up to this point. (29-35, 1970.2.16)

What kind of being is God? God is the King of the secret emissaries. He is the King of the secret emissaries, the supreme commander who is appearing in this satanic world to restore the homeland. Yet, has there been one time in the past six thousand years when this God has been able to say to this earth, "I am God. This is the truth that I can teach you"? No, there has not. Even so, God has been working hard to instruct us through our clear consciences and to create a bond with us. The six-thousand-year history of the providence of restoration has been God's effort to broaden the foundation of our hearts and to guide us toward a free world that can be in unity with Him. (29-48, 1970.2.16)

CHAPTER TWO

Home Church as the Internal Foundation of the Providence

Section 1. What Is Home Church?

You have heard the phrase "Home Church," haven't you? We say *Gajeong Gyohae* in Korean. In the past, even if you knew about the Home Church mission, there was no way for you to receive such a mission. Why was that? The time was not right. The person representing God, Satan, and all of history must decide when the required indemnity conditions have been established. Because he had not made that decision, even if you had gone to your Home Church and said, "I completely offer Home Church on the global altar," God could not accept it, nor could Satan approve it. (100-146, 1978.10.9)

At this time, the Unification Church is doing Home Church activities worldwide. In order for Fallen people to go to heaven they must follow the path of sacrificial living, starting from individual restoration and advancing to world restoration, just as I have done. You can simply follow the path I have laid before you. I have created a pathway for you to run on. You can set the condition of indemnity by taking the path that I have pioneered. The condition you must make is Home Church activity, focusing on 360 homes.

It is an amazing fact that all of you can receive the Home Church mission this year. Home Church is the destiny of all people. It will enable them to cast off the inheritance of the Fall. If we cannot fulfill Home Church during our lifetime, we will have to continue to invest in it even after we die. The Unification Church must create a world of victory from the fruits of dysfunctional history. The time has come to establish a heavenly world. This world begins with the transformation of individuals and then develops to the levels of tribe and race. Home Church activities were set up to take a leading role in completing this work. If you love the 360 homes of the Cain world more than you love your own sons and daughters, then you will be able to go into the heavenly world.

God has walked a path of indescribable hardships for thousands of years, working to establish the condition of victory. Yet in seven years, we can accomplish it through 360 homes. The Home Church foundation is sitting right under your noses, so you cannot avoid it. Through Home Church activities, you will experience all kinds of historical matters. The completion of Home Church represents God's ideal

world. When all of today's people accept the requirement to fulfill Home Church, they will realize the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth without fail.

Make Home Church activities based on your 360 homes a holy offering to God and bring the members of these households to know the will of God. A person who practices and completes Home Church centering on 360 homes will become a true son or daughter of God on the individual level, and a tribal messiah. He or she will realize the ideal of God's creation.

I have set all the conditions to restore hundreds of nations. Through the standard of heart, I have connected Heaven and Earth, removing the wall between them. You can set the conditions of restitution centering on a smaller model of the world – Home Church. From the present moment, you must create a foundation you can build on, and where you will not be blocked by the obstacles that exist between heaven and earth. What is this foundation? It is Home Church. (105-270, 1979.10.26)

Until now, the True Parents have made restitution so that all people would be able to develop through the individual, family, tribe, race, nation, and world levels, and then be able to go to God. The True Parents have done this in front of all the people of the world as their representative. Because I did these things and brought the representative victory, you can inherit this 100 percent. And based on my victory, you can go forward and achieve your own victory through a seven-year course.

You can achieve what I have achieved through my life on the worldwide stage. You need your own offering or a foothold, which is a smaller model of the world stage. You should know that this is Home Church. It is *Gajeong Gyohae*. Do you understand? (109-184, 1980.11.1)

Unification Church can now establish the Home Church theme for the first time in history. You must know how important an event this is for God and for all people. I have succeeded on the world level, so you should think that you can succeed in Home Church, which is centered on the small number of 360 homes. You should do Home Church activities so you can teach love and truth in the place of God. Through Home Church, you must teach the love and truth of God, our Heavenly Father.

Where can you meet God? I met God in the midst of battle, shedding blood and tears for each nation. I met God while establishing the foothold of victory, centering on a world level foundation of indemnity. All of you should inherit all of True Parents victories and establish a condition that claims you have gone to the world level even though you didn't actually go there. What is the condition called? It is called Home Church. (109-184, 1980.11.1)

Home Church is the place where families begin to be liberated on an international level. It is the place where we can declare the starting point of the ideal love and ideal life of unfallen Adam

and Eve. To fulfill this, I have initiated the tribal messiah mission. Jesus came to find a family. You have all heard of Home Church, right? The tribe of Cain and the tribe of Abel must become one. In terms of Jesus, Joseph's tribe and John the Baptist's tribe should have become one and formed one family. When the family is set up in this way, Satan cannot invade. If the original standard of the family is set up, embracing all tribes, then the failed family in Israel can be restored to an unfallen standard for the first time. Tribal messiahs and Jesus will witness this. (235-111, 1992.8.29)

What is the completion of Home Church? Home Church is completed when you take ownership to reform the culture of Adam and assume leadership to create a new culture. When you do that you can become a true descendant of Adam. Then, what is the center? The center is the standard of heart. What kind of heart would that be? God should not sense from you the heart that feels, "I fell. I am not a restored child". God should be able to look at you and say, "My child, whom I love!" "God should not hear people say bad things about you, like "Look at that pathetic loser. He joined the Unification Church, and now he just kind of wanders around here and there, like the child of a mudfish or an eel…" (110-54, 1980.11.8)

Our church has not yet established a heavenly foundation on the world level. Therefore, I must organize Home Church to place a stamp of victory on the world. In forty years, I will establish all the conditions of restitution needed to form perfect ownership and decisive conviction centering on the love of God. When we are totally determined to say "I am victorious" in a way that both God and Satan attest to, the True Parents can pass everything on to you for you to inherit. This is because the True Parents love the possessive and decisive realm of love's victory. You can receive those things because of True Parents foundation. Otherwise, you cannot receive them. (137-301, 1986.1.3)

When you go out to your Home Church, you should welcome being cursed and treated with contempt. When you are mistreated, there is a reason. The reason you are being cursed and mistreated is so you can save your wife and children. You must cry ceaselessly through the night, clinging to your wife and children. You must cry out, "What is this? How can they oppose us when we go this way?" To shed tears is not a miserable thing. You should stand in a position where you can cry more than all the grieving people crying in this world. You should cry earnestly for the values of heaven. Then Home Church will become a valley and things will flow into it from the heavenly world. Their sympathy will be aroused and the whole world will move forward and unite into one. (181-286, 1988.10.3)

What treasure would I like to leave behind for the Unification Church? Home Church is the treasure I am leav-

ing behind for you after going the way of sacrifice throughout my life. What did I say is the treasure I can leave behind for the members of the Unification Church? You are given the opportunity to inherit the authority of the Unification Church in a dignified manner from Heaven and Earth, or from God and Satan; this is the treasure. If Home Church is perfected, will there be the term Unification Church or not? Will there be God's providence, or not? Maybe these terms will exist in a Home Church that is not yet perfected, somewhere far away. Yet in the Home Church I created, there is no religion and no providence of God. It is the place where the people of Heaven live. (108-334, 1980.10.19)

You must know that the Era has come when you can work in place of the True Parents. What you must do in my place is to copy what I have done. However, you cannot travel the entire world and do the things I have done on the world level. You must do it in a similar place, on a smaller altar. You can do these things in a condensed place. You can do all the things that I accomplished by conducting religious services around the world, and do it on a reduced altar that represents all of the world's population. Because you need the substantial result of restitution through action, I created Home Church. (115-82, 1981.11.4)

You must inherit all the things that I have restored but you first need to do something to create a foothold. You don't have a place to make an offering to God. If you want to transfer all the offerings from all the victorious altars throughout the world, you must build your own altar beforehand. So where is the place where you can transfer these offerings? That is the place we call Home Church! Do you understand?

Home Church is the place where you can push yourself to complete the things that Adam did not complete. This means you must go over the world and then return. You are going out to the world and passing through conditions of atonement, but on a smaller scale. You can inherit my blessings through this smaller altar. You must first build an altar and then move the offering from the bigger altar to your smaller altar. An altar is a place of offering for the shedding of blood. What is Home Church? A 'church' still means making an altar and having to shed blood. You have undergone worldwide level hardship on a small altar in order to inherit the altar I have erected.

How much has God suffered? How much has Jesus suffered, and how much have I suffered? Through all this suffering and effort, I possess the altar of victory. I want to hand it over to you. Home Church is for you to build up an altar and take over these things. (122-119, 1982.11.1)

What is the beginning point of Home Church? It begins from the peak of the Cross of Gethsemane. This is my understanding. Do you know what that means? To be more precise, Home Church starts from the peak of Golgotha. When Jesus died in Golgotha, there was not even one

person who had compassion for him. I would be happy if, at the moment I was going to die, there was a foundation and environment of many people showing me compassion. If I were going to die, you would not run away like Peter. You would say, "I will die instead". When I think of the fact that there are members like that on this earth, I feel that shameful historical tradition has been restored. (103-214, 1979.2.25)

You have come here with the intention to follow me, but you listen to your own words and think, "I hate Home Church. I will only go where True Father goes." You should not do this. Even if your father is the president, you can't inherit his things without doing something? In order for you to become president, you need to lay a foundation that will enable you to become a president. Even if you are born as the Crown Prince of a nation, in order to become the King, you must learn all the rules and regulations that will enable you to be a King. You need to do these things.

Therefore, please don't just say the words, but in the final course of human history, obey the True Parents words. Then God will give you His seal of approval and say, "You are my filial child" and send you to heaven as a filial child of the heavenly kingdom. This is God's amazing love! What is that foundation called? It is called Home Church.

Do you want to go to the heavenly kingdom as filial children or as public nuisances? You want to go as filial sons and daughters, right? There is no way to receive the seal of a filial son or daughter without going through Home Church. Heaven is where filial children enter. Even if you are called a son, if you are a public nuisance you cannot enter. You can go to Heaven only when you are a filial child; therefore, we have Home Church so you can receive the seal of a filial child. (122-84, 1982.11.1)

The time for me to pull along the Unification Church leadership has passed. Now is the time for the horizontal level expansion. When you expand the family ideal centering on your own tribes, the world will naturally be restored. The way to expand the tribe is what we call, in Unification Church terminology, 'Home Church'. It is the court where final decisions are made and settled. (137-287, 1986.1.3)

Section 2. The Beginning of Home Church Activities

Mark this date, November 12, 1978, because today I am instructing you to go to your Home Church areas in the role of a Messiah. What will you do then? Those of you, who will go out, raise your hands. From now on you should go there. You must know that you cannot come back until you fulfill Home Church. You cannot come back before you die. You cannot come back even spiritually. (101-340, 1978.11.12)

When Jesus died and ascended into Heaven, he gave Peter the keys to Heaven. Rev. Moon is giving you the keys to

Heaven while he is still alive. I am not giving them to you so you can save individuals, but I am giving you the keys that can save tribes. I am not a person who saves individuals.

You are becoming Messiahs. Home Church messiahship is not just some futile theory. Things are set up on earth so that they can go straight to the spirit world, just the way they are. The efforts each of you make, determines who can dig up the most diamonds from the mouth of the diamond mine of the universe. The members of the Unification Church are the ones who are excavating the diamond mine of the universe. We are doing it through Home Church. There are difficulties, but the question is, who can dig up the most diamonds? (102-217, 1978.12.31)

Until now, religion has focused on saving individuals. The standard was to ask how to save myself, centering on individual salvation. We are not about individual salvation. We are working to save the tribe. Because of you, your tribe receives salvation and your 360 homes receive salvation.

No one has done this type of work in the history of religion or in the history of the world. This is the only time that this event has unfolded. Has religion ever taught when to marry, and when to live with your parents? Until now, were there such rules? This is the first time. What we call "Home Church" has a similar destiny. An incredible age has come where we are endowed with the foundation to save the whole and prosper together. These three huge, worldwide stages will be reduced through Home Church. (102-217, 1978.12.31)

The fact that I could separate out 360 homes and give them to each of you is a historical day of hope and the terminal point religion has desired. This is your Home Church foundation. It is also the terminal point of the Providence of God. Home Church is the beginning point of the complete breakdown of Satan's base that he has secured through the satanic world. If I was unable to declare Home Church, history would be destined to a dismal fate. The mission of Home Church is a limitless blessing for you. In the course of history, there have been many kings, many incredibly wealthy people, many scholars and intellectuals, and many famous people, but those things are not important.

Each of you should think, "Even though I am a despicable being, and my body has no value, because of Home Church, I could receive True Father's instructions and inherit from him during my life." You should realize this is an amazing thing. (109-203, 1980.11.1)

In Home Church we will find the True Parents, the angelic world, the satanic world, and God. It is all decided in Home Church. I might go to Japan or England, but wherever I go, we must all go the way of Home Church, that is *Gajeong Gyohae*. What is Home Church? It is a heaven consisting of homes or a family heaven. Accordingly, each of those 360 homes must prepare the foun-

dation to attend you as the messiah, and as true parents. The fact that you have harmonized these homes and offered them before God means that you have inherited a position of victory over all of Satan's foundations and opposition throughout the world. (99-262, 1978.9.25)

Our Unification Church should do Home Church. Through our Home Church work we should unify the tribe of Cain. If the Cain tribe becomes one, but we do not create a domain for Abel's tribe, there will be no foundation upon which to attend the True Parents. There will be no tribal heaven. After we make the tribal foundation, it can connect to the race. If the race centers on the realm of the tribe, the nation will begin to move in a vertical direction. They all connect to each other. (137-178, 1986.1.1)

In order to save your relatives and family, you should first love the five billion or so people spread throughout this satanic world. After that, you must save them. That is why the Home Church system must not disappear. (212-60, 1991.1.1)

God stands in the position of a universal Abel, therefore He sacrifices everything that is close to Him in this satanic world, and loves Cain. When Cain loves God's sons and daughters, Abel can claim the role of the first son; through those actions God can love both of them. He can love them and bless them. You should understand this principle clearly. You must know this formula in order to complete Home Church; otherwise, you will not make it. (116-291, 1982.1.2)

When we say Holy Spirit Association for Unification what is holy? We are referring to the original, unfallen world. It is an association that can establish the united, original world. Christianity will not be the one to establish the original world. It is been this way for the last thirty-three years. Today, we cross over into a new world where there will be no Christianity. Even religion will disappear. What will they call us? They will call us Home Church. Only Home Church will remain, as a family centering on the True Parents. A leaf forms a family with other leaves, doesn't it? When this leaf gets together with two other leaves, then these leaves make a family of three and five leaves make a family of five. This is a type of family. What is it centered on? It is centered on the root and the sprout. If God is the root, then people are the sprouts. If a tree is centered on the roots and sprouts, and there is harmonious family activity, then the tree will grow forever. (145-150, 1986.5.1)

In the future, people who join the Unification Church should not be as miserable as I am. That is God's hope. It is not good for you to be as miserable as Rev. Moon is. It would be nice if there were a place, representing the world, where you could condense the suffering of Rev. Moon and overcome this miserable destiny. How nice would that be? This is God's desire, my desire, and also your desire. That standard of hope is the destination of the Providence and

our lifelong goal. In order to go there, we have initiated Home Church. In Korean, we say *Gajeong Gyohae*. (108-331, 1980.10.19)

Home Church is necessary to make indemnity conditions that fulfill my hope, and the hope of Adam and Jesus. (114-255, 1981.10.20)

You are alive for a short time. Life is too short. When faced with the problem of whether or not you can make a breakthrough before you die, you should think like this, "If you can extend my life even a little bit, I will give all the power I have." You should be thinking like this, but you look like you are just spectators. That is why I am asking you to do Home Church. The words Home Church will be good for your entire life. (107-52, 1980.1.20)

What conditional foundation do you need to connect to the world? It is Home Church. Your 360 families must open up the door 360 degrees in all directions – North, South, East, and West – representing the earth. Unless you do this, you will get stuck when you go to the spirit world. (137-111, 1985.12.24)

From now on, I will suspend or dissolve all the organizations that hinder Home Church. The Home Church movement is the priority. After that, all other work is incidental; it has an accompanying role. Therefore, I am asking the Unification Church, and all the people who follow the Unification Church, to hand down this thought and traditional. (107-127, 1980.4.15)

Section 3. The Development of Home Church Activities

3.1. Conditions tribal messiahs should fulfill

Until now, religions focused on the goal of individual salvation, but the goal of the Unification Church is to save the tribe. We are striving to save the whole tribe. Instead of dying and saving ourselves, let us live, receive the ticket of universal shared values, and enter Heaven together with our tribes. You should understand that this is the meaning of the Home Church movement. (101-261, 1978.11.1)

What is the meaning of tribal messiah? The tribal messiah's position surpasses Jesus' position because he could not become a tribal messiah. If you do not succeed in this mission, you will not have the qualification to become a daughter or son of the True Parents in the age of completion. On the Home Church altar you can restore every mistake made by your parents. We can combine everything in history and everything in the Old and New Testaments, as the formation and growth stages, and offer it all like a burnt offering. Do you understand? If you complete this and are victorious, you can receive a passport to come and go wherever you wish, in this world or the heavenly world. (122-127, 1982.11.1)

Have your families taken on the role of Abel's family? You know about Abel's responsibility, don't you? Abel's respon-

sibility is to save Cain. Why? If Abel does not save Cain, then they cannot go to their parents. What is the Home Church we are doing in the Unification Church? It is the providence to restore your own tribe after you have restored Cain's tribe. Have you made the effort to restore Cain's tribe? If the Cain and Abel tribes do not become one, they can't rise up to the level of the race. There is no way for them to go up to that level. This is the principle. (145-21, 1986.4.30)

In today's Unification Church, Home Church is the realization of world level restitution and atonement on a reduced scale. Do you understand that? Home Church in Korean is *Gajeong Gyohae*, right? By developing it into a tribal church … In Korea, there are many different last names, aren't there? If groups of various last names gather together, that will lead to the formation of a state level church, which will then lead to a national church. In effect, the Home Church the Unification Church started will bring about the tribal level church and then the national level church. (142-84, 1986.3.1)

To be recognized as a Blessed Family centering on your relatives, you must cross over the level of the Cain and Abel tribes. Jesus could not get Zachariah's family and Joseph's family to become one. This meant that the Jewish people and the Jewish faith could not cross over the national standard of Cain and Abel. Christian history has the destiny to restore this. Your family will be blessed when you stand on the foundation of having restored Cain and Abel. Because this is the standard of the principle, I have asked you to unite these things centering on Home Church. But have you been working diligently for Home Church? (181-279, 1988.10.3)

What is Home Church? It is the tribe. It is the base for a tribal messiah. What is the base of the tribal messiah? Viewed in relationship to Jesus, the families of Joseph and Zachariah were the bases. The death of Jesus was due to Zachariah's family. Jesus could not bring unity based on Joseph's family. He also could not bring unity based on Zachariah's family. You know Zachariah's family, right? It was the family of John the Baptist. Who was John the Baptist? He was Jesus' brother. They were from different wombs, but they were brothers. (115-82, 1981.11.4)

The Home Church spirit is one that can digest, with a smile, the moaning and groaning of despair. Home is *Gajeong* and church is *Gyohae*, right? That means when you go back, you should go to your hometowns. You must go back to your mother and father. You must return to your mother and father and accomplish Home Church activities. (105-339, 1979.10.28)

This will not take twenty years. Now is the time when you can do things instantly. So instead of forty nations, work through four nations representing north, south, east, and west. You must

go to four different nations, work shedding blood and sweat, and offer your devotion. You should pass through four different nations. If you do not do that, then as an American, you will never be able to transcend the level of American thinking.

Therefore, whether it is the East or whichever far off place, you should go to the far reaches of North, South, East and West. Do you understand what I am saying? The spirits of white people have been waiting impatiently until now to come down to earth. The spirits who lived good, conscientious lives are also waiting impatiently. To do so, they must connect to their families and relatives. That is why the Home Church system (*Gajeong Gyohae Jo-jik*) is unfolding. Through Home Church, the spirits of more than 120 nations in the world can form a base that enables them to work freely with people on earth. They can make making use of their experiences and knowledge in their related or specialized field. Therefore, Home Church is an absolute necessity.

In America, it is possible to have families that blend lineages from 120 nations of the world among your 360 homes. If you look at the Home Churches in each nation, each one is different. You will have all types of people; some will be black people, some will be proud and arrogant like the English, or as stubborn as the Germans. Every type of person will be there. I am asking you to think this way. There will even be individualistic people like the Americans. (162-110, 1987.3.30)

The Unification Church has put forth the idea of let us inherit the tradition since 1978. What tradition does this refer to? We must inherit the tradition of God's heart of providential restoration. Each of you should inherit the heart I set up through the sixty years I walked this way. One way to receive this is Home Church. The movement to receive this is the Home Church movement.

If you do not have a Home Church, then later when you go to the heavenly kingdom, you will not be able to follow me. In the future, if there are 240,000 Home Churches worldwide, then we will arrange for them to deal with the people of the world. The church will completely disappear. Koreans are within the realm of the benefit of receiving governance from the Home Churches. Since we have yet to establish Home Churches throughout the world, a mass migration needs to occur. In order to receive a Home Church assignment, we must move from here to Africa. We are now entering the time when we must migrate throughout the world. (114-163, 1981.10.18)

When you look in the Principle, there is the part about the parallel periods, right? If you look in that chapter, you will learn about the number forty. Instead of 4,000 years, there were 400. Instead of 400 years, there were 40. Instead of 40 years, there were 40 days. There is also the number 7, which we use every week and is the central number of the providence of restoration. In viewing such issues, we realize we must set up and meet the indemnity conditions by pio-

neering our own path of life as an absolute requirement. If you do forty days once a year for three years, it adds up to 120 days. If it is done over three years, that makes 3 x 40, this is 120 days. It is now 120 years after the Japanese Meiji Reformation. King Saul, King David, and King Solomon all together ruled for 120 years. Time periods are important to the process of crossing over a peak. Therefore, you should do this specific activity centering on three years. You should develop your activities for fort days while fasting. In the past, we went out to do activities, but now we must go back to our own hometowns and work. I am asking you to do this in your Home Churches. (167-239, 1987.7.19)

What have I instructed you to do at this time? I am telling you to grab the second generation and restore your hometowns. Gather them up and go back to your hometowns. You are going back to your hometowns with the second generation, who represent the Home Church doctrine of the Unification Church. One person should gather 10 or 20 young people, who are willing to die if asked to, and live if asked to live. Together they can take hold of the village, working 24 hours a day, doing all kinds of things. Then, that neighborhood will not oppose them. The mothers and fathers will not oppose them. The world is slowly evolving into an environment where it can no longer oppose Rev. Moon. It will say, "That's good!" Everything will turn around in an instant. (175-25, 1988.4.6)

3.2. Visiting homes, volunteering, and education

Home Church has been doing many activities for many years, and has not disappeared. The Home Church foundation is the Cain foundation, and your own family's foundation is the Abel foundation. If you serve the Home Church foundation shedding tears, sweat, and blood, your family will automatically turn around. If you return to your relatives after having witnessed to just 100 people through your Home Church activities, they will welcome you as a heroic son. The entire neighborhood can turn around in one evening. They will see your battle record. For this purpose, you should assign a 360 home area to each person. (210-337, 1990.12.27)

The people who behaved as they wanted, saying that they were the leaders, will have to bow their heads toward the people whom they contemptuously mistreated. When that happens, do you think your relatives will be pleased or not? It is the same thing when you go to your hometown and become the leader for 360 men and their wives, a total of 720 people. Is anything more needed? You should invite your relatives to a feast and pass out presents you brought on a truck. If you do this, you can bring everyone to your side smoothly within one evening.

Why am I saying this? Centering on your own actions, are you going to bring one hundred people, one thousand people, or ten thousand people? If all of you

say you will bring ten thousand people, there are not enough people. That is also a problem. You should be fully aware of what is happening around you, leaving little bits of food for others to eat as you go forward. If you try to finish everything quickly, it will not work. You should do everything at an average pace. Pick up and eat things one by one. Do you understand? (237-305, 1992.11.17)

From July 3 to July 9, I gave my picture and a banner of the Unification Church to 73,000 district leaders of villages and small sections of the city. Do all of those exist or not? It has been fourteen years since I announced the beginning of Home Church. I am telling you to find the 360 homes of heaven. If you could not accomplish Home Church, then you should return to your hometown. If there are 360 houses, then presidents could be living there, or the Secretary of Internal Affairs, or the Minister of Foreign Affairs, or diplomats, scholars, teachers, and even servants or slaves.

When you go to a village, there is always more than meets the eyes. The people of that village will say to your parents, "Here is a nobleman from your clan. He is a messiah who has saved us!" When that happens, will your mother and father, and the people of the village watch in stunned silence, or will they bow their heads and follow you? (237-305, 1992.11.17)

All the members of the Unification Church should purchase thirty Divine Principle books, lend one out each day, and receive one back each day. If you lend each book out for a week, then you can pass them out to 120 homes. Think about what will happen if 120 houses read that book. When you pass them out, you can gently give them some introductory content. You can lend them videotapes after they read the book. You should do that kind of grassroots breakthrough activities wherever you live in the future and continue Home Church activities at the same time, as well.

If you work that way, when you give a lecture on the Principle of Creation, everyone will bring their book and listen to the Principle of Creation. Centering on the book, you can lecture the contents in a simple, introductory manner. That way, centering on the book, everyone will be able to follow the content of your lecture. (240-46, 1992.12.11)

When you do your Home Church work, do you receive opposition? Even if someone says, "I don't need you. I don't need you," you still visit them often. Even when they tell you not to come, you grab a broom and sweep their yard or garden. If it snows, you shovel the snow. You do everything. If rainwater stagnates in their gutters, you clean out their gutters. If the man of the house voices his discontentment saying, "Hey you! I said I don't like it! Why do you keep doing these things?" and if he tries to fight against you, the people of the village will fight for you, saying to him, "What is wrong with you?" That kind of thing has happened many times. Isn't this an amazing war strategy? Those types of things hap-

pen, right? Why is that? (105-191, 1979.10.21)

I would like to add one more point, if you go back to work for a company in the future, when it becomes 5 o'clock everyone leaves the factory. Centering on the work place, you must have a Home Church, *Gajeong Gyohae*, system in place. Then centering on a foundation of these separate activities, you must form a tribe of your spiritual sons and daughters. Through this basic rule you can develop. When you raise other people, you yourself will grow. You should cultivate people. (173-335, 1988.2.21)

Who will be the first ones to attend True Mother and True Father in this historical era, by making 360 houses in your Home Church area? Will we establish that kind of Home Church in Korea, America, Japan, or England? You should all say, "The number one Home Church is in … Korea!' You have long legs and walk like this, but Koreans walk with their toes turned outward. When you walk, you are tall so you walk like this. Your eyes are round, so you look in all directions as you go. Koreans are short, with small eyes, so they go forward focusing in just one direction. Do you still think you can beat them? Are you confident? (106-277, 1980.1.1)

From now, you must show love through your family and attack the satanic world. You must bring your family together and attack this rotten satanic world. You must kick out the animalistic rotten families of the free world. You must crush them all. If you do that, they will not cry out as they are perishing, "Oh no, I'm perishing." Instead, they will be happy even while they perish. They will say, "Oh, how nice, how wonderful!" That kind of time has come. That is why I told you to create a Home Church movement that can move the family, the tribe, and the people all at once. If we can finish this, if we can clean this up, we can influence the world. If we can fulfill this, then the time will come when I am able to establish heaven. (99-187, 1978.9.18)

You must become one in heart with the True Parents. In seven years, you can accomplish all the things I have overcome during my lifetime through my sorrowful heart to save the world. It will not take seven years. Even if the opposition is rampant, everything can be finished in seven years. If you invest completely like I have, you can finish Home Church within seven years. What does that mean? It means that all the world's problems will solved in seven years. If our Unification Church members spread throughout the world, and if each of you works with 360 houses, it becomes a simple process. Therefore, sincerely invest your heart, so everything can come together. (122-117, 1982.11.1)

If we estimate there are about 40 million people in Korea and organize a Home Church for each of them, how many houses are there? About 6 million? Eight million with an average of five per household! If we have 8 million houses, and each member takes responsibility

for 360 houses, that would be twenty-two thousand. If we have 22,000 members, this Home Church system will be finished. It is not a difficult thing. If you start witnessing as Home Church leaders, then through the first, second, and third generations, the Home Church movement will spread out to one thousand, two thousand, and then thousands of people. (143-118, 1986.3.16)

The national Victory Over Communism system has been set up, so you can take that to your home and use it to educate people. Will Rev. Moon go to your home to teach you? I am assigning the task to others. This strategy will connect to the Home Church system. Once the Home Church foundation is set up, since you are responsible for 360 homes, you should first work with 10 to 20 homes in your neighborhood. You then assign each of these families another 15 homes. By overlapping, our efforts will be doubled or tripled. (143-327, 1986.3.21)

The purpose of Unification members is to fulfill Home Church. Since that is our goal, you should educate all the members of the neighborhood day and night. Educate your neighborhood, your 360 homes, through the Divine Principle, VOC ideology, and Unification Thought. All the church's educational materials are ready, so you must pick them up quickly and do Home Church activities.

You must educate people in the city and neighborhood sections with VOC through monthly meetings. The four positions in each family should become completely one with the True Parents' family. Even if the universe and the world oppose you, you will not be separated. When two four-position foundations are bound together with love, it is the beginning of the heavenly kingdom that transcends the nation. Therefore, we must do this work. (145-353, 1986.6.1)

Home Church is the place to settle accounts. That is where I can combine all the things I have fought for over the last 40 years and settle those accounts. Therefore, you can say to your church leader, "I'm not going to service today because of Home Church", If you say this so you can work hard for your Home Church, he can't say you were absent from church service. It is the age where Home Church is the top priority.

If you ask what kind of church Home Churches should be in the future, the answer would be that your Home Churches should become tribal churches. Our goal is not the Home Church, but is to develop toward the tribal church. If you combine the tribal churches, then all the Kim and Park tribes will naturally form a race. If the Kims, Parks, and Moons all make a good foundation to restore the tribe, it will naturally develop into a nation. That will happen. From te church of a tribe to a church of one people, to a national church, to a global church, to a universal church: this is how things are connected. (141-221, 1986.2.22

A tribal messiah must embrace the two clans of Cain and Abel. They must embrace Cain's family and their own

family. Jesus should have embraced Joseph's family and Zachariah's family. In the same way that Jesus' death was due to the disunity between these two families, we need Home Church and tribal church today. It is always the same. Jesus was to stand on the unity between Joseph's family and Zachariah's family. Attending the tribal messiah and the national messiah leads to restoration. Home Church is the tribal messiah foundation from the Cain-like church, and the Abel-like church is your family and relatives. You have to unite these two. Only after accomplishing this, will your mission as the tribal messiah end. There should be no problem in achieving complete unity with your tribe. The time has come when even externally nothing will create problems. (210-181, 1990.12.19)

Now we are in the global era. Before, we were in the national era, but now it is the global era. The national era, centering on Jesus, has been restored through indemnity and liberated. Now we have entered a time of no persecution and you have become tribal messiahs based on a global standard. What is a tribal messiah? Isn't it Home Church? If you create Home Church, tribal messiahship will be great! From now, gather all your spiritual children and educate them. They are your close kin, your family. By becoming one centering on your spiritual children, and restoring the realm of tribal messiah, you will also receive support from other tribes in the spirit world. Then a unified front will develop. (198-365, 1990.2.11)

Section 4. Completing Home Church through the 360 Homes

4.1. The numerical significance of 360 homes

What is Home Church? What is *Gajeong Gyohae*? When everything becomes one in the Home Church, and national boundaries and social systems are abandoned, all the periods of providential history will be restored. Why are we doing that? Thirty-six is three times twelve. Isn't that right? Twelve is the number of the laws of nature, and the number of pearly gates in heaven. It is the same with the number of the 36 Couples. They connect to the fortune of the three stages of the Old Testament, New Testament, and Completed Testament. This has come about to solve the heavenly way. (105-337, 1979.10.28)

Home Church is an altar of 360 homes. The significance of 360 homes is that they symbolize a numeric value. The number 360 is a principled number and contains within it all the numbers of numerical significance. The number 360 is an expansion of the number 36, so they have the same meaning. The number 36 is 12 added together 3 times, and 12 is the result of multiplying 4 and 3 together.

Therefore, the number 360 includes the numerically significant numbers 3, 4, 12, 36, 120, and 360. The Old Testament, New Testament, and Completed Testament are each represented by the number 12, so the number 36 represents the

entire history. The number 360 includes the concept of three dimensions. It signifies the four directions of north, south, east and west, and includes the concept of three dimensions centering on 360 degrees. It contains the four seasons of spring, summer, fall, and winter, and includes the 12 months of the year. It even includes the 120 nations. Therefore, the restoration of the number 360, does not just represent the restoration of the world, it also refers to the completion of the historical course of restitution. Most importantly, it signifies finding and setting up the entire history and creation God lost.

First, you must choose an area of 360 houses for your Home Church. If you do not decide on the 360 homes of the Home Church altar, the principled significance disappears, and it cannot become the conditional altar that would allow spirit world to return to earth. That is why it is important to choose 360 homes first. If you do not decide the altar of 360 homes first before everything else, you cannot establish the meaning of Home Church. To be victorious on the altar of 360 Home Church houses, you must pour out your blood, sweat, and tears. If you completely restore those 360 homes and are victorious, I will bequeath to you the glory of all my victories.

In other words, this is the condition for you to inherit the position I stand on, the position to restore through indemnity God's heart of restoration. The 360 Home Church work we are doing corresponds to the Cain-like angelic world. If you succeed with the 360 Home Church houses of the Cain-like angelic world, your own Abel-like tribe will restore itself automatically. If you witness to these 360 Home Church houses, you will become the tribal messiah of the Cain-like angelic world. After that, your own tribe will welcome you, and you will become an Abel-like tribal messiah.

Centered on this earth, we must establish Home Church wherever we go. We must create a movement of 360 Home Church houses. That is a clan. It is a special clan. If we do not liberate that clan, a special clan cannot come into being. Originally, we should accomplish this after the third seven-year course is completed. However, you are doing this work during the third seven-year course. It may seem like a dream to you, but it is a fact. (105-158, 1979.10.14)

4.2. Home Church is the place where the providence is finally settled

The fact I have declared such an event, is a gigantic leap in providential history. If you are victorious in Home Church, what will that make you? When that time comes, you will be messiahs. You will become tribal messiahs, and from there you will be the persons responsible to face the people and save them.

How do you reach perfection? All of you have parents, children, and things of creation. Home Church is the place to develop these things. Because Adam fell, he lost these three things. We must find these three things and offer them to God. We should find what was lost and

offer it through the True Parents to God. We need to go through God. We have to find the things that were lost, offer them up to God, and inherit them again from Him, as our parents. You should know that if you offer everything to God, your house will be built and your world will come about. The foundation for that is Home Church. This is a sacrifice. This is an altar, a place where you present your three offerings. (101-338, 1978.11.12)

Home Church is a place of settlement! What is Home Church? Home Church, centered on Rev. Moon, is the result of going through a history of persecution and receiving the recognition as total victors and champions. The Unification Church went through the course to restore the standard of historical indemnity. That is the world standard of restoration on the level of the individual, family, people, nation, and cosmos. In Home Church, you can settle down and be free of all the indemnity conditions for the first time. (123-170, 1983.1.1)

If we loose America, even if we loose the entire earth, but you hold on to true love, God becomes yours, heaven becomes yours, and the even the earth automatically become yours. Is that conclusion wrong or right? Then, what are you worried about? Even if you say, "Man, I hate Home Church," it is just a bunch of noise. With true love, the more difficult it is, the greater its value. (104-151, 1979.4.29)

To work hard in your Home Church while you are living on earth is a blessing. Life is short. (142-297, 1986.3.13)

There is something that is absolutely necessary in the Unification Church, it is Home Church. Before the appearance of Home Church, there were the True Parents. Since Home Church began, the completion of Home Church has become an absolute priority. Only when you achieve this, will the True Parents become your True Parents, will the world of True Parents become your world, will the heavenly kingdom of True Parents become your heavenly kingdom, and will the love of True Parents be passed down to be your love. (122-132, 1982.11.1)

If there is no Home Church, then we cannot create heaven. If there is no Home Church, then nothing will get done. Home Church is the base of heaven. What kind of place is heaven? Heaven is a place of rest, a place of happiness, and a place where love and peace dwell. (106-265, 1980.1.1)

Christians talk about salvation, but outside the Unification Church there is no true salvation centered on eternal love. That is why I paved the way for you to return to your hometowns, and let you go back and had you declare yourselves to be tribal messiahs. Since when have I been teaching you that? For that, you must straighten out the relationship of Cain and Abel. When did I first talk about Home Church? It has been seven years. Have you accomplished what you promised to do? It is something that

must be done, even if a hurricane comes, even if your leg or head is cut off. (218-21, 1991.7.1)

The person who takes on the mission of Home Church is like the last marathon runner in history. He is like the runner in the last marathon. Imagine a marathon runner who is representing his nation and wiping sweat off his body. Compare these two cases. One runner starts with the thinking, "I should try to run without sweating. Maybe I should run moderately, within my comfort zone while using a fan and drinking some cola." But the other runner exerts all his power until the end, even falling down dead and covered in sweat. How are they different? God is invisible and supports His champion, but all of the Satanic world opposes the runner and says "Hey you! Collapse! Hey you, fall down! Hey stupid, just eat a little food as you go! Hey you idiot, take a rest!" Is the spirit world visible? Is God visible? In the midst of the world's coming and going, heaven and earth are cheering and encouraging the runner to keep running, but he cannot hear it. On the other hand, the satanic world opposes the runner, saying, "Come on man, what is God? You're a fool! Just eat some food before you run. Take a little rest before you go. Don't be stupid, just take a car. What is the point in walking? I mean, what is this?" However, until this runner crosses the finish line and wins, even Satan cannot interfere. (108-205, 1980.10.5)

When I return, the nation should welcome me. The time has come when I should be welcomed. Since the nation has been unable to do this, I am holding the men here accountable. Fourteen years ago, I ordered you to do Home Church. Is there anyone here who has done that? It has taken fourteen years to do that. I have talked about Home Church since 1978, and it has already been seven years since the start of the *tong ban gyeokpa* (local level breakthrough) mission, but you have all failed. The church exists for the sake of the nation and the world. However, you have only taken hold of your families and yourselves, and pushed the church to the back and out of the way, haven't you? (234-160, 1992.8.10)

We will make a summit club and meet the top people of the world. Bush from America, Gorbachev from Russia, Deng Xiaoping from China, who taught Jiang Ze-min … and others. You have all been like a group of beggars, living a carefree and irresponsible life until now. You should set a fire under the leaders to get them to respond. If you had done that, then I would not have to do this. You must educate the people, even if you have to do it alone. Do you understand? The lifestyle of just suffering in the wilderness course will not do anymore. We must get victory over it. We must bring the groups who are slandering and devising strategies against each other into submission. (221-133, 1991.10.23)

CHAPTER THREE

Why We Must Do *Tong Ban Gyeokpa* (Local Breakthrough) Activities

Section 1. The Reason We Are Doing *Tong Ban Gyeokpa* Again

Why aren't you doing your local neighborhood activities (*tong ban gyeokpa*)? That is the way that you should live. On the basis of such a campaign, you should return to your hometowns and take responsibility for all the counties and townships in the area you have been active in until now and then develop activities in your local area. Since this is the only way to progress, you should go to your hometown and become active there. This isn't the time to be sleeping, eating and wasting time as you have in the past.

In the future you should mobilize the inhabitants of your county and the farmers in your area to hold rallies. I have observed that some people are trying to making a stir by attempting to hold public meetings in factories, but since the company can randomly dismiss those involved, they return to their hometowns unsuccessfully. However, if you gather the farmers together, they'll cause an endless commotion. Do you understand? (181-150, 1988.9.5)

In order for you to carry out *tong ban* breakthrough activities centering on your tribe, you should hold revival meetings for training and mobilization. You should move quickly this time. Complete your activity in a short time and see what the results are.

In this way, if you are successful in at least three local communities within one township, you can win over the entire town. Similarly if you can affect a whole town, you can influence an entire county. If you can have an impact on an entire county, it might open the way to connect to the province. Unless we work in this way, it is impossible to breakthrough in our local areas. This is an urgent matter. (184-325, 1989.1.2)

It has been four years since I asked you to develop your local *tong* and *ban* breakthrough activities. You good-for-nothings! Do I have to give you money? You say you love your country, so do I still have to finance you? I've sponsored you up until now by selling my blood, my land, and my home.

I've served my country, sacrificing my wife and children, all my brothers and sisters, and my relatives. If the Unification Church members, who follow and emulate the heavenly tradition, don't know the way to go and are neglectful of their attitude and conduct,

they will bring their nation into ruin. I expect that some of you will collapse in front of me. (185-63, 1989.1.1)

Those of you here that say that they will become the head of a political party, are assuming that the political party belongs to you. Unless I help to unite North and South Korea, everything will collapse. That's why we need to breakthrough at the local level. Do you understand? If you live for the sake of your hometown, don't you think you will be successful on the entire local level, representing your tribe? You will breakthrough completely. Even this satanic world won't be a problem. When we talk about local breakthrough, this is what we mean. (185-128, 1989.1.3)

During my lifetime, I must accomplish liberation and thereby set heaven and earth free. In this next three-year course, we need to push the destiny of the Unification of North and South Korea forward, and express our resolve. To achieve this goal, we have to embrace the 40 million people of this nation. We aren't trying to take over the leadership of the political parties. We are trying to become the mothers and fathers, the brothers and sisters of the people. We call this kind of campaign strategy, the local breakthrough movement. To achieve this, we need to have a heart and mind like God's. (197-104, 1990.1.7)

During these next three years, you should only look at the earth, forgetting about heaven. You should be willing to go to the very bottom of hell and, by engaging in local area activities as I have asked you, have each family come to feel the love of God. Why are families blocked? It is because they don't fulfill their responsibility. You must tear down this wall through the process of restoration through indemnity. You should change the bloodline. You should prune everyone back and engraft them. In this way, you should undertake activities that can be carried out throughout the country. (197-109, 1990.1.7)

All decisions rest with me. I'm going to cut off the bad eggs. That's why we need a local breakthrough movement. That is the way to become an owner. If you don't do that, then you can't even be a servant. This is the way to catch Kim Il-sung, and the way to save the nation. These days the Communist Party groups are all active in the local areas. These local areas should be managed by me. No matter how famous a college professor may be, being a college professor will not do.

Therefore, you must focus your mind. You should be ahead of any patriot in the Republic of Korea, and you should be ahead of any patriot in North Korea. Once we organize a local breakthrough movement, then Kim Il-sung will be gone. Don't you think so? Aren't the laborers and the farmers the people who are at the local level? They are the poor people. That is why I have been saying, "Don't spend the money on the church center! Spend it on the local area." If you act in this way, even if you become pres-

ident, no one will oppose you. Do you understand? (198-348, 1990.2.11)

What is restoration? Where must we return to? No matter how high I go in all the places under heaven, I have to come down according to circular movement, and the bottom of the cycle is the family. This is the local breakthrough. What is a local breakthrough? It means we have to restore everything that was originally invaded, culturally, through the lineage, and through the lifestyles of all the families in the satanic world. That's how the word "breakthrough" came about. (204-118, 1990.7.1)

Through your local breakthrough activities, you should hold revival meetings. Then you will have set up a vertical foundation. This breakthrough movement is horizontal. Therefore, if your family makes an exact ninety-degree angle, then your family can cry out and say that my mother and father are a true mother and true father, and my son and daughter are a true son and true daughter. It will then be the end of the satanic realm in this earthly world. Since it started in the family, then it must be restored in the family. The purpose of the local breakthrough movement is to restore the lineage of the satanic world. It is to restore the families of the satanic world and to digest all ways of thinking. This is the end stage. (208-344, 1990.11.21)

The local breakthrough is what we are making an effort to do. I have climbed back up from the Fall, which took place in the family, and multiplied this to the world level, and has completely laid the foundation to restore the family. Therefore, let us go out and visit all the families of Korea and rectify the relationship of all the love of Satan's side, which has been deeply rooted in those families. This is what we call breakthrough. Here we can see the concept of a struggle. The word "breakthrough" means to completely burn up all traces of the devil. We must restore these things. Therefore, when we attend God as the new family, from that point on unity will automatically take place. (209-232, 1990.11.29)

The local breakthrough activity that I am proposing today, centering on the city of Seoul, is for you to make sons and daughter of true parents at the family level. Make couples that can uphold the love of true parents in the family. Then you must revive the one world, one nation, and one tribe which were lost, centering on the standard of the grandfathers and grandmothers, fathers and mothers, husbands and wives, and sons and daughters who should have been formed through the love of God – those God has wanted to see all these years. After having done this, you must declare that the world has become a place where you can love and embrace the people of the world as your own sons and daughters. Only when you do this will the realm of liberation of the earth begin. Therefore, this evil world, this world of darkness, is moving backwards in retreat, and a new world of light is coming. When I tried to open this door, heaven made me

undergo the course of persecution for the world and the course of persecution for the nation. Aren't all the presidents here indebted to me? The people who opposed me are now naturally coming to submission. (210-42, 1990.11.30)

We have to breakthrough on the local level. We must fulfill the historical desire of God. The things that went wrong starting from the family must be reversed from the family. The heavenly nation must come about through a nation. In order to come about, it has to happen through a true man and a true woman. It will come from a family that is in opposition to the satanic world. That is why everyone opposes the Unification Church. They even oppose the words "True Parents." Then what kind of parents have there been until now? Isn't it the opposite of true parents? Am I telling you that the parents that gave birth to you are false parents? From God's side, that is correct. It is also correct from Satan's side. Therefore, if we emphasize True Parents, then Satan retreats. Why? Because God views them as important. (210-91, 1990.12.1)

You must sow the seeds of life. With your utmost sincerity you should dig up the earth and level it, and then scatter the seeds of life. In ten or twenty years, that will become your branch, and suddenly you will notice that a nest has been built. As this grows bigger and bears fruit, enabling you to go to the heavenly nation, you will be able to go to the highest place in that nation, the place nearest to God! Amen. This is why we must breakthrough at the local level. (210-98, 1990.12.1)

Why must you breakthrough at the local level? Up until now, where does the history of restoration return to from the fallen world? It must return through the gates of the True Parents. The things that came through the gate and multiplied must all turn back and go up to the starting point in Eden through the gates of the True Parents. Who is this main stream group that turns back and climbs up? It is the members of the Unification Church. When you turn and go back up, you won't need things from your past life. We must thoroughly cleanse everything that Satan made dirty and make them as clear as crystal. You must have a mind and body of true love that is as pure as distilled water and become people who have the confidence to say that they are the inheritors of true love, and that you will become the princes and princesses of the heavenly nation that will appear on this earth. (211-129, 1990.12.29)

In the phrase local breakthrough, the Korean word for breakthrough is *gyeok-pa*, which is a word used in battle. What battle is that? It is our effort to remove all the bad habits of this satanic world. Dispose of these bad habits, and by absolutely establishing here the habits of the heavenly side, the Kingdom of Heaven centering on true love will be perfected! Amen. Those elite troops that took part in declaring the coming of a new dawn in history, as such elite soldiers

and eldest sons and daughters, are the brave soldiers of the local breakthrough. (213-53, 1991.1.13)

Section 2. The Local Level Is the Last Fortress of Victory and Defeat

Why must we breakthrough now on the local level? The Fall happened in the family, not in the neighborhood. Do you understand? It's the *tong* and *ban* (local community and home neighborhood). The family is the center of the local neighborhood; we must breakthrough in the family.

The mothers and fathers must absolutely believe in God, and God must love the sons and daughters as much as the mothers and fathers do. You must love your relatives in your local neighborhood and your nation from the position connected to and centered upon the three great loves which are centered on God's love – filial love, parental love and conjugal love. From here, the direction for the realm of unity can be created. Do you understand? (173-178, 1989.2.14)

The standard now is to breakthrough at the local level. In Jesus' time, he could not establish the domains of the family and tribe. But today, centering upon the families of the Unification Church who are completing the tribal domain, the liberation of the realm of the worldwide tribal domain will take place from all four directions. I see this as the condition that can spread the realm of liberation of the local level throughout the world. You should know that it is for this reason that I am directing you today and asking for your pledge. (166-259, 1987.6.7)

The most important thing is where to put down our roots. The place where these roots should take hold is not within the organizational body of the province. Under the province is the county, and under the county there are townships and villages, but these have become easy targets, and so here Satan has laid the grounds to come in and set up his temporary residence. For this reason, you must plant your roots in your local neighborhood and community. You should know this through the principle. This is the reason the Unification Church must set the goal of local breakthrough as its single goal. There is only one goal in restoration. Humanity has only one goal towards perfection, regardless of whether it is or was in the past era, the present era, or the future era. It starts from individual perfection. In the same way, in order to achieve unity, we must set up a rock-solid foundation, centering on the local level. (171-299, 1988.1.2)

The reason that the Republic of Korea is failing now is because it isn't educating its citizens centering on *tong* and *ban* organizations. It pulls all the strings, but its control hasn't reached as far as the county level. Everything is just being passed back and forth in the provinces, and the executive offices have made organizations and through them have only exhausted the national treasury. This shouldn't be happening. Everything

should be invested centering on the local leaders, and this is where we need to succeed. In this way, we must protect the family. We really have to protect the family. In order to save the nation, we must protect the cells of the nation and then multiply these cells. Each cell should be armed with a system of thought and resolve to be united with the neighboring village and with each other as they grow. This resolve and effort are of great significance. In this way, you should link together. (165-50, 1987.5.19)

The local breakthrough movement that we are unfolding is not for a political purpose, but is our effort to make sure that there is a system of thought and a structure that can correspond to the time of the unification of North and South Korea. The Communist party moves with a structure, so let's prepare our position to be well matched with theirs. (Unification of North and South Korea - 664)

This is an important final hurdle. I have prayed throughout my life that we would win over the *tong* and *ban* centering on districts and township. Only by doing so, can we take complete hold of the satanic world. We are not trying to take over something large, such as the central government building in Seoul or any other city. We are trying to influence the *tong* and *ban*, centering on the districts and then assimilate the *tong* and *ban* centered on the townships. Then everything else will be included. From the VIPs down to the most simple people, transcending class, everyone is included through the local level activities. Therefore, the district and regional church leaders should not focus on the provinces but in the leaders of the *tong* and *ban*. Centering on the district, the stage for your activities is the *tong* and *ban*. (167-10, 1987.6.14)

Until now, each administrative authority in the Republic of Korea has never had the experience of carrying out its political or educational directives centered on *tong* and *ban*. It has never carried out education on a national level. It has been unable to advocate its ideology. It has only been able to gather together the city mayors or the county officials, and maybe one or two other people from the local neighborhoods. The main target for ideological education has not been the leaders of *tong* and *ban*. Therefore, there are no roots. It means that no roots were put down here. That's the point; there are no roots. It's just like a floating weed. (165-224, 1987.5.27)

The first problem is breaking through to the leaders of the *tong* and *ban*. The next problem is to breakthrough at the township level, and even the village level. When we do that we will be perfectly organized. (165-19, 1987.5.19)

The way in which we integrate the local neighborhoods with the local communities will determine the success or failure of our movement. The whole problem is in the homes. What can mobilize people during elections? Focusing on cities or mayors will not work. Working

with a focus on the heads of counties will not work. The issue here is to have an organization that moves the local neighborhood, centering on the leaders of the *tong* and *ban*. (165-17, 1987.5.19)

Is it a difficult thing or an easy thing to digest this centering on the leaders of the *tong* and *ban*? If you form a structure, will it be easy or difficult? This is why I am telling you to have confidence. This is something anyone, even a mere child, would not have a problem with. In fact, it's not a problem. If you can just properly set up the leaders of *tong* and *ban*, then it will not take long. (165-323, 1987.5.27)

Even if you cannot come to the front line where I am fighting, you must still overcome the crest of tears and settle down centering on the *tong* and *ban*. We must overcome this sorrowful fate, this fallen fate. If we do not do this, heaven will not co-operate with us. Heaven will not move there. Heaven will leave. (166-172, 1987.6.5)

While carrying out this activity, you should expect to go through several pairs of shoes. For you to reach the leaders of *tong* and *ban*, driving a car won't do. You have to walk. Even if you go through a few pairs of shoes, work on foot. See what happens if you sweat and try knocking on doors three or four times a day. Most of the time you have probably only knocked once, right? If you go to the *tong* and *ban* and give a few lectures within one day and get soaked with sweat, then you'll have to take a shower. Try it and see! Try it and see if heaven helps you or not. See if you still feel on fire or not. Try it and see if my words are true or false. (167-40, 1987.6.14)

Centering on me, you must go out and become sentinels who breakthrough in all the *tong* and *ban*, and who should all emit the same light. Even if you can't emit more than the others, you should at least have the same color light. Would it be alright if you shed red light when you are suppose to shed blue light? Even yellow light would still be wrong. Everyone should shine with the same color light. (167-40, 1987.6.14)

The points that I am instructing you to focus on are very clear. They deal with breaking through to the leaders of *tong* and *ban* in South Korea. Only when at least one member of the church becomes either the leader of a *tong* or *ban*, will the members of the church become the group that will be remembered by heaven. (166-253, 1987.6.7)

Our goal is simple, isn't it? We need to make at least one member a leader of a *tong* or *ban* no matter how we do it, even if we have to yell and scream. Then all activities will be arranged at this level. Even the University students are doing this. (165-305, 1987.5.27)

It's okay if we firmly grab hold of the family. Aren't all people bound to a family? If we catch the family, then the members of the National Assembly, the

ministers and vice-ministers of the cabinet, and even the president in the Blue House, all will be caught. You should all become leaders of *tong* and *ban*. Don't you agree? If the members of the National Assembly, the important statesmen of the country, the cabinet members, and even the staff members of the military will all become mobilized through the leaders of the *tong* and *ban* movement, then everything will be completed. We can then work without a fight. Do you understand? (167-21, 1987.6.14)

For us, the government is not the issue. What we are trying to do is to find a nation. We are aiming to grab hold of *tong* and *ban*. If we do that, then the difficulty of finding that nation will automatically be solved. (167-24, 1987.6.14)

What is it that we must do now? Within the North Korean system you cannot make a breakthrough at the *tong* and *ban* level. No matter how many underground operations North Korea may do, it cannot penetrate down to the *tong* and *ban* level. Its point and line organizations are organized through its administration, but it cannot breakthrough to the *tong* and *ban* level. Once the breakthrough movement is successful, then everyone will be caught up in it. Everything will collapse. Point, line and the entire espionage system will be caught. This means that we are doing what cannot be done by North Korea. When the communist party comes down, we should have this in place and then we just hang our heads down. The 40 million people of South Korea should all go into North Korea carrying bundles of presents and bring about the result in the same way as when Jacob brought Esau to submission. If we take all the property we have accumulated for 21 years to North Korea and say, "Elder brother, this is all yours," and then give everything, North Korea will completely submit to us. (172-97, 1988.1.9)

What is it that we should do now, centering on the Citizen Federation? The only thing left is to do is the breakthrough at the *tong* and *ban* level. We are making a structure in order to do this breakthrough movement. We are organizing structures for the centralized areas, provinces, counties, and townships. Everything moves centering on the township. If you look from the viewpoint of the *tong* and *ban*, then the structure of the nation is like a big circle. The structure of the province is the next circle, and next is the structure of the county. The next circle is the structure of the township. Viewed centered on *ban*, then the *tong* is the next circle. Restoration goes forward from the restoration of the individual to the restoration of the family, the tribe, the people, the nation, and the restoration of the world. In the same way, when we look at the way things are structured, we see that every nation has its national organization similar to the Citizens' Federation. There are provincial organizations, and then organizations of the county, township, village, local community and neighborhood (*Tong-ban*). This is the structure of the current national orga-

nizations of Korea. Then what does a local neighborhood (*ban*) represent? Of course it represents the local community, but it has two purposes. The direct purpose is for itself, and then the whole purpose is for the nation. When the *tong* and *ban* local neighborhoods and communities unify, it will lead to the unification of the nation. It has the same organizational structure as that of the human body. (171-299, 1988.1.2)

First we need structure, then unity, and lastly we need action. These are the three elements needed to move the world centering on Korea. By standing within a thoroughly organized realm, you must connect 100 percent to all directions. Furthermore, you should establish this standard, leading the way, in order to fulfill you central mission. You must determine your position within the organized realm. If you don't have a position, then there is nowhere for you to sit down. You can push ahead only after your position has been decided. You will be able to see how your position is developing based on your effort. Deciding the position is an important part of strengthening the power of the organization. (15-191, 1965.10.9)

Section 3. The *Tong-ban* Movement Is the Strategy to Unite North and South Korea.

We are in the position to unite the world centering on Korea. What has to happen here in Korea? We need to restore the birthright of the eldest son. The Korean people are saying, "Let's go forward and unite Korea centering on Rev. Moon." That's the kind of image we have. Even the President should cooperate and not oppose us. Seen from the viewpoint of the Cain and Abel relationship, from now on my words should be listened to.

Additionally, because three positions are being formed, on the day we breakthrough and get firm control of the *tong* and *ban* (community and local neighborhood), people will grab our heels while we daydream, and entreat us saying, "Oh Lord, please save me." Am I not the king of wisdom? The question is how we can live in such a good way that we can accomplish this and not collapse when we are cursed at. (199-87, 1990.2.15)

We will do *tong ban* activities. We will dig up and demolish with our own hands those spies that are hiding underground. We will expel the communists. We will locate and trace those who communicate and liaise nightly with North Korea. We will gradually invest more deeply into this operation from now on. We will complete the *tong ban* breakthrough organization by incorporating the spirit and energy of loyal citizens who are more passionate than any "special attack" corps of Kim Il-sung. When that happens, either Kim Il-sung will die or some other kind of problem will arise. Kim Il-sung should not die until we complete the formation of the Unification Church organization. Do you understand what I mean? (199-140, 1990.2.16)

Have you ever tried skipping even one lunch for the sake of the Unification of North and South Korea? What have you come here to do? To break through with *Tong-ban* activities. If a unified election of North and South Korea (initiated by the North before we are prepared) is proposed and carried out, the heavenly kingdom will fall down hopelessly. Do you know what kind of age is coming? You need to know this. (200-156, 1990.2.24)

When I travel around doing that kind of work and I arrive in Korea, should I encourage you to live a life of ease? What should you do? If Koreans cannot work well, they should be expelled. In July of this year, all the Unification Church members should do forty days of witnessing. This time period was set up traditionally from 1956 as the time period for training people to inherit the spirit of pioneering. These days, do we do this every year? After arranging everyone at the national border along the 38th parallel, I will have them play holy songs on a bugle everyday in the direction of Pyongyang. I'll use loudspeakers so we can be heard as far away as Pyongyang. In this manner, we must all blow on our bugles, heralding the fall of communism. We have many such resources to do that, don't we? We must make a clean sweep. Since you have not become the people who have fulfilled the tong ban breakthrough, you shall be sent to the appraisal unit which will appraise your work! Amen. You shall be sent! Amen. (201-316, 1990.4.29)

The Unification Church does *tong ban* breakthrough activities, doesn't it? Since the start of the history of restoration, I have passed through the individual level foundation, which Satan invaded first, and then the family, tribe, people, nation levels, and as far as the world level. I must prevail over America and the communists, and then turn around and come back. I am coming back, but Korea opposed me, didn't it? Now the country is not doing well. People are competing with one another, trying to run for president. So let them fight to become president. Going around, following the way of natural law and wrapped in heavenly fortune, I return to embrace the nation. This is how I am returning. While the nation is losing its people, Rev. Moon of the Unification Church is able to influence all the citizens of Korea. (202-243, 1990.5.24)

When the Israeli people left Egypt to restore the blessed land of Canaan, they went to their tribal members several times and told them the way they should go. They told them that they must liberate the satanic world. Now we have entered that age, and so we should liberate people. We must set that tradition. (202-304, 1990.5.25)

You should not skip even one house. It is now that kind of age. That's why I've created the phrase *tong ban* breakthrough. Until this day dawns, you must walk day and night to reach even one more house forgetting that you are tired. You must go north, south, east

and west, traveling in a complete circle at least three times. I am telling you to go out and visit every house, even more than three times. When you go back now, what should you do? You should carry out your breakthrough activities with more zeal than North Korea. Only by doing this can we can pull out the roots.

The National Council of Student Representatives, the Christian Farmers Association and the Catholic Farmers Association are so eager to demonstrate, aren't they? Do any of you work harder than that in your *tong ban* breakthrough activities? You should work harder than they do. (202-304, 1990.5.25)

You must achieve the Unification of North and South Korea by embracing the most pitiful, lowliest family in Korea and raising it up. Where does unification start? It won't start with summit meetings between the president and Kim Il-sung. So we must do these breakthrough activities at the *tong ban* level. The term "*tong ban* breakthrough" means to prevail over the *tong* and *ban*. The *tong* and *ban* are organizations looking only after themselves. The mothers and fathers also look only after themselves. Husbands and children are part of a world in which they only look out for themselves. Satan is crouching there, so we must subdue him. (204-53 1990.6.29)

Shouldn't your country be united? That's why we are now preparing for an election for the unification of North and South Korea. That's why we must breakthrough at the *tong* and *ban* levels. We must find a nation to restore the world. Where do we have to begin? We must do it centered on Korea. A long time ago, in the very beginning, I started from the top working through Kyungmoo-dae (the former Presidential office) and expanding to such places as Ewha Women's and Yonsei Universities. But because I could not gain a place at the top, I came down. If you cannot reach the top, you must go to the very bottom. Satan knows that. Because Satan knew that I could not get a position at the top, and that I was coming down to land at the very bottom, he attacked me and tried to prevent me from coming down. That is why I mentioned the creation of a new party. (204-182, 1990.7.8)

We have arrived at the age of settlement centering on the *tong ban* breakthrough activities and must return to our hometowns. My elder brother knew that Korea was being liberated on the fifteenth of August. That elder brother of mine was absolutely obedient to my words. I was unable to say even one word of the Principle to my elder brother, mother, or father. I have given love to all of you more than to my own mother and father. My whole life has been filled with a story of living for the sake of the entire Unification Church and shedding tears of blood. I am going forward completing the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, and world levels. If I do not fulfill each of these levels, then Satan will not weaken. Therefore, I went to America and underwent the way of suffering all kinds of hardships. Now I am preparing

to save the Soviet Union. I have achieved everything at this time, and am returning to my homeland and starting *tong ban* breakthrough activities. (203-252, 1990.6.26)

As you are doing your *tong ban* breakthrough activities, you should gain the support of 12 families. When you go to a district, you should gain the support of 12 local communities, and when you go to a local community you should integrate twelve home neighborhoods. There are twelve stages. For the most part, haven't the cities, counties and boroughs harmonized with us? There isn't anyone, including the heads of organizations, who doesn't respect Rev. Moon, right? All of you are also respected, right? We have become influential, right? So, you are people of influence, but are you the central figure of influence or not? We're the only ones who can prevail over the communists, right? So we have become the central figures of influence. (204-245, 1990.7.11)

Through our *tong ban* breakthrough activities, the spies who have infiltrated into South Korea will automatically be exposed. Isn't that right? If you roll over once, then everything hiding under you skirt will be shown. (204-321, 1990.7.11)

I have brought together Unification Church members who are like a group of worn-out beggars in the midst of persecution, and single-handedly made the preparations that could block the attack of the communists in every way. Standing on the establishment of an ideological foundation, I have created a value system that could hold its own against the communists on the national level. That is why I have advocated the *tong ban* breakthrough work for five years. Yet who among you really understood its value and understood the age that we are in? And who among you made the effort to defend this with the shield of your mind and body, taking responsibility in a substantial way? Only I have done so. (207-292, 1990.11.11)

The Unification Church must now ready itself to bring about the unification of North and South Korea from the position of Abel. But the Unification Church is not totally settled yet. What does *tong ban* breakthrough mean? It means we must overturn everything centering on the families of the land of South Korea. Why? Because the Fall started from the family, we must change the thinking of people on the family level. However, before God can find the environmental conditions to accomplish this, the external world of Satan's side uses all of its energy to oppose God's efforts. Until now the political environment, starting from the era of the Liberal Party, and then moving on to the era of the Republican Party and the Democratic and Justice Party, have opposed the Unification Church's efforts to organize itself and spread out into the countryside. They have opposed the settlement of our church. (207-330, 1990.11.11)

Why have I told you to carry out *tong*

ban breakthrough activities for the past five years? It was to prepare for this time, and that time is now and will only come once. What else can Kim Il-sung do? Therefore, even if the American troops don't withdraw from Korea, he will suggest having an election. Then that will be the end. Does South Korea have a counterproposal or an alternative plan? Has it laid a foundation to protect itself from this? The two Koreas just fight against each other, spreading muck everywhere and making a mess. They have so much diarrhea that it's about to make a hole in their intestines, but they don't have any medicine, do they? This kind of thing you need to clean up with a wooden shovel, but we're not the ones to clear up this mess. It has to be done by the citizens of this country. We must teach them how to do it. Or, if not, they should follow us… That is the only path to follow. Now, if Cain and Abel don't become one, then there is no way to go forward. Now you know this clearly. (207-334, 1990.11.11)

Although I received all kinds of abuse, I did not collapse. Rather, with an optimistic attitude, holding onto these successful *tong ban* families I am working to make all the families in the world into this same model. When I reach that position, no devils will be able to approach me or to leave any signs. Where is Kim Il-sung? Where are the communists who were active in the underground movement working? Everything will be cleaned up. (210-45, 1990.11.30)

From now on, you must work for the *tong ban* breakthrough work for ten years. *Tong-ban* breakthrough means to occupy the family centering on North and South Korea. Until now God has sprinkled His grace on earth throughout history. He has hoped that it would bear fruit, but it could not. Of course, God's grace was spread through the realms of religion, enabling its benefits to spread throughout the world. But now the time has come to harvest the fruits. (210-273, 1990.12.25)

What is the *tong ban* breakthrough activity which we are doing? It is to unite North and South Korea. Then in the name of God and True Parents and centering on the realm of victory of all nations, we must offer up the Republic of Korea to God, as the restored homeland of all peoples. Here, democrats and communists are one. If we look at true parents and false parents, from God's viewpoint they are not enemies. It is no good if Kim Il-sung dies. Now our group is meeting with Kim Il-sung. Even the National Intelligence Service doesn't know this. My actions may contravene the anti-communist law. I have done many activities like that in the past. I did the same in Japan, America and also the Soviet Union. I invested in all these countries. (211-127, 1990.12.29)

We must get rid of all the communist bases in South Korea through the tong ban breakthrough activities. Do you understand? Where does the tide go first? It's no good if you go to the district. You must go to the family. You

must fill up the family, then the local communities, then the districts and counties. And when Seoul is completely filled, when the entire Republic of Korea is full, only then can we fill up the Blue House. When the time comes to die, the president should be the last one to die. Those that wish the president to die before them are vagabonds, they are villains. If a person becomes president, you should respect and attend him. (211-211, 1990.12.30)

We must take a leading position in the five provinces and 10 million people of North Korea and connect them to our church. If these people, together with the 40 million people of South Korea, listen to me, it is possible to unite the Christians and the people of North and South Korea. Therefore, you should know that a speedy tong ban breakthrough movement is a short-cut plan for the unification of North and South Korea. Any other way will not work. (211-356, 1991.1.1)

If we just breakthrough at the *tong ban* level at this time, then what will Kim Il-sung do? I promised God, "I will take care of the communists with my own two hands!" and I have taken care of them completely. The last thing left is Kim Il-sung, but he cannot succeed even if he invades South Korea. The only way for Kim Il-sung to survive is to have an election. Even if he loses the election, do you think everyone will try to catch and kill him? If he wants to stay alive, that is the only way. We must actively promote this work. (213-152, 1991.1.16)

Now is the end. I am looking forward to 1992. Centering on me, have all of you joined together as trinities? The people who are organized centering on the district, local community and township are in trinities and those centered on me are in a four-position foundation. There is no boss. Our focus is *tong ban* (local community and neighborhood). The district and township are the stage for our activities. Where is the nation? If we plan centering on the nation, then that nation will collapse. If the province collapses, then so does the nation. If the county collapses, then so does the nation. The best way to be safe is to go out to the local community and township.

If the North Korean regime was to occupy any place, where would that place be? Will they occupy the district or township? They don't see the point of occupying the district or of occupying the *tong* and *ban*. They would occupy the Capitol Building, the provinces and counties. They would not even go to the townships. Don't you think so? A long time ago, did Kim Il-sung's groups come to the townships to fight? Didn't they just skip the towns and still take control of everything? Townships are the safety zones. (215-91, 1991.2.6)

Section 4. The *Tong-ban* Breakthrough Must be Centered on Families

You should make video tapes about the True Parents, and through the church president hold a True Parents

declaration convention in the 12 regions going all the way to the villages. The reason you should do that is because the family is the base for restoration through indemnity. We aren't primarily concerned about districts. The districts are not the families. Since we start from the family and go up to the tribe and then the race, the combination of families is the foundation for tribal restoration. Therefore, that which we call the *tong ban* (local communities and home neighborhoods) breakthrough connects the fortune of the world to that of the nation, the fortune of the nation to that of the tribe, the fortune of the tribe to that of the family, and the fortune of the family to that of the individual. (205-334, 1990.10.2)

That which we call *tong ban* (local community and home neighborhood) breakthrough is the family foundation. We must do it! There is no other way around it. Isn't the family foundation the place where the most precious new buds of the Republic of Korea come from? Sons and daughters! Don't you think so? That's where the buds of a nation form. It has to be where the buds of the heavenly nation should form. It's where your sons and daughters come from, right? Aren't your sons and daughters people of the heavenly nation? The place where the people of God are born and produced is only on this planet Earth. There are no people living on other stars or planets. (205-357, 1990.10.2)

Seeing that some members of our Unification Church were interested in running for office, I shouted furiously at them, "What on earth are you doing?" What might have happened if one of you ran for office? I even heard a report that the Republican Party asked for ten or so people to be nominated. The way to be influential is not through ruling the government. It starts from inside your home. The providence of salvation doesn't begin from the top. It begins in the family. The sincere investment and zeal of 30 million people has to land in all the families. That's why we have to breakthrough at the *tong ban* level. The district and town need to come down to the local communities and villages, and the local communities and villages need to come down to the home neighborhoods. For this reason, the base of all the Unification Church activities is each individual home. We must plant a seed there, and it will sprout a love greater than the love of your mother and father. There, a new shoot will sprout centering on the descendants who have the heart of future parents that is greater than their own heart, which will be planted within the realm of the family along with the heart of God. (208-160, 1990.11.17)

Since we have to work for the *tong ban* breakthrough, you must return to your homes. Adam and Eve started out as a man and woman, and became defiled as a son and daughter. So in order to get this situation under control, we must return to the family. You must seek out your tribe and relatives and wash them by investing your blood, sweet, and

tears. Don't wash them with water. Only when you wash them by investing your blood, sweat, and tears will you be successful. Unless you enter the house and invest your blood, sweet, and tears, restoration will not take place. That way is the way I must go. (208-172, 1990.11.17)

It is *Tong-ban* breakthrough. What does *tong ban* breakthrough mean? It's the place where God can meet the father He has been longing to see. It's our effort to return to the family. It's our effort to make the mothers and fathers that God has been longing for. It's our effort to make the sons and daughters God has been longing for. It's our effort to make the aunts and uncles that God has been longing for. This is my desire. This is God's desire. Whose desire is this? It's the desire of the Great Supervisor who created heaven and earth. Who will truly take up and set about doing the work of accomplishing this Being's desire? Are all of you in your homes the type of parents that God wants to see? That's the problem. The term *tong ban* breakthrough is not just a passing phrase. The fact that Adam and Eve could not become a true father and mother that God wished to see is a cause of deep pain for God. The fact that they could not become a true son and daughter, nor a true couple, and the fact that they could not become true grandchildren, is a source of bitter grief for God. Where did this go wrong? It happened in the family. Therefore, you should feel that you must heal this bitter pain in your own family. Only by healing this pain will liberation start to expand to heaven and earth. (209-44, 1990.11.25)

What should we be doing now? We should be doing *tong ban* breakthrough activities. Because God lost the family, knowing that Korea is the base of the heavenly kingdom between heaven and earth, and since Korea is the original homeland where I was born, I must return to the hometown of Korea. The hope of all of heaven and earth and the hope of the Creator is the formation of a family which can become one leaf and branch, the family that can be a place of origin to embrace grandfathers and grandmothers, fathers and mothers, couples, and children whom God wishes to find, the family who can twist open the great vein between heaven and earth. Knowing this, and because we should find what was lost in the family and replant it, I have advocated the *tong ban* breakthrough for the past five years. When all this is finished, then we won't have to worry about who becomes president in the future. The time is coming when we'll be able to act according to our heart's desire. (209-108, 1990.11.27)

The short-cut for liberating North and South Korea is *tong ban* breakthrough activities. When you go searching from family to family, you should be able to pour out heartfelt tears in the same way that you would cry and grab hold of your lost mother or father, cousins, or relatives in North Korea, when you meet them. When this kind of heartfelt relationship forms an environment that can accom-

pany God, then through you, that family will be born as a loving family which God wants to find. You should know that I do this work because I understand that the day of liberation, surrounded by cries of joy, is approaching in front of my eyes. All of you gathered here must have the mission as the messengers of heart from God, after passing through a relationship of true brothers and sisters and becoming the envoys who want to form families of love, and for whom God has been looking. Become the embodiment of older brothers who can do that, the older sisters who can do that, the aunts and uncles, the mothers and fathers, the grandmothers and grandfathers who can do that mission, and bring the family under heavenly influence. My message today to all of you, who will be God's representatives by investing your bodies and by being responsible for the districts, neighborhoods and communities, *tong ban* is to start from the city of Seoul to build a family foundation upon which you can welcome and attend God. Let's pledge to do this! (209-111, 1990.11.27)

How precious is the family? The family represents the nation. The family represents the world. Therefore, on this 3,000-*ri* peninsula of Korea, you must love the grandmothers and grandfathers as if they were your own grandfather and grandmother, and you must love them like God wants to love them. All the people who are like your own parents, you must love them the way God wants to love a mother and father. As a person who is the embodiment of God's love, you should love all the women who are like your wife, the way God wants to love a couple. You should love all the people who are like your son or daughter, brother or sister, in the way that God wants to love them. Centering on this kind of ideal of love, you must take that standard of heart and mind that God has been looking for, and invest them for the sake of the world. Then you must invest again.

When you do that, you will become the son or daughter of inheritance who can carry out God's work in His place, and you will become a soldier of independence in the creation of a nation and a world. Now that you know this fact clearly, all of you must return to your homes and completely turn them around. This constitutes the *tong ban* breakthrough. You must turn the family around. This is our duty. (209-172, 1990.11.28)

What is the *tong ban* breakthrough activity? It's going out and searching for your home. Even though I fully possess the realm of world-wide victory, where shall I place this gift? Not in the nation. Before I give it to the nation, I must place in and plant it in the family, because that is where everything was lost. We must spread the seeds in the family. We must not spread them to the people of the nation. That's why I say *tong ban* breakthrough, family settlement!" It doesn't mean the settlement of the communists. By doing this, everything that was heading towards the ruin of the nation, everything that was headed for hell until now, can be returned to heaven. That kind of

age is coming. From here, I have struck the satanic world. On the day we turn this around, the unification of North and South Korea will automatically be achieved. We will be completely one in front of a plus. Spirit world will be mobilized and everything will be swept away. (209-307, 1990.11.30)

When I went into North Korea from South Korea and then returned three years later, I remember that it took me over five years to shake off the habits I formed in North Korea. When we consider this, we should know that unless we grieve and repent and writhe in despair, we cannot eliminate the habits we've inherited from the history of Satan's tradition. When I say writhe in despair, I don't mean that you do it by yourself, but mean that you go into the battlefield as officially directed and writhe in despair during the course of your *tong ban* breakthrough activities. If you do this, then you should know that this process will be greatly reduced. You should become wise sons and daughters who willingly face and walk along this path. (213-56, 1991.1.13)

The issue is *tong ban* activities. That is why, if you don't bring victory starting from the family, it won't work. The economic problems, the political problems, the cultural problems, the religious problems, problems of ideology, everything should be solved in the family or things won't work out well. (213-341, 1991.1.21)

I created a company named, Happy Mind, which in Korean is *Haeng bok eui Ma-eum*. It is a company I have developed and invested in continually for seven years. What does this company do? It is for the organization of the Home Church. This organization should be connected to the *tong ban* breakthrough activities and should try to win over the families. Once you win them over, then everything will be possible. There is no better foundation that exists for the mobilization of the masses. (213-299, 1991.1.21)

Now a great battle is unfolding in the Unification Church. *Tong-ban* breakthrough! In order to find the things which were lost by Adam and Eve in the family, we must return to the family. You must go back to your family members and turn them around 180 degrees. You must turn them around 180 degrees. (214-69, 1991.2.1)

The roots that Adam and Eve planted in the family gave rise to an evil family and expanded to an evil tribe, evil people, evil nation, and an evil world. Therefore, we must replant the roots. This is the theory of *tong ban* (neighborhood and community) breakthrough that we are working on now in Korea. (214-237, 1991.2.2)

What era is it now? It's the time of family settlement in the *tong ban* activities. This is the direction I'm giving. This is an important work that determines life or death, and it's the battle to decide

if we win or lose everything under heaven. (218-34, 1991.7.1)

We are going forward with our *tong ban* activities, crossing through the township level starting from the county, to the province, and to the nation. Adam and Eve deceived, and so everything that was deceived must be returned to its original position. (233-121, 1992.7.31)

In order to carry out the *tong ban* activities, I've instructed you to do Home Church these past fourteen years. I mentioned *tong ban* activities five years ago. What was this? I was crying out about the *tong ban* breakthrough, which you are working on today. Where must the roots come down to? They must come down to the family. Today, the countries of the world have been unable to come down to the family. They tried, but couldn't even come down to the township level. But how far down should we of the Unification Church have to go? We must go as far as the local neighborhood *ban* level. (238-323, 1992.11.22)

Starting with the family we have to save the nation. That movement is the *tong ban* breakthrough movement. That's why I'm telling you to go into the *tong* and *ban* (local communities and home neighborhoods). You must lead neighborhood meetings. We must implant our roots in each family by working through the neighborhood meetings. (238-334, 1992.11.22)

I have emphasized a movement for making the foundation of peace in the family. These things must also be taught in that way.

Through the neighborhood meetings of your *tong ban* activities, you should educate people to attend their grandparents as they would God, to attend their mother and father as king and queen, and educate the young people to become princes and princesses. Once you implant such a philosophy, the satanic world has nowhere to turn. Then this will connect directly with heaven. (238-336, 1992.11.22)

The Providence of Restoration must return to the family. It won't work if it doesn't return to the family. Even if it goes to the tribe, it won't work. It must return to the family. Adam and Eve fell in the family. The place where sons and daughters were born centering on Adam and Eve is the family, so if we don't come down to the family level, things won't work. If we don't do that, then we can't return to the origin. (207-181, 1990.11.9)

Section 5. Organizational Expansion of *Tong-ban* Activities

5.1. Organizational expansion centering on people of social eminence

This time we must complete our *tong ban* (local community and home neighborhood) activities. We must go after those people who oppose us and get them to repent by any means, and then pull them to our side. You should

consider this more seriously than the election campaign and carry it out. Do you understand? Now we're entering the period of the decisive battle. (208-70, 1990.11.15)

We should get the friends of those who went to be trained in America, or those who consent to be here, or some from certain groups, to come to a conference. As we send three people each to townships, you may add two people to your team who have been recommended by that town. If there are people left over after sending the initial three, arrange each one to go out and team up with three people who were recommended by the township. These would then be teams of four people.

The initial three-person unit is not a fixed number. The larger the number, the more quickly *tong ban* and township breakthroughs are possible, centering on that standard. Therefore, if you organize these teams quickly, then you aid local communities. Then, if you can complete your foundation centering on the towns and districts, then you will become the responsible person for coordinating the different districts and towns in the surrounding area. The people who actually fulfill their responsibility will become the central figures over a number of districts and towns. (207-391, 1990.11.11)

What is it that the Republic of Korea has done until now? The politicians have made it impossible for me to come as far down as the family foundation. How many years has it been already? Hasn't it been five years since we started *tong ban* activities? This is the sixth year. We must bring total change to the family, only then will the nation be revived. The answer is not in the towns and districts. Everyone who has the kind of ability should visit families and restore them. (206-358, 1990.10.14)

In the future, if you have no capabilities, you should stop church work and become a branch manager or a McCol soft drink dealer, or something along those lines. I will personally see that this happens. When 1992 is over, I will really arrange everything. At that time, about eight hundred church leaders will emerge in one year. Those of you graduating from Sunghwa University, do you understand? More than five hundred people will come through. And what should I do with those people? I will send them out to every part of your counties. The reason I have not done this so far is because I was being blocked by many satans. Otherwise, I would already have done this eighteen years ago. Even if you all do your *tong ban* breakthrough activities, there would still be something left. If things had happened that way, then we wouldn't have to worry about the Republic of Korea. (206-356, 1990.10.14)

The people we need to utilize and make the most of, are those that went to America for training. There are many such people. The question is; how do we organize these people in key places that are of vital importance? We need to call all these people together and put them

in leadership positions of *tong* and *ban*, so that we can carry out *tong ban* breakthrough activities. They all have houses, don't they? We should make all of them leaders of *ri*, *tong* and *ban* (villages, communities and neighborhoods). (207-373, 1990.11.11)

The next time we have an election, unless my hand is in it, it won't work. How will things happen in the future? I will not make a party. Through the *tong ban* breakthrough activities, centering on the unification of North and South Korea, I will remove, with my own hands, the evil members who stir up distrust and destroy the nation little by little from within. In the same way, if a person becomes the type of person that the nation is looking for, then I will support that person. People who fight over this and quibble, I will have to straighten them out. Should I do this or not? You must live to see a nation worthy of being called a nation, and you should die seeing a National Assembly that is worthy of being a National Assembly, which will take care of the nation.

Therefore, Kim Il-sung cannot just do as he pleases. So, we need to move forward quickly, allowing the *tong ban* breakthrough activities to take root. Just a while ago, how many people did we say we would bring? As soon as you go back, you should bring twelve people and maintain a firm grip on them. Those twelve people should each find another twelve people and keep hold of them. If we just do that, we will hold within our bosoms the entire 73,000 small villages of this country. (204-310, 1990.7.11)

If you make a group large, then the damage will be large. The Unification Church was safe because people thought it wasn't important. Do you understand what I mean? The people we took to America and educated are not connected from the highest to the middle to the lowest. That's why we're trying to weave these people together during this conference. If we can do that, then your *tong ban* breakthrough activities won't be a problem. You should know this. (203-185, 1990.6.24)

If you attend your parents, you are of the same source of love, life, and lineage. It means you will resemble your parents, doesn't it? Then, when you think of the North Korean communists, do you feel infuriated and do you abhor them as much as you dislike the days when it is snowing and raining with sleet? You should feel the same way. You should understand those things, and then pour all your strength and energy into your *tong ban* breakthrough activities. This summer, when I return, I intend to meet all the heads of the counties or whoever is necessary. In the future, when we achieve local self-governance in each area, no one will be able to become a member of the provincial or county government without my hand being involved. (202-119, 1990.5.6)

Will you, or will you not, do your *tong ban* breakthrough activities? For what purpose will you do them? It is

not for my sake. It is for your sons and daughters and mothers and fathers, who you love. The unification of North and South Korea is not just your desire, but it is the desire of your sons and daughters, your wife, and your mother and father. It is a common desire among us, and each of us must be responsible for it. People who say they will not take this responsibility are traitors to the people of this nation. (200-213, 1990.2.25)

Do you want me to supply you with money when you are doing you tong ban breakthrough activities or do you want to supply your own money while you are working? Who is a patriot? Is it the person who works receiving money and a monthly salary, or is it the one who makes the effort to love as he goes the path of hunger, cold and lack of recognition? Answer me! It's the second one, isn't it? Now that you understand this much, please work hard in your tong ban breakthrough activities. (200-213, 1990.2.25)

I have many members of the Japanese National Assembly who are working with me. It's the same here. There are about 180 people that are connected to me. If I were a villain, I could already have totally misused these people for my own gain. I don't want to have anything to do with that.

Some people say, "Look at that Rev. Moon! He's even making an ideology like tong ban breakthrough! It's as if he wants to wrap fishing net around the Republic of Korea and then, with one yank on his fishing net, take out all the fish, roll them up and eat them. In that way he's going to try and run for president." Is that true?! (199-300, 1990.2.21)

What are we doing everyday? Street witnessing! Then, tong ban breakthrough! Should we finish it by June, in a very short time? We should organize the leaders in districts, local communities and home neighborhoods, and then quickly finish the four-day workshop. After that you should quickly go out for a second round. It will be good for people who do this well. Those who don't do so well, the ones who bring no results, will fall away. The goal is 120 people. This is the restoration of the tribe. Therefore, you should act quickly centering on the district to create a church. We must make 3,600 churches very quickly. (198-50, 1990.1.20)

The systemization of the structure for our tong ban breakthrough activities is an urgent matter. (171-297, 1988.1.2)

The thing we must do first at this time is to carry out breakthrough activities at the university level, centering on professors and the Professors' and Students' Federation for Unification. The problem now is how the universities can go forward as one, while keeping a steady direction, centering on the federation. Next is the issue of a mass social movement. We must gather together the leading figures of society, officials of local governments, administration, and political parties of the area. That

way, the teachers should bind together the leading figures of their local society, and the students should bind together the local young people. Then we should have a conference. By having a conference in the major cities, we are breaking through at the local levels. This is called tong ban breakthrough activities. The last battlefield is comprised of these local communities and neighborhoods. Our goal is to perfect the enlightenment of the local leaders. (166-16, 1987.5.26)

The words tong ban breakthrough activities mean to bring the political parties to straighten up, and to get the people who are governing the country to straighten up. (213-91, 1991.1.14)

If people don't listen, you've got to be ready and do whatever it takes. You've got to say, "I'm saying let's save this country so why aren't you doing anything?" In the future, I will have to cut off people who go astray. How? By taking the foundation of the tong ban breakthrough activities, we will connect all this to our election movement. Do you understand what I'm trying to say? (207-375, 1990.11.11)

The reason I have been telling you for many years that you must do tong ban breakthrough activities was in order to utilize that for a certain time period. I saw that such a time was coming. What would have happened if my own operations were not also for the purpose of preparing for this time? What do you think? Something terrible would have happened, don't you think? We almost had a serious situation come about. So all of you should have the awareness that you are prepared and chosen and should go forward thinking, "Even if a typhoon comes, even if an earthquake comes, even if a volcano erupts, I will not be uprooted." You should be like the steel pillars of an iron-clad bastion. We have to move forward in this way. Then spirit world will cooperate with you, and the hearts of the people will naturally come to you. (207-375, 1990.11.11)

5.2. Organizational expansion through local volunteer activities

There are still some battles left to fight. Do you know what my instructions are at this time? You do know the term *tong ban* breakthrough activities? It has been just six years since we started in 1984. *Tong-ban* breakthrough activities: this is the last key point. On the day that we finish this, even politicians will gather around us.

From now on, if people don't listen to what I suggest, then things will not work. Democracy has completely collapsed. Democracy cannot lead the world. I am proposing a new thought. It's called the cosmos-centered philosophy! The time is coming when I will have to instruct people on how to elect the leaders of the nation. (199-75, 1990.2.15)

What is our goal? It is to breakthrough at the *tong ban* level. We should be able to control everything. That is why the person responsible for a dis-

trict should be able to stand shoulder to shoulder with the head of the district. All of you must be able to stand shoulder to shoulder with the heads of communities and neighborhoods. In the future, I also intend to make this same kind of organization for the people of North Korea. This is especially true for Seoul. (198-45, 1990.1.20)

Through the Home Church organization the tong ban breakthrough activities is possible, and in the future it will also be possible to make a consumer association. The economic authority will be determined there. Our Unification Church members will absolutely not go hungry. If we just stand up and move, we can even hand out two hundred newspapers within an hour. Instead of sleeping in the early morning, where the air is impure and stuffy, how nice it would be for you to do something like that? Think of yourself as a prince or royal commissioner, making rounds, and saying to the world, "Go ahead and sleep!" Wouldn't it feel so good? (186-177, 1989.2.1)

From now the Republic of Korea must push forward the *tong ban* breakthrough activities in order to prepare for the elections. *Tong-ban* breakthrough. In the history of restoration, because everything was lost in the family, I will rise up through the families, and then spread across this 3,000-*ri* peninsula.

It is not through the nation that I am rising up. Some people say, "That Rev. Moon is trying to become president," but that is not the case. (203-363, 1990.6.28)

Let us promise each other one thing. This is a meeting of leaders for the Unification of North and South Korea, is it not? What has Rev. Moon of the Unification Church been doing? You have only been raised up vertically. Why? Because the persecution was so severe, you didn't know what was what until now. Now that everything is over, we must bind together horizontally and work for the *tong ban* breakthrough activities, and then, centering on districts and townships, make the solidarity movement. (198-124, 1990.1.25)

What have I been emphasizing for the last five years? What are the *tong ban* breakthrough activities? I also forgot. You know what *tong* and *ban* (local communities and home neighborhoods) are, right? Up to the level of districts, in honor of my seventieth birthday, we held conferences this time in all 3,600 districts. Now we must educate 10 to 15 times that number, from about 36,000 to 50,000 *tong* that are in Korea. We are to educate the *tong*. After that there are 310,000 *ban*. We must educate the 310,000 *ban*. (200-318, 1990.2.26)

5.3. Organizational expansion through the strengthening of education

We must breakthrough at the *tong ban* level. The beginning is in the family. You should visit people so often that the dogs who were originally barking at you because they were uncomfortable with your presence, wag their tails in delight

to see you. The dogs should be your guides to open the doors in your hometown that were closed to you before. You must go this way without regard to whether its day or night. You have to carry out the *tong ban* breakthrough activities by running until your feet are blistered, covering even a thousand or even ten thousand miles. (210-386, 1990.12.27)

You must hold revival meetings in the big cities and structurally expand the organization. You must breakthrough at the local areas and create organizations. (193-23, 1989.7.15)

We should do *Tong-ban* breakthrough activities, do you understand? In your village, if you think about the people according to each clan, and you have one hundred homes, how many *ban* (home neighborhoods) does that make? Only by going down to the *ban* will you move a Mr. Lee of the Lee clan, or a Mr. Pak of the Pak clan. In this way you can move everyone in the area. Since it was in the family that the seeds were sown incorrectly which led to its ruin, it is in the family that you must harvest the results and make a heavenly family that can prosper. Your destiny rests in fulfilling this. Let's bring this matter to a closing point. (210-291, 1990.12.25)

There's no need to make a long education period. Having a one week period would do it. If you educate each group of people weekly centering on the *tong* and *ban* (local communities and home neighborhoods), then our work will be completed. What should you do then to make this possible? If you can send just the necessary people of the districts, local communities and home neighborhoods for a forty-day workshop, then that should do it. Then after that, through those people you can gather the residents in a reception room and continue to give lectures for a week each time. You meet after eating dinner, and gather day and night. When you meet together, you make up a time schedule, and centering on the amount of people gathered, educate them and have them set up the condition of having received a workshop. If you do this, then your work will be done and the *tong ban* breakthrough activities will be completed. In such a way we will lay down the standard. (212-240, 1991.1.6)

The term *tong ban* (local community and home neighborhood) breakthrough activities are referring to the fact that there are, on average, 25 *tong* in each district. In those 25 *tong* there are 250 *ban*. Estimating the number to be about three hundred people in a *tong* and centering on the importance of the seven-day workshop content, teach them the entire seven-day content as you read the Principle over two twenty-day periods equaling forty days. Have them study and take a test and then appoint anyone who scores 50 percent or higher as the head of the *tong* and *ban*. This is the first time you've heard something like this, right? I've already said all this before. If you do this, then your work will be done. When the work is totally completed in South Korea, the spies and agents who

have invaded will be exposed and driven out. Then Kim Il-sung will have no choice but to throw up his hands before South Korea. (213-148, 1991.1.16)

This time, even in Korea we are organizing centering on the *tong ban* breakthrough activities. That's why some people in the National Intelligence Service are fussing saying, "In the past you had a record of doing rallies in 2,400 or 2,700 places in one day. Why are you so quiet now?" Now is the time to raise your sons and daughters. We should keep this among ourselves. We have entered the time when you have to educate people secretly. This is breaking through at the *tong ban* level. You must conduct meetings that are more than ordinary neighborhood meetings. That way, if you gather thirty people here and do the same in five different places, then you've gathered 150 people. Once there, you can tell them, "Since you 150 people have been mobilized, and since we all want the unification of North and South Korea, then let's appoint someone among your fathers, mothers, and relatives to lead this work." Then, the number of people should be more than 300. I've instructed you to have district and township conferences centering on these 300 people. (214-167, 1991.2.2)

By mobilizing the wives of the administrative personnel, we will place them as leaders of dong, *tong* and *ban* (districts, local communities and home neighborhoods). This will result in our having duplicates or two leaders in each area. We will organize them after we educate them. Centering on the government, if *ban* leaders unite, and all *tong* leaders unite horizontally, then all 40 million South Koreans will come to our side all at once. As the government comes to realize this, they will try to pull every kind of trick to stop me, and will be saying that Rev. Moon beat us to it! But it will be too late. They don't have an ideology. That's why they have no other choice than to believe us. At this point, we will lead the whole nation. So you should have concrete confidence in yourselves. (214-330, 1991.2.7)

Where should you mainly be doing your *tong ban* activities? It should be done within our association. What is the content of what I spoke about today? The Blessed Families must restore the right of eldest son, the right of the parent, and the right of kingship, by centering on the foundation of the family. In order to do that, you must give Divine Principle lectures as well as VOC (Victory Over Communism) lectures. Then in the future, if there is a Blessed Family that becomes responsible for a district, it should utilize and use the VOC organization. Originally the most important question was how to get the people who are in the VOC organization to become church members. You see, this organization is big. If the people who are connected with it became members, then the number of current Unification Church regional leaders would not be an issue. The number of church members would not be an issue. (218-105, 1991.7.2)

If we do not hurry, then we will not be able to prepare for a general election of both North and South Korea. Starting from now, we will have national rallies over the next 6 months to prepare for the North and South general election. It is now time to get our people in place. We will place our people and start lecturing. *Tong-ban* breakthrough activities. Now is really the time to take charge of the *tong* and *ban* (local communities and home neighborhoods) and present lectures. If you do not do this, then you really will not succeed. You must do this in order to live. (207-364, 1990.11.11)

Our *tong ban* breakthrough activities must be done centering on the family foundation. From there, centered on True Parents' words, specifically those dealing with the declaration of True Parents, you should inspire the people to connect with our activities and move forward. This time I'll send out all the members and have them make and show copies of the video tapes to the people. In between tapes we will have people record what they saw and thought. It will work once you try it. You must deliver deeply moving speeches to everyone, and then enroll these people in the future in the effort to unite North and South Korea. From a spiritual viewpoint, South Korea is in the position of the mind, while North Korea is like the body. The body opposes the mind. Since the body belongs to Satan's realm, that's why this is happening. (205-334, 1990.10.2)

Just try and follow my direction once to work for the *tong ban* breakthrough activities. It won't take long. Please, try this once for seven months, to run until your feet are blistered, and you are ready to die. It won't even cost money. From now on I won't ask you to come here. I'll go to see you in your hometowns. It would be nice if I could go to see all of you, but in Seoul alone there are 3,300 dong, 12,000 *tong* and 120,000 *ban*. Since they are so numerous, I can't go to all of them, but I'll go to visit the ones that get recommended. All of you should work hard in your *tong ban* activities, and if you can establish a family that represents the clan that God can be proud of, then you will receive blessings automatically. From there, the firm stand of liberation will be established, and the flag of freedom will wave. (209-48, 1990.11.25)

Nowadays Seoul is troubled. Originally, everyone should return to their hometowns. When you go, I am planning over the next six months to make organizations that will enable you to breakthrough at the *tong ban* level. Then, if there are influential people, army generals who used to attend established churches and church elders, I will try to organize and send them to their hometowns. In Seoul, I'm going to deal with this situation in this way. They won't have any problem whatsoever, in leading others if they just receive a 40 day workshop. The generals had to command regiments, so because of this, you can't match them in leading an organization or in leading the people. (198-41, 1990.1.20)

In the world of love, you have a special right that enables you to make God your own object partner. Whether you are large or small, this is an indisputable fact.

As you shed sweat with blood in the field of your *tong ban* breakthrough activities, laying the foundation and creating a melting pot overflowing with love, having been filled up totally, then in the position of an owner ask God, "Would you ever like to come here?" Would you expect Him to say, "Get lost! Go away!" Instead He will say, "Show me the way!" Then He will ask you, "Where would you like me to sit?" He cannot just sit wherever He chooses. The principles of the world work in this way.

The God who created the order in the world knows the stages of the world that He created. Therefore, He knows where He should sit or where He should stand. In Korea we have a saying for someone who has no common sense. We say about him, "Does that person know how to discern between where he will sit or stand?" We say this, don't we? It is the same with God. (208-211, 1990.11.18)

5.4. The Providence centering on the Second Generation and the Professors' and Students' Federation for Unification.

We should organize a national conference of all the young people who have graduated from prestigious high schools, and then, for each province, we should choose a person from among these graduates, who can be responsible for local organizations. If we can choose the responsible people for each province, county, township, local community and neighborhood then this will make the base upon which we can utilize our *tong ban* breakthrough activities. The people who graduated from the prestigious middle and high schools will usually connect to prestigious universities like Seoul National University and Korea University. So, when we achieve this, then automatically a national association of these prestigious university students will be formed. (214-339, 1991.2.7)

Originally, when I went to America, I told them that, in the age of *tong ban* breakthrough activities, they should center on the teachers and talk to each high school, middle school and even elementary school teacher one by one. All of that is part of the strategy to connect to the parents of the students. That's why we've made the VOC organization and the Citizens Federation and other such organizations. You should have put these into operation. By not doing this, the communists have run wild doing what they wanted, and left behind scenes of death everywhere. Didn't I fight alone against all this? (207-169, 1990.11.9)

We are going to connect professors, high school and middle school teachers and elementary school teachers to the *tong ban* breakthrough activities. If they connect, then our work is done. Although the established churches put up opposition by trying to advance certain theories about history, this doesn't present

an obstacle. We are going over that hill completely. Even from a sitting position we can digest everything, including the communists. (205-297, 1990.10.1)

Having done so, we should mobilize all the professors connected to this *tong ban* breakthrough activity… by the way, there's no difficulty in obtaining information about their hometowns or other information is there? We should choose one hundred hometown schools to use as bases upon which to assign these professors, and then invite the Home Church leaders to come. The professors may even buy them dinner. Unless we form an organization in such a way and carry out the *tong ban* breakthrough activities in the districts, townships, local communities and home neighborhoods, in order to stop the communists, we will face the substantial problem of being swallowed by the communists. (187-21, 1989.2.7)

In the *tong ban* breakthrough activities, CARP must play a leading role. When our middle and high school students become future university students they should win the younger generation over to our side. (198-7, 1990.1.20)

At this time, we must seriously look at how CARP is moving? All of you are taking responsibility to work for the *tong ban* breakthrough activities and to educate people, right? This is a twofold strategy, since the university graduates have stepped forward as a unit of activity, they must be supported completely. Therefore, we need to establish a newspaper publishing company. We should hurry up. (181-156, 1988.9.5)

I'll tell you something that happened recently. We established the Citizens Federation for the Unification of North and South Korea. We moved forward and began work on initiating *tong ban* breakthrough activities throughout the nation. It happened that we gathered together some petty heads of townships and districts, as well as a police chief, some local police officers, and some arrogant and boastful university graduates. In addition, there were the heads of the municipal committees who are the professors. We had assigned all those professors to work to save the nation. Turning to the journalists who were present I asked, "Will you participate in the efforts to save your hometowns, or not? Please answer me! Will you do it!" You have to help save the nation. How about saving the world? If the people of a nation are willing to even sell their own nation to save the world, then those people will become the ancestors of the whole world. (179-202, 1988.8.12)

We need the nation, and we need the world. There is no clear way to find these. When we look at this fact, you professors must also establish the ideal of the sphere of love, centering on the vertical love and connecting with the horizontal realm of love at 90 degrees. There's no way to escape such a pursuit of the original universal history. That means you must listen to what I say. If you don't, you won't be on the right track. If you

are on the right track, where will you be heading? You will go to the family. That's why, when we say *tong ban* breakthrough activities, we're talking about returning to the family and realigning yourself to the right track. Because all of you are the sons and daughters of Rev. Moon, I have unconditionally given you everything that I've prepared on the world level, from the realm of heart, the realm of participation and inheritance, to the realm of equal rank. Therefore, you must return to your hometowns and lay down your roots. If you just lay down your roots and stand up vertically aligned, then, through me, you will rise to the glorious position of victory in which you can inherit the worldwide domain and participate with me. This is logical. True Parents are absolute. That's why all religions have come to the conclusion that the messiah absolutely must come. (176-124, 1988.5.3)

Whether it is in the Citizens Federation, the VOC organization or in the Unification Church, the place where all of you must work is not in the offices. Go do the *tong ban* breakthrough activities first and fight if you have to. You should compete to see who will go into their neighborhood and influence it the most, who will go into their community and get the most people to become activists to liberate North Korea, and who will inspire the most families to follow the direction of their regional leaders under the authority of the committee chairmen. If I had not told you this publicly, then everything would have fallen apart. You professors did not even think of this. Do you know how much I have thought about these things? So my conclusion is that all the professors here should become the leaders of *tong* and *ban* (local communities and home neighborhoods), regardless of whether they are located in provinces or counties or towns. I mean that all professors should pack their bags and go to their families.

The roots of patriotism must be planted in the family. It is not within the offices of towns and counties, but in the family. So… have you followed my declaration to work for the *tong ban* breakthrough activities? Have you done well or not? You, professor, have you done well or not? How many times have you wandered through the night determined to breakthrough at the local level? That is the problem. If you do not possess a more sorrowful heart for the nation than you felt when your own father passed away, you cannot save the nation. If you don't feel more sadness and pain in your heart than when your own mother or your own relatives pass away, then the unification of North and South Korea will not happen. This is how I see things.

When you professors enter people's homes, you should grab hold of their hands and, choked with tears, utter an appeal for them to work together for the unity of North and South Korea. That one word of appeal would be more powerful than a thousand words spoken by a scholar passing by. That's the reason I have formed the Professors and Students Federation for Unification and connect-

ed the professors who are willing to save the neighborhoods with the students Then, united, they should rally together all the sons and daughters of the neighborhoods. That is my direction. (176-112, 1988.5.3)

5.5. Tribal Messiah Activities and *Tong-ban* Breakthrough Activities

We must return to the hometown of our origin! This is based on the Principle. How can you deny this? It's the logical conclusion. Those who don't think so raise your hands. Can you deny this? There is no way, other than the way of obedience and submission. That's why we are doing that in Korea, at this time. By returning to your hometowns, you must complete the foundation for the nation upon the foundation of having completed the *tong ban* breakthrough activities in you area. This is done by starting in each family and raising them through the formation, growth, and completion stages.

The family is the formation stage, the *tong* and *ban* (local community and neighborhood) are the tribal growth stage, and then the nation is the completion stage. These three points must be connected in the family. If you don't connect these points in the family, then they can't be connected at the tribal level. They can't be connected to the nation, and they can't be connected to the world. (218-184, 1991.7.28)

Why do we work for the tong ban breakthrough activities? The reason the government has opposed me until now was because they were worried that if I penetrated all the way to the family level, that it would cause problems for the government. The position I must grab hold of is not the government. In the government, there is no basis for peace. This base is not in the Republic of Korea, either. Where is it then? It is in the family – in Adam and Eve's family. The fall took place centering on the family, so we must grab a hold of the family and set it right. Through false parents, the family was brought to ruin, so true parents must come and set the family right. (203-252, 1990.6.26)

From now on, in order to accomplish the tong ban breakthrough activities centering on the 3,600 towns and communities, we will form organizations and then completely arrange everything. Those of you here in headquarters also need to understand this well. In the future, I will chastise those who attend the service here, if their hometowns are elsewhere. Why is that? I've given a direction for you to return to your hometowns, which, in the world of religion, is a precious gift, so why aren't you going? (197-207, 1990.1.14)

Now if you do your tribal messiah mission, the Republic of Korea will automatically be liberated. This is because the tribal messiah is connected to the tong ban breakthrough activities. When we complete the tong ban breakthrough activities, centered on our tribe, there will no longer be communists. There-

fore, Korea has freed itself from the individual realm of the false accusation of Satan.

I have laid the foundation of substance through the national level, centering upon America. Having brought a victorious national foundation from America, I will engraft to this a way for the Republic of Korea to transcend the nation and go to the world. Centering on the realm of the tribal messiah all the 40 million people of Korea will be connected. Thus, when all these things become one, there will be no place in your families for Satan to falsely accuse you. We have passed over the base where Satan could accuse us individually, and we have passed over the base where he could accuse us as a family or a tribe. If three tribes can be connected to each other, then a people will be formed. (188-315, 1989.3.1)

If we achieve the tribal level foundation, a people will automatically be formed. Moreover, this relates to Tong-ban breakthrough activities. Tong-ban breakthrough develops from the tribal realm. If you are working in a village, the village is in the tribal realm. If you talk about villages, tong and ban, they are all in the tribal realm. You should understand that this is the reason I've been talking about tong ban breakthrough. Now if you become tribal messiahs, do you think your tong ban breakthrough activities will be completed, or not? It will be completed.

Then how should all of you act? The time has come when you must deeply understand Rev. Moon, who has walked every suffering path and has toiled throughout his life and shed countless tears for your hometown, your parents and siblings and your relatives. It was with tears that your relatives were separated from the Garden of Eden and scattered in many directions. They eventually returned to their regions, which had been nearly ruined by enemy fighting and Satan's occupation.

Therefore you must gain control of all the nations and, centering on one love through a family representing every nation, we can meet together in tears. If, through this, we can raise the flag of liberation at that place, then every nation can be returned eternally centering on that point. (187-173, 1989.2.5)

The term, tong ban gyeokpa doesn't mean destruction. Some people might look at that term and ask "Why do we say gyeokpa? We should call it something like "tong ban assimilation" or "tong ban liberation." Some people may say so, but still we must overturn things and break them down. Why? Because false love, false life, and false lineage remain and are totally selfish. This is what we must overturn and break down. That's why it is said that those who seek to lose their life shall gain it, but those who seek to gain their life shall lose it. The members of your own family can become your enemies. This is certain. If you say you will follow this path, then your mother and father may call you a crazy child. (203-252, 1990.6.26)

You must understand the significance of the tong ban breakthrough activities. Centering on the family level, you must return to the realm of True Parents' heart, turning your thoughts around 180 degrees. (204-320, 1990.7.11)

The things that I am saying are not my own. They belong to all people, to heaven and earth. I inherited the Father's tradition through love and following in his footsteps, I too should pass this on to all of you unconditionally in the name of True Parents. In giving these things to you, I am also giving you my flesh and blood, and my devotion.

Following this example of such a sincere heart, if you show the same heart towards your wife, your sons and daughters, and your villages and local communities and neighborhoods, then your tong ban breakthrough activities will be complete. (199-374, 1990.2.21)

Adam and Eve could not start from the family. Because of that, the tribal messiahs must ultimately solve the problem of the settlement of the family. That's why, here in Korea, we've started the tong ban breakthrough activities. At this time, in order for the family to settle in Korea, each family should hang my picture up and raise the church flag in their homes. This means that we are completely dividing the satanic world from the heavenly world.

For the first time, the portrait of True Parents is being attended in the family. (218-124, 1991.7.14)

Now, in our *tong ban* breakthrough activities, I have created the village and local community organizations. We have passed out flags and pictures of True Parents to some eighty thousand families. Then, from July 3 to 9, I made the declaration of the True Parents, the Savior, the Messiah, and the returning Lord. Who is the Lord at the Second Advent? It is the True Parents. Who is the Messiah? The Messiah is the returning Lord. (238-336, 1992.11.22)

If you do not become a source that explodes with the original heart, you cannot overcome the summit of the mountain. You cannot go over mountains like the Himalayas. What do you need? You need to take the power of love, and not be worried about whether you live or die. To counter that, the outside world brings countries together and opposes us. I must face that maelstrom of opposition and take responsibility for defeating it. I am fighting alone. Even after I went to America, I fought that battle. Breakthrough on your own! That's what the *tong ban* breakthrough is all about, isn't it? (214-114, 1991.2.1)

In the age of the unification of North and South Korea, the first thing we must do is to *tong ban* breakthrough activities. We are advocating the *tong ban* breakthrough activities, aren't we? Through this activity, you should give people a picture of me to hang up, and then teach them my ideology. You must teach them who the True Parents are. (212-138, 1991.1.2)

I told everyone to return to their hometowns, didn't I? I also came to the Republic of Korea and won over all the top men. We're at the point that when people hear the name Rev. Moon mentioned they say, "That man is a patriot!" As you approach even the prominent people in society and ask them, "We're doing this and that in order to hold a national conference to prepare for a unified election of North and South Korea. Will you support us or oppose us?" They will answer, "Why should we oppose you? Of course we'll support!" We get this affirmation as we work. Until now no one has given us such affirmation. If they do oppose me, I will flex my muscles a bit and knock them out of their position. If I intervene, then no matter how relentless the argument or how loud the protest, it will all dissipate. Knowing that, all of you must breakthrough at your *tong* and *ban* levels. (213-51, 1991.1.13)

Tong-ban breakthrough does not mean to threaten and intimidate people with guns and knives. If you work day and night through the words of love and the practice of love, then even while the grandfathers and grandmothers sit around smoking and drinking, and doing other bad deeds, they will say, "My son and daughter should model themselves after that person." After saying that, they will praise the Unification Church, and then the devils within them that like to drink will run away. If the grandparents see people who used to fight with each other enter the Unification Church and stop fighting, then they will think, "Our children should also become like the members of the Unification Church…" If this happens, then all the satans within them will run away. Do you understand what I mean? (212-100, 1991.1.2)

If you settle down and find your place in the family, then things will change 180 degrees. That's why, even though I told you a few days ago, I'm telling you again to put up pictures of True Parents. That is the position where you become one with True Parents directions, so you will live, just like the people who looked at the snake Moses held up on a stick. This is exactly the point.

People who look at the Unification Church flag and curse it will later develop problems with their eyes and all sorts of things will happen to them. The reason it hasn't happened yet is because you haven't raised your flags with true devotion. Also, when you put up True Parents' picture, if you can truly devote your heart before doing that, then if someone points a finger at it in scorn, that finger will be bent. All sorts of strange things may happen. It is because you haven't devoted all your heart that it hasn't happened that way. (218-72, 1991.7.2)

In order to do *tong ban* breakthrough activities, we must go forward seeking the family. Adam and Eve lost everything starting in the family, and that became the origin of the loss of both the nation and the world. Now I have indemnified through the world level, and I am holding the families of the Republic of

Korea together and working to change their direction. Because I am making this effort, there needs to be a subject philosophy.

Therefore, I have declared the Principle of True Parents, True Teacher, and True Owner. What kind of people are the True Parents, who have made this kind of declaration? From a position similar to God's position, because God is a True Parent, I am teaching you now so that you can create an event to enable you to inherit the worldwide domain. This worldwide domain will enable you to become a true teacher and a true owner, from the position of becoming true parents here on earth. (204-125, 1990.7.1)

If we can just complete the organization of the *tong ban* breakthrough activities, if every house raises the church flag, and if there are families that don't mind if three Unification Church members visit them every day, then everyone will receive salvation. That's why I'm allowing you to be indebted. I'm putting you under indebtedness so you won't oppose me. All of you are indebted to me, aren't you? I took you to America and educated you. I'm called the True Parent but you cannot oppose this fact because you're indebted to me. All accomplishments and teachings that I have initiated have benefited both the spiritual and physical spheres. Who opposes me? When I say "blow a bugle and beat a drum", the world should blow a bugle and beat a drum. We have reached that stage.

That is why I could declare the True Parents and be welcomed by you, and go over the summit of the world that Satan has used as his stage, and stand at the top. The time has come when I can return to Korea, connecting the globe with the heavenly nation, and then hold a declaration ceremony for the settlement of sovereignty. Do you understand? Therefore, I'm pushing hard. If I focus my attention on you totally, you won't be able to say anything. I won't be hitting you with a clenched fist. The time will come when I can win over people with just my thoughts. (200-346, 1990.2.27)

Tong-ban breakthrough is now a movement of returning to Korea and going back to the family. Centering on the nation, if we go back to the *tong* and *ban* and start from there, and organize and unite these groups, then everything will be accomplished.

This signifies the three stages of growth: formation, growth, and completion. Centering on yourself, vertically, you have your family, and your *tong* and *ban*. You also have yourself, and horizontally, your father, and your grandfather. Likewise, you then create the standard for the three stages of growth through formation, growth, and completion. Then you enter into the turning point of your family.

When this happens, what would you have been centering on to have accomplished this? By turning centering on head-wing thought and Godism together with True Parents' love, then Satan won't have any condition through which to accuse you in the future. (213-254, 1991.1.21)

Section 6. The Unification Movement and the Role of Women

I am very skillful, aren't I? Bringing all those women who were living comfortably, and having them do something called *tong ban* breakthrough activities… what for? And what does that have to do with all of you? Who will appreciate their work? However, by doing this, the Korean women will establish a traditional history of the liberation of women. This will become a training aid.

You should know that the words that I've taught and the contents of the actions that you've taken will be the traditional training aids in the future that will move the women of the world! Amen.

Who can become this kind of training aid? A person who sleeps comfortably for eight hours, eats three meals a day, and finds a cool place to rest in the shade because it's hot cannot do this. The thing you do sweating blood in the blazing sun, dripping with perspiration, this is what remains in history. The more miserable the situation, the more it becomes the material of a historic age. If all of you heard the story of my time in prison, your bone marrow would start to cry. That's why I cannot tell you that story. If I poured the contents of that time out to you, everyone would cry loudly in lamentation. How many things happened in that place? How many stories could be told about that place? I won't tell you. (233-262, 1992.8.1)

I didn't give even one penny. It's no good if I give money. If I supply the money, then in the future, the way the nation must go will become blocked. It's logical that money should come from the nation to the people. That kind of nation does not exist. Therefore, no matter how difficult, the members of the Unification Church must do the work of the nation, even if they must sell their sweat and blood; even if they must cut off their flesh and bones and sell them, they must do the work of the nation.

You worked while I wasn't supplying you the money, and so now we are entering the stage where the *tong ban* breakthrough activities can be completed. Have you done well, or not? After being briefed a while ago about how the poorly members of the Unification Church have been doing, I've come to Seoul to put things in order. I cannot go everywhere in the nation, so I've come to Seoul, which represents the whole, since it is the center. I mentioned this to True Mother, and she felt the same, so now she is touring. (233-179, 1992.8.1)

You must listen well to my words today, clear up your debts, and become new people. What is it that I've told you to do? In order to re-establish through women the *tong ban* breakthrough system, which the men failed to do, I have now arranged our people centering on the villages and local communities. The *tong ban* breakthrough activities came to a halt right in front of my eyes, so the women of the Unification Church should not sleep at night, should not eat, and should not play before doing this

work. You must know that this is your heavenly duty! Those of you who will do this, raise your hands. (233-52, 1992.7.20)

In the same way that I have stayed up at night and sacrificed throughout my life until now, you must act in the same way. In your *tong ban* breakthrough activities, you must bring 120 families centering on your tribe. Back in Jesus' day, there were 120 apostles, weren't there? In the same way, if you set up 120 families under your command, you will not have problems with things like money. Are you worried about eating and living? It is not a problem. You men, do you understand? Men are archangels and will be of no use. You must set up the condition to have been born through a mother. Therefore, only by being blessed again can you return to the heavenly nation. (232-253, 1992.7.9)

I must save Korea by setting up the women. With this meaning, it was inevitable that the leaders of the WFWP (Women's Federation for World Peace) were set up to be the local women leaders. The leaders of WFWP should go down into the local areas and become the leaders of the counties, towns, districts, and local communities. Is this an easy thing to do? I have been preparing this for the past fourteen years. Centering on the term "Home Church," I told people to, "Go down to the local level and manage your tribe!" That was fourteen years ago, and it was to prepare for this time. That is why I have insisted doing the *tong ban* breakthrough activities these past seven years. (232-199, 1992.7.6)

I am setting up a plan to completely fill up the Olympic Stadium with 150,000 women next April. Therefore, the wives throughout this nation must do their *tong ban* breakthrough activities. The men were unable to do it, so the women must do it. We have been working on these *tong ban* breakthrough activities for seven years, but we still haven't succeeded. Even though I've instructed you men to fulfill the work, three times invested a lot of money in this, it has not been done. Now I can't trust you men. I have to find a solution now through mobilizing the women, without the men.

Even if you men work for the *tong ban* breakthrough activities, if the men don't receive the signatures of their wives and children they cannot move freely. On the other hand, the women can go into each house, push out the husbands and have a meeting. Do you understand? It's so convenient! The women can form a group and climb up and over the back gate, side gate, or front gate, kick out the husband of the house, and meet however they please. Do you understand? (224-62, 1991.11.21)

All of you must center on God, and to the extent that you want to quickly be able to bring a world of peace, you must bring together the people of this country and accelerate the standard for the unification of North and South Korea, in order to open the door of peace. The

movement that exists in order to accelerate this goal is the *tong ban* breakthrough activities! Do you understand? The place where the invading spies are hiding is in the bosom of the women. They are within the width of a woman's skirt. They are hiding underneath it. These spies come down to South Korea and get themselves a wife. Then they make some money, and after that they approach even far distant relatives and offer support. They even win the hearts of the families and clans in their neighborhood. They take money for their South Korean spy operation and hold feasts, giving a warm reception for the people. You should understand that they are people who have created a name for themselves. This is what we must break open. (214-255, 1991.2.2)

So far, I've had no choice but to work with the men, but now it's different. The Unification Church has come forward putting men in the lead, and now we still give priority to the men, don't we? How much money was invested into the *tong ban* breakthrough activities with the men leading the way? Now it is clear that we must absolutely make a foundation, even if we must sell our flesh and blood. This work must be achieved, even if you must sell your land, your family's rice field, or bring together the money of your relatives. Do you understand? In the future I will send down an order. If you find seventy families and I tell you to prepare 100 million won from each family, that will amount to seven billion won.

Since this is the age for the unification of North and South Korea. We must be prepared to do this. Shedding tears, sweat and blood, make a lump sum of money and then open up a bank account without your husband's knowing. What did I just say? What do I want you to make without your husbands' knowledge? A bank account. You should make a bank account. (235-126, 1992.8.29)

We started in 1978, so this is now the fourteenth year. This work has been going on for fourteen years. If all of you had only done this work with a desperate heart! How great it would have been! If that had happened, then everything would be connected through the *tong ban* breakthrough activities, centering on the Unification Church. Centering on the Unification Church foundation, we organized everything down to the village, so that we could breakthrough at the *tong ban* level. Centering on the men, we held conferences in the dong (districts), *tong* and *ban* (local communities and home neighborhoods). We passed out Divine Principle books and a book called "The Hope of the World" in my name, to all the 120,000 neighborhood leaders. Maybe even some of you that are here today also received these books. Despite the fact that all this was done, the men still all failed their responsibility. They were relaxed and thought this was just some kind of game. Therefore, because the men failed their responsibility, the women must accomplish it. Whatever happens, they must do this.

The women must not just be worried about the livelihood of their own homes.

Please notice that I've mobilized women centering on the Women's Federation. Is this mobilization due to the power of human beings? In the beginning, when I first said that I would have an initiation conference for the Asian Women's Federation of World Peace (AWFWP), everyone's eyes went like this, and our own Unification Church members put up opposition saying women can't do anything and that AWFWP women can't do anything. But then True Mother stepped forward and the opposition subsided. Seeing the atmosphere, the members couldn't oppose it any further. Therefore, I declared the arrival of the era of women. I made this declaration because the time was ripe to do so. Wait and see if the age of women comes now or not. (233-111, 1992.7.31)

Because *tong ban* breakthrough activities started back in 1978, that means it has already been fourteen years. The fourteen years of doing *tong ban* breakthrough stands for this age. The concept of Home Church is the concept of *tong ban* breakthrough activities. Because you were starting to slack off in Home Church, I changed the description a little and pulled you forward centering on *tong ban* breakthrough activities. We spent seven years and then another seven years, so it has taken fourteen years. My plan was to be prepared and to do this before now, but the leaders of Korea did not know this and couldn't fulfill their responsibility. The men failed twice, so the women must do it from now on. (237-65, 1992.11.11)

When we hold a unified election of North and South Korea, what will happen to this country of South Korea? I am not an incompetent person. I am already preparing everything for that day, and so we are doing the *tong ban* breakthrough activities. I have trained you quite a few times in this. That is why we need the women. (206-70, 1990.10.3)

The women must take charge of the soldiers of the North Korean regime. The women must take charge of the devils of this earth. In that way, the men can defeat the devils in spirit world. We need to employ a twofold strategy. The spies of North Korea come here and live under the protection of the women. They live within the bosom of a woman. The men might not want this to happen, but the women keep them hidden. In order to breakthrough this treachery we need the *tong ban* breakthrough activities. Now you understand many things.

None of you know when I will send down a certain command and give you a mission. If you say you can't do it, then I am putting you in prison. This isn't a playground. This is the path to decide life and death. It is not the grounds for getting a salary and living well. It is not the place to bring no-goods and feed them. You need to understand this. This is the place to make the elite fighting unit of heaven. (180-121, 1988.8.7)

You understand the *tong ban* breakthrough activities, don't you? I've talked about Home Church these past fourteen years. I spent a lot of money to educate

you. These past five years I've talked about *tong ban* breakthrough activities. I set up the men to do this, but because they failed miserably, I have no choice but to set up the women in the final attempt. (238-305, 1992.11.22)

CHAPTER FOUR

Be Active as Tribal Messiahs

Section 1. Now is the Time for the Unification of North, South, East, and West

Throughout my life, I have endured hardship to create the foundations of a movement to unite North and South Korea. With the environment already created, it will be much easier; I hope you will act with enthusiasm and courage. You must attempt to change the minds of people opposing the unification of North and South, even if it means holding demonstrations. (149-170, 1986.11.21)

Do you think the unification of North and South can be achieved if you work comfortably in South Korea? Korea is the world's front line and focal point. As we see, all kinds of phenomena are occurring here based on God's will. If you completely unite and move South Korea, the spirit world will work, won't it? Who else can understand such things? (165-215, 1987.5.27)

You must do this work even if you do not have money. If you are short of money, you should sell your house. God will protect you and be responsible for your future only if you do so. Do not be dependent on having money or organizational structure. That is where the problem lies. Money that God is not happy with is poison and will bring you to ruin. You need to devote yourself sincerely. From now on, you should work and shed more tears in this mission than you have shed in the church. It is that simple. I am telling you to weep more for the unification of North and South Korea than while praying at the church. (166-183, 1987.6.5)

When we consider the issue of unification from a philosophical point of view, there must be a new kind of unified thought that can go beyond the structures of democracy and communism and digest them all. There must be such a logical basis for a unified system in society. Korea will be one model for the creation of such a unified system. A global federation for the unity of north, south, east, and west has taken form in the Citizens' Federation in Korea. Korea itself is thus a model for the world. If the world follows that model, everything will shift to a global unified system. (173-67, 1988.1.3)

The means to move the world will be the issue from this point on. We will need, first, a well-developed ideology;

second, a stronger organization; and third, communal activities. We need organizational ability and vigorous activity beyond that of the communists when we deal with their ideology. Moreover, we must develop and become systemized. (15-94, 1965.9.30)

The Citizens' Federation for the Unification of North and South Korea is a movement for unification. Through this organization, the nation's people are joining together to actively work for North-South unification. You must mobilize all sixty million people for this cause. These sixty million people must become one. If a unified representative body of six hundred thousand people move towards the new Eden and expand to six million or even sixty million unified flag bearers, the world will move straight into the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. (163-24, 1987.4.18)

In our Unification movement, there is the church, the International Federation for Victory Over Communism (IFVOC), the Professors and Students Federation for the Unification of North and South Korea, and the Citizens' Federation for the Unification of North and South Korea. What are they trying to do? Not just the reunification of Korea. It's not merely the liberation of the North and South. They are working to liberate humankind and to liberate God. Based on what? True love. You need to know this. (166-155, 1987.6.5)

The movement for the reunification of Korea needs to unite the North and South based on God's philosophy. Then the nation's entire population is to establish the heavenly nation with this new ideology. (163-165, 1987.5.1)

The question is, as brave soldiers who are fighting history's final battle to determine the ultimate victory or defeat, how strong and bold can we be in the face of the coming fierce war? How much can we overcome? Can we be hopeful, brave fighters who can find new resolve even at the point where life and death intersect? We can digest communism if we have the desire to live to fight again, even on the road to death. We need to have the personal conviction that if we cannot win right now, we will fight again after we revive. (61-35, 1972.8.20)

There still are those who do not know about the Unification Church? This means you have not fulfilled your responsibilities. Although many people are comfortably taking it easy, there aren't many persons who are taking responsibility for the people of this nation. Even if my bones shatter into pieces, I must go on because the people in the mountains here and in the villages and valleys there are longing for the reach of my devoted hands, covered with blood and sweat. Should I fail to reach them, I will have to ring a bell and gather everyone in one place and form a unified front. Otherwise, there is no way to achieve a plan for unification even if there are conferences between North Korea and South Korea. You must stand in the proactive position

and pave the way. (61-237, 1972.8.31)

What time is it now? It is the time for the Israelites to depart from Egypt and go to the Promised Land of Canaan. Dedicating your utmost effort, without sleeping, you must proclaim that the Israelites living in the land of Egypt must leave their homes at such and such a time. Those who know about this and don't tell the Israelites will regret it. Because we have now entered the period when the departure to the Promised Land of Canaan is to begin, we are responsible for notifying all thirty million people. They can decide whether to leave or stay. That is why we have developed a nationwide movement. Therefore, there should be no one who does not yet know about the Unification Church. (61-237, 1972.8.31)

In the chaos of trying to find the way towards the ultimate global crossroads, the main issue for people of religious faith in Korea, expatriate Koreans, and for the country itself is how to maintain our position of initiative. Do not be indecisive. You must be able to understand the difference between subject and object partners and stand as an object partner to God as the clear subject. In such a fashion, we move forward toward a breathtaking, transitional age. Now is that moment. (65-152, 1972.11.5)

In order for the North and South to become one, the South's government should provide aid to the North with love greater than that for its own people. Presently, how can the North and South be unified when, at this moment, the Jeolla and Gyeongsang provinces are fighting over political power? There is no way. Everything will come to ruin. Although you may not want to hear me say this, I will still say it because it is the truth. (168-230, 1987.9.20)

You must obey the will of Heaven. Korea will lose its place if it lets go of the fortune of individuals, the nation, and Asia. Korea should be in rhythm with the fortune of Asia, along with heavenly fortune. Korea should obey the will of Heaven in order to be protected by it; otherwise, it will come to ruin. I have concluded that you must learn from me, even though you say you already know that way. That includes today. (168-230, 1987.9.20)

Once the North and South are unified, Korea should sacrifice for the sake of the world. Standing proudly on the front line, it should leave such a tradition and philosophy. If it does, even if Korea perishes as an earthly power, the philosophy of its people will remain well beyond the twentieth and thirtieth centuries, as will its people, who can surely lead the world. That is something that you should know. (56-273, 1972.5.18)

Do you believe that the unification of North Korea and South Korea can be accomplished through commerce? No, it cannot. God's love will weaken and destroy the ideology of communism. Though we may not understand, if we

have a loving heart, the unification of North and South will not be a problem. Also God's love can completely resolve the issues between the East and West and the North and South. Then an eternal peaceful environment will be established when, centering on God's ideal, this ideal world digests the nation; the nation, in turn, digests the race; the race, the family; and the family, the individual. Then utopia will surely come on the earth. (143-285, 1986.3.20)

The current goal is the unification of North and South Korea. God is hoping for a base in your families, the nation, and the world from which He can enter into His Sabbath by unifying North and South Korea. This is the only way to attend God. The unification of North and South Korea, the integration of Eastern and Western cultures, and liberation of heaven and hell will come about when we create an environment centering on love greater than that for our father and mother, husband or wife, and children, and are willing to build a sacrificial altar centering on that love. It can never be solved without love. Love is the key. (170-103, 1987.11.8)

World unification will automatically be fulfilled after the unification of North and South Korea is accomplished. Do you think military strength or force of arms will bring about unification? Of course, it won't. If military strength were all that was needed, I would be the one who could accomplish anything. However, because unification will certainly not be achieved with military power, I am spreading my teachings. (142-318, 1986.3.14)

Do our political leaders love the nation? Politicians do not care about what is going on in the nation, but just fight to get the presidency. Just let them try and do it! Everything will just fade away eventually, dissolving like bubbles, because they do not have the heart to sincerely live together with the people. If a leader cannot love the people, then he cannot escape the judgment of his people and history. (148-275, 1986.10.11)

North and South Korea cannot become one if they remain as they are. For this, we need patriots who fight without sleep and possess hearts of determination, willing to overcome all obstacles. The unification of North and South Korea begins with people who think, "I truly want to live together. I would like to die together if we must die, or live together if we must live. I would like to live together with our forefathers, with those who are in the spirit world." (148-277, 1986.10.11)

North Korea is struggling because it is a closed society. However, the more you know about the situation, the more pitiable the people under that society seem to be. The enemy is communism, not the people. If, when thinking about North Korea, you weep for your fellow countrymen who live in misery and empathize with their situation as you prepare for the day of their liberation,

unfold a plan for unification, and vow to come to them, then the day for you to go to North Korea is not far away. (148-268, 1986.10.11)

The question is where to begin unification. With what and from where should the unification of North and South Korea be achieved? Should it be with fists or power? If force is used to make the North give in, then there will be another battle later on, when they gain strength. Unification cannot be achieved in such a way. (148-268, 1986.10.11)

The way to unification will open up only when you who live in the South truly long to live together and unite with those in the North. (148-268, 1986.10.11)

What do you think is the common denominator for those who say, "I would like to live together"? It is not power; power cannot transcend history. It is good only in the moment. Is it knowledge? The world of knowledge advances, doesn't it? Would you like to live together forever in the world of knowledge? We know for sure that we can't live together just because of knowledge or money. What is the one common denominator that can be accepted, whether it is on the top or the bottom, the left or the right, or in the past, present, or future? It is love. (148-260, 1986.10.11)

When we think about how we navigate through life, we realize that there must be some fundamental principle to guide us that applies to children, loyal patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters alike. This is the heart that desires to be together, to live together. It is the desire, throughout our lifetime, to be together transcendent of the positions of upper or lower, front or back, left or right, day or night. We must come to such a conclusion. (148-258, 1986.10.11)

What are we to do, living in a divided nation, with North and South bordering each other along the thirty-eighth parallel? The question is how will we go about resolving this issue? That is, we must suffer more than both the North and South Korean people. Through hardships, our patriotism will be solidified to encompass the nation and become the shortcut to save Korea. This is the solution. It is the same for the unification of the world of evil and the world of good. Loyal patriots who are more faithful than the loyal patriots of the world of evil must emerge. This broken history can be restored with the appearance of a person who can demonstrate a stronger allegiance to the world than that held by our loyal ancestors. That's how I see it. (61-125, 1972.8.13)

The paths of the North and the South are crossing now. Because the two are going in opposite directions, one wanting to go south and the other wanting to go north, their goals are different. The issue of how to unite is a serious one. Who is to take the lead in this mission? The North will object if the South takes the lead, and the South will object if the North takes the lead. Breakdown

will occur again if each one adheres to its own way. The question is how to approach this issue. There must be a Korean who loves North Korea more than anyone else in the South. That is the only solution. The plan for unification can come about only through someone who is more loyal than anyone else in the South and someone who is more loyal than anyone else in the North. Is there any other way? There is not. (61-125, 1972.8.13)

We want the unification of North and South Korea right now, but what is the solution to the division? North and South Korea cannot be united unless a clearly defined solution is provided. It cannot happen by either the North or the South simply saying, "You have to do as we say." They cannot be unified if both have something to lose. It's possible only when there's a plus for both. Isn't that so? For example, a man and woman cannot be one after marriage if they are both minuses to each other; they must find something that they can gain from each other. (61-73, 1972.8.27)

Using South Korean military power to force North Korea to submit is not the way. We should have an ideological foundation that is stronger than theirs. We should have the ability to naturally inspire the North to surrender and have the philosophy of loving our nation more than they love theirs – and of loving God more than they love communism. Otherwise, we will not be able to win the heart of North Korea. Based on our character, we should impress them with our character, our outlook on life, our lifestyle, and personal history. Unless we can surpass them, we can't win over those armed with the ideology of communism.

We cannot restore a Cain nation without a persuasive environment. Furthermore, if the Cain nation can't be restored, then the restored nation that could become the worldly nation centering on the heavenly nation, will not be established. (46-123, 1971.8.13)

Should God have the thought of taking revenge, thinking of Satan as the opponent and an enemy, then He will never be able to occupy the summit of victory. Rather, God has opened up the strategy of love, saying, "Love your enemies. Love your enemies!" The summation of Jesus' teachings is also, "Love your enemies" (The Way of Unification - 595, 1983. 4. 3)

You must set the condition of having loved your enemies even if the world persecutes you and even if you stand facing a global enemy. God and the people of all religions who are trying to be God's children are caught up in this one line. The teaching, "Love your enemy," is the great truth. Although the content is simple, no one has known that this would become the dividing line between God and Satan. (The Way of Unification - 595)

What is our hope? It is unity. However, it is not unity centering on the Unification Church. By this, I really mean unification of North and South centering on the sacrifice of the Unification

Church. (56-283, 1972.5.18)

What is the path that the Unification Church is trying to follow? It is the path of unity. Unification is the key point. (90-64, 1976.12)

Section 2. The Significance of the Tribal Messiah Proclamation

I have proclaimed the era of tribal messiahship. Do you know why I had to do this? It is because Korea betrayed me. Therefore, it must be restored through indemnity. I have restored America's betrayal through indemnity, but I must do it again here. Isn't that right? (188-59, 1989.2.16)

Do you know why I have proclaimed tribal messiahship to both Korea and the world? It is because I have returned to Korea and have now connected Korea to all the nations. Imagine the mobilization of spirits in the spirit world, whose eyes are wide open in anticipation of liberation and who are saying that it's the right time to return to earth to indemnify thousands or tens of thousands of years of history. So if I do not lay down all these bridges to connect the spirit world to earth, would that be right? Because everything has collapsed, there is no place for me to stand. In order to create a place, I had to send out Blessed Families as tribal messiahs and have them set up three-generation ancestral standards: perfection of Jesus, perfection of oneself, and perfection of Adam. This foundation created an environment upon which I could stand. This is why I have proclaimed tribal messiahship. The unification of North and South Korea does not just happen automatically. It is possible only after all these things are tied together. Since all these things are connected to the family level and the tribal level, they will then bond to the national level, and the Unification Church and the government should then become one. (219-97, 1991.8.25)

Since the mission of Jesus was not completed, I entrusted you to be tribal messiahs and to bless your own parents, who had married as they wished, just like fallen Adam. Owing to God's grace – that is, the Blessing – your parents could be raised up to the position of parents untouched by the Fall. This is amazing! It's like a dream! I have proclaimed tribal messiahship in order to accomplish this.

Jesus proclaimed tribal messiahship all on his own. Jesus was sent alone to become the tribal and national messiah. However, I have proclaimed over twenty-five thousand Blessed Families worldwide as tribal messiahs. Think how great the power of this is. (228-173, 1992.3.27)

Although the Korean Unification Church and the Japanese Unification Church have become one as Cain and Abel, all the women who are united, becoming a plus, must bring together those who are related to the organizations linked to the Unification Church – such as the International Federation for Victory Over Communism, Citi-

zens' Federation for the Unification of North and South Korea, and so on – and offer them. Where do they sacrifice themselves? In the family. They should start from the family. I have proclaimed the tribal messiahs in order to promote this.

Men were sent in place of me, and if these men choose four trained women to assist them, they can become the tribal kings of that nation. These women can then be sent out to put all people, even all men, in order. It will all be done through education. (230-287, 1992.5.8)

Accomplishments on earth are also accomplishments in heaven. The time has come when one's accomplishments on earth can be harvested as heavenly victories. Through all of the ceremonies we had today in the name of True Parents, centering on Jesus in the spirit world, and centering on True Parents of the united spirit and physical world, these two worlds have become united. I have proclaimed tribal messiahship, as it is the era for the two worlds to go forward and expand the new world through the blood relationship of the family centering on one true love. You have been given a period of indemnifying all debts.

The heart of the bridegroom can be engrafted onto the foundation of the bride and family, the true family centering on the realm of Eve, Cain, and Abel who can receive this. (246-136, 1993.4.7)

Unless the tribal messiah builds a bridge connecting to the family messiah, then a person's opportunity for rebirth will be blocked. Because I was aware of all this, I proclaimed tribal messiahship to liberate humankind. This is a worldwide, revolutionary event. It is a special privilege and grace. (265-136, 1994.11.20)

Section 3. The Reason for Giving the Tribal Messiah Responsibility

Who are the tribal messiahs? Tribal messiahs are the owners of true love. To become owners of true love was what Jesus, Adam and Eve, and God hoped for. Therefore, everyone must be owners of true love and go forward; then everything will be accomplished. Being tribal messiahs means to be the tribal ancestors. (185-98, 1989.1.3)

What is a tribal messiah? In short, it is a person who promotes father and mother to the seats of king and queen. Through tribal messiahship, you will be able to return to the homeland in the heavenly nation, which is the original homeland where you were born from your parents' love. If you do not fulfill this, there will be no homeland. With no homeland, there cannot be parents. By establishing the homeland, the homelands of all of the people who have lived in Korea will become part of the heavenly kingdom. Then all birthplaces of humankind on earth will belong to the heavenly kingdom, and you will inherit the position of parents who have not fallen. (194-121, 1989.10.17)

You must know that tribal messiahship is the advance guard of one

generation centering on the tribe that guides people to the homeland. It is like Moses, who was the advance guard of the Exodus. Tribal messiahship was not announced without a purpose. Moses led the Exodus without any prior knowledge. In your case, you know everything in detail. You know the entire theory. You must go and seek your homeland.

Nevertheless, the fact that you cannot enter your homeland without finding Cain is a fact of the Principle. Because the elder brother's tribe still remains in the satanic world, you must save the elder brother in order for him to come to your tribe. You must do so because otherwise he may go to Satan's side. Cain can save his own extended family following his own salvation by becoming a shield when he returns to his homeland. Otherwise, Satan may take away your father and mother. Even if you have witnessed to them, they may be dragged away. Since there is such a risk, God has no choice but to lead such providence. Even if you witness to your father, mother, the whole family, and the entire hometown, they may all be taken away again. (102-264, 1979.1.14)

The first task as a tribal messiah is to help one's father and mother achieve the position of Adam and Even before the Fall. Then next is the hometown. The right of kingship is restored by establishing the hometown. When that happens, isn't it all finished? Everything should be included. First the tribal messiah must stand on an equal position as the parents and restore the hometown, and then restore the right of kingship. Therefore, everyone who was born, whether in the Soviet Union or in America, will all have a hometown in the heavenly kingdom.

You must have parents in the heavenly kingdom in order to have a hometown in the heavenly kingdom. The mission of the tribal messiah is to create parents who belong to the heavenly kingdom. (194-121, 1989.10.17)

You must be in the vertical position in order to become God's son or daughter. You will enter the original position, the position of a son or daughter, after you come to a position where you have mastered all the experiences of north, south, east, west, before and after, left and right, and up and down. Then God can say that you have experienced and mastered everything. Satan is making every effort to block you from going to the original position. Contact with God's love – not money or power – is what Satan fears the most. Power is not necessary before God. Because God is omnipotent, there is no need for knowledge. What knowledge would an almighty being need if he is already the King of knowledge? (198-260, 1990.2.4)

In the place of God in heaven, who is in the vertical position, I am dispatching tribal messiahs horizontally on the earth as my current undertaking. Even if I die now, tribal messiahs certainly will be engrafted into the solid worldwide domain and vertical world. I am sending out tribal messiahs to become the ancestors of Abel families.

These ancestors have the seed of life. Because these messiahs are parents, they come with the seeds of life; your parents and family have received the seed of the satanic world. However, you can use this seed of life to go anywhere you want. (198-267, 1990.2.4)

By combining the victorious, restored features of Judaism, Christianity, and the Unification Church with the blessings of Buddhism, Confucianism and other religions, I am forming a consolidated nucleus. This is your inheritance and the essence of the tribal messiah's position. You do not need to worry about the nation. There is no need for you to worry about the world, either. All you need to worry about is your family. (198-270, 1990.2.4)

In order to restore your tribe, you must complete your responsibilities as tribal messiahs. There has never been such a direction given in history. The tribal messiah's position is the position of the second True Parent, which is better than the position of Jesus. There is great value in having received such a position; nothing can replace this. (217-125, 1991.5.12)

Why should you fulfill your portion of responsibility as tribal messiahs? The first reason is that you must save your parents. Your parents are in the first Adam's position, and you are in the position of the second Adam. Therefore, you must fulfill Adam's mission by restoring and re-creating your parents. The second reason is because you need your homeland. You obtain your homeland through fulfilling your mission as tribal messiah. After all, the goal of the perfection of Adam's family is the ultimate reason you must fulfill your portion of responsibility as tribal messiahs. To be concrete, you must educate your tribe. (217-125, 1991.5.12)

Now you must straighten out your roots. Your father and mother took a wrong turn because they fell away from their original roots. The first son has gone wrong as well. Therefore, you must turn them back so that they make, as their central focus, the original right of the parents centered on True Parents and the right of the first son centered on true sons and daughters. A connection will not simply be made automatically. Only after turning yourself around 180 degrees and engrafting onto the true root can you begin anew. Therefore, you must return to your homeland and become the new ancestors for your lineage. You must understand that this is your final destiny. (178-99, 1998.6.1)

How are tribal messiahs dispatched? Long ago, Jesus sent tribal messiahs to the physical world from the spirit world through a vertical process. However, I dispatched thousands of messiah-like families who can stand as representatives of Heaven in front of their tribe. Now nothing will go wrong. I announced the time of tribal messiahship on January 3, 1989, at 2:30 in the afternoon. (185-238, 1989.1.8)

Unification Church members are the tribe where our lineage gravitates. The tribe should be moved to tears if I cry and be happy if I am happy. We are bound by blood. We are the race who has become one to establish the new heavenly kingdom by going beyond the five races and various national standards with different cultural backgrounds. The heavenly kingdom will manifest itself when this race becomes divine. And the world will open up when we live as people of the divine nation, with the cosmic Kingdom of Heaven and earth connected on top of that world. (168-136, 1987.9.13)

I have blessed you. The Blessing signifies a better position than that of Jesus. Satan cannot accuse those of you who are blessed. Accusation cannot be made against either men or women. Why is that so? It is because the blessed lineage is tied to the True Parents.

In this case, Satan cannot accuse you on any of the following levels: individual, family, race, nation, or world. That is how God sees it. Satan absolutely cannot accuse you. This is the state of being totally free. That is why I have announced tribal messiahship at this time. (189-147, 1989.4.1)

What does it mean that I announced that you should become tribal messiahs? It means that God will support you when you fulfill your responsibilities in place of me. In the past, when the Unification Church was facing difficulties and pioneering, the spirit world assisted us. I'm sure that same assistance is still working today. During that time of opposition, God guided the Unification Church and helped it move into the age of tribal restoration. But now we can develop further because there is no opposition. (185-240, 1989.1.8)

I am announcing, with the divine authority of the heavenly kingdom, that you qualify as a restored family, which the fallen Adam and Eve failed to achieve. This is the purpose of the tribal messiah proclamation. (193-308, 1989.10.8)

Hometown. I would like to go to the hometown now, too. I do not want to live here in Seoul. The time for my hometown will automatically come about when the foreign-stationed Korean Unification Church members go back to their hometowns and undertake hometown activities, whose influence will surpass that of the North Korean regime. The goal will be reached without a fight. The tidewaters can fill up and flow through my hometown. Therefore, the mission of the Unification Church families is to establish the land of Canaan, a hometown of our hearts, by devoting ourselves more deeply than do Kim Il-sung's aides. This is why I'm telling you to be tribal messiahs today. (187-193, 1989.2.5)

I have given you the title of messiah, tribal messiah! Then what should you do? What should you do as the messiah? I have prepared everything that you might need to become the national messiah, the world messiah, and the cosmic messiah. I have prepared treasures

the size of a mountain for you. You will inherit all this mountain of treasures once you become messiahs. It will all be passed down to you like water flowing through water pipes. (189-247, 1989.4.9)

Do you think tribal messiahship is a trivial thing? Although I am an intelligent person and have sacrificed my whole life to complete the mission as the Messiah, I am ashamed of not having sacrificed more. You should find the title tribal messiah quite amazing. You can stand in a more valuable position than Jesus. Moreover, even those who have stood against the Unification Church can be raised up to Adam's position before the Fall. How can there be such a thing in this world? "That Moon so and so, speaking right now, has accomplished everything that has been said because he is in the position of the True Parent!" There isn't anything that has not been fulfilled. (219-150, 1991.8.29)

You have the name of the tribal messiah, the tribal savior. How long did Jacob's family wait for the coming of the Messiah? They waited for thousands of years. It is something for which you must wait for thousands of years. However, I have proclaimed you as the messiahs to your tribes and sent you out. You are the seeds. How precious this is! (197-207, 1990.1.14)

Among those of you here today, if you belong to the family of the Kims, then you must fulfill the mission of the Kim family's messiah. If you are a Kim, then in the family of the Kims, and if you are a Pak, then in the Pak family; you must believe that you are the messiah representing your tribe in establishing the heavenly kingdom. Think that you are the savior. You should think you are the savior saving the Kim family. In order to do so, you must fulfill your responsibilities as the chief priest representing the entire Kim family. (155-265, 1965.10.31)

What is the remaining final destination? What is the solution? What should you do to receive such a privilege as being able to break down all the boundaries and offer solutions? You should all become tribal messiahs. Once that is done, there will be no condition for further accusation from Satan on the individual, family, tribal, ethnic, national, and worldwide level. (189-110, 1989.3.19)

You should change your entire neighborhood, centering on God's will, with the new experience and training that you have received in foreign lands. You must not follow the old habits of your neighborhood. You must invest yourselves as God invested Himself in creating his object of love out of nothing. These two, subject and object partners, must unite as one.

The spirit world will cooperate when you get to the highest position among all the people of your hometown. Wait and see whether this is the truth or not. And you must make and use many videotapes for witnessing. (179-27, 1988.6.15)

You must go into your hometown and be someone who can become the seed. Moreover, through planting those seeds, you should be able to leave an environment that Korea, heaven, earth, and God would like to visit anytime. When you go to the spirit world having fulfilled this, you will surely be loved as sons and daughters of the heavenly kingdom. Starting now, you should correctly establish such a course of life. (197-221, 1990.1.14)

When I tell you to go find your hometown, it means planting a new seed. Since you have become the seed of Adam and Eve, I am trying to put down a new root by planting new seeds through you. So when planting new seeds, you will need buckets of fertilizer. So you should go and receive insults. You should receive curses for the cause of goodness and endure much suffering. Try it for about three years. You won't need three years; I see it being done in six months. When you were first sent out for witnessing, I sent you out to find 120 households and to build churches in towns other than your hometowns, right? And you haven't been able to do it, have you? Then, I gave the direction to start Home Church, but you couldn't fulfill that either, could you? This is it. (219-158, 1991.8.29)

What I mean by telling you to go as the tribal messiah is for you to go to your tribe, plant the new seed, and produce a true olive tree. Because all of the existing wild trees are false, they must be cut and engrafted onto the true olive tree, making a garden of true olive trees. There isn't any better news than this for the family. It is more valuable than restoring the nation, the world, or heaven and earth. (197-207, 1990.1.14)

The unification of Korea can be achieved when, centering on Rev. Moon as the vertical plus, all the Unification Church members as the perfect horizontal minus come together and run forward. Since I have built this foundation for the country, your tribes must unite in order for you to make such a foundation for the unification of North and South Korea. (185-200, 1989.1.8)

Does it look all right to see the tribal messiahs come back, asking for help? National leaders! Answer me! I have never once prayed to ask for help. Besides, you cannot help, anyway. If you help, I will become a like a shell. Do you know what I mean by that?

If you cannot do it even with all your strength, then pray. Money will follow you even if you do not pray. That is how it is. (202-306, 1990.5.25)

When returning to your hometown, you will be all washed up if you think about your personal situation and the education of your own children. The Israelites who did not follow Moses during the Exodus out of Egypt died out, didn't they? You can become a race that is cursed. Because such a heavenly will exists, I am proclaiming tribal messiahship beforehand. (207-165, 1990.11.9)

Section 4. Let Us Plant Our True Heart in the Original Homeland

Until now, the Unification Church has been fighting to find the family, since the individual cannot come to rest without the family. Moreover, without the realm of the tribe, the family cannot come to rest. You may not be able to live comfortably in your family unless the tribe creates a stage upon which it acts as a fence that blocks winds and all other substances. In order for this to be so, you must become the head of the family among your relatives.

Once you become the head of the family, all your relatives will go out to fight if there's a battle. Then you can take a rest while commanding them! That is why I have told you to take up the mission as tribal messiahs. What am I telling you to do? I am telling you to do your mission as tribal messiahs. Until now, in reality, you have lived away from home. Now you must go look for your hometown. You must break into tears and put your whole heart into your hometown.

Just as the Israelites lived in Egypt for four hundred years, we have done the same for the past forty-three years. Now we must return to our hometown and let love take root. You must love God, your parents, and your brothers and sisters. You must disconnect the source by which the worldwide Satan can falsely accuse you. The establishment of the ideal heavenly kingdom in the blessed land of Canaan was not fulfilled because the Israelites could not remove that source. Therefore, do not expect anything from the satanic world. Even if we must continue carrying a burden, we are the best. Even if we get cursed or the dog in the village barks at us at night, we are the best. You must go forward, progressing by digesting the villages and marching proudly with an outcry of love. With this in mind, I want you to fight onward. (178-139, 1988.6.1)

I can give you the right of inheritance and the right of having the same position as I have because you have the name of being true children before True Parents. You must trust this privilege given by God and invest everything within the realm of love. With your total investment, resembling God's investment, your family will resurrect, and the nation will resurrect with the revival of the family. (177-161, 1988.5.17)

In the hometown where your parents are buried, you can plant new seeds such that all the fields and mountains praise the value of all those sacrifices and bow their heads. When the flowers bloom from the planted seeds, you must designate the first flower as God's flower, the second as the Parents' flower, the third as your eldest son's flower, and the fourth and fifth as your own flowers. Can this be done casually? Of course not! (181-273, 1988.10.3)

This time you are in the same position as the Israelites who have gone into the blessed land of Canaan. When you return to your hometown, don't be

envious of those who are rich! Do not be envious of people with power and authority! Don't be spoiled. You must educate the people correctly. The tradition of loving God, loving your future generations, and loving your race in the position of Israel is the best. You, who embrace your children and bring them to the church, must not be absorbed by the secular world.

With the joy of being back in your hometown after thousands or tens of thousands of years, you should dampen that land with your blood and tears, along with the cries of your cells and bones. The land should receive the title of divine land, which has been dampened with God's blood and tears. This is where the heavenly kingdom will unfold. (177-228, 1988.5.20)

You must return to your homelands and restore them. The Israelites could not accomplish that. Having returned from being a group of beggars for forty years, the Israelites were envious of the seven tribes of Canaan, who ate well and lived well, and of their lambs and their houses. This was because they were living in tents. In this situation, they ended up selling off God and the nation. (175-34, 1988.4.6)

When you love people, you must start with the most pitiable person, love the most pitiable child, and move up to middle-aged people. There are many conscientious people among those who do not have a high worldly standard of living. The families of the Unification Church should love those who live under the poorest living circumstances. Although those who live under poor circumstances are in the devil's world, people who can inherit God's fate will emerge from their ranks. (175-31, 1988.4.6)

Then what should you do when you return to your hometown? You must inspire the people to unite into one with you. The method is simple. Your son should become a teacher who teaches heavenly tradition and shows by example that "the heavenly nation will be realized when you do such and such a thing." And the mother and the father should show other mothers and fathers in the neighborhood that "by this way, the village will become a heavenly one." That is what you must do. It is simple.

You must form a family of love in which the husband loves the wife and the wife loves the husband, the parents love the children and the children love the parents, and you hand it all down. (135-35, 1985.8.20)

I have walked such a path in order to stand in the position of the global ancestor. You should be aware of the fact that you must go on the path to inherit the tradition that corresponds to you, the tradition for you to become the tribal ancestor. You must set up a tradition for your tribe and family. The twelve tribes will form from now on. Therefore, tradition will be needed. Those who think only of themselves will not be included. (131-62, 1984.4.1)

You must plant your true heart in your homeland. The fall was the inability to do so. You must be the head family of your tribe. (177-80, 1988.5.15)

God is the Abel of the universe. The world's people are in the position of Cain before God. Since God has led the providence of restoration through servants of servants, adopted children, and children, we must inherit that tradition and go to our tribe, present this tradition, and work to win their hearts. This will not take long. Three years at the most. So, I am thinking of ten years inclusive. (159-80, 1968.3.3)

Section 5. Our Task for This Time Period

5.1. Let us testify to True Parents

What is it that all people hope for? They want to welcome True Parents before establishing the global nation. Who do they want to begin from? Your new sons and daughters would prefer to be born through True Parents' lineage than through your lineage. Therefore, True Parents will be the starting point of the new future. (35-237, 1970.10.19)

How does everything end? It will come to a conclusion upon meeting the True Parents. The coming of the True Parents of humankind is the hope of history, the nation, and the providence. Therefore, the time of True Parents comes at one fixed point in history, a period of time that has never existed before and will never exist again. If we think in terms of the eternal world, our life on earth lasts about as long as the time it takes to take a breath. (51-354, 1971.12.5)

What kind of people are True Parents? True Parents are the symbol of all hope, the symbol of absolute hope for fallen humankind. They are the fruit of history, the center of time, and the center of all nations of this world, in which six billion people live today. True Parents are the starting point of the future that can connect to the ideal world. (35-237, 1970.10.19)

Let us consider the name True Parents. We find that history is guided by them. They are the starting point of a new world. Through the True Parents, an internal relationship is formed by which Satan can be subjugated and God can be liberated from Satan who possesses the external world. Therefore, you should be grateful first and foremost for this amazing grace of being able to live together with True Parents and move according to True Parents' directions. (43-144, 1971.4.29)

Humanity's hope is to meet True Parents. True Parents are the ones for you to meet even when walking down the road of death. You will be able to restore history, the age, and the future, which have been lost, when you meet True Parents. You must know that this is the meaning of True Parents. (35-237, 1970.10.19)

When you become completely one with the True Parents, the true nation, tribe, race, and family will come into being. True Parents are the substantial beings of value equal to all the glory found in heaven and earth. Would you exchange True Parents for money? Would you want to exchange them for your life? That is why it is different from before.

No matter where you go, you must find your way to Korea to attend the True Parents. It is the same for your sons and daughters and descendants of thousands and tens of thousands of years. Therefore, the Unification Church is different and unique. (30-237, 1970.3.23)

What is the true parent talked about in the Unification Church? Had humankind not fallen, God would have provided vertical love, and Adam and Eve would have been God's body. This means they would have been the body of God. God is like the bones, and Adam and Eve are like the flesh. God also has a mind and a body.

God would have been the internal parents from the internal position, and Adam and Eve would have been the external parents from the external position. You can attend the internal parents and keep the position of external parents, woven with love, where the internal and external parents are one. Based on the unity of God and humankind's love, the true parent, that is, the perfected person, was to emerge. There could be no perfect person without cooperation in love. (184-71, 1988.11.13)

5.2. Let us attend True Parents' picture in every family

You become a family of the heavenly kingdom just by putting up True Parents' picture and the flag of the Unification Church. I mean that I will make you the family of the heavenly kingdom. That is why there are a number of people who suffered disasters, such as being struck by lightning after grumbling about having to put up flags. There was an incident in which someone broke his finger pointing at me and had to repent and pray for several nights to recover. Why do these incidents occur? The power of an individual cannot block the advancing heavenly fortune. This is destiny. All the people who looked at Moses while he held up his staff lived. You will live if you bow every time you pass by the Unification Church flag or our photograph. (219-91, 1991.8.25)

When you put up the Unification Church flag, it is a signal to the members passing by to enter your house and rest if they are tired or have lunch if they are hungry before they go on. Therefore, you should always be prepared to receive guests. You should make such preparations on behalf of True Parents. That is why you would need a separate room.

As True Parents do not come in person, you should attend your guests as if they were True Parents. This way of practicing connects the idea of equalization to the highest heavenly standard. For this reason, you should attend your guests as if they were God or True Par-

ents. Such a person will surely receive blessings. (169-220, 1987.10.31)

I am very famous. Everyone acknowledges that I am a patriot living for the sake of the nation. Moreover, the whole world has honored my achievements. So if people come to say, "Since we have put True Parents' picture up, my wife and I cannot quarrel in front of it," and tell their children, "You should not do such things in front of Rev. Moon," what is wrong with that? Because you are revering it more than the photograph of your own parents, your ancestors will come and also revere True Parents as their ancestors. It will become an altar where ancestors can come and hold a service for the household.

As a result, because the way to receive heavenly blessing has been opened up, then even after you fall asleep, at three o'clock in the morning, your ancestors will chase out all the evil spirits from around your home. (219-91, 1991.8.25)

It is good for you to carry my picture with you from now on. It will protect you so that you can safely withstand any hardship you may encounter. Moses led the Israelites away from the Pharaoh of Egypt and guided them to Canaan by enacting great miracles and works. At that time, all the firstborn of the Egyptians were smitten, while the Israelites avoided this calamity by smearing the blood of a lamb on their doorposts. Thus, the spirit world is watching over you and will protect you. (130-290, 1984.2.7)

When the Israelites were about to leave Egypt, they were able to avoid the calamity of the smiting of the firstborn by smearing the blood of a lamb on their doorposts. In the same way, you can be protected if you carry my picture with you. Spirit world can recognize the picture even if it is in your pocket. This small condition has the same effect as the Israelites smearing the lambs' blood on their doorposts. (132-190, 1984.6.1)

Now my fame has gone beyond national borders. I have heard that many statesmen in various places have put my picture on the wall of their study and pay their respects to it.

Have you put my picture on the wall of your room, Dr. Yoon Se-won? Do you offer a bow to it every day? Do you kiss it everyday? You should kiss it passionately. It is not impolite for you to do so. If you kiss it as a representative of God's love, the spirits around you are given the right to participate with you in your work and receive benefit. God wouldn't say no to this. He would say, "That's right!" Don't you think so, Dr. Yoon? Why don't you try? (171-239, 1988.1.1)

You probably have experienced that there is a mysterious side to my smile, like that of the Mona Lisa. I believe that most of you probably are experiencing hundreds of thousands of ways of viewing my mysterious features. At certain times, I appear to look like this and other times like that. This is because at different times the spirit world is cooperating with you in different ways. I think

most of you experience this. Those in the spirit world all know me. So when they see this picture, would those in the spirit world like it or dislike it? Your ancestors can be connected with the picture as the medium. I want you to know that's how good it is. (132-190, 1984.6.1)

5.3. Let's do revival services for our tribes

There should be family revival services in the future. Family revival services are to be carried out based on your family. Those services represent the entire tribe. You should think of the revival service as the service representing not only a Korean tribe but a tribe connecting numbers of Blessed Families around the world. All of the people of the world will participate in such revival services.

The Unification Church in Korea today can hold a revival service representing the world centering on the tribal foundation, with Korea as its base. You do not know what a blessing this is. Therefore, it is all right to kill a cow for such a revival service banquet. It is all up to you. If you would like to eat chicken instead, then kill chickens; you will receive blessings according to the number chickens you have slaughtered. If you have killed cows for the banquet, you will be blessed commensurately with the number of cows: a one hundred cow blessing for having slaughtered one hundred cows. Everything depends on how much you think for the sake of others and on your efforts. Liberation of your forefathers will take place in proportion to your efforts. (185-141, 1989.1.3)

We have entered the time period when the unification of Korea is possible. Everything is possible. Now if you carry out a revival service for your tribe after finding your homeland, then that revival service will be a historical one. This is a more astonishing event than shouting *Mansei* during the 1919 Independence Movement, when Koreans were trying to take back the nation. Now there is a welcoming environment in which heaven's law can work. You should feel mortally ashamed if you cannot mobilize your tribe in such an environment. (186-232, 1989.2.5)

History is a course seeking the truth. The truth must show the path that a true individual and a true family should live, and a true society, a true nation, and a true world should establish. Therefore, perfection of the world, nation, tribe, family, and individual is possible when the focus from the individual level to the world level is one. The person who brings these logical key words – in other words, the truth – is the True Parent. And this truth is God's true love. (20-25, 1968.3.31)

People of the entire world must pay attention now. The teaching of Rev. Moon of the Unification Church is the truth for the salvation of the world. They are humanity's words of true love and life, which are needed eternally. If the Savior is coming to save the world, he should not judge humanity with a rod

of iron. You cannot make even one person give in by hitting him or her. The sacrificial love of a mother, with hands as rough as a toad's back and fingers so bent from working hard for her children that they cannot be straightened out, can have the power to make the disobedient child repent and come back to the right path. A club will not work. Even for God, who is the mighty king of judgment who leads heaven and earth according to His will, cosmic unification is impossible without true love. Difficulties are not an obstacle in true love. In true love there is the vigor to go forward at the sacrifice of one's own life. (201-339, 1990.4.30)

We will fail if people say, "In the Unification Church, the words are good but the people are bad." Did I give you only words? No, I did not just speak. I have done all the things that I am teaching you now. Therefore, there should be no doubt about them. I am teaching by creating a system of thought that is free of inconsistency and contradiction in both its intellectual and the practical aspects. No one can say anything about that. Both Satan and God approve of it. (24-108, 1969.7.13)

God is calling us with His words. Therefore, we must go according to His words. What is the way that True Parents and true children can meet each other? It is through true words. Those words are my words. You cannot be children without knowing my words. My words are absolute and true. You won't feel tired even if you listen to the same words for a thousand or ten thousand years. You'll never get tired of them. We must search for such words. Just finding words that are logical isn't enough. It is a dominant principle that can give life even after one hears them again and again for eternity. You must seek such words. (10-130, 1960.9.18)

True Parents' words are eternal; they transcend time and space. Therefore, God's words transcend history. They transcend time periods, principles, and ideologies. They are more precious than the words of others. These words, whether you listen to them at night or during the day or read them at night or during the day, flow into your heart endlessly. You must seek for such words. (10-130, 1960.9.18)

What is my bitter sorrow? I failed to fulfill my duty as a filial son; I should have cried and pleaded with my parents to join the Unification Church. I am trying to resolve this through you. I could not even witness to my family. There were eight brothers and sisters, but I could not say one word of the Divine Principle. My older brother obeyed me completely whenever I said something. I have restored Cain completely. If I told him to sell the house, he sold the house, and if I told him to sell the cow, he sold the cow. My mother and father could not be like him. To that older brother, I could not speak about the Divine Principle once. (208-183, 1990.6.24)

You should now return to your home-

land and build a lighthouse. What is a lighthouse? It lights up the dark. What is the purpose of that lighthouse? I am telling you to be a light for North–South unification and East–West unification. From now, you must turn on the light so that the light of the Holy Ground will never go out. (181-296, 1988.10.3)

From now on, don't keep quiet. When people gather around, try teaching for seven years as I taught you for seven years in the 1950s, without sleeping more than two hours a night. You don't have to do this for seven years. It won't take four years, either. It will all be done within four months. When I return to my homeland, I will unite it in an instant. Therefore, you must teach your parents well. Also teach your brothers and sisters clearly the true significance of these words. You must teach this yourself, without the help of others, with your own blood and sweat. You will become the precious uncles, younger siblings, older sisters, and sons and daughters when your parents, older brothers and sisters, younger brothers and sisters, and nieces and nephews follow the model of the sincere attitude you have when you are teaching. (185-116, 1989.1.3)

You must proclaim these words from now on. From this moment, you must proclaim the Principle to your neighborhood for eight hours or however many hours a day, even staying up through the night as I have done for seven years. You must do so. It won't take seven years; it will probably be restored in seven months. When this happens, I may load up a truck and come and see you. I am sure your families will invite and welcome me. (185-250, 1989.1.8)

I slept for only two hours a night for seven years. You must do so as well. I made the national leader, Mr. Eu, lecture sixteen hours a day for three and a half years. My heart aches to think how I said, "Who are you trying to kill by lying down? You lay down without even asking me?" to Mr. Eu when he was feeling tired. He liked fish. I still clearly remember how he used to eat a kind of tiny shrimp with gusto that I could not even go near because of its smell. Now I could give him beef ribs by the dozens, but I feel heartache thinking about those pitiful days. Why did we live in such a way? We lived that way in order to establish the tradition. (185-250, 1989.1.8)

5.4. Organize hoondokhwae

My words are not spoken by me. I did not say them; they are words spoken by God through me. Your hearts will start to move no matter where and when you hear them. There will be a great revolution within your body when the heart is inspired. There is such power in those words. (289-295, 1998.2.1)

Whenever there is a meeting, it is an opportunity for study. Whenever there is time, day or night, you must study. You should continue to read material hundreds and thousands of times until it becomes yours and you can embody

its substance. Unification Church members will become sick if they are inactive. So as not to become sick, you must read hard, be tested, and put forth effort. (288-41, 1997.10.31)

True Parents are the ancestor of words, character, and heart. (14-22, 1964.4.19)

Hoondokhwae is the treasure chest that I stored up under all sorts of hardships and deprivations and that I have opened up to the people. I have told everyone not to translate it; it cannot be translated. You should do hoondokhwae until I say otherwise. You must know that. You should do hoondokhwae whenever time permits. You should always keep a speech book in your pocket and do hoondokhwae even when you are alone, even in the bathroom, and keep a record of the part you have read, even if it was for a couple of hours a day.

You already know that you must read *The Way of God's Will* and the *Divine Principle*, but you should also read *Blessing and Ideal Family* and all the other major speeches because they are the records of victory over the satanic world. In the Unification Church, you should become one with these sermons, which include all past battles of the True Parents up to the present. By uniting with and following these contents, you will become one with True Parents. These sermons should take root in yourself, in your family and extended family up to seven generations, and then in 160 or 180 families horizontally, all united together. (288-16, 1997.10.31)

Even between husbands and wives in Blessed Families, hoondokhwae should be done for one hour every morning. If you cannot do it in the morning, then you should do it in the evening before going to bed, even at 12 or 1 a.m. I am doing hoondokhwae every day. When I had a speech tour in South America, although I was tired, I did hoondokhwae every day, even after midnight. I did not miss even one day. Do you understand? I am telling you, too, to try to read it. *Blessed Family and the Ideal Kingdom* teaches all the contents about Blessed Families. Since I have built a highway on top of the victorious foundation, you should become cars filled with gas and go at the maximum speed. (288-41, 1997.10.31)

Try talking about the Divine Principle of the Unification Church until it makes you sick to even think about it. When you think that you will try until you get sick of it, you will find out how interesting and exciting it is. You should clearly know that sermons have the ability to create. Because God is always with you no matter where you may be, your heart will influence the people directly. Do you understand? (107-251)

Those of you who have read the entire collection of my sermons, raise your hands. You dreadful bunch of people! How did you educate them, national leader? I could not even say the deeper contents in those sermons. I cannot express them now, either. You must know how precious these words are and

that the source of life is contained within them. It is not a source of spring water. It is not just any kind of water. And it is not river water. You should know that this source of life is flowing away. It is the Unificationists' responsibility to find a way to have this eternal water of life by groping for a way to connect the water pipes to this source. But what have you done? Are all of those books something that you can just sell to an antique book shop? (181-268, 1988.10.3)

CHAPTER FIVE

Our Attitude towards Making a New Start

Section 1. Determination for a New Start

We cannot perish or die. We have to survive and live on, right? There is no free ride on this road of survival. We have to overcome our enemies. When we overcome our enemies, we will see the Kingdom of Heaven. We must return to our hometowns and be victorious over our enemies, and on that day the domain of the Kingdom of Heaven will emerge. The realm of the unified people will also emerge. Thus, now is a good opportunity to accompany True Mother, return to our hometowns and kindle a fire in the hearts of ten million people. With this in mind and on this foundation, the people should serve and attend even the lowest stratum of society. Our North and South Korean countrymen should share everything they have like brothers and sisters, making a new start. Here there is no nation. Was there a nation during the time of Cain and Abel? Was there a nation or not? We should not receive support from the nation. If we received support from the nation, everything would perish. (219-339, 1991.10.13)

Previously, I said that we were to go over the watershed, didn't I? On my seventieth birthday, outside spiritualists came dancing and said, "Now Rev. Moon has crossed the thirty-eighth parallel." They are saying that I have crossed the threshold. Now the world of happiness is coming. This is how we should overcome the 1990s. After having passed over this, the Unification Church will be able to make swift and unbridled progress. Now, on this, my seventieth birthday, we must indemnify seven thousand years and the number seven, and must pass into the age of the number eight. Number eight is the number of liberation and making a new start, is it not? This is why America has declared the collapse of communism and so forth. Everything is completed. This is quite curious. This happened on the seventh and eighth after we had finished our event. (199-96, 1990.2.15)

Since heaven knew that such a turbulent period was coming, it has to guide us in preparing to make a new start centering on God's will. What kind of religious sect, church, or denomination should be there? It is the Unification Church. As the word says, the word tongil (unification) does not mean unification based on being led; rather, the word *tong* (統) means to command. We

must command. As the subject, we must teach our object partners how to become ideal companions and form a sphere of those who understand the subject/object theory. We must possess and teach such an ideology. The unification denomination, or Unification Church, does this. I did not begin this work by my own design. The world today has not understood that it all began based on something that transcends history. (219-289, 1991.10.13)

To walk the path of filial piety, no matter how vicious the persecutions may be and no matter how many tribulations arise along the way, you have to be men who are confident and at ease and who can overcome these things. Rather than being beaten down by difficulties and tribulations and turning back in retreat towards the path of bitter sorrow, you should repeatedly overcome, with strong determination, the roads of suffering of hundreds of millions of years. While hurrying down the road to make a new start that is filled with the hope of tomorrow, you should leave behind a path that can distinguish itself from the path of death. You should know that both history and God demand such things. (174-43, 1988.2.23)

I started organizing the Federation for World Peace a few years ago. We have to finish this by the end of August this year. It is the same with the Religious Federation for World Peace. It must be completed before September. It has to be organized because August is the month when we are to make a new start worldwide. This was the reason we held the Declaration Ceremony of God's Eternal Blessing on the first of July. We all have to complete the course of indemnity. By doing this we have to unite the religious realms and make this declaration. This will be done on August 28. We have to perform the declaration ceremony by then and afterwards start anew on September 1. We will all go beyond this. After we achieve this, the world will turn around and follow me. (220-45, 1991.10.14)

If you live a life for the sake of others, you will all go beyond the standard of past ancestors and finally become successful in the world as historical victors and giants who can be called God's sons and daughters who walk the heavenly path. Such an age has come. An amazing age has come when you can make a new start during your lifetime. (201-169, 1990.3.30)

Section 2. The Attitude to Inherit True Parents' Tradition

You are fallen sons and daughters. In reality, you cannot reach that place alone. You are in a fallen position. This is why you have to first learn from True Parents. When you act, you have to follow their directions. Only then can you be united with them and it is there that true love can appear. That will be the tradition of the first family of Eden. Without True Parents, how would you learn the tradition of true love? Without the

True Parents, such an inheritance cannot occur. (131-238, 1984.5.4)

Fathers and mothers want to bequeath everything they have to their beloved sons and daughters. Everything in the universe can be bequeathed easily when those involved have an equal standard of love. This is why parents want children of filial piety. Who are these children of filial piety? They are those who, as participants in their parents' eternal love, will continue the tradition of bequeathing love. (140-233, 1986.2.12)

Who do you want as the head of your family? Who do you want to sit in the head position? What kind of person would the father, the grandmother, and the whole family wants as their heir? It is the one who loves the most. If the grandfather is the one who loves the whole family the most, the family members will report to him rather than to the father. This is inevitable. Therefore, the one who can be the head of a household is the one who serves others with the most loving heart. The one who serves others more with a heart of love will inherit the tradition of love in that family. You should know that only such a person will participate in the eternal inheritance. (141-292, 1986.3.2)

In your family you are told, "Be a child of filial piety!" What does this mean? It means to practice true love. Then, what does it mean to say, "Be an heir" or "Be a patriot"? It is saying that we should inherit the nation. What does it mean to say, "Be a saint?" It means that we should love the world; if we do, we will inherit the world. We will be the owner of the world. If we say, "Be a holy son and daughter" and "Be God's son"… what does that mean? It is saying that we should participate in God's love and receive the right to inherit the entire universe. Based on the traditional way to inherit all these things, God has been preparing the foundation to develop this logical stage in the fallen world of humanity. From this we can draw the conclusion that the purpose of religion or the path of spiritual attainment is possible. On what basis? On the basis of love. (142-337, 1986.3.14)

The path of God, who has been paving the way of the tradition of love, is one full of suffering. We have to walk this path because we are to inherit the tradition God has been establishing. I don't enjoy watching you suffer. You should keep in mind that God has been preparing with painful efforts and devotion to bless you unconditionally. Glory comes only when you receive the inheritance in that place. Isn't this so? Glory comes only when you inherit from your enemy. God dwells there. Since it has been spread through the cross, it must be reaped by going the way of the cross again. You should know this. Since it was spread through suffering, it must be reaped through suffering. (150-209, 1961.2.15)

In order for us to inherit the entire providence of God, we have to be loyal

to heavenly tradition. With faith in the tradition, what do we have to do? We must take responsibility for His providence. After taking responsibility, we must carry out reformation. If this tradition is not right before Father, and if we are to pass on that tradition to everyone, we must strive to eliminate the contradictions within the social environment. Otherwise, there will be no development. You will have to bear in mind even more clearly that in order to inherit such historical connections and fulfill the responsibility of a pioneer of the age, we must inherit the historically pure tradition of God's providence of restoration, bear such responsibility in the current environment of our daily life, and move forward in order to build the foundation for a new ideal for the future. (152-196, 1963.5.10)

We should have the same parents and become bonded with our brothers and sisters. Then, we should inherit the daily life, habits, and traditions of those parents just as they are. We should form a family that heaven can rejoice in. Only then will there be family members. (155-209, 1965.10.30)

If someone wants a great nation and yet is idle, just eating and sleeping and acting like others and saying, "Let's have a great nation. How splendid it is!" he must be a successor of the devil. If you want to have a great tribe, people and nation, you should be able to invest not just your own family, but your whole clan. If you desire such a world you have to first invest your entire nation. Only then will you be able to stand in a position in the providential tradition in which you can inherit a great world. This is the truth. (172-314, 1988.1.31)

Although your mother and father are alive, they cannot form a relationship without love. Also, without love they cannot inherit relationships of front and back, left and right. Thus, a man and a woman who are married must learn parents' love, and at the same time establish an axis of life for their children centering on the tradition of bequeathing this love. (173-84, 1988.2.7)

The Kingdom of Heaven is a place where people go who live for the sake of others. Those who have invested themselves in the world while embracing and communicating with it, and who have wandered about in search of something greater while attending God, will be the owners of the heavenly kingdom. You should take pride in such things. You can take pride in your mother, wife and husband, sons and daughters, children and siblings. You must apply this tradition to the nation; you must apply that formula to the world and to heaven and earth. Such people can have the right of participation, equal position, and inheritance wherever they go. This is why God becomes mine. God's love becomes mine. Wherever God goes, there is the right of equal position and participation. If anyone wants to go somewhere else even after having learned such an amazing fact, please go. He will be hit

by lightening. You should know that achieving this is the path of the Unification Church. (175-138, 1988.4.10)

Sons and daughters should not live for their own sakes. In serving heaven and earth and humankind as themselves, they should be sons and daughters who must inherit a stronger and higher tradition. This is how it should be. No one can complain. This is why not just anyone can be the successor to the founder of the Unification Church. They should be sons and daughters who can inherit the lineage and live according to the tradition of living for the sake of others. They should be sons and daughters who are at a higher level and who can do better than their own mothers and fathers. Unless they have lived for and served others, how can the sons and daughters say they have surpassed their parents? Those who are inconsistent will not succeed. We need the eldest child to live for the sake of others even more than high level sons and daughters do in order for him to receive the inheritance. (175-185, 1988.4.16)

What should you do in South Korea? Until North and South Korea are united, South Korea is in the realm of Abel. Thus, you should return to the Abel realm and I will pull you up to the level of the global domain. You must inherit this standard and, as my representative, you must represent the world, represent the nation, represent the tribe, and represent the people. As such a representative you should return to your hometown and take root in your home. The root of my global standard will be firmly planted and will thrive when God's original standards of tradition and true conjugal love are firmly planted within you and your family, (177-160, 1988.5.17)

You should not return home to live a comfortable life alone. Upon your return you should first organize the church. Your sons and daughters should not be objects of public scorn. They should not be beggars relying on others for their livelihood. You should assist them with their living situations and teach them the new tradition which was created by shedding blood and sweat in order to establish a foundation of truth and justice. Moreover, you will live only when you invest yourself to save your clan and they, in return, establish a foundation for your settlement. Without inheritors who are willing to sacrifice themselves, the national foundation on which this land of South Korea can remain as a basis for the Kingdom of Heaven would not exist. (177-163, 1988.5.17)

We inherit in the name of heaven and by heaven's command. We do not inherit democratically. This would lead to ruin. Seats in the national assembly and the ruling party are not decided by the power and influence of political parties alone. The tradition of the country should be established. It works based on commands, so we should be able to receive commands. This is the way society should be. (178-38, 1988.5.27)

You have been assigned to your hometown because I wanted you to stand proudly in the position of restored owners who possess a love that is greater than Satan's love. I expect you to fulfill the responsibilities of an owner with the authority of a descendant and heir of heaven who has inherited the proud tradition on behalf of God, Jesus, and the True Parents. Although our hometown has been opposing us, they are now in a position to follow us. They are now in a situation to follow my words. (179-93, 1988.7.22)

With love comes the right of inheritance. This is an amazing fact. Even in the secular world, when parents give the right of inheritance, they desire to give it to the one who loves their parents, nation, and brothers and sisters, don't they? Why is it like this? It is because one can become the right seed only if he conforms to the history and origin of this tradition. We have not known this. (179-235, 1988.8.12)

I have established the highest tradition, one that no other parent has ever surpassed. I am trying to bequeath to you such a tradition. What are you doing? Now the seasons are changing. Spring is coming. True Father is not just spring; he is four seasons. We should proceed with such an attitude. (189-117, 1989.3.19)

What is more precious than life? Am I precious? What is more precious than my life? The answer is love, and therefore, we must be loyal to the one who has higher love. This is why children must obey their parents in the family. Since parents' love is in the highest position, the sons and daughters who long for that love will obey them for a thousand and ten thousand years and will be happy to wander about through mountains and valleys in order to inherit that love. You must continue the tradition of loving your parents even if you are showered in smelly manure. Your parents' words, "Practice filial piety," are words that lead you to the position where you can inherit the love you can be proud of for eternity. This is how it should be. (191-222, 1989.6.25)

The greatest gift I can leave behind to this world when I depart is my words. They cannot be bought or sold for anything in heaven and earth. Since I am the True Parents and there are true children, that gift will bind us together by blood. When our lineage becomes one, all aspects of our environment, not to mention our daily life, will be orderly. Because we are representatives of our True Parents and representatives of their love, we have to inherit their words, culture and lifestyle. This is the traditional way. (190-227, 1989.6.19)

Section 3. Let Us Plant True Love

Without love, oneness cannot be achieved. When uniting two into one, words alone will not work. What should there be in order for two to become united? If they became one through material things, they would separate once

the material things were gone. If they became one through the introduction of a third party for a specific reason, they would separate once that person disappears. In order for two to be one eternally, there has to be love. It will not work without love. (51-75, 1971.11.1)

From God's viewpoint, the essence of the universe is love. With love, unification will be automatically achieved. If we love at a higher level than Satan, Satan will also be pulled in. God created heaven and earth in order to give us the utmost goodness and love. (13-95, 1963.10.23)

This is why love is great. The power of love bridges the distances between upper and lower and high and low. Love transcends space and time, allowing us to participate in the realm where we can immediately share joint ownership. This is an amazing fact. (168-197, 1987.9.20)

What happens in the presence of love? Do the things that used to be far apart get even farther away or closer? Why do we like love? Because it can make things that are far apart very close and make them one. Is there anyone who can unite people of the East and people of the West through the use of political power, military power, or cultural power? No cultural power, economic power, or any other power can make it happen. So what is the sole thing needed to bring about oneness? It is love. Now, can you see why we like love? (96-212, 1978.1.22)

The reason people like love the most is because it is the subject partner that can unite everything and make it theirs. People have no way of completely knowing how great love is. This is why I have come to teach you about love. (18-328, 1967.8.13)

A loving heart, the power of love, can even unite enemies who wanted to kill one another. It can unite the most extreme and opposite things. What are a man and a woman? They are poles. Aren't they poles? Do women like women? If two women were to get together and one said, "I fell in love with you because I like your hands. I am so happy, so happy!" how offensive would that be? (96-212, 1978.1.22)

What is the method to bring about unification? Living for the sake of others. Then, in uniting the North and South, should we do what Kim Il-sung says? We are not doing what Kim Il-sung says. Everywhere love dwells is good and desirable, and if we stand in this good position of being able to give eternally, the North and South will be united. Now, if we just establish an eternal foundation on which to give at a level higher than the current living standards of the people in the North, then communist propaganda will have no affect. If South Korea excels in all fields including economics, living standard and education, and stands in the position of giving eternally, the North Koreans will unite with us even if they are told not to. (36-76, 1970.11.15)

Goodness prospers whenever it overcomes difficulty, and it always prevails. This may sound like something difficult, but standing by this principle will always bring victory as long as the direction is right. Those who live and sacrifice on the basis of this principle will surely triumph. If there is an organization that spreads a philosophy which teaches that personal gain is not only for me but a gain for the nation and me, and also teaches that victory does not belong to me alone but to the nation and world, then this organization will not perish even if the world does. Because Unification Thought teaches such content it will not perish. (41-96, 1971.2.13)

Unification cannot be achieved when we are indebted. There is no unification in indebtedness. If we are indebted, the Kingdom of Heaven cannot be realized. If we are indebted, there is no way to prosper. A rich nation is established only when we have the means to completely pay back our debt with interest. Because the Kingdom of Heaven is the richest of all rich nations, indebtedness would make it impossible to build such a kingdom. (82-333, 1976.2.1)

Where should we eventually go? We should go in search of love. People have accumulated money, ruled over the world, become scholars, and done everything that is hailed as great by human beings, but these are all meaningless. So, what should we be doing? We must become one with true love and unite our minds and bodies aligned with God vertically and horizontally. A man and a woman who have attained such a state would have their core aligned with God's vertical love. Just like flesh attaches to the bone, man and woman unite with God's love. There is no other way than this. (178-112, 1988.6.1)

You should think that you are servants of love for the heavenly kingdom. Think of yourself as a servant of love, secret fighter of love, and intelligence spy to build the heavenly kingdom. Then, is there anything you could not do? If it is a matter of survival, a man can act like a woman. He can even act like a beggar. If you live with the determination to do even more for the sake of saving your nation and clan, your hometown will naturally surrender to you. (185-105, 1989.1.3)

A true original root and a true original bud based on true love are needed. Buds like you will not do. You must shed blood, sweat and tears. And for the sake of God, the earth, and your hometown, you must practice a love that is greater than that ever known by the countless people who have lived on this earth. Only then will the proper root grow in you. (178-116, 1988.6.1)

You can be endowed with the right of inheritance and right of equal position because I have granted you the title of being true children. You should have faith in this fact and invest everything into the realm of love. If you completely invest just as God has invested, your

clan will be resurrected, and as your clan is resurrected, one nation will be resurrected. (177-161, 1988.5.17)

I have done such things in order to stand in the position of the ancestor to all humanity, but you should realize the fact that each of you should walk the same path as well, in order to pass on the tradition to your tribe and become a tribal ancestor. You should establish a tradition for the sake of your tribe and for your clan. From now on twelve tribes will be organized. This is why we need a tradition. Those who are thinking about themselves will be excluded from here. (131-62, 1984.4.1)

When you go to your hometown, you should go there with true love. If you bring true love to your hometown, plant it and practice it, you will become ancestors. You will be the first generation ancestors. If you are a Park, your generation will be engrafted to the heavenly kingdom with the family name Park. Then, your father would be in the position of your son. (177-161, 1988.5.17)

Section 4. Plant the Root of Love in Your Hometown

Up until the present, you have lived as you please. Now things are serious, however. You are responsible for whether you are losers or winners. That responsibility does not lie with me, but with you. Will you return to your hometown with the title of loser or with the victory of a winner? Which one is it? You should return with the victorious foundation of God and True Parents. With this you can advance to your hometown. Because your hometown is the world condensed and because it is a reflection of my family, you should think of God's and True Parents' history of indemnity as you work to fulfill your responsibility, and you should tearfully welcome the people who come to you. When someone visits, you should have such a heart that you can talk with him all night without ever tiring. (178-116, 1988.6.1)

Just as the Israelites went to Egypt and lived there for 400 years, we have done this for forty-three years. Now we should return to our hometowns and plant the root of love. We should love God, our parents, and our brothers and sisters. Thus, we should cut off the source through which Satan, who is working on the global level, can accuse us. It is because the Israelites failed to do this that they could not build the ideal Kingdom of Heaven in Canaan. So do not expect anything from the satanic world. We are the best, even if we must carry our bags around. We are the best even if we get cursed at and village dogs bark at us. Proudly, you should participate in the campaign to digest the whole village with a shout of love and boldly march forward. I hope you remember this as you fight onwards. (178-139, 1988.6.1)

When you return to your hometown, you should be able to say, "Ah, this is God's gift to me" while looking at its mountains and rivers. Looking at

grandfather trees that are older than you, pebbles in the river that are older than you, and the fields, you should say, "How have you been?" This is love. You have to know how to love nature and to love people. You have to do this again. This is restoration. You should love all creation because Adam and Eve were not able to. You should return to your hometown and love nature. Love everything there from the grass to the mountains, rivers, and trees. When you finish, love the people next. If you have attained the position of being able to love the mountains, rivers, trees, and animals, then love people on that foundation. The people are to be loved after all things have been restored. (175-31, 1988.4.6)

In loving people, we should love the most miserable people; starting first with the children, then working up to middle aged people. Among the poor people in the world there are many people of conscience. Unification Church families should love the poorest people in the world. Although poor people are living in the world of the devil, there will be some among them who can inherit heavenly fortune. (175-31, 1988.4.6)

Today, you should return to your hometown and become people who can be the seed. This seed should be planted and create an environment which heaven and earth, not to mention the Republic of Korea, can visit and which God will want to visit any time. If you go to the spirit world after having done this on earth, you will surely be loved as sons and daughters of the heavenly kingdom. You should establish such a course from now on. (197-221, 1990.1.14)

Section 5. The Cooperation of the Spirit World and Our Conviction

Now that the spirit world has become very close, there will come an age in which good spirits will live permanently on earth. They will come and live among us. Do you understand what I am talking about? Until now, Satan and devils have divided and ruled over the earth. But now good spirits will wrest those areas away from them and take control over them. For this reason, Unification Church members should do Home Church activities even if they have to shed their blood, sweat and tears. We should offer our utmost devotion. We should pray with ardent hearts, more earnestly than the devotion shown by Christianity, or any other religion including Islam and Buddhism. We should pray, "Since the substantial foundation has been restored on earth through good spirits, please allow the Unification Church to go forward together with the spiritual realm centered on the spiritual foundation." (169-9, 1987.10.1)

Do you know that the people in the spirit world can be saved only through us? If you aid them, the blessing of the spirit world will come to you. If you pay indemnity and repent for the sake of the spirit world, they will follow you. The entire spirit world will move around you

as the center. You must know how important indemnity and repentance are. All these things should be done with Home Church as the center. (125-50, 1983.3.1)

If you work with absolute devotion to the altar of Home Church while on earth, spirits from various backgrounds and levels will return to earth and assist the earthly believers. Within the altar of 360 Home Church homes, Buddhists, Christians, Jews, and other people of conscience are living a variety of lifestyles. Spiritual phenomena will occur in which the spirit world transcends the denominations and religions to return to earth and lead their followers to the central figure of the providence. Home Church serves as a conditional altar through which the spirits can resurrect by returning to the earth. (210-197)

You should know this hard and fast rule that you must work with greater devotion than that shown by loyal subjects, patriots, children of filial piety, and former church ministers who were born in your hometown. If you work with more intensity, they will all help you from the spirit world. This is the condition you need to make. If this is done, you will stand above the realm of satanic accusation; Satan will not accuse you, and the ancestors of your hometown will spiritually cooperate with you, guiding their descendants to join the Unification Church. (179-17, 1988.6.15)

Your ancestors in the spirit world look upon this world and desire to come down to earth because they are proud of their descendants and want to help you. Hence, many ancestors descend to you. This is a world of religion that is centered on the tribe and transcends denominations. Do you understand this? Your ancestors trust, love, and want to follow you. They will follow you. This is why they want to dedicate themselves to assisting you. (189-278, 1989.5.1)

If you go forward with strong conviction, your ancestors will put pressure on your mother or any of your relatives to stop them from opposing you. It is like telling them, "Listen to me!" Why is this so? The original tribal foundation within the realm of goodness can be connected to the True Parents on the national level, and this, in turn, can be connected to the global level in which Satan has been pushed out. As a result, Satan and the fallen evil spirits have begun to retreat and your ancestors in the archangelic spirit world can now help you. (184-91, 1988.12.20)

Then, whose beat should you follow? Should I follow the beat with which you move or should you follow my beat? You should have no objections. Otherwise, the spirit world will not mobilize. Without following my directions, it will not cooperate with you no matter how talented or how able you may be. If you were to do something I do not want or do something I did not give direction for, it will not work. Heaven will retreat because of it. The help of the spirit world will not materialize. The archangel will destroy

rather than help. (169-133, 1987.10.29)

I am someone who knows the laws of heaven, who knows every path that has to be walked. I know the secrets of how Satan moves and I know God's strategies. I create controversies in the world because of this. The time when the spirit world will assist me is coming. If the world opposes me for much longer, a lot of tragic events will take place. (169-12, 1987.10.1)

Today on earth, if someone offers a prayer in the Unification Church, their ancestors will appear within a week and teach them everything. We are now in such a stage. Religions have been paving a vertical route by building the global domain through the bond of heart; I have now widened the horizontal domain throughout the world and connected it everywhere. As a result, the age has come when the ancestors in the spirit world can finally return to earth through their descendants and assist them. Home Churches are the foundation that condenses such a global domain. Thus, what will happen to good spirits? In the past they would descend, assist and then return to the spirit world, but now they will live on earth permanently. Such an age is coming. Live permanently, do you understand? When I say jeong ju (living permanently) I do not mean my hometown, Jeong Ju. At last we are entering the age in which the good spirits in the spirit world can finally settle on earth. So when you join the Unification Church and participate in its activities, your good ancestors will live together with you and assist you. This is how tribal restoration is possible. (163-301, 1987.5.1)

Heavenly fortune is rushing in. Now in April 1987, a new light will shine forth and the hope of the world will blossom centering on one place. How much the spirits in the spirit world must have wanted to come to Korea! They are all gathering. So, people who have shed blood for the nation and spirits who have sacrificed themselves are uniting and initiating a joint movement to attend the True Parents. They will serve in the future as mediators to gather together all the spirits of the world. By connecting with them, this world will quickly turn around. (163-25, 1987.4.18)

We must do it now. We are in the age when the spirit world will say, "Let us help Korea!" Until now good spirits around the world have worked outside to lay a foundation, and now this fortune is being driven inwards. Who is driving it inwards? I am in the forefront, and the loyal ministers, devoted wives and patriots are trailing behind me. After following me in, they will assist the unification movement of Korea centering on the founders of religions and denominations, regardless of whether they are Christian or Muslim. Such a wind is blowing. (163-18, 1987.4.18)

It is the same with you. If God is thinking like this, why wouldn't the spirit world assist you? It is the same. It

is because you are still self-centered. I have warned you about being self-centered. These days, when my legs get stiff, I say, "You stupid legs, I have to go!" If I am doing this, should you young people stay idle? You brats, you deserve heavenly punishment. You young brats are wasting time taking naps. I am telling you not to do that. (162-119, 1987.3.30)

When you go to the spirit world how grateful you will be that I offered to you the qualification of becoming sons and daughters of the owner of a free heaven and earth without walls. If you have listened to me and lived in this way, since the spirit world has no boundaries, wherever you go in that vast and endless spirit world they will say, "We have helped you. When you were in charge, we went there during that time and helped you." Everybody will be your friend. They will be your colleagues from that same time period. As I have said, the spirit world must be mobilized. Without its mobilization, the Kingdom of Heaven cannot be formed. It cannot be realized. The Kingdom of Heaven was supposed to start with true parents, and not with fallen descendants. Just like when God created Adam, He received the help of the angelic world. In re-creation the spirit world must all come down and help the earth as well. They have to do it. This is the principle, is it not? This is the principle of resurrection, is it not? It can be called truth only when the principle of resurrection becomes a reality. So how much will the spirit world like me? (162-114, 1987.3.30)

You have entered the global age and although you may be in an individual position, you are connected to the greatest saints of the world. If you have the character of heart and live a saintly life, you will have the spiritual foundation through which spirits will freely assist you when needed. So now, with respect to the current activities of the Unification Church, the patriots of each nation have returned to their previous countries on earth and set up homesteads around the foundation of the Unification Church. Until now, the number of people who died is tens or hundreds of times greater than the current population of the nation, is it not? They have come and are now waiting for us to expand our work. This is why all missionaries should lead national movements and mobilize everyone. If they give the order to march forward together with the spirit world and on behalf of everyone, these spirits cannot but help. (162-108, 1987.3.30)

The Unification Church has the ability to mobilize people from the spirit world and to mobilize ancestors through an interconnecting system. You should know this. Previous religions could not connect the spirit world and the physical world. Therefore, before people make a connection they had to make spiritual effort to keep time with the beat and to be on the same wavelength created by God. But now we are the transmitters. That is, we now stand in the position where we are the transmitters. It is not the wave but the trans-

mitter itself that sends out waves. Here we can send out electric waves, whether at a frequency of thousands or millions, whether a short wave or something else. Since I have the broadcasting station, we need a transmitter that says, "My ancestors in the spirit world, please, come and help me. Good ancestors, come and help me." Then, they will come and help. We can call and mobilize individuals and call and mobilize families. Since we have the foundation on earth to connect realms of the tribe, a people, and the world, they will mobilize and come down. If this happens, even if my body wanted to go in one direction, it will turn around even without realizing it and get pulled away. When two spirits come and grab and pull one, you will have to be dragged along because you do not know that you are being grabbed. Do you have a choice? You will run into this by yourself. Do you believe this? This is not empty talk, it is logical. (162-103, 1987.3.30)

When the Unification Church mobilizes, Mohammed will help; so will all the representatives of Confucianism and Buddhism, and so will God. This is totally logical. So you should be proud that you represent humankind, the spirit world, and God, and that you are moving with all of their support. (162-15, 1987.3.15)

In the past, even if you prayed and performed acts of devotion, you could only meet religious founders at certain times, and after that meeting you would separate and they would return to the spirit world. Now, the time has come when they can return to earth through their specific religious spheres. Since such a time has come, you will not be able to go to the Kingdom of Heaven unless you have achievements that have an impact on the past, present, and future ages. The past age was the age of good spirits, including angels, in the spirit world. The present age is the age of the True Parents. And the future age is the age of God. This is why those who do not have achievements to mobilize the spirit world, mobilize the True Parents, and mobilize God will be unable to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. In this same way, Adam and Eve were able to mobilize God and the angels. At that time, Adam and Eve were to have mobilized the universe (161-199, 1987.2.3)

Now, the spirit world will help you only if you do Home Church activities. So after 1988 we will embark on Home Church campaigns in full force. At that time, it will not matter if I am here or not. How can I teach you anything more than this? I have taught you everything about how to prepare a certificate to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. This cannot be exchanged even for several diamonds the size of the earth. I am pleading with you to not waste such a golden opportunity. (146-346, 1986.8.10)

The spirit world has been unable to support and assist True Parents until now because it is a fallen spirit world. As such it cannot help the ones in the

position of perfected parents. This is the Principle, is it not? Perfected parents should be supported by God and the unfallen archangel. Regardless of the number of spirits in the satanic realm they could not help the True Parents. Since the spirits in the spirit world were born through false parents rather than through true parents, they had been unable to assist the True Parents. But now that all the failures of the archangel have been indemnified and you stand in the position of children who are assuming the roles of Adam and Eve as they grow, they can now assist you as needed. Through the assistance of the spirit world, the fallen world will collapse very quickly. (146-312, 1986.7.20)

Section 6. Our Original Hometown and the Way to Enter the Kingdom of Heaven

6.1. Hometown is a world of the original creation

We are at a point of time when we cannot hope to achieve world peace or one unified world using human power, wisdom, culture or anything else. Under these circumstances, what is the main problem? I believe that answering the question as to whether God exists or not is the most important issue. Once all humankind clearly understands all about God's existence, they will clearly understand the direction of God's will. When they understand this, the world will become one world, a world of peace and an ideal world. (56-131, 1972.5.14)

Do you want to be a nationalist or a globalist? Religion does not only encompass globalism. It does not just seek to benefit human beings, but also seeks to benefit God. But communism and democracy only seek to benefit human beings. So which philosophy is better, the one that benefits God as well or the one that only seeks to benefit human beings? Which philosophy is better, the one in which both God and human beings rejoice or the one in which only servants rejoice among themselves, without their master? This is why religion is so good. (41-44, 1971.2.12)

This is where our Unification Church differs. The Unification Church says, let us love our brothers and sisters just as we love our mother and father, and love our tribe, love our people and nation just as we love our brothers and sisters. In order to love the world we will have to abandon even our nation. Furthermore, in order to love heaven, let us abandon even the world. It is the main teaching of the Unification Church to seek the path of love where we sacrifice things that are small and close to us for the sake of things that are big and far away. (100-80, 1978.10.8)

What on earth is the Unification Church? Embracing and holding onto both the right-wing and the left-wing, where is the Unification Church leading them? Going beyond the world of struggle where these two groups gather to fight will lead to the world of happiness and the world of utopia as guided by

heaven. You will fail if you try to move on the same plane by embracing them and nursing them in a human-centered way. In other words, the Unification Church must equip itself with a system of logic through which it can restore all the failures and downfalls due to incorrect thinking and move horizontally by embracing them. At the same time, the Unification Church must also equip itself with a system of thought that encourages you to seek to become a transcendental being of substance with vertical spiritual experience, on the basis of religion. The Unification Thought has to be able to systematize and integrate humanism, materialism, and all past forms of Godism. At the same time, it should be a religious philosophy of supernatural experience that can vertically transcend and connect the denominations. (162-102, 1987.3.30)

What kind of nation does the Unification Church desire? Now the Unification Church is going out to the world through the Republic of Korea. But the Unification Church does not want a world where the materialism of communism and the idealism of democracy fight the way they do now. We are seeking the nation that can transcend this world and can be governed by God's heart and love. (32-264, 1970.7.19)

The place we want to live in is the heavenly nation. We want to live in the heavenly nation. Are there borders in the heavenly nation? There are not. Are there two languages in the heavenly nation? No. Are there racial differences? No, there are none. Then, what is the heavenly nation? Since human beings are all born in God's bosom, all humankind are brothers and sisters. From God's viewpoint they are all brothers and sisters because they are God's sons and daughters, and from the viewpoint of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, they make up the population. They are the people of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. They are those people. (66-281, 1973.5.16)

Without a nation, there is no citizenship. Without a nation, there is no need to register as citizens. We must organize a people and register them. Before going to the spirit world, we must form a heavenly kingdom on this earth and, with this citizenship, live together with our family or tribe as victorious sons and daughters having inherited the lineage of the true and good parents who love the nation and the people. Only then will we be able to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. This is the Principle. (58-145, 1972.5.22)

If you ask what constitutes the Kingdom of Heaven in the family, then it would be a wife who lives a hundred percent for the sake of her husband and a husband who lives and dies for the sake of his wife. This can surely be nothing other than the Kingdom of Heaven. We have a saying, "Family harmony brings success to everything." The same applies to the prosperity of a nation. In a nation, the ruler's value lies

not in the exercise of his sovereignty but in serving his people, and the people exist for the sake of the nation rather than for themselves. If this is attained, the nation will become the Kingdom of Heaven. By expanding such a principle, we will realize a world where people live for the sake of one another transcending the nation and ethnic group. That world will be the utopian world of love, world of ideal, world of peace, and world of happiness desired by us human beings. There is no place where the principle of living for the sake of others does not apply. (75-325, 1975.1.16)

The homeland that we search for is not some specific nation on this earth with a certain history and tradition. If we are to restore and deserve that nation, which is in a different dimension, we must become people who have a proactive ideology. But that proactive ideology has to conform to the ideology of the Absolute Creator. If there is a nation that the Absolute Being desires, that nation must be one where the people unite around its sovereignty. We must resemble this nation in both character and form. (49-93, 1971.10.9)

You must live with the mindset that your comings and goings are all for the sake of restoring the nation and for the restoration of that homeland. You must live thinking of the fact that you have been sent by heaven as a secret agent to this evil world and are doing daily activities for the mission to become the founding patriot of that nation. Unless you have this mindset, you will not have dignity and pride as people of that nation. (50-255, 1971.11.7)

6.2. Registration in the Kingdom of Heaven

You cannot just go directly in front of the True Parents. You have a different lineage, do you not? Before you are registered, you cannot receive the right of inheritance. You have not been registered yet. Are you registered in my family tree? You do not get registered just because you are blessed. You receive the Blessing at the top of the growth stage. You still have another seven years in the completion stage. This is the Principle. We are doing restoration through this Principle. (139-230, 1986.1.31)

We are making a list as we enter the age of registration, and we cannot make it arbitrarily. Without going through Home Church, you cannot be entered on the list. You cannot become part of the family tree of the heavenly kingdom. You will be excluded even if you are a Blessed Family. You will be excluded. With this understanding, you must hurry to do everything which Heaven mandates. You do not do it simply because someone else is doing it. It must be done. If you were to go to the spirit world without having done Home Church, you would have to work at it for eternity in the spirit world. It will be a huge problem if you were to go there without taking care of your Home Church on earth. (143-118, 1986.3.16)

If you do not repent, you will face public prosecution. There is no one who can stand in front of the governing law of love. At the time of prosecution, the material supporting your defense has to be greater than the material being used to accuse you – with God, me, my family, clan, leaders and everyone in the Unification Church who are teaching you, standing as your lawyers. Only then will you be able to be registered as people of the heavenly kingdom. If the evidence in support is less than the evidence against, you will not be registered. (147-331, 1986.10.1)

The members of the Unification Church cannot just live as they please. You cannot lie to yourself, can you? Can you deceive your own mind? As long as you cannot deceive yourself, you will not be able to deceive the family register in the heavenly kingdom. Everything will be entered. If I raise this hand once, everything will be recorded on that video tape, right? If a record is made like this in the human world, do you not think a record will be made in heaven? If you just press a button once, everything about your Blessed Family will appear, from your childhood and ancestors. It will come out in a second. It will not take a long time. We have a concept of time here, but in heaven everything is done in an instant. (148-290, 1986.10.25)

Do you know what registration is? When a woman is married and goes to her husband, she has to change her registration. We know that such a person has to erase her original registration at birth and move to another place. (177-302, 1988.5.22)

The time is coming when we will be registered in the Republic of Korea; the Unification Church will establish the Republic of Korea as its homeland. There will come a time when everyone who has hitherto been mobilized can buy a piece of land in the Republic of Korea. This is if the Republic of Korea follows me. There will come a time when you will have to sell everything you have in the West and exchange it even for just a small hut in the Republic of Korea. (185-250, 1989.1.8)

Even if you are old and weak to the point of looking out the door and saying, "Alas, I am old," you should still go out witnessing. There will be a big problem if you did not register your mother and father in Heaven before going to the spirit world. The Blessed Families of the Unification Church have entered this time and age when they can do great historic work on behalf of their mothers and fathers, their ancestors, brothers and sisters, by focusing on their relatives and kin. (186-165, 1989.2.1)

Until now, in order to maintain your pride, I have been ordering you to go witnessing. In the future, the tribal leaders for the seventy-two tribes will be established and the new age of registration is coming. I want to include you there, but how can I include you when you have no accomplishments? (194-96, 1989.10.17)

In the future we will have to be registered. When the North and South are united, the families of the Unification Church around the world, those Blessed Families who have been active, will all go beyond the tribal level and become registered. If the North and South are united through my power, heavenly law will establish the loyal officials of the Unification Church around the world as the representative people and the people who provide the seed. Who would oppose this? Historically speaking, who would oppose me, when I have worked as hard as I have for the sake of the independence of Korea and the return to hometown in Korea? (197-212, 1990.1.14)

In the future, the age of registration will come. It is not an age of individual registration. The age of tribal registration is coming. When the Kim tribe, Park tribe, and so forth are registered, the age of national registration will come. It will happen quickly. From now on everything will happen so quickly. It will move forward so fast that you will be too busy to even open your eyes or blow your nose. Now the world is moving so fast that you do not even have the time to open your eyes and blow your nose, do you? Why is it moving like that? It is because of President Moon. The cause is not somewhere else. (197-363, 1990.1.20)

To return ownership to God, we have to go through the True Parents. Without going through the True Parents, there is no way to turn back. Thus, the unification of the world has to be achieved through the Unification Church. Even without us doing anything, everyone will be waiting in line to be registered. There will come a time when they will fight tooth and nail over who will be the first, second, and third. (198-242, 1990.2.3)

The time of registration will come in the future. The age of registration will come, in which you will join the circle that is connected to my clan and the royal family. But even if the age of registration comes, those who have not restored their tribe cannot be registered here. You should know this. It is the same as the twelve tribes. Without having restored your tribe, you will not be able to register yourself. If people come to know about this tribal restoration, they will flock to the Unification Church to join it before others. What will happen at the time of registration? Until now people and all things have not belonged to God. They have been Satan's possessions. However, now, through me, as one who has fulfilled God's will, my sons and daughters and all things centering on me have to be established. Also, right now I do not have a nation. A nation must be attained. (208-339, 1990.11.21)

This is a possession of Satan, not God's possession. Heaven and earth will become one without war because there is such a thing called the restoration of ownership. In the future, lines of people such as never seen before in world history will form. There will be people trying to put together all their possessions and be registered as a clan in heaven. The

position of elder brother and younger brother will be determined by who has been registered first. (208-345, 1990.11.21)

Until now there has been no registration in the heavenly kingdom. There has been no nation in heaven. There has not been a family or nation. When a family went to the spirit world, all family members would be scattered. But from now on this will not be the case. You should know that originally, without the Fall, the mother and father and the whole clan were supposed to enter the Kingdom of Heaven together. This is the Kingdom of Heaven. If the grandparents, mother, father, your couple, and the sons and daughters become one through true love and possess God's true love, which lives for the sake of others, even God will absolutely obey this. In the world that obeys such a tradition of love and moves only with the love that lives for the sake of others, there will be no way that the basis of peace will not appear. (210-306, 1990.12.27)

In the future we must overcome everything. But before overcoming, we need to reorganize. Husband and wife should get together and write a diary. Next, you should get an official stamp of approval from your sons and daughters and everyone should be registered. The age of registration is coming. Everything has to be liquidated. Then Satan will not follow us. Such a serious time is coming. So the Blessed Families should write diaries from now on. You cannot find some clever way around it. (208-39, 1990.11.15

From now on the whole world has to be registered. When we do this centering on the twelve tribes, you will have to record in detail everything about your entire life and what you have been doing since you joined the Unification Church. If you have taken even one small thing from the church, say, a wrapping cloth, you will have to report that. If it differs from the record in the computer in the spirit world, you will not be allowed to enter. (212-56, 1991.1.1)

The place where the royal family and the realm of heart exist is a place devoid of obstacles and divisions; a welcoming place. It will be level ground. Everything will welcome us, and the world of eternal love will be connected to us. We will stand there as the owners. Your clan will become like this. You will enter the Kingdom of Heaven by being registered with the honor of having all your clan gathered. As the tribal head who is free of Satan's accusations, as the messiah, and as the parent figure, I am ordering you to pull your relatives into the Kingdom of Heaven by newly registering them. (218-358, 1991.8.22)

This is what will happen when the heavenly kingdom is built on earth in the future. This is what the constitution will be like. Everything belongs to the heavenly kingdom and must be returned. This is why unification is inevitable. Nothing can force you to do this. You have to volunteer to do it. This will bring about the day of registration. When it is the tribe's turn to register,

you will be the first ancestor if you register. All others will have to bow their heads. (219-209, 1991.8.29)

You should clearly keep in mind that in this age, the time of a freer environment has come, and you are freedom fighters, building the kingship of Israel. Do you want to command a platoon, a company, a regiment, a division, or a corps? This will be decided by your own activities. From now on, the elder brothers and sisters and younger brothers and sisters have to compete all in one place. The one who wins, the one who has registered first, will be the elder brother, the ancestor. A time of drastic changes in heaven and earth is coming. It will be an age when the grandfather becomes a grandchild, the father becomes a son, the younger brother becomes an elder brother, and the elder sister becomes a younger sister. The question is who will register first. (220-251, 1991.10.19)

You should be able to keep the law of the heavenly kingdom and respect the royal law of the heavenly kingdom. You do not know this, do you? From now on, we have to prepare everything for the unified world of North and South. We have not finished training. Then, not just anyone can enter. The age of registration is coming. At that time, it will be more difficult to register than to register as a university lecturer after graduating from a university and becoming a PhD. Within your own generation you have to indemnify the history of your clan and pass an evaluation. This will be determined after you have been evaluated by the spirit world and the physical world. (210-368, 1990.12.27)

Heavenly fortune is supposed to protect those who work in partnerships. This is why I am telling you to give donations. This is natural. We have to return our whole clan to God. Who will be the ancestors there? The one who is leading in the front will be the first ancestor. Although Rev. Kuboki is the president of the Unification Church, if he were to fail to do this and someone who is listening to my words now comes to lead everyone and to become registered, Kuboki would end up as a descendant of several generations. As for registration, those who do it first will be the first ancestors. (227-97, 1992.2.10)

I am giving you orders because such an age has come. "Hurry up with tribal restoration! Return ownership to God! Get registered quickly!" This is the greatest hope for a human being. Here is the hope that transcends the ten million generations since our first ancestors. You should engrave these words deep in your bones so that you will never forget them. This way, in the future, you will be able to experience the joy of receiving a shining sun after the passage of the twilight morning of Japan. (227-107, 1992.2.10)

What are considered to be assets in the Kingdom of Heaven? Since there are no people now in the Kingdom of Heaven, there is no way other than resurrecting the people of the physical world and

taking them there. Without the people of the Kingdom of Heaven, the spirit world would have no assets. Hence, they are not your sons and daughters just because you gave birth to them. The entire 120 million people of Japan have to find a way to become God's people. How can you get the countless Japanese people registered as people of the Kingdom of Heaven together with your sons and daughters? That number will be the cornerstone for you to settle down in the spirit world. Without this, even if you may have served as a president of the Unification Church for dozens of years, everything would be in vain. Until now it has been impossible because the Unification Church has been under persecution, but now we can do this because the whole world has come to respect me. (228-120, 1992.3.26)

By uniting with the True Parents and inheriting their tradition you must establish the family that becomes the foundation on which you can govern all nations as the leading entity. When your family becomes such a family that can maintain a proactive position, it can register as a royal family in the Kingdom of Heaven. The place you enter in this way is the Kingdom of Heaven. The Kingdom of Heaven is not a place that just anyone can enter. Three generations must make the determination to enter there. The stages of the grandmother and grandfather, mother and father, husband and wife, and sons and daughters are four stages and the lines that have the husband and wife are three generations. (228-295, 1992.7.5)

Now, you will not receive persecution on the path you are walking. I have prepared everything for you. I have blocked everything for you. I have torn down everything for you. So how much should you honor me? I am announcing to you that unless your descendants leave a family tradition of honoring me hundreds of times more than you have during the age of persecution, it will be difficult for them to get registered at the registrar's office. If you do not lay a foundation upon which your sons and daughters can serve me several times better than you have, they will fall away. They will be pushed out. (184-243, 1989.1.1)

You have to register. Where do we go to be registered? We cannot avoid our destiny which requires us to return to the land of our original hometown. If we fail to do this within our lifetime, there will be no way in the spirit world that we can get away from the dominion of the fallen realm, which has to be traversed by returning again and again for hundreds of millions of years with deep sorrow. I have told you this in detail with a hope that you will go straight. Therefore, do not forget this; keep it clearly in your mind and become those who can inherit the right of kingship that enables you to enter the gate of the Kingdom of Heaven victoriously. I want you to be the people who, by inheriting this, can register in the heavenly kingdom and in the land of the original hometown. Those who pledge to do this, please raise your hands. (177-351, 1988.5.22)

CHAPTER SIX

True Parents' Textbook for the Unification of Korea and the World

Section 1. World Unification and the Unification of North and South Korea through True Love

Distinguished guests whose fervent desire is for world unification and Korean reunification, ladies and gentlemen!

The new millennium that just began is a time to clear away the divisions and conflicts of the past century and to actualize the ideal of a single global family of harmony and unification. I wish each and every one of your families blessings for the new millennium. I would like to begin by earnestly thanking you for having come here from all over the world to congratulate me on my eightieth birthday. Most of all, I would like to return all glory to God who has preserved me until this day.

In retrospect, there has not been an easy time in my life. I have undergone historical hardships together with our people who have walked the path of all manner of suffering on the Korean peninsula which has been sandwiched in the midst of the great powers.

As a boy of sixteen, I came into contact with the will of Heaven through prayer, and throughout my life after that I have devoted all my spirit and energy to accomplishing God's will. I came to understand that the fundamental cause of human unhappiness is that the relationship with God was severed owing to human beings falling into a state of spiritual ignorance as a result of the Fall of the ancestors of humankind. Through this, people fell into ignorance with regard to God, life, and the fundamental problems of the universe. I have spoken publicly on more than ten thousand occasions in many places around the world and set forth a true view of humanity, a true view of the world, and a true view of history based on Godism. These speeches have been translated into twelve languages and published in three hundred volumes. Their contents that I teach are not the result of a comprehensive study of historical documents or scholarly research, but are rather the principles and fundamental answers I arrived at through freely communicating with both the visible and invisible worlds.

Today, as I express my gratitude at this meaningful event, I am mindful of the fact that the issue of unifying the Korean Peninsula is the solemn desire of our people and the final act of bringing the global Cold War to a conclusion. Therefore, I would like to share with you the basic answer for unification under

the topic, "World Unification and the Unification of North and South Korea through True Love."

The unification of our country does not just involve the unification of national territory, but rather is the blueprint for the unification of the world that has been divided between East and West, beginning with the unification of the human mind and body that were divided by the Fall. Thus, this issue must be understood from the perspective of God's providence of salvation and must be resolved on a providential level. The history of humankind is the history of the providence of restoration through indemnity in order to recover the original world that was lost due to the Fall of the ancestors of humankind. Accordingly, history consists of the struggle between good and evil, God's side and Satan's side, in striving for the goal of actualizing God's ideal of creation.

Throughout history, behind the scenes, good spirits have always cooperated with God's side and evil spirits have cooperated on Satan's side. The rift created as a result of the Fall expanded through the family, tribe, ethnic people, nation, and world. In modern times it has manifested itself in the clash between materialism and theism based on humanism and religion respectively. If Jesus Christ had been accepted by the Jewish people two thousand years ago, he would have unified the Jewish tribes and race, and also the Arabic realm inhabited by the descendants of the twelve tribes. Thereupon, his ideology and teachings would have spread through the Middle Eastern region and the Indian region to the Far East. He would then have conquered the Roman Empire and all of Europe and formed a new religious cultural realm in which he would have become the King of all kings. However, through his death on the cross, Hellenism, which had developed first as the humanistic cultural sphere based on the external human body, continued to form the central culture of the Roman Empire. On the other hand, Christianity representing Hebraism, which was the religious cultural sphere based on the internal human spirit, faced all manner of persecution within the empire for four centuries.

What is Satan's ultimate target behind the history of struggle between good and evil ever since this conflict was brought into being as a result of the Fall of the ancestors of humankind? Satan has his sights set precisely on God Himself. God is eternal, unchanging, absolute, and unique, and the standard of the ideal that He held at the beginning of creation must also have these qualities. Satan seeks to destroy God's absolute will. If you were to ask God directly, He would confirm what I am saying. How would God reply if Satan asked Him, "God, when You created me as an archangel in the beginning, was it out of love that was ephemeral or eternal?" God would reply that He did so out of a love that was eternal. If He were to say that His love was ephemeral, He would make Himself an ephemeral god. Unless He maintains a standard of loving Satan eternally, there will eventually come a time when He

would no longer be able to exercise His authority as God with respect to Satan. Thus, however much Satan may oppose Him, God has no choice other than to establish the basis of loving him. Thus, God is a proponent of the philosophy of non-resistance toward evil. Why is that? It is because, until the world of the heavenly ideal is manifested on earth, God must love the archangel who has become Satan, regardless of the circumstances.

However much trouble Satan may cause, God cannot punish him or cut him off. He must establish the basis of having loved Satan whatever his situation. God can have complete victory only when Satan confesses to Him, saying, "Oh, God really is God. I surrender to You." This is the issue. Since the principled path of the providence of restoration is for God to bring about Satan's surrender by loving him, we who are to become His children must walk this same path. Whether we are persecuted around the world and considered a worldwide enemy, we must establish the basis of having loved those who oppose us. In this regard, God's Word, "Love your enemies," is His strategy to subjugate evil naturally. These words are simple, but no one realized that they have marked the boundary between victory and defeat between God and Satan. If God were to harbor the thought of treating Satan as His enemy and seeking revenge against him, then He would never be able to stand on the pinnacle of victory. On the contrary, He implemented a strategy of love, declaring, "Love your enemy."

It is remarkable that God's only begotten son Jesus prayed for Satan despite the fact that Satan was trying to kill him. If Jesus, while dying on the cross, had harbored any feelings of malice toward his enemies, God's providence would have suffered a total reversal. By overcoming death with a heart of loving his enemies and praying for their blessing, Jesus naturally subjugated Satan. This is where he qualified to remain as God's son eternally. Even Satan recognizes this qualification and gives his endorsement. We must conduct ourselves in such a way that we too would be able to stand before God and ask, "Hey Satan, am I not unmistakably God's child?" and he would reply, "Yes, without a doubt," and if we were then to ask him, "You have no problem, then, if people who live like me expand God's reciprocal realm, starting from the individual and moving to the family, tribe, people, nation, and world?" his answer would be, "That is the Principle, so I cannot do anything about it." It is under these conditions that God has guided His providence, with the Christian cultural sphere at the center.

Walking the path of sacrifice in the position of martyrdom even to the extent of shedding blood, I have been developing a movement of loving God and loving even my enemies. We too must develop this movement in our families, societies and nations.

Through a heart of love, Christianity subjugated the Roman Empire which severely persecuted it. Christianity thus became a worldwide religion. Until now Christians have thought about loving

only their personal enemies, but this is not correct. We must love even the country and world where our enemies live. As the starting point on the path to heaven is within the enemy country, unless we create the foundation of the tradition of true love and set out on the basis of this foundation, we cannot bring about God's Kingdom on earth. When the tradition is established in this way, there can never be a philosophy or ideology greater than this.

When Korea was under Japanese imperial rule, the four providential nations – Korea, Japan, Germany, and the United States – were in a state of enmity. Given the circumstances of that time, Japan and Korea were enemies, Japan and the United States were enemies, and the United States and Germany were enemies. Yet I practiced the way of true love by taking Japanese and Germans to the United States, their enemy nation, and telling them that it was abandoning and losing God and therefore falling into ruin and that their help was needed to revive it.

Teaching this tradition of true love, I emphasized to the Japanese and Germans that they could not establish a new worldview capable of leading humanity into a new world that God desires unless they set the basis of having loved their past enemy, the United States, even more than their own homeland. Unless people erect a base and tradition by which they are able to love the nations that are enemies of their own, God's Kingdom cannot be realized on earth. It is only within God's true love that the establishment of such a historic tradition is possible.

Despite being humiliated by the United States federal government and unjustly brought before a court of law, I nevertheless devoted utmost effort to give life to that nation by founding the conservative newspaper the Washington Times and a broadcasting station. Recently, being concerned with the future of Russia and China after the collapse of communism, I have been supporting the production of materials for their youth in moral educational programs.

I was involved in the anti-Japanese underground resistance movement under Japanese imperial rule, and from that perspective the Japanese people were my enemies, both racially and individually. Yet, after Japan's defeat in World War II, I loved the Japanese. After the war, I could have denounced the police officers who had taken me into custody for my activities in the underground Korean independence movement and tortured me severely. Had I done this, they would all have been executed. Yet when I came across Japanese policemen who were running for their lives, I packed some things for them and helped them escape to safety under the cover of darkness.

Do you know why so many young Japanese people stake their eternal lives and pledge their loyalty to me? This is because there is a principle of cause and effect which dictates that they must return what has been given them. It is because I planted the seeds of true love in the world, transcending national

boundaries in accordance with God's heart. It is because I planted the foundation of heart that leads people to a life of loving the countries that were the enemies of their own. Thus, without even realizing it, they are following God's command.

Under the rule of Japan, I had reason to harbor resentment even toward its emperor, but he had already been defeated. Heaven does not strike a person who is defeated, but rather shows mercy toward those who repent their sins and apologize. As this is Heaven's way, those who raise their sword to strike a defeated person will find their own descendants driven to ruin.

The United States is also a country that considered me its enemy. Yet I left my family behind and diverted my attention from my Korean homeland to bring salvation to that nation which had fallen into great moral decay. I threw away everything that belonged to me in order to bring salvation to the world of Cain.

How much have established churches hated the Unification Church? Yet we must not fight each other as enemies. We must come together in love. When we do that, we will lead the Republic of Korea into fulfilling God's will so as to digest North Korea. If the established churches and the Unification Church had become one immediately after Korea's liberation from Japan, all problems would have been solved.

Yet because that did not happen, we have had to overcome all kinds of hardships through offering endless sacrifices to establish the basis so as to avoid fighting the enemies of the individual, family, tribe, people, and nation that we faced.

Distinguished guests!

All North Korean citizens are equipped with Kim Il-sung's Juche ideology. We must equip ourselves with the ideology of true love that is capable of assimilating them. North Korea is a part of northern civilization which has been influenced by the cold winds of soviet civilization. We must work to naturally melt them with our temperate zone civilization. Otherwise, both our countries will come to ruin. Thus, we must thoroughly equip ourselves with the ideology of true love. This ideology must not be one that seeks the fulfillment of individual desires, but must rather seek the salvation of all humanity. It must not be self-centered, but instead serve the greater good. Communists have the idea that everyone should work for the sake of a few top party leaders. This is why they eliminate any person who stands out as a potential rival. We are not that way. Our idea is to unite with the corresponding environment in order to establish a higher reciprocal standard, that is, for Cain and Abel to unite so as to receive their parents who are on a higher level. In other words, we must become able to impress them with how we live. We must be able to amaze those people equipped with communist ideology in terms of our view of life and our standard of character.

We cannot restore the Cain-type nation unless we obtain the circum-

stances by which we are able to exert influence over them. If we cannot restore the Cain-type nation, we cannot establish the restored nation capable of being transformed into a global nation as God's Kingdom. Though North and South Korea be divided against one another, we must liberate North Korea without fighting them. As such, they must seek the love that will benefit them mutually.

Ladies and gentlemen, at the moment North and South are going in different directions. One is trying to go south and the other north, and they are on two divergent paths. They are at cross-purposes. The question of how to reunify our nation is a serious one. Who must play the leading role for this? If the South did, the North would oppose it, and vice versa. Doing things one's own way does not work. If both sides insist on their own positions, it is certain that the situation will again result in breakdown. The question is what is to be done to overcome this. South Koreans must emerge who love North Korea more than their country. Also, North Koreans must emerge who love South Korea more than their country. There is no option or solution other than this. If there is anyone whose patriotism is greater than that of any South Korean and greater than that of any North Korean, then this is where a transnational scheme for unification will emerge. Can there be another way? However hard you may think, there is no other way.

The question is how to put this into practice. The answer is that we must suffer even more than North Koreans and even more than South Koreans.

Establishing transnational patriotism amidst such suffering is the solution that will enliven both North and South. The same principle applies to uniting the world of goodness and the world of evil. Only when someone emerges who can uphold the way of loyalty exceeding that set by our ancestors thus far can our enmeshed history be unraveled.

Jesus was particularly remarkable in this regard. In the situation of having no other option but the way of the cross owing to the disbelief of the Jewish people, Jesus realized that the only way for him to live for the sake of God and the people of Israel was for him to die for them. This was the reasoning behind the crucifixion. As Jesus' love for God and humanity exceeded that of anyone else in history, the Christian cultural sphere caused a doomed history to take a new direction toward a world designed to serve the greater good. This is historical fact. Thus, the only way to unite North and South is to become a people who can give their lives for them both. There is no other path to achieve unification. There has to be a heart of truly wanting to live together.

As regards how we should lead our lives, the fundamentals can be expressed as: the way of devoted sons and daughters, the way of loyal citizens, the way of saints, and the way of God's holy sons and daughters. It is the heart of wanting to live with others eternally and of wanting to be with others. Isn't that the case without regard to whether they are

higher or lower, transcending front and back, left and right, day and night, and life and death? Such is the conclusion we arrive at. What is the common denominator among those who say, "I want to live in harmony with others?" It is not power. Power cannot transcend history. Power is limited to a specific period. The same is true with knowledge. The world of knowledge is developmental. Does knowledge give us the heart to say, "I want to live with this particular piece of knowledge forever"? Clearly, we cannot live with knowledge or money forever. From that perspective, what is the common denominator that transcends above and below, front and back, left and right, and the time constraints of past, present, and future? This cannot be anything other than true love centering on God. Thus, filial sons and daughters are those who lead lives of loving their parents profoundly in their families. Also, patriots are those who lead lives of loving their nation profoundly; saints are those who love all the people of the world profoundly; and God's holy sons and daughters are those who lead lives of loving all humanity and God profoundly.

Accordingly, the issue is to develop a true foundation of heart by which people can want to have the hearts of patriots who would want their lives to be in concert with the fortunes of the nation, look upon any difficulties faced by the nation as their own personal pains and difficulties, and look upon any joys experienced by their nation not as temporary but rather as eternal joys to be shared with everyone. Those blessed with the ties of true love and true heart are accorded the privilege of joining the realm of unification.

Ladies and gentlemen, if an illiterate woman married a Ph.D. holder, wouldn't she suddenly become the wife of a Ph.D. holder? Likewise, those abundantly blessed with the ties of heart and desiring to live with others in harmony have the privilege of joining the realm of unification today. As God Himself is a being with such a heart, if we live such lives in which we are one with God, we automatically become qualified to participate together with Him. Then from where and with what should the unification of North and South Korea be achieved? If we were to subjugate the other side forcibly, then eventually they would develop a force stronger than ours, and the conflict would begin all over again. There would be no way of achieving unification by this method. Only when each of us has the heart to say, "Even though I live in the South, I truly want to live in harmony with those people in the North. I truly want to unite with them" will the way to unification be opened.

Suppose people in the South were to consider our compatriots in the North and shed tears over their miserable living conditions. Suppose we were to tell them, "I am leading my life in a way that I can share in your difficulties." Suppose we were to promise them, "Someday soon, I will appear before you having completed the preparations for your day of liberation" and a movement actualizing true love for the sake of unification

unfolded; the day of unification would not be far off.

Ladies and gentlemen!

The first step for us is to think how we can live in harmony in our hometown. No one can be a patriot if they do not want to live with their parents or in their hometowns, and any claim such people might make to being patriotic would be a lie. People must be able to live in harmony in their own country before they can live in harmony in the world. Also, people must live in harmony in the world before they can live in harmony with God. Thus, they cannot be patriots unless they first love their hometowns and local societies. How much do our political leaders love their nation? Any politicians who lack a heart of truly wanting to share in the life of common citizens will soon pass on. It does not matter how well bred or educated they may be. They will disappear like an air bubble formed on a water surface.

Healing the division between North and South is not a simple process. As fellow patriots struggle to bring this about, they will need a determination of heart to work through many sleepless nights, transcending time and overcoming all manner of difficulties. The movement for the unification of North and South Korea begins when both sides have such a heart toward the other: "I truly want to live with them. I do not want to die unless with them. I do not want to live unless with them." When that reunification is accomplished, the unification of the democratic and communist worlds will begin from here. We must consider the future of our people and of the world, as representatives of the world, the six billion members of humankind, and the three billion people of Asia. We must be resolved to develop a movement that will truly enable us to share in the lives of all of them. When such efforts connect you to the way of saints, then you will come to resemble saints. If you practice this with respect to God with the loyalty of His sons and daughters, then you will become His heirs and the successors to His will. I convey these things to you today because I have already confirmed their truth in my life.

Distinguished guests!

When people enter into a relationship of true love with God, they must be accorded the privilege to have the rights of dominion, ownership, and inheritance. In dynamics, input exceeds output, but in the world of true love, output exceeds input.

What is true love? It is altruistic love that naturally gives and forgets. No memory is kept of how much was given. It is a love that never tires of giving. There would be nothing strange about a nonagenarian mother warning her septuagenarian son, "Be careful when you cross the street." Even if she has repeated those same words countless times over several decades, she will always say them one more time.

If this is true with parents in the fallen world, how can we ever grow tired of giving and receiving God's love in the essential world? When we establish the realm of God's true objective partner in our own lives and understand the

unchanging glory of true love for the first time, we will then be able to validate the logic of eternal life. In 1984, I was lying in bed alone unjustly incarcerated in prison in the United States, when God came and told me that I was the only person He could trust and that He wanted me to resolve the situation in Nicaragua. Am I really the only person God can come to with such a command? The United States is said to be a great country standing at the forefront of all developed countries. It has a population of 240 million and innumerable religious leaders. How wretched God must have been that He could not go to any of those people but had to come to me. Yet as God knows how to find people who have a great love for humanity, He came to me, who had been worrying about the world day and night. Had I not already established the Washington Times, and extended help at that time, South America would have fallen into ideological chaos.

Ladies and gentlemen!

The unification of North and South Korea fervently desired by our people is also God's earnest desire in this age. It is Heaven's desire that North and South Korea be united and that God's dwelling place be established in your families, churches, and nation. How then are we to attend God? How can we cleanse everything? What can we use to cleanse everything so that God will say it is completely clean? Nothing else matters. We must establish a foundation centering on true love surpassing our love for our parents, spouse, and children. Only when our offerings are placed on the altar centering on such love will the ideal North-South unification come. The ideal blending of Eastern and Western cultures will take place. The ideal unification of the divided physical and spirit worlds will come about. The realm of liberation of hell and heaven will come into being. The key of true love is needed.

Mind-body unity through love can always be interrelated with the unification of family love. A loving couple with a harmonized family can interrelate with the tribe, nation, and world. If a loving husband and wife are united, who would disparage and trample on them? Wouldn't a cosmos unifying harmonized families, races, governments, worlds, heaven and earth, true human love, and God be the utopia of true love? In the same way that plants receive life elements by absorbing the rays of the sun, love will be the life element for all humankind. Our fervent desire is to build God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven, where we can live while idolizing true love eternally. Yet how many people in this world are the subject partners or object partners of true love, can stand as people of character qualified to be the lords of all things, and possess both the value of a remarkable life and the privileges that come with such a life?

I sincerely hope that all of you participating today will not forget all this, and work to unite your minds and bodies, and that you will start by becoming people who live for the sake of your spouses, and go on to become true people who live for the sake of your fam-

ilies, races, nations, and the world. If you do that, then Korean reunification will be as good as done. However strong North Korea's Juche ideology may be, it is effortlessly absorbed and disappears when placed in the midst of God's love. Once we are equipped with hearts of true love, Korean reunification will never be a problem. Not only that; east-west differences and the global North-South divide between rich and poor nations can also be completely resolved through God's true love.

Realizing the boundless realm of peace of the ideal world that links the ideal of the nation to the ideals of the race, family, and individual, through assimilating the ideal for the world and the nation through God's ideal that I have described, is without a doubt the way that the world of peace of true love will be built on earth.

Distinguished guests!

I declared the fundamental principle for unification more than forty years ago, initiated an ideological movement centered on Godism both domestically and overseas, and laid the international groundwork for unification in the four great powers surrounding the Korean peninsula. Millions of members in Korea, Japan, and the United States have worked through the International Federation for Victory over Communism (IFVOC) and CAUSA to lay nongovernmental foundations in each of these countries. Over the years, leaders of many countries and the philosophical world have recognized Godism as the only philosophy capable not only of unifying materialism and atheism, its diametrical opposites, but also of liberating secular humanism.

My patriotic compatriots burning with hope for the reunification of our country!

Let us together establish our view of value on the basis of the Godism of true love and totally rally together in arming our citizens with this ideology. Let us make Korean reunification a matter of faith for ourselves, the Korean people, and world peace. Let us stand and answer the calling of this age, history, and of Heaven to become leaders and people of righteousness standing at the forefront of the movement for the unification of North and South Korea. In particular, as history went awry at the beginning due to Eve's error, so in the Last Days women with their motherly love need to take the lead in overcoming conflict and strife in the age of division and create a new history of reconciliation and unity.

It is especially the mission of women to restore young men and women and students, who are in the position of being their children, through true education. Then mothers and their children together should set examples for educating even their husbands in becoming God's sons, following the True Parents in attending God in order to restore the ideal of God's Kingdom on earth. In conclusion, once again I hope that the words that I have shared with you today will bring to fruition a nationwide movement that will hasten the day when North and South Koreans can meet each

other in true love. I pray God's blessing may be with your families. Thank you.

Section 2. The Cosmos is Our Hometown and Homeland

Respected guests!

I would like to express my heartfelt gratitude that so many leaders from a wide variety of fields worldwide have gathered here in Korea to celebrate with and congratulate me on my eightieth birthday. I would like to offer all glory and honor to God who has accompanied and protected me.

I have lived my entire life with the earnest desire to solve the many problems related to manifesting God's ideal of creation. Since receiving His calling as a boy of sixteen, I freely communicated with Jesus and all the saints and sages in paradise while seeking His will and fought against tremendous odds to complete the history of His providence of restoration for the sake of human salvation. I have come to realize that God does not sit on a throne of glory and majesty. Instead, He is a God of deep sorrow and profound suffering, who has endeavored to save His children that fell into hell.

What we must bear in mind on this meaningful day is that we must all become completely one with God's heart, and moreover, accomplish His will. As a result of the Fall, human beings fell into spiritual ignorance. This meant humanity was fundamentally ignorant regarding God's existence, the meaning of life, and the entire universe.

Accordingly, people did not know how they should live their earthly lives, that there is a spirit world after death, and that the former should properly prepare them for the latter.

Knowing God's will and heart, I have worked with single-minded determination in devoting my entire heart and energy to accomplish His will without regard to the time of day, changes in the seasons, or my circumstances. Looking back on the eighty years of my life, I realize I would not be here with you today were it not for His help during that time, notwithstanding my hardships and persecution. I have spoken publicly on some 10,000 occasions in many places around the world. These speeches have been published in a series of more than 300 volumes.

On this very significant occasion today when I am meeting some of the most distinguished leaders in the world, I would like to share with you my thoughts and teachings on the topic, "The Cosmos Is Our Hometown and Homeland." The cosmos was created as an enormous house where human beings would live as its owners. Being at the center of the universe, they live within the spherical relationships of 'above' and 'below', 'left' and 'right', and 'front' and 'rear', namely the parent-child, husband-wife, and brother-sister relationships.

God exists in the seventh position which is at the very center of 'above' and 'below', 'left' and 'right' and 'front' and 'rear' numbered 1, 2, 3, 4, 5 and 6. Thus, He can guide us in our daily lives even while existing in an invisible cen-

tral position. Human beings can with God's help be liberated from the satanic realm of bondage and suffering resulting from the Fall, to mature as true sons and daughters, meet their mates to become true husbands and wives, go on to have children, and become true parents according to the normal course of life.

Consequently, we cannot reject the idea of becoming true children, spouses, and parents. Doing so would be to violate a fundamental principle of the universe, thus destroying our own existence. Hence, each of us must participate in building a true family consisting of true parents, spouses, and children, which is the model for the ideal existence.

People need to fully experience true parental love, true conjugal love, and true filial love in their families. Money, knowledge, power, or physical force cannot perfect such human relationships; only God's true love, which balances everything, can do this.

True love is a force that invests. It is a giving force, not a force that only receives. It gives completely to the degree that it ultimately reaches a zero point. Whatever then enters that completely empty position is okay. This process of giving and receiving will achieve a balance that continues forever. This is the reason that relationships of giving and receiving will perfect an altruistic world centered on true love.

Likewise, all beings in heaven and on earth exist in reciprocal relationships so as to form a world of true love through giving and receiving. In reciprocal relationships every giving force causes a returning force, and this is what eternally settles the central point.

God exists in the central position of true love – that of the lucky number seven – giving balance to the entire universe. Heavenly fortune develops through the cosmic process of being received and returned. Within such relationships, the flow of love, air, water, and light takes place in circular motion, and after circulating, the flow returns to its original form.

Ladies and gentlemen!

What makes people good? We could define this in many ways, but one way would be to say that bad people are those who take whatever they are given and use it only for themselves, while good people are those who add to whatever they are given and share it with others. Thus, no parents want their children to achieve a status lower than theirs. We all want our children to be better than ourselves. Also, a husband would like for his wife to be better than himself, and a wife wants her husband to be better than herself. Further, an elder brother and younger brother would wish the same for each other.

Consequently, we all want to give back something more than what we received. This is our fervent wish as parents, husbands and wives, and children. It is also the fervent wish of all things in nature and ultimately the entire universe. Moreover, only those whose hearts are so wide that they think, "The cosmos is our hometown and homeland,"

will be welcomed by the cosmos. We can conclude, then, that in order to become God's true sons and daughters we must be welcomed by individuals, families, nations, the world, and finally the cosmos.

That being the case, where would you most like to live? I think you would like to live in your original hometown where you were born. Broadly speaking, 'original hometown' can refer to the planet Earth within the cosmos, and our homeland is wherever God dwells as its founding Father. Our hometown is the earth as God originally intended it to be – a place where parents, siblings, and children who have not fallen would live together. This was to be a place where black, yellow, and white people could live together in harmony.

Whose children are these different races? They have only one parent. God, who is with us wherever we go – whether north, south, east, or west – in the universe, is the Father of humankind.

Thus, it would be a mistake for anyone to think that white, black, or yellow people are the owners of America. God is the owner of America. This is also true for Korea. Differences in skin color are nothing more than the result of having to adapt to different climates and environments in different parts of the globe. In areas with large amounts of snowfall, we find mainly white people. Conversely, in places such as Africa where the rays of the sun are particularly bright, we find mainly black people. Fundamentally, though, people are the same.

For example, the color of our blood is the same, and our flesh and bones have the same structure. We all love each other in the same way. Thus, there should be no racial discrimination. This is why the Unification Church has been working through large international weddings to create racial equality. In deference to the laws and principles of nature, we have inter-married all five colors of skin. When a black person and a white person marry, it is like the North Pole and the South Pole coming together in unity. When a yellow person and a black person marry and have children, both parents contribute their good attributes, and their offspring are better as a result. Where there is love, there can be no strife. Each of us comes from a different hometown and homeland, but we can all agree that the homeland and hometown of true love is the hometown of faith, peace, and unity.

In the human world, true love, true life, and true lineage are most important. True love leads to true life and true lineage. True love is not realized without producing a true lineage. Further, love without true life is false love. True life is conceived within the context of true love and true lineage. Thus, true love, true life, and true lineage open the way to eternal life. God's ideal of creation is for each of us to become true individuals and bequeath true love, true life, and true lineage to our descendants. God is the ideal Being and the Owner of eternal true love, eternal true life, and eternal true lineage. Those who resemble Him become His true sons and daughters living in heaven.

Why do people marry? They do so to link together past, present, and future in the tradition of true lineage that I have described.

Prior to the Fall, Adam and Eve could relate to God freely and directly, but no longer after it. Likewise, due to the Fall, Cain and Abel, the children of Adam and Eve, inherited not God's lineage, but Satan's instead; hence, Jesus' words according to John 3:3, "... unless one is born anew, he cannot see the Kingdom of God."

People need to realize that they have inherited a false life through a false lineage, which originated in a false love relationship. They should be ashamed of the fact that they have come to occupy the position of the enemy of love, life, and lineage. God feels unspeakable pain and sorrow when He sees free sex and homosexuality that are so prevalent in our world today. Yet He takes the position of loving His enemy's children more than His own. His providence of salvation is to recover all His lost children by continuously investing Himself without expecting any return. For Him to revive a fallen person, He must invest a life force stronger than false life. How miserable He must have been at the sight of Eve being pregnant with the baby conceived through the Fall! Such children have multiplied to the point that now there are six billion fallen human beings in the world.

Human beings are created to pass through three stages of life. The stage in the mother's womb is spent in the water, the stage of physical life is that of soil, water, and air, and the stage after death is that of love. In the same way that a fetus grows by receiving nutrition through its mother's womb, our physical bodies grow through eating food taken from the creation on earth. Thus, we should love the Earth as our mother. In the spirit world, light as bright as the sun radiates regardless of day or night. It is always day on the sun. That is how it is in the spirit world. The light of love in the spirit world is unchanging. Love does not change, whether by day or by night, either at the North or the South Pole. The spirit world is the world filled with true love. As it is also like a storehouse in which the fruits we harvested through spring, summer, autumn, and winter on earth are kept, it is the resultant place of our earthly life.

In the course of the history of restoration, Jesus was the only one born with true life directly connected to God's true lineage. Accordingly, no one else among fallen humanity has ever entered the realm of God's direct dominion either on earth or in the spirit world. Thus, God has been alone, spending eons in solitude and sorrow. Hence, the world has become a place where people and all things of nature are sad. God has been seeking one person whom He could trust and who could purify the fallen lineage of humanity and transform it into true life, that is, the Messiah who inherits God's true love and liberates all humankind.

As you all know, the history of the Old Testament Age after Adam's fall is that of the people chosen to receive the

Messiah. God's will was for Jesus to come as the Messiah through the prepared chosen people of Israel, for all people to be grafted onto his family, and for this to be expanded to encompass the world. Yet his death on the cross caused by the faithlessness of his people left this process as an ideal to be accomplished at the time of the Second Advent. Accordingly, the returning Lord must stand in the position of the True Parent of humankind and restore the true love nest by fulfilling together with his bride the position of the Parents of heaven and earth and complete God's providence for human salvation.

The Messiah must begin by forming a family that attends God more gloriously and with greater filial piety than the family that Adam and Eve would have formed had they not fallen. He is the head of the family that represents the core of the ideal for a new humanity that must begin by inheriting true life and true lineage. From there, he must go on to create Blessed Families in order to complete God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. Accordingly, he must come as the True Parent of humankind. He must deny the love and lineage of the satanic world and establish the perfected individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, and cosmos linked to God's true love.

All humankind must receive the new marriage blessing through true parental love and inherit the new family lineage. You must understand that this is only possible through true love; this is how the hellish world of Satan's dominion can be liberated.

Accordingly, everyone must go through the following eight-stage process of restoration and recover their positions as God's sons and daughters: gestation, infancy, fraternity, engagement, matrimony, parenthood, grandparenthood, and kingship. We should understand that we were born with the ultimate purpose to become God's children, princes and princesses, and the great lords of heaven and earth.

Ladies and gentlemen!

We were originally to grow up so that men and women would meet each other to become kings and queens, and, as heavenly princes and princesses, inherit everything in God's Kingdom. For this, we must start at the bottom of hell and work our way up through the eight-stage indemnity process until God's Kingdom is established, which is possible only through the Blessing of the True Parents, who come as the Messiah.

Therefore, blessed couples should become 'plus' couples who take the initiative in serving the world. To be completely reborn, we should practice absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience centering on God. I have personally practiced this throughout my life.

When creating the universe, God did so with absolute faith. He went on to create us to be the absolute partners of His love. Absolute obedience means investing ourselves completely to the extent of total self-denial. Furthermore, we forget about the investment we made and reinvest; such a process continues until

reaching the zero point without any concept of self. If our love were rejected, we would continue to love even more; even if we have already invested, we should continue to invest everything that we have, until we can make our enemy surrender voluntarily. God walked such a path, and the Parents of heaven and earth have also walked such a path. The person who invests love continuously without expecting a direct return becomes a central being, the one who inherits everything, and the child of greatest piety. In a family with ten members including the grandparents, the one most exemplifying altruism will be its center. The same principle applies with respect to patriots in the nation. The more we invest without expecting a direct return, the higher we can rise as loyal citizens, saints, and God's holy sons and daughters.

God can be the King and Ancestor of all those who live for the sake of others because, since the beginning of human history, He has, more than any other being, continuously lived centered on true love for the sake of others and invested Himself without expecting direct return and will continue to do so for eternity. The reason the Unification Church that I lead could become a worldwide religious group in such a short time is that its members have worked hard according to this very principle.

When I reflect upon my life totally committed for the sake of humankind, I can testify that it truly has been the focus of opposition from innumerable satanic forces in both the invisible and visible worlds, as well as from numerous religious leaders and many governments; yet because I lived for their sake, I eventually came to stand in their center. As I lived for those who opposed me because of their inability to understand the truth, invested myself for their children, and lived for the sake of governments that persecuted me, they eventually came to respect me. From this, we can learn God's strategy in contrast to that of Satan. God's strategy is to initially take the blow and then recover everything in the end. Satan is the first to strike, but he loses in the end. Under this principle, I blessed myriads of young couples of five skin colors from six continents across the five oceans in international mass weddings as a means of human salvation and to establish one world under one God. When the West and the East come together as one in marriage, the greatest cultural clashes in the world will be eliminated. When Americans and Germans intermarry to become couples of true love, then unity will be created between their two nations, which were once enemies.

Furthermore, I blessed even those who are now in the spirit world. In order for God's Kingdom to be realized on earth and in heaven, the people living in the spirit world must also be liberated through the Blessing, and only the True Parents on earth can do that. Since the first human ancestors sowed sinful seeds as false parents, the Messiah should liberate humankind both on earth and in the spirit world by coming as the True Parent. Even omniscient and omnipotent God cannot by Himself solve the

problem of the false lineage. If He could accomplish this alone, He would have saved His children a long time ago. In fact, He would not have allowed the Fall to occur in the first place. However, being the God of Principle, He cannot interfere with the human portion of responsibility. Accordingly, the returning Messiah who comes as the True Parent should give rebirth through true love to humankind, whose lineage was defiled by the original sin. From this perspective, the international mass weddings are not conducted simply to bring young men and women together as husbands and wives. In fact, they are holy ceremonies in which people are reborn as God's true children through His original seed of life.

The principle of indemnity requires that we pass through the stages of individual, familial, tribal, racial, national, global, and cosmic indemnity to finally hasten the time of liberation for both the spiritual and physical worlds. The world is divided into myriads of ethnic groups; parents, spouses, and children have been divided; and even the religious world has been divided into the four great cultural spheres of Christianity, Buddhism, Islam, and Confucianism. Now, we have entered the age of the great unified family and the Kingdom of Heaven by entering the age of the unfallen original realm of the Fourth Adam, passing the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age, and even the Completed Testament Age which is the era of completion. In other words, the age of nationalism and the age of globalism have already passed and we have entered the age of the cosmos unified under one God. Moreover, through the earth becoming the hometown of all Blessed Families and the spirit world in which God dwells becoming their homeland, and through their oneness, His kingdom will emerge on earth and in heaven as the eternal liberated and restored homeland.

Ladies and gentlemen!

With the arrival of a new millennium, at midnight, I proclaimed a message titled, "The Cosmic Expansion of True Love is the Completion of God's New Millennial Kingdom."

The cosmic expansion of true love means that heaven and earth should become a house of true love, and the new millennium must be a time in which we complete the building of God's Kingdom throughout the world. As the cosmos originated from God, families, tribes, races, nations, and the world must work to complete a house of love that stands in the position of His object partner by becoming one with each other according to the principled formula. The nation must be a house of love where all families can enter, the world must be one where all nations can enter, and the cosmos must be one that embraces the world. Here, the family of true love becomes the starting point and core of our enormous house of the Kingdom of Heaven and the cosmos. Within the family, husband and wife must be the house of love for each other and likewise, parents and children for each other.

God's Kingdom is the place where the ideal of true freedom and faith blos-

soms and bears fruit and the place occupied by true families that are the results of true love, true life, and true lineage. It marks the beginning of God's millennial kingdom overflowing with eternal true love and true happiness. I have promoted true family values because the family formed by a union between a true man and true woman where God can dwell is the center of the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath. Accordingly, we must realize on earth the Garden of Eden mentioned in the Bible.

The new millennium is the time to complete the 6,000-year history of the providence for human salvation and build the original heavenly kingdom centered on the ideal of creation. It is the Completed Testament Age, when the promises of the Old and New Testaments are to be fulfilled. This means a new heaven and new earth, where "He will wipe away every tear from their eyes, and death shall be no more, and neither shall there be mourning nor crying nor pain any more." (Revelation 21:4) It means a time of unconditional true love, when all people will be able to drink the water of life that is as clear as crystal without payment, and when the spiritual and physical worlds will be open to each other, and God's Kingdom is established in both. The living God's direct dominion is to begin through the restored rights of the firstborn, parents, and king, opening a new era of God's all-immanence, all-transcendence, supreme authority, and omnipotence.

As I have already mentioned, the earth is the hometown of all humankind and the spirit world is the eternal homeland where all humanity will eventually arrive. Finally, the time has come for the global family ideal to be realized on earth centered on the Heavenly Parent, moving us beyond 'One Nation under God' to 'One Cosmos under God.' Accordingly, I request that you bear in mind that the fundamental relationship between God and humanity is that of parent and child, and upon that foundation, that you play an active role in transforming the cosmos, that is, the spiritual and physical worlds, into our Hometown and Homeland.

Once again, I thank all of you distinguished world leaders for your presence here. I would like to conclude by expressing God's desire that all fellow members of the global community will come to live as true brothers and sisters and build a new millennial kingdom overflowing with love, peace, freedom, and justice.

May God's blessing be with your families and nation. Thank you.

Section 3. Everybody Wants True Love

Distinguished guests!

I am truly grateful that so many of you have taken time out of your busy schedules to gather here for the Fourth World Culture and Sports Festival.

All the peace movements for the realization of a truly peaceful world through ideal families that I have been pursuing all my life were propelled to accomplish

God's will on earth. The hope of the new millennium, which has begun seeking reconciliation and unity after the end of a century of division and conflict, is not easily fulfilled. Based on God's ideal of creation, we must globalize a concrete movement actually putting the master plan of 'One World Under One God' into practice in every walk of life.

Since receiving God's calling as a boy of sixteen, I have communicated freely with Jesus as well as the saints and sages in paradise, and have single-mindedly devoted all my heart and energy, while overcoming all manner of tribulation, into accomplishing His will, which is to build His kingdom of freedom, peace, and liberation on earth and in heaven. His original relationship with humankind is an eternal parent-child relationship. The Fall refers to the severance of that relationship and restoration to its recovery.

I have established many different peace movements as well as international organizations as a means of achieving the vision of 'One World Under One God' in order to accomplish His will. The International Blessing Ceremony that you have witnessed is God's strategy to fundamentally resolve the racial, religious, and national conflicts which have resulted from the Fall. Five colors of skin coming together in harmony as true brothers and sisters and true husbands and wives is the actualization of the holy ideal of establishing 'One World Under One God.'

In concluding my eightieth birthday celebrations and this historic event commemorating the Fourth World Culture and Sports Festival, I would like to share some thoughts with you on the topic, "Everybody Wants True Love."

Ladies and Gentlemen: what is the most important thing that we need? It is not money, power, or knowledge. More precious than life itself and more important to us than air, it is true love. Why is true love so precious and important? Just as human beings desire to meet God, God also wants to meet true human beings because of love; yet if He wanted to meet one first, whether man or woman, then the other party would complain.

Therefore, God must show His love. The love by which He can see, touch, and share with men and women at the same time is the love with which they love each other. If anything other than love were to be recognized as the most valuable thing in the universe, men and women would fight each other to try to claim it for themselves. Once we realize that love is the highest value, however, we can strive to live for and become one with each other, sharing the happiness of possessing love together. Not only does everybody want love, but also it is the only thing that can equally satisfy all human desires; this is also what makes God's providence of salvation possible.

Originally, love belongs to God. Yet even He cannot possess love all by Himself. Love requires a partner. A man by himself or a woman by herself cannot fulfill love. Thus, women and men exist for the sake of each other's love. Even ugly men and women desire a love part-

ner, wanting to be the partners of the highest love.

When we examine the universe, we see that all beings exist in pairs, relating to one another as subject and object partners, plus and minus. The mineral, plant, and animal worlds, and even the human world, exist based on the pair system. All beings desire the experience of true love through a reciprocal relationship. In the universe, love can never be possessed by any of us alone, but once we have a partner, love enables us to possess everything.

Likewise, without children, a couple cannot express and become the owners of parental love. Thus, we can say that God created human beings and the universe as His reciprocal partners in order to bring about true love. Filial, fraternal, conjugal, and parental love come about through the unity of subject and object partners. When two partners attain oneness, it is impossible to separate them. If separation occurred, true love would be destroyed. Therefore, in true love there can be no concept of divorce. When man feels love, the feeling arises not from him but from woman. Likewise, the fire of love is kindled in the heart of a woman not by herself alone but by her husband; that is to say, their love belongs to each other.

Thus, spouses should honor each other as being even more precious than love itself and be grateful to and live for each other. This basic reasoning will make it possible for blessed couples to live together eternally. When husbands and wives live for each other, respect each other, and achieve complete oneness through true love, it will be possible for the fallen satanic lineage to be rooted out completely.

True love is fulfilled through not only horizontal level but also vertical, perpendicular relationships. A horizontal relationship of true love is gradually elevated in a vertical direction until it eventually reaches the pinnacle, which is the position of the 'King and Queen of True Love.' In this position, everything is synthesized, embraced, and crystallized into love and blooms. We can conclude that all beings in the universe want to be harmonized and live in the midst of love. We are born, live, and finally die for the sake of love. Not only people but all things of creation desire true love. Thus, human beings, as the lords of creation, should embrace and love the masterpieces of God's creation and teach creation how to love.

All things are seeking such owners. We should feel ashamed of not having yet realized this degree of love. The universe is filled with all beings existing as pairs at their level, but ultimately, they follow the principle of being absorbed into higher levels of love. Thus, minerals want to be absorbed by plants, plants by animals, and finally all of creation by human beings. Through this process they ultimately reach the position where they can experience the essence of true love, which is the love that is nearest to God, the origin of love, who created everything with an intrinsic nature to provide value to a higher level.

Darwin's theory regarding the sur-

vival of the fittest needs to be reinterpreted in the context of this logic of true love. Even ants and microorganisms want true love so much that they would want to die for the sake of the owner who loves them. Based on this principle, human beings, created as the highest partners of God's love, can consume all other creatures. We can enjoy everything we desire with a heart that represents the love of God the Creator. Creatures such as eels and worms which fish like to eat also provide ingredients for natural medicines for human beings. Creatures on a higher level are meant to consume those on a lower level. Without this process, the universe could not continue to exist.

God's ideal was for Adam and Eve to become the seed for the family, tribe, nation, and finally the multitudinous citizenry of the Kingdom of Heaven, which can be created only in accordance with His tradition of true love. The view I am sharing is diametrically opposed to the theories of Charles Darwin, but it is through this that a world of peace will be achieved because it is the fundamental principle which realizes the ideal of creation. In the continuing evolution-creation debate, the word 'creation' acknowledges the existence of God the Creator and that there is purpose embodied in His act of creation.

Although directionality and purposefulness are inherent in God's creation based on subject and object partners, communist theory based on materialism lacks directionality and purposefulness. God's creation embodies the purpose of true love, whereas communism posits only struggle and destruction. Thus, it is destined eventually to disappear.

In all creation, the most precious entities are human beings, that is, man and woman. Furthermore, the most precious part of the human body is not the nose, the eyes, the hands, or even the brain, but the sexual organs, the main organs of love. Everything in the universe is recreated through the sexual parts. Most living things – whether plants or animals – multiply through their sexual organs. Even the most precious and outstanding ideal family begins with a unified couple. It is indeed the love organs which are the principal palaces of love and life, occupying a position of incredible value through which lineage and history are transmitted.

God's fundamental principle in creating the universe was through the concept of male and female. Nevertheless, for them to share absolute love, they must have absolutely only one partner, not two. There is absolutely only one man for each woman and one woman for each man eternally. Hence, God did not create two Adams or two Eves, but only one of each. Yet, in the world today we see children who have had as many as ten step-parents. How false and degraded love has become!

When men and women uphold and preserve chastity, they are protecting the universe because the discipline of love between them constitutes its fundamentals. We must not misuse love as if we were animals. Our love can have but

one owner. The word 'true' in 'true love' does not allow for the possibility of two but absolutely only one. Not just anyone can say they have 'true love.' Only God can really love with true love, and only He absolutely owns it. His true life, lineage, and conscience require true love, which is, in this way, His most fundamental essence.

Furthermore, to be linked to true love, we must first connect with God. A child might say, "My mother and father do not fight but actually get along well," but that does not necessarily mean that this is a family of true love. A young man and woman may say, "We are so much in love that we could give our lives for each other," but that does not mean this love is true love. If God is not present, then it is not true love. True love always centers on Him. To become His son or daughter, we first need to connect with His love, life, and lineage. Power, knowledge, money, and military power alone cannot ensure that a person will be welcomed in the world of true love. Everyone wants true love, but it is only possible when we live for others. We need to serve and sacrifice for our partner. Everyone runs away from a person who relates to others with the mind that thinks, "You should live for me." This kind of selfish individualism is Satan's strategy, purpose, and tool; the result can only be hell.

We must serve the higher purpose and the greater good. Those who do that altruistically will be loved universally. Born as children, we grow as siblings, form couples, and become parents, and God becomes the owner of true love at each stage; that is to say, He observes us as we grow and occupies the position of the owner of love each step of the way.

In this sense, it can be said that human beings, through whom God comes to own all love, are more precious to Him than He is to Himself. In the same way, we attach a thousand times more value to the person we love than to ourselves. God invests Himself for those whom He loves, forgets this investment, and then invests again. He invests Himself one hundred percent and then forgets one hundred percent, which is why He can continue to invest. In the same way, a wife who wants her husband to be a success invests herself in him and then forgets this investment. By investing herself and forgetting, she enables him to achieve his full potential in life. When we as partners continue to invest in each other and forget, the level of our love is elevated, and we will ultimately be connected to God. This is how we can fulfill our parent-child relationship with Him and have eternal life.

Everyone wants to go to heaven, but those with the attitude, "Everyone should live for me," will not get there. The way of true love begins with embracing and living for the sake of all God's masterpieces of creation, and reaches heaven by living for all humankind and ultimately for God.

We should risk our lives for others at least three times within our lifetime. This is how we can indemnify the selfish acts involved in the Fall of Adam's family, the crucifixion of Jesus, and the persecution directed against the family

of the returning Lord. If we want to meet God, we should not ask for His recognition but instead pledge our lives to Him even more, even after thrice passing through death and resurrection. When such people populate the world, it will be the Kingdom of Heaven. This is the way that I am teaching and the kind of world that I am building.

Children are the fruit of the love of their parents and therefore embody their love, life, and lineage. Young children often say, "This is mine," but parents are the starting point of everything that children refer to as their own. Parents are the root and trunk; without them, we would all be orphans. We cannot live if we break the ladder of love that connects us to our parents. We are the sons and daughters of God, the Parent who is the Origin of true love. Parents are the highest owners of love for their children.

The parent-child relationship is vertical whereas the husband-wife relationship is horizontal. These two relationships should intersect at right angles, and when the front-to-rear relationship among siblings is added to them, they altogether form a sphere. Thus, all beings existing in love, and the universe as a whole, are spherical. God resides in the central point of this sphere, where all love is united and settles; that is to say, centering upon the vertical relationship between God and humankind as His children, with the love, life, and lineage of men on the right, those of women on the left, and fraternal love forming the front-rear axis, the entire universe achieves a balance centering on all these loves and God resides at the core of all these relationships. If we picture this three-dimensionally, we see that God is the ultimate origin of love, life, lineage, and conscience. From such a God-centered family, in which above-below, left-right and front-back love are unified, the tribe, people, nation, and world will expand to the cosmos, but the fundamental center is always one – God.

Had Adam and Eve not fallen, they would have provided a model of true conjugal love, and through them, humankind would have been educated in love, that is, would have learned how to love from them. If they had gone on to give birth to children untainted by the Fall, who would have overseen the marriage of those children? Their parents. With that in mind, we need to think about how much parents are involved in their children's marriages in today's society.

The Unification Church, having the True Parents, is marrying the people of the world from a parental position. Not only are racial differences transcended, but even saints and sinners are being blessed in marriage with each other. Through denying evil love, overcoming evil life, and engrafting evil lineage, the True Parents do not cast out Cain who murdered Abel, but instead bless him in the same position with everyone else. Just as there is a point during the changing of the tides when ebb and flow are in equilibrium, there is a similar turning point in the providence of salvation in the balance between good and evil. Through the joint Blessing of good and

evil people, Satan is driven out completely.

The Fall, having constituted a wrongful marriage in the Garden of Eden, is now being reversed by the True Parents through rightful marriages. Clearing up the mess created by the false parents, the True Parents are abolishing hell and blessing billions of ancestors in the spirit world, and restoring the true parent-child relationship centering on true love and bequeathing the original true love, true life, and true lineage. In this way, the ownership of the model of true love of the eight stages, which is God's ideal of creation, is perfected; that is, we establish the eternal, unchanging, true love tradition by going through true gestation, infancy, fraternity, adolescence (engagement), conjugality, parenthood, grandparenthood, and finally kingship. Upon this foundation, we can perfect the model of true love, the parent-child relationship.

God's absolute, unique, unchanging, and eternal love, life, and lineage are the unchanging model of true love to be inherited by infinite generations of our descendants. True love is central to oneness between parents and children, husbands and wives, and brothers and sisters. Parents become the owners of love through their children, husbands through their wives, and elder siblings through their younger siblings.

Conversely, without children, wives, and younger siblings, parents, husbands and elder siblings cannot find the position of the owner of love. In order to become the owners of true love, we must serve and honor our partner more than ourselves. By doing so, we will attain mind-body oneness as individuals and conjugal and fraternal oneness as families to form the realm of national oneness. In this way, we can perfect the realms of love defined in the eight-stage ideal model.

Again, the ideal family and nation are the places where all of us – as parents, children, couples, siblings, and nation – want to establish ownership of the eight-stage model, with true love as its center. From here, through the commencement of eternal global equalization, God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven will be realized.

God's desire is that, beginning from the year 2000, in every corner of the globe, Blessed Families united with the Parents of heaven and earth will initiate a new family revolution and worldwide moral revolution, centering on true love, and build His eternal, ideal kingdom on earth as well as in heaven.

I pray that all of you will join in this holy task to play the leading roles in inheriting God's true love. May God's blessing be upon your families. Thank you.

Section 4. The Path for America and Humanity in the Last Days

Distinguished guests!

I want to express my heartfelt gratitude to all of you as world leaders representing every walk of life for gathering to celebrate with and congratulate me on my eightieth birthday.

In particular, I would like to offer my deepest gratitude and all glory to God who has accompanied and protected me until this day. I have lived my entire life with the earnest desire to solve the many difficult problems related to realizing God's ideal of creation. I came to realize that God does not sit on a throne of glory and honor, but rather is a God of sorrow, lamentation, and suffering, endeavoring to save His children who fell into hell as a result of the Fall. Knowing His will and heart, I have worked with single-minded determination in devoting my entire heart and energy to accomplish His will, without regard to the time of day, changes in the seasons, or my circumstances. Looking back on the eighty years of my life, I realize I would not be here with you today were it not for His help during that time, notwithstanding being oppressed and persecuted.

On this day of such great significance, in order for you to understand human history and the world from the perspective of God's providence, I would like to speak on the topic, "The Path for America and Humanity in the Last Days." From the historical perspective of God's providence of salvation, the Last Days are those of the evil history of Satan's sovereignty and the starting point of the good history of God's sovereignty.

Accordingly, they are the time when God's entire providence is to be accomplished; that is, when perfection of the individual, family, ethnic people, nation, world, and finally cosmos are to be realized. Each time God heralded the Last Days in the course of His providence, He sought to guide human beings through an ideology centered on Him, but they failed to fulfill their portion of responsibility to stand in the position of goodness and terminate evil history.

Yet, as God is eternal, unchanging, absolute, and unique, so also is His will; therefore, through the true individual, family, society, nation, world, and sovereignty, He will surely build the world in which He can freely operate both in heaven and on earth. Then, what is the original world which He seeks? It is one centered on true parents; yet, due to the Fall, we lost the true parents of humanity and the true world from the very beginning of history. That being the case, nothing in the world – whether our country of residence, human ideology, or anything else – can connect us directly to true parents; therefore, we ourselves should first restore trueness.

Thereby, the day when true parents, spouses, children, citizens, creation, sovereignty, and the true universe can move and settle in unison with God's true heart on earth will signify the final days of the evil world. The time when such an ideal will be realized is the Last Days, the Second Advent. As such, when the Lord returns, there will be no cataclysmic phenomena such as judgment by fire, the destruction of Earth, or believers levitating into the air. Instead, it is a time when history entangled with tragedies will be untangled through indemnity paid to establish the individual, family, society, nation, and world, which were lost in the vertical course of history and will be restored horizontally in the

present day. We have been longing for such a day, and that is the final destination at which we all should arrive.

However, individuals, families, and nations have lost their way. All kinds of problems such as air pollution, famine, religious conflict, and racial antagonism are constantly arising throughout the world, causing all manner of disputes. Who is going to take responsibility for this world? This is a serious matter. Communist countries in the past could not transcend nationalism, nor can today's superpower, the USA, transcend Pan-Americanism. When a nation places its self-interest first, it will not be able to lead the world. We need a people or a religion that is willing to sacrifice its interests for a higher purpose and strive to build an ideal nation that embraces all humankind. With this view, in response to God's command, I came here to America and poured all my energy to educate its young people, reawaken it from its moral crisis, and revive its declining Christianity.

You might be curious about what I am teaching them. It is actually simple.

First, it is to live for the sake of others. More specifically, my teaching is that the individual lives for the family, the family for the tribe, the tribe for the race, the race for the nation, the nation for the world, and the world for God. Then, God will come to us. In the family, parents are to live for children, children for parents, husband for wife, and wife for husband. Those who live for others more than themselves will become central people of goodness.

Second, I am teaching people to love their enemies. God Himself sacrificed Jesus, His only begotten son, for the salvation of human beings, who through the Fall, became the children of the devil, Satan. Satan could not help but surrender voluntarily before God who loved His enemy's children more than His own. Satan always strikes the first blow, but loses out in the end; whereas God's strategy is based on the formula of initially being struck and later recovering what was taken from Him. Despite undergoing much persecution and hardship throughout my life, I was able to lay the foundation of missionaries in 185 nations throughout the world because of living in accordance with this heavenly principle.

Even when studying the history of Christian missionary activities, we discover that theirs was a path of being hunted down, persecuted, and martyred. In the course of such a 2,000-year history, this trail of blood became the fertile soil for the emergence of the democratic world, but today, Christianity, which once was the driving force for democracy, is facing a crisis. Christendom is denying God, Jesus, and God's providence. Ultimately, when looking at theologians who deny God's existence and even assert that He is dead, how must God – who has been treading the path of all manner of sacrifices in search of His true children – feel in His heart?

Honored Guests!

For whom has God been investing and sacrificing everything so far? It is not for America or for Christian-

ity itself, but for you and me as individuals. Since the Fall started with the individual, so also should salvation. Accordingly, unless a representative individual appears with the realization and determination to take full responsibility for this age, pay off all the debts that humankind has incurred throughout history, and become a person who will make God indebted to him instead, restoration will not be possible. Restoration through indemnity can never take place vaguely; it cannot be abstract. Without having the heart to experience more misery than God on His behalf, we cannot reach His heart.

Have you ever prayed earnestly for the six billion people of the world with the heart that your own children are dying? How much sacrificial devotion have you offered to save a family, a tribe, a race, a nation, and the world? Nobody can be easily confident of this. The returning Lord comes to the world with such an absolute standard as the representative of all humanity. God, who has been guiding the providence of salvation, found Abraham 2,000 years after the Fall of the first ancestors and made his descendants the chosen people of Israel by multiplying them on every level, as a new family, a new tribe, and a new race.

The Jews became the mainstream chosen people called to receive the substantial Messiah to come in the future, based on that victorious foundation. At the core of that mainstream, the standard and ideology – which our first ancestors Adam and Eve should have reached and fulfilled – need to be restored, which is the very concept of the Messianic ideology, with Christians in the position of the Bride. Christianity's most important mission is to make preparations in order to qualify as the Bride to welcome the Lord as her Groom.

Despite the significance of their mission and calling, owing to Jesus' crucifixion, the Jewish people vanished as the first Israel, leaving Christianity to inherit their mission as the second Israel. We are now in the final stage of God's 6,000-year providence centered on one purpose. What is the core concept of the Messianic ideology? It is the teaching to save and unify the world that can build original ideal families and restore the true parental position lost by the Fall of our first ancestors.

Based on the teachings of the Old and New Testaments, the Messiah comes with the authority of his Father, meets his Bride who embodies the Holy Spirit, and restores the true parental position. The Bride and Groom at the marriage supper of the Lamb prophesied in the Revelation to John refer to the stage of becoming true parents by first becoming true spouses. Jesus came with this mission. He lost his people and nation due to their faithlessness, but offered his life for the sake of the world and the Kingdom of Heaven that God desires.

The path of Jesus suffering on the cross was the same path of tribulation that God Himself walked. In such a situation of trial and tribulation, Jesus desperately prayed, "Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do." Even

in the place of death, he blessed Rome and the crowds that had opposed him, pledging victory in the future. Accordingly, his life did not end at the age of thirty-three, but with God's help, he bequeathed his spirit historically to Christianity, without which it would not have become a world religion.

Ladies and gentlemen!

Currently, America is recognized as the world's superpower, but unless it stands straight aboard God's providence, it will not continue to prosper.

In the history of human civilization, ancient cultures arose mainly in the tropics and subtropics, examples of which include those of the Mayas, Incas, Egypt, India, and China. Were it not for the Fall, civilization would have begun in the temperate zone corresponding to spring; instead it started from the tropics and shifted to the cool-zone corresponding to autumn. This is the temperate zone civilization centered today on the free world based on Western Civilization. In general, measured from the equator, nations such as America, Britain, and Germany lying north of the Tropic of Cancer are the developed nations of the west. With the end of the cool zone civilization of autumn, the frigid-zone civilization of winter comes for a short time. This is the appearance of Communism.

Many intellectuals may think that the Cold War ended with the dissolution of the Soviet Union, but materialism and atheism are still prevalent throughout the world, replacing the two major ideologies of democracy and communism, both of which are gradually losing power.

God's ideal of creation should have begun in the temperate zone civilization of spring, but due to the Fall of our first ancestors, human civilization degraded to the level of savages and started in the tropical zone. Now, the temperate zone civilization of the true spring that humankind has been pursuing from time immemorial will appear, overcoming the crisis of the cool-zone civilization and the threats of the frigid-zone civilization. Who will be able to melt the winter of the frigid-zone civilization? It is not possible through power, economics, science, or knowledge. As we can see from this movement of civilization along rivers and coastlines, its center is always on the move. The river civilizations which arose on the shores of the Nile, Tigris, and Euphrates Rivers passed on their cultures to those in the vicinity of the Mediterranean Sea: Greece, Rome, Spain, and Portugal. These bequeathed their fruits to the Atlantic civilizations of Great Britain and the United States. All these fruits will be harvested in the Pacific civilizations of the United States, Japan, and Korea.

From the perspective of the history of civilization, the Korean peninsula occupies a very important position. Its north is the culminating point of the frigid-zone civilization linking Russia and China, and its south is the culminating point of the cool-zone civilization linking the United States and Japan. Thus, it is consistent with the providential viewpoint that Korea gives rise to a

temperate zone civilization representing the springtime of world history and having the capability to digest both the frigid and cool-zone civilizations. From this aspect, the fact that Rev. Moon – who has dedicated his life to solving the North-South problem and the East-West problem – has come from Korea, can only be described as the consummation of God's providence.

In fact, throughout my life I have developed a movement for 'One World Under God' transcending race, ideology, and nationality in accordance with His providence. This is a principle of providential history and not a theory that I specially devised. Being enlightened regarding God's will, in order for me to not only teach His plan as a theory but also to implement it, there is no part of the five oceans and six continents that my activities have not outwardly reached.

Through the foundation of multifarious missionary and business activities in Alaska, Antarctica, the countries of the former Soviet Union, the 33 nations of Latin America, and throughout Asia and Africa, we are making preparations to solve problems that humanity will face over the coming millennium, such as environmental pollution and famine. In recent years, I have worked in the Pantanal and Amazon regions of Brazil to lay a substantial foundation to protect the Earth's environment. On the other hand as regards the internal aspects, I have worked through the International Holy Blessings and the True Family Values Ministry. Some 430 million couples around the world have participated in these marriage blessings, adding further impetus to the building of God's long-awaited kingdom on earth based on ideal families.

Ladies and Gentlemen!

Up until now, countries possessing superior power politically, militarily, and economically have controlled the world. Yet, no nation can exist eternally unless it is in line with God's providence. The fall of the once glorious Greco-Roman civilization is a good example of this.

The United States, which today stands tall as a superpower, is in the same position as Rome was in the past. The fall of Rome occurred more as a result of the internal cause of moral corruption than from any external invasion. Moral corruption caused Rome to lose the support of heavenly fortune. In recent history, political forces favoring proletarian materialism and the materialistic view of history went so far as to take control of over one-third of the world's population and two-thirds of its land area, including the former Soviet Union and China. Even that could not continue forever.

The time will come for religious leaders who speak for God's will to rise to prominence. Religious leaders are prophets, who must declare God's will on earth and indicate the direction that humanity must go.

However, the splintering of denominations and the struggles among religious groups that we see today serve no purpose other than to hinder God's providence. Thus, I have for years devoted more than half of our church's entire

budget to ecumenical and interfaith activities so as to contribute to the resolution of sectarian strife. I also founded the Interreligious Federation for World Peace to facilitate harmony and unity among religious groups and to promote world peace. Most recently, I founded the Interreligious and International Federation for World Peace and this body has held seven international hoondok seminars.

All humankind must transcend race and religion, understand God's providence to realize His ideal world of creation, and ultimately unite with His heart. We must recover the heart-based relationship with God that we lost as a result of the Fall and restore the original parent-child relationship. Thus, the Last Day that God has promised to us is the day of the appearance of the True Parents. In other words, it is the day when human beings, who lost their original parents as a result of the Fall, will again be able to meet them. Thus, the True Parents are the fruition of the desires, hopes, and victories of human history.

The Unification Church has worked to disseminate this tradition throughout the world through the international mass weddings. The fact that black, white, and yellow people are able to come together as brothers and sisters transcending ethnicity, race, and skin color to form loving couples is among the most significant factors in building the global village that accomplishes God's will. Today, through this, humankind is beginning to recover the lost original relationships among brothers and sisters, husbands and wives, and parents and children, in order to ultimately liberate God, who has been in the depths of sorrow ever since He lost His children. Only then will the path to true happiness be opened.

Until now, democracy has advocated human freedom and liberation. In contrast, we must advocate God's freedom and liberation. When this issue is resolved, human liberation and the recovery of human freedom will follow automatically.

Distinguished guests!

There is profound significance in the fact that I am speaking about God's providence today in Washington, DC, the capital of the United States.

In many ways, the United States is a nation prepared through God's blessing. The ancestors who built it were the Pilgrim Fathers, who risked their lives for the sake of religious freedom and came here seeking a land of liberty. In pursuit of true religious freedom, they left their beloved parents, brothers and sisters, and hometowns behind, and were even prepared to cut their ties to their motherland as they crossed the Atlantic Ocean at the risk of their lives.

When the Mayflower arrived in New England in November 1620, it was already late autumn. While they endured their first winter, more than half of the 102 people who first arrived died of the cold and hunger. What was particularly remarkable about them was that many died refusing to eat the precious grain reserved for planting in the following spring. The Puritans strongly believed

in serving God's will in every aspect of their lives. After taking in their first harvest, they gave thanks to God. They first built a church and a school, and it was only after that that they set about to build houses where they themselves would live. In the course of their pioneering, the Pilgrims began every activity with prayer. This was true whether it was plowing a field or fighting a war. When George Washington was at Valley Forge during the War of Independence, he must have prayed with great desperation. In that battle fought for the sake of His will, God lent America a helping hand.

The king and citizens of Great Britain, a global superpower at that time, were united in fighting that war, but in America, it was fought by God and His beloved sons and daughters. Isn't this how the United States came into existence as a nation of religious freedom? Even now, the United States Congress opens with a prayer. Your president is sworn into office by placing his hand on the Bible, and a member of the clergy gives the invocation. Even your currency bills and coins are impressed with such a beautiful inscription, "In God We Trust;" no other country does such a thing. This is how the United States has become a Protestant country uniquely reflecting the diverse peoples of the world.

What about America today, though? Prayer in public schools is officially banned. The theory of evolution is given preference over creationist ideas in education. The divorce rate of around fifty percent is completely obliterating the sanctity of the family. In 1971, I left my family and homeland to come to America because I heard God's voice sharing His concern about the current state of affairs here.

Upon arriving here, I exclaimed that I had come as a firefighter to a burning house and as a physician to cure a diseased America. Even then, I discovered that God was leaving this country. It should have been possible to find Him anywhere here, but He was departing from the hearts of people, families, and schools. It seems like only yesterday that I stood on Fifth Avenue in Manhattan and wept openly as I held on to God to keep Him from leaving America. Unfortunately, America has persisted in going the way of moral deterioration, as I prophesied.

Ladies and Gentlemen!

Why does Rev. Moon continue to cry out to Americans in spite of all the opposition and suffering he endures? It is because I know better than anyone the blood, sweat, and tears that God shed in the course of establishing this nation. During the past thirty years in America, I have not spent so much as a single day in comfort.

Who owns America? It is neither white Americans nor black Americans. Its true owners are those who love it as God does. Also, because God has chosen to invest it as the nation with the birthright of the firstborn in building His kingdom on earth, even now, Jesus is spiritually present mainly here, and is offering earnest prayers that His pur-

pose be accomplished in America.

In 1982, in accordance with God's will, I founded the Washington Times here; ever since then, this newspaper has led American public opinion as a conservative news medium showing the path that the nation must follow. Also I have built up a strong movement for national and global salvation through the True Family Values Ministry and the Pure Love Movement for young people. I have invested in America in expectation that this country would stand upright for God's providence. When I visited this country in 1965, I blessed an area near the White House as a holy ground, and even today many people gather there and pray for America through the night. I hope each of you will open your heart to be able to hear the earnest desires of the Pilgrim Fathers and the many patriots throughout American history.

Distinguished guests!

The dawn of the new millennium is the time in which God's six-thousand-year providence of salvation is concluded and His ideal of creation, which was lost in Eden, is realized throughout the cosmos.

This is also the time when the creation, which lost its lords through the Fall, is liberated from its lamentations, when the Parent and His children who have long been separated reunite, and the new heaven and earth, where there are no tears, will be established, and the age when there is free communication between the spiritual and physical worlds, in which God's Kingdom will be established. It is the age when the living God's direct dominion will become apparent through His omnipresence and omnipotence. It is the age when East and West will come together centering on the Parents of heaven and earth as 'One Universe Under One God' so that the global extended family of humankind is formed on earth. This means the perfection of the Completed Testament Age, in which the promises prophesied in the Old and New Testaments will be fulfilled. That time has come. The time has come when America must awaken once again. It is time for the country as a whole to create a new movement to establish God-centered true parents, true families, a true nation, and a true world. In this way, America must stop God from leaving and welcome Him back.

God worked for six millennia before establishing America. If He leaves it, where can He go? If this country serves Him diligently, then family, moral, juvenile, and racial problems will be solved naturally. When this becomes the place where people of all races can live together in harmony, it will be a model for His kingdom on earth.

It is time for us to stand together to open the way that humankind must go. It is time for America, as God's firstborn nation, to take the lead in serving Him and to complete its mission of guiding and leading the nations of the world to Him. I ask you to join with me in accomplishing this historic task.

Again, I would like to express my sincere gratitude to you distinguished guests for your presence here. I would

like to conclude by expressing my hope for the beginning of the new millennial kingdom overflowing with peace, freedom, and justice in heaven and on earth.

May God's blessing be with your families and your nation. Thank you.

Section 5. The Course of Life for the Princes and Princesses of God

Distinguished international guests, fellow compatriots, ladies and gentlemen – you who are gathered here for the sake of the unification of North and South Korea! The new millennium we have just begun is the time for us to wipe away the residue of division and struggle left over from the past century, and realize the ideal of one family, one global village of peace and unity. I pray that the blessings of the new millennium will be with each and every one of your families.

First, I sincerely thank you for coming from around the world to congratulate me on my eightieth birthday. However, more than anything, I would like to offer this glory to God; He has been my constant companion and protector, and it is He who has made this day possible.

Looking back on my life, at no time have things ever been calm and quiet. I have walked a path of suffering side by side with the people of this nation, a nation whose history has seen much strife and tribulation, nestled as it is here in the midst of the world's great powers. Ever since I suddenly came into contact with the will of Heaven while in prayer at the age of fifteen, I have devoted my life and given all my thought and all my effort to bringing about the fulfillment of the will of God. I have found that the root cause of human suffering is that the ancestors of humankind fell into a state of spiritual ignorance through the Fall, and that this resulted in the relationship between them and God being cut off.

The result of this Fall is that humankind became ignorant of such basic issues as the facts relating to God, life, and the universe. Throughout my life, I have spoken in public more than ten thousand times, and presented a true view of the world, of life, and of history based on the principles of 'Godism.' This content in its entirety has been translated into twelve different languages and published in a series of some three hundred volumes. It was not brought to light as a result of some kind of comprehensive literary research or academic study, but is comprised of the fundamental and essential answers I found while freely traversing both the visible and the invisible worlds.

Today I would like to gratefully take this opportunity and talk about a fundamental solution to the problem of the unification of the Korean peninsula – the unification that is our nation's most cherished desire as well as the last matter of the Cold War that awaits settlement. I would like to entitle this talk "The Course of Life for the Princes and Princesses of God."

Distinguished guests! What nation are you citizens of? Many of you are citizens of Korea. For you, Korea is your homeland, your homeland, isn't it? Then where is God's homeland? At present, God has no homeland. Where do all the

nations of the world have their origin? Do they have their origin in God, or is their origin somewhere else? The historical origin of the world's nations is a big question.

All the nations of this world have been divided up or formed as the results of conflicts. In many instances, where two nations are divided by a border, that border is one of intensely painful resentment. We all know the historical reality that the fiercest fights have been fought and the most blood shed over adjacent borders, rather than, for example, the borders of a third or fourth nation. This shows us that the walls between two nations and the walls between two ethnic groups are the highest kind of walls. Conflicts are not always engaged in over distances of thousands of miles. From ancient times, wars have been fought across the borders between two neighboring countries. This is the reason why even you yourselves will find that you get into fights with those neighbors and people closest to you. Why? Because humankind has fallen. It is a result of the Fall that fights tend to start with one's neighbors.

What is the Fall? It is the discord between God and humankind. It is the eruption of conflict between God and Satan, and the eruption of conflict between humankind and Satan. We can therefore conclude that the fact that there have been numerous nations in the history of this small planet is evidence that there have also been numerous conflicts.

Where will the nations that were formed from this go? All nations seek a world of peace, but are they capable of getting there? This question points to the one common task that remains before all humankind today. Looking at things this way, we can understand that if we continue to harbor enmity towards a neighboring nation under the justification that it is our historical enemy, we can never achieve a world of peace. No matter how much we long for our ideal, and say how much we are marching towards our ideal, it is impossible to reach that goal. In order to negate the motives that give impetus to these conflicts, and wipe away our malformed, dysfunctional history we need a movement that will lead the way and embody the substantial content of the opposite direction.

Distinguished guests! You yourselves are exactly the same as a people without a nation. Did you have a nation in the past? Has there ever, in history, been the kind of nation we could call 'our nation?' We have never had that kind of nation. Is that because nobody ever tried to build such a nation? No. The reason we have never had such a nation is that the people who desired it in history were never in a position to build it. They could not build such a nation because the ages in which they lived did not allow a fully developed and complete standard by which that nation could be built. The homeland that we need to build is not a nation with a certain history and tradition that exists in the world today. Rather, it is of a dimension essentially different from the nations that exist in today's

world.

If we want to inherit this different kind of nation, we must become a people who possess the ideological consciousness that makes it possible. If an absolute creator exists, that ideology and thought would need to be one with the Creator's ideology and thought. If the Absolute Being wanted a nation, he would want a nation where the citizens can be completely united centering on the national sovereignty. We need to have that kind of national character, and we need to have that kind of national pattern.

In order to form a nation, there needs to be sovereignty, a people, and a national territory. God's nation is the same. The parents represent the sovereignty, the sons and daughters represent the people, and the country represents the national territory. This is an unbreakable rule; none of these elements can be omitted. What, then, is the most precious thing? It is living for the sake of the nation and the world. As long as you live like that, you cannot fall into ruin. That place where ruin cannot occur is the ultimate point.

A person who dies while working for the sake of that nation will become a citizen of that nation even though he or she dies. He or she will remain as long as that nation exists. For a nation to be formed, you need territory, a people, and sovereignty.

What, then, is sovereignty? It is a connection and link with God, the root and origin. The people who govern the nation must create their connection with God and then govern. In this way, the rulers need to be one with the people. They need to become one with the people, and think that everything that they possess exists not for their own sake, but for the sake of the nation. If they can do this, then that nation will prosper. From this point of view, when you consider the issue of realizing the Kingdom of Heaven on earth, who is the owner of heaven? Who is the ruler? Without a doubt, God is the ruler. Then who are the people? The people are all the people of the world. And where is the national territory? The territory is the planet Earth. Who, then, does the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth resemble? It resembles 'me.' If you look at any one nation, what does it consist of? Sovereignty, people, and national territory. This is the same as a single human being.

Who did you say that the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth resembles? Us. It resembles us. Individuals such as us gather together and that forms a nation. Just as I have my own mind, the nation must have sovereignty. Just as I have a personal identity, there must be a national people. And just as people interact with the created universe, so a nation must have its national territory.

Within this basic principle, the people control the national territory, and the sovereignty governs the people. This national territory, people, and sovereignty are the three essential elements that form a nation. That is how things are.

If you look at human beings, the basic principle is that our mind controls our body, and our body controls nature.

Because of this principle, if you look at the entire world, the definitive conclusion is that it consists of heaven, earth and mankind. What did you say that Heaven is? It is the same as the human mind, so it is also the same as the sovereignty. Humankind is the nation's citizenry, and the earth is the created world. In the end, whom does the nation resemble? It all resembles your individual self.

No matter how big the society, no matter how great the nation, they need to resemble a human being. That is because God likes those things that resemble His image. Then what things do human beings like the most? Things that resemble their own image. So what does an ideal nation need to resemble? It has to resemble a human being. It resembles heaven, earth and all humankind.

In Unification Church terminology the homeland does not refer to a single nation like the Republic of Korea, but to a global nation. Actually, the word "global" is a word used in this corrupted, fallen world, and I really do not like it. The philosophy or teaching that seeks for this homeland is called the cosmos-centered ideology.

That homeland is not the Republic of Korea. God does not want the Republic of Korea, the United States, or the communist nations. That homeland is the homeland that God wants, and because this is so, we have to create the culture of that new homeland and create the history of that new homeland. We have to define a new standard so that we are able to establish a new and ideal homeland. So we have to change our way of life, because that world is completely different from the world we have now. The words and language are different. Do the people of the world today understand the meaning of such important phrases as "the realm of dominion of the Principle," "reciprocal base," "common base," and "providence for the foundation of restoration?" This means that the language is different. If and when the nation that the Unification Church desires is established, we will have to take down and dismantle the Unification Church signboard. And when the world that the Unification Church desires is realized, then we will have to dismantle the nation the Unification Church established. We have to be able to discard the kind of religion that exists only for the sake of the culture and character of the people in the Republic of Korea. Only a religion that exists for the sake of the world will be able to continue into the future.

Distinguished guests, ladies and gentlemen! What do you suppose a person who seeks to inherit the will of God must advocate? There is absolutely no way he or she could tell the people of this world to just go the way they enjoy. In fact he or she would have to tell the people of this world to go in the opposite direction. A saying that expresses this fact is the motto, "Love your enemies with the heart of true love." Love your enemies! These words can turn around our false history; they are the same as an anchor, and an anchor chain for a ship being blown before a howling typhoon. However, throughout the history of the

providence of restoration, there has been no one who has actually practiced the words "Love your enemies." If there were people who could love their enemies, we would have to raise them up to the world stage using some form of systematic organization. Because this is the logical conclusion, each of you needs to understand that God actually has to present this kind of movement to the world, and that the religious movements that have arisen in history are a reflection of this.

Who is the person God has been able to love the most in history? It is Jesus. Jesus presented a new direction for this conflict-ridden world. High walls are created between oppressor nations and oppressed nations, such as between Rome and Israel, by them viewing each other as enemies. Jesus' philosophy is that these walls need to be demolished. Jesus thought, "You in Rome want to conquer me by force, but I will conquer you in the opposite way – with love." That is why he even sought blessing for his enemies when he was hanging on the cross.

We need to recognize that when Jesus said of the Roman soldiers, "Forgive them for they know not what they do," he was expressing this kind of amazing philosophy. Because Jesus made this plea, he became a model and archetype for all nations of the world to transcend the way they see each other as enemies, and also a model for transcending the borders between any two nations.

Jesus knew that individual enemies were not the only enemies. He knew that family enemies, clan enemies, ethnic enemies, national enemies, and global enemies surrounded him on all four sides. This means that there are many enemies awaiting those who want to follow his path. It also means that if you go the family path, there are family enemies waiting, and if you go the clan path, there are clan enemies waiting. You can expect fierce battles, but you must love those enemies whenever you encounter them. If you possess this kind of spirit, someday victory can be yours.

From what point will God's ideal nation be realized? Where will the restoration of the homeland take place? It starts from the individuals who live by the philosophy to love their enemies. Therefore, as long as God exists, there is no way Christianity can avoid becoming a global religion, because Christianity offers a movement to break down national borders with love, to transcend all environments and cultural barriers, and to embrace even one's enemies. If you plant beans, you get beans, because kidney beans come from kidney bean seeds, and red flowers bloom from red flower seeds. In the same way, if you plant a satanic seed, a seed of taking revenge on your enemies, you will get a tree of evil – a tree of vengeance. But if you plant the seeds of goodness, the seeds of loving your enemies, you will get a tree of goodness, a tree of love for enemies. This is just a natural principle.

Where did I say God's homeland begins from? By what path does it come? It comes by the path of loving one's enemies. It comes by the path of

leaving behind a tradition of loving the individual's enemies, loving the family's enemies, loving the clan enemies, loving the national and global enemies. You all need to understand that God's homeland cannot appear except by this path.

Take a look. Because the USA opposed me; because the State Department opposed me; because Congress opposed me, some day I will get a certificate of recognition, saying that I was victorious in the Congress, that I was victorious in the State Department, that I was victorious in the United States. Even in the State Department, which opposes me, I am winning friends. In the Congress I am winning many friends. It has already been determined that the victory will come to me in the end.

And even if I do not have any such friends, I have the conviction that I can overcome any kind of opposition and lead the way to victory. The more anyone opposes me, the greater will become my love for my enemy, so I do not need to be worried about greater opposition.

The laws of nature dictate that if low pressure occurs in one place, high pressure will appear somewhere else. If one area develops high pressure, another area develops low pressure. When a high place like the US State Department opposes me, then it will have to surrender to me if I develop a field of low pressure, just as a high-pressure area is absorbed by a low-pressure area in nature.

Even though I had to take all sorts of abuse in the past, when I did not fight the abusers and instead loved them, they became my friends in the end. Families that became friends appeared; clans that became friends appeared; nations that became friends appeared.

If a nation composed of people who have this spirit of loving one's enemies appears, that nation can be the ideal that God desires, and it can be the ideal that all humankind can enter. You have to understand this.

There is nothing good-looking about me, Rev. Moon. Isn't that true? You people here do not say so, but the people of the world think I am pretty ugly. But God loves me the best. Even if the world thinks that I am a terrible fellow, God recognizes me, so I can go at this world from a bold and open position.

There is nothing you cannot say if in your heart you love your enemies. Why? If God says a man is good-looking, then he is good-looking. If He says he is a really cool fellow, he's a really cool fellow. If He says that the man is brave and fierce, then he is brave and fierce. So if I think like that, I take it as an honor and I can take on the world in confidence.

When I get intoxicated like this and work alone, do you know what happens? Young people, young men and women, a family of all races, an entire people appears, a people that God can truly take joy in appears, and the dawning of God's homeland becomes possible.

Because Jesus said we must love our enemies, we have to love even the worst person. Even if the most handsome man is matched with the ugliest woman, he has to love her even more than he loves his enemies. When it comes to loving the enemies in this world, that kind of person

is a candidate for marching ahead and carrying the flag of the highest prince. Think just how noble that kind of person is. That kind of person can just leap over national and racial boundaries.

You have to understand that on the day you live with nothing but a loving heart, all the walls will be brought down, the history of the providence of restoration will be shortened, and Heaven will come that much closer. My philosophy is simple. There is nothing I have not done. I have been a farmer; I have been a laborer; I have tried everything that can be done. I have been a fisherman and caught tuna. Living my whole life in this way, I thought I was all alone, but when I turned around, I found British people following me, Americans following me, people from all over the world are following me. Even if I tell them to get lost and kick them away with my feet and try to go over there, they still come back and follow me. I go this way, I go that way, but they still follow me. That is how it is, so no matter how much you might research the Unification Church, there is always something more to learn.

Distinguished guests, ladies and gentlemen! What is the path we need to go now? No matter what kind of clan you establish, if the sovereignty of Satan's nation continues to exist, all of you are people without a nation. Is this your country? You do not have a country! No matter what kind of clan you have, if the sovereignty is not a sovereignty centered on Heaven, the clan can be killed off just like that. Isn't that so? Therefore, we have to go out in search of the nation that Heaven can welcome with open arms. What it means when we talk about the realm of the first Israel in this world today is that the land needs to become one that all of Heaven can welcome, a land that the individual can welcome, that the family can welcome, that the clan, race, and church can welcome. But whether you look at this issue centering on the Unification Church or centering on Christianity or centering on the Republic of Korea, did they ever stand in a position that can be welcomed by the whole? They could not. The direction is different. The path that the Republic of Korea is going is external. Isn't that so? It is moving ahead, not centered on God, but centered on the worldly society. This country has no mainstream thought or philosophy.

So if we cannot connect this nation with God centering on a national mainstream ideology to form a new view of the nation having new three-dimensional, or two-dimensional aspects, and take that national concept and stand forth with it as the ideal content centering on the nations of the world today, we will be unable to see the dawning of the homeland.

The liberation that we have today is the first liberation. Now, in the Unification Church, we need a second liberation. The Republic of Korea also needs a second liberation. Here, the people and the nation may achieve their full desire if the Republic of Korea undergoes the second liberation, but the Unification Church also needs a third liberation. That is how things will go. The Repub-

lic of Korea obtained its current national pattern by the first liberation, but now the time has come when it requires a second liberation. North and South need to be united.

What kind of country is that nation? That country has to be a nation whose people have passed through a suffering course in its history, whose national character is capable of becoming one with the principles of restoration through indemnity, and which has inherited a historical tradition. What kind of country does it need to be? It needs to be a nation completely unified. So, how does today's Republic of Korea need to act if it wants to become this kind of nation?

To rise to the standard of that nation, it needs to unite the north and the south. Just like the divided northern dynasty of Israel and southern dynasty of Judah, the divided north and south of Korea need to be united into one. Just like Cain and Abel nations, North and South were divided, and if these are not united, a single victorious Israel nation will not appear.

So, in this country, centering on the Republic of Korea, how must North Korea and South Korea be united? They cannot be united without a new global-level ideology. The Unification Ideology being advocated by the Unification Church has been prepared for this very time. Do you understand?

Now we are in the position where we have to do two things. We have to form a unified people that no nation of the world can match, and then we have to create a united nation with a single faith so indomitable that no other religion in the world can match it. Centering on this kind of ideology, North and South need to become a unified nation. Without doing that, God's nation, namely the sovereignty of a heavenly nation that we can proudly proclaim to the entire world, will not be born. You have to understand that this is the priority purpose on earth for us today.

If we cannot establish the homeland, we will not be able to have a nation that can center on God and surpass the nations of Satan's world. Without that nation, we cannot chastise the satanic nations of the world. We cannot push them away. We cannot do that with just a religion, with the Unification Church. A nation has to establish its direction centering on the ideology of Unificationism, and then move forward. You have to understand that this issue still remains to be resolved.

From this point of view, if we see that the Unification Church is like Judaism in Korea, today the thought of the Unification Church will become the mainstream thought of Korea, just as Judaism was the spiritual pillar of the Israelite nation. In the future, there will be a time when it must become the national religion. That is what some people say. Even members of the National Assembly say that. If the thought of the Unification Church becomes the state religion, the communist party will not be a problem.

Ladies and Gentlemen! The people who live for the sake of Heaven today are the special emissaries of Heaven sent into the satanic world. Everyone may

be different; an emissary may be big or small, broad or thin, tall or short, but the lifestyle he maintains must not deviate from the lifestyle of an envoy because there is always a life and death danger involved. He is always placed in a situation where even the smallest mistake can determine the issue of eternal life.

Therefore, if the secret emissary's spirit of working for the homeland, the homeland that can support and protect eternal life is not hundreds of times stronger than the environment, he cannot live as a secret emissary. He needs to be able to ignore his current situation by thinking of how all the people of the world will rejoice when all resentments have been erased. He has to look to the homeland's glory, and while creating a new history, think that all his efforts will be known and recognized on the one day when he sees the birth of the homeland. Without having that kind of mind, he cannot carry out an emissary's secret mission. In other words, his mind must contain a hope for the dawning of a homeland that is a thousand times, ten thousand times greater than his hopes for the present reality, in order to be able to overcome all resentments and execute his secret mission.

Even if by some chance he was to lose his life in an unfortunate accident while executing his responsibility, God can dispatch, to the same place, a new emissary, who can carry out that responsibility. Even though he has already passed on, people will appear who can become his friends and become his allies. Because he dies in a situation where he can be a model, people who can become his allies will remain even though he becomes a sacrifice himself. As long as these people remain, on that foundation God can send someone in his place. However, if he does not die in that situation, no matter what he may have achieved, it all stops there.

From this viewpoint, what kind of stance do you all need to take in meeting this new age? Your conviction for the dawning of the homeland must be burning in your chest more passionately than any other thing. In other words, you have to feel pride in becoming a flag bearer who builds the homeland that God has longed for six thousand years. You have to take pride in bearing the responsibility for this incredible pioneering mission as a member of the crack troops standing on the front line. Many people in the past hoped for this mission, but even so, it was not available to them. You have to have a very solemn sense of responsibility for having taken on this one-time-only privileged mission.

So every aspect of your lifestyle, eating and sleeping, coming and going, has to be for the establishment of the homeland. How much do you think God has been longing for you to step forward and cheerfully, coolly declare you will carry out this mission as an emissary dispatched especially by God Himself? Up until now, God has been mercilessly pushed aside, heartlessly chased away. He needs to establish the will of Heaven, the will He has never been able to unfold, a will that presents its entire contents on the basis of a complete national

foundation, the Will that can establish the homeland. He has never been able to fulfill this will even once.

Now, however, it is possible to establish this homeland. That homeland has sovereignty, a national territory, and a people. Moreover, there is the lineage of a homogenous ethnic group connected to that land, and there is a history that no other people can possess. For this kind of homeland, we need to carry out our mission as special emissaries. If you can fulfill that mission at an earlier date by your own volition, then the foundation for the dawning of the homeland will be that much closer, thanks to you. Paying the price of sweat and tears today creates the foundation for meeting the dawn of the homeland that much earlier. Thinking of this fact, you people have to go out into the world with the determination to live and carry out an emissary's secret mission. If not, we will be unable to receive the unprecedented blessing and fortune that God is preparing to give to us.

We have to construct Heaven on this earth. What I am saying is that, surely it makes sense that, to be able to hold up our heads before our Father, we have to found that nation on this earth, become one with the center of that nation, and in that heavenly nation, live and then die with the standard that Heaven hopes for.

But then, do you people have a nation? When you think about the fact that you do not, then you cannot die even if you want to. Where are you going to go if you die? If you go, how are you going to avoid that sense of shame or self-consciousness, that feeling of pain? The length of my life is limited, and to get everything done in that period, how busy do you think I am? On top of that, the evil satanic environment opposes us; don't you think our enemies will try to block our way? To pierce through that and forge ahead, we cannot avoid the unsettled lifestyle of a special emissary.

My activities are all for the sake of building that nation. I take up the mission to become a true founding citizen for the sake of the dawn of the homeland. I receive my orders as Heaven's emissary and enter the evil world of today to carry out my work accordingly. We have to live with these thoughts uppermost in our minds. Without doing this, you will not be able to establish your dignity and authority as citizens of the nation that is on its way here.

Do you people want to make a difference individually? Do you want to influence things as a family? Nationally? Globally? How do you want to make a difference? You would like to make a difference globally, wouldn't you? However, if you want to rise to the global stage, you will not be able to do that on your own. You will need a nation. I am asking you if you have your nation.

So we eat, we sleep for the sake of that nation, day and night for the cause of the nation. Do you understand that you have to live your life pledging before heaven and earth that this is the reason you were born? When you are sleeping, you have got to imagine that you have gathered together all the beds of mil-

lions of people around the world and that you are sleeping there positioned on the top. Even when you look at a dinner table, you have got to have that kind of thought. Wherever you go, you have got to think that you are not sitting alone, but that all the difference races of the world are gathered together, piled up together, and that you have climbed to the top and are sitting on your seat there. The sons of heaven have to do things like that.

Each of you needs to understand that the lifestyle of the sons and daughters of Heaven requires being able to stand in the position to surpass the authority of the satanic world, that it requires attaining and preserving the position of glory in the course of life. If God wants to love His sons and daughters, that is the kind of son and daughter He should love, don't you think? If He loves sons and daughters who do not even match up to Satan, He cannot really preserve the dignity of His fatherhood, can he? I want you all to keep that conviction in mind and make a new determination that you will live every single day of your life marching ahead, hand in hand with the entire world. The way I see it, that is where the foundation for the unification battlefront is determined.

"Even though I live in the midst of the satanic world I am a secret agent for Heaven. I am the one ambassador of Heaven." That is what you have to think. The special emissary's route of contact allows him to contact the king of the nation directly. Other people do not know his situation, but he has to push ahead with the conviction that he is living with the mission and authority of an emissary. Each of you has to understand this clearly. Even the nation's king is waiting for a report from the emissary. In the same way, when we are fulfilling this mission on the earth, God is waiting for our reports and also for our requests.

So if you, in the position of a special emissary, send a request that you urgently need such and such, don't you think He would brave troubles and difficulties from every sector to send it to you? In the same way, if you have that conviction and recognize that you are sons and daughters of God's special glory and ask, saying, "This is what I need, Father; please make it possible," then it will come into being. In this way, you can discover God as He lives and see God working.

You have to be able to do this to become a leader. If there are sick people, you can heal them; if you encounter difficulty, God can help you directly. You have to learn about many things through such a lifestyle so that you can have confidence, have conviction, and breakthrough everything that lies in your path.

Respected guests! Where is it that we have to go? Our purpose is not to go and find the individual. Also, our current purpose is not to go and find the family. The path we have to go is to find the nation. Do you understand? Whether you are a dad or a mom or someone's child, we have no choice but to do this. But then, the followers of the Unifica-

tion Church today, the families who have been blessed, the people in the clan realm, they all say, "Whew! The nation? The church? Don't ask me!" If it gets like this, then everyone is a failure; they have flunked out. That is how it is from the Principle view.

You seek for the nation until the day you die and give all your heartfelt effort. Only then can the day arrive when you can celebrate and sing a triumphant song for the dawning of the Heavenly nation. Among all of Jesus' teachings, this is what you need to know. The direction being shown to you is not two, just one. If he were to say, "Let's go," you would have to go. That is how it is. Isn't that how it is? So if he says, "Sacrifice being with your husband, sacrifice being with your family and go," do you have to go or not? You do not do that for the sake of the Unification Church, but you have to be able to do that for the sake of the nation.

Currently in North Korea, they are tearing up the family registers and redoing them. Do you know why? Satan's world does things first. You have to be able to step forward and put aside your husband, or wife, or parents, or children, or whatever for the sake of the nation. Otherwise, we cannot establish the nation that embodies our hope. When that nation is established, you will find your parents at the same time. If you cannot establish that nation, you will have to sit and see your parents shedding their blood, your wife shedding her blood, your children spilling their blood. Is there anything worse than that kind of situation? Therefore, before we find that nation, we cannot love our wives; we cannot love our parents; we cannot love our children. This is the path that Christians need to go, the path that the Unification Church needs to go.

You people have to become those who can deny themselves and live for the nation and that purpose. No matter what kind of difficult situation you find yourselves in, you have to be people who can fight and overcome it thinking of the hope that your father has in you. You have to become that kind of person before you can be called God's true son or daughter.

So, what kind of person, then, can build God's country? Someone who can deny himself or herself and value Heaven with an aching heart. Someone who denies himself or herself and lives for the sake of society and the people, for the sake of the nation and the world is the person who can build God's country. Going one step further, the person who lives for the sake of Heaven, even if it means he or she must deny the nation and the world, is someone who can build the Kingdom of Heaven. Also, the person who feels sorrow for society and the nation, for the world, and even for Heaven, rather than sorrow for himself or herself, no matter what kind of sorrowful and painful situation he or she encounters, that is the person who can build God's country.

Not only that, you have to be able to be victorious, and not lose in the fight with Satan during the course of establishing God's nation and God's purpose.

Then, starting from the individual, you have to connect the family, society, people, nation, and world into one. In other words, you have to be able to fight and win over Satan in whatever situation you are put. If you go into society, you have to be able to fight and win over Satan in any environment that society presents you with. If you go out into the nation, you have to be able to step forward, take responsibility for that nation's worst problem, then fight and win over the satanic forces involved.

Do you think that Satan, who has given God such a hard time for six thousand years, is just going to quietly say, "Oh boy, I have had it. I think I will just give up," then lower his eyes and crawl away? Don't you yourselves value even a wash cloth too much to just throw it away? Before you throw it out, you will probably turn it over, inspect it, and even smell it. What I am saying is that Satan will not just give up and go away like that. That is why he keeps on putting up such a stubborn fight. So, we have to fit with and match up with the center. Even Rev. Moon of the Unification Church will be broken the day he deviates from the center. If the direction is not right, then you cannot make any progress.

The reason we seek that nation is to be able to find the world, and the reason we seek the world is for the sake of the spirit world. And after we do that, then what do we do next? Then we attend Heavenly Father and return to the earth, grab our spot, our position, and with all nations of the world attending God, we march forward to dedicate and return the glory of victory to Him. To do everything right, you have to understand that the mission of the Unification Church requires us having to fight this kind of fight.

We have to step forward in bare feet to build the eternal homeland. Can we save this nation just with what is left over after we have had our fill? Can you spend your energy worrying about what you wear, when you will eat, what you get around on? We have to clear the path and pioneer the way with our bare feet and bare hands. This is the kind of thing that we do in the Unification Church.

Are you brave soldiers who should stand forward for the establishment of the homeland, or are you failures who bring it down? When we say brave warriors, we mean those who can represent the nation and carry out the things that other people cannot do. We do not use the term brave soldier for the people who do what just anyone can do; they are the rank and file troops. The brave soldier is the one who carries out the mission that his comrades have retreated from or failed to accomplish. The word yong means swift, quick. The brave soldier has to be able to run faster than anyone else, and even to be able to dodge bullets. The term brave soldier is reserved for those who do what no one else can do.

Who is the general in the vanguard who must be the hero to lead and pioneer the building of that nation? Then, where is the site where that nation can be established? If you want to establish a nation, you need a sovereignty, territory

and citizenry. Then looking at the problem centering on the Kingdom of Heaven, what is the site that can fulfill the role of the national territory? That can only be the church's assets; isn't that so?

And next, who can become the people, the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven? That is the congregation, the followers. Then who are the rulers? You are. You are the representatives of the village head, the representatives of the tribal head, the representatives of the county head and the representatives of the provincial governor. People, have you become the subjects, the centers? When someone comes along with a bomb from the satanic world, you have to be the first to jump forward. Do you understand? Do you feel like you can do that?

And if you have money, even if it is only a penny, you use it to develop the church. You use it to expand the domain of the nation and to bring the people together. A church director is the representative of the ruler. He or she represents the village chief; he or she represents a father and mother. You have to leave this kind of tradition and philosophy behind. We ourselves do not have anything.

What kind of nation are we going to establish here, in Korea? When we start distributing goods and communicating, will we set up a communist nation, or will we just keep going along as the Republic of Korea is today, or will we pursue a new nation that is neither of these? Considering things in light of this issue, one comes to feel that our time is getting closer and closer. If you people are the Unificationists who have to keep things steady and take responsibility for this, how much of a sense of responsibility do you feel for this situation, and to what extent are you determined to sacrifice for this? That is what I am asking. Do you have the confidence? We will need to go up north, cross over the 38th parallel and prepare our bases in the towns and counties of the North's five provinces.

You have to think about who is going be responsible for Jeongju up in the North, now, at this time, when we are short of people. Have you become the people who invest their heartfelt effort and who can prepare for 10 or 20 years to take responsibility, centering on the Jeongju area, and if it cannot be done, then when you die leave instructions telling your descendants to study hard, train hard, and prepare hard, and to become those who take responsibility in place of Heaven at Jeongju? That is what I have been thinking about and preparing for up to this day.

Thinking of this, is it okay for young lads to just return to their hometowns, smiling and chuckling and taking their wives and their kids along? Is that okay or not? Even though you may die, you have got to establish that nation, and then go; even though you may die, you have got to build that nation for your children, and then go. What I am telling you is that, for things to go right, you have got to make a new determination. You have to determine, "I will go up there to the Russian and Manchurian frontiers and lock horns with the Communist Party. In the midst of gunshots

day and night, I will take responsibility; I will be a sentry for the national border detachment. Even if my country does not know, no matter if no one knows, even if I have to give my life in the process, my heart, my loyalty for that nation will not change." That sort of thing is exactly what we need.

It does not matter if the world ignores you. Everything will come out when you get to the spirit world. That is how the universe is set up. When we think of this, to get things right, you have to understand that we are short of people. Do you understand? You have got to understand that we need more people. Even if some guy is a scraggly old scarecrow, we can set him up with a trumpet, or construct some robots and have them go around the North blowing on trumpets. That is what I wish I could do, and that is what God wants to do. It just does not make sense to say that you cannot teach the Principle when you were born as a man, with a mouth and everything, with feelings, and with a mind and body of 20 or 30 years of age as well.

You have to study hard, even if you get so little sleep your eyeballs fester and pop. You have to prepare even if you are so hungry that you are nothing but skin and bones. Then, that haggard, skinny bag of bones will be thoroughly capable of receiving the love of Heaven. What I am saying is, don't you think that God can place all His expectations in that one man, even if he is slender and frail?

Jesus also came to establish the nation. If there is no homeland, then the situation is pitiful. Religious people were always in a pitiful situation because they had no homeland. If the judgment is to come, the individual, family, clan, people, nation, and world must conform to an unchanging standard, and then the judgment will be made on the basis of that standard. The homeland is the final hope. The people, the clan, the family, and the individual are all included within the homeland.

Has this land of three thousand ri become the Homeland? It has not, and we need to settle this matter. Every one of us needs to work with single-minded devotion to create the homeland that God wants, that Jesus and the Holy Spirit want.

What is goodness? Goodness is sacrificing the individual for the family, the family for the clan, and the clan for the dawning of the homeland. All are sacrificed for the restoration of the homeland, and when the homeland is restored, all become loyal and beloved patriots. If loyal devotion is offered on the national level, and the national standard is established, then you are also recognized as having built the foundation for the family and the clan as well. The standard for the path is absolute, loyal devotion for the sake of God. Then all aspects of that course are given recognition.

How do we have to do it to get things right? Jesus said, "Father, not as I will, but as thou wilt." Here, "as I will" is the will of the world, and "as thou wilt" is the will of God. You Unification Church members, what did you do? Have you established the path of loyal patriots and stepped forward with the actual results

in hand? You have to fulfill the path of filial children, then present yourselves with actual accomplishments, and be resolved to fight on the individual, family, clan, national, and world level.

Jesus came with the mission of an offering. You all have to build the ethnic foundation while moving ahead, fighting on the global level. You have got to be endowed with a value tantamount to that of the Messiah. While the leader is pioneering the global path, the ones who are being led, you, have to prepare the ethnic-group path. Many people died while hoping for the path to liberation. They passed away believing that it would be achieved one day although they did not know when.

The Unificationists have prepared the foundation from the individual, through the ethnic, up to the national level. Now we have to mobilize all humankind and all the nations of the world. We have to seek the day when our homeland is established, the day of freedom, peace, and happiness and we have to move forward, even though the path is difficult. That is the way that I look at things, and that is the standard that God has. Jesus died while pursuing this standard. We have to suffer and forge ahead on the course to establish the homeland. We have to take responsibility for Korea. We have to relieve the built-up pain and anguish that surrounds the fact that Jesus' homeland, the Holy Spirit's homeland, the homeland of all the saints and sages, and God's own homeland has never been built. If we fail in that mission we can never hold up our heads.

What we have to do is to find our homeland. In order to find it, we have got to live for it. If we do not live for our homeland, we will not be able to build it. Then how do we have to live to be living for our homeland? Set the world up as your own homeland and live for the sake of the world. That kind of person is capable of creating the homeland. Eating and sleeping, walking the street, your entire lifestyle and all your actions have to be for the sake of creating the homeland.

That is why we fight, prepared even to receive a sword attack from the communists in broad daylight. When the people of Korea cannot do the job, we are the ones that have to. Because the people cannot go, we have to go. And to be able to do that, we have to love our homeland more than anyone else. What I am saying is, if you have to eat, eat for the sake of the homeland. When you get married and go to join your husband, do it for the homeland. It is for the sake of our homeland.

Now there is a group that can rise up when I give the word, a group that can mobilize when I present the direction, but I am not the sort of man to be satisfied with that. I will continue to develop and build a foundation that will guarantee the dawning of the homeland, even if I have to sacrifice the Unification Church foundation to do it. There has to be a religious order, a people, and a nation that can receive the family that has been established as the central goal of the six thousand-year providence.

The foundation to receive God was prepared, and God's desire was for it all

to be connected at once, but it was broken and shattered; so the task of rebinding things together remains. To connect everything together again, we have to stand on the front line and run.

When it gets dark and it is time to go to bed, you have to fall asleep together with that nation of hope. What I am saying is that, although that nation does not exist at present, as a citizen of that nation you need to go to sleep for the sake of that nation, and when you wake up, wake up as one of the workers who is working to create that nation. Do not use your five senses if you cannot use them thinking of that nation. Until that day arrives, do not even die. Until that day arrives, time is pressing. To accomplish this task, we have to overcome every kind of suffering and adversity.

If you have something to do, you have to get it done, even if it means staying up late at night. I mean, when the only way to establish the homeland is to add the weight of a sacrificial lamb based on the providential timeline, and you have the responsibility to use this time to add, even if it is one more drop, the sacrificial lamb of tears and sweat, do you think it is okay for you to just sleep comfortably and wake up stretching and yawning? In fact, as soon as you wake, you have got to bow down and pray, "Father, I cannot help but feel the sorrow of this lonely, miserable path that I am walking, the path towards the foundation for our victorious nation, the path towards that place of rest and security that you have always looked for, the path towards that nation through which you can make that world you have always wanted to realize. Father, if I feel this kind of sorrow, how must You and heaven feel?"

You cannot just lie down because you are tired, and even if you die, you have got to die for the sake of that nation. Because of that, when I get old and start to feel tired, the one thing I want to be able to leave behind me is the last will and testament that "I did all I could for the sake of Heaven. I did everything I could for the sake of that nation."

Jesus said, "Worry not what you will wear or what you will eat, for the Gentiles seek after these. Seek ye first the Kingdom of God, and His righteousness." As this shows, the central stream of thought in the Bible is that kingdom. This philosophy says to seek that nation. It does not say to seek your own happiness. If you are born as a citizen of that nation and you have a husband, then that husband represents that nation, so you have to love that nation before you can love your husband. And the wife also represents the nation; you have to love that nation before you can love your wife. You have to be able to ask him or her to die in the position of being able to say, "I did everything I could; there is nothing more I could have done." It is no good if you die having said, "I should have tried such and such." For this reason, we are busy even though we may have accomplished a certain amount. Even if you walk a way on the path, you have got to go even further. When everyone else is sleeping, we have to go one step further. "Hey Satan's world! Take it easy! You guys, rest the whole day if you

like! We are going off to seek that nation." That is what you have got to say.

Fellow compatriots, all you who seek the unification of the North and South! I especially want to say the mission of you women is to restore the young men and women, and the mission of the students is to be true children through true education. That is what you must do.

And beyond that, mothers and children have to unite to set the standard, so that the husbands can be raised and educated to be the true sons of Heaven. Then following True Parents, and attending God, restore the ideal of the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth.

In closing, let me say that it is my fervent hope that these words today will help you build a nationwide movement to bring closer the day when North and South meet in true love.

May God's blessing be with both you and your families. Thank you.

BOOK FOURTEEN

A LIFE OF TRUE FILIAL PIETY



Contents

Chapter 1. The Meaning of Loyalty and Filial Piety

Section 1. Loyalty and Filial Piety Are the Central Thought of Koreans 2179
Section 2. Saints and Divine Sons and Daughters of Perfect Loyalty and Filial Piety 2181

Chapter 2. True Loyalty and Filial Piety

Section 1. True Loyalty and Filial Piety Means Taking Initiative in Difficulty 2185
Section 2. True Loyalty and Filial Piety Establish the Family and Perfect the Parents and the Nation 2187
Section 3. True Loyalty and Filial Piety Is Being Obedient and Loving Others 2189

Chapter 3. The Way of Loyalty and Filial Piety

Section 1. Genuine Loyalty and Filial Piety Demands the Cost of Your Life 2192
Section 2. True Loyalty and Filial Piety that Anticipates the Needs of Others 2196
Section 3. The True and Unconditional Filial Child 2199

Chapter 4. Loyalty and Filial Piety Toward God

Section 1. God's Hope 2203
Section 2. Absolute Loyalty and Filial Piety that Moves God 2208
Section 3. The Loyalty and Filial Piety of Jesus 2211

Chapter 5. The Inseparability of Filial Piety, Loyalty and Religion

Chapter 6. Our Level of Loyalty, Filial Piety and True Love Determine Our Path to Heaven or Hell

Chapter 7. God and True Parents

Section 1. True Parents Are the Model of Loyalty and Filial Piety 2222
Section 2. Loyalty to True Parents Is Loyalty to God 2224

CHAPTER ONE

The Meaning of Loyalty and Filial Piety

Section 1. Loyalty and Filial Piety Are the Central Thought of Koreans

People of filial piety will think of their parents first when something good happens in their lives. In the fallen world people think of their spouse first when they see something good. However, unless you buy something precious for your parents first, you cannot buy something for your spouse.

In the same way, a man should first buy clothes for his parents, and then for his wife and children, before buying clothes for himself. He should attend and serve his parents when they eat. Even in the satanic world, it was the custom in Korea for people to attend their parents for a three-year period of mourning after their death. In the old days, was it not Korean etiquette for a devoted son to be in mourning for his deceased parents by building a mud hut next to their grave and living there for three years in order to fulfill his filial duty? Therefore, in Korea, if people did not attend their parents with devotion for at least three years, then when they went to the spirit world, they would not be able to say that they are descendants of Korea.

We must surpass this standard. Our Blessed Families must enlarge themselves with good points from each other, and live their lives serving and caring for their parents. (26-299, 1969.11.10)

Koreans are a noble people who have honored loyalty and filial piety from time immemorial. I remember being invited to attend Armed Forces Day at Yeoido Plaza and feeling great satisfaction watching our dignified young soldiers. I was truly impressed as those brave soldiers marched past the reviewing stand and shouted the motto "Loyalty and Filial Piety!" (Choong Hyo!) I thought that, for God's chosen race, it was a motto that seemed very much like a revelation. I don't think there are any other armed forces in the world with a motto like this.

As Koreans are still a people practicing loyalty and filial piety toward God, the spirit of loyalty and filial piety has become the central thought of the nation. The classic stories of Shim Chung's filial piety to her father, Chun-hyang's fidelity to her husband, Jeong Mong-ju's loyalty to his king, and Yu Kwan-soon's spirit of patriotic martyrdom exemplify Korean faithfulness to the principles of loyalty and filial piety to a degree unparalleled in history. Such a spirit of loyalty, filial

piety, and the unchanging fidelity that is like pine and bamboo constitute the central thought and spirit for the realization of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth that will be established in the future. As the Kingdom of Heaven is God's nation, you must be forever loyal to that nation, and, as God is the Father of all humankind, you must show eternal filial piety to Him. When God tested the many peoples of the world, He could not find a people of virtue and fidelity with a spirit of loyalty and filial piety as high as the Koreans. Therefore, He chose Korea and is intently watching the nation. (100-252, 1978.10.19)

Children of filial piety should not leave their parents, even if a century or a millennium should pass. You should say, "I want us to be together!" If you are not people who move the hearts of your parents so that they say, "If possible, we would like to stay with you forever!" then you are not children of filial piety. Parental love is such that no matter how bad the children are, the parents think of being with them. This is why it is called true love. What about impious children? They dislike being with their parents. We find stories of such people in the Bible, do we not? Some did not want to be with their own brothers. They wanted to do and live as they pleased. What kind of seed is this? It is the seed of the unfilial. (147-292, 1986.10.1)

Children of filial piety will forget their own situation and think first of their parents. They'll always live for their parents with a tearful heart. Loyal patriots are those who will forget about their personal circumstances in times of crisis, and take the path of loyalty, worrying first about the king's difficulties. Forgetting ourselves and sacrificing our own interests links us to the zenith of loyalty and filial piety. (37-33, 1970.12.22)

In a family, be it man or woman, brother or sister, everybody should want to become devoted sons or daughters. Centered on love, they are to become one in heart. To unify the family, children of filial piety are needed. The same is true for the nation. Centering on the father and mother of the nation, the king and queen, and also their sons and daughters, there must be reciprocal relationships between spouses and siblings in every direction, namely up and down, left and right, and front and back. If there is no front and back, then parents and children cannot establish a relationship. That is why it is necessary to have up and down, left and right, and front and back. Siblings are absolutely needed. Marriages are woven together from the meetings of siblings. (286-268, 1997.8.13)

People talk about the way of loyalty and filial piety, but do not really understand the meaning. Children must establish the parents as the center of the family in the same position as God; then, becoming one in mind and body in front of the unchanging love that the parents have for their children, they always receive one hundred percent through their heart and body, and adapt to them

one hundred percent. What do we call sons and daughters who take such a position? We call them children of filial piety. When people speak of the way of loyalty and filial piety, they do not comprehend its true path. (101-13, 1978.10.28)

What do parents hope for? There is no unified root of the lineage with just a mother and a father. They need to have children in order for the lineage to continue. When sons and daughters love their parents, then the unconnected lineages of the parents become unified through the child. The perfection of parents comes about through having children. The father and mother become perfect through sons and daughters practicing filial piety.

It is a joy to have parents to whom you can devote yourselves. We represent our parents' life, love and lineage. Their love has been duplicated through us. It has become the nucleus; your love, life, and lineage have become its embodiment.

Bringing about the perfection of your parents can, therefore, bring about your perfection. When we mature and marry, we must become one as our mother and father have, and in this way both sides achieve perfection. (223-174, 1991.11.10)

With what kind of environment does the family want to be linked? A nation. The family connects directly to the nation. Where must the nation go? To the world. Where must the world go? The world – God's Kingdom on earth – will link to His kingdom in heaven. A nation's loyal patriots are its children of filial piety. Who are the loyal patriots on the world level? The world's saints are its children of filial piety. Who is a holy child of heaven and earth? Such a person is a devoted child of heaven and earth. Apart from this context, the concepts of a filial child or son have no value. (280-107, 1996.11.11)

Section 2. Saints and Divine Sons and Daughters of Perfect Loyalty and Filial Piety

The ideology of loyalty and filial piety in Korea is truly great. Then does this mean that Koreans must be loyal only to Korea? That's the question. Should the Japanese be loyal only to their emperor? Should the Germans be loyal only to their president? Or can we say that Americans have fulfilled their duty of loyalty when they are loyal only to the president of the United States? No, we cannot say this.

If you ask Koreans, "Do you want to become saints or only become loyal patriots?" they might answer, "Well, the way of loyalty and filial piety is at the center of Korean thought, so I am not sure about being a saint. I will just become a loyal patriot." This would be wrong.

Who is a loyal patriot? It is someone who brings national blessings to all the people of the nation. A son or daughter of filial piety is someone who brings blessings only to the family. You should know this. Of course the path of loyalty is important for everyone, but the path of

the saint still remains, and so, if there's a people determined to go the path of the saint, they will be able to bring global blessings to humankind. (101-16, 1978.10.28)

What is the difference between patriots and saints? Loyal patriots are always ready to sacrifice their lives for their nation, and they live and invest themselves for the public good. Saints, however, transcend their race and nation, and live for all humankind. Going beyond that, they live for God who dwells in the public domain of the cosmos. More than just following the way of filial piety in the family or loyalty to the nation, saints are determined to fulfill the way of loyalty and filial piety in front of all humankind. They are willing to abandon their position as loyal patriots and forget their country and king. Even if the king grabs their hands and pleads with them, saying, "Our country will be brought to ruin if you go," saints won't concern themselves with their king's situation. After they fulfill the way of the saint in the world, they will be recognized by heaven as having done something far greater than just being a loyal patriot to their king. (101-150, 1978.10.29)

Among patriots there are numerous sons and daughters of filial piety. However, if you are a patriot, then you automatically receive the rank of being a filial child, even if you are unable to practice that role in front of your parents. In the same way, when you are able to become holy sons and daughters, you will be able to govern the saints. If you were unable to be a devoted child, a patriot or a saint, but gained the position of holy child, you will encompass everything below that.

It is not easy, however, to become a holy child. To become such a person, you must surmount all hardships in order to become the leading patriot among all patriots. As a devoted child, then as a patriot, and all the way up to sainthood, you have to overcome all kinds of difficulties. On the foundation that has the autonomous power to surmount an even higher level, the path of the holy child is achieved. Those who have not passed through each stage of such a course must receive global persecution within a short time. (196-125, 1989.12.31)

People absolutely need to fulfill the duties of devoted children, loyal patriots, saints, and holy children. Due to the Fall, saints are needed; the way of holy sons and daughters is waiting to be perfected.

The realm of reciprocal relationships with God can connect from heaven to the world and to the family beginning with the individual. You must, therefore, fulfill all these duties while still on earth. It constitutes the road to perfection. Then, for the nation, the ruler should embody the essence of the father and mother. People would want to engraft to that standard and grow. You cannot stand in front of your nation without establishing your family, but now even the family is coming to ruin in front of the nation, Satan's nation. (285-91, 1997.4.21)

The way of children of filial piety is

to love the family that channels love's life force. The way of loyal patriots is to give love based on the life force of the nation. The way of saints is to connect love to the life force of the world. In this light, the human moral concepts which have been taught in the past become clear. You have to know that this is the right way. It is the way of saints to love the world. This has set the standard of human moral education, and now you understand the correctness of such education. (111-173, 1981.2.15)

In the lives of people centering on love, the devoted child forms the innermost circle, the loyal patriot is the next bigger circle, and the circles get bigger and bigger. They start off small and become larger and larger. The circle of the saint is larger and the circle of the holy child is even bigger than that. That is why the central point of the circle is the devoted child. Children of filial piety are the first stage. The stages of loyal patriots, saints, and holy children follow. They constitute a total of four stages.

The center of these four is the vertical. They are centered on the vertical and the central point of all four circles is one, not two. The center of love is only one. That is why children who are devoted to their parents will not go to hell. People who are loyal to their nation will not go to hell. Even if they do not believe in the Messiah, everything will naturally be solved when they pass on. That is why saints will not go to hell.

I am saying that people who are not filial toward their parents cannot become loyal patriots. What happens with someone who wants to be filial, but has no parents? They would say, "I really want to be a devoted child, but I don't have parents. What should I do?" They have a serious problem. They can plead, "Heavenly Father, please give me parents!" but of course that cannot happen, because the laws of the universe do not work that way. Their parents may have died, or something else might have happened.

Even though you may wish to become a devoted child, if you cannot, then what should you do? You must become a loyal patriot or saint. The position of a saint is higher than that of a devoted child or loyal patriot. (197-44, 1990.01.07)

Devoted children are people who love their parents and children. The first page is love, the process is love, and the final page is love. The family cannot become the core. Above the family there must be a nation, and its core is the way of the loyal patriot. What does that mean? It means loving your nation. Loyal patriots, saints, and holy sons and daughters are the core; but what kind of core are they all based on? Humankind has not known that the core, the essence, is love; it has never been explained clearly. All of this means that the stable point upon which we can settle in these Last Days and in the future is nothing other than love.

Owing to this, spouses must love each other in order to become children of filial piety. You can become loyal patriots after becoming people of filial

piety, and you can become saints after becoming loyal patriots, and after you have become saints, you can become holy sons and daughters.

After becoming holy sons and daughters, you have all the rights of inheritance, and after you become God's sons and daughters, He becomes yours, too. Then everything that He owns becomes yours, and all the things that He can later create for a future filled with hope will become yours. You have to stand in the position of being holy sons and daughters for all things of the past, present, and future to be given to you.

When you stand in this position, nothing in creation will protest. You can then finally speak about the conclusion regarding a unified heaven and earth. (206-175, 1990.10.7)

When we consider the way we have to walk in our life, what is the main point of the way – the way of filial children, the way of loyal patriots, the way of saints, and the way of holy children? They all want to live together forever. They want to live together as the upper level and lower level. Would they not become people who long to live together front and back, left and right, day and night, throughout their lives? This is a reasonable conclusion. (148-258, 1986.10.11)

In front of God what must you long to become? First, you must become devoted children. Second, you must become loyal subjects and patriots. Is there anyone above loyal subjects and patriots? Saints are higher. Devoted children in the family are absolutely loyal to their parents. Patriots are absolutely loyal to their nation. Then, what kind of people are saints? They are people like Jesus, Buddha and Confucius – people who assert God's existence, not people who assert themselves. They lead God-centered lives and do not cause any harm, but instead try to benefit humankind. Moreover, they are not nationalists, but rather globalists. (54-214, 1972.3.24)

CHAPTER TWO

True Loyalty and Filial Piety

Section 1. True Loyalty and Filial Piety Means Taking Initiative in Difficulty

Those responsible people who are equal to the task of fulfilling the way of filial piety when they are in a difficult situation, rather than those who want to fulfill the way of filial piety in an easy situation, are the sons and daughters that we can say are truly walking along the path of filial piety. From this perspective, because God worries over global problems, then, if there is a person who wants to take responsibility for global problems, it goes without saying that this person can be recognized by God before any other race or anyone else in the world.

We can therefore conclude that a filial son or daughter is a person who, representing others, wants to bear responsibility for the wretched situation of his or her parents. The way of putting aside the good things, if there's something good, and always wanting to bear responsibility for the bad things, is the way a devoted child must go. (62-23, 1972.9.10)

It is not difficult to lead a life of filial piety in attendance to one's parents when those around you are doing so. But when many people are turning away from their parents and avoid choosing this way, should you stand in a position where you try to live for your parents even if it means giving up your precious life, then you will have fulfilled your filial duty transcending your circumstances. We know very well that in this situation you cannot help but achieve the position of children of filial piety. (42-182, 1971.3.7)

Relatively speaking, is a truly devoted son one who fulfills his filial duty when he is well-off or one who truly fulfills his filial duty even though he is poor? If you are brought up in a family in which you are only able to eat one meal a day, but you sell even your flesh and blood in order to let your mother and father eat three meals a day, is this being filial? Or is it being filial when you eat three meals a day, and there is so much left that you cannot finish it all, so that you give your parents the leftovers? Truly devoted children do not come from wealthy families. You must know this.

If your mother, father and younger sibling are starving, your mother will give her food to your younger sibling. Children who watch their mother all night feel this in their bones. They say

to themselves, "Mom loves my sibling so much, and so I am going to do as she does and give even one more grain of rice to my sibling." Then when this child gives the mother that rice, the realm of filial piety, the environment of filial piety, is created. People who live only for themselves will be kicked out. From this point of view, a life of filial piety is a life lived for others. The way to become a truly devoted child requires that you have to live your life for others. Yet this does not mean that you live for others only under favorable circumstances. (286-282, 1997.8.13)

There is nothing we can boast about. All we have done is destroy God's sovereignty, citizenry and territory. Now is the time that you must change your heart to one which understands the heart of loyalty and filial piety; to the heart which understands how much you have violated God's sovereignty, territory and citizenry. You must return to the right way – you who have betrayed heaven. You must have the clear conviction that, even in sadness and hardship, you will recover God's sovereignty, citizenry and territory for Him. You must eat, live and even die for this purpose alone.

Then what must you live for? You must be loyal and fulfill your filial duty toward the earth, your people, all humankind, and God's sovereignty. When you realize your failures, this is the time God can forget your disloyalty, filial impiety and betrayal. So you have to repent on behalf of the people, the nation and the sovereignty. The time when you repent before the Father is passing.

You must repent for the earth. Millions of believers are still waiting eagerly. We must repent for the recovery of God's land and sovereignty. You were chosen in order to recover God's people, territory and sovereignty. So, if you make a mistake, you will go the same way Adam and Eve went. If you do well, then you will be able to welcome the day of victory. (11-150, 1961.5.13)

Do not become like your ancestors throughout history and go to the spirit world with regret, saying, "Oh dear, what have I done?" In order to finish everything in our lifetime, and not leave such a legacy to our descendants, we have the responsibility to unite and become one, and, in fulfilling these things, make the foundation of loyalty and filial piety on the national level. You should know that this is the way that the Unification Church must go at this present time.

What a blessing it is to be in a position to become filial sons and daughters without being told what to do, to bear responsibility for taking revenge on the enemy Satan, and to indemnify everything yourselves without receiving God's directions or command!

I want to ask you, who know such things and care about your responsibility in this age and for this generation, to go forward to fight with a grateful heart for being in such a position, and from now on as you go forward, when you come across the question, "What shall I do?" do not give up until you can say, "I have become a patriot and a child of fil-

ial piety." Do not collapse, but absolutely win the victory and move forward. (153-110, 1963.10.24)

Section 2. True Loyalty and Filial Piety Establish the Family and Perfect the Parents and the Nation

If you understand your parents, then what must you do for them? You must fulfill your filial duty. You must become a filial son or daughter, and centering on those parents who have led the nation and world, you must become a loyal citizen or patriot in that nation. Before becoming a loyal citizen, you must become a filial child, and before becoming a filial child, you must become a true family member who can boast about your brothers and sisters. 'Family member' is the title that establishes the realm in which siblings can praise each other.

So what does it mean to be a filial son or daughter? You must be more devoted than people were long ago, when a man and woman got married and had children, thus creating a family, and fulfilled their filial duty to their parents. You cannot become a truly devoted son or daughter before you get married.

You can only become a truly filial son or daughter after getting married. You can only establish the realm of true filial piety after you have married and the wife's filial piety is added to the husband's in front of the parents. Only when, through this, you have a foundation of filial piety in attendance to the parents, can a true realm of filial piety be established.

You cannot become a loyal citizen by yourself. The loyalty that the Unification Church talks about cannot be realized by one person alone. You can only become a loyal citizen after you marry and have a family. So in order for you to raise the banner of being loyal citizens, you must give birth to filial sons and daughters.

You must become filial sons and daughters to God. You cannot be a son of filial piety by yourself. You can only become such a son centering on a trinity in which three brothers become one. You know what a trinity is, don't you? You must become one in your trinity.

The three families in a trinity must become one as brothers and sisters, and then again the three children of each family must become one. Then, three times four makes twelve, making twelve children. This became the first foundation for Israel. This is the origin for creating the branches of families, clans and then tribes. (30-220, 1970.3.23)

In order to become heavenly royalty, you must first become filial children, patriots, saints and divine sons and daughters. The training ground for this is the family. The ideal Kingdom of Heaven comes about when the perfected family expands. The family is always the center. The problem boils down to two people: a man and a woman. When an ideal man and an ideal woman come together as husband and wife, and form a family, then everything is completed. The ideal family expands to become a

nation and world.

Through serving in the family and respecting your parents, you become children of filial piety. In the same way, when you attend and live for the king of your nation, you become patriots, and if you live for all humankind, you become saints. So you should realize how much the dimension of a holy child differs from yours. In order for you to change, you must make revolutionary changes in yourselves and ascend through numerous levels. (293-211, 1998.5.26)

God does not just want filial sons and daughters. He wants a filial family. You must understand that He wanted a family of patriots. He wanted a family of saints. He wanted a family of divine sons and daughters. This is His anguish. Hasn't everyone who died, and went to the spirit world, lived a single life until now? Although 3,600 years have passed since Moses went to the spirit world, it is said that he has always had a woman standing by him, attending him. When she asked him why he didn't marry, his reply was that God had said to just wait a little more. Nobody can do as they please. (297-204, 1998.11.20)

If the son advises and teaches his parents to love their country so that they become patriots, and makes them a mother and father whom heaven remembers, is he a filial or unfilial son?

So, rather than a son who says to his parents, "Mom, Dad, don't go out! Just rest at home." he should say, "Mom, Dad, what are you doing? Please, let's try together to find even one more person who can be a patriot, who can work for the unification of North and South Korea, who can work to save North Korea." Then he makes them shed tears, blood and sweat. Then what would you think if the people in the neighborhood were to praise this achievement?

Would the parents say, "You scoundrel, you really made your mother and father's life difficult, so at first we thought you were a bad boy. Yet we became successful and are praised by everyone. My! You really are a filial son." Do you think the parents would say this, or would they say, "You are an unfilial son"? What do you think? (209-266, 1990.11.30)

If your mother and father are disloyal to God's will, then you should counsel them. "Mother, Father, why are you acting in this way? The way of God's will is such and such, and God's will is like this, so why are you acting the way you are? You should be going out like this – what are you up to? What are you doing fighting every day?" You have to try to persuade them. This is the right thing to do. It's a big problem if your mother and father go the wrong way. (100-153, 1978.10.9)

You have to prepare the way so that your parents can live. That's the duty of a child. You must stand in the position of filial sons and daughters. This is our responsibility. You must pioneer this way without worrying about whether you live or die. You shouldn't care about the good things in the world, or about

persecution from the world, or even about going the path of death. You must connect to the way of loyalty and filial piety in order to pioneer this way. (20-122, 1968.5.1)

To become a historical woman, you have to clear up all the failures of history. Also, to become the Eve of the age, you must represent all the women of the age and establish the standard of having fulfilled your duty of loyalty and filial piety in front of Heaven. And as a woman, you must have the heart of a virtuous woman in front of one man, and in front of God. (30-166, 1970.3.22)

Section 3. True Loyalty and Filial Piety Is Being Obedient and Loving Others

Filial sons and daughters must fulfill their filial duty while their parents are alive. Loyalty also must be fulfilled when the king is alive. It is no use at all trying to fulfill your filial duty after your parents have died. Loyalty is of no use at all when the king is dead. People who try to do this are deceitful. Rather than making a big memorial service for your parents after they die, it is much better to say even one good thing to comfort them while they are alive. It is much more beautiful to become a partner in their sadness and try to comfort their hearts while they are alive, rather than setting up a service with thousands of kinds of food for them after they die.

It is much more precious to fulfill your filial duty before your parents die, rather than just cherish their memory. (51-223, 1971.11.28)

Filial children must always unite with their parents' heart and direction. People going the way of filial piety are not those who behave in a way far different from their parents. If the parents go east, then the children should go east. If the parents go west, then they should go west. If the parents have given a certain direction, but suddenly make an about-face, then the filial child must follow them. There should be no dissent from this. If you follow your parents when they leave home, and each time they order you to turn back and go home, you should turn to go back but then do an about-face and follow them anyway, even if this happens ten times.

If you protest, you will not be able to fulfill your filial duty. If parents behave in a strange way, their children also must behave likewise. If parents give an order, then the children must follow accordingly, even if it is means behaving strangely. Acting in a strange manner in itself is not good. You may think that your parents are doing things unknowingly, but actually they know what they are doing. Therefore, you should follow.

Why would parents behave in a strange way? Their strange behavior would serve to identify the most filial child out of all the filial children. If there were one hundred filial children and the parents acted strangely enough, the most filial of them all would eventually emerge. The filial son, who absolutely accommodates his parents' orders at the risk of his

life, even though he knows his parents are being capricious, can even become the king of all filial children. (62-32, 1972.9.10)

Filial children are people who have loved their parents and brothers and sisters. The child who lives the most for others, and who loves the most, will become the heir of the family. So, you should all try to go that way. Today, the way of true love is the mainstream of all ideal action. True love is the mainstream. Everything outside of this is secondary.

That is why it is good to tell people to become filial children. Today, people say there is a generation gap between the mother's generation and the younger generation, but that is nonsense. Is there a generation gap between the love in the mother's generation and that of the young generation? Should a woman live alone? Should a man live alone? That is ridiculous.

Even though you've been together with someone for a year, you might say, "I wish you could stay for another day." These words are really precious. If the husband and wife live to be a hundred, is there a wife who says, "Oh, I wish I could live for one hour longer?" Have you become that kind of wife? Have you become that kind of husband? Have you become that kind of brother or sister?

Sometimes, families split up over a very small amount of money. If a brother says, "Brother, you are you, and I am me. I lent you a million won, so why don't you pay me back? I don't like love or anything else. Money is the most important thing!" Then he is losing all the blessing he was born with. Let us say he was born with the fortune to become a millionaire or a billionaire. If he had love, then all the blessings of the universe would have come and built a nest for him; but instead the universe will run away without pity, saying, "My! What a miser he is!" This is the reason people like filial children. (141-298, 1986.3.2)

In order to follow the path of loving the parents, there must be filial children. In order to go the way of loving the nation, there must be patriots. In order to go the way of loving the world, there must be people who are like saints. All of you have many sons and daughters, but who is the best of them all? The one who has the deepest bond of love with you is the filial child. Centering on the most devoted of filial children, parents decide the direction that they will go. (136-205, 1985.12.29)

Filial children are those who would love and embrace their parent as their own baby even if he or she became incontinent or worse. Such children will go to heaven. (116-86, 1981.12.20)

Among your sons and daughters, there is a filial child, an ordinary child and an unfilial child. There are three kinds of children. I conclude that if you want to become the most filial child, you must compete against God and not lose.

So what must you do? You must become people who, more than the

saints and sages or anyone else throughout history who has come and gone, have no doubt at all about God's will.

You must say to God, "Father, even if you were to say something unbelievable to me that could separate us, I would believe it. Even if you did something unbelievable, I would believe you. Even if you changed from being a loving parent into the most evil parent who whips me, I would respect you with a heart greater than that of a filial child." God would expect this. (73-59, 1974.7.29)

A filial son cannot sleep, even if his parents are sleeping. After I slept, I led my life repenting as a sinner for having slept. Even after eating, I would feel sorry. In the end, how should we walk the path of filial piety? From this perspective, I am a crazy person. Did I take care of my parents? Did I take care of my wife, my children or my brothers and sisters? Did I take care of my relatives? Did I take care of my country? Actually, I never forgot my country. I was working for my country on a higher level… The tears I cried for Korea during the Japanese rule… they are tears that could compare with any patriot's. (62-58, 1972.9.10)

If the parents realize that they must go this way, even though they might die, then they must bring their sons and daughters to God's side. The reason why parents don't fulfill their parental duty is because they do not know what it is. If they know what it is, then they must do it, even if it means standing as a sacrificial offering. Even if it is necessary to whip their children to bring them back to God, this can be thought of as good. So, if the parents act in the right way, there is no such thing as "no salvation for their child." (15-202, 1965.10.9)

CHAPTER THREE

The Way of Loyalty and Filial Piety

Section 1. Genuine Loyalty and Filial Piety Demands the Cost of Your Life

A wife who sacrifices her life for her husband is called a virtuous woman. A filial child sacrifices his life for his parents. A patriot sacrifices his life for his country. However, from the heavenly standard, loyalty and filial piety are fulfilled when you offer your eternal life. Our bodies die, but the standard of a heavenly virtuous woman is only established when she offers her eternal life to God, to her husband, and to her parents. You have to devote your entire lives to God.

That is why the Bible teaches us to love God with all our heart, with all our soul and with all our mind. So what is the standard of "all"? You have to be better than all other patriots, all other filial children, and all other virtuous women in the world. If not, then God's dignity cannot be established. Even in the satanic world, there have been many patriots and virtuous women until now. Yet God's dignity cannot be established if the standard for being a patriot and a virtuous woman is the same as in the satanic world. (9-108, 1960.4.24)

There have been filial children throughout human history. So, if we want to single out the greatest filial child in all of history, who could we deem to be that greatest or most exemplary filial child?

A youth who demonstrates greater filial piety than an old person is the more precious of the two. Filial children come in all shapes and sizes. Filial piety is practiced at all social levels, by the poor and by the rich, by laborers and by beggars. A person who is still alive cannot truly be a filial child. A person who is still alive cannot enter the ranks of those we call filial children. There are so many people who died in order to fulfill their filial duty; so those who are awarded the medal of filial piety during their lifetime will be accused by all those who died in the cause of filial piety.

From the ranks of those who died, there will be those who did so while trying to fulfill their filial duty. There will be those who died attempting to procure medicine for a sick parent, and even among them, there will be those that went with their own money, and others that had to borrow money. The tougher the situation, the greater is its value. Likewise, a patriot does not become a patriot before death. (49-279, 1971.10.17)

In what position do you have to stand in order to become a filial child? You have to stand in the position where you can take responsibility for the path of death, the path of the greatest suffering. So what is the path that filial children must walk? Parents will say "Love your brothers and sisters more than us. Live for the sake of your siblings in the same way as you live for our sake." Fulfilling this is the way of the filial child. Parents will probably say that this is their will. (62-37, 1972.9.10)

What kind of person is the true filial child among all filial children? Who can we say is more pious: a person who sacrificially attends his parents throughout his life, even into his seventies or eighties, or someone who sacrifices his life for them as a youth? Even if a son sacrificially attends his parents into his seventies or eighties, he cannot compete with the son who sacrifices his life for his parents in his youth. It is for this reason that the title patriot is conferred posthumously. From numerous historical examples, we know that true filial piety is determined at the transition from life to death. (48-65, 1971.9.5)

Even so-called patriots must live for the sake of Heaven before they can be conferred the title of patriot by Heaven. The path of the filial child is the same. Thus, you can understand how valuable and precious it is. Everything we do, whether eating, seeing, speaking or acting, must be for this purpose.

We have to realize that we have the responsibility to fulfill our duty as filial children and patriots, even if it entails walking the path of suffering and tears in the place of God, the Lord of Heaven. Even if we collapse while trying to block God from walking the path of tears, we must pick ourselves up again and go this way in His place. The duties of loyalty and filial piety must be accomplished from this position. (41-157, 1971.2.14)

Filial children and patriots cannot truly be termed as such unless they walk with death to their dying day. Nobody is truly a patriot prior to death. No matter how much a person may have suffered, a word spoken today with regret, nullifies any qualification as a patriot. All the loyalty that someone may have previously demonstrated is undone by a single moment of betrayal. It is only when someone has crossed over the peak of death that it becomes possible to determine whether that person has fully discharged the duties of loyalty and filial piety.

Hence, loyalty and filial piety are part and parcel of leading a public life. People who give their lives for their country are called patriots, and children who give their lives for their parents are called filial children. Consider the case of two sons: one had been pious and the other impious until their parents' dying day, but in the parents' dying moments the filial son becomes impious while his brother repents and turns pious; in that moment their positions will be reversed. In that event, the standard of his actions on that one final day would allow him to

be elevated and have the title of filial son conferred upon him. Those who pursue their goals unerringly to the end of their days will inherit glory. (64-75, 1972.10.24)

I am more excited by a fallen person who is prepared to cast aside all fears of death and danger in order to confront grave global issues sincerely and earnestly than by someone who has toiled unremittingly over a prolonged period. Whoever ends their life for God in this way is assured of going to a wonderful place in the spirit world. (18-280, 1967.6.12)

Parents must provide the education for their children to progress through the stages of filial children, patriots, saints and divine sons and daughters. They have to teach them to perfect the dutiful way of children of filial piety, patriots, saints and divine sons and daughters, all the way up to God. If there is a parent who teaches in this way, then would not God think, "My goodness! That parent is doing what a parent should do. He is doing what a real teacher should do. He is doing what a real leader should do"?

When God says, "You are qualified to be a real parent. You are qualified to be a teacher," then you become a father who has the qualification to be a leader, and, beyond that, a king. Today, the concept of filial piety hardly exists in western culture. The concept of becoming a patriot does not exist. The concept of becoming a saint does not exist. The concept of becoming divine sons and daughters does not exist. This is why cultures will perish.

God wants you all to become divine sons and daughters. Then, who wants you to become a saint? The world does. The country wants you to be a patriot. The family wants you to become a filial child. This is the way of absolute truth. (285-218, 1997.5.19)

A true parent will never say to their child, "You have become a filial child, so, you do not need to become a patriot. Do not go the way of a patriot." A true parent must teach that filial child, "You have to sacrifice your family and walk the path of a patriot. You must serve your country, fulfill the duty of a saint, and you have to sacrifice your duty as a saint in order to go the way that Heaven desires. And beyond this, you have to sacrifice Heaven and Earth to find God."

People become filial children only by sacrificing themselves for their families. Further, in order to become patriots, people must be willing to sacrifice their entire families in order to save their nation. Only in this way can they become patriots.

Saints are people who are willing to sacrifice their country in order to save the world. Divine children must be willing to sacrifice the world in order to realize God's Nation and Land, the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth. Humankind has been ignorant of this truth. You need to invest and sacrifice yourselves. If not, then the ideal of one world or one country will never be accomplished. (285-218, 1997.5.19)

It does not matter how many Chris-

tians there are. God wants people who are resolved to go anywhere anytime at His command – people who are awaiting His command with a joyful heart. There are millions of Christians in the world. They are proud of their numbers, but how many of them are like this? If someone at sword point were asked to allow themselves to be sacrificed on God's altar, but they refused to do so, then they would be nothing. This era requires people whose hearts are burning with desire to fulfill their filial duty. It requires people who will risk their lives for Heaven and strive for Heaven. I think these people will be called Heaven's Revolutionary Soldiers of the Last Days.

God will be looking for individuals, families, peoples and nations who are one with His ideology in seeking to fulfill their responsibility to the world. God has long sought such individuals. Such people must comfort God's heart and demonstrate loyalty and filial piety before Heaven, and resolve all the circumstances of Heaven and Earth. So you have to become a person to whom God can say, "You are the person who can take responsibility for this age. When I see you, I have hope for tomorrow. You can achieve the victory in today's fight." This kind of individual is absolutely essential.

God must be able to say to that kind of person, "You are truly the bone of my bones, the flesh of my flesh, and the heart of my heart." No matter how many ancestors we have, and no matter how many people there are in this age, unless a person appears on this earth about whom God can say from the depth of His heart, "You are the greatest ancestor, unparalleled in human history," then humankind will be unable to escape the sadness brought about by the Fall of the first ancestors of humankind. We, who were born in this plight, need to attend a new set of parents. (15-216, 1965.10.10)

God's will for the world and God's love for the world have to be passed down. This must be your legacy even if you die. All you need to realize is that people who devote their lives to bequeath this tradition will become filial children and patriots. We do not need a one-day filial son, or a one-day patriot. Even the most evil robber can become a filial son for a day and anybody can also become a patriot for a day. If you repent immediately, you can still become filial children and patriots. God wants people who live as filial children and patriots from the moment they are born to the day they die.

If you compare yourself to me, then I am probably a more filial child of God than you are. The reason is that I have lived my whole life in the way that God wants. Yet, I would not even dream of assuming that I have fully carried out my filial obligations. In fact, I feel ever more inadequate with the passage of time. When people think they have fully discharged their duties of filial piety and loyalty, they actually cease to become filial children and patriots.

The person who complains, saying, "I am a filial child. I am a patriot. Why do you not recognize me?" is the person

who is retreating. You must understand that Heaven's filial child and Heaven's patriot is the person who realizes, as time goes on, how much more of his filial duty remains to be fulfilled. He then renews his commitment and goal to fulfill his filial duty as his life's philosophy. (35-341, 1970.11.1)

I am not suggesting that we now need to learn about a God who is in a state of happiness. You may or may not want to do that. It is not important. What we have to know first is that we have to become filial children, patriots and virtuous women. The person who is to establish filial piety emerges out of difficulties. Loyalty is not fulfilled when a country is in a comfortable position. Loyalty is not realized when the country is enjoying prosperity and its people are well off. A person can only be called a patriot of the nation when, at the time of his nation's greatest crisis, its gravest peril, he asks, "Will you die or will I die? Will the whole country perish or survive?" If, at this moment, he dedicates himself wholeheartedly, risks his life, fulfills his duty and successfully alters the destiny of his country, then he can be called a patriot. The historical records show that it is in the times of difficulty that the great names appear. These loyal, filial and virtuous people are remembered forever. (151-219, 1962.12.15)

Rather than turning your eyes towards your wife, you should all be thinking more about your country, which is divided between north and south. You should all be thinking about the division between the democratic world and the communist world. You must unify the north with the south and then make the free world and the communist world one. After all that, you are to unify the spiritual and physical worlds, which are separated. You must know that it is the duty of filial children to then liberate God after having accomplished all this. (115-160, 1981.11.8)

Therefore, in order to progress in the way of becoming filial children, you must endure persecution, and many trying moments. You have to become confident people who can overcome all difficulties. Rather than reverting to the path of sorrowful bitterness with thoughts of retreat, you must become people who determinedly overcome the hardships and difficulties of the ages. You must distinguish between the paths that lead to life or death, and press on to make a new start overflowing with the hope of tomorrow. You have to know that this is what God and history require of you. (1988.2.23)

Section 2. True Loyalty and Filial Piety that Anticipates the Needs of Others

The history of humankind is that of a fallen world, yet it actually arose based on ethics and morality. At the center of that morality is love. Filial children want to love their parents ever more, patriots want to love their country ever more, and the path of sainthood teaches us to

transcend nationality in order to love the world. It is the duty of saints to love the world more than they love their own families or their own countries. The way of divine sons and daughters is to love with the highest love in accordance with the law of the royal palace rather than all the laws of Heaven and Earth. Centering on love, all things should be done this way.

Filial children must follow the right way in loving their families. Patriots must follow the right way in loving the nation. Saints must follow the true way in loving the world.

The children of Heaven observe the laws of the heavenly nation and the royal palace, but they do not truly understand the reasoning behind the laws of the royal palace. You can only become divine sons and daughters if you attend God in accordance with the law of the royal palace. These are the stages that people must go through.

The filial child is welcomed by the nation; the patriot is welcomed by the saint, and the saint by the divine child. The divine child in turn is welcomed by God. The marrow of all this is true love. It is unchanging and absolute true love.

However, humankind has been wandering about in ignorance of true love and the fact that it establishes the ties that bind absolute filial children, absolute patriots, absolute saints, absolute divine children and absolute parents, and sons and daughters together. You may do all kinds of things, but once you realize this, you still have to go the way of following heavenly principles. Thus, you cannot continue to wander about. (206-62, 1990.10.3)

Filial children do not exist just for themselves but for their parents. Patriots do not exist just for themselves but for their king. Saints do not exist just for themselves but only for God. This is why the saints have been the ones to teach us about our obligations to God.

So what is God's hope? It is to save the world. What is God's situation like? He wants to love His sons and daughters. What is the hope of God's love? His hope is to live in the intoxication of that love.

You have to understand God's hope, God's situation, and God's heart. Without doing so, you cannot become a filial child. This is the crux of the Unification Church teaching. Is it right for people who want to understand God's situation not to know whether He exists or not? Can you become a filial child without knowing what God's hope is? Can you become a filial child without knowing whether or not God is sad or happy? It is impossible. The path to becoming a filial child is simple. You must want to take responsibility for the things that cause your parents to suffer. This is the way to become a filial child. (62-61, 1972.9.10)

Which of these two sons is truly a son of filial piety, one who conscientiously prepares and serves his mother's meals or the one who has nothing to offer but his love? How impious would it be if the filial son offered love, but had no food for his hungry mother to eat? However,

when the mother hears her son tearfully saying, "I am such an unfilial son to be here," she will regard that as greater devotion than being served with food. Then, who is the more filial son: the one who brought rice or the one who brought love? Love can transcend time and space twenty-four hours a day. Rice, however, cannot do this. You have to understand this. (1988.8.14)

You have to determine to demonstrate loyalty to the place of God before you show loyalty to your country. Before serving your society, you must first enter into God's presence and then serve that place and finally receive its recognition. If not, then your internal connection with God cannot bear fruit in the external world. This is the essence of a life of faith. You say "I'll serve the world and be loyal to my country," do you not? Then where is the starting point of that loyalty? It is surely in the family. It has to start from within the heart and body of your parents. (22-42, 1969.1.19)

If you successfully devote yourselves steadfastly, you will receive a blessing, but if you do not, you will regret it deeply.

There are some people in the Unification Church who say, "I worked with utmost devotion to carry out the commands of Heaven," but you need to realize that the factors determining whether your efforts will create an extensive foundation on the earth are your standards of compliance, your actual accomplishments, and to what extent you are able to absorb heavenly fortune. Even if it is not an extensive foundation, I personally must leave at least a footprint in the world before I go. This is the way of restoration through indemnity. (1971.1.31)

A patriot wants to receive the love of his country. Filial children want to receive the love of their parents and relatives. However, it is not easy to become a filial child who can receive the love of the whole family. The way to do this is to not eat when others are eating in order to enable them to eat, and to enable others to sleep comfortably and to enable others to dress better than you.

Those who toil for the country and for the family while others play are children of filial piety. You should be liked by more than just your own family. You must earn the love of all three generations: grandparents, parents, uncles and aunts, and grandchildren. They all have to like you. You cannot become a filial child if even just one of these people is unhappy about you. Only when all your relatives testify about you, "I want to become that kind of son. I want to become that kind of sister," will you be able to receive the title of filial child from your clan and establish yourself. Then you will have a place to stand. (298-278, 1999.1.16)

People who just think but do nothing are worse than those who do not even think at all. Truly they are thieving scoundrels. Such people, when all else fails, they have no other recourse but to steal.

So what kind of people are filial sons

and daughters that can make God happy? What kind of people are they? Are they those that fill their own stomachs? No. They are the kind of people who give away to others the food that is meant for them. Should those others refuse to eat, they would even force-feed them.

So what must be done to make you patriots, virtuous women, and filial sons and daughters of the Unification Church? You have to be separated. Do you think that one year is enough to do this? There is a saying that patriots are born to be so. If they are born with this kind of nature, then they have to remain faithful to their cause until they die. Then what must you do? The only way is to go along the path of suffering. That is the closest, shortest way. What is the shortest way to become patriots, virtuous women and filial sons and daughters? The only way is to live a public life with tears. I have no other recourse but to make you walk the path of hardship with tears. (155-259, 1965.10.31)

If we demonstrate greater patriotism than the citizens of a country, and love all the races of the world, all the while maintaining our loyalty and filial piety before Heaven, we will not be failures. Even if we die penniless we will be precious patriots of the nation and the world. (88-27, 1976.7.1)

When you demonstrate true love to your country, you become a patriot; when you demonstrate true love to your parents, you become the most filial child of filial children. If you demonstrate this before all the people of the world, you attain sainthood; and if you do that even after entering the Kingdom of God, then you become a divine child who habitually takes a kind interest in God Himself. (176-49, 1988.5.3)

The conclusion is that without true love there is no such thing as a filial child. At the moment, people have inherited the tradition of secular love, false love. So they presently enjoy free sex and whatnot based on secular love. What they are doing is breaking down all the foundations of love, filial piety and loyalty.

It is only when you stand in front of God for the first time, having fulfilled your duty as filial sons and daughters, as true patriots, as true saints and as true divine sons and daughters centering on the absolute love emanating from the Heavenly Nation, that you can receive your inheritance from God. For the individual family to receive this inheritance, it will do so by automatically growing bigger, adding to it everything in the future country, in the future world and in the future heavenly nation. (286-300, 1997.8.13)

Section 3. The True and Unconditional Filial Child

Your grandfather and grandmother may spit at you, your mother may ignore you and your brothers may treat you with indifference, but still you should take care of your grandparents and pay attention to all the rest of the fam-

ily. When you can give in this way, and forget that you have given, you will then take your place among the ranks of filial children that will be remembered by successive generations.

Someone who says, "I am a filial child. I am doing this and that to become a filial child" is a fake filial child. People who live for others and forget that they have done so will take their places among the ranks of filial children.

What kind of person is a patriot? It is someone who, among all the cabinet members, prepares rice cakes and other things and brings them to the king out of love. It is someone who, seeing the attendants of the king and queen fail in their responsibility, will not sit still but rather points out the failing and does a better job in performing those duties. He will teach them to create a more conducive working environment and then forget about having done all that. You should not say "That's good enough", but instead, "I have to do even better." Why is this? It is because there is a king of a country greater than Korea. It is because on earth there is the Son of Heaven, the Prince of the Heavenly Nation. To be a patriot who would limit himself to merely be a representative of an earthly domain called Korea would not satisfy our ambitions. (204-94, 1990.7.1)

The heavenly mind of those who are devoted to their parents is drawn into the parents in the same way that the blood flows from the heart through the arteries and returns to it through the veins. If the family stands at the top, then the power of love based on heavenly principles flows out through the arteries and returns through the veins. You do not see it; it just moves naturally. Does the blood flow in the veins by being pulled up on its own or by being pushed up? It is pushed up. Similarly, even if you do not want to receive the blessing, you will. It is like being in the blood stream where even if you resist, you will gradually moved into the big heart. Even if you do not want any blessing, blessings will certainly come to you. That is why you have to do your best to fulfill your filial duty.

The Unification Church teaches people to fulfill their filial duty. If you do not have a mother or father that you can be dutiful to, then live for the country. When your country is in danger, then you have to fulfill your duty to your country even if it means leaving your mother and father behind. If your mother and father oppose you, then secretly pack your bags and go to the front line. If you die there, you have fulfilled your duties of filial piety and loyalty. (147-306, 1986.10.1)

People generally tend to become dejected by the difficulties they encounter. A patriot cannot do that. A filial child also should not do this. If your spouse dies, or your child dies, you should not grab hold of them with tears. A true leader cannot do this. A true patriot cannot disclose his sorry situation. Therefore, even if your sadness is piercing your heart, you cannot show your tears.

You may not have the opportunity to

commiserate with the king, but if you stand in the position of goodness with the mind of beings who are more than parents and who feel greater sorrow than the king then Heaven will then teach you what to do. When we think about this from the position of filial sons and daughters, then even if you are sad, you should not be sad because of your own sadness. If you feel resentful, you should not decide to take revenge on your enemy. (18-252, 1967.6.11)

The filial child is the person who can accept what he dislikes more than what he likes. The person who sacrifices his precious love in order to fulfill his filial duty to his parents will be able to go anywhere in Heaven, and if there are twelve pearly gates, then not one of them will be blocked to him. All the gates will be wide open. When my son Heung-jin died, I sent him to the spirit world and decided that Jesus should be called the Old Christ and Heung-jin should be called the New Christ. This is how it has turned out. (163-264, 1987.5.1)

You should love grandfathers and grandmothers as the representatives of your country in order to relieve the anguish of not having been able to love Jesus, and to relieve the anguish of God. Everyone in the Unification Church has to do this. By loving these grandparents, you must love what the grandparents of the nation, grandparents of the church, and grandparents of the family failed to love. In this manner, representing these three stages, you must love with the bond of heart felt between brothers and sisters who are ready to fulfill their responsibility of loyalty and filial piety. (1971.1.16)

A father who is filial to his own father will want his own son to be even more filial than he is. Only then, can the grandfather and father be able to close their eyes peacefully when they die. The heart that is able to make the son suffer even more than I have is the heart of love for the son.

This goes without saying. By doing this, then together we have to comfort God, who has been suffering for us. Because a father needs such children as his successors, he lets them carry out their filial duty to such a degree that he could not forget it even after his death. That is why I impose great hardship on you.

I am a stingy person when it comes to my personal life. I do not know how to spend money on myself. I am not a person who will go to a restaurant to eat alone when I am hungry and I also advise Mother about what to eat and wear. (43-60, 1971.4.18)

Parents with a filial child are people who can relate to and live for their loving filial child. No third party can interfere in this relationship. This is why God sends His loving child to the position of death and then turns a blind eye to what is happening – this act allows Heaven to bring forth a true filial child and establish a deep relationship as a final condition that cannot be violated by Satan or people who act deviously. This is the

heart of God who is trying to restore people who have become unfilial; and it is the guiding method that God uses to re-establish the duty of filial piety. This is surely true. (62-47, 1972.9.10)

Filial sons and daughters should have more worries than their parents. To become children of filial piety, they must display greater concern than their parents, and they must do so in every regard. (155-253, 1965.10.31)

Jesus became a servant of servants in front of God, and then he was crucified and died. A person is said to be righteous when he dies for his country in the wretched position of a servant of servants. A person who dies for his country is a patriot. If a person humbles himself as a servant of servants and is grateful to serve his parents, then that person receives the title of being a filial child. This is the highest point of morality in the human world, the core point. It is essential that you understand that this is the core point. In this we can realize that, rather than living a public life for God, becoming a servant is the way to become a more righteous man. Rather than being a servant for your country, becoming a servant in a worse position than an ordinary servant is the way to become a more patriot. Rather than living for your parents, sacrificing yourself in the position of a servant is the way to become a filial child. (88-294, 1976.10.3)

Who should be called and recognized as true filial children and patriots in the providence of God? Does the richest man in America deserve these titles? What about people who drop flyers out of a plane with the message "Believe in Jesus!" but who have the attitude, "Believe it or not, it's up to you"? Who do you think is closer to God, someone dropping flyers out of a plane or someone praying deeply and holding onto each person, individually distributing those flyers tearfully and with trembling hands? (155-261, 1965.10.31)

In conclusion, there is nothing odd about being filial children. They are simply people who love their parents with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. True patriots emerge by absolutely believing in the king and absolutely believing in the people. They absolutely love them and invest themselves totally in the well being of the king and the people of the nation. (270-156, 1995.5.29)

CHAPTER FOUR

Loyalty and Filial Piety Toward God

Section 1. God's Hope

What kind of being is God? He is the Parent of humankind, the King of kings of humankind, as well as the center of all creation. To become God's son, you would have to become the filial son on the world level, as well as becoming the filial son on the family level.

Assuming that only a person who occupies the position representing the highest qualities of filial piety, loyalty, and holiness can attend God, people who attain only some but not all of these characteristics cannot. God desires to see the person who combines all these qualities together: a filial child, a patriot, and a saint of saints, simultaneously.

God is surely such a being. We are striving to attend Him as our Parent in order to meet our obligations to Him as His children. If there is a group, denomination, or race seeking to go the way of first-rate filial children, the path cannot be an easy one. Filial children of that caliber cannot come forth from the ranks of those who choose the easy way out. They do not emerge out of such backgrounds. From the point of view of the majority, this group of filial children is misguided. Everyone else wants to go east, but they have to go not only west, but also south, and east, and back again to the west… God will make His true filial children walk the path that others will be unable to follow. That kind of religion has to appear. Even through a common-sense approach we are bound to come to this conclusion. (62-33, 1972.9.10)

Historically, although there have been many patriots, filial children, and virtuous women centered on the king, no one centered truly on God's will. Yet we of today are different. People of the past devoted themselves to freedom and liberation based upon earthly standards. They might have become the object partner of God's concern, but they were not able to give Him comfort and joy. As yet there has been no loyal subject, filial child, or virtuous woman of whom God could be proud.

Becoming God's patriots, filial children, and virtuous women is the right path for all people to follow; yet such people have never existed. Although people may have lived in this way for their king or their parents, none has done so for God. As God looked upon these people, how much He must have longed for them to become His patriots, filial children, and virtuous women! (11-77, 1961.1.29)

God wants all people to become filial sons and daughters and patriots; and, from among them, He wants those who maintain the highest standard. God wants people who will only go the way of loyalty and filial piety.

Those who do not take responsibility for their parents' life and assets, and do not bring peace and development to their families, cannot become filial children. If their parents lose all their assets, then they must be willing to offer up everything they have for them.

With the destruction of God's ideal of creation, those standing in the position of having trampled upon life, assets, peace, and the ideal cannot become patriots or filial children. You have to ask yourselves, "When did I ever show concern for God's affairs as if they were mine? When did I ever feel the threat to Father's life? When did I ever agonize and strive to try to bring about peace and unification within Father's family?" You may have attempted to do that, but from God's point of view, instead of being loyal and filial, you have been disloyal and unfilial. (18-341, 1967.10.1)

God wants to elevate patriots and filial children and through them transfer His bitter pain to Satan. He cannot do that unconditionally, however. Thus, after raising up patriots and filial children, He transfers that bitter pain to Satan by making them walk the historical path of suffering as individuals. (13-128, 1963.12.20)

Finding a filial son who can liberate God and also liberate love itself is important. God Himself would also like to be in that position and say, "I wish I could be a filial child once." True Parents also are saying, "I wish I could be a filial child once." How wonderful it would be if there was such a road for God and True Parents to fulfill filial piety together in front of love.

God stands in the position of being the Father who has truly perfected love, and the son fulfills his filial duty based on God's love and the fundamental love of the universe, thus uniting with the Father. How can God pave the way of filial piety of a higher dimension in front of this love? If this had been done, then the Fall would never have happened for all eternity.

This is the realm of the greatest of all liberation. This realm goes beyond the realm of the Principle. It is the original world of true love. When we think about this, then you must not think it is the end when you realize the ideal of the family, the Kingdom of God on Earth, and the Kingdom of God in Heaven. There are still some traces stained by Satan's blood in the internal root, which have to be removed.

Tens of millions of years of history have passed, and even if several times, ten times, or even more than a hundred times that time passes, do you think it is possible to forget the world of the Fall? You should ponder the thought that God's highest hope is to forget all this, to have you and me join together, to have the sons and daughters join together, and become filial sons and daughters

who can comfort God who takes the trouble to love us. (300-33, 1999.2.21)

When God held out His hands to bless Adam and Eve, what kind of hope did He have for them as their Father? He would most likely have said, "Embrace the great cosmos that I have created and become patriots attending me as the King." God had this kind of hope.

Accordingly, Adam and Eve should have established the principle of being patriots amongst all the creation and should have lived their lives centering on this tradition for the whole of eternity. If Adam and Eve had become God's truly filial son and daughter and had served and attended Him as their True Father, then the loyalty and filial piety they showed to God would have become the tradition. The history of the world would have continued down until now with the same tradition of unified heart amongst God and Adam and Eve. Had that been the case, evil would not have taken over. If evil could dominate the world of God's heart, then the providence of restoration and salvation would be impossible. (9-105, 1960.4.24)

What God had hoped from His children, Adam and Eve, was to see them become filial children, patriots, saints, and a divine son and daughter when they grew up. God hopes that you will do the same, but have you ever thought that you must become a filial child in your family, a patriot in your nation, a saint in the world, or a divine child in heaven and earth?

Viewed historically, all the saints and great religious leaders have taught people to become filial children, patriots, saints, and divine children. Religions that do not teach this will not endure for long. In any case, that is the predestined course that humankind is following.

Destiny is to do with such things as the relationship between the parents and the children. You cannot change that destiny. There are some things in your fortune that you can change, but you cannot change those aspects of destiny.

If you do not understand these things, you will not be able to fulfill the role of true parents in your families. As true parents, you should teach your children how to become filial children, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters. You have to teach them to fulfill all these with you and beyond that in front of God. (287-23, 1997.8.10)

The first couple of God's ideal should have returned glory to Him; yet through the Fall they brought sorrow instead of glory. This was not just the responsibility of Adam and Eve; it was also due to the archangel's disloyalty. The archangel should first have fulfilled his duty of loyalty and filial piety toward God. The Fall came about because he failed to do so. Consequently, the providence of restoration is to establish loyalty, filial piety, and virtue.

Because God installed loyalty, filial piety, and virtue in the center of our minds, all religions and paths of faith

are destined to uphold them. All the ascetics have striven to achieve this, and even Jesus sought to have a family so as to establish the way of loyalty, filial piety, and virtue.

God founded the nation of Israel for the sake of establishing such a family. Jesus should first have established the way of loyalty, filial piety, and virtue. The high priest should then have established loyalty, filial piety, and virtue, and then Satan would have been subjugated. Our Blessed Families should not be outdone by others in exemplifying loyalty, filial piety, and virtue. All these qualities begin at home. The Blessing signifies inheriting the hope of the Father.

Until now there have been families that demonstrated loyalty and filial piety before God, but not virtue. He cannot establish virtue before we usher in God's Day. Moreover, as long as the condition for Satan to invade remains, virtue will not be established (14-209, 1964.11.4)

To stand upright before God, just being loyal to one's country, such as Korea, will not do. By doing that, you cannot fully become God's sons and daughter. The Apostle Paul understood this point. Anyone can love their own race. Everyone can love their own countries, but you have to love people from other countries, too. This is because God does not only love Korea. You should understand that God loves everyone equally.

In order to understand God's heart, we ought to go in search of a country that has been struck by adversity and which is facing difficult circumstances, and espouse its cause. This must be done. Even from a principled viewpoint, we are required to establish the way of loyalty and filial piety in at least three countries.

Now in Korea when you determine to attend me, and fulfill your duty of loyalty and filial piety to Heaven, you should not think that this loyalty and filial piety that you are practicing is for you alone. You should pray to God, "Father, I am offering my loyalty and filial piety first for this race, first for the world, first for heaven and earth. Please let it remain as belonging to heaven, and belonging to earth."

Then even after your death your loyalty and filial piety will remain as that which belongs to heaven and to earth. Humankind will pass this tradition down as that which belongs to earth. That is how it is. (155-235, 1965.10.31)

The time for us to become God's filial children will not always be there. It will not exist in the spirit world after our death. In our earthly lifetime – which, when viewed against the backdrop of eternity, is as brief as the tick of a clock – we must establish the condition of having loved God and of having fulfilled our filial duty to Him.

Furthermore, we have to confirm our status as the children whom God absolutely needs, and we must accomplish this within our lifetime on earth. (26-114, 1969.10.19)

We are bound together by the destiny resulting from the unfolding history of God's providence, in which He has been pursuing His long-cherished goal of dissolving the anguish He has accumulated over six millennia. Accordingly, even though we have different surnames, we should live with greater love than blood brothers and sisters.

Although you are attending parents who are not your natural parents, you are the people that seek to attend the Parents, centering on God, even more sincerely than you would your natural parents. On top of that, despite having our own country, we are the people that seek to live for the sake of God's nation with loyalty, filial piety, and virtue. (47-81, 1971.8.19)

Now the final time has come. Parents must find "my country." To do that, all Blessed Families are to stand in a circle horizontally around Father and Mother and represent them by progressively fulfilling the duties of filial children, patriots, saints, and divine children. You will thereupon occupy those positions and proceed to observe the laws of the palace and uphold the laws of God's nation. You should understand that the Heavenly Constitution actually begins through us. This is what "my country" means. (197-87, 1990.1.7)

The day that the Korean people understand God's heart is the day that they will dominate Heaven and earth. Why is this so? Even though there are many children, and many citizens, there is only one greatest filial and loyal child. If it is natural even for parents in the fallen world to pay more attention to one of their children who is being victimized, do you not think it would be even more so for God?

God is not looking for any one particular race of people. He is looking for that filial son and daughter that He can love completely. He wants to be proud of them in front of all humankind. God moved the world to recover one people and set up Israel to recover one people. He then sorted out that one people to recover one family, and sorted out that one family to recover one person.

Recovering this one person is equivalent to recovering the world, and this person must be the filial child with the heart to dissolve all God's historical anguish. Only the emergence of such a truly filial son renders it possible for evil people to atone for their sins. (10-239, 1960.10.16)

In the Last Days, above all we must become the people who understand God's heart. Humankind is imbued with the three key elements of intellect, emotion, and will, and it remains for us to attain heavenly emotion on the foundation of intellect and will. God's love flows through our hearts, and because there is a heavenly providence concerning the Korean people, our hearts must beat more strongly with ardor, filial piety, and loyalty for Heaven than those of any other race. (4-250, 1958.6.22)

If you want to become Heaven's loy-

al subject, you must take revenge upon God's enemy. If you want to become a filial child, you cannot succeed as long as your parents' enemies remain, so you must subjugate and replace the sinful dominion with God's dominion. It is the same thing for a virtuous woman. Until the day you make the enemy account for his sins, if you are not prepared to go forth to fight at the risk of your eternal life, you will not be able to surmount the heartbreaking mountain of the Fall. It is only when you cross over this peak that for the first time God will be able to set His troubled mind at rest and say to you, "My loyal, filial, and virtuous child whom I have long awaited for six thousand years!" He will raise both hands to bless you. God cannot enjoy His Sabbath until such a standard of heart has been established. (9-122, 1960.4.24)

God is the First Parent among parents, the First King among kings, the One who alone can rule over all Heaven and earth, and the First Ancestor capable of formulating His ideal. Our purpose in the Unification Church is to attend Him as His sons and daughters who are capable of offering Him filial piety, loyalty, and saintliness and, for the first time, stand before Him and inherit His vast work of creation without shame or accusation. (84-205, 1976.2.29)

Section 2. Absolute Loyalty and Filial Piety that Moves God

Noah could overcome intense persecution amidst troubled circumstances by pouring every ounce of energy into his work. He went forth with a humble heart merely to obey God's laws as His faithful and filial child.

The more Noah went before God, the more sorrow he felt from his heartless environment, and he would go to God shedding tears of repentance with a sorry heart. No one could block his path.

Just think about Noah who endured for 120 years. The satanic world set all sorts of schemes in motion to attack that one person, Noah, opposing him in every way possible; but he did not deviate in the slightest from the standard God had set. That standard established the absolute center of the cosmos, the man of righteousness of the universe, and the victor of truth. As such, God wanted to eliminate all elements of His enemies who opposed this standard. (18-159, 1967.6.4)

Walk the way of loyalty unswervingly all the days of your lives. As much as the people around you criticize you, to that degree our sphere of activity will expand toward the global level. Today we have to grapple with our local state of affairs, but as our situation eases, we will start to take on global issues. Let us therefore hasten the day on which God can proudly welcome and bless His sons and daughters who exemplify loyalty to the world. Only thus will the peace of the Sabbath break out all over Korea for the first time. When the thirty million people of this country have accomplished their duty of loyalty to the world, and all the world's peoples acknowledge that

they had been able to become God's sons and daughters with the help of Korea, and subsequently fulfill their own duty of loyalty, then, for the first time, the foundation for the Sabbath in Korea will have been laid. (155-263, 1965.10.31)

God has toiled assiduously until now to create a providential culture or epochal period in Korea. As that moment has arrived, we need to be people who are as faithful as cows. There were three sacrifices on Abraham's altar: the pigeons, the sheep, and the heifer. Today is now symbolically the age of the heifer. God likes cows.

The age of the heifer! Do we like cows because we can butcher and eat them? That is not the case. Farmers do not like cows because they can slaughter them for food either. They put cows to all kinds of work, and then perhaps eat them later. That is how it is.

Then, what do you need to become in order to be God's sons and daughters? Do you need to become a pig? Of course we are talking about things figuratively. Because God is like the greatest king of cows who offers loyalty and devotion for the sake of humanity, who are His children, thus we of today, as His children, have to become like calves before Him. Of course, I am not saying that you should literally become a calf. It is a figurative expression. (156-17, 1965.11.2)

You have to wonder about whether there is someone else who is being more loyal to Heaven than you are. Would he be from the East or from the West? You have to wonder about this. If there is a loyal person, then what kind of person is he? What kind of work does he do? You have to evaluate this very carefully. (155-248, 1965.10.31)

On your path of loyalty to God, you should have the conviction that you will not yield even an inch. Determine that you will go even one extra step more than any other person or loyal subject. Work harder than any person who ever lived on earth. You must live up to a higher standard than those who were loyal to their country and toiled assiduously for the public good. Go even the extra mile. This is an iron rule. (102-98, 1978.11.26)

In the age of the servant, you must fulfill absolute loyalty. In the age of the adopted child, you have to practice absolute loyalty in your life. If you do not go through these two stages, you cannot reach the standard to become one with God's begotten children. You cannot reach the standard of being unified mind and body with God. The representative people who accomplished for the first time in history the task of connecting the earthly world with the heavenly world will become the Third Israel. (45-82, 1971.6.13)

You have to endure with the heart of yearning, and you must struggle with all your might in every situation you are in to indemnify and liberate all the elements of God's grief. You should bear in mind that a person with this kind of heart will never stumble or fail. Even if

you do stumble, and you think that there is no way to go before the Lord, remember that God is alive. He has been enduring until now, and so, when you stumble in the cause of loyalty and devotion while yet alive, He will raise you up and open the way for you to at least pray, and He will show you the direction how to live from then on. Then He will send you people who can help you. (153-255, 1964.1.7)

From God's point of view, you have to become a person who can make the internal heart of your people cry. You should also be a person who can realize the internal heart of the cosmos. The filial sons and daughters who can lovingly relate to God even in the position of great misfortune must comfort the heart of the unfortunate head of the household, whether it is the king or the parents. Then such a son and daughter should single-handedly tackle all the problems surrounding the situation and solve them. Those having such a mind of loyalty and filial piety will go to the Kingdom of Heaven. People who think that they can enter Heaven just by believing in Jesus shall in no way do so. These people have vilified and persecuted us to our exasperation and mortification, but we cannot take revenge on them with guns and knives. (19-300, 1968.3.10)

Depending upon your attitude when you write, you can feel joy at just dotting an 'i'. At the same time, that one dot could even symbolize hope. In relation to that, when God who made Heaven and earth created an object partner, however small, it occupied the position of a being from which He derived joy and comfort in His solitude. As such, it brought God the greatest joy and thereby constituted an essential factor inherent in the object partner to have loyalty and filial piety. We can thus understand that when God ponders over His creation and wonders about the outcome of adding something here and taking away something there, He does so always with a joyful heart amidst hope. (39-226, 1971.1.15)

Who will liberate God? Filial children resolved to fulfill their duties of loyalty and filial piety with utmost devotion must appear and bear all responsibility for His anguish associated with the cross. Such sons and daughters must appear. Understand that, if we fail this, God will not be liberated. (101-255, 1978.11.1)

If, seeing your faithful determination, God takes heart and steps forward to declare, "I am going to tear down this evil world!" then, in that instant, His sphere of activity will expand due to your efforts. This will be a gift of joy from Heaven more wonderful than any coveted position, throne, place of honor, and even awards that would be heaped upon you over not only one but over many lifetimes.

You should determine to confront any kind of persecution in the course of human history and even beyond that. This is the path filial sons and daughters who take on the responsibility to represent the history of eternity should take.

This is the way of loyalty to the eternal Kingdom of Heaven. (255-121, 1994.3.10)

In conclusion, God wants absolute families who have absolute loyalty and filial piety. Until now, absolute loyalty and filial piety have never existed. Without a global foundation of absolutely divine children, namely God's children, God cannot descend upon the earth. Alone, God cannot do anything providential on the earth. This is why we refer to Him as a sorrowful God deserving of pity.

It is an amazing fact that European members who follow me are realizing such families for the first time. Everyone without exception desires loyalty and filial piety. Until now God has had no other option but to be in a miserable state over this fallen world. How can we liberate God? It all depends on how we build the family, the tribe, the people, the nation and the world. (297-202, 1998.11.20)

Section 3. The Loyalty and Filial Piety of Jesus

Jesus said that no matter what kind of difficult circumstances we encounter we have to have endurance in order to overcome. He said that we have to have more loyalty and filial piety for God's will than sinners show towards evil. This is the basis of the nine fruits of the Holy Spirit which is taught in Christianity. If you live a life of love, then happiness and peace will arise; and through endurance, mercy and goodness will arise; and through a life of loyalty, gentleness and humility will arise.

Jesus emphasized that in order to get rid of all their evil elements, people who are in the realm of the Fall should adopt heavenly love, heavenly endurance, and heavenly loyalty. This is a practical philosophy that can realize the ideology of the Kingdom of Heaven, but do you have this love of Christ in your hearts today?

Also, do you have endurance and the heart of loyalty? Jesus represented God's heart and was the incarnation of His love. Even when he was on the road to Golgotha he was the master of endurance who was worried about the suffering of all humankind and he was the representative person of loyalty who was more loyal to God than any other person in human history.

So where did the love, endurance and loyalty of Jesus come from? These things did not arise from within Jesus of himself. He was the mediator who connected God's love to humankind. He was the incarnation of love and the substantial being with God's value, and he came to save humankind from their ignorance.

In order to accomplish the true will likewise, God searched to find a person like Himself, someone who could represent the value of the whole. For that purpose, God first showed loyalty to humankind before anyone showed loyalty to Him, and He endured limitlessly. Therefore, you have to empathize with God who has been working according to heavenly principles and who had the situation whereby He displayed endless loyalty towards humankind in order to realize His will. You have to empathize

with the heart of God who sacrificed resolutely and unflinchingly to establish His will. In addition, you have to empathize with the heart of God who rose above Himself time and again to set up the ideology of the future, the heart that wants to give endlessly to you. (2-344, 1957.8.4)

Jesus came as the Father of humankind, and the Holy Spirit manifested on the earth as the Mother, but they were unable to become both physical and spiritual parents, and were only able to work as the spiritual parents.

The death of Jesus by crucifixion did not mean that Jesus had gained the spiritual and physical victory over Satan. On the contrary, he was driven to his death by Satan. This is why Jesus gave up his body to Satan, and resurrected only spiritually. During his three days of spiritual resurrection on the earth, he gathered his disciples together, and, centering on the spiritual standard, launched the providence of the Second Israel, which started the two-thousand-year history of Christianity up to the present day.

So where is the First Israel? It was ruined. The Jewish nation as the First Israel was ruined because of their failure to believe in Jesus, and the Second Israel appeared. God had protected and nurtured the Israelites for four thousand years and He sent the Messiah on this foundation of His hard work.

However, the Israelites did not accept the Messiah, and they crucified him. This is why the Israelites became the enemies of God. After this, the Israelites became a people without a country, and they were unable to establish an independent nation until Jesus had come again. The Jews have had to endure unbearable suffering for two thousand years in order to indemnify their sin of having killed Jesus. The reason why the Israelites suffered so much and became a people without a country is because they shed the blood of Jesus, who had come as the ancestor for humankind, at the place of execution.

At that time Israel was a stable and vibrant country in both religious and secular terms. Jesus had come on the basis of Israel's sovereignty with the responsibility to rule over the nations and restore the world. However, because the people of Israel rejected him and forced him to the way of death, he had no option but go to the spirit world. However, he did fulfill his duty of loyalty and filial piety to Heaven. Even while treading the path of death he was fulfilling his heavenly mission and responsibility in place of all humankind. He fulfilled his duty of filial piety and loyalty when he prayed, "My Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me, nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt."

That meant that Satan was unable to invade the standard of devotion even if Jesus died, and through this he could resurrect spiritually and set the standard for the spiritual Israel. (19-207, 1968.1.7)

When Jesus cried out, "My God, why hast thou forsaken me?" as his body was being torn, when his soul was about to be wrenched out of his body on the way

of sacrifice, when he was just passing over the peak of death, he determined to fulfill his duty of filial piety and loyalty to God until the very end, and in so doing, he died a noble death peacefully in a higher position than anyone in the satanic world. What was the condition that enabled him to stand in a higher position than anyone in the satanic world who had died before him? It was the fact that he prayed for his enemies. This became the shield which made it impossible for Satan to invade any further. God loved Jesus, and Jesus loved God, and this love mobilized the power of Jesus' resurrection. (50-201, 1971.11.7)

From his childhood, the people of Israel, whom He had chosen to go the way of loyalty and filial piety, should have served Jesus in the position that would have made God happy. Yet because they did not fulfill their mission, then the Inside the Belly Church had to revive Israel's victorious position to give new impetus to this work. (24-191, 1969.8.10)

Had Joseph and Mary known that Jesus was the true son sent by God, God's prince, and the Messiah of all the nations, they would have attended him as God's prince from the day of his birth. They would have worshipped him daily. As the King of all kings, Jesus came vested with God's authority to rule all of heaven and earth forever. That being the case, Joseph and Mary should have attended Jesus with loyalty and filial piety, completely devoting themselves to him from the moment he was born. From the humanistic point of view, where is there a law which requires parents to be loyal and filial to their son? However, that was exactly what heavenly law required. (16-27, 1965.12.26)

Why was Jesus unable to personally teach Heaven's laws enabling us to attend our Parent, namely God? Originally, if there had been no fall, then God would have become Adam's parent, but their father-son relationship was severed by the Fall. In order to restore through indemnity Adam's inability to discharge his duties of loyalty and filial piety required of the father-son relationship, we are now doing it in his stead. God is unable to teach us from the parents' position before this is accomplished. (15-219, 1965.10.10)

CHAPTER FIVE

The Inseparability of Filial Piety, Loyalty and Religion

There is no other way to possess God than the way of loyalty, and no other way to possess your parents than that of filial piety. Accordingly, you have to fulfill your duty of loyalty and filial piety. (14-90, 1964.6.12)

Those who are truly filial in their families are on the direct road to becoming the loyal subjects of their nation. Those who are truly loyal to their nation are on the direct road to becoming saints. Please understand this. Therefore, determining to absolutely love your parents is the pathway of becoming filial children in your family. Determining to absolutely love the sovereign and all the citizens of your country is the pathway of loyal subjects. Determining to absolutely love the world is the pathway of saints.

Even the king of a country must follow the saint and absolutely believe him. Patriots and loyal subjects must follow their king, and filial children must follow the patriots. There is only one way. Then who must the saints follow? They must follow God. God has eternal, unchanging and unique love. The saint, the king, the loyal subject and the filial child must all go the same course of eternal and unchanging love. Whatever detours you may take, you will always have to get back on the right track in order to stay on course.

The individual, family, tribe and nation are all to go this way. But there will be obligations to your parents as well as to your nation. If you are torn between these obligations and are unable to fulfill both of them simultaneously, where should your priorities lie? Between filial piety and loyalty to your nation, you should give preference to the latter. This conforms to the rule of law. The reason for this is that the nation encompasses the families and parents. (99-67, 1978.7.23)

Be the friend that your friends always feel safe in confiding all their secrets. Someone like that is the very best friend anyone can have. The man who can even temporarily neglect his wife, parents, brothers and sisters, in order to seek out and visit his friend, is an exemplary friend.

As a friend, become a representative of the past, present, and future. Then, become the representative of the family. The father and mother teach their son to practice filial piety in order to establish him as the representative of the family. In other words, you must become children of filial piety.

What is the quickest way to become

emotionally one with your parents? By being a filial child. Those who have forged the bonds of filial piety that can be recognized by Heaven and Earth are accorded the privilege of inheriting the Kingdom.

What are the Eastern teachings of the three basic relationships and the five cardinal virtues? Essentially they instruct us to exemplify a level of filial piety in the family that can be recognized by the nation and the world. God also recognizes that kind of filial child and He will send someone from that lineage who can rule the nation. Filial children are determined within the family and loyal subjects are determined within the nation. The people who can become loyal subjects are not those who have loved only God with all their heart, soul and mind. Loyal subjects are those who also love their nation because of their love for God. (32-258, 1970.7.19)

In my viewpoint, the person who is the most devoted and loyal will become the leader. Only that person is qualified to become the leader. A person with a doctorate is not automatically qualified to become the boss. Even if he joins the company and fits in, he cannot just be promoted over the heads of the rank and file workers. The ultimate deciding factors are not knowledge, erudition or competence, but rather devotion and loyalty.

When the Japanese willfully dominated the thirty million people of Korea, the maiden named Yu Kwan-soon, opposed them. We can see that she was no ordinary person by any standard. Even though her people were unable to be loyal, unable to devote themselves to their country, she represented them through her loyalty and devotion. This is why she possessed the kind of ideological authority and leadership that will never be forgotten by the Korean people. Yu Kwan-soon was unable to realize her goal and failed because the time was not ripe and the environment was unfavorable. But if there is someone who is completely devoted and loyal when the time and environment are right, what do you think would happen? Would he just be caught and killed? What do you think?

Consider God's children who have the kind of loyalty that they are prepared to die even when the environment is not right. If those children stand up when the time and environment are right, what will happen to them? The more active they are, the more they will be honored. Do not falter on your path. You have to have the mindset that you were born for this purpose, and this is the only work you are supposed to do. If you maintain your devotion and sincerity for a year, two years, three years, and more, you will be elevated more and more in proportion to the time period you spent. (156-12, 1965.11.2)

You would probably agree that people like Yi Soon-shin and Yu Kwan-soon are patriots. They are called Korean patriots and you might feel that you want to be even more loyal than they were. However, until now, you have been unable to achieve that status. From now on you

must walk the path of loyalty. Be the vanguard of liberation in order to seek God's kingdom. Along this path, even if you are accused of being part of a sect or are hunted down or put in prison, you must continue the fight. You need to identify the adversaries you will have to contend with in this fight and then march forth. For Unification Church members, this is the way to go.

Do not boast that you were devoted to your father. Filial piety is just the foundation on which you will be able to fulfill your duty of loyalty. Become people who can be more loyal than your father, people who can receive the blessing of love from your parents. In this quest, the question is: how can we surpass this standard and realize the kingdom desired by God, our Father, who seeks to bless us with His eternal love? We now know our life's work. Let us fulfill our responsibility and mission as citizens of God's kingdom. (29-110, 1970.2.25)

We are overwhelmed by the grace of having been told by Heaven that God predestined us to be His children, and yet we need to ask ourselves, "How much have I attended my Father? To what extent have I become a filial child?" We are to relate to God individually as filial children and manifest the spirit of a loyal subject toward the nation and its people. The Eastern teachings of the three basic relationships and the five cardinal virtues are true and instructive. They are akin to loyalty and filial piety toward God. Someone who is disloyal to his parents cannot become God's filial child. By the same token, people who do not have the integrity of being a loyal subject to their country can never, by any means, become Heaven's loyal subjects. It is the same for heaven and this world. It is the same for the world of the heart, only the content differs. (7-66, 1959.7.12)

In the same way that patriotism is linked to heavenly ideals, the original mind extols the way of loyalty and filial piety. The Japanese and Koreans held divergent views: where Korea's admiral Yi Soon-shin was the enemy of Japan, Ito Hirobumi was Korea's enemy. That is how it was. At those points, both Korea and Japan were trying to stand in the center. Each and every country has its own heroes, but not all of them have saints. Heroes love their country, but not the world. Had Ito Hirobumi loved Asia and the world more, he would not have perpetrated the atrocities that he did. (229-247, 1992.4.12)

Let us compare two people. One is a devoted son who lives his life according to how his parents think. The other is unable to fulfill his filial duty to his parents immediately, because he is doing his best for the restoration of their nation in accordance with the wishes of his people. He is waiting impatiently for that one moment when he can do his best for the sake of the world, while deferring his filial family duties to the future. It is the latter person who is more needed by the world. Viewed from this perspective, we can say that religion has come to represent striving for the future, being loyal

to the nation of the future, and firmly establishing the foundation of filial piety for the future. (27-307, 1969.12.28)

Patriotism should not be focused only on your country. The philosophy of the Unification Church is to become filial children who have the heart of love to liberate their parents. Before you love your country, you have to love your parents first. You have to become filial children. Only in this way, can you love your country and it is on the road of loving your country that you can love the world. It is only by loving the world that you can love Heaven. That is how it is. You have to become a filial child to your parents first. (139-275, 1986.1.31)

What kind of time will that moment in the future be, the time all religions strive for, in which we can practice filial piety and loyalty? It is the time when all humankind can sing songs of happiness together, rejoicing for the first time over the beginning of hope; and take pride in the joy of God who has been guiding history. Surely religion arose solely for the purpose of ushering in that moment; pledging victory in order to manifest each of us as the center of all heaven and earth. (27-307, 1969.12.28)

CHAPTER SIX

Our Level of Loyalty, Filial Piety and True Love Determine Our Path to Heaven or Hell

No matter how much evil we encounter in our social environment, we still have loving parents; how happy we are to be able to go to them and shed tears in their warm embrace! No amount of money could ever buy that feeling of embrace or comfort you receive from your father and mother while leaning your heavily burdened body, letting tears flow over their bosom and feeling their hands quietly caress you. It is in those times that you can have a heart of thankfulness, and feel joy that surpasses even that of an earthly commander who has just won a victory over the enemy forces.

That is why I am asking you to become filial sons and daughters. When you hurt yourself, your mother and father are always ready to listen to you, night or day. They are always ready to pat you on the shoulder and embrace you. They will give you a bandage of love or some medicine of love even if they haven't managed to prepare a bandage or some medicine. This is truly amazing. Such a place is filled with the fragrance of peace. You must know that there is no power that is greater than this.

Nothing can quench the hope that burns in the hearts of parents who live all their lives, bound by the cords of love, for the sake of their children, offering their sweat and blood with backs bent by age and faces ravaged by time. Within them resides a force enabling them to clear the obstacles they encounter with a strutting gait however insurmountable they maybe.

The path of a patriot is the same. The ancestors of our nation walked the path of patriotism imbued with a heart of deep love for their parents. Our cherished pride as their descendants who can inherit this love is to love as they did.

Accordingly, we should love our country as its citizens. We should not eat the bread of idleness to the detriment of our nation. You may do this until you grow up; that holds true while you are still immature and undergoing education, but not when you come of age. Are babies not also weaned off their mother's milk after some months? When they become toddlers, it is not a sin for them to swipe the food that their mother and father have put away and stuff it into their mouths. When they do that their parents are not going to yell at them, saying, "Hey, you little scoundrel! You're a thief. I'm going to teach you a lesson!" More likely, they will tap

their child on the bottom and say, "You smart guy! How did you know it was there? You are sharper than I!" Such is the heart of a parent. (175-207, 1988.4.17)

Through the Fall of Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden, their sons Cain and Abel harvested the seeds of the original sin. As such, the parents who had sown the seeds of sin had to be restored. The foundation of children who can fulfill their duty of loyalty and filial piety also has to be restored connected to the foundation of the restored historic parents of heaven and earth. It was only after this standard had been established that the Day of All Things could appear for the first time. (16-259, 1966.6.19)

Is it not love that moves us to help our parents at home? If they loved you, you want to love them back. That is a heavenly principle. Everything arising from the heart is linked to the parent-child relationship. It is all derived from the seeds that were planted in your hometown.

Yet due to the Fall, everything went awry, and consequently needs to be resolved on earth. Return to your hometowns and post up the signboard declaring yourselves as being more loving filial sons and daughters than all the other filial sons and daughters out there on Satan's side. On that declaration, it will not be the archangel, but good spirits, who will descend upon the earth. Then the spirits operating on the horizontal level with a loving heart will come to your house here in Seoul and cooperate with you. You can then extend your horizontal foundation in this way. This is restoration. (175-44, 1988.4.6)

What is the one unfinished work that we must leave behind, the legacy we can bequeath, and the last will and testament we can leave behind – even when we are accused and hunted down by a bunch of smug narcissists occupying the highest positions in society, and we are tearfully struggling to steady ourselves with our blood-spattered bodies close to the point of death? It is our hearts burning brightly for the sake of Heaven and our minds as filial children, loyal subjects and virtuous women. A group of people embodying such qualities will never perish. (150-153, 1961.1.9)

Clearly knowing, distinguishing and walking the path of righteousness are the way of loyalty and filial piety. As such, don't fritter away your days in vain. It is the same as getting into debt. Pull in the people who are close to you and bring them here. If you are not strong enough, you may have to resort to threatening them into order to pull them over to us; that is not a sin. We would go to such lengths in order to educate them and take them to a good place. As such conditions exist, we can do anything. So from now on you should not leave people to do as they please. (243-51, 1993.1.1)

Your loyalty will be immortalized by your descendants, and when you go to

the spirit world, you will be commended for your merits of your efforts. The age of indemnity has now passed, and from now, you will be able to establish a bright tradition commensurate with the level and extent of your activities. This will become your estate. Let us devote ourselves to our task with utmost sincerity, knowing that we are placed in such a point in time. (38-126, 1971.1.3)

You will enter God's original kingdom if you absolutely go the way of loyalty and filial piety, but you will double-back one hundred eighty degrees and then drop straight into hell if you oppose it.

Everyone must realize that free sex is Satan's domain of love filled with ensnaring evil spirits to bring about the downfall of humankind and expand hell on earth. From the viewpoint of the God of absolute love, the grandmother and grandfather are one; they cannot be separated. They must absolutely become one centering on God, and centering on love. What is love? It is fitting convex and concave together absolutely; mother and father, husband and wife, son and daughter – all must unite in this way absolutely. This is what God wants. (280-135, 1996.11.24)

Parents behold their devoted children with tears in their eyes and wish them eternal blessings. Such a background exists in the realm of the heart. It is fearful. In this world, there are many types of people who compare themselves with others; they may pray with those others, but in the end become isolated and finally leave. But when the true filial children become the center, then tears will flow in their home between them and their parents. They will become the devoted children of parents who wish that the blessing of the future nation will be with their family. (247-32, 1993.4.21)

In going the way of filial piety for the sake of God, even if you have to die away from home, you should protect whatever environment you are in such a way that will earn you the appreciation of its inhabitants. Only by bequeathing such a legacy can you go to heaven. If you do not, you will not. (280-41, 1996.10.13)

We believe in God who wants to realize one world, a world of one purpose. Since God is Jehovah and Lord of all nations, and the center of all centers, when we face Him from afar, we want to be His loyal subjects. We were born for this duty and responsibility. Understand that as we draw near to Him, He becomes our Father to whom we owe the duty of filial piety as His sons and daughters. That is our priority. Only when you have lived like that can you say to God, "If you want to send me to hell, send me there. If you want to send me to Heaven, send me there. Do as you please." Nobody went to hell after living like that. (154-314, 1964.10.5)

As national representatives responsible for the world, you are to achieve unity with America, which has its

responsibilities as the nation representing the world. You have to become perfect Cains before me as people who represent the nation and the world. You cannot have your own individual concepts about that. Realize that at this exceptional time, you need to stand resolved to represent world history, to become the representative Cains of all Cains, and to cause the archangels to be ashamed because you have surpassed their conditions of atonement as you become like Heaven's loyal archangels. (88-143, 1976.8.10)

CHAPTER SEVEN

God and True Parents

Section 1. True Parents Are the Model of Loyalty and Filial Piety

We might call Jesus Christ the King of kings, the Lord of lords, or the main representative of the Absolute Being. However, there is no one who can stand before him and be blessed with the title of loyal subject or patriot. Please understand this. No loyal subject, filial son, or virtuous woman of heaven has yet emerged.

If there is a person who has absolute faith, God would want to bless him and set him up in the highest position from which he could rule heaven and earth. For that to be so, he should be called the most loyal subject and most filial child, and since the believers are called his brides, they have to gain the title of the most virtuous women. God has conducted His providence of restoration for six thousand years, but He has been unable to bless anybody saying, "You are my most loyal subject without equal in all of history" or, "You are truly the filial son that I have been wanting since Genesis." Nor has He been able to bless anyone as His virtuous daughter.

None of the world's nations have become the country possessing the sovereignty that God could designate as His own; none of its families have become the family having True Parents whom God could love and protect eternally; nor has anyone on earth been able to become the true bride or groom whom God could trust eternally.

Thus, from Genesis to the present day, the Creator God has not been able to designate, among the people living on the earth, anyone as His beloved son or daughter, or as His filial child who can represent Heaven and Earth. He has been unable to designate anyone as His loyal subject or as a virtuous woman before Him.

We, who have fallen, long for the nation where we can become the loyal subjects approved by Heaven, and for the world where we can become filial children in the presence of True Parents. This is the original world in which God can embrace us in His bosom as true brides and grooms. This is the greatest goal desired by humankind. (9-102, 1960.4.24)

Since this world is longing for Parents, we are preparing for the day when those Parents will come. The one master, the one parent and the one world are the fruits and goals for which God has endured and toiled for over six thousand

years up to the present day. Here, an heir of the heart, who can stand representing his parents, has to appear.

An heir of the heart is not an heir who just talks, or someone who merely appears to be an heir, or one who is having a good time; but rather the one who takes ownership of his parents' sadness and suffering, agonizes and grieves in place of his father, and struggles to establish the way to manifest the duty of loyalty and filial piety before Heaven. Only such people can stand before Heaven. (9-30, 1960.4.3)

The course of history until today has been one of intermittent warfare between good and evil. Faced with such a history, each individual must separate evil from good. It is the individual who holds the key to determine success or failure.

Bear in mind that you are public figures who are to transcend the individual level. In the past, our ancestors worked hard to fulfill their public mission through loyalty and filial piety. So the person who is to inherit the historically great accomplishments of his ancestors must, when it comes to his public mission, be even more loyal than they were. Therefore, if we are going to take on a public mission, we need to have a universal heart and resolve to be examples of loyalty, filial piety, and virtue which transcend history. (11-270, 1961.12.17)

What is a loyal subject? Is it someone who is devoted to his king? No. Know that a loyal subject is someone who knows how to live for the people in the same way that he lives for the king. Then who is a filial son? It is not someone who is devoted to his parents. Know that a filial son is someone who lives for his siblings in the same way that he lives for his parents. Who are true divine children, God's sons and daughters? Divine sons and daughters are those people who seek to live for the sake of everything that is of God, in the same way that they live for His sake.

That's why I say that I will go the way of the divine son. I love God, but I also love all humankind, even my enemy America. Only when I do this will God, who has been watching, be able to say to me, "My son!" I am not a son of any particular country. I was born in Korea, but I am not Korean. I am not a son of Korea. A person to whom God can say, "My son!" is a person who lives for all of humankind in the same way that he lives for God.

Such a person is God's son. Since God is a being who forgets Himself and cares for people, someone who does likewise is His filial child. You have to know this definition clearly. We are people who start out on the path of filial children, progressing by way of the path of loyal subjects or patriots, to reach the path of divine sons and daughters. We are not aspiring to achieve sainthood. Based on such contents, by fulfilling the duty of divine sons and daughters through the duties of filial children and loyal subjects, then what nation would we end up with? The Kingdom of Heaven on Earth. A country which lives in this way will go to heaven just as it is. What I mean to

say is that putting this into practice was God's ideal of creation. (133-241, 1984.7.19)

Section 2. Loyalty to True Parents Is Loyalty to God

Humankind is faced with the plight of being children of filial impiety. People are the chief culprits who brought about unhappiness. Having been unspeakably impious toward God, such children must occupy the position that will enable them to become filial sons and daughters, and recover their dignity before Heaven.

Unification Church members are proud of themselves, saying that they have pledged to become filial sons and daughters of Heaven. However, we need to dispassionately undertake a critical reappraisal of ourselves. We have to ask ourselves how much our hands have become the hands of a filial child that Heaven longs for, and how much our faces have become the faces of filial children that Heaven can long for.

If we ask ourselves whether or not we have personally become the catalyst of filial piety, overcoming whatever adversities we may face, day or night, and whether or not we have succeeded in resembling our Father who has toiled relentlessly in order to allow us to pioneer the way of filial piety, we do not have that confidence. (60-19, 1972.8.1)

Those who want to become filial children must become people who come forth to take responsibility for all their parents' suffering, or choose the most difficult path to go in place of their parents.

If there are parents who want to make a filial child out of their errant son, what would they make him do? They will probably give him the most challenging tasks. Out of all his brothers, they will choose the most difficult things for him to do, ordering him, "Hey you. Come and do this!"

The one who comes with the name of the filial son without equal is the Messiah. The one who comes with the name of the filial daughter without equal is his Bride.

Since Jesus is a man, are we to call all women his brides? Are there many brides? There is but one. Everyone can compete to become the Bride. (62-41, 1972.9.10)

If filial sons have already existed in the history of your hometown, you have to supersede them all as the great king of filial sons. If there have been loyal subjects, then you should surpass them as the great king of loyal subjects. Yet, however much one may become a filial child or loyal subject, without having a horizontal relationship with True Parents, it would serve no purpose. It is only when the True Parent becomes the horizontal Father on the horizontal level that the vertical Father appears. When the absolute minus appears, then the absolute plus comes looking for it. (177-347, 1988.5.22)

The True Parents are the ones who have fulfilled the traditional duties of

children of filial piety in the family, patriots or loyal subjects in the nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth.

Without such a concept, you cannot stand before God as the filial child that He desires in the family or as the patriot that He desires in the nation that is formed centering on God, or as the saint that He desires in the world; and you cannot attend the divine son, who can become the filial son of heaven and earth.

That is why each of us, in order to restore the satanic world through indemnity, has to fulfill these four main conditions and dedicate them before Heaven. Divine sons and daughters must observe both heavenly and earthly royal etiquette and palace protocol, as well as laws governing both the heavenly and the earthly nation. God's Kingdom, too, has its own palace and nation.

You have to perfect and know how to abide by the royal etiquette and palace protocol and all the laws on earth, and those in heaven. Only thus, do you fulfill your duty as divine sons and daughters. Once you have returned to your homeland, you are to accomplish Family Pledge point number two by becoming filial children, loyal subjects, and virtuous women. Family Pledge point number two needs to be realized. I am telling you that because God has been unable to own all this until now; it had all belonged to Satan. (266-145, 1994.12.22)

I am eagerly awaiting the appearance of people who pledge to fulfill their duty of loyalty and filial piety to God across the length and breadth of the Korean peninsula, on behalf of the thirty million Korean people.

I had already pledged this before you were even conceived, and I had already trodden this path when you were not thinking of doing it even in your wildest dreams. If you say you are a person of many tears, then I will say that I have shed more tears than any of the thirty million people of this race. Just having someone come to me and saying one word can cause me to burst into uncontrollable tears.

I am a very pitiful person from the worldly point of view. How pitiful am I? However wide heaven and earth may be, I have no place where I can lay my mind to rest. I can understand Jesus' heart when he said, "Foxes have holes and birds of the air have nests, but the Son of Man has no place to lay his head." (13-35, 1963.10.16)

Have you shown filial piety to me as you would to your Heavenly Parents? I am telling you that countless filial children in the satanic world, who have come and gone, have had monuments built to their memory in their countries.

When have you fulfilled your duty as patriots? You cannot become a filial child or patriot before you have offered your life all the way up to your dying day. I wanted that kind of person, which is why I educated you; nevertheless, you have fallen short of the standard.

When have you loved your country in the true sense of the word? When have

you loved your brothers and sisters in the true sense of the word? When have you loved me in the true sense of the word? When have you loved my family in the true sense of the word? According to the principle of restoration through indemnity, do you not have to be better than any other filial child or patriot? Isn't that what the Principle teaches you? Have you attained that standard? You must know this. (68-268, 1973.8.5)

Why are you unable to be loyal to the point of getting gnarled hands in carrying out my orders? Why are you not able to make such a historical condition that will cause those who see you and hear your testimony to get all choked up, and burst into tears, even though what I am asking you to do is quite simple and easy?

I am asking you why you have not practiced filial piety before your parents on behalf of your family, and not practiced loyalty to your nation, and why you have not fulfilled all your responsibilities to Heaven, in spite of having been given the absolute chance to go forth with the authority of historical victory, and unconditionally inherit all the great accomplishments of Heaven. Only when you have accomplished that, will there be no one to block you when you go from the earth through your nation to Heaven.

Satan has blocked the level of the family. However perfect a person may have become on the individual level, it is of no use if he is unfilial to his parents. This is how it is: no matter how filial a person may have been in his family, his piety is of no use if he is disloyal to his country; and no matter how loyal a person is to his country, if he is disloyal to humankind, then he will be unable to go to Heaven. (158-143, 1967.12.26)

Even if you have been impious and failed to love Mother Nature, your birth parents, or the spirit world and God, by virtue of attending me as your True Parent, you will receive the qualification of a filial child. That is why you have to follow me dauntlessly. (105-112, 1979.9.30)

Do they not say that young people in this world cannot forget their first love? As none of you have been married, you may not know it, but I am telling you that first love is unforgettable.

The relationship between God and humankind is that of parent and child, and God can never disown those sons and daughters who are remembered as having practiced filial piety. This is because they stood in a better position than Adam and Eve. Did Adam and Eve become filial children? They did not. What is the path of becoming a filial child? In order to tread that path, it is necessary to live according to the will of the Father. A person who is not doing so cannot become a filial child. (57-153, 1972.5.31)

In order to fulfill your duty of filial piety to your Parent who has been toiling strenuously for you, you must first console Him with your tears and then take the cross off His back and go forth,

bearing it with dignity.

With the heart of proclaiming the fact that the path of the cross God trod for His children has been miserable, you must stand in the position in which you are able to say, "Father, please don't suffer anymore. Father, please don't worry about me anymore!" Don't you think this is the face of the filial child who can stand before God, our Parent, who has been agonizing sorrowfully until now? When I think of it this way, I realize the fact that we, today, have been too brazen and arrogant before God. (31-35, 1970.4.12)

Move with the awareness that when it comes to attending the True Parents on behalf of heaven and earth, you will become people of even greater loyalty and filial piety than any of your ancestors in history or anyone from any other time in history. Then Heaven and all the people around you will be influenced and unite with you. (275-187, 1995.12.8)

Be loyal to your society, your church, and your family. What kind of place is the church? It is the place that helps you to form and nurture your character. Due to the Fall, the church is needed. It does not stop at the family and society.

The restoration of character does not happen by itself. Graduating with a doctorate from some university does not mean that your character has been restored. That is why we need the church.

Then where should you practice loyalty? Do so in your church before your family.

Do so in your church before your society. The church is the subject; the family and society are the objects. Where does the wise person stand? He does not stand in the position of the object partner, but in that of the subject partner. The position of the subject partner is but one.

The object has to revolve three hundred sixty degrees through the four cardinal points of north, south, east and west; but the subject has no other place but the center. There is only one absolute point in the center, not two. Can there be two points in the center? If the center moves about, there is great potential for failure. (25-126, 1969.9.30)

To become the president, one must prepare a foundation accordingly. Even someone who is born as crown prince must first learn all the relevant laws, rules and regulations in order to become king. So now you must not just talk but also participate in the final course of human history. Then God will stamp you with His seal of approval, "You have been a filial child," and send you to heaven as a filial child of the heavenly nation. How amazing is this love? What did I say was the foundation for this? It is Home Church. The Kingdom of Heaven is the place where filial children will enter.

A villainous son, however much a son he may be, will not enter. To go in with the name of a filial child, doing Home Church is to receive that stamp of approval. (122-124, 1982.11.1)

People who just live comfortably within their families are fools. They can

only stay within the confines of the family Kingdom of Heaven. That is why I am telling you to become representative and central families. That is why I am telling you that the way of filial children, patriots, saints and divine sons and daughters is the path you must take. Naturally, it is the path you must inevitably follow.

This is why you are to become filial children in the family. Next, you are to become patriots in the nation. From the time of their birth, loyal subjects or patriots do not stray from their duty. They must proceed, remaining focused night or day. Throughout my life, whether asleep or awake, I never lost my focus on God's will. Rising from my bed, I keep going. For a thousand years and even ten thousand years, I keep going. It is because I have gained this kind of victory that I am able to tell you that, even if you had been unable to fulfill your responsibilities as tribal messiahs, you can still wipe out all your past mistakes by fulfilling your responsibilities as national messiahs. This is where you should become filial children and patriots. Pray for your brothers and sisters with the heart of loving the nations of the world. Only in this way can you appear before God's royal presence with the status of divine sons and daughters following their Parents. (283-77, 1997.4.8)

I shouldered the nation. On that path, you are meritorious subjects. For that reason, you have to understand that we are treading the path in order to pave the way of the filial child, the virtuous woman, and the loyal subject. This is the mission of the tribal messiah. The position of the filial son is in relation to his family, the virtuous woman's position is in relation to her couple, and the loyal subject or patriot's position is that of the parents representing the country. By becoming loyal subjects, patriots, you will represent the position of parents by being connected with the nation. (220-153, 1991.10.16)

God shed many tears for me. You did not know that, did you? Among all of you, where are the filial sons and daughters who make me shed many tears? That is what I desire. I have not been able to find such people until now. This is a serious matter. (256-26, 1994.3.12)

BOOK FIFTEEN

THE LIFE OF AN OWNER OF CHEON IL GUK

Contents

Chapter 1. God's True Love Is the Motivating Force for the Creation

Section 1. True Love is at the Center of God's Desire 2233
Section 2. True Love for the Sake of Attaining Oneness with God and True Parents 2236
Section 3. The Absolute Object of God's Love Are Our First Ancestors, Adam and Eve 2239
Section 4. True Family Is the Primary Platform of True Love 2248

Chapter 2. God's Kingdom and the True Family

Section 1. God's Ideal of Creation Is the Realization of the Four-Position Foundation and the True Family 2251
Section 2. True Families Produce the Citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven. 2256
Section 3. Citizens of God's Kingdom are Educated in True Families. 2260
Section 4. Heaven is Based On True Families. 2263

Chapter 3. God and True Parents

Section 1. True Parents: The Cherished Hope of God and Humanity 2270
Section 2. God the Vertical Parent, True Parents the Horizontal Parent 2280
Section 3. True Parents Who Liberate God 2284
Section 4. True Parents Are the Way to Heaven 2288

Chapter 4. The Way of Becoming Citizens of Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. God's Hope for Humankind 2298
Section 2. Cheon Il Guk, Our Original Homeland 2301
Section 3. Qualifications for Becoming Citizens of Cheon Il Guk 2307
Section 4. Witness in Order to Win the Heavenly Right of Ownership 2317
Section 5. Life of Owners of Cheon Il Guk 2323
5.1. One heart, one body, one mindset, one harmony 2323
5.2. Eight stages of purity 2325
Section 6. Inheriting the Realm of Victory of the Cosmic True Parent and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth 2331
6.1. Name 2331
6.2. The word 2334
6.3. Actual accomplishments 2336

Section 7. The Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony and the Coronation of the King of the Blessed Families 2338
7.1. Prayer for the Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony of the Parents of Heaven and Earth Opening the Gate of Cheon Il Guk 2338
7.2. Benediction for the Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony of the Parents of Heaven and Earth Opening the Gate of Cheon Il Guk 2339
7.3. Prayer for the Coronation of the King of the Blessed Families of the Peace and Unity of the Cosmic Parent and the Parents of Heaven and Earth 2341
7.4. Benediction for the Coronation of the King of the Blessed Families of the Peace and Unity of the Cosmic True Parent and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth 2341

CHAPTER ONE

God's True Love Is the Motivating Force for the Creation

Section 1. True Love is at the Center of God's Desire

God is the great King of truth, goodness, trueness, and love. (301-38, 1999.4.16)

Did He exist from the very beginning, or did He come into being? Even God has grown. We must know this. How can we know it? We can know it from the principle that causes everything that resembles God's original nature to start as a small cell and grow. So what has made God grow? He has grown because of love, an absolute love wherein God is the subject partner of love and human beings are His object partners. (243-278, 1993.1.28)

God created heaven and earth, not just to see human beings, but for the sake of love. God cannot possess love by Himself, nor can He feel it on His own. Certainly, He contains love, but He cannot experience the kind of love that overflows with the joy of being in perfect harmony all by Himself. No matter how beautiful a flower may be, it must give off a fragrance; no matter how sweet its fragrance is, the wind must blow for that fragrance to be spread about. So, as the flower needs the wind, God, too, needs an object partner who will stimulate Him. (210-223, 1990.12.23)

True love is God's fundamental motivating force by which He creates; this is why He likes true love more than anything. He can eat, just as we do. He has eyes and a nose, as well. He has all those things. That is the kind of Being He is. However, what He likes is not the lumps of gold that human beings covet. He can make those things anytime He wants. The same is true with knowledge. God is omniscient and almighty. He is the great King of knowledge and ability. (212-295, 1991.1.8)

The depth of true love incorporates everything, going all the way back to the beginning – when God was born. You have no idea how deep it is! It started at the very origin of His existence. Even after a lifetime, we can never get there, and even after going to the next world, we will continue developing toward that goal for eternity. So it is inconceivable that husbands and wives would fight and separate from each other.

Even God has grown and developed. To the very depth of His beginning, He has had the same origin as true love. At the point of origin, God was not

first; love was first. We say God has dual characteristics. Why dual characteristics? Dual characteristics are cherished because of love. (246-286, 1993.4.20)

True love can be a bridge that God can use as He wishes for His travels. When the physical parts of the body are all united in love everything will be okay, and when the inner aspects are united everything will be okay. The result will be the same everywhere, whether in the north, south, east or west, whether in the heavenly world or in the earthly world, or anywhere else. Through love, the members of the body can freely interact and harmonize with one another. Only love has this power. The same is true with organizations. When we absolutely establish a political party on God's behalf and say we will unite, we are saying that we will do so centering on Him. (139-200, 1986.1.31)

Even God absolutely obeys true love. He would even offer up His life for the sake of true love. Why are both men and women willing to sacrifice their lives for true love? The reason is that love precedes life. Why did God begin to exist? He began to exist because of love, and He exists in order to love. Had there been no concept of love, there would not have been a need for God to come into being.

Thus, everything created by God is based on the pair system. For example, in the mineral world cations and anions manifest love – though on a lower level – as they intermingle. This is being announced for the first time in history as a result of my coming into this world. I am the first in history to announce that God regards true love as being absolute, and lives in absolute obedience to true love. This is not something conceptual. It is fact. Thus God created the universe in order to launch true love. (203-103, 1990.6.17)

True love cannot exist without God's involvement. Without God, not even the words man, woman, family, truth and love can be called true. All of these are possible only due to God's involvement. He is the great King of truth, goodness, and love. For this reason, nothing good exists anywhere if God is not involved. The same applies to our work: Anything done without God is fraudulent and cannot be trusted. This applies to everything. So, the eternal standard, the standard of trueness, is established only on the basis of God's involvement. (301-38, 1999.4.16)

How, then, can we distinguish between true love and false love? Egoistic love connects us to the devil, and altruistic love connects us to God and the laws of the universe. That is where the dividing line lies. God's love gives, gives, and gives again, and then forgets that it has given. This is true love. A ninety-year-old grandmother tells her seventy-year-old son, "Hey, watch out for the cars when you go out today," and relates to him as if he were still the young boy of many years ago. She has been telling him the same thing every day well into

her nineties, but she never tires of saying it. True love is a love that loves endlessly and untiringly. (142-333, 1986.3.14)

True love begins with the willingness to invest even our own lives over and over, giving and giving again, but forgetting that we have given. As it ascends, it can penetrate and enter anything it pleases, a strong mind, heaven and earth, the world of life, and even the world of death. There is nowhere that true love cannot go. It even enters secret rooms. (256-179, 1994.3.13)

True love travels at the highest speed and is a force in harmony with God's creativity. Those possessing it can even call out to God from the ends of the earth, "Please come!" and He will. Even an ugly granddaughter has but to wiggle a finger and her grandfather will go to her. That is how great love is. That is true love. (301-125, 1999.4.25)

Love does not just arise out of thin air. Glory does not arise without going through God's love. When we say a person is blessed with glory, we are not referring to a love in solitude, or to a millionaire sitting on a pile of gold. We are referring to a person who fully possesses the bonds of love and is in an unchanging position of happiness. Glory cannot exist without God's love, either. However, when we receive God's love after fulfilling our individual responsibility and passing through the standard of the perfection stage, glory will come to us automatically. (158-296, 1968.2.4)

True love can be higher than God. That means that even God wants His love partner to be tens of millions of times more wonderful than Himself. In this way, an object of true love is higher than God. It is the same for you as well. True love means you want your partner to be higher than yourself. (274-22, 1995.10.25)

True love is God's love. When you go to the spirit world, you will be able to sense the colors and flavors of true love there. The spirit world is that kind of world. Once we embody true love, it will be possible to relate to any situation. We will be able to sense every situation. If God, the owner of true love, had fine hair on His body, even that fine hair would belong to true love, and all of heaven and earth would immediately sense its slightest movement. Things will be that sensitive. Our emotions will resonate with the emotions of the entire universe. (304-15, 1999.9.5)

Godism teaches how loving human beings can walk a path that confers on them the privilege to ascend to a position even higher than the Creator. Godism is the ideology of true love. It cannot be achieved without first finding the way to sacrifice and invest our fallen lives. This is the reason the Bible taught the paradoxical logic that those who seek to die will live and those who seek to live will die. (268-162, 1995.3.31)

How should a person prepare before seeking the path of love? A person should form a union of love with God,

the Parent. Only then can there be true love. This is the center where the will of God can reside, where an individual can unite with that will. (103-132, 1979.2.18)

Section 2. True Love for the Sake of Attaining Oneness with God and True Parents

Originally, the mind and body were to be indivisible: The human mind was to be God's mind and the human body was to be a receptacle for it. The Fall, however, turned the human body over to the devil, allowing it to become his servant.

The conscience is God's agent within the human mind. It is not self-centered but exists for the sake of God's righteousness. It constantly seeks the direction of goodness. The body rebels against this. It only seeks comfort. It is selfish and instinctively follows carnal desires. The conscience chastises the body, and tries to make it conform to the mind. Here is where bitter conflict and struggle always takes place within oneself. No one, though, can conquer the body without welcoming God in. Only through the power of God's true love and truth can the mind as subject partner take command of the body as its object partner and realize the ideal of oneness with God. This is the perfect human being that religions speak of. (219-118, 1991.8.28)

From the beginning, God was the Parent, and our first ancestors were His children. In order to manifest true love, we must achieve unity with God; that is the principle. What, then, is the principle for achieving unity? Obedience is the only way. On the day that God becomes one with human beings, all that belongs to God will belong to us. God will dwell in us and we will embody Him. Only true love can make us one with God. (91-220, 1977.2.20)

When people embody true love, they become the cells of God's body. They become the limbs of the holy God and can live forever as one body with Him, breathing and eating love. Such a world is called the Kingdom of Heaven. The Bible does not mention attaining oneness through true love. "I am the way, the truth, and the life…." Love is missing here. (177-149, 1988.5.17)

A true person is someone living with true love. True love will live eternally for the sake of the center. This is God's core essence. True love is God's love. A person who loves God for eternity will become an owner of true love. (123-328, 1983.1.9)

True love relates only to God. It does not relate to oneself, one's country, secular habits, customs and traditions, and so on. It is a love that forms a relationship only with God. Due to the Fall, our love could not become a love that related only to God. A relationship was formed with Satan not only in the family; it expanded also to the tribe, society, nation, world, and cosmos. All of the customs and traditions that exist in the

environment into which we were born as fallen human beings have no relation to God. You have no idea how hard it is to renounce these and resolve this situation. (274-195, 1995.11.3)

True love can control even God. Oneness attained through true love gives rise to proprietary rights. Whatever belongs to your beloved will belong to you. We cannot change our love partners at any time or any place. The ownership of love should be absolute. (281-192, 1997.2.13)

True love has the power to unify God's mind and body absolutely. If human beings resemble God, wouldn't He also have a mind and body? What is central to their unity? It is not knowledge, power or money, but true love alone that unifies God's mind and body. (210-132, 1990.12.17)

People are very greedy, but when they enter the realm of God's true love, all their greed disappears. Within that realm is the right of inheritance, and even God, the Subject of love, becomes theirs. It is not just everything pertaining to God that becomes theirs but also His mind and body. They must unite to attain oneness with God. (213-76, 1991.1.14)

True love means belonging to the realm of oneness with God and being ruled by Him. It is not being ruled by Satan. This is not how it is in your fallen realm. You still have the original form of the realm of God's heart that is vertical. But because you inherited the wrong lineage, the horizontal form is not at a 90-degree angle; It may be at 75 or 15 degrees. The degree of difference gives rise to a guilty conscience and the pressure of an inescapable and bitter agony. (183-42, 1988.10.29)

True love is more precious than diamonds. Powerful waves are emitted from its antenna, and people meet, touch and kiss in line with that direction. It is the True Parents' antenna. It is something precious that never changes and never wears out. All the good people in the spirit world try to follow the bright paths of their new selves through the True Parents. (217-264, 1991.6.2)

The most sorrowful thing in this world is to have lost true parents. We need to understand how sad that is. Only then can we know how joyful it is to meet the True Parents. That is why I guide you in every detail. God's true love emerges through the True Parents, so even the angelic world is to be ruled by them, as is the entire creation. Bear in mind that the world is within this realm of love.

The True Parents must come into the difficult position of being despised and opposed by the people of this world, as well as in a position that is more precious than anything in creation. Even if the angelic world opposes them, they must overcome it and move forward. Even if God opposes them, they must overcome that and move forward. Only then will a new ideal emerge. (107-92, 1980.4.6)

True love does not begin with a woman, but comes through God and a man. A man seeks a wife so that he can plant the seed of life within her. In this sense, women are receptacles, unfilled vessels that take on a value equal to that which is placed in them. (259-244, 1994.4.10)

For human beings, false love came to exist alongside true love, but what are false love and true love? False love connects us to Satan, and true love connects us to God. So, do both men and women want true love? Originally, human beings were not meant to want for true love. Because they fell, the need to seek out true love arose. This is the problem. (189-75, 1989.3.19)

Men and women become kings and queens because of true love. If true love did not exist, then kingship would not appear. You find true love at the highest point, where two people meet and connect to God. Marriage is to achieve the pinnacle of masculinity and femininity so as to occupy God. We marry to occupy both masculine and feminine worlds. Men and women by themselves are only halves, so they marry to become complete. True love means to become one with God. (260-154, 1994.5.2)

Where do God and human beings become one? In holy matrimony. They become one centering on God, who is the center of original true love. It means that God enters the heart of Adam and the heart of Eve. The marriage of Adam and Eve is the marriage of God's body. It is His marriage. The external position is the body, and the internal position is the mind. That is why God is directly our Father. His love, life and lineage are ours. (217-196, 1991.5.27)

Are not all husbands and wives brought together from different origins? Our mothers and fathers became parents by giving birth to us, thereby creating that parent-child relationship. Yet one of the horizontal elements in that relationship came from somewhere else. Thus, though husband and wife may separate, the parent-child relationship can never be broken. There is only one vertical relationship. We should understand that the perpendicular position is the only way to inherit the lineage that connects human history centering on the original true love between heaven and earth. Why is the perpendicular position necessary? Once we move into it, our shadow disappears. Don't shadows disappear at noon? At present, God and humanity are not in the perpendicular relationship centering on ideal love.

So what is the way in this universe that will connect human beings and God through the shortest vertical distance by way of true love? It is the parent-child relationship. There is no distance shorter than that along the perpendicular. If it is off by even a little, it is not the perpendicular. The shortest distance is the perpendicular. Based on it, the mother and father are connected by the shortest distance, east and west. Next, siblings are connected by the shortest distance, front and rear. These form 90-degree

angles. In terms of faces, there are twenty-four. As the omniscient and omnipotent God has such ideal conceptual ability, He resides at the center of a sphere at the center of the universe formed around a series of 90-degree angles at the intersection of the vertical and horizontal, the intersection of front-rear, left and right. Centering on what does God exist? On true love. If you were to ask Him that, He would say, that is all there is. (198-298, 1990.2.5)

Through true love, we can become absolute, unique, eternal and unchanging. Those who are harmonized in true love can stand in the position of God's partners. Such people enter a realm where they can at any time relate to the unique, absolute, unchanging and eternal God. (304-286, 1999.11.9)

Unification Church members are closer to each other than to their own brothers and sisters. In the future, the worlds of front and rear must become one. Then husbands and wives must become one, and then unify the worlds of left and right. Above and below, front and rear, left and right must all become one. What does this mean? Above and below refer to our filial duties, front and rear refer to our fraternal duties, and left and right refer to our conjugal duties. When people become perfected in this way, they must then ascend to God's position in the spirit world and return to Him. We need to understand that only true love can do this.

A true family is an expansion of the perfected family of Adam that has been trained to this formula standard. So when this is expanded to the global level, it is the same as unifying east with west and man with woman. Conjugal unity must take place with man as the subject partner. Front and rear and above and below must also become one. When this happens, there can be no doubt that the world will be unified with true love, based on these principles. (222-321, 1991.11.6)

The path of God-centered true love leads to the Kingdom of Heaven. The final destination of false love is called hell. Until now, no religion knew this with certainty. They did not know the boundary between heaven and hell. Now it is clear. When we rectify fallen love and make a new start, it is the beginning of heaven.

(278-30, 1996.4.28)

Section 3. The Absolute Object of God's Love Are Our First Ancestors, Adam and Eve

In Eden, God created all things anew, which Adam and Eve were to enjoy in eternal happiness in this world. God established and beheld them with an emotion that was new to Him. Every moment would have been precious for Him. Their every movement would have been profound beyond words. At the same time, His bond with them in each moment would have been indescribably precious.

As Adam and Eve grew, their intel-

lectual and mental faculties developed with each passing day, building their capacity to represent God's original nature. There is no doubt that they were qualified to relate to the world He had newly created – seeing it, listening to it and touching it as the representatives of His heart.

As God beheld Adam and Eve, His hope was that their movements and the words they spoke would be His, and that whenever they heard, saw, or felt something, it would be as if He had heard, seen, or felt it. There is no doubt that they who existed in the realm of such a relationship with Him were the beings He had pictured in His heart and that they represented the entirety of His existence.

Once God had embraced all the things of creation He had made for Adam and Eve and gone on to create them, what kind of day did He then long to see? By the sixth day, He had completed the act of creation. Yet the fact that He did not create Adam and Eve in perfected form meant that something yet remained to be done between them and Him.

God's hope was not for Adam and Eve to remain as He created them, nor was it just to watch them grow, but it was rather for one particular day that He wanted to bring about through them.

The moment that day arrived, God, Adam and Eve, and all things would have been joyful. Thus, there can be no doubt that all things of creation, human beings, and God, all longed to see this day. (8-267, 1960.2.7)

Our first ancestors, Adam and Eve, grew up in the bosom of God's love and were raised under His holiest and greatest heart of love. However, no matter how adorable they appeared as they grew or how free their environment was, there was something they could not do. What was that? It was not that they weren't permitted to enjoy all the things of creation, nor was it that they did not have servants to do their errands. It was that they were not able to form a bond with God as His son and daughter. That was their sorrow.

God loved Adam and Eve, and it was for this reason that, after establishing a world of hope in which he could experience joy in accordance with the ideal of the infinite creation. He would rejoice in observing them freely utilizing everything in the universe. It was not that God valued their outer form or external circumstances; it was that He had endowed them with His heart and soul, and His bone and flesh were latent within them. His heart flowed toward them so that He could not forget them even if He tried. This is why He bestowed on them the entire creation. You need to understand this.

Through the Fall, however, Adam and Eve abandoned God. They did not abandon the creation, nor did they abandon the blessings that God had bequeathed to them. Instead, they abandoned the one principle that they should never have abandoned. What was that? It was the basis upon which they were to create a bond of heart with Him. They abandoned the foundation of heart. This was

the Fall.

Each time God beheld Adam and Eve, a heart of longing burned within Him. As He thought of how they would perfect themselves and live happy lives, a feeling of happiness arose within Him. He hoped that they would take dominion over the creation He had made, enjoy it, and caress it as if they had created it themselves. Such cherished desires in His heart, however, were cut short when they fell. We need to know that it was an unforgivable and most terrible sin that these first ancestors committed.

God, though, cannot abandon fallen people in this state. Why? It is because He created them in accordance with His laws and principles, which have an eternal standard that He cannot ignore.

God had a strong desire to abandon fallen Adam and Eve. To abandon them, though, would mean abandoning the principles of His creation, the process of which He had worked on for the six biblical days. At the same time, He would put Himself in a position where He would be forced to abandon the standard of eternity. Even the existence of God, the Subject of eternity, would be challenged. Knowing these things, He initiated His providence to redeem Adam and Eve. (9-49, 1960.4.10)

Satan entered into a love relationship with Eve. And she went on to cause Adam to fall; that is, she took dominion over him. Consequently, countless women have suffered at the hands of men throughout history until the present day. Women will not like to hear this, but it is a fact.

Why, then, did God create Adam and Eve? The Bible states: "Do you not know that you are God's temple and that God's Spirit dwells in you?" How is it that even fallen people in need of salvation refer to their bodies as God's temples? A temple is a place where God comes and dwells.

Even if a fallen person in need of salvation could become a temple where God can dwell, the unfallen Adam would have been preferable. Would God have entered Adam's heart and dwelt there? There is no reason even to ask, because He would gladly have entered and dwelt there forever.

What, then, were Adam and Eve? If they had been ignorant fools, they would not have been able to exercise dominion over God's creatures; that is to say, without possessing capabilities similar to those of the One who created heaven and earth, they would have been unable to exercise dominion over them. Who, then, gave them the ability to exercise dominion? God did. He would have entered Adam's mind and body and led him in the right way.

From this perspective, Adam, who was to have become God's body, would have become the progenitor of humanity. In other words, he would have been God incarnate. For the invisible God to exercise dominion over the world of substance, He had to have a substantial form, namely a body, through which He would then be able to see and hear; hence, He created Adam to become His embodiment.

Who was Eve, then? She was Adam's

wife, the wife of the substantial form. If Adam was to be God incarnate, then Eve was to be the wife of God incarnate. You may dumbfounded by the idea of the holy God taking a wife, but Adam was the body of God incarnate, and Eve was created as the wife of God incarnate.

What were Adam and Eve meant to do? They were to resemble God's inner nature exactly as it was, become one body with each other, and bear the fruit of love. Then their children would not only have been Adam and Eve's children, they would also have been God's children. With true love, they were to create children who would have been theirs as well as God's.

We need to understand that their inability to establish the bonds of love in the regular course of events has resulted in a history of grief for countless generations. It is this tragic fallen history that we are dealing with today. (22-279, 1969.5.4)

If God is the King, then Adam and Eve are His first prince and princess. We need to understand clearly that our first ancestors, Adam and Eve, were God's first prince and princess, and they stood to inherit everything in the cosmos. Heaven is the place where we go after leading a life in harmony with the realm of heart of the royal family. Until now, no believer or person in history knew this.

Yet, the established churches claim that those who believe in Jesus will immediately be saved. This is such a simplistic view. In the realm of heart, the realm of the firstborn, Adam and Eve were the first generation of eldest son and eldest daughter. They were the first generation of true parents and the first generation of central figures in God's Kingdom on earth. If royal descendants from that king were still alive on earth, what would the world be like today? Everything would have been prepared centering on God's ideal, but through the Fall, Satan divided humanity into hundreds and thousands of ethnic groups, and suppressed the monarchies through all the fighting. This is the result of the Fall. (228-169, 1992.3.27)

God, who exists as the invisible Subject of dual characteristics, manifested His internal masculinity to become substantially visible through Adam as His counterpart and manifested His internal femininity substantially through Eve. In other words, the human body represents the investment and substantial embodiment of everything in God's inner nature. (143-80, 1986.3.16)

Eve broke the original ideal for both Adam and herself. For this reason, it was necessary for Mary, who represented the fallen Eve, to bring forth the restored Eve who could become the wife of Jesus, who came as the second Adam. This restoration could not be carried out by Mary alone. Since the archangel assisted God in creating Eve for Adam, an archangelic figure would also be required to assist in the re-creation of Eve after the pattern of the second Adam. This is how Eve could have been restored.

Then Jesus and the restored Eve were

to have become one. If servants in the position of the angels and the archangel had created a daughter in the position of Eve, centering on Jesus in the position of Adam, then would this daughter not have been God's daughter, unrelated to the Fall? Mary and Joseph were to have blessed this daughter of God with Jesus. This would have been the union of God's daughter and son.

Since Eve caused the problem of the reversal of dominion, women must bear responsibility for it. Hence, Mary had to restore the archangel, Adam, and also restore Eve back to the position she was in before the Fall. She was to do all this. This is why women have to reverse dominion. Mary's task was not just to restore those three figures but also to recover even God's heart.

In so doing, she would have accomplished God's will and the purpose of humankind. This is where we can find the starting point of the realization of the Kingdom of Heaven, which represented God's will and the desire of humankind over four millennia. Thus, this has been the goal of humankind and of God.

When Adam and Eve connect and perfect their love, this forms the perfect starting point. Hence, the reversal of dominion must definitely be accomplished. (38-70, 1971.1.1)

Had Adam and Eve not fallen, they would have made a family in which God could take joy. At the same time, it would have been the foundation for our first ancestors to experience the greatest happiness. They would not have seen or felt any pain, disappointment or lamentation. Instead, they would have experienced only joy and happiness and held hope for the eternal future. They would have experienced God's sovereignty within the realm of His direct dominion. Yet all this was ruined by their fall.

So this needs to be restored, but it cannot be restored in any old fashion. Restoration must occur in a way consistent with the Principle of Creation. Because this is the rule, you can see that the history of restoration has been the history of re-creation. The archangel, Eve, Adam and God were together in the Garden of Eden. In other words, Eden had its own four-position foundation centered on God. As the Fall occurred in such a place, restoration must occur by means of the principle of re-creation. Thus, people have been responsible for the history of restoration until now. (46-196, 1971.8.15)

Because the Jewish people did not accept Jesus, he alone resolved to sacrifice himself for the sake of the nation and the world. He had to leave his family and lead a lonely life. However, he did receive God's love. In the end, he had to sacrifice himself as the brother who had not fallen for the sake of the salvation of fallen Adam and Eve.

All people were in the position of the fallen Adam and Eve. Jesus sacrificed himself for their sake. He became an offering. He did not curse those who sought to kill him. Instead, he prayed for them and beseeched God to bless them. That is how he was able to stand

as the mediator between God and fallen Adam and Eve. Jesus died as the Adam who had not fallen. He went the formula course for the sake of the salvation of all humanity. That is how he became a representative Adam, and whoever followed him could be saved. (52-66, 1971.12.22)

If Adam and Eve had grown to maturity and reached perfection, they would have united in conjugal love. They were to have loved each other not just physically but spiritually as well. In that position, Adam could have established a vertical oneness with God, his Father, and Eve could also have become one with God in her position as His daughter. The position that Adam and Eve longed to reach at that time was that of oneness. There, God and Eve would have become one and longed for Adam.

Horizontally, we have God, Adam and Eve; these three long to be completely united. Where, then, are they going to meet? Will it be up there or down here? No. They would have come together horizontally and become as one. If Adam and Eve had become as one horizontally, what would have become of them? They would have become as one body. Nothing could have pulled them apart.

It is only when this has been achieved that there should come a desire for love. For men and women, this is the only path, the only goal. This is the only place where God and Adam, and God and Eve want to be together, so it is the pinnacle. If God and Adam, and God and Eve, cannot become one, they cannot occupy this pinnacle. In that case, the give and take relationship between Adam and Eve, with God at the center, would start to become more distant.

From this perspective, we see that God is not just creating vertically but horizontally as well. This is the ideal of creation for Adam and Eve, and it is God's ideal. When they each become one with Him, neither can claim to be higher than the other. Higher and lower do not exist. The only thing that exists is perfect oneness. Yet, for a number of reasons, the distance between God and Eve, and between God and Adam, became greater. (52-261, 1972.1.2)

Had Adam and Eve matured and married, they would have been unified within God's realm of direct love. Who is the center here? It is God. When that happens, human beings become the bodies of God, who takes on a substantial form. Had Adam and Eve been thus unified, they would have become God's bodies, the parents of humankind, and the center for God. If God – however omniscient and omnipotent – were to start experiencing joy without a partner, we would call Him crazy.

We human beings are relational beings before the absolute God. We must become as one body through absolute love. If God, Adam, and Eve had become as one body, the children born through Adam and Eve would have been theirs and God's simultaneously. If that had happened, then, as God's offspring, they would have established on earth a family, tribe, people, nation and world. As there would be no one to sever their

relationship based on God's eternal love, their nation in itself would have become the kingdom on earth founded on His love. (54-64, 1972.3.11)

Had Adam and Eve not fallen, they would have loved each other, but they would have loved each other in place of God. Thereby their daily lives would have manifested that of God. If they had liked something, He, too, would have liked it internally. If they had been sad, He, too, would have felt sadness internally because love would have belonged to Him and them. Being one love, it could only be like this. (95-248, 1977.12.4)

Originally, if there had been no Fall, there would not have been a left wing and a right wing. They would have been unified. There would have been no need for head-wing thought or Godism, and everyone would have gone directly to heaven. There would be no need for a savior. Starting with Adam and Eve, people would have gone directly before God, and there would be nothing to make them go the other way. Everyone would go directly to heaven. Had Adam and Eve not fallen, people would have gone to heaven as princes and princesses of God's Kingdom. Adam and Eve were to become God's royal heirs, but because they fell they could not.

Who are Adam and Eve? They are God's body. Eve is God's substantial wife. God, being spiritual, is the vertical and perpendicular Father. Your minds possess an original standard that enables you to inherit the lineages of these two sets of parents. Thus, but for the Fall, they would be eternally unchanging.

The Creator, as the vertical Parent, created the horizontal parents as His partners of vertical love. For this reason, Adam and Eve are God's eternal partners in love. They are His partners. He said He is the Alpha and Omega. As their love started from God, when they return to Him, they become His friends. In the end, they need to return to God. (227-274, 1992.2.14)

Who was the center of Adam and Eve's matrimonial life? Was God involved in that? Did they bear children or not? They did. They gave birth to Cain and Abel. Were Cain and Abel born after God said, "Hey, Adam and Eve, I want you to live together and bear children"? Or were they born after Adam and Eve just started living on their own? The latter was the case. If they were doing this on their own, who would be pleased with that? Satan was pleased. Adam and Eve married centering on Satan. This cannot be denied. (234-299, 1992.8.27)

If the Korean peninsula is the Adam nation, Japan is the Eve nation. Why is Korea the Adam nation? In terms of its geography, the Korean peninsula looks just like a man's sexual organ. The Italian peninsula is exactly like that. The Mediterranean Sea corresponds to the woman's sexual organ, and Italy corresponds to the man's. As such, the two must become as one. Civilization can never move away from such a region. Once a particular culture settles there, it

cannot leave. That's because its position is the same as standing on the foundation of love. With regard to all the geopolitical aspects, Rome and the Mediterranean are similar to the union between man and woman.

We are about to enter an era of integrated civilization that will stand in the place of the father and mother. To the extent that this will be in the position of recovering what was lost when Adam and Eve fell, the surrounding nations are in the position of the three archangels that were lost together with them. They correspond to Adam, Eve and the three archangels. The three archangels centering on Korea were China, Russia, and the United States. The United States was the archangel on the heavenly side, and China and Russia were archangels on the satanic side. The same is true for Taiwan and India. This means that these countries are in those positions.

At the time that Adam and Eve lost their family, they lost themselves, and the three archangels also fell. They need to be restored. Thus, what the Vatican failed to do on the Italian peninsula must be accomplished on the Korean peninsula. The Vatican had a significant role to play in preparing for the returning lord, but it failed. (235-80, 1992.8.29)

Japan is a nation on the side of Satan. The country of Amaterasu-omikami (the sun goddess worshipped in Japan) must be completely turned around to become the heavenly Eve nation. The Japanese second generation must be brought over to God's realm. Korea and Japan are the Adam and Eve nations, so they are one. They must be made as one. When Japan annexed Korea, it attempted to unify the two nations with guns and swords. I will unify them in a free environment with love.

In the Garden of Eden with one female and five males, Adam should not have stupidly allowed his woman to be snatched away. I am restoring Eve by embracing her children. Since I have blessed them, she cannot run away from me. Japan itself should do this work nationally.

Thus, when an Eve nation representing the world appears and the Adam and Eve nations become one, the United States – an archangel nation – will also join them and the three nations will be as one. (265-178, 1994.11.20)

In the term Completed Testament Age, "completed testament" implies the re-creation of Adam and Eve and the perfection of their family, that is, that the testament is completed.

In order to return to the original standard of Adam and Eve, the kinfolk of the Fall – the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, the five billion people of the world, and even the countless ancestors of old who passed to the spirit world – are all involved. However much people in the past may have been loyal and devoted in loving God, that loyalty and devotion has passed and will not measure up to the Completed Testament Age.

Because God created Adam and then created Eve after the pattern of Adam,

He must be responsible for re-creating them. God must re-create, Adam and the earth must re-create Eve. Then, as Eve lost her two sons Cain and Abel, the earth must do what it takes to reestablish these sons. Since the seed was sown, so must it be harvested. Abel and Cain stand respectively to the right and left of their mother in a triangle.

This must be done on earth. How must this be done in order to accomplish liberation? As Cain and Abel were sown individually by Adam and Eve, this must be indemnified globally. (244-233, 1993.2.14)

Who laid the cornerstone of true love: human beings or God? The answer is that God laid it. Before creating human beings, He created minerals, plants, insects and everything else. We read in the Bible that He created human beings at the very end and that the very last being He created was Eve.

So to whom must God be linked ultimately? He must be linked to women. He laid the cornerstone for the purpose that Adam and Eve could become as one on earth. They must become as one. Then, where are they to go and unite based on horizontal plus and minus? Man and woman come together by means of convex and concave.

Being like a mind, God enters the minds of Adam and Eve with his internal nature and external form respectively when they marry. Ultimately, this is the same as when our mind and body become one.

When God and our minds become one, this places us in the same position as when our spirit and flesh become one. Man and woman, each united in spirit and flesh become one with God when they marry. In marriage, one couple is united in one moment of one day. Thus, it is the marriage of Adam and Eve and of God at the same time.

This is origin-division-union action. When what was divided from the origin comes together in union, this does not take place with one person alone. The union begins not just from Adam and Eve but from God. (269-125, 1995.4.9)

The rotation of a horizontal line around a vertical axis generates an area, and Adam and Eve take on an identical appearance internally and externally within that area, centering on God's true love. Thus, through engaging in their first love relationship in the position of the first ancestors, these physical transient beings attain oneness with the eternally living internal God. By inheriting the lineages of God's mind and body, their children receive all the standards of the perfection of God and Adam. Because God lives eternally, people also live eternally. It is from here that the logic of eternal life arises.

As such, without love, people cannot inherit God's external form. God cannot inherit human beings' external form, which is the external form of His body. That is how important love is. Hence, to perfect God's ideal of love, it is absolutely necessary that there be an absolute object partner standing before the absolute Subject Partner. The object partners

are Adam and Eve.

Here, what existed as an inner external form was divided into substantial forms and then becomes one again through the love of the perfected Adam and Eve. Ultimately, then, God, who is the mind-like Being in substance enters there internally, and Adam and Eve, who are the bodily substantial beings, are united in love. Here, God comes to take on Adam's external form, and Adam comes to resemble God's inner external form as he settles on the earth. This is the foundation of the family. You should know this. These are the fundamentals of the universe. (294-244, 1998.8.5)

Section 4. True Family Is the Primary Platform of True Love

God created Adam and Eve in true love. They are substantial beings formed by embodying His internal nature and external form. Through their creation, His invisible internal character and external form was manifested in a substantial form. This is the reason that they must grow up and become one with Him. Had they become perfect, their mind and body would have become one naturally. The Fall, however, brought their mind and body into conflict. People did not know this until now. If Adam and Eve had been perfected in accordance with God's ideal of creation, the mind and body would not be in conflict. The fact that there is a conflict within us is, in itself, a reason for people to be able to deny God's existence. (238-29, 1992.11.19)

No one can bring about true love alone. There must be a partner. Don't you wish that your partner could be better than you? We all want our children to be better than ourselves. This heart comes from God. We need to understand that even God wants His partners of love to be better than Himself. Our desire for our partner of love to be better than ourselves horizontally and vertically originates in God. (203-103, 1990.6.17)

The minds and then the bodies of woman and man come together to attain oneness and become God's external form. When this happens, God is able to reside in the center and settle there eternally. Through the three stages of origin-division-union action, mind and body form the ideal of oneness. The oneness of love brings about the realm of oneness of the ideal world, both vertically and horizontally. Everything is unified within the concept of the mind-body oneness.

The family that settles as God's substantial form on earth and multiplies through the oneness of love becomes His family, His offspring, citizens, and world. When this happens, the mind-body conflict caused by the Fall disappears instantaneously.

Because this family is one with God's internal nature, His love naturally resides in it and any conflict between man and woman disappears. The members of such a family can love each other naturally without conflict. God resides and becomes a mind-like Being there. The husband and wife will be His bodily

beings, and oneness is achieved. (294-313, 1998.8.9)

A true couple is one formed by a man and woman joined together in true love as the embodiment of true life. Such a couple is a true one. Society must be connected by such relationships. The realms formed by the horizontal expansion of that of fraternal heart are the true society, nation, and world. Everybody wants to be a representative of the universe. As everyone is equal when viewed against the backdrop of true-love relationships, those who go against this will eventually have no place to stand. The lips connect following true love. We are the result of life, love, and lineage. (190-214, 1989.6.19)

The first hometown of true love is a true family. What is a true family? It has a true father, true mother, true husband, true wife and true children. This is the foundation for a family of true love. (215-243, 1991.2. 20)

If parents, motivated by true love, invest in and sacrifice themselves infinitely for their children, those children will feel infinite gratitude for having received this true love and their parents will experience great joy in place of their sacrifice. In this way, the power of sacrificial true love initiates a give and take action that establishes an eternal relationship of joy and peace in the true family and world. It is here that the ideal world of eternal life is manifested.

On the other hand, the family, nation and world that lack such true love are nothing more than an empty shell, and will become the breeding grounds of all manner of distrust, animosity, and immorality.

It is in the true family that our pure, true love grows and is perfected. The true family is the initial stage on which true parental love, true conjugal love, true filial love and true fraternal love are put into practice, and jointly grow to fruition. The true family is the fundamental nucleus of a peaceful world, for it is here that we learn about God's true love through true parental love; it is here that we are trained by means of true fraternal love to acquire true universal love for the true nation and for all people of the true world. Not only that, but the true family is the basic unit of historical connection, for it is through true love being handed down from parent to child that the generations of past, present, and future are connected together in a consistent value system of true love. (288-199, 1997.11.28)

How happy would your grandparents be to give up their lives out of love for your parents? Also, how happy would parents be to love their children even at the risk of their lives? You say that you are willing to die for the sake of love, but true love is actualized when a grandson dies for the sake of his grandfather. We can conclude that a true family is one exemplifying such sacrificial love between grandparents and grandchildren, parents and children, among siblings, and between spouses. (162-140, 1987.4.5)

What would God prefer above all else? He likes true love the most; the level of reciprocity that true love likes the most is the family of Adam and Eve. This family was placed in the ideal position by God. (263-177, 1994. 8.23)

The path of true love that I teach you – the path that the man and woman of true love, the true family, nation and world must go – is absolute. There is but one path, not two. The family is the textbook of true love teaching you how to relate to all humankind. (135-158, 1985.11.12)

What should blessed couples do if they fight? They should call their physical children and then their spiritual children to ask their forgiveness because the former represent Abel and the latter represent Cain. Having gone against the tradition that Cain and Abel should follow, they did not make Cain and Abel unite but did the opposite instead, and therefore must repent before them. Such a time will come. We share a common destiny. When the children do something wrong, they must obtain their parents' forgiveness. If the husband, their father, does something wrong, he must beg them, and his wife, for forgiveness. This is the true family with true love at the center. (135-38, 1985.8.20)

The purpose of religion is to seek after God and His teachings. It is not God but human beings who put these teachings into practice. As we seek after a reciprocal love, the question is, where will we make this love settle? Not in the church or in the world; nowhere else but in the family. We must plant the seed of true love within the family for the world to become the expanded form of a true family. In this context, there is no concept of religion. There will be no need even for the Tenchi Seikyo (天地正教) spiritual path. (259-62, 1994.3.27)

CHAPTER TWO

God's Kingdom and the True Family

Section 1. God's Ideal of Creation Is the Realization of the Four-Position Foundation and the True Family.

God's original intent was to create everything in heaven and on earth, and then bring everything into perfection through human beings. In this way, the dignity of God and human beings in relation to the creation would be established. We can conclude that this would naturally lead to the perfection of human beings and the realization of God's ideal of creation. Had this happened, God would have possessed authority as the Center of the entire creation, human beings would have been united as His children, and the world of His ideal love would have been realized on earth.

If this had happened, humankind would have begun not with God's sorrow, but with His joy. He would have praised the authority of human beings in a state of joy. They would have seen how highly God praised them, and would have praised Him in return. Then God and human beings would have shared a common destiny. (92-145, 1977.4.1)

God wanted not only to exercise dominion over the creation through our first ancestors Adam and Eve, but also to bring about a family of love. In the Unification Church, this standard is defined as the completion of the four-position foundation. Ultimately, God's will is the realization of His ideal of creation, which in concrete terms, is the completion of the four-position foundation.

So what is the four-position foundation? It is for perfected Adam and Eve as God's son and daughter to be blessed within His love to become the husband and wife that He desires. After that, it is to raise children to perfection because children are necessary in order to bring about the family that God desires. (80-268, 1975.11.2)

God's will is fulfilled through the realization of His ideal of creation. So, what is God's ideal of creation? Of course, creating all things is a part of His ideal, but He also wanted to realize it through Adam and Eve. What is the perfection of God's ideal of creation, the fulfillment of His will? His ideal of creation and His will are realized when the four-position foundation is completed centering on God and His love. In other words, you need to know clearly that the realization of God's will always

implies a loving environment within a four-position foundation centering on His love. (102-174, 1978.12.24)

A four-position foundation develops in all four directions of north, south, east, and west. If you remove love, then there is nothing left. That love does not belong to just Adam or Eve; both of them must connect to God's love from a unified position. Their conjugal love will be there with the love of their children simultaneously included.

The term three-objects purpose that we commonly use identifies from Adam's standpoint, God, his wife, and their children as his objects. The term refers to a realm of twelve objects because three times four equals twelve. It also refers to the three objects of each of the four positions centering on love.

Yet until now, people of faith did not know that realizing God's ideal of creation based on His love carried such meaning. The fulfillment of His will and the realization of His ideal of creation comes with the completion of the four-position foundation. What happens when the four-position foundation is completed? Heaven and earth find their rightful positions and settle for the first time. Heaven forms an upper axis and earth a lower axis; everything can be united with them at the center.

In this case, the children need to have a form on the horizontal plane allowing them to become one in the direction of the axis in the center, rise to that center, form a circle and ultimately an ideal sphere of love. (170-62, 1987.11.8)

Everything must pass through a central line. Why does the human nose run from up to down vertically? It is because the center must not be lost. We see in the face that the eyes symbolize God and the mouth symbolizes all the things of creation. This is why there are thirty-two teeth. Four times eight equals thirty-two. This refers to the number of the whole creation. The number four represents north, south, east, and west; and eight represents all numbers. It is a multiplier. So four times eight equals thirty-two; this symbolizes the whole creation and means that we should eat all the things of creation. When we speak, our mouth inhales that which is external and exhales that which is internal. Everything comes about through the four-position foundation based on the law of give and take. (174-220, 1988.3.1)

The four-position foundation is a realm combining vertical and horizontal love. Only through it, can parents take their proper place. Only by being parents, can they take their place as God's physical representatives. God allowed human beings to have the power to raise children so they could physically experience the joy that He experienced spiritually when He created Adam and Eve. This is God's ideal of creation. (64-33, 1972.10.22)

If by uniting with God, Adam and Eve experienced love, then that love was God's and that four-position foundation was centered on God. Children should grow in that love and the rela-

tionships among them should be reciprocal centering on God. Yet, if parents simply give birth to children and then do nothing to educate them, it would all be of no use. The children must be educated. They have to grow. In raising children, the boy should take the right and the girl should take the left. (233-75, 1992.7.30)

The four-position foundation in the new age begins with the sons and daughters of Adam and Eve. So, if Adam and Eve marry and multiply, eventually they would create the realm of the four-position foundation. How would they enter this realm? A reciprocal realm is created centering on God's original heart and the ideal family that He desires.

Does the four-position foundation have three tiers? Yes; God, Adam and Eve, and their children. In this instance, it is vertical. This must be developed horizontally. By coming down to earth horizontally, the vertical element uses this as a foundation to spread out in innumerable parallel patterns. This becomes the model.

In order for the four-position foundation that was Adam's ideal to develop throughout the world, this type of family tradition must be established. Without doing this, there can be no horizontal link, so do not think of these as separate. If Adam and Eve marry and live together, this in itself means that God stands to their right and their children to their left; they are as one. We need to understand that these three are unified. (240-14, 1992.12.11)

Viewed horizontally, Adam is the eldest son, the second son is Jesus, and the perfected Adam is the third son. Vertically speaking, the third son is the third generation. So the grandfather's position is the first generation, the father's position is the second generation, and the son or grandson is the third generation. If this is inverted, then the grandson will be in the grandfather's position. It will be grandfather, father, and grandson; the other way around. Thus, you will be able to enter God's Kingdom by completing the four-position foundation – the realm of three generations – through me by practicing absolute obedience. Hence, it is restoration through indemnity. (258-208, 1994.3.17)

The Unification Church's *Juche* (Subject) ideology is God-centered. Within this thought system, there must be three tiers in terms of its structural order. Thus, it has parents, spouses, and children. Our *Juche* ideology is the realm of the ideal of love which is capable of linking its center to God and expanding the ideal of the four-position foundation.

Love contains a power that makes it possible for it to be expanded. When it is compressed, it creates oneness. If we want to link ideals that can be expanded and lead lives that embrace all humanity, we must expand our love. The expansion of love in this way is the multiplication of the human population. It is the horizontal expansion of two people, Adam and Eve. So, a brief summary of *Juche* ideology is that God is the absolute Subject in all love relationships.

Next are the True Parents. After that, comes your own couple. You and your spouse become representatives of the True Parents and bear children in their place. This is the four-position foundation. (164-93, 1987.4.26)

The four-position foundation refers to a parent-centered origin of true love. After that, it refers to the perfected parent-child oneness in love. This oneness is not temporary, but eternal. At the same time, it is also absolute. The origin of this love is unique, unchanging, and absolute. However, love does not exist only in God or only in the father or mother. It comes about on the foundation of the family – a true family!

Fidelity in such a love-centered family requires that love be absolute. It is absolute in all its relationships. An invasion of even one of these relationships cannot be allowed because that would mean the destruction of all of them. Thus, each family member within the four-position foundation must guard against the possibility of love being invaded even to the point of self-sacrifice. The most fearful thing is for the foundation of love to be broken. This single nucleus expands to become the world.

The one family of Adam must give rise to the family of the son. Then, the parents' family and the son's family must become one. When these four-position foundations come into being, they will eventually become four-position foundations in the spirit world. (106-57, 1979.12.9)

In terms of the Divine Principle, the ultimate point of God's ideal of creation is for human beings to fulfill their portion of responsibility and realize the family ideal of the four-position foundation through love. The four-position foundation is necessary because we must establish the family ideal in terms of the parent-child relationship. Adam and Eve, who inherit the vertical tradition of a mother's and father's unity centered on love, must then develop this unity as a horizontal tradition.

The twelve tribes ultimately originated from Adam and the 360 days arose based on that number twelve. The perfection of the ideal of creation is to establish a base for the expansion of all races in a way similar to this.

From this perspective, the way of God's will is the realization of the ideal of creation, which refers to the completion of the four-position foundation. This is not centered on the father, the mother, the son, or the daughter. It is the completion of the four-position foundation centering on true love and the true family. It is the fulfillment of the human portion of responsibility motivated by true love.

Fulfilling the human portion of responsibility means that once a man and a woman attain perfect oneness with each other based on the standard of all the ideals of love and come into harmony with all the standards of God's act of Creation, they then develop horizontally through their physical bodies all the traditions of Adam and Eve that they have inherited vertically while on earth.

It is not intended that they have just one or two children. When the era of Adam and Eve arrives, it is intended that they have many children to the north, south, east, and west. (228-249, 1992.7.5)

A man has to form a family together with a woman. Without doing this, they cannot enter the unified world. In the past, people of faith left their families behind, but now they must rebuild the families they left behind on a higher dimension and establish them as victorious families. Otherwise, they cannot enter heaven. Just by forming a family does not mean that we can enter heaven on the basis of that family alone. We can only enter heaven through forming a four-position foundation.

Where must we form that four-position foundation? On earth. When? Before we pass away. Without doing this, we cannot become citizens capable of welcoming God's nation or a human race capable of welcoming His world. We cannot become citizens of heaven capable of welcoming His kingdom once His will has been fulfilled. (45-62, 1971.6.13)

You may feel happy about having a wife, but I do not think like that. Women and children are not happy, either. Rather than being happy, you must shoulder a cross. The subject partner must make the object partner happy. If he has children, then he must also make them happy. He must shoulder these three great crosses. That is why restoring the four-position foundation is the most difficult thing. It is like conquering the world. (46-95, 1971.7.25)

Each of your children is born into the family of God as a precious beacon of hope that He has established by sacrificing innumerable prophets and patriots through six thousand years of history. When we consider that the children of each family bring with them the ultimate end to the holy task of completing the four-position foundation, our feeling of gratitude toward these children must increase day by day. When parents feel this way, their children will never die of starvation. (33-177, 1970.8.11)

You are now in the realm of the Fall. Families blessed at the top of the growth stage still have a path before them to climb. I am referring to the path that enables you to follow me. Nevertheless, the True Parents and the four-position foundation must be united. When Noah built the ark, do you think his wife did a good job helping him? Do you know how much his children criticized him? No, Noah packed his lunch and ascended Mount Ararat to build the ark saying that God was about to judge the earth not just for one day, but for 120 years. Think about whether his wife helped him. Since his wife did not help him, the children did not help either. You must become one with True Mother. (137-111, 1985.12.24)

You must form a three-dimensional four-position foundation. The positions of above and below and front and rear

must be unified three-dimensionally. When you do this, then no matter how this structure may revolve, when it stops revolving, the center will always be perpendicular, like a soccer ball. There is only one point. The three-dimensional ideal of the four-position foundation must come about in the family. (295-201, 1998.8.28)

You must not only be filial toward your parents, but you also need your spouse. Thus, you must form a four-position foundation. This is the absolute Principle. When we understand this, we need to ask what has happened today to the individual, family, and national four-position foundations. The expansion of the family four-position foundation creates the nation, the expansion of the national four-position foundation creates the world, and the expansion of the global four-position foundations is the cosmos. The family is the base.

Education in Jardim will make it so that not even a single Satan will be able to follow you as you go this way. Without going through this education, you would fall away. You would become a family that has lost its nationality. Things might occur even more tragic than going to Bethlehem to register the family and giving birth to the baby Jesus in a stable. You have to receive education at Jardim. (297-187, 1998.11.20)

If you love God, you will be loved by the eternal Parent to the degree that you love that Parent. The more filial a child you become, the more you will be loved by your parents. The more loyal a subject you become, the more you will be loved by the holy sovereign. The more you become a true husband, the more you will be loved by your wife. (83-207, 1976.2.8)

What constitutes a wonderful and good husband or wife? The quality of seeing the spouse as absolute in the place of God and in the place of the True Parents. Such a husband and such a wife together constitute the true couple. Children who are born into the family where God is seen as absolute, parents are seen as absolute, and the conjugal relationship is seen as absolute, must themselves be seen as absolute. This is what is referred to in the Unification Church as the ideal of the four-position foundation. (147-231, 1986.9.28)

Section 2. True Families Produce the Citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven.

You need to understand that women possess a treasure so precious that it cannot be exchanged for the universe or even for God. Within you is the palace of the origin where love can be fulfilled. What a safe place God put this in! What would happen if you had no flesh on your buttocks? You would become frozen solid.

What about men? Is your love organ not in a place where it is easily protected? All of your energy is concentrated in that place. Due to this, your organ enables you to re-create a person who is

like you. This place that enables you to become a mother or a father is a mysterious palace!

When you go to the spirit world, there are no places for reproduction. Why did God make human beings? It is because there is no reproduction along the vertical, which has only one point. God's love is on the single point in the position of the vertical, so there can be no reproduction there. People cannot reproduce in the spirit world. For this reason, there needs to be 360 degrees on the horizontal. In the horizontal world, there are unlimited positions where reproduction can take place in the north, south, east, and west.

Thus, we call this the production plant for creating the citizens of God's Kingdom. People who come into the world as citizens of this world are themselves sons and daughters of the spirit world. They each become the child whom you love. That person is like one of God's cells. After we enter that world, we becomes like His cells. We become integrated into Him. We came from the Origin, so we return to the Origin.

Hence, when men and women go to the spirit world, they form one body and resemble God. Later, they become godlike. They should resemble God. Don't we say that God has dual characteristics? Where do the dual characteristics begin? They begin in love. By bearing the fruits of love, we come to resemble the original God and return to Him. Also, God would be lonely if He were alone. He wanted to create a garden of love full of flowers blooming in all sorts of colors and filling the air with their fragrances. In that garden, He wanted to take naps and walk around. This is the kind of God He is. (206-137, 1990.10.3)

Our sexual organs are palaces of true love, true life, and true lineage. They are the most precious place. If these organs were to disappear, heaven and earth would disappear. Without these organs, God's ideal, His family, and His will could not be fulfilled. These organs are an origin from which everything can be perfected. (216-218, 1991.4.1)

Why did God create people so that they could have many babies rather than just one? If He had created people so that they could have only one, then there would only have been Adam and Eve and one child. What would have happened then? They would have had to just live with each other. Just the one family would have been alive. In that case, the world would have disappeared.

In order to bring about God's Kingdom, there needs to be horizontal expansion so that innumerable families are reproduced. This is how to reproduce citizens of His Kingdom.

There is no reproduction in the spirit world. Husbands and wives on earth are the production plants for the citizens of heaven. That world cannot be filled in one step. Its citizens must be born over many generations. Hence, God feels joy when He sees the citizens of Heaven increasing. In that world, there is no concern about what to eat, what to wear, where to sleep, or anything else. There is no need

for cars and factories. It is a place where everything has been prepared. You can fly anywhere anytime you want. It is a place of incredible speed. You take just one step and find you have moved thousands of miles. (246-69, 1993.3.23)

You will be able to see me, but not God. When a husband and wife are in the midst of making love on their first night, God enters there and becomes one with them.

What was His purpose for creating human beings? In the spirit world, there is no reproduction. Families in the earthly world are where citizens of the spirit world are produced. The person who gives birth to and raises many citizens of heaven while on earth will stand in a glorious position. If you want to stand in a position of glory, you must give bear many children. (249-323, 1993.10.11)

The earthly world is the production plant of the citizens of the heavenly world. There is no reproduction in the spirit world. Due to the Fall, we became the devil's offspring. Hence, we need to carry out a process to engraft all people and bring them back to being citizens of the heavenly world. Thus, when you go to that world, you will be like a bride taking her dowry to her in-laws. For you, the issue will be the number of people you establish and bring to God as citizens of heaven.

God never had grandchildren. He intended to have them through Adam and Eve. He grieves that He could not do so. Because of this, He wants us to bear many of His children here on earth, raise them, and then present them to Him. The heavenly world is so vast and immutable that it will take billions and billions of citizens to fill it. Knowing this, I have spent my life – even those times when I was in prison – forgetting about sleeping and eating, so that I could work to save even just one more life. Many times, I thought it was morning when it was actually evening or I thought it was evening when it was actually morning. I did this so I could save even just one more life. All national boundaries are transcended here. (212-309, 1991.1.8)

Human beings are created so that everyone will be linked together through love-centered marriage relationships. In the same way that perfect children are born on a foundation where love has been perfected, it is the responsibility of people on earth to bear and form God's ideal filial, fraternal, and conjugal realms in His family. Reproduction is impossible in the spirit world. The center has no area, so there is no space in which to have children.

Thus, God created a plane and three-dimensional space to produce citizens of heaven, who would then enter and inhabit that vast realm. Couples are therefore individual production units for reproducing the citizens of heaven. To create a reciprocal realm with the right of inheritance and the right of ownership in the next world, they need to bear many sons and daughters on earth and eventually be with them in that world. Those without children will not have

such a reciprocal realm. Such a reciprocal realm can only exist when you have children. You should try to have at least twelve, the number of months in a year. (255-265, 1994.3.11)

You must be proud of God and proud that you are a man or a woman. Such men and women must multiply the citizens of heaven. This is an iron rule. Adam and Eve must multiply. Mind and body must be as one and God's love must be overflowing within you. Then your spiritual five senses and physical five senses become as one and you become eternally one with true love. Men who can do this – men with whom women can share eternity – will be kings possessing kingship representing humankind eternally. Women will be queens standing in the reciprocal position to the kings. Such men and women will be in our hearts as eternal mothers and fathers. We need to understand that this is the background that is linked to the term "true love."

We become one through a love with this mind-set. We marry to explore this love. We go there because of love. Marriage is not something just for two people. Its purpose is to occupy the vertical God. After being divided between east and west, do you know where we come to meet and explode together? We meet on the vertical line. When we meet on the vertical line, we explode and spin, ascending and colliding with God. On the vertical line, God descends and we ascend so that God enters the center; and when we descend, we see that God has become the central core of love. Thus, if you want to make this line running vertically from here go in a horizontal direction, you must have children. Therefore, even if a man and woman have created this vertical line, they will not be able to serve God in the heavenly world if they do not have children.

Only those who have had children and loved them are able to serve God, the ideal Subject of dual characteristics. They also need to have children in order to serve the True Parents. If those who cannot bear children are going to adopt a child, they must train themselves so that they will be able to love this child even more than if they had given birth to it. This is difficult to do. Hence, in the Unification Church, we teach people to bear many loving children. Babies in our church bring heavenly fortune with them. They are born with food to eat. Some will become judges, prosecutors, and presidents. All types of people will be born. All the colors of the rainbow will come from them.

So, based on true love, you should have nothing to be ashamed of in terms of your motherhood or fatherhood and you should bring many citizens into God's Kingdom. (210-375, 1990.12.27)

Husbands and wives today are to be the production units of citizens of the heavenly world, so entering heaven with many children is not an unhappy event. You will go to a high position in that world. Based upon north, south, east, and west, the four seasons have three months each making a total of twelve months. This is the reason Jesus chose

twelve disciples. Centering on him, they were archetypal of north, south, east, and west. This encompassed the four directions centering on God. (233-247, 1992.8.1)

The family on earth is the horizontal entity whose purpose is to create the heavenly kingdom. Reproduction is not possible in the vertical world. The number of children expands in the horizontal world and they become God's citizens. When members of royal families who are God's citizens multiply, they are all citizens except the firstborn. They become relatives. Those citizens become clans. There must be a firstborn among the clans, right? Among tribes, too, there needs to be the firstborn that ties all the tribes together. This is Adam and Eve. Adam and Eve were to be the king and queen of the eternal tradition. In a democratic world, all this disappears. Then what is the spherical shape? The foundation for producing the citizens of heaven is not the family foundation in Heaven, but on earth. To bear children is to produce citizens of the heavenly world. (234-165, 1992.8.10)

Section 3. Citizens of God's Kingdom are Educated in True Families.

Earthly families are the production plants to re-create citizens who can be brought along into the heavenly world. We act as the owners of these factories before entering the spirit world. If Adam and Eve had set the straight path, we would not need to educate our children. It would have happened naturally. Everyone would have had God within himself. There would have been no need to educate them. We are where we are now because of the Fall. As a result of the Fall, humanity has been ignorant of all the fundamentals. (254-246, 1994.2.13)

God's cherished desire is to recover the true family that was lost in the Garden of Eden. You have to understand that the heavenly family where God wants to reside is the family that can establish loving true parents, true spouses, and true children. When such a family appears, even Jesus will be able to take delight in them as his siblings. Such families must emerge. (8-114, 1959.11.22)

A true couple is formed when a true man and a true woman come together to begin their life as husband and wife. When sons and daughters are born, the true couple becomes a true family. In the place where a man and woman – each having attained perfect mind-body oneness – unite in eternal love, they give birth to children who can never be separated from them. If the mother and father are divided, their children will be divided within themselves. It is a natural conclusion that a child whose mind and body are one begins from a husband and wife who are each united in their own mind and body and are united together centering on true love. Otherwise, true love cannot stay there. God cannot stay where true love does not exist. This is our logical conclusion. (270-324, 1995.7.23)

In order to enter the storehouse of heaven, you must become pure in connection with God's love, life, and lineage. To do this, you must be God's children from the time you are born and while growing up, and be God's family in your daily life. When you do this, you will enter God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven as families and clans.

We are not saved as individuals. In our life course, we are to love our children from the position of the second creator in the same way that God loved Adam and Eve. We are to love each other as siblings who can receive His love and as husbands and wives who can practice His love. It all begins from, proceeds through, and ends in love. Heaven is a place we enter by having perfected ourselves in conformity with the textbook of love. We do not enter it as individuals, but as complete families. (226-307, 1992.2.9)

How should a wife relate to her husband? She should hold his hand and say, "I now know that you and I are twin brother and sister born together, so we can never be separated." When Adam and Eve were chased out of the Garden of Eden, they were separated from God, shedding tears of sorrow, but now in the age of restoration, we must shed tears of the opposite kind. Through the process of our lives, we must indemnify the fact of our not having been sons and daughters of God's Kingdom. (238-254, 1992.11.22)

To establish God's Kingdom there must be a king and a queen who have sons and daughters. There also must be central families that can guard the kingdom. This is why Jesus is now waiting in paradise. Heaven is not a place you can enter alone. (265-94, 1994.11.20)

Through the ownership of love, the hometown and the family of your partner can become yours. This is where children, siblings, couples, and parents are perfected. We were previously unable to realize any of the contents presented in God's textbook, but today we come to understand them through the True Parents. We need to do these things again so that, in the original position unrelated to the Fall, God can completely surmount the summit of grief and pass down to us His standards regarding education. This is how we become people and families qualified as citizens of His kingdom. (226-173, 1992.2.4)

The Holy Spirit in Christianity is feminine. It had the responsibility to give birth to two worlds spiritually and substantially, and then to raise them up. In the same way, the Unification Church's blessed wives must be responsible for two worlds. They must create citizens of God's Kingdom who become able to denounce the satanic world and govern its people.

Your sons and daughters are citizens of God's Kingdom. They are not citizens of any existing nation, but of God's Kingdom. You must raise them with this kind of purpose in mind. Otherwise, there will be no hope for your

families in the future and they will all go to hell. (216-277, 1991.04.7)

You need to understand that True Parents always exist for your sake. You should not raise your children to become people like you. You should be determined to wholly inherit True Parents' tradition now in order to raise the descendants who will be able to live in God's future world. This is my single cherished desire.

What will you do if you turn your precious children into people like yourselves? You need to offer devotion, saying, "I am the way I am, but I will not raise my descendants to be the kind of person I am. Instead, I will raise them to be true sons and daughters."

In order to raise them as true children, you will need to do as God did in the Garden of Eden after He created Adam and Eve. You must embrace your children, protect them, and be joyful. Do not let them go the same course as descendants of the Fall. You will need to offer utmost devotion, take responsibility to prepare everything, and make certain that all the necessary content is there so that they may be blessed by God. If you form such families, your children will be sons and daughters of God's Kingdom. (158-272, 1967.12.29)

In educating your children, do not teach them to love only their parents. Say to them, "We are loyal citizens and patriots who love this nation. We love our nation. We are not parents who are patriots, but patriots who are parents." This is how you should educate them. (26-295, 1969.11.10)

If the mother and father thrive, the children of that home will thrive. And if the children thrive, even the dogs and roosters kept in that home would thrive. If the dogs don't bark nor the rooster crow, would you say they are thriving? If people say, "The mother and father of that home get along well with each other and at that home the dogs bark often and the rooster crow a lot," then you will know that the home is thriving. Even if people talk about the roosters crowing too much and the dogs playfully biting a lot, in reality the people in that home are not acting wildly and are not declining, but are doing very well. (202-229, 1990.5.24)

Children should serve their mother and father in God's stead as parents greater than even the True Mother and the True Father. In this way, your family can be such that your children will bow to you before they bow to the True Parents. Parents represent God in our daily life. Thus, it is important that the four great realms of heart and three great kingships are realized in the family. (241-179, 1992.12.24)

God's sovereignty of love is absolute, unique, eternal, and unchanging. As this is true of the sovereignty, citizenry, and property of His nation, we must reorganize everything and reregister ourselves with a national identity that is absolute, unique, unchanging, and eternal. This is a time when the created beings must be

reorganized in this way as well, so everything must be reversed to go in the opposite direction. We need to understand that things that have been going around this way must now start turning in the opposite direction. God's nation needs absolute sovereignty, citizens, and created beings. We see in our families that we have parents who represent sovereignty, children who represent citizens, and objects that represent created beings. This family is a foundation of God's Kingdom in miniature. All this must be offered to Him. Only then will a large nation and world come about. (304-258, 1999.11.8)

Section 4. Heaven is Based On True Families.

God is an absolute, unique, unchanging, and eternal Being. The same is true for His will. As He is absolute and unchanging, His will is also the same. Because God's desire is for true families which are perfected through the true love of the Creator and of human beings, it was necessary for Him to create the conditions that would make it possible for Him to become one with human beings. For this reason, He needed a commandment that He could give to our first ancestors. What was that commandment? The commandment was the condition for His promise to permit them to inherit a family of love, the entirety of love, and all precious things. Knowing that human beings would grow during a period when they were not yet perfect, God gave them that commandment in order to bequeath to them the most precious things – namely, true love and the family. The inheritance of true love and the true family was the promise of His commandment. (283-171, 1997.4.12)

God's will is to make everything become one. Had Adam and Eve not fallen, our mind and body would become one. The minds and bodies of man and woman would be one. Had the two formed such a family, then the world of unity would have expanded from there. There is no unity in the world today; it is an extension of disunited men and women. (133-259, 1984.7.20)

God exists covertly in the deepest place. The deeper we go down, the greater love becomes until finally we come to discover God's true love. If you love your children more and more deeply, you will eventually meet God's love. Such families of true love become the foundation for His kingdom on earth. Heaven can be located in no other place. (161-325, 1987.3.8)

Heaven will be composed of true families. People will live with God. It is a living environment where husbands and wives can live together eternally with God, their internal Parent. Heaven is a place where people and families that are a part of God's body and that belong to His family can enter. Adam's perfected family enters it. People can only enter heaven with the whole family and not individually. The individual salvation that people strove for until now per-

tained to the archangelic world. Ownership of the true family is in heaven. Heaven is the realm true families can own. It is the realm where they become owners, where they have the right of true ownership, and where they exercise their family rights of ownership. (297-165, 1998.11.19)

God's Kingdom will come about only when you become His sons and daughters and form His families. It is the same with each individual family. Satan is pulling on the trap where you are ensnared. God is also pulling. If all family members are to enter God's presence, you will have to offer devotion. Only then will each individual – if there are five family members, then all five of them – be able to break free of Satan's trap and return to God's side. (115-49, 1981.10.28)

When husband and wife enter the room of love, they must feel that they are entering it together with God. When their minds and bodies attain perfect oneness, the husband should consider that his wife is the queen of all queens under heaven, the most beautiful woman in the world, and his absolute, unique, unchanging, and eternal body. He must think of her and love her as he would his own body, as a body of love.When subject and object partners become as one in love, they come to own each other's love. They also come to own each other as well as their possessions. As they each have the same value, the entire universe becomes theirs. This means that they must be able to sense God. Thus, everyone must be able to serve God in their lives and have the experience of having loved Him. Only then will they become royal families and kinfolk that belong to royalty in Heaven. When God beholds such Blessed Families from the heavenly world, they appear to Him as brightly shining stars. As such, they always bring Him joy. (297-167, 1998.11.19)

The term "a glorious true family" refers to a family that can be happy on earth and in the spirit world. A family that can live directly with God, the central Being of the next world, will be a true family in glory. You must become families that like each other more and more for eternity. If you do not like each other, you should work together to actualize an ideal world of love. As ideal subject and object partners, you need to create an environment in which each partner feels grateful to, lives for, and respects the other because they have received each other as partners of love. (294-312, 1998.8.9)

The core of the true family is the couple. What then are husband and wife? They are the bodies of God – His substantial object partners. We refer to God, who possesses true love, as Father. If God is our Father, then He and we are in a parent-child relationship. We are father and son or mother and daughter. We are one body because this is a combination of vertical and horizontal. (297-167, 1998.11.19)

The cherished desire of young women and men is to form ideal families – that is, true families. Here, "true family" refers to a family that God likes. Hence, the most important thing is your understanding of God. (298-248, 1999.1.16)

A true family will be the apple of God's eye. He will embrace that family and dance. When we feel overjoyed, God, who is almighty, would like to hold on to us, and dance, and fly through the air. A true family is God's object partner that can liberate and comfort Him. (301-169, 1999.4.25)

A true family is one that has realized the ideal exactly as God created it. Adam's perfected family would have been called the true family, but he did not actualize this and must therefore be resurrected. A resurrected family will form a resurrected tribe, society, nation, and world. Then there will no longer be Satan, sin, or the wars of human history – the struggles between God and Satan – on earth, and the world would not be like it is today, divided into many nations with different races, cultures, languages, and endless other divisions.

Where do True Parents come from? They come from God. They are linked with Him. From there, we need to become first His love, second His life, and third His lineage. What all this means is that everything in the world came into existence for the sake of His love, life, and lineage. There will be no place for love, life, or lineage that is centered on Satan. All the love, life, and lineage that have existed until now will be returned to God. As they cannot be returned to God directly, they must be returned through our children here. This is when Adam and Eve return them to God through Cain and Abel. (230-67, 1992.4.19)

Man and woman cannot unify their minds and bodies without true love. It is only when each has achieved this individually that they can become a couple of true love. It is only when they become a couple of true love that they can be children of God bearing true love. Thus, they become God's family.

What does God like most? It is true love. Love is not something that can be actualized alone. In creating human beings, God was creating His partners. He created human beings to be His partners in true love. Based upon this, the entire universe was created according to a pair system. As such, God's love, man's love, woman's love, and children's love are eternal. This is God's family. (201-192, 1990.4.1)

The commencement of Blessed Family life signifies the start of God's family. In becoming one with God centering on love, we are not just establishing our own couples, but families of God's Kingdom. (248-12, 1993.5.30)

The family that liberates God from His sorrow is His family. God's abode of rest is in the family formed by people with the qualification of the first son and husband that can love more than all his

other brothers. The mission of Blessed Families in the Unification Church is to create the realm of the Sabbath where they, as parents, would want to welcome even beggars as their own children to live with them. Do not forget your destiny as blessed couples to fulfill this mission. (295-245, 1998.8.28)

The true family is the fundamental nucleus of a peaceful world for it is here that we learn about God's true love through true parental love. It is here that we are trained by means of true fraternal love to acquire true universal love for the true nation and for all humanity of the true world. (288-199, 1997.11.28)

When they go to the spirit world, ideal couples and families will be able to live with God anytime they want. This is why men must become God's internal nature, putting themselves in the position of His heart, and women must become His external form. Then the two must become one. They expand one level and become one. The mind-like aspects of these two become internal nature and their bodily aspects become external form, and then, for the first time, they bear fruit. This is how the realm of mind-body oneness centering on God is formed.

When this happens, Adam and Eve's children will develop bones centering on God's love and bodies similar to theirs. Hence, God Himself is able to rule over visible human beings who possess external form similar to those of Adam and Eve. When this happens, the entire world will become His kingdom on earth and we will be able to meet Him.

If you go to heaven now, you will not see God. It is necessary that God enter the minds of the True Parents after they have accomplished everything and gone to the next world. When this happens, He will take on a body and we will enter an age when He will be able to move and rule over everything in the universe. In other words, He will take on a holy external form.

When all this has been completed – the accomplishment of His kingdom in heaven and on earth – He will take on an external form. This is possible centering on love. If love becomes physically one in Adam's family, God too, can have a combined internal nature and external form so He can take on a body. This cannot be done without love. This is where the term "one body" comes from.

The spirit world is a place governed by true love – that is, absolute love. Everything is linked to true love. True love is the seed. Seeds unrelated with the Fall are linked together and fill all of heaven and earth. The world today came about as a result of the Fall, so it must disappear. We must do away with the lineage of the fallen world and link ourselves to God's original lineage. How do we create such a world? Blessed marriage is the way. The Blessing is the means of engrafting ourselves onto God's lineage. (294-316, 1998.8.9)

People in the spirit world also need true families. Without true families, they cannot be linked to God's posi-

tion nor can they enter heaven. Couples living in God's Kingdom on earth will eventually enter His kingdom in heaven. This is God's ideal of creation. In that place, there is no religion – only one culture – and everything is perfected through families. The family is the center of everything. As such, our families want to stand in the center.

There is no need for religion there. Christianity, Buddhism, and all religions will be liberated. Jesus, Buddha, and all the saints need families. Who will create these families? The True Parents. Until now, all families were linked to a false lineage; they were not original families. Through the appearance of Blessed Families, there can now be true families that are linked to God's lineage.

Rev. Moon has created a victorious foundation extending in all directions. The same is true with the spiritual and physical worlds. Therefore, we can develop from the true family to the true world. From the true family, we can bring about the true tribe, people, nation, world, universe, and heaven. (279-237, 1996.9.8)

Now we clearly understand ourselves. We know now where we are connected to, what process of life we have come through, and where we are heading. In going this way, what do we carry with us? We carry in our bosoms God's concern. If our family has been restored, we cannot rest.

We must know that we still have a tribe centering on the family, a people centering on the tribe, and a nation, world, and humanity centering on a people. As long as we are on the earth, we must go to the ends of the earth to bring many societies to the Father. After that, we must yearn for the day when all humanity can be blessed, and we must strive every day to bring this about. Such people can represent God. (152-192, 1963.5.10)

Until now, the concept of faith was, "I will believe in God and enter Heaven." But do you know what you must do before you can enter Heaven? Each person must unite his or her mind and body. We must strive to reach that state. Anyone who does not attain such unity will not be able to enter Heaven. Anyone whose family is not united cannot go to Heaven. If you want to lead your relatives to a good place, you must build an altar of devotion. Otherwise, you cannot bring them there. (155-213, 1965.10.30)

When Adam and Eve fell, they were conquered by the world of death. Satan, who exercises dominion over the world of death, created families that would turn against God in the age of the ideal of creation and has formed a world that stood in opposition to Him until now. When we consider this, we understand that what God wants most in His heart is the creation of ideal families. He wants to establish families that surpass the standard desired by His enemy. He wants families surpassing the standard that existed in the ideal age before the Fall. We need to think about this. (159-128, 1968.3.7)

Jesus came to the earth and taught a simple truth: "The God who created Heaven and earth is my Father; I am His son. By believing in me, you can become His children. As He is my Father, He is also yours." Then Jesus taught us about our Father and about our responsibilities as His children. After that, he said: "I am the Groom and you are the brides." What does this mean? Jesus came and taught for the first time about the elements needed for creating God's families. (156-224, 1966.5.25)

The Bible teaches that God is our Father. It refers to Jesus as God's only begotten son and to Jesus' followers as his brides as well as his siblings. As it reveals content in which everything exists within a framework of God's family centered on His love, it is a doctrine that builds His family and teaches the duties of that family that will allow God's son to rest within it. (195-195, 1989.11.15)

The Bible teaches us about the family. Jesus is the bridegroom and we are his brides. The bridegroom and bride meet, hold the Marriage Supper of the Lamb, and restore the family. This is the conclusion that summarizes the sixty-six books of the Old and New Testaments. This is the reason the Bible is great.

What is the goal toward which the Bible points and what is the hope that it requires? It is not Jesus the individual. The Bible's eager anticipation is for God's family, the union between Jesus and his Bride. What will we do with God's family? If there is a family – that is, a bridegroom and a bride – children will emerge. When children emerge and multiply, they form a tribe, society, nation, and world. What kind of world is that? The world connected to God's love is that of Godism. It is the world based upon the ideology of Adam and Eve. It is the world of the philosophy of parents. (160-277, 1969.5.17)

The ultimate goal of God's Kingdom is the perfection of true families. Within true families, there must be the ideal of a true nation and world. The term absolute sex emerges here as the tradition of true love that can influence a true world and nation. Absolute sex refers to that which is absolute, unique, unchanging, and eternal. Everything that has to do with being harmonized in love with a reciprocal partner to whom you are linked through love – an attribute of God – is bound together in sexual relations. (281-282, 1997.3.9)

Even if a husband and wife are of different racial or cultural backgrounds, if the family is unified in God's true love, there will be no racial or cultural clashes among the children. The children will love and value the two cultures and traditions even more than they love their parents. Attempts to solve interracial conflict – a serious issue in many societies around the world – purely through political or economic means can only fail. Racial discrimination begins in the cradle, so a fundamental solution to this problem is possible only through the ideal of a

true family centered on true love.

Thus, the highest ideal is to build true families centering on the true love of one being – that is, God. If humanity had become one with God at the beginning of history, we would have formed true families and practiced love that gives and gives again. We would already have formed a true nation and world of peace.

To end this historical conflict, we must return to God. First, the mind and body of each individual must become one centering on Him. When a true man and a true woman form a true God-centered family, they become able to serve Him in their midst again. The true family centered on true love is the earthly base where God can reside and becomes the starting point of a true nation and a true world of peace. This is how the world of true freedom and happiness will open up. (271-88, 1995.08.22)

We need to stage demonstrations from now on. We must demonstrate to boast about the True Parents, true families, true lineage, and true purity. The True Parents are globalizing their purpose for coming to the earth so that each of you within your families, tribes, peoples, and nations can all become true parents. Individuals establishing true parents, true families, and true purity at level of the family, ethnic people, and nation, bring about globalization. From the national level, the true parental standard can be linked from the individual through to the global and cosmic levels. The true family standard and the lineage of true purity must be linked so that we cross over into the era of true liberation, the age of the world without the Fall. Thus, we need to stage demonstrations that will clear away all fallen things. We should give this work greater priority than witnessing. (298-221, 1999.1.8)

CHAPTER THREE

God and True Parents

Section 1. True Parents: The Cherished Hope of God and Humanity

For humankind, God is the greatest Teacher of teachers. He is the King of all teachers because there is nothing that He does not know. Of all parents, He is the first Parent, that is, the True Parent. Among kings, He is the King of all kings. (41-307, 1971.2.17)

The hope of today's fallen humanity is to meet God's Son. God's Son exists on the level of the individual, family, tribe, race and nation. Human beings need to restore all these levels, but wouldn't that be too much of a task for them? Thus, God sends the Messiah, representing the realm of the son on the national level. The day he is established as the Messiah would be the day God's Son is established on all levels: individual, family, tribe, people and nation. You need to realize that with the advent of the Messiah, this good news will be delivered to the world. Fallen people need to meet God's Son, he who has escaped from Satan's realm of accusation. They must then seek the Parents whom God can love, and after that, the family of such Parents. When they have found that family, they can then go on to reclaim God's love and meet Him. (114-29, 1981.5.14)

Only the perfected Adam can form a perfected love relationship with God and he is the True Father. If I am in the position of the True Father, who would be my partner? It would be a woman, the absolute woman. The global woman has been represented by the bridal church of Christianity. Christianity represents the bridal religion with the central idea being that it is waiting as the bride of the returning Lord, the Messiah. There cannot be two sets of true parents. There can only be one set, just as there is only one absolute man and one absolute woman and not two of each. When these two unique beings meet to become the True Parents they become the true ideal couple of God's ideal of creation. (248-138, 1993.8.1)

The True Parents are the one absolute model for the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world, and represent the one central form of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. God's purpose for establishing the True Parents is to unite the physical and spirit worlds and thus realize the ideal of creation based

upon God's love. As the True Parents become the unified center at all levels from the individual through the global and on, all the way to the cosmic level, the time has come when the individual as well as the family, tribe, people, nation and world can be engrafted to them.

I have been preparing for this work throughout my life with the purpose being to establish God-centered individuals, families, tribes, peoples and nations based on His true love. We should set about our work from now on with the understanding that this is the purpose towards which we should be heading. (266-112, 1994.12.22)

The one day that God promised in the Last Days is Parents' Day, the day on which we can serve True Parents. It is the day on which the countless numbers of people on earth who lost their parents through the Fall, can welcome back their original Parents who bring God's blessings. Human beings can only advance towards God with the purpose of restoration, by passing through the gate of the Parents; prior to passing through this gate they cannot have their hearts connected to God.

In this age one race cannot communicate with another through the heart; neither can the religions, or one family with another. To enable such communication, we must know and form a connection to God's heart, through the connecting intermediaries, the True Parents. Only after finding the original True Parents can we be connected to God's heart. (11-59, 1961.1.1)

Adam and God were driven out of Eden. This meant that the spiritual Father and the earthly father were separated. For this loss, first initiated in the family, to be restored on the global level, there must first come into existence a global extended family. The Christian cultural sphere, in the position of bride and mother, must embrace in its bosom all the sons and daughters, unite Cain and Abel from the East and West, and bond with the returning Lord. Had that happened, the world would have been unified within seven years. The returning Lord is the True Parent. With the emergence of the True Parents, the True Children and the True Family had to come into being. True families that form through the Unification Church need to be organized. (278-79, 1996.5.1)

The failure of Adam and Eve to become true parents in the Garden of Eden was due to the Fall. When all traces of tribulation and persecution disappear through the coming of the True Parents, the world will come seeking their way. The lifestyle of the sons and daughters of the True Parents will be seen as entirely different from that of others. Despite appearing poor they are at peace, despite appearing pitiful, they have hope, and despite appearing to be in difficulties their lives are filled with joy. (201-330, 1990.4.29)

Adam and Eve should have become the true ancestors and the parents of humankind fervently desired by God, and we human beings should have been

born as their descendants. The True Parents of humankind, at the beginning of history, should have manifested the glory of God, and presented themselves in victorious, eternal and substantial form before humanity. Adam and Eve, however, failed to manifest in such a form.

We know only too well that their failure laid the ground for the bitter anguish of a sad history. Through the Fall we became distanced from God's laws, lost our true selves and trampled upon God's heart. And so, to recover our true selves and the world of heart, we have been groping to find our way back through the course of restoration according to the Word.

Fallen humankind fell to a position more evil than that of any other form of creation, a sorrowful position wherein we cannot freely communicate with God. Human beings cannot recover from this fallen state on their own, so God has enlightened them as He carried out the history of re-creation. You should know that by passing through the positions of servant, adopted son and son, victorious dominion was attained and that even the position of the True Parents was restored. (14-239, 1965.1.1)

You are from tribes of the Fall, without notions of God or true family, society, nation and sovereignty. Then how should you act from now on? You should know about the God of glory rather than the One who has been battling with Satan, shedding countless tears for six thousand years since the Fall. You should know the Jesus and Holy Spirit of glory rather than the ones who have been battling for two thousand years. You should know the myriads of believers living in and enjoying glory rather than those battling in the spirit world. You ought to know the believers living amidst glory rather than those persecuted and in pain on earth. Have you seen such believers? You couldn't have. Abraham, Jacob, Moses and Jesus all came to introduce the God of glory yet died in their attempts. They made effort to introduce the glorious True Parents and glorious true sons and daughters, and to create true heavenly citizens of glory. (10-354, 1960.11.27)

From God's point of view, this is a fallen world where no patriots, filial children, saints or divine sons and daughters have existed. Hence, the Messiah must come to the earth and form God's family; children of filial piety will emerge from that family, patriots will emerge from the national foundation, saints from the global foundation, and holy sons and daughters from the cosmic foundation. It is my calling to restore what was lost by the first and second Adams. I need to restore that nation at all costs. If you are indeed Unification Church members, you should be able to say, "We will establish God's Kingdom. We will become patriots, saints and God's divine sons and daughters" even if it means having to give and sacrifice everything spiritually and physically. Only then can God bless you and say, "You are really my true filial children, patriots, saints and divine sons

and daughters. I will bless you." Thence will you inherit everything; that place is the homeland of all Unification Church members. (293-217, 1998.5.26)

In essence, the term "father and son" refers to the original parents and children. If there are no such parents and children, the nation cannot be established. Everyone in the world is yearning for a world of peace, but that world cannot be brought about through the cultures being pursued by today's developed nations. It can only come into being through the True Parents. Even if they were covered with straw mats, carrying bundles of tattered clothes on their backs, dressed in faded, worn-out garments, having just climbed doggedly out of an abyss, fallen human beings need to learn from them, the heart of God.

Then to what degree should the hearts of fallen humanity be engrafted? They must first lay a base where they have been engrafted to their Father, having lived with and inside of him; then they must grow in the womb of their Mother and be born and serve their Parents. It does not end there however. While living together with their Parents, through them they need to form a connection of love to their clan, who in turn connect to their tribe, the tribe to the people, the people to the nation, the nation to the world, the world to the cosmos, and finally the cosmos to God. This basis must be laid. Only then would God acknowledge, "You are My children!" for He would not call anyone who formed a connection of love centering only on themselves, His children. (17-129, 1966.12.11)

Rebirth does not mean that we must be reborn through the bodies of parents who are the descendants of fallen Adam and Eve, but through the bodies of parents who are not in any way connected to the Fall. Otherwise, we cannot return to God.

The root of sin started from Adam and Eve and unless we step over this – by which I mean that unless we are born in a position not in any relation to the original sin – we cannot return to God's presence. No matter how much He tries to save us, if we remain in the fallen realm, we cannot be saved.

That is why God must send to earth True Parents, a pure, unstained Adam and Eve. People can be reborn through them and sever their connection with Satan forever so that he can no longer accuse them. Then God alone will have complete dominion over them and intervene in their affairs. Human beings, with original sin still embedded in them, cannot be restored to positions free from original sin until they are reborn into such a position. (22-269, 1969.5.4)

This world, through its ties with the fallen parents, became the way it is, by inheriting the tradition of separating from God. Therefore, the True Parents must come and establish a new tradition, the way centered on True Parents. Unless this ideology centered on True

Parents comes forth first, globalism cannot emerge. The representative of this ideology centered on True Parents should be God's true son. He should be the internal heir inheriting every aspect of God's heart, as well as the external heir inheriting the right of ownership over all things. In other words, he should be someone who can inherit God's heart and body, and all forms of creation. Only such a son can become God's representative, and only when such a son comes can the Kingdom of Heaven be established.

This ideology centered on True Parents is an ideology centered on God's love. Without love, a person walking around, their chest puffed out – claiming to be the greatest in the world – would be an unhappy person. The tradition of the ideology centered on true love has children follow in the footsteps of their parents eternally wherever they go; younger siblings will follow their elder siblings, and the elder will follow the younger when it is called for in the tradition. Younger-brother and elder-brother nations would relate in the same manner.

Then what sort of a tradition is the ideology centered on God's love? It is one that transcends all national boundaries and the entire horizontal world, and in the act of giving and taking, causes people to be eager to give first and slow to take from others. A world with such a tradition is the ideal world to come. The ideal world is not one where dictates are made on some great authority. Rather, it is a world having the tradition that all human beings are brothers and sisters and where the hearts of all are moved naturally to blend together in the love of God. That is the way the world will be in the future. (21-49, 1968.9.1)

In God's ideal of creation, the four great realms of heart and the three great kingships would blossom and flourish in our families and serve as the base for us to marry and move as one into the state of the original homeland. Everything is encompassed there: True Parents, grandparents, couples and children. This state is not attained in the spirit world. We first attain unity here and then move on to the next world. The educational materials, the textbook guiding us to form the family of peaceful humanity, the royal family, can be found only in the Unification Church. The True Parents have brought this textbook.

The True Parents' family would include grandfather and grandmother, and sons and daughters. What are the True Parents to do? All nations in the world are destined to perish. Aren't America, Britain and Korea all showing signs of perishing?

The True Parents bring the family and the nation under their control. These two responsibilities lie with them and can be accomplished by them sharing true love and sowing true love's seed of life among those who are prepared to be engrafted into God's family. Due to the Fall, people inherited false love and the seed of false life and thus became wild olive trees. They must, therefore,

be engrafted to the true olive tree and true love in order to inherit life based on true love. Otherwise they cannot belong to the True Parents' lineage. (238-73, 1992.11.19)

Don't the established churches of today maintain that Christians will go to heaven just by believing in Jesus? We say that we will build, and then go to the Kingdom of Heaven. The Kingdom of Heaven is empty at present. Since the ideal form of family as originally intended has not been realized and all attempts to create the ideal family have failed, the Messiah must come and complete the family ideal at his Second Advent. The Messiah at the time of the Second Advent is the True Parent. Next, he comes as the King of the true nation, of heaven and earth. (238-44, 1992.11.19)

I am the True Parent who has pioneered as the representative of all of heaven and earth, but that has been only like a seed. When a seed is sown, roots grow, then the stem, and finally buds emerge. It will not grow continuously, for thousands of years. It will grow only as much as nature allows, and then it will begin to wither. The seed allows the fruit to be born. (300-246, 1999.3.23)

You have been given the victorious authority to restore your hometowns – the places to which you had been unable to return – a place where the true nation has now been established through the True Parents. You should know that this is something to be truly grateful for, which cannot be exchanged even for heaven and earth. You should follow that path back to your hometowns with tears in your eyes. If you complain, you will be cursed. Your ancestors would strike you, and your sons and daughters would know no moment of peace. The time is coming when it is up to you whether you will be afflicted or cured. (219-220, 1991.8.29)

Fallen human beings were born from Satan and originated from his love. Consequently, they could not be bound to the love of God and True Parents, and as a result could not become their sons and daughters. When all is said and done, who is the Messiah? He is the True Parent. Then why is the True Parents' love essential? Because life cannot begin until people are reborn through that love. Life commences through love. Since human life first began in a fallen state, that life must be denied and a connection made to the True Parents. True Parents' love is thus required. This is why fallen humankind needs the Messiah. (65-314, 1973.3.4)

Were the Savior to come to the earth, the individual, family, people, nation and world, sought after by God, can be restored to life in his presence. For this reason, the many races looking to the world of faith are yearning for him today, crying out, "Our Savior, please come!" This is because he is in the position of the perfected global True Parent and by attending him; they will become his sons and daughters. Raised by him as

such children, they can in time become true parents themselves when married. (151-194, 1962.12.15)

Unification Church members can think of the world as their nation and all humankind as brethren sharing the one common lineage from God. This is the Unification Church movement. I did not perish in my forty-year course of struggle because the ideas and principles I cherish are those that God cherishes. Since we share the same position, He upholds them, and thus I have not perished. In this vein you should not harbor self-centered thoughts. If you can live in the place of the sons and daughters of God and the True Parents, transcending all national boundaries, all accomplishments of the future will be yours. (224-338, 1991.12.29)

Those who do not know God's ideals or Unificationist concepts will fall into hell. They will be disgraced. At this time and age you are in the position of children. In the Old Testament Age people were brothers and sisters, but the era of restoring the birthright of the firstborn as siblings has passed. The messianic heart is parental. After receiving the Blessing, look around you at the fallen people. Satan is perishing. (189-278, 1989.5.1)

Relative to any of the saints, sages, filial children and patriots in history, in loving God, I am fundamentally different. I am not based on this world. In today's fallen world you cannot find even one family that can boast of having parents who have bequeathed God's original love, life and lineage to their sons and daughters on a completely new dimension. The Messiah was sent with the mission of making God's dreams of such a family come true. (206-59, 1990.10.3)

The True Parents are essential for bringing the family under control. Since Satan has completely destroyed the family, there must be a Savior to bring the chaotic family under control. Satan has brought the nation to ruin. His ultimate purpose is to destroy the family and bring down the nation so that God's own family and nation can never be established. The True Parents are needed to take the family back from Satan, and the Savior is needed to recover from Satan all that he has destroyed, and create the nation desired by God. (237-21, 1992.11.10)

As you are well aware, Rev. and Mrs. Moon are known across the world as the True Parents. If it is true that our couple is connected to God as the True Parents through true love, true life and true lineage, please remember that, beginning from "the True Family and you," God's Kingdom of liberation, freedom, unification and happiness will blossom forth upon the earth. (270-246, 1995.6.7)

In order for God to stand proudly in the liberated position based on the ideal of love and cry out, "I am the owner of the liberated creation in heaven and on earth!" the True Parents must form ties of love – a blood relationship – on

earth. Moreover, sons and daughters should be born from that blood relationship. You must know that the Creator's hope and the hope of all human history has been to establish the one nation and world through the family, based on such blood-related sons and daughters. (202-198, 1990.5.24)

The True Parent of all parents is God. He is our True Parent. The King of the true family, nation and world is our Parent. We need to usher in an era of everlasting peace and prosperity in which we serve Him. Like the Korean song that begins "Moon, Oh Moon, you bright Moon, Moon loved by the poet Lee Taebaek..." our hope is that humankind will attend our True Parents on earth as the millennia unfold. You should realize that it is the mission and purpose of us all in the Unification Church to fulfill this hope. (277-89, 1996.3.31)

The core and the center that determine the standard of value, for the innumerable forms of existence in motion in heaven and on earth, are the True Parents. They are the key figures against whom all things of creation measure their hope so as to determine their value. God is with the True Parents at all times, for He too is a similar being. He is the Cause of the Principle in pursuit of the historical fruits of history, the Center of this era, and the Master of the future. The True Parents are the central headquarters God can indwell. (30-237, 1970.3.23)

The True Parents are God's body, just as we have a conscience and a body. The point of origin of the universe and the very first starting point, are God and the True Parents. True love starts from that point. What about humankind? God is the mind of Adam and Eve. This is a multi-dimensional mind and not a two-dimensional mind. It is impossible for either a multi-dimensional mind or a two-dimensional mind to decide their positions for themselves. Their eternal positions are determined by the power of love. With the unity of God and True Parents everything becomes unified. If the conscience is in pain, the body will also be in pain; this is unavoidable for they are as one. (192-200, 1989.7.4)

The man called the True Parent is the greatest son of all in God's mind. He is the son who has perfected His eternal counterpart and who will leave behind a life history that is like God's textbook, demonstrating what the life of such a son should be like. (232-138, 1992.7.3)

There is a world of difference between the value of Rev. Moon, the True Parent, in God's perspective and yours. From the Principle's point of view these perspectives are poles apart. God has been yearning for the True Parent from the time of creation throughout history. Before fallen people ever began wishing for True Parents, it was God, their Creator, who wished for them. They were His cherished goal before the Creation.

This created universe is said to be about 25 billion years old. Based on that

time span the mainstream of religious history continued until today, flowing toward the earthly realization of the ideal conceived by God even before the Creation. Judaism represented the first chosen people, Christianity the second and now the Unification Church the third. In the course of that protracted history, many were sacrificed to achieve that singular purpose.

In the True Parents dwells the love of God, a love that was never before imagined or thought of by humankind. Centering on God's love their parent-child relationship is established. When praying to God, you cannot call upon Him directly. You have to go through the True Parents. And end your prayer by offering it in the name of the True Parents. This is not as simple as it seems. It is not as simple as adding on the words out of habit. The starting point where these ideals are realized is on earth, not in heaven. You should know that a new heaven and earth will come into being in the physical world. The relationship to the True Parents is formed, not in a vague world like the spirit world, but in the physical world. The True Parents come to the earth in substantial form. Thus, they can answer when we call upon them and sympathize with us when we face difficulties. You have no idea what a blessing it is for humankind to be able to meet with the True Parents on this horizontal plane. (31-77, 1970.4.19)

Originally, those living on earth would have been born from God's true love, experienced the blood relationship of true children born from True Parents, and spread this lineal foundation worldwide vertically. Based on such a central family, others would have been connected as reciprocal families and shaped the world; the physical and spirit worlds would have been established in such a fashion. That would be the world of the ideal of creation based upon God's love. (184-195, 1989.1.1)

Your center is the True Parents; they in turn are centered upon Jesus. All peoples in history must become as one centering on the True Parents. From there the traditional origin of the future bringing about unification is set up. It is also the central point of the number three. Then what sort of a group are Unification Church members? They are the ones who will be taught the doctrines of the True Parents and become their sons and daughters. The doctrine that you need to become the sons and daughters of the True Parents is taught only in the Unification Church.

The Unification Church is also the place where you can serve the True Parents, the very center sought after throughout history and required by this era. You are able to inherit this bond with the True Parents who are the origin of the future. Accordingly, you are their historic fruit and the historic center. You will be the origin, the ancestors, of the future. You need to realize, however, that this can only come to be when you establish a relationship with the True Parents that can unite your heart with theirs. If you have offered prayers

like this with such a heart, you will not be disgraced.

Through what means will this unification come? It will come through true parental love. With what should it be unified? It should be with the sons and daughters. Who are these sons and daughters? They are those centered upon true parental love. To put it in another way, they can be likened to the sons and daughters born of the Adam and Eve who have not fallen.

In unity we can become the sons and daughters of God's Kingdom. The place wherein one is born today from the love relationship of the three ages, is where one becomes a child of the True Parents. Because humankind is fallen, it must trace back the course of history and restore that position. (26-199, 1969.10.25)

What would happen if you lived with the True Parents? Individual, familial, tribal, national, and global life and cosmic life as well as the life of attendance to God are all interconnected. Centered on the True Parents' family, the tribe and people would also constitute our family. The peoples, nation, world, cosmos and God would all be ours. You need to understand this concept. Everyone would be one with the True Parents.

The True Parents are as one with God. He wishes to live together with all humanity in the world, not just with one religious denomination. The desire to live together with the universe and the ideal world, centered on love, are manifestations of God's ideal of creation, demonstrated in the lifestyle begun by and practiced in His family. (287-142, 1997.9.14)

Adam and Eve, resembling God in external form, were to become as one with Him after passing on to the spirit world. Without going through the True Parents you cannot completely inherit God's external form. Moreover, since God could not establish a world of love through Adam and Eve, restoration involves manifesting love through the True Parents. (107-173, 1980.4.27)

Parents are causing a commotion, shouting, "If Rev. Moon is the True Parent, what does that make us?" In the Bible it is written that the coming Lord is the true bridegroom. Then what does that make all other bridegrooms? They become false bridegrooms. That is just how it is. The Bible talks of only two people, the bride and the groom. In the original Garden of Eden the ideal groom was Adam and the ideal bride Eve. They were the ideal couple created by God. (203-98, 1990.6.17)

Amazingly, the True Parents have been revealed amidst the current pitiful American family circumstance. Americans have come to know the True Parents and, also amazingly, discovered their true brothers and sisters, their true families. The true family is desired by the true United States, the true world and the true universe. Americans, however, have not known parental love, and this has been the cause of their anguish. (149-304, 1986.12.14)

A king should sacrifice his children and even himself for the families in his kingdom. The virtuous lord is the one who fulfills his responsibility to feed and guide his subjects even at such sacrifice. Mothers and sons should become as one and then unite with their king. When this is done, the king should, in the place of their parents, invest everything he has over and over again to feed them with the parental love. Such a king is a virtuous lord. (278-173, 1996.5.5)

Once there are true parents, true children, a true family, tribe, nation and world will automatically arise from them. Among these terms, "true parents" is the most important. (125-117, 1983.3.14)

Section 2. God the Vertical Parent, True Parents the Horizontal Parent

The term True Parents began in God's mind before the creation. You should know, that as all ideals were created by God under the head of the ideal of love centered upon the True Parents, they too reflect His desires before the Creation.

Vast numbers of people were sacrificed in the course of God's providence to establish the True Parents. God created a great number of religions in His dispensation and they typify the angelic world, Cain, Abel, the child by a concubine, the adopted child, the stepmother, and the adoptive parents' positions. Finally, He created the True Mother and True Father religion.

In conformity with the overall will of God's providence Protestantism and Catholicism took on the responsibility of leading the world. If the entire religious realm had been united, one nation and one world of peace would have been established. Christianity stood in the mainstream of the many religions attempting to fulfill God's will, by pursuing this one world of peace.

Christianity teaches about True Parents and love. It has taught about "brother" and "bridegroom" in relation to Jesus, and "parent" in relation to God. Since Christianity is completely based on the ideal of the family, it has taught us how to perfect in full measure the family idealized by God. Hence, it could rise above all other religions and unify the world.

Then who is Christ at the Second Advent? As the True Father and True Mother were lost in Eden, he is the one to come upon the earth as the True Father. He will become as one with God in heart, lineage and flesh, establish the position of True Mother, and form a family centered on this oneness. The Messiah's family will be the first to live with and serve God. The Messiah solidifies the position of the perfected Adam. The Kingdom of Heaven will be established only after the perfected Adam and Eve marry, live on earth serving God, have sons and daughters centered upon Him, bring forth His clan and live on earth together with them, and then, finally, move on into the heavenly world together with God. (282-51, 1997.3.10)

If the invisible end of the needle is God, the visible end is our human ancestors. God is the vertical Parent. We might think it wonderful if God could have sons and daughters in the spirit world, but reproduction does not occur there.

Why did God create the horizontal parents in the form of Adam and Eve? They were created as the production plant to multiply the citizens of His kingdom. Since there is only one focal point on the vertical, reproduction cannot take place. What would happen if reproduction were carried out at the very center? All that was created up to that point would have to be pushed out. Therefore, reproduction is impossible on the vertical for there is only one point. (214-204, 1991.2.2)

It is not God who gives birth to children but the True Parents, and the couple standing in the position of the parents of horizontal true love is the Unification Church's True Parents. They are the parents with horizontal love standing at a right angle before God, the True Parent with vertical love. Hence, the love of both sets of parents is necessary. On one hand is the Parent, the Creator, and on the other hand are the physical parents created as the objects of God in pursuit of the ideal. With God in the position of the spiritual Parent and the True Parents in the position of the physical parents, human beings were supposed to be born at the center of both vertical and horizontal loves to allow for the fulfillment of this essential aspect of humanity

There exists our vertical self that enables us to freely relate to vertical love. This is the mind. Until now the nature of mind has remained unknown, even within Buddhism. However, we in the Unification Church do know about it. We depict a spherical ideal with its center defined by a horizontal, vertical and front-to-back love axis. As that spherical ideal operates through God's ideal of creation there can be no loss of energy running through east, west, north and south. Whenever in operation, only good will come; there will be neither evil nor conflict. (182-258, 1988.10.23)

Your mind is your vertical self and your body is your horizontal self. Through true love the two must become one. Are not your bodies and minds in conflict? Why is that? It is due to the Fall. How then can they be reunified? Without true love they cannot unite. When they are united through true love, like God, you can go straight to heaven. There will be no need for a savior, for you will be able to enter as you are. (201-123, 1990.3.27)

The King in heaven as the vertical center occupies the position of the mind, and the king on earth, that of the body. The ideal marriage of the perfected Adam and Eve would be both God's marriage and theirs, with their bodies and God at the center. (245-89, 1993.2.28)

The horizontal foundation can be laid only when Cain and Abel unite and return to God. What is needed for that?

They must go through the True Parents. The history that has led up to the advent of the True Parents, of the Lord that consummated at the complete union of the two, is spiritual Christian history. (34-93, 1970.8.29)

You should have the qualifications necessary to enter the heaven where I am going. To enter you need to fulfill at least one of the points I have instructed. What would happen if you achieved that? You would then become worthy to connect to the love centering on the true God, the true Parents, true nation, true world and true heaven. In other words, you would earn the right to serve God as your own Father, the Father of the individual, family, nation, world and all of heaven and earth. In other words, you will inherit the authority to serve Him as your individual, family, tribal, racial, national and global Father. This is because He exists to become the Parent and stand in the position of the universal Parent.

Therefore He is the Father of the individual and at the same time, of the family, tribe, people, nation, world and heaven. This is the case in both the physical and spirit worlds. (98-224, 1978.8.1)

My possessions do not belong to me. I think of them as belonging to humanity as the original base for the condition determining ownership in oneness with God's love; they are free from the invasion of the Fall and Satan's realm of accusation. They were inherited through an Abel-type love on God's side and ultimately will come under God's ownership through the True Parents on earth. Hence, if the Unification Church buys something, it should not be resold, until after establishing that the True Parents themselves have cast it away. Once I have bought something, I would never resell it even if I were reduced to a beggar's status. Those who sell our possessions behind my back in disregard of this understanding will all be caught in the end and suffer the consequences.

It was determined that the True Parents take ownership in oneness with God's love and that all Blessed Families have a path leading them toward the position of the Parents. Yet they waited to receive ownership from the Parents centered on God's love.

Today, by us celebrating Parents' Day together, ownership has been connected to you horizontally, in this era of God's direct dominion, whereas before it moved vertically from all things of the creation to the children. From this place the seven stages of individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos must be completed and connected to the central line. They are all meant to be connected, seven stages of man and the seven stages of woman. (137-270, 1986.1.3)

The Savior comes to the earth to seek his Bride. He needs to find the true woman, thereby connecting vertical and horizontal, and achieve God-centered, unfallen perfection for the first time in history. Through the external True Parents, God the internal Father can come to earth and link us to the road leading

directly to heaven.

From the outset of history, no one has been persecuted as much as I or faced as much opposition. In one era I had to be persecuted worldwide on the individual, family and tribal levels.

The Unification Church tribe must be related to all peoples in all 160 nations of the world through the global association of Blessed Families. That is the work of restoration. We need to first carry out this work tribally, next on the level of a people and then nationally. (176-332)

You stand on the victorious foundation laid by me based on the global condition, and so you should be heirs to my heart. Inheriting that heart, you should be able to claim, "Undoubtedly I am a child of the True Parents and, although born in the position of Abel, I will subjugate Cain's realm in this world without fail." This is because in the spiritual aspect, the foundation of victory has been completely laid. Power itself in the physical world will weaken and can be pushed out. (100-319, 1978.10.22)

You are not just one individual. If you have the idea that you are the center representing the entire world, it will be so. Anyone with such thoughts represents the world. Children represent their parents and in the same way the parents their clan. You must be grateful. We cannot simply say that the providence is for the sake of the individual. Being saddled with this debt, you should learn to feel ashamed, so much that you cannot even look around you. You need to pass through such a stage for at least a moment. You may consider yourselves fortunate for being born the children of your parents and practice filial piety; you may have the notion that all history came to be the way it is for your own sakes, but you must love your nation and the world more than your parents. Such is the mindset you should have as you go on. Please bear in mind that those with such a consciousness can become the sons and daughters of the True Parents. (251-47, 1993.10.15)

The True Parents have come into this world that we are living in; it is inhabited by their sons and daughters as well as those of fallen parents. Originally, through the flesh and blood of the True Parents all were to have been God's beloved children. Through the Fall, however, they became fallen sons and daughters instead, and so the Savior, Christ at the Second Advent must come again as the True Parent, to clear away all the wrongdoings of our first ancestors. He must come and restore the firstborn son who is already born. That firstborn son was like an illegitimate son, made illegitimate by a switch of his bloodline apart from God's. He would have inherited God's lineage through original love, but due to the Fall he inherited another bloodline. Still, God cannot cast him away. (210-360, 1990.12.27)

The work you are engaged in is that of creation. Your life is the life of love seeking the path to console God and come in contact with the world of His love. In

such a life you will not feel tired though you may work your whole life striving to fulfill God's will. Live with the notion that you will make, from what God has created just for the fun of it, souvenirs to take to heaven with you. This is what the True Parents are doing as they explore nature and all the sights in the world, be that on the sea, the five oceans and six continents, or in the rivers, mountains, and various other land forms.

Will you also follow their lifestyle, working to liberate the realm of nature, from its lament, with God's love, or will you choose to stay stuck in a big city, centered on yourselves, destroying the environment, creating pollution, and being parents who block the way for your children to develop their soulfulness? After considering the two options, Unification Church members naturally choose to follow my way of loving nature, and so it will be possible to build the ideal Kingdom of Heaven wherein cities will be decentralized and naturalized, and where we will live in harmony with nature. (288-72, 1997.10.31)

I can truly feel that God is alive. There were 33 leaders in the Korean Independence Movement. Korea's antipode is Uruguay and their independence movement also had 33 leaders. There are thirty-three nations in Latin America and the Caribbean and in the region of Jardim wherein I am currently working are also thirty-three towns. It is quite surprising! There are thirty-three cities in the vicinity. I find that really mysterious. In light of the Will of the providence, these things occur because God is alive. Therefore, there must be thirty-three at all events. Including oneself there would be thirty-four. This is very important. You must unite with your national messiahs by any means. Do not complain, but practice absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. (281-45, 1997.2.14)

Section 3. True Parents Who Liberate God

Tragically, the true family idealized by God was not realized. In the Garden of Eden the serpent seduced Eve, she in turn seduced Adam, and thus selfish false love was sown in this world. Human sin and misfortune resulted from the illicit love shared by our first ancestors Adam and Eve, by Satan's action.

We need to restore the individual and the true family and expand true love and goodness globally. Knowing that this truth alone could unify conflicting denominations and establish God's Kingdom on earth, I disclosed this revelation to Christians fifty years ago. I had no intention of creating another separate denomination.

Nevertheless, God's message was rejected and opposed by established religious groups. I was left with no choice but to lay another foundation through the toils of the last forty-three years. Setting out in 1954 in Korea under the name of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity, I dispatched missionaries to Japan, the United States, and European and oth-

er countries throughout the world. On that foundation, my wife and I have founded many organizations so that the principles of the True Family could be examined and utilized in the fields of academia, media, religion, the arts and industry. These organizations create examples and models by which the world could be restored through indemnity. (288-168, 1997.11.27)

How can you restore everything lost in the Garden of Eden? You can do it through my idea of returning to your hometowns. You must return to your hometowns. In this same vein I dispatched tribal and national messiahs. God was able to send only one messiah, Jesus, and he was to liberate his tribe. At this point in time, on behalf of God I have dispatched national messiahs to 185 nations. These national messiahs are working on a level higher than the tribal messiah level at the time of Jesus.

Such a concept did not exist at Jesus' time. Everything was lost on the cross. With no family he could not enter heaven and instead had to stay in paradise. In God's original kingdom, the connection extends from the family to the tribe, people and nation. Jesus was unable to form a family. Adam was driven out of the Garden of Eden, so the family could not be established there. In order to restore this, the True Parents came forth and dispatched messiahs on the national foundation, a level higher than the lost family level. (282-29, 1997.2.16)

God and the positions of the true man, true woman, true couple and true children were lost through the Fall. Everything was shattered to pieces. Fallen people cannot become as one with God. Therefore, the true man and true woman who can serve Him must come together in oneness, become a true couple that cannot be separated or divided by anything, and give birth to true sons and daughters. That is to say, they must become God-centered True Parents, true spouses and true children and achieve the four-position foundation.

Thereupon, the True Parents should have God come and dwell with them and become the center of the whole family. The lifestyle they set up in the family should be one that everyone in the world can follow. The view of the nation perceived there, the view of the world discussed there, and the ideology taught there, should be the views of the nation and world and the ideology that become commonly shared by all peoples of the world.

Because this did not come to be, however, the world became the scene of confusion we see today. Humanity has nonetheless moved towards the one door, hoping for the time of the Last Days. The desire of the True Parents is for humanity to establish the God-centered True Family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos. When that is done, even God's love can be restored. (19-205, 1968.1.7)

What is the source of God's bitter sorrow? It lies in the fact that, though He has shed tears for His people and

the earth, He had no occasion to hold on to and shed tears of joy over His victorious son, the son for whom He always yearned. God's anguish and sorrow stemmed from not having anyone whom He could acknowledge as His victorious son. Not only that, though He wandered endlessly to find His lost sons and daughters, none came to God and wept together with Him. (4-290, 1958.9.14)

On God's Day, God wants humanity to fulfill the perfection of His true love. To do this, humankind needs to stand in the position of the perfected object before the perfected Subject. The True Parents stand in this position. God needs to be liberated by true love. Through whom is this to be achieved? It is through the True Parents. Knowing this, I am able to liberate Him. Just as I, taking the position of minus, attained oneness with God as the Subject partner, you too should also occupy the minus position and attain oneness substantially, with the True Parents in the plus position. You will thereby become free to advance to the position of oneness with God. Such is the way of the principle of re-creation. (275-333, 1996.1.1)

Through the Blessing, I can put up a protective fence around the one God-centered clan, nation, world and cosmos, and thus liberate God. Who is in charge of pulling out the nail driven so deeply into the hearts of God and the True Parents on earth? The True Parents are in charge and the individual who will complete that work in the end is the True Mother. A world tour is being conducted with her at its head. All women should now stand in her place. (301-169, 1999.4.25)

History today is flowing in the direction of establishing the Parents. As God exists, there must be True Parents who can practice filial piety before Him and fulfill His purpose of creation, that is, the purpose of salvation. At the same time angels should pledge loyalty to the sons and daughters of these true parents. Such were the original rules of creation, but they were broken. Therefore, we need to redeem and indemnify that. What was lost should be recovered in its original form. (15-242, 1965.10.17)

Rather than belonging to your parents as their sons and daughters, you should first become God's. Were it not for the Fall, that would have been natural, but the order was reversed. At present, we have not yet become His children. Although we sprang from a different root, we must be cut off from that root, at the very base of the trunk, and a new bud attached or engrafted in. That must be centered on True Parents. Then, on the conditional basis of having become the sons and daughters of the True Parents, God can be liberated. (166-306, 1987.6.14)

Christianity is divided into hundreds of conflicting denominations. Can such a body of strife become God's limbs and His foothold? No. From this perspective, there is not one denomina-

tion with which He can do as He pleases. Then where would God go with the idea to establish His kingdom on earth? We come to the conclusion that He would have no choice but to seek out a family. If, in that family, the parents united directly with Him, and their children completely united with them, then God would be the sole owner of that family. The members of that family would be the members of His family and the possessions of that family would belong to Him. The question, however, is whether there is such a family. (96-15, 1978.1.1)

The event that overcomes and terminates Adam and Eve's historic failure to marry in the Garden of Eden, that actualizes the True Parents, is the Marriage Supper of the Lamb. When the True Parents are wedded in that most sacred ceremony, their sons and daughters will also be able to get married within that tradition. Everything of the world of love desired by God would begin to flow, encompassed in the ideal of the True Parents. The family in which we can reside as the liberated princes and princesses of love, as the link from the center to all other environmental elements, is our family – the family of God, the family of humankind, our family! As that family grows and flourishes, it will come to represent the nation that can love God and humanity and grow to become His kingdom of love, peace and equality. (296-237, 1998.11.10)

Did not false parents emerge from the Fall? Thus, true parents must appear. Because the false parents came into existence based on Satan, the original ideal of creation and the coming of the God-centered true parents, still remains to be fulfilled. Fallen Adam must be redeemed in order to realize the original ideal of true parents on earth. What would it take to accomplish this? If humankind had not been born from the false parents who fell, they would have become God's sons and daughters and original true parents. God, in accord with His principle of creation, will not abandon the human race that came to its fallen state due to false love. (208-303, 1990.11.21)

You may be a member of a family of patriots, but that would be of no use without God's Kingdom. However loyal a subject you might be to your country, if God's nation is not established, there would be no foundation for you to settle in history. Hence the nation should be restored through the family, the world through the nation, and the cosmos through the world. When this is done, you will be the masters of the cosmos.

Thus, individuals must invest themselves in their families, giving and forgetting, while sacrificing themselves for the sake of others. They are to sacrifice themselves for their families and their families for their tribes; similarly, tribes for their people, people for their nation, nations for the world, the world for the cosmos, and the cosmos for God. Once this cycle reaches God, He will sacrifice Himself to requite us. What we give is not lost. When we have given everything for God and forgotten,

He will take possession of it and add on His love, and afterwards recompense us with the heavenly and earthly worlds. (297-211, 1998.11.20)

We need to know that human liberation is God's liberation. The liberation of your families, clans and nations consoles God who sorrowed over the loss of His family, clan and nation. In my life, I will recover the lost cosmos and dissolve God's anguish. I have no wishes or thoughts for myself, except to practice absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. If asked to die, I will head straight for death. Even at the risk of my life I will not turn back.

In this way, I must fulfill God's desires and liberate Him forever from Satan. I must become the son who can liberate Him from His bondage, from the prison where He is entrapped. Only then can our piteous God, who suffers the bitter anguish of not having achieved liberation in the family, finally achieve liberation in the world and cosmos. Only then can He be restored to His position and establish His sovereignty based on the laws of the love of the family, tribe, people, nation and cosmos. (300-72, 1999.2.21)

Section 4. True Parents Are the Way to Heaven

If Adam and Eve were to be the parents standing in God's stead, then even I am spiritually the parent representing the earth in His stead. All the people who died and went on to the next world followed in Adam and Eve's footsteps. From their place in the angelic world they could freely support you, but as they were born from false parents rather than true, they could not directly assist the True Parents. However, as the failures of the archangel have been indemnified, they may now step into the position of children, similar to the time when Adam and Eve were still in their growth period. From there, they are free to provide support at will. Hence, the spirit world will help to hasten the coming of the day of the collapse of this world. (146-312, 1986.7.20)

Mothers and fathers should love each other and their children and educate them by manifesting themselves as representatives of the nation, the cosmos, their relatives, their mothers, fathers, brothers and sisters. This must take place on earth. They must set an example of how to love the cosmos, world and nation. They must be the textbooks that reveal the future.

That is not all. To become owners you need to learn the heart of parents, teachers, and God, and inherit the right of ownership. After joining the church, we are reborn, educated, and finally perfected. When we are fully matured, we will be able to understand everything. You will then say, "I want to stand in the position of the owner." You will inherit everything, for that is what being the owner means. Wherever it is, it comes to the same thing. Such is the mainstream ideology. If you go this way, you will meet the true teacher, and if you go that way, you will meet the True Parents.

All is the same. Hence, the Kingdom of Heaven is the same everywhere. (205-21, 1990.7.15)

After inheriting true love and simultaneously true lineage from the True Parents, you must pass on God's true love. This is your pride. Those who lack this ability cannot go to heaven; they won't get in. Through marriage itself you may inherit your parents' love. Due to the Fall, however, you didn't inherit the true lineage. This is possible only through the Blessing. The root of the fallen world is the fallen parents. Thus, you need to be grafted anew to the True Parents to inherit a new true lineage. You should realize that it is through the Unification Church Blessing that you can do so. (162-63, 1987.3.27)

Have you heard of rebirth meaning to be born again? When Nicodemus came one night to Jesus and asked him about the meaning of being born again, Jesus asked in reply, "Are you Israel's teacher and do not understand rebirth?" Rebirth means to be born again, to be reborn. What does that mean? It signifies a person born of false parents being born again through true parents. To inherit God's love, life and lineage when being reborn, one should be totally void of relationships to the love, life and blood ties of the satanic world – so much so that one is completely unconscious of them. (211-306, 1991.1.1)

In reversing the Fall, Adam and Jesus must unite with the True Parents to restore the positions of formation, growth and perfection. The spirit and physical worlds must unite Adam's children and Jesus' children; together they must all enter the realm of Christ at the Second Advent where they can become the perfected Adam's children. (219-241, 1991.9.8)

You have parents, children and all the things of creation and Home Church is the expanded version of all these together. These three were lost by Adam through the Fall and must therefore be restored simultaneously and offered to God. What was lost should be recovered and dedicated back to Him through the True Parents; it would then pass through Him and come to us. That which was lost must be recovered, offered to Him and bequeathed back to us by the True Parents. Only then can you have your own homes and world. The foundation for it is the Home Church. This is the offering. This is the altar on which the three sacrifices are offered. (101-338, 1978.11.12)

You cannot regard any of your possessions as belonging to you. Those who do are Satan. Those having such a mind are Satan. Everything must be returned to God as belonging to Him originally. They cannot however be returned as they are. They can only be returned to Him after passing through the archangel, Eve, and Adam. What this means is that they must be returned through the True Parents. The clothes you have on now are not yours either.

To form a family you should not

claim any rights, or harbor concepts, of ownership. You should rise above the feeling of ownership, that you are the parents of so-and-so. You should rise above the concept of ownership over what you have. Everything should come under God's ownership, and since He originally created human beings to be the lords of creation, centering on and passing through the descent of ownership of the True Parents, at each of the three stages you need to be certified by God to be able to inherit the right of ownership from the True Parents. Know that only then will the era of your right of ownership come. (120-208, 1982.10.16)

In order for you to belong to God's Kingdom, you need to offer Him everything you have: your assets representing the Old Testament, your children representing the New Testament and even yourselves before. Let Him choose to have ownership over you and let Him tell you, "Your family, belongings and children are mine," and then receive His acknowledgment that indeed they are. Next, He can claim "I have no more need of them!" and bequeath them all back to you through the True Parents. Then your right of ownership over the spiritual and physical worlds can be determined, not the right of ownership of love, but the right of ownership over all things. Just as everything fell into fallen ownership through fallen love, the right of ownership over everything will be determined through original love. (121-254, 1982.10.27)

To return the right of ownership to God, you need to go through the True Parents' name. There is no other way back. Hence, only the Unification Church can unify the world. Even without our prompting, people will line up to be the first to register. The time will come when they will fight among themselves to decide who will be first, second or third. (198-242, 1990.2.3)

The path that individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations, the physical world, and even the spirit world must follow has to pass through the True Parents. You need to realize that in order to pave such a way, they have had to tread the path of suffering throughout their lives. (129-18, 1983.10.4)

True Adam is the True Parent. The True Parents will pass down their language to the True Children. That is the Principle. The True Parent did not come down as Rev. Moon. He came from heaven sent by God. Hence, it can be presumed that those who do not know God cannot recognize the True Parents. (129-20, 1983.10.4)

The sons and daughters born from you could be superior to the Messiah Jesus, and yet God prepared for four thousand years for his birth. Did Jesus' parents have him after their marriage was blessed? You had your children after being blessed by the True Parents. (146-22, 1986.6.1)

It is not I who insist on the Blessing.

I have done everything as instructed by God and then made this logical system indirectly. Had it been my idea, I would have told you so through my own lips. There is no way to deny it. (231-155, 1992.6.2)

For humankind to be restored, the women of the world need to unite absolutely with the True Parents in the mother's womb. Through Eve's fall, humankind lost their true parents and God. Through their restoration, they came to know about God and the True Parents and must now unite with them. All human beings should have been born from true parents, but were instead born from false parents and consequently became false parents themselves. The world will be resurrected and liberated only when a movement is created where all women can love the world as the True Parents do. That movement is the Women's Federation for World Peace.

Through it families can be dealt with globally. Within the family, children should unite with their mother, and then with their father, but the father is a false father. Therefore, when the True Father comes, the mother and children must unite with him and educate the false father. In this way, the whole family can be unified and the original family restored. The mother and children must save the father. (244-161, 1993.2.1)

Of all human beings born on earth, not one was born from true parents. There is no way for those who were born without inheriting the True Parents' lineage to enter heaven. From the perspective of God's ideal of creation, heaven is reserved for those who have inherited the True Parents' lineage, served them as the owner of the kingship of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven, lived together with them in a love-centered, blood-related relationship, and married and had children. Conversely, those who have not experienced the love of the realm of God's imperial family cannot enter heaven. (250-49, 1993.10.11)

When the victorious True Parents and the Blessed Families in a nation become one, that nation will be restored. If the member states of the United Nations were to unite with the True Parents in a decision at the UN, they would be restored overnight. All that would remain to be accomplished would be their blessing. The Fall came about through a wrongful marriage. Therefore, if a rightful marriage were conducted by God and the True Parents, the couple would be completely restored. As the messiah at the Second Advent has triumphed over all, Satan has no power whatsoever to cross over this horizontal line. (255-20, 1994.2.27)

What mortifies Satan most is the fact that you have seen the True Parents and that they have taught you that you are their children. Education like this is what he loathes and dreads the most. The question then becomes how to pass on the tradition. (66-142, 1973.4.22)

Your hope lies nowhere other than

in becoming the True Parents' sons and daughters of true filial piety. The True Parents will become the king and queen of all kings and queens under heaven. Hence, this is the place where the centers of all hope – past, present and future – can be brought to fruition. (46-167, 1971.8.13)

From the perspective of the Principle, all forms of creation are to be brought under dominion on the foundation where true parental love has been fulfilled; the most important question therefore is whether you have definitely fulfilled that love. (67-148, 1973.6.1)

For adopted children to advance to the position of begotten children, the jealousy the archangel felt at the time of Adam and Eve must be indemnified. To do this, spiritual children should value and love the physical children of their spiritual parents more than their own lives. Next, they should restore the satanic world. These are essential points. What this means is that you cannot enter unless you have loved my children. Ask yourselves whether you loved them from the time they were in the womb. Have you loved me, God's will and the children of my body even more than yourselves? The question is whether you loved them more than yourselves. Jesus asked, "Did you love me more than your own sons and daughters, your family?" If you have not done so, you cannot proceed, and should indemnify this failure for three years starting now. (127-128, 1983.5.5)

The families of Joseph and Zechariah should have united to lay the foundation for Jesus to stand on as the tribal messiah. If they had done so, the nation was to be restored through indemnity; but this did not happen. The Unification Church is currently laying the people-level foundation to restore the nation. We stand on the basis of having passed through the tribal age. You are serving the True Parents and are called their children. You can now be their children – not their legitimate children (in the traditional and legal sense), but also not adopted children (for adopted children have no blood relationship with the parent). You now stand in the position of the child by a concubine. If this position were not established there would be no way for us to save this world. We have crossed over the tribal realm and are heading towards the realm of one people. It was within that realm that you were blessed. (141-209, 1986.2.22)

Though He created all things, God is not in the position of the owner. Originally, all forms of creation were destined to become God's possessions at the time and place where they attained oneness through love. The True Parents, established as belonging to God, have established ownership over the children of the True Parents, by virtue of their birth through the love of the True Parents and on the foundation of connection to the love of the True Parents. When the foundation of all things is similarly connected to love through that ownership over the sons and daughters, the creation

would then belong to them. (166-286)

The bitter sorrow of Jesus and Adam must be dispelled. Through human error, Jesus and Adam could not attain true parenthood and their anguish over this must be dissolved. To do this, three generations, starting from the grandfather, must be served. The realms of three generations, with Adam in the formation stage, Jesus in the growth stage, and the True Parents' children in the third, need to be connected. This task is inevitable. (212-54, 1991.1.1)

With the institution of True Parents' Day, the commemorative Days of True Children, True Family, True Nation, True World, True Cosmos, and the liberation of the True God can be connected. You should understand that in any given era nothing can be connected without association with the True Parents' name.

Your eyes yearned to see true parents before anything else. You have no idea how many tears they have shed. Your noses desired to inhale their scent in their embrace. You cannot fathom how they lamented meeting false parents. Your mouths longed to speak their words and suckle their breasts, but instead learned the false words of false parents and set up a false tradition. Your ears longed to hear the words of true parents. Your hands yearned to touch them and to draw them to you, but they were instead shackled by false parents and the enemy, and instead became hands harboring bitter feelings. They became hands of anguish and sorrow that can neither open nor clench at will.

Our bodies and minds should have begun serving true parents forever, and at the same time inherited a tradition that would never allow their division. United, mind and body should have lived deriving satisfaction from their unity and service, but the reality has been that they contained within them the sorrows of history, wretchedness and bitter anguish. They existed without a path of escape from the realm of lamentation. Every inch of the planet Earth also had its hope: to be trodden upon by true parents and children. (268-164, 1995.3.31)

God wanted true parents because He devised a plan to fulfill His desires from within the family. He created them with His thoughts on them, and hoped to become as one with their love. Passing through the processes of formation and growth, and finally reaching full maturity, Adam and Eve were to be married. Their wedding was to have been God's own wedding, setting the one focal point where the love of humankind and God could come and settle together. (282-290, 1997.4.7)

No other fathers but Father Moon have the quality of true love. This is why white and black people, creation and even heaven and earth all like him. You should understand that true parents, children, family, society, nation, world and God can be found in Unification Church families. The eternally

unchanging true lineage can also be found there. Through the bridge of true lineage everyone is connected to each other in love. Beginning from this point, we are connected all the way to God in love, through the true lineage. The true family has but one language and culture. Culture signifies language, for it is formed through the words of a language. (162-138, 1987.4.5)

You need to be aware of the fact that true parents must be found even if it means having to discard the Old and New Testaments. True parents are necessary for the emergence of true siblings, a true nation and everything else. When the True Parents emerge upon the global foundation, children can emerge. A cosmic signing ceremony must be held that God, Satan and the True Parents recognize officially. From that point in time, the True Children's Day can be instituted globally. (95-173, 1977.11.11)

Our responsibility living in the era of the historical transition is to stand in the place of God and the True Parents, in the representative position of the true nation and world. By fulfilling this responsibility we can become the most filial sons and daughters of all filial children in this historical era. We need to become the sons and daughters of filial piety of God's Kingdom that even the past children of filial piety in history can praise. From there we can go on to become the patriots, saints, and the holy sons and daughters of God's Kingdom. (214-306, 1991.2.3)

Satan's love caused the false parents to fall, but the True Parents are elevated through God's love, and so can proceed into the world of love. Love is mighty and eternally equal. The very mention of love gives everyone the right to participate and rise even to the highest positions. An illiterate person can rise to the highest position through the love relationship with the spouse who was the world's greatest scholar. Likewise, no matter how much human beings may be lacking, when they have formed a relationship of love with God, they can be elevated to His position. Since we know how great the value of love can be, all our hearts desire to have the very best. Even after we have the whole world in our possession, if there is something better out there, we would still want to own it. (144-241, 1986.4.25)

In order to restore through true love what is currently in the position of false love, you must deny everything. After learning about true love from the True Parents, you stand in the liberated position of having been born as their children, whose entire debts have been completely cleared away. You will have no barriers in the past, present or future, and without barriers you can marry and live with your spouses. Otherwise you could not even dream about such things. Even Jesus has been unable to live with his wife till now.

Families, tribes and peoples in the world are all bound to perish because they have no center. Satan caused that. God sought after the central figure for

the individual, family, nation and world and blessed them through the Unification Church. You should know that in this satanic world where five billion people are perishing away, others have been called upon and established with superior rights, namely those of the Blessed Families.

Within Christianity, if the United States is Abel, then this place (Brazil), representing the Catholic realm, is Cain. The Latin cultural sphere, which is Catholic, is the Cain realm. It is like the elder brother and should go through Protestantism, the younger brother. The younger brother should help Catholicism.

In the United States, Protestantism, in the younger brother position, and the North American Abel national realm must be unified. The True Parents should come to the United States on that basis and, through all foundations of power laid in that nation, digest the many nations in South America, this Catholic cultural sphere. I did not come here to assimilate into this cultural sphere and the Unification Church does not intend to follow it either. As the Unification Church has emerged, the Catholic cultural sphere should go through it and Brazilians should go through the True Parents. Otherwise there will be no path for them to take. (268-196, 1995.4.1)

The 180 families that form the tribal foundation for the tribal messiah should all be dedicated to God. Everything you possessed before receiving the Blessing – whether a house, land, things or property – originally belonged to God and with the Blessing should have been handed over to Adam. Such is the principle, but because of the Fall, God could not stand in the position of the owner, and neither could the True Parents. Though in the past they could not stand in the position of the owner, at this time, through someone who can fulfill the mission of the archangel in the satanic world, everyone centered on their tribal leader should offer everything they have through the son, mother and father. The restoration of the lineage, right of ownership, and realm of heart should be offered and returned over seven generations. (285-231, 1997.6.5)

There are two hells: one on earth and one in the spirit world, but there is only one gate to heaven. So even if both the gates to hell were opened, that does not mean that they would lead straight from earth to heaven. You can only enter through the True Parents; you need to pass through them to enter that one gate into heaven. (294-103, 1998.6.14)

We need to return to God the right of ownership, the realm of heart, and the realm of substance. The family, nation and world together need to be returned to Him. We need to give them back to Him as an offering through the True Parents and clear all our debts.

On that basis, the horizontal foundation of the right of ownership of parents, children, and your family and all things is connected through the True Parents. Where that takes place becomes God's

Kingdom on earth. From the un-fallen position, the right of ownership must be connected to earth, but due to the Fall this connection must be made through the path of indemnity. Once established, we will usher in the era of the sovereignty of absolute love and the right of ownership of the Kingdom of Heaven. In order to welcome such a liberated realm, we declare in Family Pledge number eight, that we will perfect the realm of liberation in God's Kingdom on earth and achieve that goal. (295-243, 1998.8.28)

However much we yearn for the ideal family, parents, couple and children, they do not exist, for their overall perfection can only take place through the True Parents. From a traditional position, as the heirs standing in the place of God and True Parents, you need to reach the value of the seed which is equal in value to the highest level of oneness ever seen among brothers and sisters, and similar in value to the oneness between God and Adam and Eve. Coming from such a world, if you were to harvest a family that can be expanded to produce new descendants for all human beings, then this family – having the same value as that of a unified God and True Parents – will then become successors able to inherit the record of champions.

It has been said that those with power will rule the world. We should not compete with others on the basis of power. Those with power have created environments, in which they can become more powerful, and they have swept away those that are weak; they act as champions and record- breakers. This is not the result of victory won through a competition of goodwill, as desired by God. Hence, all this must be cleared away from the face of the earth. (301-19, 1999.4.16)

At the time and place that the reawakening takes place, when all families in the world can claim to be the sons and daughters of the True Parents, the global Kingdom of Heaven will be manifested. When the world becomes one family, we will enter the new world of God's Kingdom on earth. (146-132, 1986.6.8)

The Completed Testament Age signifies that the entire world can receive grace from the True Parents equally. For that to happen, cause, lineage, right of ownership and realm of heart need to be converted. That is the responsibility of the tribal messiahs. Indeed, this has been made possible because we have entered the era of women. (251-286, 1993.11.1)

God's right of ownership was completely snatched away by this fallen world that inherited the devil's love, life and lineage. Now the time has come for us to retrieve it, to become sons and daughters who can receive God's true love and bring this world under control. Finally, as such, we need to redeem the blood ties in the family lost by Adam, Eve, Cain and Abel. On the foundation of all nations being liberated and welcomed, the right of ownership currently belonging to the devil and the satanic world, should be returned to God, the

Owner of true love, through the number one man and woman, the number one son and daughter, the beloved of God.

All peoples in the world need to go through the True Parents' love. Without passing through that gate, there is no way back to the original homeland in the heavenly world. The only path open before them now leads to hell. We need to trace the path back. We need to fight and triumph over nations opposing us. By so doing, the Unification Church of today has inherited the victory of the global messianic realm, passed through the national messianic realm and traced down to the tribal messianic realm. Through the tribal realm of the satanic world, we now need to enter Satan's family and change his world. (210-42, 1990.11.30)

CHAPTER FOUR

The Way of Becoming Citizens of Cheon Il Guk

Section 1. God's Hope for Humankind

God's original intent for creation was to live with humanity centering on one purpose in harmony with one love, to have all of heaven and earth enjoy His love and to have everything live as one with His love established as the actual center of life. Yet due to the Fall of Adam and Eve, God's love remained His. He was to establish it in His relationship with humankind. Yet He was unable to do so and it departed from them and from the entire world of creation.

Consequently, God has spent the last six thousand years hoping for the day when, centering on the love He wanted to establish, He could bring together all the things of creation and live in joy with them. However, they have still not been united through His love, and accordingly His ideal and the love of His hope which should have been established remain unfulfilled. Thus, God has been guiding the providence to this day in order to accomplish His will at all costs. Ever since the Fall, He has been doing so for a long time until now, regardless of the ages, in order to fulfill His hope and recover His trust and love towards humanity; yet even now He has been unable to do either. (1-88, 1956.6.6)

God, who has not been able to enjoy a single day of universal victory since the Creation, desires to usher in that day through people on earth. Hence, if they do not bring about that day, Satan who has trampled on them cannot be eliminated. Moreover, the satanic powers that accuse humanity before God in heaven cannot be driven away. Thus, God does not mind any hardship or sacrifice or struggle. He has been a protective shield to this day in order to find and select each and every one of you.

When we consider this, we can know God's desire. He has chosen each and every one of you and has separated you from the enemy Satan – who brought the Fall upon humankind – in order to terminate the evil history of satanic dominion.

We should fulfill God's desire and become people who can stand proudly before Him and all the things of creation, and return the glory of victory to Him. Only then can the purpose of the providence which He has pursued by dint of unremitting toil be fulfilled. (2-301, 1957.6.30)

God created Adam and Eve and fer-

vently desired that they would become the people of character of His hope, but, they fell as the ancestors of humankind, thereby betraying the desires and hopes which He had cherished since long before the Fall, and causing Him tremendous grief.

You all should think about how God, who suppressed His heart of sorrow and indignation towards Adam's family, yet chose Cain and Abel for the purpose of recovering that longing heart. You should think of how instead they compounded His grief and how His hope still remained unfulfilled.

Sixteen hundred years later God chose Noah but the outcome was the same. He then chose Abraham after another four hundred years but once again the outcome was the same. God wanted to meet a person of His longing and to share His heart but Abraham too could not fully release God's heart of longing. Then through three generations God chose Jacob's family for the purpose of having people become aware of His yearning heart that He had harbored for thousands of years. His will, however, was yet again not fully realized through this family.

We should understand God's situation where He was forced to run after the Israelites – even though He had chosen them – without being able to reveal His heart of yearning to them, through which He would have educated and led them.

We should know the fact that God raised on this earth a singular race of His yearning, and that whenever they fell into distress, He suffered, felt sorrow and went through difficulties in proportion to the intensity of His yearning heart.

God had endeavored throughout the long course of history to plant that yearning in our hearts, into history and into this world. Hence, we should bear in mind that every object we deal with is soaked with His longing. We should bear in mind that the members we deal with, and even the nation and this world in which we live, are also steeped in His longing.

For this reason when we lift our faces and gaze at God's creation we should feel that they are all objects of His fervent longing. If that is the case with all the things of creation, how much more so would it be for human beings who are their lords? You should truly offer thanks to God when you become aware of the fact that He has always longed for people based on a certain standard, though they were evil in form. (8-93, 1959.11.22)

Why was it that God couldn't forsake humankind, but rather clung onto them, undergoing continuously the historical course of countless sorrows to this day? It was because He wanted to be able to say to them, "You are my begotten sons and daughters." He has been battling until now to realize such an ideal.

In God's garden of goodness in which He stood in glory, Adam, in the capacity of the lord of creation, could stand before Him amidst creation which was harmonized as one centering on His love saying, "My Father! Please be glorified!" yet

due to his fall lost that value. You should understand that God wants to hear the sound of His original son and daughter, who emerged after the Creation, calling Him Father.

The Father that we call upon today cannot be addressed from a position of sin and evil. Accordingly, we must escape from this sinful and evil world and enter the ideal garden of goodness, which is a world where humanity can manifest God's glory while living enraptured in joy. In other words, it is a world where all the things of creation move and rest in sync with humanity, and God the Creator with them both. Not only that, but it would also have been the ideal garden enabling oneness transcending the reciprocal relationship between God and humanity.

In this way, God had wanted humanity to become as one with Him, and created such a world while visualizing that situation wherein they could be enraptured in joy through such amazing love amidst that unity. Yet through their fall, human beings caused not only their own anguish but also that of God, and since then have compounded it through the continuance of that sorrowful history to this day.

Then what is God's greatest hope as He guides the providence in relation to the earth today? It is to bring people born from fallen parents back over to His side and say to them "I am your eternal Father and you are My eternal sons and daughters." You should realize that the historic hope of fallen humankind and the original hope of God are to be able to welcome such a day. (3-26, 1957.9.15)

There are many people living on earth today, each with their individual visions, opinions, sets of beliefs and assertions, yet none of them bows before God with a true heart, testifies to Him and confidently stands before heaven and earth claiming to be sent from Him.

What is it that we should ultimately seek? Countless people who have come and gone throughout history have been waiting until now for the earthly appearance of a person who can put aside his own set of beliefs and assertions and all his proactive behavior and come forth claiming to embody God with his mind and body and acting on His behalf. While longing for His representative to appear, God has endured endless hardships in guiding His providence over a long period of time.

What is the source of earthly sorrow? It is neither the absence of any set of beliefs nor that of anyone who could take action, but rather that of a set of beliefs that could claim to embody God's heart and will, and that of a person who could act on His behalf. These must appear so as to remove all grief, pain and resentment that fill the earth and the human world today. Thus, you should remember that the time has come for you to understand that the purpose of providential history was the emergence of that one person. (3-317, 1958.2.2)

You must have a friend whom you can trust with a sincere heart in God's stead. Furthermore, you need siblings, parents

and spouses whom you can trust on His behalf. In so doing, you are to transcend the family to embrace the society, nation and world. This was God's cherished desire, yet He drove individuals into situations of mutual distrust and despair of humanity in order for them to find faith in Him. In this way, He wanted believers to come together as siblings and friends to forge bonds enabling them to trust each other on His behalf. It is none other than this that was His greatest hope. (4-146, 1958.3.30)

If I were to ask Satan, "Hey Satan, did I or did I not meet all your demands?" he would reply that I did. As I laid a sturdy foundation for entering heaven by loving everything including even Satan with God's original love, Satan must bless me saying, "The world you are going to is liberated. All of your desires have been fulfilled. Everything you wish for will be fulfilled wherever you go and everything you desire will belong to you."

If I were to say, "In the names of God, the True Parents and True Family, the world shall be liberated!" he would reply, "Amen!" Spring has come. However strong the snow and ice may be, all will melt away because it is spring. Thus, we must sow seeds in spring, to the ends of the ideal world and in America where Satan scattered the seeds of evil! A good seed is the family. Satan planted just one: fallen Adam and Eve. Now we must grind and polish it wherever we go in order to make a new family. There we can cultivate everything. This must be done in the land of America. That is God's desired objective. (189-65, 1989.3.12)

After creating man and woman, why did God want them to grow? It was so that He could love them. If it was to love them, would He have wanted that love to increase or decrease? Would He have said, "Hey, you! Your love for me should not surpass my love for you"? No, He would not.

If you were to wrestle with God, would He be more or less determined than you? He would be more determined. God has everything. There is nothing He lacks. When is God more ardent? If a new man or woman were to appear and make more passionate love than our ancestors of the past, God would also be out of breath.

If God had met such a passionate couple, would He have wanted to live apart from human beings or with them? He would have wanted to live with them. Therefore, you should know that eternity can be found centering on love and only in love. It makes sense to say that the concept of eternity is established in true love. (195-312, 1989.12.17)

Section 2. Cheon Il Guk, Our Original Homeland

We must become somebody's child, which means becoming God's child. We must become somebody's sibling, which means becoming a sibling in His family. We must become somebody's spouse, which means becoming a spouse in His family.

God created Adam and Eve in order

to substantially see and be stimulated by all His internal aspects. They were to be the second substantial gods because He created them out of His need for love partners. A monkey cannot be God's partner in love; only human beings can. (258-274, 1994.3.20)

God has until now been unable to hold His right of ownership. Satan has possessed everything – the nation, people and all things. Satan stole God's right of ownership. The True Parents, too, have never possessed the right of ownership over true children, a true nation or a true world. As there has never been a true person – a true man or woman – to possess these things, no one could hold the right of ownership. (186-118, 1989.1.29)

To this day, God has been unable to hold the right of ownership. The devil has been the owner. God's children were unable to take ownership. The devil and his children have posed as the owners of God's creation and caused great harm. Everything must be reclaimed. All things of creation must return to the original parents – to the True Parents and the True Children, true nation and true tribe. (203-185, 1990.6.24)

Now we must no longer think that we are someone's child or sibling. We are God's children, True Parents' children and people who can receive the rights of inheritance that can emancipate the world and cosmos. Our families have shot arrows at us from a satanic position. Even so, we are not simply passing through several millennia of history, but rather will prepare everything in our lifetime that is required in order to become messiahs and enter an era that permits our second coming on a horizontal level. This is so we can go to and save our clan and parents, who previously opposed us. Based on this, the earth can become the Kingdom of Heaven for the first time.

In that sense, the deeds and lifestyle of Blessed Families today fall short of an acceptable standard. You should be aware that you have been within the devil's lair, and now you should strive to create your own realm of liberation. Otherwise, if you embrace your children merely out of habit and just long to be happy, everything will perish. (203-180, 1990.6.24)

When Jesus went to Jerusalem he looked at a fig tree on the road and, seeing that it bore no fruit, cursed it. Immediately, it withered away. That is the kind of consequence you would face if you are without fruit. What have you prepared for God in building the future nation? It is the fruits of your work, the central core and realization of this nation. The citizens of God's nation are not the fruits of an apple or peach. To this day, God has been unable to have citizens in His Kingdom. Thus, He is now seeking His original citizens, the perfected citizens He could never have. (215-339, 1991.3.1)

The true nation is called God's Kingdom on earth. Only by establishing it can we fulfill His will that was behind the

blessings He gave to the original Adam and Eve when He said, "Have dominion over creation when you have perfected yourselves!" and human beings can finally emerge as the true owners of the earth. When that happens, people can finally become true brothers and sisters; then we can become God's true children for the first time. We can become true sons and daughters of filial piety to the Heavenly Father, loyal subjects to our Lord, and true lords to the creation and universe. When that happens, God will not only externally delegate full powers, but also internally bestow even the innermost core of His heart to us. We thus become children to whom He can safely entrust everything. (5-329, 1959.3.1)

Human history has emerged out of the dark night into the dawn to greet the new bright sun. Then what does the sun represent? Humanity's sun means the Parents of Humankind. Humanity's hometown – the original homeland – cannot emerge without the emergence of these parents. (16-258, 1966.6.19)

It is good news and glad tidings for tribal messiahs to hear that they can possess the hometown of love. Next, the lineage will be converted through the Blessing. Now your hometown can become yours. Your lineage has been flowing from there. That lineage will widen and the current of love of all nations will become like pure water and flow into the great ocean called heaven in the spirit world. The spirit world is connected to the great ocean of love on earth, and is God's Kingdom in heaven. Hence, in the other world, you cannot survive without a heart that has experienced love.

The heart of love refers to a filial and then a brotherly heart. Fraternal love is its expansion and conjugal love its synthesis, thus occupying the center. Marriage unites men and women based on the concept of God's original love, and through maturing and uniting in love, they unite with God as substantial beings.

Love is vertical here. Therefore, from here, centering on the vertical God, the horizontal Adam and Eve can finally enter this entity of love that moves vertically. In this way, a point of settlement for the family can be created for the first time. The individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world can be completely settled at this one point. This is the axis.

God is the masculine subject partner, isn't he? Thus, man is at the center because he has the baby seed – the seed of life. Women do not have that. They are the core. The seed of love exists to come in contact with the core of life, and to become as one with God. Isn't He the seed of life? Thus, the logical and central point of settlement is the place where we can unite with His love. (226-173, 1992.2.4)

Heaven is the intended destination of human beings who are currently within the fallen realm. In other words, we must return to our hometowns. You must go back to your hometown. You cannot do that alone. Since there is a purpose for

creation, you must return to your homeland after fulfilling it. If they had not fallen, Adam and Eve would have passed on to the next world with just the two of them representing the cosmos, the world, the nation and the family. That was the responsibility given to them as God's originally created children. (113-162, 1981.5.3)

The question is how to transform and expand the hometown of your birth into a heavenly hometown, which is why I designated you as tribal messiahs, whereby your parents embody Adam's family, you embody Jesus, and I embody Christ at the Second Advent. The third, second and first generations are horizontally connecting the realm of the True Parents with your ancestors who represent the source of history. Hence, your birth parents embody Adam and Eve. You embody Jesus, and I embody Christ at the Second Advent. In this way, your parents and birthplace become part of the hometown of God's Kingdom. The position of the hometown that is within heaven's domain has been restored. (215-129, 1991.2.6)

Your birthplace is not your hometown. The time has come when the whole nation can become your hometown. Thus, when you go to the other world, all the borders that existed until now will disappear. Currently there are limits to your hometown but if you restore it, once you pass on to the spirit world you will be connected without any borders. It becomes the basis for God's Kingdom on earth, which can connect to the hometown anywhere. Hence, once this is connected, everyone registered in the family register of all the nations will be transferred intact to the heavenly nation. Since the hometown of people who did not fall and multiplied would be transformed into that of God's Kingdom, everybody would be engrafted and enter heaven from a position of having been born in the kingdom. That is how the restoration of the hometown will take place. Once that hometown, that nation is restored the cosmos will be restored. On that foundation, the restoration of the True Parents would be completed. Once restored, once the True Parents have a foothold, they can accomplish their mission when all the conditions for God's Kingdom and cosmic restoration have been met. (216-131, 1991.3.9)

Your hometown is God's Kingdom where the True Parents were born. Is Seoul God's Kingdom where the True Parents were born? How are you going to overcome this concept? How will you transcend it? God does not want people to think, "I'm from Jeolla province." "I'm from Gyeong-gi province." "I'm Korean." "I'm American." Adam and Eve did not have such concepts in the Garden of Eden. (169-174, 1987.10.31)

The last condition that should be fulfilled in order to inherit God's legacy is to do with possessing God, true parents, true siblings, true citizens, the true nation and the true world. You should

become people who can live as members of the heavenly family through an inseparable fraternal heart that enables you to feel that all people are your siblings and that your relationship to them is eternal and unchanging. You should be able to establish a true nation on earth and inherit God's legacy based on a true family in which we can say that heaven and earth are ours and that Heavenly Father is our Father. (10-354, 1960.11.27)

When we examine our life of faith and Christianity, which advocates belief in God today, how many people would be worthy to be citizens of His kingdom? Furthermore, where is the race that God can eternally claim as His? Where can we find the land that He can claim as His kingdom? Where can we find such things or people? You must understand these things. (5-17, 1958.11.9)

However wonderful a husband you may have and however comfortable a life you may lead, you will go to hell if you do not know God. You must be registered as His citizens. However famous the president of Harvard University may be, he will go to hell if he is not registered as a citizen of God's Kingdom. You enter heaven after being welcomed by the family, society, nation, world and humanity. (278-263, 1996.5.26)

The Nation of Cosmic Peace and Unity (Cheon Il Guk) needs sovereignty, territory and citizenry. Thus, the Coronation for God's Kingship last year was the restoration of sovereignty. Next, the rallies for the Settlement of God's Fatherland (Homeland) constituted the restoration of territory. Then you are to register as the citizens of Cheon Il Guk. Do you understand? That is why you must have the Cheon Il Guk identity cards in order to be its citizens.

Sovereignty, territory and citizenry are necessary for creating a nation. You must believe that the eternal settlement of Cheon Il Guk was declared on the foundation of all its constituent parts. Have confidence as God would and when you push forward with all your strength with confidence equal to that of Rev. Moon, the True Parent, nothing will hold you back. (364-87, 2002.1.1)

It was not God who established His kingship, but the True Parents. It was the True Parents, not God, who established *Cheon Il Guk* (天一國), *Cheonju Pyeonghwa Tongil Guk* (天宙平和統一國), the Nation of Cosmic Peace and Unity. Breaking the Chinese character for *cheon* (天), meaning heaven, into its parts, it signifies two people (二人). This means two worlds. They are equal. They are a person of heaven and a person of earth; the dual structure of a spirit person and a physical person. Your mind and body constitute a duality, don't they? Are your mind and body united or not? People whose mind and body are in conflict cannot be citizens of Cheon Il Guk. (364-101, 2002.1.1)

What did I do in Korea after the Coronation for God's Kingship? Didn't I hold the rallies for the Settlement of

God's Fatherland? It was to have you inherit the lineage of true love. I did this worldwide. What did I do after that? Have I not proclaimed Cheon Il Guk? The Nation of Cosmic Peace and Unity; this is Cheon Il Guk.

Cheon Il Guk is the nation where two people become one. Heaven must hold those two people. There must be two parents. Everything in the created world is made within the framework of the pair system, isn't it? What is Cheon Il Guk? All things were created in pairs from insects to large animals. They must become one. Where two things, two people, two parents, two characters – subject and object partners – become one, a foothold for God is created.

Doesn't the Bible explain this as well? When two people pray, three people are actually praying if you include God. It is the same. Two or three people become the foundation for the nation. They become the basis for a family, nation and the world. The family emerges and the tribe begins from there. That is what happens when there are two or more people. (370-88, 2002.2.19)

Today is November 5 in the second year of Cheon Il Guk, the forty-third True Children's Day. We have brought together God's Day, Children's Day and the Day of All Things to announce the era of equalization for peace and unity centered on Cheon Il Guk which was not achieved in the family in the Garden of Eden. This era can bring to a conclusion the perfection of the family of Eden centered on humanity that expands to the heavenly world.

After the completion of the Holy Burning Ceremony for the Peace, Unity and Liberation of Heaven and Earth, we are now in an age when God can freely and easily visit each family and live together with them in joy. I fervently pray that You bless us so that we can be in the same sphere of life. The hopes of the heavenly world can be found on earth and the hopes of the earthly world can be found in heaven. May the hopes of heaven and earth become one, forming a standard where the two are in balance. May the liberated path of loyalty and filial piety remain, and may the ancestors centered on heaven remain on earth.

Today I have announced the arrival of Era of Equalization for Peace and Unity in Cheon Il Guk. We have now entered an age when we can build and officially create the initial stage of the Kingdom of Heaven. Therefore, let the anguish of the spirit world be dissolved and let the ancestors come down to earth to assist their descendants. Let the heads of denominations cooperate within this world through their followers. May they be free to take action in completely resolving and fully unblocking any unrighteous thing that had given concern to Heaven. (396-158, 2002.11.5)

What was the motto today? Through true love let our families realize the true families of filial children, patriots, saints and divine sons and daughters in Cheon Il Guk. Everything from God's ideal of creation is included in this. We become patriots when the individual, family,

tribe, people and nation all inherit the tradition of filial piety centered on the true family. Saints inherit the tradition of patriots, and divine sons and daughters that of saints. Kingship is established by inheriting the tradition of God's divine sons and daughters. Inheritance is realized on the foundation of having acquired kingship. The right of ownership belonging to you and everything that belongs to your nation will all be denied. Those things are the results of the fallen world, which we would have to part with anyway. God does not even want His shadow to overlap with the world that He never desired – the world that was defiled and connected to the lineage of the enemy. Therefore, He could not govern the evil world today in which countless people died and perished in wars, and which had continued to this day through the rise and fall of nations. (400-192, 2003.1.1)

Don't you want to become a family of one hundred percent truly filial children before God? What else could you ask for? That should be your single desire. You should become such a family even if it means offering all your ancestors from seven generations back. You have to attain this even if it means selling the record of your ancestors' achievements, or even your nation. Despite all this you still hesitate to donate your Total Living Offering to the church and instead just donate leftover money. Don't you know about the couple, Ananias and Sapphira, who had done just that in the presence of Peter? They ended up in the graveyard having died on the spot. You should be aware that a time more fearsome than that has come. (400-220, 2003.1.1)

Section 3. Qualifications for Becoming Citizens of Cheon Il Guk

God does not long for a people with just the external form of a people or a nation with just the external form of a nation. He longs for a people, nation and sovereignty that He can move – in other words, linked to His heart. The chosen people should have clearly known the kind of Being God was and for what purpose He had chosen them. They were supposed to push forward despite any tribulation or hardship they faced. This was the attitude and standard of heart the Israelites should have had towards God at that time. Yet they took pride in being the chosen ones and committed many sins before Him in the course of history. We of course should understand first and foremost that the crimes they committed against the heart of God, who was moving the age, was greater than those they committed against the age itself.

Then where should God begin in order to restore humankind? His desires of course should have been fulfilled along with His inner state and furthermore His heart should have been healed. That world of heart, which could never be severed or divided, should have been healed. Thus, God has gone through such troubles to this day in order to

expand the foundation of heart in the background of each crucial moment in history with only that day in His sight. We today should be aware of these facts and out of indignation protest to our ancestors who were ignorant of these things.

Though we may live in complicated messy circumstances, those things will all pass away. People may sing of their prosperity and joy because of the happy lives they led on earth, but those things all pass away. However, there is something that remains for those who led their entire lives focused on a certain mission. What is it? It is not about circumstances but a heart that can dominate any circumstance. We cannot deny the fact that this heart has power over history and enhanced the spirit of the race and preserved its set of beliefs. (9-337, 1959.6.21)

God has worked until now to fulfill His will by saving humanity. His will is to establish His kingdom. Hence, there is no denying that He has been raising people on His side – who could become the citizens and children of that kingdom. Where is He thinking of establishing that kingdom? He is not trying to establish it in the spirit world, but on earth. Then who are the ones qualified to become the citizens of His kingdom that is to be established on earth? It is all of you. You are the center that can build the heavenly nation. (87-106, 1976.5.16)

You all should be able to say, "So this is how the people in the past were like! Today we are like this and from now should become like that. God suffered so much in His inner state, will and heart that He became sorrowful Father. How should we enter His presence? He has been an offering till now in blood, sweat and tears. We should also shed our blood, sweat and tears in order to inherit that offering." With tears of sorrow you should pledge, "Father, You have been in grief, shed blood and sweat to give that to us, and we have died, shed tears and suffered to receive that. How joyful the day would be on which we could have such give and take! We should bring about that day when we can begin with a cry and that cry of joy will be amplified to blind our sight, and the heartbreaking grief that gushes from our mouths will come forth exploding to become a triumphal song of joy and glory."

There the parent-child bond should be restored where God could say for the first time, "You are My children." He should be able to declare "You are My children and I am your Father," within a unified realm, sharing His heart and inner state in the presence of all the blessings of creation in the universe. You should understand that the center of the bond that we should seek is in realizing God's family and people and creating one world, sovereignty and cosmos after being called by Him. (151-336, 1963.2.5)

You face the destiny of entering the stage of becoming the citizens of heaven. As such you should renew your historic consciousness. Rather than living for yourselves, you should have the concept

of living for the sake of your fellow citizens of God's Kingdom. Not only that, you should have the concept of living for the sake of heavenly siblings, spouses and parents and serving them. This is not a partial but a universal concept.

You who believe in Jesus should not blindly revere him, but rather become those who can harmonize the internal and external fortunes of heaven and earth. God is working to establish His ideal of restoring His kingdom based on a universal providence. We must become His children and people who can stand in that place. Furthermore we should be able to love our fellow citizens of His kingdom. If there are people who believe in Jesus around you, you should be able to treat them as your siblings and compatriots. You must also persuade others to do the same. In this light, your responsibility is enormous beyond words.

If you view the six thousand years of history vertically, you will see that God gathered heavenly citizens in the Old Testament Age and His children in the New Testament Age. In this way, history has been flowing in reverse. (1-336, 1956.12.30)

What should you do at this time when everyone on earth is saying with one voice that it is the Last Days? In other words, what should you do in this global era of the Last Days that portends the end of a secular view of history, science, ethics and religion?

You should become people who can fulfill your unchanging loyalty to God without any consideration of your entire self in order to seek His kingdom and His righteousness on earth just as Jesus had proclaimed, "Seek first His kingdom and His righteousness." In that way you should be able to take pride in yourselves before the entire universe and become people who can accomplish their mission in God's stead.

That is to say, you should apply the fundamental principles of that nation to add actual value to your lives and bring about that day of hope that promises an eternal future. If you are unable to become such people, you will end up having nothing to do with God's dispensation through which He sent Jesus four thousand years after the Fall of Adam and Eve, and His will from the time of Jesus until now, working in trinity with Jesus and the Holy Spirit.

From such a perspective, what should you now seek? You must root out the elements of unrighteousness that have prevented the establishment of God's Kingdom and His righteousness, in other words, His ideal for heaven and earth. By doing so you should gain victory through the struggles in your daily life to stand in the place of His son Jesus. In other words, if you wish to become the righteous citizens of His kingdom, you should not be foolish people who fight over what they are going to eat and wear.Rather, you should get beyond the issues of food, drink and clothing. If any of these are given to you at all, you should be able to share them with those who are naked or hungry. If you have a loaf of bread, God's heart inspires your heart to share that bread instead of eat-

ing it alone. Jesus displayed that heart but the people around him were unable to do so.

What about the causes of family discord and conflict today? They arise because each family member thinks that the family exists only for his or her own sake. If there is something to eat, there is conflict and discord because each member thinks that food is just for him or her alone. You should bear in mind that this is the very arrow of sin and Satan.

Hence, today you should resolve the issues of food and clothing. You should demolish the self-serving mindset that creates the conditions for family discord and rise above such conflicts, which have permeated history. Do not forget that you are placed in a position to transcend the issues of clothing, food and shelter to emerge as God's true victors. (3-125, 1957.10.13)

You all have to become those who live for God's Kingdom and righteousness. However difficult your circumstances, you must be people who can fight and overcome them, remembering that God has hope in you. Only then can you be called His true sons and daughters.

Then what kind of people can build God's Kingdom? They are those who can deny themselves out of a heart of concern for Him. Those who deny themselves for the sake of their society, people, nation and world are the very ones who can build His kingdom. Further, those who live for His sake even to the point of denying their nation and the world are the ones who can build His kingdom. Also, however sorrowful their circumstances may be, those who feel sorrow for their society, nation, world and even God rather than for themselves can build His kingdom.

Today you should not strive to satisfy your own desires, but rather must lead lives of faith and sacrifice in serving a higher purpose. Then you should attain the standard of the heart of Jesus who went through hardships for God's will and for humankind. You should advance to the position of God's true children who can comfort the broken heart of God who has gone through hardships to this day.

When you see unrighteousness you should feel indignant. Together with God's love that wants to give more and more, you should advance to the ends of this world and make effort to seek and establish His Kingdom and righteousness. Furthermore you should be able to comfort the heart of God who had gone through hardships until now to save humanity amidst such sorrow.

Not only that, by not being defeated and winning victory in the battle with Satan during the course of establishing God's Kingdom and righteousness, you have to unify the family, society, people, nation and world beginning with the individual. In other words, you have to be able to fight and win over Satan in whatever situation you find yourselves. If you go into society, you must do that in any circumstance that society presents you with. If you go out into the nation, you have to be able to step forward, take responsibility for its worst

problems, then fight and win over the satanic forces behind them.

If such people were to appear, it might seem that they would perish initially, but you should know that they will prosper later on. They are also the heads of certain households, workplaces, organizations and nations. Those who can discharge their filial duties by devoting themselves to their parents, who can discharge their conjugal duties to their spouse within their families, and who can fulfill the obligations of loyal subjects to their sovereign, are the leaders of their families and nation. When such a spirit wells up from within your innermost self and harmonizes with your body so that even Satan comes to respect and follow you, then for the first time you can step forward as the people who seek and establish God's Kingdom and righteousness. (3-131, 1957.10.13)

A lot of people nowadays are proud of themselves and their nationalities. Americans boast of being citizens of a great nation. Yet that will not last forever. America lives only for itself. It does not know that it should exist for the sake of other nations, just as ancient Hellenic civilization was ignorant of the need to exist for the sake of Rome. Rome too did not know that its civilization existed for the sake of modern British civilization. Thus, Americans today should be aware of the need to serve their own country as well as to serve and live for the sake of other countries. Yet most of them are not aware of this. It is fortunate despite all this misfortune that there are a certain number of people who have the concept that they should not live selfishly but rather for the sake of God.

You who have gathered in the Unification Church today may be sitting in a small church, yet problems will be solved if you feel in your heart that you can represent the world by expanding this church, and that furthermore you can represent the heavenly character. You will be able to resolve anything. You are the children who take up God's will on His behalf. Therefore, you must become the citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven who serve God as the Lord of this world. You should bear in mind that you can never deviate from the Father's will no matter where you are. (4-110, 1958.3.16)

In this historic time of the Last Days, we are not people who wear fancy clothes and eat to our fill. We must become people who can persevere and serve humanity on behalf of history. We must go the opposite way. Only then will it be fair. We must oppose any ideology that has used its sovereignty to take people's lives. Such a time must come. History must inevitably pass through this process. Otherwise its path will be blocked.

Then what kind of path do God, His children and His people walk? It should be a path of perseverance, service and sacrifice. You should not persevere in blind faith. You should persevere for the sake of the Savior, God and His will. That moment will come and thus you should persevere for it. Hence, all faiths have a teaching about the Second Coming.

It is said that such a time will come but what kind of time is that? It is the time when God, the Subject partner in the realm of the heart, fulfills the purpose He has in his heart. People are faced with a historic destiny in which they must model themselves after the will of God, the subject partner of heart, in their battles and to go forth in search of that time. They cannot avoid the course of struggle as they model themselves after God and move towards His goal. History has been a record of the accounts of this course.

What kind of battle was that? It was one in which those who persevered were struck first, where those who sacrificed were dominated, and where those who came forth with a new ideology and hope were killed. That was the historical course of such battles. Hence, all those who came forth crying for goodness on the earth, without exception, had to endure a course of suffering. They had to be sacrificed on behalf of the people and had to go forth into a position of death so that they did not compromise their beliefs. (10-230, 1960.10.16)

We must help the poor and suffering people of the world. The Japanese members have been helping the American movement, and America should help the starving Asians in unfortunate places like India. The people of this world belong to one nation. Americans may love their nation, but God's people must love this nation even more. I am aware of Korea's miserable plight. If we helped Korea with all the support we render to America, the Korean people would praise and love me, but because America is on a higher dimension representing the world, I am dedicating our movement at this time to help this country. (122-282, 1982.11.21)

If traces of prior eras in history remain in the background of your life and culture you cannot become the pure, original citizens of the heavenly nation. Traces of habits centered on the cultural background of the satanic world should not exist in the original world of the heavenly nation. If such elements of your life-long habits remain you cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. (197-286, 1990.1.20)

Once the people come back the land will automatically be recovered. Once sovereignty is established its citizenry and territory will be restored. That is why I am interested in the United States and the Soviet Union, nations that are closest to gaining global sovereignty. The Soviet Union and the United States have been polarized until now but even these two nations are coming together at the world summit. God wants to lead those heads of state. If I were to draw an analogy, I would liken myself to a locomotive that can lead those nations when that happens. As the Garden of Eden consists of one people, nation and cultural sphere under a single sovereignty, there is no language problem there because people who use the mother tongue of heaven (the True Parents' language) enter God's Kingdom. (216-30, 1991.3.3)

Nations, tribes and families have their representatives. You should know that because human beings have a relationship with such a world, they can become the citizens of heaven only when they serve the universal parents, parents of the religion, and parents of the family.

What is humanity seeking in today's world? Universal parents. Christians, in particular, are longing for the emergence of parents for their faith. The day of the emergence of those universal parents is none other than the Second Advent. Yet, the providence of bringing together the parents of the religion has not yet been fulfilled.

God has pursued His providential will for six millennia. Yet the mission of Christ at the Second Advent, who must come bearing high priestly responsibility within a body of believers, still remains. From that perspective, the providence of the Groom and Bride has been fulfilled within the realm of promise. Nevertheless, they have not yet proceeded to the position of the True Parents who could live within that body of believers.

A true family consisting of true children cannot be established before determining the position of true parents. Taking this a step further, the position of ecclesiastical parents cannot be determined before that of universal parents is determined. (5-122, 1959.1.4)

Those who constantly radiate bright light and burning heat twenty-four hours a day are the citizens of God's Kingdom. It is similar to the phenomena of bugs congregating around a source of light on a dark night. Hence, those who can permanently maintain God's life force, the power of love, burning brightly, are without doubt citizens of the heavenly nation. (86-302, 1976.4.11)

There is a nation of the true father, a nation of the true mother and a nation of the true eldest son. We become citizens of heaven by making connections with them. Thus, we can conclude that we are the citizens, children and owners of the Kingdom of Heaven. By starting out from the family you become the owners of heaven and enter the realm of God's imperial household. Filial children are the owners of their families, and patriots are the owners of their nation. These are all connected as one.

You must follow a single path. The paths to becoming patriots from filial children, saints from patriots, and God's divine sons and daughters from saints all go in one direction. They don't go back the other way.

God wants you to follow one path. You should first become filial children whom God would like to be together with in both difficult and happy times, and whom He would want to stay with for a lifetime and for eternity. These are the people God can say that He absolutely needs. You must follow that path no matter who denies or persecutes you. There will be no indemnity once you become citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven. Results once established last for eternity. (293-209, 1998.5.26)

You become true families only through being recognized by your nation and its citizens. Only when the tribes, families and individuals of your nation recognize your family – only when your families transcend the realm of recognition for the individual, family, tribe, people and nation can they advance to the world. Without obtaining recognition at this place your paths would be blocked. You must realize that with recognition you can enter heaven as its citizens for the first time in history. (134-218, 1985.7.20)

You must endure, sacrifice for and serve your fiancée even if you do not like her. "If I hadn't met her I wouldn't have learnt anything. Now I see that I was given this person so that I could go through more hardships in order to attain a spirit of service and sacrifice and thus go to heaven." Those who think like this can become great people and enter heaven.

God wants to have even sinners become His sons and daughters. Just because your fiancée might not have such a pretty face or is Japanese or is a little short, can you think, "Oh, I don't like her"? You men should be convinced that you would go to the highest place in heaven if you took the ugliest woman and sacrificed yourself for and served her more than anyone else. You should understand that you would then become the greatest husband and a saint of a husband. Unification Church members should be capable of having that level of thought. (116-95, 1981.12.20)

The happiest and most precious thing that could happen to a woman is to have a husband. The greatest joy for a couple is to have children. Your children do not belong to their father or mother, but to the world, to the heavenly nation. Their genealogy is in God's Kingdom. Though they are your children they all have a nationality. Having a nationality means being the citizen of a nation. By the same token, these children are those of the heavenly nation, and that couple consists of a husband and a wife who represent God's nation. If you have such a heart, you can align yourselves to the standard of the heavenly nation when you are registered there. You will be able to resonate with that standard. Without having that kind of resonating experience on earth, you will have a hard time in the spirit world even if you have received the Blessing. The same goes for men. They are most happy to have a wife. Their second happiness is in having children resulting from their union in love. This nest of love should be passed on to the world. When that happens, you will be fully qualified as citizens of heaven. (233-212, 1992.8.1)

Your trinity teams are about the three great offerings. Abraham had to make three great offerings and Noah also had three decks on the Ark. They are all three great offerings. In this way, you should build an altar and have three people make sacrificial offerings to fulfill their loyalty and devotion to the people of that area. You should become people who know how to embrace that area

with the same heart you would have in praying for blessings for your own children. If you are assigned to such an area and work there for three years you will qualify as the citizens of heaven. (150-26, 1958.8.17)

True people are those who sacrifice themselves and suffer for the greater good. They include true children, teachers, friends, parents, siblings, families, nations and a true Kingdom of Heaven. Then what kind of place is the true Kingdom of Heaven? It is the destination of those who sacrificed themselves and suffered for the greater good. (124-168, 1983.2.6)

Adam and Eve failed in their wrongful marriage as individuals. Therefore, in reverse now, second-generation members should take part in cross-cultural marriages between nations. They must now love each other, and, with that love, melt the enemy. In order to establish this standard, the second-generation members of the six former enemy nations starting with America and including Japan, Korea, Germany, France and Britain must establish national foundations of love by having loved the enemy. You should make this a tradition for bringing new life to the nation more than would its citizens or patriots. Heaven will take off on the foundation of that unity. (192-85, 1989.7.2)

Those who wish to go to heaven must love their enemies. In the Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve were centered on God and the archangels on them. Had Adam and Eve perfected themselves, they would have entered heaven, and the archangels would have followed them in. Heaven is where you go after practicing love. The archangels should be loved by God, Adam and Eve and then enter heaven with them. That is the principle of creation. (243-280, 1993.1.28)

You do not live for your own sakes. You should live, representing everyone. If you are a woman you should be born in this age representing all women and become a model for the women who are watching you. You should live as an example. If you do your descendants will surely follow that example. The heavenly world – the eternal world – is where you connect to as you follow that example. When you qualify for this place, you will gain free access to everything, but if you fail you will be in great trouble. The True Parents do not teach you about that place. People perfected through them go there. There is no such educational system in that world. You must go there after being educated here on earth. In other words, what is bound on earth is bound in heaven; what is loosed on earth is loosed in heaven. (227-376, 1992.2.16)

The citizens of God's Kingdom are those who came forth hoisting the banner of serving all peoples. Hence, in order to save a certain race today we must distribute all our possessions for its sake. If that is not enough, we should be prepared to offer even our lives. Such people are indeed the citizens of heav-

en. You should think about God's inner state of having to gather such people in order to realize the ideal of His kingdom. (5-17, 1958.11.9)

There is no way to go to heaven without loving your enemy's children more than your own. Christians today ask God to bless them and to forgive all their sins and evil baggage. Their view of faith is not correct. Knowing that, I was unable to pray in that way to God. Before praying, you should feel ashamed even while offering actual accomplishments. With what shall we gain forgiveness for our ancestors' inexcusable sin before God?

Hitherto, the True Parents had not been able to hold their wedding. It means that they had not been able to settle down. Nevertheless, they have now ushered in the era of the "True Parents and the Safe Settlement of the Completed Testament Age." For the first time, they have now been able to return to their hometown. When doing so, they take along with them all their children who were dispersed. They went to their hometown and settled there as the True Parents and held their wedding. Thus their children can now be married.

The Unification Church has been going the opposite way of other religions until now. It is not a false religion but one that teaches the orthodox path through having the words "True Parents." It stood in the world opposing that which is taught by false parents. They have taught these things to lay the foundation and find the path of the True Parents out of the position of false parents. Therefore, the True Parents should naturally return to their hometown and have a family. Thus, it is logical to say that their children should also return to their hometowns and have families. (273-289, 1995.10.29)

In your hearts you should think "I have now crossed over into a new age" and without looking back you should say, "Good bye world! I'm gone." We conducted the Holy Burning Ceremony for the Peace, Unity and Liberation of Heaven and Earth. Consequently we have passed that critical moment. When Lot's wife was leaving Sodom she was warned not to look back. Yet feeling that her path ahead was dreary she looked back. When women do not know their destination or which direction to take, and when the suffering they feel at that time is greater than that of a refugee, and blinds them into thinking that the world is in darkness, they long for the place where they used to live. Hence they inevitably end up turning around and looking back. The Last Days will become such a time. Women who are expecting a baby will have great difficulty with this. (396-134, 2002.11.5)

Do you have a nation of your own? We must come to an overall conclusion about everything in relation to this country. Now what I mean to say is that the Pledge starts with "the owner of Cheon Il Guk"; you are the owner. "Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, …centering on true love" is the core content. That is

how it is to be done. Do you understand? The Pledge is changing. The concept of "the owner" has come into the Pledge. No one can just sell off the words of the Pledge! However, for eternity, the term "Cheon Il Guk" has come into existence through the True Parents.

Now we have established God's kingship and by establishing the Realm of Life of the Completed Settlement of the Parents of Heaven and Earth, we have held the Special Rallies for the Harmony and Unity of Heaven and Earth and have completed the Holy Burning Ceremony for the Peace, Unity and Liberation of Heaven and Earth. Therefore, we need a new nation. (2002.11.5)

If your mind and body are not harmonized as one, you cannot go to heaven however great your faith might be after joining the Unification Church. It is because there are shadows in places of conflict. When you were in the registration workshop and received the Blessing there, I talked about the "Settlement of Noon." There should be no shadow.

If your mind and body are disunited, then when the sun shines directly overhead and your mind and body are lopsided, a shadow will appear on your left. If your physical desires override your conscience, you will cast a shadow on the left. This should be turned into the "Settlement of Noon." Top, middle and bottom should stand in perfect vertical alignment to God.

Taking God as the first generation and Adam as the second, the realm of three generations was not vertically established. God did not have a third generation. People have not known that He was a miserable God who was unable to have grandchildren. Fallen humanity did not know the fact that God, the Ancestor of humankind, the Teacher of all teachers, the Lord of all lords, the King of all kings, and the Great Sovereign of the universe, was in such a pitiful plight. (400-197, 2003.1.1)

Section 4. Witness in Order to Win the Heavenly Right of Ownership

You should be able to think: "We are the ones who have come forth in search of the people of hope. We are the ones who are needed to revive the nation of hope. The day we set to work will be the day when the citizens who can become constituents for reviving the nation will be revived. We are the ones who have inherited the traditional ideology of this nation and stepped forward to rebuild the nation of our desire. Therefore, we should unite with them through this traditional ideology and find the right nation. We are the ones in charge of recruiting such a group."

There your heart should be overflowing with love for that nation and its people. It should be a different place from when you loved the nation as its citizens. It should be a different sort of love than that you had until now for your own relatives, parents, siblings, spouse and children. You should love the people and nation in a different way. Unless this happens, the ideal world of God's hope

that He has sought until now cannot be realized. When we fully represent God to them they will follow us to become heavenly citizens. When these people who have gathered are solidly connected, the restoration of God's will be initiated. (57-179, 1972.5.31)

The term "one people" includes the black, white and yellow races, and should have the capacity to digest all cultures as well as all habits and environments throughout history. We are saying that we are going to become one people and siblings centering on the True Parents. The world, however, is not like that yet. We should completely make it one people. If left as it is, evil people would always remain. Through our Home Church activities we can create one people. You should know that the way to do that can only be through the Home Church activities. There is no other way. Even if there are numerous tribes, we should establish a movement to unify them. (116-215, 1982.1.1)

By receiving the Blessing you can be treated as regular Unification Church members and citizens of the heavenly nation. We thus come to the conclusion that Satan will be automatically separated based on that logical standard. God's love is higher than Satan's, and you have stood as men and women blessed on that foundation of a principled love. You are therefore above rather than below that standard for being accused by Satan; hence he cannot accuse you. It is because the True Parents have established the original standard for the lineage through their bloodline. Therefore, if you are within that realm of lineage, Satan will never appear. Thus, you will have completely crossed over to the realm of separation from him. (172-66, 1988.1.7)

The Unification Church is a representative church marching forward for the ideal of the family Kingdom of Heaven. You should know that the nation, world, cosmos, and God are embedded in this family.

You have been bonded to the True Parents' lineage; therefore, from now on, you must not become wild olive trees. You should take the seed of the true olive tree and bear its fruit wherever you take root in the world. You should bear the same kind of fruit regardless of your nation or location and be accepted as the holy people of the heavenly nation. You should be aware that this was God's ideal of creation.

Unification Church Blessed Families have the responsibility to increase the population of God's Kingdom – within the free and liberated realm that has no history of indemnity. You must never forget that this is your mission.

Now the tribal realms will be inaugurated. God will no longer govern you. Your tribes are entering the age of becoming the tribes of heaven. Hence, through the works of their ancestors, people are joining the Unification Church without knowing why. When spring comes, leaves are not induced to appear; they do so naturally. A world where the morning sun rises slowly is right before our eyes.

Do not forget that our duty and mission is in going forth boldly and in high spirits as great owners of heaven and earth and God's liberated children. (202-256, 1990.5.24)

My desire is to restore citizens to heaven. Yet, how can we transform the citizens of the satanic world? This is the question. They should deny it and turn around 180 degrees. Currently Satan is positioned higher and God lower. How should this be changed? It should become a zero point. How many citizens of heaven you restore will be the most precious thing for you.

Haven't you all become citizens of heaven through me? By the same token, in order to make your children heavenly citizens you should educate them so that you can take them with you and have them live in the heavenly nation even at the risk of your life. That is your asset. You should systematize this and educate your children; only then will they go to the same place. How great it would be if everyone became a citizen of heaven instantaneously? That should be done. They will be your assets in the other world. That becomes a gift when you go to the next world; it is similar to the dowry and gifts a bride brings when she moves in with her in-laws. If you bring the people of your nation as well as those from many other nations there will be a banquet prepared in heaven. (215-182, 1991.2.17)

The greatest gifts you can take with you in entering the Kingdom of Heaven are its citizens from, for example, the field of business, through the words of the Divine Principle. What should you bring with you when you enter heaven, God's Kingdom? You should not just bring your family with you. If you do, who will save Cain's children in the satanic world? Hence, to this day, nobody has entered heaven centered on true love. That is why it is empty. Thus, you should know that restoring many citizens of God's Kingdom and entering heaven with them is a gift that allows you to be rewarded by Him and draw near to the heavenly nation. This cannot be done through knowledge or any other activities or results. (216-135, 1991.3.9)

Without a foundation for eternal life you cannot fight for a long time. Without results you will just fade away. I have remained to this day because I fought for eternal life. It is the same for me. It is a serious issue. You don't know the strength of this. We all eventually die. You don't know when you may drop dead in a corner. Someday we will all go to the spirit world. When you do, what will you bring with you before God? You cannot go with your body. You should all go there leading the citizens of heaven. Won't there be a lot of people behind me? That is what you should do. (230-61, 1992.4.15)

Your proprietary rights in the spirit world will be determined by the number of citizens you have brought into the Kingdom of Heaven. They will be your assets. The time has come to take stock

of this. A time will come when millions will be witnessed to in a day. The Unification Church has such tremendous potential. Look at the world: how many people are drifting around like raving lunatics, agonizing whether to live or die, questioning life and committing suicide?

We are now entering an era of transmigration, in which Unification Church members move across borders, within a region of three or four adjacent nations, between continents and furthermore between East and West. When such exchanges take place our domain will change. Why is this necessary? Neighboring countries became enemies due to frequently conflicting national interests. Hence, people who lived during the dark ages are surrounded by walls in the spirit world. How will such walls be torn down? Their descendants on earth should tear them down, thereby bringing about their collapse. In order to do this, those who hated the Japanese must now love them with an even greater intensity. That is Abel's mission. The first person to understand this must be the first to bear the cross. (218-227, 1991.8.19)

When you go to the next world, your assets will depend on how many citizens of heaven you engrafted while you were on earth. Religion should implant this awareness. As Unification Church members did not instill this awareness among our second generation, they want to go elsewhere. They are all being swept away saying that they are going to find a job or do other things in secular society. The citizens of heaven are produced on earth, not in the spirit world. They are reborn in the physical world. Thus, if Adam and Eve had originally produced people according to the Principle, then they would have all belonged to heaven, but because they fell, everything was turned upside down. (230-24, 1992.4.15)

More important than eating is harvesting the citizens of heaven. That is the main occupation of us who live on earth. Among the things we should do in our lifetime, there is nothing more precious than that. The money you accumulate after landing a job and getting promoted in secular society will all be water under a bridge. Money will be useless in the other world. Material things and knowledge are unnecessary there. Even without being taught, your mind will already know things. You will be familiar with everything within a week.

When you go to that other world someday, what will you say to God who has been guiding the work of redemption and who took great pains to this day to find one Adam? Hasn't God been seeking the perfected Adam by Himself since the Creation? Yet you have come to know the Principle. This is the weapon that will enable you to save thousands and myriads of citizens. Until now, God could not educate human beings and had to guide the work of redemption amidst their ignorance. What we are doing is taking on His sorrow and doing more things in His stead on earth than He has done. The Principle provides us with a path to enlighten and assemble a

following of hundreds and thousands of Adams.

How many sons and daughters have you assembled who will follow you to heaven? You shouldn't be doing anything other than that. Even if you had billions in gold and lived affluently, all that would pass away. Invest all your material things, your knowledge and even your fallen life for this work. Don't invest them separately, but rather all in one go with the heart to create the citizens of God's Kingdom. As your investment accumulates its value appreciates proportionately. (230-28, 1992.4.15)

How much you are going to be praised eternally before God depends on how many citizens of heaven you will have harvested. In the past, there wasn't even a spade to harvest them: incapability resulted from ignorance; however, you now have an A-frame rack on your back. If you passionately convey the Word you can bring in an explosive harvest. (230-32, 1992.4.15)

You should engage in many activities to multiply the citizens and families of heaven through your own efforts. Your status by which you will be designated in the other world is determined on earth. Isn't it stated that what is bound on earth is bound in heaven, and what is loosed on earth is loosed in heaven? This is what it is referring to. (235-58, 1992.8.28)

The north and south poles of a magnet do not tell each other to be mutually attracted. This process comes about naturally. A typhoon is coming. This must be brought to settlement: centering on the realm of Eve and the mother we should firmly plant the realms of Cain and Abel in the family along with the fortunes of the world that come rushing in like a typhoon. It is like giving birth to a baby; that's what you are doing; it is for the mother and the children. On this path women are liberators. Men live without any concerns in a free realm of heaven and earth, which is why they are unable to interfere in their children's ways. Women should be grateful before heaven and earth and the True Parents for the amazing realm of time that they have entered in which they can have dominion twenty-four hours a day. Hence, the question is: how many people are you harvesting and bringing to the heavenly nation as its citizens?

There is a lot of commotion in Korea about dowries. That is the kind of time it has become. The question is how many citizens and families you bring with you to the heavenly nation. There are no families or citizens in heaven. How grateful God would be if we can create citizens and families! When you look up into the dark sky at night don't you see stars shining? Among those stars what kind of star would you like to become? You would want to become a large star. Whether you become a big star or not depends on how many citizens and families you bring into heaven. (235-119, 1992.8.29)

Women who go into the mountains in search of herbs stay there all day bus-

tling about in search of the good ones, but by the end of the day they come back with empty baskets because they had become hungry and ended up eating all the herbs they had gathered. Yet those who steadily and patiently gather herbs can take those energetic women who had been bustling about to their households as helpers.

Currently, God's Kingdom has no citizens. Heaven is empty. Consequently, we must fill up that vast and empty heaven with people through the doors of the Unification Church. As such an age has come, you should think of the world rather than yourselves. You should not have your hair hanging out like a quail's or let your hair turn gray like a wagtail's. Do not be like wagtails which fly about pitiably with their tails waving. You must become noblewomen. (237-303, 1992.11.17)

God created Adam because He needed the horizontal realm. Many men and women marry and form families so that their children can be transferred to heaven to fill it up. Hence, each family is a production line that creates the citizens of heaven. Being a production line, it should churn out many children. People's rank and position of glory in heaven are determined by the number of citizens they bring into the heavenly nation. If you raise many children, and if you raised twelve or even twenty-four types of people, you would stand in a position of having loved all types of human beings. (256-238, 1994.3.13)

The last time I was leaving Hawaii, I talked about the Coronation for God's Kingship and then about His hometown and the settlement of His Homeland and then the declaration of Cheon Il Guk and its citizens. Sovereignty is needed to establish a nation. That is the establishment of kingship. There must be a nation. That is the settlement of God's Homeland. Next, there must be citizens. That is how you get the registration card for the heavenly nation. In this way, the foundations for Cheon Il Guk have all been prepared on which the sovereignty, citizenry and territory can be prepared centering on God's supreme authority. What definitely determines your value here depends on how many kinfolk you have brought to God. You must go the opposite way. You have to ascend from here. (364-131, 2002.1.1)

Now is the time to mobilize your ancestors. You must mobilize them to cooperate with you, and in order to do so you need to clearly understand the contents and structure of the spirit world and how returning resurrection takes place. Then you should become the flag-bearers to set the direction and become an example for your ancestors who are devoting their utmost sincerity. The physical world stands as the elder brother – it must become the example. Do you understand? Hence, do not think that you are doing this alone. If you mobilize your ancestors they will help you. (370-132, 2002.2.19)

In relation to the Fall, God was responsible for the Creation, and Adam

for the Fall. The Fall destroyed the family, nation, world and the entire universe. This was brought about by the false parents, whose ringleader Satan came into being, united with them and banished God. This destroyed the world that God had desired. Hitherto, the political world had sacrificed the religious realms, but henceforth this will be reversed.

Thus, I launched a supra-denominational, supra-national and supra-NGO movement to establish the reversed order back to its proper way, thereby bringing about a unified liberation to heaven and earth. I did not do this in the spirit world but on earth, transcending and liberating everything by burning away all the tainted bloodstains and marks left behind by Satan. You should burn away everything connected to the individual, family and possessions, and transcend them through this Holy Burning Ceremony.

In doing so we are passing over to become blessed central families. Since human failure occurred in the family, you cannot transcend this without having a family. Individuals cannot transcend that. Hence, the spirit world is in an uproar now to complete the Blessing. They are making demands of the earth.

Thus, your ancestors as well as religious founders and leaders will descend upon the earth to carry out the task of helping their descendants and followers respectively to fulfill their responsibilities as the owners of each clan or religion. This is why I have now asked Unification Church members not to witness to outside people. They should save all people in the position of servants, adopted children, children by concubines and begotten children in their clans and families, become as one and serve the Parents to be educated by the husband of the original family, the Messiah. Then the realm of liberation for heaven will be completed through that individual who is liberated on the new earth. (396-127, 2002.11.5)

Section 5. Life of Owners of Cheon Il Guk

5.1. One heart, one body, one mindset, one harmony

You and I are in the position of mind-body unity, that is, husband and wife, parents and children being of one heart. Oneness in mind cannot be achieved in a state where one stands above and the other below. If parents are above and their children are below, they cannot be of one heart. Only when both are positioned on the same level of equal footing can they be one in mind. In other words, only when both their internal and external relationships are in one plane can they become one in mind. This holds true for a couple as well: they can be of one heart only at a place where their internal and external, front and back relationship is horizontal, but never if it is vertical. (41-30, 1971.2.12)

Everything is to unite in oneness of mind: the eyes, the nose and everything else should become one in mind. Body and mind should be as one, as should man and woman. Tribes and nations

should become one in mind. The people should achieve oneness of mind as desired by their king, become of one heart with the presidents of the world, then with God, the president of heaven and earth. When this comes to pass, the world will become one nation, and that united nation will not be someone else's, but ours. (284-76, 1997.4.15)

Had Adam and Eve fulfilled their responsibility before God, He would have blessed them. From the place of this blessing, goodness would have started, and unity of truth, substance and heart been attained. Unity of truth means that when God says, "Do this!" we answer "Yes" and follow and fulfill what He commands us to do. From the perspective of God's will, Adam and Eve are essentially not two separate beings. Lured by Eve, Adam broke heavenly law and thus they separated; originally, they were united. After unity of truth and substance are attained, unity of heart should be attained. When this happens, we can become as one with God, and He has ventured forth hoping for that day. (15-263, 1965.10.17)

Heaven is the place a couple completely united in God's love can enter along with their children born of this complete union, that is, the family, tribe and people united in God. (18-331, 1967.8.13)

The very first condition of the Unification Church is mind-body unity. Thus, at the time of the Creation God enjoined absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. What we say is manifested according to our faith. If it does not come to pass, we have to invest ourselves and effectuate it. However great a task may be, it is carried out and fulfilled as we command, for we invest ourselves more than we hope. (400-203, 2003.1.1)

Eve's fall was due to her failure to pursue absolute faith and absolute love. Thus, the principle of restoration through indemnity dictates single-hearted devotion of one mindset for the sake of God to restore absolute faith and absolute love based on conscience. Everything in the world goes against God, and so we need to cut ourselves off from and deny them absolutely. (275-30, 1995.10.30)

Il hwa (one harmony) is made up of the Chinese characters *Il* (一) meaning one and *hwa* (和) meaning harmony. It does not use the Chinese character *hwa* (化) meaning to become. As it stands, the character *hwa*, meaning to harmonize, contains the meaning that people of different personalities should become one even though their characters differ, and similarly, peoples and nations with different characteristics should join together as one. (68-232, 1973.8.3)

The character *hwa* in the word *Il hwa* (一和) (one harmony) does not signify having to change essentially in order to harmonize. Whether man or woman, they should harmonize without changing. Of the two, harmonizing without going through any chang-

es rather than harmonizing at the cost of changes in essence is more highly valued. (173-241, 1988.2.21)

It is one heart, one body and one mindset: one heart stands for loving God. In short, we are asked to love Heaven. One body stands for loving humanity. Isn't that so? One mindset stands for loving one's nation, which is the expanded version of the family. In other words, we are asked to love our families. The essential mainstream of the desire of men and women is the ideology of one heart, one body and one mindset! Do you understand?

The title for today's sermon is "The Settlement of One Heart, One Body and One Mindset…" It is all right to say one mindset. "One heart, one body and one mindset are to God and the cosmos…" You know what the cosmos signifies, don't you? It is God's home, and so encompasses all creation and heaven and earth. "It is the mainstream ideology of the people of the cosmos!" Do you understand? Say it after me: "One heart, one body and one mindset are the mainstream ideology of God and the people of the cosmos, of His home and the people in heaven and on earth." Everything is included, not excepting any form of creation. It is the mainstream ideology of all people. Is that clear? Repeat after me: "One heart, one body and one mindset are the mainstream ideology of God and the people of the cosmos!" There is nothing else. (381-106, 2002.6.11)

Heavenly Father, the source of all blessings! You sent True Parents to earth, and had them indemnify numerous peaks of resentment, and now heaven and earth can commonly stand on the same horizontal line, following the completion of the Rallies for the Harmony and Unity of Heaven and Earth, and the Holy Burning Ceremony of Peace, Unity and Liberation of Heaven and Earth, and as we herald the Age of Equalization of Harmony, Peace and Unity of Heaven and Earth, heaven and earth can commonly be on the same level standard based upon the ideal of oneness, from the individual all the way up to the cosmos, advancing toward the one purpose. In order for mind and body to become as one, giving way to individual perfection, and for the ideal of love to be fulfilled to bring about the perfection of the reciprocal ideal desired by God, based upon the one harmony in substantial form of one heart, one body and one mindset, Adam and Eve, created with the reciprocal standard, were absolutely necessary. If the incorporeal Parent of heaven and the corporeal substantial parents did not have an ideal partner of love, based on the unifying standard of harmony of one heart, one body and one mindset, the purpose of the mainstream ideal of God's attributes, namely absolute love, unique love, unchanging love and eternal love, cannot be fulfilled. (400-189, 2003.1.1)

5.2. Eight stages of purity

The providence of salvation is the providence of re-creation, which is also

the process of creation for the establishment of all pure things, pure people, pure lineage and pure love in accordance with God's principle of creation. As the establishment of all pure things, pure people and pure love on pure land is the ideal of creation – the purpose of creation – we need to be freed from ourselves in order to achieve this goal. To recover pure bodies, it is essential to tear down our current bodies which are serving as the foundation for Satan, in order to drive him out.

Thus, your pure mind, body, substance and mindset should be unified, and next you should escape from the satanic realm to the place that is like the stage of engagement and stay there for three years, after which you can form Blessed Families in the realm of perfection. In the light of the Principle, this process is the ascension to the position wherein you can completely fulfill your human portion of responsibility. You need to know that this is the course of restoration through indemnity. If you do not fulfill this, there is no other way for you to ascend. (268-114, 1995.3.31)

Eight stages of purity signify fulfilling the duties of chastity, pure lineage, pure love, pure filial piety, pure loyalty, pure saints, pure divine sons and daughters, pure marriage and pure family. Through them the order of eight stages from the individual to the family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos and God can be established in complete form on earth through the True Parents. This gives rise to unified horizontal relations between individuals, families, tribes and peoples.

Thus, centering on the incorporeal God and the love of the substantial Parents of Heaven and Earth, the starting form of the family can be expanded to be the basis for the global ideal. Thus it can be completed in the form of a family, and God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven can be liberated and the path leading directly there can be opened. To fulfill this is the mission of God and the True Parents.

Unless your mind and body are unified, and you can stand in the form of one heart, one body, one mindset and one harmony and become truly filial sons and daughters to God and the loyal subjects of His kingdom, discharging the duties of saints to the world and of God's divine sons and daughters, and preparing to claim with a mind of pure filial piety, "I will live serving the True Parents forever," you cannot become citizens of Cheon Il Guk.

Discovering that you cannot think of living comfortably all by yourselves, you should be willing to go anywhere in the world, whether under circumstances of hardship or happiness, or even of the greatest misery, and be prepared to stand in God's stead in the position of His pioneering princes and princesses. Only then can you be the heirs eligible to inherit Cheon Il Guk.

Since the True Parents are going through hardships to live together with you, you should resolve to work harder than anyone, to gladly endure hardships thousands of times more severe

and to give everything you have to set up a reciprocal standard within that living environment, in order to enthrone the True Parents on the liberated seat of greatest joy.

Only when you have become people who can persevere through suffering in the most extreme conditions, and yet be grateful and can praise and return the glory of service before God, to be handed down as a source of pride to your descendants forevermore, can you become the owners of Cheon Il Guk. (400-155, 2002.11.5)

In order not to be caught up in habits and leave any loose ends by which you can be dragged towards Satan, you should think of this as a good thing for God's providence. To bequeath a pure lineage, you must persevere on a path that traverses mountain, anticipating the joys of the day on which you can sow pure seeds through pure love and have pure descendants on the clean foundation of having inherited the True Parents' lineage. I ask you to surmount this path with your hearts filled with hope, understanding how serious this is. Do you understand? (183-86, 1988.10.29)

The True Parents must bear responsibility for Adam and Eve's failures and settle the matter. Otherwise, there is no way back to the position of true parents. Since it was the parents that sowed, it should be the parents that reap, and burn away what is bad and store up what is good, so that they can later share out the seeds desired by all peoples. This is the Word of the Principle of true love, pure lineage and ideal conjugal love. No other path exists for humankind to seek. Though all else fades away, this will accompany the lives of human beings everlastingly. That's how precious it is. (256-28, 1994.3.12)

The lineage, the undefiled pure lineage must be maintained. Just as God banished fallen Adam and Eve, when the lineage is defiled one needs to remove oneself completely and fall in line behind fallen humanity to return after them. In the future, only those who have lived their lives safeguarding this purity can take charge of the Kingdom of Heaven. Such people will need to succeed to and inherit the mainstream traditional ideology. Blessed families who fall again cannot be forgiven. (268-110, 1995.3.31)

When you return home, it is the tradition to greet your parents and practice filial piety before anything else, a tradition that is emphasized more to women in particular. Why do we tell the story of Shim Chung? It is because it was woman who did not show filial piety. To indemnify world history, one woman should be established in the number one position in establishing the tradition of filial piety. This is the very first clause of indemnity in building the restored Kingdom of Heaven, and so women should take pride in becoming daughters who establish the tradition of filial piety, practice chastity and maintain purity. (286-103, 1997.8.9)

You can speak of becoming the own-

ers of God's Kingdom only after becoming filial sons and daughters. Following that, you become patriots, saints, and lastly families of divine sons and daughters, namely true families. Only when you have formed true families can you become owners of the Kingdom of Heaven. (400-204, 2003.1.1)

Without unifying your mind and body, you should not even think of entering heaven. If you had only wanted to unify your body and mind after listening to the Word of the Principle, you would still have to go to the next world and wait there unless you had already become as one. (400-205, 2003.1.1)

You need to become filial sons and daughters, sons- and daughters-in-law and saints. Next, based on purity, pure lineage and pure love, your families need to be filial before God on the family foundation. Not just you alone, but your whole families should practice filial piety. Then your families should become filial families of patriots, saints and divine sons and daughters. In such a position, you need to become the representatives of the owner, not lacking in any way as the princes and princesses who will inherit kingship from the individual level to the cosmic level, and even to the world beyond that is heaven. We should always train ourselves to do so, for that is what it means to be the owners of Cheon Il Guk. (406-316, 2003.3.12)

The True Parents must bring everything under control and dedicate them to the position of the owner. This is because Adam and Eve are meant to inherit everything after they are married. Having something in one's possession before one is married is like having purchased stolen goods. It is the same as if you have bought or borrowed and used what is stolen, or stolen it yourself for your own use; in short, the one who is not the owner has acted as one.

All together, based on families of purity, pure lineage and pure love before the True Parents, filial families of patriots, saints and divine sons and daughters should be offered and brought under control in God's presence. In that nation all should have their marriages and births registered. (406-320, 2003.3.12)

Blessed families based on pure lineage and pure love should form families, nations, a world and cosmos of filial piety and claim God as their Father. They should take after Him both inside and out, resembling His mind, body and even cells, and become as one in mind, body, mindset and harmony.

However, God does not have an object partner. In the position of one harmony, they should invest love, and continue to climb from the age of all things to God in the end. From there the origin of liberation based on the perfected and completed original ideal of creation can begin.

Through this, the cosmos can rejoice when God rejoices, and resonate with Him. We need to reach that place as soon as possible, faster than lightning. (406-322, 2003.3.12)

5.3. Life of serving God and the True Parents

Today, even though fallen people have parents, those parents are not true parents recognized by God. Then what is it that we need to do in the Last Days? At this time, while we are still alive, we should serve the universal parents, the parents of the religion and the parents of the family. In short, we need to serve those three sets of great parents.

The family is the representative form of the citizens, and the church that of the children, and the universal parents stand in the place of the true parents. People living on earth today are not within the realm of true parental love approved by God. The sad fact is that the flesh and blood relationship connecting us to our parents does not extend from our births to the eternal world.

Hence, we must understand that only when God's love is harmonized through the parents of the family, parents of the religion and universal parents can we enter His realm of love of the six thousand years of history and stand in His presence and lift up our faces before Him. This is the course we are bound to take. (5-122, 1959.1.4)

Had people been born without the Fall, they would have come into being from the seed connected to God's love and life, which would have nowhere else to go, but to return automatically to His presence. It can be likened to a magnet whose north pole is automatically drawn towards its south pole. Then there would be no need to question God's existence. Though we cannot detect the presence of air, without it we would suffocate. In the same way, though we cannot detect God's presence, if we do not live by His love and life, we would suffocate. (104-45, 1979.3.28)

Only by being reborn through the True Parents can you become the citizens of heaven. Then how can we be reborn? It is by making a condition to be reborn. That condition is to unite with them completely. Hence, women need to obey the commands of the True Mother absolutely. The deplorable matter of not having abided by the commandment in the Garden of Eden must be resolved. You need to practice absolute faith! Further, children must absolutely obey their Mother. Who teaches them to do so? It is the Father, the perfected Adam who teaches them. (237-301, 1992.11.17)

It is true that you will reap what you have sown. What seed did Adam and Eve sow in the Garden of Eden? It was that of free sex. Thus, they covered their lower parts. Young children caught sneaking coveted cookies or some other delicacies that their parents have kept somewhere will hide them when they see them coming. It is human nature to cover that which offends.

Since fallen people have dropped into hell, they need to go the diametrically opposite way in order to get to heaven. Born of the wrong lineage, they fell into hell. Their lineage was changed. Hence, the Messiah must come. He is

sent as the owner in the position of one who has not fallen to form a family in the Garden of Eden created by God. This must be logically correct. Through his family serving God, he should establish a nation through an engrafting process, by which all families can have their lineage reversed back to God's side. (279-118, 1996.8.1)

You can gain free passage only through the name of the True Parents; otherwise you cannot get it. It stands to reason that what the father possesses should be bequeathed to his children. Thus, you are undertaking Home Church activities in the place of the True Parents as their sons and daughters before God. (117-158, 1982.2.28)

If your sons and daughters have not united with the will of the True Parents concerning God, they cannot be said to be your own children. Only when they have become one in heart as the sons and daughters of the True Parents can they succeed you as your children. Fallen people should give birth to and raise children who do not belong to them, and through such children be elevated to a higher position. When such a concept is established, there can be no unrighteousness. (205-274, 1990.10.1)

To become God's children, you need to act like Him. By the same principle, if you do not model yourselves after the True Parents, you cannot become their sons and daughters. Even I do not like the word indemnity. Then why is it that I have to base all my words on it? This is because it is the formula course. If you cannot resolve it, you will fail in it, not just after a decade but even a millennium. (246-42, 1993.3.23)

When God is enthroned as the Universal Parent, His love will reign on earth. On that day, receiving His love, all would come to love their siblings and not fight with each other even if incited to do so. How abominable was the Fall in the Garden of Eden? How abominable is the course of bloodshed that has been trodden till now commenced by the conflict there? Individuals cannot go to heaven alone. United with your siblings, you should take your parents along with you to God's Kingdom. (105-339, 1979.10.28)

In the Garden of Eden Adam and Eve fell of their own accord and lived within that fallen realm, being thus unable to experience a life of serving God. Those who have not served Him have no right to enter His kingdom in heaven. Though you have inherited the fallen lineage and lived as such, you have indemnified a course of restoration and have served God and the True Parents on earth, whom not even Adam and Eve had served. On this condition you have become eligible to enter heaven, for only when you have done so can you be granted citizenship in God's Kingdom. (150-233, 1961.4.15)

I will proclaim "the Peace, Unity and Equalization of Cheon Il Guk." Peace, Unity and Equalization of Cheon

Il Guk means that it is the same everywhere – there is not one place that is different from any other. In other words, I am proclaiming the "Age of the World of Equalization." "Announcement and Proclamation of the Coming of the Age of Peace, Unity and Equalization of Cheon Il Guk!" What this means is that it is the same both in heaven and on earth, that they are equalized.

If you have faith in the leader of your religious order, when that religious leader is called upon he should respond. When the ancestors are called upon, they should respond as well for their descendants are truly the Blessed Families of the peace and unity of Cheon Il Guk.

Therefore, "I am speaking of the era wherein spirit people can freely return to earth, and the desires of the people on earth can freely reach their ancestors and God! Hereupon, I declare the Coming of the Age of Equalization!" Say "Amen." You should remember this day. In the midst of my early morning prayer, the realization came to me, "Such a time is now upon us!" and that is why I am making it public. So today I will briefly talk about how we should live now that we have entered such an era.

Our desire is to stand in the same position with God. Having the same status! Cohabitation means to live together. Next comes participation, which can also be said to be companionship. We should move and act together with Him. Thus, we should possess the same love, that is, live for the purpose of love together.

Thus, Jesus also said, "I am the way, the truth and the life. No one comes to the Father except through me." In those words, he did not mention the word "love." The Unification Church, which came later, establishes Cheon Il Guk through love.

So your desires are to reside in the same position as the True Parents. Isn't that what you wish for? You wish to live together with them, to join in and do all their work. What do you hope to achieve by that? To live together eternally in the place of liberation in freedom and happiness based on love! Amen! In this sense, I have announced that the Age of Peace, Unity and Equalization of Cheon Il Guk has arrived. Hence, when you move, you do not move alone, but your nations are following you about. The entire spirit world and God's entire kingdom are also following you, and escorted by the physical world and all people living in it, you are living in the capacity of the owner. Therefore you need to become owners who can serve the tradition of God's love throughout your clans as the ideology that is like the backbone of the traditions of a nation. (396-151, 2002.11.5)

Section 6. Inheriting the Realm of Victory of the Cosmic True Parent and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth

6.1. Name

Go through my collection of sermons: the things I said from forty years ago until now are all coming true. Well, you have all read those books, haven't

you? I am someone who knows a lot about Jesus. The name "True Parents" has existed from the year 1960. The fact that it entered the picture in this historic age is truly remarkable. There is no need to even speak about this, though. (168-259, 1987.9.27)

What will happen when the teachings of the Unification Church become a world ideology? The people in the spirit world will not remain there. Since they need to fulfill their purpose on earth, they will all return to earth and start their activities. It is the desire of billions of spirit people that Unification Church members around the world become the vanguard and to have them cry out, "Move! Move! Move! Move!" So, when spirit people complete their purpose on earth and return to the spirit world with their achievements, they will come under God's dominion. Then the one unified world will last eternally in the name of True Parents. (161-222, 1987.2.15)

If I were to go to Korea, all Unification Church members worldwide would already be united in their concern for Korea. Isn't it uncanny? In this sense, when President Chun Doo-hwan goes to Africa, will people follow him there? They wouldn't, would they? The Unification Church, on the other hand, is rather peculiar, is it not? Whites and blacks alike all follow me. Why? How come? It is because of love. What is my name? I have two names: my ordinary name is Sun Myung Moon and the other name that represents love is "True Parents." You should know that it is not just "True Parents." It is "True Parents representing love," because that is the key in spreading the ideology of unity across the universe based on God's unified love. (164-101, 1987.4.26)

Our Unification Church members are all alike, be they Westerners, Orientals or Africans. That is how we differ from others. Would you like being married to Westerners? Those who are here, will you accept it if I married you to Westerners or not? Will you or not? Why? For what? We do this because in our endeavors to unify the world, we discovered that Adam and Eve's illicit love and wrongful premarital union destroyed everything, and so the world can only be unified when man and woman live together in perfect unity within God's love, transcending the world, in God and the True Parents' names. Rather than having Koreans marry just among themselves, I marry them to people from nations that were once Korea's enemies. (164-159, 1987.5.10)

How much have you welcomed the man sent to earth by God amid His hopes and deep longings? It is not just him. It is truly amazing that he took root on earth in the name of "True Father', and together with the True Mother came to have the name "True Parents', and that the white-clad folk were chosen for such a glorious position. How can that be compared to Korea hosting the 1988 Olympic Games? (172-293, 1988.1.24)

Based on what can Rev. Moon take pride in the name "True Parent" on this day? It is on account of the fact that the internal realm of heart, which can bring down barriers blocking the way and open the gates through all horizontal and vertical stages and spheres in history centering on love, has been laid down. Not only I, but also heaven and earth, history, and this age should rejoice over such a victorious foundation. It is only in that stage that we can rejoice; we should not rejoice denying history and the past. We should be able to find joy in it in the past, present and future alike. (174-189, 1988.2.28)

In order to establish this in preparation for the realm of the fourth Adam, we have risen above the time when we prayed in the name of Jesus or that of the True Parents, and ushered in a new era wherein Blessed Families can pray in their own names. Therefore, the age has arrived in which blessed couples will not fall like Adam did, and can bless their own children in their own names. On account of this, on this day we can surmount this peak that will bring us to the original realm of the fourth Adam and the liberation of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven, and we have named this day Double-Ten Day (*ssang-ship jeol*) and have come here to report to You, Father.

In order to set apart and establish this day, we have gathered here on Double-Ten Day to proclaim this day with the hope of surmounting the peak of the realm of the fourth Adam. At this place where heaven and earth are unified, and Blessed Families have come together as one, I pray all forms of creation, the entire universe and the entire satanic realm will adapt themselves with the institution of this day, done in the name of the Parents of Heaven and Earth. I proclaim the liberation of the realm of the fourth Adam on Double-Ten Day in the True Parents' name. Amen! (304-157, 1999.10.10)

God and Satan are engaged in battle and the question is: who can put an end to this fight? Neither God nor Satan can stop it. Why? Since it was the false parents who brought about this fight, only when those who are more entitled to the position come forth and stand before God can He claim, "I will end it because you are what I wanted," and then Satan can also say, "Since you have triumphed, I will withdraw myself," thus putting an end to the battle. You should realize that because not even God Himself could do it, it has taken such a long time in history. Do you understand?

Hence, just as Moses had to pass through the course of wilderness together with the Israelites, leading them back to their homeland, the True Parents too had to tread their family course in the wilderness for forty years within the eighty years of their lifetime in order to enter God's Kingdom. That is what we are doing right now. To enter the blessed land of Canaan, the Israelites had to be circumcised, but as we are doing this on the family level, we are engrafted through the Blessing in the Unification Church.

Based on the Blessing, though we have been opposed and gone through all kinds of hardships, we need to surmount that last peak and become able to welcome any and all races. (298-192, 1999.1.2)

Parents would volunteer to take the bullet on behalf of their child who is about to be executed by a firing squad. Considering this, we should think about what the heart of God, the Parent of parents, would be like. If you got to know that, you would never be able to find even a trace of the term "filial impiety" in your lives. The True Parents came and toiled arduously in order to liberate such a God, and are continuing to do so.

Look at my calves: how can the founder of a religion have such calves? Just by themselves, they could be mistaken for those of an African. The True Parent must also be a father to Africans, as well as fishermen, farmers and herdsmen. If he can do so at least in heart, he would be able to take them to God's Kingdom. When I tell you to follow my heart of love for you, because the world will follow closely on the heels of the True Parents, we are establishing the name "True Parents" on earth. Hence, the True Parents are essential to the individual, the parent-child relationship and the conjugal relationship in the family, as well as the tribe. Otherwise the nation cannot be saved. (296-204, 1998.11.9)

6.2. The word

There are three great judgments in the Divine Principle, namely those of truth, character and heart. The Fall violated these three conditions. I can teach you now because I have passed through them. We must first complete the path of restoration before we can teach others because therein lies the Principle. Since the false parents were the first to fall into faithlessness and ignorance, the True Parents must now be the first to know the truth. Since the former were the first to fail to put the truth into practice, it is now the latter in principle who must be the first to do so. Therefore, unless I have already established the standard by practicing it first, I cannot teach the Divine Principle.

You must pass the standard of the Principle, and not fall short of it. Thus, you should embody the Principle. Those going against the principle of indemnity cannot be substantially restored. If there is any such condition still remaining, Satan can always drag them back into his realm of dominion. Therefore, to establish the substantial standard we must confront Satan face to face and be victorious. (1973.7.8)

The Bible contains God's command not to eat of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. It concerns that which can break our relationship with Him. Thus, it has become a problem. The Divine Principle explains this fact explicitly. It is a great gospel to those who are ignorant of the facts of the Fall, and can save all human beings living in suffering. The fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil cannot be regarded as literal. It is not a fruit

borne on an actual tree. Why would God have created a fruit that could consign humanity into the throes of conflict and destruction for untold generations? My explanation of all that being the result of an act of illicit love is the most logical thing you could ever think of. (128-86, 1983.6.5)

The Principle is the law of restoration, and differs from scientific principles taught at universities. It teaches the formula course for restoring the parents that humankind lost through the Fall. Yet that cannot be achieved without knowing the Principle, and, if one does know about it, what should one do? Should one keep the knowledge in one's head and just remain an onlooker? That knowledge must be put into practice. One ought to familiarize oneself with it and practice it by oneself. In order to put the Principle into practice, one needs to be convinced of it. Then what must one do after hearing the Principle? It became the law because the Parents personally put it into practice, and so the children should also practice it. (26-289, 1969.11.10)

What is taught in the Unification Church is called the Divine Principle. It teaches the principled path that everyone must follow, whether believers or non-believers, whether a thousand years ago or ten thousand years from now. On that basis, the truth as taught in the Unification Church contains the underlying principles that can resolve all complicated affairs and bitter feelings between God and the human world. It is not a dogma. Dogmas were for the era of the restoration and liberation of the archangelic realm; they cannot establish or restore families. (286-107, 1997.8.9)

We need to draw a conclusion on the question of where to find the point of origin to which we must return in order to restore ourselves to the ideal. For us to do so, we must be convinced that the Unification Principle is the one and only truth. It is the truth that does not change with the passage of history. It cannot be modified by the influence of any great person or the power of any state, or the world or even God Himself. If it can be said to be the truth that has remained unchanged from the past through the present to the future, it must surely have the value of the ideal desired by humankind from the very beginning. (1975.7.13)

While claiming to have learnt the Principle, you stowed it at the back of your minds and did as you pleased, and consequently have not embodied it. You should not go out witnessing in such a state. Doing so would only make you a fraud, for you are not working with God. Your actions should conform to the Principle.

In the Divine Principle you can find God's heart of six thousand years, as well as the history of my lifelong bloody struggles. It has so much hidden content unknown to you. Reading such a book that is the Divine Principle, as you turned page after page, have you ever stayed up all night praying, reciting and seeking the ladder that would lead you

to God's heart? Have you ever underlined any passage, wondering what history lay behind that word or phrase? If you haven't, how can you come here complaining God is not helping you? As such, I cannot but institute a new system. From now on, everything will have to be radically reformed. You can never afford to be ignorant of the sacredness of the vocation of a church leader doing God's work. (68-101, 1973.7.23)

The Principle is a storehouse containing the words of life. Listening to it is like attaching a rubber hose to a big cistern to be supplied with the water of life through it. Once you get a taste of that water of life, you will go crazy for it and could never tear your lips away from it even if you tried. If someone pulled you away, your lips would be torn from your face. It's just like a bee sucking on honey: if you were to pull at it with tweezers, it would stay in the honey, even if its tail came off. Similarly, you will find something in the Principle that is sweeter than even honey. (90-197, 1977.1.1)

You should talk about the contents of the Divine Principle of the Unification Church so much so that the mere mention of it would sicken you. Until you become resolved to do so, you will have no idea how interesting and exciting it is. You should know for certain that the Word has creative power. Since you know that God is with you wherever you go, your heart will have the power to influence your audience directly. (107-252, 1980.5.19)

In connection with witnessing about the Word, all Unification Church members do not understand the Divine Principle. You should witness while fully equipping yourselves with the Word and emphasizing the need to witness. You cannot deeply experience God's heart alone by yourself. You must witness! How? Through what should you witness? You should read the "Exposition of the Divine Principle" until you know it by heart; you should be able to say throughout on which page you would find which text. (96-318, 1978.2.13)

6.3. Actual accomplishments

In the past, people could only meet the founder of their religion through prayer and devotions, and thereafter parted once again, as the founder had to re-ascend. Yet now the time has come for all of them to return to earth to their adherents. Since such an era is now upon us, if you do not have actual accomplishments that can move the ages of the past, present and future, you cannot enter heaven. You need to realize this. The age of the past was one of angels and good spirits that are now in the spirit world, the age of the present is that of the parents, and the age of the future that of God.

Hence, those who lack actual accomplishments that can mobilize the spirit world, the Parents and God, cannot enter heaven. It is similar to the angels and God being moved to aid Adam and Eve, who would then have to govern the universe thereafter. (161-199, 1987.2.3)

People without actual accomplishments in love cannot be used by God. You must have some achievements. Hence, you can enter heaven only when you have your tribes of 36, 72 and 120 families. Without them you cannot be registered. That is how the Divine Principle works. The 36 Couples insist upon their dignity as such, but can they do so simply as of right? It is a fearful position. You don't know who Satan will grab hold of and attack. (303-166, 1999.8.17)

The perfected True Parents have made many proclamations, which can be read in hoondokhwae sessions. I have conducted numerous ceremonies such as the Realm of the Cosmic Sabbath for the Parents of Heaven and Earth, and the Declaration of the Settlement of the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification and the Resolution of Indemnity. This cannot be helped as the path to liberation must be paved, leveling down mountains to build the global foundation as originally intended. Without such actual past accomplishments, I could not be the True Parent, Messiah and returning Lord. You need to understand this clearly. As such is the way of the Principle, the True Parents would like to bestow the victorious authority they have established after fulfilling indemnity conditions and breaking down barriers, but you have no foundation upon which you can proclaim these achievements. (289-64, 1997.12.30)

You must make amends for your ancestors' wrongdoings. Thus, you should realize that testimony sessions such as these are very important, and not disregard what you hear. Let it be a reference to you in your minds to check up with others, and help you to grow. Yoo Jeong-ok has had many experiences. He has been taught a great deal by the spirit world and followed these teachings; people with such achievements will never be abandoned by the spirit world. Moreover, I too recognize such people. Even without explanations, I know in my heart. It is with such people that I should work, for those who work based on secular external considerations are bound to come to grief. Since you need to purify your inner character and can learn a lot from these testimonies based on such experiences, I ask you to pay close attention. (284-322, 1997.4.20)

I have told you, "A time will come when you will pray in your own names." What this actually meant was that rather than praying, one should report what one has done in one's name. First one should say, "I will do something," then accomplish it and make a report of it. If you do not have anything to report, you should all kneel down and repent. Repent! You should even repent your sinful thoughts. You should report, "I have done this much," and pledge your word. (304-130, 1999.9.14)

Even if you go to a place that could be considered central in the satanic world, you should be able to swallow and digest it all. Thus, Unification Church members are sent out to the worst places in

the world.

I was born in Korea, and passing through Japan, the United States and the Soviet Union, I have walked the path of restoring the world; you too have the responsibility to follow this path. Hence, you must leave behind historic achievements of having served at least four nations.

As such, you should have trained yourselves to be able to follow in the True Parents' footsteps, and seek out and overcome opposition in four nations. To fulfill your parental responsibilities in such nations, you need to learn their languages, and attain actual results of having raised people of those nations as your own children, without which you cannot enter heaven.

I have sent missionaries to 120 nations, and had them learn the languages of those nations on my behalf and establish a movement to sow the seeds of the parents of heart. All this I have done. Therefore, you should set the standard of having at least been my representatives. Hence, you need to pass through the four nations in which you can lay these foundations. (162-90, 1987.3.29)

Am I a great man? What have I done to be a great man? Is a man who makes others understand him well great? To be so, he must work and bring results. Ability alone cannot move the universe. There must be results. Even the greatest of men having achieved everything they set out to do have not accomplished a tenth of what I have done.

Thus, the situation is unfolding in which people can come to agree, where, in the United States and in the West people are recognizing that, "Rev. Moon is the Lord of the Second Coming both in name and reality!" The man who liberates communists, suffering humanity and this world is the Lord, the Messiah to the world.

Hence, we have reached the stage where people will agree that Rev. Moon is the Messiah. Even in the corridors of power in Washington, there is talk of what I have been doing. We have entered such a stage. We need to have real achievements. (163-29, 1987.4.18)

Section 7. The Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony and the Coronation of the King of the Blessed Families

7.1. Prayer for the Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony of the Parents of Heaven and Earth Opening the Gate of Cheon Il Guk

Thank You for letting us enter a new era, in which we were allowed to perfect the heartfelt hope of the True Parents' traditions being fulfilled by the original ideal of creation. The True Parents, who have nothing to be ashamed of in both the spiritual and physical worlds, embraced heaven and earth and tied the knot as husband and wife through the Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony of the Parents of Heaven and Earth Opening the Gate of Cheon Il Guk.

Based upon the Holy Matrimony of the True Parents, which will be the

foundation for the nation that Blessed Families will enter first after the liberation of heaven and earth, all those who have inherited true love, true life and true lineage will work together to make this happen. Those on earth in the Abel position, and those in heaven in the Cain position will support each other, our ancestors will support the Blessed Families on earth that have perfected the Blessing, and You and the saints and every other spirit in heaven will support the Blessed Families on earth. The spirits in heaven will support the Blessed Families on earth in the position of younger siblings serving elder siblings, which will bring about the supreme and uniformly completed victory on earth, and through this they will become one in body. The whole creation will inherit the True Parents' lineage, which can embrace and love the whole cosmos from the smallest to the biggest, with the victorious liberation of all generations, supreme victory, and ownership of love. With the joy of original life and the abundance of original happiness, the small will be absorbed by the big, and the big will be absorbed by the bigger. In such a way they will be absorbed by and unite with the True Parents' bodies which first received their life from You. In this way the families based on the True Parents' love will attain oneness with all beings. Thank You for allowing us to enter the era wherein we are able to offer ourselves as Your creation and bind ourselves to Cheon Il Guk, the realm of liberation of the Blessing.

The Blessing of today is the joy of the spiritual and physical worlds, the liberated joy of the Parents of heaven and earth, and at the same time, the liberated and victorious joy of the Cosmic Parent. The Blessed Families of Cheon Il Guk, both in the spiritual and physical worlds, will give joy to the Parents of both realms by becoming one in body centering on the ideals of one heart, one body, one mindset and one harmony. Three generations will fulfill the original standard of Your ideal of creation in order to be eligible to enter the ideal nation, Your longed-for homeland. I declare here today in the name of the Parents of heaven and earth and the Cosmic Parent, that we will become citizens of Cheon Il Guk who will be worthy to inherit the blessed heaven and earth; we will accomplish perfect liberation and be victorious. Praying that You will allow us to inherit this memorable day of the Blessing, I report this in the name of the True Parents. Amen! Amen! Amen! (404-282, 2003.2.6)

7.2. Benediction for the Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony of the Parents of Heaven and Earth Opening the Gate of Cheon Il Guk

Beloved Heavenly Father! Today is the sixth of February of the third year of Cheon Il Guk. From now on, for the Blessed Families in both the spiritual and physical worlds to enter Cheon Il Guk, both worlds have to follow the heavenly law by forming a fraternal bond. All the ancestors in the spirit world, who are in the Cain position, as well as all the fami-

lies on earth in the Abel position, should receive the Blessing and become siblings through the bloodline of the Parents. Thank You for allowing us this day that opened the Gate of Cheon Il Guk, which will be the hopeful beginning of the history of the new heaven and earth, when the ancestors in the spirit world in the elder sibling position will be placed in the younger sibling position, and the Blessed Families in the physical world in the younger sibling position will be placed in the elder sibling position.

Now the accomplishments of Parents here on earth and of the Cosmic Parent in heaven will become examples to parents in both the spiritual and physical worlds and will play an important part in the process of restoration when all children will be re-created and registered as citizens of Cheon Il Guk. These Blessed Families will indemnify everything that was lost and restore it to its original position, so that they will serve the Parents of heaven and earth in the position of their children and enter the palace of their ancestors' hometown in the original spiritual and physical worlds. Please have compassion on these Blessed Families of both worlds in a fraternal bond.

Allow the True Parents to achieve many things on earth so that they can indemnify and liberate and pass on everything to the children of their direct lineage who are standing here: the names of the Parents, the word and the accomplishment of the word of the Parents, and the norm of perfection for the entire liberated cosmos through the accomplishment of the word. We are finally able to rectify the original spirit world, which was turned upside down, by making arrangements so that the people in the spirit world in the elder sibling position will be in the younger sibling position, and the people on earth in the younger sibling position will be in the elder sibling position. This means that now we are free to walk on the path that leads directly to You.

From now on, all of creation – who are the objects of the ideal of creation, children, spouses and parents – should all embody the ideals of one heart, one body, one mindset and one harmony, and prepare to greet the new era in which we are able to complete the settlement of the family in the physical world, wherein we will be able to live while serving You directly. The True Parents, who know of this truth, have passed on this Blessing to us, and we should pass this source of all blessings on as a tradition of the family values of the eternally absolute, unique, and unchanging ideal of love. The Blessed Families who are gathered here today with the True Children will inherit this and show this to their descendants. These Blessed Families are allowed to walk forward into the realm of the liberation and settlement of the ideal of family, by uniting through the fraternal bond between themselves in the Cain position and the True Children in the Abel position, so that the future ancestors and descendants will all become perfected on the same horizontal level, and form the four-position foundation in Your eyes. We hope

and pray that You will allow everything that the Cosmic Parent and the Parents of heaven and earth desire, by opening wide the gates of Cheon Il Guk to all 360 degrees, so that all families following the traditions of the Parents will inherit the freedom and discretion that comes from fulfilling the duties of filial children, patriots, saints and Your divine sons and daughters, in order to inherit the name, word, accomplishments and victory of the Parents.

I ask You humbly to bless these families to become heirs and descendants worthy to inherit the original realm of the kingship and the Blessing that comes from the realm of the complete liberation of the entrance into the unified nation of Your kingdom on earth and in heaven which will fulfill Your earnest desire to realize the ideal of creation. I report this in the name of the True Parents. Amen! Amen! Amen! (404-284, 2003.2.6)

7.3. Prayer for the Coronation of the King of the Blessed Families of the Peace and Unity of the Cosmic Parent and the Parents of Heaven and Earth

Father! In dedicating to You the Coronation of the King of the Blessed Families of the Peace and Unity of the Cosmic True Parent and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth, we pray that You may accept this ceremony of the blessing and grace of the entire family of the unification of the reciprocal world that the citizens of Cheon Il Guk both in the spiritual and physical worlds offer with one heart, one body and one mindset.

Having the supreme victory of the realm of cosmic liberation which Adam's original, unfallen family was to perfect in accordance with Your will, but instead lost through the Fall as a result of which humankind for thousands of years perpetuated the love, life and lineage of Satan, we are holding the Coronation of the King of the Blessed Families that will enable all human beings to come together in the grace of the equal blessing of liberation and be embraced by You. Praying that you will accept with the grace that will restore all human beings through realizing the sovereignty of love by virtue of the ideal of oneness, I report this in the name of the True Parents. Amen! Amen! Amen! (404-287, 2003.2.6)

7.4. Benediction for the Coronation of the King of the Blessed Families of the Peace and Unity of the Cosmic True Parent and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth

Beloved Heavenly Father! Today is February 6th in the third year of Cheon Il Guk, on which the True Parents are celebrating their 83rd and 60th birthdays. At the same time, today marks the day of the historic turning point on which we are holding the Coronation of the King of the Blessed Families of the Peace and Unity of the Cosmic True Parent and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth.

The name Cheon Il Guk is derived from the hoped-for settlement of the

family based on the true life and lineage centering on the new true love that comes from the unity of the spiritual and the physical parents that resulted from Your original blessing of perfected Adam and Eve based upon Your ideal of creation.

The ancestors of humankind were to have centered upon the substantial realm with Adam as the masculine representative and Eve as the feminine representative, so that You would stand in the incorporeal upper position, whereas humankind would be in the lower position, in order to spread out in all four directions of north, south, east and west. In this way, man and woman would respectively take up their positions of east and west, and the incorporeal Cosmic Parent would unify west and east, enabling Adam and Eve to reach the level of perfection, growing from childhood and attaining the maturity of the age of engagement and of marriage.

Through this there would be the perfected standard of the upper position and also of the lower position through which there would be a central position where the perfected standards of man and woman could meet and attain oneness through the blessing of marriage, which would enable the incorporeal Cosmic Parent and the corporeal Parents of Heaven and Earth to meet and attain oneness in the highest position of the ideal of creation based on the ideal of love. Your central love would unite Adam, Eve and You in the higher position; Adam, Eve and their children in the lower position; You, Adam and his son on the right side; and Your feminine internal character, Eve and her daughter on the left side. In such a manner, the ideal of oneness should have settled in all directions of the four-position foundation of front and rear, left and right, and up and down.

If the positions of front and rear, left and right, and up and down, had fulfilled the ideal of oneness as a four-position foundation based on Your true love, You would have been the first generation, Adam and Eve the second, and their children the third. Through them the reciprocal four-position foundation would have been settled as the ideal of oneness. The six positions of the settled grandfather, grandmother, mother, father, husband and wife as well as the eight positions when including the son and daughter would have planted the seed of the ideal family of perfected love in heaven and on earth. Yet all of this was not accomplished due to the Fall.

Since the positions of up, down, right, left, front and rear did not achieve the ideal of oneness between You and humankind in a parent-child relationship, men and women, and elder and younger brothers became enemies. Your originally desired settlement of the ideal family based on Your true love, life and lineage remained unfulfilled because the archangel usurped Your rightful position and achieved oneness with Adam and Eve, with the result that the position of the parents of heaven and earth was seized by evil parents.

All Unification Church members know that this brought about enmity

between mind and body, man and woman, heaven and earth, older brother and younger brother, that their strife resulted in You being confined in solitude, and that the age of Satan's supreme authority to do as he pleased resulted in a tearful and bloodstained history.

Father! Unification Church members know that Your original plan for the perfect oneness of mind and body of the heavenly and earthly Parents was the ideal position for starting a family of supreme victory based on love throughout all generations. Your plan to establish one single nation, kinship, people and civilization in the eternal realm of peace and prosperity was opposed, and thus the conflicting history of the ancestors of humankind was filled with bloodshed.

I know that You looked on us with love, embracing and forgiving us, although we committed terrible sins and could not repent. You indemnified our sins and crossed over the peak of indemnity at the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos through trials and tribulations, sacrificing Yourself for our ignorance in this world. You set up religion as the representative place to pioneer this process, established the chosen nation of Israel, and developed Judaism based on that nation. You set up the realm of unity of both the internal and external standards of Cain and Abel, by virtue of which the Messiah was to come, and through him, the parental position was to be determined. You desired that, based on the supreme family victory, the foundation of victory would be set up, and through it the supreme national victory, and thereupon, those of global and cosmic victory. I know all this and also that Your hopes and desires were lost. Because of our sins as disloyal and impious children, You were placed in such a position.

I know that You wished to realize one nation based on the religion of the Cosmic Parent transcending religions, politics, nations, NGOs and the world, by sending the Messiah promised to the Israelites as the perfected man so that the standard of Eve lost in Adam's family could be restored at the national level. On the foundation of the family and of the nation transcending race, the supreme victory was to be established, and Your sovereignty of love that You idealized in Eden was to be restored. Instead of this, Your will fell to the darkest of pits. But I guarded it, and though working alone in the darkest of nights, I restored the positions of the servant of servants, servant, adopted child, child by a concubine, and finally the children born within wedlock. I then found the True Mother, set up the position of the True Parents, and dealt with the communist and democratic nations in the Cain and Abel positions. I know of all this and also of the mission of Eve, who is to embrace all this and offer this earth to the True Parent in the position of the Original Father.

By fulfilling the mission of Eve, the Mother is to fight Satan's sovereignty that destroys the freedom of the entire democratic world, in order to overcome

the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. She is to transcend the world so that she can go through birth pangs again for the sake of humanity. She is to succeed in the position of the True Parent, perfect the substantial position of the victorious Mother in heaven and on earth, and open the gates of Cheon Il Guk which will inherit Your sovereignty.

By doing so, they will establish heaven in the physical and spirit worlds and restore love through the oneness of mind, body and mindset and liberate the realm where true love, life, lineage and the true family will be permanently established. We have finally arrived at a time when we can eliminate this world of grief and lamentation and reconstruct the sovereignty of love of a bright and hopeful future, which will be an offering to You. For all this we are very grateful and thank You wholeheartedly.

All people in the spirit world and all Blessed Families of the blessed realm of the firstborn in heaven! The brothers and sisters here who are blessed in the original position of Adam and Abel that is untouched by the Fall welcome their siblings in the spirit world who will descend to the physical world to serve the people in the Abel position as elder siblings. All will become one in body and create the realm of oneness of heaven and earth, so that they will serve the Parents of heaven and earth both vertically and horizontally, bringing about blessing at the stages of the individual, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos in the level position and the liberated standard. The Blessed Families at all those levels in the vertical position are now able to assume the positions of the Blessing, along with both the elder and younger siblings.

In this way, the elder siblings in the spirit world will come to the physical world and restore all the Blessed Families from the younger sibling's position to the vertical position, thereby bringing about the age of the great transition of the new heaven and new earth and restoration through exchanging positions. The Coronation of the King of the Blessed Families of the Peace and Unity of the Cosmic True Parent and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth, which was conducted based upon true love, will change the past in which the owners of the horizontal and vertical worlds did not attain oneness in Adam's family and so could not start together. I am very grateful for Your allowing me to hold this Coronation of the King of the Blessed Families that enabled me to declare the beginning of the realm of the ideal Cheon Il Guk of liberation in God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven.

Through the true love of the Cosmic Parent and the Parents of heaven and earth, we were able to attain oneness of mind, body and mindset, and based on the True Parents who are the object partners of Your love, the true love from True Parents, True Children and true lineage, I was able to complete the settlement of the true perfected family. Through the Fall Adam and Eve had failed and as false parents defiled the lineage, but the True Parents had overcome all this and completely cleansed it. In the

place of blessing to liberate Adam's family, You, through the Parents of heaven and earth, blessed hundreds of billions of people in both the spiritual and physical worlds with one heart, body and mindset in order to purify the defiled lineage.

In the position of sons and daughters that attained oneness in the bosom of the Cosmic Parent and the Parents of heaven and earth, those in the spirit world, beginning from the liberated hell and paradise and from all directions, are able to go directly to Your throne. I am very grateful for Your allowing me to hold the Coronation of the King of the Blessed Families of the Peace and Unity of the Cosmic True Parent and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth that will enable You and the True Parents to attain oneness of mind and body in the position of the original substantial form, and cross over the line to start for the ideal heavenly world of the family, so that they can exist in the position of all-transcendence, all-immanence, supreme authority and omnipotence.

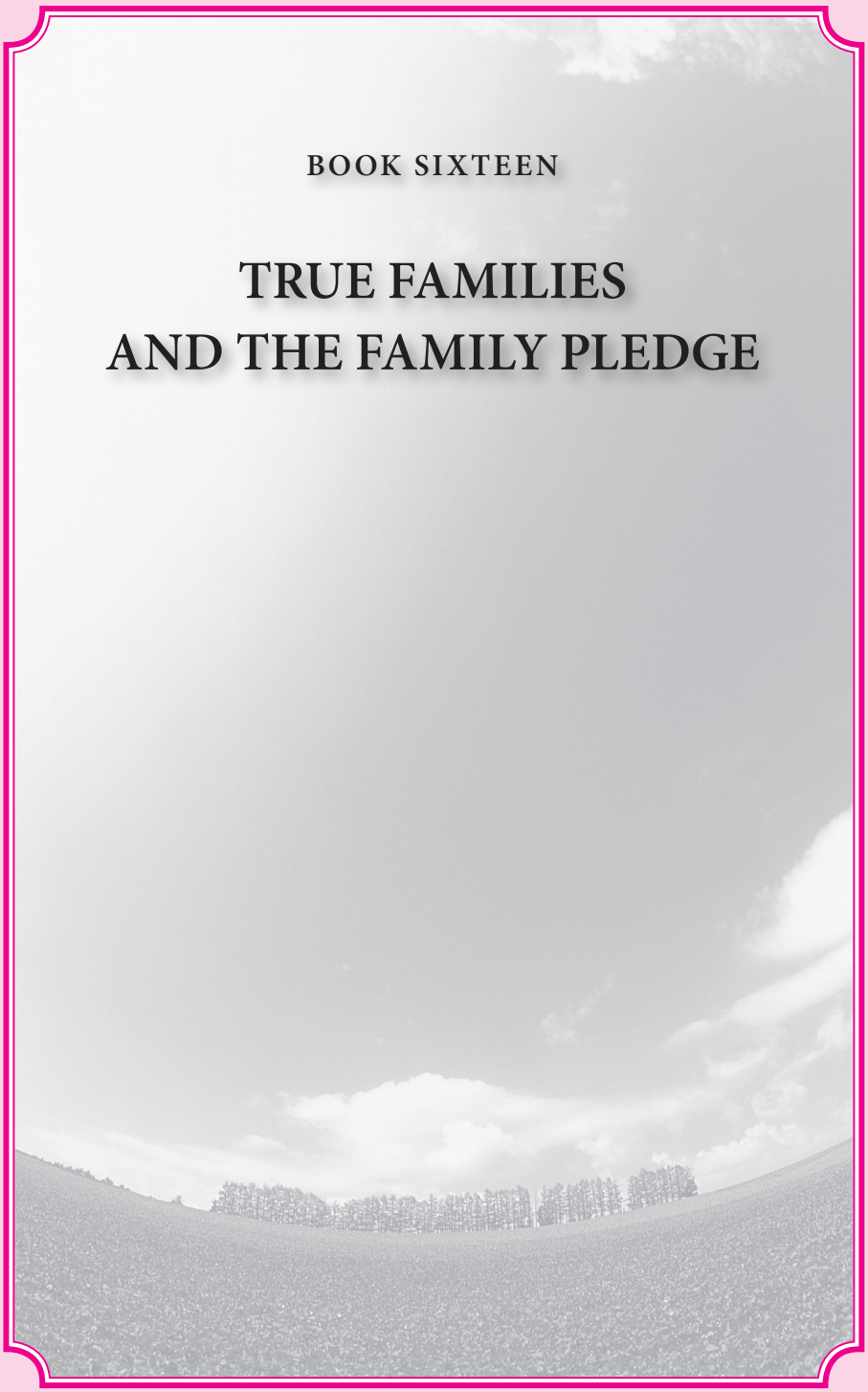
I pray that from today the powers of evil will retreat and the powers of goodness will advance and, by assuming overall command and leadership, strive to establish the new heavenly civilization, so that the glory and grace of heaven will fill the entire cosmos and all Blessed Families worldwide will inherit the sovereignty of the love and liberation of the physical and spirit worlds, and thereby become worthy to be the registered Blessed Families of the Nation of Cosmic Peace and Unity.

On this day and in this place where the Cosmic Parent and the Parents of Heaven and Earth have attained oneness of mind and body, I declare and direct that everyone will strive to achieve the age of sovereignty of the one ideal, of the unified world of Cheon Il Guk based on the liberation of heaven. I pray that You will let us achieve everything in accordance with our desires. I report this in the name of the True Parents. Amen! Amen! Amen! (404-288, 2003.2.6)

The above section contains the edited prayers and benedictions True Parents gave at the "Holy Marriage Blessing Ceremony of the Parents of Heaven and Earth Opening Cheon Il Guk" and the "Coronation of the King of the Blessed Families of the Peace and Unity of the Cosmic True Parent and the True Parents of Heaven and Earth" conducted on February 6, 2003.

BOOK SIXTEEN

TRUE FAMILIES AND THE FAMILY PLEDGE



Contents

Chapter 1. The Family Pledge: Declaration and Preconditions

Section 1. The Background to the Family Pledge 2353
1.1. This is the age centering on families, not on individuals 2353
1.2. The Settlement of the Completed Testament Age and the beginning of the family age 2356
1.3. Establishing the Family Federation – moving towards the age of the worldwide family 2360
1.4. The reason for establishing the Family Pledge 2365
Section 2. The Meaning and Value of the Family Pledge 2367
2.1. The importance of the Family Pledge 2367
2.2. The Family Pledge is the encapsulation of the outline of restoration 2370
2.3. The central philosophy of the Family Pledge is "True Love" 2372
2.4. You must maintain the Family Pledge as your standard 2374
2.5. Our attitude toward the Family Pledge 2377
Section 3. The Family Pledge and the Tradition of the Blessed Families 2379
3.1. We must create the Kingdom of Heaven by serving others 2379
3.2. You must live united with True Parents 2380
3.3. We must set up the correct family tradition and family law 2383

Chapter 2. Explanation of the Family Pledge

Section 1. Explanation of Family Pledge Number One 2387
1.1. The owner of Cheon Il Guk 2387
1.1.1. The meaning of Cheon Il Guk 2387
1.1.2. The attitude and lifestyle of an owner of Cheon Il Guk 2388
1.2. Centering on true love 2390
1.2.1. The primary premise of the Family Pledge is "by centering on true love" 2390
1.2.2. True Love is the love connected only with God 2392
1.2.3. The foundation for true love is a true family 2394
1.3. Seeking our original homeland 2396
1.3.1. The true meaning of our original homeland 2396
1.3.2. The original homeland we must seek 2400
1.4. The original ideal of creation 2403
1.5. Building the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven 2407
1.5.1. The starting point for the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven is the family 2407
1.5.2. Building the Kingdom of Heaven is the mission of Blessed Families 2411
1.5.3. The return to one's hometown and the completion of the tribal messiah mission 2414

Section 2. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Two 2417
2.1. Our family pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth 2418
2.1.1. Adam's family is the representative and central family 2418
2.1.2. Blessed families have the same value as the original family 2420
2.2. Perfect the dutiful family way of filial sons and daughters in our family, patriots in our nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth 2424
2.2.1. The path of filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters that we must inevitably go 2424
2.2.2. The difference between a saint and a divine son or daughter 2431
2.2.3. The true way that people must go 2435
Section 3. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Three 2439
3.1. The Four Great Realms of Heart 2439
3.2. The Three Great Kingships 2449
3.2.1. The Three Great Kingships are the basic framework of the ideal of creation 2449
3.2.2. Restoration of the right of the first son, the right of the parent and the right of kingship 2454
3.3. Perfecting the realm of the royal family 2458
3.3.1. The Kingdom of Heaven is the destination of the realm of the royal family of Love 2458
3.3.2. What is the realm of the royal family? 2462
3.3.3. The Realm of the royal family does not include the direct children 2468
3.3.4. Towards the era of nation-building centering on the realm of the royal family 2471
Section 4. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Four 2473
4.1. God's ideal of creation 2473
4.2. The universal family encompassing heaven and earth 2474
4.2.1. The basis of the universal family encompassing heaven and earth: the family 2474
4.2.2. The core of a society of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values is love. 2476
4.3. The world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness 2478
4.3.1. Our idea: one unified world 2478
4.3.2. Love is the essence of freedom, peace and happiness 2481
Section 5. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Five 2484
5.1. The unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners 2484
5.1.1. The spirit world is the subject partner 2484
5.1.2. We must unify the spirit world and the physical world 2487
5.2. Strive to advance 2491
5.2.1. Strive to advance every day 2491
5.2.2. Let us pave a true love highway 2494

Section 6. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Six 2497
6.1. A family that embodies God and True Parents 2497
6.2. Families that move heavenly fortune 2499
6.3. A family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community 2501
Section 7. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Seven 2503
7.1. The family rooted in the original lineage 2504
7.2. Through living for the sake of others 2506
7.3. Perfecting a world based on the culture of heart 2508
Section 8. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Eight 2511
8.1. As we enter the Completed Testament Age 2511
8.1.1. What is the Completed Testament Age? 2511
8.1.2. The Completed Testament Age is declared through the victory of the True Parents. 2514
8.2. Through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience 2517
8.2.1. God's principle of creation and absolute faith and absolute obedience 2517
8.2.2. The practice of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience sends you straight to the Kingdom of Heaven 2522
8.2.3. The standard of oneness is absolute faith and absolute love 2524
8.3. To achieve the ideal of oneness of God and humankind in love 2527
8.3.1. The ideal oneness of God and humankind in love is God's purpose of creation 2527
8.3.2. How is the oneness of God and humankind realized? 2528
8.3.3. We are to restore the ideal of oneness of God and humankind in love 2532
8.4. The realm of liberation and the realm of complete freedom in the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven 2533
8.4.1. Building the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven through true love 2533
8.4.2. Let us pledge to perfect the realm of liberation 2537

CHAPTER ONE

The Family Pledge: Declaration and Preconditions

Section 1. The Background to the Family Pledge

1.1. This is the age centering on families, not on individuals

Until now, in the Unification Church, we recited My Pledge focused on the individual. The Christian cultural sphere should have served the Lord at his Second Advent as his bride on the worldwide level. The Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven was to have started from 1952, but all ended up in failure. This is the reason why the providence was prolonged for forty years and the Unification Church had to go through a historical course of atonement. (260-181, 1994.5.8)

Have you ever heard the expression family pledge? It has appeared for the first time in history. The Family Pledge was established because a man and a woman lost their family. Unless we reestablish the original standard of the model family acceptable to God before the Fall, God cannot rejoice or establish the heavenly kingdom where He can dwell on the earth and in heaven. It was inevitable that this pledge would come about. (274-114, 1995.10.29)

The Family Pledge was created forty years after the founding of the Unification Church. The Family Pledge never existed before in history. Now that the Family Pledge has appeared, satanic families living in the physical world have no place where they can dwell in the future. The Family Pledge represents the fact that I indemnified four thousand years of history, and the victorious foundation made during World War II which had subsequently been lost. On this forty year foundation, the Kingdom of Heaven could now begin on earth.

What is the first element of the Family Pledge? It is "Our family... by centering on true love". Our families must live by centering on true love. What is true love? True love means we should be one with the unfallen love of God and True Parents. We should be connected to true life and true lineage based on true love. (266-143, 1994.12.22)

Forty years after the founding of the Unification Church, the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification was established representing completely restored families. Individuals in the restored families have united their minds and bodies centering on the original mind. Husbands and wives are unit-

ed and parents and children are united. These families must learn the Family Pledge by heart.

You cannot recite the Family Pledge when your minds and bodies are in conflict or when husbands and wives are fighting. You cannot recite it without having any children. The unity of mind and body, husband and wife, and parents and children, should be centered on God's love. This is the place where true harmonious families can enter the heavenly kingdom. Only those who are united in true love can recite the Family Pledge, which has appeared for the first time in history. (264-339, 1994.11.20)

Forty years after the establishment of the Unification Church, we founded the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. In order for the Family Federation to succeed, we must have an absolute regulation, something like a constitutional law. This is the Family Pledge. The expression Family Pledge never existed until now. It is the Family Pledge of going forward to, and establishing the Kingdom of Heaven. If you carefully study the Family Pledge, you can see that its contents explain that total liberation will be granted based on restoration through indemnity. Those who memorize it do not belong in the family realm of the fallen world but in the family realm of completion. The family can be established based on true love. Mind and body that were separated because of false love can now be united. This is why, without uniting your mind and body, you cannot learn the Family Pledge by heart. (264-244, 1994.11.3)

Why do we need the Family Pledge? Unification Church members must show True Parents' family tradition to the world. It is our family motto. The time will come when it will be absolutely necessary. We are preparing for that coming time.

In the Pledge, you can see how families in God's ideal of creation should live. The whole world must follow the Family Pledge. The seven verses within the pledge represent the entire providential history and act as a protective shield for True Parents' victory. Even if one does not understand the providence of the Old and New Testament ages or the Divine Principle, it is possible to go to heaven if one passes through with absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience centering on God. (272-181, 1995.10.5)

Until now, Christians have thought that only Adam and Eve fell. They did not know that Adam's family fell. Christians did not know that Adam and Eve's children also fell when Cain killed Abel.

How should the members of the Unification Church pledge? You should pledge centering on your families. You do not need anything else. Happiness, freedom, peace, and even the entire cosmos, all started from a family. We need the pledge centering on families. You must not lose the families. Once we create the unified family, we can unite the world as well as the Kingdom of Heaven. (260-152, 1994.5.2)

We must send out tribal messiahs or there will be great troubles. The paths along which those tribes will be born will be blocked. By being tribal messiahs, you will be horizontally connected to the foundation Adam could have reached had he not fallen, the foundation Jesus could have completed had he not been killed, and the national foundations. The eight stages from individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, cosmos, and God, can be completed on earth. They are the horizontal foundations. By indemnifying all of this, you can freely go to any home in the individual, tribal, and national level without interference from Satan. Families can begin to live with God, and the Kingdom of Heaven will begin on earth. Because such a time has arrived, the Family Pledge was created. You must live according to the Family Pledge. (264-191, 1994.10.9)

The family can be both amazing and frightening. You should never forget that the content of the Family Pledge is a cosmic grand declaration. Starting from last year, I have been declaring in my speeches that people should have families. This is an absolute principle. The time to hold the Blessing Ceremony for liberating the spirit world is coming. After the 3.6 Million Couples Blessing, we will begin holding the Blessing Ceremony for the spirit world. The time has come when you can call your departed spouse to be bound together with you. Even hell can be liberated. (283-90, 1997. 4.13)

We have been unable to settle until now. We have been pushed away. We have been floating here and there like clouds. The Christian cultural sphere did not have both the spiritual and physical foundations and could not settle on earth. However, since the settlement of the Completed Testament Age and True Parents, people can now be given the right of inheritance. What can one inherit within the settlement? You inherit a family. You must understand this. That is why we have the Family Pledge. We must thoroughly teach the Family Pledge. (268-226, 1995.4.2)

Until now, we recited My Pledge, but now we are reciting the Family Pledge for the first time. There had not been any Family Pledge before in history. This is an amazing fact. The forty year restoration course through indemnity has passed. Now the time has come when the world can move, led by me. That is why the Family Pledge could be born. After World War II, the worldwide unified Christian cultural sphere was destroyed, but now it has been conditionally restored on my victorious worldwide foundation. (263-110, 1994.8.21)

The seven year period should have been the seven years from 1945 to 1952. But it was extended into a forty year period between 1952 and 1992. Focused on the Unification Church, this took us forty years. We were then able to proclaim the family declaration in May of 1994. It was a historic event. We are restoring human history based on numbers. (265-293, 1994.11.27)

Centering on the settlement age of True Parents, you must establish the family completion age without shame before God. So, we needed the Family Pledge. We need it. We will need it. Which one is it? We need it! That's the way it is. It will be the motto for thousands or tens of thousands of years. It's amazing! You must be grateful for the fact that you can recite the pledge due to your liberation by the removal of the mask of false religions. I have gone through such bitter sorrow and shed countless tears through the years to bring you to this point. I have offered my own blood to lead the Unification Church until now. If you cannot go beyond the sacrificial altar, you can never go to the heavenly kingdom. You must make this altar. (261-98, 1994.5.22)

1.2. The Settlement of the Completed Testament Age and the beginning of the family age

The Settlement of the Completed Testament Age and True Parents is a frightening expression. It indicates that I have fought and won victory on the family level in the satanic world. I established the Completed Testament Age on the victorious foundation that I made, having fought on the tribal, ethnic, national, world and cosmic levels. It was settled after having fulfilled the testaments. This is amazing!

What was the Fall? Adam was to have been the ruler of the archangel, but this relationship was reversed. Restoration of that situation is easy to talk about now, but actually doing it was nearly impossible. I had to bring satans in the spiritual and physical worlds to the point of surrender and take dominion over them. Without doing so, the settlement would not have been possible. Wherever you go, without the determination to unite with me completely, you cannot do what I am doing. (268-79, 1995.3.5)

In 1992, we announced the Messiah and True Parents to the world. Focusing on America, we announced the True Parents and the Completed Testament Age starting on May 13, 1993. I have made all the necessary conditions. As you know, America represents the entire world. It is the final settling place in terms of the Christian cultural sphere. This is the time of transition into the new age centering on True Parents. We are entering the Completed Testament Age. Our proclamation was the first time in history for such an event. How long God must have been waiting for this time! How miserable God has been throughout history! Now the age of hope is approaching. We are entering into the age when we can proclaim the True Parents. It is a historical and universal event. Nothing like this has ever happened before in human history. (248-175, 1993.8.3)

After the creation, God's providence of restoration has continued for ten million years. However, the foundation was not established before I came. I revealed the providence of restoration and laid its foundation during the age of the Unification Church. On the foundation I made, I could announce the Completed Testa-

ment Age and True Parents. It is indeed a historical world event, although the word event is not the right word. In any case, this is the starting point from which the new world can be built. The terms True Parents and the Completed Testament Age contain this kind of meaning. What kind of promise is to be fulfilled in the Completed Testament Age? It is the fulfillment of the promise God made with humankind at the time of creation. It does not mean that the age of the providence of restoration or the age of the providence of salvation is fulfilled. It means the fulfillment of God's ideal of creation. This is why God first conceived of the idea of True Parents before he thought of humankind. The appearance of the True Parents is the ideal of creation. (248-188, 1993.9.30)

How does one enter the Completed Testament Age after having gone through the New Testament Age? The Completed Testament represents the unified realm of God and humankind. It is where God and humankind have equal value through the complete unification of God and humankind based on true love. God does not always stand in the vertical position or human beings in the horizontal position. In love, the vertical and horizontal positions become one. (252-154, 1993.12.29)

Focusing on Korea, the twenty year period from 1972 to 1992 was the time when I restored the role of Christianity. On the national level, I walked the course of the Old Testament Age. After True Parents' wedding in 1960, I worked in America, representing the worldwide stage corresponding to the Old and the New Testament Ages. The contents of this period correspond to the Old Testament and New Testament Ages. The worldwide settlement of True Parents was completed by the end of this period. That was why I announced the Completed Testament Age. Then, we live with God. Our Unification Church members can live with God. (246-301, 1993.4.20)

What does the Completed Testament Age mean? It is the age when True Parents' family wins total victory over the fallen world. It means there are no enemies trying to destroy my family. Those who tried have lost, and therefore, they should disappear. Even a shooting champion cannot say that he is the best if he went to the Olympics and lost. He must hand over the champion's trophy to the new winner. (234-295, 1992.8.27)

True Parents and the Completed Testament Age represent the perfection of Adam and Eve who have returned to the unfallen state. Adam is one person and so is Eve. All the women in the world are the second selves of True Mother. This is an important point. There should be one completed Adam and also one completed Eve. (266-64, 1994.12.11)

During the Completed Testament Age, the providence should be based on families. Unification starts with individuals. Without overcoming obstacles, you can never enter heaven even after

thousands or tens of thousands of years pass. You can never restore the right of the eldest son. You must bring people to a natural surrender. You cannot force people to surrender to you. You must use persuasion. Which is proper, natural surrender or forceful surrender? Since you used persuasion, wasn't the result a natural surrender?

Going this way, I established the family of Eden in the heavenly kingdom on earth and in heaven. This is equivalent to all the victories won through several thousands of years of struggle. Then, all the spiritually prepared nations should copy this golden mold, or model, based on the True Family. This should be copied throughout the world. I have the blueprint. Once you have a blueprint, things can be produced instantly. The entire human family of five billion should be grafted onto this model family and return to the once lost heavenly kingdom, the liberated kingdom. This is the time of the Completed Testament Age, the age of fulfilling the promise. (245-157, 1993.2.28)

The most important thing in the course of history, today, is the fact that the realm of the chosen people has been created. Upon welcoming this age, I have tried to connect this on the worldwide level to the three stages of formation, growth and completion. The Israelites were in the formation stage, Christians were in the growth stage, and Unification Church members are in the completion stage. Isn't that right? The Israelites belong to the Old Testament Age, Christianity belongs to the New Testament Age, and the Unification Church belongs to the Completed Testament Age. The Completed Testament Age represents fulfillment. What should we fulfill? We should fulfill the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, and world levels. Based on what? Based on God's love, God's life, and God's lineage. Once God established the tradition of one lineage, one love, and one life, Satan has had no choice but to leave. By engrafting onto the lineage of God, the tie with the satanic lineage is broken. (226-275, 1992.2.9)

What is the problem? We must perfect our families. Since we are at the time of the Completed Testament Age, the age of completion of the restoration of the family level Canaan, it is time for your families to settle following my words. Therefore, when you listen to my words, you should not treat them casually. I risked my life, urgently teaching you what I have to say and desiring to leave behind at least these words. You must understand this. (292-122, 1998.3.28)

If we had created one world right after World War II, based on the Christian cultural sphere and America, and if we had all united internally when these powers held sway over the world, God's providence could have developed quickly. From this perspective, the time right after World War II was the most hopeful time in history for God, and the most critical moment for Satan. If the free world, based on the Christian cultural sphere and America, had accepted

the Unification Church, then from that moment on, the unified realm of the spirit world and the unified realm of the physical world would have been united together. This is the providential point of view. (161-220, 1987.2.15)

The satanic world continues to break down. You just wait and see what happens. Individuals, families, tribes, races and nations in the satanic world have lost their purpose and direction. However, our Unification Church has all the things necessary to move forward. Therefore, our direction is the opposite of Satan's and our paths will one day intersect. In the past, the Unification Church suffered under the rule of satanic dominion; however, things will reverse. This is what I mean by our settlement. (268-79, 1995.3.5)

What is the Completed Testament Age? It is the world that will be achieved once satanic dominion is ended. How can you fulfill the Completed Testament Age? Through families. You fulfill it through the Blessed Families. That is why Adam's, Noah's, and Jacob's families appeared in the providence. After the age of the Lord at his Second Advent arrived, I established Jesus' family. Representing the restoration of Jesus' family, I blessed the 36, 72, and 124 Couples. The 430 Couples represent Korea and its 4,300 years of history; 43 couples of the world were connected to the 430 Couples. The 777 Couples represent all nations of the world. That Blessing was followed by the Blessing of 1800 couples. At the present, the providence has moved on to between 7,000 and 8,000 couples. This is how we made a foothold on the worldwide foundation. The Completed Testament Age is being fulfilled through families. In addition to blessing Jesus, I had to organize the blessing of the twelve apostles and seventy disciples. Twelve apostles, 70 disciples and 120 disciples are being reorganized on the family level. (131-71, 1984.4.16)

This year's motto is, "Let Us Inherit True Parents' Victorious Realm." The scope of the victorious realm embraces the dominion of the individual, family, people, nation, world, cosmos, and heaven and hell dominion. I have unified and liberated them all. Satan has to retreat now. As time passes, all satans will decline. In the Garden of Eden, the manifestation of good and evil was expressed in the relationship between two brothers. This is the reason people in the world nowadays are saying, "The world has now become a global village." My teaching says that the world has become a global family. The global family and the global village are correlated. The Cain side, as the eldest son, represents the satanic world. The global village represents the Cain side, and the Unification Church represents the Abel side. These two must become one. (267-254, 1995.1.8)

The Cain world has no choice but to follow the Unification Church. In order to realize a family as God intended, individuals must be perfected. You cannot

find the idea of perfecting individuals, or the ideology of the family, true man and true woman outside of the Unification Church. Unification Church members have nothing to do with AIDS, free sex, homosexuals, lesbians, or drugs. Our goal is to liberate and perfect individuals, families, tribes, the world, and heaven and earth, based on true love. By liberating even God and the True Parents, and then fulfilling the duties of filial children, loyal servants, saints, and holy sons and daughters, you can be liberated to freely travel in the heavenly kingdom in heaven and on earth.

This is the path to follow in order to become people of character, and it is the purpose of my teaching. The conclusion is very simple. I have invested fifty years of my life – my whole life – a life interwoven with so many various experiences, persecution, ridicule, and suffering, in order to complete the worldwide realm of liberation. Now the time has come for me to bequeath the worldwide victorious foundation, which God has longed for, to all humanity. The time has come for True Parents, out of love, to freely hand over everything they have to their children. (267-254, 1995.1.8)

The heavenly kingdom on earth and in heaven must be united. The family living a heavenly lifestyle while on earth, based on God's true love, will pass on to the spirit world where this heavenly lifestyle will continue. The people who live good family lives based on God's true love while on earth will live exactly the same way in heaven.

This is not the time for individual salvation. Christians talk about individual salvation, but this is not right. God's will is to save the family. Because the Fall took place in the family, restoration should take place in the family. The time for this is now!

For the first time in history, we have entered the settlement age centering on True Parents. This year's motto is "The Safe Settlement of True Parents and the Completed Testament Age." The family of True Parents has finally settled. We are organizing tribes, races and nations based on the True Family and the Blessed Families. Now we have the worldwide foundation and are entering into the age of settlement. We are not wanderers anymore. That is why it is time for us to build structures. When you consolidate families, you have a tribe; when you consolidate tribes, you have a people; and when you consolidate peoples, you form nations. We, ourselves, must build the foundation of the heavenly kingdom on earth based on those families. (260-304, 1994.5.19)

1.3. Establishing the Family Federation – moving towards the age of the worldwide family

The mission of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity is over, and so is the mission of religion. For the first time in history, we are entering into the new age, an age when humanity does not need salvation. The Family Federation is creating ideal families in order to complete the

work of restoration, to establish God's ideal of creation and to build the heavenly ideal world. (April 8, 1997 in Korea)

Therefore, families must settle on earth. So far, religions have focused on individual salvation and not on family salvation. All the religions have taught people to leave and to abandon their families. Now is a different time. All the religions talk about saving individuals, but they have no idea about saving families, tribes, and nations. Our Unification Church teaches about saving nations and the world based on families. (283-106, 1997.4.8)

God's ideal of creation, which He has longed for since the Garden of Eden, will appear only when a family settles down, becomes recognized by the world, and bears fruit. Through sons and daughters, that family must expand horizontally to become a tribe that will automatically connect themselves to the people. (283-84, 1997.4.8)

That is why families are important. Everything will be completed within the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. Now, please repeat after me, "The Family Federation for World Peace and Unification." Its center is the family. (283-93, 1997.4.8)

Without establishing the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification, world peace will never be achieved. This is an important point. Families are this important. World peace starts at home. If there are ten family members, all ten must be united. They should harmonize with each other on the vertical and horizontal levels. Front and back, and left and right, like sides of a cube, should unite together. That way, ideal world peace will come true. Let us establish world peace by perfecting the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification! Establishing means to organize and expand the world of peace. (232-322, 1992.7.10)

Now is the time for the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. Everything starts in the family. Focusing on the family, tribe and nation, you should attend God. Without realizing the family ideal, through which you can unite with God, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth will not come about. (300-229, 1999.3.23)

The Unification Church now means the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. This means that the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification is being established in your homes. I have to put all families in order: satanic families, archangel type families on God's side, and Adam type families. Since the separation from God grew out of a bad marriage, the marriage has to be restored and perfected, creating a unified world. We have climbed very steep mountains like the Himalayas, but now, the plains start from here. We are entering such an age.

Forty years after the start of my public ministry, I founded the Family Fed-

eration for World Peace and Unification. In order to accomplish this goal, we need to have something like a constitution as an absolute regulation – the Family Pledge. There had never been such a term as Family Pledge throughout history. It is the Family Pledge that points us in the right direction and enables us to complete the heavenly kingdom. (264-244, 1994.11.3)

There is no real substance at the moment. Then, what is the real substance? It is the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification that will come. It signifies the completion of the four position foundation. What is God's ideal of creation? It is the completion of God's will. What is God's will then? It is the completion of God's ideal of creation. What is the completion of the ideal of creation? It means completing the four position foundation. What does it mean by completing the four position foundation? In the completed four position foundation, fathers, mothers, sons, and daughters are all united. And then, keeping in time with God, they know how to sing and dance together with Him. That is the completion of God's will. (232-54, 1992.07.01)

Upon restoring the same level of unity that the Christian cultural sphere had established worldwide after World War II, we must set the direction the world needs to take in the next seven years. These seven years include this year. Because this time has finally arrived, the Family Federation can be founded after my forty years of public ministry, and we can stand and line up horizontally. In the same way that world unity was attempted after the war, if your families will only unite, you can indemnify all the past failures. Therefore, before you can recite the Family Pledge, your mind and body should be one, husband and wife should be one, and parents and children should be one. Without achieving this oneness, you still belong to the satanic world. You recite the pledge on the foundation of having united your mind and body, husband and wife, and parents and children. That's why we have the Family Pledge. The Family Federation will govern the world based strongly on the Family Pledge. You must have pledge services in your families on the first and the middle of every month. We have two groups, Cain and Abel. (265-249, 1994.11.23)

The time has come for you to join the original family of Adam worldwide. All the people in the world must perfect themselves on the family level. What must be done to reach perfection? Your families must be the ones who restore the fallen families through atonement offerings. This has to be achieved by each and every family worldwide, making an effort through the Family Federation. Perfection has to be achieved by Adam and Eve. God cannot do it for them. True Parents cannot do it for them. The reason that the Family Federation exists is to allow you to perfect yourselves through your own efforts. This has to be a worldwide organization. You are able to go beyond the fallen world and

the lineage of fallen Adam through the Family Federation. In the same way as you climb up and go over mountains and slopes, if you make a mistake and slip down while climbing up the course of restoration, you must climb back up again and again. You must repeat it over and over again until you are successful, even if it takes millions or tens of millions of years. (275-9, 1995.10.30)

Human beings could not build the tradition of true conjugal love. In this world where we have no true parental tradition, the fact that two individuals have the name of True Parents, and have practiced the tradition of True Parents on this earth, is truly a national honor and the hope of history. It is a treasure more valuable than all of heaven and earth. I want you to solemnly inherit this internal relationship and transmit it to your families. This is how the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification can be firmly established. The focus is to set up such families. (231-89, 1992.5.31)

Your family must go the path of peace and unity in order to represent the world. You must understand that everything is connected to the standard of family unity. In the future, exemplary families will succeed in the world. (283-54, 1997.4.8)

From now, families are at the center. You cannot work alone as an individual. In the future, even personnel changes will be made for husbands and wives. If a man is the head of a department, his wife should be the second person in charge. If their children have special abilities, they should be put in important positions within that department. The entire clan should be organized to work together in this way. (283-51, 1997.4.8)

From now on, the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification should be viewed as important. But you must not forget the world. If you do not think about the world, there is no need to even talk about peace. Without peace, there is no need for unification. Without unification, there is no need of family. A family does not exist for itself. If there is no supervision from the Family Federation, there is no need for family. Everything is related. When you think of the Family Federation, you must think of unification, family, peace, and the world. When you think of the world, you should think of peace and the Family Federation. They are all one. The Family Federation is the representative owner of the world, the owner of peace, the owner of unification, and the owner of families. At the center of all this is the place where God dwells. (283-51, 1997.4.8)

Recently, people have been using the expression "global village" very often, haven't they? We are actually entering the age of the global family. It is not just a global village but a global family! This correlates to today's Family Federation. Since the Family Federation came about based on God's will, the world community will have to form a reciprocal relationship with us. If we take the initiative,

as the world comes to stand on an equal footing with the Family Federation, globalization will happen all at once. I am not daydreaming when I say this. (275-36, 1995.10.30)

Today's world is trying to become one based on the economy. The world is trying to become one through the balancing of political, cultural, economic, and intellectual power. But that is not going to work. The practice of true love is the primary way to unify the world. We must straighten out false love with true love, connecting it from top to bottom. There is only one true direction of history. Based on this true direction, the viewpoints of individuals, families, peoples, nations, and the world will widen. True love is the main current that passes through and connects individuals, families, and tribes. This is the direction of true love. (211-310, 1991.1.1)

Why do we need the Lord at his Second Advent and the True Parents? All the families in history that progressed from individuals, to families, to tribes, to peoples, to nations, and to the world, have never been able to live together with True Parents. Even if England, America, and France had united at the time of the Second Advent right after World War II, humanity would have had to begin from the position of the family led by the True Parents. Families must unite around True Parents' leadership.

Once families are united, we will not need to be concerned about tribes, peoples and nations. Why is it so? True Parents come on the worldwide foundation. They are the parents coming on the victorious foundation of worldwide dominion. Why do they come? They come as the True Parents representing the age of the families. They have to connect to the past as the tribal level True Parents, race-level True Parents, and national level True Parents. (263-203, 1994.10.4)

Who does the Completed Testament Age refer to? If parents become True Parents, families become true families, and families expand to make a true world of peace, there will be no objections. There will be no obstacles. My victory has to be accomplished with the mobilization of heaven and earth. This means that he has settled not only in the family, but in the midst of the whole world. Isn't that wonderful? What do you think? (261-66)

The age of the global village is over and we are entering the age of the global family. In order to enter the age of the global family, we must quickly make a foundation in which all families have a similar internal understanding. Because we must make such a worldwide organization, I proclaimed that I would make the religious UN followed by the Women's Organization. Some people are working on these projects right now in New York, together with well known academics and top leaders of society. I am trying to guide society in the right direction through these leaders. I am working through scholars to right the wrong directions taken by the U.S. State Department and others. (260-293, 1994.5.19)

1.4. The reason for establishing the Family Pledge

All Blessed Families should defeat the archangelic world in order to attend the True Parents. Having completed this course, they must totally offer up everything, including their families, state, and nation. In May, 1994, I founded the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. At that same time, the Family Pledge was created in order to clearly establish the boundaries between the satanic world, archangelic world, and Adamic world. The Family Pledge signifies the complete separation from the satanic world. (266-69, 1994.12.11)

You are living in the historically amazing age when you can recite the Family Pledge. It is now a totally different age from the past. Until now, people led individualistic lives, but they are now passing into family-centered lives. It is no longer you alone. When a husband moves, the wife is already on the move with him. Husbands and wives must live lives in which they act together. They should never be separated from each other. They should always live together day to day. Since we now have telephones, we do not even need to write letters. Such a time has come. We must create the conditions whereby everybody always has the same kind of standard in life. Without those kinds of conditions, the Family Pledge cannot be carried out. The pledge must be fulfilled and carried out. (260-309, 1994.5.19)

You can recite the Family Pledge only when you have reached perfected Adam's position. What does this mean? Fallen families were created by false parents of false love, false life, and false lineage. However, you are the children born out of the true love of True Parents who are in the position of the unfallen and fully mature Adam and Eve. Therefore, you are not fallen families. Then, what is the Family Pledge? Reciting the pledge signifies that you have been given the authority of an original family. Although you have come from the fallen lineage, you must go back to the original position before the Fall. Standing on the eternal foundation of the Principle, you must be connected to the tribes, peoples, nations, and the world. When this happens, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth will be established.

This is why people whose minds and bodies are not united cannot recite the Family Pledge. Unless husbands and wives are united, they cannot recite the Family Pledge either. Unless parents and children are united, the family cannot recite the pledge. Without understanding this, the whole Family Pledge loses its significance. (261-279, 1994.6.20)

The Family Pledge wipes things clean. The third verse of the Family Pledge teaches us that we ought to perfect the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships, and the Realm of the Royal Family. So, what kind of people can recite the Family Pledge? Those who have inherited false love and false life from their false parents cannot

recite the Family Pledge.

People must unite with God and True Parents, who have no relationship with the Fall, and return to the original world. They must also unite their minds and bodies. Husbands and wives must unite, and parents and children must unite, in true love. Only those who have achieved these qualities can recite the Family Pledge. What kind of people can enter the Kingdom of Heaven? Not just anyone can enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Only those people whose minds and bodies are united, who as husbands and wives are united, and who as parents and children are united as one, can enter. They should stand on the four position foundation of three generations. In order for you to enter the Kingdom of Heaven, you must achieve complete unification based on your families. This is the base from which to start. Those families who accomplish this can recite the Family Pledge. (264-212, 1994.11.3)

You must understand that people must perfect their families to be able to recite the Family Pledge. Therefore, their minds and bodies must become one. Unless their minds and bodies are united, they are not allowed to recite the Family Pledge. Have your minds and bodies united? You understand that the mind and body were separated because of the Fall, don't you? Because you are the resultant beings of false parents, false love, false life, and false lineage, you must rid yourself of all of those things. True love, true life, and true lineage have to be restored. (267-146, 1995.01.4)

When you establish your families based on the Family Pledge, you no longer live in hell on earth but begin to live in the new world of the heavenly kingdom in heaven. Therefore, those who recite the Family Pledge must have the sense of living in an entirely different world than the world of hell they used to live in. There should be no fighting in such a family. No tears or crying. There should only be true love; true love! When you recite the Family Pledge, your minds and bodies, husbands and wives, and sons and daughters must be united.

Due to false love, minds and bodies, husbands and wives, and brothers and sisters, became separated. In order for you to establish the united family, following the principle of restoration through indemnity, you must unite your minds and bodies. Husbands and wives, and brothers and sisters, must unite. This is how you can be connected to the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven. (260-317, 1994.5.19)

You must meticulously keep the Family Pledge. Those who carefully keep the Family Pledge should be blessed and form families. You must create families that you would not be ashamed of before heaven. Then based on those families, God's dominion will expand and the ideal of the Heavenly Kingdom will spread out. (260-231, 1994.5.19)

Is there anything called family pledge in any other country? Which country in the satanic world has the family pledge? The answer is none. Where else in the

world do you pledge in this way? Pledges must be fulfilled. You cannot just say the words and not put them into practice. Not only say the words, but actualize them! (274-195, 1995.11.3)

You must recite the Family Pledge focusing on God. You must become an object partner to God. All parts of you stand as His objects. Have your minds and bodies become object partners to God? You have two eyes but one of them belongs to the satanic side which represents death. You always see things in two different ways. When you walk along the road, there are two different paths you can follow. That is why you always must watch what you do. There are two different kinds of food you can eat. You must eat food that is right and elicits God's protection, and not food that is wrong and makes you indebted to Satan. We must actively carry out the Family Pledge from now on. (260-156, 1994.5.2)

Today is May 1. You should place the pledge that we have been using on an altar, and offer three full bows and pray, "I have inherited True Parents' accomplishments, and I am moving to a new pledge." After inheriting it, you must ask forgiveness and sadly say, "I am moving to the new age with the new Family Pledge." And then you must repent for your past before the Pledge. From now on, you should stop reciting "My Pledge" or the "Family Oath" and start reciting the "Family Pledge". Even those who have not established Blessed Families must recite the Family Pledge together. All people, regardless of their blessing status, must be included. (260-156, 1994.5.2)

Section 2. The Meaning and Value of the Family Pledge

2.1. The importance of the Family Pledge

You must understand that the Family Pledge is the result of extracting from the Principle all the essential contents needed to establish families. You must recite the pledge before you pray, in order to check you and your family's internal situation, and you should try to correct things accordingly. You must actualize the Family Pledge. In the past, we had My Pledge. Now what do we have? We must have the national and the world pledges in the future. Of course, the Family Pledge includes all of these. (260-305, 1994.5.19)

The Family Pledge is entirely made up of the essence of the providence of restoration. So, you must base your lives on it wherever you go and whatever you do. The most important thing in all the verses of the Pledge is true love. True love! What is true love? If you offer your minds and bodies before God, God will return to you even more than you give. Without offering your minds and bodies, you cannot be one with God and you cannot receive things in return. If you offer yourselves with absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience, you will be completely one with God and He

will stand before you and instruct you. If all matters move according to God's instructions, everything in the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven will be completed. (285-297, 1997.6.29)

You must recite the Pledge five times a day: as soon as you wake up, after breakfast, lunch, dinner, and when you go to bed. You must judge yourselves and see whether your minds and bodies are united. Then, you must cast off all that is connected to mind and body disunity. If you are not united with the pledge, you must skip breakfast, lunch, and dinner. I say you should not eat or sleep! The Family Pledge is not an individual pledge. It is the pledge of your families.

At this providential time, we pledge not as individuals but as families. Families are the formula and foundation for everything. That is why we recite the pledge as representatives of the family. The father, mother, and children should each represent the entire family. The first thing you should remember is to unite your minds and bodies. Secondly, husbands and wives must unite. Thirdly, sons and daughters in the family must unite. Why is this so? We lost God in the Garden of Eden. Adam and Eve lost themselves as individuals, lost their family, and eventually lost their children. We must restore all that. To be able to recite the pledge, you must achieve mind and body unity, the unity between husband and wife, and the unity between sons and daughters. (267-146, 1995.1.4)

What is first and foremost in the Family Pledge? "Our family... by centering on true love". The entire pledge is based on true love. The main theme of the eight verses is that your family should be based on true love. What is true love? True love means to be one with God's and True Parents' love, having nothing to do with the Fall. You must be connected to true life and true lineage based on true love.

Until now in the providence, because of the Fall, you were advised to live a celibate life, and then to leave your home. First live single, and then leave home. Why was that? Those living in a home, embracing the fallen family, were kicked out. Because you were going along the opposite path than that which God intended, you had to reverse your course. Since that was a result of a fallen marriage, you should not have married. This is all part of restoration through indemnity. Therefore, the fact that our Blessed Families live based on true love, means that their lineage has changed based on God's and True Parents' love. (266-143, 1994.12.22)

Families are the foundation of all social orders. So, the solution to the world's problem is quite simple. Unification of the world starts at the point where our mind and body unite, where a husband and wife unite, and where sons and daughters become united. The unification of the world will start from there. Your minds' worst enemies are your bodies. Your bodies belong to Satan. When your mind and body

become one, the entire heaven and earth will change. No saints in history ever taught you this. Only after True Parents appeared are you being taught this.

Why do your bodies control your minds? This problem came about because false love was involved at the time of the Fall. At that time, the power of false love was stronger than the power of the conscience. That was the real problem. All of this has been analyzed theoretically. This is why we must pour God's love into our hearts. We have to instill within ourselves the thought that we love God. If our mind and body become one, God's love will be infused within us. (260-161, 1994.5.2)

Families are necessary. Do you want to live for yourself, for your children, or for your spouse? You must live for the sake of your children. Why? This is the principle of creation. It is because the principle for existence is like this. History is like this. When you live in this way, all existence remaining in history will be one with you. God created the principle of thinking for the benefit of one's partner. Everything wants its partner to be better than itself. By what percentage does everything want its partner to be better? 10 percent, 100 percent, 1000 percent, or an infinite percent? By an infinite percent, I mean an unlimited amount. That is why you must invest and forget what you have already invested. If you invest only 100%, you get only 100% back. Therefore, you must invest and forget, invest and forget, and invest and forget. (260-152, 1994.5.2)

Only when what was lost is recovered and put into place in the heavenly kingdom, will the empty kingdom in heaven be restored. The heavenly kingdom in heaven is empty. All this emptiness has to be filled with restored spirits. There are no two ways about it. No matter how much you try on your own, it will not work. The communists in North Korea have tried to build their paradise that way, have they not? When they talk of land reform, the people must be prepared to have all of their land taken away. You must know that the time will come when such a thing will happen on the heavenly side too. It will happen in the not too distant future. I am trying to unite North and South America. If I unite North and South America, uniting North and South Korea will happen instantly. Once we recover and stand on the heavenly kingdom's foundation, the constitutional laws in the heavenly kingdom will be set up. The constitutional laws will be set up from the Family Pledge you are reciting. Once these laws are set up based on the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships, and the Realm of the Royal Family, it will be the formula everyone acknowledges. No one can deceive those that know this formula. (273-46, 1995.10.21)

If all people live according to and conforming to the constitutional laws, then everything will be fine. Furthermore, churches will not be necessary. As long as all people live by the laws and render devoted service to the nation, things will turn out well. If you show great sin-

cerity in your service, you become loyal servants, filial children, saints, and holy people. But since you have not become these, you need to be educated. Everyone needs to be educated. Education has to take place in school. You have not understood such concepts as these yet. In addition, if your old concepts remain intact, things will not work out during your lifetime. It might even take several generations of your descendants to rectify this. (260-161, 1994.5.2)

The Family Pledge has the phrase, "by centering on true love" in every single verse. Restoration starts with true love which is completely united with God. You must represent God and True Parents even in your own hometowns. (280-38, 1996.10.13)

2.2. The Family Pledge is the encapsulation of the outline of restoration

Family Pledge represents my history. You should know that the words spoken in the pledge explain how I established my family. What is the first verse about? It is about the environment. It is the history of re-creation. You must find the land. You must save your relatives and then find the nation. What is second? "Our Family Pledges to represent and become central to Heaven and Earth by attending God and True Parents... by centering on true love". Here the family represents heaven. Whose family is the pledge talking about? My family. My family is the central family. You should inherit my tradition. You must be filial children in your families, patriots for your nations, and saints for the world. You should do more than past saints. You must restore Blessed Families who, by establishing God's family, the ideal of Jesus, are determined to connect this foundation to the world. A heavenly nation has two kinds of laws. One is the king's law and the other is the national law. The heavenly kingdom on earth also has royal laws and earthly laws. God's family must observe all four laws. To do this, you must understand all of them. You must be respected when you go into the royal palace, respected when you go to the nation, respected when you go into the earthly palace, and respected when you go to the earthly nation. I have to walk such a course. The goal of my course is to gain victory by earning respect through the natural surrender of others. (280-35, 1996.10.13)

You must be dutiful children to your parents, loyal to your nation, saintly for the sake of the world, and holy for the cosmos. You must go through these four stages. Even if you do not achieve all four stages, if you complete just one stage, you will have accomplished national salvation. You must do at least one stage. That has been Rev. Moon's history. Your family must maintain itself as the foremost family among numerous families. You must be the most loyal king among numerous kings. You must also be the best among numerous saints and holy people. Only then will you be entitled to inherit the heavenly tradition. You begin to inherit it after you reach this position.

Being blessed does not automatically mean that you will inherit the tradition in your family. (280-35, 1996.10.13)

By fulfilling the duty of a holy person, and going forward so that I can govern all religions on earth in the place of God, I am to bless the world centering on families. You should know that I will not bless families and nations separately. Since I am in such a position, I can bring to fulfillment the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships.

Everyone can achieve kingship by standing in the position where they can fulfill the purpose of the blessing, allowing them to move freely in any direction – east, west, north, and south, and to the twelve pearly gates; everywhere within a 360 degree range. Now the Four Great Realms of Heart must be dealt with. If you do not go beyond the realm of the heart of a holy man, the realm of the heart of a saint, the realm of the heart of a loyal citizen, and the realm of the heart of a filial child in the Four Great Realms of Heart, you can not say that you have crossed over the boundary of the Four Great Realms of Heart. This is the meaning of the third verse of the Family Pledge. (280-35, 1996.10.13)

What is the fourth verse? "Our Family Pledges to build the universal family encompassing Heaven and Earth, which is God's ideal of creation... by centering on true love." All people are one big family in this universe. All people are brothers and sisters. You are one lineage. You must protect each other in the same way as God takes care of each one of us. Even if you are royalty in God's palace, you must still fulfill the fourth verse. You must create the universal family in order to achieve the world of freedom, peace, unification and happiness. This is my heart. I am the advocate for one big universal family. I must plant freedom, happiness, unification, and peace. What does the fourth verse mean? It reveals my history. My history is the theme of this verse. (230-35, 1992. 4.5)

Knowing it intellectually is not enough. Living in the world of peace and happiness is not enough. You must be able to go directly to the heavenly world. "Our Family Pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love." You must strive to advance this pledge. You must not sit around and watch the world go by. How could you sleep and rest when the world is as noisy and clamorous as it is now. One second, you need one second! How to gain one more day is the question. You should not be concerned about rain and darkness. The entire heavenly world is out of order. That's why I am trying to restore it. That's my job. I have to restore the heavenly world by focusing on the physical world. (280-35, 1996.10.13)

What is the sixth verse? "Our Family Pledges to embody God and True Parents. We will perfect a family which moves heavenly fortune and conveys Heaven's blessing to our community, by centering

on true love." You must not live for your own sakes. That should not be the case. God does not exist for Himself. Parents are not to live for themselves. They should live for the sake of their children. You must create ideal families who live for the sake of the whole world. (280-35, 1996.10.13)

The seventh verse says, "Our Family Pledges to perfect a world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage, through living for the sake of others, by centering on true love." You must be rooted in the original lineage. You must perfect a world based on the culture of heart rooted in the original lineage. Nothing can stop you from doing anything once you have reached there. You are free even in hell as well as in heaven. The Family Pledge not only covers the general outline of the providence, but includes the preface, main contents, and conclusion. It is the encapsulation of the entire Principle. I am sure your thoughts will change after hearing such words from me. This will become the contents you tell your descendants after having established the heavenly kingdom. (280-35, 1996.10.13)

I recently added the eighth pledge: "...as we enter the Completed Testament Age, to achieve the ideal oneness of God and humankind in love through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, thereby perfecting the realm of liberation of the Kingdom of God on Earth and in Heaven..." It is simple. I am not talking about liberation but the realm of liberation. You must not only take responsibility for your own families, but also for your nation and the world. You must take full responsibility for the world. (293-252, 1998.6.1)

Forty years have passed since the founding of the Unification Church, and now I have founded "The Family Federation for World Peace and Unification". In order to achieve the goal of this federation, we must have an absolute covenant. That absolute covenant, or the constitutional law, is the Family Pledge. There are no words like Family Pledge in history. The Family Pledge is a vow and a promise to achieve the heavenly kingdom. (264-244, 1994.11.3)

If you look carefully at the Family Pledge, you will learn the way to completely liberate yourself through restoration through indemnity. Those who recite the Family Pledge belong to the realm of perfected families, not the realm of families in the fallen world. The realm of families is established based on true love. So the unity of minds and bodies, previously separated because of the Fall, can now take place. It also means that you cannot recite the Family Pledge unless your minds and bodies are united. (264-244, 1994.11.3)

2.3. The central philosophy of the Family Pledge is "True Love"

The Unification Church proclaimed the Family Pledge. The Family Pledge was not intended to be recited by just anyone or by ordinary people. Each of

the eight verses of the Family Pledge starts with the phrase "our Family Pledges … by centering on true love." These words, when spoken, signify that the Pledge has nothing to do with the satanic world. Why do the words true love appear at the beginning of each verse? They convey that the person making the pledge is already in the midst of the original world, the Garden of Eden before the Fall. (263-194, 1994.10.4)

I have explained everything about the Family Pledge, have I not? Each of the eight verses begins with the phrase "our Family Pledges … by centering on true love." What is true love? Unless you achieve unity centering on true love during your lifetime, you will not be able to live with God when you get to the spirit world. (268-98, 1995.3.12)

You must find your true self and true family. By "family" I mean the three generations of grandparents, parents and children. The world is the expansion of such a family. Then what do people need? They need their parents, spouses, brothers and sisters, and children, because achieving proper family relationships is the formula for entering heaven. Without experiencing the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships and the Realm of the Royal Family mentioned in our Family Pledge, you won't be able to enter heaven. (272-212, 1995.8.30)

Our Family Pledge starts, "our family… by centering on true love." It emphasizes being centered on true love. Because of the Fall, those who do not have true love cannot establish families that can stand before God. You must understand that. Through the Fall, true love was spoiled. Don't you think so? (274-195, 1995.11.3)

Everything exists in relationships. You should not be dogmatic. You will only create bad feelings by forcing your own views. If you want to create the ideal world of love centering on the Principle, you need to have an internal foundation in your relationships. Without that, progress will not take place and love cannot grow. (287-303, 1997.10.6)

There is no concept of enemy in the Family Pledge. It relates only to the total commitment of the individual. That is what the Family Pledge is. Please investigate it for yourself. There is no concept of enemy in it. There is no content in the Family Pledge other than love. Love is the fundamental pillar supporting the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. It is the basic formula for creating the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. (295-245, 1998.8.28)

Based on the Family Pledge phrase "our family... by centering on true love," we will prevail over everything. I mean we will overcome centered on true love. The pledge of parents, couples, children, families, clans and nations will all become reality as we live by true love. True love has no obstacles. True love means to invest and then forget. (270-289, 1995.7.16)

2.4. You must maintain the Family Pledge as your standard

You cannot enter heaven unless you fulfill the Family Pledge. Christians believe that they can enter heaven simply by believing in Jesus. It is not that simple. The whole world now is within the Christian cultural sphere, but is it heaven? Is this world closer to heaven or hell? Has the world crossed over the line yet or not? This world is the worst hell. Everyone knows the position they are in. Knowing this, I created the Family Pledge. Each verse of the Family Pledge includes "our family… by centering on true love." I have come as the parent after uniting the individual, family and sons and daughters, with true love as the focus. (260-186, 1994.5.8)

The Pledge has the words "true love" in every verse. True love comes about based on unity. It is impossible to realize the ideal of the Family Pledge without uniting your mind and body, and without creating unity between husband and wife and children. Unless you have actualized this, you should not recite the Pledge. So far, you have recited My Pledge, but from now the providence is moving on to the family level. Every time you have a prayer meeting, first you should recite the Pledge and then pray. You cannot pray, in the truest sense, without having unified your mind and body. You cannot call God your Father. You can restore things because you know how the Fall happened. (260-186, 1994.5.8)

What is true love? Your mind and body must unite into one. To accomplish mind-body unity, you must cut out the satanic lineage within yourself. You must tear out the roots. That is what religious life is all about. That is how you cultivate your mind. You must unite your mind and body. You must strengthen your mind by striking your body, forcing the body to follow the mind. Your conscience knows that it is meant to go to the heavenly kingdom. By striking your body, you can naturally separate yourself from Satan. That is what happens when you practice true love. (260-186, 1994.5.8)

Do you think God's mind and body struggle or have they been united? Is it easy or difficult to create mind-body unity? It is more difficult than turning the whole world upside down. Perfecting yourself is even harder than that. The question is how to achieve mind and body unity? Even though it is difficult, should we do it or not? In spite of the difficulty, to make it easier for you, I have built the highway. I have made the highway by building bridges and excavating tunnels straight through mountains. If I had only thought of myself, I would not have had to suffer like that. I toiled to save the people of the world, you and the world. It was not to save myself that I toiled. (260-186, 1994.5.8)

Nothing is more awesome and precious than the fact that all these dream-like stories will come true in the spirit world and on earth. Therefore, you

should not complain; instead, you should obediently follow the way of Principle and God's will. You must inherit God's and True Parents' way of thinking. If I said to you that you should not inherit it, you should insist that you have to inherit it. In that case, even if I initially opposed you and became extremely obstinate, inevitably I would have no other choice than to liberate you. (283-92, 1997.4.8)

In the first three verses of the Family Pledge… everything is consistent with the Principle. You should memorize all of it. If you do not understand the Family Pledge, you will not understand the direction of the providence. If you do not know the direction, you will experience confusion along the way. The Family Pledge, and the speech that Mother is now giving, must be published as a book because they contain the monumental principles of restoration of the new heaven and earth. We must establish the settlement of the family by restoring the right of the eldest son, and by going the opposite direction from the fallen world. That is why we are to move forward with the authority gained from having established this family. (283-92, 1997.4.8)

If you want to achieve true love, you must take full responsibility for it. Irresponsible people will never, ever reach perfection. How can they? By taking responsibility, you can realize perfection. People who do not take responsibility have nothing to do with achieving perfection. You must understand that point clearly in establishing your conjugal life. If you do not take responsibility, you can never reach perfection.

When you fulfill your responsibility, love can develop. As long as you are responsible, then all will be taken care of. You must take responsibility. When you make love, you love with all of your five senses concentrated on the act of love, don't you? Are your eyes, nose, ears and mouth focused elsewhere when you make love? When your sexual organ is actively involved in making love, you act with your mind and body united and your five senses are totally focused. Yes or no? Yes, you do! That is why it is so serious. (283-92, 1997.4.8)

I have turned eighty. Until now, I have never even spent Christmas at home with my family. Some time ago, I told people not to celebrate my birthday. Recently, however, I liberated the sixtieth birthday celebration. I have lived totally opposite to the satanic world. I do not owe you a debt of gratitude. As a child of God, as the true son, I think about all the advice that I have received, every hour of every day. I do not spend time thinking about my own self-interests and selfish desires.

You must speed up the process of unification in the heavenly world and on earth in your everyday life. You must be forceful in your efforts. You must mobilize the spirit world and your ancestors. You must work harder than your ancestors in the spirit world. You must never let your ancestors work harder than you do. You must lead them. You must give lectures even in your sleep. That is how

I live my life. True Mother knows these secrets of mine. If I couldn't finish what I wanted to say, I would talk in my sleep. I would give the speech I was supposed to give the next morning in my sleep at night. True Mother knows all of my secrets. I do not go to sleep just because the night came. I am never silent, I am always speaking. (301-83, 1999.4.16)

What is your goal? You should enlarge your group of relatives, making family-level messiahs among your relatives. You should have twelve or more spiritual children, and, centering on your family, you should be able to raise all of your clan, including your grandchildren and their spouses, up to the third or fourth generations. On the tribal level, you must organize seventy disciples or even 120 disciples. Jesus should have had 120 disciples, centering on and united together with the family of Zechariah. He should have formed and liberated a nation with all the court officials, but he could not. That is the tribal messiah's responsibility. What is a messiah? True Parents, True Parents' family, True Parents' love and True Parents' lineage. (301-85, 1999.4.16)

I sent out the national messiahs after I, alone, had made the victorious foundation and reaped the harvest. When God can travel freely within your family, then you will have established the realm of the object partner. Then the realms of liberation on the family level, tribal level, national level and world level will open up for you. You must find the nation, and then you must find the world, even if you have to sacrifice your nation. Then decades later, or 50 generations later, the nation that you sacrificed for will be the center of the world. What can be more serious than this? (301-85, 1999.4.16)

All the things I have taught you are like keys for you to use to enter heaven. Unless the key fits, you cannot open the gate to heaven. You cannot open the gate to heaven unless you hold the keys that I am giving you. No matter how important a person you are in America, you can't open the gate unless you have the keys from me. My keys are the essential ones. Other keys, whether gold or silver, will not open the gate, no matter how well made they are. But my keys can open it every time, even if they may look like nothing and are made of brass. No one else can make such keys. (260-186, 1999.5.8)

God cannot live with human beings on earth, because people have not realized unity in their families. Once family members unite, God will dwell with them. When we say "true love," the concepts of unity between mind and body, husband and wife, and children should come to mind. When those three kinds of unity are achieved, the family of true love will be the starting point of the heavenly kingdom on earth and in heaven. When you achieve unity, with God and True Parents as your focus, the heavenly kingdom on earth and in heaven can be built. Where does the Heavenly Kingdom on earth start? It starts from your families, your sons and daughters. (260-185, 1994.5.8)

2.5. Our attitude toward the Family Pledge

The first verse of the Family Pledge talks about building God's ideal of creation by returning to your hometown. The second talks about becoming filial children, patriots, saints and holy people who can resolve the historical resentment of God. You should think that because Jesus' mission – to become the holy son that he had originally intended to be – went unfulfilled, you will make this possible in your own families. That is our tradition. (267-193, 1995.1.8)

In order for you to recite the Family Pledge, your mind and body must unite into one, husband and wife must achieve absolute unity, and sons and daughters must become one. Only in such a position can you recite the Pledge. You must recite it every day. You must think of it when you wake up, when you have breakfast, lunch and dinner. You must also think of it when you go to bed. You must put all of your heart into realizing unity between mind and body, husband and wife, and sons and daughters. You must reflect on this and make its achievement the standard for your daily life. If you fight with your spouse, you are not qualified to recite the Pledge. You must understand what a miserable and heartbreaking situation it is to be unable to recite the Family Pledge. The Family Pledge is your shield. (266-143, 1994.12.22)

You must recite the Family Pledge when you wake up and when you go to bed. You must focus on one particular verse each day and live according to it. Then you must check to see if you have fulfilled the content of that verse for that day. If you could not, you must determine to do it the next day. The Pledge is the life element for nourishment and growth, and the basic element for life in the heavenly kingdom. Therefore, you should recite the Pledge and evaluate your life. If those who have families do not recite the Family Pledge, they are fakes. This is the standard your family must reach. Those that do not are failures. You must understand this point and become the standard. Those parents who can do this must memorize the Pledge completely, divide it into sections, and teach it to their children. They must also get people to follow them. (287-130, 1997.9.19)

You must honestly look again at True Parents. You must love your mother and father, your spouse, your nation and the world with that kind of true conscience. We are entering the age in which it is necessary to unite completely with True Parents as our absolute subject partner.

Since True Parents' family is now settled, you must completely unite with the True Family centered on that foundation. You shouldn't harbor your own conventional ideas. Your minds and bodies must be united. You must create unity with your spouse. Your children must create unity as well. Without achieving these things, you can't recite the Pledge or call me father. You have been calling me your father to take advantage of me. I don't want to be called father in that

way. For that reason, you must have the standard of totally upholding the Family Pledge. (263-244, 1994.10.4)

In the world where True Parents live with their children who have inherited true love, religions are not necessary. The world must be the world of conscience. That is why we must have the Family Pledge. You must unite with True Parents when you recite the Family Pledge. Your mind and body must be united, and you must create unity with your spouse and your children. Without that foundation, you can't recite the Pledge. (266-31, 1994.12.4)

You must always keep in mind that true love exists where there is unity between mind and body, husband and wife, and parents and children. If you have not achieved the standard of the Family Pledge, you will be prevented from passing through to the highest realms of the spirit world. That is how formidable the Pledge is. You should always live by it. If the father is not one with the Pledge, then the mother and the children will all be responsible. (260-189, 1994.5.8)

A child, whose mind and body are united, is born from a couple whose minds and bodies are united, and who are united centered on God. This is a natural conclusion. Otherwise, you cannot have true love in your family. God cannot stay where there is no true love. This is a logical conclusion. (270-324, 1995.7.23)

The Family Pledge is found at the core of settlement, a place where God and the whole universe are united into one. America is not the center. Japan or other highly developed countries are not the center either. Their world will gradually end, full of tragedy, misery, suffering and resentment. Until now, the Unification Church has been regarded as a place of pitch-black darkness, like hell, but it will usher in the new dawn and will ascend. The fortune of the heavenly kingdom, the ideal of creation, is the family ideal. The family ideal is the completion of the four-position foundation. If you want to realize such a family, you must create the four-position foundation over three generations: God, parents and children; God, Adam and Eve and their children. That is the original formula of the four-position foundation. Adam's family is the formula family. (260-183, 1994.5.8)

The words record the complete victory for which True Parents have fought. They are the record of the victorious tradition. Until you realize the liberation of heaven and earth, by applying this tradition and evaluating your daily lives, you must establish a situation in which you are the object partners. When you recite the Pledge, you must always evaluate yourselves centering on it. You must think of the Pledge as words from Heaven, and evaluate yourselves and see if there is anything unacceptable. That part must be cut out. You must tell yourselves, "You devil, you have come to destroy the Unification Church!" Have you thought in this way? (301-80, 1999.4.16)

Just like the Israelites who had to

carry the Ark of the Covenant in their forty-year wilderness course, the Unification Church members are now entering the heavenly kingdom carrying the Family Pledge. The Israelites departed from Egypt for the sake of establishing a nation. In the same way, you must have a clear sense of establishing a nation. Like the Israelites, we have no nation of our own anywhere in the world. Where should that nation be? It should be Korea. (265-293, 1994.11.27)

Section 3. The Family Pledge and the Tradition of the Blessed Families

3.1. We must create the Kingdom of Heaven by serving others

God is not some being that exists in our fantasies or imagination. God is not abstract. God lives with us in our daily lives as the master of our lives. God does not exist just to be served. God lives in a reciprocal love relationship with people, together, as part of the community. It is an unbelievable reality. (168-111, 1987.9.13)

You must know that your conscience, intuition and senses are all God's. You should realize that everything you feel and are aware of belongs to God. Unless you believe this deeply, you will not be able to possess God, who operates by heart. You must know this clearly. (8-294, 1960.2.14)

We must serve God with our mind and unite our mind with our body. Unless we make a foundation of this unity, we will not be able to eradicate evil from the world. Accordingly, it is now the age of attendance, the age of salvation through serving others. People can be saved by serving others. God does not live up in the air somewhere distant from our lives. He lives in our lives, and God must be served as the master of our lives. (144-274, 1986.4.25)

How many times in a day do you experience that God exists? How many times during the twenty-four hours of a day do you feel God's presence? If you really want to be saved by serving God and others, then feeling God's presence for just one or two hours out of twenty-four hours a day can't be enough. You must feel the need for God more desperately than you feel the need for air. You need God more desperately than you need water. God is more precious than food. You need God more than you need water. Do you feel this? (33-230, 1970.8.16)

From now on, you must lead a life of attendance. People have believed that they could be saved by having faith. Now is the age of salvation through attendance. (161-218, 1987.2.15)

If our ancestors had not fallen, we would have lived our lives serving God. You must serve God with your heart, and in the course of your daily life. (150-213, 1961.4.15)

You must serve during your life. We have ushered in the heavenly kingdom

of hope, but you have not yet experienced the life of attendance. That is, you have not known God, our subject being, in your daily life. (6-226, 1959.5.17)

Since God is the central being of heaven and earth, the more you are dominated by Him, the more you will want to be dominated by Him for thousands or even tens of thousands of years. Since the principles of attendance centering on God work in that way, no one can be happier than the one who is being dominated by God. Until now, we have never even thought about this fact. (77-328, 1975.3.30)

You must live lives of service. Why do you have to serve? It is the way to be loved by God. Therefore, you must serve God first. You must serve God. (78-30, 1975.5.1)

In your twenty-four hours of daily life, you must see, hear and feel for the sake of God. Although you live on earth, you must always connect your lives to the life in the heavenly world. (35-284, 1970.10.25)

Those who can feel God's joy and sorrow cannot possibly become evil or break the heavenly law. A man who is like this can never be seduced, even by the most beautiful woman in the world. There is no way that he can be pulled by that level of temptation. (40-297, 1971.2.7)

Why do so many young men and women break with their families these days? Because the love, that is one with heavenly law, is missing from their families. That is why the True Parents of heaven and earth, who can make God a living reality in those families, must come on earth. (21-155, 1968.11.17)

3.2. You must live united with True Parents

In the end, what will remain? The unified being of God and humankind (God-human), their life path, their view of daily life, and their worldview, will remain. I am not talking about the level where humankind can understand God vaguely, but the level where humankind is inseparable from God for eternity. Originally, humankind and God should not have been separated. We must reach a place that is higher than the original place. From such a place, we must seek the life stage and the world stage where God and humankind are united as one. (65-127, 1972.11.5)

You have to be focused in this age of service – that is, living the life of attendance. There are laws in serving God. When people break the laws, God can be extremely furious. Just as a word from a child can either wound his loving parents' feelings or please them, God too, since He loves humankind, can feel deeply hurt. That is why I, too, try to make God happy in my own way. (17-287, 1967.2.15)

Just as people seek the ones who care about them, God is the same way. The

way you can capture God's heart is to think about God, and serve Him more than others do. God will seek someone like that. (128-172, 1983.6.12)

The first commandment for humankind is to love God. Should you love God deeply until the end, or shallowly for a short time? Will you love God even at the risk of your life? You must love God even if you get hit by lightning. If you love God at the risk of your life, there will be nothing you cannot do. (37-25, 1970.12.22)

You have to be foolish to walk this course. Loyal citizens in history are seen as somewhat foolish people. They have some bear-like quality in their nature. Even after their arms are cut off, they will say, "Oh, this isn't cut enough; it needs to be cut a bit more." You must have such a foolish nature in you. When bears and wild boars are shot and have some part of their body dangling and getting in the way, they will bite off that part and run away. You should have that kind of foolishness in you. Loyal citizens and patriots must be that way. They should be a little foolhardy. (26-143, 1969.10.19)

What kind of person am I? I have only one thing I know how to do. I just walk straight ahead foolhardily. If I close my mouth and go around as I see fit, it will not bother anyone. Why do I keep working to the point of being disgraced? It is because I can only go over the hill, when I face opposition from many people. But you are thinking of going around, are you not? Why do you have to cut off from everything of the world? It is because you cannot follow this course if you are being pulled by your physical parents' love. Since God has been walking the straight path, you must go straight. (97-257, 1978.3.19)

I have gone forward, knowing that it was my mission to gather people who could serve God, even a little, in fulfilling His hopes and His will. Knowing that God is such a lonely and isolated being, I pledged my life to expand His foundation. The reason that I have endured with love, rather than wanting to take revenge after receiving insults and beatings, is because I was born as God's son and have the responsibility to establish His will. Staggering along, or with back bent, or crawling on my stomach, I have fought on with the determination that I will leave at least this tradition behind. (82-47, 1975.12.30)

You must live together with True Parents now. True Parents are in the position of grandparents and your parents, and you are in the first son's position. This is the difference. Three generations are living together in your family. You must live feeling and experiencing that God, True Parents and your own parents, are together with you. You have entered the time in which you cannot even conceive of the idea that "God is dead" or "God doesn't exist." (131-97, 1984.4.16)

What should you do to receive parents' love? You should love everything your parents love. Only after that can

you receive their love. In your physical family, if you want to be loved by your parents, you must love everything about them. You must know this. Those who want to be loved by their parents, without doing this, are thieves. If you irresponsibly try to take over everything your parents value, you cannot be loved. (133-26, 1984.7.1)

I sacrificed my life with blood and sweat to bring you to this level. I gave away my body as a ransom. Therefore, you must do as I do. I want to boast about our members. Let us make a public promise. (11-164, 1961.7.20)

You must cry, feeling an irresistible yearning for True Parents, who stand in the position of substantial God. You must want to see them over and over again. You must want to serve them after preparing a bowl of rice or a cup of water, however humble it might be. You must have that kind of sincere desire. You will be alright if your tears flow freely. In such a case, your heart and my heart will be united, and you and I will act in concert with one another. You will get to know my standard, the past that explains it, and the reasons and circumstances tied to it. Furthermore, you can inherit it and take it over. (38-75, 1971.1.1)

Because Adam and Eve fell in the Garden of Eden and lived in the fallen realm, they could never experience the life of serving God directly. Those who have never been able to serve God are not qualified to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. However, although you have inherited the false lineage, you are entitled to enter heaven due to the condition that you indemnified the course of restoration and attended God and the True Parents, whom Adam and Eve could not attend while on the earth. In that way, you have come to acquire citizenship in the heavenly kingdom. (150-233, 1961.4.15)

When you think of attending God, how should you think? You should live thinking of yourself as one with God, one with True Parents, and one with everything around you. Living like that, you should think, "All of these belong to God and to True Parents and to me too." What belongs to True Parents belongs to the nation of True Parents, and what belongs to the nation of True Parents belongs to me. This universe belongs to True Parents. This house belongs to True Parents. This nation and the world also belong to True Parents. Since I am the child of True Parents, everything belongs to me. You will come to that conclusion. (161-231, 1987.2.15)

In the Completed Testament Age, God Himself will appear before all people in the form of True Parents. Because of this, no matter how much political powers try to control the Unification Church, they will be unable to do so. Repeatedly seeing the living God directly with our own eyes, and being in the realm where we can experience Him with our senses, we will move forward. That is the path of our Unification Church. (God's Will - 286)

The wish of humankind is to meet True Parents. Even if people have to walk the path of death, they must meet True Parents. You could lose all history, entire time periods or all of your descendants, and then will regain all this if you meet True Parents. That is how valuable True Parents are. (35-237, 1970.10.19)

When you think of the words *Cham Bu Mo*, you must understand that history is governed by the True Parents. The starting point to return to the new world comes from the True Parents. The internal power to subjugate Satan is found within the True Parents. Satan, who controls the external world, is defeated by the True Parents. Therefore, for the first time, the central person has been established who can liberate God and accomplish this work. You must first be grateful for the amazing grace of being able to live together with True Parents, which allows you to receive their directions and act upon them. (43-144, 1971.4.29)

We must liberate God. God should have been attended by the original ancestors and should have enjoyed limitless praise and happiness. He should have had absolute authority in the ideal environment, but this wasn't possible. Knowing this miserable fact, my suggestion is that we should liberate God with our own hands.

What a wonderful concept this is. It is extremely happy news that such an idea has emerged from within the religious world. It is the good news of good news. From this perspective, God is the one who was behind the founding of Buddhism, Confucianism, Islam and Christianity. Therefore, all religions must welcome this message with both hands raised high. (176-242, 1988.5.11)

When you become completely one with True Parents, you truly have your nation, your people, your tribe and your family. True Parents are the substantial beings whose value is equal to all glory found in heaven and on earth. Would you exchange True Parents for all the money in the world? Could you exchange them for your life? No, therefore it's different from the past. Wherever you go, you must visit Korea to serve True Parents. Your sons and daughters and your descendants for thousands or tens of thousands of years must do so too. That is what makes the Unification Church unique. (30-237, 1970.3.23)

3.3. We must set up the correct family tradition and family law

What I am concerned about is not whether the name of the Unification Church will remain in the future, but whether there will be people who have inherited my tradition. That is why I have been educating people to be serious about tradition. (35-115, 1970.10.4)

We have lived our lives thoughtlessly and have spoken carelessly. However, from now on, we must set up the family rules. No matter how angry parents are, they should not beat their children with clubs, or say things like "You stupid

failure!" From now on, everyone should be renewed, centered on God, in the way they speak, behave and live their lives. (28-252, 1970.1.22)

Individuals and families should have a clear standard of how to live their lives. If you have lived your life with a vague knowledge of how you should do so, then you should become distinct and clear from now on. (24-28, 1969.6.22)

Parents exist for their children. If parents existed for their own sake, there would not have been the word parents. In the future, a view of ethics should be formed centering on the Principle of the Unification Church. Parents should live for the sake of their children. This is the first and foremost rule of ethics. It is self-explanatory. The position in which parents sacrifice for the sake of their children is not the place of misery, but the place of happiness. (62-214, 1972.9.25)

To whom do you belong? You belong to your parents and to your children. Then, to whom do parents belong? Parents belong to their children and to God at the same time. So, you must first belong to God, then to your children, and after that to yourselves. When that happens, perfection will be realized for the first time. That is why the law of respecting parents remains on the earth and in our lives. That is why people say that we should respect our parents and love our children. A person without parents is an orphan. You receive your parents' love first, and then try to love your children. Only then will a person called "I" be able to discern the four directions of up and down, horizontal and vertical, as it relates to people. (18-209, 1967.6.8)

We must leave our tradition behind, as well as good and outstanding descendants. You must not leave behind descendants who have small minds, but rather descendants who are strong, daring and great. If you do that, even if your country is in decline, it will not perish. You must realize that in the place where you perished, a new benefactor will appear. And in the place where you have been driven out, a new flag of victory will be waved. The tradition that should be left behind should not only be for Korea, but for all peoples of the world to rejoice in, and you must leave behind descendants of goodness. If you can't do this, you have nothing to offer to Heaven. (99-329, 1978.10.1)

It is a serious problem of how three generations of Blessed Families' children can live together with me. If the three generations can become loyal subjects, they can be the loyal subjects that never existed until this time in the heavenly world. Have you thought about this? Therefore, from now on, you must embrace and educate your children and make a sincere effort to implant such a thought into their minds. (51-269, 1971.11.28)

What should you do in order to live a good life in the future? Living a good life as an individual is not the important point. You must educate your descendants. You must leave something

behind for their sake. Not only have I, who have been leading the Unification Church, but also you, undergone a miserable course. Like refugees, we have not been able to settle down. We have undergone the wilderness course. From now, we must settle down. In order to do so, we must fight and win. Just like destroying the seven Canaanite tribes, we must fight and win; otherwise we cannot settle. We must win the battle with these people. (77-251, 1975.4.13)

Even if parents die, they should leave behind the heavenly law. Why does the family exist? Even if you live for the sake of your children, you should live first for the sake of God and the nation. That is ultimately the way to live for the sake of your children, because only in that way can your children benefit from the fortune of the nation, the world and God. Therefore, even if your precious children, who were born from the Blessing, suffer, you should not adjust to their situation but rather adjust to the destiny of the nation, the world and God. (21-87, 1968.10.27)

We should be seriously concerned about how to keep the pure lineage that we have inherited from God. Even in the uncontaminated Garden of Eden, Adam and Eve fell. It is very difficult to maintain purity in this sinful world. No matter how difficult it may be, parents must create for their children, who were born from the Blessing, an environment that is not contaminated by the sinful world. Even if parents have to be sacrificed, we must create such an environment for the second generation as soon as possible. We must hurry. (1978.9.22, Japan)

Your families must not be conventional and secular. You should not think simply that your families are the way they are, and that things will be better in the future. They should already be perfect. The problem is in the now. Only when the past and present are perfect, will your future be perfect too. The fact that Adam and Eve did not have even one day of perfection in the Garden of Eden is proof of the Fall. The ideal is if the past, the present and the future would all be consistent. You must be able to offer yourself in the present. God's hope for you is that you become the eternal foundation on earth. That will be the concluding point of history. (21-77, 1968.10.20)

The reason that the Israelites perished after fulfilling the restoration of Canaan, was that they were accustomed to and assimilated into their environment. They put all their effort into living well, eating well and acquiring luxuries that led to their downfall. They intermarried with wealthy non-Israelites. Also, they lusted after power and thirsted for knowledge. In the end, they were completely assimilated into the Canaanite culture and sold off their spirit as the chosen people. This was the cause of their destruction. (144-134, 1986.4.12)

Chronic habits can be the most difficult things to change. While raising

your children, if you let them lead a conventional life, those habits will become hardened within them. In such an environment, you will not have time to make special prayer conditions. You will not be able to pray because your children will make a lot of commotion beside you. (30-125, 1970.3.21)

We do not put individuals first in importance, but rather families. However, we are not trying to solve everything based on the family, but rather on the whole. Past efforts made by people who individually sought the truth, will no longer do. You must invest several times more effort, determination and resolution compared to the past. When you are leading a life challenging evil, you might easily get worn out and retreat. You must invest several times more effort when you have a family, compared to the time when you were single. The family becomes your focus. You cannot ignore that reality. You must realize the relationships between front and back, left and right, and up and down within the family. You cannot do this with the faiths of the past. It will not work with the one-sided religious attitudes of the past. (27-85, 1969.11.15)

You must establish families that will live not only for their immediate generation but for the world and eternity. Your families must become families who are determined to live and die for the sake of gathering the hearts of all people, through the expansion of love. You have to light candles and burn incense and, praying together, create unity between them and heaven and earth. If you create such families, even if some trouble arises, God will protect them. God will save them as the seeds. (100-306, 1978.10.22)

The Blessed Families must set up the family tradition and establish the heavenly laws. In addition, you must establish a standard of education and family regulations for your children. Otherwise, if parents ever make mistakes, there would be no standard for accountability in front of their children. (21-87, 1968.11.3)

From now on, using a dagger, we have to cut out whatever has to be cut out and dissect whatever has to be dissected. You cannot do things as you please. Since the Unification Church is the church that will realize the heavenly kingdom, we must restore families, not individuals. Those who do not become good examples in their families will be accused by the world. They will be accused by heaven and earth. (30-230, 1970.3.23)

CHAPTER TWO

Explanation of the Family Pledge

Section 1. Explanation of Family Pledge Number One

Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to seek our original homeland and build the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation, by centering on true love.

1.1. The owner of Cheon Il Guk

1.1.1. The meaning of Cheon Il Guk

It was not God who established God's kingship. It was True Parents. It was True Parents, not God, who established Cheon Il Guk. *Cheon Il Guk* (天一國) means the Nation of Cosmic Peace and Unity. When you write separately the parts of the Chinese character for *Cheon* (天 Heaven), you have "two people" (二人). This means two worlds. They are level. The character has a dual structure: a person of heaven and a person of the earth. Your mind and body constitute a duality, don't they? Are your mind and body united or not? People who are fighting cannot be citizens of Cheon Il Guk. (364-101, 2002.1.1)

In Cheon Il Guk, sovereignty, a nation, and people are needed. The Coronation Ceremony for the Kingship of God last year was the restoration of the sovereignty. Next, the rallies for the settlement of God's constituted the restoration of the land; and next you are to register as the people of Cheon Il Guk. Do you understand? That is why you must have the Cheon Il Guk identification card in order to become a citizen of Cheon Il Guk. (364-275, 2002.1.3)

Cheon Il Guk is the nation in which two people become one. Heaven requires that there be two people. To be parents, there must be two people. All the things of creation are in pairs, aren't they? What is Cheon Il Guk? Even the entire insect world and animal world are in pairs. Each pair must become one. Only when the original foundation is laid through the unity of two things, two people, two parents, two characteristics, and subject and object partners can God take His rightful position. This is also in the Bible, isn't it? When two or more people pray…doesn't that make three including God? It is the same. Those two or three people are the basis of a nation. They are the basis of a family, a nation, and the world. From that point, a family is formed, and the tribe begins to form. It works like this when there are at least two people. (2002.2.19)

Do you have a country of your own? We must come to an overall conclusion about everything in relation to this country. Now what I mean to say is that the pledge starts with "our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk"; you are the owner. "Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, …centering on true love" is the core content. That is how it is to be done. Do you understand? The pledge is changing. The concept of "the owner" has come into the pledge. No one can just sell off the words of the pledge! However, for all eternity, the term "Cheon Il Guk" will have come into existence through the True Parents.

Now we have established God's Kingship, and by establishing the Realm of Life of the Completed Settlement of the Parents of Heaven and Earth, we have held the Special Rallies for the Harmony and Unity of Heaven and Earth and have completed the Holy Burning Ceremony for the Peace, Unity, and Liberation of Heaven and Earth. Therefore, we need a new nation. (396-149, 2002.11.5)

1.1.2. The attitude and lifestyle of an owner of Cheon Il Guk

When we say a husband and wife are one in heart, and a parent and child are one in heart, we mean two people are united in minds and bodies. Oneness in heart cannot occur when one person is in an upper position and the other is in a lower position. If the father is in the upper position and the son or daughter in the lower, they cannot become one in heart. Only if the two are equal, on the same level, can they be one in heart. Therefore, only when the internal and external relationships are level can people be one in heart.

It is the same for husband and wife. Only when they have a horizontal relationship of inner and outer and of front and rear can they be one in heart. When their relationship has one of them in an upper position and the other in a lower position, they can never be one in heart. (41-30, 1971.2.12)

The important thing is oneness in heart. The eyes must become one in heart; the nose should be one in heart; everything should be one in heart. Mind and body are one in heart, too, and man and woman are one in heart. The tribes of a nation must be one in heart, and the nations should also be one in heart.

You must become one in heart in the way that a king would want. What is more, the world can become a single nation when you create oneness in heart with the presidents of the world's nations, with God, and with the presidents in heaven and on earth. That unified nation is ours not someone else's. (284-76, 1997.4.15)

The very first condition of the Unification Church is the unity between mind and body. That is why God has commanded absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience when He created heaven and earth. If we speak, things happen substantially according to our faith. If they do not happen, then we can make them happen through invest-

ing effort. No matter how great they may be, they all come about as we command. They are accomplished because we invest more than is hoped for. (400-203, 2003.1.1)

Unless you have fulfilled the way of true children of filial piety in front of God, of patriots in the nation, of saints in the world, and of divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth; unless you have an attitude of one heart, one body, one mindset, and one harmony based on mind and body unity; and unless you all can determine with a pure mind of filial piety, "We will live attending True Parents eternally," you cannot become citizens of Cheon Il Guk. You must make the discovery that you should not think you could live well alone. It does not matter that there are certain difficult or happy circumstances in this world. You must go beyond them and go even to a place of misery. You can be the person who is to inherit Cheon Il Guk only when you determine to become God's representative in the position of a pioneering prince.

Because you desire to live with True Parents, you should be determined to bring them to a position where they can be more liberated and happy than anyone else. Because True Parents are suffering, you should be willing to suffer thousands of times or more. You should gather everything together and establish an environment that you can relate to in your daily life. You can become an owner of Cheon Il Guk only when you become a person who can overcome hardships in the most extreme circumstances and still be eternally grateful, offer praise and the glory of attendance to heaven, as well as leave your descendants something to be proud of. (396-157, 2002.11.5)

You become an owner of heaven after you become a child of filial piety. After becoming children of filial piety, you become patriots, saints, and families of divine sons and daughters. A family of divine sons and daughters is a true family. You become an owner of heaven only when you form a true family. (400-204, 2003.1.1)

You should become sons of filial piety, daughters-in-law of filial piety, then saints of filial piety. Next, you have to become sons of filial piety on the family level before God, centering on purity, pure lineage, and pure love. Your whole family must become children of filial piety, not just you as individuals.

Then become families of patriots who are filial, families of saints who are filial, and families of divine sons and daughters who are filial. From that position, you should become representatives of the owner, representatives who are fully capable of becoming princes and princesses who can inherit the kingship of heaven from the individual level up to the level of the cosmos. You should always train yourselves that way. That is what is meant by an owner of Cheon Il Guk. (2003.3.12, Hannam-dong International Training Center)

Our hope is to stand together with God in the same place, to have the right

to be in the same place. The right to dwell in the same place means to live together. Next is the right to participate together. The right to act together and the right to participate together are the same things. You must participate and act together. Next is the right to share love together, which means that you live together for the purpose of love! That is the meaning.

That is why Jesus said, "I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father, but by me." Although he said he was the truth, the life, and the word, he left out "love." The Unification Church and Cheon Il Guk will make progress centering on true love.

Your desire is to stay at the same place, together with True Parents. That is what you desire, isn't it? You want to live together with True Parents; you want to participate in everything and act together with True Parents. What is it that you want from doing this? May you live together eternally in a liberated place of happiness and freedom with love as the center! Amen! This is what I mean when I say that the tranquil age of peace and unity of Cheon Il Guk has come. Thus when you move, you are not moving alone; your nation follows you. You are living with the qualification of an owner, followed by the entire spirit world and heavenly world and escorted by the earthly world and all its people. That is why, through your tribe, you must become an owner who attends God's tradition of love, which is a philosophy that is the core of the nation's traditions. (396-152, 2002.11.5)

1.2. Centering on true love

1.2.1. The primary premise of the Family Pledge is "by centering on true love"

From the point of view of God's providence, we can see that the age of the providence of restoration is over. When the age of the providence of restoration is over, we enter the world of the original ideal of creation. The end of the age of the providence of restoration means that the fallen world under Satan's power has come to an end, and the age of God's direct dominion on earth and in heaven is beginning. The Unification Church has proclaimed the Family Pledge because of the coming of such a time. The Family Pledge is not for ordinary people.

The Family Pledge is not meant for just anyone to say. All eight pledges have the phrase, "Our family…centering on true love." What does this mean? The words true love are spoken on a foundation that has no relationship with the satanic world. (263-194, 1994.10.4)

To overcome and go beyond the world that is connected to false life and false lineage based on the false love that resulted from the Fall, we must have a place of true love, true life, and true lineage. Unless we do this, we cannot overcome it. You must know this clearly.

The reason true love is the prerequisite condition of the Family Pledge is to tell you what existed in the original world, when there had been no Fall in

the Garden of Eden. If the ideal of oneness had been accomplished with true love, true life, and true lineage together with God, there could not have been any false love, false life, or false lineage. Though we live on earth, that life itself becomes God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven, and it becomes the beginning of the eternal world. However, this was all lost due to the Fall. (263-194, 1994.10.4)

Pledges one through eight of the Family Pledge state: "Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk…centering on true love." You will not be able to live in attendance to God when you go to the spirit world if you do not become one centering on true love. (268-98, 1995.3.12)

In the course of history, numerous religious founders, saints, and sages have appeared; however, they have had no relationship with true love at all. To solve all this, Jesus came to the earth as the Messiah to make the foundation of the bridegroom and bride. Then what must the Messiah do when he comes?

He must establish a new realm of a royal family moving toward the new family, new tribe, new nation, and new world. He must create the realm of the royal family. Who is the direct ancestor of the royal family? He is the one, who as a child of God's direct lineage with original, unfallen love has centered himself upon true love and upon the foundation of true life and true lineage. He is the seed. If a root comes from that seed, it will be the central root. If a stem appears, it will become the central stem and eventually grow to become the central trunk. To the extent that it grows vertically, it will proportionally grow horizontally out into the world. This will join together the families and the tribes, and also the peoples, the nations, and the world. (263-194, 1994.10.4)

What are the first words of the Family Pledge? It starts with "Our family…by centering on true love." True love means to act in true love. Owing to the Fall, those without true love cannot establish families. You must understand this. Originally, those who do not have true love cannot have families in front of God. The Fall signifies the corruption of true love. Then what is true love? It is a love that has a relationship only with God. You have yourselves, your nations, the habits of the secular world, and the customs and traditions of a nation's people; however, true love does not have anything to do with them. It is a love that creates relationships only with God.

Owing to the Fall, this love related only to God could not come into being. You have made relationships with satanic love. This is true not only within the family, but it has also expanded beyond satanic families to the level of a tribe, a people, a nation, the world, and even to the earthly and heavenly worlds. All the habits and traditions that have stained the environment into which you were born as fallen people, and in which you have lived, have nothing to do with God. You do not realize how hard it is to deny all of these things and solve the problems. How can the pure and original

love of God be restored to its original standard? In order to touch God's love, you must reject the habits and traditions based on self-centered love.

The pledge talks about the duties of filial sons and daughters in the family, patriots in the nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters of heaven and earth centering on true love. All of these are connected through relationships of love; however, it is not false love. Owing to the Fall, false love has spread to the ends of the world. Countless complicated situations of love abound. Since the beginning of history, life and death have been connected to complex situations of love, and nations have been ruined. All of the complicated situations connected to false love exist here now. Think about how difficult it will be to go looking for true love starting from here. Thus, it is written in the Bible, regarding the search for true love, that those who seek to die will live. You cannot reach that place unless you are determined to die. No one has known about this until now. (274-195, 1995.11.3)

The reason God cannot live together with people on earth is that a unified view has not been established in the families. Once a unified view is established, God can come back and live together with them. When you say "true love," there should be one integrated concept of the oneness of minds and bodies, of husbands and wives, and of sons and daughters. If these three can create unity, the family of true love will become the starting point of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. When you unite into one centering on God and True Parents, you can build God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. Where does God's Kingdom on earth start? It starts from you and your family, and from your children. (260-185, 1994.5.8)

1.2.2. True Love is the love connected only with God

The Unification Church is the place that unites God and humankind and unites mind and body through the ideal of true love. God has true love, true life, and true lineage, and we came from Him. We, therefore, should also have true love, true life, and true lineage. Since humankind was born with a relationship of unity between parent and child, centering on God's true love, the mind and body of each person should have been united into one naturally, just as God's mind and body are naturally one in true love. However, human beings are still continuously struggling on the front line, with their bodies on the side of Satan connected to satanic love, life, and lineage and their minds on the side of God. (201-354, 1990.4.30)

God, who is the origin of true love, wanted to bequeath absolute and unchanging true love to human beings from the position of a Father. In true love, perfect harmony and unification are attained; through this, God's true love is fully bequeathed to His partners, human beings. Furthermore, through the attributes of true love, the right

of inheritance, the right of dwelling together, and the right of participating together naturally arise. That is why human beings, as God's children, were meant to act together and work together with Him. Moreover, people can naturally enjoy the right of inheritance, the right of dwelling together, and the right of participating together among themselves, centering on true love. Therefore, in the original world of creation, people were to each have their own ideals and happiness, centering on God's true love, and transmit these to both their ancestors and descendants. (205-156, 1990.8.16)

Human beings, as they were originally created, were to live with God's true love within their minds and bodies, and thus they were to respond to His love directly. In other words, the mind would respond to God centering on true love and the body would automatically resonate with the mind. The origin of true unity in which the mind and body are not in conflict begins with inheriting and experiencing God's true love just as it is. The ideals of people whose minds and bodies are united can be realized when they can completely possess God's true love. When mind and body are united centering on true love, the ideal of genuine freedom and peace can begin. On the foundation of the unity of mind and body, free and peaceful individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations, and a world can be established. (234-270, 1990.9.2)

True love is connected to God eternally. The root of true love is not connected to the tribe or the universe centering on oneself. It is fundamentally connected to God. Because God is an eternal being, when we connect to true love, we can automatically become eternal beings. This is all very logical. (229-45, 1992.4.9)

Where does true love come from? True love comes into existence when one serves others, and not when one wants to be served by others. Why? The fundamental foundation for the creation of heaven and earth in the beginning was not the action of drawing things in to oneself. Catching hold of something and drawing it to oneself can create only one entity. Everything in this world requires investing oneself. The axis for the creation of the universe belongs to God, who has been seeking the ideal of love. It did not begin with drawing or pulling things in, but with investing. You must understand that the way of true love is found by investing even your life and being able to forget about it. (284-71, 1997.4.15)

What is true love? It is to give and give, even investing your life completely and then investing it again. True love begins only when one can give and give and forget what one has already given. True love can penetrate heaven and earth. It can even pierce through the world of death. In the world of life, it can find its way through anything, even melting a strong heart. There is nowhere love cannot penetrate. Love can even enter secret places. (256-179, 1994.3.13)

What is true love? True love is giving and forgetting what you gave, and giving and forgetting again. What kind of parents are great parents? They are parents who invest and invest and then forget. If parents were to keep a record and prepare an account saying, "I put you through college, so you must pay us back by taking care of us in our old age," they would be false parents. Unlike God, such parents cannot have ideal children of filial piety. (239-62, 1992.11.23)

What does true love do? What does true love do really? It can unify your minds and bodies that are in conflict. The reason that your minds and bodies could not unite until now is because you did not have true love. Because false love came into existence, there is no way other than true love to bring about unity. The Fall came about due to false love; therefore, we cannot create unity without true love. (259-292, 1994.4.17)

What is true love? It is investing everything, then investing everything again, and then determining to invest everything again. By unceasingly investing everything, you find the path to unite with the true partner of true love in the center. (268-13, 1995.2.7)

True love exists to establish the heavenly way. Therefore, love should be based upon the tenets of the Principle. Love is above the Principle, isn't it? Freedom, too, is above the Principle, above the realm of the dominion of the Principle; but it does not deny the Principle. (303-165, 1999.8.17)

1.2.3. The foundation for true love is a true family

The first hometown of true love is a true family. A true family! There, you will find a true father, a true mother, a true husband, a true wife, and true children. That is the foundation for a family of true love. (215-243, 1991.2.20)

In a family, there is a man and a woman. What kind of man and woman are they? From the viewpoint of the ideal of creation, the man and woman must fit with the process of re-creation. They are to unite mind and body. It is the same for everything. Mind and body must be united. Once a man's mind and body are united, he becomes a subject, the plus, and wants to become one with a woman, the minus, whose mind and body are united. In so doing, the husband and wife either become a big minus or a big plus, and they try to become one with their children. Following this principle in the family, the man and the woman become one as the subject and object. The unity of this plus and minus becomes the parents; the brothers and sisters have the three stages to unite into one as plus or minus, and that entire union is the family. (268-13, 1995.2.7)

What is the power that enables mind and body, husband and wife, and parent and child to be united? It is the power of love. It is the power of true love. Where does the power of true love begin? When you marry, you want your spouse to be 100 times, 1,000 times, 10,000 times, and

even infinitely more wonderful than you are yourself. Infinitely. Where did such a heart come from? It came from God. Just like human beings, God also desires His object partner to have infinite value. His desire is for the love of His object to be absolute, eternal, and unique. The power of that love wants to increase continuously. It wants to start small and grow bigger. Only true love can grow bigger. Only through this love can we connect to the entire universe. The same formula works for everything. (268-13, 1995.2.7)

For what are we born? It is for love. It is for the sake of true love. What is true love really? It has such value that it cannot be obtained even if you give everything in the universe. If you catch hold of true love, you can catch hold of God. You can grasp God Himself. Marriage is therefore something magnificent. It is not a vague concept. It is realizing the perfection of the vertical and horizontal, and becoming one with God. The perfection of the vertical and horizontal, the perfection of front and rear – everything – is fulfilled there. (249-294, 1993.10.10)

Have you become a true person? Do you have true children? Parents must invest, forget, and invest once again for the sake of their children. Husbands should invest for the sake of their wives and forget what they have invested, and vice versa. Also between brothers and sisters, you should create the standard of investing and forgetting. This was the ideal starting point that the true God desired centering on the love of the ideal of creation. (253-66, 1994)

Parents are the king and queen of the household. The center of a tribe is its king. The center of a people is also its king. The center of the world is the king of the world. Adam and Eve were to have been that center. As God is the subject partner, people are the object partners; so if a person becomes a king on the family level, or a king on all levels, God also becomes the king there, too. God is the plus and the subject. No matter how big God is, He has to follow this formula. (268-13, 1995.2.7)

God created the universe for the sake of His object partner. If God is alone, even He feels lonely. Don't you feel lonely if you are alone? That is why you need an object partner. You need to be in a partnership. What kind of partnership? A partnership of love. God, who is the subject of love, started out on the basis of investing and forgetting, investing infinitely and then forgetting. Therefore, His partner must also be an object partner who can infinitely invest, infinitely give and offer stimulation. To sum up, God's love contains the concept of investing and forgetting. Because this concept exists, the entire universe began to emerge on the basis of the spirit of sacrifice and service that consumes God Himself. That is how the universe began its perpetual existence. God needs His partner in love. You also need your partner for love, too, don't you? Because God is the true God, He wants to settle down on earth where He can love His

true partner with true love. That is the beginning of settlement. The foundation for this settlement is the family. This is the basis, the fundamental unit. The formula connects everything unit by unit. Where is the starting point of settlement where God can be joyful, dancing, smiling, and singing? It is not a nation, the world, or any one man. It is not just a man. It is a family where a man and woman unite and can settle as God's object. Everything begins from there. All ideals, freedom, and happiness start from there. The same formula works with everything. (268-13, 1995.2.7)

You must share true love. You must say the Family Pledge on the basis of unity between mind and body, unity between husband and wife, and unity among the sons and daughters. Because false love began, the mind and body were separated. The husband and wife and brothers and sisters were also separated. Therefore, you can connect to God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven through reestablishing the point where mind and body can be united, husband and wife can be united, and brothers and sisters can be united in order to find the family that can be one with the principles of restoration through indemnity. (260-317, 1994.5.19)

1.3. Seeking our original homeland

1.3.1. The true meaning of our original homeland

What kind of place is the original homeland? It is the kind of place that we want to go to, that we want to see, that we want to live in. It is the kind of place that our mind wants to go to, and our body wants to go to together with our mind. We must seek out the original homeland that our mind and body both miss simultaneously; a place where we can rest forevermore and feel proud that it is our foundation of happiness. Because of that, throughout the course of history, numerous people have longed for this kind of original homeland, have pursued it, and have revered it, and then passed away. We need to be aware that numerous people of deep faith and people of great wisdom have been making tremendous efforts until today in search of this homeland. That is why the original homeland must surely come into being. (23-74, 1969.5.11)

The original garden is the ideal garden. It is a world where everyone ministers to each other's needs; a world where a feeling of brotherhood and sisterhood penetrates all parts of the universe. It is not a world of ideals and ideologies like today where people discuss the differences between the feelings held by peoples or the differences between the sovereignties of nations. It is not a world where the differences between people based on economic circumstances or culture are discussed. It is a world where discussion reaches beyond the distinctions between peoples or national sovereignties. It is a world where people discuss matters of the heart. (7-37, 1959.7.5)

If the ancestors of humankind had not fallen at the outset, where would the

original homeland have been? There is no doubt that it would have been the Garden of Eden – that village, those mountains and rivers – where Adam and Eve lived. Today, when the people born into the lineage received from the fallen parents say "original homeland," they think of their place of birth. The ideal homeland that all humankind have been seeking and longing for seems to be so unbelievable. Where is the highest calling our Unification Church is seeking to fulfill today? We must go out and seek our lost original hometown. Our parents, our siblings, and our relatives will be there in that original hometown. They will be able to welcome us not in sadness, but in eternal joy and happiness, and their joy will not be short-lived but will endure forever. That is the original place that we must seek. (23-74, 1969.5.11)

In the original land, there is no place where evil dwells. It is the everlasting, unified world where people have broken off their connections to evil and, centering on an overflowing original love, sing and live in joy eternally. (18-102, 1967.5.28)

The original homeland is where we want to live forever amid the joy of heaven and earth, singing joyfully, while taking dominion over all things immersed in the love of our parents and family. (18-100, 1967.5.28)

We long for the original hometown because it is where we can meet our parents, siblings, and relatives, who are closer to us than anyone else, and who will always guide us and welcome us with an unchanging heart any time we go to see them. They greet us joyfully and offer us sympathy and comfort when we have difficulties.

If there were no one like that in the original hometown, even if you went there with a fervent heart, you must understand that on your return, your heart of deep yearning would disappear and you would feel grief. There absolutely must be people who welcome you in the original hometown. (23-80, 1969.5.11)

What comes to mind first when you think about the original hometown? Your loving parents, beloved village, beloved house, and beloved siblings are there in the original hometown. If we leave our hometown and are away in another country, the scope of our original hometown expands to become a homeland, a nation. From the perspective of the universe or cosmos, this world is our original homeland. As your perspective becomes broader, you will feel clearly throughout the course of your life that the scope of your original hometown will also expand proportionally. (7-22, 1959.7.5)

Who is the ancestor that can find the true original homeland? It is God. It is God and True Parents. If you are the true individual who is to be connected through the true ancestor, it cannot happen without meeting the True Parents and the True God. Therefore, God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven, where God and True Parents can dwell, can be

realized on earth by restoring, through the True Parents, all the mistakes perpetrated by the false parents throughout history. (267-321)

When we cherish the joy of experiencing hardships and pleasures in oneness with God's love, we can have the honor of attending and living with God in glory as a citizen of the world of God's love, as a member of God's family and the royal family centering on eternal life; this is our original nation, our original homeland. You are seeking that place. (264-155)

We must seek the original homeland. We have to seek our home in our original homeland, that place where our ancestors could have become perfect if they had not fallen in the Garden of Eden, and could have shared hardships and pleasure with God. We are going the heavenly way on our own to that place without the guidance of religious leaders, parents, or teachers but rather according to the commands of our inner consciences. Have you ever heard of someone saying that we should educate the conscience? Throughout your life, your conscience knows everything. (262-117, 1994.7.23)

You all have a hometown, don't you? However, where could God's original homeland be? If God had his original homeland, the clans of that original homeland would form there, and from the clans would come peoples, and from these peoples there would emerge nations and a world. Through this process, the heavenly kingdom on earth would be established. If God had a homeland on earth, would we want to go there or not? We would. People even want to go to their own hometowns where their humble parents and siblings are living. Then, wouldn't you want to go to God's original homeland? God's original homeland is everyone's homeland. Therefore, someone who says he does not want to go is not being truthful. (23-152, 1969.5.18)

If there were somewhere on earth where God could settle down, have a family, and experience daily life, that family would represent all humankind. For this reason, the base of that family, upon which God has begun His experience of daily life, becomes the original homeland of all humankind. Therefore, the root and starting point of God's life is the hometown.

Owing to the Fall, humankind could not begin from that starting point with God as the center. The family could not become such a place. There is no such hometown. It was only after I came that the original foundation was established whereupon God and True Parents could settle and make a beginning, united together through true love. That place automatically becomes the original homeland for all humanity. As this restored place is the same as the starting point in the original form of creation, this place is where all people can share God's love and the base of true love that God wants as a starting point. Thus, it

is the original homeland for all humankind. (289-142, 1998.1.1)

Where is the nation, the homeland that God desires? Where is the homeland for all humanity? The country where the True Parents of humankind appear is the homeland. Isn't this logical? Where did you say the homeland is? It is the country to which the True Parents of humankind come. Where is the original homeland for humanity? There are many nations in the world, such as those in Africa. However, the original homeland of humankind is the country where the True Parents of humankind were born. This is the original homeland of the entire universe and of this historic world. (156-233, 1966.5.25)

Where is the homeland God desires? Where is the original homeland of all humanity? The hometown where True Parents were born is the historic, universal, and global original homeland. You must inherit your ancestors' thoughts and traditions; otherwise you will be treated as stepchildren. Korean people must become the chosen people. For this to happen, I have to turn things inside out. If Korea is the fatherland and the original homeland, all civilizations of the world must bear fruit in Korea. In order to make Korea into the original homeland, we have to determine to become sacrificial offerings of loyalty, devotion, love, and sacrifice. Otherwise, Korea will lose the qualification to be the original homeland. It requires substantial action to create something good. You must accomplish this through your blood, sweat, and tears. (15-283, 1965.11.2)

If Korea is God's desired original homeland for the world and for all people in the universe, it would create within itself a new civilization that would sway the whole world. Its language would become the world's language, and its men and women would become world-level people. If all people had been born centering on the original parents, there would have been only one language. Due to the Fall, there are many languages. If, in the future, Korea becomes the fatherland, the original homeland, and the nation God desires, then Korea will be lifted up. God will dance while embracing Korea. To this day, God has never had a day to dance or smile. (156-233, 1966.5.25)

Korea is the original birthplace of love. Korea is the original homeland where people can realize the home of love, the hometown of love, and the country of love for all people. For this reason, I, as the True Parent, have pioneered a direct road that is able to connect the nation, the world, and heaven, God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven, centering on absolute and unchanging family ideals based on true love. In other countries people know this well. That is why they want to leave their countries and settle down in Korea. (290-287, 1998.3.2)

Those who have lived as God's family in God's Kingdom on earth go to God's

Kingdom in heaven in the spirit world. Heaven is our original homeland. That means that God's Kingdom in heaven is our original homeland. However, owing to the Fall, God's Kingdom on earth has still not been established; therefore, God's Kingdom in heaven is uninhabited. No one has ever entered God's Kingdom in heaven. (161-12, 1987.1.1)

1.3.2. The original homeland we must seek

Where is the original homeland that you have been longing for? It is where your mother and father are. That is very certain. The present human world is made up of five billion people who are descended from the children of Adam and Eve, who married after they had been chased out of paradise, away from God after they had fallen. No one can deny this. Because there is something wrong with them, they do not know where to go. A calamity happened, and people have been living like orphans. The starting point is unclear and so is the destination. Humankind has not known where it is heading. No one knows what will happen in the future. God wanted to teach the five billion people of the human race who were in ignorance, and so He taught me first. Once people join the Unification Church they all come to know God. (228-220, 1992.4.3)

Owing to the Fall, we lost our original homeland and hometown. If there had been no Fall at the outset, and we were born, lived, and died, where would we have died? In the original homeland. Even if we die, we want to be buried in the original homeland. Where would you want to live? In the original homeland. We should have lived in the original homeland, but we were born, and found ourselves in the land of the enemy, in a land of sorrow.

Can the place where we live now be made into our original dwelling place, the land that we can sing of as our happy environment? The answer is no. That is why all things must pass away. Families, nations, the world, communism, and democracy should all pass away. What I desire is the philosophy of love of the original homeland, the philosophy of a brotherhood and sisterhood that shares the parents' love and shares their flesh and blood. Jesus cried out for such a world in some form, but now things are more specific. (155-32, 1964.10.6)

You must seek the original homeland. Where is the original homeland? Where is Jesus' original homeland? If Jesus had not died, the nation of Israel would have been his original homeland. The beginning of the global homeland would have occurred centered on Israel. What was the responsibility Jesus had and the mission He was to fulfill on earth? He was to establish the original homeland. The Parents that Heaven has found and established must appear so that the original homeland, the original hometown, can come into being in front of all fallen humankind. Otherwise, the original homeland cannot appear. Without parents, can there be brothers

and sisters? There cannot. Who is there in the hometown? There should be relatives, siblings, and parents. There should also be possessions held by your family. Why do you long for your hometown? This is because the bonds of heart of the relationships in your lives began there. Therefore, you must never forget your hometowns as long as you value your lives. (155-321, 1965.11.1)

May the time of the homeland of hope come soon! Through establishing one nation of heaven, we must judge the enemy of Heaven, Satan, eliminate evil, and attain the heavenly kingdom of peace on earth, centering on goodness alone. This is the hope of God and of Jesus. It is also the hope of our ancestors who have contributed greatly in the course of the providence to this day. You must understand this clearly. (155-321, 1965.11.1)

No one has ever thought of God as being full of bitterness and sorrow. This was not known. All the people in the world should have been His sons and daughters, but they have been caught in the enemy's trap. They are crying out "I'm dying!" in grief to heaven and earth. Then would God answer, "How can you cry out loud for help? I am just going to go to sleep," and then just rest and sleep comfortably? You must understand that God never rests, but is constantly working to restore this land. (156-233, 1966.5.25)

The Family Pledge says, "to seek our original homeland." In the world of religion all people were commanded to leave their homes and lead celibate lives. However, the Unification Church is the opposite: return to the hometown; go back to the hometown. The message of returning to one's hometown is the best news of all good news. It was never heard before in the history of religion. This is the one-time joyful news of all joyful news. Yet, there have been so many sinners who were reluctant to return to their hometowns! (264-187, 1994.10.9)

What is pledge number one of the Family Pledge? "Seek our original homeland…by centering on true love." We must seek out our original homeland. We are not pledging to perfect "the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation…" We must build it. We must do so with our own hands. We must recover it entirely from the world of the devil. We must completely regain the realm that is under Satan's dominion. Therefore this is not perfecting it, but building it. That is different. (261-88, 1994.5.22)

We should have built God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven by having gone to our hometowns and having become the filial sons and daughters and patriots, establishing a model family and nation according to God's ideal of creation, and establishing kingship. Owing to the Fall, a different world came about, and so we must make this world into one centering on God's ideal of an extended family. But once we have made it into one, we cannot just let it be. We must

link that unified world with the heavenly world and with God's Kingdom on earth. You must be excited about shortening the amount of time needed and fervently work to make progress in this. (267-153, 1995.1.4)

Centering on our original homeland, our family will build the original ideal of creation, the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, by centering on true love. This means we should create the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven. That is to say, because of the loss of the family we must make families. I am saying that, centering on our original homeland, our families will build the original ideal of creation, the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, through true love. It should be the original homeland – the original homeland centering on families. It is not to a nation, but to your hometown that you must return.

If you have such a family, you must go back to your hometown and establish God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. Once you find your hometown, the nation and world will naturally come into oneness. There will be no need for you to worry. The Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven will be established naturally. Everything develops from families. (260-156, 1994.5.2)

What does it mean to return to your hometown? As God is the root of true love, we must return to the original land and live together eternally with the roots, branches, and fruits of true love together. The reason for returning to our original hometown is to live eternally in peace and joy centering on love. It is very simple. (252-269, 1994.1.1)

How can we connect ourselves to the original homeland and to God? Your hometown is your birthplace, isn't it? Everyone connects to the world horizontally, starting from the hometown.

None of the people of the world could have hometowns on the side of Heaven. The hometowns were lost. People could not find the original position of Adam. We must find that position ourselves. We must get back there. Beginning from that point we should start our families and our tribes and continue on to the nation and the world. That is logical. This is not just some notion.

If you do that, the way that you can go is already prepared. On the individual foundation, you must restore the position of Adam, our ancestor, and that of Jesus. Then you will be able to enter the original homeland centering on the True Parent, the returning Lord. Once you are there, everything belongs to you. That will be the kind of position you hold. If you have that idea firmly in your mind, Satan will retreat. Therefore, you must complete your mission as a tribal messiah. (248-27, 1993.5.30)

As you are settling, what do you bequeath? It is the family, not the individual. You must understand this. That is why we have the Family Pledge. We must have thorough education about the Family Pledge. If you look at the Family Pledge, the first pledge says that we will

seek our original homeland and build the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation, by centering on true love. With that alone we can achieve everything. (268-226, 1995.4.2)

1.4. The original ideal of creation

What is God's will? It is true love. It means to accomplish the ideal of creation. What does it mean to achieve the ideal of God's creation? It means to complete the four-position foundation. If God and humankind had become one through the marriage of Adam and Eve, all things could have united together on that foundation of love, and humankind could have had God to themselves as well as all things of creation, thereby becoming the second owners. God is the invisible owner, and we are the visible owners. God is the inner God, and we are the outer God. Everyone has the desire to become God. (276-253, 1996.2.24)

The perfection of the four-position foundation, which is God's ideal of creation, comes when Adam and Eve are one with God. God is then present above and below, to the left and to the right, and in the front and in the back. Then what has to be accomplished? First, God's love and human love are to be perfected. This is the perfection of the love between God and humankind. They become one body. When they become one through love, ownership is decided. In eternal love, the ownership of love is decided. In relation to her husband, a woman belongs eternally to her husband. In relation to a woman, the man belongs to his wife in eternal love. You should know this. (276-253, 1996.2.24)

What is God's will? It is to accomplish the ideal of creation. What is the ideal of creation? It is to complete the four-position foundation. What does the four-position foundation signify? It means perfecting the ideal of love and the ideal of unity. That is it precisely. We can see that everything came about because of love. Then, what kind of love? True love. Where does true love begin? It begins when one invests oneself fully. Investing and forgetting. When God created, He did so on the foundation of absolute faith. (276-299, 1996.3.10)

God is the vertical Father and the vertical subject. And human beings are the horizontal subject. Only when the vertical and horizontal become one is a being completed. To make a three-dimensional being, the vertical and horizontal must be united and so must the front and the back. What is the vertical relationship? It is the parent-child relationship. The horizontal relationship is the relationship between East and West and the relationship between husband and wife. The relationship of front and back is the relationship between brothers and sisters. God's ideal of creation is to create the spherical form of the ideal of love in each family.

Where is God in such a family? He is in the center. God's ideal of creation is for Him to be there as the central being who can be represented by the father,

husband, mother, wife, son, elder brother, and younger brother. What I mean by that is God wants to live together with man and woman for eternity. If people become parents, God wants to be with them forever in the position of a parent. If people become husband and wife, God wants to be with them forever as a husband or wife. As God is the Parent, He wants to live with humankind together eternally as our Parent; and the foundation for that is the family! (267-224, 1995.1.8)

Originally, God's ideal of creation was established according to the standard of true parents. I am saying that from the beginning of creation, God created all things according to the standard of true parents. When true parents, that is, Adam and Eve, had reached the perfection level, it would have been possible to hold their holy wedding, and that moment would have been like God's own holy wedding at the same time. Because God is the owner of true love and the root of true love, the ideal of creation is for humankind and this root to become one and to expand this root of true love throughout the horizontal world, human world, and earthly world.

However, owing to the Fall, through their lineage, humankind inherited Satan's flesh and blood. Even if Satan's blood, Satan's lineage, and hell were all cleared away, it still would be very hard to enter heaven. Even if people got rid of all these things, humankind still would have no relationship with the world that could have been, the world of the lineage centered on the true love that God and True Parents have, centering on the ideal of creation God had from the beginning. (266-58, 1994.12.11)

Our consciences want the highest ideals and we have the greatest ambition in the physical plane. Accordingly, when you think about what any man or woman desires, it is to become the king or queen of the world. That is God's original ideal of creation. Horizontally, people become the infinitely great central beings and vertically, they become beings like God. Is there a supreme being that is higher than God? So women and men are the temples of God. They are the internal substantiations of the invisible God. (272-277, 1995.10.8)

At first, God's ideal of creation was to plant a single seed. This is the formula. It is to plant a single seed. That one single seed represents the absolute man. Not two. It is the same for a woman. Such a woman is a queen, and such a man is a king. The ideal is that such a king and queen create unity based on love. When they are connected like that, God can dwell with them. In the fallen world, there is no foundation based on this ideal formula. (271-328, 1995.9.3)

Love creates unity. Without love, there is no unity between parent and child, between husband and wife, or between brothers and sisters. The body of a man or woman is the body of God. When they become one, they are reach-

ing up toward the vertical standard. They can meet at one point. The connection with the vertical standard comes first.

Due to the force of gravity, something that is vertical is pulled down faster than something horizontal. It comes down naturally and the vertical standard becomes the exact center. If these become one and rotate together, then the whole will create a spherical form centering on one center. This becomes the nucleus, and Adam and Eve become secondary beings and perfect one sphere of love. That place is where sons and daughters become the embodiments of perfect love. It is the perfection of the ideal of love of families in the heavenly kingdom. It is the very place that causes the explosive expansion of the fruit of the original nucleus that was God's ideal of creation that man and woman held as the ideal. (262-189, 1994.7.23)

What is the source of a world of peace? God is the center. Through accomplishing unity of direction and purpose centering on God, centering on God's will and His ideal of creation, that is possible; that is how it is. What is God's will? That is an important question. In our Unification Church, what do we say God's will is? First, it is to complete the ideal of creation. That's simple. What, then, is the completion of the ideal of creation? It is the completion of the four-position foundation. What is the completion of the four-position foundation? It is the ideal family. It is as simple as that. The question is whether you have become ideal families. (261-289, 1994.7.24)

From the perspective of God's ideal of creation, God longs for a true man and a true woman and connects true love, true life, and true lineage to them. If they begin their family from that place of safe settlement, God's love, life, and lineage come down vertically; heaven and earth become one, and they settle on the land and expand outward. When there is a family centering on love between partners, then centering on individuals and families, a tribe will emerge, a people will emerge, and they will spread out in all four directions. (259-192, 1994.4.10)

God's ideal of creation was the ideal of parents. That is how important parents are. Since parents are the central beings of heaven, they are to be the king and queen. The king and queen begin from parents on earth. They are the center of everything. They are the center of heaven on earth and of the heavenly world. The kingship in heaven is inner, and the kingship on earth is outer. It is the same relationship as the relationship between a person's mind and body. Because of that, mind and body become one. Ultimately, the ideal of creation – the purpose of all of heaven and earth – is to establish a family centering on parents.

A family unit is formed from the unity of three: a true man and woman, the true couple, and true children. This is just like a formula. They cannot be broken up by another, nor can they separate. Why is that? No matter how great a power is applied, it cannot break apart a family that has become one centered

on true love. Even God Himself cannot. That entity is one for eternity; it is absolutely one. (265-288, 1994.11.27)

The mainstream of providential history is the ideal of creation. Yes, you must know the will of God. Although everyone talks about the will of God, no one knows what it is. You must know this clearly. When I asked a renowned theologian about this, he answered, "Oh! The will of God is simple and at the same time very difficult." How can someone say such a thing? Even theologians are incapable of defining God's will. That is why the number of denominations has increased. The number has increased because Christianity could not give a definition. It could not come to one standard conclusion.

What is God's will? God's will is the perfection of the ideal of creation. Isn't that so? Is God's mind divided into two, or is it one? Just as God is absolute, it can be logically concluded that God's will, too, is absolutely one.

Then what does completion of the ideal of creation mean? It means accomplishing the four-position foundation. What is the completion of the four-position foundation? It is the perfection of the ideal of love. What kind of love is that? It is true love. Then everything is included. (247-116, 1993.5.1)

In the future, we will be the center of God's Kingdom in heaven and the center of God's Kingdom on earth. God's Kingdom in heaven is the vertical standard, and God's Kingdom on earth is the horizontal standard. Through the vertical and horizontal standards becoming one, God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven will unite. This sets the pattern for forming a great, unified family centering on God's true love. This is God's ideal of creation. (269-80, 1995.4.8)

Based on true love, God will perfect humankind as beings having infinite value. Through that He will also perfect true love and the world of the ideal of creation that is the home of eternal ideal love. (254-106, 1994.2.1)

God's ideal of love cannot be perfected on one's own. It can be realized only through families and the marriages of couples. Because people have not understood this point, however, they could not find the solution. Because the false parents fell, their descendants have not been able to enter the heavenly kingdom even to this day. People have not been able to enter the heavenly kingdom that God established as the ideal of creation. They are staying in the middle realms. Even Jesus is in the same situation. Why did Jesus go to paradise? It is because he was not able to marry.

That is why all the ancestors in the spirit world are separated from one another. Where do they go? No matter how loving a couple they are, when they go to the spirit world they cannot go into God's Kingdom, into the heavenly kingdom. People enter the middle realms of heaven, and go to a place that matches their spiritual level. That is why if there

are ten members in one family, they are all in different places. (272-289, 1995.10.13)

It is God's ideal of creation to perfect a model within the family as the substantial core that can assimilate the world. This ideal will be realized through married couples. That is why if something goes wrong in a couple, it creates disorder in the four realms of heart. Perfected families are to enter the heavenly kingdom; however, the couples that have gone wrong will go to hell rather than heaven.

You must know how precious first love is. Through knowing this, how great can the families of the Unification Church become? (257-216, 1994.3.15)

God's will is to perfect His ideal of creation. Perfection of the ideal of creation is perfection of the four-position foundation, and perfection of the four-position foundation is perfection of the ideal of true love. As this was lost due to the Fall, what must we do in order to go back?

We must restore the right of the first son, the right of the parents, the right of kingship, and the right of the royal family. By living in that way, we must establish the original standard based upon which we can enter heaven. This is the mainstream of the providential history of the Unification Church. Although the providence of creation should have been the mainstream, due to the Fall, the providence of restoration became the mainstream. (247-143, 1993.5.1)

1.5. Building the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven

1.5.1. The starting point for the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven is the family

Adam's family should have created a family of true love that was one with God's ideal. Adam and Eve, our first ancestors, were created in the expectation that they would convey God's will and love to the universe after becoming perfect as the substantial manifestations of God's invisible characteristics. Adam, Eve, and their children would have established the fundamental principle in their lives that all humanity could follow. Adam and Eve's descendants were to attain unity of their minds and bodies, and thus become individuals who were one with God, couples united in families, and families with unity between the parents and the children. In that way, they would have created a stable foundation that is full of freedom, peace, happiness, and hope throughout the earth. God's ideal was that this model would not stay in the family or nation but spread out to the world and the entire universe. The model of the Kingdom of Heaven realized in the family can spread out to the entire nation; the Kingdom of Heaven in the realm of a nation can spread out to the entire world; and the Kingdom of Heaven in the global realm can spread out to all of heaven and earth. (288-167, 1997.11.27)

A person's fundamental heart and character is formed in the family. The

family is the starting point of love, character, and life. It is the fundamental basis. We start our lives as children who are born on a family foundation through the love of our parents, and we are meant to grow to be husbands and wives, and then parents and grandparents, and perfect ourselves as beings of loving character that pass through all the different levels. Ultimately, we go to the spirit world surrounded by the love and affection of our descendants. That is the principle of creation. Through families, history and nations come into existence and the ideal world begins. Without this, there is no meaning to life as an individual, and there is no continuation of the bloodline to other generations. Therefore, the family is the fundamental base for human love and life which are more precious than and are superior to all values, ideologies, systems and organizations. (288-167, 1997.11.27)

Through your life on earth in which you welcome and attend God and live together with True Parents centering eternally on the family, you can go beyond being a family on earth and become a family of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven, and everyone can enter the unified world. Therefore, God must be able to live in your families. You must create the family of Eden where God wants to live. Because God could not dwell in Adam and Eve's family, you must attend God and live together with Him in your families.

Your clans must attend God as tribal messiahs. Your nations must live in attendance of God. Your world must live in attendance of God, and heaven and earth must attend God. So the family is the starting base that can attend and live together with God. You have to know that the family is the starting base of the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven. (270-103, 1995.5.7)

Since God is the essence of true love, if we become connected to true love, we all become one body with Him. As representatives of God, our parents are the living God. Our husband or wife is the other half of God. Our sons and daughters are also small Gods. In this way, a family structure comprising three generations centering on true love is the foundation of the Kingdom of Heaven. Without such a foundation, the Kingdom of Heaven cannot be built. Families are the center of the universe. The perfection of families is the foundation for the perfection of the universe. That is why if you love the universe as you love within your family, you can freely go anywhere. In this case, God is in the conglomerate central position of love, as the Parent of the entire universe. (298-306, 1999.1.17)

Once you become one centered on God, circular motion manifests in all kinds of forms and figures. That is why the older sibling must love the younger, following the example of their parents loving the children. In a family that is united into one in love in that way, the love within the family blossoms. That love can become the love for a society,

and then that love can become the love for a nation. In this way, it later becomes love for the entire world. However, these days, this has become so obscure. (28-170, 1970.1.11)

What would God have done for Adam and Eve had they not fallen? God would have married them through the Blessing, so that they could have borne children and created a family that would bring joy to God. Then He would have expanded this to create a tribe and a people. When this had developed further, upon what philosophy would that world have been based? It would have been a world based simultaneously on Godism and on the Adam-centered ideology. If that world had had an ideology, it would have been the Adam-centered ideology, the Way of Adam. If there had been a concept of the universe, it would have been the concept of the universe based on the Way of Adam. If there had been a concept of the cosmos, it would have been based on the Way of Adam, and the outlook on life would have been based on the Way of Adam.

The five races of humankind would have made a colorful world, and people would have thought that was fine. Since the differences occurred depending on the environment, the different skin colors of the numerous races would have been fine with everyone. Then, how did the languages of all the many nations become different? Due to the Fall of our first ancestors, God separated the people. (156-202, 1966.5.25)

The family is the horizontal foundation that is a microcosm of the world. From the family stem the nation and the world. What is the family? As the horizontal microcosm of the world, the family is the reciprocal standard to the absolute center. Then what are we? We are the footholds where the absolute center can reside. (26-258, 1969.11.9)

A nation's citizens and all humankind come into being from brothers and sisters. Siblings represent the front and back, but that becomes the flesh. This is flat and then becomes fleshed out, and from there a sphere is formed. The round shape is formed by the siblings and the citizens. The siblings expand to become the citizens of a nation. That is why brotherly love leads to love for the world. A family that raises many siblings is like a model that embraces the people of the world and creates the ideal heaven – the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven. Consequently, siblings expand in number from here. (235-268, 1992.10.11)

What kind of family are we talking about? God is in the position of the grandfather. Adam represents the family of the present, and his sons and daughters represent the future. God symbolizes the past; mother and father symbolize the present, and their children, the future. Centering on this idea of love, the four realms of heart and the three kingships must develop in the family. What happens once the heart is perfected? God can appear on earth and man-

age the family in the position of Grandfather, and He can work to perfect the unified Kingdom of God in heaven and on earth. Then the sons and daughters who have multiplied are connected as the inheritors of these two kingdoms. (236-259, 1992.11.8)

The family is the model for the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven. There are four different generations formed by the grandmother and grandfather, the mother and father, the couple, and the babies. If this can be expanded, in each nation of the world there will be the same four generations of a grandmother and grandfather, a mother and father, one's own couple, and the babies. Individuals must make sacrifices for their families, families for their tribes, tribes for their peoples, peoples for their nations, and nations for the world. Based on the principle that one should sacrifice for something greater, when one goes to another country, he must lift up their people more than his own grandmother and grandfather, mother and father, couple, and children; and he must lift up the their people more than his own nation's people in front of the global nation. If one does so, one can go anywhere in the Kingdom of Heaven through perfecting oneself at the place that is one with the original palace of heaven. (252-265, 1994.1.1)

You must love the people of the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven. They are your brothers and sisters. The three loves begin from there. The kind of model of siblings being able to love one another is the axis of the heavenly kingdom. It is an axis for the construction of the ideal Kingdom of Heaven. It is the axis on earth. It also becomes the axis of the heavenly world. If the heavenly kingdom is expanded through the give and take between the earthly realms and the heavenly realms, heaven will develop. The reason that God created human beings was that He wanted the ideal structure of horizontal and vertical. God needed children because the spherical form centered on front and back, which is a horizontal relationship, had to be established. That is the reason God created His children. (219-168, 1991.8.29)

Centering on God, the Kingdom of God on earth and the Kingdom of God in heaven will be unified. Cain and Abel become one horizontally centering on God and True Parents who are in a vertical line. Because God created the Kingdom of God on earth and the Kingdom of God in heaven out of love, they should become one in love. Moreover, subject and object partners centering on God's original ideal will unite into one centering on the ideal of love. This universe, the created world, began from love. That is why even God has to be in oneness centered on love. The core essence that corresponds with the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven is love. (243-323, 1993.1.28)

The perfection of a person occurs when mind and body are united into one eternally centering on true love. When

such a man and woman establish the eternal bond of love as a husband and wife, the parents that they become are true parents. Because the history centering on such parents continues on from those ancestors without change for thousands and thousands of years, it is carried out vertically and then expands horizontally. The world that emerges becomes the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven. That is where the unity of heaven and earth is achieved. (207-58, 1990.10.28)

What is surprising about the principles of the Unification Church? Until now people have not known the theoretical basis of how the Kingdom of God on earth and the Kingdom of God in heaven can become one. This would have begun with Adam and Eve centering on true love. God represents the inner nature of Adam, and Adam represents the outer nature of God. They are to become one. That is why God's love started together with Adam. One was a vertical beginning, and the other was a horizontal beginning. Logically speaking, that is perfectly correct.

That is how the Kingdom of God on earth and the Kingdom of God in heaven become one. A logical explanation is possible. The theology of the established Christian church cannot explain it. They believe that the Creator is holy and all His creatures profane. If that were the case, how could a theory of love be established? Right away there is a problem. Can God do whatever He wants to do, as the Christian theologians insist? No. There are things God cannot do as He wants. Even God cannot do whatever He wants in relation to love. (226-169, 1992.2.4)

A family is an encapsulation of all the men and women of humankind. By "humankind," we mean men and women. A family is the seed that can expand to every level. A seed can multiply into a family. The family can multiply to become more families. These families join together and expand their numbers, and form tribes, peoples, nations, the world, and heaven and earth. (273-48, 1995.10.21)

The family is like a railway locomotive. When it runs toward its destination, passing through tunnels on the way, your nation and the world hanging on at the end can automatically arrive in the Kingdom of Heaven. (269-291, 1995.5.1)

1.5.2. Building the Kingdom of Heaven is the mission of Blessed Families

Number one of the Family Pledge is about the restitution of the environment. We must restore through indemnity everything that was lost. Until now, religions have asked people to leave home and to live celibate lives. However, the Unification Church instructs people to return to their hometowns, to their nations. A remarkable thing has occurred globally. There can be no higher happiness than this in the religious world. This is not just idle talk. (269-105, 1995.4.9)

After we "seek our original homeland," what comes next? We must build the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven. Because Adam and Eve were driven out, they lost everything, didn't they? After you find it, what should you do? You must build the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven. You must create it. Because it was lost, we must recreate it all. We must find and rebuild the things that were stolen, even if it takes thousands or tens of thousands of years. That is why the Unification Church has asked you to return to your hometown. This is something unprecedented in the religious world. (288-323, 1998.1.1)

Because Adam and Eve lost the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, if we do not restore it, God will not be able to, either. The devil has a strong desire to destroy it. We must restore the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven. The Family Pledge says, "seek our original homeland." In the religious world, people were all commanded to leave their homes and lead celibate lives. However, the Unification Church is the opposite: it says to return to one's hometown; to go back to one's hometown. The message of returning to one's hometown is the best news of all good news that has never been heard in the history of religion. This is the one-time only, joyful news of all joyful news. (264-187, 1994.10.9)

How happy God, True Parents, and Blessed Families will be with the proclamation of the Family Pledge! "Seek our original homeland!" This earth is the original homeland. It means completing the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation, in our original homeland. Through what? Through love. All have followed the path of love that can return to the original homeland. We are to re-create that by seeking and restoring the original love within fallen people. (297-209, 1998.11.20)

People who have lived on earth as a unified family centering on God's true love, where the Kingdom of God on earth and the Kingdom of God in heaven are one, move to become a family of the heavenly kingdom. This is not the age of individual salvation. Christianity talks about the salvation of the individual, but that is not it. God's will is family salvation. Because the Fall happened in the family, restoration must occur in the family. That time has come. This has not happened on earth in all of history. Finally, the family has entered the settlement age anew. (260-304, 1994.5.19)

You must know that being able to recite the Family Pledge is the best news of all good news in all of history. That is why we say "Our family." The words "Our family" are there. "Our family... centering on our original homeland… centering on true love…" That is the original homeland where you were born. The land of one's hometown is the most precious. "Our family… pledges to… build the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation." The ideal of creation refers to the ideal

of creation centering on God. It was the ideal of creation that was to establish the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven. Since the ideal of creation could not be attained due to the Fall, we must restore it. We must build the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation, centering on our original homeland. (260-188, 1994.5.8)

You must build the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation. That is to say, because the family was lost, our families must restore that. The original homeland is the original homeland centering on families. It is not to a nation but to your hometown to which you must therefore return.

If you have such a family, you must go back to your hometown and establish God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. Once you restore your hometown, the nation and world will naturally come into oneness. There will be no need for you to worry. The heavenly kingdom on earth and in heaven will be naturally built. This will develop from within the family. (260-156, 1994.5.2)

"Our family pledges... to build the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation." Here we say, "build." Why do we use the word "build" here? It is because we must create this anew. It will not come about by itself. We must make it. As hell on earth and hell in the spirit world have come about, we must work to re-create the Kingdom of God. "Our family… pledges to seek our original homeland and build the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation." We must make this. Even for the individual, the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven is to be established through a family. Because we must create it in our families, we have the Family Pledge. If we cannot do this, it will not come about. This is something we ourselves must do. (260-304, 1994.5.19)

Pledge number one of the Family Pledge is about returning to our hometown. That means returning to our hometown environment. That is why the pledge says, "seek our original homeland and build the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, the original ideal of creation." It was lost, wasn't it? Who will create it? Even if God does not do it, we will. I must do it! Adam's family must do it. Because the Blessed Couples could not do it, I have already laid the foundation myself. If you do not receive opposition, with these teachings and this content it is automatic that, wherever you go, you can become the leader. Everywhere you go, open your mouths and speak. Go around your neighborhood, wake people up and gather them together. If they will not gather, however, then even if you have to chase them with a rolling pin, even if you need to use force, you must gather them and speak to them for half an hour, one hour, two hours. Tell them to go ahead and oppose you if you say something wrong. In the end, they will thank you for it. With that kind of absolute authority, even if you push them one-sidedly, we have already cre-

ated the circumstances where there will be no negative reactions. If you see this clearly and yet cannot act on what you see, you are foolish. Such foolish people will have their positions taken away by beggars and end up like servants. (283-75, 1997.4.8)

What is our sincere, unchanging heart? It is to seek for our lost original homeland, to establish the original native land. These days, people are talking about rebuilding, aren't they? Rebuilding means tearing apart that which already exists and making it anew.

The Unification Church does not want to rebuild, but to create. We do not have any resources. We have only our bare hands. Do we have an original homeland? Do we have an original home nation? No. Because we have neither of these, we must create them. With what materials can we create them? Your hands, your bodies, and your bones are the materials. When you really put your bodies into it, grinding down your bones and investing your flesh and blood, the treasures of the world will fly to you. Through that, we will be able to purchase materials. (155-53, 1964.10.6)

Having the Family Pledge is something to be grateful for. It is telling religious people who have been wandering around on foreign soil to return home, to go back to their hometown. How wonderful it is to be able to return home! These are unforgettable words. (283-77, 1997.4.8)

1.5.3. The return to one's hometown and the completion of the tribal messiah mission

You must go beyond the individual Golgotha, the family Golgotha, and Golgotha on the tribal, people, and national levels, and then move toward the worldwide Golgotha. God does not want to stand us in front of Him and then go forward. Instead, God has stood in the forefront up to now. He has pioneered the path we are to walk and then has called us to come. If you are unable to walk this path, you will perish. You are bound to perish. Even if you should die thousands or ten thousands of times, you must go this path. On the day that the original homeland is created by the hands of Koreans, the people of the world will look up to us as the people of the homeland.

We are continuing on, even today, toward the garden God desires to see. We have joined together to prepare to continue on our way to that garden tomorrow. Therefore, you must clearly know that going this way by offering our strength and sincere dedication, and considering it more precious than anything in the world, is the purpose of our lives that we received at birth. (155-53, 1964.10.6)

You must go back to your hometown. You have all been driven out. Because you were forced to leave your hometown, you must restore it and return. You can seek it out as a perfected family. What should you do once you find your orig-

inal homeland? You are not supposed just to live there. You must restore and build up the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven that was lost.

Because Satan dominates your homeland, you must build the heavenly kingdom yourselves. Why do you have to do it? Because True Parents want to bequeath to you all that they have achieved. True Parents have come, and on the worldwide level they have found and restored the original hometown, which was lost in Adam's family, and they have laid the foundation to complete the heavenly kingdom on earth and in heaven. Because I have laid the worldwide foundation, you must lay the tribal-level foundation. (266-144, 1994.12.22)

Why should you fulfill your responsibility as tribal messiahs? The first reason is that you need to save your parents. Your parents stand in the position of the first Adam, and you stand in the position of the second Adam. You must fulfill the mission of Adam by restoring and recreating your parents.

The second reason is that you need a hometown. By fulfilling your mission as tribal messiahs, you will come to have your own hometown. In the end, the reason you need to fulfill your responsibility as tribal messiahs is to perfect Adam's family. In concrete terms, you need to educate your tribes. (217-126,127, 1991.5.12)

If there are no tribal messiahs, connections between all the levels cannot be made based on the family standard. Without this, you cannot have your hometown. I have my own hometown, but you do not have one. After we restore the families, in the future the age of registration will come. Once the age of registration comes, I will organize the tribes. The order in which you register will determine your position. Those who register first will be the elders and a new system will be developed so that they can be attended in the same manner as you attend your ancestors. Only when the whole world is transformed accordingly will the heavenly kingdom on earth be realized. (210-273, 1990.12.25)

The members of the Unification Church comprise a tribe. Our blood is connected. If one cries, others must also cry. If one feels joy, others must share in that joy. We are related by blood. We are one people. We have gathered as one, transcended the five races of humankind, transcended the different national standards with different cultural backgrounds, and broken down all these barriers. We will create the new heavenly kingdom. When this people becomes a holy people, the heavenly kingdom can appear, and when you live as the divine sons and daughters of that nation, the heavenly world will be established. On the foundation of that world, the cosmic Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven will be built. (168-136, 1987.9.13)

I have given you the title of messiah. Tribal messiahs! What should you do now? What should you do as messiahs? I have prepared the foundation for you to be national messiahs, worldwide mes-

siahs, and cosmic messiahs. I have prepared mountains of treasures for you.

Once you become messiahs, every part of this mountain of treasures will be bequeathed to you. A water pipe will be connected between the treasures and you, and they will flow down the pipe right into your laps as naturally as if they were flowing water. (189-247, 1989.4.9)

You should know that people who have lived in the Kingdom of God on earth go into the eternal heavenly kingdom in spirit world when they enter there, and you should think about how to unite with that place. From now on, there is no need to think of anything else. Each of you should know that you are at the final destination point where you can fulfill and solve all these matters; the question remaining is how you can accomplish this.

For each individual, it is the issue of mind and body. In each family, it is the issue of husband and wife, and if there are children from the parents, that is an issue of an upper and lower relationship. You must understand that this is the title of perfection that has connected your entire family together. You should also clearly know that if any one of you leans to one side, everyone will become unbalanced. (298-53, 1999.1.1)

What does it mean to say that the Last Days have come? It means that the day when the human race can find its original homeland has come closer. It means that the time is near when people who can live in the original homeland can establish their historic fatherland.

Because of that, Jesus, who came with the ideal of founding something, was given the title of King of kings. That is rather strange isn't it? Why was such a title given to him? This is not a lie; it is the truth. Without a motive, no result can come. If you investigate a result closely, you will absolutely find that there is a motive. However, that motive is something human beings cannot know. God is moving everything. (155-32, 1964.10.6)

I would like to be able to make all the young men and women of the Unification Church today into people who can go out in every direction. I must raise up people who could fulfill their roles no matter what position they were given, should the nation meet with an urgent situation.

If you just want to live quietly as a farmer and till the soil, what would it matter if you died? Why would you do that? Even if you have to sell your land, if you go away even for just a short time before returning to your hometown, you will accomplish things your neighbors cannot even imagine. They will come to know ten or twenty years later. That is how we work. We are the people who prepare ourselves to do extraordinary things others cannot do. Let's go! Let's go! Hurry. Let's go to our original homeland. Let's go to our original homeland! Let's do it! Let's do it! Let's hurry up and do witnessing! Let's fight with all our might! Let's do it! Let's do it! Let's hur-

ry up and do it! Let's unite our hearts together and do what? Let's accomplish the true will. (155-51, 1964.10.6)

We should go forward today and tomorrow. As the one who is leading you, I have been beaten severely in the cause of walking this path. I have been imprisoned several times. If you count all my years in the prison, how many do you think it will be? I have been imprisoned. I have been beaten until I vomited blood. Amid sorrow and persecution, and in various ways, I have been treated with contempt and placed in miserable situations. I came to understand the sorrowful heart of my parents, of my relatives, of the nation and its people, and of numerous religions.

However, as I knew that the path I was walking was greater and more precious than these problems, I could not dwell on them. Since I have come this far today, I have to continue on tomorrow; and if I continue on tomorrow, I will have to keep going the day after tomorrow. If I continue this path for the present year, I will have to continue next year. If I have walked this path for ten years, twenty years, forty years, I must continue on to the last day of my life because the original homeland that I must reach still remains to be achieved. What kind of place is the original homeland? It is the place where everyone wants to go, and once there, everyone wants to meet others and to live there.

You need to know that this path is far more precious than all the things of this world and your surroundings. It is more serious than anything else; therefore, you are fated to abandon everything in order to continue. This is the Unification path that we are going. You must understand that it is the path of your teacher. You must walk this path until the end of your lives. (155-53, 1964.10.6)

You must build a family that has established the ideal family of beauty as the final destination. You should build a family that attends God and that God and True Parents never want to leave once they have come. It is our responsibility to establish model families in which the leaders of all peoples, direct sons and daughters of True Parents in the heavenly kingdom, or any royal families of the heavenly nation would want to live. You must clearly understand that God is proposing this to you as a pressing task in the present time! You must accomplish this! Become responsible central figures! In this way, the beginning of the heavenly kingdom on earth and of the eternal families that God desires will be accomplished. (298-54, 1999.1.1)

Section 2. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Two

Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth by attending God and True Parents; we pledge to perfect the dutiful family way of filial sons and daughters in our family, patriots in our nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth, by centering on true love.

2.1. Our family pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth

2.1.1. Adam's family is the representative and central family

"Our family…attending God and True Parents…by centering on true love." You must attend God and True Parents. However, because Eve fell, God and True Parents were driven out of Adam's family. You must attend God and True Parents. God is the vertical Parent and perfected Adam and Eve are the horizontal parents. On the foundation of these two parents having become one, you achieve unity and are connected to God and to heaven. For this reason, nothing can be accomplished unless you attend God and True Parents. So, through becoming one with God and True Parents, you can create a family representing heaven and earth. That family holds a higher position than that held by Adam and Eve before the Fall. (260-189, 1994.5.8)

Adam's position is the pinnacle position, representing the past and the present of all humankind. He is at the zenith of all the human ancestors going back millions of years. In the beginning, there was only one. Adam and Eve should have married at that zenith, settling as the central family on earth, a family that was to expand out into the world. In that position, they should have become filial sons and daughters, patriots and saints in the heavenly nation, and fulfilled the way of divine sons and daughters in that nation. But Adam could not accomplish this. (264-187, 1994.10.9)

What is pledge number two? "Our family… pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth by attending God and True Parents; we pledge to perfect the dutiful family way of filial sons and daughters in our family, patriots in our nation, …by centering on true love," and so on. What does this mean? Adam and Eve were to be the central family and the representative family in heaven and on earth. There is only one representative family. The center is one. That is the seed. Adam and Eve were to be the seed of the blessed, married families. All the seeds of that family are equal. Your families should be the same. (263-60, 1994.8.16)

By going the path of upholding true love absolutely, Adam and Eve were to have passed smoothly and directly from the family to the nation, the world, and to heaven. The ideological viewpoints from history up to the present day do not include such an understanding. Everything has followed a meandering path upward. Centering on eternally unbreakable love, you must go forward in accordance with the ideal of the expansion of a unified family. The family model does not change. It is the representative and central family. (283-75, 1997.4.8)

If Adam's family had not fallen, but had reached perfection, it would have been the representative family in the history of heaven and earth. It would

have been the representative and central family. As in the second pledge of the Family Pledge, Adam's family should have been both the central family and representative family at the same time. Adam and Eve were to go up in front of God at the zenith, and the three were to become one. (269-80, 1995.4.8)

Adam and Eve are the center of all of heaven and earth. They are the family standing on behalf of all humankind. It all develops from this point. A nation's president has a family. The president of the world has a family. God also has a family. It is all the same; only one standard will apply if this expands through the eight stages because its domain is the whole world. It will grow and become one axis. It can be one centering on the axis which is the family. Because the individual represents this family axis, each person stands in a unique position in the world. That is why everyone wants to become a prince or princess.

Our aspiration is to capture God, and through our becoming God's highest partners as the best men and women on earth, God and everything that he created simultaneously become ours. Through love, everything is brought into oneness and the right of possession is determined. These are amazing words. (273-282, 1995.10.29)

You need to fulfill the paths of filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters based on love. Your family represents Adam and Eve. It is the pinnacle family. If you are blessed in marriage at the highest point, you can then settle down on earth. Once you settle down centering on the love of heaven, you become a central family. That family would be one of divine sons and daughters, saints, patriots, and filial sons and daughters. That family would be the seed that would eternally multiply as fruit. By becoming people who base their lives on this principle over thousands of generations to come, you will surely become the citizens of the Kingdom of God. (263-148, 1994.8.21)

From the starting point of Adam and Eve's family, a tribe is to grow up around them. The family is the main point. It is the nucleus. The nucleus cannot move. Centered on such a family, we must have the place that is able to liberate the tribes, peoples, nations, world, universe, and God. Your family must be able to dwell together with God. If your family has the family values that allow God to live together with your family and that allow Him to live with the tribes, nations, world, heaven, and earth, only then is your family fully qualified to enter heaven. Adam's family is the representative family of the world's families. It is to reach the position of being the representative family of all the world's families even though it will take time to realize this in the future. Following the principle of restoration through indemnity, today we stand in the position of representing the world. (263-204, 1994.10.4)

Adam's family was the representative family. As God exists at the very pinna-

cle, his family should have reached the pinnacle as well. They were to reach the highest position of unity as plus and minus, with God at the center. His family was to be the representative family. With this connection made, it would have expanded throughout the generations of the future.

The families, tribes, peoples, nations, world, and the cosmos – heaven and earth – are to be planted in this central area and connected to this center. They are representative families, but they should be planted on the earth. For this reason, they become central families on the horizontal plane. There are eight stages. The family is the center of the entire universe. If this kind of seed is planted, from there a family, tribe, people, nation, and the world can grow. All of these have the same value as the seed. (261-317, 1994.7.24)

In Adam's family, the seed blessed by Heaven that was given to Adam and Eve is the seed of marriage. The seed of marriage being thus, when people have families as families of the world, whether that seed is of Adam's family, or whether it is the seed of thousands of generations of descendants, these descendants are equal as they are the fruits that have been harvested from that seed. The seeds cannot be different in quality. If the seeds of a pine tree are spread around the world, from those millions of pine trees billions of seeds will come. Each of those has the same value as the one seed, and they must be able to grow into pine trees. (273-282, 1995.10.29)

2.1.2. Blessed families have the same value as the original family

Adam's family stands in a representative and central position. For that reason, you must have the concept that your couple is the representative family of all of the world's people, and the central family of the world. That is the way the sons and daughters of God should be, isn't it? Because you are families that will enter the heavenly kingdom, you must be like that. Therefore, Blessed Families must know the Family Pledge in order to enter Adam's family. (265-253, 1994.11.23)

The blessing is the criterion that connects people to God's love that is original and untainted by the Fall. Therefore, Blessed Families must have the same value as Adam and Eve's family that has not fallen. They have to achieve this in order to become the same seed. When a couple has three children, God would treat each one of them equally. No matter how families expand, each one has the same value as Adam's family. They should all have the value of the same seed. (263-196, 1994.10.4)

Blessed families are families representing the world both in name and in reality. Therefore, it is absolutely true that as the families representing the world, the Blessed Families must without fail become families who represent God, who have nothing to be ashamed of before the lineage of True Parents and before the lineages of the many people in the tribes, peoples, and nations. This is

the meaning of Blessed Families being representative and central families. Therefore, Adam and Eve's family and our families have the same value. That is the conclusion. Therefore, you cannot live a certain way in one place and a different way somewhere else. (263-204, 1994.10.4)

Pledge number two mentions a representative family. What is a representative family? It has only two people, Adam and Eve. There are God and just two people, Adam and Eve. It is the best position in heaven and on earth and a representative position. You are in the position of being a representative, and by getting married you settle down on the earth. Why? It is because you must multiply by having sons and daughters. The representative family is the central family. A family consists of two people: not two men, nor two women; it is a man and a woman as a couple. A unified man and woman standing in front of God in a representative position are the same as Adam and Eve. Therefore, if Adam's family is a seed, then our families are also seeds. Pine tree seeds have the same everlasting value wherever they go. They carry the same value, equal value. In other words, wherever you plant the seed, a pine tree will grow. Therefore, the marriage ceremonies I am holding for you these days are on the global level. (273-48, 1995.10.21)

If you are of the Kim clan in Korea, you are not blessed as the son or daughter of the Kim clan. You are blessed in the same position as Adam and Eve who were direct descendants of God prior to the Fall. What does that mean? It means that centering on that family, the family represents all families. Adam's family represents all families. Tribes and clans are to connect to one point, Adam's family, and grow into the world. Merging these into one, this will develop into a sphere and circle centering on that one point. In the same way, as you have received the position of the original seed like Adam who is the central person, you must keep the same value for each of the tribes, peoples, nations, and world that Adam wanted to establish even though they are on different levels. (263-196, 1994.10.4)

The family of True Parents is the seed. If it is the perfect seed, even if there are billions of families that have multiplied from that seed, they have the same value. They are equal. Since the families in which God can settle will receive recognition of having the same value even after thousands, ten thousands, or even hundred millions of generations pass, those seeds are equal. That is why our families are representative families. Our families represent Korea.

Pledge number two of the Family Pledge reads, "Our family…pledges to represent and become central to heaven and earth by attending God and True Parents... by centering on true love." The representative family stands at the pinnacle. And then it becomes a central family. When this family is con-

nected horizontally and vertically, it occupies the position that connects the vertical and the horizontal. Your families are representative and central families. When your family becomes such a family, the entire universe can be yours. (282-319, 1997.4.7)

You must think about the fact that your families are to "represent and become central to heaven and earth." You should not think that your Blessed Family is just one family among the five billion people of the human race. The opposite is the case. Your family represents all five billion of humankind. Because what started from two, Adam and Eve, was lost, men and women are to be recommended as representative families from throughout the world and selected from the whole one by one and joined together in marriage. If we push down on a representative family that is up on the pinnacle above the earth, it becomes a central family. Therefore, it means that through becoming a central family, all the sorrowful pain of filial sons and daughters in the family, of patriots in the nation, of saints in the world, of divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth, and of Jesus, has been resolved. I have achieved precisely that and now am bequeathing it to you. So, all you have to do is follow me and take charge of these matters. (267-148, 1995.1.4)

When you get married, you must not think that you are getting married simply as one man and one woman. You must think of your family as representing all of humankind. Couples who are tied through true love are tied together as representatives of all humanity. This means they are in the same position as Adam and Eve. There are eight stages. One, two, three, four, five, six, seven, and eight; eight stages. Adam and Eve are at the pinnacle. All these eight stages are developing through inheriting the tradition of Adam and Eve. This is kingship. (266-145, 1994.12.22)

Adam and Eve's family is the central and representative family of heaven and earth. There is only one representative family. And there is only one central family. That is the seed, the seed of the family of Adam and Eve that is blessed in marriage. The seeds of such families are all equal. Your families must also be the same. (263-60, 1994.8.16)

As restored families, do the Blessed Families have the same value as Adam's family or are they different? If you go home, your family home is your palace. It is the palace of your tribe, the palace of your nation, the palace of the world, and the palace of heaven and earth. If you ask any man, he will say he wants to be a king, and if you ask any woman she will say she wants to be a queen. Isn't that right? What on earth does that mean? Originally, Adam and Eve were to be king and queen.

They were to represent the world and the universe, not only families. This means they were to have been king and queen. That means the seed. You are the fruits. Fruits come from the same seed.

They have the same value. The following is in the same context. Do you think any man and woman we bring together in marriage can become like Adam and Eve who have not fallen and become the base of the kingdom in the family, in the nation, and in the heavenly kingdom in heaven and on earth? If those who have been blessed by True Parents in the Unification Church do not have such value equally, they will be struck by lightning. (261-317, 1994.7.24)

Families that have centered themselves on True Parents can enter into the realm of God's direct lineage, centering on God's love. Blessed families are the historical fruits of the True Parents in this world. Blessed families are on the world level. They received the blessing on the global plane. There are numerous nations, tribes, families, and individuals under them. The order has been reversed. Blessed families represent these levels. Therefore, if Adam's family realizes a unified world through perfecting a family on the worldwide level, the value that your family attains is the same. That is the seed. It is the world-level seed. (263-206, 1994.10.4)

As I have become a filial son in God's family, a patriot in the nation, a saint in the world, and a divine son in heaven and earth, you must inherit this tradition from me. Otherwise, you cannot become central and representative families. The representative Adam's family is the center of all families and the center of heaven and earth. That center is one. The representative is the zenith, and the center is on the perpendicular. If we push down on the eight stages, the families, tribes, peoples, and so on, they will form a circle. (263-60, 1994.8.16)

Who is the direct ancestor of the realm of the royal family? He is the person who is centered on the foundation of true life and true lineage based on original love and on true love, as God's direct son who has not fallen. That person is the seed. The root emerging from the seed is the main root. It will grow into the main trunk, branches, and buds. As it grows vertically it will also grow outwards in proportion. This will join the families and the tribes, and also the peoples, the nations, and the world together.

The branches that grow out of the true root, true trunk, and true buds are also branches of true love. Therefore, the fruits that these branches bear have the same value as Adam's original family.

When the original seed that can become the original root, original trunk, and original bud comes out as the fruit, if that fruit – a couple that centers on a family – is planted, it can grow into a new central root, central trunk, and central bud of the clan, based on the clan. That is why the fruit has the same value as the original. (263-194, 1994.10.4)

Our Unification Church members should think, as Adam and Eve did, "I stand here on behalf of heaven and earth." You should think that your families represent all the nations and the world horizontally, at the same time as

you represent the universe. Your families are representatives, vertically, and representative central families, horizontally. They are the highest representative families. They are also the center of the horizontal world on earth. With such a heart, you can enter the heavenly kingdom and live as members of the royal family attending God and the king. You should know that place is the Kingdom of God in heaven. (261-317, 1994.7.24)

You should become the representative and central families attending God and True Parents. Your family must determine to fulfill the way of filial sons and daughters in the family, patriots and virtuous women in the nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth, and everything Heaven desires. That means that we should determine to become those qualified as the people and the family members of the heavenly kingdom in the world and in heaven and earth through educating our children and through educating the people in our nation. (260-189, 1994.5.8)

From ancient times, regardless of the time and place in which they have lived, all people have wanted to become a central person. This is human nature. We all know that everyone has that common desire.

Then how is it that people have such a desire? It is not something one acquires after birth. Everyone has it from the outset; we are born like this, and this is the only way we can be. That desire is connected to humankind through the historical nature of the original standard. As no one can avoid that, everyone without exception wants to be the best. (226-7, 1992.2.1)

2.2. Perfect the dutiful family way of filial sons and daughters in our family, patriots in our nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth

2.2.1. The path of filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters that we must inevitably go

What kind of people are filial sons and daughters in the family? Filial sons and daughters are those who want to love their parents no matter how much they sacrifice their minds and bodies for them and then still love them even beyond that. What is a patriot? It is someone who sacrifices himself for the nation again and again without caring about his own well being, and who invests and forgets about how much he has invested for the nation. Such a person is a genuine patriot. If there is a man who invests ten times for his nation and forgets about his investment and a man who invests eleven times and forgets about his investment, the one who has invested and forgotten eleven times is in the subject position. Following this principle, everything can be settled in peace. Without love and without the path of living for the sake of others, there is no way to achieve this. (255-190, 1994.3.10)

The family needs filial sons and daughters. A son of filial piety is one who is absolutely one with his parents. A nation's patriots must become absolutely one with the central person of that nation. This is the reality of the universe. There are saints in the world, and people want to become absolutely one with them. Beyond that, throughout heaven and earth people want to become absolutely one with God, who is the center. (262-128, 1994.7.23)

Filial piety wants to follow filial sons and daughters. Although those devoted sons and daughters become old, they follow their heart for their parents, and even their descendants in the future and all their brothers and sisters want to entrust matters to them. We will determine to establish families and a world that move toward God and that God wants. Who will do it? Each of us! Even if it cannot be achieved, if we know God as a God of heart who can entrust us with things to do and support us, and if we have conviction, we cannot come to ruin. (263-170, 1994.8.23)

Because God wants his partner in love to be better than Himself, that partner can go up to the position where he can tell God what to do. If a devoted son asks his mother and father to come, will they go to the son or not? They will. It is the path of devoted filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters to have to do new things, whatever they may be. (263-183, 1994.8.23)

As it says in the second pledge, you should be filial sons and daughters in your family and patriots – that is, loyal citizens – in the nation. The filial sons and daughters are not the ones in the satanic world on earth. They are the ones who have appeared for the first time, having never existed in history.

God is in grief and sorrow over the loss of Adam's family. That is why God has struggled to find the True Parents. Therefore, you must understand how precious True Parents are. (263-204, 1994.8.21)

Those who live investing their entire life for their parents and then forget what they have invested are called true filial sons and daughters. A true filial son or daughter means that one is the truest among them all.

It is the same in nations; if someone aspires to become a loyal subject or patriot in front of the nation's ruler, he can be called a true patriot when he invests, invests again, even invests his very life, and then forgets what he has invested. Thus, a divine son or daughter is the one who can invest and invest his or her life again for the world, and those who invest even more and still want to invest more are called the most divine of all divine sons and daughters. That is how it is. (263-275, 1994.10.15)

Will a wife feel happy or unhappy if her husband is absolutely obedient in front of his wife's love? She will be absolutely happy. If the wife is also like that, her husband will be absolutely

happy. Those who are absolutely obedient in front of the love of their parents are filial sons and daughters. Those who have the same heart for the sake of the nation are known as patriots. Those who have the same heart for the world are known as saints, and those who can have the same heart for heaven and earth are divine sons and daughters! Amen. All of this is our textbook, material for our education! A…la, la, la, even your tongue dances, the flesh and skin of your stomach, and your stomach too, all dance saying, "A-men"! "Men" means "people." When you say "Amen!" think that it means "Ah! Amazing people." Say "Amen" thinking about this meaning. Do you understand? (264-140, 1994.10.9)

No matter how difficult, you should think it is proper and natural to smooth out the path and go the way of filial sons and daughters, of patriots, of saints, and divine sons and daughters. You need the conviction to do so. You must have the mind to go the way of filial piety even if you sacrifice yourself for your parents and, in the family, even if you sacrifice not only yourself but your wife as well. When filial sons and daughters and parents together resolve to sacrifice even the parents to save the nation, they stand as patriots. Furthermore, if those patriots resolve to save the world and so sacrifice even their nation, they complete the path of a saint. That is the ideal of creation Adam was to have fulfilled. You must become filial sons and daughters, patriots, and saints, and willingly determine to fulfill the way of divine sons and daughters even if it means sacrificing all the members of your family. (266-105, 1994.12.18)

In a family, those sons and daughters who have made greater sacrifices than other children are known as filial sons and daughters. Those who have invested more for the sake of the nation than other tribes or citizens are known as patriots. Saints are those who have invested more than others for the sake of the world. Someone who has invested for the sake of heaven and earth can become a heavenly prince like Jesus Christ. If you do not live that way, you cannot go to the heavenly kingdom. The heavenly kingdom is where people go who have lived that way. If you do not live in such a way, you cannot enter the heavenly kingdom.

You do not work here just to make a living or to succeed in the worldly sense. You have gathered here to become the people of the heavenly kingdom, to fulfill the way of filial sons and daughters, patriots and virtuous women, saints, and divine sons and daughters of the heavenly kingdom. You need to know that the people and members of the heavenly kingdom on earth and in heaven are those persons who, from within their families, love other families and our members whom God likes. (269-253, 1995.4.30)

Only when you are confident of being perfect as a filial son or daughter in a family that represents all of humanity throughout the world, a patriot repre-

senting the historic nation, saints representing the world, and divine sons and daughters representing all of Heaven's providence, can you return to heaven by going completely beyond the satanic world from the level of the individual. You are such people. You are the ones to be perfect filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters. Such a husband and such a wife become a filial son or daughter as a couple, patriots as a couple, saints and divine sons and daughters as a couple. The families who can be considered families, national-level couples, world-level couples and couples connected with the history of heaven and earth will become families that have fulfilled the will of the ideal of creation! Amen! Amen! Amen! Those who are confident enough to create such families should raise their hands; let us make a pledge. *Mansei*! What *mansei* means is that everything will enjoy everlasting prosperity. It means it will continue on forever. (270-103, 1995.5.7)

When the heavenly kingdom on earth exists, it must invest for the sake of the heavenly kingdom in heaven. The pledge of our Unification Church says we pledge to "represent and become central to heaven and earth by attending God and True Parents; we pledge to perfect the dutiful family way of filial sons and daughters in our family, patriots in our nation, saints in the world, and divine sons and daughters in heaven and earth, by centering on true love." This is impossible without investment. The reason for becoming a filial son or daughter is to create a stepping stone to the way of a patriot, becoming a patriot is the stepping stone toward becoming a saint, and becoming a saint is the stepping stone on the path to becoming a divine child. Only by passing through those levels can one reach heaven and become the son, the divine child, of God. Then, when one returns home, it is possible to realize the heavenly kingdom on earth. (274-114, 1995.10.29)

Those who live continuously for the sake of others become the central people. This is a certainty. Filial sons and daughters in the family are the ones who live continuously for the sake of their parents. They can become the central figure in a family who can inherit from the family. It is the same with patriots. Those who live in service of the nation's ruler and invest and invest again, sacrifice and sacrifice again for the sake of the nation become those who can take responsibility for the nation. Presidents or prime ministers are such people. They should certainly be the central figures. For this reason your conscience tells you to go that far. Your conscience teaches you to be a filial son or daughter in the family, a patriot in the nation, a saint in the world, and even to go the way of a divine son or daughter in heaven and earth. (275-38, 1995.10.30)

In the family, those who are willing to offer even their lives for the sake of their parents are filial sons or daugh-

ters. Those determined to live sacrificing their lives for their nations are patriots. Those who are resolved to save the human race and who are willing to go the way of death several times over for the world, and who resolve to offer themselves even again are saints, and those living and dying for the sake of heaven and earth are divine sons and daughters. Those kinds of people are remembered in history. (275-136, 1995.12.4)

A true child is a family king who centers on God. Therefore, one must become a true filial son or daughter from the beginning, and consequently that king can move up to the position of a patriot of the nation. The prince and princess of a nation are patriots. Then those who stand in the position of a prince or princess of the world are seeking to become a saint.

After that, when you say you are aiming to be a son or daughter standing as a prince and princess of heaven and earth, that is the way of a divine son and daughter. Do you want to become a divine son or daughter or to become a saint? Why would you want to be a divine son or daughter? It is because you can take pride in front of saints. Would you rather be a saint or a patriot? Why would you choose being a saint? It is because you can be proud in front of the patriots. So would you rather be a patriot or a filial son or daughter? Why? You would choose to be a patriot because you can be proud in front of the filial sons and daughters. A filial son or daughter follows the way of a patriot; a patriot follows the way of a saint; a saint follows the way of a divine son or daughter, and a divine son or daughter follows in God's footsteps. (280-117, 1996.11.11)

Those who live comfortably at home are fools. They inevitably have to remain within the bounds of the family-level heaven. That is exactly how it is. That is why your families have to become representative and central families. You must walk the path of filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters. That is the path you must inevitably walk.

That is why you must be filial sons and daughters in your families. You must be patriots in your nations. To be patriots, you must not stray from that dutiful path from the time you are born. You should maintain your focus day and night. My focus on God's will has never faltered throughout my life. I continue whether I am awake or asleep. I will keep going forever. (283-77, 1997.4.8)

Being parents who are dealing with a true, genuine, filial son or daughter is more difficult than dealing with the ruler of a nation. You must be careful about every word you say and everything you do. What does that mean? In your families, you must show how you would attend the nation's ruler. Once parents attend their children in this way, their children cannot relate with them in a rash manner.

Those children whose parents treat them with cautious respect tend to be careful in attending their parents and do

not say even one word without thought. They will think things over several times before speaking. (285-16, 1997.4.19)

We say that we should become filial sons and daughters in the family, don't we? What should we do once we become filial sons and daughters? We may think that mothers and fathers who teach their children filial piety might be doing so for their own advantage, but that is not the case. Add your love to your parents' love! That is the way it should be. That is how the sphere of love can develop. It grows. Things that are in motion grow larger, don't they? Why would things in motion become larger? Because they are interacting based on love, they want to grow. (253-234, 1994.1.30)

It is not easy to be a husband or wife. Your children are not your own children. They are distinct from you. They are children belonging to the world. It is not easy to be the parents of children of the world. It is not easy to be a teacher. Moreover, it is not easy to be filial sons or daughters in front of such parents. Once you have created an exemplary model family in which the grandparents, parents, and you, as husband and wife, are trained in living for the sake of others in front of your children, your family will be welcomed in any neighborhood, any nation, or anywhere in the heavenly kingdom. (252-265, 1994.1.1)

The Bible says, "He who loves his life loses it, and he who hates his life in this world will keep it for eternal life." This is not referring to dirty, immoral people losing their lives. Exemplary people who are willing to sacrifice their lives and die after having expressed their loyalty fully in the position of filial sons and daughters, patriots, and virtuous women are the heavenly people who have reached a standard higher than the filial sons and daughters and patriots of the fallen world. Such people will live, even in a situation facing death, if they are willing to sacrifice their lives. Even if one had many lives to live, if he has gone to the bottom of hell he has no relationship with God. Bluntly speaking, that is what it means. (261-58, 1994.5.22)

Everything must be discerned based on the ideal of God's providence of restoration. In the midst of this, you must find something special for which you can be grateful in offering your lives to God. You must go beyond the history of betrayal that came from Adam and Eve. You must understand this clearly. If God does not appear to you more than He did to Adam, our first ancestor, before the Fall, you must wait without sleeping or eating for God to appear to you to that degree by reaching beyond the position of the heart of the filial sons and daughters, patriots, and virtuous women. (261-55, 1994.5.22)

Filial sons and daughters do not go to hell. Even in the case where they should have to go to hell, they wait somewhere other than hell until the Second Advent of the Lord. There are middle realms in the spirit world.

Do you want to be filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, or divine sons and daughters? Even if you do not practice filial piety in relation to your parents, once you become a patriot you stand on the foundation of having perfected such filial piety. (246-188, 1993.4.16)

If, as members of the Unification Church, you become patriots, should you just be like other patriots, or should you be patriots such as the world has never seen? Even after you have become filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters, you have to take on each of these roles in such a manner that the world and history have never encountered, and only by following these respective paths can you attend God. Bitter grief came about through Eve's mistake of a single day. When you know this, you must then understand how serious you must be to transform the lineage, the realm of ownership, and the realm of heart. (273-114, 1995.10.22)

When God becomes the object centering on love – true love – and meets His partner in love who is a thousand times better than Himself, God can automatically be liberated. That is why you must understand that you should be the best filial sons and daughters, virtuous women, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters. Otherwise, you cannot liberate God. If you cannot reach that point, you cannot liberate Him.

If people follow Jesus, the best place they can end up in is paradise! That means living a single life. Other religions all urge people to leave their hometown and to live a single life, but what about the Unification Church? Do I tell you to leave your home? I tell you to return to your hometown, right? And to get married, right? It is just the opposite of what it was. Why is that so? I am saying that religion is not needed. We stand as those who have surpassed religion. (265-93, 1994.11.20)

Adam was to become a son of filial piety and patriot of the heavenly kingdom; he should have become a loyal citizen and fulfilled the way of the divine son in the nation, but he could not fulfill his role. My regret is that I could not fulfill the way of a filial son while I was in my youth, in full vigor; I missed the chance. I could not walk the path of a patriot who stands in the front line to face any risk if it could save the nation, and who, though bleeding, remains grateful to God. (264-187, 1994.10.9)

Why do I weave together the strands of history in making such shocking proclamations or saying things to spur you on? This is God's situation, and it is not yet resolved. He has not been able to resolve the bitter sorrow in His heart. True Parents have not been able to resolve the bitter sorrow in their hearts.

Not being able to fulfill the path of the son of filial piety in front of God in my youth is my own bitter sorrow! Not being able to have the honor of being a patriot because I could not gain God's nation is my bitter sorrow! Not being able to fulfill the duty of a saint represent-

ing all nations is my sorrow! Not being able to have the victorious supremacy of heaven and earth and to liberate God as a divine son is my sorrow! These deep sorrows still remain. (264-63, 1994.10.9)

Why are filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters needed? Even if you do your best in serving your parents, that is for only a hundred years or so. It is not something you can do for your whole life. Your parents cannot live for a thousand or for ten thousand years. Even if you attend your parents throughout your life, it will be less than a hundred years. However, patriots are remembered beyond a single generation. The patriotic tradition can be bequeathed from your grandparents' generation and your parents' generation to your generation, and on to your descendants. Otherwise the nation cannot continue to exist.

The outlook of a saint can go beyond level of the patriot. Saints must live based on a love that embraces the whole universe. They must love the entire universe. Therefore, the path of saints surpasses the path of patriots. The path of divine sons and daughters surpasses the path of saints and is the highest position of all. They respect the rules of the heavenly kingdom on earth and in heaven and maintain the balance between the internal and external, the vertical and horizontal relationships. (246-188, 1993.4.16)

You must understand that True Parents are the first son and daughter of filial piety in the family. They have never existed in history. They stand in the position of patriots of the heavenly kingdom, the representative position of loyal subjects. Furthermore, they stand in the position of the divine son and daughter who have fulfilled the way of a divine son and daughter. That is why you must have the same thought as True Parents. As True Parents have fulfilled the way of a son and daughter of filial piety, patriots, saints, and divine son and daughter, you should inherit that same tradition of True Parents, and you must maintain an attitude of heart that you are the only son and daughter in the whole world.

The fact that you have received the blessing from True Parents as a son and daughter representing the world signifies that you are allowed to be in a relationship with True Parents. You need to understand that Blessed Families must have experiences of heart with my own family in their daily lives. (266-89, 1994.12.18)

2.2.2. The difference between a saint and a divine son or daughter

What is the difference between a saint and a divine son? A divine son can appear where, centering on God's love, original Adam and Eve who have not fallen become one as the embodiment of God's life and God's lineage. The divine son and daughter are to appear in the place where they inherit the lineage of God's son and daughter. However, this is not the case with saints. That is why there are no divine sons and daughters in the fallen world. There, people can

only reach the level of a saint. Therefore, until the present, saints have been able to teach the way of the outer, relational world but have not been able to teach the inner path that is at the root. Why? This was because the Parents and the divine sons and daughters had not appeared on the earth. The ideology relating to the returning Lord is to establish the way of the Parents and of divine sons and daughters. That is the ideology relating to the Messiah. (226-113, 1992.2.2)

Who has been the most central saint among all saints of this world? It is Jesus. Because Jesus' lineage was already sanctified from the time he was in the womb, there were no conditions upon which Satan could invade. That baby, who was conceived on the basis of God's love, was the very first fruit whose center was true love. He had no relationship with false love. Other than Jesus, there has been no one born as a divine son. Buddha, Mohammed, and Confucius were not such people. However, Jesus taught based on the realm of heart. God is the absolute Parent, and Jesus is in the position of an absolute husband and absolute elder brother. Jesus' teachings are all focused on the family and on love. That love is not a secular love but a Godly love. Because Jesus is the central figure who disseminated such teachings throughout the world, we can conclude that wherever he went he never thought in a self-centered way. (229-221, 1992.4.12)

Jesus was the first son to be born in history with a purified lineage. Thus, he became God's eldest and only begotten son. In the realm of religion, Jesus is the only divine son born through a purified lineage; therefore, he can be called the divine son of all divine sons. (244-249, 1993.2.14)

Jesus is the saint among all saints. He was able to become the first ancestor based on love due to the purification of the lineage. (251-296, 1993.11.1)

Because Jesus was born on the foundation of the national-level victory based on the transformation of the lineage, no one on the national level of the satanic world can show any condition to accuse based on blood relations that have not been indemnified.

Jesus was the first and only begotten son of God; He was born centering on God's love on the national level. The lineage had been purified, hadn't it? In all of history there had never been a saint with a purified lineage. Neither Confucius, nor Buddha, nor Mohammed, nor anyone else – except for that one person, Jesus – was born after the purification of the lineage that remained from the past. (251-253, 1993.10.31)

A divine son is the son of God. To God's son, the existing world is not the only issue. He must bring together the spirit world and the earthly world, and rule by laws that are the same as those that come from the palace of Heaven. These are not the federal laws that a nation's people obey. They are the unified laws of the palaces of the heavenly

and earthly realms. A divine son is one who stands connected to the love in these realms. Everything must be focused on love. (229-42, 1992.4.9)

As the only begotten, divine son, Jesus was the first ancestor centered on true love. (251-298, 1993.11.1)

What must you do to become a global figure? It is not enough to focus simply on ethics and moral principles. You cannot do it just by making people your central concern. If your central concern is human beings, you will not be able to go beyond the national level. In heaven there is a way to surpass the national level. Without a philosophy encompassing heaven and earth, you cannot transcend the national level. (38-260, 1971.1.8)

Thus, the saints have spoken about God, not just about humankind. If you look at the people who are numbered in the ranks of the saints, have they revered God or not? Is there anyone who has become a saint without God? Moreover, the saints have taught not only the way of morality but also the way of heavenly law. (33-291, 1970.8.21)

In families, those who care for and love their parents are filial sons and daughters. Those who care for and love their country are patriots, and those who love the world are saints. Then what have I taught you? I have taught you to be divine sons and daughters who love God, the world, and the universe. Who would you be? Would you like to be divine sons and daughters, or filial sons and daughters? To be divine sons and daughters, you must have the same love in your hearts as God does. (129-99, 1983.10.1)

Up until now the saints have not taught strongly about the unity of mind and body. Since they thought that it was normal for the human mind and body not to be united, they got it wrong. To begin with they dealt with the issue based on the external world. Confucius said, "Cultivate yourself and harmonize your family, and then you can govern your nation well and bring peace to the world," didn't he? How can you cultivate yourself and harmonize your family? Where does bringing peace to the world begin? People have thought that it begins at home, haven't they? Peace is not brought to the world that way. There is no way for the world to become one within a family. Then what must it be based on in order to become one? It begins from you, yourself; it is the struggle between mind and body. That fire is burning within you. (250-166, 1993.10.14)

A divine son is God's son. A divine son resolves to love not only God but also heaven and earth. He resolves to love not only the realm of love of heaven and earth, but also the laws from the palace of the heavenly kingdom. A divine son is a prince of the heavenly kingdom. He should keep the laws that come from the palace in the heavenly realm as well as the laws from the palace of the earthly realm. On that basis, he should love

the royal descendants of the heavenly kingdom, the people of the heavenly kingdom, the royal descendants of the earthly kingdom, and the people of the nation on earth. When he loves the kingdoms and peoples of both worlds, he can be called a son of God. The people and members of the royal family on earth need God's son, and the people and the members of the royal family in the other world need God's son. That is how he can become a divine son. (229-183, 1992.4.12)

It is the same with religion. How did religions begin? Saints founded all of the religions. They are the lords of the religions. They all started out from positions where they could receive instruction from God through practicing devotion and reaching an enlightened state; however, after the religions developed to a higher level, they became more and more secularized.

That is why there are no religious organizations that can guide this world out of its whirlpool of confusion and onto the proper path with very clear and essential guidelines. There are religious systems within regions, but there is no religious system that can embrace and solve the situation of the entire world.

Religions have all completed their tests. All have been tested. Politics and all the various ideologies have been tested. They have all performed disappointingly. All have reached a limit that not one can go beyond. (253-13, 1994.1.1)

It can be said with certainty that there has been no family, no nation, and no world in which God can dwell together with human beings. You must always have this concept in mind. God could not live together with you, your families, your nations, or the world. You must attend God once again and live in attendance to God from a position of being higher than any of the filial sons and daughters, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters of this fallen world. That is the motto of your faith that you must strengthen. (266-85, 1994.12.18)

Saints are people who love all the people of the world. Up until now, the leaders of the religions have been saints. Among the saints, the highest saints are those who have shed blood and devoted their lives for humankind, and who are willing to continuously devote themselves. These are the highest saints of all. In keeping with this principle, Christianity unified the world after the Second World War due to having shed so much blood throughout history. (228-45, 1992.3.3)

I am living in such a way that I am ready to die at any time. I have pledged myself before God. Because I have already determined to offer my life, I would have no regret even if it were my fate to die on the street. There is no greater blessing than to become filial sons and daughters for whom God Himself would come and take away our bodies, or to become patriots for whom the king would come and take away our bodies, or to become saints or divine sons and daughters of the heavenly kingdom like

that. The places where our bodies lie will become places of historic interest. They will become sites for memorial services and festivals that can revive everyone in the world. On account of these sites that evoke sorrow, countless youths will be born anew in generations to come. As representatives of their countries, they will explode like erupting volcanoes. The Unification Church has numerous such resources. (227-260, 1992.2.14)

2.2.3. The true way that people must go

The loftiest hope of humankind is that which is realized through love. All of God's hopes are to be realized through love, too. If God were to take the position of a son of filial piety, He would want to do so on the basis of love for parents. If He became a couple, He would want to become a couple established through love and then a parent established through love. This is what God desires. (263-309, 1994.10.27)

Those who spare no effort in sacrificing themselves become the light of their families. They are called filial children. Those who shine by sacrificing themselves for the sake of their nation are patriots. Those who sacrifice themselves for the world are known as saints, and those who do so for heaven and earth are divine sons and daughters. (276-159, 1996.2.18)

You must know that those who can live for the sake of the entire universe with their minds and bodies united become the central people of the universe. Filial children are those who live for their parents more than anyone else in the family. Those who live for their nation's ruler and its people more than anyone else are patriots. Those who live for the world more than anyone else are saints. Those who live for the sake of heaven and earth more than anyone else are the sons and daughters of God – divine sons and daughters. (276-180, 1996.2.19)

Filial children do not become indebted to their parents. Rather, they make their parents indebted to them. Patriots do not become indebted to their nation but, rather, make the nation indebted to them. Saints do not become indebted to the world, but make the world indebted to them.

Because I am not indebted to heaven and earth, the time has now come for the world to be able to move centering on True Parents. In the world, there has been the way of the filial children of the satanic world, patriots of the satanic world, saints of the satanic world, and divine sons and daughters of the satanic world. But there has been no standard, no way of the filial children, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters who are centered on the heavenly kingdom. You should know that this is what we must establish. (266-103, 1994.12.18)

You must know that your family has greater value than if it had been purchased at the cost of heaven and earth. You Blessed Families have not known

this amazing truth, have you? You must not have conflicts or get into fights. Here on earth we have the amazing task of preparing the foundation of filial children, the foundation of patriots, the foundation of saints, and the foundation of divine sons and daughters, all representing the heavenly kingdom. You must understand that doing so will result in the ideal world God wanted to create centered on Adam.

Because True Parents are in such a position, when I go to the next world, I will become the central "plus" or subject of all the filial children, of all patriots, of the saints, and of the divine sons and daughters.

Through your paying indemnity yourselves – more than your mother and father, more than your nation's patriots, more than the world's saints, and more than heaven and earth – to indemnify that which Jesus desired to accomplish, liberation can be attained. This will be the central basis of the ideal and principles for establishing the nation. (266-105, 1994.12.18)

Who wants you to become a divine son or daughter? God wants that. Who wants you to become a saint? The world wants that. What the nation desires is loyal subjects and patriots; and families want filial children. That is the genuine path of truth. True parents would not tell their child, "As you are a devoted son, do not become a patriot; do not follow that path." Such parents must teach them, saying, "You should sacrifice our family to follow the path of a patriot and serve this nation; fulfill the way of a saint, and sacrifice even that path in order to go the way that Heaven desires; and sacrifice heaven and earth for the sake of God." People have never even conceived such an idea. We must invest and make sacrifices. Otherwise, a unified world and nation can never be realized. (285-218, 1997.5.19)

You must teach how to advance from being a filial child, to a patriot, to a saint, and to a divine son or daughter. This is necessary for becoming an ideal human being, being molded as a human being, and achieving perfection. You must teach your children to fulfill the dutiful way of filial children, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters, and then to go on up to God.

If there were parents who taught their children to go this way, would God think, "Ah, these people are fulfilling the roles of parent, teacher, and owner," or not? If they are qualified to be a parent and a teacher, they are also qualified to be an owner. Furthermore, they can be the kind of father who can become a king. Do western people have the concept of filial piety? They do not have the concept of patriots. They do not have the concept of saints. They do not have the concept of divine sons and daughters. That is why they are in decline. (285-218, 1997.5.19)

We must sacrifice. Sacrificing is the only way to find love. Throughout his life, a filial son follows the path of sac-

rifice for his parents, solely for his parents; and a patriot makes sacrifices for his nation. A patriot sacrifices not only himself but also his family. It is not just the individual. He must sacrifice his wife, sons, and daughters. Those who do not know the value of sacrifice cannot become filial children, or anything else. They are unable to hook into the realm of the heart of restoration, but they must. Only when you hook onto a family, and the hook is more than equal to its task, can you become a filial child in a family. Even if a nation runs away when you hook onto it, you must put the hook in so that it does not get pulled straight. God's hook is as thick as a post and does not get pulled straight. So, the problem is not just that it must be securely hooked in without being pulled out, but also how much it can hold. Without sacrifice things will not work well. (283-21, 1997.4.8)

Don't you have the desire to be better than God? You have that desire, don't you? Your desire can be like that. Filial children who can comfort God in his tears and sadness must be able to reach a level of comforting God more than God can. How can you comfort God if you are not better than Him? Am I not right in this? It is logical. The world with that standard is the eternal original homeland to which we will go. Do you want to go there or not? You cannot go there. With your stubborn character, you cannot move in all four directions. If you cannot turn through 360 degrees on a level plane, how can you turn through 360 degrees on the perpendicular? Turn 360 degrees over and under based on the East-West axis. You have not reached the point of doing this in an unrestricted manner. (280-119, 1996.11.11)

We must perfect our families, our tribes, our nations, the world, heaven, and earth and ultimately liberate God! We must bring salvation to God. In order to ease the hurt in the parents' heart caused by unfilial children, we must be the best filial children.

People have not known that God, who has embraced the fallen world, is in sorrow. When we think that our Father, God, has been burdened by such painful and miserable circumstances, we must know that it is the responsibility of the people who have to be saved on earth today to keep the dutiful way of the filial child who lives in such a sorrowful situation that he cannot hold back his tears even if he has to crawl on the ground wailing for ten thousand years…. It is a serious matter. Who else is teaching such things? (283-215, 1997.4.12)

Even if you begin with a path of suffering and end your life with suffering, as a heavenly son or daughter going forward toward heaven, you must maintain the attitude of seeking to ease God's heart, and seeking to live for the sake of God as a filial child. Through having done this, I want to leave a legacy of patriotism for the heavenly kingdom. In the name of a divine son, I want to bring this world, which the saints and divine sons were not able to fully realize, into

the realm of completion. I am that serious. (258-106, 1994.3.17)

If by observing you God can be encouraged to go and break down the evil world, at that moment you actually create the platform for God to work. That would be the highest heavenly gift of joy for you, one that could not be matched by any precious position, throne, or place of glory, nor even by one's lifetime or several lifetimes. I believe that the way that filial children representing eternal history have to go is one of being determined to face persecution even beyond history. That is surely the path of being loyal to the eternal nation. (255-121, 1994.3.10)

Without human beings, God cannot be liberated through love. This means that through parents having filial children, their realm of heart is liberated; through having patriots, kings are liberated; through having saints, the world-level president is liberated; and through having divine sons and daughters accomplish everything as His object partners of love by fulfilling the way of the filial child, God can be liberated. Only when this is achieved can God be liberated. This is an amazing message. (283-173, 1997.4.8)

Throughout the course of my life I could never complain. I could never criticize. You must not complain on the path of filial piety and patriotism. You must not criticize. As long as we have a relationship of love with the perfect subject partner, we can neither complain nor criticize. If your husband does wrong, you should take it as your own fault. "This is my fault." If your wife does wrong, you should take it as your own fault. You should not say, "I do not like you." (263-105, 1994.8.21)

I am planning to make a record of each one of your witnessing results in the future. What is meant by the "Safe Settlement of True Parents and the Completed Testament Age"? God has been wandering around, and now it is time to settle down. You must pay taxes to live in His nation. We need patriots and filial children. We need filial children in the family and patriots in the nation. The path of loyalty and filial piety is a basic foundation for establishing the nation, isn't it? Even if we face difficulties such as going hungry or even death, we should attend Heaven and not allow the nation to perish, don't you agree? (254-119, 1994.2.2)

What we human beings absolutely need to do is to fulfill the way of filial children, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters. Due to the Fall, we need saints. We need to perfect the way of divine sons and daughters. Because of that, all the realms connected with God can connect to the nation, heaven, the world, and our family, through each of us. That is the path we must complete in our lifetime. We must perfect it. This is the first time you have heard this, isn't it? I have given this message in detail in the United States, but this is the first

time I have done so here in Korea.

That is why we must be filial children, patriots, saints, and divine sons and daughters. Where is the self that is you? Do you have your own self? You are nothing more than the bones of your mother and father. In a nation, the nation's ruler comes from the bones of his father and mother. People want to engraft to that bone and grow. Unless we have a family we cannot stand before the nation. But even a family can be destroyed by Satan's nation. Do we need to have God's nation or not? (285-91, 1997.4.21)

Love gradually dissipates and disappears when we insist on ourselves. Love, however, continues to grow when we continually live for others. That is why true individuals live for the sake of others. A true husband lives for his wife; true parents also live for their children; true filial children live for their parents; and likewise, a true king lives for his nation, a true nation lives for its people. We should understand this. (268-259, 1995.4.2)

Section 3. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Three

Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to perfect the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships and the Realm of the Royal family, by centering on true love.

3.1. The Four Great Realms of Heart

Pledge number three of the Family Pledge refers to the unfallen original world. It is talking about returning to that original world. The entire process of growth we undergo – for example when a baby grows up and then eventually marries – all of this is keyed towards finding our position as a spouse and a parent. The goal is to find that position which allows us to become one body with God. The perfection of the Four Great Realms of Heart is the path we have to go to perfect ourselves as human beings. (283-80, 1997.4.8)

Adam's family in the Garden of Eden was to be God's ideal family of true love. It was created to fully manifest the invisible, incorporeal Being. God and human beings are in a subject-object relationship based on true love.

God created two individuals, Adam and Eve, hoping for the completion of the embodiment of true love, a completion that was to be achieved through the children, siblings, husband and wife, and parents that he had envisioned in His heart. The reason for this was that God desired the substantial perfection of a child's true love. That is, He desired the perfection of his true love partners as the siblings of a real substantial family, as a substantial husband and wife, and as substantial parents.

In other words, He wanted to achieve unification at one central point that connects together the vertical axis of top and bottom, the horizontal axis of left and right, and the front and back axis of front and back. That central point thus becomes the center of a spherical form. (259-44, 1994.3.27)

When are the children, siblings, couple and parents, these Four Great Realms of Heart, perfected in oneness? The point at which two people who are centered on God marry and consummate their first love as a couple is the point where all levels of perfection bear fruit, and is itself the center of all those levels of perfection. In this sense, marriage is the union of heaven, earth and humankind, and the perfection of all relationships; the vertical and horizontal, the left and right, and front and back. Marriage is the place for the perfection of true love bringing together the ideal of true children, true siblings, a true couple and true parents. For this reason, Adam and Eve together are the second ancestors of humankind, and stand in the position of God's most beloved object partner. Thus, standing in the position of the second creator, they are to inherit everything that God, the first Creator, feels, and on behalf of God feel the joy of the child's position, the sibling's position, the couple's position and the parents' position. The joy they experience is to multiply and give birth to children. This allows them to experience and taste for themselves the position of the first Creator, God.

In this way, God stands in the position of the first Creator, Adam and Eve, the second Creator, and the children of Adam and Eve, the third Creator. The first, the second and the third creators – God, Adam and Eve, and their children – become the formula unit centering on the four-position-foundation, and form the fundamental principle of existence which all of humankind have to follow.

In this way, looking at things centering on Adam and Eve, when upper and lower, namely parent and child, are connected, in turn bringing about the connection of left and right (husband and wife) and front and back (siblings), the family achieves perfection. This position or place is where the mind and body of each individual finds God and achieves unity, and where both man and woman become one, finding the place of settlement and rest centering on God. In other words, this becomes the foundation where God and Adam and Eve and the children are united, and in doing so, it also becomes the base where peace, freedom, happiness and hope all are bound together into a single point. (259-42, 1994.3.27)

By allowing Adam and Eve to multiply and give birth to their own children, God allows them to experience, from the position of the substantial corporeal second creator, stimulation flowing back from the third creator, their own substantial creation. Thus, the family is the foundation which allows us to experience, from generation to generation, the four great realms of child's heart, sibling's heart, the couple's heart and the parent's heart. The family is the base for perfecting all these types of true love. That is why the family enables a starting point of perfection through which we can achieve the oneness of God and humankind in love, and come to own heaven and earth. In other words, the family becomes the original starting point for the ideal children, siblings, couples and

parents. It is only from this place that men and women with united minds and bodies can emerge, and it is only here that we can see a couple who have perfected the ideal of husband–wife unity, or the start of the ideal parents. Furthermore, this is the place where, centering on true love, the model for the perfection of children, siblings, couples and parents can be created. (259-42, 1994.3.27)

Human beings exist as parents, couples, siblings and children. These are the four great principles of relationships. All human beings, whoever they are, have to pass through these stages. We are born as someone's son or daughter, and when we grow up, we become someone's brother or sister. We are born as someone's child and grow up as brother or sister. What do siblings do? They learn. By learning, they become like their father or mother. Adam and Eve were also siblings to each other. They were to become husband and wife, and then parents. This applies to them as well.

That is why a man's wife is his younger sister, as Eve was the younger sister to Adam; and a woman's husband is her older brother, as Adam was the older brother to Eve. To God, they were a son and daughter. As God's son or daughter, a man has his own way to go, and a woman has her own way to go. Passing through school, and after fulfilling his or her own responsibilities, they go on to resemble their own father or mother. And just as their father or mother married, they too go on to get married. (263-57, 1994.8.16)

In pledge number three, we find the contents of a textbook about the heavenly kingdom in which Adam and Eve have not fallen. Everyone without exception will have to accomplish that work. When we unite directly with one another centering on the goal expressed in this content, we come to establish a liberated family that will experience no limitation or hindrance in either the spirit world or the physical world. It is from that point that the world of happiness, peace and ideals begins. This is where the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and the Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world begins. From this perspective, what do we mean by "the Four Great Realms of Heart"? The four great hearts do not exist separated from one another. All the fruits of these realms are harvested at the time when Adam and Eve are married.

This, then, is the perfection of God, and at the same time, the place where Adam and Eve achieve perfection as a couple and as parents starting from the position of child and brother or sister. From the "baby" seed of God, siblings are perfected, husband and wife are perfected, and the parents are perfected. Furthermore, the children of Adam and Eve also achieve perfection in that position. In this sense, the Fall is the failure to achieve the standard of the three great Creators on earth, the failure to see that accomplished. (264-195, 1994.10.9)

All human beings are born as someone's son or daughter, grow up as someone's sibling, are wed to someone as a wife or husband, and eventually pass

away after becoming a father or mother. This is the inevitable formula course for human beings. Individuals who do not pass through this course end up miserable and unhappy in the spirit world. Those who never experience a spouse's love, who never experience a parent's love, or a sibling's love, or the love coming from a child, are unable to get close to God. That is why the Unification Church emphasizes the importance of the Four Great Realms of Heart. (263-57, 1994.8.16)

What are the Four Great Realms of Heart? They are the realm of the child's heart, the realm of the brother and sister's heart, the realm of the husband and wife's heart, and the realm of the parent's heart. In a family, the grandfather is in the position of God, in the realm of perfection, Adam and Eve are in a position that directly connects to God, who stands in a vertical position to them, and their sons and daughters are in a position that represents the future world. It should be very clear to you that your family is the foundation for you to inherit the Three Great Kingships of the past, the present, and the future; you have to remember this. In conclusion, the grandfather stands in God's place, right? So within the family, the grandfather is the king, and your own sons and daughters are princes and princesses who will inherit the future Kingdom of Heaven. (235-30, 1992.8.24)

What is the meaning of the pledge number three? The third pledge is the textbook of the heavenly kingdom. What Adam and Eve failed to perfect was the Four Great Realms of Heart. Married life is the final destination for the perfection of sons and daughters, the final destination for the perfection of brothers and sisters, the final destination for the perfection of couples, and the final destination for the perfection of parents. Through our married life, we should give birth to holy sons and daughters. They are the fruits. That is why parents' love for their children does not change for a thousand years or ten thousand years. In this sense, the position of a married couple is awesome.

Marriage is then the place where we can see the flower of hope for humankind coming into bloom, where the children that humanity has been hoping for can appear. It is the place where the flower of hope blossoms as brothers and sisters and as husbands and wives. In this way, Adam and Eve begin to create from the point of giving birth to their children, just as Heavenly Father began his creation from the point of experiencing love of a couple. In this way, we achieve the position of substantial creators; from the position of horizontal creators, we give birth to our children. This is what children are. In giving birth to them, we are making the third creators. (263-148, 1994.8.21)

The position of husband and wife is where God and his children meet in unity, where brothers become united in God's family, where the couple becomes one, and where the parents become one. Centering on the Four Great Realms of

Heart, my spouse is thus my absolute counterpart and object, through whom I can perfect myself.

Accordingly, a husband is the one through whom his wife can meet God's ideal son, an elder brother who represents heaven, a husband who represents Heaven and a father who represents Heaven. A wife also stands in the same position in relation to her husband. Such a couple will feel joy by substantially experiencing, through their own children, everything they have invested in those children since birth, just as God has experienced raising the parents themselves. (259-45, 1994.3.27)

What are the Four Great Realms of Heart? What is the hope of all children? The hope and desire of children is to find the path of love. The hope and desire of siblings is also to find the path of love, the desire of all couples is to find the path of love, and the hope and desire of all parents is to find the path of love. What then is the final destination for these four types of heart while they are looking for the path of love? The answer is "family love" or the love of the family. (273-24, 1995.10.21)

The Four Great Realms of Heart should all be perfected within the realm of God's vertical heart. In other words, the perfection of the children's realm of heart, the siblings' realm of heart, the couple's realm of heart, and the parents' realm of heart. Adam and Eve should have perfected all these realms of heart. As a natural consequence, then, we need to perfect these four vertical realms of heart and liberate God from his sorrow.

Within the family, the grandfather is in the position of having created the heavenly kingdom. You did not know that your grandfather and grandmother are the king and queen of your family, did you? In future, you should clearly remember that the family is the foundation for inheriting the heavenly kingdom. Also, you should clearly understand by now how much you need to live a life of love within your own family, because your family is the foundation for realizing and actualizing the four great vertical realms of heart. (235-30, 1992.8.24)

Because God's love is absolute, it is a heavenly law that husband and wife cannot be separated. We should restore the fallen world of humankind, a world in which this law has been lost, and return it to the original homeland. It is only in this way that we can achieve the goal of building world peace. Then the family-level Kingdom of Heaven will unfold into the national-level Kingdom of Heaven, and the national-level Kingdom of Heaven will unfold and develop into the world-level Kingdom of Heaven. Finally, the world-level Kingdom of Heaven will grow into the Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world, thus achieving total liberation, and eventually leading to a world of peace.

When a husband and a wife marry and come to practice true love with each other, this becomes the royal palace which is the foundation and root of love, life and lineage between God and

humankind. It is also the starting point for the ideal of the heavenly kingdom on earth and in the spirit world.

The children produced as the fruit of this true love will perfect their oneness with their spouses centering on true love, and form a family that attends God as a part of its natural way of life. This in turn will form the starting base or foundation for peace and the ideal, so that glorious men and women can then become one united body and, as God's true object, perfect the ideal love of God himself.

In other words, by perfecting human beings as creatures of unlimited value, centering on true love, God himself also achieves the perfection of love, and establishes the family ideal that is his ideal of creation, in which the eternal ideal love can reside and dwell. In this way, God intends to complete and perfect the ideal world. (295-45)

Adam and Eve are to complete the Four Great Realms of Heart on the vertical level through their children. Also, since the family is the horizontal manifestation of the vertical, it must inherit the three-stage tradition centered on God. In terms of the present, the center is the father and the mother, Adam and Eve. The past represents God, and the future represents children. You should understand that in this way, our families are meant to inherit the tradition of the Three Great Kingships. The royal family that lives this way enters the eternal country as citizens of that country, and as the royal family of that country.

This is the heavenly kingdom. This is the position in which the True Parents stand. Because of the appearance of True Parents in this era, the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships have been completed and are perfected. Furthermore, because the Parents stand in the center, they stand in the position of the King, representing all the families of humankind. Accordingly all the descendants who belong to this lineage will be children who inherit that kingship. Up until the present era, Jesus has been fulfilling the role of a King in heaven, but there have never been Parents. Now, with the arrival of Rev. Moon, a new kingship will be established with the Parents at the center; and that is how it will be done on earth as well. In this way, the invisible "plus" and the visible "plus" will become one, and mind and body will become one. (235-231, 1992.9.20)

Parents are to nurture their children as God's own children, on behalf of God, standing in the position of substantial parents. In doing this, I can substantially feel God's experience in nurturing His own children. God Himself has been growing in this way. God has grown and passed through an age of childhood, an age of brotherhood and sisterhood, an age of the conjugal husband and wife, and the age of parents.

As we give birth to children and raise them up, we experience centering on ourselves, God's past history. We come to see the character and shape of the invisible Creator, the invisible first

Creator in his infancy. When, in the position of the second Creator, the visible Creator, we raise those children, and help them grow as brothers and sisters, and eventually help them to marry and become someone's spouse, the goal is to see substantially, on the horizontal plane, all the concrete content that exists internally and invisibly, just as God did when he raised Adam and Eve as his children, and as a brother and sister. This is the significance of having our own children. (263-148, 1994.8.21)

When are the Four Great Realms of Heart perfected? When do sons and daughters achieve perfection, and when do brothers and sisters achieve perfection? When do husband and wife achieve perfection, and when do parents achieve perfection? It is when they consummate their marriage... When marriage takes place, it is at that time that three types of love; children's love, siblings' love, and husband–wife's love, all bear fruit and yield a harvest. This is fulfilled while the Parent resides in heaven. The Parent of Adam and Eve lives in heaven, the spirit world, and stands on the foundation of these three types of love.

Because you yourselves were born and raised and became parents in this way, you also should have children. You should give birth to your own descendants. Just as God created Adam and Eve, you should give birth to children as the second Creator. This is the meaning of having descendants.

You should create children just as the first Creator created children. Because the first creation was carried out by the vertical Creator, it has to unite with another horizontal one, bringing the two together. Because the horizontal standard rises up infinitely, the vertical standard expands out infinitely and forms a circular form, which develops into a sphere of unlimited, infinite surface.

For this reason, parents represent heaven, and children, siblings and husband and wife represent earth. Thus when these become one centering on a husband and wife, the vertical standard also becomes one. That is how the perfection of Adam and Eve becomes the perfection of God's ideal of creation. Everything that God hoped for in the ideal of creation is perfected and completed. What does this all mean? It means that we all need a reciprocal object partner of love. (263-57, 1994.8.16)

The perfection of the Four Great Realms of Heart is realized when the object partner manifests, centering on God, the past, the present and the future, bearing the fruit of love. This state is achieved when husband and wife, once they are married, become one through love. That is why we are not able to reach the state of oneness by ourselves. We should center ourselves on God. Only when God enters and becomes part of the equation can the position of a king emerge through the couple. Without the unity achieved through love, the kingship is not created. The kingship here refers to a king and a queen, but only with the intervention and involvement

of the vertical God does the kingship emerge.

Through the realization of this kingship, God Himself finally unites in total oneness with Adam and Eve who are fully born anew on earth. After reaching oneness, the giving of birth to children and the corresponding horizontal expansion achieves the same results as if all four-position-foundations are the same one and are identical. For instance, when there are three sons, the four-position-foundation of each son created through his own family looks the same. It has the same shape and form; it is the same model. Accordingly, each family holds the same value of the family of Adam and Eve. The reason is because they carry the same seed. (270-258, 1995.7.16)

You should understand that the position of the second creators was promised, but God was not able to see the third creators, His grandchildren. Therefore, you should also understand that it is you who should become God's grandchildren. Grandchildren should recapture all of the past history of the first invisible God and the second visible God, and make them feel the love of two worlds through which they can rejoice. It is the grandchildren who stand in that position. It is not God, nor is it Adam or Eve.

That is why even God reveres his own sons and daughters, why he even reveres his grandchildren. Adam too, then, should also revere his children. He must make sure not to neglect his children or fail in raising them in the right way. For this reason, if one of the children in the Blessed Families happens to fall, the result is the corruption of the entire family, the family fall. You should understand that it carries this kind of devastating result.

You should perfect the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships. Your grandfather represents God. Because your father stands at the center of the second generation, he stands in the position of the king of your family in this world. You should, therefore, attend your parents as if they were a king and a queen. Likewise, you should attend your grandparents as if they were God. So by receiving these two loves, by receiving the two loves of your father and mother who represent God, you, in the place of the grandchild, start to expand the heavenly kingdom on earth and in heaven. The love spills over and forms Heaven in this way. (264-195, 1994.10.9)

God loved Adam and Eve with His invisible original mind, but came to love their beloved children through Adam and Eve's visible, physical bodies. In this way, God's position in loving his grandchildren is different from Adam and Eve's position of loving their grandchildren. This is the reason why fruition comes. That is why fruition comes. It is because there is this dual layer that fruition is achieved. This is the natural result of origin-division-union action.

When God created Adam and Eve starting from the division of the origin or original position, God was elevated to the level of the Parent by going through the stages of child, sibling and

husband-wife. In the same way, Adam and Eve should also rise up to experience Parent's love by experiencing first children's love, siblings' love and husband-wife's love. You have to clearly realize that parental love must be connected both vertically and horizontally. That is how the vertical standard comes into being in both heaven and on earth, and from that point on, everything expands centering on the Parents. All of history unfolds centering on the Parents. This, then, is the formula for development. History unfolds and develops through the family pattern centering on the Parents. (270-258, 1995.7.16)

God himself has also been growing. God created, through the form of the substantial Adam and Eve, the children, siblings, husband and wife, and parents that he envisioned in His invisible formless mind. By experiencing them grow as siblings, husband and wife, and parents, God experienced them as his own second self, and through this, He feels infinite joy as the God who has perfected His ideal of true love.

As human beings we are created to feel joy in the same way that God does. For that reason, no matter who we are, we come to stand in the position of a child, sibling, spouse or parent to someone else. No matter who we are, as human beings, we come to establish families centering on the Four Great Realms of Heart; our families are the base for us to experience the ideal realm of heart. And just like God, only those of us who actually experience the Four Great Realms of Heart can find oneness anywhere in the Kingdom on earth and the Kingdom in heaven. This is the reason we feel drawn to establish families: we want to become such ideal human beings. For the same reason, all human beings, whoever we are, must seek for the original family and restore the protected nest of love. (259-44, 1994.3.27)

All of you, as husbands and wives, should realize the Four Great Realms of Heart and fulfill the Three Great Kingships. If you do this, you will be able to freely travel between the spirit world and the earthly world at any time. (253-71, 1994.1.7)

The perfection of the Four Great Realms of Heart can only be obtained through oneness between husband and wife based on love in marriage. If this oneness is broken, the result is the imperfection of the children's realm of heart, the siblings' realm of heart, the husband and wife's realm of heart and the parents' realm of heart; all of these will be left incomplete. Before going to the spirit world, we have to perfect these Four Great Realms of Heart, but because of the Fall, these realms of heart have never been completed. That is the reason why we need restoration through indemnity. (249-289, 1993.10.11)

The Four Great Realms of Heart are completed and bear fruit through the oneness of love between husband and wife, while the Three Great Kingships are perfected at the time when Adam

and Eve give birth to their sons and daughters. Only after they have given birth to the children can these Three Great Kingships be perfected. God represents the grandfather, who represents the spirit world. Adam and Eve represent the present. These things connect this way: past, present and future. Sons and daughters, who represent the future, are born through Adam and Eve, who represent the present. Thus, that which has been divided from the origin must come back and be reunited. (270-258, 1995.7.16)

The life that we live on earth is transferred to the spirit world in exactly that same shape or quality that it has on earth. You really should understand this point. How then are people connected horizontally once they reach the spirit world? You carry all the things that you feel and experience in your family on earth to the universal family on the other side, and that is how you enter that world. In this world, we live life in our family centering on our horizontal parents, but when we go to the spirit world, we enter the world of the vertical Parent, that is, the eternal vertical world. The vertical parent is that which is formed centering on God. That eternal world is the world of spirit, and so it is more than just one generation that enters that world. Thousands and thousands of generations all enter into that world.

Because that world is the extension of the lives we lived in this world, together with our own grandparents, parents, and sons and daughters centering on God, we must accomplish a connection of heart that we can feel horizontally, a connection that we feel being responsible as an elder sister, or a younger sister, as a wife or a mother, or as an elder or younger brother, as a father or husband, etc. Only then can we experience harmony there. (247-308, 1993.6.1)

You are hearing this kind of thing for the first time, aren't you? This is what the Kingdom of Heaven is; a homeland where you have to travel to carrying the love of the royal family, after having restored the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships. Go ahead and die, if you don't believe me. No matter how great a person is, everyone is affected by this reality. Therefore, please make up you mind quickly to receive the Holy Blessing. That is the quickest and easiest solution. Don't let a situation arise where you end up dead and have to lament, "Oh, I wish I had listened to Rev. Moon!" So receive the Blessing and learn as you go. You actually have to unite together as a man and a woman, seek and restore the lost heavenly family, and attend God as your King. In this sense, your grandfather is there representing God, so you should attend him in place of attending God. Your parents are in the position of king and queen, centering on the families of five billion people living on earth. The children should be attended as the kings and queens of the future. Let us therefore inherit the path of the parents, the path of those we attend as the king and queen of the families in this present world, together with God. The world that inherits that path and passes

it on for thousands and ten thousands of generations is the Kingdom of Heaven on earth! Amen! Amen! (239-76, 1992.11.23)

3.2. The Three Great Kingships

3.2.1. The Three Great Kingships are the basic framework of the ideal of creation

Originally, if Adam achieves perfection the father of the heavenly kingdom also achieves perfection, and if Eve achieves perfection, the mother of the heavenly kingdom is likewise perfected. If they become the owners of the family, the kingship of the heavenly kingdom on the family level will emerge. Therefore, Adam and Eve are to become the King and Queen of the individual level, of the family level, tribal level, national level and world level. (201-130, 1990.3.27)

God grows as the King of the spiritual kingdom, Adam grows as the King of the Earth, and Adam's son grows as the King of both the spiritual kingdom and of Earth. If you ask someone "What kind of family do you want to have?" some will answer, "I want my grandfather to be a king, my father to be a king, and for myself to be a king. That is the highest desire a human being can have."

You are living your lives ignorant of the fact that you are sons and daughters of the Three Great Kingships. To become a prince or princess of the Three Great Kingships, you should be capable of attending your grandparents like the king and queen of the spiritual kingdom, and of attending your children like princes and princesses. The start of Adam's family centering on the ideal of God was to be the start of just such a family. Adam's nation, Adam's world and Adam's cosmos are all included within such a family. (280-167, 1996.11.24)

Adam and Eve are the son and daughter of God, aren't they? Because they are the son and daughter of God, they are also the prince and princess of heaven as well as the prince and princess of the earth (the physical world). While on one hand they are the prince and princess of the spiritual Kingdom, when they have grown up, they will also become the king and queen of the Earth. They are God's royal descendants. This is the reason why they should obey all the laws of the royal court in the spiritual kingdom, and then substantiate or manifest all the elements of that way or law to become an ideal model within both the vertical and the horizontal dimensions, in both the front and rear, and also within the left and the right realms. Wherever they go, to the east or the west, to the north or the south, or to the front or the back, they still form the ideal model, because they stand in that central core position. That central position is the core of all relations, north, south, east or west, above or below; it is the center. From this perspective, you folks here should become examples and model wherever you go. (226-258, 1992.2.9)

What is the position and significance of grandfathers and grandmoth-

ers? They are the ambassadors dispatched by the heavenly kingdom with full and complete authority. That is why you should attend your grandfather and grandmother in the same way as you attend God. Your mother and father are the king and the queen of the present human family of five billion people. You yourselves are princes and princesses who will inherit the kingship of the future. This is the tradition of which you are a part.

So then for what purpose do human beings live? The purpose of human life is to inherit each and every kinship realm of the heavenly kingdom: the kingship of the past, the kingship of the present and the kingship of the future. Isn't that true? Doesn't everyone want to be a king or a queen? Based on this kind of thinking as the mainstream thought of life, we become a people who form reciprocal bonds of heart as brothers and sisters, and create that brotherly realm of the heart. Centering on the lineage passed down through the eldest son's line, this foundation of heart will be passed on into the eternal future for a thousand, for ten thousand generations, as the lineage of the royal family. (228-282, 1992.7.5)

What do we mean when we refer to the ideal family of the original creation? The ideal family of the original creation is made up of the Heavenly Father-King, the king of the spiritual kingdom and the king of the earthly kingdom; in other words the king of heaven and the king of the earth. That is why you are princes. What is the ideal family? The past represents God, the earth represents the present, and the children are the princes of the future. So the *Cheon Bu Wang*, the Heavenly Father-King stands in the place of God; the Earthly Father-King and Mother-Queen stand in the place of the father and the mother; and the children stand in the place of the princes, that is, the place of sons and daughters. So looking at the three generations as one family, the grandparents represent God, the earthly father-king and the earthly mother-queen represent the parents; and their sons and daughters become princes and princesses. Thus, each of these three generations is representatives of kingship. If we talk about the grandparents we are talking about the past, if we talk about the parents, we are talking about the present, and if we talk about the children, we are talking about the future. When these are all linked together, the past, the present and the future are all connected in them. (219-244, 1991.9.8)

Families that have completed and perfected the Four Great Realms of Heart and Three Great Kingships are ideal families. In those families, the grandfather is like God, the parents are the king and queen of the families of the world, and you, the children, are the kings and queens of the future, who inherit the kingship of both earth and heaven. God holds the kingship over heaven, and the parents hold the kingship over the earth. The sons and daughters are the kings and queens who inherit this. Thus, the place where all these Three Great King-

ships are bound together and bear fruit is our own ideal family. (239-185, 1992.11.24)

Our grandfathers and grandmothers represent the past, and in this sense, they are the ambassadors of the heavenly kingdom sent to our families by God; they are the special emissaries of the heavenly kingdom. Our fathers and mothers are the kings and queens of the present, of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. We, as grandchildren, receive love from both the parents and the grandparents. Adam and Eve were only able to receive Heavenly Father's love. There was no one, however, who could receive Adam's love. Thus, even God was only able to love one generation, but He actually needs to experience loving grandchildren, that is, the second generation. That then, is the point from which expansion begins.

The three generations are together one unit, one category, and this is why we have to attend our grandparents like we attend God, to attend our parents like the king and queen of the world, and the grandchildren, we have to attend like they are the kings and queens of the heavenly Kingdom of Heaven and earth that will come in the future. The grandchildren then, receive love in two layers. The third generation receives love from both their grandparents and their parents. The love is doubled, and it is from here that the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth and in the spirit world comes into being. (266-147, 1994.12.22)

Grandparents have to live as if they are representing God. Parents have to live as if they are standing in the place of the President of the world. Their sons and daughters have to live as if they are the kings of the heavenly kingdom, as princes and princesses. This is the ideal family, the original family that God created, the family of God's love. The family is the palace of the heavenly kingdom, and its members represent the royalty of that kingdom. God sees the grandparents as representatives of the princes and princesses, and the parents as representatives of the princes and princesses of all the nations of the world. Everyone has this kind of desire, don't they? It's the same everywhere. The children, then, represent the princes and princesses of the entire universe in the future. Our family, our home is such a place, the center of that kind of value. This is something you should truly be proud of. And it is truly very precious that we ourselves stand on this kind of wonderful and noble ideology. So when you can say, "I am proud of my family, that my family is a model family, a central family representing the ideal couple," the entire universe, even all the creatures of God's creation in the future, will welcome such a family. Do you understand the background of a family with this value, such a historical family? This, then, is the structure of the ideal family that God created. You have to reach that kind of position. God is in the position of your grandparents, and once you reach that place, everyone has to bow before it. (216-299, 1991.4.14)

The Three Great Kingships are the unified ideal that brings together not only the era of the grandparent's kingship and the era of the parent's kingship, but also the era of the kingship of the spiritual kingdom and the era of the earthly kingship. The grandparents are the first generation, and the parents, the second generation. There are only two generations here; there is no third generation. Grandchildren need to be born, and they need to receive love both from the parents and the grandparents.

It is really rather amazing. I too have had sons and daughters and raised them, but I relate to my grandchildren rather as friends. That is, we became friends.

As people grow old, we tend to feel lonely. Our environment changes and our sphere of activity is reduced. In this way, we start to form tight bonds with our grandchildren.

This process leads to the perfection of the grandparents, and also the perfection of the parents; they come to create a single seed together. When the top place or position is connected with this point, everything becomes connected. Only when these two are linked can the one seed be created.

That is how both the grandfather and the father are perfected, making one seed, and that is why everything has to become connected when the top is connected to this point. Only when the two generations are connected together can the one seed be created.

Thus, centering on the sons and daughters of Adam's family, centering on them as the one single model, and horizontally, being connected centering on the royal descendants of this direct line, the family is expanded horizontally. Without becoming a seed that has experienced the three great realms of heart, expansion is impossible. (283-79, 1997.4.8)

Because of the Fall of Adam and Eve, God was unable to stand in the position of three generations. Only two generations were established when the Fall occurred. What, then, is the most miserable thing about American families these days? The worst thing is that grandparents virtually cannot meet their own grandchildren. All grandparents start out as babies and finally reach the stage of grandparenthood, so they naturally should return to a baby-like state. Who are their "baby friends"? This is their grandchildren.

Once we grow old, we start to become senile, don't we? Once we get senile, we become like babies. Once we become senile, we even lose the ability to speak. Isn't that true? That is why grandparents and grandchildren should come together. Once I have become a grandfather, I find my grandchildren even more lovable than my own children. And the people I long for the most are not my children, but my grandchildren. That's how it is. From this point of view, old people in America are really to be pitied. (266-147, 1994.12.22)

When we love and respect our grandparents, what we are doing is actually inheriting the past, and learning about

the past. We learn about the present from our parents, and when we love and cherish our children we are in fact living as we learn about the future. What is it that we inherit from our grandmother and grandfather, from our mother and father? What is the lineage that we inherit? The answer is true love. True love is the thing that we inherit. My grandfather and grandmother may be old, but they became one through true love. Likewise, my mother and father are one in true love; so naturally, we too, should become like them and inherit the future. You have to understand, that without becoming a true family on the absolute level, you cannot inherit, you cannot connect the future.

When we look at these three generations within the family, it is like looking at the entire universe. The love of the universe dwells within a true family that represents the entire history of the past, present and future, starting with God. In a true family, we love our grandmother, our mother, our older sister, and so on. If our grandmother isn't there, we feel insecure and unsettled. Same with our grandfather; and same with anyone; if they are missing or are not part of the equation, we feel unsettled. We have to build that kind of family, and when we do, we move naturally into the heavenly kingdom. The grandparents, the parents and all the children naturally shift into the Kingdom of Heaven.

The people who enter the Kingdom of Heaven are those who experience loving true grandparents, loving true parents, loving true children, a true family, a true nation, and the true universe. The family is the model textbook for achieving this. If we think about this, and we think about God, the eternal future opens up for us. When we love God, and we think to ourselves "my love goes on, for the sake of the future", then the eternal future opens up. (162-140, 1987.4.5)

The ideal family is the family that has perfected the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships. The grandfather is like God, the parents are the king and queen of the world family, and we ourselves are the king and queen of the future who will inherit the kingship of heaven and earth. This is the kingship of the Kingdom of Heaven, isn't it? And of the earthly kingdom? And we are the kings and queens to inherit this. In this way, the place where the Three Great Kingships need to bear fruit and become bound into one is our family, our ideal family. (239-185, 1992.11.24)

Now that we, the blessed central families, have entered the age of the heavenly kingdom on earth, your family, my family, we are all royalty. That is, we are the family of the King. So how exemplary do we need to be? Can a king just live as he wants? Kings, queens, princes and princesses, all of them should keep the law of the nation to which they belong. However, in addition to this, they also have to observe the laws of the royal court. In fact, that kind of law exists, doesn't it? There are laws and rules that the royalty and aristocracy have to follow. Whether you are in Britain or in Korea, the life of

those who belong to the royal family is not all that easy. (232-326, 1992.7.10)

I, Rev. Moon, have been walking that kind of difficult path, the course of the path of restoration. And if you don't have that kind of experience, and taste that kind of difficult path, you cannot really sense or know the heavenly kingdom. You will not be able to rise to the position of kings and queens who can govern the Kingdom of Heaven. How can you become a king if you do not even know how to attend the queen? That just doesn't make sense. (232-331, 1992.7.10)

The teachings that I am bringing are unprecedented in history. They are the hope of humankind, and bring the beginning of peace and happiness. They are the starting point for everything within the Kingdom of Heaven. For this reason, those families that are connected to me in my lifetime – your families – stand in the realm of the royal family. If you live this kind of life, you will definitely pass into the level of the spirit world that corresponds to the degree to which you have perfected this life. And if you think that what I am talking about has nothing to do with you, then you are making a big mistake. Your families stand in the position to perfect the highest, the greatest, and the most noble desire in the world. That hope, that desire is that in the family, the grandfather becomes a king, that the father becomes a king, and that the children become kings, and that all three generations can stand in the position of the kings of the universe. This is the greatest hope. You have to realize again, you have to feel to your bones again, that you are actually in a position to stand at the highest summit perfecting the very pinnacle of human desire. (249-111, 1993.10.8)

3.2.2. Restoration of the right of the first son, the right of the parent and the right of kingship

Adam and Eve are the parents of humankind and at the same time, the king and queen of all nations. Because of the Fall, Adam and Eve lost the "three great rights" or "three great authorities" that we speak of today in the Unification Church.

Adam is the first son, the eldest son amongst all human beings. He held the right, that is, the authority of the eldest son. The eldest son is the one who becomes the father. First he becomes the parent, and then later on becomes the king. So what, then, are these "three great rights'? The first is the right or authority of the first son, and then you have the right and authority of the parent, and finally the right and authority of the king. This is the reason we human beings are born; to be endowed with these three great rights. (273-223, 1995. 10.29)

When we think of the Three Great Kingships, we have to include the concept of the first creator, the second creator and the third creator. Without this idea, the Three Great Kingships cannot be achieved or fulfilled. God represents the ancestor of the past, Adam and Eve,

the ancestors of the present, and the children of Adam and Eve, the ancestors of the future. So, the Three Great Kingships also need to include this concept of ancestors. Without this concept, the Three Great Kingships cannot be accomplished. After this, the concept of the realm of the royal families naturally follows, based on the reciprocal relationship established centering on the direct royal line. (270-287, 1995.7.16)

The final comprehensive conclusion of the providence of restoration is the restoration of the right of the eldest son, the restoration of the right of the parent, the restoration of the right of kingship, and the restoration of the right of the royal family. The purpose of the restoration of the right of the eldest son is the restoration of the right of the parent, the purpose of the restoration of the right of the parent is the restoration of the right of kingship, and the purpose of the restoration of the right of kingship is the restoration of the right of the royal family. These are the Four Great Realms of Heart.

Your grandparents, your parents and your own couple as the children symbolize the Three Great Kingships. The grandparents symbolize the past, your parents symbolize the present and your own couple symbolizes the future. Actually, your grandparents are, in a sense, special envoys of the spirit world sent to your homes. For this reason, families who humbly obey and follow the words of their grandparents most certainly prosper. (249-306, 1993.10.11)

The history of the providence of salvation is the history of working through the unity of Cain and Abel to find the mother and the father. Because they were lost, unless they are found and recovered, everything else will come to naught. We need to find the mother, then the father, and then the family. In this way, we come to establish, on the earth, the eternal ideal family. The first step is then to restore the right of the eldest son, and the second step is to restore the right of the parent. The right of kingship can only be restored when these two are united into one. Originally, Adam's family was meant to be a royal household. Adam and Eve were meant to be the king and queen, with the man symbolizing heaven and the woman symbolizing the earth. If Adam and Eve had not fallen and these two worlds, these two realms of kingship, had been perfected, they would have grown into the ideal family. That is the ideal of Adam's family. After this, the right of the royal family would have followed. (246-170, 1993.4.11)

What are these Three Great Kingships? The grandparents are the king and queen of the Kingdom of Heaven, the parents are the king and queen here on earth, and you yourselves are the kings and queens of the future. For this reason, you should humbly follow the teachings and instructions of your grandparents, who represent the spirit world, and also the teachings and instructions of your parents. Because it is even more important for you to walk the path of patriots even more than it is for you to walk

the way of filial children, you must obey humbly and absolutely.

The grandchildren, the children of Adam and Eve, were to receive love both from their parents and also from God, the grandparent. Adam and Eve only experienced the parental love of God; they were unable to receive the love of a grandparent. On the other hand, Adam's children were meant to receive the love of grandparents, and this is how the three generations were intended to be formed.

Only once the grandparents' love is received does horizontal expansion begin. The love needs to unfold through three stages. This, then, is a model. It is the four-position-foundation. These three generations must be connected, and for this reason, when grandchildren receive their grandparents' love, they are connected to the kingdom of spirit while they are still alive on the earth. They become the successors of the royalty of the kingdom of spirit, the heavenly kingdom, likewise, the successors of the royalty of the earth. (283-79, 1997.4.8)

The Fall passed through three generations. Our grandparents represent the Old Testament; our parents, the New Testament and we ourselves, the Completed Testament. Our children, on the other hand, proceed on into the era of the World. We need to connect all these things within the family. The problem is, Adam and Eve's family was in the position to achieve this, but in fact they lost the realms of the parents. They lost the right of the eldest son and they lost the right of kingship. However, we have now already restored back the right of the parent and the right of kingship. Because True Parents have laid out the path to restore the realm of parents, the right of the eldest son and the right of kingship, you are able to inherit them.

Because of this standard that exists centering on the right of kingship, you are in the position of tribal messiahs. The fact that I, representing the kingship of the nation, the kingship of the world and the kingship of Heaven, appointed you as clan or tribal messiahs means that you are tribal kings. You are tribal true parents. (210-270, 1990.12.25)

If Adam had not fallen, he would have been the firstborn grandson of the eldest son. However, this first opening, this first generation, namely Adam, ended in failure. As a result, the realm of the eldest grandson, the right of the parent, and the right of kingship, as the king of the universe, was all lost. You should understand that the final destination point of the providence of restoration is the movement for recovering these three realms. This is the conclusion. The purpose of the providence of restoration is for Adam to claim and hold the realm of the true parent, the realm of the true eldest son, and with these, recover the right of kingship of the spirit world and the physical world. The ancestor of humankind was meant to become that kind of person and individual. (208-272, 1990.11.20)

If our first human ancestors had not fallen, they would have become the son

and daughter of God, and the prince and princess of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world. That would have been a world-wide event. They would have been the beginning and the end, the Alpha and the Omega. But because good parents were unable to emerge from the alpha point, and instead evil parents emerged, everything needs to be wiped away. This is the reason that True Parents must emerge, that is, True Parents who are able to digest and resolve everything that started from the evil parents. (226-319, 1992.2.9)

You are meant to inherit the tradition of True Parents by becoming one with them. With the subject or core tradition in your family, you should establish a foundation through which you can guide all nations. Your family should be able to take on that kind of subject role. When you achieve this, you can be formally and substantially registered into the realm of the royal family of the spiritual kingdom. The Kingdom of Heaven is the place that you enter once you have achieved all this. In fact, the Kingdom of Heaven is not somewhere where just anyone can go. Three generations should be determined together to walk that way. Grandparents, father and mother, husband and wife, and then sons and daughters make four stages altogether. Within this framework, it is in the third generation that the husband-wife level is achieved. (228-295, 1992.7.5)

The first step is the restoration of the realm of brothers, the second step is the restoration of the realm of parents, and the third step is the restoration of the right of kingship. The democratic world doesn't have this concept of "king", does it? That world is based on a philosophy of brotherhood. It sees things horizontally, like a single plane. That's what I mean by a philosophy of brotherhood, and in this kind of world, there is continual fighting. People fight with each other, saying "this is yours, this is mine". This concept of fighting or struggle is very central to democracy, isn't it? For example, the government and the opposition fight against each other, and so forth. But what is the content of these struggles? What they are actually fighting over is the right of kingship. They struggle with each other, each being determined to win the kingship. What is the position or role of president? Isn't it a kind of kingship? But the kings in this sense come and go, and the result is often exploitation, and things don't really work out. But once a king on the absolute level comes forth, problems will disappear. The world of absolute peace will emerge. (205-172, 1990.9.1)

The political system of the democratic world is a system of conflict and struggle. This is the reason why we have to rise to up to the position of parents. It's the only way we can stop the fighting. With the parents at the center, all the brothers become united. That's the only way. First, we need to find the True Parents, and then it becomes possible to find true children, true nations and true peace. There is no other way. (205-190, 1990.9.1)

Godism is the ideology that centers on the True Parents. Godism belongs to the vertical realm, and that vertical aspect needs to fuse together with the horizontal plane so that all forms within the world also fuse together. This then manifests as the global or spherical ideal. Love is actually a spherical form. That spherical form connects with and resonates with the vertical dimension anywhere and everywhere. The surface of that form becomes the realm of the ideal. For this reason, the everyday world, that is, the surface realm or area, has no foundation to complain. When a soccer ball rolls over and over and eventually stops, each and every surface aspect of it has an equal element that connects with the vertical. By the same standard, with this value system, we can reach up to and arrive at a world of equality and balance. It is important to understand this. (218-347, 1991.8.22)

Unification should be brought centering on Godism. True parents are the king and queen of the family. This family is naturally and automatically connected to other families. From there, the tribal or clan king emerges. This tribe or clan is also connected to other tribes and clans, and they come together to form an ethic group, and so the king of the ethnic group emerges. The same process unfolds for the nation, world and cosmos, and in the same way, the kings of each of these realms connect together and ultimately connect to God. In this way, God stands as the King of kings. (205-189, 1990.9.1)

3.3. Perfecting the realm of the royal family

3.3.1. The Kingdom of Heaven is the destination of the realm of the royal family of Love

The Kingdom of Heaven is the place that the royal family enters after they have become princes and princesses centering on God's love, and have received and experienced the love of the king and queen. Christians today say that they will go to heaven by believing in Jesus, don't they? I'm very much inclined to tell them to just pass over to the spirit world and see what happens. They'll find out quick enough whether or not Rev. Moon is right or wrong. What they say just doesn't make sense. That's the problem. Up until now, no religion has been able to provide an explanation that makes real sense. (237-172, 1992.11.16)

Who are Adam and Eve? If God is the king of the world of creation, then Adam and Eve are the object partners of His love, and the crown prince and princess who are supposed to inherit the realm and world of the royal family. That's what they are – a prince and princess. That's who the unfallen Adam and Eve are. And this is important, to understand this: that Adam and Eve were the firstborn son and daughter of God who is the King of the entire universe. (229-57, 1992.4.9)

Those who enter the heavenly kingdom should go through the gate of the

prince and princess, as the children of God's love and direct lineage, and as the royalty of the heavenly kingdom. What, then, is the Kingdom of Heaven? The Kingdom of Heaven is the place where the scion of the royal lineage go; the place where the royal family goes. We should all become the children of God's direct and secondary lineages on this earth, centering on the exemplary standard of true brotherly love and unity, and from a position of having accomplished and created a model clan and nation, become the embodiment of the honor and dignity of the royal family. The Kingdom of Heaven is the place in spirit that we naturally shift to after having lived this way during our earthly lives. (236-204, 1992.11.8)

All of you should now become part of the royal family centering on true love. If we think that Adam was the son of God's direct lineage, his brothers and sisters belonged to God's secondary lineage and were meant to become the citizens or people of God's nation. From this perspective, we have to become full of the love of the prince and princesses of the realm of Heaven, and have to proudly embody the dignity and honor of that position, and also our parents, too, have to proudly uphold that dignity all the course of their lives. Therefore, let each and every one of us fully understand that the original homeland is this place that we should enter after having lived this way, in other words, the Kingdom of Heaven. (220-219, 1991.10.19)

You cannot enter the heavenly kingdom without having loved the world. You should love the world as your own and love all of humankind as your own family. Unless you feel the pain and suffering of the world in the same way that God does, you cannot become the princes or princesses of the heavenly realm. That's who God is, and that's how He feels, so you need to be able to stand in the position of the princes and princesses of that kind of Father. You need to accomplish restoration of the right of the eldest son, the right of the parent and the right of kingship. After accomplishing this, you can restore the realm of the royal family.

Unless you pass through all these gates, you cannot meet God in the original world. So the important question is whether or not Heaven and Earth are able to greet you. You yourself have to find and become one with that original root that I've just described, and be welcomed by all things, with no barriers to being welcomed at all, or to your traveling through every place of the great creation of freedom that God has created. If you can become such a person, then no matter where you go, everyone will bow their heads in acknowledgement and respect before you as you walk by, whether you go to the highest heaven or even the deepest hell. (253-322, 1994.1.30)

Without the restoration of the right of the eldest son, there can be no restoration of the parents. Since the original brother and sister were lost, we can only be elevated to the position of the parents on the foundation of having found the

original brother and sister once again. Restoration is done by going the reverse way. Once the parents are found again, the parents, that is, Adam and Eve, become the king and queen. Then the right of kingship centers on the tribe and a clan of the secondary lineage then emerges centering on that right of kingship, so that finally these together form a single clan or people. Next, this develops into the realm of the royal clan or tribe. This is the final conclusion and consummation of the entire providence of restoration. Because this is the conclusion, everyone needs to follow this path and fulfill these steps. Only then can we truly become the sons and daughters of the True Parents. (246-146, 1993.4.7)

The Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships must be realized in our families. People who achieve perfection in this way do not need to believe in Jesus, nor do they need Rev. Moon. They can simply go directly before the throne of God. The day that this happens is the day when the realm of the royal family of God's nation begins. So in order for the royal family to begin, you yourselves need to live this way, and then have your lineage connected to mine, through my sons and daughters. Do you understand what I mean? The only way to be connected to the realm of the royal family is when we become related by marriage through my sons and daughters. (238-48, 1992.11.19)

How can the family be perfected? The family can be perfected by living the life of the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships and the realm of the royal family. This leads to the perfection of the family ideal, and the perfection of the ideal of God's creation. And you should also become a member of the king's family. The king's family has to be united centered on the king. And this is what the Kingdom of Heaven is, namely, the place where you go after having lived within the realm of the royal family. After you have lived there, you simply move or transmigrate naturally to the Kingdom of Heaven. (244-48, 1993.1.29)

Only after realizing the Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships, can we enter the realm of the royal family, or the Royal Clan. The position of true love that centers on these four great realms and Three Great Kingships is what we mean by the realm of the royal family. Once we achieve this level, the road to the Kingdom of Heaven is completely open. And this was God's ideal for Adam's family. It is in that ideal that the true son and daughter are perfected, and that the brothers and sisters are perfected. That is where the husband and wife are perfected and where the parents are perfected. (244-310, 1993.3.1)

The restoration of the right of the eldest son leads to the restoration of the right of the parent, and the restoration of the right of the parent leads to the restoration of the right of kingship. By restoring the right of kingship, the realm of the royal family naturally comes into being. This term "royal family" refers to

the living environment, that is, the stage of life in which life is carried out, and we have now entered that kind of era. So we get the victories and step over one by one in a reverse course. After we have arrived back, what will we do? Because we lost the family, we have to find the family. (235-42, 1992.8.28)

The people of the heavenly kingdom, the tribe and the citizens of the heavenly kingdom all start with the royal family. Therefore, in order for us to go back to our original position, we have to experience the realm of the heart of the royal family, centering on the true love of the heavenly kingdom. This, then, is God's pain and anguish that this content was never accomplished or completed. God's bitter pain is that He was not able to raise up or truly love his prince and his princess, and also that he was unable to have grandchildren from a royal lineage.

As Adam and Eve grew up, they failed to fulfill love in the position of a prince and princess who could inherit God's lineage. They fell while they were still growing, in the realm of indirect dominion that is governed by the results of the principle. Accordingly, they were unable to become the counterparts with whom God could directly discuss his concerns. He was unable to discuss and share with them concerning the future course of history, and the creation of heaven and earth. These are things he wanted to discuss with them, as a father and son would naturally want to do. (220-47, 1991.10.14)

If our first human ancestors had not fallen, they would have become God's direct children centering on the right of kingship of heaven and earth, the right of the parent of heaven and earth and the right of the eldest son of heaven and earth. Their family would have become the royal palace of earth and the royal palace of heaven. Furthermore, all the brothers and sisters born to the secondary lineage would have received their royal tradition and expanded it out horizontally. All those who then became one with this central royal tradition and practiced it throughout their lives would have thus entered into the Kingdom of Heaven.

From this viewpoint, then, what is the Kingdom of Heaven? The irrefutable conclusion is that the Kingdom of Heaven is the destination realm arrived at by the families and clans who, centering on God's love, live through and pass through this royal tradition on while on earth. For this reason, if we consider that only those who live the life of the royal family, whether as God's direct family line or as the peripheral secondary family line, can enter the Kingdom of Heaven, we must also conclude that all the families of humankind must live, centered on love, the tradition of the royal family. (218-221, 1991.7.29)

Up to this very day, the Unification Church has been walking the path of history, the history of the age of indemnity. And the purpose for us having walked this path of the history of indemnity has been to restore the

right of the eldest son, the new right of the parent, the new right of kingship, and the new realm of the royal family. Centering on what? Not centering on today's human-centric world, but rather centering on God. These realms are not to be restored centering on any existing kingship, or on any existing family. No, we are talking about the right of the eldest son centering on God, the realm of the True Parents centering on God, the right of kingship, centering on God, and the realm of the royal family, centering on God. This has been the hope that humankind has longed for, all the time up until the present day. (230-171, 1992.5.3)

The people that I am looking for are those who can be the royal family of the heavenly kingdom. You have to become seeds. You have to be seeds that can be stored in the granary, passing through the cold north winter for the following year, and in the next spring, with bright sunlight and warm spring breeze can be able to sprout, taking up the right direction, and demonstrating within yourself the creative force. Only when you become such seeds – seeds that demonstrate the power of life – can you become the new buds of life. (180-62, 1988.8.20)

3.3.2. What is the realm of the royal family?

What do we mean by "the realm of the royal family'? In Adam's family there was Cain, the older brother and Abel, the younger brother. Cain and Abel were born as the children of Adam and Eve. That's Cain and Abel. In all environments, no matter what, there must always be a subject partner and object partner, and Cain and Abel must become one in the same way that the subject and object become one. Centering on the family united in this way, other families in the fallen world should also, in turn, become one with it. This unity is what we mean by "the realm of the royal family."

Because the elder brother is the central figure, he should stand in the center and put his direct brothers and sisters on the right and those to be restored on the left. After this, he should bring them into oneness. Because the Fall occurred, this task has to be accomplished. If the Fall had not occurred, then all that would have been needed was the unity between the brothers and sisters in Adam's family. Thus, in order to save the fallen world, the unity between Cain and Abel must be put in the Abel position with the world of Satan in the Cain position, and the standard of restoring the right of the eldest son, the right of the parent and the right of kingship then established. When those in the younger brother's position obey and submit to this standard, then the realm of the royal family is established.

Thus the sons and daughters of the fallen world can stand in the position of the younger children by going through the children of direct lineage, and in this way return to the position of the eldest son, and be able to live together with them in the Kingdom of Heaven

on earth and in heaven. This is what we mean by "the realm of the royal family." (270-260, 1995.7.16)

The realm of the royal family does not belong to one's own sons and daughters. The people of the fallen world were originally meant to be the unfallen first princes and princesses. But through the Fall, they became entangled with Satan, and with the right of the eldest son in Satan's world destroyed God's ideal for the heavenly kingdom. To resolve this, the people in Abel's position have to climb over the many hills of suffering, heartache and bitter pain, and by pioneering the heavenly way in Satan's world, lead Satan's people to a voluntary and natural surrender. By doing this, they should then bring those in the eldest son's position in the fallen world down to the position of the second son, and rise themselves from the second son's position up to the right of the eldest son, and centering on that bring complete and total transformation to everything in heaven and earth. It was from that position that the current foundation centering on True Parents emerged. (264-195, 1994.10.9)

The "realm of the royal family" means dealing with fallen humanity as the second princes and princesses. As in the case of Leah, the first wife of Jacob, when she had to stand in the position of the concubine and Rachel became the first or main wife of Jacob, and Leah had to attend her as such, without going into that position of the concubine, she could not be restored to the side of God. No one knew that this kind of amazing reversal of roles had to take place; that this kind of path of exchange of positions had to be walked. Because this kind of principle is at work within the process of restoration, this kind of phenomena also took place at the time of Jesus. This kind of providential standard, which centers on the right of the eldest son, the realm of the parent, the right of kingship and the realm of the royal family, all had to be restored through indemnity at the time of Jesus. Things had to be fixed exactly as they were lost. If three holes were punched in the bucket in triangular form, then three holes had to be blocked up in triangular form, for example. Because Satan invaded and Heaven's side sustained damage, God's side also has to inflict that damage on Satan's side and restore it through indemnity. That is what restoration through indemnity is referring to. (262-203, 1994.7.23)

When we get to Pledge Number three, it talks about the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships, and the realm of the royal family. This is like a textbook, and shows the pattern that should be fulfilled by everyone. So what is this "realm of the royal family"? "The realm of the royal family" expresses the intention to save all the people of the satanic world who, in the position of the eldest son, have been striving to destroy God. After restoring the right of the eldest son, we should love those people like our own younger brothers and enter the Kingdom of Heaven tak-

ing them along with us. What we have to remember here is that we have to bring them along with us. We cannot go alone. That is why we have to restore the right of the eldest son. So that Cain in the satanic world becomes our younger brother. Of course, those are to be our younger brothers are much greater in number than we ourselves.

All of humankind is included in that number. They will stand in the position of the younger son, once the right of the eldest son is reversed.

So, all of you, that is, your sons and daughters, have to bring all the people of Satan's world along with them into the Kingdom of Heaven. You have to bring them along with you and not separate them out. This is the same for your father, and this also applies to all generations that follow. This must continue up until Satan himself is restored. This is what we mean when we talk about the realm of the royal family, and this is why it has been particularly included within the Family Pledge. (265-253, 1994.11.23)

Originally, the realm of the royal family was not supposed to exist, but it exists now to make the sons and daughters of the fallen world, that is, to make the devil into younger brothers and sisters. Without standing as part of the realm of the royal family, Cain in the satanic world cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Also, Cain should not think that his losing the position of the right of the eldest son means that he is banished, even though he destroyed God's ideal from the position of the eldest son while standing in the realm of the love of Heaven, that is, the second son's realm. Since he comes to stand in the position of the younger son, he enters an environment where he can be loved by his elder siblings and by his parents and, after receiving love from them, he also can enter the unfallen realm, the Kingdom of Heaven. The Kingdom of Heaven is the destination of those who experience the love of the royal family. This ideal model family has been established now, but the rest of the world still remains to be restored. (267-151, 1995.1.4)

What is the realm of the royal family? Now, we have nothing but families, so what do we mean by this "realm of the royal family'? This means Cain. We have to save Cain. Standing in the place representing the path of the true prince, we have to pull the kinship of this world, the fallen misshapen kingship, in the direction of heaven and enter with them into heaven. We have to save Cain and Abel and make them our younger brothers, teaching them all the traditions of the royal lineage. Once they stand in this position, we have to lead them forward, so that their descendants on this earth can be connected to the realm of the royal family, as the scion of the royal line. Unless the Cain world on this earth is bound together as brothers, the realm of the royal family will have to continue to remain on the earth.

Therefore, you must not forget Cain. It is not your own family that will form the realm of the royal family. Your family has to unite with the Cain families,

inherit the kingship of this world, and set those families up in the younger sibling position. Then, you have to bring them to the realm together with you. That is what we are talking about. Once this is done, Cain and Abel become united and their positions are reversed. That is what we mean when we talk about the realm of the royal family. (283-80, 1997.4.8)

Your family is not the one to fulfill this role of the realm of the royal family. Absolutely, Cain and Abel have to unite. Cain and Abel together have Cain-type parents and Cain-type grandparents, don't they? So you should educate them, and in doing so, bring that family of three generations to a natural and voluntary surrender, centering on the sons of the Cain realm. And when your own family goes ahead as the realm of the royal family, you can bring them to the realm in the position of your own younger siblings. That is what I mean by "the realm of the royal family." (283-80, 1997.4.8)

What is the realm of the royal family? It doesn't mean the direct children of Adam and Eve. There is still this fallen world to be restored. Although you may have been restored yourselves, still, centering on the Blessed Families, centering on your own children, the Cain realm remains to be restored, as does the tribal messiah realm, and also the Cain realm on the world level. By restoring them, you need to rise to the position of the eldest son. As Abel who was opposed by Satan, you need to restore the position of the eldest son on Heaven's side, that is, the right of the eldest son, and put your elder brother, who previously stood in the eldest son's place, in the younger brother's position. You do this, then take your brother along and enter heaven together. When I am talking about the realm of the royal family, I'm talking about it centering on the responsibility you have to do this.

Because Cain and Abel became enemies on the horizontal level, they have to become one on the horizontal level, too. Because the order of relationship was wrongfully reversed, Abel has to become the elder brother, Cain has to become the younger brother, so that the Cain-Abel brothers are restored centering on the original son and daughter of God. Once this is achieved, they must enter the Kingdom of Heaven together. That's why you have to return to your home town, put into practice the way of filial sons and daughters, the way of loyal patriots, the way of the saints and the way of divine sons and daughters, and complete all the formula course contents that God originally intended to fulfill within the first family. Once that is done, everything will be complete. (266-147, 1994.12.22)

The right of the eldest son comes first, then the right of the parent, the right of kingship, and then the realm of the royal family. What do we mean by this term "the realm of the royal family"? The situation God encountered in the Garden of Eden was a very serious problem. Although He wanted to fulfill His will, he saw the appearance of a woman and

children who were very much other than those he wanted to see. The history of tragedy and misfortune began from this point, and because no one understood or knew about this, it has been impossible to resolve, up until today. On one side, we have five billion human beings, while on the other – God's side – we have only a handful of sons and daughters.

If you consider my situation in this case, I have only thirteen children. That's all; only thirteen. So how can I resolve the Cain-Abel problem? Where can I find the solution? The only way it can be resolved is through loving the enemy. Abel has to educate everyone through love. After restoring, through indemnity, the right of the eldest son, Abel has to recognize and establish everyone else as fulfilling the realm of the royal family. What I'm telling you is that you have to recognize the Cain world as your own royal family. (249-221, 1993.10.10)

I have built a way for you to rise to the position of the younger brother based on the restoration of the right of the eldest son. Even though the body of Adam – that is, humanity – became deformed and corrupted, the vertical Lord at his Second Advent comes and restores the right of the eldest son, and then, by recognizing and establishing you in the position of the realm of the younger son, brings both the first Adam and the second Adam to stand in the position of one, unified body. This is the starting point and origin from which the realm of the royal family emerges.

What, then, is this "royal family"? Although all human beings have arrived in this world in the position of the elder children on the satanic side, they can all be recognized as a part of the royal family, that is, the younger siblings, if and when they are acknowledged through their desire to accomplish and support the restoration of the right of the eldest son on heaven's side. What this all means is that they will be treated exactly as the body of unfallen Adam. In other words, they become younger siblings. The Lord at his Second Coming is the "eldest son Adam', and the realm of the royal family is the "younger son Adam." (253-89, 1994.1.7)

The vertical kingship is the subject partner. When this vertical right of kingship and the horizontal realm of the royal family become one, they create a larger unified world, and this becomes the place where they connect to God. They become connected to the highest level or supreme partner. This is what the ideal world is, a place where, in the position of a minus, we can grow and develop through unity with something bigger in the position of a plus. This, then, is the formula for re-creation. It is a concept taught in the Unification Church, and frankly, it is the best explanation there is. That is why, whether they are the president of a nation or whatever, everyone has to move ahead following behind Rev. Moon. (246-263, 1993.4.18)

Even God himself was unable to experience and own this realm of the royal family. But once I achieve the right

of kingship, and restore a nation, I will go forward and establish the realm of the royal family. Things will be put in order and the correct axis established by means of the heavenly constitution. At the moment, the members of the Unification Church still don't understand about this. You wonder, "What on earth is he talking about?" Yet, there is no such realm of the royal family in the spirit world. That is what we mean when we say that the Kingdom of Heaven is empty. It is empty because the central core has not been established yet. That is the incredible reality of the situation. (270-279, 1995.7.16)

The five billion people of humankind are the relatives of the royal lineage, the relatives who will inherit the right of kingship that flows out from the direct lineage of the eldest son. Those who experience that heart of the realm of the royal clan are those who will enter the Kingdom of Heaven. For this reason, there has to be a royal family realm that extends horizontally throughout the entire world, and through that, we have to experience a unified, global, realm of heart that substantiates that very ideal. We have to live a way of life that allows us to experience that. Once this takes place, the True Parents can stand as True Parents above the position of the eldest son, in other words, the kingship of the True Parents. Centering on that kingship, we have to lead ahead the royal family, who stands in a peripheral position. This is what the Kingdom of Heaven is: the place entered into by the members of that family, taking along with us that royal family, and all the while attending the right of kingship, centering on the Parents, centering on the right of kingship. It is by experiencing that realm of heart that we enter the Kingdom of Heaven. (247-265, 1993.5.9)

You will be able to understand from my words just how far you actually are in your relationship with me. I am not simply your teacher, someone whom you can meet in a casual manner or without the right preparation or attitude. The only way you can enter the eternal mainstream world is if I resolve and prepare the core lineage of lineages, and the core heart of hearts, from the position of the core mainstream itself.

Because God is love, He wants to engraft the children of the adulterer, the descendants of the fallen lineage into the realm of inheritance of the eternal mainstream, then to store them in the storehouse of the Kingdom of Heaven, recognizing them as having the same value of the fruits of the true olive tree. When we talk about the realm of the royal family, we are talking about the people who stand in that position. (249-319, 1993.10.11)

Originally, all sons and daughters born here on earth are to become part of the realm of the royal family. Thus, once the fully completed Era of the Completed Testament and the fully completed Era of the True Parents are proclaimed, God will regard the entire five-billion-children of humankind as the realm of

the royal family. And although He will recognize them as the royal family, at the same time, he will not simply recognize them as being fully qualified. Rather, God will allow people to enter the realm of the royal family, but for them to actually become members of that royal family, there will need to be a record and history of them having loved Abel more than anyone, based on the principle of restoration through indemnity, from the level of the individual to the level of the entire world. (251-169, 1993.10.17)

3.3.3. The Realm of the royal family does not include the direct children

The realm of the royal family does not include the children from my direct lineage. My direct children stand in a position that has transcended indemnity. Up until the present day, fallen people have been using the authority of the right of the eldest son to take everybody to hell, but now, having relinquished the right of the eldest son, they stand in the position of the realm of the younger son. Originally, everyone should have been in the position of the eldest sons of the royal family. At any rate, now, because the fallen world has come to stand in the younger son's position, God recognizes them as being equally part of the royal family on God's side. They are included on God's side, and because of this, any conditions through which Satan or anyone falling under Satan's dominion can accuse God have been totally obliterated. That is why we can state that God is fair and just. The mission that stands before each of you now, then, is to achieve individually, centering on your own self and your own clan, centering on your own nation. (258-229, 1994.3.17)

What is the realm of the royal family? If you think of yourselves as the children of my direct lineage you are making a bad mistake. From the viewpoint of having completed restoration, there are restored women and restored Cain and Abel, and then there is Cain and Abel within my own direct lineage, Mother and the children. These are two different lines. God has been restoring the world, so once this is completed, how will he deal with the people from the Cain-realm? He cannot simply kill them off. Originally, all the people in this position would have become the royal family, the royal family of Adam. But because they were dragged towards Satan and pulled to his side, they need to now be re-engrafted into their original rights once they are restored to their original state. That's why we have to connect or include the restored women and children into the realm of the royal family. What I'm explaining is that we have to bring all of humankind into creating this realm of the royal family. (256-327, 1994.3.14)

There are two sets of laws for the royal family. The royal family has to follow the law of the nation as well the laws or rules of the royal family itself. In order for the five billion descendants of Adam alive today to stand in the realm of the royal family, they have to become absolutely

one with the children of my direct lineage in a relationship of Cain and Abel. Actually, you are not qualified to just come directly to me. The Blessed families do not belong to Satan, or to anywhere else except to Heaven's side, but they exist as Cain and Abel, the eldest son and the younger son.

The question is how many of you will be chosen. Even though the entire population of humankind might belong to the realm of the royal family, the real question is whether they have a direct connection to me or not. By having your children marry into my direct lineage, the realm of the royal family will be unified and eventually Cain and Abel will disappear. If you ask what the highest hope of all the women sitting here could be, the answer is having someone from their descendants marry into my direct lineage. (249-114, 1993.10.8)

The direct children of the Lord at his Second Coming do not have to establish indemnity conditions. They are not restricted or "caught" by indemnity conditions. The indemnity conditions are rather left to the women and the sons of the Cain realm here on earth, not the children of my direct lineage. This also applies to Mother. In fact, the same reality applies also to Sung-jin and his mother. The entire Cain realm is actually recognized as the realm of the royal family. When the Cain realm is placed in the position of the restored younger brother and regarded and treated as the royal family, Satan has no way to make accusations.

Why will Satan have to recognize and acknowledge this? Simply because there will be no condition for him to claim them as his children. If we do not acknowledge all of humankind in the position of the realm of the royal family, it means that there will remain within Satan's sphere a group of people not included in that royal family realm. In this case, Satan will continue to have a base for existence. However, because we accept everyone in humankind as the realm of the royal family, Satan has no choice but to cease to exist. This, then, is a very important point, and you must not be confused about it. (260-156, 1994.5.2)

Throughout history, numerous religious founders, saints and sages have emerged, up until the present day, yet none of them has had any real connection with true love. Jesus Christ came to this world as the Messiah in order to resolve this problem, and he invested himself to establish the foundation of "the bride" and "the bridegroom." So what exactly then does the Messiah have to do after coming to this world? He has to establish a new realm of the royal family, all the while heading in the direction of a new family, a new clan, a new nation and a new world.

Who is the direct ancestor of the realm of the royal family? The direct ancestor is the one who comes as the unfallen, direct son of God's original true love, standing on the foundation of true life, true love, and true lineage. He is the seed. Once a root extends out from that seed, it will be the central core root,

and this will grow into the core branch and core flower bud. As the tree of this seed grows vertically, it will correspondingly expand in a horizontal direction, so that the family and tribe are connected to it, as are the ethnic group, the nation and the entire world. (263-194, 1994.10.4)

Thus far, not even one person on earth has been born through the True Parents. Those who are born to this world without a connection to the lineage of the True Mother and the True Father, that is, the True Parents, have no way to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. From the viewpoint of God's ideal of creation, we are meant to receive the lineage of True Parents, to attend them as the owners of the kingship of the heavenly kingdom on earth and in heaven, and to live together with them as their relatives, centering on true love. Then, after having grown up in this way, we are meant to marry and leave our descendants behind, and in a very natural way pass on into the spirit world, thus entering the Kingdom of Heaven. What this means is that anyone who doesn't have real, tangible experiences of love centering on this realm the royal family cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. It's actually quite clear. (250-49, 1993.10.11)

The process of dealing with everything centering on the ideal of love has formed the path of history. This is the mainstream ideology or thought of the history of God's providence. What again are the key points of that mainstream thought? In general, we can say there are four primary aspects. The key aspects of the mainstream thought in this fallen world or the mainstream thought that preceded creation are as follows: Firstly, the restoration of the right of the eldest son, or the establishment of the right of the eldest son. Secondly, the restoration or the establishment of the realm of the parent, thirdly, the restoration or the establishment of the right of kingship, and finally the restoration or establishment of the realm of the royal family. Each of these is included within that mainstream thought.

Adam was meant to be the eldest son, and Adam's brothers and sisters were meant to be the royal family. If Adam had not fallen, he would have established within his own family his position as the eldest son and his position as the king. At the same time, his younger brothers would have formed the royal family. His elder sister or younger siblings, etc, would have become the royal family, and this right of the eldest son, Adam's right of the first son, would have continued for hundreds and thousands of generation, eventually forming a nation and the whole world, finally becoming all of humankind.

This is the reason why the mainstream kingship has to be one, and why, centering on the realm of the royal family, the right of kingship and the realm of the parent, everything needs to come together to form one world. The root for all this is one, single root. There cannot be two. (247-134, 1993.5.1)

3.3.4. Towards the era of nation-building centering on the realm of the royal family

You are meant to inherit the tradition of True Parents by becoming one with them. With the subject or core tradition in your family, you should establish a foundation through which you can guide all nations. Your family should be able to take on that kind of subject role. When you achieve this, you can be formally and substantially registered into the realm of the royal family of the spiritual kingdom. The Kingdom of Heaven is the place that you enter once you have achieved all this. In fact, the Kingdom of Heaven is not somewhere where just anyone can go. Three generations should be determined together to walk that way. Grandparents, father and mother, husband and wife and then sons and daughters; this makes four stages altogether, but within this framework it is in the third generation that the husband-wife level is achieved. (228-295, 1992.7.5)

Adam and Eve were not able to receive from God their education as His son and daughter, as His prince and princess. Nor were they able to receive full education as brother and sister. Had they received their education to be true siblings, all of the world could have been united through their establishing true brotherly and sisterly relationships with all people. Isn't humanity in some sense God's brethren? Centering on the first-born of the eldest son, all of the siblings of Adam could spread out horizontally to form a tribe, a nation, and eventually have expanded to cover the whole world. In this way, human beings were originally meant to live in the royal palace of Heaven and experience the heart of the realm of the prince and princess, that is, the realm of the royal family, while here on earth. By living in this way, they would become naturally qualified to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. The Kingdom of Heaven is not a place where just anyone can go. (226-130, 1992.2.2)

We are now living in the age in which we have to establish God's people, centering on the realm of royal family of the heavenly kingdom. In the future, a time will come when everything in the fallen world will be bulldozed flat and this ideal will be established. When I go out to the world and teach God's word and teach God's Principle, there cannot be any Koreans or any Unification Church that stands in the way or blocks that road. That kind of resistance needs to be removed, roots and all.

When I look back on the cruel times when I had to abandon my own parents, even cut off my wife and son, I just have to close my eyes and push ahead. When the time comes to take a strong stand in order to establish the traditions of the Kingdom of Heaven, you have to have the guts to do so. (184-243, 1989.1.1)

What I am talking about seems like a dream, doesn't it? So why don't you go out and see. Can those who have inherited the devil's life and lineage, based on his fallen love, enter into the realm of the

royal family, centering on God's true love, that realm that has been lifted up and created in unity centering on the realm of God's life and lineage, and based upon his true love? Those who have inherited the devil's life and lineage automatically connect to hell, and once they are in hell, can they even raise their eyes upward? They cannot even look up. Only after several decades or generations might they be able to take a look in the right direction. Why is this? Because everyone has an original heart that reveres and longs for their parent, and because everyone still possesses the sense of attraction that directs them towards true love, they can look up in the right direction after several years, when their own fortune or destiny correlates to that destiny inside them, so that their minds and bodies resonate with it. The only reason this is possible is because Adam and Eve grew to the age of fifteen or sixteen. If they had not grown that much, then there would be no hope at all. It would be utterly impossible. So we are still faced with this reality, this barrier of sorrow and grief. An important question, then, is how we can break ourselves away from this situation and establish the standard that resolves all this. (220-18, 1991.10.13)

Originally, husband and wife should speak to each other in the most respectful, honorific way. In aristocratic or noble families, husbands and wives do not speak rough language to each other. Korea is a nation with such a tradition, and this corresponds to heavenly law. In fact, heavenly law is even more stringent than that. The tradition within Korean aristocracy did not include or connect to God. It included the concept of "nation', but even so, it was not connected to the law of heaven and earth. For this reason, Korea and Korean people have to learn from the Unification Church. Otherwise, they have no way to enter the realm of the royal family. (253-323, 1994.1.30)

I stand in a position to correct all of the wrongdoings and misdeeds of both men and women. Even if they bend only slightly from the Principle, Satan still tries to catch them with his net. He stakes his claim, saying "this person is flawed and malformed in such and such a way, so I have the right to take him!" That's why True Parents have to straighten out all the misdoings of people. True Parents have to lead them in the right direction throughout the lives of these men and women. How can they do it? Through the Four Great Realms of Heart. It is at this point that you can experience the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingships and the realm of the royal family. (246-146, 1993.4.7)

Even if a highway has been built, it doesn't help you any to have a driver's license if you do not own a car, or even have money to buy gasoline. All of you should be able to take care of this by yourselves. You should try to resemble the family of Rev. Moon. Your family is like the vehicle. The vehicle needs a driver who can drive. You need to learn to drive and you have to make money to run the car, and so on. You should not

be indebted to others. If you are indebted, you will be ashamed of yourself in the spirit world. So instead you should think about how you can benefit others, no matter what your circumstances. Otherwise, you will not be able to enter the realm of the royal family. The Kingdom of Heaven is actually a place that is quite scientifically organized. That is why each family is a micro-unit of the Kingdom of Heaven. (246-79, 1993.3.23)

Section 4. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Four

Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation, and perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness, by centering on true love.

4.1. God's ideal of creation

Family Pledge number four states: "Our family… pledges to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation, and perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness, by centering on true love"! It is from here that happiness arises. Happiness, freedom and the ideal are realized in the family of the ideal of creation desired by God. (260-305, 1994.5.19)

God's ideal is that the world becomes one family and one household. As it is a place where the people who have realized the four great realms of heart and the three great kingships are gathered, it is one family and cannot be two. Through forming the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, we make the world become one family. (260-191, 1994.5.8)

What is God's will taught by the Unification Church? It is to realize His ideal of creation. In order to fulfill God's will we must realize His ideal of creation before our individual perfection. Where should this ideal of creation be realized? It should be realized in the family through the individual. It must be accomplished within your families. (170-61, 1987.11.8)

What is the ideal of creation? In the Unification Church, we say it is the completion of the four-position foundation by Adam and Eve. That – from the viewpoint of God's will and creation – would have been the fulfillment of His will. For it to be complete there had to be a perfected Adam and perfected Eve. If a man and a woman thus perfected had joined together and reproduced perfected children, an embodiment of the ideal of creation with complete victory – a subject partner or a perfected human being as the center of the created world – the realm of human perfection would have been realized. As God and His love were linked to this, all the ideals He had sought to create would have been realized. All the ideals of creation would have been realized if a true Adam and true Eve – that is, a perfected Adam and perfected Eve – perfected children,

and a family based on the four-position foundation laid before God, had been linked to His love. (164-9, 1987.5.3)

What is it that will remain in the end? The relationship of God and human beings in love will remain. This is how we should see it. The unchanging love between God and human beings – this law of love – cannot be changed by anyone. Nor can any force change it. It is through such love that the relationships among human beings and their relationship to God will remain. What kind of world is that world? It is called God's Kingdom on earth. It is the world of the Kingdom of Heaven, and after you have lived there, you ascend to the eternal ideal life in heaven, and this is called God's Kingdom in heaven. We should always have such a concept. (164-9, 1987.5.3)

For us, God's will means realizing His ideal of creation. Then what is the ideal of creation? It is the completion of the four-position foundation as revealed in the Divine Principle. Such a definition is given. Then what is that four-position foundation? It of course refers to parents and children, that is, God, Adam and Eve, and their children. Then what is the center of that foundation? It is neither God nor Adam and Eve, nor the children. You are talking about the four-position foundation, but what does it have at the center to make a connection? What determines its center? This is the question. It is neither God, nor Adam and Eve, nor the children. Only true love can determine the center. (132-107, 1984.5.27)

The true family, in which parents and children have attained perfect oneness of love, is eternal. It is eternal and at the same time absolute. The origin of that love is unique, unchanging and absolute. Such love does not exist just in God, or just in the father or in the mother; it is established on the foundation of the family. The trust in the family based on love is absolute because love is absolute. Next, this is absolute in all relationships. An invasion of one means the destruction of all, and so this cannot be allowed. Thus, each family member within the four-position foundation must guard against the possibility of love being invaded, even to the point of self-sacrifice. It is most fearful for the foundation of love to be shattered. This single nucleus expands to become the world. From Adam's family, his son's family should appear, and the family of the parents and that of the son must become as one. When these four-position foundations come into being, they will eventually become four-position foundations of the future spirit world. (106-57, 1979.12.9)

4.2. The universal family encompassing heaven and earth

4.2.1. The basis of the universal family encompassing heaven and earth: the family

Humankind, born from Adam and Eve as the true parents, would have

formed an extended family and thereby a peaceful world of the Adamic cultural realm. Accordingly, at the conclusion of the history of restoration, a true family based on true parents and true love will be established as the hope of humankind and at the same time the hope of God. This true family will serve as the source of true love and true life and the starting point of the peace and happiness of humankind. (294-67, 1998.6.11)

The family mentioned in this, "… build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation…," is a great family. Isn't it formed through the establishment of the realm of the royal unfallen family? That has not been realized. Through the standard of peace whereby the members of the royal family are connected, they should become a kinship possessing the friendship and love of the great fraternity of the cosmos. They are to form the universal family encompassing heaven and earth. Then, since that family has been formed, God will also enjoy freedom and peace. God and His sons and daughters will not be obstructed. Freedom and peace will not be obstructed. Next, unity will not be obstructed. What is next? Don't you pledge to realize a world of happiness? Everything is there. Yet even after it has been built, the heavenly world is still left out. The fallen ancestors still do not have a connection of heart. (283-82, 1997.4.8)

What is Family Pledge number four? It pertains to the universal family encompassing heaven and earth. All human beings are brothers and sisters – one lineage. We must protect it like God. Even though we are sitting in His royal palace, we must fulfill pledge number four. We must form the universal family and realize the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness. I have such a heart. I am an advocate of the universal family. I must plant freedom, happiness, unity and peace. What does this mean? It is to reveal my history. It is the ultimate goal of my life. You should know it clearly. (280-35, 1996.10.13)

We need a model for grandparents and parents, a model for spouses, and a model for children because we are seeking to establish the standard pursued by heaven and earth based on the family established by God. Korea follows the extended family system. You should establish a historic tradition in which seven generations live in the same house, and hundreds and thousands of people live as one family. It is amazing how this came to fit so exactly with the path of tribal messiahship in the Unification Church. The time will come, in which your families will compete, showing pride centering on the ideal of establishing extended families; a time in which all members of your family will receive blessing and awards. They will all become royal families. (276-180, 1996.2.19)

When we pledge, "…to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation…," it means that we should realize an extended family conforming to God's will. As such, we cannot exclude

the satanic world. Although we may have kingship and everything else, we do not have the kingship of Adam's family; therefore, if we are to represent the kingship, untainted by the Fall, we must bring together everyone from the satanic world as an extended family and make them stand in the place of freedom, peace, unity and happiness. There will be freedom and peace, and unity must be included there. Our ideal is peace and unity. (267-151, 1995.1.4)

We must clearly understand that peace will be realized only when humankind commonly shares and practices God's true love and truth: starting from individuals to families, then from families to societies, nations and to the world, and realizes that all human beings are brothers and sisters and builds the global extended family on earth. (259-47, 1994.3.27)

4.2.2. The core of a society of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values is love.

In an ideal society or nation, all people transcend nationality and race to engage in mutual cooperation, create harmony, and live in happiness. This community is that of an extended family in which people are conscious of being the sons and daughters of the one God and become a single fraternity under the True Parents. This is the place where Blessed Families, who have restored their lineage, rights of ownership and hearts, realize a world of freedom, peace and unity based on the True Parents' language and culture. They will come to lead lives of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values within the culture of God's heart. (269-155, 1995.4.17)

The society of the ideal world will be characterized politically by principles of interdependence, economically by mutual prosperity and ethically by universally shared values. The core content of the principle of interdependence is co-ownership based on God's true love. The basic model of the society of interdependence is the family. By co-ownership, I do not mean ownership merely in relation to material possessions, but ownership based on God's love.

In the family, even though all property would be legally held in the parents' names, in practice it would be jointly owned by the parents and children; that is, by the whole family. At the same time, the individual family members are allocated their own rooms, clothing and allowances. In this way, in the family, the whole purpose and the individual purpose are harmonized. When this ideal form of ownership of the family, based on such love, expands to the society, nation and world, it becomes the form of ownership of the ideal society. (271-76, 1995.8.22)

The original relationship between God and humankind is based on true love. There are many instances of co-ownership between God and the individual, between the whole and the individual, and between the neighborhood

and the individual, but we are supposed to have a co-ownership with a grateful heart arising out of God's true love.

In the ideal world built by the people who have actualized God's love, the whole purpose and the individual purpose are naturally harmonized. Since human beings also have desires and the autonomy of love, they are permitted individual ownership and individual purpose. Even so, they do not pursue unlimited individual possession or an individual purpose that undermines the whole purpose. Perfected human beings are meant to own property commensurate with their position and circumstances according to their conscience and original nature.

In particular, since the economic activity of ideal human beings – who have the character of true owners of all things by virtue of true love – would manifest love and gratitude, there can be no avarice or corruption. At the same time, there could be no emphasis on regional or national interests inconsistent with the purpose of the whole, and economic activity will have its aim and focus not in the pursuit of profits but rather in overall welfare. (271-76, 1995.8.22)

The principle of interdependence is an ideal that pursues the politics of conjoint participation based on God's true love to realize the ideals of freedom, equality and happiness. Participating in communal politics serves the purpose of electing representatives. Yet if we understand political units to be an expansion of love-centered family relationships, then antagonistic relationships would not exist among candidates. Their candidacy would be rooted in a calling to serve, and they would be nominated by their constituents, who would relate to them as siblings serving one God as their common Parent. After due process, the final result should be determined in accordance with God's will, in which no improper considerations can be involved. That is to say, it will be a method by which the winner is finally decided through a solemn process of drawing lots with prayer. As the result is determined by God's will and heavenly fortune, everyone would come to accept it with gratitude and joyful hearts. (271-76, 1995.8.22)

The principle of universally shared values refers to an ideal of all people in society observing universal ethics and morality centered on true love and pursuing a life of goodness and righteousness. It will be an ideal that seeks a moral society in which all peoples universally practice ethics and morality under the absolute values based on God's true love. The ideal world presupposes ideal families and perfected people. The unified harmony of the ideal parents, spouses and children in accordance with true love becomes the prerequisite of the ideal family. Furthermore, a perfected person is one whose mind and body are harmoniously united through true love. The world of supreme love – the world of morality in which the people perfected this way voluntarily practice good-

ness and righteousness in their family life as the basis of true love and in their social life as its expansion – is the ideal world. (271-76, 1995.8.22)

The major organs and departments within a nation of the ideal world are harmonized through a smooth give and take action with one another under their common purpose. This is similar to the various organs of the human body, which work together for a common purpose according to the commands of the brain. (271-76, 1995.8.22)

4.3. The world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness

4.3.1. Our idea: one unified world

Family Pledge number four states that we will become God's global and universal family and realize the world of freedom, peace, unity and happiness. By becoming representative families, we will unify everything. Isn't that what the four great realms of heart are all about? They send us out to the society. Even when we have realized the unified four great realms of heart, this will not be the end of it. We have the responsibility to bring the world back through that family. We have to take care of the insecurities and anxieties of the world, the chaos of the satanic world, and the unhappy environment that is not free. This is our pledge number four: "Our family pledges to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation, and perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity, and happiness, by centering on true love." (267-151, 1995.1.4)

Family Pledge number four states: "Our family pledges to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation, and perfect the world of freedom, peace, unity, and happiness, by centering on true love." This is the coming of the Family Federation. All of you will each have to complete the four great realms of heart, the three great kingships, and the realm of the royal family. Now, the people of the Cain world are in the position of the younger brother, and you should teach them properly from the position of the elder brother and establish the tradition. Only then will the satanic side be restored to the realm of the royal family. We will restore the right of the first son that was lost and save them. By establishing them as the second prince, we are entering the heavenly kingdom with the right of the crown prince. When the two do this, the realm of the royal family will be restored. Otherwise, neither the right of the first son nor the realm of the royal family will be restored. (264-201, 1994.10.9)

When we pledge, "…to build the universal family encompassing heaven and earth, which is God's ideal of creation…," it means that we should realize an extended family conforming to God's will. As such, we cannot exclude the satanic world. Although we may

have kingship and everything else, we do not have the kingship of Adam's family; therefore, if we are to represent the kingship, untainted by the Fall, we must bring together everyone from the satanic world as an extended family and make them stand in the place of freedom, peace, unity and happiness. There will be freedom and peace, and unity must be included there. Our ideal is peace and unity. We will achieve unity by assimilating communism. (267-151, 1995.1.4)

The saints who have come and gone until now have only thought about how to unify the external world. However, what is different about the Unification Church is that we are also concerned about the individual internal aspects and how we can maintain unity first. Without unity, there is neither peace nor freedom. Happiness and freedom come only on the basis of unity. Unity is most important. (227-249, 1992.2.14)

Peace, happiness, freedom and hope exist only on the basis of unity. When your mind and body are disunited, will there be freedom? Even when you go to your office, will there be freedom when your mind and body are locked in global conflict and unable to settle down? They will dislike even the word freedom itself. When your mind and body clash, is there happiness? Isn't this why you are agonizing over your life? This is fundamentally the big question. Where is happiness or peace when your mind and body are disunited? All problems arise on this line. Peace, happiness, freedom and hope are realized on this line. On the day this is crushed, everything will be shattered. Communists and people like Marx and Hegel observed that the mind and body struggle, and thus thought that this was the basic aspect of humanity. They did not know that this happened because of the Fall. This is where the concept of struggle originated. (242-60, 1992.12.27)

We must realize the universal family. Each unit is the family, but from Cain and Abel, this has not been just one family. Within this, each individual unit is a family, and among these are Cain-type and Abel-type families. The families of the whole world should uphold the ideal of the universal family; in whatever environment they are, they should adapt themselves to their surroundings instead of maintaining closely-knit self-contained enclaves. Human beings are God's sons and daughters and extended family. They should become such an extended family, and not live blindly as they are. The earthly world that has formed the extended family should live in conformity with the standard of the heavenly world. (266-150, 1994.12.22)

You should know that where there is no unity, there is no freedom, happiness, peace or hope. Let us see if this is true or not. If your mind and body have not become one, can you be happy? If they clash, can you be happy? Does freedom exist there? They should have good give and take with each other. Peace requires mutual balance, but is there a balance?

Are you in accord with your spouse? When you fight with your spouse in the morning, are you happy for the whole day? You are not. You should know that. There is freedom only on the basis of unity. Without it, there is no happiness, peace or hope. (231-269, 1992.6.7)

Without unity, there is no happiness. There is neither hope nor happiness. Hope, happiness, peace and even freedom, which all people desire, must stand on that foundation. Everything happens on the basis of unity. Even between parents and children, there is freedom, happiness and true joy only on the basis of unity. Think about this. Today, people are looking for freedom, happiness and peace. Where will they find them? How will they find them? Happiness, peace and freedom are realized only in relationships of subject and object partners – of vertical and horizontal, front and back, and left and right. These subject-object relationships stand on the foundation of unity. Until now people have not known this. Is it true or not? (225-93, 1992.1.5)

Peace is not realized without the basis of unity. There are words like peace and happiness. Also there is a word freedom. None of these exists without oneness. Is there peace where husband and wife fight? Doesn't peace only exist where there is oneness? Can there be happiness without husband and wife becoming as one? Happiness would run away. The same is true for freedom. If a man and a woman collided with each other, would there be freedom? There is neither peace nor freedom where there is conflict. Freedom exists on the basis of unity. (229-228, 1992.4.12)

Where your children unite to seek out the nation of peace, there will be freedom, peace and happiness. Now, even your husbands will be involved … Entire families will be dancing, and peace and happiness will arise where they dance. The people dancing will say, "Oh, we are so grateful," and the whole family, nation and world will dance; only then can God declare them as His historic sons and daughters of liberation so that all peoples of all nations can triumphantly march in as the citizens of the unified kingdom. (234-219, 1992.8.10)

Peace is placed on the level plane and not the slope. Don't you all seek freedom? Don't you all call out, "freedom, freedom and freedom!"? Where does that freedom want to live? It wants to live on the unified level plane. Freedom, happiness, peace, hope and everything exists on this; but none of them are on the slope. Where is your individual hope and freedom? They exist on top of mind-body oneness. Where does happiness exist? It is on the level plane where your mind and body have become as one. Hope exists there as well. (254-252, 1994.2.15)

Where does freedom stand? It has to stand on the level plane, on the basis of unity. Happiness, hope and peace also stand on the basis of unity. This is what peace itself is like. None of them can

be attained if not on the basis of unity. (257-141, 1994.3.14)

If God's love and human love do not have the same origin, they will diverge. If their directions differ, so will their purposes; the world of peace and unity could not be realized, and things like unity, peace, happiness, freedom and hope would all disappear. (265-262, 1994.11.23)

Without standing on the basis of unity, freedom cannot exist. If your mind and body clash, can you bring freedom, hold on to it, and say you are joyful? Can freedom appear? There is no way. Also, where is peace? Peace is to be fully free where everything is smooth and nothing is lacking. Yet when your mind and body clash, is there a place where peace can stay? The same is true for happiness. Don't you like it? Yet when your mind and body clash, can you find it? There is no way. (232-189, 1992.7.6)

There is freedom in oneness. Even your eyes feel good when they are focused on one point. When your nose is blocked, it is a problem, but when it is opened up, it is free. Your ears, hands, body and other things are also free. Yet without oneness, there is no freedom, peace, happiness and unity. The perfection of all creation lies where there is balance, in a level place. It cannot stay on a sharp point. (267-312, 1995.2.5)

You know everything because you have it from the True Parents, who have achieved global victory; therefore, you just have to realize the family Kingdom of Heaven. I have to realize the global Kingdom of Heaven, but in order for you to be true parents, you need to unify mind and body, husband and wife, and parents and children, thereby regaining everything Adam's family lost through the Fall. This is the beginning. You must restore peace, happiness, freedom, unity and the Kingdom of Heaven. Then, everything will go well, everything will be okay. (259-318, 1994.4.24)

In an ideal society or nation, all people transcend nationality and race to engage in mutual cooperation, create harmony and live in happiness. This community is that of an extended family in which people are conscious of being the sons and daughters of the one God and become brothers and sisters under the True Parents. This is the place where Blessed Families, who have restored their lineage, rights of ownership and hearts, realize a world of freedom, peace and unity based on the True Parents' language and culture. They will come to lead lives of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values within the culture of God's heart. (269-155, 1995.4.17)

4.3.2. Love is the essence of freedom, peace and happiness

Had the Fall not taken place, how would Adam's family, formed through true love, have propagated itself? Adam and Eve would have become ideal true

spouses. Next, they would have become true parents, and then the true ancestors of their descendants and all humankind in accordance with true love. Human beings multiplying from Adam and Eve as their true parents would have formed an extended family and thereby a peaceful world of the Adamic cultural sphere. Accordingly, the culmination of the history of restoration lies in establishing the true family based on true parents and true love as the hope of humankind and at the same time the hope of God. This true family will serve as the source of true love and true life and the starting point of the peace and happiness of humankind. (294-67, 1995.4.17)

What humankind most urgently needs is a revolution of true love initiated by the True Parents. Without a fundamental change, we cannot expect happiness and a peaceful world. Today's problems should be solved by the ideology based on the ideal of true family, centered on true parents and on God's ideology of true love. You should seriously evaluate the peace movement and the ideal of true love that I have developed around the world until now. The movement of true love and purity for the youth, and the true family movement based on true love, which transcends nationality, culture, race and religion, should not be viewed as activities just of the Unification Church.

World peace first requires a peaceful nation. National peace presupposes family peace and comfort. Power, wealth and knowledge, which worldly people have ordinarily desired, cannot be the necessary and sufficient conditions for peace and happiness. True happiness is not proportional to one's possession of secular love, nor is it determined by external circumstances of life. True peace and happiness are attained only in conjunction with true love. Genuine peace and infinite happiness can only be gained when we serve others with true love, which goes around and then comes around in one full circle. (294-68, 1998.6.11)

Humanity now faces grave peril. Remedies from any one specialized area will not suffice. Leaders should become the conscience of the age, and show the way by example of creating true families, which are the prerequisite and fundamental unit of a peaceful world. The Holy Blessing Ceremony of the 360 Million Couples, which I will officiate, is one of the fruits of my lifelong efforts to educate the world about ideal families. Those participants have already made a marriage vow before God and will build true families by becoming true couples and true parents centered on God's true love. We are proudly advancing the historic revolution of true love through the true family movement for the sake of realizing a peaceful world. (294-68, 1998.6.11)

Where there is no love, there is no happiness. There is no peace either. How can man and woman feel at peace? In order for them to feel at peace, they should become as one through concave and convex. They only have their spouse

with whom to do this. Can they feel at peace through another man or woman? That would be a great mishap. Can they be happy with another man or another woman? It would be a calamity. Everything is like this. With another man or another woman, you cannot be free. It would be a disaster. Thus, you should know that without love everything is incomplete. (275-17, 1995.10.30)

Things like ideals, freedom, peace, unity and happiness come through love. In the world of men and women, freedom cannot exist without oneness of love. Where is the base of the start of freedom on earth? It is neither money nor material nor knowledge. The logic is established that it must start from love. As its starting point is one, its destination and point of settlement should not vary. (270-268, 1995.7.16)

Freedom and peace are one. Peace has freedom from the time when oneness is achieved. If there is only freedom, there will be no ground to stand. Is freedom a substantial entity or what? It is for a man and a woman to act in oneness with nothing standing in their way within each other. What is needed for this? It is not that it is so simple to unite. This is the issue. What will make them one? It is not freedom that will make them one. When men and women want to be free, don't they run away? Is this freedom? Is it freedom if a wife, while going away, wants to turn back and sheds tears because she cannot forget her husband? No. Everything must be centered on love. If love were removed, everything would be shattered. (247-153, 1993.5.2)

When mother and father become one in love, the place where they do so is full of freedom. It is there that peace comes and happiness exists. Also, if all brothers and sisters are to become as one, what would unify them? It is not freedom or equality, but love that will do so. What makes the parents and children unite? What unites grandparents and grandchildren? Is it freedom? Is it some ideology? It is love, love, love. The same applies to the nation. It is not the president but the people who love the nation that unify it. The same applies to humanity: people become one through love, the love for humankind. There is no other way. (247-153, 1993.5.2)

Heaven started from that original love of God and this is the starting point of the Kingdom in heaven and on earth. The starting point of freedom, happiness, ideals and the origin of peace and unity are all there. This is an amazing word. You should bear this in mind. (267-257, 1995.1.8)

Without true love, there is no freedom, peace, unity and happiness. Everything can only be perfected through true love. This is an age of the perfection of freedom, peace, unity and happiness through true love. (289-206, 1998.1.2)

In order to put an end to the historic struggle, we must return to God. First, with God as the center, the mind

and body of the individual must become united. Then, when such a true man and true woman form a true family with God as the center, they will again have God within it. Therefore, the true family based on true love becomes the earthly base for God's dwelling and furthermore, the starting point of the true nation and true world of peace. Through this the world of true freedom and happiness will open up. (271-88, 1995.8.22)

Section 5. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Five

Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love.

5.1. The unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners

5.1.1. The spirit world is the subject partner

Family Pledge number five states that, by centering on true love, our family is every day in a relationship with the spirit world as subject partner. It is as if everyday we are in the position of subject partner of the spirit world. Countless tribes and people are all there. Although the ideal of the extended family has been realized, the physical world should take the spirit world as the standard and move in rhythm with it, which they eventually enter and inhabit together in the future. It states: "…strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners…" There should be no division if we are to make them as one. Just as the physical world has become one through the standard transcending the family, which is God's ideal of creation, we should not just live like this on earth but also live always in rhythm with the spirit world. So you should deeply experience God's love in your daily life. You should lead lives of deep experiences through which you can feel the spirit world and God's sorrow and joy. This is all planned as the completion of the course of restoration. (266-150, 1994.12.22)

Who unifies the spirit world and physical world? People. So we strive to advance the unification. We must progress daily and cannot retreat. Strive to advance. When you live in this world, instead of living only in one region, you should create many relationships and move in such a way that you can influence the whole. As the four seasons of spring, summer, autumn and winter change and as north, south, east and west rotate, you also should not stay just in one country. Once national borders are gone and the world is unified in this way, you should live going around the world as you please. When you go to a place you should not inflict loss on the people there. You should strive to advance. You should not live playing around. (266-150, 1994.12.22)

You should know that the universal family possesses the spirit world and

physical world. If we are to realize an extended family, we should unify God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. We have such a mission. "Our family pledges to strive everyday to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love!" This is daily, once a day and not once a year. It states that the spirit world is the subject partner every day. There is the spirit world – the heavenly nation. Next, there is the physical world as the object partner. Then what? We strive to advance the unification. So without resting, we should have stimulation and excitement to develop their unification. There is no time to rest. If we want to be an extended family of the spirit world, we must unify heaven and earth. (267-152, 1995.1.4)

After the Fall, Satan's sphere of activity expanded all the way up to the feet of God's throne in heaven, not to mention on earth. Consequently, Satan has been accusing people in the spirit world and physical world. Believers today do not clearly know that Satan has been wielding such authority. You must feel to the marrow of your bones that when the world of creation – which was supposed to sing and rejoice over God's glorious ideal of creation through Adam and Eve – was instead fully handed over to Satan due to the Fall, this caused great anguish to the Father who had created them. (1-282, 1956.12.16)

You do not know the spirit world as a subject partner. How many times a day do you think about it? Are there more people in the spirit world or those living on earth now? What did you think about now – the spirit world? If you only think of the physical world, you are thinking about nothing but the small tail. That concept disappeared through the Fall. So here our blessed members must know, every day, of the spirit world as the subject partner. The spirit world is plus just as the mind is plus. The body represents the physical world and the mind the spirit world. Mind is plus and body is minus. Hence, if you act in such a way that you do not recognize the mind and the world of the mind as subject partner, you will have to go to hell. If you have denied your mind just as the body has struck the mind, this must be reversed. (260-193, 1994.5.8)

In your daily life until now, you have not had the concept that every day the spirit world is the subject partner. You have not had it even once a month. This is not right. You should think of it every day. Unless your sphere of daily living has attained, in response to the heavenly nation as the subject partner, its correlative perfected earthly form today, the foundation for perfection in the spirit world will not be formed in the future. This is a direct relationship. Only when it is linked to you every day, every year, and for your whole life, will it become your second sphere of activity and living space in the other world. (260-305, 1994.5.19)

The spirit world centered on God is the subject partner. As for all the ranks

connected to the spirit world, they are as good as nothing. God is the original subject partner, and True Parents are the subject partner on earth. If my teaching did not accord with all the essential contents of God, everything would be distorted; this pillar would be crushed. This is why such contents must be correct. (292-320, 1998.4.27)

What is Family Pledge number five? It states: "Our family pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love." We are talking about the unification of the spirit world and the physical world. This is the problem. You will get caught with this at once. I myself have climbed over sorrowful peaks shedding tears and blood all my life in order to surmount this. You do not know the secrets submerged in the background of the Unification Church. No one knows and no one needs to know. If you knew them, how burdened you would be!

True Parents are suffering like this, and you would shed tears while even having lunch. I do not want this. Neither God nor your Parents want you to reflect on their suffering in an effort to remove all historical sorrow caused by indemnity conditions. You should forget about it and call out the name of God's Kingdom on earth that is full of hope; as representatives of God and the True Parents, you must exultantly fly high with the whole world as your sphere and heaven and earth as the sphere of your nation. You should live energetically, running with a desire to fly rather than just leap high. (283-242, 1997.4.13)

Within the realm of unification, there are eight stages to pass through, from individual through family, tribe... There is a path along which human beings must work on unification all the way up to eight stages in total, but they have not even known one. If there is a nation and a central nation that overlooks this, what would you do if you must be governed by this law when you go to the spirit world? They would be individually remanded in custody. When they go to the spirit world, couples would be separated. If a family has ten members, all of them would be separated. They would not be able to go to one place. They do not know about this, but once they have come to know about it, they will see that the earthly world is like a shadow of the spirit world, and since it does not have the substance, the image comes to resemble the substance. They are becoming one. (284-15, 1997.4.15)

In order to find a way to link the spirit world and physical world, I have visited and examined everywhere from hell and revealed the facts. You should know that this treasure has come into your hands. What does Family Pledge number five state? It states that the spirit world is the subject partner every day. You should remind yourselves of the spirit world as the subject partner every day. This is what it means to know. "… to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject

and object partners…" daily. The earthly world as the object partner is like a fruit. This place and the spirit world are one. There is to be unification. The fact is that the spirit world and earth can be unified. Through this, the gates of both hell and heaven can be opened up and we can enter the Kingdom of Heaven. We should strive to do this, trying to shorten the process even by one hour. We should drive people into heaven even by force. (294-130, 1998.6.14)

5.1.2. We must unify the spirit world and the physical world

Adam's family is the core of all the reciprocal subject and object partners in the physical world created by God, while God is the core of the subject and object partners in the spirit world. Thus, the two cores of God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven merge to form one unified Kingdom of Heaven. Adam, who can be the core of God's Kingdom in the physical world, and the core, who is the Lord of the families in the spirit world, will merge. (269-118, 1995.4.9)

Now, the spirit world and physical world are not unified. We must unify them. What is Family Pledge number five? It states, "…strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners..." We need to progress quickly and in addition what are we to do? It is time to strive forward. Yet when you are hungry, don't you think, "I'd like to do it after lunch"? I do not live like that. I would rather try to extend something by an hour than to leave early. You should feel that way too. In order to be that way, you may have to cut off some of your flesh and sell it. (280-38, 1996.10.13)

We should reorganize the entire fallen world and make it one. True love is absolutely one. The nation that is organized with true love at the center is one as a whole. The spirit world and physical world are like the interior and exterior. Family Pledge number five states that our family must organize itself by daily working to unite the spirit world and physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love. The spirit world is the subject and the earth is the object partner world. Now we are to spur the process of the two worlds becoming one. We must strive to achieve this even by force. Drive on forcefully. (295-261, 1998.9.8)

When we die, we enter the spirit world. We must solve the problems of the spirit world on earth. We cannot just go to the spirit world and find ourselves caught by its laws. Everything must be resolved on earth. This is not a concept but a reality. Having sensed such a world to be real, I have had no problems with persecutions, however many. If opposition and persecution are concepts, this is a reality. Only then will we stay alive. The most important thing is how we can have a real experience of the existence of the spirit world. Hence, persecution is not a problem. This is so because we

know our purpose. When arising in the morning, we should have greater awareness of the reality of the spirit world than the facts of nature.

Being vast, the spirit world does not just have Britons and Americans. People of diverse nationalities of the same spiritual level congregate together. All five races are gathered in one place. Whether they are Germans or other nationals, they will still recognize the human form they used to see in the past, but since they see the world of the heart, how beautiful the world of your heart is will determine how close you can be to people. They will want to be as one with people whose world of heart is more beautiful. They will be as one even if they were told not to. They will instantaneously recognize people from millennia or tens of millennia ago as soon as they meet them. You think of my words just as a concept or dream, and not something real, don't you? The question is whether you can sense it tangibly rather than just aurally. If you comprehend that, you will see that this world is but a shadow of the spirit world. (295-261, 1998.9.8)

As that world has no borders, if you have a loving heart there, you will be able to relate to everyone you meet. The mind does not age. The older it is, the more beautiful it becomes. So would it be good if God's sons and daughters all looked ugly in the spirit world? Those who live in the harmony of deep love will all become beautiful people. This is true not just of women but also men. With all their problems, they should receive my teaching and guidance by praying. Had Adam and Eve not fallen in the Garden of Eden, they would have lived with God. Since Adam's body is created by God because He wanted to wear a physical body, it is through me that there is communication with the spirit world. It is not God Himself who fulfills His love, but rather human beings. (295-261, 1998.9.8)

You should have a clear understanding of the spirit world. Family Pledge number five states, "Our family…pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love." Thus, you cannot afford to be ignorant about the spirit world. Those who are ignorant of it will not be able to enter the era of perfection. (294-98, 1998.6.14)

Do not be ignorant of the spirit world. What is Family Pledge number five? "… to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love." Chastise your bodies hard with a stick. We are busy on our way. All these words also indicate an aspect of my daily life. Our life in this world does not last forever; we are here only once. Despite that, we must tear down all fallen things: the walls that are blocking everyone from the individual to the cosmos. There we have to build not only a highway but also a railway. We have to build a rail for trains and even an airfield. Isn't the spirit world more than an airfield? That base is the True Family.

It is the True Parents and the True Family. From this starting base, we can go back and forth as much as we please. The fact that you have done all these things with me will be a memento of which you will be proud when you go to the next world. (296-279, 1998.11.10)

Then what is the providence of salvation? Just as the spirit world revolves around God, it has been at work to make the earth revolve around His will. It has been driving the providence of restoration in the form of creating a number of religions, although their cultural backgrounds and levels differed. Then, who has been doing the central work in the spirit world until now? Jesus has been the center. It was Jesus and the Holy Spirit. Through Christianity on earth, which is a foundation whose system has been organized for the God-centered union of Jesus and the Holy Spirit, they have been forming a system of Christian culture under the names of God, Jesus and the Holy Spirit. Since the spirit world is formed this way, the earth should be formed in the same way so that the spirit world and physical world are aligned with each other and become integrated. When will they be thus integrated? At the Second Advent of Christ. Then, the Lord at his Second Advent will come upon the earth after having inherited and received all the systems of the spirit world and drive this world into an environment that can conform to that system. He will sort out the world from the bottom to the top. (161-220, 1987.2.15)

What could link the spirit world and physical world? Something that has existed temporarily would not work. It has to be something transcending time and space that is the same today, yesterday and tomorrow, and will not be rejected but rather universally liked within the sphere of our daily life. It has to be something all of us can like whether by day or by night. Only then will we be happy. What this is, is love. This is impossible with money and also with knowledge. They cannot be anything other than unilateral. The same is true with power. Its limits have been set by the environment of the times. When it comes to the question of its expansion: what should serve as a bridge in expanding it from the individual to the national, and then to the global level? This also requires something that can serve as a bridge, and it is that which is called love. (233-128, 1992.8.1)

The spirit world is the abode of the ancestors and the physical world is that of the descendants, with the two in a Cain-Abel relationship. The former is the archangelic world while the latter is the Adamic world. When the two are merged, we have God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven, where we can live together. The Kingdom of Heaven on earth cannot become one unless the spirit world and the physical world are united. The spirit world and physical world – the archangelic and Adamic worlds – are being integrated. The oneness of Cain and Abel leads to the establishment of the standard that

enables true parents to be present. We are returning to the position before the Fall. (255-24, 1994.2.27)

What will we do based on true love? We are striving every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners. This is advancement. In advancing, we strive for the advancement. Unless we completely remove the crust of sin that we have inherited from our ancestors, even by applying whatever disciplines on earth, we would not be able to fly up to heaven and return to the bosom of God's Kingdom of liberation where we can receive His love. This is resurrection of the family. Where the family goes, there should be no obstructions in the world. (299-46, 1999.2.1)

The spirit world and physical world will be merged with God as their center under the unifying banner of the True Parents. As God created for the sake of others with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, we should stand on such a foundation of God's all-immanence, all-transcendence, supreme authority and omnipotence. In order to return to the original state of creation and to find the partner of love there, we should invest and forget what we gave with absolute faith and a heart of absolute love and absolute obedience. We should regain everything God made and we ourselves should also practice absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience toward this world on behalf of Him. (303-153, 1999.8.17)

The focal points of your mind and body are not aligned. You should correct this. This is why religions chastise the flesh. Without making your body absolutely obey the orders of your mind through three to five years of establishing good habits, you would not be able to go straight along the road to heaven. If the Busan-Seoul railroad is to run through North Korea, the rail gauge must be the same there; and also if it is to run through China. Likewise, our width while living in the earthly world has to be the same as that in the spirit world. That railway is love. Unless our love in the spirit world and our love on earth are the same, the spirit world and the physical world will not be unified. (242-51, 1992.12.27)

You should have a clear understanding of the spirit world. Family Pledge number five states, "Our family pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love." Thus, you cannot afford to be ignorant about the spirit world. Those who are ignorant of it will not be able to enter the age of completion. This is why I am trying to teach you about the spirit world with the words of the Completed Testament Age. (294-98, 1998.6.14)

God cannot act arbitrarily. He cannot kill fallen humankind. If He wanted to, He would have the ability to exterminate them instantaneously, yet He cannot punish or restrain them. Today's

religions did not know that the existence of such a lineage is what makes the world fallen. Finally, in the name of the True Parents, all the facts about the spirit world have been acquired in detail. The motivation of the Fall, and the secrets of both God and Satan have been uncovered and revealed. It is the Divine Principle of the Unification Church that has revealed such things. With this, in order to harmonize the spirit world and physical world, which have a history of division and conflict, we seek to resolve and link together all the fundamental issues of the spirit world and physical world and human life. (304-214, 1999.11.8)

We should "…advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners…" every day. We are talking about the unification of the spirit world and the physical world. This is the problem. You will get caught with this at once. I myself have spent my life climbing over sorrowful peaks shedding tears and blood, in order to surmount this. (283-242, 1997.4.13)

We form an extended family by realizing God's Kingdom on earth every day. According to what standard does this extended family live? That of the spirit world, which is a greater extended family. The Cain-type extended family, the extended families of the world, should get in rhythm in a reciprocal relationship with the spirit world and create unity every day. If you say, "…strive every day to advance the unification...," advancement does not mean just to become as one and stay still. It means making progress. From the age of the family to the age of the tribe, and then to the age of the people – in this way we should go toward globalization. If this did not happen, everything would be scattered and become a big mess. Always, whether we work, go somewhere, sit down or take a rest, we as object partners must become one with the spirit world as the subject partner, and, without staying there, advance continuously. In this way, we can stand in the position of surmounting the peaks of the family, tribe, people, nation and world and finally enter God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven. We will clean up all the rampant activities of Satan and realize God's original unified ideal world. We must strive to hasten this on. This is how the order is set up. (261-90, 1994.5.22)

5.2. Strive to advance

5.2.1. Strive to advance every day

Advancement never stops. We must move forward constantly. We must develop ourselves. Advancement! We need to advance in all directions. You should follow this path exactly as promised and become as one. You have not simply recited the Pledge for nothing. Thus, if your mind and body are disunited and your couple is fighting, you will be unable to say the pledge. If your children fail to unite with you, you will be unable to recite it. You should realize how precious the family is. The fact that we have such a pledge for the family

is making everyone in the spirit world pay close historic attention to us. They are saying there are no other people on earth who are so fortunate to do that. All our ancestors who have gone to the spirit world envy us. So as for my mother, how happy she must be to receive the Blessing even though she knew nothing about it previously! As I have finally started talking about the hometown providence and am blessing everyone together in the realm of liberation for all peoples, my parents can be one of these cases. It is in this way that we establish order. (271-290, 1995.8.28)

In advancing forward, we strive on with all our strength. We strive to advance toward unification. We are already advancing toward this, but still we strive on, hitting it with our stick. Do you know why Family Pledge number five has come into being? It means smooth passage on earth and in heaven! It means that the gates of hell in the spirit world and physical world have been set aside, and the march for entering the gate of heaven has started and is in progress. To strive to advance toward unification means to strike hard. If you have many younger siblings, you should bring them to the Blessing even if you have to push them. If your children do not receive the Blessing, problems will arise. (294-105, 1998.6.14)

Don't Unification Church members today think only rarely about being in step with the spirit world? This is why you are going out of control. You should check yourselves every day. Even if you have realized an extended family, you can fall again. In order to guard against this, you must strive to advance toward unification. You should be in rhythm. Next it says, "We pledge!" There is nothing called perfection there. The unification and perfection of God's Kingdom in heaven has not been achieved yet. We should strive toward it and stay in rhythm with it. This is absolutely necessary. (261-90, 1994.5.22)

What is Family Pledge number five? We live like this, and form an extended family by realizing God's Kingdom on earth every day. According to what standard does this extended family live? That of the spirit world. The spirit world is the greatest extended family. The Cain-type extended family should get in rhythm in a reciprocal relationship and create unity with the spirit world every day. This is in the direction of unity. This is how the content goes: "…strive every day to advance the unification…." Advancing forward does not mean just becoming as one and staying still. It means advancement. From the age of the family, age of the tribe, and age of the race or people, this is the way we should go toward globalization. This is why we are called forward-moving. On the day we stop, we will slide off. If we were to stop, we would be connected to hell. We can be connected to prosperity and the Kingdom of Heaven only when we advance forward even if by just one step. This is what we pledge: advancement. We must strive to advance. Push yourself again

and again to make progress. I am telling you to advance quickly and accomplish things quickly. (261-90, 1994.5.22)

We should "…strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners…." When we are advancing in oneness toward unification, what does this mean? We do not just achieve unity and then sit still. We must move forward and advance. The spirit world remains for us to deal with. After we achieve the unity of just the physical world we cannot settle down. We must go even further. We must strive to advance. Do it quickly. We are pledging to strive on. (283-82, 1997.4.8)

What is Family Pledge number five? We "…pledge to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love." It is progressive. We must always go forward. We cannot stop. "Striving to advance" means that this advancement must be pushed for. These are important words. We are living on earth, which is a world standing as the object partner to that world that is the subject partner. Although the scope of your living environment is smaller than that of the spirit world, we must create a model that can be in accord with the model standard of the spirit world. We should go to the next world only after achieving this. There is nothing we can do about it. This is not something I say half-heartedly. The Family Pledge has come into being because, considering the spirit world and physical world altogether, this is the way that God wants us to go in such manner. (274-114, 1995.10.29)

We have to grow. Staying still and stopping are connected to death. When you joined the Unification Church, how glad you were to have heard the Word! Are you rejoicing even more now? It is God's heart, hope and will to transcend individual joy and globalize it. I am also going that way. Thus, my joy is not my own. I am striving to globalize it. Everyone started from God but became self-centered. Your life of faith has been blocked by your own way. (273-69, 1995.10.21)

What is our fifth Family Pledge? It is "Our family pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love." It is advancement: becoming new people, people who are alive. Is your heart that rejoiced when you joined the Unification Church growing bigger and bigger or diminishing? It should grow bigger. Strive to advance. Living things grow. Those who fail to grow will die. They will be lost because they will have lost their value in relation to the spirit world. This is why I am telling you to strive to advance. (273-69, 1995.10.21)

We strive forward, rushing on. Things like just sleeping, becoming lazy, eating and enjoyment do not count in God's providence. We are busy. Life is

short. This is why, "Our family pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love." Run without resting, just like me. Run without even sleeping. (260-193, 1994.5.8)

"Pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners…" We should progress every day. If we stop, death awaits us. We would perish. So we cannot stop. "Strive…to advance!" We must go forward day by day, even if by just one step. We pledge to do so. So we must advance forward so that everything required in the spirit world is achieved in the physical world without even the slightest deviation. (260-305, 1994.5.19)

"Our family pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners..." We must advance toward unity, and we have said we will strive to make such advances. We should harshly drive ourselves forward. We must push ourselves hard. If we slow down on earth we will fail to keep pace. We must drive forward strongly. (301-83, 1999.4.16)

In Family Pledge number five we say that we will "strive to advance," don't we? It is good to create unity and go forward, but if we apply the stick we can go more quickly. We apply some force. If you push people strongly, make them stand like cattle and bless them, when those blessed people go to the spirit world they won't end up in hell. And before long they will be in heaven. So this is why I am saying that you should use compulsion. (293-318, 1998.3.18)

Every day, the spirit world as the subject partner and the physical world as the object partner must be united; the subject and object partner worlds must be unified. There must be advancement toward their unification, – development that progresses. We pledge to strive to advance forward. We strive on and make things move quickly, quickly, quickly. We should not stop. If we stop, we will immediately fall back. We will be connected to hell and death. Stopping leads us down to hell, and striving forward leads to advancement. So run and run without resting. Run and run without sleeping just like me. If you do that, won't you be able to relate to the world you have been thinking of? How can you relate to a world you have not thought of? Only then will unity be achieved. You have to think along with the spirit world. You have to think relationally. (260-193, 1994.5.8)

5.2.2. Let us pave a true love highway

God did not want to see the spirit world and physical world as they have been so far. They must be completely purged. It is not you yourselves, one by one, who are to save them. On behalf of Jesus, we must purge the families of

the fallen lineage in this way and then realize God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven in the realms of the tribal messiahs, national messiahs and global messiahs. We must deeply experience Jesus' realm of heart and dissolve his anguish of dying on the cross and of not having been able to have a family. God also wants it. So you should resolve it. On that basis you should have your families. Don't think of the Unification Church as a habitual faith like the established Christian churches. The Unification Church is not like that. This is serious. With the Word that teaches about both worlds, you should explode your worldly concepts of the family. You should completely revise such concepts of the spirit world and physical world. After doing so, we must create a new world. (292-320, 1998.4.27)

In order to restore the physical world that had been defiled, God has been guiding the providence of salvation through which He establishes His relationship with human beings, who are in the position of having betrayed Him and who have fallen haplessly even below all things of creation. In order to reestablish His sovereignty over human beings, who have been dominated and accused by Satan, God has been working to build a bridge, and this has lasted from the Old Testament Age through the New Testament Age up to the present day. (1-282, 1956.12.16)

Family Pledge number five states, "Our family pledges to strive every day to advance the unification of the spirit world and the physical world as subject and object partners, by centering on true love." This means that the whole world is the same family. We, in the position of the object partner, should all be as one with the spirit world, which is the subject partner. As well as that, since hell – the satanic realm – still remains in the physical world, we must push for this. Our days are busy. If the second and third generations were to arise from there, this would be a problem. You must know that our difficulties are multiplying gradually. This is urgent. The years leading up to the year 2000 are the time in which we must decisively bring about total mobilization. Since we are urging such rapid progress, rapid collapse will occur in this world, and everything will be separated and fall down into hell; you will see this clearly with your own eyes before you die. You should know that you have determined the pledge by taking the necessary core of what your families, who are moving within the framework of restoration, must do. (264-202, 1994.10.9)

Blessed families all want me to come, don't they? Do you want me to come to your house? I don't know when I will go there. So prepare a feast table and stay ready, even if it may be for ten years, to start a feast just within a few hours of my arrival; you should have such a heart. I would visit such families even on the way to somewhere else. Even if I were unable to visit them, my car would break down in front of their house so I would eventu-

ally have to visit them. If you do not offer devotion, there is no way. If I did not know about the spirit world, I would not be able to walk this path. The Father of the spirit world is my Father. This is why I know the secrets of the spirit world better than anyone else. During the refugee life, even the ancestors were mobilized; they would make their descendants prepare a feast for the guests passing by on the street. I was fed like this many times. I do not talk about these things because many of them sound like lies.

God has no right of possession before Adam and Eve's marriage. What do you think would have happened had they not fallen? So if you have ownership, you are a thief. Whether it is a nation or whoever it is, they are all thieves. In Adam's family, ownership before their marriage had belonged to God. Through Adam's Fall, human beings took the right of possession for themselves, and this meant they drove God out; He was chased away. Ownership of material, love and family was destroyed. If we are to indemnify this for God and the True Parents, who know this bitter sorrow, all peoples of the world must be true children of filial piety and loyal patriots. In order to do this we should give even our bodies as sacrificial offerings, and offer every treasure we own and even our lives; we should be able to ask God to return them as our Parents. (299-46, 1999.2.1)

In what circumstances does the Messiah come? Based on love, he should be able to love the law of the earth and even the protocol of the royal palace of the heavenly kingdom. He is coming in order to build such a world on earth. In this way, the spirit world and physical world will become one in harmony. Through what can we unify those two worlds? What is it that is a plus to both of them? It is God-centered love. (207-250, 1990.11.11)

Who are God's divine sons and daughters? They are those who love heaven and earth. Divine sons and daughters are those who, throughout the spirit world and physical world, love heaven centered on God and His nation centered on earthly kingship. They know the protocol of the royal palace of heaven and the national laws of the earth, thus seeking to observe and love all the laws of the two worlds of heaven and earth. Divine sons and daughters (seongja) are God's children; It has seong (聖), which means holy, and ja (子), which means child. It is not the ja (者), which means fellow. It is seongja, God's divine son or daughter. This is the ideology centered on the Messiah. (207-250, 1990.11.11)

What is it that the True Parents are supposed to do? They have to completely open up the blocked way between the spirit world and physical world and lay a highway, a highway from hell, from Danbury, from the hell of the spirit world to heaven! (134-127, 1985.2.25)

I am saying that we should lay a great highway, a direct route from the physical to the spirit world. This road cannot be traveled without true love. Let us make

a true love highway where the beginning and the ending points and the spirit world and the physical world are of the same height and the same width. This purpose can be accomplished only after God's Kingdom on earth has been realized. (135-168, 1985.11.12)

With God's command, we will remove all the small stepping-stone bridges between the spirit world and physical world and lay a highway and a railroad. Once we have started, my hope is to build a road that continues uninterrupted all the way to London. Is this an easy or a difficult thing? It is a difficult thing. How difficult is it? Many times we will have to risk death. We cannot stop on the way. Why? Being despised is unbearable. Being ignored is unforgettable. We are running day and night because we cannot forget it day or night. We run until none of our detractors are following us anymore, after which we will meet God.

God has gone all the way to the end of humankind. Until we get there, meet Him and obtain control through decisive negotiations, we have no time to rest. In this way, we will have unified the spirit world and then unified the earth through an earthly struggle. Whereas everything was ruined by the start of the false family of Satan, with a marriage that was 180 degrees opposed to God, the True Parents came and married by turning 180 degrees, thereby dividing hell and heaven. You should know that the Kingdom of Heaven is established in the family. (271-200, 1995.8.28)

Section 6. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Six

Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges to become a family that moves heavenly fortune by embodying God and True Parents, and to perfect a family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community, by centering on true love.

6.1. A family that embodies God and True Parents

What is Family Pledge number six? It states: "Our family pledges to become a family that moves heavenly fortune by embodying God and True Parents, and to perfect a family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community, by centering on true love." You should understand what the True Parents have done and become a family that embodies them; just as heavenly fortune follows the True Parents around when they move, you should unite completely with them and become families that move heavenly fortune and convey God's blessings to your communities. You cannot do it by yourselves alone. You should create families like yours around you. You are pledging to be such a central family. (267-153, 1995.1.4)

"Our family pledges… to embody God and True Parents... by centering on true love" You must become a family that embodies God and True Parents. In this way, by becoming true families that move heaven and earth, you realize families that convey God's blessings

to your communities rather than taking it all for yourselves. Be families that can be a blessing and give out blessings every time you move. If there are people around you who do not know the Divine Principle, teach it to them: even if they oppose you, spend your lives together and go through it without fighting. Teach it to your community and gradually expand this. Do not live alone. (266-151, 1994.12.22)

"Our family pledges… to embody God and True Parents..." You are a family that embodies God and True Parents. The families that embody God and True Parents are the families that move heavenly fortune. We "…pledge to become a family that moves heavenly fortune… [and] conveys Heaven's blessing to our community." We are not saying that we alone want to get the blessing and have a good life. We are saying that we are ultimately to become a royal family and make everyone its members. (260-195, 1994.5.8)

We must be families representing God and work to bring peace, happiness and freedom on the earth. So we should always move in rhythm with heaven and earth. Next, since we are in rhythm with God as a family, we should be a family that can transmit heavenly fortune to our communities. This is Pledge number six. By such means, we eventually become a family that embodies God and True Parents and achieve the unified realm of God's heart. The world of the culture of heart begins today throughout the world. This is our pledge. (266-103, 1994.12.18)

It is not just I but you also who should be true parents. You should all become that. I have become a large tree, but just as cells multiply, you should be like cells. You are all seeds taking after me as the large tree. You resemble the root. (259-318, 1994.4.24)

Mind and body should be unified. So should man and woman, and Cain and Abel. Through the Fall, mind and body, Adam and Eve, and their children were separated, and thus must be reunified. How? There is no problem because we know the theory clearly. The True Parents are the ideal model of mind-body, husband-wife and parent-child unity. You know everything because you have learned it from the True Parents, who have achieved global victory; I have to realize the global Kingdom of Heaven, but you just have to realize the family Kingdom of Heaven. In order for you to be true parents, you need to unify mind and body, husband and wife, and parents and children, thereby regaining everything Adam's family lost through the Fall. This is the beginning: there will be peace, happiness, freedom, unity and the Kingdom of Heaven; everything will go well, everything will be okay. (259-318, 1994.4.24)

What does Family Pledge number six states? It states that we will move heavenly fortune as a family that embodies True Parents. The ideal of creation is sup-

posed to follow it. We must become families conveying Heaven's blessing to our community. For how many generations and how many millennia the history of the world based on the culture of heart and undefiled lineage can last through you will determine whether you will be meritorious subjects of God's Kingdom. That is a set equation. (292-107, 1998.3.28)

6.2. Families that move heavenly fortune

Humankind must know the way through which heavenly fortune comes. Heavenly fortune is something that moves eternally. It travels along the eternal path, which goes around and around without changing according to eternal principles. As it shapes and paves the roads of prosperity and decline while going around and around within the relationships of humankind, the question is how we human beings standing here can adapt ourselves to this. (149-151, 1986.11.21)

Who controls heavenly fortune? The Lord who created the universe controls it. Who is that Lord? In religious terms we call Him God and use other various nouns, but this is not the issue. There should be a certain Central Being. If we know for sure that the Central Being exists and unshakably follow His path, everything will go well. (209-176, 1990.11.29)

Heavenly fortune moves around and not arbitrarily. Since it has its own order, path and law, it moves in accordance with them. This is why all the beings belonging under heavenly fortune exist for the sake of others. (233-81, 1992.7.30)

Heavenly fortune never perishes. Our life sometimes becomes sidetracked by the environment and flows away along byways, but heavenly fortune does not change its course because it obeys God's governance. It is eternal. Just as the four seasons of spring, summer, autumn and winter are immutable, the way of heavenly fortune, which moves humankind, moves along the unchanging track relating to human individuals, families, tribes, people, nations and the world. Humankind has been hitherto ignorant of this. (204-57, 1990.7.1)

Just as individuals have fortune, so do families, nations, and the world; in the same token, all of heaven and earth has heavenly fortune. However good the fortune you may have been born with, if your family fortune declines, you will suffer hardship together, and also those who may have good individual or family fortunes will not be able to avoid their downfall if the broader national fortune wanes. Moreover, the fortunes of the nation and the world are determined in accordance with the direction and progress of heavenly fortune, which encompasses and exists for the sake of the whole. To establish the heavenly way in the world means to adjust the course of individuals and nations to the path of heavenly fortune. (234-258, 1992.8.26)

Heavenly fortune is supposed to supply everything that good people need. So you should not be greedy and think of hogging it to yourselves. If you are to be good, there are only two ways – you go either to a higher or lower place. If you go to a lower place, everything will be naturally supplied. Air and water will come in and so will heavenly fortune to fill the pit. (237-114, 1992.11.13)

Everyone is afraid of me because if I say a word, things happen in the world exactly as I say. This does not happen from nothing. As I know the path of history for sure, I also know the time and then I say it. Things do not happen as I say because I prophesy; they are just supposed to happen that way. If you also became able to see all the directions of heavenly fortune, you would be able to talk about everything that will happen in the future, even things that will happen after a thousand years. (233-161, 1992.8.1)

I have stirred the winds of heavenly fortune because I know it. Where there is a low-pressure area, wind from a high pressure area will blow in. If we exert our utmost strength and devote the greatest efforts of low pressure, God's high-pressure love will rush in, causing a typhoon. You have not believed such words, have you? We should catch the wind of heavenly fortune. (234-160, 1992.8.10)

People say I am like a mysterious man. I know things no one in the world knows and how heavenly fortune is turning. I know where the fortunes of Korea, Asia and the world are going. If we string them together and hang them, they will all be pulled in. A gnat on the rump of a swift stallion travels a great distance even while sucking blood. That is how it is. If you stick to heavenly fortune and don't fall off, everything will be okay. (233-66, 1992.7.30)

Those who cannot go beyond the world are unable to deal with heavenly fortune. Hence, the Unification Church teaches people to transcend the world with heavenly fortune. So with heavenly fortune centering on God, one must stand in a position equal to God and receive from Him the title and royal seal as the Lord who can use heavenly fortune on earth; only then can he be the Messiah, Savior and True Parent. Thus, although the whole world has been hitting just me alone, a person of true goodness does not strike. (233-66, 1992.7.30)

If you want to ride on heavenly fortune, you first have to know what kind of place the way of heavenly fortune is. It is not a place everybody likes and where they enjoy themselves eating and drinking. It is a place everyone dislikes. It should be a place where you are always grateful for everything and give glory to God while carrying out your responsibilities. Those who stand in such a place can ride on heavenly fortune. So you should achieve victory without fail. (19-145, 1968.1.1)

You should stand in the position of serving Korea where you become a shadow and tell the people to be the sun and sunlight; in doing so you should be centered on God's love and have a love that serves others on behalf of heaven and earth and history; also, you should represent the love of all nations, the authority of love of all peoples and the authority of all. If you do so, then God will come to you personally and become sunlight for you. The power to move heaven, the power to move all blessings and to control heavenly fortune accompanies true love. (179-318, 1988.8.14)

Now that the time has come for heavenly fortune to start running in Korea, you should join the work of re-creation for the sake of this people. Due to the Fall, the Subject partner inevitably has to re-create them. With this ideology, you must create your counterparts on behalf of God. Thus, we must re-create our family, nation and world. Although you do not know this, such a mission is in operation twenty-four hours a day transcending time under the proposition of the heavenly way; hence, you should accept this and become successful people who can welcome the new spring in the course of your lives and go on singing while embracing the world. (137-79, 1985.12.18)

You should not try to live quietly just by yourselves. "Our family pledges…by embodying God and True Parents…by centering on true love." Heavenly fortune stays with God and the True Parents. We will realize families that move heavenly fortune, or the heavenly way, and convey God's blessings to our communities. This means wherever they go, Blessed Families will be central families that can give out blessings to everyone. We have not lived like this, have we? (260-156, 1994.5.2)

What is next? Isn't moving heavenly fortune part of Pledge number six? "…a family that moves heavenly fortune…, by centering on true love." All the sufferings of the True Parents are not for them to have a good life, but for liberating all humankind, giving them a share of heavenly fortune and transferring heavenly morals to them. The True Parents are to hand over heavenly fortune as it follows them. Become channels of blessings. However much you strive toward unification, it will be no good if you come to the earth only receive your own portion of blessing, and then go to the spirit world. Rather, you should accomplishment something on earth. You should pass on something that can satisfy everyone and bring them the great benefits of heavenly fortune before you go. (261-91, 1994.5.22)

6.3. A family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community

What is Family Pledge number six? It states, "Our family pledges to become a family that moves heavenly fortune by embodying God and True Parents…" By becoming families that move heavenly fortune, we should link all God's

inheritance and blessings. Who are our communities? They are the Cain world. We need them. Will you go to the Kingdom of Heaven by yourselves? Some day this will surely come to pass: everyone in our community will say, "You fools! Are you trying to go to the Kingdom of Heaven all by yourselves? Is this what God's will is all about? When we said we did not like the Unification Church, you should have admonished us with a stick even until our death. Why didn't you?" (283-82, 1997.4.8)

We pledge "…to perfect a family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community…" This refers to being channels of blessings. It is not in order to lead successful lives by ourselves alone that we received the Blessing. Once we have received the call before anybody else, we must make the families of all our brothers and sisters in the whole world families like ours. So we are saying that by propagating heavenly fortune, we will be families existing for the cause of making other families like ours. It is not for us alone. We mean that we will create family harmony that can accomplish everything and bring all families into harmony so that they can be unified. (260-305, 1994.5.19)

Family Pledge number six states: "Our family pledges to become a family that moves heavenly fortune by embodying God and True Parents, and to perfect a family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community, by centering on true love."

You should understand what the True Parents have done and become a family that embodies them; just as heavenly fortune follows the True Parents around when they move, you should unite completely with them and become families that move heavenly fortune and convey Heaven's blessing to your communities. You cannot do it by yourselves alone. You should create families like yours around you. You are pledging to be such a central family. (267-153, 1995.1.4)

What does Family Pledge number six state? It states that we will move heavenly fortune as the family that embodies the True Parents. The ideal of creation is supposed to follow. We must become families conveying Heaven's blessing to our communities.

The number of generations and the number of millennia in the history of the world of the culture of heart and undefiled lineage can last through you will determine whether you will be loyal subjects of God's Kingdom. (292-107, 1998.3.28)

"Our family pledges to become a family that moves heavenly fortune by embodying God and True Parents, and to perfect a family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community, by centering on true love." You are not meant to live comfortably just by yourselves. You should not live comfortably just by yourselves. That is not what God is like. That is not what parents are like. Parents should raise their sons and

daughters to be better off than themselves. You should realize families that link up all directions. (280-35, 1996.10.13)

Your ancestors in the spirit world will make you pay indemnity unless you now work to convey God's blessings to your communities. They will resist you. They will keep blocking your way and interfere with you. They will say, "You fools, how is it that your actions don't conform to what you pledged?" This is why I am telling you to give out everything. If you don't do it, you will get stuck in the spirit world. This is an important contract document. This is our pledge. (266-151, 1994.12.22)

Family Pledge number six states, "Our family pledges to become a family that moves heavenly fortune by embodying God and True Parents, and to perfect a family that conveys Heaven's blessing to our community, by centering on true love!" We are pledging to be channels of blessings. Only then will you have everything based on the unity of heaven and earth and become channels of blessings centering on this place. You are pledging to become wellsprings of blessings. (264-202, 1994.10.9)

When you water bean sprouts everyday, the water may flow away, but they still grow. How shall I describe your situation? You may be miserable like little mice that fell in the water, but it will be okay if the Unification Church keeps growing. Although my personal situation was miserable, and I had to go to Danbury prison and came under public censure, I walked this path thinking that it would expand God's will, and I am now flying high after Danbury. You have witnessed such a fact, haven't you? In whose name? It is not in my name. It is in the name of this universe, with God's presence. You should know that because the path of the heavenly way is coming into connection, and it has to be a path where God can operate, the universe is bound to cooperate so we can go forward to victory. (147-197, 1986.9.21)

In the family, what are children of filial piety? They are centered on love. In the nation, what are patriots? They are centered on love. In the world, those who sought to transcend their races to love the people of the world organized the cultural spheres and formed a new global background based on the teachings of the four great saints. Considering this, what kind of people can be the standard-bearers in finally arriving at heavenly fortune? God loves heaven and the earth as well. So they must be champions of love who can love heaven and earth. We have come to such a conclusion. (199-215, 1990.2.17)

Section 7. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Seven

Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges, through living for the sake of others, to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage, by centering on true love.

7.1. The family rooted in the original lineage

Pledge number seven of the Family Pledge is important, although it is simple. The phrases, "Our family... rooted in the original lineage… centering on true love" are talking about inheriting the original lineage of Adam who does not have fallen lineage, which has nothing to do with the Fall. Then, it continues, "Our family…pledges to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage..." Our world is to be a world based on the culture of heart. We are to be the Unification Family, one family, centered on the unique love of God. Without being high and low, all five races are to live as one family. Such a time is coming in the future. (261-93, 1994.5.22)

It is the original lineage centered on God. If we inherit this original lineage, the original culture of heart arises. Where the original lineage is lost, the culture of heart does not emerge. Culture is linked through history. The culture of heart should be a network of the family, society, nation, and world. "Our family…pledges to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage..." This means that the issue is how to leave a pure lineage behind. Otherwise, our world based on the culture of heart is not realized.

Unless the world based on the culture of heart is established, the immense Kingdom of Heaven, where we are to live with the prepared foundation of heart, is cut off. For this reason, we should live a life based on the realm of the culture of heart. (260-305, 1994.5.19)

What is the original lineage? Centering on Adam and Eve, you should bequeath the lineage of the pure direct children of the True Parents in such a way that it will last for thousands of years. The environment we live in is extremely impure. Yet, keeping your fidelity and chastity, you can come to the place where you can receive all the highest blessings even amidst such an impure environment. This is the special right that can be given by Rev. Moon alone. No one else can do it. No one else is the fundamental root of the lineage. (291-181, 1998.3.11)

The original lineage is no longer a fallen lineage. It is a lineage that has severed itself from Satan's lineage and restored the Fall through indemnity. It is the result of engrafting. When pulled out from the fallen root and engrafted to the true root, the third generation will receive the seeds of the original lineage. The seeds from the engrafted tree should become original true olive trees. For this, three generations have to pass. Are you confident? This is serious. You are wild olive trees, aren't you? Wild olive trees are to be engrafted; they cannot go back and be born from their mother's womb. After going through three generations, when sowing the seeds harvested from there, they should come out as true olive trees. Three ages must pass. This is serious. (301-85, 1999.4.16)

In the Unification Church, the most important thing is not to defile the original lineage. That means your descendants should not defile their lineage in the same way that Adam and Eve did when they fell. The pledge affirms, "Our family pledges… to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage..." (260-196, 1994.5.8)

Just one mistake by Eve destroyed the original lineage, and it was regained only by fulfilling countless conditions of indemnity over the ages. It is dreadful to think of the suffering. The relationship of a man and a woman is truly a fearful thing. (290-312, 1998.3.4)

We are returning to the original state. That is what number seven of the Family Pledge is about. The original lineage is a lineage centered on God. It is saying that we build the world based on the culture of heart through living for the sake of others, which is rooted in the original lineage. We should leave a clean lineage for thousands of generations. The Fall, committed by a man and a woman in one careless moment, has brought about this our world history, and it has created our world in both the spiritual and physical realms. What shall we do about this? (292-320, 1998.4.27)

What is the original lineage? It is not a fallen lineage. You are husbands and wives connected to the fallen lineage, aren't you? No matter how proud you are of yourself, you cannot deny it. God is connected to the unfallen, original lineage. From now on, we will have to create the world based on the culture of heart through living for the sake of others. God has not been able to do this. Since He has been unable to establish the realm of the original lineage so that people can live for the sake of others on earth – which is the core of the ideal of creation – the world of heart is instead connected to eternal hell. In turning this around to the direction of the Kingdom of Heaven, we have to bring it back to its original form. (297-312, 1998.12.22)

The original lineage centering on love. The lineage! The Blessed Families of the Unification Church should make special devoted efforts to become the first generation ancestors so that their descendants will not be defiled for thousands of years to come. From their generation on, no Fall can be tolerated. If they were to fall, they would not be forgiven because they would become a representative family who has fallen on the global scope, which is hundreds of times more serious than the first Fall. Such a fearful age is coming. That is why I cannot say these words. Right now, I cannot say conclusive words. God cannot face sons and daughters born to fallen Blessed families. This is the sin of all sins, and therefore, God just cannot face them, even if they were put upside down in hell. You should know that when it comes to the love of a man and a woman, veering from the path brings fearsome consequences. (261-93, 1994.5.22)

7.2. Through living for the sake of others

Number seven of the Family Pledge says, "...to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage..." There is something to be added: "through living for the sake of others." Through living for the sake of others, we are to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage..." We need to add the phrase "through living for the sake of others." Living for the sake of others alone could be vague. So, we are to perfect the world based on the culture of heart through our concrete daily life – individual life, family life, and life in the larger society. (297-209, 1998.11.20)

"Through living for the sake of others... rooted in the original lineage, by centering on true love." It is love that serves. You should be able to feel love. It is something holy. You should be able to govern love. You should not do things as you please. We build a world based on the culture of heart through living for the sake of others. What is the world based on the culture of heart? It is the world based on the culture of God's love; we are pursuing the original world culture. It is the world of culture where there is no love to which true love is not related. (304-273, 1999.11.9)

I know that many of you think that they do not want to be under the dominion of anyone else, no matter what. However, until now, people have not been able to fathom even in their dreams how happy it is to live under the dominion of the one who exists for the sake of others. Looking into the structure of the spirit world, God, the great Master of heaven and earth, is the center of all beings in the whole universe that exist for the sake of others. For this reason, it would be a great happiness to be governed by Him, but people have not understood how happy this would be. God had to establish the principle of living for the sake of others because He knows that it is here that the ideal realm of unification, where people can be grateful, is established for eternity. (75-322, 1975.1.16)

Be a person who lives for the sake of others. This is the basis of the generation and formation of the cosmos. God exists for the sake of others. Among all things in the cosmos, nothing goes against this. The one who has, in this way, stood in the central and core position of the subject partner, which is the root of the generation, is welcomed by the cosmos, and even by God. Someone like me, Rev. Moon, belongs to this category. You do not feel it substantially because you do not know it. However, even the spirit world is moving with me as the center. You do not know such a world, do you? That is why you are living carelessly. (255-176, 1994.3.10)

Love is not realized when you are alone. Where does love come from? It does not come from us but from our object partner. Because it comes from our object partner, we must bow our

head and serve our partner. This is where the heavenly principle, "live for the sake of others," comes from. When something extremely precious comes to us, we should exalt and serve others in order to receive it. We can receive love only when we have realized the philosophy of living for the sake of others. (143-277, 1986. 3.20)

The ones who live for the sake of others, centering on true love, are welcomed, day or night, wherever they go in the cosmos. No matter what, you are to be displayed in the exhibition hall of the spirit world. The spirit world is a place where a human exhibition is going on. In the spirit world, what kind of life you have lived on earth will be displayed immediately. Do you want to be the last there, or do you want to be one whom everyone praises? Which side? You want to be the one who is praised the most, don't you? To do so, you have to live according to the way I tell you. I am saying that, before trying to be praised the most, you should live for the sake of others to the highest degree. Such people will surely become the central people. (255-179, 1994.3.10)

As for the concept of eternity, this is impossible when you live for your own sake. When you look at things in motion, the bigger the reciprocal force that pushes and pulls, the faster it turns. The reason why God, the King of wisdom, has established the law of living for the sake of others is because we should be eternal. (75-318, 1975.1.16)

The one who lives for the sake of others does not perish. Also, the one who lives for the sake of others will keep being coached by the spirit world. The spirit world will keep helping him make a relationship with new things. Since he makes a relationship with new things, he will naturally become famous and known throughout the world. (292-26, 1998.3.27)

Where is the path whereby we can be one, the path that can be the starting point of peace? The principle had to be established that not only God Himself but also true people live for the sake of others. Hence, true love, the true ideal, true peace, and true happiness are established by living for the sake of others; they cannot be found apart from that. We human beings did not know that this is the root of the creation of heaven and earth. (75-320, 1975.1.16)

People in the world often wonder, "Alas, what is life?" The question is establishing the proper view of life, view of the world, and view of the cosmos. How are we going to establish these? A most serious question is how to place everything in systematic order and connect their dimensional systems. The viewpoint of the principle of living for the sake of others, the most noble view of life, enables us to be happy while existing for the sake of all of humankind, existing for the sake of the whole world, existing for the sake of our nation, our society, our family, our spouse, and our children. There is no higher view of life than this. (75-324, 1975.1.16)

When you join the Unification Church, you are not encouraged to live a good worldly life. However, even if you have lived in utter misery and suffering, and you die and fall on the street so miserably that even dogs do not pay attention to you, there will be a day when flowers will blossom in the place of your death. There, all the holy people will gather around and create a city. My idea is that I drive the Unification Church members to horrible suffering for the sake of the nation and for the sake of the world, and raise you as filial children and patriots. If you refuse to go, I will have to slap you. Even by kicking you, I will have to help you overcome the current misery and the current difficulty. This is love. (49-303, 1971.10.17)

7.3. Perfecting a world based on the culture of heart

The world based on the culture of heart is the world of the original culture of God, and the world of the culture of perfect Adam, who is not related to the Fall. There are not two cultures; only one. It is the world of unification where there is only one language, one set of customs, habits, and one tradition. You should know that only in such a place can God live together with individuals and in their families. (261-93, 1994.5.22)

Do you understand what the world based on the culture of heart is? It means that the world of God's heart, the world in heaven, the world on earth, and the world of True Parents' heart are all one. That is why we say, "Our family pledges to perfect the world based on the culture of heart..." This is our ideal. The culture should not be two, but one. What shall I say about the fallen world? Its cultures are complicated and multifarious. Hence, other than through the world based on the culture of heart, there is no way for us to make connections from individuals to the cosmos. The world thus far has been going up and down in a zigzag fashion, and that is why it has not yet been able to reach the final destination, even after thousands of years. Yet in the world based on the culture of heart, we can reach it instantaneously. This is possible only through true love. (260-196, 1994.5.8)

The Pledge says, "Our family pledges... to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage, by centering on true love." "Our family... rooted in the original lineage, by centering on true love." It is the original lineage. Lineage is important. Lineage should not change, nor should it be defiled, so that we can complete the formation of the world based on the culture of heart. The culture of heart requires that in all aspects of our life, there should be a philosophy of living for the sake of others in true love. When we say, "the world based on the culture of heart," it refers to "one boundary" representing the whole. It refers to the realm of the heart and the heavenly tribe. (260-156, 1994.5.2)

We should "...perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted

in the original lineage." In other words, Adam and Eve must create a lineage centering on God's pure, true love, unrelated to the Fall. Through this we should form a cultural realm in which Satan cannot exist and God can rejoice. We should build a world based on the culture of heart. Centering on true love, the content of the world based on the culture of heart is one, and its direction is also one. It is one, not two. (266-153, 1994.12.22)

Where the original lineage is lost, no culture of heart can emerge. Culture is linked to history. This should be linked through the family, society, nation, and the world. "Our family... pledges to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage..." The question is how to leave a pure lineage behind. If we do not, the world based on the culture of heart is disrupted. Unless the world based on the culture of heart is established, the immense Kingdom of Heaven, where we are to live with a foundation of heart that is already prepared, is cut off from us. For this reason, we should live a life based on the realm of the culture of heart. (260-305, 1994.5.19)

The original lineage is rooted in the lineage of God. This is the world based on the culture of heart. Wherever we go, God comes to visit us. In the world based on the culture of heart, everything expands and harmonizes. When breathing like this, all should breathe the same breath, because even the cells should go along with the same beat. With respect to God's love, we should be one with the principle of living for the sake of others and serve others. In so doing, we can find the way to glorify God; but we cannot glorify God in asking others to serve us. The world based on the culture of heart is the world of the original culture of God and the world of the culture of perfected Adam, who has nothing to do with the Fall. In such a world, there are not two cultures; there is only one. Let it be the world of unification such that there is only one language, there is only one set of customs, there is only one set of habits, and there is only one tradition! You should know that only there will God live together with the individual and in families. (261-93, 1994.5.22)

What is the original source of the culture that can be the mainstream or groundwork for the ideal world in the future? What is the culture, which is needed by everyone that can serve as the raw material? It is the culture of heart. It is where parents cannot live without seeing their children, nor can the children live without their parents. We cannot live without our siblings, we cannot live without our people, and we cannot live without our nation. This applies to all levels. So we cannot live without the world, nor can we live without heaven and earth. Such is the culture of heart. Then what does the bright culture dawning in the East refer to? It refers to the culture of heart. From now on, we are to create the world based on heart. (151-29, 1962.10.7)

It will be a culture centered on the families of the True Parents and yours. When we practice true love, we will have a culture centered on the family. The culture of true love does not refer to an individual, but to a family culture. You should live your daily life within the realm of the True Parents' culture, which is the realm of one culture. You should live centering on one culture, one language, and one alphabet. Lot's wife, who looked back when Sodom and Gomorrah were burning, turned into a pillar of salt. Likewise, when the time comes to burn away all of your culture, if you are still attached to it and look back, you would turn into a pillar of salt. You should know that such an age of a historic turning point is coming. Although you live in the same realm of daily life as the True Parents, if you still do not have the same culture and use the same language and alphabet, there would be nothing that is more shameful. (266-91, 1994.12.18)

If you do not use the unified language, a cultural gap arises as in the past. This is quite a serious problem. The same is true in the spirit world. Habits last eternally, even there. This is how difficult it is to remove old habits. However, this can be corrected on earth. If you develop stronger habits than your old habits, you can overcome them on earth. You must do it right now. Otherwise, you will be in trouble when you go to the spirit world. You will get stuck when you are in the spirit world. (289-208, 1998.1.2)

The coming future world is the world of the new culture of heart and the culture of love based on the true family, where God, human beings, and all things live in harmony. It is the world of interdependence, mutual prosperity, and universally shared values in which people live for the sake of others in true love and live together in harmony and cooperation. The future history is to be one that realizes the dream of "one global family through the ideal of true family" centering on the True Parents, and through the ideal of "humanity as brothers and sisters," transcending races with true love. (288-172, 1997.11.27)

You should live with fun and joy in true love. You should be able to communicate with animals, harmonize with all things, and harmonize with God. Then there will be no such things as national boundaries. There will be no different cultures. It will be the culture of love. Since the culture of love is the culture of hobbies, a life of pursuing hobbies is love. Loving your spouse and loving your sons and daughters can be extended throughout the scope of the world. All are the expansion of your family and the realm of your object partners, celebrating culture. That is why the world based on the culture of heart where you enjoy yourself is the culture of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. It is the culture of hobbies. Such a culture of hobbies is the original culture of love, unrelated to the Fall. The culture of hobbies is the culture of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. (276-209, 1996.2.24)

The world based on the culture of heart rooted in the original lineage is the world of heart. It is the world where true love is manifested. As we enter the age to manifest the heart and globalize it, the unified world of the culture of heart, the world of the unified culture comes. It is the one world free of wars and strife, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven. Once the world based on the culture of heart is established, everything is over. All these things are set forth so that your families can enter, on earth, the realm of the royal family of the Heavenly Kingdom as freely as you want. You should know that the contents of the Pledge have been determined with the hope that you can align yourself with all of this. (276-209, 1996.2.24)

Section 8. Explanation of Family Pledge Number Eight

Our family, the Owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges, having entered the Completed Testament Age, to achieve the ideal of God and human beings united in love through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, and to perfect the realm of liberation and complete freedom in the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven, by centering on true love.

8.1. As we enter the Completed Testament Age

8.1.1. What is the Completed Testament Age?

The Completed Testament Age refers to a new age that begins now. It refers to the time when we can establish one unified world of peace through the oneness of families, tribes, peoples, nations and the world. This represents everyone, not only the family. By uniting the world, and uniting the whole universe, we enter the Completed Testament Age. When we establish a world that befits the Completed Testament Age, after uniting the present world through the new families based on the four realms of heart and the three kingships, we will finally have one world of peace. (243-262, 1993.1.17)

What is the Completed Testament Age? Serving and caring for the True Parents and the True God, centering on the relationships of love, life and lineage, we are returning to the period when human beings have dominion with which they can act on behalf of God's authority, representing the subject being of the whole world, and standing there in the center position. An age full of hope is coming. I would like you to quickly prepare for this before it is too late. (245-160, 1993.2.28)

Since the creation, God's providence of restoration has gone through tens of millions of years of history, but its standard has not yet been established. Rev. Moon finally arrived, established the Unification Church and revealed this truth, making this possible. That is why he announced the Completed Testament Age and the True Parents. This is an event that has a great effect on world

history. Yet, rather than calling it an event, it serves as an origin to found a new world. The philosophy of the True Parents and the expression Completed Testament Age embrace such a meaning. What promise is being fulfilled in the Completed Testament Age? It is the promise that God made to human beings at the time of creation. It is not the age of the providence of restoration or the age of the providence of salvation, but is the world of the ideal of creation that is to be realized. God thought of the words "True Parents" even before human beings did. God's ideal of creation is the appearance of the True Parents. In that word is found the core of the ideal that God created from the beginning. Thus, Heaven cannot remain still. We are entering the age of the great transformation or change throughout the world. (248-188, 1993.9.30)

Things were offered in the Old Testament Age, sons and daughters in the New Testament Age, couples in the Completed Testament Age. And then you attend God. As a result of the Fall, we human beings failed to attend God on earth, serving Satan instead and being separated from God. We should now attend God and reconnect everything to Him. Thus, the things in your possession are not really yours. They correspond to the Old Testament Age, and sons and daughters to the New Testament Age. In the Old Testament Age, things were sacrificed to pave the way for the children, and in the New Testament Age, sons and daughters were sacrificed for the coming of the parents. It is ultimately to attend God on this earth that the Lord at his Second Advent, the True Parent, comes and suffers on this earth. Now we are in hell because we have been in service to Satan on earth. Thus we should attend God through the application of true love. (211-352, 1991.1.1)

It was to make this one road that the providence has been going through six thousand years of biblical history until now. Jesus tried to connect the New Testament Age to the Completed Testament Age and bring heaven and earth into oneness. This, however, failed, and God's providence was prolonged for another two thousand years. Jesus brought the New Testament Age and worked to expand his scope to the world. The expansion movement produced many martyrs. Especially during the four hundred years of Roman persecution, many of his followers shed much blood. However, through that indemnity condition, the movement was expanded to the global level. Through this prolongation, God extended His providence of salvation to the world, hoping that the failures at the time of Jesus would be indemnified again on the world level.

Then, how could God's providence go beyond the New Testament Age and enter the Completed Testament Age? The Completed Testament Age refers to the realm of oneness of God and human beings. It refers to establishing, through true love, the realm of oneness, and standing on an equal basis by connecting together. God is not always vertical

and human beings are not always horizontal. The vertical and horizontal are to become one. (211-352, 1991.1.1)

Since the false parent came into existence through the Fall, it is a historical fact that the True Parents must come. As long as the Fall is known, there is no way for this to be denied. Because of the Fall, the promise of God could not be fulfilled. The Old Testament is the promise made in the past, and the New Testament is the promise renewed; the Completed Testament Age continues to fulfill the promise. This is logical.

What kind of age is the Completed Testament Age? In this age we do not live with Satan but with God. Hence, the fallen realm must be eliminated. The elimination of Satan's world is possible because now is the time when all nations and the world can return to God.

By clearly knowing about the details of the Kingdom of Heaven, we can eliminate the false world which goes against the principles of God. It is impossible to prescribe medicine, or to present an alternative to the fallen world, unless we clearly know the right path for the individual, the family, the tribe, the peoples, the nation, the world, and even the path for the Kingdom of Heaven. (249-159, 1993.10.10)

The reason why we now talk specifically about "justification by attendance" is because it refers to the age in which one lives life as if in the Kingdom of Heaven. That is why we are talking about justification by attendance.

The history of restoration means to re-enact God's ideal of creation. For this reason, God's ideal is to be unfolded, centering on Him, in the world in heaven and in the world on earth. However, these worlds have fallen short of the original standard due to the Fall. Therefore, the providence of salvation is God's work; His striving towards re-establishing heaven and earth to the original ideal of creation, the new world of creation, from the environment under Satan's realm of control. (161-218, 1987.2.15)

When you look at human history, it can be viewed as having three ages: the Old Testament Age, New Testament Age and Completed Testament Age. What does the Old Testament Age refer to? It refers to the age when sacrificial offerings were made to save children. It was a preparation for the coming of the Son of God. The New Testament Age is the age in which Jesus served as a sacrifice to receive the Parents. That is why, in the age of the Second Coming, the bridegroom and bride were established to receive the Parents. In the Completed Testament Age, Rev. Moon, with the title of the True Parent, has suffered for forty years so that God could be received on earth. Through this, the oneness of God and human beings is achieved. (227-94, 1992.2.10)

When we speak about the True Parents and the Completed Testament Age we are referring to the fact that Adam and Eve are to reach perfection and return to the place where there is no Fall. Women throughout the whole world are consid-

ered as part of the True Mother's body. Adam is one person, and Eve is also one person. This is important. Adam should be one perfected person; so should Eve. (266-64, 1994.12.11)

What does the Completed Testament Age represent? The Completed Testament Age represents the fulfillment of God's covenant; that is, He is giving the Blessing to humankind. In the Old Testament Age, the Blessing did not occur; in the New Testament Age, the Blessing was desired; and in the Completed Testament Age, the Blessing is attained. Is it not God's ideal of creation that Adam and Eve marry centering on God, thereby connecting the life force centered on His love to the life of Adam and Eve and leaving His lineage behind? Had this happened, they would have become the True Parents. True love is indeed great. (291-178, 1998.3.11)

There can be only one set of True Parents. They are the only Parents of humankind. The Completed Testament Age is the age in which the True Parents appear for the first time ever in human history. (248-226, 1993.10.1)

8.1.2. The Completed Testament Age is declared through the victory of the True Parents.

In 1992, I proclaimed the coming of the the Messiah and the True Parents to the world. Thereafter, I drove providential fortune, and in this year, 1993, I announced "The True Parents and the Completed Testament Age" in America from May 13th. I created the environment in which all this can be accomplished. As you know, America is the nation that represents the whole world. It is the nation that serves as the final home for the Christian cultural sphere. Now, with the True Parents as the center, we entering a new age; that is, we are entering the Completed Testament Age. This declaration was made for the first time ever on earth. How eagerly God must have waited for this time! What a miserable situation God has been in throughout the ages of history! Now the age of hope has come near; we have entered the age when we can proclaim the True Parents. This is a historical event that carries all the significance of universal history. Up until now, there has never been such an event throughout human history. (248-175, 1993.8.3)

The twenty years from 1972 to 1992 is the period when we went beyond the mission of Christianity, centering on Korea. On the national level, I fulfilled the indemnity condition that corresponds to the Old Testament Age. The Holy Marriage of the True Parents in 1960 and our activities in America on the global stage corresponds to the relationship between the Old Testament Age and the New Testament Age. They have the same contents. Through this, the worldwide settlement of the True Parents was concluded in this period. That is why I announced the Completed Testament Age, which is the time when we can live with God. We Unification

Church members have now come to the age of living with God. (248-175, 1993.8.3)

What is the Completed Testament Age? It refers to the time when the family of the central True Parents has achieved a complete victory and has gone beyond the fallen realm of the world. The enemies who have been trying to strike down Rev. Moon's family disappear from the environment. They disappear because they are defeated in the fight. Even if you won a championship in shooting, if you were defeated in the Olympic games, can you still claim that you are the best? You would have to give up your medal as the champion. (234-295, 1992.8.27)

The words "The Completed Testament Age and the True Parents" have nothing to do with Satan. Once the words "The Completed Testament Age and the True Parents" appear, Satan will have to retreat. This is a privileged time. Thus, everyone should reach perfection at the time of the Second Advent. (252-130, 1993.11.14)

Right now I am thinking about Adam's age, Jesus' age, and the True Parents' age. Why three stages? Adam's age represents the formation stage, Jesus' age the growth stage, and the True Parents' age the completion stage. It is through these three stages or generations that the restoration of Eden in the Old Testament Age, the restoration of Eden in the New Testament Age, and the restoration of Eden in the Completed Testament Age, unfolds. Now, I am the only one who remains in the Completed Testament Age. (229-69, 1992.4.9)

The Completed Testament Age is a time to return to the family. Unification starts with the individual. You cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven, even for tens of thousand years, unless you have gone over this hill. You cannot restore the right of the eldest son, which can be done through bringing Satan to voluntary submission. This is not a forced submission but through persuasion. Did you surrender yourself voluntarily or forcibly? Since you have been persuaded, you should surrender voluntarily, right? Through this, heavenly families on earth and in heaven, and all the victorious dominion over thousands of years, is attained all at once centering on the family, while all the nations of the world stand in equal positions. This is a blueprint from which a cast will be made of the True Parents as the model. This should be distributed. Then, with this cast, the copies are immediately produced wherever they are made. Likewise, the families of the five-billion humankind of the whole world are engrafted as one global family and return to the Nation – the Kingdom of Heaven of liberation that had been lost. This is the Completed Testament Age, the age in which the promise of God is fulfilled. (245-157, 1993.2.28)

What was lost during the Old Testament Age should be recovered. In the Old Testament Age, all things were sac-

rificed; in the New Testament Age, the son was sacrificed; and in the Completed Testament Age, the Parent was sacrificed. With respect to all these, we should, therefore, deny everything – including the parents and children of our own family. In order to return everything that Satan had taken from heaven, we should offer heaven everything that we have, denying them and even adding greater love than the love of Satan's world. In such a way, by putting ourselves in the position of denying everything, there will come a time when we will have paid the indemnity needed to restore the Old Testament Age, the New Testament Age, and the Completed Testament Age. The time of elimination is coming. I am saying these things so that, by following the principle of resurrection, the Blessed families will avoid being caught by Satan and can be liberated. Going through "things" in the Old Testament Age, the Second Adam in the New Testament Age, and our own substantial self in the Completed Testament Age indicates that the direction has to be changed 180 degrees centered upon God. All that used to be yours should be returned to the Parent who brings them to God. Love should be resurrected.

We as individuals are on the formation stage, our family is on the growth stage, and our tribe is on the perfection stage. These three stages should become one. (216-204, 1991.3.31)

What is the most important thing in the course of history? It is the emergence of the realm of the chosen people. In this age, I am trying to connect this realm on the world level to the foundation of three stages of development: the formation, growth, and completion stages. The Israelites correspond to the formation level, Christianity to the growth level, and the Unification Church to the completion level. If the realm of Israel was the center of the Old Testament Age, Christianity was the center of the New Testament Age, and the Unification Church is that for the Completed Testament Age. The Completed Testament Age is the age of achievement. What should be achieved? Individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations, and the world should be completed. Centering on what? Centering on God's love, God's life, and God's lineage. Through this, all should be connected. This is the tradition of a single lineage, a single love, and a single life. If this happens, Satan will have to leave. Through this engraftment, Satan's connection to the lineage disappears. (226-275, 1992.2.9)

When tribal messiahs are dispatched, the Completed Testament Age arrives. If all families are engrafted to these tribal messiahs who are dispatched, without going through a course of indemnity, the walls in the worlds on earth and in heaven will crumble. In other words, we can return to the position of being the people of the Kingdom of Heaven. This means that we can enter the realm of the royal family of the Kingdom of Heaven. So, once the tribal messiahs establish their own physical mothers and fathers in the position of true parents, their hometowns will be directly connected

to the Kingdom of Heaven. Then, their birth mothers and fathers can stand in the position of being restored to the lineage of the parents who have reached perfection, without having fallen. Through this, amazing events, in which your entire hometowns turn into the Kingdom of Heaven, can occur.

The most important thing is that, in the Completed Testament Age, we live together with God. Thus, we should expedite these three requirements, namely, the change of lineage, the change of ownership, and the change of heart. So you should practice in your families the four realms of heart, the three kingships, and the realm of royal family. Once this is successfully done, everything is over. This is the last mission to be undertaken by the Blessed families. This is your last mission; your destiny. (226-275, 1992.2.9)

The Completed Testament Age, centering on the True Parents, refers to the time of receiving the Blessing centered on God. Through the completion of such an ideal of the Second Advent, which shows the way to the liberation of all peoples and humankind, transcending all, the world becomes one of peace and unification. Receiving the Completed Testament Age centered on the True Parents involves the Blessing that is going on throughout the world. (287-14, 1997.8.10)

In the Completed Testament Age, the Blessing was given at the completion level. Therefore, all people can stand on the same level, and their descendants can receive the Blessing. Five billion human beings, the descendants of the three great ancestors, are now living on earth. By giving them the Blessing with those from the liberation realm of the three great ancestors, all of them can receive the same grace in equal proportion. This is because they are now connected to the parent-child relationship. Such a time has arrived. An urgent time has come. (252-139, 1993.11.14)

Now, the ownership should be restored. In order to attend God, in the Old Testament Age things were sacrificed, in the New Testament Age the son was sacrificed, and in the Completed Testament Age the parent was sacrificed. What should you do now? You should stand in the position of the mother and father on their behalf. Sons and daughters represent the New Testament Age and all things represent the Old Testament Age. As these Old Testament, New Testament and Completed Testament Ages all come within the range of God's true love, you should pay indemnity for having deviated from God's love and come back to the original owner and return to Him all that Satan controlled. (208-345, 1990.11.21)

8.2. Through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience

8.2.1. God's principle of creation and absolute faith and absolute obedience

After creating Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden, God gave them the one

and only commandment and told them not to eat of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. He told them to keep it from the position of one having absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, but they failed to do so. When God gave them that commandment, He, Himself, stood in the position of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Thus, His counterparts also had to do the same in order to achieve oneness. However, they failed to accomplish this.

In the last days, in order for fallen human beings to return to the original world and to enter the Kingdom of Heaven, they should go through the gate of the True Parents. In order to so do, they must perform acts of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, which were not carried out in the Garden of Eden. Otherwise, they cannot go to this new world. They must hold fast to the coat tails of the True Parents and follow them, without ever losing them, with an attitude of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. God is the subject partner. God has lost His partners of love because He lost the fruits of absolute faith, the fruits of absolute love, and the fruits of absolute obedience. That is, He lost the family of Adam and Eve with their sons and daughters. No force can prevent you from grasping Rev. Moon's belt like this. For such victors of unification, all creation says "Amen" while cheering *Mansei*. (282-41, 1997.2.16)

When God created the universe, He did so on the basis of absolute faith. Thus, whatever God has said, will absolutely be fulfilled. There is nothing that cannot be accomplished. Also, the purpose of creation is to have object partners of love, absolute love. There is no room for doubt; no second thoughts. Next is absolute obedience. Absolute obedience means not having a sense of "self"; even God is no exception to this. (274-201, 1995.11.3)

God started creating all things based on absolute faith. He began to create so that He could have object partners of absolute love. Absolute obedience means that there exists no awareness of "self". It is a state of complete zero – a complete nothingness. Once God returns to nothingness, a circular movement automatically begins. Since everything is given out, and there is no more to give, God returns to the bottom. This has become the origin of the movement of the universe. Thus, after completely investing everything, things go down preparing to go up once more. (282-68, 1997.3.10)

At the time of creation, God created based on absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. This total giving left a complete vacuum, resulting in a deflation in which not even the tiniest particle remained between the two sides, which then attached to each other and became one. This is how oneness, total oneness is achieved. When oneness is created and fullness is produced, like a type of high pressure zone, then a circular motion is created. Likewise, if you totally invest yourself from the position

of absolute nothingness, a dynamic type of movement can occur.

When I apply such a principle and invest myself for the universe based on absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, there will come a time when the world naturally unites, and the high pressure zone will be completely filled. Here it is logical that the unification of the world will naturally appear without conflict. (273-297, 1995.10.29)

God raised Adam and Eve, wanting them to be absolutely faithful. God wanted the family of Adam and Eve to stand on absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience because the place of love for the ideal world that He had created with absolute faith was to be a place of such a standard. But Adam and Eve fell. They destroyed the standard of absolute faith, violated the standard of absolute love, and abandoned the standard of absolute obedience. Where can such people go? They are bound to go to hell.

The commandment that God gave to Adam and Eve was to do with love, which is symbolized by the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. They should have become one in the love of God, who had practiced absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. However, they lost that position, and Rev. Moon has come today and is speaking about this to restore it. It is amazing that a system of truth has been established, which people can accept as common sense on a theoretical basis, and which can work to reshape their lives. You should understand that you are standing in the position of kings and queens and rich men and women, which is more precious than that of billionaires and the presidents of all nations. (273-299, 1995.10.29)

God created with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, and aspired towards the ideal unified world of absolute love. God Himself practiced all these: absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Thus, we should also inevitably practice them in order to earn the right to be partners with God. Even if we may go to a place of death, or even if we may lose our life, we should still stand on the standard of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Only then can we, as His sons and daughters, resemble the image of the Father who has passed through history, investing and investing and forgetting about His investment in order to find absolute love. That is why Jesus came to this earth and said, as a motto for going to the heavenly kingdom: "Whoever seeks to gain his life will lose it, but whoever loses his life will preserve it." (273-299, 1995.10.29)

We are trying to regain what was lost in Adam's family: absolute faith, absolute love... What is absolute love? God's purpose of creation is to find partners of love. In order to find the absolute partners of love, God Himself has been investing absolute love as the standard. Thus, absolute obedience means that even your own way of thinking should

not exist. You invest your whole self and forget about what you've invested. God does not acknowledge His own value as the creator of heaven and earth. He lowers himself. Since God totally invests Himself while going down to the bottom, while His partner is going up to the extent in which he goes even higher than God's position, then they both automatically resurrect. (282-323, 1997.4.7)

We should love God. We should have absolute faith in God. With absolute faith, we should love God absolutely and obey Him absolutely. Why? It is in order to receive God's love and to inherit the right of ownership.

God created heaven and earth with absolute faith and absolute love, and in the position of absolute obedience. God's ideal of creation should possess the standard of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Adam and Eve were the central beings; God's object partners of love. Thus, because creation was created with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, these become the standards for existence.

Christianity also teaches faith, hope, and love. What is the greatest among them all? It is love. It is exactly the same. God created all things with absolute faith and absolute love. Absolute obedience requires you to have no sense of self; it requires that you be conscious of others. Hope does not refer to the present time; instead it is referring to the future expectations connected to the object partner. Hope is the same for both. (284-135, 1997.4.16)

It is absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Everything is realized within this realm. God Himself created His partners of love with absolute faith. He created them after proclaiming, "I have this faith!" He completely invested Himself with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience.

Absolute faith stands on the basis of absolute love, and absolute obedience stands on the basis of absolute love. This is the main idea of the spirit world. It is the main thought of the eternal spirit world. It is also the main thought of the earth. It is the main thought in both worlds: the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and the Kingdom of Heaven in heaven. So you should have such a concept. As long as you have this concept, you can pass anywhere. You can pass everywhere. (292-271, 1998.4.27)

Just as God created all things with full authority, investing absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, you should also stand in the same position. You should not fail to become object partners to the subject partner in the ideal realm created by God, and unite with Him as one. What you should know is that I, Rev. Moon, absolutely believe in the entire contents of the Principle. That is what you should understand. That is something which you must absolutely love. There is nothing else. Even if I may have to abandon my world, abandon my family, abandon my wife, and abandon my children, I love the Principle absolutely, more than them. I absolutely obey it. I invest my

present life as well as the entire length of my life in it. I invest everything and then forget it. Until now, you may have understood absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience conceptually, but it is not a concept. It is something that you must actually put into practice. (293-92, 1998.5.24)

You should know that God is liberated with the liberation of humankind. For the liberation of your families, I, Rev. Moon, console God's sorrow of having lost His family. By liberating my tribe, I should console God's sorrow of having lost His tribe, and by building a nation, I should liberate God from the sorrow of having lost His nation. What I am trying to do in my life is to regain the lost cosmos in order to console God's sorrow. I do not have my own wish, nor do I have my own thoughts. I just practice absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. If I am told to die, I don't hesitate to die. I try not to avoid something even if I may have to die. (300-72, 1999.2.21)

Within the bag of the harmony of love, there is the world of peace and unity. You, Unification Church members, have no way of denying it. This is because even if you study it for ten thousand years, you will not have studied it more than I have. So if you come to this conclusion clearly and practice it with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, everything is completed.

Ladies and gentlemen, when you are married, you ask your spouse, "You absolutely trust me, don't you?" If your bride asks you on the first night of your marriage, "How much do you love me?" you would answer, "I love you absolutely with my mind and body as one; I absolutely love you with the oneness of my mind and body; I absolutely trust you," right? (296-94, 1998.11.3)

The philosophy of the True Parents is simple. It is centered on absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. It is absolute faith centered on love. The absolute faith, however, is a concept, whereas love is the center of everything. Love is invisible although you experience it.

Next, obedience means practice. If we are going to realize love, centering on love, we must obey. The purpose of obedience is to achieve something greater; so, to achieve this we should invest ourselves. If this grows centering on ourselves, it cannot fully grow. God's tradition of infinite love expands everywhere continuously. The issue is the relationship between husband and wife. That is why my first declaration in Jardim was absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Through this, we are returning to the original position of God at the time of creation. (296-94, 1998.11.3)

The realm of dominion based on accomplishments, the realm of direct dominion, or the realm of direct dominion through the fulfillment of humankind's portion of responsibility – all these refer to the accomplishment of our responsibility, by receiving the Blessing centering on love; this is the

view of the Principle, isn't it? When you stand with this view, you should completely resemble God in your mind and body. God created all things based on absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Therefore, unless the human beings, Adam and Eve, become one through absolute faith, and stand in the position of object partners to Him through absolute love and absolute obedience, there will never be a way for them to become one with Him. At their one meeting point, they can reach the standard of oneness; this point should not be off even one iota. This is logical; this is a serious matter. (285-72, 1997.4.21)

The Fall means having failed to have absolute faith. You should know this. It is absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience! God emphasized this. Why? It was so that He could bequeath to you the entire ideal of love. In order for you to do so, you should resemble Him. (282-297, 1997.4.7)

Absoluteness implies that there is only one. This is a road that leads to one, not two. How do we connect ourselves to that single path? We can connect by living for the sake of others. God also created with such a concept. It is absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Even God has no other concept. It means none, a zero. (281-217, 1997.2.13)

When God created Adam and Eve, He had absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Because God created in this way, His partners must stand on absolute faith and be in the position of absolute obedience. Otherwise, they cannot enter the realm of God's love. This is where the Kingdom of Heaven and hell are divided. This is the content of the commandment. (278-128, 1996.5.1)

Americans, being individualists, are saying, "I am the best, and who is this Rev. Moon? He's just the founder of the Unification Church, so what? He has nothing to do with me." When Rev. Moon talks about absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, they are saying, "What kind of words are these? Are they words from a dictator or a king?" The dictator or king is God. He is, however, the true dictator or king. The false dictator or king is Satan. You should know this. If you tell God not to act as the owner, would He stop acting as the owner? The answer is eternally no. (293-297, 1998.6.7)

8.2.2. The practice of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience sends you straight to the Kingdom of Heaven

We should be settled, by liberating the realm of the fourth Adam. The True Parents should teach you all of this before going to the spirit world. Rev. Moon practices absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience centered on the absolute family. That is why God serves that family. The eternal path of true love is connected to this. If you fail to practice absolute faith, absolute love will not take root. When the bud comes

out, it should be nurtured in order to grow. For it to grow, you should invest all of your blood and flesh, and sacrifice yourself. (295-163, 1998.8.19)

We no longer need indemnity. Nor do we need salvation. Thus, we should follow the law of heaven and earth centering on the Principle, and teach absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Now the new law is emerging. The constitution is emerging. If we practice absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience on earth, the eternal Kingdom of Heaven is realized. From the earth, you should naturally be able to see, feel, and know the world of heaven. (293-274, 1998.6.2)

God created based on absolute faith and with the heart of absolute love and absolute obedience. For this reason, the Unification Church stands in the position of practicing absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience at the place where we attend the heavenly parent and the earthly parents with the title of the True Parents. Therefore, centering on the family of love which is based on the ideal of creation, all could be united and establish the victorious hegemony, upon which foundation the sovereign nation of love could begin. We are now living in such an age. (303-155, 1999.8.17)

The Blessed families are the people who have inherited God's lineage of true life, and with whom God can be connected - both in the spirit world and physical world. Thus, God can rule over them as He pleases. So from now on, God is pushing forward the history of restoration, without indemnity conditions, according to His will and with His full authority. The question is whether or not you are suitable; whether or not you can stand in the reciprocal relationship with God. Once you have made the determination and become one with the standard of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, everything will work at lightening speed, becoming equal. Once you become true sons and daughters standing in the position of oneness with God and God's absolute love and lineage, the entire universe will be bequeathed to you as His sons and daughters. Then, everything belongs to you. When you become one in love, everything becomes yours. (300-303, 1999.4.11)

The Blessed families are equal in value to the world and cosmos. They are like the sons and daughters of Rev. Moon's direct lineage, who can act on his behalf. When I gave them the Blessing, I did so in order for them to become better than me, by following me. So, once you have the heart of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, you can do the things I did. When God created, He started with such a heart. God, the subject partner, said, "When I speak, my object partners of love substantially appear." This is absolute faith. Upon this, He meets the partner of absolute love. To be an owner of love, a partner of love is indispensable. That is why even God Himself absolutely obeys love. A circu-

lar movement arises whenever we adopt an absolute response. (301-74, 1999.4.16)

In the Garden of Eden, God created with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. The realm of oneness of God and human beings in love is created through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. The Kingdom of Heaven in heaven and the Kingdom of Heaven on earth are to be the realm of oneness of God and human beings in love, so that His sons and daughters, who are like the absolute God, can freely exercise their full authority; and they are to be the worlds where they can freely travel, wherever they go. We can finally liberate God only when we become people of ability who can do such activities. (301-85, 1999.4.16)

Everything was shattered due to lack of faith. This happened because the first human ancestors failed to absolutely love God. They fell because of their inability to absolutely love and obey God. For this reason, the True Parents have indemnified this and prepared the highway for all of us to follow. Thus, if you practice absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience towards the True Parents, heaven and earth will respond and obey you, even if you call upon them day or night, and wake them up ten times.

You should, therefore, not complain even if you are woken up a hundred times during the night. This is obedience. Consensual obedience has within it a part of "self", but in complete obedience this does not exist. You should be obedient even if it means following a thousand times a day. (300-238, 1999.3.23)

The world on earth and the world in heaven become one with God as the center. Carrying a signboard for unification, with the True Parents as the center, they unite. God created with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, and for this reason, we should also stand on the foundation of all-transcendence, all-immanence, all-authority, and omnipotence. Because we have now returned to the original state of creation, in order to find the object partners of love here, we are to invest and forget about it with a heart of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. By copying what God has done, we ourselves should also practice absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience towards this world on behalf of God. (303-153, 1999.8.17)

Your families represent history and heaven and earth. By becoming absolute, unique, unchanging, and eternal families, in attendance to God with absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, when your families turn into eternal tribes, eternal peoples, and thus create the eternal Kingdom of Heaven, the age of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth is directly connected to the Kingdom of Heaven in heaven, and one unified world is created. (295-255, 1998.9.8)

8.2.3. The standard of oneness is absolute faith and absolute love

You should consider that the path of God's liberation and completion is the

path of restoration which the True Parents have established. Just as the True Parents walked the path of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience before God, you must also walk the same path of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience before the True Parents. Only then shall I, Rev. Moon, follow you around, being on the same level with you. (280-33, 1996.10.13)

It is absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. In the Garden of Eden, that is what God asked Adam and Eve to keep through the commandment that God gave to them. God was saying, "With an absolute standard, I created all things in order to find the partners of love. You should reach this level." That is why you are asked to practice absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. Obedience has no sense of self. (284-183, 1997.4.17)

How rugged the road of restoration is! I, Rev. Moon, should not violate the efforts made by others who have come this far. If I did, I would not be qualified to be the True Parent, I would not be qualified to be the bridegroom, I would not be qualified to be the elder brother, and I would not be qualified to be the sibling. Because of such a heart, I uphold absolute faith. I should practice absolute faith. It is absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. That is why I invest and forget, and pull you forward whenever I have time, and raise people up with my philosophy of love, and then give them to you to love more than anyone else. You are the descendants of the fallen archangel. In such a position, can you have marriage partners? You cannot. So, by taking some part of Adam's body and engrafting it, I place you in the position of my younger siblings and bind you together.

Cain, in the position of Satan, struck his younger brother to death, didn't he? What shall we do this time? Shall we also strike our younger brother to death? The elder brother is the one who saves them all. That is why I am telling you to practice absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. (290-321, 1998.3.4)

There are still paths of indemnity, but I have laid a wide road along all these paths. Your families are supposed to go over these paths but, as the representative, I have laid a highway for all of those in the satanic world. Therefore, if you pass through the realm of heart by being one with me, the True Parent, in whom you absolutely believe, absolutely love, and absolutely obey, you can be engrafted onto me and freely go over the paths that I have pioneered. That is why I teach you absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. By centering on the standard of the ideal of true love, which God created in Adam's family, and as the object partner who has that standard and has become one with True Father, you should go over the individual environment and connect your tribes and relatives. After passing through the age of the family, we have now come to the age of the blood relatives. (284-161, 1997.4.16)

You should know that this person has become the True Parent who stands above good individuals' parents, and represents the new nation that stands above nations, the new world that stands above the evil world, the Individual who stands above fallen people and the King who stands above kings. Thus, by absolutely loving him, you will be able to victoriously go over Satan's world and all the heinous environments of the fallen world. So, before his will, standing as the subject partner, you should be resolved to become one in absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, and go forward. This should be the creed of the Unification Church members who are striving to save and recreate the fallen world. (277-80, 1996.3.31)

It is true love, alone, that can unite the mind and the body that were divided through false love. So, you should practice true love. You should absolutely obey the command of the True Parents. It is possible only on that basis; it is impossible below the standard of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. (274-199, 1995.11.3)

You must absolutely not be separated from Rev. Moon. You must not fail to practice absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. If you fail, gaps will widen in you. There should be no gaps. So, am I trustworthy? Have I lived like that or not? (290-129, 1998.2.15)

In the Completed Testament Age, families should settle. This requires absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. So let us fulfill the ideal of mind and body unity and realize the realm of liberation of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven. This is the last thing to do. I am talking about the settlement of families. We should realize the realm of liberation by creating the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven. We should clean up heaven and everything else. (292-320, 1998.4.27)

The time when you and I have to separate will come. You are to go out among the people, and my path will move upward to a higher place. When I head to the vertical place, can this vertical place go over into the horizontal one? The horizontal should follow the vertical and climb up, right? They should have the same angle. If their angles were to diverge, they would fall apart. That is why you should become absolutely one centering on the vertical standard of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. It is absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. (300-163, 1999.3.3)

No matter what, you must become individuals who can receive all ownership that comes from God's blessing on the family level that I am talking about. To do this, you should love based on absolute faith. You should practice absolute love and absolute obedience. Even if you may have to give up your own family and nation, you must stand on this foundation and become a family that kicks out the first ancestors' sorrow of

not having been able to keep the commandment given to them. By doing so, you can go straight to the Kingdom of Heaven as a victorious family of liberation. This is a special grace that is granted by Rev. Moon to you. Indeed, this is a special grace. In order to find out whether this is a lie or not, just die and see. You will discover it right away. This is how serious it is. (274-181, 1995.10.29)

8.3. To achieve the ideal of oneness of God and humankind in love

8.3.1. The ideal oneness of God and humankind in love is God's purpose of creation

God, the subject partner of true love, has established human beings as His partners of true love. God's ideal of love is fulfilled only through human beings. God's purpose of creation is to bring about the world of the absolute ideal of God and human beings united in love. Human beings were, therefore, created as the object partners of God's highest and deepest love. Thus, among the creation, they are the only object partners who wear the substantial body of God. They are born as the visible body before the invisible God. When human beings reach perfection, they become God's temples. They are the visible substantial beings in whom God can always enter and dwell in freedom and peace. God's overall ideal of absolute true love is realized and perfected through human beings in a vertical relationship between parents and children. (277-198, 1996.4.16)

Until now, no one has understood where God's love and humankind's love merge. Without knowing this, you cannot call God, Father. That word has no relevance to God. Adam and Eve are God's bodies. Thus, when Adam and Eve reach perfection, God's internal nature is manifested in man's mind, and God's external form is manifested in woman's mind. The physical wedding ceremony of Adam and Eve is God's wedding ceremony. When you go to the spirit world, you will know it for sure. You will see that these incomprehensible theories are all correct. Hence, only when you occupy God's love is your ambition fully satisfied, and will you say, "Now, I am content." (252-119, 1993.11.14)

When human beings are perfected, they attain divine nature and become perfect, as the Heavenly Father is perfect, realizing a value comparable to God. God is the Absolute Being, but He cannot realize His ideal of true love by Himself. It is because the ideal of love necessarily requires a partner. At this point, we should understand what the relationship between the beginning and completion of God's true love and humankind's true love is. What if God, without establishing human beings as the absolute object partners of true love, had tried to achieve the beginning and completion of His true love in some other way? The true love ideals of God and human beings would have had different motivations, and the direction and purpose of the two forms of love would have differed. (282-209, 1997.3.13)

God is the root of love, the root of life, the root of lineage, and the root of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and Kingdom of Heaven in heaven. When Adam and Eve get married, God enters the hearts of Adam and Eve and realizes the oneness of love. God is the vertical True Parent, and Adam and Eve are the horizontal True Parents. Because we were born with the blood and flesh of these two sets of parents, our mind becomes the vertical self and our body becomes the horizontal self. Since the realm of the oneness of God and humankind in love is realized through this, those who complete the oneness of the mind and body in love become God's sons and daughters. When they become God's princes and princesses, they can have a parent-child relationship with God and inherit everything. When such children become husbands and wives and totally unite based on true love, they become the family that lives with God, and that family becomes a base of peace and the ideal. A man and a woman, each being a half, becomes one and comes to complete the ideal love as God's partners. In other words, by perfecting human beings as beings of infinite value through true love, God also perfects true love, and completes the world of the ideal of creation where the eternal ideal love dwells. (254-106, 1994.2.1)

When we realize the oneness of mind and body and the oneness of husband and wife, we naturally return to God. The foundation of true love is supposed to be settled centering on God. This is the realm of perfection, unification, and oneness. This is the foundation of unification. In this case, God Himself also unifies. There is nothing that can separate the oneness of God and humankind in love. There is no force that can tear them apart. (249-144, 1993.10.8)

God, who wants perfection and completion through true love between the Creator and human beings, needed a condition of oneness with them. That is why God needed a commandment to give to the first human ancestors. Knowing that they are at the stage of immaturity, while they are growing up through the growth period, God set up a condition to bequeath to them the most precious true love; this was the commandment. (282-209, 1997.3.13)

8.3.2. How is the oneness of God and humankind realized?

Where on earth is the standard of perfection of sons and daughters, the standard of perfection of brothers and sisters, the standard of perfection of husbands and wives, and the standard of perfection of parents established? Where on earth is the realm of the oneness of God and human beings? When human beings, created by God as His sons and daughters, reach maturity and become one, in what position will God be? These are important matters. In elucidating the fundamental core of the universe, these matters must be revealed clearly. If these are not resolved, we will run into a serious problem. (249-282, 1993.10.11)

What is it that I, Rev. Moon, have agonized over the most? It is the question of how to form the oneness of God and humankind in love. It is the question of how this is explained theoretically. Unless this is elucidated, the theoretical system cannot settle down. Everything is distorted if the fundamental position of human love is not set up. (249-223, 1993.10.10)

God's love and humankind's love; this becomes the question. The question is whether God's love and humankind's love are the same or different in color. This is a grave question. Where do God's and humankind's love meet? Unless these two meet and form a base of being united in love, neither God nor human beings can settle down together. Although God rejoices, if human beings have a different basis for rejoicing in love, a serious problem arises. (257-58, 1994.3.13)

How do we achieve the oneness of God and humankind? God is the vertical Father of true love. He is the Father centered on true love. Then, is God close or distant? Is He visible to your eyes or not? Why is He invisible? It is because He is too close. If something is too close, you cannot see it forever. Even in the spirit world, you cannot see Him. This, however, does not mean that He is not there. He exists. There is no one who has seen love, nor is there anyone who has seen air. (249-31, 1993.10.7)

When I was pursuing the answers to fundamental questions, I continued to think about how to achieve oneness between God and humankind. This is an important question. Without resolving it, the starting point and the end point would not coincide. While thinking of this, what struck me like lightning? It is the fact that true love travels the straightest and shortest distance. What this means is that there is only one vertical line; at a point on the horizontal line, there is only one line that forms a ninety degree angle to it. This is the straightest and shortest distance. It is at ninety degrees. (250-153, 1993.10.14)

In the world of atoms, electrons revolve around the protons. In the world of molecules, the plus ions and minus ions interact. Those that interact do so with a center. Man and woman also interact. Centering on what? They interact centering on love. God and human beings also interact. What does the phrase, "oneness of God and humankind", mean? We also use the term "union". Centering on what, is oneness achieved? Centering on what, do we talk about the oneness of parents and children and the oneness of husband and wife? It is centering on love. The parents and children, and the husband and wife, are united as one body. This is the oneness of God and humankind. Centering on what? Centering on money, on political power, or on knowledge? It is beyond doubt that it is centering on love. What kind of love is it? It is true love, and Godly love. What kind of love is Godly love? It is absolute love. What is absolute love? It is aligned with eternity. It is eternal love. (251-120, 1993.10.17)

The oneness of God and each person; this is the realm of the unity of God and humankind. If the standard of the ideal that God rejoices in, and the standard that human beings desire, do not coincide with each other, it is a serious problem. They should match perfectly. They should be one horizontally and also be one vertically. If they cross at ninety degrees, front and back and left and right, the twelve positions including the upper and lower quadrants, and the right and left quadrants, exactly meet at any point at ninety degrees. (223-346, 1991.11.20)

Why do we marry? It is to perfect love. If we say that horizontally, right and left or east and west are a man and a woman, their true ideal is to connect by passing through the straightest, shortest distance. There is only one horizontal, straight, shortest distance of love for the straight vertical line. This is none other than at the ninety-degree angle. If this tilts to the side like this, it does not work because it becomes an oval. Not all are the same. It is only in the ninety-degree angle that all can stand on an equal position and on the same standard. There is no other place, but at a ninety-degree angle, that the love that leads to the oneness of God and humankind accrues. (224-167, 1991.11.24)

God created Adam first as His body. Adam is God's son, and at the same time God Himself with a body as well. Next, God created Eve as Adam's partner in an effort to perfect the horizontal love, that is, the ideal of conjugal love. Eve is God's daughter and, at the same time, His bride who is to physically perfect God's ideal of horizontal love. The place where Adam and Eve have reached perfection, and consummate their first love after marriage under God's blessing, is also the place where God receives His physical bride. God's ideal of absolute love vertically comes down to, and participates in, where Adam and Eve's ideal of conjugal love horizontally bears fruit. God's true love and humankind's true love start at one point, centering on the starting point of the vertical and horizontal, bear fruit, and reach perfection. (277-198, 1996.4.16)

Who on earth are Adam and Eve? They are the ones who, centering on the ideal of love, unite horizontally. The horizontal should meet the vertical line at a ninety degree angle, and set a focal point. The same is true for the position of front and back, left and right, and above and below. What does this mean? Since God is the subject partner of the dual characteristics, He enters the minds of Adam and Eve, who are focused on that kind of love. Therefore, the wedding ceremony of the human ancestors, who are not fallen, becomes God's wedding ceremony. (223-267, 1991.11.12)

Where does God enter? God enters the minds of Adam and Eve, His dual characteristics, right? These two enter and merge into one root. Then they are manifested into sons and daughters. They are connected by love, centered

on mind, body and spirit, and have the same root. So when they have sons and daughters out of this love, would these children go to hell? They cannot be touched or interfered with by anyone. The absolute body, the absolute mind, the absolute spirit, the absolute man, and the absolute woman, bring unification through God's absolute love and through the sexual organ, which is the origin of life, the origin of love, and the origin of lineage. (194-343, 1989.10.30)

Adam and Eve came as the dual characteristics of the invisible God. It is as if two invisible beings are standing together within one being. They are united in true love and manifest as male character. God then reappears through His son and daughter, who take the position of His object partners to that male character. When they grow up and become husband and wife in love, God descends from above, whereupon He stands in the position of the invisible Parent and they, in the position of the visible parents, become one through the act of loving. (222-317, 1991.11.6)

Where do the vertical and the horizontal merge together? Where does the union of heaven and earth occur? It occurs in front of the vertical standard. The path of love takes the straightest, shortest distance.

In order to answer these questions, I have agonized over the question of where these two, the vertical and the horizontal, and heaven and earth, settle down. I came to understand during my efforts that vertical and horizontal love are situated at the fundamental core of the universe. How do I know this? It is because we cannot go up in a straight way. If so, we would be stuck in the same place. But if we leave the horizontal and love only vertically, we would be stuck like this. The question then is where this goes and how it turns. It cannot turn. These questions – how they connect, and, if there is love of heaven and earth, how should they unite – were serious ones. But one thing that I realized was that love travels the straightest, shortest distance. (214-232, 1991.2.2)

What is it that Rev. Moon agonized over the most, while digging into the fundamental core of the universe? It was the question of how love travels and settles down. Discovering the one thing that love travels the straightest, shortest distance, resolved all questions. If love descends from above, when heaven is considered high, and earth low, and when true love comes down to the earth from heaven, which route would it take? It is through the straightest and shortest distance. So what is it? It is the perpendicular path, isn't it? There is nothing else except for the perpendicular path. It is the straightest, shortest distance. If love travels through the fastest, straightest and shortest distance, the settlement point of heaven and earth can be only one on a perfect plane. It is not two, but is absolutely one. (211-77, 1990.12.29)

Where did I say that God's love and humankind's love meet? Where is their

settlement point? That point becomes the settlement point of love, the settlement point of life, and the settlement point of lineage. Apart from that place, there would be no way of connecting love, life, and lineage. Where on earth is that place? It is where the lives of a man and a woman are connected. It is where the lineage, the blood of a man and a woman, cross. God's life, God's love, God's lineage, and the life of a man and a woman, the love of a man and a woman, and the lineage of a man and a woman, are connected at this one point. And their descendants arise at this point. (205-63, 1990.7.7)

Adam and Eve having their children of goodness, and becoming the true parents, means that God physically secures His position as the eternal Parent, and realizes His ideal and desire to have an endless number of citizens of the Kingdom of Heaven in heaven and on earth through their multiplication from generation to generation. (277-198, 1996.4.16)

8.3.3. We are to restore the ideal of oneness of God and humankind in love

Had God established the relationship of true love with human beings centering on a great true love, and thus built the family embodying the oneness of God and humankind in love, which God desired as His ideal at the time of creation, today we would all go straight to the Kingdom of Heaven without having to worry about whether we were going to heaven or hell. The problem here is that unless God and human beings become one in true love as subject-object partners, and make a start at the same one point, the true love of God and that of humankind will have different directions and purposes; their love starts as two different forms of love. Then, it would be impossible to find the absolute world of the ideal desired by God and human beings. (275-54, 1995.10.31)

What is marriage? It is the perfection of the self. It is the perfection of a man and a woman, and at the same time, the perfection of everything horizontal. Here are children and siblings, and because of this, this line comes in. Since there are brothers and sisters, husband and wife, and parents; the upper and lower, right and left, and front and back of the Kingdom of Heaven become one and form an ideal sphere. Then God comes into the center point of marriage. He comes to stay in the family and sets up house.

As for all these forces, and as for all the forces of the sphere that enter this space, there are none that have not passed this standard. So to ask where God is, especially where God is in the husband and wife, what is the answer? It is in the womb. That is where He is. That is where the root of love is. Ever since the beginning of history, answers to questions such as how the spirit world is structured, and what it is like, were finally revealed through Rev. Moon. No one else has known this. (252-119, 1993.11.14)

The Fall of Adam and Eve is the immoral sin that forsook God's ideal of true love. Adam and Eve, before the Fall, needed to keep the commandment, but fell at the stage of immaturity during the growth period.

The union of the first love of the human ancestors, since being the perfection of God's love as well at the same time, should surely have been a continuation of happy feasts in which God, Adam and Eve, and all things naturally became intoxicated in joy and blessings. It should have been a happy ceremony in which God's love, life, and lineage formed a beginning and settled in human beings.

However, they, instead, covered their lower parts and hid behind the tree, trembling in fear. This is because they, in violation of the heavenly path, perpetrated the immoral relationship that gave rise to the source of false love, false life, and false lineage. (288-126, 1997.11.26)

Satan entered where God should have. Adam and Eve and Satan married, didn't they? It is the same thing. If Adam and Eve had not fallen, God's true love and humankind's love would have united at one point. They were to start at one point; if it were two points, there would be two different worlds and two different directions. Yet, if they achieved the oneness of God and humankind, and went in one direction, the individuals who appear in one direction would reach perfection; the family that appears in one direction would reach perfection; and also the tribe, people, nation and world that appear in the one direction would reach perfection. They would become one in love. This would agree with the theory. (265-80, 1994.11.20)

What is the difference between the established Christian churches and the Unification Church? One difference is that the Unification Church restored the oneness of God and humankind centering on love. Established theologies define God as holy, and human beings as profane and sinful. Then, how can God's love and humankind's love become one? They cannot answer this question. The problem is that they think the absolute God can do anything. This was the main reason why Christians shed so much blood wherever they went. Misusing God's commandment, they invaded and seized. They produced dictators. The world, however, does not work like that. From the viewpoint of God's original nature, it cannot be like that. (249-145, 1993.10.8)

8.4. The realm of liberation and the realm of complete freedom in the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven

8.4.1. Building the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven through true love

If Adam and Eve had not fallen, what would God have wanted to give them? God wanted to bless and marry them, have them give birth to sons and daughters in whom He could rejoice, and form

God's family in whom He could rejoice, and form His tribe and His people, by multiplying. When they expanded further and formed the world, what philosophy would they be based on? It would be the world of Godism and the Adam-centered philosophy. If that world had a philosophy, it would be the philosophy centered on Adam. If that world had a view of the universe, it would be Adam's view of the universe, an Adam-centered philosophy. If it had a view of the cosmos, it would be Adam's view of the cosmos; and if it had a view of life, it would be Adam's view of life based on that Adam-centered philosophy. And when the five different races had various colors of skin, it would not matter much. Skin colors changed according to the environment and countless people having different skin colors is okay. Then, why did the languages of the countless peoples differ? God separated them, due to the Fall of the first human ancestors. (156-202, 1966.5.25)

When it comes to a nation, establishing a nation requires sovereignty. It requires a people. It requires land. When considering the question of establishing the Kingdom of Heaven on earth from this point of view, who is the owner of the Kingdom of Heaven? Who is the sovereign? Surely, God is the sovereign. And who are the people? It is humankind. Then, what is the territory? It is the planet earth. (96-15, 1978.1.1)

Within one generation of my lifetime, by the age of eighty, I am determined to completely liberate the spirit world. Then, the earth, the heaven, husband and wife, and the family will go to the Kingdom of Heaven. The husband and wife are to enter the Kingdom of Heaven together; they cannot enter there alone. With the gate of hell and gate of the Kingdom of Heaven opened all the way, all of them will go up in a spiral form. Their ancestors will line up to be guards and guide them. In the past, Satan dug pits using their self-centered desires and kept them from going there for a thousand and ten thousand years. He forced them to do his errands. Now all these have been abolished. It sounds like a lie, doesn't it? But that is what will happen. You wait and see. Why? It is because I know so well what is happening in the spirit world. If this is not done, there will be a problem in the later generations. (300-74, 1999.2.21)

We should equalize the world on earth and the world in heaven, and even hell. By pioneering that path and reaching the peaceful base of the Kingdom of Heaven, we should be able to break down the gate of hell and open the gate of the Kingdom of Heaven. We should bring it about so that God can freely come in and out, whether it is the earthly world or the spirit world. The sorrowful threshold called hell is unnecessary to God. All this should be removed. Who knows this? Then, what is it that I, Rev. Moon, have accomplished? I have demolished the gate of individuals and all that have been blocking the hell on earth and the hell in spirit world. So a highway should

be built. Equality should be brought. This is not only on earth but also in the entire spirit world. Thus, the equality on the level of the family, tribe, people, nation, world and cosmos should be realized. What can bring this? It is to be achieved through the family established by a man and a woman. (302-226, 1999.6.14)

The True Parents are, in the physical world, giving the Blessing to all kinds of people, transcending their background. Through this link, the realms of the liberation of the individual, family, tribe, people, and nation are realized on earth. These realms of liberation are not realized in the spirit world. In such a way, there is a foundation on earth for connecting the nation of love of the heavenly kingdom and the nation of love of the cosmos.

Therefore, the entire spirit world and physical world, centering on the True Parents, should become one, and do an overall general cleanup. That is how they can achieve the perfection of the Blessing all the way to the cosmos from the individuals, families, tribes, peoples, nations, and world – to the cosmos. This way, as the realm of oneness of the Blessed families in the spiritual and physical worlds opens up, the foundation of the ideal of the heavenly kingdom centering on the unfallen Adam is established among all the families throughout history; and in the position of equal value, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and the Kingdom of Heaven in heaven emerge, in which place God comes and dwells. God is the vertical Parent, and the True Parents are the horizontal parents, who can bring equalization to the earth.

Thus, on Chil Pal Jeol (7.8. Day), the realm of the cosmic Sabbath of the Parent of Heaven and Earth was been proclaimed, and a new age has begun. We should now completely overcome everything through the Gu Gu Jeol (9.9. Day). (303-257, 1999.9.9)

When the tide recedes, garbage goes out with it. Conversely, when the tide returns, the things that went out last now come in first. This is like restoration through indemnity. When the water and moon reach the moment of unity to create a tide, I can stand in the center and pronounce them ready. And as the water surface levels even out, I will bless them as plus and minus, and by doing so will drive out Satan completely

This is how we expel the false parent and become one with the True Parents. Because this was done, we can break down hell, and give the Blessing to our ancestors in the spirit world as well. Now, hundreds of millions, tens of billions, and hundreds of billions are getting married. It is our ancestors who are leading the spirit world towards the Kingdom of Heaven. On earth, centering on true love, our descendants are combining as one, the vertical positions of the father and the son. The starting point to connect the East and the West is the family foundation centering on true love. (300-224, 1999.3.14)

From now on, we enter the age in which the national and ethnic groups

can join their forces. So the earthly nations, tribes, and families join together and pass into the realm of unification. By going over like this, the world rapidly changes and those who are against this will not be left alone by satans. Until now, Satan has tried to take them to hell, but he now takes them to the Kingdom of Heaven. This way, he and his followers cooperate; and even their own ancestors will want to take them to the Kingdom of Heaven. Thus, since no one is blocking the way to the Kingdom of Heaven, the realm of liberation is realized, and thereby we rapidly pass into the age of globalization of the future. (298-221, 1999.1.8)

The spirit world – including the Muslims, the followers of Confucius, and the followers of Buddha – is waiting for the appearance of the ideology centered on True Parents, upon Adam. Since that world should go in the direction of unification, when the work of the True Parents reaches the global level on earth, all religious boundaries disappear, and the results of the unification movement automatically appear on earth, as a result of the activities of the spirit world. Thus, when the Unification Church teaching becomes a global philosophy, what happens? The spirits in the spirit world do not stay in the spirit world. Since their goal is to reach perfection on earth, and then re-enter the spirit world through a reversal process, they all return to earth. All of them are, then, engaged in activities. The wish of the hundreds of billions of people in the spirit world is to see that the Unification Church members spread all over the world and spearhead the movement, encouraging the spirits, "Move, move, move, move!" Hence, if we are tuned to this, and oneness is brought in the spirit world, the world turns into the world governed by God. Then, in front of the title of the True Parents, the eternal world is to continue for eternity. (161-222, 1987.2.15)

Now we have reached the realm of liberation even in the spirit world. We are engaged in a movement to bring equality to the spirit world as well as on the earth. Spring is under way. The springtime of Kingdom of Heaven and Earth is approaching. Until now, the earth has been in summer although spring has already come to Kingdom of Heaven. However, now that summer is gone and winter is gone on earth, spring is coming. Since the spring that can digest everything - all ideals and the eternal happiness of Kingdom of Heaven - and that can resurrect new lives, is coming to earth, a peaceful era will come to earth. So, what has Rev. Moon of the Unification Church done now? The word "peace" is inserted in all of his new organizations, including the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. (301-288, 1999.5.5)

Since we have now entered the age of liberation, the universe centering on this earth is rejoicing. How much it rejoices today! Thus, I see that from the beginning of this year until today, an atmosphere of celebration dominates. Now in

everything that we try to do, heavenly fortune follows us around and helps us. People strive hard to catch this heavenly fortune, but in our case, it is following behind us and helping us. What this means is that the time has now come when God and the spirit world, our countless ancestors and good people, are mobilized to help this earth; and the age when the realm of liberation can be realized, and everything can be transformed, has arrived. (298-226, 1999.1.8)

8.4.2. Let us pledge to perfect the realm of liberation

With what are we going to liberate God? With power? With wisdom? What is the liberation of God? If people from North Korea come to South Korea and rejoice, and people from South Korea go to North Korea, does this mean that North Korea and South Korea are liberated? What does this mean? God is sitting on the throne of heaven in the spirit world, but even those at the rock bottom of the satanic world like Him. Even when we go to poor families, regardless who they are, if they serve and attend God as the greatest, they rejoice and feel happy.

The Unification Church has been going through such a course of history with me as the center until now, during which time I have been talking about resolving the bitter sorrow of God. Then, what is it? It is an effort to bring about liberation. Even when we go into the bottom of a dumpster, the question is whether or not we have a room of joy in which God can come and stay with us. If you want to feel free, you should be in a position where you can accept any situation; nothing unpleasant should hold you back – even a dumpster-like situation. Only then will you be liberated. If this bothers you, you will not be liberated. (181-191, 1988.10.3)

You can re-enact everything in this world created by God only when you completely possess true love. What does this mean? Those who have achieved the perfection of true love can live a life in which they do things just as they please, like God; they can create things if they wish to, and remove things if they wish to. They can do anything freely and at will. With intuition, they can experience omnipotence. True love can conquer anything and everything. It can conquer God and even Satan. Thus, it is not that I, Rev. Moon, am liberated through God, but rather that God is liberated through me. So, we are trying to achieve on earth, everything of value that we have been seeking to regain in the spirit world from the time of the Fall. Once this is achieved, heaven and earth will be turned upside down. (292-277, 1998.4.27)

God should be liberated during the eighty years of my life. To do this, I should reveal the truths surrounding the death of Jesus for all restorations through indemnity, and realms of liberation from the spirit world to the earthly world. Otherwise, there would be no way for the spirits to return to earth. To make a unified heaven and earth possible through the Christian cultural sphere,

they passed through all the necessary conditions; but if the messiah comes on a foundation that has not reached the unified heaven and earth, and they fail to accept him and oppose him instead, they will all be caught in Satan's trap. That is why Rev. Moon was driven out all alone to the wilderness – all alone. Even my physical parents did not understand me. Thus, from here, I again landed on the shore and have walked the indemnity course of history for more than forty years. (211-198, 1990.12.30)

During my lifetime, everything must be liberated. Therefore, all things are in the position of being liberated. The value of liberation is truly indescribable. The realm of liberation has been established by piling up, over and over again, the merit of God's effort to separate good and evil from our ancestors throughout history. We, Blessed families, represent the realm of liberation; being in the position of having been liberated. Therefore, we are sacrificial offerings, representing the entire world of creation, from filthy objects to glorious ones. You should understand that you are standing in the position of sacrificial offerings. (280-292, 1997.2.13)

What a splendid place the realm of heart is! We cannot purchase it even with mountains of gold. Nor can we purchase it even with a diamond that is as big as the earth. That is how precious it is. It is so precious that it cannot be exchanged even for the universe. The universe becomes ours if we make a reciprocal relationship with the subject partner in the realm of heart. Even God belongs to us. How amazing it is to have the privilege of being human beings who know their own value, who have a realm of freedom and liberation in which they can stride along the cosmos as liberators, embracing everything in love and giving direction, and with whom all things of heaven and earth harmonize, and respond to their command! This is the pride of the Unification Church. (210-320, 1990.12.27)

Our ancestors are the True Parents. We are following through the grace of the True Parents. Everything must be eliminated, all the way down to the spirits far below. When this becomes the second time, we can completely go over the gate. When we have gone over the three stages – formation, growth and completion – by this year 2000, a new law of heaven and earth will be announced so that all the scars that the True Parents have received from false parents on this earth can be taken care of. It is the law of the liberation of heaven and earth. That is why Pledge number eight of the Family Pledge has been presented now, right? It reads: "Our family, the owner of Cheon Il Guk, pledges, having entered the Completed Testament Age, to achieve the ideal of God and human beings united in love through absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, and to perfect the realm of liberation and complete freedom in the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven..." It is not liberation, but the realm of lib-

eration. Your home should not go alone. You should take full responsibility for your nation and your world while on earth. (293-252, 1998.6.1)

If you are to inherit the realm of the victory of the True Parents, you should live in absolute obedience, absolute compliance, and absolute faith. Only when you shed blood, sweat, and sacrifice everything, in total oneness of heart through which you are willing to become a living sacrifice for the True Parents, and you want to hold more love than the love of the True Parents, can the True Parents be liberated. God's realm of liberation emerges only when society becomes a place where people love more than the True Parents love mankind. Only when the True Parents have such sons and daughters, will the realm of liberation emerge in which they can praise their sons and daughters and rejoice, loving them. (266-288, 1995.1.1)

Glossary

Amaterasu-omikami - The main deity, the Sun Goddess, in Japanese mythology, who is acknowledged as the ancestor of the Japanese people.

Balhae – (698-926) A kingdom founded by Dae Jo-young, a general of the Koguryo dynasty.

Blue House - The presidential residence of the Republic of Korea.

Chosun - A Korean dynasty (1392-1910) founded by Lee Sung-gye.

Chun-hyang - The heroine from Chun-hyang-jeon, one of Korea's classical stories. She risks her life to protect her chastity for the sake of her betrothed.

Chuseok - One of the most important holidays in Korea, celebrated on the fifteenth day of the eighth month by the lunar calendar. On this day the year's harvest of crops and fruits are offered to one's ancestors.

Dangun Era – The name of the era in Korean history that began in 2333 BC with the coronation of Dangun who founded Ko-chosun.

Dongi people – The name that was used by the Chinese for the tribes that lived in northeast China, Korea and Japan.

Gyeokam-yurok – A representative prophetic book among several existing in Korea. This book is a collection of prophecies made by Nam Sa-go (Gyeokam).

Heungnam prison – The labor camp in North Korea where Rev. Moon spent 2 years and 8 months due to religious persecution.

Hong Gil-dong – The hero of "Stories of Hong Gil-dong." The author, Heo Gyun (1569-1618) wrote this novel in an attempt to alleviate the differences between the social classes so as to reform the corrupt politics of his time.

Huh Ho-bin – Founder of the "Inside the Belly" Church who experienced many spiritual phenomena. She believed she would give birth to the returning Lord.

Ito Hirobumi - Japanese Resident-General of Korea from 1905 until his assassination by Korean patriot An Joong-goon in 1909.

Jeong Mong-ju – (1337-1392) A patriot toward the end of the Koryo dynasty who was assassinated for his loyalty to the old Koryo dynasty. He wrote the famous Korean poem entitled Tan shim ga.

Jeonggam-rok - A prophetic book (author unknown), passed down from the beginning of the second half of the Chosun dynasty (1392-1910) which depicts the fate of Korea and its people.

Jeongju - Rev. Sun Myung Moon's birthplace in North Pyungan province in (now) North Korea.

Jochongryeon - An organization of Korean residents in Japan who support North Korea.

Kim Hwal-lan (Helen Kim) - 1899-1970; During her time as President of Ewha Women's University she was personally involved in the expulsion of professors and students who believed in the teachings of the Unification Church.

Kim Il-sung - (1912-1994) The leader of North Korea from 1948 until the time of his death.

Kim Jong-il - Born in 1942, he is the son and successor of Kim Il-sung, and currently rules North Korea.

Kim Sat-gat - A wandering poet who lived during the latter period of the Choson dynasty (1392-1910).

Kyungmoo-dae - The name of the former presidential residence of the Republic of Korea.

Lee Sang-hun - (1914-1997) One of the 36 Couples. Former director of the Unification Thought Research Institute. He has sent many messages from the spirit world.

Lee Tae-bek - (701-762) His real name is Lee Bai. A poet during the Tang dynasty (618-907), he is regarded as one of the greatest classical poets in China's history.

Meiji - The name of the era in Japanese history in which the emperor ruled from 1867-1912.

Meiji Reformation - (1867-1912) A reformation that brought about political and social change in Japan. The starting point of a centralized unified nation and introduction of capitalism.

Mindan - An organization of Korean residents in Japan who support South Korea.

Park Maria - (1906-1960) During her time as the Vice-President of Ewha Women's University (1954) she used her husband's governmental power to persecute the professors and students associating with the Unification Church.

Pyongyang - The capital of North Korea.

Pyung - Korean unit of land measurement. One pyung = 3.3 square meters.

Queen Min - The wife of King Kojong of the Chosun dynasty. She was murdered by Japanese agents in 1895.

Rhee Sung-man (Syngman Rhee) - (1875-1965) The founding President of the Republic of Korea who served three terms, from 1948-1960.

Ri - A Korean unit to measure distance. One ri = 393 meters.

Seodaemun prison - A prison built in Seoul by the Japanese when Korea was under Japanese imperial rule. Many Koreans who fought for independence were imprisoned in this place.

Shilla Dynasty - (57BC-AD676) One of the three ancient dynasties of Korea which later unified three kingdoms, forming the Unified Shilla Dynasty (676-935).

Shim Chung - The heroine of Shim Chung-jeon, one of Korea's classical stories depicting the virtues of filial piety during the Chosun Dynasty (1392-1910). As a daughter of filial piety she offers her life for her father's. She is saved and later becomes queen, and her blind father recovers his sight.

Showa - (1926-1989) Era in Japanese history.

Taisho - (1912-1926) Era in Japanese history.

Three Kingdoms - The period during which three kingdoms existed simultaneously: Shilla Dynasty (57 BC - AD 935), Baekjae Dynasty (18 BC - AD 660), Koguryo Dynasty (37 BC - AD 668).

Won - Unit of currency of the Republic of Korea.

Yi Soon-shin - (1545-1598) A great admiral who played a decisive role in repelling Japanese invaders during the Japanese invasion of Korea that began in 1592 (during the Chosun Dynasty).

Yongmae Island - A small island located south of Haejoo, Hwanghae province, in North Korea.

Yu Kwan-soon - (1904-1920) Patriot during Japanese imperialistic rule. She was an active instigator in the movement for independence that began on March 1, 1919. She was imprisoned and later killed.

Note on the References

Each excerpt in Cheon Seong Gyeong is followed by a reference in parentheses. These guide the reader to the Korean edition of the volume or book from which the excerpt is drawn. Most are written in a numerical format, e.g., (340-144, 1989.4.17). The first set of numbers refers to the volume of the more than four hundred volumes of True Parents' speeches; the second denotes the page number; the third denotes the date upon which the speech was given (year.month.day).

Others reference published books or periodicals. The three most commonly referenced books are abbreviated as follows: *God's Will and the World* to God's Will; *Blessing and Ideal Family* to Blessing; *Blessed Family and the Ideal Kingdom* to Blessed Family.

Cheon Seong Gyeong

Selections from the Speeches of True Parents

Published June 13, 2006

Publisher: Hwang Sun-jo

Published by Sunghwa Publishing Company
176-6 Cheongpa-dong 1-ga, Yongsan-gu, Seoul, Republic of Korea
140-131
Tel 82-2-701-0110
Fax 82-2-701-1991

Copyright © 2006 Family Federation for World Peace and Unification

All rights reserved. No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system or transmitted in any form or by any means electronic, mechanical, photocopying, recording or otherwise, without the prior written permission of the publisher. This book is not for sale.